



ANCIENT EUROPE

8000 B.C.–A.D. 1000

ENCYCLOPEDIA OF THE BARBARIAN WORLD

Peter Bogucki & Pam J. Crabtree

ANCIENT
EUROPE
8000 B.C.—A.D. 1000



ANCIENT EUROPE

8000 B.C.—A.D. 1000

ENCYCLOPEDIA OF THE BARBARIAN WORLD

VOLUME I

THE MESOLITHIC TO COPPER AGE
(C. 8000–2000 B.C.)

Peter Bogucki & Pam J. Crabtree
Editors in Chief



CHARLES SCRIBNER'S SONS®

THOMSON
—★—™
GALE



Ancient Europe 8000 B.C.–A.D. 1000: Encyclopedia of the Barbarian World

Peter Bogucki and Pam J. Crabtree, Editors in Chief

Copyright © 2004 by Charles Scribner's Sons

Charles Scribner's Sons is an imprint of The Gale Group, Inc., a division of Thomson Learning, Inc.

Charles Scribner's Sons™ and Thomson Learning™ are trademarks used herein under license.

For more information, contact
Charles Scribner's Sons
An imprint of the Gale Group
300 Park Avenue South, 9th Floor
New York, NY 10010
Or visit our Internet site at
<http://www.gale.com>

ALL RIGHTS RESERVED

No part of this work covered by the copyright hereon may be reproduced or used in any form or by any means—graphic, electronic, or mechanical, including photocopying, recording, taping, Web distribution, or information storage retrieval systems—without the written permission of the publisher.

For permission to use material from this product, submit your request via Web at <http://www.gale-edit.com/permissions>, or you may download our Permissions Request form and submit your request by fax or mail to:

Permissions Department
The Gale Group, Inc.
27500 Drake Rd.
Farmington Hills, MI 48331-3535
Permissions hotline:
248 699-8006 or 800 877-4253, ext. 8006
Fax: 248 688-8074 or 800 762-4058

LIBRARY OF CONGRESS CATALOGING-IN-PUBLICATION DATA

Ancient Europe 8000 B.C.–A.D. 1000 : encyclopedia of the Barbarian world / Peter Bogucki, Pam J. Crabtree, editors.

p. cm.

Includes bibliographical references and index.

ISBN 0-684-80668-1 (set : hardcover : alk. paper) — ISBN 0-684-80669-X (vol. 1) — ISBN 0-684-80670-3 (vol. 2) — ISBN 0-684-31421-5 (e-book)

1. Antiquities, Prehistoric—Europe—Encyclopedias. 2. Prehistoric peoples—Europe—Encyclopedias. 3. History, Ancient—Encyclopedias. 4. Europe—History—To 476—Encyclopedias. 5. Europe—History—392-814—Encyclopedias. I. Bogucki, Peter I. II. Crabtree, Pam J.

D62 .A52 2004
936—dc22

2003015251

This title is also available as an e-book.
ISBN 0-684-31421-5

Contact your Gale sales representative for ordering information

Printed in the United States of America
10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2 1



EDITORIAL AND PRODUCTION STAFF

Project Editor

Alja Kooistra Collar

Assisting Editors

Cindy Clendenon, Shawn Corridor, Sharon Malinowski

Copy Editors

Marcia Merryman Means

Lisa Dixon, Gretchen Gordon, Jeffrey J. Hill, Jean Fortune Kaplan,
Jane Marie Todd

Proofreader

Carol Holmes

Indexer

J. Naomi Linzer

Image Researcher

Deanna Raso

Senior Art Director

Pamela Galbreath

Imaging

Lezlie Light, Leitha Etheridge-Sims, Mary Grimes, Dan Newell, Dave
Oblender, Christine O'Bryan, Kelly A. Quin, Denay Wilding

Cartographer

XNR Productions

Line Illustrator

GGG Information Services

Composition

Datapage Technologies International

Manufacturing

Wendy Blurton

Senior Editor

John Fitzpatrick

Publisher

Frank Menchaca



CONTENTS

VOLUME I

<i>List of Maps</i>	xv
<i>Preface</i>	xvii
<i>Maps of Ancient Europe, 8000–</i> <i>2000 B.C.</i>	xix
<i>Chronology of Ancient Europe, 8000–</i> <i>1000 B.C.</i>	xxv
<i>List of Contributors</i>	xxix

I: DISCOVERING BARBARIAN EUROPE

Introduction (<i>Peter Bogucki and Pam J. Crabtree</i>)	3
Humans and Environments (<i>I. G. Simmons</i>)	7
Origins and Growth of European Prehistory (<i>Paul G. Bahn</i>)	14
The Nature of Archaeological Data (<i>Pam J. Crabtree and</i> <i>Douglas V. Campana</i>)	22
Tollund Man (<i>Helle Vandkilde</i>)	26
Survey and Excavation (<i>Albert Ammerman</i>)	29
Saltbæk Vig (<i>Anne Birgitte Gebauer</i>)	36
Dating and Chronology (<i>Martin Bridge</i>)	40
Archaeology and Environment (<i>Petra Dark</i>)	47
Settlement Patterns and Landscapes (<i>John Bintliff</i>)	55
Trade and Exchange (<i>Robert H. Tykot</i>)	65
Status and Wealth (<i>Peter S. Wells</i>)	72
Hochdorf (<i>Peter S. Wells</i>)	79
Gender (<i>Janet E. Levy</i>)	81
Ritual and Ideology (<i>John Chapman</i>)	90
Hjortspring (<i>Peter S. Wells</i>)	99
Archaeology and Language (<i>David W. Anthony</i>)	101

Warfare and Conquest (<i>Lawrence H. Keeley and Russell S. Quick</i>) . . .	110
Maiden Castle (<i>Niall Sharpley</i>)	118

2: POSTGLACIAL FORAGERS, 8000–4000 B.C.

Introduction (<i>Peter Bogucki</i>)	123
Postglacial Environmental Transformation (<i>Neil Roberts</i>)	126
The Mesolithic of Northern Europe (<i>Peter Bogucki</i>)	132
Skateholm (<i>Lars Larsson</i>)	140
Tybrind Vig (<i>Søren H. Andersen</i>)	141
The Mesolithic of Northwest Europe (<i>Christopher Tolan-Smith</i>) . . .	144
Mount Sandel (<i>Peter C. Woodman</i>)	151
Star Carr (<i>Paul Mellars</i>)	153
The Mesolithic of Iberia (<i>João Zilhão</i>)	157
Muge Shell Middens (<i>João Zilhão</i>)	164
The Mesolithic of Upland Central and Southern Europe (<i>Barbara Voytek</i>)	167
Iron Gates Mesolithic (<i>Clive Bonsall</i>)	175
Franchthi Cave (<i>Julie M. Hansen</i>)	179
The Mesolithic of Eastern Europe (<i>Marek Zvelebil</i>)	183
Olencostrovskii Mogilnik (<i>Marek Zvelebil</i>)	192

3: TRANSITION TO AGRICULTURE, 7000–4000 B.C.

Introduction (<i>Peter Bogucki</i>)	201
Crops of the Early Farmers (<i>Julie M. Hansen</i>)	204
Livestock of the Early Farmers (<i>Nerissa Russell</i>)	211
First Farmers of Europe (<i>Curtis Runnels</i>)	218
Achilleion (<i>Ernestine S. Elster</i>)	226
Last Hunters and First Farmers on Cyprus (<i>Alan H. Simmons</i>)	229
Transition to Farming in the Balkans (<i>Mihael Budja</i>)	233
Obre (<i>Mihael Budja</i>)	240
The Farming Frontier on the Southern Steppes (<i>David W. Anthony</i>)	242
Spread of Agriculture Westward across the Mediterranean (<i>William K. Barnett</i>)	248
Arene Candide (<i>Peter Rowley-Conwy</i>)	253
Caldeirão Cave (<i>João Zilhão</i>)	255
First Farmers of Central Europe (<i>Lawrence H. Keeley and Mark Golitko</i>)	259
Bruchenbrücken (<i>Detlef Gronenborn</i>)	266
Bylany (<i>Jonathan Last</i>)	269
Beginnings of Farming in Northwestern Europe (<i>Anne Tresset</i>) . . .	273
Neolithic Sites of the Orkney Islands (<i>Peter Bogucki</i>)	281
Hambleton Hill (<i>Roger Mercer</i>)	283

Transition to Farming along the Lower Rhine and Meuse (<i>Leendert P. Louwe Kooijmans</i>)	286
Transition to Agriculture in Northern Europe (<i>Anne Birgitte Gebauer</i>)	293
Sarup (<i>Niels H. Andersen</i>)	301
Long Barrow Cemeteries in Neolithic Europe (<i>Magdalena S. Midgley</i>).	304

4: CONSEQUENCES OF AGRICULTURE, 5000–2000 B.C.

Introduction (<i>Peter Bogucki</i>)	313
Early Metallurgy in Southeastern Europe (<i>William A. Parkinson</i>)	317
Early Copper Mines at Rudna Glava and Ai Bunar (<i>William A. Parkinson</i>)	322
Milk, Wool, and Traction: Secondary Animal Products (<i>Nerissa Russell</i>)	325
Late Neolithic/Copper Age Southeastern Europe (<i>William A. Parkinson</i>)	334
Varna (<i>Douglass W. Bailey</i>)	341
Ovcharovo (<i>Douglass W. Bailey</i>)	344
Copper Age Cyprus (<i>Edgar Peltenburg</i>)	347
Late Neolithic/Copper Age Eastern Europe (<i>Malcolm Lillie</i>)	354
Domestication of the Horse (<i>David W. Anthony</i>)	363
Kolomishiina (<i>Malcolm Lillie</i>)	368
Late Neolithic/Copper Age Central Europe (<i>Sarunas Milisauskas</i>)	371
Brześć Kujawski (<i>Peter Bogucki</i>)	378
Rondels of the Carpathians (<i>Magdalena S. Midgley</i>)	382
Neolithic Lake Dwellings in the Alpine Region (<i>Jörg Schibler, Stefanie Jacomet, and Alice Choyke</i>)	385
The Iceman (<i>Paul G. Bahn</i>)	392
Arbon-Bleiche 3 (<i>Jörg Schibler, Stefanie Jacomet, and Alice Choyke</i>)	395
The Megalithic World (<i>I. G. N. Thorpe</i>)	398
Avebury (<i>Caroline Malone</i>)	406
Barnenez (<i>Serge Cassen</i>)	408
Boyne Valley Passage Graves (<i>George Eogan</i>)	413
Trackways and Boats (<i>Malcolm Lillie</i>)	415
Consequences of Farming in Southern Scandinavia (<i>Magdalena S. Midgley</i>)	420
Pitted Ware and Related Cultures of Neolithic Northern Europe (<i>Marek Zvelebil</i>)	431
Ajvide (<i>Peter Rowley-Conwy</i>)	435
Late Neolithic Italy and Southern France (<i>Caroline Malone</i>)	439
Sion-Petit Chasseur (<i>Marie Besse</i>)	446
The Neolithic Temples of Malta (<i>Caroline Malone</i>)	450
Late Neolithic/Copper Age Iberia (<i>Katina T. Lillios</i>)	456
Los Millares (<i>Robert Chapman</i>)	464

Corded Ware from East to West (<i>Janusz Czebreszuk</i>)	467
Bell Beakers from West to East (<i>Janusz Czebreszuk</i>)	476



VOLUME II

<i>List of Maps</i>	xv
<i>Maps of Ancient Europe, 3000 B.C.–</i>	
<i>A.D. 1000</i>	xvii
<i>Chronology of Ancient Europe, 2000 B.C.–</i>	
<i>A.D. 1000</i>	xxiii

5: MASTERS OF METAL, 3000–1000 B.C.

Introduction (<i>Peter Bogucki</i>)	3
The Significance of Bronze (<i>Mark Pearce</i>)	6
The Early and Middle Bronze Ages in Temperate Southeastern Europe (<i>H. Arthur Bankoff</i>)	12
The Early and Middle Bronze Ages in Central Europe (<i>Vajk</i> <i>Szeverenyi</i>)	20
Spišský Štvrtok (<i>Helle Vandkilde</i>)	31
The Italian Bronze Age (<i>Mark Pearce</i>)	34
Poggiomarino (<i>Francesco Menotti</i>)	42
El Argar and Related Bronze Age Cultures of the Iberian Peninsula (<i>Antonio Gilman</i>)	45
Sardinia's Bronze Age Towers (<i>Emma Blake</i>)	50
Bronze Age Britain and Ireland (<i>Joanna Brück</i>)	54
Stonehenge (<i>Caroline Malone</i>)	61
Flag Fen (<i>Francis Pryor</i>)	67
Irish Bronze Age Goldwork (<i>Mary Cahill</i>)	69
Bronze Age Scandinavia (<i>Helle Vandkilde</i>)	72
Bronze Age Coffin Burials (<i>Helle Vandkilde</i>)	80
Bronze Age Cairns (<i>Helle Vandkilde</i>)	82
Late Bronze Age Urnfields of Central Europe (<i>Peter Bogucki</i>)	86
Bronze Age Herders of the Eurasian Steppes (<i>David W. Anthony</i>)	92
Bronze Age Transcaucasia (<i>Laura A. Tedesco</i>)	101
Bronze Age Cyprus (<i>A. Bernard Knapp</i>)	108
The Minoan World (<i>David B. Small</i>)	116
Knossos (<i>Louise Steel</i>)	121
Mycenaean Greece (<i>John Bintliff</i>)	126

6: THE EUROPEAN IRON AGE, C. 800 B.C.–A.D. 400

Introduction (<i>Pam J. Crabtree</i>)	137
---	-----

Celts (<i>Susan Malin-Boyce</i>)	140
Hallstatt and La Tène (<i>Susan Malin-Boyce</i>)	144
Celtic Migrations (<i>Susan Malin-Boyce</i>)	149
Germans (<i>Peter S. Wells</i>)	151
Oppida (<i>John Collis</i>)	154
Manching (<i>Susan Malin-Boyce</i>)	158
Hillforts (<i>Barry Raftery</i>)	160
Origins of Iron Production (<i>Michael N. Geselowitz</i>)	164
Ironworking (<i>Michael N. Geselowitz</i>)	167
Coinage of Iron Age Europe (<i>Colin Haselgrove</i>)	169
Ritual Sites: Viereckschanzen (<i>Matthew L. Murray</i>)	174
Iron Age Feasting (<i>Bettina Arnold</i>)	179
La Tène Art (<i>Barry Raftery</i>)	184
Iron Age Social Organization (<i>Ian Ralston</i>)	191
Greek Colonies in the West (<i>Peter S. Wells</i>)	198
Vix (<i>Peter S. Wells</i>)	205
Greek Colonies in the East (<i>Gocha R. Tsatskhladze</i>)	208
Iron Age France (<i>John Collis</i>)	212
Gergovia (<i>John Collis</i>)	219
Iron Age Britain (<i>Timothy Champion</i>)	222
Danebury (<i>Barry Cunliffe</i>)	229
Iron Age Ireland (<i>Bernard Wailes</i>)	232
Irish Royal Sites (<i>Bernard Wailes</i>)	239
Iron Age Germany (<i>Bettina Arnold</i>)	241
Kelheim (<i>Peter S. Wells</i>)	247
The Heuneburg (<i>Bettina Arnold</i>)	249
Iberia in the Iron Age (<i>Teresa Chapa</i>)	253
Etruscan Italy (<i>Rae Ostman</i>)	260
Pre-Roman Iron Age Scandinavia (<i>Sophia Perdikaris</i>)	269
Iron Age Finland (<i>Deborah J. Shepherd</i>)	276
Iron Age Poland (<i>Przemysław Urbanczyk</i>)	281
Biskupin (<i>A. F. Harding</i>)	286
Iron Age Ukraine and European Russia (<i>Gocha R. Tsatskhladze</i>)	289
Iron Age East-Central Europe (<i>Peter S. Wells</i>)	296
Iron Age Caucasia (<i>Adam T. Smith</i>)	303
Dark Age Greece (<i>John Bintliff</i>)	312

7: EARLY MIDDLE AGES/MIGRATION PERIOD

Introduction (<i>Pam J. Crabtree</i>)	321
Emporia (<i>John Moreland</i>)	324
Ipswich (<i>Keith Wade</i>)	331
Viking Harbors and Trading Sites (<i>Dan Carlsson</i>)	334
Dark Ages, Migration Period, Early Middle Ages (<i>Pam J. Crabtree</i>)	337
History and Archaeology (<i>Genevieve Fisher</i>)	340
State Formation (<i>Tina L. Thurston</i>)	346
Trade and Exchange (<i>Tina L. Thurston</i>)	351

Coinage of the Early Middle Ages (<i>Alan M. Stahl</i>)	356
Gender in Early Medieval Europe (<i>Christine Flaherty</i>)	361
Animal Husbandry (<i>László Bartosiewicz</i>)	366
Agriculture (<i>Peter Murphy</i>)	371
Mills and Milling Technology (<i>Colin Rynne</i>)	376
Migration Period Peoples	380
Angles, Saxons, and Jutes (<i>Genevieve Fisher</i>)	381
Baiuvarii (<i>Thomas Fischer</i>)	384
Dál Riata (<i>Elizabeth A. Ragan</i>)	386
Goths between the Baltic and Black Seas (<i>Przemysław Urbańczyk</i>)	388
Huns (<i>László Bartosiewicz</i>)	391
Langobards (<i>Neil Christie</i>)	393
Merovingian Franks (<i>Bailey K. Young</i>)	396
Ostrogoths (<i>Karen Carr</i>)	402
Picts (<i>Colleen E. Batey</i>)	403
Rus (<i>Rae Ostman</i>)	406
Saami (<i>Lars Ivar Hansen and Bjørnar Olsen</i>)	408
Scythians (<i>Jan Chochorowski</i>)	411
Slavs and the Early Slav Culture (<i>Michał Parczewski</i>)	414
Vikings (<i>Sophia Perdikaris</i>)	417
Visigoths (<i>Karen Carr</i>)	419
Viking Ships (<i>Ole Crumlin-Pedersen</i>)	423
Jewelry (<i>Nancy L. Wicker</i>)	426
Boats and Boatbuilding (<i>D. M. Goodburn</i>)	430
Clothing and Textiles (<i>Rae Ostman</i>)	433
Viking Settlements in Iceland and Greenland (<i>Thomas H. McGovern</i>)	436
Hofstaðir (<i>Thomas H. McGovern</i>)	442
Viking Settlements in Orkney and Shetland (<i>Gerald F. Bigelow</i>)	445
Early Christian Ireland (<i>Terry Barry</i>)	450
Clonmacnoise (<i>Heather A. King</i>)	456
Raths, Crannogs, and Cashels (<i>James W. Boyle</i>)	460
Deer Park Farms (<i>C. J. Lynn</i>)	462
Viking Dublin (<i>Patrick F. Wallace</i>)	466
Dark Age/Early Medieval Scotland (<i>Elizabeth A. Ragan</i>)	469
Tarbat (<i>Martin Carver</i>)	476
Early Medieval Wales (<i>Harold Mytum</i>)	480
Anglo-Saxon England (<i>Genevieve Fisher</i>)	489
Spong Hill (<i>Catherine Hills</i>)	496
Sutton Hoo (<i>Martin Carver</i>)	498
West Stow (<i>Pam J. Crabtree</i>)	500
Winchester (<i>Martin Biddle</i>)	501
Viking York (<i>P. V. Addyman</i>)	508
Merovingian France (<i>Bailey K. Young</i>)	511
Tomb of Childeric (<i>Bailey K. Young</i>)	519
Early Medieval Iberia (<i>David Yoon</i>)	525
Pre-Viking and Viking Age Norway (<i>Sophia Perdikaris</i>)	533
Pre-Viking and Viking Age Sweden (<i>Nancy L. Wicker</i>)	537

Pre-Viking and Viking Age Denmark (<i>Tina L. Thurston</i>)	542
Finland (<i>Deborah J. Shepherd</i>)	548
Poland (<i>Przemysław Urbańczyk</i>)	554
Russia/Ukraine (<i>Rae Ostman</i>)	563
Staraya Ladoga (<i>Rae Ostman</i>)	568
Hungary (<i>László Bartosiewicz</i>)	572
Czech Lands/Slovakia (<i>Petr Meduna</i>)	580
Germany and the Low Countries (<i>Peter S. Wells</i>)	586
Southern Germany (<i>Thomas Fischer</i>)	593

Glossary 599

Index 615



MAPS

VOLUME I

Maps of Ancient Europe, 8000–2000 B.C.	xix–xxiv
European and Mediterranean obsidian sources	68
Selected sites in Mesolithic Iberia	158
Selected sites where remains of wild and domesticated grains have been found	205
Ranges of the wild ancestors of early livestock	212
The concentration of sites in eastern and central Neolithic Greece	220
Selected sites in the western Mediterranean	250
Extent of <i>Linearbandkeramik</i> settlement	260
Selected sites of Copper Age Cyprus	348
Distribution of civilizations and selected Cucuteni- Tripolye sites	355
Selected Neolithic lake dwellings in the Swiss Alpine region.	386
Selected sites in southern Scandinavia	421
Selected sites in Late Neolithic/Copper Age Iberia.	457
Extent of Bell Beakers in Europe, the earliest dates of their appearance, and their provinces	475

VOLUME II

Maps of Ancient Europe, 3000 B.C.–A.D. 1000	xvii–xxii
Tin deposits in Europe	7
Principal trade routes of the Early and Middle Bronze Ages	28
Poggiomarino, Italy, and environs.	43
Selected sites in southeast Iberia	46
Eurasia about 2000 B.C. showing general location of selected cultures	93
Bronze Age Transcaucasia	102
Selected sites in Bronze Age Cyprus.	109
Minoan Crete and selected sites	117


VOLUME II

Some of the principal <i>oppida</i> in Europe.	155
Iron production sites from 800 to 400 B.C.	165
Distribution of Greek pottery of the fourth quarter of the sixth century B.C. (not including east Greek pottery).	199
The Black Sea region with major Greek colonies and local peoples.	209
Selected sites in Iron Age France.	213
Selected sites in Iron Age Ireland	233
Selected hillforts in the West Hallstatt Zone in southwest Germany.	243
Selected sites and selected populi of Iron Age Iberia	254
Provinces and traditional cultural regions of Finland	277
Selected sites and major polities in Bronze Age and Iron Age Caucasia	304
Main emporia (<i>wics</i>) of northwest Europe	325
Some Viking harbors and towns in the Baltic Sea region.	335
Major copper sources and oxhide ingot findspots	352
Key sites and kindred territories of early Dál Riata	387
Extent of the Wielbark culture during the third century A.D. and second half of the fourth century A.D.	389
The traditional view of Syagrius's kingdom, stretching across most of northern Gaul.	397
Extent of Ostrogothic migrations	402
General extent of Pictland.	404
Location of Slavs in the beginning of sixth century A.D. in light of written sources and of archaeological data	415
Extent of Visigothic migrations	420
Scotland in the mid-sixth century and c. A.D. 900	470
Selected sites in early medieval Wales	481
Selected sites in early medieval Iberia	526
Selected Pre-Viking and Viking Age sites in Denmark	543
Early medieval towns in Russia, Scandinavia, and Byzantium	564
Early Migration period population movements.	573
The Czech lands from the arrival of the Slavs to the beginnings of the Czech Premyslide state	582
General features of southern Germany	594



PREFACE

When we were originally approached by Scribners to consider editing this encyclopedia, our motivations for accepting this challenge were identical. We were both keenly aware of the lack of authoritative yet comprehensive information on European archaeology written for the general readership. In particular, we knew that many high school, college, and public libraries have very limited holdings in this area, and we wanted to fill this gap.

Although European prehistory stretches back hundreds of thousands of years to the original colonization of the Continent by *Homo erectus* populations from Africa, we chose to focus this encyclopedia on the period after the retreat of the Ice Age glaciers. These are the critical millennia during which the foundations of later European society known from later historical accounts were established. The Gauls encountered by Caesar, the Celts, the Germans, the Visigoths, and all the other European peoples whom we see hazily through the lens of Classical authors had ancestors whom we know only from archaeology. Moreover, outside the view of the Classical authors, peoples in northern and eastern Europe continued to live prehistoric lives well after written records are available for much of western and southern Europe.

The boundary dates for this encyclopedia were chosen deliberately. Although the Ice Age had ended a millennium or more earlier, the post-glacial hunting and gathering societies that had become well-established by 8000 B.C. in many parts of Europe define the beginnings of continuous sequences of cultural development. Tracing such long-term patterns of social and economic change is one of the major intellectual contributions of archaeology. Extending our coverage to A.D. 1000 allows us to encompass the societies that followed the Roman domination of western Europe and the peoples of eastern and northern Europe lying outside the Roman frontiers during the first millennium A.D. Around A.D. 1000, institutionalized governments organized on territorial principles were established in eastern Europe and Scandinavia, and the resultant emergence of written records effectively ends prehistory in these areas.

In choosing contributors, we invited colleagues who are active researchers and who are among the authorities on their specific regions, topics, and periods. Archaeologists and prehistorians normally write for an

audience composed of fellow scholars, so writing for a non-specialist readership can pose a challenge. We would like to commend our contributors for writing such splendid essays that explain what happened between about 8000 B.C. and A.D. 1000 across Europe so clearly and lucidly. Archaeologists are also unusually busy people, and we are grateful that they were able to compose their entries on a very short (in the academic world) schedule. Many of these essays were written by colleagues preparing to depart on excavation projects or having just returned from the field.

This encyclopedia is divided into seven sections. The first contains introductory essays on important concepts in archaeology, with specific reference to European prehistory, while the six that follow divide the sequence of cultural developments into major periods: Mesolithic hunters and gatherers, the first Neolithic farmers, developed Late Neolithic farming societies, stratified societies of the Bronze Age, Iron Age towns and trade, and the peoples of the Migration period and Early Middle Ages. Throughout we have included separate articles on key archaeological sites, chosen from among thousands of sites throughout Europe because they are typical for the period being discussed or have particularly informative remains. A glossary provides definitions of key terms, while a detailed index serves as a guide to important topics. Chronological charts and maps in each volume give the reader a way of quickly becoming oriented in time and space.

The task of inviting, persuading, cajoling, and hounding all these contributors fell to Alja Collar of Scribners, without whom this encyclopedia would not have been possible. Alja was firmly and resolutely at the helm as she steered this book in only a year from invitation to completion. We are completely indebted to her. We are also grateful to Cindy Clendenon and Shawn Corridor, who helped coordinate the illustrations and maps that are essential elements of this encyclopedia. Sharon Malinowski played an important role in the initial stages of planning and invitation.

It is important for us to recognize the role of Kathy Moreau in the initiation of this project. Kathy encouraged us to develop the plan for the encyclopedia and brought us to New York to meet John Fitzpatrick, senior editor at Charles Scribner's Sons. The enthusiasm of Kathy and John for this project led us to move quickly to develop the list of topics and contributors.

Since we both have demanding professional responsibilities at our respective institutions, much of the time that we devoted to this encyclopedia was extracted from our family lives. Our spouses, Doug Campana and Virginia Bogucki, were generously understanding, as were our children Mike, Tom, and Robert Campana and Caroline and Marianna Bogucki.

Finally, it is our understanding that Bernard Wailes, professor emeritus of anthropology at the University of Pennsylvania, played a key role in pointing Kathy Moreau in our direction. Bernard played a key role in both of our careers in archaeology, not only by transferring to us some small part of his encyclopedic knowledge but also by instilling in us a passion for studying ancient Europe. We would like this encyclopedia to honor our teacher, mentor, colleague, and friend, Bernard Wailes.

PETER BOGUCKI
PAM J. CRABTREE
OCTOBER 2003



MAPS OF ANCIENT EUROPE, 8000–2000 B.C.

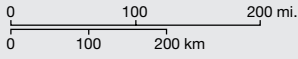
Human geography is an essential dimension of archaeology. The locations that ancient people chose for their settlements, cemeteries, and ritual activities are very important for understanding how European societies developed and declined.

Archaeological sites are found throughout Europe. The maps on the following pages show the locations of selected sites mentioned in the text and give an overview of their distribution on a large scale. Smaller and more detailed maps accompany many specific articles.

For clarity, we have divided Europe into five major regions: Northwestern Europe, which covers the British Isles and nearby portions of the Continent; Northern Europe, which includes the North European Plain and Scandinavia; Southwestern Europe, the Iberian Peninsula and the lands around the western Mediterranean; Southeastern Europe, which includes the Danube Basin and Greece; and Eastern Europe, the area east of the Bug River and the Carpathians. Areas beyond these maps, such as the Caucasus and Cyprus, are covered in smaller maps in the relevant articles.

Maps in this volume cover some of the sites mentioned in parts 1 through 4, primarily from the hunter-gatherers of the Mesolithic to the farmers of the Late Neolithic and Copper Age.

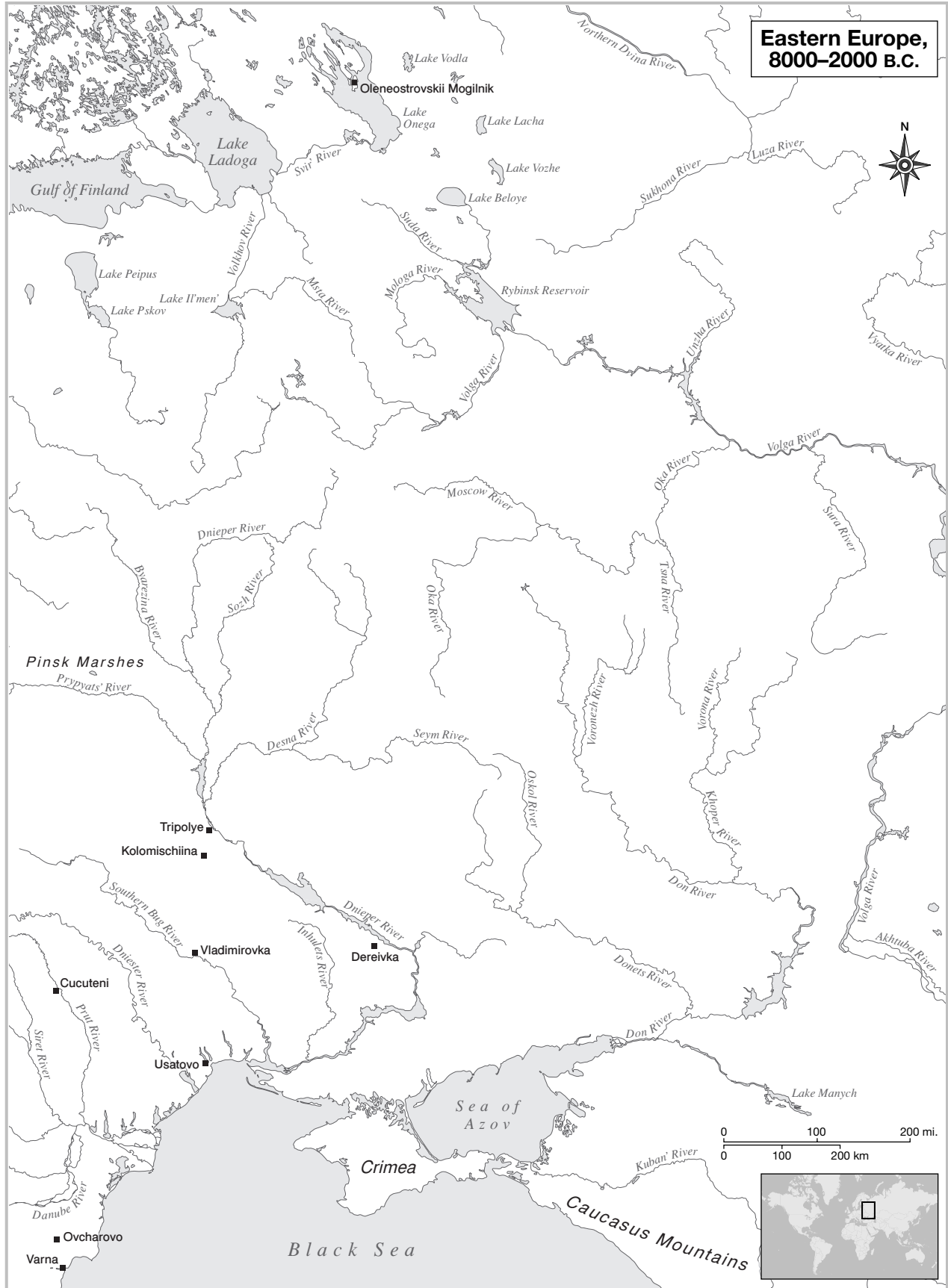
**Northwestern Europe
and the British Isles,
8000-2000 B.C.**











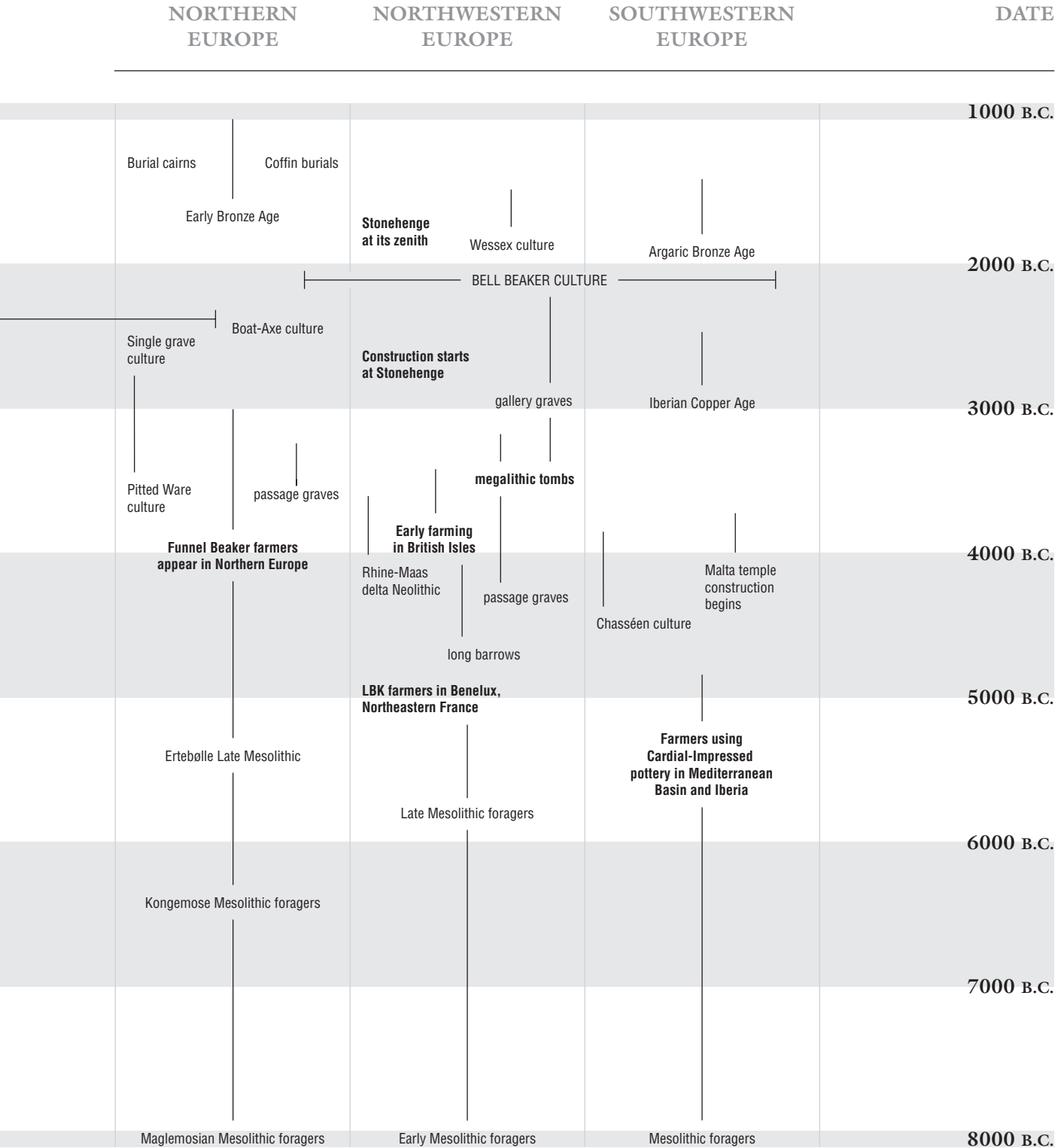


CHRONOLOGY OF ANCIENT EUROPE, 8000–1000 B.C.

Archaeologists need to make sense of how the archaeological record fits together in time and space. A simple tool for organizing this information is a chronological chart, which can be thought of as a timeline running vertically, with the oldest developments at the bottom and the most recent at the top. The vertical lines indicate the duration of cultures and people, whose date of first appearance is indicated by the label at the bottom of the line. The horizontal lines indicate cultures and events that spanned more than one geographic region. Historical events or milestones appear in boldface type.

The following chronological chart traces the development of ancient society in Europe from the hunter-gatherers of the Mesolithic period to the end of the Neolithic or the Copper Age, between about 8000 and 2000 B.C., over six principal regions of Europe: Eastern, Southeastern, Central, Southwestern, Northwestern, and Northern. The chart also includes some events up to 1000 B.C., foreshadowing developments covered in volume II. Key developments (such as the earliest appearance of agriculture in each area), important archaeological cultures (such as *Linearbandkeramik* and *Corded Ware*), and special types of sites (such as megalithic tombs) are shown. The chronological chart should be used in conjunction with the individual articles on these topics to give the reader a sense of the larger picture across Europe and through time.

DATE	SOUTHEASTERN EUROPE	EASTERN EUROPE	CENTRAL EUROPE
1000 B.C.	<p>Iron use appears</p> <p>Mycenae Knossos</p> <p>Otomani culture</p> <p>Nagyrev culture</p> <p>Early evidence for bronze metallurgy</p>	<p>Timber Grave culture</p> <p>Development of steppe pastoralism</p> <p>chariot use</p> <p>Fatyanova culture</p> <p>catcomb graves</p>	<p>Urnfields</p> <p>Tumulus Middle Bronze Age</p> <p>Únětice culture Early Bronze Age</p> <p>Bell Beaker culture</p> <p>CORDED WARE CULTURE</p> <p>Globular Amphora culture</p>
2000 B.C.	<p>Minoan civilization</p>	<p>Yamnaya (Pit Grave culture)</p>	<p>The Iceman</p>
3000 B.C.	<p>Baden culture</p>	<p>horse riding</p>	<p>Swiss lake dwellings</p> <p>Michelsberg culture</p> <p>Lengyel culture</p>
4000 B.C.	<p>Earliest traces of copper metallurgy</p> <p>Tiszapolgár culture</p>	<p>horse domestication</p> <p>Sredny Stog culture</p>	<p>Rössen culture</p>
5000 B.C.	<p>Vinča culture</p>	<p>Cucuteni-Tripolye culture</p>	<p>Neolithic Linearbandkeramik (LBK) farmers spread</p>
6000 B.C.	<p>Starčevo – Körös – Criş farmers in northern Balkans</p> <p>First farmers appear in Greece and Crete</p>	<p>Bug-Dniester</p> <p>Dnieper-Donets culture</p>	
7000 B.C.	<p>Iron Gates Mesolithic sites</p>		
8000 B.C.	<p>Mesolithic hunter-gatherers</p>	<p>Mesolithic foragers</p>	<p>Mesolithic hunter-gatherers</p>





CONTRIBUTORS

P. V. ADDYMAN

*York Archaeological Trust,
retired*
Viking York

ALBERT AMMERMAN

Classics, Colgate University
Survey and Excavation

NIELS H. ANDERSEN

Moesgård Museum
Sarup

SØREN H. ANDERSEN

National Museum of Denmark
Tybrind Vig

DAVID W. ANTHONY

Hartwick College
Archaeology and Language
Bronze Age Herders of the
Eurasian Steppes
Domestication of the Horse
The Farming Frontier on the
Southern Steppes

BETTINA ARNOLD

*Department of Anthropology,
University of Wisconsin,
Milwaukee*
The Heuneburg
Iron Age Feasting
Iron Age Germany

PAUL G. BAHN

Archaeologist and author
The Iceman
Origins and Growth of
European Prehistory

DOUGLASS W. BAILEY

Cardiff University
Ovcharovo
Varna

H. ARTHUR BANKOFF

*Department of Anthropology,
Brooklyn College, City University
of New York*

The Early and Middle
Bronze Ages in
Temperate Southeastern
Europe

WILLIAM K. BARNETT

The Field Museum
Spread of Agriculture
Westward across the
Mediterranean

TERRY BARRY

Trinity College
Early Christian Ireland

LÁSZLÓ BARTOSIEWICZ

*Loránd Eötvös University,
Budapest, Hungary*

Animal Husbandry
Hungary
Huns

COLLEEN E. BATEY

*Department of Archaeology,
University of Glasgow*
Picts

MARIE BESSE

*Department of Anthropology and
Ecology, Geneva University*
Sion-Petit Chasseur

MARTIN BIDDLE

University of Oxford
Winchester

GERALD F. BIGELOW

*Department of Geography-
Anthropology, University of
Southern Maine*
Viking Settlements in
Orkney and Shetland

JOHN BINTLIFF

Leiden University
Dark Age Greece
Mycenaean Greece
Settlement Patterns and
Landscapes

EMMA BLAKE

University of Michigan
Sardinia's Bronze Age
Towers

PETER BOGUCKI

School of Engineering and Applied Science, Princeton University
Brześć Kujawski
Introduction: Consequences of Agriculture, 5000–2000 B.C.
Introduction: Discovering Barbarian Europe
Introduction: Masters of Metal, 3000–1000 B.C.
Introduction: Postglacial Foragers, 8000–4000 B.C.
Introduction: Transition to Agriculture, 7000–4000 B.C.
Late Bronze Age Urnfields of Central Europe
The Mesolithic of Northern Europe
Neolithic Sites of the Orkney Islands

CLIVE BONSALE

University of Edinburgh
Iron Gates Mesolithic

JAMES W. BOYLE

New York University
Raths, Crannogs, and Cashels

MARTIN BRIDGE

Institute of Archaeology, University College, London
Dating and Chronology

JOANNA BRÜCK

Department of Archaeology, University College, Dublin
Bronze Age Britain and Ireland

MIHAEL BUDJA

Department of Archaeology, University of Ljubljana
Obre
Transition to Farming in the Balkans

MARY CAHILL

Irish Antiquities Division, National Museum of Ireland
Irish Bronze Age Goldwork

DOUGLAS V. CAMPANA

New York University
The Nature of Archaeological Data

DAN CARLSSON

Gotland University, Sweden
Viking Harbors and Trading Sites

KAREN CARR

Portland State University
Ostrogoths
Visigoths

MARTIN CARVER

University of York
Sutton Hoo
Torbarn

SERGE CASSEN

Laboratoire de Préhistoire, Université de Recherche Mixte de Recherche
Barnenez

TIMOTHY CHAMPION

Department of Archaeology, University of Southampton
Iron Age Britain

TERESA CHAPA

Departamento de Prehistoria, Universidad Complutense
Iberia in the Iron Age

JOHN CHAPMAN

Department of Archaeology,

University of Durham
Ritual and Ideology

ROBERT CHAPMAN

Department of Archaeology, University of Reading
Los Millares

JAN CHOCHOROWSKI

Uniwersytet Jagiellonski, Instytut Archeologii
Scythians

ALICE CHOYKE

Aquincum Museum, Budapest, Hungary
Arbon-Bleiche 3
Neolithic Lake Dwellings in the Alpine Region

NEIL CHRISTIE

School of Archaeology and Ancient History, University of Leicester
Langobards

JOHN COLLIS

Department of Archaeology, University of Sheffield
Gergovia
Iron Age France
Oppida

PAM J. CRABTREE

Department of Anthropology, New York University
Early Middle Ages/Dark Ages/Migration Period
Introduction: Discovering Barbarian Europe
Introduction: Early Middle Ages/Migration Period
Introduction: The European Iron Age, c. 800 B.C.–A.D. 400
The Nature of Archaeological Data
West Stow

OLE CRUMLIN-PEDERSEN
Viking Ship Museum, Roskilde
Viking Ships

BARRY CUNLIFFE
Institute of Archaeology,
University of Oxford
Danebury

JANUSZ CZEBRESZUK
Institute of Prehistory, Adam
Mickiewicz University, Poznań,
Poland
Bell Beakers from West to
East
Corded Ware from East to
West

PETRA DARK
Department of Archaeology,
University of Reading
Archaeology and
Environment

ERNESTINE S. ELSTER
Cotsen Institute of Archaeology,
University of California, Los
Angeles
Achilleion

GEORGE EOGAN
University College Dublin
Boyne Valley Passage Graves

GENEVIEVE FISHER
Peabody Museum of Archaeology
and Ethnology, Harvard
University
Angles, Saxons, and Jutes
Anglo-Saxon England
History and Archaeology

THOMAS FISCHER
Department of Archaeology of the
Roman Provinces, University of
Köln
Baiuvarii
Southern Germany

CHRISTINE FLAHERTY
Department of Anthropology,
Columbia University
Gender in Early Medieval
Europe

ANNE BIRGITTE GEBAUER
Department of Anthropology,
University of Wisconsin, Madison
Saltbæk Vig
Transition to Agriculture in
Northern Europe

MICHAEL N. GESELOWITZ
IEEE History Center,
Rutgers University
Ironworking
Origins of Iron Production

ANTONIO GILMAN
Department of Anthropology,
California State University,
Northridge
El Argar and Related Bronze
Age Cultures of the
Iberian Peninsula

MARK GOLITKO
University of Illinois at Chicago
First Farmers of Central
Europe

D. M. GOODBURN
Museum of London
Boats and Boatbuilding

DETLEF GRONENBORN
Römisch-Germanisches
Zentralmuseum
Bruchenbrücken

JULIE M. HANSEN
Boston University
Crops of the Early Farmers
Franchthi Cave

LARS IVAR HANSEN
Institute of History, University of
Tromsø
Saami

A. F. HARDING
Department of Archaeology,
University of Durham
Biskupin

COLIN HASELGROVE
Department of Archaeology,
University of Durham
Coinage of Iron Age Europe

CATHERINE HILLS
Department of Archaeology,
University of Cambridge
Spong Hill

STEFANIE JACOMET
Institute for Prehistory and
Archaeological Science, University
of Basel
Arbon-Bleiche 3
Neolithic Lake Dwellings in
the Alpine Region

LAWRENCE H. KEELEY
University of Illinois at Chicago
First Farmers of Central
Europe
Warfare and Conquest

HEATHER A. KING
National Monuments Service,
Dublin
Clonmacnoise

A. BERNARD KNAPP
Department of Archaeology,
University of Glasgow
Bronze Age Cyprus

LARS LARSSON
Department of Archaeology and
Ancient History, Lund
University
Skateholm

JONATHAN LAST
English Heritage Centre for
Archaeology
Bylany

JANET E. LEVY

Department of Sociology and Anthropology, University of North Carolina, Charlotte
Gender

MALCOLM LILLIE

Wetland Archaeology and Environments Research Centre, University of Hull
Kolomischiina
Late Neolithic/Copper Age
Eastern Europe
Trackways and Boats

KATINA T. LILLIOS

University of Iowa
Late Neolithic/Copper Age
Iberia

LEENDERT P. LOUWE

KOOIJMANS
Faculteit der Archeologie, Universiteit Leiden
Transition to Farming along the Lower Rhine and Meuse

C. J. LYNN

Environment and Heritage Service
Deer Park Farms

SUSAN MALIN-BOYCE

New York University
Celtic Migrations
Celts
Hallstatt and La Tène
Manching

CAROLINE MALONE

University of Cambridge
Avebury
Late Neolithic Italy and Southern France
The Neolithic Temples of Malta
Stonehenge

THOMAS H. MCGOVERN

Anthropology Department, Hunter College, City University of New York
Hofstaðir
Viking Settlements in Iceland and Greenland

PETR MEDUNA

Institute of Archaeology, Academy of Sciences of the Czech Republic
Czech Lands/Slovakia

PAUL MELLARS

Department of Archaeology, Cambridge University
Star Carr

FRANCESCO MENOTTI

Institute of Archaeology, Oxford University
Poggiomarino

ROGER MERCER

Royal Commission on the Ancient and Historical Monuments of Scotland
Hambledon Hill

MAGDALENA S. MIDGLEY

University of Edinburgh
Consequences of Farming in Southern Scandinavia
Long Barrow Cemeteries in Neolithic Europe
Rondels of the Carpathians

SARUNAS MILISAUSKAS

Department of Anthropology, State University of New York, Buffalo
Late Neolithic/Copper Age
Central Europe

JOHN MORELAND

Department of Archaeology, University of Sheffield
Emporia

PETER MURPHY

Centre of East Anglian Studies, University of East Anglia
Agriculture

MATTHEW L. MURRAY

Department of Sociology and Anthropology, University of Mississippi
Ritual Sites: Viereckschanzen

HAROLD MYTUM

Department of Archaeology, University of York
Early Medieval Wales

BJØRNAR OLSEN

Institute of Archaeology, University of Tromsø
Saami

RAE OSTMAN

Exploratorium, San Francisco, California
Clothing and Textiles
Etruscan Italy
Rus
Russia/Ukraine
Staraya Ladoga

MICHAŁ PARCZEWSKI

Uniwersytet Jagiellonski, Instytut Archeologii
Slavs and the Early Slav Culture

WILLIAM A. PARKINSON

Department of Anthropology, Florida State University
Early Copper Mines at Rudna Glava and Ai Bunar
Early Metallurgy in Southeastern Europe
Late Neolithic/Copper Age
Southeastern Europe

MARK PEARCE

Department of Archaeology,

University of Nottingham
The Italian Bronze Age
The Significance of Bronze

EDGAR PELTENBURG
Department of Archaeology,
University of Edinburgh
Copper Age Cyprus

SOPHIA PERDIKARIS
Department of Anthropology and
Archaeology, Brooklyn College,
City University of New York
Vikings
Pre-Roman Iron Age
Scandinavia
Pre-Viking and Viking Age
Norway

FRANCIS PRYOR
Fenland Archaeological Trust
Flag Fen

RUSSELL S. QUICK
University of Illinois at Chicago
Warefare and Conquest

BARRY RAFTERY
Department of Archaeology,
University College, Dublin
Hillforts
La Tène Art

ELIZABETH A. RAGAN
Department of History, Salisbury
University
Dál Riata
Dark Age/Early Medieval
Scotland

IAN RALSTON
Department of Archaeology,
University of Edinburgh
Iron Age Social
Organization

NEIL ROBERTS
School of Geography,
University of Plymouth

Postglacial Environmental
Transformation

PETER ROWLEY-CONWY
Department of Archaeology,
University of Durham
Ajvide
Arene Candide

CURTIS RUNNELS
Department of Archaeology,
Boston University
First Farmers of Europe

NERISSA RUSSELL
Department of Anthropology,
Cornell University
Livestock of the Early
Farmers
Milk, Wool, and Traction:
Secondary Animal
Products

COLIN RYNNE
Department of Archaeology,
University College, Cork
Mills and Milling
Technology

JÖRG SCHIBLER
Institute for Prehistory and
Archaeological Science,
University of Basel
Arbon-Bleiche 3

Neolithic Lake Dwellings in
the Alpine Region

NIAL SHARPLES
Cardiff University
Maiden Castle

DEBORAH J. SHEPHERD
Center for Medieval Studies,
University of Minnesota
Finland
Iron Age Finland

ALAN H. SIMMONS
Department of Anthropology and

Ethnic Studies, University of
Nevada, Las Vegas
Last Hunters and First
Farmers on Cyprus

I. G. SIMMONS
Department of Geography,
University of Durham
Humans and Environments

DAVID B. SMALL
Department of Sociology and
Anthropology, Lehigh
University
The Minoan World

ADAM T. SMITH
Department of Anthropology,
University of Chicago
Iron Age Caucasia

JOHN SODERBERG
Department of Anthropology,
University of Minnesota
Glossary

ALAN M. STAHL
Dibner Institute for the History
of Science and Technology, M.I.T.
Coinage of the Early Middle
Ages

LOUISE STEEL
Department of Archaeology,
University of Wales, Lempeter
Knossos

VAJK SZEVERENYI
Ph.D. candidate, University of
Oxford
The Early and Middle
Bronze Ages in Central
Europe

LAURA A. TEDESCO
New York University
Bronze Age Transcaucasia

I. G. N. THORPE

*Department of Archaeology, King
Alfred's College*

The Megalithic World

TINA L. THURSTON

*Department of Anthropology,
University at Buffalo, State
University of New York*

Pre-Viking and Viking Age

Denmark

State Formation

Trade and Exchange

**CHRISTOPHER TOLAN-
SMITH**

CTS Archaeological Services

The Mesolithic of Northwest
Europe

ANNE TRESSET

*Centre National de la Recherche
Scientifique*

Beginnings of Farming in
Northwestern Europe

GOCHA R. TSETSKHLADZE

University of Melbourne

Greek Colonies in the East
Iron Age Ukraine and
European Russia

ROBERT H. TYKOT

*Department of Anthropology,
University of South Florida*

Trade and Exchange

PRZEMYSŁAW URBAŃCZYK

*Institute of Archaeology and
Ethnology, Polish Academy of
Sciences*

Goths between the Baltic
and Black Seas

Iron Age Poland

Poland

HELLE VANDKILDE

*Department of Archaeology and
Ancient History, Lund
University*

Bronze Age Cairns

Bronze Age Coffin Burials

Bronze Age Scandinavia

Spišský Štvrtok

Tollund Man

BARBARA VOYTEK

*Institute of Slavic, East
European, and Eurasian Studies,
UC Berkeley*

The Mesolithic of Upland

Central and Southern

Europe

KEITH WADE

*Suffolk County Council
Archaeological Service*

Ipswich

BERNARD WAILES

*Department of Anthropology,
University of Pennsylvania
University Museum*

Irish Royal Sites

Iron Age Ireland

PATRICK F. WALLACE

*National Museum of Ireland
Viking Dublin*

PETER S. WELLS

*Department of Anthropology,
University of Minnesota*

Germans

Germany and the Low

Countries

Greek Colonies in the West

Hjortspring

Hochdorf

Iron Age East-Central

Europe

Kelheim

Status and Wealth

Vix

NANCY L. WICKER

*Art Department, Minnesota
State University*

Jewelry

Pre-Viking and Viking Age

Sweden

PETER C. WOODMAN

*National University of Ireland,
Cork*

Mount Sandel

DAVID YOON

Independent Scholar

Early Medieval Iberia

BAILEY K. YOUNG

*History Department, Eastern
Illinois University*

Merovingian France

Merovingian Franks

Tomb of Childeric

JOÃO ZILHÃO

*Faculdade de Letras,
Universidade de Lisboa*

Caldeirão Cave

The Mesolithic of Iberia

Muge Shell Middens

MAREK ZVELEBIL

*Department of Archaeology,
University of Sheffield*

The Mesolithic of Eastern
Europe

Oleneostrovskii Mogilnik

Pitted Ware and Related

Cultures of Neolithic

Northern Europe



DISCOVERING BARBARIAN
EUROPE



INTRODUCTION

Almost everyone has seen a picture of Stonehenge, the famous circle of large upright stones in southern England. Yet very few people know that it was built in several stages over a period of more than a thousand years, starting nearly five thousand years ago. Most are unaware that it is surrounded by dozens of burial mounds and other earthworks that created a vast Bronze Age ritual landscape. Moreover, despite its fame, Stonehenge is only one of many arrangements of upright stones in the British Isles. Archaeologists puzzle over the Bronze Age societies that built these monuments; however, they know that they were not Druids, to whom popular literature often attributes Stonehenge. The burial mounds have yielded traces of gold, copper, bronze, and amber artifacts—the relics of an elite social class that was able to acquire exotic materials from a distance. Very little is known of where they lived, although it appears that their settlements were simple farmsteads similar to others in the surrounding countryside. The important thing is that Stonehenge did not appear suddenly but rather was built by a thriving society that had inhabited the region for centuries and whose distant descendants eventually met the Romans when they arrived in Britain almost two thousand years later.

When Julius Caesar described the customs of the native inhabitants of Gaul and Britain in his account of his campaigns, he was writing of a land where agriculture had been practiced for nearly five thousand years, yet states and empires had not emerged. During these millennia, however, the European continent had witnessed a remarkable series

of transformations of human society. Its people had gone from being hunters and gatherers in the new forests that appeared after the Ice Age to establishing chiefdoms with large settlements that were almost cities. Along the way, they became farmers, learned to use metals, and developed complex social structures. After the Romans came and went, the native peoples of Europe established their own states and cities, many of which still exist today.

The Greeks called these native peoples of Europe outside their borders “barbarians.” Ever since, barbarians have had a bad reputation. Today, most people use the term to mean someone or something coarse, uncultured, even crudely violent. They use the term loosely, as a pejorative for all that does not conform to some idea of what it means to be civilized. Archaeologists and historians who study early Europe know, however, that the prehistoric European societies were not all that barbaric, certainly no more so than any other prehistoric societies around the world. The accomplishments of these societies extend far beyond Stonehenge to encompass a variety of technological, social, economic, and artistic achievements.

It is in this spirit of celebrating these societies that we have assembled Scribner’s *Ancient Europe 8000 B.C.–A.D. 1000: Encyclopedia of the Barbarian World*. We have brought together a team of some of the most knowledgeable archaeologists and historians who study these ancient European societies to write chapters on their own areas of specialization. The maps show the distribution of archaeological finds across Europe, and the illustrations present

some of the most important discoveries. Timelines highlight what was happening at various times in different parts of Europe. A glossary enables the reader to find definitions of key archaeological terms.

Our definition of “barbarian Europe” encompasses the nine millennia between about 8000 B.C. and A.D. 1000. These starting and ending points are deliberately, not arbitrarily, chosen. The beginning is marked by the freeing of Europe from glacial ice and the establishment of modern climatic conditions, and the end is determined by the spread of Christianity across northern and eastern Europe and the establishment of many European states that persist into the present. During these nine thousand years, European society was dramatically transformed.

We have aimed for broad geographical coverage from the Atlantic to the Urals and from the North Cape to the islands of the Mediterranean Sea. To the extent that some events in Europe, such as the spread of agriculture, have their roots in the Near East, we have included coverage of Anatolia, known today as Turkey, in some sections of this volume. Around A.D. 1000, the Vikings extended their reach beyond Europe to Greenland and North America, and several centuries earlier, the Vandals migrated along the northern shore of Africa. European prehistory touches several continents.

It is important to realize that the archaeological record of Europe extends back much further than ten thousand years ago. Early hominids appeared on the doorstep of Europe about 1.7 million years ago at Dmanisi in Georgia. The earliest traces of Stone Age settlement in Europe date at least to 700,000 years ago and perhaps even earlier at sites in southern Europe. Over the next several hundred thousand years, humans reached as far north as southern England and central Germany, where they left hand axes, chopping tools, and their skeletal remains at sites such as Boxgrove in England and Bilzingsleben in Germany. Neanderthals flourished in southern and western Europe between 100,000 and 35,000 years ago, and their eventual disappearance remains a mystery to archaeologists. Anatomically modern humans reached Europe as the ice sheets were beginning one final push southward. On the steppes of southern Russia and Ukraine, they built large houses from the bones and jaws of mammoths at

sites like Kostenki and Mezhirich. In southwestern France and northern Spain, they drew remarkable polychrome depictions of large animals on the walls of caves. After the ice began to retreat, they pursued the herds of reindeer north, ambushing them as they migrated across the tundra in northern Germany and Denmark.

The European archaeological record does not end at A.D. 1000. High-medieval and post-medieval sites have many layers of archaeological deposits, and their contents can reveal quite a bit about everyday life. We already know something of these societies from historical documents, and the relationship between the archaeological record and the historical record is complicated. It is clear, however, that these were societies that had the degree of organizational complexity that could be called a “state” or a “civilization,” and thus they exit the barbarian world and approach modernity.

Why are the barbarian societies of Europe important? We believe that there are several reasons. The first is that the barbarian societies of Europe provided the technological, economic, social, and cultural foundations for the late medieval and modern European societies that we know from historical accounts. The continuity observed in the archaeological record means that the precursors of all sorts of modern customs and practices have their roots deep in antiquity. DNA evidence makes it possible now even to identify modern individuals as the distant descendants of people whose skeletons are found in prehistoric graves.

Moreover, the inhabitants of Europe between 8000 B.C. and A.D. 1000 left one of the most detailed and complete archaeological records of any major geographical region in the world. Many sites, especially in the wetlands of northern Europe, are remarkably well preserved. Beginning with the antiquaries of the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries and continuing with the pioneering work of nineteenth- and twentieth-century archaeologists such as Augustus Henry Pitt-Rivers and Grahame Clark, scholars have collected an immense amount of information on prehistoric settlements and burials. This information, in turn, has formed the foundation for interpretations of ancient life that hold a high degree of certainty rather than mystery.

Finally, the archaeological record of prehistoric Europe provides an important counterbalance to

the view of many historians that unless it was written about, it did not happen. Although Greeks and Romans observed them at a distance from about 500 B.C. onward, native Europeans wrote almost nothing down until Irish monks began to keep written records in the fifth century A.D. and the Vikings began to inscribe their runic letters on stones. As a result, the prehistoric peoples of Europe are almost entirely absent from most histories that deal with the ancient world.

Who studies European barbarian societies? Principally, this topic has been of greatest interest to archaeologists, both from Europe and from elsewhere, although some historians also are interested in the people who came into contact with the literate civilizations of Greece and Rome. Archaeologists are people who study past societies through their material remains. Contrary to the impression given by the Indiana Jones movies, archaeologists do not usually lead lives of great danger in the pursuit of unique mythical items such as the Holy Grail. Instead, they painstakingly piece together the past through the meticulous discovery and excavation of archaeological sites and the analysis and interpretation of the artifacts, skeletons, seeds, and bones that they find. Archaeologists sometimes are called *prehistorians*, for unlike historians, who study the texts and monuments left by ancient civilizations, most archaeologists study preliterate peoples who did not leave their own written history.

The information that archaeologists have is very fragmentary: flakes of flint, pieces of pottery, burned seeds, and the ends of bones. Only rarely do they find the whole objects that one sees in museums. Much of what prehistoric people threw away was not preserved to the present. Wood and skin survive in only very wet or very dry conditions. Sometimes the archaeologist's work is like trying to determine the contents of a room only by looking through the keyhole. Archaeologists do not know the names of the individuals who left the tools and bones. Unless they find a preserved body, such as those found in the Danish bogs, they do not know exactly what these people looked like. Until very late in prehistory, archaeologists do not even know the names by which people identified the tribes to which they belonged.

Archaeologists can discern a surprising amount, however, from those pieces of pottery and bone.

They know where prehistoric people lived and how they buried their dead. They know the kinds of tools and other objects these people used, the shape of their houses, and what they ate. Further analysis can reveal where prehistoric people obtained the raw materials they used to make things, how long they lived in one place, and how large their settlements were.

With this limited amount of basic information in hand, the archaeologist then looks for larger patterns. This is where the real detective work begins. By combining various types of evidence, it is possible to study the impact of prehistoric people on their environment and the ways in which they managed their crops and livestock. Patterns of trade and communication emerge. Differences in the status and wealth of individuals and communities can be observed. Art and symbolism become apparent. Ritual practices can be identified, as can conflict and warfare.

It is somewhat more difficult to discover what prehistoric people thought about gender roles, their identity as individuals, and their religious beliefs, although archaeologists make valiant efforts to try to discern these more elusive facets of their lives. Perhaps the most difficult challenge for archaeologists is to trace the development and spread of languages among prehistoric peoples. Advances are always being made in the analytical techniques available to archaeologists, so perhaps in the future it will become easier to understand these aspects of prehistoric life.

Who are the archaeologists who study European barbarians? They are usually scholars, generally very bright and hardworking people, who work in universities and museums as well as in government and private agencies that preserve the remains of ancient societies. Professional archaeologists seek knowledge, not wealth. Other archaeologists are amateurs for whom the discovery of archaeological sites is a hobby rather than a job. In Europe amateur archaeologists often work side by side with professionals, alerting them to their finds and helping in excavations. An important role is played by amateur archaeologists who have a particular skill, such as scuba diving. For example, many prehistoric sites that were once on dry land are now under water in places like Denmark, where sea levels have risen over the past five thousand years. Divers with an interest

in archaeology have discovered many remarkable sites just off the coast.

In studying archaeology, it is important to separate the factual evidence and sensible interpretations from the fantasies of those who see archaeology as a mirror for their spiritual and political beliefs. Stonehenge is of interest not only to serious archaeologists for what it can tell them about Bronze Age society but also to impressionable and gullible people who believe that it has mystical power. The corpse of a prehistoric traveler found in the Alps in 1991 has provided an immense amount of information about life five thousand years ago, but it also has been the source of all sorts of foolish speculation. Today, some might say that all interpretations of the archaeological record are equally valid. Serious archaeologists, however, place a greater value on evidence and documentation over flights of fancy and conjecture. New evidence is always coming to light that can overturn current ideas about

the past, but such evidence must be presented clearly and evaluated rigorously before it can be accepted. Only then can valid interpretations be made. Archaeologists often disagree with one another about how the archaeological record should be interpreted, but they all base their views on evidence.

The work of these archaeologists has transformed our knowledge of the European past dramatically over the past two centuries and will continue to change it even more in the decades to come. New discoveries are steadily filling gaps in what we know and altering our views of prehistoric life. We hope that as the reader explores the chapters in this encyclopedia he or she will learn not only about the abundant traces of ancient peoples that have been unearthed in Europe but also about the enthusiasm and excitement that archaeologists bring to their work of discovery and interpretation.

PETER BOGUCKI, PAM J. CRABTREE



HUMANS AND ENVIRONMENTS

Even if humans had never evolved, Europe would look different compared with the same area ten thousand years ago. In about 9500 B.C. this peninsula of the Eurasian continent still was recovering from the last great manifestations of the glaciations that had been occurring for about 2 million years (the Pleistocene period, followed after 9500 B.C. by the Holocene period, the current period) and that had been at their height about 18,000 years ago. In 9500 B.C., however, the only major sheet of ice was over Scandinavia, with smaller outliers on the mountains of Scotland and northern England. Nonetheless there was sufficient ice on the globe to lock up a great volume of water, and so sea level was well below where it is in the early twenty-first century. For example, Sardinia and Corsica were joined, the Black Sea was isolated from the Mediterranean, and England was still connected to the major landmass, though Ireland had been separated for many centuries.

LIFE AFTER THE ICE AGE

Even if the great polar ice masses were pretty well bereft of nonhuman life above ground, at their margins there were populations of phytoplankton and zooplankton, fish, migrant seabirds, penguins, seals, and whales. In the north whales, seals, arctic foxes, and polar bears were found at the margins of sea ice and land. Thus the world in 9500 B.C. was nowhere entirely deprived of life, even though proto-Europe itself was a far colder place than it later became.

It is no surprise therefore that an array of increasingly complex and biologically diverse ecologi-

cal systems covered the landmass south of the Scandinavian ice and that, as the climate ameliorated, these systems moved northward. By 9500 B.C. the formation (usually called a “biome,” meaning an integrated system of soils, plants, and animals) nearest the ice, the tundra, was restricted in area and was largely maritime in distribution. The bulk of the Continent was covered in boreal forest, dominated by coniferous trees and containing a great deal of wetland and with a mammal fauna that included moose, beaver, and reindeer. Open land at higher elevations was home to reindeer and wild horse, as was the tundra. To the south was a broad band of temperate forest dominated by a mixture of temperate species, such as oaks, elms, linden, and hazel. A small admixture of conifers was found on poorer soils and at high altitudes. The fauna included red deer and roe deer as well as wild ox, or aurochs. The Mediterranean fringe was covered in steppe and grassland.

One feature of the deglaciated land of Europe was a scattering of lakes, some long and thin in valleys formerly occupied by glaciers and others more round in hollows in glacial debris or in front of ice sheets, as with the Scandinavian basin that was to become the Baltic Sea. The whole was flanked to the west and south by saltwater seas, the open Atlantic and its inlets to the west and the more enclosed and warmer Mediterranean in the south. Where major rivers entered the sea, long branched estuaries with salt marshes and freshwater fens kept pace with rises in sea level.

Such a banding of biomes was home to hunter-gatherer populations of the types usually labeled Upper Palaeolithic. Some groups depended upon coastal fishing and others on mammal populations, such as reindeer or wild horses. Still others inhabited the depths of the deciduous woodlands, and the farther south the groups were, the greater the vegetable content of their diets. All had to show adaptability in the face of the biological and climatic changes that were to come.

EARLY HOLOCENE WARMING

One of the lessons from the present plethora of research into climatic history is that change is not necessarily gradual. In the case of Europe the transition from the tail end of the ice ages to a much more temperate climate was quite rapid. About 9500 B.C. amelioration started to produce warm surface waters (above 14°C [57.2°F]) around the coasts of western Europe, and warming rates may have reached about 1°C (1.8°F) per century in these waters. On land, rates of 3 to 4°C (5.4 to 7.2°F) per 500 years have been postulated for France and even 1.7 to 2.8°C (3.06 to 5.04°F) per century in not yet insular Britain. Overall the climates of Europe may have reached levels similar to those of the twentieth century or even a little warmer by 7000 B.C.

The consequences for the natural world and hence for human habitats were profound. The vegetation belts and their associated fauna shifted northward, so most of Europe was a cool temperate forest zone with dominance by broad-leaved trees. There were montane variants in the Alps, and over much of Scandinavia and eastern Russia the overwhelming dominance of conifers meant that a taiga, or open forest, was the land cover. A taiga biome also penetrated some of the loess lands of the northern European plain, and the Black Sea had a broad penumbra of moist steppe, which was in essence treeless grassland. Within all these biomes, the better conditions encouraged rapid plant growth, so many lakes left in glaciated regions began to fill with organic debris and the area of open water shrank when colonized by marginal vegetation.

A major result of the warming was more free water in the oceans as the polar, mountain, and Laurentide ice sheets melted, producing what are termed “eustatic” rises in sea level. Such increments, however, often were in opposition to isostat-

ic rises in land levels as land surfaces rose when freed from the weight of the ice that had depressed them. The northern part of the Gulf of Bothnia has risen about 850 meters during the Holocene and is still rising at 9 millimeters per year. Northern Britain is still rising, too, though at less than 3 millimeters per year, and the south is sinking at up to 2 millimeters per year. Thus many European coasts during the era of barbarism were the outcomes of competition between eustasy and isostasy, with the latter winning easily to the north. The shorelines and harbors from which the Vikings launched their ships were almost 8 meters above the modern sea level.

The largest-scale physical consequence of sea-level change is found in the Baltic. The region underwent a four-stage evolution in which there was an interaction of ice retreat, eustatic rises of sea level, and isostatic rebound. During the Terminal Pleistocene the Baltic essentially was an ice-dammed freshwater lake, but the retreat of ice in central Sweden led this lake to fall by about 28 meters and become connected to the Atlantic, thus turning brackish. By 7000 B.C. this outlet was closed, and the new but narrow outlet that developed in the region of the Great Belt allowed the Baltic to become a freshwater lake again. After 6500 B.C. more saltwater penetrated, since increased eustasy was accompanied by decreasing isostasy, bringing about the twenty-first-century salinity gradients of the Baltic-Lake Ladoga region.

THE HOLOCENE OPTIMUM

Between c. 7000 and 4000 B.C. the climate in Europe reached its optimal level (the Hypsithermal) in the present interglacial. It was not, however, uniform in its onset. In the British Isles the maximal warmth was about 6000–4500 B.C., whereas in northern Europe 4000–2500 B.C. saw the highest average temperatures. There are of course no instrumental records, but data from fossil pollen and other organic remains, the stratigraphy of lakes and bogs, and from tree rings suggest that temperatures were at least 1 to 2°C (1.8 to 3.6°F) above those of the late twentieth century. This implies of course that the spread of agriculture into much of Europe and the development of all the more complex societies of Celtic Europe and their early medieval successors took place in periods of climatic deterioration (albeit with warmer remissions). The hunter-gatherers had had the best of the weather.

The consequences for the natural environment are obvious to some extent. The forest belts extended northward, so mixed deciduous forest was dominant over much of Europe, save from mid-Scandinavia northward, where conifers and birch predominated, and in mountainous areas. Here there were always more conifers, though not to the extent familiar in the Alps, for example, where there was more beech (*Fagus* spp.). The steppes of the east retreated in favor of woodland cover. Within the forests, too, species that were adapted to greater warmth flourished. The lime (*Tilia* spp.) is a good example, along with ivy (*Hedera* sp.), holly (*Ilex*), and mistletoe (*Viscum*). The European pond tortoise (*Emys orbicularis*), confined to the Mediterranean in the twenty-first century, was found in Denmark and southern Sweden. The presence of insect and molluscan faunas also reflected the warmth, but of greater importance for human communities were the large mammals, such as the red and roe deer, wild ox, wild pig, and beaver. As the optimal period peaked, agriculture became important, and it is clearly critical that such cereals as wheat and barley were able to ripen even in the British Isles and southern Scandinavia.

Another feature of the optimal period was its water relations. In the early part the climate over most of Europe was drier than in the twenty-first century, but as time passed there was a move to wetter conditions, especially in the west. In part this change reflected the increasing influence of the sea as its levels rose. A leading consequence of this continued eustasy was the formation of the Dover Strait and then the submergence of the low-lying terrain between England and the Low Countries to form the North Sea. By c. 7400 B.C. the British Isles were insulated from the rest of Europe, and it took the completion of the Channel Tunnel in the 1990s to make it possible again to walk from Dover, England, to Calais, France. In cultural terms this separation took place in the Mesolithic. The adoption of agriculture in the British Isles necessarily was preceded by a sea passage of some kind of mix of ideas, people, seeds, and young cattle.

Wetter conditions are reflected to some extent in higher lake levels and thus the renewal of lake-fringe successions, but they are most apparent in upland areas and the western fringe of Europe. Two processes are notable. The first is the leaching of

minerals down the profiles of many types of soils, particularly from those on such acid substrates as sandstone and gritstone. The redeposition of minerals, such as iron and manganese, in solid horizons (“pans”) made the soils prone to becoming waterlogged, and hence their floras moved away from large tree species toward wet- and acid-tolerant species, such as birch, and to dwarf shrubs of the Ericaceae family. On some uplands in Scandinavia and the British Isles great blankets of peat formed on low slopes where the rainfall exceeded about 700 millimeters per year. It is possible that there was some human involvement in the inception of these miry spreads, whose surface often was one of the bog mosses of the genus *Sphagnum*.

POPULATION AND ENVIRONMENT AT 5000 B.C.

A synoptic look at this time reminds one that the fundamental change in the human condition, namely the adoption of agriculture, had penetrated to most regions in which cereals would ripen. The breeding of hardier varieties and the extensive use of oats (*Avena* spp.) in the coolest and wettest places later extended this zone. Along with cereals and pulses, cattle and sheep were essential ingredients of the agro-ecosystems that developed. All this implies that human communities were responsible for new genotypes as economies based on domestication got farther away from the southwestern Asian heartland and moreover that new ecosystems were an inevitable consequence of the new cognition of nature that grew out of the imperatives of farming as a way of life. The rises in sea level were helpful in allowing drift in the North Atlantic onto coasts north of 50 degrees latitude in places where otherwise ice might be expected. A few places nonetheless retained hunters or developed herders; only the latter groups (e.g., the Saami) were to persist beyond “prehistoric” times.

BARBARIAN LANDS THROUGH TO MEDIÉVAL TIMES

The next major environmental changes of wide significance to human societies in Europe were a significant deterioration in climate after 700 B.C., with a better phase during A.D. 1–600 and then a period of warmth between c. A.D. 900 and 1250 known as the Little Optimum or the Medieval Warm Epoch (MWE). The very existence of this latter fluctuation

is to some extent uncertain, but it seems best attested to in northern and western Europe. This forms a convenient terminal point because certainly by the end of this period the whole of Europe possessed some form of Christian culture. The implication, however, is that the development of the relatively complex societies that were labeled barbarian by the Greeks, the Romans, and then Christendom were all constructed in a period of relatively poor climate (with temperatures perhaps 1 to 2°C [1.8 to 3.6°F] below those of the more recent past). This was a time in which a series of fluctuations produced, among other effects, southward and downward movements of tree lines, more conifers in mountains and central Scandinavia, more rapid peat growth, more sea ice in the North Atlantic basin, and a lowering of sea temperatures.

The evidence from ice and peat cores, too, shows that there were short-term fluctuations caused by volcanic eruptions, especially in Iceland. A major expulsion of debris into the atmosphere can produce demonstrable decreases in temperature (a kind of “nuclear winter”) and no doubt declines in crop yield. Within the period of most interest, fall-out of volcanic ash (“tephra”) from Icelandic sources (especially the mountain Hekla) can be detected much farther south, with tephra horizons at 1525–1850 B.C., 635–1100 B.C., A.D. 365–415, and A.D. 850–1050. Estonia felt two impact craters c. 4000 and 2000 B.C. The whole of Europe (and perhaps a wider area) suffered from extreme cold in the years around A.D. 540. The MWE, by contrast, usually is thought to have caused the retreat of sea ice, which allowed Norse colonization of Iceland and Greenland. Temperatures 1°C (1.8°F) higher than those of the late twentieth century have been suggested for northwestern Europe.

None of these deleterious influences prevented the occupation of Europe by a series of societies based on agriculture, whose accomplishments were by no means negligible, even if they lacked the literate attainments of classical peoples. All the different types of environments contained successful and indeed apparently sustainable economies, which were subject only to the usual environmental hazards of preindustrial economies. Crop failure, animal diseases, warfare, and civil breakdown are all recorded, and no doubt the pressures of population growth upon the resource base were critical, at least locally.

Most coasts, except those facing north, attracted economies in which fish were important, provided that a cereal could be grown or traded. The tundra-boreal forest (taiga) zone developed reindeer herding. The deciduous forest proved amenable both to shifting cultivation and to permanent clearance for mixed farming. The mountains sustained valley agriculture, in which transhumance of animals eventually formed an integral part of food production. The introduction of irrigation into the Mediterranean, however, was the result of Islamic influence upon the classical cultures; it was not one that any barbarians adopted, except in areas they reclaimed after attacking parts of the Roman Empire. In all of these areas the influence of environment cannot be gainsaid, yet in none of them is there certainty that human culture and choice were negligible. There were always roads not taken.

HUMAN IMPACTS ON THE ENVIRONMENT OVER ELEVEN MILLENNIA

Accepting that agriculture spread into northern and western Europe during the period 6000–4000 B.C., then some westernmost parts housed 4,000 years of Holocene hunter-gatherers. More central and southerly regions had hunter-gatherer populations from the Late Pleistocene right through to the time when farming became an irreversible way of life. The notion that food-collecting economies do not manage their environments in the manner of agriculturalists has long been abandoned, especially with the realization that fire is a potent management tool at the landscape scale. There is evidence of considerable burning in the Late Pleistocene and Early Holocene in the northern European plain, the Low Countries, and the lowlands of northeastern England, for example—though it is always possible that the tundra and birch-scrub vegetation could have been set alight by lightning in what was then a more Continental climate.

In the wetter uplands of the British Isles and Norway, however, fire apparently was used to combat the upward spread of forests and to maintain openings in woodlands that dominated the Middle Holocene. The presence of shrubs such as hazel (*Corylus avellana*) probably was deemed to be advantageous as direct food sources as well as browse for forest mammals, and so closed-canopy high forest was not an optimal source of food. Where trees

were removed or prevented from growing, their water-pump effect was lost. The subsequent water-logging and acidification of soils (accelerated where charcoal clogged the soil pores) were instrumental in the growth of blanket peat over wide areas, a process whose inception could happen at later times if forests disappeared and whose enlargement thereafter was sensitive to climate. On drier sites with acid soils, heath developed. Its continued existence depended on being grazed and burned; otherwise it would be colonized by scrub and then oak woodland.

If many hunter-gatherers existed in a mosaic of woodland and open areas, little adaptation would have been needed for early agriculturalists. Although the idea that the pioneers were all shifting slash-and-burn farmers has been superseded, the growth of cereals in small clearings that also housed domestic stock whose dung maintained soil fertility would scarcely have been ecologically radical even if it was culturally revolutionary. The practice of feeding leafy branches to domestic stock would have thinned out canopies, and the success of sedentary farming, letting populations expand, would have diminished the area of forests and increased the cover of secondary woodland and open grassland. Hence the gatherer-hunters and the prehistoric farmers together changed many of the European ecosystems—especially those of the mixed deciduous forest zone—into a cultural landscape with more natural patches. The reindeer herders, on the other hand, seem to have exerted environmental influence only near settlements, and there is no evidence that prehistoric populations had lasting effects upon populations of sea creatures.

Between the onset of Neolithic farming cultures and the end of “barbarianism,” all human communities dependent on agriculture had in common the need to maintain the fertility of the fields and to cope with any expansions in human populations. The period also may have seen substantial migrations of human groups across Europe, though DNA-based evidence calls some of this movement into question while reinforcing various older interpretations. By one means or another new ideas found their way across the Continent. For example, the transmission of rye as an addition to the cereal repertoire allowed more intensive use of the southern fringe of coniferous lands in Russia and Scandi-

navia, with the results still visible in their bakeries. The moldboard plow allowed cultivation of heavier soils, and no doubt contact with Roman methods encouraged more intensive use of land even outside the *limes*.

In some forested zones the prehistoric farmers practiced shifting cultivation (which persisted in Finland into the nineteenth century). This was a good adaptation to woodland and a low population density, but it was less effective than permanent clearances that are well manured. Hence much agriculture between the Neolithic and the High Middle Ages was a variant on keeping up the fertility of the grain-, pulse-, and hay-producing fields. Their drainage, irrigation, fertilization, and general management all have environmental linkages, which involve manipulation of the preexisting ecosystems (many of which would certainly not be “natural”).

Alongside these processes, those of the modification of the genetics of plants and animals proceeded. The differentiation of the plow horse and the warhorse is a simple example. Some periods stand out as particularly important. The age of the development of iron technology is certainly one of them. In many palaeoecological investigations across Europe, the beginning of the Iron Age saw intensified forest clearance, as this became altogether easier with the use of a hard-edged axe. At the same time the production of iron exerted an environmental impact. Apart from the digging for ore, the smelting process required significant amounts of charcoal. Then iron-tipped plows allowed the turnover and aeration of heavier soils in a kind of snowball effect of environmental change, which also contributed more silt to the river floodplains from higher soil-erosion rates; river estuaries and deltas changed shape and biological components.

Beyond the fields, Iron Age economies changed woodlands, as cattle and pigs were allowed to graze and browse in them and the woods were managed to provide leaf fodder. Wetlands were reclaimed as coastal communities learned to construct banks that kept out the tides. *Egil's Saga*, written in Iceland in about A.D. 1230, records a visit to the Frisians that details their occupation of the salt marsh-fen-wood zone of the coasts of the Low Countries. The tidal marshes were the scene of salt production in the Iron Age, and thereafter the heaps of waste from this activity in turn provided raised settlement sites

for villages and fields. Inland peat bogs, too, were reclaimed, at least at the edges. There is some suggestion, too, that pagan Saxon aristocracies were keen enough on hunting to have areas set aside for the pleasure of the chase, though not on the scale of their Christian Norman successors. Many “barbarian” societies had notions of sacred space, which very likely meant the setting aside of land and water. The Early Mesolithic site at Star Carr in northern England is neatly on the kind of peninsula that taiga communities in Russia later used as sacred locations; part of southern England was, in one interpretation, an “isle of the dead” in the Neolithic. The ambiguity of the woodlands and wild terrain generally as sources of useful materials, as land banks, and as places of some dread are encapsulated in later European folklore and fairy tales. The element of fear is well expressed in the famous narrative poem *Beowulf* of Anglo-Saxon times.

In most of Europe the division of the landscape into “owned” units is evident in the landscape. Even if some of them were communally rather than privately owned, there were nevertheless few resources—and hence few parts of nature—that did not in some way belong to human communities or individuals. In a sense a stratification of human societies occurred (described for the Celts in some of the most detailed written accounts of European societies outside the classical world), which was accompanied by a fragmentation of nature. There were fields, the “waste,” mountains, and moors that were of less value and even frightening, and there were eventually proto-urban settlements with different social groupings and with expanding trade networks (e.g., the Viking routes that encircled Europe by c. A.D. 850 and impinged upon the Caspian by A.D. 880). Many parts of the natural world became commodities to be exploited and sold. No doubt the example of the Romans flowed over into later societies in that respect.

As with most preindustrial societies, there is no doubt that the inhabitants of barbarian Europe were closer to the natural world than their fossil-fueled successors. The story is one of a generally one-way movement toward more intensively productive agro-ecosystems capable, in the end, of supporting craftspeople, aristocrats, merchants, and townsfolk. Granted there were reversals when the pollen diagrams record the recolonization of scrub and wood-

land, when disease was regionally devastating, or when an authoritative power withdrew, as when the Romans left some parts of northern Europe or when a lord decided to punish his neighbors. In essence, however, the peoples under scrutiny created distinct cultural landscapes, just as happened in the classical world. Many signs of those environments are present in the twenty-first century for the discerning eye and the careful spade to discover.

See also *Star Carr* (vol. 1, part 2); *Saami* (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Adams, J. M., and H. Faure, eds. *Review and Atlas of Palaeovegetation: Preliminary Land Ecosystem Maps of the World since the Last Glacial Maximum*. Oak Ridge, Tenn.: National Laboratory, 1997. Available at <http://www.esd.ornl.gov/projects/qen/adams1.html>.
- Andersen, S. T., and B. E. Berglund. “Maps for Terrestrial Non-Tree Pollen (NAP) Percentages in North and Central Europe 1800 and 1450 B.P.” *Paläoklimaforschung* 12 (1994): 119–134.
- Baillie, M. G. L. “Putting Abrupt Environmental Change Back into Human History.” In *Environments and Historical Change*. Edited by Paul Slack, pp. 46–75. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1999.
- Barker, Graeme. *Prehistoric Farming in Europe*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1985.
- Bell, Martin. “People and Nature in the Celtic World.” In *The Celtic World*. Edited by Miranda J. Green, pp. 145–158. London and New York: Routledge, 1996.
- Bell, Martin, and Michael Walker. *Late Quaternary Environmental Change: Physical and Human Perspectives*. Harlow, U.K.: Longman Scientific and Technical; New York: Wiley, 1992.
- Berglund, B., H. J. B. Birks, and M. Ralska-Jasiewiczowa, eds. *Palaeoecological Events during the Last 15,000 Years*. Chichester, U.K.: Wiley, 1996.
- Dark, Ken R., and Petra Dark. *The Landscape of Roman Britain*. Stroud, U.K.: Sutton Publishing, 1997.
- Donner, Joakim. *The Quaternary History of Scandinavia*. World and Regional Geology, no. 7. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1995.
- Huntley, B., and H. J. B. Birks. *An Atlas of Past and Present Pollen Maps of Europe 0–13,000 Years Ago*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1983.
- Janssen, W. “‘Landnahme’ and ‘Landesbau’: Variations of Early Environmental Alterations.” *Paläoklimaforschung* 8 (1992): 181–190.
- Kalis, A. J., J. Merkt, and J. Wunderlich. “Environmental Changes during the Holocene Climatic Optimum in Central Europe: Human Impact and Natural Causes.” *Quaternary Science Reviews* 22, no. 1 (2003): 33–79.

- Roberts, Neil. *The Holocene: An Environmental History*. 2d ed. Oxford and Malden, Mass.: Blackwell, 1998.
- Sherratt, A. "The Human Geography of Europe: A Prehistoric Perspective." In *An Historical Geography of Europe*. Edited by R. A. Butlin and R. A. Dodgshon, pp. 1–25. Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1998.
- Simmons, Ian. *The Environmental Impact of Later Mesolithic Cultures: The Creation of Moorland Landscape in England and Wales*. Edinburgh: Edinburgh University Press, 1996.
- Simmons, I. G. "Towards an Environmental History of Europe." In *An Historical Geography of Europe*. Edited by R. A. Butlin and R. A. Dodgshon, pp. 335–361. Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1998.
- Welinder, S. "Quantifying the Iron Age Landscape of South Sweden." *Paläoklimaforschung* 8 (1992): 191–205.

I. G. SIMMONS



THE ORIGINS AND GROWTH OF EUROPEAN PREHISTORY

Europeans have always been curious about the past, but before archaeology or even antiquarianism came into being, their only notions of remote antiquity came from written records, oral histories, religious beliefs, and above all, legends and superstitions, which often ascribed ancient relics and monuments to the devil, giants, elves, mythological heroes, and the like. Buried antiquities often came to light accidentally, through plowing or construction: large stone tools were explained as thunderbolts, and in eastern Europe, pottery vessels that mysteriously emerged from the ground through the activities of burrowing animals were seen as “magic crocks.” In medieval Europe, Christian beliefs ruled supreme, the Bible was seen as literal truth, and it was thought that God created the world in seven days. In 1650 James Ussher, archbishop of Armagh, claimed that the world was created on 23 October 4004 B.C., a calculation that seems ridiculous now but was quite conventional at that time, in an age before techniques were developed that could establish a chronology based on natural science.

From the end of the fifteenth century onward, and especially during the European overseas expansion from the sixteenth to the eighteenth centuries, there were encounters with foreign cultures, many of them “primitive.” They were equated in culture and appearance with the ancient peoples of the Old World, who were known from classical sources. This period also saw the rise of antiquarianism, a growing awareness of the remains of the past. In the sixteenth century in particular, some European scholars came to realize that information about the re-

mote past could be derived from the study of field monuments. Thus in 1586 William Camden, for example, published *Britannia*, the first general account of early British remains, including Stonehenge, and the seventeenth-century antiquaries John Aubrey and William Stukeley did pioneering work on British monuments, combining ever improving standards of fieldwork with somewhat uncritical interpretations. Scandinavia, too, produced distinguished antiquaries in this period who studied antiquities and systematically documented ancient remains—especially megalithic monuments and burial mounds.

It was at this time, too, that the first serious attempts to obtain information from excavation took place when the Swedish antiquarian Olof Rudbeck showed that, rather than simply retrieving objects from the ground, one could treat the process like an anatomical dissection and note the objects’ relationships to different soil layers. He published stratigraphic sections of the monuments he studied in this way. Similarly, at Cocherel in France in 1685, the nobleman Robert le Prévôt excavated a prehistoric chambered tomb with painstaking care and recorded his discoveries of skeletons and objects with minute detail (fig. 1). In eastern Europe, Jan Johnston, a seventeenth-century physician, explained the mysterious “magic crocks” more rationally as prehistoric urn burials.

One of the most important advances in this period was the discovery of the true nature of early stone tools. A few scholars had observed analogies between the flaked and polished stone artifacts



Fig. 1. Fanciful nineteenth-century reconstruction of skeletons in a Danish megalithic tomb. FROM WORSAAE'S *PRIMEVAL ANTIQUITIES OF DENMARK*. BY PERMISSION OF THE SYNDICS OF CAMBRIDGE UNIVERSITY LIBRARY.

brought back by explorers from foreign lands and comparable objects found in Europe. The above-mentioned excavations also provided important confirmation of this notion, while in the early eighteenth century experiments began to replicate flint objects and reconstruct the manufacturing techniques of the ancients.

THE ESTABLISHMENT OF PREHISTORY

In the seventeenth century, when increasing numbers of early flint tools were coming to light, the conception of human antiquity still did not extend beyond written memory, and so hand axes, like megalithic monuments, were attributed to Celts or pre-Roman peoples such as the Gauls. A book by the French polymath Isaac Lapeyrière, in which he argued that “thunderbolts” were artifacts of an ancient “pre-Adamite” race, was publicly burned in

Paris by the Inquisition, and the author was forced to recant before the pope. By the Age of Enlightenment, in the second half of the eighteenth century, a new spirit of inquiry in all domains had arisen. It included a strong sense of human progress—that is, a conviction that the human condition was improving from cruder beginnings, that the ways of life of contemporary hunter-gatherers thus might resemble those of early Europeans, and that stone artifacts were indeed tools from before the use of iron. Lucretius, a Roman poet of the first century B.C., already had written of the likely sequence of human technologies from stone to bronze to iron. It was only with the reorganization of the Danish National Museum for History in Copenhagen by Christian Jürgensen Thomsen in the early nineteenth century that this “Three Age System” finally became established as the cornerstone of prehistoric chronology. Order was brought to chaos, and objects could be



Fig. 2. Excavations at the site of Maiden Castle in England in the 1930s. COPYRIGHT THE SOCIETY OF ANTIQUARIES OF LONDON. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

placed in a sequence, grouped according to the period to which they belonged, and characterized by tools of stone, bronze, or iron.

Toward the end of the eighteenth century, a craze for barrow digging—the excavation of ancient burial mounds—took hold in western Europe (fig. 2). This was a phenomenon that caused terrible damage to numerous ancient monuments, especially as few records were kept and finds were subsequently lost. Some digs nonetheless were noteworthy in Denmark and particularly in Britain, where William Cunnington and Richard Colt-Hoare were pioneers of careful and scientific excavation. They were unable, however, to assess how old the objects they unearthed might be.

In 1797 an English gentleman farmer called John Frere found worked stone tools, including hand axes, in a brick quarry at Hoxne, Suffolk, at a depth of 4 meters (13 feet) in an undisturbed de-

posit that also contained the bones of large extinct animals. He not only recognized the stones as artifacts but also attributed them to “a very remote period indeed.” His publication of the finds went largely unnoticed.

A major turning point came by the mid-nineteenth century, when it finally became established that humans had coexisted with extinct animals. At the beginning of that century, such scholars as François de Jouannet had begun collecting flint tools and visiting caves in the Périgord region of southwestern France, and it became apparent that the cruder flaked tools probably preceded the more advanced polished forms. All such artifacts were attributed to “Gauls.” In Britain, William Buckland unearthed a burial, stained with red ochre, in a cave at Paviland in Wales and believed this “red lady” (actually a male) to be Romano-British despite the presence of elephant, rhinoceros, and bear bones. Buckland did not believe in the

contemporaneity of humans and extinct animals, but John MacEnery, exploring Kent's Cavern at Torquay in southwestern England, found flint tools mixed with the bones of extinct fauna and became convinced that they were associated.

Similar discoveries were made in other parts of Europe. Paul Tournal, a French pharmacist from Narbonne, through his work at the cave of Bize, came to propose the existence of fossil humans—he also had found cut marks on associated bones of extinct animals. Tournal's great importance is that he stressed the geological evidence and broke the tradition of linking ancient cave deposits with the biblical Flood. By 1833 he already was dividing the last geological period into the historic (going back seven thousand years) and the "antehistoric," of unknown duration. This was the first use of such a term and launched the whole idea of prehistory. It was also Tournal who came to see the disappearance of extinct animals as being due not to catastrophes like the Flood but rather to the same gradual processes of change that are seen in modern times. This approach, of explaining the past through modern laws, was to become even better known through the work of the Scottish geologist Charles Lyell.

In his *Principles of Geology* (1830–1833), Lyell proposed that all past geological processes were the same as those of the present and spanned a tremendously long period, so that there was no need for supernatural catastrophes like Noah's Flood to explain the stratigraphic record, or fossil record. Thanks to his influential work, "catastrophism" gave way to "uniformitarianism," the notion that, if geological processes past and present are uniform, then Earth's surface must have been shaped by sedimentation and erosion over aeons, thus rendering Ussher's date of 4004 B.C. for the creation of the world nonsensical.

One factor that had helped convince Lyell was his visit to the excavations by Jacques Boucher de Crèvecœur de Perthes at Abbeville, France. Boucher de Perthes, a customs officer and amateur archaeologist, produced a three-volume work, *Celtic and Antediluvian Antiquities* (1847–1864), that drew a clear distinction between the ancient flaked industries (antediluvian) and the more recent polished tools (Celtic). His excavations in the gravels of the Somme region encountered stone tools in

deep deposits alongside the bones of mammoths and woolly rhinoceroses.

In tandem with these developments in archaeology, the first solid remains of fossil humans also had been unearthed. In 1833 the Belgian Philippe-Charles Schmerling published the results of his work in caves around Liège, where he had discovered at Engis, for example, what are now believed to be Neanderthal burials. Another Neanderthal was found at Gibraltar in 1848, but it was in 1856, at the Feldhofer Grotto in the Neander Valley, Germany, that the existence of "Neanderthals" finally was proved, despite considerable doubts and skepticism from the scientific establishment. Everything came together in 1859 with the publication of Charles Darwin's *On the Origin of Species by Means of Natural Selection*, a work heavily influenced by Lyell that saw different organisms, including humans, not as the result of divine creation but as the products of natural evolution. Four years later Lyell's own *Antiquity of Man* integrated all these disparate lines of evidence and laid the foundations for both prehistoric archaeology and palaeo-anthropology.

GETTING UNDER WAY

Until the mid-nineteenth century, the investigation of the remote past had been a pastime for amateurs and country gentlemen; henceforth it began to turn into a science, with specialist practitioners and established procedures and terminology. In late-nineteenth-century Europe, archaeology developed into a serious scholarly activity in which accurate collection of data was of growing importance. The 1850s, for instance, saw the discovery of the Swiss Neolithic lake settlements, with their extraordinary preservation of organic materials that normally perish and thus elude the archaeologist. In the same period the excavations of Johann Ramsauer began in the huge Iron Age cemetery of Hallstatt in the Austrian Alps, where he investigated a thousand graves over the course of nineteen years and meticulously recorded his findings. In both cases, archaeology began to reveal to the world the sophistication of some prehistoric communities and the extensive trade networks in exotic materials that existed in some areas during prehistory.

Another kind of sophistication—that of the remarkable art of the Ice Age—also came to light dur-

ing the late nineteenth century. First were the portable carvings and engravings that were unearthed in excavations by such pioneers as Edouard Lartet and Henry Christy in rock shelters of the Dordogne during the 1860s. Their discovery of a mammoth engraving on a piece of mammoth ivory at the shelter of La Madeleine was one of the final decisive proofs of human antiquity. Then came the gradual discovery of paintings and engravings on cave walls in France and Spain, beginning with Altamira in 1879, found by the little daughter of the Spanish polymath Marcelino Sanz de Sautuola. For a variety of reasons, the world was not ready to accept that such splendid artistic creations could have come from the “primitive savages” of the Stone Age, and so cave art had to wait another two decades to be authenticated and accepted by the ever reluctant scientific establishment. In 1902 the Montauban Congress of the French Association for the Advancement of Sciences officially accepted cave art based on the accumulated evidence from caves in Southwest France.

Pioneering excavators, such as the Abbé Pouech in France and William Pengelly in England, independently developed a method of laying out a grid over their sites, to record the position in three dimensions of each bone or artifact. Sir John Lubbock, in his *Prehistoric Times* of 1865, introduced the terms “Palaeolithic” (Old Stone Age, or period of flaked stone) and “Neolithic” (New Stone Age, or period of polished stone). The first journal devoted to prehistoric research, the *Matériaux pour l'histoire positive et philosophique de l'homme*, was founded in France in 1864, followed a year later by Germany's *Archiv für Anthropologie*. Lartet had proposed the first classification of prehistoric times based on animal palaeontology (e.g., the cave-bear age and the reindeer age). This was replaced in 1869–1872 by Gabriel de Mortillet with a classification based on stone tools rather than fauna and with each phase named after a “type site,” for example, the Aurignacian, named after the French rock shelter of Aurignac.

Another French scholar, Edouard Piette, was responsible for filling the apparently empty hiatus between the end of the Palaeolithic and the start of the Neolithic. In his excavations at the huge cave of Le Mas d'Azil, he established the existence of transitional phases, such as the Azilian, characterized by

painted pebbles and small harpoons. Other later industries eventually were given their own names, collectively forming the “Mesolithic,” or Middle Stone Age. It was also Piette who initiated a young French priest, Henri Breuil, into the study of prehistory—Breuil was to become a dominant figure throughout the first half of the twentieth century not just in his specialized field of Ice Age art but in the whole of prehistory.

GREAT EXCAVATIONS

As archaeology became more professional and painstaking toward the end of the nineteenth century and in the early twentieth century, the most crucial new emphasis was on establishing the context of finds, as a source of information. In this respect, the preeminent practitioner was General Augustus Henry Pitt-Rivers in England. He investigated prehistoric and Roman sites on his vast estates and used his military discipline to devise fastidious new techniques of excavation and recording, attaching particular importance to “common objects” and “trivial details” to be able to date and interpret archaeological sites. Other important excavations in this period occurred in Scandinavia. The Bronze Age burial mound of Borum Eshøj (Denmark) was found to contain two tree-trunk coffins holding a young man and an elderly woman, whose clothing was exceptionally well preserved by waterlogging. In Serbia the Neolithic tell mound of Vinča, near Belgrade, was excavated by Miloje Vasić and became a chronological yardstick for the whole of the Balkans. And in the northern Caucasus, Nikolai Veselovskii dug a Bronze Age burial mound at Maikop in 1897 and found a wooden mortuary house holding several skeletons with extraordinarily rich grave goods of gold, silver, textiles, and other exotic materials.

Perhaps the most famous excavations at this time in European prehistory were those of the German Heinrich Schliemann at Mycenae and the Englishman Arthur Evans at Knossos in Crete. Schliemann began work in Anatolia at Troy in 1870, but in 1876 he turned his attention to Mycenae on the Greek mainland, where he discovered Bronze Age royal shaft graves with their famous gold face masks. Evans revealed the pre-Mycenaean Minoan civilization of Crete in the palace of Knossos with its colored frescoes.

The increasing care with which excavations were being carried out together with the chronological schemes being devised and the unearthing of key stratigraphies, such as Vinča, led to a major focus on typology and chronology at this time. Classes of objects were arranged into linear series, usually with the simplest at one end and the most complex at the other. The leading typologist of this kind was the Swedish scholar Oscar Montelius, who eventually was able to propose a division of the northern Bronze Age into a series of six consecutive phases, based on gradual changes in artifact types. Such schemes led to the possibility of cross-dating similar objects from different places, and by linking some northern European artifacts to finds from the Aegean and Egypt, where some actual dates were available, one could deduce certain dates for various phases in other parts of Europe. In the absence of a method of obtaining absolute dates in any other way, the chronological priority of the Aegean and Egypt dominated prehistory until after World War II and encouraged the view “*Ex oriente lux*”—that all aspects of civilization had come to northern Europe from the eastern Mediterranean. One disadvantage of this approach to prehistory was that in compiling the anonymous typologies of artifacts, with different kinds moving around and spreading, scholars tended to lose sight of the people who made them.

THE TWENTIETH CENTURY

The mid-twentieth century saw a number of revolutions in prehistory. Naturally, important discoveries were made at regular intervals, such as the Ice Age decorated cave of Lascaux in 1940, but advances in other fields and in science were far more crucial—airial photography, pollen analysis, and especially radiocarbon dating. Aerial photography (the first archaeological air photos were taken of Stonehenge in 1906) rapidly grew to become an invaluable tool, offering views of entire landscapes, detecting earthworks and more subtle soil or crop changes, and making it possible to discover and study numerous hitherto unknown sites.

On the ground, excavation techniques continued to become more rigorous, and the number of professional archaeologists grew apace. The most eminent figure of the period undoubtedly was Sir Mortimer Wheeler in Britain. He followed Pitt-

Rivers’s military tradition, demanding discipline on his sites (such as Iron Age hillforts), with careful record keeping and prompt publication and particular stress on a site’s stratigraphic sequence as a key to its dating and interpretation.

In the 1930s and 1940s, environmental specialists became increasingly involved in excavation and fieldwork. Once again Scandinavians were the pioneers, producing the first landscape studies by the end of the nineteenth century. The Scandinavian scientist Lennart von Post developed a technique for reconstructing ancient vegetation by counting the pollen grains surviving in each layer of a core sample. Together with the ever-increasing refinement of the study of animal bones, plant remains, insects, and other organic material, pollen analysis offered tremendous insights into ancient climate, environment, and agriculture. The most famous approach, which firmly integrated environmental studies with the highest standards of excavation, was that of the British prehistorian Grahame Clark, as exemplified in 1949–1951 at the Mesolithic site of Star Carr—a lakeside site where waterlogging had preserved wooden tools and other organic objects. Other botanical work in this period, such as analysis of the stomach contents of Tollund Man, one of the preserved Iron Age bog bodies in Denmark, helped bring the past to life for the public.

Excavation of open-air sites, rather than caves and shelters, began to open up large areas instead of small squares or test pits—from Germany to the Soviet Union, great expanses were uncovered to trace the plans and distribution of structures. Overall, excavations became extremely slow, painstaking dissections by multidisciplinary teams concerned with placing the occupants of a site into their cultural and environmental context and recovering every possible scrap of information. The aim of archaeology was no longer the simple unearthing of precious or interesting objects but rather the solving of problems and retaining representative samples of bones, pollen, and sediments for laboratory analysis. At the same time, it became possible to produce broad syntheses, assimilating material from many different areas into an integrated picture of the past. By far the greatest specialist in this exercise was the Australian Vere Gordon Childe, who not only published extremely influential syntheses of European prehistory and coined the terms “Neolithic Revolution”

and “Urban Revolution” but also developed and popularized the concept of an archaeological culture. Such a culture was defined as a set of artifacts, limited to a particular time and place, that seem to represent a distinct people or ethnic group.

World War II, like World War I, had a devastating effect on archaeology in Europe through the general cessation of excavations, the drafting or demise of notable archaeologists, and the destruction of sites and collections. The mid-twentieth century also saw the manipulation of archaeology by Nazism in Germany and Stalinism in the Soviet Union. The Nazis, in particular, poured money into archaeological research, aiming to establish both the antiquity of German settlement across much of Europe and German superiority over other European peoples. One benefit that the war brought to archaeology was the invention of radiocarbon dating, which arose from the atom bomb research of the American chemist Willard Libby. His method has been the single most significant advance in the history of archaeology, with a truly revolutionary impact on the field. For the first time it proved possible to obtain an absolute age for organic materials, such as wood, charcoal, or bone, and thus released archaeologists from the endless need to spend time on artifact typologies and indirect dating. It meant that different avenues could be explored and different questions asked.

As such direct dating hitherto had been un hoped for in the field of prehistory, the first results provided by scientists were eagerly and uncritically accepted by most archaeologists. It rapidly became apparent from conflicts with already well-established calendar dates from the eastern Mediterranean, however, that all was not well with some radiocarbon ages. By the 1960s it was known that the results for some periods were unreliable, differing significantly from definite ages fixed by documents or tree rings and that certain other results needed to be corrected or “calibrated” to convert them from radiocarbon years to calendar years. One effect of this phenomenon was that the ages of the megalithic monuments of western Europe were pushed back, thus severing any possible links with the civilizations of the eastern Mediterranean, which had hitherto been seen as the sources of all such ideas and monuments.

LATER DEVELOPMENTS

The last two decades of the twentieth century saw further advances in the scientific techniques available to archaeologists: a wide range of dating methods for a variety of materials, more accurate instruments for “seeing” beneath the soil, the use of satellites and the global positioning system (GPS), and the ubiquitous influence of computers. The application of sampling techniques and statistical analyses has become more sophisticated. Archaeology as an academic subject has increased steadily in popularity, while a far higher percentage of resources has been diverted from research to salvage projects involving surveys and excavations ahead of the bulldozers and developers. At the same time there have been numerous different theoretical approaches to the study of the past, particularly in some parts of northwest Europe.

“Processual archaeology” arose in the 1960s, primarily in the United States, in an attempt to develop archaeology as an explicit science detached from the historical sciences that supposedly had hampered its development. Processual archaeology insisted that hypotheses had to be deduced from general principles and then tested against independent data, but very few people, least of all the main proponents of processual archaeology, ever bothered to test their hypotheses in this way. Many archaeologists remained extremely skeptical of the entire approach and simply carried on as before. Some of the proponents engaged in largely fruitless attempts to define universal laws of human behavior as deduced from archaeological analysis. More lasting and worthwhile was a notable advance in investigation of how the archaeological record reflects past human behavior, how it is produced, and the transformational processes that a site undergoes before excavation.

This “revolution” inevitably brought a reaction and rejection, which came in the late 1970s in the form of “post-processual archaeology.” Moving away from the determinism of the earlier approach, it emphasized the role of social mores, politics, and ideology in how archaeologists produce their interpretation of the past. No knowledge is politically innocent, no archaeological statement can be truly objective, and claims about the past cannot be ranked. Since then approaches to archaeology have splintered. At the beginning of the twenty-first cen-

tury, no particular trends were discernible; indeed there has been a widespread return to basic fieldwork and excavation, while the theoretical squabbles and clamoring of the late twentieth century have died away.

Major discoveries certainly will continue, as will the ability to extract increasing amounts of information from the data, helped by new scientific techniques as yet undreamed of. What can be learned today from a prehistoric site would amaze the great pioneers of the nineteenth century let alone the seventeenth century, but in view of the constantly accelerating developments in technology and science, one cannot possibly imagine what will be learned from the sites of the future.

See also **Tollund Man** (*vol. 1, part 1*); **Maiden Castle** (*vol. 1, part 1*); **Star Carr** (*vol. 1, part 2*); **Neolithic Lake Dwellings in the Alpine Region** (*vol. 1, part*

4); **Stonehenge** (*vol. 2, part 5*); **Hallstatt** (*vol. 2, part 6*); **Hillforts** (*vol. 2, part 6*).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Bahn, Paul G., ed. *The Cambridge Illustrated History of Archaeology*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1996.
- Daniel, Glyn. *The Origins and Growth of Archaeology*. Harmondsworth, U.K.: Pelican, 1967.
- Daniel, Glyn, and Colin Renfrew. *The Idea of Prehistory*. 2d ed. Edinburgh: Edinburgh University Press, 1988.
- Schnapp, Alain. *The Discovery of the Past: The Origins of Archaeology*. Translated by Ian Kinnes and Gillian Varn-dell. London: British Museum Press, 1996.
- Trigger, Bruce. *A History of Archaeological Thought*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1989.
- Van Riper, A. Bowdoin. *Men among the Mammoths: Victorian Science and the Discovery of Human Prehistory*. Chicago: Chicago University Press, 1993.

PAUL G. BAHN



THE NATURE OF ARCHAEOLOGICAL DATA

FOLLOWED BY FEATURE ESSAY ON:

Tollund Man 26

While historians use written records, such as diaries, journals, and account books, to reconstruct the past, prehistoric archaeologists rely primarily on material remains. Examples of such remains include pottery fragments, house foundations, and bones from butchered animals. The methodological challenge facing all archaeologists is to determine how these material remains can be used to reconstruct past ways of life and the ways in which prehistoric societies changed through time. Material remains include three types of data—artifacts, features, and “ecofacts.”

ARTIFACTS

Artifacts are portable objects that are either made or modified by humans. In prehistoric European sites, some of the most common types of artifacts are stone tools, pottery, and metal objects.

Stone tools are most often found on Mesolithic and Neolithic sites, although they continued to be made throughout much of the Bronze Age in some parts of northern Europe. Chipped-stone tools are made of amorphous materials—those that lack obvious planes of cleavage. In Europe, chipped-stone tools are most often made of obsidian, a volcanic glass that was widely traded throughout the Mediterranean, and flint.

The simplest way to produce a stone tool is to strike a block, or core, of stone with a hammer stone, a technique known as direct percussion. The resulting flake has a sharp edge and can be used for a variety of cutting and slicing tasks. Longer, narrower flakes, known as blades, can be produced by placing a punch made of bone, antler, or wood between the hammerstone and the core. Microliths, which are commonly found on many European Mesolithic sites, can be produced by snapping a flint blade into many small, geometric pieces. These microliths are commonly used as barbs on arrowheads. A different method of stone tool manufacture, grinding or polishing, became prevalent during the Neolithic period. While modern archaeologists view the Neolithic as the period when farming spread across Europe for the first time, the original meaning of the term “Neolithic” is “new stone age,” the period when ground and polished stone tools first appeared. Polished stone axes and adzes (a tool with the blade set perpendicular to the handle) can be used for woodworking and for forest clearance.

A second major class of artifacts is pottery. While some pottery was produced at Mesolithic sites in northern and eastern Europe, it became widespread during the Neolithic period. Pottery is made of clay, a plastic material (meaning it can be

molded or modeled) that can be manipulated into a wide range of forms, including cooking pots, pitchers, cups, storage jars, and even sculpture and other art objects.

Pottery vessels can be formed in a variety of different ways. They can be molded by hand, an example of which is the coiling technique, where coils of clay are used to create the general outline of the vessel and then are smoothed to form its final shape. During the Roman era and the Early Middle Ages, some pottery was also made using a potter's wheel. For example, Ipswich ware was produced in Ipswich, England, between the seventh and ninth centuries A.D. using a slow wheel.

During pottery production, the clay is combined with a nonplastic material known as temper to minimize cracking and shrinkage during firing. A variety of different materials were used as temper in prehistoric Europe, including shell and chaff. Pottery vessels can then be fired in either a bonfire or a kiln. During firing, the clay undergoes an irreversible chemical change, producing a material that is both durable and watertight. Pottery vessels can be decorated in a variety of ways, including painting and burnishing (polishing)—usually with a smooth stone. Since pottery fragments are durable and the techniques of manufacture and decoration vary according to both time and space, pottery is especially useful for defining and recognizing different archaeological cultures (see below). For example, the *Linearbandkeramik* (LBK) or Linear Pottery culture, which is associated with the first farmers of central Europe, is usually recognized by its distinctive pottery with incised curvilinear decorations.

Metal objects are the third principal class of artifacts found in European archaeological sites. Objects made of copper, silver, and gold are often found on later Neolithic sites in Europe. For example, Ötzi, the famous “Iceman” discovered on the border between Austria and Italy in the early 1990s, was carrying a copper axe when he died. Metal objects became far more common during the subsequent Bronze and Iron Ages. During the late third millennium B.C., the use of bronze (typically an alloy of 10 percent tin and 90 percent copper) became increasingly widespread. During the first millennium B.C., iron gradually replaced bronze for tools and weapons. By the end of the first millennium B.C., iron was produced on a very large scale in

many parts of central Europe, and everyday items, such as agricultural tools, were commonly made of iron. Coins, made of a variety of metals and alloys, also become common in the later Iron Age and the Early Middle Ages.

Many other artifacts from prehistoric Europe were made of organic materials, such as bone, antler, wood, linen, and wool. Bone and antler working is well documented from the Early Mesolithic onward at sites such as Star Carr in England. Bone continued to be widely used in Europe until the early twentieth century, when it was finally replaced by plastics. Bone and antler survive quite well in nonacidic soils, and worked bone and antler tools, such as points and combs, are known from many prehistoric and early medieval sites in Europe.

Other organic materials, such as wood, decay rapidly and survive only under special circumstances, such as waterlogging. Waterlogging produces an anaerobic environment that inhibits the action of bacteria and other microorganisms that typically destroy organic materials. Wooden canoe paddles have been recovered from the submerged Mesolithic site of Tybrind Vig in Denmark, and small wooden boats have been recovered from a variety of waterlogged sites that date from the Mesolithic period through the Early Middle Ages. In addition, small fragments of textiles sometimes survive when they are in direct contact with metal objects. For example, the textile remains that have been recovered from the Viking period trading colony of Birka in Sweden have shed light on the nature of clothing and textile manufacture in northern Europe during the Early Middle Ages.

FEATURES

Features can be thought of as nonportable artifacts. They are structures that cannot be moved about but that were constructed or modified by prehistoric people. Typical examples of archaeological features include pits, ditches, middens (trash heaps), house foundations, fortifications, hearths, and field boundaries. Some archaeological features are more visible than others. For example, the small huts at the Early Mesolithic site of Mount Sandel in Northern Ireland are marked by a circular series of small stake holes set at an angle. No traces of these small stake holes were visible on the surface of the site prior to excavation. On the other hand, large earth-

works, such as the series of earthen banks and ditches that surround the Iron Age hillfort of Maiden Castle in southwestern England, are a visible part of the landscape. Buried archaeological features can sometimes be identified using aerial photography, a technique that was first used by archaeologists after World War I. Small irregular earthen features, such as traces of ancient plowing, cast small shadows that are visible from the air early in the morning and late in the evening. Cereal crops and grass growing over excavated features, such as pits and ditches dug into the subsoil, appear greener than the surrounding vegetation during periods of drought. While these crop marks are best seen from the air, they are also visible on the ground and were first recognized by the British antiquary William Camden in the sixteenth century.

Graves are a particularly important class of features. Many human graves include grave goods—items that were placed into the grave to accompany the dead. Grave goods can include clothing, dress fasteners, jewelry, and ceramic and metal vessels that may hold food or drink, tools, weapons, and occasionally animal or human sacrifices. In some burials, bodies were placed directly into the ground, while others employed coffins or more elaborate funeral chambers. Graves are of particular interest to archaeologists since all the items within a single grave were buried at the same time. Some of the best-known examples of graves from late prehistoric and early medieval Europe include the Late Hallstatt (c. 600–480 B.C.) “princes’ graves” from west-central Europe and the Early Anglo-Saxon (seventh century A.D.) boat burials from Sutton Hoo in eastern England.

Cremation entails burning the body as part of the funerary rite. The remains of the cremation, including ash, bone fragments, and the remains of burnt grave goods, are sometimes placed in ceramic urns and then buried. The Urnfield burials of Late Bronze Age central Europe are among the most renowned examples of cremation burials in European archaeology.

ECOFACTS

Some archaeologists use the term “ecofacts” to describe a third class of material remains that are commonly recovered from archaeological excavations. Ecofacts are not necessarily made or modified by

humans, but they do provide information on prehistoric environments and the ways they were used by early peoples. Common types of ecofacts include animal bones (sometimes termed “faunal remains”), seeds and other plant remains, and plant pollen.

Animal bones are recovered in large numbers from many prehistoric and early medieval sites in Europe. For example, over 2 tons of animal bones were recovered from the Early Anglo-Saxon (c. 420–650 A.D.) village of West Stow in eastern England. Experienced zooarchaeologists (archaeologists who study faunal remains) can use the bones to identify the species and the part of the skeleton from which these animal bones come. In some cases, the sex and the age of the animal can also be determined. Faunal remains can be used to reconstruct hunting patterns, animal husbandry practices, and diet.

Plant remains are also important in the study of past farming practices and diet. Most studies of archaeologically recovered plant remains have focused on seeds, most of which survived to modern times because they were charred or waterlogged. In addition, impressions of seeds are sometimes preserved in pottery vessels and other fired-clay objects. Studies of Neolithic seed remains indicate that emmer wheat was the most common crop grown at early farming sites in central Europe. Studies of other plant remains, such as tubers, are still in their infancy. However, pioneering studies of the fleshy parts of plants have shown that tubers, such as wild beets, were collected by the Mesolithic inhabitants of the Netherlands.

Prehistoric pollen grains are commonly recovered from lake beds and archaeological sites. Pollen, along with other forms of biological and geological evidence, can be used to reconstruct the vegetational history of different regions of Europe. One of the earliest and best-known applications of pollen analysis to archaeology is the reconstruction of the Early Postglacial vegetational history of southern Scandinavia. The pollen profiles document how pioneer species of trees, such as birch, pine, and willow, were gradually replaced by trees, such as oak and linden, during the reforestation of Europe at the end of the Ice Age.

SITES

A site is defined as any concentration of artifacts, ecofacts, or features that marks a location of past human activity. Settlement sites are locations where prehistoric and early medieval people lived on either a temporary or a permanent basis. They can range from temporary camp sites, such as the Early Mesolithic site of Star Carr in Yorkshire, where hunter-gatherers resided for a few weeks, to farming villages of the Early Middle Ages that were permanently occupied for several centuries. Prehistoric Europeans also made use of quarry sites and mines to obtain raw materials, such as flint, salt, and metal ores. Cemetery sites first appear in the Late Mesolithic period in northern and eastern Europe. They are important sources of information on social organization, gender, and prehistoric ideology. Ritual or ceremonial sites, such as megalithic tombs and stone circles, can also shed light on prehistoric religion and cosmology. For example, excavations at the Iron Age site of Dún Ailinne in Ireland have revealed a series of large circular wooden structures that appear to be associated with the late prehistoric kings of Leinster. The site also appears to have served as a center for ritual feasting.

In the late twentieth century, archaeologists moved beyond the study of individual sites to examine the broader questions of prehistoric landscapes. Modern European archaeologists are concerned with the spatial relationships between archaeological sites of the same period and between individual sites and surrounding geographic features, such as lakes, rivers, forests, mountains, and valleys. Archaeologists have attempted to reconstruct the views and lines of sight from major prehistoric monuments. Stonehenge, for example, undoubtedly one of the most important sites in all of European prehistory, is situated in an agriculturally rich region in southern England known as the Downs and is surrounded by a series of wealthy burials, each of which was covered with a large earthen barrow.

INTERPRETATION: USING MATERIAL REMAINS TO RECONSTRUCT THE PAST

Archaeologists derive meaning from artifacts, features, and ecofacts by examining which kinds of remains are associated with one another, how they are distributed spatially, and how they relate to the larger landscape and environment in which they are

found. A key to the interpretation of material remains is the notion of archaeological context—the location of a find within a site and its relationship to other material remains. For example, a pottery vessel found near a hearth in a kitchen may have a very different meaning than one found within a burial pit. In order to preserve as much information as possible about archaeological context, archaeologists typically record the exact three-dimensional location of artifacts and features within a site. They also record the type of matrix (soil) in which an artifact is found and the artifacts that are associated (found together) with it. Looting (the illegal removal of artifacts from archaeological sites) destroys all information about the archaeological context of the finds. Because their context has been destroyed, looted artifacts can tell very little about the past.

Archaeological deposits are frequently stratified, or formed in a series of layers. The law of superposition indicates that the deepest stratum or layer was deposited first, and the uppermost was deposited last. Interpretation of the sequence of strata allows archaeologists to see changes through time. For example, in the early nineteenth century, Christian Jurgensen Thomsen, the first curator of the Danish National Museum, argued that stone artifacts were generally older than metal ones. The detailed excavations of his student, Jens Jacob Asmussen Worsaae, revealed that archaeological layers that contained only stone artifacts were always stratified below those that contained both stone and metal objects.

Archaeologists are also interested in studying variations in material culture across space. Archaeologists use the concept of archaeological culture to describe groups of artifacts and features that are found together repeatedly. As noted above, the *Linearbandkeramik* farmers of central Europe made distinctive pottery that was decorated with curvilinear designs. These early farmers lived in rectangular timber longhouses, grew emmer wheat, and kept cattle, pigs, and sheep. The *Linearbandkeramik* is a classic example of an archaeological culture. Archaeological cultures are limited in both time and space. LBK farming sites are spread across central Europe from France to Hungary, and most LBK sites date to the later sixth millennium B.C. It is not known whether or not all the LBK people spoke the same language or whether or not they would have

recognized each other as members of a single ethnic group. However, archaeological cultures are useful in studying spatial and temporal variations in human behavior.

Under ideal circumstances, artifacts are found exactly where they were lost or discarded by prehistoric people. In the real world, a wide range of cultural and natural processes may have affected material remains between their abandonment by prehistoric Europeans and their discovery by modern archaeologists. As discussed above, many organic artifacts begin to decay in a matter of weeks or months. Plowing, construction, and burrowing animals can disturb features and remove artifacts from their original position. Looting also damages sites. Archaeologists must carefully assess ways in which their sites were modified by postdepositional processes, such as plowing, before they can use material remains to study the past. Understanding how the archaeological record is formed allows archaeologists to use material remains to reconstruct past lifeways and understand patterns of cultural change.

Some scholars argue that archaeological research is like putting together a jigsaw puzzle that is missing many of its pieces and that has no picture on the box. Others argue that archaeologists are more like detectives, piecing together past behavior from small clues. The archaeological record, like this historical record, is fragmentary and will never provide a complete picture of prehistoric life. However, archaeologists are constantly seeking new analytical techniques that will allow them to extract additional information from material remains.

See also Maiden Castle (vol. 1, part 1); Tybrind Vig (vol. 1, part 2); Mount Sandel (vol. 1, part 2); Star Carr (vol. 1, part 2); First Farmers of Central Europe (vol. 1, part 3); Stonehenge (vol. 2, part 5); Late Bronze Age Urnfields of Central Europe (vol. 2, part 5); Ipswich (vol. 2, part 7); Sutton Hoo (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Bogucki, Peter, ed. *Case Studies in European Prehistory*. Boca Raton, Fla.: CRC Press, 1993.
- Crabtree, Pam J., and Douglas V. Campana. *Archaeology and Prehistory*. Boston: McGraw-Hill, 2001.
- Henderson, Julian, ed. *Scientific Analysis in Archaeology and Its Interpretation*. Oxford: Oxford University Committee for Archaeology, 1989.

Larsen, Clark Spencer. *Skeletons in Our Closet: Revealing Our Past through Bioarchaeology*. Princeton, N.J.: Princeton University Press, 2000.

Newell, R. R., et al. *An Inquiry into the Ethnic Resolution of Mesolithic Regional Groups: The Study of Their Decorative Ornaments in Time and Space*. Leiden, The Netherlands: E. J. Brill, 1990.

PAM J. CRABTREE, DOUGLAS V. CAMPANA

TOLLUND MAN

One of the best-known of a series of bog bodies from the Early Iron Age (500 B.C.–A.D. 1) in northern Europe is the Tollund Man. The well-preserved body was discovered during peat cutting on 8 May 1950 in Tollund Mose, near Bjælskov Dal in central Jutland, the western part of present-day Denmark. The peat cutters suspected a crime and notified the police at the nearby town of Silkeborg. The extraordinary character of the find was nevertheless soon realized, and the preeminent Danish archaeologist P. V. Glob was called in as a specialist.

The body had appeared approximately 2.5 meters below the modern surface covered by a thick layer of peat. The entire body was lifted out of the bog in a crate, and excavation was carried out at Silkeborg Museum, where the Tollund Man (at this writing) is kept. The head was treated in a pioneering way by a conservator-restorer in 1950: it was dehydrated with organic solvents followed by impregnation with wax. The body proper was reconstructed in 1987 based on the dehydrated remains and on original photos.

The deathbed of the deceased was a thin layer of peat near the sandy bottom of the peat bog; in fact this was the very surface of the bog when the body was deposited 220±55 B.C. (based on radiocarbon dating of soft body tissue). In conventional terms this dates the body to the middle part of the pre-Roman Iron Age. Tollund Mose is a so-called raised bog, which never ceases to grow and which, due to specific physical and chemical conditions, tends to preserve organic materials. Bog bodies recovered in such conditions often look as if they were buried only recently. Bacterial growth is typically stopped and nails, hair, and skin of bog bodies become tanned.

The Iron Age man recovered at Tollund was lying in a natural position of sleep on his right side, facing south, about 50 meters from the bog shore. He was naked except for an oxhide belt around his hips and a pointed cap on his head. The cap was made of pieces of sheepskin sewn together with the woolen side turned inward and fastened securely under his chin by a hide thong. His hair was cut very short. His face was clean-shaven but with stubbles of beard clearly visible on his chin and upper lip. Around his neck was a tightly tied leather strap, which had cut a deep groove in the soft skin of his neck and throat and which was found coiled over his shoulder and down his back. The man had evidently died by hanging. The carefully closed eyes, the resting position of the body, and relatively peaceful expression of the face together suggest that he was carefully deposited in the bog almost as if properly buried. Nonetheless, the circumstances are much in contrast to the normal local burial custom of the age, which involved cremation with the ashes placed under a stone circle in a cemetery.

A series of post-excavation examinations indicate that the Tollund Man was forty to fifty years old and in good health except for the occurrence of whipworms. He had eaten a purely vegetarian meal twelve to fourteen hours before his death. The porridge contained barley, wheat, and flax in addition to a large number of wild seeds, and it was prepared using bog water. Some of the seeds derive from rather rare plants, perhaps indicating that the last meal was a ritualized one.

Another strangulated body, the so-called Elling Girl, had been found in 1938 merely 61 meters from the Tollund Man. Still another body is known to have been recovered in 1927 in the same peat bog. The Elling Girl was, on discovery, wrapped in a sheepskin cape with a leather cloak round her legs, indicating that she too had been cared for. Her long hair had been gathered on top of her head and then braided and tied to the nape of the neck, probably prior to the hanging. She was about thirty years old and had died at approximately the same time as the Tollund Man.

Several bog bodies are known from northern and western Europe. Most of them date to the earlier Iron Age. The Grauballe Man was found in Nebel Mose, also in the Silkeborg region, in 1952. He had died 265±40 B.C. and had eaten roughly the same

kind of meal as the Tollund Man. Before he was deposited in the peat bog he had had his throat slit so savagely that it almost severed his gullet. In addition, he had received a hard blow across one temple and one of his legs had been broken. Other bog bodies discovered on the Jutland Peninsula include those from Borremose in Himmerland, which were retrieved near a fortified pre-Roman Iron Age village; the Gundestrup cauldron, a contemporaneous piece of Celtic gilded silverwork, was found in this same area. Bog bodies from elsewhere include the Lindow Man, the Huldremose Woman, the Haraldskjaer Woman, the Roum Girl, the Windeby Girl, and the Rendswühren Man. Common to them is that they show signs of untimely and very violent deaths and that they received an extraordinary burial in a watery place. Such places were throughout prehistory in Europe believed to be inhabited by the gods, who on special occasions demanded material gifts and sometimes even human sacrifice. The Tollund Man and fellow victims offer unique possibilities of gaining insight into the sinister side of Early Iron Age communities.

In her 2001 study titled *Dying for the Gods*, Miranda Green suggests on the basis of archaeological and written sources that ritual killing was a rare but nevertheless constant feature of Iron Age Europe. Such extraordinary ritual activities were a cognitive response to a world that was thought to be inhabited by supernatural forces. These might be malignant or benign depending on how they were treated. Times of war and crisis especially would have motivated people to seek the favors of the gods. Victims probably were mostly prisoners and hostages of war, whose social status and standard of living varied widely, to judge from their personal appearance and nutritional state.

See also Pre-Roman Iron Age Scandinavia (vol. 2, part 6).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Coles, John, Bryony Coles, and Mogens Schou Jørgensen, eds. *Bog Bodies, Sacred Sites, and Wetland Archaeology*. WARP Occasional Paper, no. 12. Exeter, U.K.: Wetland Archaeological Research Project, 1999.
- Fischer, Christian. "The Tollund Man and the Elling Woman and Other Bog Bodies from Central Jutland." In *Bog Bodies, Sacred Sites, and Wetland Archaeology*. Edited by John Coles, Bryony Coles, and Mogens Schou Jørgensen. WARP Occasional Paper, no. 12. Ex-

eter, U.K.: Wetland Archaeological Research Project,
1999.

Glob, P. V. *The Bog People*. London: Faber and Faber, 1969.

Green, Miranda Aldhouse. *Dying for the Gods*. Stroud,
Gloucestershire, U.K.: Tempus, 2001.

HELLE VANDKILDE



SURVEY AND EXCAVATION

FOLLOWED BY FEATURE ESSAY ON:

Saltbæk Vig 36

It is common for a barbarian society to have left no written record of its way of life and its achievements. For still other such societies, the written record is extremely thin and fragmentary. In short, the historical documents that are available for study in both cases fall far short of providing a comprehensive picture of a particular society. Thus, before the advent of archaeology, there were clear limitations to knowledge of the life of these societies. Archaeology is now the primary avenue for increasing understanding of what happened in the remote past. For the archaeologist, the process of discovery normally begins with fieldwork. There are two main lines of investigation in the field. One is the survey; the other is excavation. Here, these investigative methods are described, and the ways in which they play complementary roles in archaeological research are explained.

THE SURVEY

Of the two methods, the survey is the least well known to the general public, owing to the comparatively late development of this line of investigation. In terms of the history of archaeology, there were very few places in the world where a field survey was carried out in the years before 1960. Thus, compared with excavation, survey is a newcomer. Only in the last forty years of the twentieth century did

this kind of fieldwork begin to make a real contribution. At the most basic level, the survey covers a broad landscape and maps the scatters of archaeological remains that are found on the surface.

The survey crew examines the ground in a systematic way and identifies the surface scatters that are present within the area of the survey. Once a scatter (conventionally called a “site”) is recognized, its position is plotted on the map, and other information about its location is recorded: the site’s elevation, the distance from the site to the nearest source of freshwater, and the position of the site with respect to natural lines of communication in the region. In addition, the field crew collects at least some of the archaeological materials (pieces of pottery, stone tools, and so forth) from the surface of the site.

At a higher level, the goal of the survey is to discover and record all of the sites that are present in those places covered by the survey. Because the sites that are recovered date to different periods of time, the archaeologist is interested in studying the changes in the spatial distribution of sites from one time period to the next. In other words, the central question for the survey archaeologist is how the settlement pattern in a given region unfolds over the course of time. Thus, once the coverage of the land-

scape has been completed in the field, the work turns to the preparation of site-distribution maps for the respective periods. By means of the comparative study of this series of maps, it is possible to trace the long-term evolution of patterns of settlement in the region under investigation.

THE EXCAVATION

In contrast to the survey's broad outlook, the excavation focuses on the individual site. This line of fieldwork allows the archaeologist to plumb the depths of a given site in greater detail. As one digs down through the layers at a site, there is the opportunity to document the stratigraphy of the site. In turn, the stratigraphic sequence plays a key role in working out the site's chronology. The relative age of a given layer is determined by its relationship to the layers above and below it. Technically, this is known as the law of superposition. (As in the case of geology, the layer, or stratum, on top is younger than the one below.) The stratigraphic sequence at an archaeological site is documented by drawing the sections that are exposed by the dig. The excavation also permits the archaeologist to uncover the internal layout of the site. In the case of the Iron Age hillfort of the Heuneburg overlooking the Danube River, this layout takes the form of several rows of rectangular, timber-framed houses located inside the site's defensive wall. To record the structural remains (hearths, houses, fences, drainages ditches, and so forth) brought to light by the excavation, plans are drawn and photographs taken during the course of the work.

Because of movies, television documentaries, and the popular press, many people have an idea about what takes place in the context of archaeological excavation. The treatment of excavation in the media—with its inevitable focus on the moment of great discovery by the lone archaeologist—often fails to give a true picture of this kind of work, however. Instead of picking up misguided ideas from the media, one needs to think about excavation in more realistic terms. To begin with, one must set aside the notion that the “dig” commonly involves moments when remarkable finds are suddenly brought to light. On most excavations, this rarely happens. Most of the work that is done is much less eventful. The excavation calls for sustained and patient work day after day, first in cleaning each new

stratigraphic unit and then in documenting it. The excavation is like a marathon race: the archaeologist sets out on a long, slow run that is likely to be parsimonious in its moments of excitement.

It is worth recalling that the archaeologist is responsible for the proper recovery and documentation of all that comes to light during the course of excavation and not just those things that he or she may find of special interest. At the same time, one of the keys to the success of the excavation is teamwork. The dig is no place for the individualist. The members of the crew must have the training and experience needed to perform their respective tasks skillfully, and under the leadership of the director at the site, they have to work together as a team.

Since archaeological sites vary widely from one to the next, there is no one best approach to excavation. The methods that the archaeologist employs need to be tailored to the specific nature of the site. For example, at the small hunting camp of Pincevent in France, which was occupied some fifteen thousand years ago, each piece of worked stone was carefully exposed in place, and its position or provenance then was plotted in three dimensions. This was done for individual pieces of bone and other classes of material culture as well. An attempt was made at total recovery in the context of an entire site.

In contrast, the excavation of the early medieval town of York in northern England had to deal with a much larger and more complex site, which produced vast quantities of cultural remains. There, the earliest archaeological layers are buried deeply in the ground, and the town as a whole can be uncovered only by means of a series of excavations over many years. In addition, York is a rescue excavation, where the archaeologist has to complete the dig by a fixed date and where the fieldwork may well be the last chance to investigate the site before it is transformed by modern urban development. In other words, much depends not just on the kind of site but on the purpose of the excavation. If research is the primary motivation for the dig, the excavator is likely to place greater emphasis on fine-grained recording and to ask a wide range of specialists to collaborate in the project. If the work is done because the site is threatened and a rescue excavation has to be undertaken with limited resources, then a more practical approach will have to be adopted.

Moreover, local environmental conditions can influence the kinds of objects that are preserved at a site and, in turn, the appropriate methods of recovery. For example, in an area with wetland conditions of preservation, such as the Somerset Levels in Southeast England, two-thirds of the finds recovered can take the form of organic materials (wood, seeds, leaves, and so forth). Accordingly, special methods must be used in the excavation and the conservation of what is found at such a site.

The main implication is that excavation is far from a routine matter. For the excavator, it is not simply a question of finding a good site and assembling the equipment (trowels, shovels, buckets, brushes, wheelbarrows, screens for sieving, notebooks, drawing boards, cameras, and equipment for surveying the site and taking elevations) and the crew. The director must make many crucial decisions at the start of an excavation, and they determine, in large measure, how successful the fieldwork turns out to be.

Some of the most important decisions are those in the sphere of sampling. Briefly, this is the name given to the choice of the size of the excavation units, the places where they are to be dug, and the proportion of the site's total area to be excavated. In the simplest terms, sampling is the decision-making process concerned with choosing where and how to dig at the site. In making such plans, the archaeologist naturally is interested in achieving a good trade-off between the volume of earth to be moved and the return of information about the site from such work. Thus, the sampling strategy—whether the excavator opts for a formal design or for a more informal approach based upon previous experience—attempts to harness the goals of the excavation and the resources (manpower and funds) that are available for the project.

While there are wide differences between one excavation and another, it is possible to identify several common features or integral parts of all excavations. One of them, as previously mentioned, is a sampling strategy. At the start of the fieldwork, there has to be a clear idea of how the excavation will proceed. Since new information about the site will emerge as the excavation unfolds, it often makes good sense to think in terms of a sequential approach to sampling (that is, one where new information, as it becomes available in a stepwise se-

quence, is incorporated in the decision-making process). A second shared feature of all excavations is the recovery and recording of stratigraphy, or the vertical dimension of the excavation. As mentioned earlier, the identification of individual stratigraphic units and the definition of their interrelationships are at the heart of the chronology of the site. The third integral part of the excavation is the documentation of all features and structural remains exposed at the site, or the horizontal dimension of the dig. This line of evidence provides the key to the functional interpretation of the site (i.e., the kinds of activities that once took place there and their layout and spatial organization).

Still another component of every excavation is the recovery of artifacts and their processing and classification. Collectively, the set of artifacts recovered from a site is referred to as its "finds." The recovery of an artifact can come about in three ways. First, the object can be recognized during the course of digging and its position recorded before it is removed from the ground. In the second case, all of the cultural materials that come to light from a given layer and a given grid square are collected as a group. The degree of spatial resolution in the provenance of the finds obviously is lower than in the first case. In the third case, the artifact is recovered when the soil from a given unit of the excavation is passed through screens (the sieving of the excavated soil), to make sure that even objects of small size are recovered.

The processing of finds normally begins with the washing of the material. This is followed by marking of the pieces (so that each artifact is linked with its provenance in the field) and separation of the finds into different classes of material (coins, pottery, roof tiles, and so on). The next step is the preliminary classification of each kind of material. The lists of such preliminary classifications give the director an overview of the finds at different parts of the site. Later on, specialists will make more refined classifications. To keep track of every item, a well-organized system of storage (that allows easy access to the artifacts) is essential, as is a computer-based information system. As part of the process of documentation, many of the artifacts have to be drawn or photographed. A selection of these illustrations will appear in the final excavation report. Again, the details of the work on the finds—from their recov-

ery in the field through their processing and classification to their eventual publication—vary with the nature of the site.

COMPARING THE SURVEY AND THE EXCAVATION

It is useful at this point to step back and consider some of the ways in which the survey and the excavation differ from each other. Such a comparison, along broad lines, also helps reveal how these two forms of fieldwork complement each other. The survey is, of course, far more expansive in its orientation than is the excavation. The survey is concerned with the large picture. It sets out to record in basic terms all of the forms of habitation that are found in a given region. In this approach the archaeologist is discouraged from having a strong preference for any one period or for any one type of site. Those doing surveys have to be eclectic in their interests; they must direct their attention to the relationships—both in space and in time—that exist between sites. In contrast, the excavation entails a narrower focal point; it takes the individual site as its object of study. The strong suit of the excavation is that it offers much greater control over chronology. In addition, there is the opportunity to examine the internal structure of the site—something that usually is not possible for the survey. In short, the excavation is the mode of fieldwork that allows one to focus in detail on the archaeological record but at the price of the vision of a single site.

In practical terms, the survey can be done with a lower budget than the excavation. It also calls for a smaller crew than most digs. Accordingly, the survey is attractive for the young archaeologist who may have limited access to funding. To carry out a survey successfully, however, the archaeologist should have some training in the fields of environmental studies in archaeology, geomorphology, geography, and economic history. To put it another way, the archaeologist doing a survey has to be ready to address the issues of landscape archaeology. On the other hand, the person planning to direct a new excavation needs to have a somewhat different background, including a good knowledge of the period or periods to be excavated as well as several years of experience on previous excavations.

Finally, it is worth noting that the survey is far less destructive than the excavation. It is a truism

that the act of excavation destroys those parts of the site where the digging is done. Damage to the archaeological record is something that all archaeologists want to avoid. In the case of a site that is not threatened, an excavation can be justified only if the fieldwork meets high standards and the results are properly published. In contrast, the survey is far less damaging. There is a clear advantage over the excavation, since the survey leaves the sites in the region essentially intact. It is worth adding that the surface of a site is already being damaged in those parts of the world where modern forms of agriculture are practiced (that is, where the surface of the land is plowed on a regular basis). Because of plowing, the artifacts on the land surface and in the plow zone are no longer in primary context at the site. The plow zone is by no means a kind place for the long-term survival and preservation of most classes of material culture. Moreover, within the plow zone, the artifacts themselves are in active circulation from one bout of plowing to the next. Controlled experiments show that less than one-tenth of the artifacts circulating in the plow zone actually make their appearance on the land surface at any one time. Thus, the collection of pieces from the land surface has only a modest impact on the full set of artifacts occurring in the plow zone.

INTERACTION

One can begin to gain a sense of the interplay between the two lines of fieldwork by looking at some of the ways in which the survey and the excavation are mutually dependent. The aim here is to highlight the interaction between the two lines of fieldwork. The chronology established for a particular region is based for the most part on the results of excavations. In turn, this chronology is used whenever the survey archaeologist assigns dates to what is collected in the field. Once the survey is completed, a report is written on the results of the fieldwork, and the archaeologist often attempts to put forward a new synthesis of the long-term history of occupation in the region. In turn, the excavation, which makes it possible to explore the local situation in greater detail, offers one of the main ways to test whether this new interpretation is on the right track. At the same time, the survey usually leads to the discovery of promising new sites to excavate. In effect, the survey gives the excavator a wider choice in terms of good places to dig. When an excavation

is carried out at one of the new sites found by the survey, the archaeologist, in preparing the report at the end of the excavation, tries to place the site in wider context by reviewing what is known about coeval sites in the region, as revealed by surveys. Thus, in terms of their interaction, there is an ongoing, two-way dialogue between the survey and the excavation.

CURRENT TRENDS IN DEVELOPMENT

It is important to emphasize that both the survey and the excavation are still in the course of development. The methods and strategies employed are not final ones that exist in a standardized form. Like modern medicine in the cure of many diseases, the search is still under way to find the most effective treatment. This aspect of the survey and the excavation can be illustrated by looking at their histories over the last few decades of the twentieth century. One observes in both cases a tendency toward intensification in the approach taken to recovery in the field. When time and money are not an issue, there is an interest in achieving a more refined grain of spatial resolution in the documentation of the archaeological record. Another major development of these years, shared by both survey and excavation, is the growing consciousness of the role played by many different factors in the formation of a site. These include the cultural factors that contributed to the form of the site at the time of its occupation—for example, the structures built at the site, their use and modification over time, and what happened to the objects and building materials at the site when it was abandoned. There are also the natural factors that subsequently acted to transform the objects and features that happen to have survived there. When a survey or excavation is conducted, the archaeologist tries to think through the full range of processes that are involved in the generation of the archaeological record, including post-depositional factors.

In Europe, the approach taken to excavation changed considerably in the last half of the twentieth century. Before 1960 (following the lead of Sir Mortimer Wheeler, a distinguished British archaeologist), it was common for the excavation to be carried out by making a series of trenches at the site. Since then, under the influence of Philip Barker and

his work at medieval sites in England, there has been a shift in strategy to uncovering a large, contiguous area at the site. This approach tends to be more effective when it comes to documenting the buildings and other structures at a site.

Another shift that began in the 1970s was a new emphasis on the recovery of botanical remains. To recover seeds and pieces of charcoal from the soil in a more systematic fashion, new equipment based on the principle of flotation was introduced. When soil is run through water containing a frothing agent, the seeds literally rise to the surface and can be skimmed off. Thus, the “ecofact” has taken its place alongside the artifact in field archaeology. A third significant development occurred in 1979, when Edward Harris published *Principles of Archaeological Stratigraphy*, which offered a new way to record and display the stratigraphic units found by an excavation. Others have begun to pay greater attention to the soils at a site—the matrix that holds the artifacts and the ecofacts and that also contains information on the processes contributing to the formation of the site.

Because of the high costs of excavation in many parts of the world (the United States, Japan, and Europe), it is essential for the archaeologist to know as much as possible about a site before digging begins. Previous knowledge invariably makes for a more efficient research design. It also gives the excavator a better chance to run a well-directed dig. The methods that are used to guide the planning for an excavation can be divided into two main groups: remote sensing and work on the ground. The former method involves acquiring images of the site’s layout or structure from the air. One technique is aerial photography, which has a long history of use in archaeology. In most cases, the photographs that are examined are ones that have been taken for other purposes, such as mapmaking. It is often more rewarding for a project to have its own series of air photographs, taken at a larger scale (that is, from a lower height and showing the more details of the site). Satellite images sometimes are used for this purpose. As the resolution of satellite imagery increases, it will become an essential tool for work of this kind. In addition, under arid conditions, radar imagery from space, which can penetrate desert sands, has proved to be productive in the detection of buried sites and buried features of the landscape.

There are various techniques of geophysical prospection that one can employ on the surface of a site. One of these techniques involves passing an electric current through the ground and then making inferences about buried structures at the site. The earth-resistance survey, as it is technically called, is based on the different patterns of electric resistivity observed on a map of the site. Another type of on-site prospection is the magnetometer survey. Different kinds of structures at a particular site, such as a burned house or a hearth, can be recognized in the form of magnetic anomalies that stand out from the normal soil at the site, which has other magnetic properties. A third method is called ground-penetrating radar, which is related to radar imagery from space. When an electromagnetic wave is propagated toward the ground, some of it penetrates the soil and then bounces back to the surface. By moving the radar instrument over ground along closely spaced lines, patterns of difference in the bounce-back values over the site can be discovered. Again, the appropriate method of prospection depends on the local conditions at the site under investigation.

There is commonly another step in fieldwork before the start of excavation. This consists of coring at the site as a means of checking on the results of one of the three surveys just described. Using either a hand auger or power-driven equipment, cores are made on a grid at the site to obtain a more tangible indication of what is buried in the ground. The overall aim of remote sensing, geophysical prospection, and coring is, of course, to learn as much as possible about the character of the site so that informed decisions can be made when the digging actually begins.

The survey also has witnessed change in the last fifty years of the twentieth century. To begin with, there are now information technologies, such as Geographic Information Systems (GIS), that facilitate the collection and display of spatial data. Formerly, work of this kind had to be done by hand. The earliest surveys in Britain consisted of field walking, where the main aim was to map the major monuments in the countryside. In the 1960s there were an increasing number of surveys in different parts of the world, and the methods used in the coverage of the ground soon became more systematic. There was an attempt to record the full range of

sites, small and large, on the landscape. The growth of survey archaeology then accelerated in the 1970s—a time when many surveys were started throughout the world.

At first glance, the survey looks deceptively easy. In planning a new survey, the main challenges would appear to be selecting the region for study; choosing the approach to the coverage of the ground (e.g., the spacing between crew members in the field and the choice of sampling units, such as grid squares or transects); developing a system for mapping and recording the sites identified by the survey; and finding crew members with experience in this kind of work. By the 1980s, however, the realization had begun to emerge that the survey is a more complicated endeavor than the archaeologist had previously thought. The loss of innocence took place when some archaeologists began to repeat the coverage of the same area in different years (as a control on the quality of their fieldwork). To their surprise, they found that there was significant variability in what was observed on the land surface from one year to the next. In retrospect, we can see that most of the surveys done before 1990 were too optimistic in terms of their working assumptions about the dynamics of the plow zone and about the visibility of sites on the land surface.

As part of the trend toward the intensification of fieldwork, the survey archaeologist understandably would like to record the scatters found on the landscape at as fine a grain of spatial resolution as possible. To be more complete in the documentation of what is observed on the land surface, one wants to make sure that all light scatters and even individual pieces are mapped in the field. This line of thought has led some archaeologists to begin doing what is called the nonsite survey. The aim is to record the totality of the cultural materials on the land surface in those places covered by the survey. For very light scatters, there is a fundamental problem that arises in the case of a region where much of the land is plowed, which is the situation in most countries of Europe.

The problem has to do with the circulation of artifacts in the plow zone and the fact that only a small proportion of the pieces in a plow zone make their appearance on the surface at any one time. Indeed, this ratio typically is less than 1 in 10. This means that the pieces on the surface are the result

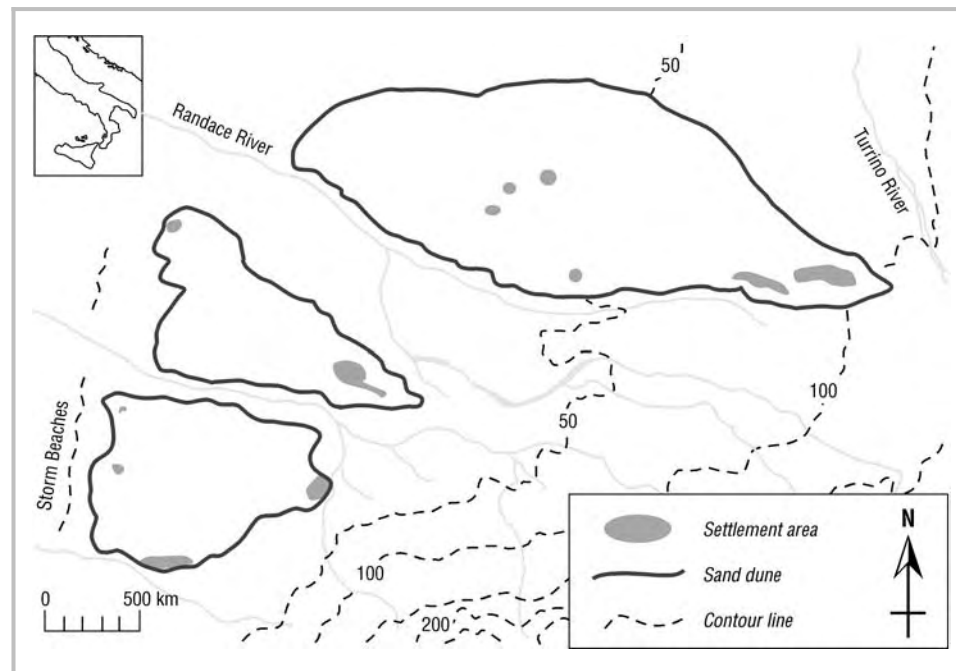


Fig. 1. The distribution of Stentinello settlements at Acconia in southern Italy. The survey, by repeating the coverage of the Acconia area several times, obtained the dense pattern of impressed-ware Neolithic settlement observed here.

of a stochastic process. In a given place, the random sample of material that is found on the land surface varies from one bout of plowing to the next. The stochastic character of the surface material does not represent a major problem in those places where there are large numbers of pieces in the plow zone. There, the surface sample tends to be much the same from one field season to the next. It becomes a serious methodological problem when the numbers are small. A given light scatter has a low degree of consistency from one year to the next in the number of its pieces, in the different classes of material culture that are represented, and even in its chronology. Thus, the question of how best to deal with light scatters remains basically an unresolved problem for the survey archaeologist who would like to aim for total recovery.

The issue of visibility is no less challenging. Few surveys before 1990 took the question of visibility seriously into consideration. The working assumption was that the pattern of sites (or scatters) observed on the surface at the time of the survey was the same as the pattern of sites that were once occupied in the region. There are two main factors that obscure the recognition of a site on the surface. One

is connected with the burial of a site and has to do with geomorphological processes that have modified the landscape since the time the site was abandoned. This often happens on fluvial plains and in the case of a site located at the foot of a steep slope. The second factor involves the state of the vegetation or ground cover in a given field. If the field has been plowed and rained upon, there is no ground cover, and conditions are favorable for seeing artifacts on the surface. If a wheat crop is growing in the field or it is covered with grass, for example, then just the opposite will be the case. Controlled studies, which take both factors into account, reveal that places with good visibility yield many more sites than locations with poor visibility. Thus, all places on the landscape do not have the same potential for the recovery of archaeological sites.

There are three important implications for the design of the survey that follow from this realization. First, there is the need, at the start of the survey, for a good map of the geomorphological features of the region. Normally, the coverage of places where the inflation of the land has buried sites is not all that productive for the survey. Second, it is necessary to record detailed information about ground

cover on a field-by-field basis during the course of the survey. Third, because they act as a filter through which to see in the field, the effects of visibility must be taken into account in the analysis of the spatial distributions of sites as well as in the interpretation of the true patterns of settlement in a region and how they have changed over time. In short, the survey is much more complex than it seemed to be in the past. It is no less demanding than the excavation.

CONCLUSION

In archaeology, the recovery of new evidence in the field rests on the partnership between the survey and the excavation. While each line of fieldwork has its own methods and aims, the results produced are complementary. Neither method can stand on its own without the contribution of the other. At the same time, both lines of investigation are still far from reaching their full maturity in terms of their historical development. Thus, the dialogue between them is an open one and will continue to move in new directions in the years to come.

See also *Viking York* (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Ammerman, A. J. "Surveys and Archaeological Research." *Annual Review of Anthropology* 10 (1981): 63–88.
- Barker, P. *Techniques of Archaeological Excavation*. 3d ed. London: Routledge, 1998.
- Brothwell, D. R., and A. M. Pollard, eds. *Handbook of Archaeological Sciences*. Chichester, U.K.: John Wiley and Sons, 2001. (This volume offers a series of short articles concerned with different aspects of the conduct of surveys and excavations.)
- Cherry, John F. "Archaeology beyond the Site: Regional Survey and Its Future." In *Theory and Practice in Mediterranean Archaeology: Old World and New World Perspectives*. Edited by John K. Papadopoulos and Richard M. Leventhal, pp. 137–160. Los Angeles: Cotsen Institute of Archaeology, University of California at Los Angeles, 2003.
- Harris, E. *Principles of Archaeological Stratigraphy*. 2d ed. New York: Academic Press, 1989.
- Joukowsky, Martha. *A Complete Manual of Field Archaeology: Tools and Techniques of Field Work for Archaeologists*. Englewood Cliffs, N.J.: Prentice-Hall, 1980.
- Terrenato, N., and A. J. Ammerman. "Visibility and Site Recovery in the Cecina Valley Survey, Italy." *Journal of Field Archaeology* 23 (spring 1996): 91–109.

ALBERT J. AMMERMAN

SALTBÆK VIG

The Saltbæk Vig Project was a regional archaeological investigation of the beginnings of agriculture in prehistoric southern Scandinavia around 3950 B.C. The chronological focus of the project was the Late Mesolithic and the Early Neolithic, approximately 5000–3300 B.C. The multistage project included intensive field walking of all accessible fields within defined survey zones. Guided by the field walking data, a total of fifty-three test excavations were carried out to investigate whether clusters of material on the surface had any related stratigraphy and to confirm the date and characteristics of the surface collections. Excavations were conducted at sixteen sites dating from around the transition to agriculture that had organic remains. Recording of museum collections, interviewing of local landowners, and palaeo-environmental investigating were also components of the project.

The Saltbæk Vig is located in northwestern Zealand, eastern Denmark, near the town of Kalundborg. This area was selected because the water level in the inlet is artificially maintained at 1.2 meters below sea level due to a land reclamation project dating back to the 1860s. As a result coastal Mesolithic localities from late Kongemose culture and onward are now above sea level in the inlet. Much of the area is accessible to fieldwork because of cultivation and limited modern development. Museum records had indicated that material from the Late Mesolithic Ertebølle culture as well as material from the Early Neolithic Funnel Beaker culture was present in the area, and there was potential for preserved organic materials.

The research area was defined by the sea and by the watershed around the inlet and the major river that feeds into it, the Bregninge Å. The area is approximately 16 kilometers long from northwest to southeast and 8.8 kilometers wide, or about 140 square kilometers, including the roughly rectangular inlet, which is 36 square kilometers. The field survey covered about 22 square kilometers in three zones. In all 415 localities, including settlements, stray finds and graves were recorded; 55 localities were previously known. More than fifty thousand artifacts were collected and stored at the local museum including forty thousand flakes, more than five

thousand blades, four hundred polished axes and fragments, two hundred projectile points, one thousand pieces of pottery, and a variety of other flint and ground stone objects.

GENERAL FINDS

The survey recorded all materials that were encountered, but as expected most finds belonged to the Stone Age. The majority of localities were found along the south shore of the inlet, concentrated toward the mouth to the west. Relatively few sites were found along the north shore or in the valley of the Bregninge Å in the eastern, more inland part of the project area. The four transects and areas surrounding the long dolmens produced only few finds documenting the general low density of inland settlement.

A few settlements, stray projectile points, and cores were found belonging to the Late Palaeolithic (11,500–9000 B.C.), Maglemose (9000–6400 B.C.), and Kongemose (6400–5400 B.C.) periods. Only a few sites from the Bronze Age (1800–500 B.C.) and Iron Age (500 B.C.–A.D. 700) were recorded, mainly in the Tranemose area south of the Saltbæk Vig.

Most Mesolithic sites date from the Ertebølle culture, 5400–3950 B.C.; in all twenty-eight settlements were located immediately on the coast at low elevations, 80 percent of these on marine deposits. Settlements were located where fishing opportunities were optimal. At Saltmade, a middle Ertebølle site, a permanent fish trap was found dating from 5100 B.C. Another similar site at Smakkerup Huse from 4990 B.C. had a partly paved fishing area and boat landing along the shore containing fragments of dugout canoes, many wooden stakes, bone awls used as spear points in fishing, and an outcast layer with waste material from the settlement. The site was occupied year-round; hunting for terrestrial mammals and collection of plant food and shellfish supplemented the shallow-water fishing. Similar Mesolithic sites include Tybrind Vig, Møllegabet, and Vænget Nord. Usually the pattern is one large permanent site in a fjord supplemented by smaller seasonal camps. In Saltbæk Vig three clusters of sites appear to have coexisted at the mouth of the Vig, along streams on the central part of the south shore, and at the Bregninge Å delta. Mesolithic sites in the region are about 2,200 square meters and on aver-

age contain 136 artifacts with a maximum of 494 artifacts. Sites from the Mesolithic and the transition period to the Neolithic are about half the size of the sites from the early and middle Funnel Beaker and not as rich in flint.

Distinction of late Ertebølle and early Funnel Beaker assemblages found in the survey poses a problem because of strong similarities in both lithic and ceramic technology. Besides diagnostic ceramics the best indicators are specialized core axes from Ertebølle and early polished flint axes from the Funnel Beaker (fig. 1). Among six sites from around 3950 B.C., when the first domesticated animals appear, most show a continuation of Ertebølle tradition. At Smakkerup Huse, cattle bones dating from 3920 B.C. were found in an otherwise Mesolithic context with wild fauna and Ertebølle flint and pottery, including the pointed bottom of a small cup. Other sites, like one located inland on the sandy hill of Lindebjerg, represent new settlements away from the classic waterside locations of the Mesolithic and probably a different kind of subsistence: an earthen long barrow dating from 3790 B.C. is located in the vicinity of this settlement along with several later settlements and megalithic tombs from the middle Funnel Beaker period. A similar early site was found below the long barrow at Mosegården.

Almost sixty settlements were recorded from early and middle Funnel Beaker (3950–3200 B.C.), defined by the presence of Funnel Beaker-type pottery and polished thin-butted flint axes. Settlements were situated more inland, on higher sandy areas, but also on clay soils showing a more diverse use of the landscape; many finds were located beyond the coastal zone of the survey. Deposits of pots and axes were placed in wet areas; megalithic tombs were found near settlements or at higher elevations.

Settlements vary in size but are rich in flint, yielding up to 4,000 pieces, with an average of 186 artifacts per site. The density and spread of material on sandy elevations around Illerup and at the plateau hills may represent repeated and shifting use. This would suggest long-term attachment to a preferred part of the landscape, but—in contrast to the Ertebølle—not a long-term continuity of the individual site apart from the funerary monuments. Similar accumulations of occupation have been observed in the southern Swedish region of Scania and on the south Danish island of Als. The economic

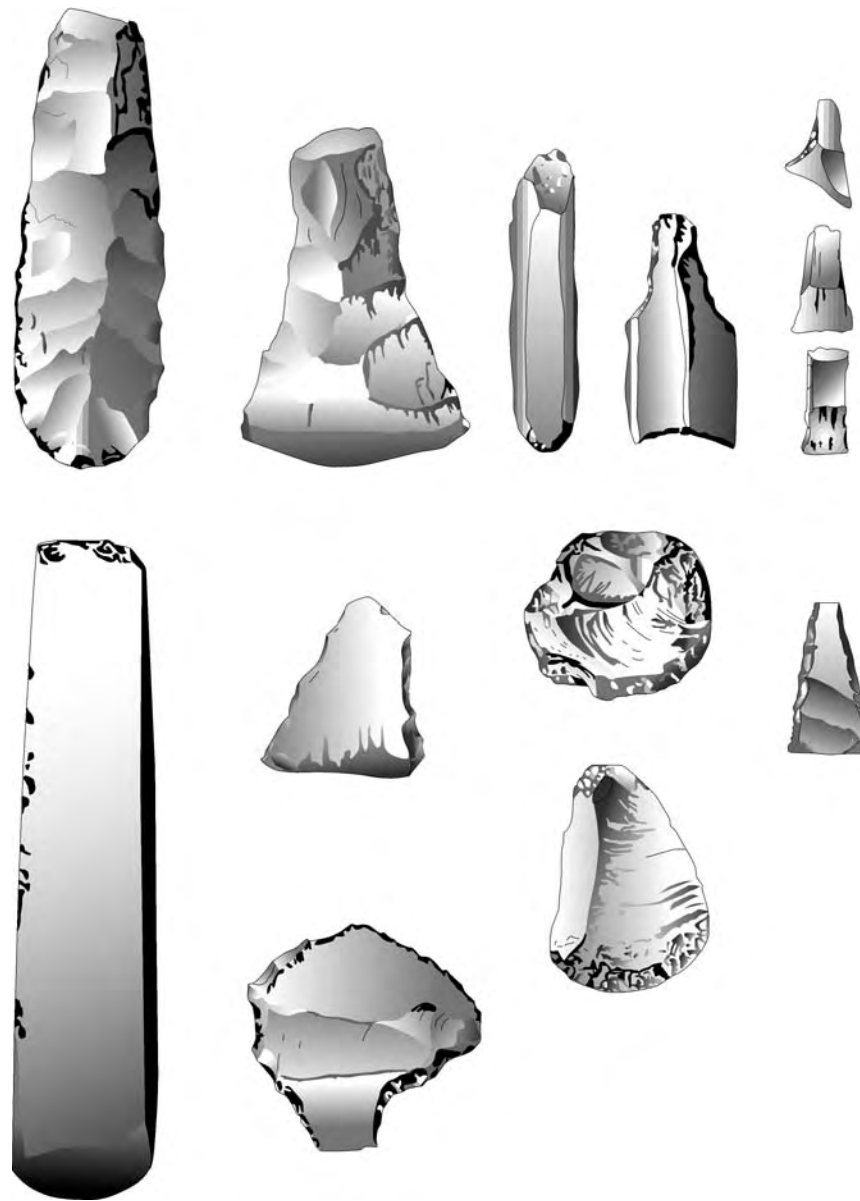


Fig. 1. Flint artifacts from Ertebølle culture (top) and Funnel Beaker culture (bottom). Tools depicted here include axes, scrapers, and transverse arrowheads. ADAPTED FROM *JEG SER PÅ OLDSAGER* (1966).

and social changes in early and middle Funnel Beaker seem to involve a system of redistribution of food and other products among occupationally specialized groups. For example the flint inventory at Grønvang was dominated by burins (chisel-type tools), at Lindebjerg North by scrapers. At other sites, such as Smakkerup Huse (3500 B.C.) and Nekselø (3500–3100 B.C.), dimensions of the permanent fish traps suggest catches beyond local consumption.

Late Funnel Beaker (thirty sites from 3300–2800 B.C.) and Corded Ware (three sites from 2800–2400 B.C.) finds are focused more on the coast; the substantial settlements are about 3,600 square meters. Late Neolithic settlements and stray finds (2400–1800 B.C.) show a reduction and a shift in the habitation. Eight small settlements (less than 1,000 square meters) and several burial mounds are located along the north and east shore of the inlet, particularly on Alleshave.

TRENDS

By investigating the correlation between various aspects of the landscape and the archaeological data, a pattern of land use emerges involving a wide range of activities of greater or lesser intensity. Through time three thresholds in settlement organization can be identified where the cultural landscape was reorganized and new areas inhabited. The first is the appearance of a coastal habitation following the establishment of a marine environment in the bay during the Late Kongemose and Ertebølle. The second threshold is the shift to inland locations and increased settlement size during the Early Neolithic Funnel Beaker. The third is the reduction and relocation of the habitation to the coastal areas along the north side of the inlet during the Late Neolithic.

A curious duality appears at the beginning of the Neolithic with a gradual adoption of Neolithic elements (including domesticates) by the local Ertebølle, on one hand, and a movement of people inland with a farming economy and burial monuments, on the other. With absolute dating of only one site, it is uncertain whether the two trends are coeval or the inland occupation is slightly younger.

An intensive field survey like Saltbæk Vig increases the known number of settlement sites. Previous records were biased toward Neolithic burial monuments and stray finds of polished flint axes. This study especially emphasized the Mesolithic presence in the area: both settlements along the coast and inland hunting activities on higher sandy areas. Finally, the multidisciplinary approach produced a wealth of subsistence and palaeo-environmental data from the Saltbæk Vig area.

See also **The Mesolithic of Northern Europe** (vol. 1, part 2); **Tybrind Vig** (vol. 1, part 2); **Transition to Agriculture in Northern Europe** (vol. 1, part 3).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Andersen, Søren H. "Mesolithic Coastal Settlement." In *Digging into the Past: Twenty-Five Years of Archaeology in Denmark*. Edited by Steen Hvass and Birger Storgaard, pp. 65–69. Århus, Denmark: Århus University Press, 1993.
- . "Tybrind Vig. A Preliminary Report on a Submerged Ertebølle Settlement on the West Coast of Fyn." *Journal of Danish Archaeology* 4 (1985): 52–69.
- Grøn, Ole, and Jørgen Skaarup. "Møllegabet II: A Submerged Mesolithic Site and Boat Burial from Ærø." *Journal of Danish Archaeology* 10 (1991): 38–50.
- Jeg ser på oldsager*. Copenhagen, Denmark: Politikens Forlag, 1966.
- Larsson, Lars. "The Use of the Landscape during the Mesolithic and Neolithic in Southern Sweden." In *Archeologie en Landschaft*. Edited by M. Bjerma, O. M. Harsema, and W. van Zeist, pp. 31–48. Groningen, The Netherlands: Riksuniversiteit Groningen, 1988.
- Liversage, David. "Neolithic Monuments at Lindebjerg, Northwest Zealand." *Acta Archaeologica* 51 (1980): 85–152.
- Madsen, Torsten, and Helle Juel Jensen. "Settlement and Land Use in Early Neolithic Denmark." *Analecta Praehistorica Leidensia* 15 (1982): 63–86.
- Price, T. Douglas, and Anne B. Gebauer. "The Final Frontier: Foragers to Farmers in Southern Scandinavia." In their *Transitions to Agriculture in Prehistory*, pp. 97–116. Monographs in World Archaeology, no. 4. Madison, Wis.: Prehistory Press, 1992.
- Price, T. Douglas, Anne B. Gebauer, Nanna Noe Nygaard, Signe Ulfeldt Hede, and Charlotte Sedlacek Larsen. *Smakkerup Huse XX*. Århus, Denmark: Århus University Press, 2003.
- Price, T. Douglas, and Erik Brinch Petersen. "A Mesolithic Camp in Denmark." *Scientific American* 256, no. 3 (1987): 90–99.
- Sørensen, Marie-Louise Stig, J. D. Hill, and Sam J. Lucy. "Long-term History on a Danish Island: The Als Project." *Acta Archaeologica* 72, no. 2 (2001): 91–107.

ANNE-BIRGITTE GEBAUER



DATING AND CHRONOLOGY

The nineteenth century saw profound changes in the advance of knowledge in several important areas. Geology and biology had both come to realize that vast spans of time were needed to explain the observed fossil changes and rock formations. Geologists had introduced the idea of strata occurring in the order in which they had been formed, an idea readily translated to archaeology, where lower layers of finds were assumed to be older.

The new ideas of biological evolution advanced by Charles Darwin in his 1859 essay *On the Origin of Species* gave another sense of time. Whereas great scientists like Isaac Newton had, a couple of centuries before, readily accepted that the world started some six thousand years ago, based on a particular interpretation of the biblical story, Darwin left scientists grappling with the idea that humans had developed from “lower” creatures over a very long period of time, which meant that there was a long prehistory to be examined and understood.

By the end of the nineteenth century, archaeologists had recognized a progression in technologies apparent in their artifact collections, and the contexts of the finds had suggested that human populations had moved from stone tools, through the use of copper, to bronze, and then iron. Archaeologists of the day, however, had little or no evidence to put dates to these changes or get any sense of the length of periods involved.

The history of the Near East and Middle East was fairly well understood in the late nineteenth and early twentieth centuries, thanks largely to the fact

that in these literate societies records had been kept, giving times for the reigns of kings and major events. This meant that the great works, such as the pyramids of Egypt, could be dated reasonably well, as could the introduction of metallurgical technologies in different parts of this region. The region was considered to be the cradle of civilization, from which the knowledge of building techniques and metalworking spread out gradually through trading links and other associations to displace the crude technologies of prehistoric Europe. This was known as the idea of diffusion.

Some did argue that, in a way that parallels evolution in the biological world, the technologies may have evolved in different areas and spread more locally, but with limited dating evidence, this idea was almost impossible to support or reject from the available information.

In order to construct a meaningful story explaining the developments of human populations in any part of the world it is essential to have a reliable dating framework. With no written records pertaining to the barbarian world, the only way in which any framework could be constructed was by cross-reference to areas where the historical chronology was known. Typological dating—that is, dating by analogy to other artifacts of known date—can become a difficult circular argument. Added to this, the idea that technology had diffused out from the ancient East gradually toward the west, perhaps with a major jump to the Iberian Peninsula (modern Spain and Portugal), which itself then acted as another center for diffusion, colored the interpreta-

tions, since a passage of time was generally added for the process of uptake of the new technologies.

It is with this widely accepted idea of the spread of civilization across Europe from the East, with dating in the East being well established through the historical record, that archaeological thought progressed until the scientific advances of the second half of the twentieth century.

EARLY RADIOCARBON DATING

In order to appreciate the impact of the information that has been provided by radiocarbon dating on our understanding of prehistory, it is first necessary to have a brief understanding of the theory and practice of the methodology.

Carbon exists in three forms, or isotopes, ^{12}C , ^{13}C , and ^{14}C , of which two are stable, but ^{14}C , or carbon 14 as it is sometimes known, is radioactive and decays over time. Carbon 14 is produced when cosmic neutrons strike nitrogen in the upper atmosphere. It readily combines with oxygen to form $^{14}\text{CO}_2$ —radioactive carbon dioxide, which mixes throughout the atmosphere.

All living things take in some of this material while they are alive, either as gas from the atmosphere, or dissolved in water, or, in the case of animals, as part of their diet of plants or other animals. The amounts of this radioactive carbon are very small indeed, something like one part for every million million parts of nonradioactive carbon. As soon as an organism dies, however, it no longer takes up more carbon 14, but that which it does have decays slowly, reducing to half the original amount in about 5,730 years. If one knows how much radioactive carbon there was at the time the organism was alive, and one can measure the tiny amount of it left in the organic matter today, given the rate of decay, it is theoretically possible to tell the length of time that has elapsed since the organism died.

This calculation is achieved by converting the carbon into either a liquid or gaseous substance and measuring the number of radioactive decays from this sample over a time period. This brilliant idea for a new dating technique was first applied by Willard Libby in 1949 and was very quickly recognized by archaeologists as a way of establishing the missing chronological framework within which to set their findings. Yet it was quite some time before the ma-

majority of archaeologists were prepared to accept the dates being produced. They had several reasons to be skeptical about the results of radiocarbon dating.

First, contamination of the sample is a serious potential problem, especially since one is dealing with such small quantities of carbon 14. For example, a minute drop of oil (ancient carbon), small amounts of fungus growing on the organic remains, or even flakes of skin from the collector of the sample (modern carbon) could seriously affect the results.

The so-called half-life for carbon 14—that is, the time it takes to decay to half its original amount—was understood by Libby early on to be 5,568 years, whereas it is now known to be closer to 5,730 years. Also, the amounts being measured are very small indeed, so that minuscule errors in reading the amounts of radioactive material present in the sample will have proportionally a very large impact on the result.

Another potential problem is that although it was initially assumed that all organisms took in the same mix of radioactive and nonradioactive carbon, it was later found that a process known as “fractionation” occurs, whereby different organisms take up different isotopes in varying proportions.

Finally, one of the original assumptions behind the carbon-14 dating process was that the amount of radioactive carbon in the atmosphere is likely to have been fairly constant throughout the last fifty thousand to sixty thousand years—the maximum period during which radiocarbon dating generally can be applied, because after this time the amounts become too small to be measured with an acceptable degree of accuracy.

As each of these problems was addressed—by greater understanding of the theory behind the system, by the introduction of better protocols for the collection, submission, and analysis of the materials, and by improvements in the analyzing equipment—the technique gained wide-scale acceptance, and Willard Libby was awarded the Nobel Prize for chemistry in 1960.

Colin Renfrew refers to this period when the first dates were coming out as the “first radiocarbon revolution.” But even as the method of carbon-14 dating gained acceptance, some surprising results

emerged concerning dates relating to early agriculture and settlement. Dates from Jericho suggested settlement around six thousand years ago, about fifteen hundred years earlier than expected (subsequent analyses have set the foundation of pre-pottery Jericho to around 7000 B.C.). Dates for the European Neolithic were coming out around a thousand years earlier than the accepted wisdom of the time. The radiocarbon-derived dates for artifacts from the Egyptian and Mesopotamian areas, for which there was a sound historical chronology already in existence, were apparently different by a few hundred years, whereas many dates that started to come from prehistoric sites in Europe were suggesting that they were far older than was thought possible. The many potential errors in deriving radiocarbon dates continued to make it easy to suggest that the whole methodology was flawed.

DENDROCHRONOLOGY

The next real breakthrough in the story of how a dating framework for prehistory in the barbarian world came about was the availability of precisely dated wood samples that would allow for independent testing of the radiocarbon timescale. Dendrochronology, or tree-ring dating, is based on the fact that trees of the same species, growing over a wide geographical area and subject to the same weather conditions throughout their growth, will produce similar ring-width series that can be crossmatched between them (fig. 1). Although every individual tree will reflect its own unique circumstances in its rings, there is generally sufficient climatically induced “signal” that if the ring series is long enough it can be matched to others that grew at the same period in history. If one starts with living, or recently felled trees, each ring can be assigned a calendar year. Some individuals of a species may have missing or even apparent double rings, but these can usually be detected by cross-matching against many other trees from the same species.

By finding older sources of wood, either preserved in deposits or used in archaeological contexts, it is possible to match the outermost rings of this older wood with the innermost rings of the dated material, and extend the chronology back in time. By successive overlapping of older and older material, long chronologies, over thousands of years, can be produced.

Dendrochronology developed rapidly at the start of the twentieth century, particularly in the United States with the work of A. E. Douglass (1919). When Charles Ferguson in the mid-1960s developed a bristlecone pine chronology going back several thousand years (1969), and in the 1980s Bernd Becker (1981) and Michael Baillie and colleagues (1983) produced long oak chronologies, wood samples from a wide geographical area, of precisely known date, could be subjected to radiocarbon analysis. As early as 1967, H. E. Suess produced a graph that enabled corrections to be applied to radiocarbon dates resulting from the fluctuations observed from tree-ring samples, and this method of determining chronology was rapidly developed.

If the amount of carbon 14 in the atmosphere had remained constant, and if the conditions of preservation of the material had not had differential effects on the amounts of radioactive carbon in the samples, one would expect that if the amount of carbon 14 was plotted against time (or against the calendrical date of the wood sample derived by dendrochronology) one would find a simple relationship.

The results actually obtained show that there have been great fluctuations in the amount of carbon 14 in the atmosphere at different periods in history and that these changes can occur rapidly, over a matter of a few years or decades, as well as showing longer-term fluctuations over centuries or millennia. This variation is thought to be the result of fluctuations in the magnetic field of the Earth.

This means that if one simply draws a decay curve and reads a date from it corresponding to the amount of carbon 14 found in a given sample, there is the potential to be a long way from the actual date of the sample. In fact the decay curve has many “wobbles” within it, such that it is possible that the same amount of carbon 14 found in a sample could actually result from material from more than one date. By the late 1980s these fluctuations had been well documented by Minze Stuiver and Gordon Pearson, and it became possible to give a more precise statistical probability of the actual date range of the sample being submitted. Stuiver and Pearson’s later curve (1993) has become the standard against which most radiocarbon determinations in the time span back to about 6000 B.C. have been calibrated.

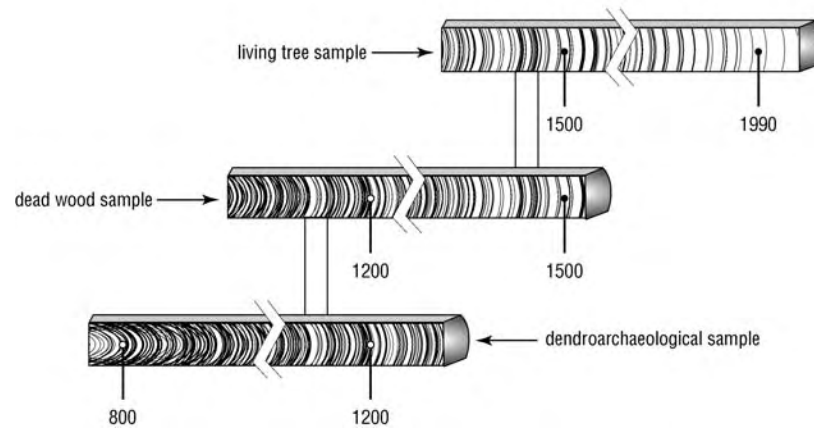


Fig. 1. Cross-dated wood samples overlap in time. Successive overlapping of older tree-ring sequences allow long chronologies to be built. In practice, many wood samples represent each year of the chronology.

This high-precision dating requires far more accurate measurements of the carbon 14 in the sample, an accuracy that results from more careful preparation of the sample and longer counting periods, but such improvement obviously incurs greater costs. To obtain a 10 percent increase in the level of accuracy requires an additional one hundred times the length of counting. It is not always appropriate to expend these resources on samples if, for instance, all that is required is to know the broad relative dates of several samples in a sequence. A situation therefore emerged whereby one could obtain a “routine date” or a “high-precision date” depending on the questions to be answered.

In the late 1970s a further advance in radiocarbon dating was made with the introduction of accelerator mass spectrometry (AMS). In this method, the actual amount of carbon 14 present in the sample is measured directly by mass spectroscopy, rather than counting the number of radioactive decays in a given time period. The introduction of AMS carbon-14 dating has reduced the associated error terms to a period of around plus or minus sixty to eighty years in most cases.

CALIBRATION

Once a radiocarbon age determination has been produced, it is generally converted into a calibrated age, by reference to a calibration curve based on carbon-14 determinations of dendrochronologically dated wood. Such calibration curves show the variations in carbon content against calendar years, with

the associated error terms—which vary in different periods. A very basic understanding of statistics is necessary here. An uncalibrated age is given with its associated possible error, expressed as one standard deviation from the mean: for example, 2500±100 B.P. (or “years ago”). In order to ensure that there is a 95 percent probability (the normal limit for most scientific studies) that the calibrated date will lie within the range quoted, we need to take a two-standard-deviation range: that is, 2500±200, or 2700–2300 years B.P. If the upper and lower limits of these uncalibrated dates are then plotted on the calibration curve, they can be converted into calendar years, which may give a broader or narrower date range, depending on the shape of the curve at this point.

Apart from the dating of human artifacts, the development of long dendrochronologies has allowed environmental factors to be dated, giving important background information to the human story. Dendroclimatology, the extraction of climatic information from the tree-ring series, is a well-established and growing area of tree-ring work.

Dendrochronology has itself provided dates of great importance—for example the event of 1628 B.C. first described by Valmore LaMarche and Katherine Hirschboeck (1984) and discussed at length by Baillie in *A Slice through Time* (1995). The eruption of Santorini (also known as Thera) took place in the Bronze Age and would have had effects throughout the Aegean. The precise dating of this

event has implications for interpreting several prehistoric events in the region and has often been proposed as the most likely cause for the end of Minoan civilization on Crete. This itself was clarified when an ash layer identified as coming from this eruption was found stratified before the end of Minoan civilization, between two phases known as LM1A and LM1B. LM1A appears to end at Akrotiri with the eruption, and the end of LM1B is traditionally linked to around 1450 B.C.

Some scientists believed that the eruption, presumably marking the end of LM1A, could not be put earlier than 1550 B.C. based on links between the Aegean artifacts and the established Egyptian chronology; although when a tree-ring event first suggested a possible date in the seventeenth century B.C. other workers were able to reconcile their interpretations of the archaeology to fit with this date. The Santorini eruption brings together several strands of scientific dating—tree rings, radiocarbon dating, and ice core work, as well as traditional linkages based on stylistic similarities between objects.

Radiocarbon analysis of short-lived organic matter, such as seeds charred by the eruption, has been carried out on many samples. This has produced a range of dates that even after calibration gives a spread that is not completely capable of distinguishing between a seventeenth and a sixteenth century B.C. date. In fact, the eruption falls on one of those parts of the radiocarbon calibration curve where it is actually not possible to distinguish between 1628 B.C. and 1530 B.C. because the curve has a “wobble” during this period (fig. 2). In this particular time frame, the collection of more and more radiocarbon samples to date a single event does not make the actual date any clearer.

Layers in ice cores also approximate to annual events and have been used as a dating tool, with the added advantage that acidity peaks in the ice have been found to coincide with ash deposits from volcanic eruptions. An acidity layer corresponding to an eruption has been noted at 1645 ± 20 B.C. This range is remarkably close to the 1628 B.C. event noted in two different tree-ring sequences from widely separate geographical areas.

No one can prove that these two markers represent the same event, and no one can yet prove that the event in question is the eruption of Santorini.

However, there are no other candidate eruptions that have yet been identified, and something must have caused both observations.

The ice core evidence and the amounts of sulfur outgassed from Santorini, causing the acidity peak, have been the subject of much debate. The radiocarbon dates for this event show a spread that is not helpful in pinning down the actual date. Ancient historical records in the form of Egyptian writings only give negative information, in that were the date of the Santorini eruption really in the mid–sixteenth century B.C. one might reasonably expect it to have been recorded in this century, but no records have been found. Baillie makes a strong argument for the tree-ring date to relate to Santorini and leaves us with the thought that if it is not recording that event, another major event causing the decline in tree-ring widths over North America and Ireland must have taken place, which is as yet unrecognized.

THE COLLAPSE OF TRADITIONAL THINKING ON PREHISTORY

Tree-ring calibration of the radiocarbon timescale removed the doubt lingering in some minds about the veracity of the dates being produced and brought in a whole new raft of dates for both the Near East and Europe. Much greater than the production of dates themselves, however, was the realization that came about as a result of having large numbers of accurate dates. Although the established historical framework for the ancient East remained largely unaltered, most dates for significant events in Europe, such as the introduction of stone buildings or monuments, metalworking, and so forth, were found to be far earlier than most archaeologists had previously expected. Whereas the great pyramids of Egypt had always been considered to be among the oldest man-made stone buildings on Earth, dating back to perhaps 2500–2700 B.C., it now emerged that the megalithic tombs of western Europe were older than either the pyramids or the round tombs of Crete, both of which had always been considered as their precursors. Newgrange in Ireland dates to about 3200 B.C. Similarly, it can now be shown that copper was being worked in the Balkans several centuries before a comparable level of development emerged in the Aegean, a region that was thought to be the source of a skill base that was then taken westward.

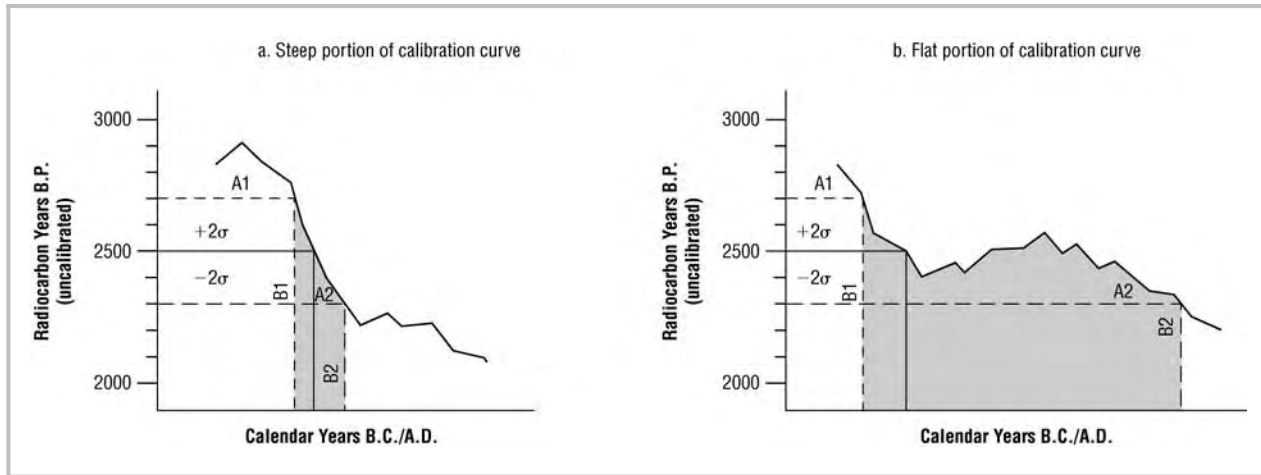


Fig. 2. Hypothetical radiocarbon calibration curves derived from tree rings.

The whole idea of the diffusion of ideas from the East, bringing civilization to western Europe was found to be wrong. Colin Renfrew recognized what he called a “chronological fault line,” with the areas of the Aegean and eastern Mediterranean lying on one side and western Europe on the other. Those areas to the south and east of the line do not have their dates much altered as a result of tree-ring-based radiocarbon calibration, whereas those to the north and west are made several centuries earlier.

Continuing the analogy with geology, all the strata and cultures once thought to lie at the same level before radiocarbon dating became shifted in their relationship to each other, with the western European layers being much earlier in comparison, but with their internal relative dating to each other remaining the same. So the “layers” of the Late Neolithic in the Iberian Peninsula, for example, used to be matched with the Early Bronze Age in the Aegean, but now match at a similar time level. Thus all the earlier work of relating changes and sites to each other within each of these areas remains valid; it is just the associations across the “fault line” where changes have to be taken into account.

OTHER DATING METHODS

The closing decades of the twentieth century saw the development of a range of other specialist dating methods. Some of these are more suited to dating rocks and remains beyond the normal useful range of radiocarbon dating. Methods that are of relatively limited use in the timeframe considered here, are

not readily applicable to archaeological remains, or are as yet still considered under development include the following.

- potassium-argon dating
- uranium series dating
- fission-track dating
- amino acid racemization
- archaeomagnetic dating

Of far more value with prehistoric archaeological remains are thermoluminescence (TL), optical stimulation luminescence dating (OSL), and obsidian hydration. The last of these is restricted to obsidian finds, which form a surface hydration layer when exposed to air, the thickness of this layer corresponding with the length of exposure.

Thermoluminescence (TL) and optical (OSL) dating have perhaps been the most widely used, especially with ceramic artifacts. TL was developed in the 1960s and 1970s. TL is based on the fact that some minerals such as quartz, feldspars, and calcites react in a particular way after exposure to radiation, so that when heated, they give off light. The system relies on impurities in the original item. The sites of the atoms of the impurities attract free electrons, which are released when heat energy is applied. The electrons recombine at luminescence centers and release photons. The amount of thermoluminescence is proportional to the number of trapped electrons present, which is in turn proportional to the radiation exposure, or time elapsed. This is not a straight linear relationship, since the longer the exposure time, the fewer the sites available to trap electrons.

Some event in which the temperature of the object reached 450°C needs to have taken place to “zero” the system—for example, the firing of pottery, or heating in a hearth. It may be difficult to guarantee that objects, say, at the edge of a hearth were in fact zeroed. Pottery does not have this drawback, and objects as young as one hundred years can be dated in this way. The subsequent exposure of such items to sunlight might empty some or all of the sites, but the method is very suitable for buried objects.

The first comparisons of dates between thermoluminescence and radiocarbon were published in 1970 by D. W. Zimmerman and J. Huxtable. TL dates from three sites were 5350 B.C., 5330 B.C., and 4610 B.C., and the range of radiocarbon dates for the same site fall into the period 5300–4600 B.C. This was reassuring news for many scientists.

OSL works on principles similar to those of TL, with samples being exposed to green laser light to empty the electron traps. The main difference from TL is that light rather than heat is the agent that zeroes the system and gives the dating reference. Samples of quartz grains exposed to sunlight but then subsequently deposited and buried are the main samples subjected to this analysis. One example is the White Horse at Uffington in southern England. This is a prehistoric figure of a horse, cut directly into the hillside and packed with white chalk. Various experts had judged the artistic style of this object to be either Anglo-Saxon or Celtic (Late Iron Age). However, analysis of silt laid down, presumably around the time of formation, gave OSL dates in the range 1400–600 B.C.—dating the piece to the Late Bronze Age, which relates quite well to other finds in the area.

The existence of an independent, scientifically based dating framework that does not rely on stylistic similarities between objects has profoundly changed our view of the ancient world. Although each of these dating techniques has its limitations, and individual results still need to be assessed with the appropriate caution, the overall pattern that emerges is quite different from that of a relatively few decades ago.

Consequently, the view of prehistory in areas such as western Europe has changed dramatically since the 1960s. Although definitions of civilization

are always difficult, and generally involve living in complex social societies and writing, our view of the so-called barbarian people inhabiting western Europe—living primitively while the great civilizations of Egypt and the Aegean thrived, and “waiting” to be civilized by influences from the East—has had to be changed out of all recognition when considering the organization necessary to build the large stone structures of Stonehenge in England, Newgrange in Ireland, Maeshowe in Orkney, the megalithic tombs of Brittany and Spain, and the timber pile-dwellings of central Europe.

See also *Boyne Valley Passage Graves* (vol. 1, part 4); *The Minoan World* (vol. 2, part 5).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Baillie, Michael. *A Slice through Time: Dendrochronology and Precision Dating*. London: Batsford, 1995.
- Baillie, Michael, Jon R. Pilcher, and Gordon W. Pearson. “Dendrochronology at Belfast as a Background to High-Precision Calibration.” *Radiocarbon* 25, no. 2 (1983): 171–178.
- Becker, Bernd. “A 2,350-Year South German Oak–Tree-Ring Chronology.” *Fundberichte aus Baden-Württemberg* 1 (1981): 545–564.
- Douglass, A. E. *Climatic Cycles and Tree-Growth*. Vol. 1. Washington, D.C.: Carnegie Institution, 1919.
- Ferguson, Charles W. “A 7,104-Year Annual Tree-Ring Chronology for Bristlecone Pine, *Pinus aristata*, from the White Mountains, California.” *Tree-Ring Bulletin* 29, nos. 3–4 (1969): 2–29.
- LaMarche, Valmore C., and Katherine K. Hirschboeck. “Frost Rings in Trees as Records of Major Volcanic Eruptions.” *Nature* 307 (January 1984): 121–126.
- Renfrew, Colin. *Before Civilization: The Radiocarbon Revolution and Prehistoric Europe*. London: Cape, 1973.
- Stuiver, Minze, and Gordon W. Pearson. “High-Precision Bidecadal Calibration of the Radiocarbon Time Scale, A.D. 1950–500 B.C. and 2500–6000 B.C.” *Radiocarbon* 35 (1993): 1–23.
- . “High-Precision Calibration of the Radiocarbon Time Scale, A.D. 1950–500 B.C.” *Radiocarbon* 28, no. 2B (1986): 805–838.
- Suess, H. E. “Bristlecone Pine Calibration of the Radiocarbon Time Scale from 5200 B.C. to the Present.” In *Radiocarbon Variations and Absolute Chronology*. Edited by Ingrid U. Olsson, pp. 303–309. New York: Wiley, 1970.
- Zimmerman, D. W., and J. Huxtable. “Some Thermoluminescent Dates for Linear Pottery.” *Antiquity* 44 (1970): 304–305

MARTIN BRIDGE



ARCHAEOLOGY AND ENVIRONMENT

The nature of past environments is a key aspect of archaeology because human action cannot be understood in isolation from its surroundings. For example, the lifestyle of a human group living in a densely forested area in a temperate climate would be very different from that of the same community inhabiting a treeless arctic landscape. Furthermore, in the case of any individual archaeological site, it must be realized that the modern environment may bear little relationship to that of the past. There may have been major changes in climate, sea level, soils, and plant and animal communities over the millennia. Thus a site occupying a coastal setting in the Mesolithic period might now lie several kilometers inland, or it might be completely submerged by the sea.

The reconstruction of past environments is based on many types of evidence, ranging from long-term perspectives on climate change provided by analysis of deep sea sediments and the Greenland and Antarctic ice sheets to reconstruction of local plant and animal communities from biological remains excavated from archaeological sites. Specialists from many fields, including climatologists, geologists, soil scientists, botanists, and zoologists are involved in analyzing such data.

THE HISTORY OF ARCHAEOLOGICAL INTEREST IN THE ENVIRONMENT

Until the 1970s archaeology was concerned mainly with using structures and artifacts to produce a reconstruction of a site, with little attention paid to

the surrounding environment. If any “environmental” evidence at all was retrieved, it usually consisted of animal bones and larger plant remains (such as charred grain), which might be discussed in relation to site economy.

Important exceptions did exist, notably where excavation of wetland sites was involved. In wetlands, permanent waterlogging results in an oxygen-poor environment that reduces the level of microbial activity and enables organic materials to be preserved. These materials range from pollen grains to complete wooden buildings, and from microscopic parasite eggs to intact bodies such as the Danish Iron Age “bog bodies” Tollund Man and Grauballe Man. The discovery of sites such as the prehistoric lake villages of Switzerland in the mid-nineteenth century prompted the realization that the study of plant and animal remains could add significantly to an understanding of site function and setting.

In Britain one area of wetland that became a focus for early collaboration between archaeologists and environmental scientists was the East Anglian Fenland. The Fenland Research Committee was established in the 1930s to investigate the sedimentary history and archaeology of the area, which was densely settled in the Roman period. The prehistoric archaeology of the Fens was investigated by Grahame Clark, who later demonstrated the potential of biological remains for answering questions about environment and resource availability in his well-known excavations at the Early Mesolithic site of Star Carr in northeastern England.

Period	Climate	Evidence	Approximate start date in NW Europe
Subatlantic	Cold and wet	Unhumified <i>Sphagnum</i> peat	c. 800 B.C.
Subboreal	Warm and dry	Humified peat with pine tree stumps	c. 3800 B.C.
Atlantic	Warm and wet	Unhumified <i>Sphagnum</i> peat	c. 6000 B.C.
Boreal	Warm and dry	Humified peat with pine tree stumps	c. 9000 B.C.
Preboreal	Sub-arctic	Remains of sub-arctic plants	c. 9500 B.C.

The Blytt-Sernander scheme of Holocene climate change. ADAPTED FROM LOWE AND WALKER 1984.

Clark's excavations at Star Carr from 1949 to 1951 revealed a dump of timber at the edge of a substantial lake, associated with an exceptionally large number of artifacts made from deer bone and antler. Clark collaborated with specialists on animal bones and plant remains to reconstruct the environmental setting of the site and to shed light on the availability of food resources and raw materials. Furthermore, he used aspects of the animal bone assemblage in an attempt to ascertain the seasons during which the site was occupied.

Today, advances in excavation and sampling methods mean that evidence for the environment can be retrieved from most excavations, whatever the soil conditions. The nature of the soil does, however, affect the types of biological materials that will be preserved: sites on calcareous (chalk or limestone) soils, for example, are good for preserving bones and shells, whereas sites on acidic (low pH) soils are not. Such on-site evidence is complemented by the increasingly detailed information coming from off-site deposits, including peat bogs and lake sediments, which have often accumulated undisturbed for thousands of years. Such sequences can shed light on long-term changes in climate, sea level, and plant and animal communities, and can be linked to the archaeological record by radiocarbon or other dating techniques.

CLIMATE AND SEA-LEVEL CHANGES

The current period of relatively warm and stable climate is known as the Holocene, and follows a series of cold (glacial) and warm (interglacial) climate fluctuations during the period termed the Pleistocene. The Pleistocene-Holocene transition is traditionally placed at 10,000 radiocarbon years B.P. (before present), but "absolute" dates from annually layered lake sediments, tree rings, and annually deposited ice layers in the Greenland ice sheet indicate

that it occurred about 11,500 years ago (or c. 9500 B.C.). Climatic warming at this time was remarkably rapid. In Greenland temperatures increased by about 15°C in a decade or less, followed by another period of more gradual warming over the next thousand years or so. It is remarkable to think that Early Mesolithic people living through this period would have experienced significant climate change within their own lifetimes, along with associated changes in availability of plant and animal resources.

Climatic warming led to the melting of enormous ice sheets that had covered much of northwestern Europe during the Ice Age, producing dramatic changes in sea level and coastal topography. In the Ice Age, Ireland and Britain formed part of a single landmass with continental Europe, but a rise in sea level resulted in the formation of the Irish Sea and then the English Channel, which eliminated the land link to the continent by c. 7400 B.C.

In addition to rising sea levels caused by ice melt (glacio-eustatic sea-level rise), coastal change also occurred due to "rebound" following the release of the weight of ice (glacio-isostatic changes). The effects of sea-level change mean that the modern coast of Europe is very different from what it was at the start of the Holocene, and different parts of the coast were affected differently due to a combination of isostatic recovery, absolute sea-level rise, and sedimentation. Parts of the coast where there was a fall of relative sea level may display raised beaches, for example, while a sea-level rise is indicated by submerged forests and settlements, which may be exposed on the coast at low tide. In addition to changes of sea level, river channels have altered considerably due to erosion and silting, and many lakes formed by the action of the glaciers have long since filled with sediment.

After the rapid warming of the Early Holocene, climate remained relatively stable during the prehistoric and early historic periods, although more subtle changes in temperature and rainfall continued to occur. These are apparent from various sources of evidence, of which the most widely available and studied are peat bogs. The degree of decomposition (humification) of peat is related to the climate in which it formed. Under cool or wet conditions the plants making up the peat decompose only slightly and form a pale-colored peat in which individual plant remains are clearly identifiable. Conversely, under warm or dry conditions plant remains decay to a greater degree and produce a dark-colored, highly humified peat. Peat bogs may thus contain layers of pale and dark peat, which can be linked to the climate at the time of deposition. Furthermore, the types of plants making up the peat vary depending on climate. Under very wet conditions the peat may consist mainly of mosses, such as *Sphagnum*, whereas, under drier conditions trees and shrubs may colonize the bog surface, resulting in the formation of a woody peat.

In the early twentieth century the Scandinavian botanists Axel Blytt and Rutger Sernander used such changes in Scandinavian peat bogs to construct a scheme of Holocene climate zones (see table), which was later widely applied across northwestern Europe. The zones were assumed to represent broadly synchronous changes in climate in different regions, but with the advent of radiocarbon dating it was shown that there was considerable regional variation in the timing and character of climate change. In the 1990s and early 2000s approaches to climate reconstruction from peat were refined to make it possible to record both major large-scale and subtle short-term changes, and improvements in the accuracy and precision of dating mean that these events can often be closely linked to the archaeological record.

Climate change is often invoked as a driving force behind key changes in the archaeological record, such as the adoption of agriculture. In Europe the transition from hunting, fishing, and gathering to farming has long been linked to changes in temperature and rainfall, although some of these hypotheses were based on climate reconstructions that have since been revised. Recent analyses of the ice cores from Greenland indicate that maximum Ho-

locene temperatures were reached between c. 6600 and 2300 B.C., spanning the agricultural transition in Europe, and pollen evidence suggests that, toward the middle of this period, summer temperatures across much of Europe were approximately 2°C warmer than today. Warmer temperatures would have affected both natural vegetation and crops, but whether this effect was beneficial would have depended on other aspects of climate, such as the seasonal distribution and quantity of rainfall, the details of which are unknown. Furthermore, climate change during this period varied by region, and it is unlikely that a consistent link to the adoption of agriculture could be demonstrated across an area as environmentally diverse as Europe.

Recent research has also highlighted the significance of short-term climate changes resulting from variations in solar activity, including a period of cooler and wetter climate at the end of the Bronze Age, c. 850 B.C. Such changes may have had considerable implications for land use, by affecting the extent to which “marginal” upland and low-lying areas could be farmed. In the Netherlands, for example, some Late Bronze Age settlements seem to have been abandoned due to a rise in the water table at this time.

An intriguing aspect of environmental change in “marginal” environments in northwestern Europe is the extent to which climate, and hence human activity, may have been affected by major eruptions of the volcanoes in Iceland. In Iceland itself, the output of lava and ash (tephra) from such eruptions could engulf entire settlements, a fate that befell the farmstead of Stöng in southwestern Iceland during an eruption of Hekla in A.D. 1104. Could the volcanic gases from such eruptions have had more wide-ranging effects? The debate arises from the observation by the dendrochronologist (tree-ring dating specialist) Michael G. Baillie that particularly narrow rings (reflecting poor growth) in trees from Irish peat bogs and other sites in western Europe appear to be contemporary with peaks of acidity in the Greenland ice sheet resulting from gas emissions from major volcanic eruptions. Such eruptions may have caused climate deterioration by reducing transmission of the sun’s energy, leading to a fall in temperature of perhaps a few tenths of a degree. Some of these “narrow ring events” appear to coincide with periods of change in the archaeo-

logical record, such as the abandonment of extensive Bronze Age field systems in upland areas of northern and western Britain. This has led some archaeologists to suggest that trees and humans were responding to the same episodes of climate deterioration. Others remain skeptical of a link, however, noting that the scale of change argued for parts of upland Britain is sometimes greater than that thought to have resulted from the same eruptions in Iceland itself.

Another mechanism by which Icelandic eruptions might have affected distant environments is soil acidification. In areas where soils are already acidic and marginal for agriculture, the “acid rain” following a volcanic eruption can acidify the soil further and push the ecosystem beyond the threshold at which it can be farmed.

NATURAL CHANGES IN PLANT AND ANIMAL COMMUNITIES

The climatic warming at the end of the last glacial period triggered major changes in plant and animal communities, which would have affected the availability of food and other resources to the human population. Parts of northern Europe that had remained free of ice during the glacial period were covered in sparse tundra, but, as the climate warmed, trees began to spread across the landscape from refuge areas in the Mediterranean. Evidence for this spread of woodland comes from analysis of pollen grains preserved in lake sediments and peat bogs (fig. 1). By c. 8000 B.C. much of Europe was covered in dense woodland, the composition of which varied by soil type and climate. In many areas hazel (*Corylus avellana*) woodland was dominant, and hazelnuts seem to have provided an important food source for Mesolithic people, as they are a common find on sites of this period. At the later Mesolithic site of Staosnaig, on the Hebridean island of Islay in Scotland, thousands of charred hazelnuts were found, suggesting that this resource was harvested systematically.

The spread of woodland was accompanied by changes in animal communities. Tundra species adapted to cold, such as reindeer, were replaced by animals more suited to forest conditions, including roe deer, wild boar, and beaver. Several of these species were hunted by Mesolithic and later peoples, sometimes to the point of local extinction.

HUMAN IMPACT ON THE ENVIRONMENT

The nature and scale of human impact on the environment have changed considerably over time, ranging from the creation of small woodland clearings and the burning of vegetation in the Mesolithic period to major woodland clearance for agriculture in the later Neolithic period and after. Evidence for this impact comes from a variety of sources, both archaeological sites and natural deposits.

One of the principal techniques used to reconstruct the interaction between human activity and the environment is pollen analysis. Many plants produce large amounts of pollen that may be preserved for hundreds of thousands of years in waterlogged deposits. The identification of this pollen makes it possible to reconstruct the original plant communities. The technique can be used to show natural changes in vegetation, such as woodland colonization of the landscape after the last glacial period, as well as the impact of human activity.

Human activity may be detected from pollen sequences in a variety of ways. For example, Mesolithic hunting and gathering peoples created small clearings in the dense woodland that covered much of the landscape of Europe, and these clearings can be detected in the pollen record as a decline in the abundance of tree pollen and an increase in that of sun-loving herbaceous plants, such as grasses. Sometimes these changes may be difficult to distinguish from the effects of large grazing mammals, such as wild cattle, or even the tree-felling activities of beaver. In such cases human presence may be established by the presence of microscopic charcoal particles in the deposits. Major natural fires seem to have been rare in prehistoric northwestern Europe, but fire was used by Mesolithic and later peoples to modify the environment. An example is provided by the Early Mesolithic site of Star Carr. The original research by Grahame Clark was followed in the 1990s by a detailed program of biological analyses designed to shed new light on the interaction between people and the environment at the site. High-resolution pollen analysis (samples at intervals of one to two years) was used to look for short-term vegetation changes linked to human activity, combined with charcoal particle analysis to verify the use of fire. This research suggested that people were deliberately burning reedbeds around the lake c. 9000

B.C., perhaps to encourage animals to graze on the lush regrowth. This may be the earliest example of deliberate environmental management in Europe.

Other indications of human activity given in pollen sequences can come from the presence of pollen of “anthropogenic indicators”—plants that are strongly associated with human activity. One example is ribwort plantain (*Plantago lanceolata*), a plant growing on grazed grassland or fallow arable land. It often first appears in pollen sequences in the Early Neolithic period, when woodland clearings were being created for grazing and small-scale crop cultivation. Other plants linked to human activity include arable weeds and, of course, crops such as cereals. Most crops produce very little pollen, so they are very underrepresented in the pollen record, but the spread of crop cultivation across Europe can be traced by the presence of cereal grains preserved by charring on Neolithic sites.

An intriguing event recorded in many pollen sequences spanning the Early Neolithic period in northwestern Europe is the “elm decline.” This was a major drop in the abundance of elm (*Ulmus*) pollen, from about 10 percent to 1 percent of the total pollen, c. 3800 B.C. Several hypotheses have been proposed to explain it. Originally, it was thought to reflect a response to climate deterioration, but the fact that usually only elm is involved made this hypothesis unlikely. Subsequently, the frequent association of the decline with the first occurrence of cereal pollen led to the view that it represented the spread of Neolithic agriculture: farmers selectively cleared elm woodland growing on the best soils. Cereal pollen dating to several centuries before the elm decline has been found at some sites, however, which suggests that cereal farming was already established.

Another opinion was based on the practice, still employed in some mountainous areas such as Norway, of collecting leafy branches of trees to feed cattle in winter. If elm was used as a source of leaf fodder in the Neolithic period, this might account for its decline in the pollen record, since the removal of leafy branches would reduce pollen production. Archaeological evidence for the use of tree leaves to feed cattle comes from the excavation of early Neolithic cattle barns at Weier in northeastern Switzerland, though here elm was just one of several tree species that had been collected, and one of the least



Fig. 1. Pollen grain of pine from Mesolithic lake sediment, c. 9000 B.C. COURTESY OF PETRA DARK. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

abundant. Leaf fodder collection is unlikely to explain a decline confined to elm, especially since the elm decline was so widespread, even in areas where human populations were probably sparse.

Important evidence for the timing of the elm decline has come from annually layered lake sediments from Diss Mere in Norfolk, England. Here the elm decline occurred over a period of just six years. The rapidity of the event suggests it is unlikely it was due entirely to human activity, but there are similarities with the effects of recent outbreaks of tree disease such as chestnut blight in North America and Dutch elm disease in Europe. There is no direct evidence for a disease of elm trees in Neolithic Europe, but remains of the beetle responsible for the spread of Dutch elm disease (*Scolytus scolytus*) have been found in Neolithic deposits from Hampstead Heath in London, England, and wood showing the characteristic burrows made by the elm bark beetle has been found at Weier and other Neolithic

sites in Switzerland and Denmark. The beetle acts as a vector for the fungus that causes the disease (*Ceratocystis ulmi*). The remains of the fungus have not been found but this is unsurprising, as fungi are rarely preserved in the archaeological record.

The disease hypothesis accounts for the speed and wide geographical range of the elm decline, but at many sites an association with human activity is suggested by the presence of cereal pollen and other “anthropogenic indicators.” It seems that the elm decline may have been caused by a combination of disease and human activity: as Neolithic people removed elm branches for leaf fodder or building purposes, they damaged the trees and provided points of entry for the disease, thus encouraging its spread. The spread of the disease may itself have encouraged Neolithic people to clear woodland by killing trees and creating natural openings in the dense woodland canopy.

The Neolithic elm decline provides a useful example of the multiple hypotheses that often need to be considered to understand the past relationships between human activity and environment and the range of different types of evidence that can be used to support them.

Several aspects of prehistoric environmental change probably reflect a combination of human activity and natural factors. The expansion of moorland vegetation across previously wooded parts of upland northwestern Europe is another example. Peat formation in such areas may have been triggered by increased rainfall, leading to the replacement of trees by wetland plants such as mosses and sedges, but in some areas human activity is implicated. On Dartmoor and the North York Moors in England, for example, the presence of charcoal and sometimes Late Mesolithic flint artifacts immediately below the peat suggests that people were present and were burning the local vegetation before peat formation began. In such cases it has been suggested that the removal of trees and the use of fire may have altered the hydrological balance of the sites, leading to a rise of the water table, which killed the remaining woodland and triggered peat formation. Thus many of the wild and seemingly “natural” moorland landscapes of parts of Europe may owe their origin, at least in part, to human activity.

Human activity, through burning and grazing herds of animals, also seems to have been involved

in the creation and maintenance of other treeless landscapes, such as the heathlands of southern Britain and Denmark. Excavations of ancient land surfaces buried beneath burial mounds (barrows) indicate that woodland had been cleared and soil changes were occurring well before the barrows were built in the Bronze Age.

RESOURCE USE AND SEASONALITY

In addition to the natural deposits that document major environmental changes, evidence for the ways in which prehistoric and early historic peoples modified their environment and exploited its resources is provided by the biological remains from archaeological sites.

Mesolithic peoples lived by hunting, gathering plants, and fishing, and may have moved around the landscape following herds and exploiting seasonally available resources. A characteristic result of later Mesolithic activity in coastal areas is shell middens—large piles of shells, such as cockles and limpets—left from shellfish consumption. Such middens often include remains of other plants and animals used as food, including hazelnuts and fish bones. Archaeologists have attempted to use the animal remains from such middens to shed light on which seasons of the year people were living on the coast. Study of growth lines formed in shells, for example, can show whether shellfish were collected in summer or winter. Ear bones of fish (otoliths) provide another source of seasonal information, as demonstrated by analysis of Late Mesolithic shell middens on the Scottish island of Oronsay. The size of the otoliths was used to assess the age at which the fish were caught, and thus the season during which the midden sites were occupied.

Finds of Late Mesolithic and Neolithic fish traps from the Danish Storebælt provide some of the oldest evidence that early peoples managed woodland to provide wood for specific uses. The thin interwoven rods used to make the traps seem to have come from woodland that had been coppiced (fig. 2). Coppicing involves cutting down trees almost to ground level, after which the new shoots are left to grow for approximately five to ten years (depending on required size), before they are cut again. The resulting stems are of uniform size and suited for various purposes, from basketry to woven (wattlework) wall panels. Coppiced wood was widely used in pre-



Fig. 2. A Neolithic fish weir from Oleslyst, Denmark, made from coppiced wood. COURTESY OF LISBETH PEDERSEN, KALUNDBORG REGIONAL MUSEUM. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

historic and early historic Europe, and has been found in excavations of many waterlogged sites, such as the Neolithic, Bronze Age, and Iron Age trackways across the wetlands of the Somerset Levels in southwestern England.

DOMESTIC ENVIRONMENTS, FROM FARMSTEAD TO TOWN

Where plant and animal remains are well preserved, they can provide evidence not only of the environmental setting of a site and the resource use by its inhabitants but also of their domestic living conditions and state of health. Insect remains have been used to assess the level of hygiene on domestic sites, ranging from Norse farms in Greenland and Iceland to urban centers such as Dublin, Ireland, and Oslo, Norway. Different species of insect may be associated with various types and quantities of decaying organic material or may be parasites of particular

hosts. An example is provided by the Viking Age town of York in northern England. Here the tenth-century town consisted of closely spaced wooden tenements with waste pits, which yielded huge quantities of organic remains. Analysis of the insects indicated that there were substantial quantities of rotting organic material left lying around town, including waste products from cloth manufacture and dyeing, and from the butchering of animal carcasses and the manufacture of objects from bone, antler, and leather. Analysis of the contents of cesspits indicated not only that the diet was rich in a mixture of cereals, fruit, and meat, but also that the people of the town suffered from intestinal parasites such as whipworm (*Trichuris trichiura*) and mawworm (*Ascaris lumbricoides*). External parasites were also commonplace, including human lice (*Pediculus humanus*) and fleas (*Pulex irritans*). Parasitic infections seem to have been less common away from

towns, probably because the lower population densities in the countryside were less conducive to their spread.

CONCLUSION

Evidence about the nature of the environment, from the domestic to the global scale, is essential for understanding past human behavior. The range of techniques that can be applied in obtaining such evidence is expanding rapidly. Biomolecular techniques, such as analysis of ancient DNA (deoxyribonucleic acid), are improving and will play an increasing role in isolating and characterizing tiny quantities of degraded molecules; isotopic analysis of bone can shed light on diet and provide clues to the movement of people between different landscape zones. The specialized scientific nature of much of this research requires close collaboration between archaeologists and scientists and promises to produce many new insights into human-environment relations.

See also **Tollund Man** (vol. 1, part 1); **Star Carr** (vol. 1, part 2); **Muge Shell Middens** (vol. 1, part 2); **Viking York** (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Baillie, Michael G. L. *A Slice through Time: Dendrochronology and Precision Dating*. London: Batsford, 1995.
- Bell, Martin, and Michael Walker. *Late Quaternary Environmental Change: Physical and Human Perspectives*. Harlow, Essex, U.K.: Longman, 1992.
- Clark, J. Grahame D. *Excavations at Star Carr*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1954.
- Coles, John M., and Andrew J. Lawson. *European Wetlands in Prehistory*. Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1987.
- Dark, Petra. *The Environment of Britain in the First Millennium A.D.* London: Duckworth, 2000.
- Davis, Simon J. M. *The Archaeology of Animals*. London: Routledge, 1987.
- Dincauze, Dena F. *Environmental Archaeology: Principles and Practice*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 2000.
- Evans, John, and Terry O'Connor. *Environmental Archaeology: Principles and Methods*. Stroud, U.K.: Sutton, 1999.
- Grattan, John P., and David D. Gilbertson. "Acid-loading from Icelandic Tephra Falling on Acidified Ecosystems as a Key to Understanding Archaeological and Environmental Stress in Northern and Western Britain." *Journal of Archaeological Science* 21 (1994): 851–859.
- Huntley, Brian, and H. John B. Birks. *An Atlas of Past and Present Pollen Maps for Europe: 0–13,000 Years Ago*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1983.
- Kenward, Harold K., and Alan R. Hall. *Biological Evidence from Anglo-Scandinavian Deposits at 16–22 Coppergate*. York, U.K.: Council for British Archaeology, 1995.
- Lowe, John J., and Michael J. C. Walker. *Reconstructing Quaternary Environments*. London: Longman, 1984.
- Mellars, Paul, and Petra Dark. *Star Carr in Context: New Archaeological and Palaeoecological Investigations at the Early Mesolithic Site of Star Carr, North Yorkshire*. Cambridge, U.K.: McDonald Institute for Archaeological Research, 1998.
- Mellars, Paul A., and M. R. Wilkinson. "Fish Otoliths as Indicators of Seasonality in Prehistoric Shellmiddens: The Evidence from Oronsay (Inner Hebrides)." *Proceedings of the Prehistoric Society* 46 (1980): 19–44.
- Mithen, Steven, ed. *Hunter-Gatherer Landscape Archaeology: The Southern Hebrides Mesolithic Project 1988–1998*. Cambridge, U.K.: McDonald Institute for Archaeological Research, 2000.
- Pedersen, Lisbeth, Anders Fischer, and Bent Aaby, eds. *The Danish Storebelt since the Ice Age—Man, Sea, and Forest*. Copenhagen: A/S Storebælt Fixed Link, 1997.
- Peglar, S. M. "The Mid-Holocene *Ulmus* Decline at Diss Mere, Norfolk, UK: A Year-by-year Pollen Stratigraphy from Annual Laminations." *The Holocene* 3 (1993): 1–13.
- Rasmussen, P. "Leaf-foddering of Livestock in the Neolithic: Archaeobotanical Evidence from Weier, Switzerland." *Journal of Danish Archaeology* 8 (1989): 51–71.
- Roberts, Neil. *The Holocene: An Environmental History*. 2d ed. Oxford: Blackwell, 1998.
- Simmons, Ian G. *The Environmental Impact of Later Mesolithic Cultures*. Edinburgh: Edinburgh University Press, 1996.
- Van Geel, B., O. M. Raspopov, J. van der Plicht, and H. Renssen. "Solar Forcing of Abrupt Climate Change around 850 Calendar Years B.C." In *Natural Catastrophes during Bronze Age Civilisations*. Edited by Benny J. Peiser, Trevor Palmer, and Mark E. Bailey, pp. 162–168. BAR International Series, no. 728. Oxford: Archaeopress, 1998.

PETRA DARK



SETTLEMENT PATTERNS AND LANDSCAPES

The archaeology of settlements has grown progressively in its scope and methodology over the long history of the discipline, so that the modern study possesses a wide range of topics and approaches. The general public is still naturally fascinated by images and reconstructions of monumental, non-domestic sites, such as burial mounds, temples, and fortified centers, which were the main focus of pioneer research into archaeological landscapes during the sixteenth through nineteenth centuries A.D. Even in those times, however, more everyday insight into the landscapes and settlements of ordinary people came with unusual archaeological discoveries, such as the wonderfully preserved, volcanically sealed small Roman town of Pompeii or similarly preserved, but water-sealed Swiss prehistoric lake villages.

Indeed, most modern research into past communities and their surroundings is focused on the farms, villages, and even field systems of ordinary people in the past, who were, for the most part, agriculturalists and herders. This aspect of settlement archaeology really took off in the first half of the twentieth century in Europe, as in many other regions of the world, and for interesting reasons is still relevant today. On the one hand, there has been wider public education, the increased involvement of amateurs in archaeology from all social classes, and the influence of trends in the study of history toward a greater concern with the everyday life of people of all social classes. This trend has been coupled, on the other hand, with the wide impact of such technical developments as aerial photography.

(In this respect, both world wars were major stimuli for European landscape archaeology.) Together, these factors all have contributed to making contemporary settlement archaeology a very “democratic” field of the discipline.

Typically, investigations into where and how people lived in the past begin with the intensive study of the layout of domestic residential sites. This is followed by the plotting of systems of settlements across the countryside, with special emphasis on their relationship to the natural environment and land use and the combination of the two in social and economic terms. In parallel, environmental archaeology (the study of animal bones, plant remains, and the physical environment of the past) provides a direct link between the debris found on settlements or in palaeosols (fossil soil horizons) connected to other monuments and contemporaneous landscapes, and the type and degree of human impact.

Some researchers turn to settlement archaeology in the search for cross-cultural regularities—preferably with a very exact or even mathematical form, in the light of a global science of human settlements. The internal form of domestic settlements (intrasite study) should express in constructed space the workings of the social group it housed. The analysis of settlement systems across the landscape (intersite study) should reveal strong, regular settlement patterning correlated with quantifiable environmental variables and with the attempt to define rather abstract laws of human motion in space (e.g., site catchment analysis, discussed below) and a pat-

terning of a geometric kind reflecting a very ordered spatial patterning of human settlements at the regional scale (locational analysis inspired by developments in human geography).

These aims are part of modern approaches to past societies, but for many archaeologists they seem too mathematical and deterministic as a way to view human behavior. In fact, they developed and became most popular in the 1960s, when many social scientists were attracted to searching for laws of human society that might parallel the laws of natural science and mathematics and that could be found through applying the new science of computing. A similar fascination with the “geometry” of settlement forms a strand in archaeology’s cousin discipline of geography, a topic that was at its most popular in the 1960s in a field of study that was termed the “new geography.”

Modern scientific analysis of human behavior in space, as it applies to archaeological studies, has even more powerful computerized applications to test for patterns within and between settlements or in relationship to different aspects of the natural environment. These are largely scientific spatial techniques adopted from geography since the 1990s, primarily a method of rapidly evolving computerized mapping called GIS (Geographic Information Systems).

A different approach within contemporary settlement archaeology begins with a contrasting perspective. Rather than using modern technology to detect abstract patterns in ancient settlement systems, which may not have been apparent to these past communities, this alternative method tries to reconstruct how past peoples built their settlements and lived in their landscapes, following ancient ways of seeing the world that doubtless diverged significantly from our own. This equally important type of study can be linked to a shift of interest within the humanities since the 1970s. This view has moved away from the modernists’ hard scientific approaches and reliance on mathematics and computing toward more “humanistic” or “human cultural” insights, often termed the “postmodern movement” in the social sciences. How does this approach work in practice? At the individual site level, house and settlement plans are studied as reflections of ancient ways of seeing or categorizing the social world. At the landscape and regional level, an attempt is made

in the study of settlements and other monuments to recover the “mental maps” or “sacred geographies” portraying the wider landscape in peoples’ minds that were part of a past peoples’ shared culture.

Although at times the enthusiasts for scientific, computerized settlement archaeology and those who favor a more anthropological and cultural form of investigation seem to be pursuing incompatible approaches, there is actually no reason why the two cannot work alongside each other. One could use GIS not only to compare the location of ancient farms with varying soil types, exposure to sunlight, and dominant winds but also to pursue human visual or aural experiences of the countryside (the ways past people imagined, visualized, and even heard the world around them).

INTRASETTLEMENT ARCHAEOLOGY

Analysis of past settlement sites generally relies on combining various methodologies. Very rarely are such sites totally excavated, especially if they are larger than single farmsteads. Thus, inferences are made by linking windows of detailed information from dug sectors (if available) with wider site coverage, utilizing surface artifact survey, aerial photos, and a battery of geophysical and geochemical techniques. The primary aim is to define the boundaries of domestic activity and its varying character across the site and in each period of occupation. A secondary aim is to define the forms of economic activity carried out at the site. Third, and usually most difficult, is the attempt to reconstruct the social organization and mentalities or worldviews of the site’s residents.

A significant theoretical and methodological stimulus has been research into the social logic of space with “access analysis,” pioneered by Bill Hillier and Julienne Hanson. The ways in which individuals navigate around a settlement or within a house can tell much about public versus private spheres of life, the physical separation of people of different social or political classes, and the attitudes to gender in a society. Often, the preserved plans of structures and communities form maps that reveal the fossilized traces of these past social norms. Examples from the study of early-farming periods in the Near East and later prehistoric Sicily illustrate the increasingly sophisticated approaches being developed to push our interpretative frontiers in these more chal-

lenging directions. In these cases growing family privacy and household economic specialization can be followed through the careful analysis of the dynamics of settlement plans.

INTERSETTLEMENT ARCHAEOLOGY

We can make a useful distinction in most cases between the relationship of a settlement to its immediate landscape and its relationships with neighboring and more distant settlements. By the 1930s, and increasingly in later decades, archaeologists and geographers investigated the location of domestic and other sites with respect to the qualities of their surrounding physical landscapes. The focus was on geology and soils, with the aim of testing whether past peoples selected habitation places because of the proximity of certain types of cultivable or grazing land and mineral or other resources. By the later 1960s a series of studies by human geographers and anthropologists had suggested that the characteristics of landscape exploitation by humans around settlements were similar to those of the territorial behavior of many animal species. Moreover, such exploitation was constrained by the economics of daily travel to fields or pastures remote from home.

During the course of the twentieth century, geographers found that clusters of rural farming and stockbreeding settlements in medieval and early modern times were serviced by regularly spaced “central places” that provided administrative and commercial functions. In some elaborate state societies these service centers might be ordered in hierarchies, each level with its own spatial logic. The fundamental idea behind the study of the extent of territory exploited from individual farming settlements without service roles, that travel time is a major consideration for daily work in the fields (the “friction of distance”), is also important for focal communities. Take the examples of market towns and Roman forts. In the former case it can be shown that peasants prefer markets that are accessible within a day’s return to their homes, a two- to three-hour journey each way, thus producing rural towns at intervals of 20–30 kilometers or less. The same intervals might be reproduced in military control centers, allowing a fort under attack to be reached by a relieving force from adjacent bases that lay within a day’s march.

The study of an individual site’s “territory,” in cases where the main daily activity was agricultural and pastoral exploitation of the immediate hinterland, took off in the 1970s as “catchment analysis.” (The term derives from the area of land draining into a particular river and hence reminds us that rural settlements usually live by bringing in products from a defined block of surrounding countryside.) When the method was invented, its originators were keen to demonstrate that past peoples were practicing a very rational form of economics in deciding where to place their settlements. Criticisms rightfully were raised from the 1980s onward that we should not ignore alternative social and symbolic explanations for settlement location, but we can surely combine these approaches without sacrificing the usefulness of one type of territorial analysis of a past settlement in its landscape.

Catchment analysis seeks to determine the types of resources accessible at increasing distances from the domestic habitations of communities that are thought to have obtained their livelihood mainly through exploiting the site’s hinterland. This method may reveal that a group of sites in a particular region and period all lay in a highly rational location to maximize efficient use of particular types of land or landscape. Equally, the same locations may be revealed to have been chosen with defensive, religious, or other noneconomic factors as the primary concerns and thus perhaps were less than desirable in terms of quick access to arable fields or meadows for grazing flocks.

Anyone who has worked for years among farming communities of varied cultures will be struck by the farmers’ intimate and detailed knowledge of the properties of every field and hillside in their landscape. These communities have a keen sense of the advantages and disadvantages of the local terrain for bringing in a successful subsistence crop or salable product from their cultivated plants and domestic animals. Yet settlement archaeologists today are also correctly aware that they must balance the rather easier task of reconstructing the daily toil of past farmers and herders, and its effects on the form and placement of settlements, against the ways in which religious and social ideologies may have been marked in the landscape. As previously noted, with the assistance of GIS there now exists a more adaptable form of catchment analysis. Basic parameters,

such as environmental and climatic conditions or prevalent technology, can be enriched through considering the interplay of neighboring settlements, relations to strategic or religious monuments or landscape features with symbolic value, and such factors as intervisibility of domestic, religious, and strategic places and related forms of landscape perception. In this context intervisibility refers to the ways in which ancient people could observe and thus visually participate in events, ceremonies, and symbolic links to different parts of their spatial world, and be observed themselves by other people.

A great deal still can be achieved through the continuing study of the systematic patterning of basic rural communities of the hamlet or village class across past landscapes. When we observe, for example, how a region fills up with settlements in the long term, the size of communities and distances between them form patterns that often are the same in widely differing cultures and from very different time periods. A significant threshold is crossed again and again when we note the crystallization, out of networks of such primary nucleations (concentrated groups of people in a single settlement node), of so-called corporate communities of the village-state or proto-city-state type. These seem to mark a common giant step from small rural settlements with similar political standing to the emergence of the “state.”

This neatly brings us to the “central place” theories in archaeological settlement studies. Developed in the first half of the twentieth century by geographers, this concept goes well beyond the simple observations that most rural settlements cluster around market towns where various important services are available and that such foci tend to be within easy reach of most rural dwellers. Some geographic theorists, inspired by the desire to find a set of human behavioral laws and mathematical patterning comparable to the laws of physics and the geometry of many aspects of the natural world, have suggested that there is a detectable tendency toward highly elaborate and overlapping regular designs in the layout and spacing of district and regional foci of political and economic control. It has become apparent, however, that the extremely complex geometry that illustrates the theoretical schemes for central places by such human geographers as Christaller, Loesch, and others rarely agrees with

geographical reality. It is therefore not very surprising that although settlement archaeologists have tried to find parallels in premodern societies, they have found that archaeological central places are spread in a regular pattern over past landscapes only in very simple terms.

For example, administrative centers in the European Iron Age can be classed into giant, medium, and small-scale foci; each part of Europe had different combinations of these foci, and the patterns often changed by phase. Strong uniformity can be identified in the scale of territory focused on each distinct level of a center, and in some regions where all types are present, they seem to be nested within each other like Russian dolls. Quite basic methods can highlight such structures. One method involves drawing Thiessen polygons. In a particular region, sites considered to be administrative or market centers of equivalent status, each with surrounding rural communities for which they provide varied services, are taken as a set of spatial points, the aim being to suggest the likely boundaries of the regions they dominated. Lines are drawn between all adjacent centers, and at the midpoints a putative boundary is sketched in at right angles to the communicating line. Connecting all these midpoint boundaries leads to the creation of polygons around each center, taken to be a reasonable approximation of the division of control over rural settlements. The advent of GIS has refined such spatial tools, since this computer technology can replace a simple distance boundary between two centers with a more realistic one based on the calculated walking times, allowing for the variable terrain being crossed.

TOTAL LANDSCAPE HISTORY

So far we have examined the internal plans of settlements, the way their occupants moved out to exploit a site’s environment, and the dependency relationships between central places and the lesser rural communities they serviced. But also, how does one find, map, date, and interpret the vestiges of past settlements? It might seem relatively simple. Particularly in western Europe, beginning with the antiquarians of the Renaissance and continuing for some five hundred years, scholars and amateur enthusiasts have been traveling the countryside, noting evidence of ancient humans. By the nineteenth century, registers of ancient sites were being made

on a national and parish basis, together with the first legislation to explore and protect them. Today these records contain not only the localized observations of many generations of skilled observers and the locations of finds reported to museums but also more recent evidence such as thousands of sites revealed through aerial photographs. Moreover, through redevelopment in town and country, accidental discoveries have been made. With such a history of research, the uninitiated might think that we would have a fairly complete picture of all the premodern settlements and other monuments.

Nothing could be further from the truth. In the 1960s a new form of settlement archaeology developed in the United States, which was to be transported and elaborated in most countries of Europe in the 1970s and 1980s—the regional surface field survey. In its more rigorous form, such a study involves teams of field walkers stretched out in close parallel lines, scouring a landscape field by field. They look not only for the obvious surface evidence (often recorded by previous survey), such as barrows, banks, and architectural debris, but also more particularly for the minutiae of everyday past life, such as potsherds, stone tools, fragments of glass, and coins. Normally, the most common surface artifacts are pots and lithics. Where such intensive surface studies have been carried out, the results generally have been to increase the density of known sites many times over. Because people living in ancient settlements deposited artifacts across the landscape as they exploited the hinterland of their homes, these painstaking methods also began to document the “offsite archaeology” resulting from such behavior. Such items include household rubbish spread across fields through fertilizing and flint tools discarded during hunting trips.

Regional surface survey has rapidly filled in the countryside with a density of sites, especially domestic settlements—an entirely unexpected result. Furthermore, the scientific plotting of finds across these sites and their laboratory study enables the archaeologist to date the periods in which people were active at these sites. Through rigorous analysis it is even possible to distinguish times when only a part of the settlement was in use or when the site was merely a temporary habitation or a nonresidential focus of rural activity.

Additionally, such surface techniques have proved invaluable in the intensive study of previously known sites, especially large ones. As archaeological techniques have become more painstaking and deliberate, the time frame required for total excavation of an ancient urban site, even a village, has grown beyond an archaeologist’s lifetime. Increasingly, sites are being dug only if they are otherwise about to be destroyed through land development, and larger sites often can be protected from such a fate. The result is that for most nucleated settlements, there is no real prospect of total excavation. In this case, surface and nondestructive sub-surface prospection or geoprospection can come into play (i.e., ways to probe for information below the soil without digging). In a few short seasons of work, a city 1–2 square kilometers in extent can be gridded and a detailed collection made of its surface finds and architectural remains. Often this can allow for a general overview of the main phases of activity and their localization over different parts of the settlement. Sub-surface geoprospection (e.g., resistivity, magnetometry, and radar) can reveal such details as street or house plans, public buildings, defense walls, and industrial zones. With resistivity, electrical currents passed through the soil outline walls as strong resistance features and ditches as weak while magnetometry heavily magnetized patches of soil are detected as areas where hearths, kilns, or other industrial activities may have taken place. Finally, with georadar, sound waves passed into the soil can show at different depths the presence of archaeological layers, walls, and other solid divisions.

Excavation and total surface and sub-surface prospection, together with the reassessment and renewal of anthropological and historical models for intrasettlement analysis (social and economic, symbolic, and religious activities) continue to enrich understanding of the nature of life within past settlements. This encourages cross-cultural comparisons and contrasts, with reliable empirical and theoretical foundations, for human settlement behavior.

Despite the increasing intensity of surface survey, the resultant filling in of the landscape with past activity traces does not seem to be reaching the point of decreasing returns. This prompts the realization that even in Europe we are still at an early stage of understanding the degree of detail that is retrievable in reconstructing settlement and land

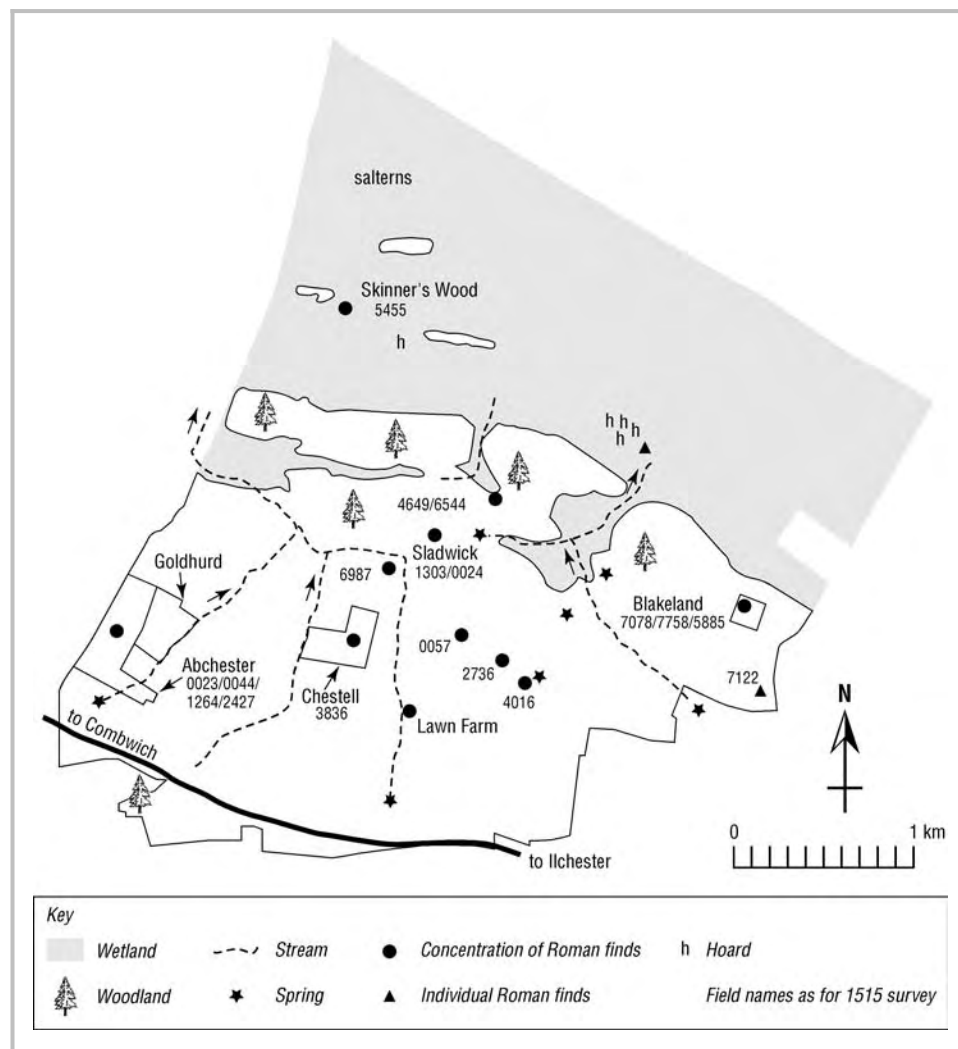


Fig. 1. Roman landscape of Shapwick parish, Somerset, England. ADAPTED FROM ASTON AND GERRARD 1999.

use history at the microlevel (parish or commune). In just a handful of tiny landscapes within Europe have truly exhaustive investigations of individual parishes been undertaken, with the perhaps predictable result that yet another level of detail has become visible for landscape research, beyond that of intensive survey.

One example is the complete survey of the parish of Shapwick in southwestern England undertaken by Michael Aston and Christopher Gerrard. There, every field was walked for surface traces, shallow test pits (shovel testing) were widely deployed in areas where surfaces were obscured by vegetation, the gardens of village residents were sampled by test excavation, all parish toponyms

from maps and villagers' memories were studied down to the intrafield level, and major excavations were carried out at the locations of the most significant settlement traces. An immensely detailed pre-history and history of the parish represents the outcome, from hunter-gatherer vestiges up to the long and complicated development of the modern village settlement (fig. 1). Another excellent example involves massive clearance by rescue excavation of large parts of the district of Oss in the Netherlands, where generational changes in household numbers and their domestic location can be followed through meticulous excavation by Harry Fokkens and his project team (figs. 2, 3). Until such studies are replicated in all the major landscape types across



Fig. 2. Micro landscape settlement evolution trade through large scale rescue excavation in the district of Oss, The Netherlands. Shown here is the distribution of farmsteads and other features dating to the Middle Iron Age (500–250 B.C.). The houses represent four or five dispersed farmsteads (a population of about thirty people) that have been replaced almost every generation. They were clustered around a central burial that already had been used as a “loose” cemetery for centuries. In the Middle Iron Age sanctuaries were raised in this area connected to burials. The area measures 2 × 2 km, with about 60 hectares excavated. FROM FOKKENS 1996.

COURTESY OF DR. H. FOKKENS. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

Europe, one cannot begin to imagine that we have correctly determined even the main lines of settlement and land-use evolution.

MAJOR THEMES IN THE EVOLUTION OF EUROPEAN SETTLEMENT SYSTEMS AND LANDSCAPE USE

One can highlight several themes in the development of settlement analysis, at the present time, some of which show the influence of abundant results from intensive field survey and the rise of micro-analysis of the landscape. In terms of intrasettlement studies, attention is being drawn to the material evidence that might help us recognize certain forms of internal social organization of a particular settlement. The relative importance of nuclear or extended families and wider real or fictitious social divisions (clans, moieties, and so forth), together

with linked issues having to do with public and private space, feature prominently in current research. They stand alongside older, established types of analysis that looked at the physical segregation of elite groups or craftspeople and the evidence of communal planning (streets, defenses, public spaces, and communal buildings). Techniques such as access analysis are providing insights into the social behavior of past societies and the way it can be traced in the built environment. Patterning in the distribution of artifacts or ecofacts (animal bones, seeds, and the like) across settlements is used to indicate where different tasks were performed and whether different social classes had varying diets. It is also possible to trace links to other communities (through the exchange or importation of food or industrial products and access to prestige items). In line with a heightened interest in the symbolic

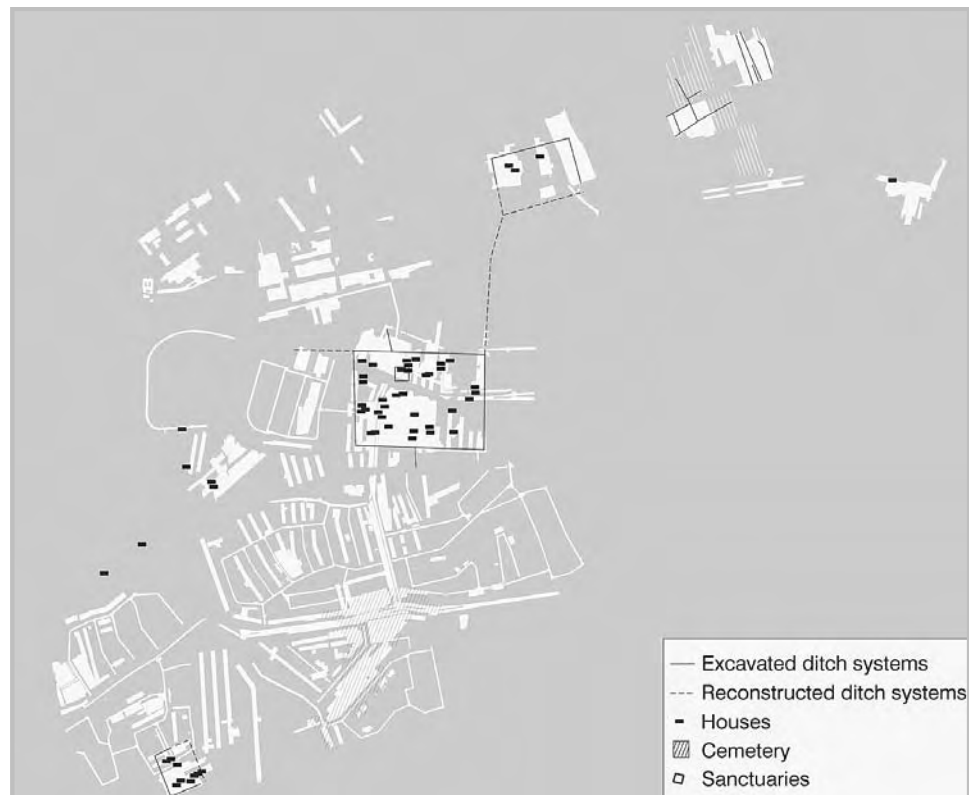


Fig. 3. Micro landscape settlement evolution traced through large scale rescue excavation in the district of Oss, The Netherlands. Shown here is the distribution of farmsteads and other features dating to the Roman period (12 B.C.–A.D. 250). Three nucleated settlements and one “wandering” farmstead are now present in the area. The settlements are enclosed and connected by open ditch systems (not defensive). A communal cemetery is present in the southeast. FROM FOKKENS 1996. COURTESY OF DR. H. FOKKENS. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

world of past communities, the deep penetration of settlements by ritual activities has been much researched, with a growing consensus that many aspects of everyday life in rural communities did not respect our own division between functional and symbolic forms of behavior.

In the long term, there remains strong evidence at the most general level, from settlements and from other contexts, notably burials, that increasing levels of social stratification in Europe developed over time, with perhaps limited social distinctions for most communities in Mesolithic and earlier Neolithic times. This was followed by growing social inequality in the later Neolithic and especially into the Bronze Age. By the Iron Age social hierarchies commonly were associated with elaborate settlement hierarchies and large-scale political units.

Research at the intersettlement level has given rise to various intriguing models that, in many ways, mesh well with the broad trends in social organization just outlined. In most, but not all, parts of Europe, hunter-gatherer settlement systems emphasized mobility and flexibility of exploitation of the landscape. The Neolithic and Early Bronze Age frequently seem to be represented by small and short-lived rural sites, relocated again and again in relatively small areas of countryside without fixed land boundaries. Some scholars see this pattern as having more in common with preceding hunter-gatherer attitudes to settlement and landscape exploitation than with subsequent ways of using the land. In many regions the later Bronze Age and the Iron Age are associated with more permanent and often larger domestic sites, which are associated with the rise of increasingly elaborate land divisions. These

trends toward greater fixity of settlement and property divisions (both within settlements and in the countryside) are compatible with more rigid, hierarchical forms of sociopolitical organization.

The potential interactions between modifications to the form of human settlements, formally structured landscapes and social and economic power, offer exciting opportunities to comprehend fundamental processes within European history and protohistory. For those who object to this kind of social evolutionary approach as harking back to the way in which the scholars of the Victorian era saw themselves as standing at the top of a pyramid of such social development, one can point out that this cycle of elaboration very probably is reversed in the post-Roman centuries, followed by the commencement of a new evolutionary cycle. Indeed, many parts of Europe seemed to evidence shifting settlement patterns in the Early Middle Ages, before the High Middle Ages reinvented fixed nucleated settlements and firm land divisions once again.

In line with earlier comments on the preoccupation of archaeological research with symbolic representations in the past, the landscape around settlements and the relationships between settlements are being investigated in ways that extend well beyond purely economic and social factors. To what extent are settlements and monuments placed to achieve a visual effect to impress outsiders or to mark sacred points or routes in the landscape? Through the tool "Viewsheds," GIS computer methods allow us to map what could be seen from a certain ancient site and how visible the site was to others. What activities in the hinterlands of settlements were related primarily or significantly to symbolic goals instead of or in addition to the functional needs of food, industry, and defense? Much research is being carried out on these new aspects of the landscape, but some caution is required to ensure a proper balance is maintained in our urge to find new perspectives.

Historical ethnography warns that in the vast majority of recorded historical societies, the great majority of the population are primarily concerned with ensuring a secure food supply and the economic stability of their families and with fostering positive social relations within their communities. Much less time and attention were paid to ritual behavior and symbolic representations, although they were never overlooked entirely. Naturally, the lifetime

quest for a good income and social success often called on supernatural assistance through rituals and frequently achieved symbolic expression.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Aston, Michael, and Christopher Gerrard. "Unique, Traditional, and Charming": The Shapwick Project, Somerset." *The Antiquaries Journal* 79 (1999): 1–58.
- Bintliff, John L. "Going to Market in Antiquity." In *Zu Wasser und zu Land: Verkehrswege in der antiken Welt*. Edited by Eckart Olshausen and Holger Sonnabend, pp. 209–250. Stuttgarter Kolloquium zur historischen Geographie des Altertums, no. 7. Stuttgart, Germany: Steiner, 2002.
- . "Settlement and Territory: A Socio-ecological Approach to the Evolution of Settlement Systems." In *Human Ecodynamics*. Edited by Geoff Bailey, Ruth Charles, and Nick Winder, pp. 21–30. Oxford: Oxbow Books, 2000.
- . "Settlement and Territory." In *Companion Encyclopedia of Archaeology*. Edited by Graeme Barker and Annie Grant, pp. 505–545. London: Routledge, 1999.
- . "Iron Age Europe in the Context of Social Evolution from the Bronze Age through to Historic Times." In *European Social Evolution: Archaeological Perspectives*. Edited by J. L. Bintliff, pp. 157–225. Bradford, U.K.: University of Bradford, 1984.
- Bintliff, John L., and A. M. Snodgrass. "Mediterranean Survey and the City." *Antiquity* 62 (1988): 57–71.
- Bintliff, John L., Martin Kuna, and Natalie Venclova, eds. *The Future of Surface Artefact Survey in Europe*. Sheffield, U.K.: Sheffield Academic Press, 2000.
- Boado, Felipe Criado, and Victoria Villoch Vázquez. "Monumentalizing Landscape: From Present Perception to the Past Meaning of Galician Megalithism (North-west Iberian Peninsula)." *European Journal of Archaeology* 3, no. 2 (2000): 188–216.
- Byrd, Brian F. "Public and Private, Domestic and Corporate: The Emergence of the Southwest Asian Village." *American Antiquity* 59, no. 4 (1994): 639–666.
- Doonan, Owen. "Domestic Architecture and Settlement Planning in Early and Middle Bronze Age Sicily: Thoughts on Innovation and Social Process." *Journal of Mediterranean Archaeology* 14, no. 2 (2001): 159–188.
- Fokkens, Harry. "The Maaskant Project: Continuity and Change of a Regional Research Project." *Archaeological Dialogues* 3 (1996): 196–215.
- Gillings, Mark, David Mattingly, and Jan van Dalen, eds. *Geographical Information Systems and Landscape Archaeology*. Oxford: Oxbow Books: 1999.
- Hillier, Bill, and Julienne Hanson. *The Social Logic of Space*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1984.

Tilley, Christopher. *A Phenomenology of Landscape: Places, Paths, and Monuments*. Oxford: Berg, 1994.

JOHN BINTLIFF



TRADE AND EXCHANGE

Ancient trade is a major focus of archaeological research, as its study may reveal not only economic aspects of ancient societies but also the social and political setting within which it occurred. In the last quarter of the twentieth century and into the present, advances in analytical methods have greatly improved the methods of determining the source of archaeological materials, while more sophisticated theoretical approaches have affected the ways in which archaeological data relevant to trade systems have been interpreted. These advancements are reflected in the goals, design, and implementation of modern studies of ancient trade and exchange in Europe. Determining the origin or provenance of archaeological artifacts, which requires following a number of scientific principles and prerequisites, is itself not the end of a trade study but establishes only the first link in a chain that also may include procurement, transport, manufacture, use, recycling, and disposal. The reconstruction of this entire sequence of activities is necessary for a full understanding of the associated human motivations and types of behavior. In Europe and the Mediterranean, many successful studies of trade and exchange have been done on stone (obsidian and marble), ceramics (amphorae and decorated pottery), and metals (copper, lead, and silver), providing important information about interregional contacts and social and economic systems and the manner in which they changed over time.

TRADE AND EXCHANGE

In modern economics, trade is defined as the mutual movement of goods between hands, but in the ar-

chaeological record, it is only the movement of the goods themselves, rather than their ownership or possession, which is easily recognizable. Anthropologists ultimately seek to establish a cultural biography for these goods, starting with the procurement of their raw materials and ending with their disposal. Furthermore, their exchange is not simply an economic transaction but also involves social relationships that may be the main purpose of the activity.

Anthropologists have defined three modes of exchange: reciprocity, redistribution, and market exchange. Reciprocity refers to balanced exchange between relatively equal individuals, whether it involves everyday items or a gift that creates an obligation for a reciprocal return gift later on; this exchange occurs in all societies. Redistribution, however, requires a centralized organization in the acquisition of goods and typically is associated with chiefdom or state-level societies. The centralized authority may acquire goods through control of production, taxation, or tribute collection. Market exchange combines the existence of a central location where trade can take place with a sociopolitical system in which free bargaining is possible.

Archaeological interest in trade and exchange has been very high since advances in analytical instrumentation in the 1960s and 1970s made it possible to chemically characterize or “fingerprint” such materials as obsidian, greenstone, marble, ceramics, copper, lead, and amber. Much effort has been devoted to the methods used to source arti-

facts, obtaining results for specific materials and places, and to their interpretation.

Among the early models proposed to explain trade are the gravity model, used to describe interaction zones in which different sources “compete” for market share, and falloff curves, in which artifact frequencies are graphically plotted against source distance. The shape of the falloff curve is determined by particular exchange mechanisms, and the slope or angle of falloff is determined by such factors as demand, transportation costs, and the availability of alternative materials. While such simplistic models may be useful in an exploratory sense, the circumstances surrounding ancient trade, as represented in the archaeological record, may have been quite complex. For example, exchange may have been sporadic, disrupted at times, or otherwise dynamic on a seasonal or other basis; populations and settlements may have grown or changed size; and several exchange mechanisms may have been in effect at the same time. Objects may have moved alone, as trade or gift items; along with individual people (traders, craftspeople, or brides); or with groups (migration, colonization, war, or foraging). Nevertheless, while interpretations of ancient trade mechanisms and circumstances may change, the determination of the source of a traded item will always demonstrate that at least indirect contact existed between two places and that cultural ideas, knowledge, and materials not preserved in the archaeological record probably also were moving about.

Flaked-stone artifacts are among the most common in the archaeological record and often are made from materials that do not occur locally (e.g., obsidian and flint). They are the products of several distinct types of behavior, which may have occurred at different times in different places:

- acquisition of the raw material
- preparation of a core
- flaking, trimming, and shaping
- use
- maintenance or modification
- disposal

In addition, their presence at a particular site will have been affected by such variables as the rarity of the raw material, the number of production

stages necessary, whether specialists played a part in production, and how long a tool retained its usefulness. Finally, the movement or trade of these stone artifacts may not have been strictly for their utility as tools but instead as prestige items used only by select individuals or under special (such as ritual) circumstances.

Stone used for axes and other ground, rather than flaked, tools also was often traded over great distances in prehistoric Europe, under the constraints of a similar set of factors and variables. By the Iron Age (the first millennium B.C.), however, stone tools largely were replaced by metal ones, and by Roman times the stone material most widely traded was marble, used mainly for sculpture. Besides the complex sociopolitical systems of classical Greece and Rome that created this demand, large labor forces and advanced transportation methods were able to support the trade of many tons of marble from sources in diverse areas of southern Europe.

Ceramics are very common at archaeological sites beginning in the Neolithic period (by the seventh millennium B.C. in southeastern Europe and somewhat later in the rest of Europe). The finished product, like flaked, ground, or carved stone, was the result of significant effort by experienced craftspeople. Production was even more complex, in that it involved the acquisition not only of clay, which probably was available locally, but also of temper and, in many cases, pigments for painting as well as fuel for firing. Unlike the attributes of stone tools, some of the most important properties of ceramics (form and decoration) were determined entirely by their makers. While ceramics may have been traded because of variance in these characteristics, in many cases it was the contents of ceramic vessels (e.g., amphorae) that were the primary materials being traded over large distances.

Metal artifacts also were the result of considerable effort and transformation from the raw ore. Unlike clay, most metal ores were not readily available, and it was necessary to expend significant effort in their acquisition; an even greater amount of flux and fuel was necessary for the smelting process, not to mention the furnace and its accessories. While the subsequent melting of already purified metal for casting artifacts was less complex and could have been done in any village settlement,

smelting would have required greater labor organization. By the Copper and Bronze Ages (fourth through second millennia B.C.), both purified metals (lead, silver, gold, copper, and tin) and finished, often alloyed (for instance, bronze) artifacts were traded over great distances in Europe and the Mediterranean. Unlike stone tools and ceramics, metal artifacts could be entirely recycled and turned into new objects.

Although stone, ceramics, and metals may be the most common materials found at archaeological sites, they were not the only materials traded in prehistoric Europe, nor are they the only ones for which one can potentially establish a source. Among the other trade items that have been studied are amber, a natural resin, and glass, another pyrotechnological product that became common only in the Roman period. As will become evident, however, trade studies have focused on ceramics and a few types of stone and metals because of their properties that allow artifacts to be matched scientifically with the source of their raw materials. European trade in obsidian and copper is discussed in further detail later.

PRINCIPLES OF PROVENANCE STUDIES

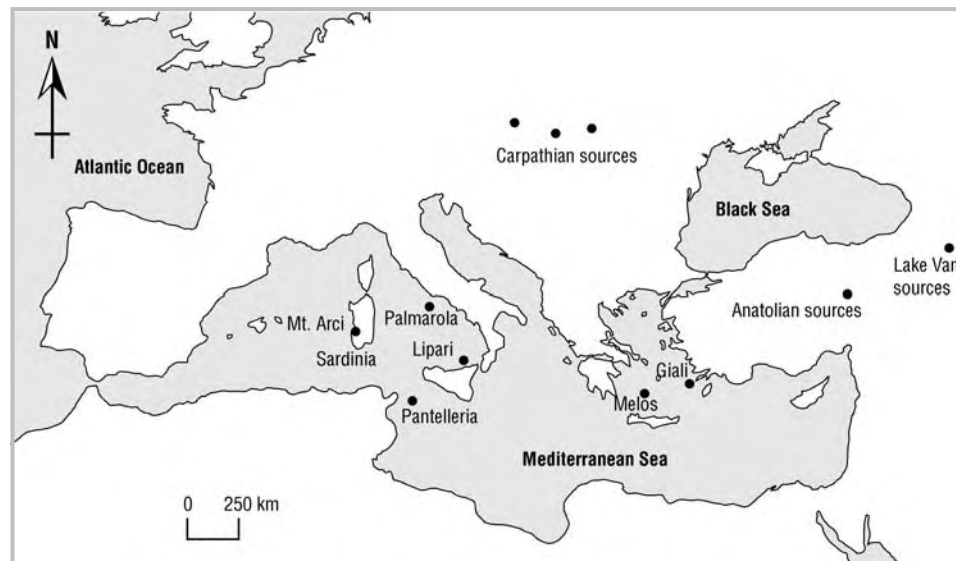
For a provenance study to be successful, there are several prerequisites: all relevant sources must be known; these sources must be characterized in terms of the physical properties or parameters (e.g., mineralogical, elemental, or isotopic composition) that are to be measured for the artifacts; one or more properties must be homogeneous within an individual source; measurable, statistically valid differences between sources must exist for one or a combination of these parameters; and these differences must be measurable using analytical methods appropriate for archaeological artifacts. In general, provenance studies are most successful when the number of possible geological sources is naturally limited. While many potential sources may be effectively excluded because of geographic distance (especially in certain time periods), a situation in which artifacts from “unlikely” sources are never identified as such must be avoided. With fewer natural sources, there is less chance of additional sources remaining unknown, there is a smaller total number of specimens to be characterized (advantageous in

terms of time and cost), and the likelihood of finding a parameter that meets the last three prerequisites cited earlier will be much greater. The characterization of obsidian in Europe, the Mediterranean, and the Near East is the classic success story for just these reasons.

ANALYTICAL METHODS

For stone materials, characterization begins with macroscopic observations and measurements of such properties as color, luster, other aspects of appearance, density, hardness, and refractive index. One of the few examples where these properties have been sufficient by themselves to distinguish reliably among sources is in Malta and the south-central Mediterranean, where dark green obsidian is from Pantelleria and black or gray obsidian most probably is from Lipari (which only occurs on Lipari and not the other Aeolian islands). Microscopic examination of a petrographic thin section, which allows for identification of the mineral grains and inclusions, commonly is used both for stone and ceramic materials, but it is destructive to the artifact, since a sample at least 1 square centimeter must be removed. There are many examples where petrographic analysis alone has been enough to distinguish lithic sources, for example, greenstones in the Alpine region and in southern Italy. Some success also has been achieved in establishing the source of flint using a combination of macroscopic and microscopic analysis. Petrographic analysis of ceramics usually cannot identify a particular geological source unless it has very uncommon mineralogical characteristics; strong matches, however, can be made between ceramic artifacts from different sites, including discards, or “wasters,” from unsuccessful firings.

Since the early 1960s instrumental methods of chemical analysis have been used very successfully in archaeological provenance studies. Obsidian has proved to be ideal for such studies, although success also has been achieved with other stone materials, ceramics, and even certain metals. Numerous different analytical methods have been employed with good results in provenance studies. The most common elemental methods of analysis currently in use are neutron activation analysis (NAA), x-ray fluorescence spectroscopy (XRF), proton-induced x-ray



European and Mediterranean obsidian sources. DRAWN BY ROBERT H. TYKOT.

and gamma-ray emission, and inductively coupled plasma spectroscopy (ICP-S, or just ICP).

Isotopic methods include thermal ionization mass spectrometry (TIMS), used for precise measurements of the isotope ratios of heavy elements (e.g., lead and strontium); stable isotope ratio analysis for light elements (among them, carbon and oxygen); and ICP mass spectrometry (ICP-MS), which measures the abundance of both elements and isotopes for a large range of elements. Isotopic methods are particularly useful for provenance studies, because elemental composition may be quite different between a raw material (a metal ore) and a finished product (a metal artifact), whereas the relative abundance of the isotopes of most elements remains unchanged. TIMS has been employed extensively for lead isotope analyses of copper, lead, and silver objects in the Mediterranean, while ICP-MS with a laser ablation device is now being extensively used on a large range of materials.

With all chemical studies, sufficient samples from each potential source must be analyzed to establish its variability before artifacts can be reliably attributed. For Mediterranean obsidian, bivariate plots of certain trace elements often are sufficient to assign artifacts to well-defined source groups, but multivariate statistical analysis is necessary in provenance studies of most other materials.

OBSIDIAN

The first successful provenance study of obsidian relied on trace element concentrations of barium, zirconium, niobium, and yttrium, measured by optical emission spectroscopy, to differentiate many, but not all, of the sources in Europe and the Near East (see map). More detailed examination of the Mediterranean sources in the 1970s and 1980s, using NAA and XRF, was completely successful not only in attributing artifacts to specific islands (Giali, Lipari, Melos, Palmarola, Pantelleria, and Sardinia) but even in distinguishing among multiple flows in a single volcanic complex, usually the result of multiple eruptions over a geologically short span of time, on some of the island sources and the complex sources of central Europe and Anatolia. It was only in the 1990s, however, that the sources in Sardinia were fully identified and characterized and large numbers of artifacts were analyzed from many sites in the central Mediterranean. These studies began to reveal patterns in the exploitation of the different obsidian sources and thus emphasized the importance of assigning artifacts to specific source localities. In Sardinia, it is possible to distinguish chemically among several geographically specific sources in the Monte Arci area. Three (Sardinia A or SA, Sardinia B2 or SB2, and Sardinia C or SC, each a chemically distinct subgroup and a physically distinct flow or outcrop location) were used widely and have distinctive characteristics that might have been

important in their exploitation by prehistoric peoples (such as accessibility, size, and quantity of source material; color, transparency, and luster; and fracture properties).

Exploitation of the obsidian sources in Anatolia and on the island of Melos began in the Upper Palaeolithic period, the latter source demonstrating that sea travel began very early. While obsidian was not used prior to the Neolithic in the central Mediterranean, by the sixth millennium B.C. it was being traded several hundred kilometers from the island sources, reaching as far as southern France, northeastern Spain, Dalmatia, and North Africa. Ten or more artifacts have been analyzed from about fifty sites in this region and allow for hypothesis testing and interpretation that was not possible with limited numbers of analyses. For example, it might have been expected that, during the Early Neolithic (c. 6000–5000 B.C.), less-organized selection of source material would result in the use of obsidian tools from many sources. By the Late Neolithic (c. 4000–3000 B.C.), however, procurement would have been better organized, focusing on the glassier Lipari and SA obsidian and featuring more efficient reduction technology in the production of cores and blades. Instead, at such sites as Filiestru Cave in northwestern Sardinia, the use of SB2 obsidian from the western flanks of Monte Arci declined over four Neolithic cultural periods, while the use of an opaque, less-glassy type of SC obsidian from the northeastern part of Monte Arci increased. Type SA is never more than 20 percent of the assemblage. At the same time, even though the similar frequencies of the Sardinian sources at sites in Sardinia, Corsica, and northern Italy is consistent with a down-the-line type of exchange system, the fact that more than 90 percent of the Sardinian obsidian found at sites in southern France is of type SA suggests differences in obsidian use or exchange mechanisms there.

These different obsidian use patterns—both geographic and chronological—imply that the cultural factors and exchange mechanisms involved in the life history of Mediterranean obsidian artifacts were complex. Obsidian may not always have been dispersed through simple down-the-line transactions from its respective source zones. It also is possible that maritime contacts between Sardinia and the mainland were not necessarily routed across the shortest open-water crossings (from Sardinia to

Corsica to Elba to Tuscany and then northward along the coast to Liguria and southern France). Differences in what obsidian tools were used for, especially if considered in the context of locally available alternative lithic resources, may correlate with obsidian selection and can be investigated through the integration of provenance determination with typological and use-wear analysis. Continued research in this area will go beyond the documentation of the provenance and quantity of obsidian that was exchanged during the Neolithic and will provide significant contributions to the understanding of exchange itself and the cultural system in which it operated.

COPPER

By the Late Bronze Age (c. 1600–1200 B.C.), bronze tools and weapons were in high demand in many societies. In the eastern Mediterranean, much of their production and trade must have been to satisfy the needs of the state-level societies of Greece, Crete, Anatolia, and Egypt. While the tin sources are still unclear, archaeological and analytical evidence points to Cyprus (from which the word “copper” is derived) as the most important copper source in this region. Several sites on the island have produced evidence for smelting of copper ores, including slag, tuyeres, and crucibles.

The best evidence for trade in Cypriot copper, however, comes from a characteristic style of pure copper ingot found off the island. Copper oxide ingots, weighing, on average, about 30 kilograms and resembling the stretched-out hide of an ox (most likely shaped that way to facilitate carrying), are known from sites in Cyprus, Crete, Greece, Turkey, Israel, Egypt, Albania, Bulgaria, Sicily, and Sardinia as well as the famous shipwrecks at Cape Gelidonya and Uluburun in Turkey (fig. 1). Most of the known ingots come from shipwrecks or from coastal sites, suggesting the importance of seaborne traffic for their distribution. Excavation of the shipwrecks at Uluburun and Cape Gelidonya, of the fourteenth and thirteenth century B.C., has indicated that large cargoes of copper and tin ingots, glass ingots, ivory, ostrich eggs, ebony logs, myrrh and frankincense, and probably resins, olive oil, and wine were transported regularly over great distances in the eastern Mediterranean. The personal possessions found onboard both wrecks point to the Levant as the home



Fig. 1. Oxhide ingots from the Cape Gelidonya shipwreck.
COURTESY OF ROBERT H. TYKOT. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

of the crew. The locations of these wrecks and the main cargo items on board indicate that they were heading west, while archaeological evidence and ancient texts suggest that shipments also must have headed south to Egypt.

While copper sources also existed in many of these areas, copper is a refined product, ready for alloying and casting, and thus would have been immediately useful and exchangeable for other goods at any Bronze Age settlement regardless of its location. Nevertheless, it also is possible that local copper was used to make “oxhide” ingots, under the control of Aegean or Levantine prospectors, or simply to imitate a recognized standard type. Modern mass spectrometers are sensitive enough to measure

copper and silver artifacts containing trace quantities of lead in addition to lead objects. The lead isotope ratios determined for copper artifacts thus can be matched directly to known ore samples, because the ratios of the isotopes do not change during the smelting or refining process, although the quantity of the element does.

In the last two decades of the twentieth century an extensive database of lead isotope ratios for copper and other ores throughout Europe and the Mediterranean was established, and many ingot and artifact collections were tested. The results obtained strongly indicate that Cyprus was the source of the vast majority of the copper oxhide ingots, including those found in Sardinia, an island with its own significant copper sources. At the same time, the lead isotope ratios for artifacts and other shaped ingots match those of the local ore sources, although there is also evidence that artifacts may have been made of mixed ores or recycled copper and bronze. Since oxhide ingots (though they are of pure copper) could not have been made in a single smelting but must have been remelted, they, too, could have mixed lead isotope ratios. This possibility has generated some debate over the reliability of the lead isotope approach, since the mixture of ores from two different sources might result in values similar to a third that has not yet been found or documented. It is always possible that some artifacts were made from small ore deposits that are now worked out, but these items should constitute only a fraction of the overall production, and for the most part, the analyses of the oxhide ingots have produced very consistent results. Mycenaean-style ceramics found at many of the same sites where oxhide ingots have been found also have been chemically tested and shown to match Aegean clay sources. Thus, it is socioeconomically likely that copper ingots and many other materials were traded together with these ceramics and their contents, both by land and by sea.

CONCLUSION

Many lessons can be learned from the few examples of European provenance studies presented here. First, the obsidian case study highlights the importance of complete characterization of all relevant geological sources before the analysis of archaeological artifacts. In addition, the analysis of large numbers of artifacts from good archaeological contexts

lends greater significance to the results obtained and to their interpretation, which varies geographically and chronologically. From an analytical perspective, obsidian is ideal because many techniques can produce the desired results, and methods that are minimally destructive or nondestructive can be selected. The second case study, on copper, reveals the greater complexity—in terms of both methodology and interpretation—of studying trade in materials that have been changed radically from their natural sources. Nevertheless, when ore sources have not been mixed, the trade in copper, lead, and silver can be reconstructed. In both examples (obsidian and copper), the trade in these particular items must always be considered in the context of other materials that also were likely to have been exchanged, keeping in mind that stone, ceramics, and metal are the main items left behind in the archaeological record.

See also **Trade and Exchange** (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Cann, J. R., and Colin Renfrew. "The Characterization of Obsidian and Its Application to the Mediterranean Region." *Proceedings of the Prehistoric Society* 30 (1964): 111–133.
- Gale, Noel H. "Archaeology, Science-Based Archaeology, and the Mediterranean Bronze Age Metals Trade: A Contribution to the Debate." *European Journal of Archaeology* 4, no. 1 (2001): 113–130.
- Gale, Noel H., and Zofia A. Stos-Gale. "Bronze Age Copper Sources in the Mediterranean: A New Approach." *Science* 216, no. 4541 (1982): 11–19.
- Jones, Richard E., and Lucia Vagnetti. "Traders and Craftsmen in the Central Mediterranean: Archaeological Evidence and Archaeometric Research." In *Bronze Age Trade in the Mediterranean*. Edited by Noel Gale, pp. 127–147. *Studies in Mediterranean Archaeology*, no. 90. Jonsered, Sweden: Paul Åströms, 1991.
- Knapp, A. Bernard. "Disciplinary Fault Lines: Science and Social Archaeology." *Mediterranean Archaeology and Archaeometry* 2, no. 1 (2002): 37–44.
- Knapp, A. Bernard, and Tamara Stech, eds. *Prehistoric Production and Exchange: The Aegean and Eastern Mediterranean*. Los Angeles: Institute of Archaeology, UCLA, 1985.
- Lambert, Joseph B., Curt W. Beck, and James S. Frye. "Analysis of European Amber by Carbon-13 Nuclear Magnetic Resonance Spectroscopy." *Archaeometry* 30, no. 2 (1988): 248–263.
- Leighton, Robert, and John E. Dixon. "Jade and Greenstone in the Prehistory of Sicily and Southern Italy." *Oxford Journal of Archaeology* 11, no. 2 (1992): 179–200.
- Renfrew, Colin. "Trade as Action at a Distance: Questions of Integration and Communication." In *Ancient Civilization and Trade*. Edited by Jeremy Sabloff and C. C. Lamberg-Karlovsky, pp. 3–59. Albuquerque: University of New Mexico Press, 1975.
- . "Trade and Culture Process in European Prehistory." *Current Anthropology* 10 (1969): 151–169.
- Sabloff, Jeremy, and C. C. Lamberg-Karlovsky, eds. *Ancient Civilization and Trade*. Albuquerque: University of New Mexico Press, 1975.
- Scarre, Chris, and Frances Healy, eds. *Trade and Exchange in Prehistoric Europe*. Oxford: Oxbow Books, 1993.
- Torrence, Robin. *Production and Exchange of Stone Tools: Prehistoric Obsidian in the Aegean*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1986.
- Tykot, Robert H. "Determining the Source of Lithic Artifacts and Reconstructing Trade in the Ancient World." In *Written in Stone: The Multiple Dimensions of Lithic Analysis*. Edited by P. Nick Kardulias and Richard W. Yerkes, pp. 59–85. Lanham, Md.: Lexington Books, 2003.
- . "Chemical Fingerprinting and Source-Tracing of Obsidian: The Central Mediterranean Trade in Black Gold." *Accounts of Chemical Research* 35, no. 8 (2002): 618–627.
- . "Obsidian Procurement and Distribution in the Central and Western Mediterranean." *Journal of Mediterranean Archaeology* 9, no. 274 (1996): 39–82.
- Tykot, Robert H., and Albert J. Ammerman. "New Directions in Central Mediterranean Obsidian Studies." *Antiquity* 71 (1997): 1000–1006.

ROBERT H. TYKOT



STATUS AND WEALTH

FOLLOWED BY FEATURE ESSAY ON:

Hochdorf 79

In the later prehistory of Europe, archaeological indicators of status and wealth disclose a profusion of differences among individuals. While differences can be recognized as early as Upper Palaeolithic times, it is with the food production economy, settled village life, and the beginnings of the accumulation of quantities of materials that archaeological signs of differentiation begin to be drawn more sharply. During the Bronze Age distinctions in status and wealth are clear in some groups, but in the Iron Age (800 B.C. to the Roman conquest) the most abundant and unmistakable indications of status and wealth in prehistoric times appear.

THE ARCHAEOLOGICAL EVIDENCE

Early in the development of European archaeology, investigators were confronted with the material evidence of differences in status and wealth among the communities of the prehistoric past. Excavations of cemetery sites, in particular, showed that different people were accorded different objects placed in their burials. For example, in the excavations at the Early Iron Age cemetery at Hallstatt in Austria, which took place in the middle of the nineteenth century, researchers emphasized the distinct inventories among the nearly one thousand burials investigated. In the latter part of that century, investigators in diverse parts of Europe explored the large

burial mounds that mark many landscapes. In some cases they found quantities of gold, fine bronze, and pottery vessels from Greece and Italy, and lavish ornaments. In east-central Europe early discoveries were made in what is now Slovenia of objects ornamented in the style known as Situla art. Researchers believed that the scenes portrayed on these bronze vessels and belt plates showed the lives of an elite in prehistoric society, not the lives of the majority of people.

Thus, from early in the systematic development of prehistoric archaeology during the latter half of the nineteenth century, investigators realized that societies of later prehistory were differentiated, just as the societies of nineteenth-century Europe were. The problem was to understand the principles of differentiation and the role that differences in status and wealth played in the functioning of those societies. Writers used such terms as “king” and “prince” to characterize the individuals represented in the richest graves. Before World War II, models for understanding and representing the social systems of which these differentiated individuals were part tended to be sought in one of two contexts—the classical world of Greece and Rome and medieval temperate Europe. Some investigators drew for their models on the pictures of Greek society presented by Homer and then by the Classical period

Greek writers. Others based their reconstructions on historical accounts of the feudal system in western and central Europe. Over the past half-century, approaches have broadened and become more systematic.

SOCIAL SCIENCE AND SOCIAL DIFFERENTIATION

Two main approaches to the formation of distinctions in social status and wealth may be distinguished. One group of approaches sees these differences in society as the result of individuals' and groups' aims to promote themselves—to achieve power and resources greater than those of their fellows. The thinking is that many, if not most, people desire higher status and more wealth than others, and some, but not all, are willing to compete to acquire them. Once they achieve such status, they are unlikely to give it up willingly, and they pass it along to their descendants, thereby creating a system in which status and wealth are hereditary.

The second group of approaches views differentiation in society as a natural consequence of growth in society's size and complexity. The larger an organization becomes, the more energy must be devoted to administering and managing the system. In this model, the higher status and wealth acquired by certain people can be understood as social investment in the management of society as a whole. The greater differentiation apparent in later prehistory thus can be explained in terms of larger investment in infrastructure for coordinating the increasingly complex economic, social, and political needs of communities.

These are, of course, highly simplified characterizations of two complex groups of models. In operation, they are not mutually exclusive. They are useful for suggesting how one might think about the social role of the status and wealth differences apparent in later prehistory.

INDICATORS OF STATUS AND WEALTH

There are three main categories of archaeological evidence for status and wealth in later European prehistory. By far the most apparent and most often discussed is burial evidence. The other two are deposits and settlements.

Burials. Within this category, three topics can be identified—grave contents, grave structure and burial topography, and the funerary ritual. The first attracted the attention of the earliest researchers, whereas the second and third received much attention in the last decade of the twentieth century.

The most basic connection between burial analysis and the issue of status and wealth is in the quantity and character of material in a grave, the “grave wealth.” When the rich chamber burials of the latter part of the Early Iron Age were discovered in southwest Germany, for example, investigators designated them *Fürstengräber*, or “princely burials.” They contained gold neck rings, gold bracelets, decorated daggers and lavish bronze vessels, four-wheeled wagons, and a variety of other objects that did not occur in the majority of graves. This concept of the *Fürstengrab*, developed in 1877, has been adopted throughout Europe. Used in the general sense, the term means a grave distinguished from the majority by special goods that usually include gold ornaments and bronze vessels and often weapons and vehicles.

In the Early Iron Age of temperate Europe the archaeological evidence shows remarkably similar developments of richly outfitted burials in distinct regions, especially between 600 and 400 B.C. Most thoroughly investigated are those in west-central Europe, but similar groups occur in Iberia, Bohemia, various parts of the former Yugoslavia, and the lands north of the Black Sea. Specific forms of expression of status and wealth vary regionally. For example, characteristic of the graves in west-central Europe are gold neck rings and other ring jewelry and four-wheeled wagons, whereas in the Scythian region north of the Black Sea gold scabbards and horses and their harness equipment are standard.

This basic dichotomy between rich graves and others has dominated discussion of status and wealth in late prehistoric Europe. Researchers are not always precise as to what they mean by rich graves. Most often the distinction between graves considered rich and other graves is qualitative: if certain objects are present, such as gold neck rings and imported bronze vessels, the grave is considered rich. The distinctions rarely are sharply defined, however. Another approach is quantitative, establishing means for calculating the total value of ob-

jects in a grave or the energy expended in manufacturing or otherwise acquiring them.

Furthermore, the meaning of the rich graves themselves, the relationships between them and other burials, needs to be considered. Traditionally, in the interpretation of rich Iron Age burials, investigators have assumed that grave wealth mirrors status and wealth in society—that is, that people buried in rich graves were rich and powerful individuals, and people in modest graves were typically farmers. Until the last decades of the twentieth century, this assumption lay at the base of nearly all interpretations of grave wealth and social systems.

Studies in the United States and Britain have challenged this assumption. People do not bury themselves. The placement of objects in a grave was done not by the deceased but by his or her survivors. People may leave instructions about how they wish to be buried, and in some instances they even oversee the construction of their burial monuments during their lifetimes, but the final disposition of the burial ultimately is the result of choices and decisions made by other people.

Grave goods may be not so much a reflection of society as agents in the creation of society. Many archaeologists, as well as cultural anthropologists, have become concerned with the way in which people use material culture in social negotiation. Material culture is understood as an active agent for social action and manipulation. From this perspective, the choices made in the outfitting of a burial may result from conscious efforts on the part of those conducting the ceremony to represent status in a particular way, perhaps to strengthen the political position of a particular group of survivors.

Rich burials are not characteristic of all phases of the Iron Age, nor do they occur in all regions. In places where richly outfitted burials are common in the period 600–400 B.C., such as west-central Europe and Bohemia, from the following centuries there are very few such distinguished graves. Some investigators have noted that the conditions that stimulate expression of status through lavish burials are times of unusual social competition. Put in simple terms, when social and political circumstances are relatively stable, people who possess special status and wealth do not need to display it in highly visible ways. When conditions are unstable, howev-

er—because of unusually rapid social change or because of a new factor, such as intensified relations with outside groups—special displays of status and power serve to promote particular interests over others. In this more active interpretation of rich graves, they are indicators of social change more than of existing differences in status and wealth. If this model is correct, the distribution of richly outfitted burials through time and space may indicate situations of upheaval and those of relative stability.

The significance of rich burials in special contexts also must be considered. Most of the richly outfitted graves of Iron Age Europe are associated with settlements that were larger than most, that were defended by walls, and that show substantial manufacturing and commercial activity but were situated in regions of good agricultural potential. In other circumstances rich graves may have a different significance. The cemeteries at the salt-mining complexes at Hallstatt and on the Dürrnberg, both in Austria, include many graves that are richer than average Iron Age burials. Ludwig Pauli, a distinguished German specialist in Iron Age archaeology, has suggested a special explanation for this wealth. Clearly, the extraction and trade of rock salt represented a profitable enterprise in Iron Age Europe. Pauli argues that in agricultural communities successful farmers probably would invest profits in their land or livestock. Salt miners had no such resources to invest in, so they invested in bronze ornaments and vessels, gold jewelry, Etruscan bronze vessels, and gold, amber, and glass ornaments, with which they were buried. Following Pauli's argument, rich graves at Hallstatt could not directly be compared with those at the Heuneburg because the bases of economic life and wealth were fundamentally different. Thus, each situation needs to be considered independently.

The contents of some graves suggest a special status that is different from the status attributed to others. A woman's grave dating to about 400 B.C. found at Gündlingen, near Freiburg in southwest Germany, contained a unique assemblage of objects that probably served as amulets or charms. A bronze bracelet decorated with human faces suggests that the woman possessed above-average status in her community, but the deposit of charms is unique. Next to her lower left leg (probably originally placed in a leather or textile bag) were a small

bronze figure of a bull, a geode, a once broken but repaired water-worn piece of limestone with a natural hole in the center, two dog jaws, a miniature bronze knife, a pebble the size and shape of a hen's egg, and two amber beads. These were all categories of objects that, in medieval and modern times, have served as magical devices. Archaeologists have suggested that this woman was a magician or healer, her special status represented by this unusual set of objects in her grave.

Relatively little attention has been paid to understanding patterns of status and wealth suggested by graves other than those in the richest category. There has been a tendency to think of burial evidence in later prehistory as either belonging to the richest category or not. After the disappearance of the rich category of graves in much of temperate Europe after 400 B.C., most of the landscape is characterized by flat-grave cemeteries with burials that show much less differentiation. In one important study based on cemeteries dating between 400 and 200 B.C. in Slovakia, however, Jozef Bujna, a specialist in the Iron Age archaeology of eastern Europe, demonstrated that although the differences in grave wealth are not as clear as in the earlier contexts, they are still very real.

Bujna identified five categories of graves. In the first were men's graves with sets of weapons, personal ornaments, and pottery and women's graves with bronze link belts, brooches, ring jewelry, and glass beads. In the second were men's graves with single weapons and women's graves without link belts but with a few bronze, iron, and glass ornaments. The third consisted of men's graves with no weapons and small quantities of ornaments and pottery and women's graves with few ornaments. The fourth category comprised graves that contained only pottery. In the fifth were graves with no grave goods at all. The significance of this study is that it shows that significant variation occurs even in cemeteries that can appear to be quite uniform.

During the final century B.C., at the time when interactions with the Roman world intensified among communities throughout temperate Europe, richly outfitted graves again became common. They share features with the rich graves of the Early Iron Age, but they also differ in important ways. Along the Rhine this new group is characterized by weapons and wagons and in southeast Britain by

Roman tableware and amphorae, as in the burials at Welwyn, north of London.

Grave structure and burial topography also are key. In addition to the wealth of objects placed in graves, the situation of the grave is an important factor in assessing status and wealth. Rich grave goods tend to correlate with wooden burial chambers, large pits in the ground, and large and sometimes complex mounds above them. Chambers and mounds represent expenditure of labor and thus can be understood in terms similar to those of displaying precious objects in the grave. If the construction of rich burial assemblages is seen from the perspective of the survivors, who were using material culture to create their positions in the social system, then the construction of the chamber and the mound can be understood in the same way. The mound has the additional significance of being a permanent monument on the surface. Graves set underground disappear from the sight of the living; only the funeral ceremony can be remembered. A mound constructed above the grave, however, remains a visible monument for the living, a way for them to be reminded of the funerary ritual and its significance for establishing present social circumstances. The mound may be a permanent memento of how those in power established their legitimacy. In Scandinavia stones often were set in the shape of a ship over richly outfitted burials.

With the recent discoveries of the life-size stone statues at Vix in eastern France and the Glauberg in central Germany (fig. 1), it has become apparent that monumental sculptures of people are signs of status and wealth. In those two cases the statues show the same personal ornaments as those of the individuals buried in the rich graves near which the statues were erected. Stone sculptures have been found with other Early Iron Age burial mounds as well (e.g., Hirschlanden, Hochdorf, and Kilchberg), but many of these sculptures are not as clearly representations of specific individuals.

In many cemeteries, mounds are of very different sizes. A good example is the Early Iron Age cemetery at Kleinklein in southern Austria, where mound sizes vary from quite large to extremely small. Members of the living community whose ancestors were buried in those mounds were reminded constantly of whose ancestors were buried under large mounds and whose under small ones.



Fig. 1. Stone statue from the Glauberg in Germany, found associated with a rich burial in a mound that was part of a complex constructed landscape. HESSISCHES LANDESMUSEUM DARMSTADT. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

In some large communal mounds, the topography of grave arrangement expressed information about the social system. At the huge Magdalenenberg tumulus near Villingen in southwest Germany, the large central grave was set inside a wooden chamber and covered with a cairn of stones. In the outer parts of the great covering mound, 126 subsequent burials containing members of the community were arranged concentric to the central chamber burial. These later graves all were outfitted very modestly. Here the status and power of the individual in the center were expressed through the topo-

graphic relationship between that grave and the others in the mound.

Archaeologists now have turned their attention to examining evidence pertaining to the funerary ritual of which the burial was a part. The grave that the archaeologist excavates is the material expression of a final stage in a funeral ceremony. Studies of mound construction and of landscapes around burial mounds have yielded promising new information about the structure and character of these rituals. The effort devoted to such rituals can provide significant data about the status and wealth of the deceased.

At Hochdorf, through examination of the structure of the mound, Jörg Biel has been able to draw important conclusions about the ritual activity that preceded the placing of the dead man in the grave chamber. At Vix archaeologists have excavated an enclosure near the rich grave, at which ceremonies apparently were performed in connection with the burial. Studies at the Glauberg, near Frankfurt in Germany, have revealed a complex set of earthworks constructed for the funerary ceremony. In the Ukraine great quantities of feasting debris from the ditches around the outside rim of the great *kurgans* (eastern European burial mounds) attest to lavish ceremonies performed on the occasion of the burials in those monuments.

Deposits. Deposits of precious objects in pits in the ground and in bodies of water also are understood as expressions of status and wealth. Interpreting these finds is more difficult than interpreting graves because of the lack of clear evidence of the link between a person or a group and a particular deposit.

From the end of the prehistoric Iron Age, a substantial number of hoards of precious metal have been found in temperate Europe. Their character varies, but they most often include gold coins, silver coins, ring jewelry, or combinations of these materials. A series of deposits from the final century B.C. contain a regular set of gold objects—a neck ring and two bracelets and sometimes coins of local or Roman origin. Among the best documented of these ring-and-coin deposits are those from Niederzier in northwest Germany and Tayac in southwest France. In the central regions of the continent, hoards of gold coins are common, often with hundreds of little-used coins in a single deposit. Com-

parable and roughly contemporaneous finds from Britain include the gold, silver, and bronze rings, coins, and bars, totaling some 40 kilograms, found in eleven pits at Snettisham in East Anglia (fig. 2). At Llyn Cerrig Bach in Wales one deposit contained a variety of objects that one might expect to find in rich burials, including swords, spears, shields, cauldrons, and ornate fittings for horse harnesses and chariots. In the year 2000, near Winchester, two sets of gold jewelry, including neck rings, fibulae, and bracelets, were discovered. Although the character of these deposits varies, many contain objects that in other contexts appear in rich graves, but in times and places in which outfitting rich graves was not customary they were buried as deposits.

The majority of these precious metal deposits were made in contexts in which richly outfitted burials were rare or unknown. This display of wealth in the form of gold rings and coins is similar to the expression of wealth as gold in rich burials. The frequency of the combination of neck ring and two bracelets suggests a link with the gold jewelry that accompanied many persons in rich graves. Very little is known about the circumstances or the procedures through which precious items were deposited. Like the investigations of the landscapes around wealthy burials, future research on the land surrounding these precious metal deposits may provide information about the performances that accompanied these deposits.

Settlements. Compared with the evidence from graves and deposits, little settlement evidence for status and wealth distinctions has been identified. Hilltop settlements enclosed by walls of earth, stone, and timber often are regarded as settlements of elites, but in most cases there is little direct information that people with greater status and wealth inhabited hilltop locations. For the most part in later European prehistory, researchers lack indications of unusually lavish or large residences associated with status, such as are recognizable in other archaeological and historical contexts. Several investigations show that such patterns are present, though they often are subtle.

At Hodde in Denmark excavations showed that among the twenty-eight dwellings within the settlement enclosure, one, which was separated from the rest of the settlement by its own enclosing fence,

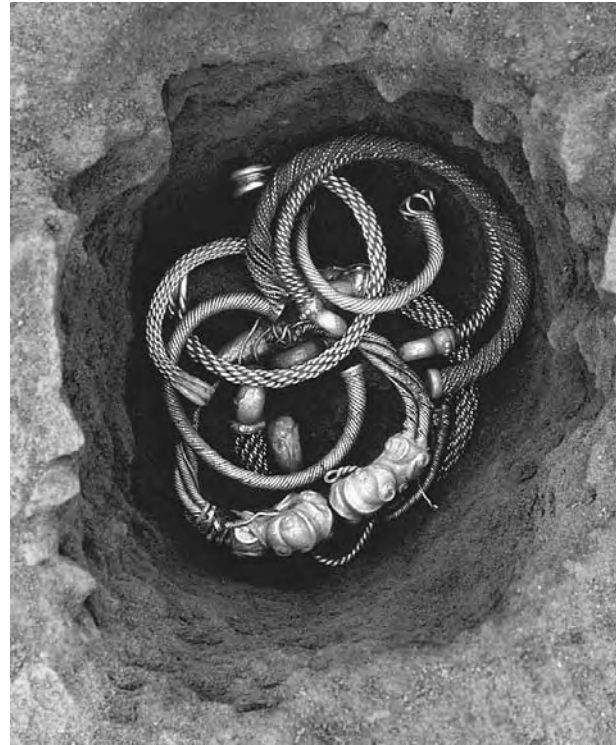


Fig. 2. Gold and silver rings from pit L at Snettisham. © COPYRIGHT THE BRITISH MUSEUM. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

was built more sturdily than the others. Sherds of pottery found with it were of finer ware than the pottery in the rest of the settlement. The excavator, Steen Hvass, has interpreted these distinctions to indicate that this was the residence of a family of higher status than the other members of the community.

In her excavations at the Early Iron Age settlement at Geiselhörling in southern Germany, Cordula Naglier-Zanier identified significant changes in the physical structure of buildings and enclosing fences during the occupation from about 750 to 625 B.C. In the third phase, for example, the number of dwellings inside the settlement enclosure was reduced, although the larger size of the enclosure indicates a greater commitment of labor for the benefit of a smaller number of people. In the fourth and final phase, there is evidence that the enclosure was given a more grandiose character, with bastions constructed along the ditch to create a visually striking boundary. These series of changes in the structure of the settlement can be interpreted as an increasing status display on the part of the resident families.

Another indicator that settlement evidence has much to contribute to the understanding of differentiation in status and wealth is the remarkable discovery at Gussage All Saints in southern England. The size and physical layout of the settlement are typical of small farming communities of Late Iron Age Britain, but at Gussage the excavators found abundant evidence of the production of ornate bronze fittings for chariots, vehicles used by the elite. This finding raises important questions about the relationship between small farming communities and the elites that possessed and used the elaborate chariots of this period. Could high-status individuals have been inhabitants of these very modest settlements? Or were the farming and craft-working communities merely closely linked with elites, for whom they produced objects that displayed status and wealth?

ARCHAEOLOGICAL INDICATORS AND SOCIAL SYSTEMS

The interpretation of all of these indicators of status and wealth ultimately depends on the investigator's ideas about the nature of prehistoric society. These ideas can be implicit—in some cases the investigator can be unaware of the assumptions he or she makes. Alternatively, they can be explicit—considered and stated.

For interpreting the rich burials of the Early Iron Age, many investigators have applied a model based on the Middle Ages, implicit in the coining of the term *Fürstengrab* in the nineteenth century. In the 1970s and 1980s certain archaeologists adopted the social framework introduced by the American cultural anthropologist Elman Service, examining late prehistoric societies from the perspective of his delineation of a chiefdom. In one influential study, Susan Frankenstein and Michael Rowlands developed a prestige-goods model for the circulation and consumption of valued objects in Early Iron Age Europe. Some archaeologists have adopted core-periphery frameworks to understand the social changes at Early Iron Age and Late Iron Age centers, with the Mediterranean societies representing the cores and the smaller-scale societies of temperate Europe the peripheries. One debate revolves around the contexts from which models should be drawn for the study of status, wealth, and social organization in late prehistoric Europe. The

question is whether these models should be based on societies that are close to the Iron Age societies in time and space, such as the classical societies of the Mediterranean or those of early medieval Europe, or on more general ethnographic models drawn from different parts of the world.

See also **Hochdorf** (vol. 1, part 1); **Hallstatt** (vol. 2, part 6); **Vix** (vol. 2, part 6); **The Heuneburg** (vol. 2, part 6); **Iron Age East-Central Europe** (vol. 2, part 6); **Winchester** (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Arnold, Bettina. "The Material Culture of Social Structure: Rank and Status in Early Iron Age Europe." In *Celtic Chiefdom, Celtic State*. Edited by Bettina Arnold and D. Blair Gibson, pp. 43–52. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1995.
- Brun, Patrice, and Bruno Chaume, eds. *Vix et les éphémères principautés celtiques*. Paris: Éditions Errance, 1997.
- Bujna, J. "Spiegelung der Sozialstruktur auf latènezeitlichen Gräberfeldern im Karpathenbecken." *Památky Archeologické* 73 (1982): 312–431.
- Carr, Gillian, and Simon Stoddart, eds. *Celts from Antiquity*. Cambridge, U.K.: Antiquity Publications Ltd, 2002.
- Collis, John. "Reconstructing Iron Age Society." In *Europe in the First Millennium B.C.* Edited by K. Kristiansen and J. Jensen, pp. 31–39. Sheffield, U.K.: J. R. Collis Publications, 1994.
- Dietler, Michael. "Early 'Celtic' Socio-Political Relations: Ideological Representation and Social Competition in Dynamic Comparative Perspective." In *Celtic Chiefdom, Celtic State*. Edited by Bettina Arnold and D. Blair Gibson, pp. 64–71. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1995.
- Frankenstein, Susan, and Michael J. Rowlands. "The Internal Structure and Regional Context of Early Iron Age Society in Southwestern Germany." *Institute of Archaeology Bulletin* 15 (1978): 73–112.
- Frey, Otto-Herman, and Fritz-Rudolf Herrmann. "Ein frühkeltischer Fürstengrabhügel am Glauberg im Wetteraukreis." *Germania* 75, no. 2 (1997): 459–550.
- Hedeager, Lotte. *Iron-Age Societies: From Tribe to State in Northern Europe 500 B.C. to A.D. 700*. Translated by John Hines. Oxford: Blackwell, 1992.
- Kossack, Georg. "Prunkgräber: Bemerkungen zu Eigenschaften und Aussagewert." In *Studien zur vor- und frühgeschichtlichen Archäologie: Festschrift Joachim Werner zum 65. Geburtstag*. Edited by G. Kossack and G. Ulbert, pp. 3–33. Munich: C. H. Beck, 1974.
- Krause, Dirk. "Der 'Keltenfürst' von Hochdorf: Dorfältester oder Sakralkönig? Anspruch und Wirklichkeit der sog. kulturanthropologischen Hallstatt-Archäologie."

Archäologisches Korrespondenzblatt 29 (1999): 339–358.

Kristiansen, Kristian. *Europe before History*. New York: Cambridge University Press, 1998.

Moscatti, Sabatino, ed. *The Celts*. New York: Rizzoli, 1991.

Pearson, Michael Parker. *The Archaeology of Death and Burial*. College Station: Texas A&M University Press, 1999.

Roymans, Nico. *Tribal Societies in Northern Gaul: An Anthropological Perspective*. Amsterdam: University of Amsterdam, 1990.

Stead, Ian M. “A La Tène III Burial at Welwyn Garden City.” *Archaeologia* 101 (1967): 1–59.

Steuer, Heiko. *Frühgeschichtliche Sozialstrukturen in Mitteleuropa*. Göttingen, Germany: Vandenhoeck & Ruprecht, 1982.

Verger, Stéphane. “De Vix à Weiskirchen: La transformation des rites funéraires aristocratiques en Gaule du nord et de l’est au Ve siècle avant J.-C.” *Mélanges de l’École française de Rome, Antiquité* 107, no. 1 (1995): 335–458.

Wells, Peter S. *Beyond Celts, Germans, and Scythians: Archaeology and Identity in Iron Age Europe*. London: Duckworth, 2001.

PETER S. WELLS

HOCHDORF

In the village of Hochdorf, north of Stuttgart in southwest Germany, a richly outfitted Early Iron Age burial was discovered in 1977 and excavated in 1978 and 1979. Excavation revealed one of the best-preserved Early Iron Age burials in Europe. The great majority of rich graves of this period had been robbed in ancient times by people who tunneled into the center of mounds where the primary graves were situated, and archaeologists usually find only minor items left behind by the looters and sometimes fragments of lavish burial goods. The Hochdorf burial escaped this fate, perhaps because of the special arrangement of layers of timbers and stones above the chamber.

Excavation showed that the mound originally had been about 60 meters in diameter, with a circle of stones defining its perimeter. It probably stood about 6 meters high. Underneath the center of the mound was a hole 11 by 11 meters and 2.5 meters deep. Inside was a square chamber 7.5 meters on a

side built of oak timbers, and inside that was another oak chamber 4.7 meters on a side. The spaces between the chambers and above the outer chamber were packed with stones weighing a total of 50 metric tons.

Hochdorf is one of about forty richly outfitted graves known from Early Iron Age west-central Europe, but it is unusual in being undisturbed. In the meticulous excavation by Jörg Biel, the skeletal remains of a man of about forty years of age and 1.85 meters (a little over six feet) tall were found on a unique bronze couch arranged against the western wall of the chamber. The couch is 2.75 meters long and made of six sheets of bronze riveted together and supported by bronze rods. Eight bronze figures of women, all with small wire earrings and coral-inlaid lines of holes marking positions of bracelets, necklaces, leg rings, and belts, support the couch. Their feet rest on the axles of wheels, allowing the couch to be rolled along the ground. On the back of the couch are scenes in repoussé, two showing men wielding swords and shields and standing on wagons drawn by pairs of horses and three showing pairs of men facing each other holding swords aloft—perhaps fighting or dancing. The deceased man rested his head on a pillow of plaited grass, and under him were textiles woven from hemp, badger hair, and horsehair as well as furs of badger and other mammals.

Other objects in the grave include personal ornaments, a wheeled vehicle, and feasting equipment. The man was outfitted lavishly with gold ornaments, about 600 grams altogether. Around his neck was an ornate neck ring of sheet gold, decorated with four rows of tiny horse-and-rider motifs. He wore two gold fibulae—brooches with pins and springs that worked like modern safety pins—a gold bracelet, and a large decorated gold plate on the front of his belt. Even his leather shoes were decorated with geometrically ornamented gold. On his belt he wore an iron dagger, the hilt and scabbard of which were covered with sheet gold. A cloth bag on the man’s chest contained a nail trimmer and three fishhooks. Also with him were a quiver and fourteen arrows, an iron razor, and a wooden comb.

No remains of his clothing could be identified, except for a conical hat made of birch bark and decorated with incised patterns similar to those on his gold belt plate. The birch-bark hat matches in shape

the hat on a life-size sandstone statue found next to a burial mound at Hirschlanden, 6 kilometers to the south-southeast, suggesting that perhaps this rarely preserved object was a special sign of status and authority.

Along the eastern wall of the chamber was a four-wheeled wagon (largely covered with sheet iron), 4.5 meters in length (including its pole). With it were a yoke of maple wood for attaching two horses, along with bronze harness fittings. On the wagon were nine bronze plates, three basins, and an axe.

Matching the bronze plates in number were nine drinking horns that hung on the south wall of the chamber. One, 1.23 meters long, was made of iron with sheet-gold bands around it. The other eight were smaller, made from horns of aurochs (wild cattle), and also decorated with gold bands. At the northern end of the couch was a bronze cauldron fashioned in a Greek workshop, decorated with three cast bronze lions lying around the rim. One is different in style from the other two and may have been made locally to replace a missing original figure. The diameter of the cauldron was 1.04 meters, and it could hold about 500 liters. Analysis of residue on the bottom suggests that it contained a beverage such as mead, made from plants that ripen in late summer, perhaps indicating the season of the burial. With the cauldron was a small gold bowl.

Many fragments of textile survived in contact with metal objects. Besides the fabrics on the couch, specialists have identified textiles dyed bright red

and blue, often in complex geometrical patterns, hanging on the chamber walls and wrapping the man's body, the couch, the cauldron, and the wagon. The style of both locally made objects and the imported Greek cauldron indicates that the man was buried c. 550 B.C.

There is debate concerning the question of the identity of this man, buried in such a lavish style. The answer depends upon how the social and political system of which he was a part is understood. Current interpretations consider individuals buried under large mounds, in elaborate wooden chambers with abundant gold, feasting equipment, and links with the Mediterranean societies as chieftains in societies in which ranking was important to the economic and social functioning of communities.

See also Status and Wealth (vol. 1, part 1); Greek Colonies in the West (vol. 2, part 6); Vix (vol. 2, part 6).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Biel, Jörg. *Experiment Hochdorf: Keltische Handwerkskunst wiederbelebt*. Stuttgart, Germany: Keltenmuseum Hochdorf/Enz, 1996.
- . *Der Keltenfürst von Hochdorf: Methoden und Ergebnisse der Landschaftsarchäologie in Baden-Württemberg*. Stuttgart, Germany: Konrad Theiss, 1985.
- Moscatti, Sabatino, ed. *The Celts*. New York: Rizzoli, 1999.
- Rieckhoff, Sabine, and Jörg Biel. *Die Kelten in Deutschland*. Stuttgart, Germany: Konrad Theiss, 2001.
- Wells, Peter S. *Beyond Celts, Germans, and Scythians: Archaeology and Identity in Iron Age Europe*. London: Duckworth, 2001.

PETER S. WELLS



GENDER

Archaeologists have long been interested in the lives of prehistoric women and men. Many of these discussions are based, however, on uncritical generalizations, such as the idea that men make stone tools and women weave cloth. A surprising amount of archaeological literature is vague about the actual people using stone tools, building houses and tombs, firing pottery, and so forth. Much of the literature is dominated by an androcentric (that is, male-focused) bias that relegates women to passive and often invisible roles in past societies. An explicit interest in gender in archaeology developed in the late 1970s, associated with post-processual archaeology; this broad school of thought emphasizes, among other things, the importance of individuals in prehistory and the diverse and potentially conflicting roles and interests of individuals within each ancient community. Another inspiration for an “engendered archaeology” is the development of feminism as a sociopolitical movement within universities and in the wider society.

Engendered archaeology began with a focus on discovering women in the past, inspired by the realization that traditional archaeological accounts focused almost exclusively on the activities of men. By the beginning of the twenty-first century the topic had expanded to include a broader interest in gender as a theoretical topic and in the interrelationships of men, women, and others in past daily lives. While the majority of authors on the topic have been female, the number of men writing about gender has increased as the topic has become incorporated into mainstream research.

In Europe, Scandinavian scholars pioneered gender studies in archaeology in the late 1970s. In addition archaeologists working at Anglo-American universities have been major contributors. By the late 1990s the field had matured to the point where several published overviews were available. For European archaeology specifically, *Women in Prehistory* by Margaret Ehrenberg, *Gender and Archaeology: Contesting the Past* by Roberta Gilchrist, and *Gender Archaeology* by Marie Louise Stig Sørensen are starting points for inquiry from authors who take diverse points of view. Another significant area of engendered research is the examination of women’s status and participation in the work world of archaeology. Chapters in *Excavating Women: A History of Women in European Archaeology* by Margarita Díaz-Andreu and Sørensen show that different national traditions of scholarship as well as idiosyncrasies of individual life histories have influenced women’s participation in archaeology as a career.

WHAT IS GENDER?

As archaeological interest in gender expanded beyond simply seeking evidence for women’s activities in the past, the major theoretical discussion has been about the definition of gender itself and the complex interrelationships of gender, sex, and sexuality. In *Gender and Archaeology*, Gilchrist defines gender as “cultural interpretation of sexual difference,” while Sørensen, in *Gender Archaeology*, emphasizes that “gender is a process, a set of behavioral expectations, or an affect, . . . not a thing.” Clearly different authors emphasize different aspects. Throughout the 1980s and 1990s there was a rea-

sonable consensus on differentiating sex and gender: the former refers to biological characteristics, while the latter refers to cultural interpretations of biological categories and characteristics. As a theoretical concept gender includes, at a minimum, gender identity, the defining characteristics of different genders in a society; gender role, the culturally defined appropriate activities and behaviors associated with each gender; and gender ideology, the symbolic values assigned to each gender. Regarding gender identity, scholars emphasize that despite conventional understandings of modern Western society, more than two genders can exist within a society, and they probably did in prehistoric cultures. Following ethnographic research, these other groups are known variously as third genders, *berdache*, or two-spirit, among other terms.

By the end of the 1990s scholars were challenging this conceptualization of “sex ≈ biology/gender ≈ culture.” They argued that sex and gender are culturally constructed; that there is more biological variation in human primary and secondary sexual characteristics than is widely understood; and that the dominant model of two dichotomous sexes is a culturally specific conceptualization, which is found in Western societies only since the eighteenth century. It is unclear at present how this theoretical development will become incorporated into archaeological practice. In addition there is expanding interest in sexuality and sexual orientation in prehistory.

While these diverse conceptualizations of sex, gender, and sexuality enrich archaeological scholarship, it also has been argued that identification of “third genders” can simply be another, albeit theoretically more sophisticated, way to deny visibility to women in the past. This discussion is particularly relevant to analysis of mortuary remains, especially those where the osteological (bone) identification of the sex of the skeletal remains conflicts with the cultural identification of the gender associations of the grave goods.

SOURCES OF DATA

The most important archaeological sources of data are skeletal remains, artifacts, and structures of mortuary remains; figurines, sculptures, and representations in rock art of human figures; architectural pat-

ternings of houses and tombs; and spatial distributions of artifacts and features within domestic sites and between domestic and nondomestic sites (e.g., ritual, extractive, and so on). In addition, collaboration with scholars in anthropology, history, and biology is important for the study of gender. New DNA and chemical analyses of skeletal remains give promise of evidence about migration patterns of populations and genetic relationships between individuals in a tomb or cemetery. The early classical authors, such as the Greek Stoic philosopher Posidonius, Julius Caesar, and the Roman historian Cornelius Tacitus, also provide information about gender roles and relationships. These sources cannot be taken at face value and must be interpreted, but they are important complementary data sources for the Iron Age. It remains a contested question how far back in time they should be applied. For later periods some researchers use medieval written sources as complementary data, whereas other scholars have turned to sagas, mythology, and folklore.

Ethnographic data from traditional societies across the globe also have been influential. Regarding gender, ethnographic evidence underlies broad generalizations about the division of labor, production of material goods, status of women in different political systems, and role of women in ritual, for example. While these generalizations sometimes are simplistic and may be based on an uncritical use of the source material, it would be foolish to eliminate ethnographic data from research. These data provide an enriched understanding of the variations in human cultures and societies and may help establish diverse cross-cultural patterns that assist in interpreting the archaeological record. Close reading of ethnographic literature can provide counterexamples to entrenched androcentric assumptions.

Despite the theoretical literature about the subtleties of gender, sex, and sexuality, most empirically based literature on gender focuses straightforwardly on women and men and their activities, statuses, and relationships in different prehistoric settings. Although the traditional chronological terms probably oversimplify the cultural developments of prehistoric Europe, they provide a convenient framework for reviewing gender research.

MESOLITHIC

For the Mesolithic period (beginning about 9000 B.C. and ending between 7000 and 4000 B.C., depending on the area of Europe), research relies significantly on ethnographic analogy with foraging peoples. Stone tools dominate the archaeological record. A division of labor often is assumed between men who hunt and women who gather plant foods, bird eggs, and shellfish. Hunting usually is assigned more cultural importance, and stone tools almost always are assumed to have been produced by men, although the ethnographic record is in fact not homogeneous on this point. Joan Gero points out that women who moved around the countryside independently, actively gathering more than half the diet, preparing most of the meals as well as creating clothing, basketry, housing, and other items of material culture were hardly likely to have waited for men to fashion the tools they used every day. There is nothing about the physical demands of stone tool production that women could not have accomplished.

During the Mesolithic recognizable cemeteries appeared. Much discussion of these cemeteries focuses on the question of whether or not incipient ranking appears in the Mesolithic, presaging social developments in later periods. The grave goods may include stone, bone, and shell objects. Evidence from Brittany and from southern Scandinavia suggests that in some situations gender is highlighted symbolically in grave structure and grave goods, but in other cases mortuary practice does not differentiate between men and women. In some cases burials indicate more differences between adults and juveniles than between men and women. Evidence for any kind of ranking is limited, however, unless one assumes—as some archaeologists do—that certain objects, such as axes, have an intrinsically superior symbolic value.

Certain Mesolithic burials from Sweden and southwestern Russia, which are atypical in burial posture and artifact richness and which mix male-associated and female-associated grave goods, may be of shamans, individuals who held both special religious powers and distinctive gender positions in the society. Robert Schmidt reviews ethnographic evidence from northern Eurasia that suggests shamans often were people who did not fit into dichotomous conceptions of sex, gender, or sexuality.

Some were transvestites, some were intersexual, others were believed to change from male to female or from female to male, and still others participated in both heterosexual and homosexual encounters.

Lepenski Vir, along the Danube River in the former Yugoslavia, is a well-known Late Mesolithic site (c. 4500 B.C.) with numerous house foundations, burials, and unusual carved stone boulders often interpreted as ritual objects. The excavators describe a prehistoric culture in which women were passive and men were the active players in subsistence, leadership, art, and ritual. Russell Handsman posits, however, that this androcentric interpretation ignores what must have been the diverse, active contributions of women. He interprets the changes in the architectural remains over time (perhaps extending into the earliest Neolithic) as demonstrating growing inequality between lineages and expanding elaboration of the domestic sphere, perhaps indicating an increasing symbolic valuation of the domestic activities of women.

NEOLITHIC

During the Neolithic period (approximately 7000–3000 B.C., but earlier in southeastern Europe and later in the northwest), cultivation and husbandry of domesticated plant and animal resources became dominant, permanent villages were established, population sizes increased, and new types of material culture, especially pottery, gained importance. There was significant regional variation in the material culture and social and cultural organization of Neolithic societies in Europe, and gender has important implications for each of these topics.

There is a vast literature on the beginnings of the Neolithic in Europe, debating the relative importance of climate change, local innovation, migration, and other causal factors. Gender has not been integrated explicitly into these discussions, but innovation usually is implicitly assigned to men. In the North American context, Patty Jo Watson and Mary C. Kennedy point out that the logical conclusion of the assumption that women were plant gatherers in preagricultural periods is that they were the most knowledgeable about plant species and life cycles and thus most likely the innovators in terms of cultivation of domesticated plants. While the situations are not identical (e.g., domesticated animals are present in Europe but not in North America), these

authors emphasize that in any convincing analysis women must be recognized as active participants in daily life. There are no reasons to expect that women would be less innovative than men, and the unspoken presumption that child care somehow absorbed all of women's time and creativity is simply wrong. In fact even in traditional societies women do not spend their entire adult lives in active mothering.

The best-known material remains from the Neolithic that have been discussed from a gender perspective are the numerous figurines from southeastern Europe (dating to c. 5500–4000 B.C.). They include a broad range of animal and human or humanoid figures, some with a great deal of detail and others very abstract. More female than male forms are identifiable in the assemblage, although a large number of figurines are either neuter or unidentifiable with respect to sex. They derive from domestic and midden contexts and occasionally from apparent special-purpose rooms or structures that may have been shrines of some kind; they rarely come from burials. Although many scholars have discussed these finds, they are associated most closely with Marija Gimbutas and her interpretations of Neolithic and Copper Age cultures in what she referred to as “Old Europe.” Almost alone among archaeologists of the 1950s and 1960s, Gimbutas incorporated what is recognized as a gendered perspective into her interpretations, though without any explicit theoretical attention to the topic.

Gimbutas found evidence within this assemblage for a religious cult focusing on a “great goddess” (fig. 1). She then extended her analysis to claim that the Neolithic cultures of the region were peaceful, egalitarian, and matriarchal communities that took their values from the female-dominated religion. According to Gimbutas's interpretation, this cultural pattern was destroyed during the following Copper and Bronze Ages by incursions of patriarchal, metal-using, horse-riding nomads from the steppe regions to the east who established the hierarchical and militaristic social patterns that have dominated Europe virtually ever since.

There have been two kinds of responses to Gimbutas's interpretation of southeastern European Neolithic societies. On the one hand, in the 1970s and 1980s her work became popular among nonacademic audiences, predominantly women, who

found an image of a kind of “paradise lost” that allegedly existed in the past and could be reclaimed through women asserting their ritual powers. On the other hand, archaeologists either ignored or criticized these interpretations. As explained by Lynn Meskell, feminist archaeologists have found themselves in something of a dilemma regarding Gimbutas's work. Gimbutas was innovative in the 1960s and 1970s in escaping an androcentric perspective and highlighting the role of women in prehistoric ritual, but her interpretations rest on very broad generalizations that ignore the variations in the figurines and the contexts from which they were recovered. Furthermore the power of prehistoric women, in Gimbutas's interpretation, rested exclusively on their biological capacity for reproduction, a narrow viewpoint and an unpopular perspective with most feminist archaeologists. Other archaeologists have tackled the assemblage of figurines from southeastern European Neolithic sites, working on a more nuanced understanding of the finds. The figurines probably had diverse functions, including parts in ritual, play, education, and cultural symbolism.

Houses and tombs are the major sources of data for the book *The Domestication of Europe: Structure and Contingency in Neolithic Societies* by Ian Hodder. He links the beginning of domestication to changes in symbolic structures that came to emphasize issues of social and cultural control of both nature and people. Painting with a broad brush, Hodder underscores the symbolic opposition of *domus* (the concept of house/culture/control) with *agrios* (the concept of field/nature/wildness). He also suggests gender implications of this opposition as *domus* ≈ female/*agrios* ≈ male. Ironically, while focusing on dramatic gender-linked symbolic oppositions in most European Neolithic societies, he is unwilling to examine the actual daily-life roles and statuses of men and women.

The latter part of the Neolithic, after c. 4000 B.C. (and the following transitional period, known as the Copper Age or Chalcolithic), often is characterized by the development of the Secondary Products Revolution, which is the use of domesticated animals for resources other than meat: wool, milk, dung, and traction. This economic development probably had an impact on both women's and men's labor, as textile and dairy production might

have absorbed women and plowing and transport might have occupied men. In eastern Hungary, John Chapman suggests that “increased divergence of economic resources in the Copper Age stimulates the emergence of a more gendered division of labor.” At the same time differentiation in burial patterns between men and women increased in this region. At the end of the Copper Age new burial patterns in large mounds appeared, and the primary burials were all male; archaeologists have not found female graves. Thus Chapman suggests that around 3000 B.C. women were made symbolically invisible.

BRONZE AGE

Building on themes developed in Late Neolithic and Copper Age studies, the central topic of Bronze Age (c. 2500–800/500 B.C. in temperate Europe) research is the development and nature of hierarchical societies. There is evidence of “prestige goods economies,” where important labor goes into producing and displaying status symbols, especially of bronze and gold. Much of the Bronze Age literature is implicitly androcentric, with an emphasis on metalworkers, traders, warriors, and chiefs who were all putatively male; there is little discussion of what the other half of the population was doing. In fact given that most of the male population were not chiefs or warriors, the literature tends to focus on what must have been a very small segment of the population while ignoring, to a large degree, the daily life of most people. The emphasis in most Bronze Age literature on hierarchy and chiefs tends to diminish attention to potential horizontal factors of social differentiation, such as gender, which also would have contributed to social complexity.

The rich Bronze Age cultures of southern Scandinavia have inspired several gender-focused analyses. Unusual preservation conditions, including oak-coffin burials and bog finds, have yielded clothing and wooden objects, and a rich bronzeworking tradition produced numerous artifact types. Some apparently are clearly associated with women and others with men, and certain artifact types are not gendered, including rich feasting equipment in both bronze and gold. The rock art shows a significant number of phallic human figures as well as nonphallic ones (fig. 2). Almost all have been assumed by many researchers to be male, because among other things, they are shown with swords; there also



Fig. 1. “Goddess” figurine from Vinča culture, c. 5000 B.C., Bulgaria. ERICH LESSING/ART RESOURCE, NY. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

are suggestions that the nonphallic figures might be third-gender individuals. The obvious care that the artists took to differentiate phallic and nonphallic figures suggests that some or many of the latter could be members of the major nonphallic category of humans: women.

The burial analyses indicate that in the earlier Bronze Age more males than females were buried in archaeologically visible situations (especially earthen mounds), but these conclusions are based on many burials for which there is no independent osteological assessment of the sex of the skeletal material. In the later Bronze Age, when cremation was universal in the region, very rich hoards of female-associated objects are known, often from watery places. They frequently are interpreted as ritual deposits of some kind.

Sørensen shows that in Bronze Age Scandinavia cloth and clothing was not much differentiated between men and women, but head coverings and metal ornaments and equipment were distin-

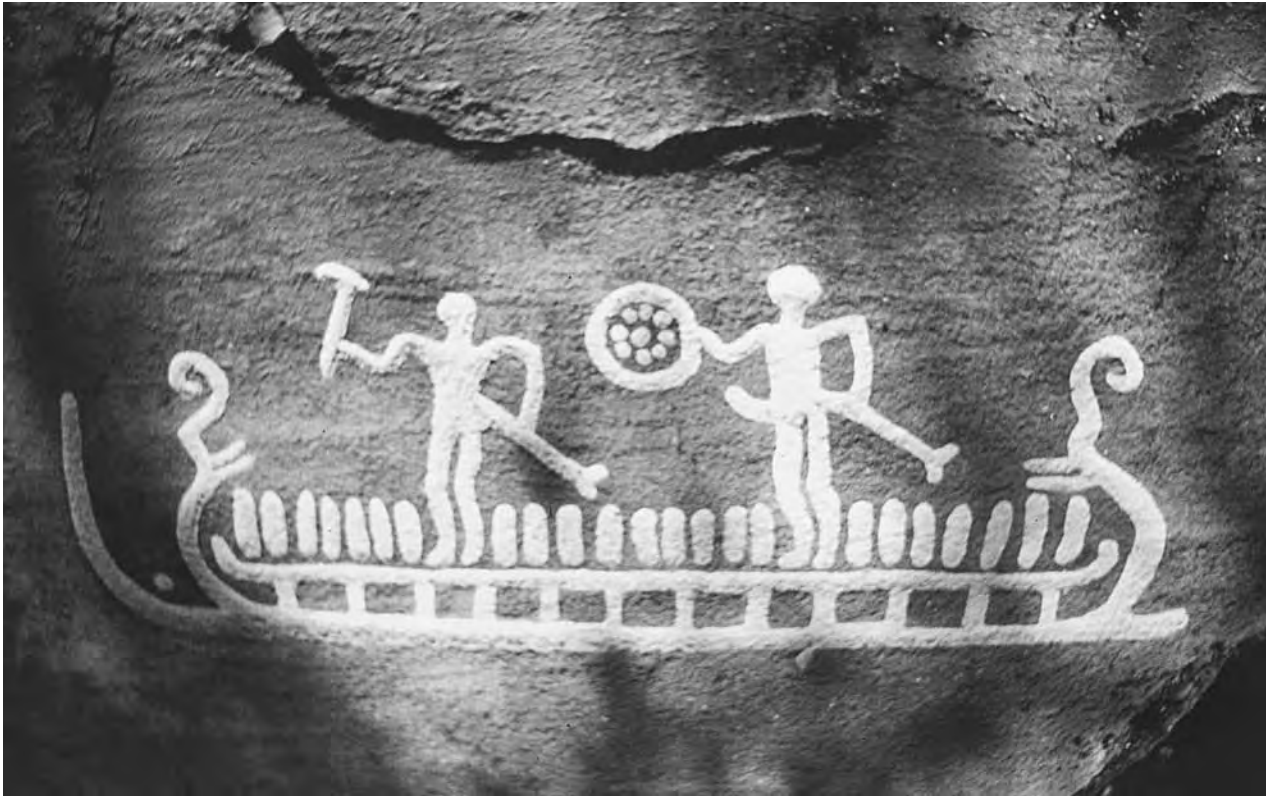


Fig. 2. Bronze Age rock art panel from western Sweden, showing boat and two armed figures, one phallic and one not. VITLYCKE MUSEUM. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

guished. At least two female styles of costume are known, but there is only one male style. The female costumes might have identified rank or marital status. The emphasis in the later Bronze Age on male figures in the rock art and female-associated objects in ritual deposits suggests that males and females participated in different kinds of rituals and may have gained status in different ways. Even the common association of men with metalworking probably is overly simplified. The metalworking technological style required several steps, including creating molds out of stone and clay, processing and casting metal, and engraving objects after casting. There is no reason to assume that all of these tasks were accomplished by one craft worker or by one gender.

No other region of Europe has attracted as much gender research attention for the Bronze Age, but individual projects are contributing to a richer understanding. Elizabeth Rega analyzed a large Early Bronze Age cemetery, Mokrin, in the north-eastern part of the former Yugoslavia. Only some

grave goods had clear gender associations, but adult males and females were differentiated clearly by body position; the position of children suggests that they were gendered in death as well. Analysis of bone chemistry and paleopathologic conditions show that there were no dietary differences between women and men. The structure of the cemetery suggests that some sort of kin groups were distinguished symbolically. This analysis, integrating evidence from grave structure, artifacts, skeletal biology, and overall cemetery organization is a fine model of interdisciplinary research that can contribute to an engendered archaeology.

IRON AGE

Research in the Iron Age continues to focus on the development of stratified societies as well as on the growth of the first towns and interregional connections. Iron Age studies are influenced strongly by information from classical written sources. These sources can provide information about the daily life of both men and women, but because they all ap-

parently are written by men and based on men's observations and testimonies, they cannot be assumed to be complete pictures of Iron Age society. Nevertheless the sources give us intriguing information about marriage patterns, property, and women's roles in agriculture, religion, and warfare.

The archaeology of villages and towns is well developed in Iron Age studies. Food preparation, weaving, potting, metallurgy, and other crafts are all evidenced in the archaeological record. Some authors have tried to distinguish male and female domestic spaces within households, but this differentiation is based on simplistic assumptions about division of labor. Almost certainly different tasks had different gender associations, and many may have followed modern conventional understandings, but this remains to be established. The potential for an engendered analysis is great.

Some of the best-known archaeological finds are the so-called princely graves of the Hallstatt culture (c. 800–400 B.C.) from southern Germany and adjacent areas. While the occupants of these graves often are assumed to be men, it has been determined that the tomb at Vix in eastern France is the burial of a woman accompanied by extraordinary wealth and imported items comparable to the other "princes." Traditional accounts explain this burial as a wife or daughter of a powerful male ruler, but Bettina Arnold points out that this is special pleading: everywhere else, this grave structure and these goods are said to designate a powerful leader. Only a very simplistic view of human societies would insist that leadership could not be invested in women in some cases. If rank and power were more important than gender in this case, one would expect to find just what has been recovered. In fact Vix is not unique; for example, at least one woman was buried with chiefly grave goods, including a complete chariot, in northern England, c. 300–100 B.C.

LATER PERIODS

Although classical historians have conducted some gender research, the Roman period in temperate Europe (c. 200 B.C.–A.D. 400) has received little attention from archaeologists interested in gender. The burial record from the medieval period, after A.D. 400, is very rich in some parts of Europe and has significant potential for gender research. Wealthy female graves, as in other cases, often are

attributed to the status of the deceased's male relatives. Keys found in some female burials in the early centuries A.D. and weighing equipment from Viking period female burials suggest, however, important aspects of some women's economic power in both the private domestic realm and the public realm of the marketplace. Various authors see archaeological evidence for female control of textile production. In contrast, the underrepresentation of female graves in many Viking contexts (c. A.D. 800–1200 in Scandinavia) may reflect preferential female infanticide. Problems remain in mortuary analysis where burials are assigned to a sex based on grave goods rather than biological analysis. This perspective, found widely in medieval archaeology, which emphasizes dichotomous sex categories and simplistic associations of males with weapons and females with jewelry, can be improved by recognition of the complexities of gender role and symbolism.

For example, a chronological overview of burial evidence from southern Norway from the Roman through the Viking periods shows that the visibility of men and women changes over time and that gender distinctions between grave goods are minor in the earlier phases and become sharper over time. Age may have an impact on burial symbolism as well. Other evidence suggests that the religious emphasis changed during the medieval period in Scandinavia from a focus on fertility to a focus on warriors, a shift that may be related to changing gender values as well.

Within medieval archaeology there is interest in churches and other religious institutions. As in other research, women's roles have been neglected, but there is interesting architectural evidence about nunneries, monasteries, walled gardens, cloisters, and church decoration that is relevant to a variety of roles of religious women and men. As Roberta Gilchrist notes, the spaces of the church reflect both gender roles and ideology.

CONCLUSIONS

Over the last two decades of the twentieth century archaeological attention to gender expanded dramatically. Within European archaeology, the emphasis has been on gender ideology and symbolism, although there also have been discussions of the division of labor and status relationships as well as theoretical attention to the definition of gender. There

is room within an engendered archaeology for those who seek to expand the understanding of women's roles in past societies as well as for those who are interested in more complex topics. The challenge is to integrate theoretical discussions with empirical evidence.

The trends of current research are twofold. First, archaeologists are trying to grapple with the complexities of human statuses and roles in the past, recognizing that one cannot study gender or status or age alone but must integrate them into analyses. Second, scholars realize that gender archaeology should not be isolated from other studies; virtually every archaeological research question—the beginnings of agriculture, development of new technologies, migration of populations, evolution of social complexity, and role of interregional exchange, among others—can be enriched by incorporating an engendered perspective. The gender relationships and ideologies of past societies cannot be assumed based on simplistic generalizations that have typically made women passive or invisible. Rather, the complexities of gender must be incorporated into ongoing attempts to use archaeological remains to illuminate the human past.

See also **Bronze Age Coffin Burials** (vol. 2, part 5);
Bronze Age Cairns (vol. 2, part 5).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Arnold, Bettina. "The Deposed Princess of Vix: The Need for an Engendered European Prehistory." In *The Archaeology of Gender: Proceedings of the Twenty-second Annual Chacmool Conference*. Edited by Dale Walde and Noreen D. Willows, pp. 366–374. Calgary, Canada: University of Calgary, 1991.
- Bacus, Elisabeth A., et al., eds. *A Gendered Past: A Critical Bibliography of Gender in Archaeology*. University of Michigan Museum of Anthropology Technical Report, no. 25. Ann Arbor: University of Michigan Museum of Anthropology, 1993. (Annotated entries for 197 sources on gender in archaeology.)
- Bertelsen, Reidar, Arvid Lillehammer, and Jenny-Rita Næss, eds. *Were They All Men? An Examination of Sex Roles in Prehistoric Society*. Stavanger, Norway: Arkeologisk Museum i Stavanger, 1987. (Publication of an influential conference held in 1979.)
- Chapman, John. "Changing Gender Relations in the Later Prehistory of Eastern Hungary." In *Invisible People and Processes: Writing Gender and Childhood into European Archaeology*. Edited by Jenny Moore and Eleanor Scott, pp. 131–149. London: Leicester University Press, 1997.
- Díaz-Andreu, Margarita, and Marie Louise Stig Sørensen, eds. *Excavating Women: A History of Women in European Archaeology*. London: Routledge, 1998.
- Ehrenberg, Margaret. *Women in Prehistory*. London: British Museum Publications, 1989.
- European Journal of Archaeology*. London: Sage Publications, 1998–. (Published as *Journal of European Archaeology* during 1993–1997. A good source for research in the region, including gender research.)
- Gero, Joan M. "Genderlithics: Women's Roles in Stone Tool Production." In *Engendering Archaeology: Women and Prehistory*. Edited by Joan M. Gero and Margaret W. Conkey, pp. 163–193. Oxford: Blackwell, 1991.
- Gilchrist, Roberta. *Gender and Archaeology: Contesting the Past*. London: Routledge, 1999.
- Gimbutas, Marija. *The Gods and Goddesses of Old Europe, 7000 to 3500 B.C.: Myths, Legends, and Cult Images*. London: Thames and Hudson, 1974.
- Handsman, Russell G. "Whose Art Was Found at Lepenski Vir? Gender Relations and Power in Archaeology." In *Engendering Archaeology: Women and Prehistory*. Edited by Joan M. Gero and Margaret W. Conkey, pp. 329–365. Oxford: Blackwell, 1991.
- Hays-Gilpin, Kelley Ann, and David S. Whitley, eds. *Reader in Gender Archaeology*. London: Routledge, 1998. (Reprints articles from several sources.)
- Hodder, Ian. *The Domestication of Europe: Structure and Contingency in Neolithic Societies*. Oxford: Blackwell, 1990.
- Meskel, Lynn. "Goddesses, Gimbutas, and 'New Age' Archaeology." *Antiquity* 69 (1995): 74–86.
- Nelson, Sarah Milledge. *Gender in Archaeology: Analyzing Power and Prestige*. Walnut Creek, Calif.: Altamira Press, 1997.
- Rega, Elizabeth. "Age, Gender, and Biological Reality in the Early Bronze Age Cemetery at Mokrin." In *Invisible People and Processes: Writing Gender and Childhood into European Archaeology*. Edited by Jenny Moore and Eleanor Scott, pp. 229–247. London: Leicester University Press, 1997.
- Schmidt, Robert A., and Barbara L. Voss, eds. *Archaeologies of Sexuality*. London: Routledge, 2000.
- Sørensen, Marie Louise Stig. *Gender Archaeology*. Malden, Mass.: Polity Press, 2000.
- . "The Construction of Gender through Appearance." In *The Archaeology of Gender: Proceedings of the Twenty-second Annual Chacmool Conference*. Edited by Dale Walde and Noreen D. Willows, pp. 121–129. Calgary, Canada: University of Calgary, 1991.
- Watson, Patty Jo, and Mary C. Kennedy. "The Development of Horticulture in the Eastern Woodlands of

North America: Women's Role." In *Engendering Archaeology: Women and Prehistory*. Edited by Joan M. Gero and Margaret W. Conkey, pp. 255–275. Oxford: Blackwell, 1991.

Wicker, Nancy L., and Bettina Arnold, eds. *From the Ground Up: Beyond Gender Theory in Archaeology*. BAR International Series, no. 812. Oxford: Archaeopress, 1999.

JANET E. LEVY



RITUAL AND IDEOLOGY

FOLLOWED BY FEATURE ESSAY ON:

Hjortspring 99

The study of prehistoric religion and ideology emerged as part of a reaction against the emphasis on “hard” facts, environmental reconstructions, settlement patterns, and subsistence data prevalent in archaeology beginning in the early 1960s. This newfound interest in the meaning of the past led to attempts to understand the cognitive basis for social action—the mental structures and framework of ideas that people internalize and use, often without reflection. It became apparent to archaeologists that, because such mental frameworks provided the basis for everyday behavior, their traces could be found in even the most common material remains they had already studied but without realizing their significance for cognitive research. It was this linking of microlevel material culture (pottery decoration, house orientation, burial posture) to macrolevel mental structures that made the study of prehistoric religion (often glossed as “ritual”) and ideology possible. In addition, this linkage demonstrates the importance of religion—as a series of principles for the understanding of both long-term structures and everyday social action.

Traditional archaeologists tended to view prehistoric religion and ideology as the Holy Grail of their discipline, and as the most difficult nonmaterial elements to be identified from material remains. Processual archaeologists were more optimistic,

identifying the cognitive, which included ritual and ideology, as one subsystem within a total behavioral system of human communities. It was only in the 1980s, with the advent of post-processual archaeology, that the cognitive moved center stage and the pursuit of meaning began to dominate accounts of prehistory. This led to a different kind of archaeological writing, in which the grand narrative became less important than detailed, interpretative accounts of often small-scale patterning.

MEANING OF TERMS

Because it is difficult to find properties to distinguish ritual from secular acts, many prehistorians adopt the view of ritual as an all-encompassing phenomenon, a view that originated with the French anthropologist Émile Durkheim (1915). These authors leave themselves open to the criticism that they cannot exclude any kind of structured formal behavior (e.g., the game of cricket) from the ritual domain. The opposite problem lies in establishing a rigorous dichotomy between ritual and secular, or symbolic and practical, action, as in Colin Renfrew’s 1985 study of the shrine at the Aegean Bronze Age palace of Phylakopi. If ritual is bracketed out and studied in isolation, it becomes difficult to understand how social agents moved between political and ritual domains. One alternative is to build on

John Barrett's 1991 insight that ritual and symbolic knowledge is constructed from the same material conditions as daily life and that participants create ritual by situating their own bodies and the symbolic associations that color everyday life within that ritual. Similarly, Joanna Brück maintains that the beliefs underlying ritual are expressions of the values, aims, and rationales that shape everyday practical action, so that rituals represent people's practical engagement with material conditions—a way of causing desired things to happen. Thus rituals can mark important social transitions and renewals through the creation of relationships between this world and the other world, between people and time, and between people and place.

The classic Marxist position that ideologies were used to maintain relations of dominance and thus had to be concealed from the people—that ideologies promoted “false consciousness”—was challenged by the French Marxist Louis Althusser (1984), who saw the material existence of ideology in all human practice as mediating between consciousness and action. This view of ideology, however—as a particular way of understanding the world, a set of cosmological beliefs and values for getting on in the world—tends to lead to the undesirable outcome of excluding social power from consideration.

A useful distinction can be drawn between ideology as theory and ritual as practice: they are not diametrically opposed, but each creates and re-creates the conditions for the existence and growth of the other. Nevertheless, a prehistoric society's ideology can be neither consistent nor unified; it will contain both internal and external contradictions and many different readings of the “same” rituals—differences that can be used by prehistoric communities and individuals as a source of power.

FORMS OF EVIDENCE

Colin Renfrew identifies four classes of evidence pertaining to ritual: (1) verbal testimony about religious activity, (2) direct observation of cult practices, (3) study of nonverbal records (depictions), and (4) study of material remains of cult practices. The last two classes are relevant for later prehistory. Most prehistorians agree that the context of discoveries and their relationships are key elements in using material evidence; now that the meaning of

ritual and ideology has been broadened, it is possible to employ a far wider range of evidence than the British prehistorian Christopher Hawkes had in mind when he established his infamous “hierarchical ladder of inferences,” with religion as the most difficult stage to reach. Rather than a chronological approach, this discussion takes a biographical approach, looking successively at things, individuals, dwellings, sites, and monuments and landscapes, making use of a wide range of temporal and spatial scales of analysis.

THINGS

The artifact, or item of material culture, lies at the heart of the archaeological enterprise. Until the late twentieth century, however, it was often treated as an inert result of the application of technology. Now that closer relations have been detected between things and people and things and places, the metaphorical significance of artifacts—what they can stand for—is better appreciated. An important strategy, which depends on the material persistence of artifacts, is termed “presencing”: here an artifact can bring absent people and places into their immediate context. Thus an exotic Neolithic flint axe found in Austria can convey the prestige of a successful exchange and can presence its makers and traders in Scandinavia.

Each stage of transformation in the life of an object, as in that of a person, is surrounded by ritual and often secrecy. Karen D. Vitelli's study of some of the earliest pottery made in Europe—the seventh-millennium B.C. pottery from the Franchthi Cave in Greece—shows how pottery making itself was a prestige activity, based on esoteric knowledge, with each vessel carefully shaped and fired individually. Several different potters produced a few pots each year for ritual usage on special occasions rather than for everyday cooking or storage. Pottery was ideologically important because it was a completely new kind of object in the material world of early farmers, the beginning of a local tradition.

Pottery can also stand metaphorically for social relations and even architecture. In his study of the Late Neolithic pottery for the Barnhouse village on Orkney, Andrew Jones demonstrates that large decorated vessels kept in house niches for the storage of barley appear in the same relative place as the skulls stored in the niches of nearby communal

tombs. When archaeologists match each stage in the making of a vessel with a stage in round house building, they also reveal the metaphorical wealth of material culture in its linking of pottery, food, dwelling, and death in the Neolithic worldview on Orkney.

Jan Apel's study of the beautifully crafted flint daggers of the Late Neolithic of Scandinavia (fig. 1) shows how a stoneworking tradition became the vehicle for the dominant social values of the community, which were transmitted from generation to generation through the manufacture of the daggers. He argues for a hereditary fraternity whose members manufactured rough forms of daggers in places near flint sources remote from the settlements; master knappers then finished them off at home, in the full view of the community. As symbols of male prestige, the daggers were traded from the Arctic to the Alps. Hence specialized craft production and long-distance trade were two ways in which tangible objects could be charged with intangible, supernatural powers that brought their owners honor and prestige.

Richard Bradley has identified a long-term trend (3500–1 B.C.) in later prehistoric Europe—the disposal of artifacts and human body parts in watery places such as bogs, rivers, and lakes. Regional practices alternated over time between predominantly dryland burial in graves and wetland disposal; these alternating practices sometimes involved changes in artifact type, from weapons to ornaments to tools, or different preferences regarding sacrifices of persons or animals or offerings of things. This practice of structured deposition perpetuates a significant relationship between people, places, and objects.

The example of miniature fired clay figurines from the fifth millennium B.C. Cucuteni group in Romania and Moldavia shows how making and breaking are conceived as part of a single ritual cycle of birth and death. The making of the figurines (fig. 2) from three equal-sized balls of clay pressed together facilitates the breaking of the body into several fragments, each standing for the whole figure and for the social relationships that link their owners and users. Most of the figurines have been deliberately broken in settlements and the fragments reused before final deposition—a negotiation of social roles using objects.

INDIVIDUALS

Recent research into the fundamental ideological question of what constitutes a person has recognized three possible conceptions: (1) a Western conception, in which the individual is “bounded” by her or his skin and seen as someone separate from all other individuals; (2) a Melanesian conception, in which the person is figuratively divided between all other persons with whom she or he has a social relation; and (3) an Indian conception, in which the person changes gender over the course of her or his life through the metaphorical and actual exchange of bodily fluids. Prehistorians have identified examples of such “partite” beliefs about personhood in the Neolithic of northwestern Europe, where the bones of the deceased are often moved around the landscape, and in the Neolithic of southeastern Europe, where figurines can change gender by having their sexual parts broken off.

Rituals surrounding key human rites of passage—birth, age grades, marriage, and death—are ubiquitous in anthropology, but it is difficult to identify the first three in prehistory (for birthing rituals, see Beausang 2000). Joanna Sofaer Derevenski has overcome the difficulties of sexing children's skeletons by extrapolating from the strongly gendered burial positions of adults. The result for the fourth-millennium B.C. Copper Age cemetery of Tiszapolgár-Basatanya in Hungary is a series of artifacts—tools, ornaments, or pottery—each associated with a different life stage for each gender. This shows how things can symbolically represent people, just as persons are consistently linked to objects.

It is important to distinguish between ancestor rituals, those used to transform the deceased into ancestors, and funerary rituals, those used to bury the dead. Two explanations are advanced for the piles of bones, frequently disarticulated, found in the megalithic “tombs” of the northwest European Neolithic. The ossuary hypothesis states that primary excarnation (removal of the flesh from the bones) occurred elsewhere, with burial of selected bones in the megalith. In the second explanation, the megalith was the place of primary burial, with bodily decomposition occurring in the tomb and selected bones being removed after the fact. Both explanations imply that the transition from deceased to ancestor required the loss of flesh and the survival of the bones alone.

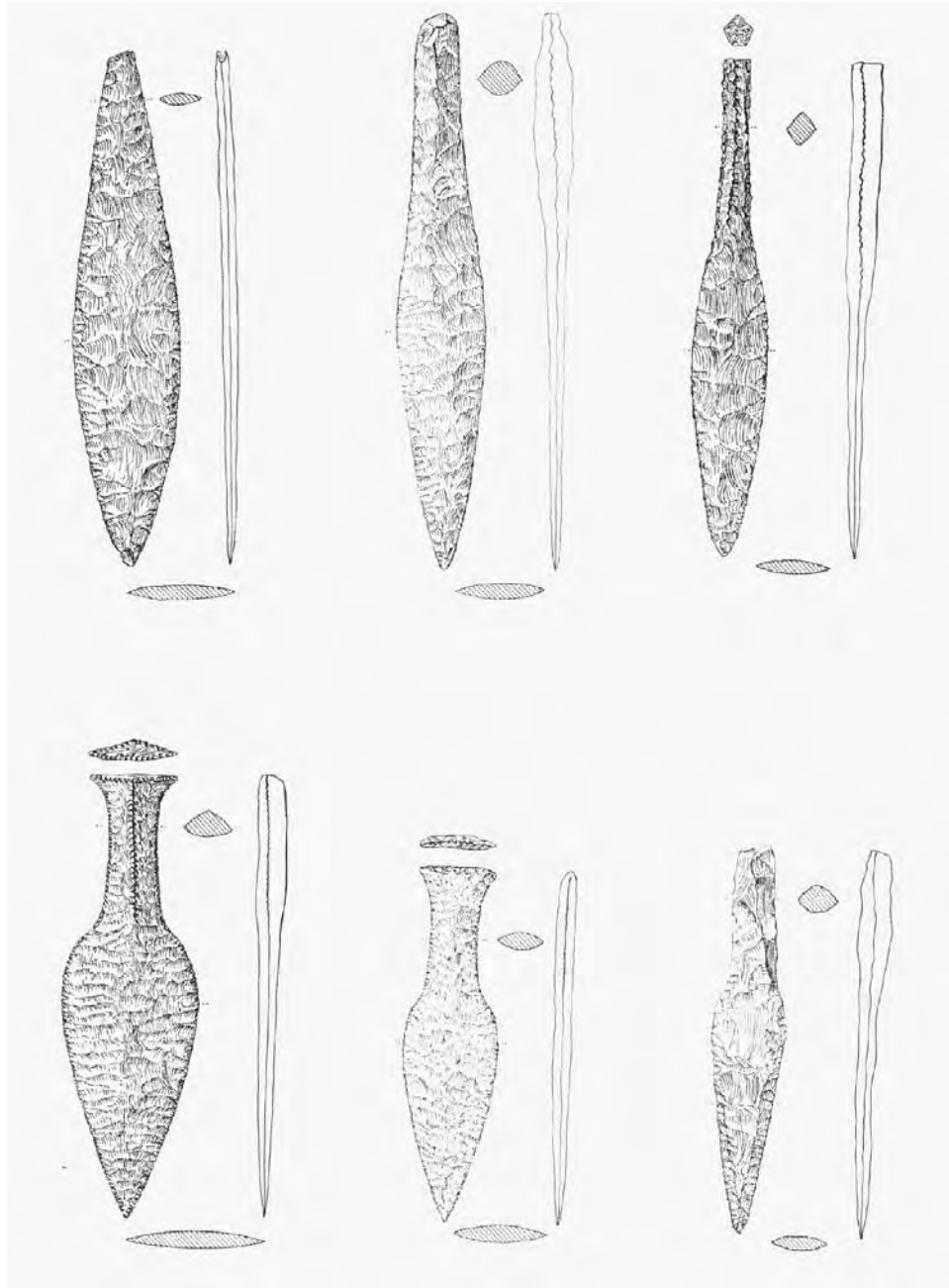


Fig. 1. Late Neolithic bifacial flint dagger. COURTESY OF JAN APEL. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

Bo Gräslund posits the idea of multiple souls—a body soul that leaves the body at death and a dream soul that is released in the transition to the other world—to explain a set of practices in Bronze Age and Iron Age funerary ritual in northern Europe that differs from those of the Neolithic. Grave goods in inhumations are never burned, but grave goods are burned in cremations or are absent altogether. He suggests that, to be of any use on the

spirit journey, the grave goods have to be placed near the corpse at the very moment when the dream soul sets out on its journey (in the grave or on the funeral pyre).

In the European Bronze Age, there is a major shift from an ideology of place and community to one privileging individual identity and personal display. A concern with the body and its appearance

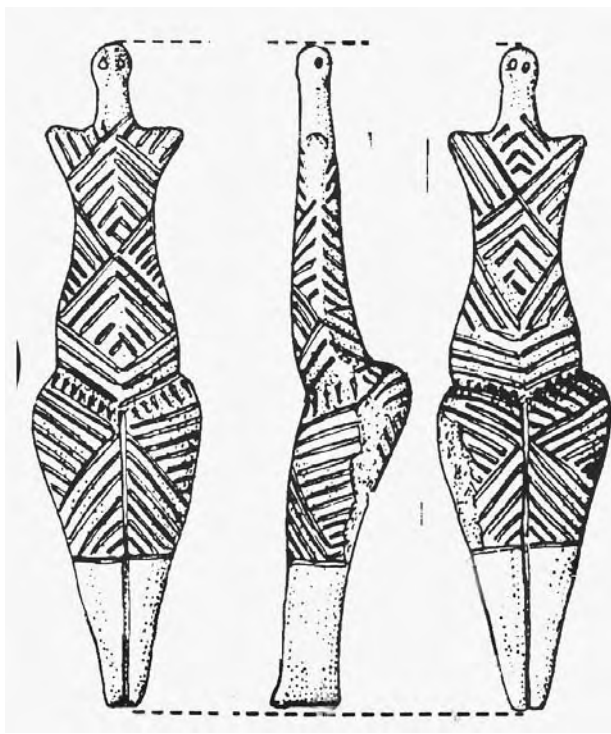


Fig. 2. Cucuteni fired-clay anthropomorphic figurine.
COURTESY OF DAN MONAH. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

can be seen in the adoption of new toilet articles (razors, tweezers, and so forth) designed to fix in death the image of warrior beauty. These visual stimuli aiding in social categorization are apparent in personal costume and clothing; Marie Louise Stig Sørensen identifies a proliferation of ornaments designed to accentuate the body and its movements in the Middle Bronze Age (c. 1800 B.C.). The weapons, costumes, gold ornaments, and mirrors of the Iron Age accentuate the visual signs of this ideology of external appearance, often in the context of warrior graves that contain exotic drinking sets imported from Mediterranean states.

DWELLINGS

The dwelling not only embodies personal meaning but also expresses and maintains the ideology of prevailing social orders. The geographer Yi-Fu Tuan sees architecture as the “pre-text” for handing down traditions, rituals, and cosmology. In small-scale societies, localized cosmologies often embed the uniqueness of time, locality, and place in their architecture. Since dwellings resemble people in their birth (construction), growing up (use life),

and death (destruction or dilapidation), the body often acts as a temporal metaphor for the dwelling. In addition, the orientation or cardinal points of the dwelling are frequently linked to cosmological schemes.

Ian Hodder’s important long-term study of 1990 explores changing Neolithic social structure through the concepts of the *domus*—the importance of domesticity, the home, fertility, and productivity—and the *agrios*—the outside zone of hunting, warring, drinking, and exchange. Hodder identifies the groups in Neolithic Europe that place a high symbolic and practical value on dwellings, contrasting them to a sizable number of more mobile communities that do not build impressive structures. He interprets the tensions between the *domus* and *agrios* principles as a driving force for cultural change in much of Neolithic Europe.

One of the most remarkable sites in sixth- to fifth-millennium Europe is Lepenski Vir, in the Iron Gates gorge of the Danube in Serbia. Here pottery-using foraging communities that lived close to early farming groups constructed trapezoidal dwellings whose shape resembled the nearby mountain of Treskavac and matched the form of an unusual burial. Lepenski Vir neatly illustrates the significance of color symbolism: the dwellings’ red limestone floors were metaphorically linked to the red ocher powder used in human burials, the red paint or burn marks on the monumental sculptures placed inside the dwellings, the predominantly red Neolithic pottery, and the dazzling red of the autumnal forests of the gorge. In this way, the living, the dead, nature, material culture, and architecture were integrated within a single ideological structure.

The well-preserved sandstone dwellings of Late Neolithic Orkney reveal a symmetrical plan, with a central hearth of symbolic as well as practical importance, especially during the long winter darkness. The division between the left and right sides of the house has been interpreted as a gendered division of space, based on available light and artifact disposal. As in the megalithic tomb of Maes Howe, whose passageway is oriented toward the setting of the sun on the shortest day of the year, the hearths in the houses are oriented to the sunrise and sunset of the winter and summer solstices. Thus the cosmology of Orcadian society is built into the inhabitants’ daily lives, as a framework for dwelling.

An important long-term ideological concept in the British Bronze and Iron Ages is the circular house plan, which remained consistent for two millennia. Here the key architectural focus is the entrance, sometimes emphasized through a deposition of objects near the door. In the Bronze Age, the doorway faced east, toward the midwinter and equinoctial sunrise; inside the household space was divided into two gendered halves based on household activity. Nevertheless, in the Middle Iron Age, c. 500 B.C., the doorways of the more impressive houses were shifted to face the center of the hillfort, to recognize the prominence of a central person, perhaps the community leader. Thus a profound re-orientation in Iron Age society is seen in a change in the orientation of the basic dwelling unit, the house.

The death of a house can be peaceful and accidental, or violent and deliberate, as in the burning of Neolithic houses in southeastern Europe. At Opovo, a Neolithic site in Serbia, each of the houses was burned down individually, with different firing temperatures and different fire paths, each requiring the addition of fuel to complete the destruction. Often amounting to several hundred objects, the artifacts in a burned house were laid out formally, probably as “grave goods” by the “mourners.” House burning must have been the centerpiece of a spectacular rite of passage for the whole village.

European prehistorians have often debated the relationship between Neolithic longhouses (for the living) and long barrows (for the dead). Richard Bradley has interpreted the mound formed by the collapse of a longhouse, with its flanking clay pits, as the visual parallel of a long barrow. Hence a settlement could contain a variety of houses—some active and some dead, with enclosure ditches sanctifying the space around a dead house. Both of these examples indicate how close houses for the dead were to houses for the living.

SITES AND MONUMENTS

If individual houses offer a stage for the unfolding drama of ritual life and constitute the underpinnings of ideological structures, entire sites and monuments provide a wider arena for the expression of the community worldview through everyday social practices. Recent approaches to sites and monu-

ments identify two important themes: the transformation of space (natural, unoccupied) into places (meaningful, cultural, and lived in); and the ways that communities related past, present, and future to their own lives through those places.

Many societies have “domesticated” natural caves by performing an underground ritual. Ruth Whitehouse’s study of the complex Neolithic and Copper Age cult cave of Porto Badisco in southern Italy shows how people divided up the space with stone walls, left pottery to catch water from dripping stalactites, and painted almost one thousand motifs on the cave walls. The paintings comprise abstract motifs, artifacts, and handprints but especially figural motifs, both human and animal, most of them in hunting and gathering scenes. The largest and most accessible chambers featured figures, both women and men, most in scenes, while the more remote chambers featured the juxtaposition of men and abstract designs symbolizing the most secret transformations of elements in ritual narratives.

On Mont Bego, at an altitude of 2,900 meters in the French Alps, Copper Age societies engraved an estimated 100,000 figures onto an expanse of soft-colored and polished schist, thus marking a natural place with complex cultural symbols. Parallels to the motif combination of adult male, metal dagger or halberd, plow, and draft oxen are found on gravestones and in tombs in the adjacent lowlands. This suggests an ideological emphasis on male warfare and agriculture. Because of snow cover, the mountain was accessible only during the six summer months, when shepherds or pilgrims made the ascent, perhaps as part of a male initiation rite.

The Bronze Age settlement of Leskernick in southwestern England comprised a series of dry stone-walled houses and enclosure walls on a rocky granite hillside, overlooking a standing stone complex. The ritual significance of the rocks for every aspect of daily life could be seen throughout the settlement—in situ boulders incorporated into house walls, enclosure walls joining up dense boulder patches, stones cleared away from impressive rocks, and the base of other boulders surrounded by smaller stones. Communal knowledge of the significance of rocks tied the settlement to the timeless granite structure of the moors.

A very different type of settlement is the tell, an artificial mound of occupation debris rising above lowland plains in southeastern Europe. The fifth-millennium B.C. tell of Polyanitsa in Bulgaria exemplifies the practice of building one's house above where one's ancestors once lived, to link everyday action to traditional, ancestral lifeways. The higher the tell, the greater the time-depth of previous occupations, time-depth being the basis of ideological power in a tell-filled landscape. Polyanitsa also illustrates, with a clarity rare in prehistoric Europe, formalized village planning based on the *axis mundi* (axis of the world).

Megalithic tombs link current usage not only to the past, through the ancestors, but also to the future, through the construction of a monument made to last for many generations. This is well exemplified by the massive Neolithic monument of La Hougue Bie in the Channel Islands. The original Middle Neolithic conical cairn was faced with smooth stones and stood 19 meters high with a diameter of 60 meters, far larger than any contemporary dwelling. The cairn's monumentality was enhanced by buttresses and a perfectly symmetrical horned entrance to the forecourt. In the Late Neolithic, a single body buried in a cist within the chamber symbolized the change toward an individualizing ideology. Height and monumentality continued to attract people to the monument; two medieval chapels were built on top of the mound and were in turn incorporated into a Regency folly.

The impressive mound of Hochdorf concealed one of the very few Early Iron Age "princely" graves not robbed in antiquity; its monumental bulk masks a diversity of timescales in the funerary ritual. The wooden burial chamber itself took five years to build. Some grave goods (clothing and jewelry) belonged to the deceased in his lifetime, others were made after death, some in the actual chamber (gold coating on shoes, drinking horns); still others were introduced at the moment of burial (a wagon was dismantled to fit through the door and then reassembled). Then, long after the main burial, those seeking to be associated with the famous prince were buried in the side of the mound. The interplay of different timescales and artifacts with various biographies creates a narrative richness comparable to the material wealth in the tomb.

LANDSCAPES

Felipe Criado Boado and Victoria Villoch Vázquez define four fundamental dimensions of landscape: physical space, social space (for human use), symbolic space, and perceptual space. By "perceptual space" they mean the way the landscape is sculpted and shaped, which in turn shapes individual perceptions. Many other prehistorians are equally concerned with the ways individuals understand and interpret the landscape—a major divergence from past approaches to landscapes. Both groups, however, agree that the landscape is socially constructed, shaped by people's social practices, including rituals. One elaboration of this approach is to designate landscapes dominated by public monuments as "ritual landscapes"; however, this notion simply reinstates the sacred-profane dichotomy, which Brück and Barrett dispute. An important advance is the recognition that the landscape itself, especially rocky outcrops, waterfalls, and pools, is the source of the sacred.

Criado Boado and Villoch Vázquez conclude that the placement of Neolithic megaliths in a Galician upland zone, northwestern Spain, articulates and organizes the entire cultural landscape through their permanence and high intervisibility on all major routes across the uplands. Along the north-south axis of movement, there is a series of basins with poorly visible megaliths alternating with flatland containing megaliths located for high visibility; on either side of the axis of movement are contrasting views, high, open hills to the east, low depressions to the west. The paths across the landscape connect the settlement world of the living to the megalithic world of the dead, with circular territories strongly expressing the domain and control of the megalith builders and their descendants.

An approach based more on individual perception of the landscape is Vicki Cummins's demonstration of the close visual relationship between mountains and Neolithic megaliths in southwestern Wales. Most megaliths have excellent views of dominant mountains and rocky outcrops on the skyline—views that often crystallize as one approaches the monument. The visual similarity of megaliths to skyline outcrops suggests that these monuments represent an early stage in the creation of a mythical past by the living through the appropriation of a timeless nature. A later stage of appropriation in-

volves the removal of rocks for monument construction, such as the bluestones taken from Wales to Stonehenge.

Christopher Tilley identifies two dramatic natural features on the south coast of England—the Isle of Portland, with its immense limestone cliffs, and the 15-meter-high storm beach of Chesil Beach—as the landscape inspiration for Neolithic monuments on the nearby Maiden Castle, a high chalk “island” standing out from the surrounding low terrain at the end of a long ridge. The Neolithic enclosure on Maiden Castle hill resembles the Isle of Portland in its shape, just as the steep sides of the hill resemble the Portland cliffs. The unusual bank barrow (a linear mound 547 meters in length) on top of Maiden Castle hill so closely resembles Chesil Beach in size and morphology that the barrow can be said to represent the beach. These visual metaphors help clarify how Neolithic communities used the dominant features of their landscape to construct their own cultural worlds. The visual links between the monuments on Maiden Castle and the coastal features are reinforced by the plentiful finds of coastal shells and Portland chert tools inside the enclosure.

In the Mediterranean, fourth- and third-millennium B.C. Malta was characterized by the construction of more than thirty temples, whose thick, ochre-painted stone walls created the atmosphere of a tomb. In his investigation of the rise of Maltese temple society, John Robb suggests that the temples were the meeting place for the below-ground world of the ancestors and the above-ground world of the living. Their flat, low, earth-covered exterior resembled an island when seen from a distance. Just as islands were inhabited metaphors—natural symbols of boundedness—so Maltese Copper Age communities not only lived on an island but also created one, a cultural island whose temples defined their local ritual identity.

It is not only nature that provides symbolic resources for prehistoric communities; it is also monuments from earlier periods. For example, in southwestern Ireland, there are more than one thousand known megalithic monuments, constructed in four cycles during the Neolithic and Bronze Age. William O’Brien explains that the Iron Age population of this region used the dominant orientation of all four main classes of megalithic monuments to the southwest—the sunset land of the dead—to main-

tain and develop the sun cult of the past. In this part of Ireland, the Iron Age inhabitants resisted most external innovations (except living in hillforts), instead emphasizing their own links to the past as represented by the ancestral monuments, which both surrounded them and provided the basis for rethinking and reinterpreting past and present.

CONCLUSION

This is not a grand narrative, a sweeping panorama of the evolution of ritual and ideology over six millennia of European prehistory. Instead, this essay seeks to identify signposts on the road, to explore how prehistorians have started to grapple with the implications of a major insight, namely, that ritual and ideology fill every aspect of our lives. The sea change in prehistoric archaeology in the last decade of the twentieth century and the first decade of the twenty-first consisted of a nuanced search for large-scale structure in everyday gendered social action. The ubiquity of ritual and ideology reinforces the key role they play in modern prehistory.

See also Hochdorf (*vol. 1, part 1*); Franchthi Cave (*vol. 1, part 2*); Late Neolithic/Copper Age Southeastern Europe (*vol. 1, part 4*); The Megalithic World (*vol. 1, part 4*); The Neolithic Temples of Malta (*vol. 1, part 4*).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Althusser, Louis. *Essays on Ideology*. London: Verso, 1984.
- Apel, Jan. *Daggers, Knowledge, and Power*. Uppsala, Sweden: Uppsala University, 2001.
- Barfield, Lawrence, and Christopher Chippindale. “Meaning in the Later Prehistoric Rock-Engravings of Mont Bègo, Alpes-Maritimes, France.” *Proceedings of the Prehistoric Society* 63 (1997): 103–128.
- Barrett, John. “Towards an Archaeology of Ritual.” In *Sacred and Profane*. Edited by P. Garwood, D. Jennings, R. Skeates, and J. Toms, pp. 1–9. OUCA Monograph, no. 32. Oxford: Oxford University Committee for Archaeology, 1991.
- . “The Living, the Dead, and the Ancestors: Neolithic and Early Bronze Age Mortuary Practices.” In *The Archaeology of Context in the Neolithic and Bronze Age: Recent Trends*. Edited by J. C. Barrett and I. A. Kinnes, pp. 30–41. Sheffield, U.K.: University of Sheffield, 1988.
- Beausang, Elisabeth. “Childbirth in Prehistory: An Introduction.” *European Journal of Archaeology* 3, no. 1 (2000): 69–87.
- Bender, Barbara, Christopher Tilley, and Sue Hamilton. “Leskernick: Stone Worlds; Alternative Narratives;

- Nested Landscapes." *Proceedings of the Prehistoric Society* 63 (1997): 147–178.
- Binford, Lewis R. "Data, Relativism, and Archaeological Science." *Man* 22 (1987): 391–404.
- Borić, Dušan. "Apotropism and the Temporality of Colours: Colourful Mesolithic-Neolithic Seasons in the Danube Gorges." In *Colouring the Past*. Edited by Andrew Jones and Gavin MacGregor, pp. 23–43. Oxford: Berg, 2002.
- Bradley, Richard. *An Archaeology of Natural Places*. London: Routledge, 2000.
- . *The Significance of Monuments*. London: Routledge, 1998.
- Brück, Joanna. "Ritual and Rationality: Some Problems of Interpretation in European Archaeology." *European Journal of Archaeology* 2, no. 3 (1999): 313–344.
- Chapman, John. *Fragmentation in Archaeology: People, Places, and Broken Objects in the Prehistory of South Eastern Europe*. London: Routledge, 2000.
- . "The Creation of Social Arenas in the Neolithic and Copper Age of S. E. Europe." In *Sacred and Profane*. Edited by P. Garwood, D. Jennings, R. Skeates, and J. Toms, pp. 152–171. OUCA Monograph, no. 32. Oxford: Oxford University Committee for Archaeology, 1991.
- Criado Boado, Felipe, and Victoria Villoch Vázquez. "Monumentalizing Landscape: From Present Perception to Past Meaning of Galician Megalithism (Northwest Iberian Peninsula)." *European Journal of Archaeology* 3, no. 2 (2000): 188–216.
- Cummins, Vicki. "All Cultural Things: Actual and Conceptual Monuments in the Neolithic of Western Britain." In *Monuments and Landscape in Atlantic Europe*. Edited by Chris Scarre, pp. 107–121. London: Routledge, 2002.
- Dietler, Michael. "The Cup of Gyptis: Rethinking the Colonial Encounter in Early-Iron-Age Western Europe and the Relevance of World-Systems Models." *Journal of European Archaeology* 3, no. 2 (1995): 89–111.
- Durkheim, Émile. *The Elementary Forms of the Religious Life*. London: Allen and Unwin, 1915.
- Gheorghiu, Dragos. "The Cult of the Ancestors in the East European Chalcolithic. A Holographic Approach." In *The Archaeology of Cult and Religion*. Edited by P. Biehl and F. Bertemes with H. Meller, pp. 73–88. Budapest: Archaeolingua, 2001.
- Gräslund, Bo. "Prehistoric Soul Beliefs in Northern Europe." *Proceedings of the Prehistoric Society* 60 (1994): 15–26.
- Hawkes, Christopher. "Archaeology Theory and Method: Some Suggestions from the Old World." *American Anthropologist* 56 (1954): 155–168.
- Helms, Mary W. *Ulysses' Sail: An Ethnographic Odyssey of Power, Knowledge, and Geographical Distance*. Princeton, N.J.: Princeton University Press, 1988.
- Hill, J. D. "How Should We Understand Iron Age Societies and Hillforts? A Contextual Study from Southern Britain." In *Different Iron Ages: Studies on the Iron Age in Temperate Europe*. Edited by J. D. Hill and C. G. Cumberpatch, pp. 45–66. BAR International Series, no. 602. Oxford: Tempus Reparatum, 1995.
- Hodder, Ian. *The Domestication of Europe*. Oxford: Blackwell, 1990.
- Jones, Andrew. *Archaeological Theory and Scientific Practice*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 2002.
- King, Martin P. "Life and Death in the 'Neolithic': Dwelling-Scapes in Southern Britain." *European Journal of Archaeology* 4, no. 3 (2001): 323–345.
- Lemonnier, Pierre, ed. *Technological Choices: Transformation in Material Culture since the Neolithic*. London: Routledge, 1993.
- O'Brien, William. "Megaliths in a Mythologized Landscape: South-West Ireland in the Iron Age." In *Monuments and Landscape in Atlantic Europe*. Edited by Chris Scarre, pp. 152–176. London: Routledge, 2002.
- Olivier, Laurent. "The Hochdorf Princely Grave and the Question of the Nature of Archaeological Funerary Assemblages." In *Time and Archaeology*. Edited by Tim Murray, pp. 109–138. London: Routledge, 1999.
- Parker Pearson, Michael, and Colin Richards. "Architecture and Order: Spatial Representation and Archaeology." In *Architecture and Order: Approaches to Social Space*. Edited by Michael Parker Pearson and Colin Richards, pp. 38–72. London: Routledge, 1994.
- Patton, Mark. *Neolithic Communities of the Channel Islands*. BAR B-240. Oxford: Tempus Reparatum, 1995.
- Renfrew, Colin. *The Archaeology of Cult: The Sanctuary at Phylakopi*. London: British School of Archaeology at Athens, 1985.
- Robb, John. "Island Identities: Ritual, Travel, and the Creation of Difference in Neolithic Malta." *European Journal of Archaeology* 4, no. 2 (2001): 175–202.
- Sofaer Derevenski, Joanna. "Age and Gender at the Site of Tiszapolgár-Basatanya, Hungary." *Antiquity* 71 (1997): 875–889.
- Sørensen, Marie Louise Stig. "Reading Dress: The Construction of Social Categories and Identities in Bronze Age Europe." *Journal of European Archaeology* 5, no. 1 (1997): 93–114.
- Srejić, Dragoslav. *Europe's First Monumental Sculpture: New Discoveries at Lepenski Vir*. London: Thames and Hudson, 1972.
- Tilley, Christopher. *Metaphor and Material Culture*. Oxford: Blackwell, 1999.

- Treherne, Paul. "The Warrior's Beauty: The Masculine Body and Self-Identity in Bronze-Age Europe." *Journal of European Archaeology* 3, no. 1 (1995): 105–144.
- Tringham, Ruth, Bogdan Brukner, and Barbara Voytek. "The Opolo Project: A Study of Socioeconomic Change in the Balkan Neolithic." *Journal of Field Archaeology* 19, no. 3 (1992): 351–386.
- Tuan, Yi-Fu. *Space and Place: The Perspective of Experience*. London: Edward Arnold, 1977.
- Vitelli, Karen D. "Pots, Potters, and the Shaping of Greek Neolithic Society." In *The Emergence of Pottery: Technology and Innovation in Ancient Societies*. Edited by William K. Barnett and John W. Hoopes, pp. 55–63. Washington, D.C.: Smithsonian Institution Press, 1995.
- Whitehouse, Ruth. *Underground Religion: Cult and Culture in Prehistoric Italy*. London: University of London Accordia Research Centre, 1992.

JOHN CHAPMAN

HJORTSPRING

In a bog just 50 meters across on the island of Als in southern Denmark, peat diggers discovered well-preserved remains of a wooden boat and spears in the 1880s. In 1921 excavations began that uncovered most of the boat and a large assemblage of weapons, all deposited in about 350–300 B.C. The practice of depositing weapons, and occasionally boats, in ponds and lakes of northern Europe became relatively common during the latter part of the Roman Iron Age, A.D. 200–500. Among the best-known sites of that period are Illerup, Nydam, Thorsberg, and Vimose. As vegetation grows into and across them over time, ponds and lakes often develop into bogs, where the waterlogged and acidic environment preserves organic materials exceptionally well. Hjortspring is the largest of the pre-Roman Iron Age weapon deposits.

The boat, only fragments of which survive, was made of lime (linden) wood, and was more than 19 meters long. Inside, the space for people and gear measured about 13 meters long by 2 meters wide by 0.75 meters high. The hull was made of five planks, all longer than 15 meters and about 70 centimeters wide. Ten ribs across the top of the boat had seats to accommodate two persons, suggesting that

twenty rowed the boat. Wooden oars for paddling and two wide oars for steering were found. The boat would have weighed only about 530 kilograms and thus could have been carried easily by its crew. Its flat bottom permitted good maneuverability in the shallow waters around the Danish islands and peninsulas, and the crew could have driven it directly up onto the sandy beaches characteristic of those regions of northern Europe. At both bow and stern were double prows that may have been intended to ram boats of similarly light construction. The boat was found lying on its western side, oriented north to south. Some of the oars and spears apparently had been pushed down into the mud to stick up above the level of the water.

The weapons found with the boat constitute one of the most important assemblages of military equipment from Iron Age northern Europe. They not only indicate the kinds of weapons that were in use and permit study of the technology of weapon manufacture but also allow for the reconstruction of fighting units and of military organization. Eleven single-edged swords of different shapes were found, ranging in length from 33 to 70 centimeters. Scabbards were made of ash wood. Two of the swords had been bent deliberately before they were deposited, a practice characteristic of Iron Age ritual. Spears (including lances) were the most abundant of the weapons present—138 iron spearheads were recovered and 31 of bone or antler. The largest of the iron spearheads was enormous, at 43.5 centimeters long, but most were between 10 and 20 centimeters in length. Some of the spearheads had been broken off their ash-wood shafts before they were deposited; others were intact.

Shirts of chain mail and wooden shields make up the defensive part of the armaments. The fragmentary remains indicate ten or more shirts of mail—the earliest known chain mail in Europe. About fifty nearly complete wooden shields are represented, along with fragments of perhaps thirty more, forming the largest number of shields from any one site in prehistoric Europe. All are roughly rectangular in shape, some wider and some narrower, with rounded corners. Striking among these numerous weapons is their diversity in size and shape, indicating considerable variation in the equipment carried by soldiers of the time.

Other objects recovered include skeletal remains of a horse, a lamb, a calf, and two dogs, these last perhaps animals trained for battle. Vessels made of pottery, wood, and bronze as well as a large wooden spoon or ladle may represent objects used for food preparation and consumption by the soldiers who rode in the boat and carried the weapons. An axe handle and a mallet may have been employed for making repairs to the weapons and to the boat. Other objects include pieces of rope, a spindle for spinning textile fibers, wooden boxes, and wooden disks of unknown purpose.

Archaeologists believe that weapon deposits such as those of Hjortspring and the more numerous finds of the Roman Iron Age were offerings to deities made by victors in military conflicts—perhaps of the defeated armies' weapons, though it has not been possible to establish that the weapons found belonged to an invading force, as some scholars propose. There is strong archaeological evidence from all periods in northern Europe for the practice of sacrificing valuable goods by depositing them in watery places—lakes, ponds, and bogs. Greek and Roman texts from centuries following the Hjortspring deposit allude to the practice by peoples of northern Europe of offering the weapons of defeated enemies to their gods.

In his recent analysis of the Hjortspring material, Klavs Randsborg draws important conclusions about the military unit represented. Because the remains indicate the presence of some eighty shields and about twice that number of spears, the weapons in the deposit seem to represent roughly eighty fighters, each armed with a shield and two spears. The boat could accommodate about twenty per-

sons; thus the weapon deposit seems to represent four boatloads of warriors—an army of some eighty fighters. In the character of the weaponry, Randsborg sees evidence for differentiation between commanders and infantry troops. The numbers of swords, spears with unusually large iron points, chain-mail shirts, and narrow shields can be interpreted as the fighting equipment of about eleven individuals who bore more specialized and finer weapons than the other men. The numbers of spears and wide shields suggest an infantry force of about seventy. This ratio—eleven specially armed troops to seventy general foot soldiers—is similar to ratios observed in the much larger weapon deposits of the Roman Iron Age, such as the four cited earlier. The Hjortspring bog find thus provides important evidence about a variety of interrelated topics from the pre-Roman Iron Age in northern Europe, including boatbuilding technology, weaponry, ritual practice, warfare, and social stratification implied by the differentiation in military equipment.

See also Pre-Roman Iron Age Scandinavia (vol. 2, part 6); Boats and Boatbuilding (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Kaul, Flemming. *Da våbnene tav: Hjortspringfundet og dets baggrund*. Copenhagen: National Museum, 1988. (With English summary.)
- Randsborg, Klavs. "Into the Iron Age: A Discourse on War and Society." In *Ancient Warfare: Archaeological Perspectives*. Edited by John Carman and Anthony Harding, pp. 191–202. Stroud, U.K.: Sutton, 1999.
- . *Hjortspring: Warfare and Sacrifice in Early Europe*. Århus, Denmark: Århus University Press, 1996.

PETER S. WELLS



ARCHAEOLOGY AND LANGUAGE

Sir William Jones, a British judge in India, first defined the Indo-European language problem in one famous sentence in 1786. Jones had arrived in Calcutta in 1783 to establish the rule of British law over both the excesses of the English merchants and the rights of their Indian subjects, who obeyed an already functioning and very ancient system of Hindu law. To understand Hindu law, Jones had to learn Sanskrit. His teachers, outstanding Hindu scholars, taught him to read the *Vedas*, the ancient religious texts that lay at the root of Hindu religion. The *Rig Veda*, the oldest Vedic text, was known to be more than two thousand years old, but exactly how much older, no one knew. Three years after his arrival in Calcutta, Jones presented a lecture to the Asiatic Society of Bengal, in which he uttered the following oft-quoted words:

The Sanskrit language, whatever be its antiquity, is of a wonderful structure; more perfect than the Greek, more copious than the Latin, and more exquisitely refined than either; yet bearing to both of them a stronger affinity, both in the roots of verbs and in the forms of grammar, than could possibly have been produced by accident; so strong indeed, that no philologer could examine them all three, without believing them to have sprung from some common source, which, perhaps, no longer exists.

Jones concluded that Sanskrit had sprung from the same source as Greek and Latin, the classical languages of European civilization, and added that Celtic, Persian (Iranian), and German probably belonged to the same family. For Europeans the news was startling. The civilization of faraway India turned out to be a long-lost cousin. What was the

parent language? Where had it been it spoken and by whom? What historical events made its daughter tongues the dominant languages from Scotland to India? Finally, just how big was the family?

These questions created a debate that has spanned two hundred years and has yet to be resolved. It has inspired episodes of genocide, dry academic discourses, and romantic fantasies. Scholars trying to solve this problem created the discipline of linguistics in the nineteenth century. Their principal interest was comparative grammar, sound systems, and syntax, which provided the basis for classifying languages, grouping them into types, and otherwise defining the relationships between the tongues of humanity, none of which had ever been attempted. They divided the Indo-European language family into twelve major branches, distinguished by innovations in phonology, or pronunciation, and in morphology, or word form, that appeared at the root of each branch and were maintained in all the languages of that branch. The branches included most of the languages of Europe (excluding Basque, Finnish, Estonian, and Magyar); the Persian language of Iran; Sanskrit and its many modern daughters (Hindi and Urdu); and numerous extinct languages, including Hittite and Tocharian. Modern English was assigned to the Germanic branch. The analytic methods invented by these philologists are used to describe, classify, and explain language variation all over the world.

In the 1780s the German Romantic philosopher Johann Gottfried Herder argued that language creates the categories and distinctions through

which humans give meaning to the world. Each language therefore generates and is enmeshed in a closed social community, or “folk,” that is meaningless to an outsider. After the 1859 publication of Charles Darwin’s *Origin of Species*, the Romantic conviction that language was a defining factor in identity was combined with new ideas about social evolution. Race, language, and culture were interpreted as a package that endowed some nations with a superior biological-spiritual-linguistic essence and consigned others to the back row. The policies that forced the Welsh (including Sir William Jones) to speak English and the Bretons to speak French were rooted partly in the search for a “pure” national heritage derived from a single heroic and superior race of Anglo-Saxons or Gauls.

The theoretical mother tongue that gave birth to all twelve branches is called Proto-Indo-European. The speakers of the mother tongue soon were molded to fit a national-racial stereotype. The name “Aryan” began to be applied to them because the authors of the oldest religious texts in Sanskrit and Iranian, the *Rig Veda* and *Avesta*, called themselves Aryans. The term “Aryan” should be confined only to this Indo-Iranian branch of the Indo-European family. The *Vedas* were a newly discovered source of mystical fascination in the nineteenth century, however, and in Victorian parlors the name “Aryan” soon spread beyond its proper linguistic confines.

The gap through which the name escaped from India was provided by the *Rig Veda* itself: the Vedic Aryans described themselves as invaders who had conquered their way into the Punjab. A feverish search for the “Aryan homeland” began. Researchers have placed it confidently in places ranging from India and Pakistan to Russia, Turkey, central Europe, and even the North Pole and Atlantis. Some homelands were proposed not for innocent reasons but to provide a historical precedent for nationalist or racist claims to privileges and territory. In the 1920s the German scholar Gustaf Kossinna attempted to demonstrate on archaeological grounds that the Aryan homeland lay in northern Europe, centered in Germany. Kossinna illustrated the prehistoric migrations of the Indo-Germanic Aryans with neat black arrows that swept east, west, and south from his presumed Germanic core. Nazi armies followed his pen twenty years later.

The fundamental errors that led an obscure linguistic mystery to erupt into racial genocide were the equation of race with language and the assignment of evolutionary superiority to certain language and race groups. Indo-European, the linguistic phenomenon, became the “Indo-Europeans,” a racial-spiritual fantasy. Prominent linguists have always pleaded against these ideas. The Aryans themselves, according to their own texts, used Aryan as a religious-linguistic category. The *Rig Veda* was a ritual canon, not a racial manifesto. Making the proper sacrifices to the right gods, which required performing the traditional prayers in the traditional language, made a person an Aryan.

Any attempt to solve the Indo-European problem has to begin with the realization that the term Proto-Indo-European refers to a language community. Race, poorly and inconsistently defined, cannot be linked in any predictable way with language. Because definitions are cultural, scientists cannot provide a true boundary between races. Moreover, archaeologists have their own, quite different definitions of race, based on traits of the skull and teeth that often are invisible in a living person. However race is defined, languages are not normally sorted by race—all racial groups speak a variety of languages. Culture, however, often is associated with language—the language a person speaks can lead others to make assumptions about one’s character, religion, dietary preferences, and so on. These are stereotypes, of course, and people often confound them. How, then, do we connect language with culture in a reliable and predictable way?

LANGUAGE AND MATERIAL CULTURE

Many archaeologists think that it is impossible to identify a prehistoric language group, because language is not reflected in any consistent way in material culture. People who speak different languages might make houses or pots in the same way, and people who speak the same language often make pots or houses in different ways. Likewise, a language can spread without a corresponding change in material culture, and vice versa. Language and culture are correlated predictably under some circumstances, however. We have erred in trying to find a single class of material culture that correlates reliably with language; we should focus instead on *frontiers*.

Where we see a robust frontier represented in material culture—not just different pots but also different houses, graves, cemeteries, town patterns, ritual icons, diets, and dress designs—that *persist*s in the same location for centuries or millennia, it tends to be a linguistic frontier as well. Persistent ethnolinguistic frontiers seem to occur under relatively few conditions, principally at ecological boundaries and at the end point of certain kinds of migrations. There was, for instance, a persistent ethnolinguistic frontier between English-speaking immigrants and the indigenous Celtic Welsh in Wales. This divide separated populations that spoke distinct languages (Welsh/English), built particular kinds of churches (Celtic/Norman English), managed agriculture in varying ways with different tools, used disparate systems of land measurement, employed different standards of justice, and maintained a wide variety of distinctions in dress, food, and custom. In cases such as this, where a clear material culture frontier persists in the same place for hundreds of years, language tends to be correlated with the boundary. This insight permits us to identify at least a few probable linguistic frontiers on a map of purely archaeological cultures, a critical step in finding the Proto-Indo-European homeland.

HOW RECONSTRUCTION WORKS

Historical linguistics gave us not just static classifications but also the astounding ability to reconstruct at least parts of early languages for which no written evidence survives. The methods that make this possible rely on regularities in the way sounds change inside the human mouth. For example, the sound *k*, as in “kiss” (or any consonant made with the back of the tongue), followed by the sound *e*, as in “set” (or any other vowel made with the tip of the tongue), is likely to shift forward on the palate toward the front vowel—to *ts-* and then to *s*.

This happened when the Latin word *centum* (meaning “hundred” and pronounced *kentum*) became the old French *cent* (pronounced *tsobnt*) and then the modern French *cent* (pronounced *sobnt*). A shift in the other direction, backward on the palate from *ce-* to *tse-* to *ke-*, is quite unlikely. Given the terms *centum* and *cent*, and no other historical information about them, we could say that the sound of the Latin word makes it the older form, that the modern French form could have developed from it

according to known rules of sound change, and that an intermediate pronunciation *tsobnt* probably existed before the modern form appeared. Both words are from the same Indo-European branch, Italic, which produced Latin and from Latin all the Romance languages, including French. Indo-European words for “hundred” from different branches of the language family can be compared in this way to see whether all can be derived from a single hypothetical ancestral word. The proof that Latin *centum* in the Italic branch and Lithuanian *šimtas* in the Baltic branch are related in this way, that they are cognates, is the construction of the ancestral root.

Root forms converge on one unique “root” sequence of sounds that could have evolved into all of them by known rules. The comparative method cannot force a regular reconstruction on an irregular set of sounds; for example, if terms in several branches have borrowed sounds from local languages, those borrowings might not fit the expected rules of regular sound change. For this reason, much of the Proto-Indo-European vocabulary, perhaps most of it, never will be reconstructed. Regular groups of cognates permit archaeologists to reconstruct a Proto-Indo-European root for the word “eye” but not for “eyebrow,” for “snow” but not for “rain,” and for “foot,” but not for “hand.” Proto-Indo-European certainly had such words, but we cannot safely reconstruct how they sounded.

Still, linguists have reconstructed the sounds of thousands of other words. A reconstruction based on cognates that survive in eight different Indo-European branches, like **k^hmtom-*, the Proto-Indo-European root for “hundred,” is much more reliable and probably more true than one based on cognates in just two branches. The accuracy of reconstruction has been confirmed by archaeology. Three separate archaeological discoveries of ancient inscriptions have provided opportunities to test whether the sounds that had been suggested by linguists for ancient phases of three Indo-European languages—Hittite, Mycenaean Greek, and archaic German—actually appeared in the inscriptions. In all three cases the linguists were proved correct.

For example, linguists working on the development of Greek had proposed **k^w* (pronounced like the *kw-* in “queen”) as the ancestral sound that developed into Greek *t* before a front vowel or *p* be-

fore a back vowel. The reconstruction remained hypothetical until the discovery and decipherment of the Mycenaean Linear B tablets, which showed that the earliest form of Greek, Mycenaean, had the predicted *kʷ*, where later Greek had *t* or *p* before front and back vowels. Such discoveries have confirmed that many reconstructed terms can be regarded as more than just abstractions.

The extent to which reconstructed terms can be thought of as real is the subject of debate. We should not imagine that reconstructed Proto-Indo-European was ever spoken anywhere. After all, it is fragmentary (and most of the language this reconstruction represents never will be known). The reconstructed language, which averages centuries of change, is homogenized, stripped of many of the peculiar sounds of its individual dialects. The same can be said of the English language as presented in *Merriam-Webster's Dictionary*. This dictionary contains the word “ombre” (a card game popular in the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries) as well as “hard disk” (post-1978). Thus, its vocabulary brings together about four hundred years of English. No person has ever spoken this version of English. Nevertheless, many of us find the dictionary useful as a guide to spoken English. Reconstructed Proto-Indo-European is similar—it might not be a true language, but it certainly *refers* to one.

If a reconstruction is based on a large and diverse set of cognates from both Europe and Asia and includes a cognate from an ancient language, the only conclusion we can draw is that such a term existed in the parent language. Proto-Indo-European is a partial grammar and a partial set of pronunciation rules attached to the abundant fragments of a very ancient dictionary. To an archaeologist, that is more valuable than a roomful of potsherds. The reconstructed vocabulary of Proto-Indo-European is a guide to the thoughts, concerns, and material culture of actual people.

THE PRIZE: THE RECONSTRUCTED VOCABULARY

The reconstructed vocabulary includes word clusters that suggest that the speakers of Proto-Indo-European were farmers and stockbreeders: we can reconstruct words for “bull,” “cow,” “steer,” “ram,” “ewe,” “lamb,” “pig,” and “piglet.” There is a term for “butter” and perhaps one for “cheese.”

When these people led their cattle and sheep out to the “field,” they walked with a faithful “dog.” They knew how to “shear wool,” which they used to “weave” textiles. They tilled the earth with a scratch plow, or “ard,” which was pulled by “oxen” wearing a “yoke.” They turned their threshed grain into flour by “grinding” it with a hand “pestle,” and cooked their food in clay “pots.” They had “bees” and “honey.”

They divided their possessions into two categories: items that could be moved and those that could not. In fact, the root for “movable wealth” (**peku-*, the ancestor of such English words as “pecuniary”) became the term for “herds” in general. Terms for male family members suggest that they inherited their rights and duties through the father’s bloodline (patrilineal descent). The absence of equivalent terms for the wife’s family indicates that wives lived with the husband’s family after marriage (patrilocal residence). “Chiefs” probably supervised political relations within their kin group, and there were formally instituted “warrior bands.” A male sky deity (“sky father”), a thunder god, and a pair of sky twins were worshipped. Two senses of the sacred seem to have been recognized: “that which is imbued with holiness” and “that which is forbidden.” Many of these practices and beliefs are simply unrecoverable through archaeology. The proto-vocabulary offers the hope of retrieving some of these details of ritual and custom. Reconstructed Proto-Indo-European is a long, fragmentary word list left by people who lived in a time and place unilluminated by any other kind of textual evidence. The list becomes useful, however, only if we can determine from where it came. To do that, we must locate the Proto-Indo-European homeland. First, however, we must know *when* Proto-Indo-European was spoken.

DATING PROTO-INDO-EUROPEAN: THE *TERMINUS POST QUEM*

A dictionary is dated easily by its most recent words. The *terminus post quem*, the date *after which* reconstructed Proto-Indo-European must be placed, can be established in much the same way, by the vocabulary. Words for things that were invented at a known date, such “wagons” and “wheels,” can have existed in a language spoken only after that date. Proto-Indo-European began to split into different branches after the date indicated by these reconstructed words.

The most important words from this perspective are the reconstructed words for the basic tools (ard and pot) and products of agriculture (field, grain, cow, bull, calf, ram, ewe, lamb, milk, and cheese), for “wagons” and their parts, and for “wool.” The agricultural vocabulary establishes that the speakers of Proto-Indo-European could not have been hunters and gatherers.

The term for “wool” provides a more precise date. The reconstruction is based on cognates in almost all branches from Welsh to Indic, so it certainly was in the vocabulary before the breakup into branches began. Wool sheep are mutants, bred to produce fleeces made entirely of the fine, curly fibers that wild sheep originally had just as an undercoat beneath their long, hairy coats. The best estimate is that wool sheep were bred in Mesopotamia about 4000 B.C. and then spread westward into Europe, eastward into Iran and India, and northward into the Caucasus Mountains and the Russian/Ukrainian steppes. From the wool perspective, Proto-Indo-European was spoken after 4000 B.C.

The vocabulary for wagons provides stronger guidance. At least five terms can be reconstructed with great confidence: two nouns for “wheel,” another for “axle,” a noun for “harness pole” (a “thill”), and a verb meaning to “go or convey in a vehicle.” Cognates for these terms occur in all the major branches of Indo-European. Furthermore, all words but “thill” are based on recognizable Proto-Indo-European roots. For example, one reconstructed “wheel” root, **k^wék^wlos* looks very much as if it was created from another root, **k^wel-*, a verb that means “to turn.” Thus, **k^wék^wlos* is not just a random string of phonemes; it is “the thing that turns.” This kind of cross-referencing within a reconstructed vocabulary increases confidence in both reconstructions. Finally, most of the reconstructed “wagon” terms turn out to have a kind of vowel structure called an “o-stem” that generally is thought to identify a late stage in the development of Proto-Indo-European, so the vocabulary is internally consistent in its phonology. The speakers of Proto-Indo-European had wagons and talked about them using words of their own invention.

Based on archaeological evidence it is fairly certain that the wheel-and-axle principle was invented after 4000 B.C., probably after 3500 B.C. A track preserved under a barrow grave at Flintbek in north-

ern Germany might have been made by wheels and might be as old as 3600 B.C. All other evidence for wheeled vehicles—written signs, artistic images, three-dimensional clay models, and wheels themselves—first appears in the archaeological record between 3500 and 3000 B.C. Thus, late Proto-Indo-European must have been spoken after 4000 and possibly after 3500 B.C. Before then, no language had words for “wagons” or “axles.”

DATING PROTO-INDO-EUROPEAN: THE *TERMINUS ANTE QUEM*

Proto-Indo-European has been created on the basis of systematic comparisons of all of the known Indo-European daughter languages. The terminal date for the reconstructed language—the date after which our reconstructed form becomes an anachronism—should be related in some way to the separation of its oldest independent branches. If Proto-Indo-European is defined as the language that was ancestral to *all* of the Indo-European daughters, then it is the *oldest* reconstructable form. The later daughters did not evolve directly from Proto-Indo-European but from some intermediate, evolved set of late Indo-European languages that preserved aspects of the mother tongue and passed them along.

Internal evidence—the appearance within a branch of phonological archaisms and innovations not shared with other branches—helps identify the oldest branches. All of the branches cannot be placed with confidence in a sequence, but most linguists agree that Anatolian was the first branch to separate. It appears in the oldest known inscriptions in any Indo-European language, dated 1920–1820 B.C., at Karum Kanesh II in Turkey. Anatolian is so archaic and idiosyncratic that it must represent a very early stage in Proto-Indo-European. Italic and Celtic also seem archaic and should be included within the next set of branches to form, although their earliest inscriptions are much later, about 600–500 B.C. Reconstructed Proto-Indo-European becomes increasingly anachronistic after the set of separations that includes Italic and Celtic. Greek, documented in Linear B by 1450 B.C., probably split off from a more evolved set of Indo-European dialects and languages centuries after the dialects that led to Italic and Celtic. The sound changes that identify Indo-Iranian emerged after the separation of the Greek branch. Old Indic Sanskrit had emerged from

Indo-Iranian by 1450 B.C., the date of the oldest Sanskrit inscriptions in the Mitanni texts. Common Indo-Iranian must be older than 1450 B.C., at least as old as 1700 B.C.

The older separations—Greek, Italic and Celtic, and Anatolian—form a sequence that must predate 1700 B.C. Although their exact place in the sequence is debated, Germanic and Tocharian certainly also split away before Indo-Iranian. The latest possible date for Proto-Indo-European can be set at about 2700 B.C., leaving just a millennium—almost certainly not enough time—for the evolution of Anatolian, Italic, Celtic, Mycenaean Greek, Germanic, Tocharian, and Indo-Iranian. Long before 1700 B.C., the language that has been reconstructed as Proto-Indo-European had evolved into something else or, more accurately, into a variety of late dialects that continued to diverge in various ways in different places. By at least 2000 B.C., and probably long before, what we know as Proto-Indo-European was a dead language.

LOCATING THE HOMELAND

It has been proposed that Proto-Indo-European was spoken in Anatolia in about 7000–6500 B.C. and then spread through Europe and eastward across the Eurasian steppes with agriculture and animal herding. This idea is appealing, but it cannot be correct. It requires a breakup into daughter branches in about 6500 B.C., when the first pioneer Anatolian farmers migrated to Greece, with subsequent branch formations and separations as the farming economy was carried northward into temperate Europe between 6000 and 3000 B.C. By 4000–3500 B.C. the Indo-European language family should have been quite diverse, according to this proposal.

For this chronology to be correct, we would have to assume that the wool and wagon vocabularies were created long after the breakup of the Indo-European branches and then were borrowed into each daughter branch. Linguists generally have rejected this accommodation, however, because the vocabulary does not exhibit phonological traits indicating that it was created within a later Indo-European language. No other technical vocabulary is known to have been borrowed in a standardized form into the Indo-European daughter languages after they were scattered from Scotland to India—

for example, the vocabulary for iron technology is quite diverse in the daughter languages. The linguistic evidence is against the Anatolia solution.

If not Anatolia, then where? Linguists have long tried to find animal or plant names in the reconstructed vocabulary that refer to species that lived in just one part of the world. The reconstructed term for “salmon,” **lók**, was once famous as a proof that the Aryan homeland lay in northern Europe. Animal and tree names seem to narrow and broaden in meaning easily, however. They are even reused and recycled when people move to a new environment. The most specific meaning that linguists would now feel comfortable ascribing to the reconstructed term **lók** is “trout-like fish.” Most linguists agree that the fauna and flora designated by the reconstructed vocabulary are temperate-zone types (bear, otter, beaver, lynx, and horse), not Mediterranean (cypress, olive, and laurel) or tropical (monkey, elephant, palm, and papyrus).

“Bee” and “honey,” however, are very strong reconstructions. The term for “honey,” **medhu-*, also was used for an intoxicating drink that played a prominent role in Proto-Indo-European rituals. Honeybees are not found in northern Eurasia east of the Ural Mountains, across Siberia, because the hardwood trees (lime and oak, particularly) that honeybees prefer as nesting sites become rare east of the Urals. That removes all of Siberia and much of northeastern Eurasia from contention, including the Central Asian steppes of Kazakhstan.

The horse, **ek*wo-*, is solidly reconstructed and seems also to have been a potent symbol of divine power for the speakers of Proto-Indo-European. Although horses lived in small, isolated pockets throughout prehistoric Europe, they were rare or absent in the Near East, Iran, and the Indian subcontinent and were numerous and economically important in the daily meat diet only in the Eurasian steppes. The term for “horse” removes the Near East, Iran, and the Indian subcontinent from serious contention, and it encourages us to look closely at the Eurasian steppes.

Finally, we can use the information that the speakers of Proto-Indo-European were familiar with agriculture and herding. In the northern forest zone of Russia and the Baltic, economies based on fishing, hunting, and gathering were retained until

after 2500–2000 B.C. The switch to herding and farming happened after 2000 B.C. in the Siberian forest zone east of the Urals. That, too, eliminates Siberia and Kazakhstan and casts doubt on the Russian-Baltic northern forest zone. We are left with temperate Europe and the western steppes and perhaps the temperate parts of the Caucasus Mountains and Anatolia.

WHO WERE THE NEIGHBORS?

The neighbors of the speakers of Proto-Indo-European can be identified through words and forms borrowed between Proto-Indo-European and other language families. Proto-Indo-European shows strong links with Proto-Uralic, a key ancient language of the northern Russian forests, and weaker links with a language ancestral to Proto-Kartvelian, spoken in the Caucasus Mountains. Proto-Indo-European and Proto-Uralic shared two kinds of linkages. One, revealed in shared pronouns, noun endings, and basic vocabulary could be ancestral: the two proto-languages seem to have shared an ancient common ancestor, perhaps spoken by Ice Age hunters east of the Carpathians. The relationship is so remote, however, that it can barely be detected.

The other link between the two languages seems cultural: some Proto-Indo-European words (to wash, water, to give, merchandise, to fear) were borrowed by the speakers of Proto-Uralic, perhaps through a shared trade jargon. The fact that the reconstructed roots are similar in phonological form and meaning indicates that they were loans rather than inheritances.

These two kinds of linguistic relationship—a possible common ancestral origin and interlanguage borrowings—suggest that the Proto-Indo-European homeland was situated near the homeland of Proto-Uralic. Uralic is a broad language family, like Indo-European. Its daughter languages are spoken across the northern forests of Eurasia from Finland to the Siberian Pacific. The Proto-Uralic homeland is thought to have been in the southern part of the forest zone near the Ural Mountains. Many researchers believe that the best case can be made for a homeland west of the Urals, and some argue for the east side. Almost all agree that Proto-Uralic was spoken in the forests between the Oka River on the west and the Irtysh River on

the east, probably before the adoption of a herding economy (2500–2000 B.C.). This leaves a possible contact zone south or southwest of the Ural Mountains.

Coincidentally, this is the direction in which we find the second neighbor. Proto-Indo-European interacted with the languages of the Caucasus Mountains, primarily those that are classed as southern Caucasian or Kartvelian, the family that produced modern Georgian. Many terms have been proposed as loanwords to Proto-Indo-European from Proto-Kartvelian (and even Semitic). The few such loanwords that are widely accepted (such as those for “silver” and “bull”) might be words that were carried along trade and migration routes far from the Semites’ Near Eastern homeland. The phonology of the loans suggests that none of these language contacts was direct—all of the loanwords passed through unknown intermediaries between the known three. One intermediary is required by chronology, since Proto-Kartvelian generally is thought to have existed *after* Proto-Indo-European and Proto-Semitic.

Who, then, were the neighbors? Proto-Indo-European exhibits strong links with Proto-Uralic and weaker links with a language ancestral to Proto-Kartvelian. The speakers of Proto-Indo-European lived between the Caucasus and Ural Mountains but had deeper linguistic relationships with the people who lived around the Urals. The region between the Caucasus and the Urals is the Russian and Ukrainian steppe—a place long identified as a strong candidate for the Indo-European homeland. Does contemporary archaeology support this solution?

THE ARCHAEOLOGY OF THE PROTO-INDO-EUROPEAN HOMELAND

In the North Pontic region, north of the Black Sea, the first farmers were Criş culture pioneers who migrated from southeastern Europe and the Lower Danube Valley. Their arrival created a cultural frontier northwest of the Black Sea in modern Ukraine, between the Dnieper and Dniester Rivers, that persisted for 2,500 years, from about 5800 to 3500 B.C. Two distinct cultural systems existed side by side, east and west of the Dnieper-Dniester frontier. Substantial differences in material culture distin-

guished the immigrants and their cultural descendants (Cris, Linear Pottery, and Tripolye) from the indigenous societies and their cultural descendants (Dnieper-Donets, Mariupol, Sredny Stog, and Yamnaya). The two traditions differed in house forms; settlement types; economy; ceramic style, decoration, and technology; stone tool types; mortuary rituals; the presence or absence of female figurines; and metallurgical techniques—in other words, they maintained distinctions in almost every aspect of material culture for millennia.

Another persistent cultural frontier coincided with an important ecological frontier. It separated the foragers of the northern forest zone west of the Ural Mountains, the probable Proto-Uralic homeland, from the cattle herders and sheepherders to the south, in the Pontic-Caspian steppes. This economic-ecological frontier, too, persisted for 2,500 years, from about 5000 to about 2500 B.C. A bundle of cultural distinctions defined the forest/steppe frontier, including variations in house forms, pottery types, stone tools, and burial practices.

Finally, on the eastern edge of the Pontic-Caspian steppes there was yet a third clear and persistent cultural frontier, a north-south line extending from the southern slopes of the Ural Mountains to the deserts north of the Caspian Sea. Long after herding was adopted in the Pontic-Caspian steppes (about 5000 B.C.), the societies of the Kazakh steppes to the east remained foragers—such groups as the Atbasar, Surtanda, and Tersek-Botai. They made quite different kinds of pots and stone tools, did not use cemeteries, and had distinctive house forms. Like the first two frontiers, this one persisted for at least 2,500 years, until about 2500–2000 B.C. In all three cases it is clear from published archaeological reports that the cultures on either side of the frontiers knew and interacted with each other, but rather than assimilating, they remained distinct for millennia.

The historic cases cited earlier suggest that these material-culture frontiers almost certainly were linguistic frontiers as well. They surrounded and enclosed precisely the region identified in other ways as the probable Proto-Indo-European homeland. While we should not make the mistake of assuming that *all* of the people of the Pontic-Caspian steppes were Indo-European-speakers, we can safely suppose that Proto-Indo-European was spoken

somewhere in the Pontic-Caspian region between 4000 and 2000 B.C.

Archaeology thus reveals a set of cultures in this region at this time that fits all of the requirements of the reconstructed vocabulary: they sacrificed horses, cattle, and sheep; cultivated grain at least occasionally; drove wagons; and expressed institutionalized status distinctions in their funeral rituals. They occupied a part of the world, the steppes, where the sky is by far the most striking part of the landscape, a fitting environment for people who believed that their most important deities lived in the sky. Archaeological evidence for migrations from this region into neighboring regions is well established. The sequence and direction of these movements match those suggested by linguistics. Two movements toward the west could represent the detachment of the pre-Anatolian (Cernavoda I into the eastern Balkans) and then the pre-Italic/pre-Celtic dialects (Yamnaya into eastern Hungary), followed by a third movement toward the east (Sintashta-Petrovka) that could represent the detachment of Indo-Iranian. The archaeology of the region provides a new window onto the lives of the people who spoke Proto-Indo-European and the process by which it became established and began to spread.

See also **Celts** (vol. 2, part 6); **Germans** (vol. 2, part 6); **Etruscan Italy** (vol. 2, part 6); **History and Archaeology** (vol. 2, part 7); **Dark Age/Early Medieval Scotland** (vol. 2, part 7); **Early Medieval Wales** (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Benveniste, Émile. *Indo-European Language and Society*. Translated by Elizabeth Palmer. Coral Gables, Fla.: University of Miami, 1973.
- Carpelan, Christian, Asko Parpola, and Petteri Koskikallio, eds. *Early Contacts between Uralic and Indo-European: Linguistic and Archaeological Considerations*. *Memoires de la Société Finno-Ugrienne*, no. 242. Helsinki, Finland: Suomalais-Ugrilainen Seura, 2001.
- D'iakonov, I. M. "On the Original Home of the Speakers of Indo-European." *Journal of Indo-European Studies* 13, no. 1/2 (1985): 92–174.
- Diebold, A. Richard, Jr. *The Evolution of Indo-European Nomenclature for Salmonid Fish: The Case of "Huchen"* (*Hucho spp.*). Washington, D.C.: Institute for the Study of Man, 1985.

Friedrich, Paul. *Proto-Indo-European Trees: The Arboreal System of a Prehistoric People*. Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1970.

Nichols, Johanna. "The Epicentre of the Indo-European Linguistic Spread." In *Archaeology and Language. I*.

Theoretical and Methodological Orientations. Edited by Roger Blench and Matthew Spriggs, pp. 122–148. London: Routledge, 1997.

DAVID W. ANTHONY



WARFARE AND CONQUEST

FOLLOWED BY FEATURE ESSAY ON:

Maiden Castle 118

Warfare has been defined in both broad and narrow terms. In the broad view, warfare is armed conflict between any social or political units. In this view, societies as diverse as bands of Mesolithic hunter-gatherers, Neolithic farming tribes, Celtic high chiefdoms, petty states, and the Roman Empire can conduct war. The narrow definition confines war to state-level societies—those with the hierarchical organization to centrally direct armies that are led by, if not consisting wholly of, full-time military specialists. This constricted view is historically misleading and anthropologically absurd. Roman legionnaires routed and killed by warriors of a Celtic hill tribe were just as vanquished as those beaten by a Persian army. Indeed, it took the Romans more time and manpower to conquer the small Celtiberian tribes of northern Spain (four to six legions and two hundred years of continuous fighting) than it took them to subdue Macedonia and Greece (two to four legions and, in total, about twenty years of intermittent combat). Under the narrow definition, the very terms “prehistoric warfare” and “tribal warfare” are oxymorons, which means that recent tribes such as the Apache, Maori, and Taureg never made war. For many reasons, then, the broad definition is preferable and is used here.

Archaeological evidence for warfare is recovered in four categories: human remains; fortifications;

weapons and armor; and artistic representations. Only when classical authors begin to describe warfare of their societies with the so-called barbarians of more northerly Europe were there written accounts to supplement the physical evidence revealed by archaeology.

HUMAN REMAINS

Human remains often bear witness to the traumas caused by weapons. These include sword cuts, the indentations made by stone axes and adzes, and depressed fractures made by maces or other blunt-force weapons. The most common type of weapon traumas found on victims of early warfare are embedded stone or bone projectile points. Any of these types of traumas can be considered the cause of death, especially when there are no signs that the wound healed.

Archaeological evidence for warfare can also be seen in the treatment of the body after death. Bodies of war victims were often left where they fell or dumped into mass graves. Bodies that were not buried soon after death often suffered mutilation by animal scavengers. War victims were also mutilated in the course of hostilities. One common type of perimortem (i.e., about the time of death) mutilation is known as “overkill,” which involves striking the victim with numerous blows or multiple projectiles—

any one of which would have been fatal. Another kind of mutilation involves the taking of war trophies—heads, hands, or other body parts—leading to burials with either too few or too many body parts for the individual interred. There is also sometimes evidence for cannibalization of the victims. These types of mutilation suggest that the victors wanted to either humiliate their victims or to acquire the victim's spiritual power.

When these stigmata co-occur, warfare was the certain cause. For example, more than 6,000 years ago, at the Early Neolithic site of Herxheim, Germany, more than three hundred people died violent deaths. Crania from these individuals were discovered at regular intervals in the two defensive ditches enclosing the site, indicating that victims were decapitated and their skulls thrown in the ditch or placed atop posts that later collapsed into the ditch. The crania bore traumas from axes and some type of blunt weapon. The Herxheim skulls thus evidence all of the signs commonly found on war victims—weapon traumas, mutilation, trophy taking, and atypical disposal of the dead.

Palaeolithic and Mesolithic. The bones of early European hominids show many healed and unhealed traumas. For example, Neanderthals seem to have been particularly accident-prone. But before the widespread use of stone and bone projectile tips by modern humans in the Upper Palaeolithic (c. 40,000–35,000 years ago), it is very difficult to determine whether these traumas were caused by human violence or other more prosaic causes. Evidence of homicide appears as soon as modern humans appear in Europe, such as the Grimaldi, Italy, child with a bone projectile point embedded in its spine (c. 32,000 years ago) and the mass grave of twenty individuals with head traumas at Predmost.

The appearance of true cemeteries consisting of many primary burials during the Mesolithic (c. 9600–4300 B.C.) increases the archaeological visibility of homicide and warfare. In France, Italy, Germany, Scandinavia, and the Ukraine, between 3 and 16 percent of the bodies excavated were of individuals with embedded projectile points. (By comparison, 3.3 percent of the French met violent deaths during World War I.) Evidence for trophy taking comes from the Late Mesolithic site at Ofnet Cave (7500 B.C.), in Germany, where two caches contain-

ing a total of at least thirty-three skulls were found, arranged “like eggs in a basket.” Most of these crania had multiple holes knocked in them by stone adzes and many still-articulated neck bones showed marks from throat cutting. These men's, women's, and children's skulls were probably “trophies” from a single massacre. Smaller caches of skulls and associated neck vertebrae bearing similar traumas have been found at three other Late Mesolithic sites in Germany and northern France (Hohlenstein-Stadel, Kaufertsberg, and Mannlefelden). These and other finds indicate that the economic and social landscape of Mesolithic Europe was highly disputed and violent. This evidence is clearly contrary to oft-repeated claim that foragers were peaceful and warfare only began with farming.

Neolithic. In the Neolithic period there is plentiful palaeopathological evidence for warfare. The skeletons of at least 6 percent and possibly more than 19 percent of Early Neolithic individuals of the *Linearbandkeramik* (LBK or Linear Pottery culture) exhibit traumas indicating a violent death. At Talheim, Germany, thirty-four bodies bearing weapons traumas were dumped haphazardly into a large pit. Like the skulls from Ofnet Cave, many of these were perforated, often several times (an example of overkill), with D-shaped holes of a type that could only have been made by a groundstone “shoe-last” adze of LBK design. The demography of the victims implies that an entire small village was killed, although there seem to be fewer young women among the victims than expected, possibly because they were taken as captives.

At Schletz-Asparn, Austria, an enclosed Early Neolithic (LBK) village was destroyed, along with most of its population. Archaeologists have recovered the fragmented skeletons of some one hundred people. Many skulls had fatal axe or club wounds, and there was evidence of animal gnawing, indicating that the bodies were simply left where they fell and that there was no one left to bury them. Only later were the partially disarticulated remains cast into the enclosing ditch and covered with earth. The clear underrepresentation of young women in the skeletal remains suggests that women were carried away, whereas the others were simply killed. Talheim, Schletz-Asparn, and the aforementioned Herxheim, alone, evidence the violent deaths of more than 500 LBK individuals, which—compared

to the 1,500 or so excavated LBK burials showing no evidence of violent death—indicate that this period was particularly bellicose.

There are also indications of clashes between Early Neolithic farmers and the Late Mesolithic hunter-gatherers living beyond their zones of settlement. Refuse pits at the LBK site of Vaihingen, Germany, contained a number of skeletons, often bearing violent traumas, whose physical features were more robust (that is, Mesolithic) than those of the villagers. In southern France, a few skulls bearing the hallmarks of decapitation were discovered on an Early Neolithic site of the Cardial culture. These skulls were more similar to the inland Mesolithic populations of that region than they were to the Cardial farmers. This suggests that, like the Mesolithics before them, and the contemporary LBK farmers of Herxheim, Cardial warriors sometimes collected the skulls of their enemies as trophies.

Further evidence of warfare comes from later Neolithic sites in Britain. At least two of them were attacked by archers and burned. The body of one man was discovered in the enclosure ditch at Hambledon Hill. He had fallen after being shot in the back with an arrow, crushing an infant he was carrying beneath his body. The burned palisade subsequently collapsed on them both.

During the Middle and Late Neolithic, the archaeological visibility of weapon traumas decreases, but that does not mean that armed violence was less prevalent. Almost all the famous Neolithic megalithic and tumulus-mound tombs in western Europe were plundered of their contents, including human remains, before archaeologists could investigate or record them. In other parts of Europe, the common later Neolithic practices of cremation and secondary burial (burial after the bones had been disarticulated, defleshed and partially destroyed by exposure to weather and animal scavengers) prevent or severely hinder analyses of cause of death. The exceptions indicate that warfare was often virulent during these periods, and this is supported by the prevalence of fortifications and specialized war weapons (see below).

The famous Tirolean “Iceman” mummy, an individual of the Late Neolithic (c. 4000 B.C.), was a casualty of war. Embedded in his back, just below the shoulder joint, was a stone projectile point. This

lethal projectile was of a large, shouldered design that was very different from the small, triangular arrowheads the man carried. The design of the embedded projectile would have been difficult to remove after penetration, possibly a specialized war point. Evidence of similar deaths have been found at other sites dating to the Late Neolithic. At a mass grave at Roaix, France (c. 2500 B.C.), more than one hundred persons of all ages and both sexes, often with arrow points embedded in their bones, were simultaneously buried.

Bronze Age. Although cremation and secondary burial remained common in many areas, examples of traumatic injuries and mutilation are known from several Bronze Age sites. At the site of Hernádkak, Hungary, a male skeleton was found with a bronze spearhead embedded in his pelvis. A massacre is evidenced at the site of Velim, Czech Republic (c. 2000–1700 B.C.), where the fragmentary skeletal remains of dozens of individuals who died from traumatic injuries were found. All sexes and ages were represented, and some of their bodies appear to have been cannibalized. A number of Bronze Age burials in Hungary are missing hands and feet, possibly taken as war trophies. Some prehistorians believe that trepanation holes found on some Bronze Age skulls were attempts to treat battlefield head injuries.

In the Late Bronze Age (1700–1400 B.C.) cremation becomes the almost universal burial custom in Europe. Thus, if human physical remains provided the sole line of evidence, the Late Bronze Age would seem quite peaceful compared with earlier periods. Nonetheless, female skeletons bearing weapons traumas were found at Wicnica, Poland, and there is evidence for cannibalism from the cemetery at Velatice in the Czech Republic, where the fragmentary remains of 205 individuals were found in association with one (cremation) urn burial. Despite the dearth of remains, other archaeological evidence (see below) has convinced archaeologists that this was a period of frequent warfare and destruction, especially in eastern and central Europe.

Iron Age. Well-preserved Iron Age skeletons are rare in many areas of Europe. Most of the tumulus burials of the Early Iron Age were looted before they could be investigated. Less vulnerable “flat burials” from later in the Iron Age have been exca-

vated and analyzed, but most seem to involve only exceptional elites. In any case, burial customs were quite varied, with cremation and exposure common in many periods and regions. At a number of burial sites in east Yorkshire, of 107 male skeletons analyzed, three had died of sword cuts. One of those buried at the great hillfort of Maiden Castle in England had been killed by a Roman ballista bolt during the Roman conquest.

In the middle of the Iron Age, the warriors of prehistoric Europe came into open conflict with their “civilized” neighbors to the south. As a result, the Celts were among the first Europeans north of the Alps mentioned by classical authors (after 550 B.C.). These accounts recorded their prowess in war, the weapons they employed, and the tactics they preferred. Especially horrifying to Romans was their taking and displaying of heads from enemy dead. Diodorus Siculus states that warriors would “embalm in cedar oil the heads of the most distinguished enemies and preserve them carefully in a chest to display them with pride” (in Ellis 1990). In addition, these were often nailed above the door of the victorious warrior’s hut. At Entremont, France, a third century B.C. fortification, a stone shrine with niches for displaying trophy skulls was found along with fifteen such skulls with nail holes for attachment. Similar trophy skulls and one other shrine with skull niches (from Roquepertuse) have been found at other Iron Age sites in the region.

FORTIFICATIONS

Fortifications are one of the most readily identifiable archaeological indicators of the possible presence of warfare during any period. Fortifications—often euphemistically called “enclosures”—are large-scale constructions that allow a relatively small number of defenders to repel forces that greatly outnumber them. The most common features of early fortifications include curtains (wooden palisades or walls of stone or earth enclosing a settlement or blocking its most vulnerable access routes), ditches in front of the curtains, bastions (projections of the curtain from which flanking fire can be directed along the curtain), and defensible gates designed to obstruct attackers and put them under fire from several directions.

Neolithic. Because of the smaller size of co-resident groups and a more nomadic way of life, no

fortifications attributable to Mesolithic or earlier foragers have been discovered. On the other hand, Neolithic and later fortifications are very common throughout Europe. They are first seen in the southeast at Early Neolithic sites such as Sesklo, Dimini, and Danilo. The earliest fortifications in central and western Europe appeared when early farmers of the LBK culture colonized these regions. There are now almost one hundred known LBK fortifications, and more are found each year. They date to all phases of the culture, although they are more prevalent in the later phases in the west. While many LBK fortifications appear to have been built to counter short-term threats, some sites, such as Schletz, Eisleben, and Köln-Lindenthal, evidence multiple phases of use. LBK villages were usually not located in locations with natural defenses. As a result, man-made features were needed for protection. These included one or two ditches backed by a fireproofed (daubed) palisade, baffled or screened entrances, and (rarely) gate houses or towers. These elements are surprisingly sophisticated, as they can all be found in fortifications up until the age of gunpowder. Their sudden appearance implies that LBK farmers had inherited an older tradition of building and refining defensive works.

The defensive works at Darion and Waremme-Longchamps, both in Belgium, are typical LBK fortifications. Ditches backed by palisades enclosed both villages. The entries into the palisades were protected by two methods. At Darion’s north gate, a gate tower projects out from one side of the entrance. At Longchamps, a small “guardhouse” flanked the south gate but projected inward. Also at the south gate, both the ditches and palisades overlap forming a “baffle” (known to Roman military engineers as a *clavicum*). A similar design was employed at Darion’s south gate, but only the palisades were “baffled.” Attackers entering such gates had to expose themselves to fire from their unshielded (i.e., usually right) side and/or rear. The ditches fronting LBK palisades may have simply been large “borrow pits” from which mud was extracted to fireproof the palisade. However, their cross-section was often V shaped—particularly near the vulnerable gate areas—and they were two meters deep and three meters wide in some places, so they would have offered protection even without the palisade. Indeed, the Romans defended their forts with exactly similar

V-sectioned ditches of 1.2 to 3.5 meters deep that they called *fossae fastigata*. Another form of defended gate used during the LBK was the screened gate (as is seen at Köln-Lindenthal), known to Roman military engineers as the *titulum*, where a section of the palisade sat out or in from the main palisade to form a double baffle entry. Cardial farmers in south and southwest Europe, contemporaries of the LBK, also surrounded some of their settlements (such as Masseria Candelero, Italy) with ditches, sometimes with baffled (“crab-claw”) gates.

In some cases, Early Neolithic fortifications were so large that it seems unlikely that the number of people living within them could have constructed them. For example, English Early Neolithic fortifications were estimated to have required over 100,000 man-hours to construct. The smaller fortifications at Darion, with only about twenty adults, would have needed about 1,700 man-days to build. Several cooperating villages must have constructed these, either as a central refuge for several nearby communities or as frontier protection for villages to the interior.

By the end of the Neolithic, in the Copper Age, regularly spaced bastions were a feature of several stone-walled fortifications, such as Chalandriani (Greece), Boussagues (France), Los Millares (Spain), and Zambujal (Portugal).

Bronze Age. Although nearly all of the fundamental features of subsequent fortifications were in use by the end of the Neolithic, fortifications continued to increase in size and number during the Bronze Age. After 4200 B.C., there was a general growth of fortifications across Europe as groups competed for resources and control of trade routes. Hillforts protected by a ditch and earthen rampart begin to make their earliest appearance in this period, as at Hradisko, Slovakia. There seem to have been few fortifications in northwest Europe during the Early Bronze Age.

During the Middle Bronze Age, much of the European continent was unfortified. Sites that had been fortified during earlier periods were still inhabited, but their defenses were either absent or in disrepair. Refuge fortifications are known from Italy, and the site of Prítluky, Slovakia, was enclosed in a double ditch and rampart. The greatest fortifications, however, appeared late in the Middle Bronze

Age, with the rise of the Mycenaeans. The defenses of the Aegean palaces at Mycenae, Tiryns, and Pylos, had “Cyclopean” walls, so called because the stones used to construct them were so large that the mythological Cyclops would be needed to move them.

In the Late Bronze Age, there was an increase in the number of fortifications across Europe. The first Europeans to routinely construct hillforts were the Urnfield cultures. Some Urnfield sites were simply palisaded while others were enclosed in multiple walls and ramparts. The majority of Urnfield fortifications are in Germany, but they can also be found in southern and central Europe.

Fortifications with wall-and-fill (or “box”) ramparts appear in Europe in the earliest Hallstatt phases of the Late Bronze Age. The method of construction involved building a facing wall of durable material—wood pilings, stone, or sod—and another wall two to three meters behind it. In some cases, the rear wall is tied to the face with transverse timbers, as at Poundbury in Dorset. The area between these walls was then filled with either spoil from the ditches fronting the wall or from quarries elsewhere. Box ramparts were relatively high yet resistant to slumping. They continued to be built until the ninth century B.C. and even later in some places in Britain. The rampart at Biskupin, Poland, also incorporated posts anchored into the outer slope at a 45° angle forming a kind of *chevaux-de-frise*. Gate areas were sometimes baffled, as at Seftenburg and the Wasserburg in Baden-Württemberg and the Mycenaean palace at Tiryns, but major advances in gate defenses came later in the Iron Age.

Around 1250 B.C. the defenses of the Mycenaean strongholds were strengthened, implying imminent conflict, but these improvements were apparently insufficient. By 1200 B.C. many sites bordering the Mediterranean were attacked, destroyed, and abandoned. Unfortified sites in Sicily were destroyed and subsequently rebuilt as fortified settlements by culturally different inhabitants. On the island of Sardinia, large stone refuge fortifications with massive walls and bastions, called *nuraghi*, first made their appearance at about this time. The wave of site destruction swept through the eastern Mediterranean as far as the mouth of the Nile. Its cause is still being debated.

At the same time, hillforts appeared in Italy, Ireland, and Romania. The people of the Swiss lakes region continued to utilize terrain to the best effect, locating their villages on islands or promontories and often enclosing them with substantial walls. In Ireland, artificial island strongholds, crannogs, were constructed.

Iron Age. Throughout the Iron Age, hillforts gradually increased in size, number, and complexity, particularly with regard to their entrances. Many hillforts—both on the Continent and in Britain—fell into disrepair around the middle of the first millennium B.C., suggesting some type of social collapse, only to be reoccupied by different peoples during later periods. By the sixth century B.C., hillforts on the Continent began to show the influence of classical Greece and Greek colonies, which resulted in square-bastioned fortifications such as Heuneberg, Germany, and Entremont, France, which are imitations of Greek fortifications.

The seventh century B.C. seems to have been a period of great unrest in northern Britain. Great hillforts were constructed, and farmsteads were fortified with stockades, suggesting that raiding was prevalent. In Scotland and Ireland, circular dry-stone towers called *brochs* began to appear, over fifty of which still survive. One of the earliest, Clickhimin, developed from a fortified farm. Two of the highest are Dun Troddan (7.6 meters) and Mousa (13.7 meters). Staigue Fort, in Ireland, was 3.9 meters high and over 24 meters in diameter and had rooms built within the thickness of the walls.

Fortifications with “dump” ramparts first appeared around the fifth century B.C. Although the term “dump” implies haphazard construction, these ramparts were carefully laid. Generally, these curtains were unfaced, but their thickness and the shallow angle of the ramparts prevented slumping.

The gates of hillforts evolved throughout the first millennium B.C. The earlier examples had simple bent outset gates that formed a small courtyard, within which was the gate proper. Over time, entrance passages became longer and more complex. Whereas earlier entrances at sites like Ivinghoe Beacon were only 3.4 meters deep, later passages were lengthened to over 40 meters—the then-effective range of bowshot. Later, flanking guard chambers were added to the passageway. In some hillforts,

gated barriers at the beginning and middle of the passageway reinforced this position. In the latest examples of Iron Age fortifications, entrance passages were lengthened to 45 meters and were curved at the interior end so that the gate was not visible from the exterior of the fort (as is seen at Painswick Beacon, England). Curving the entrance passage inhibited the use of fire arrows against the wooden gate or the use of battering rams. Bridges over the guard chambers, implied by the footings at Rainsborough and Titterstone Clee, subjected gate attackers to fire from above as well as both flanks. Gate screens or barbicans also came into use.

The zenith of prehistoric fortifications were the large Celtic hillforts, or *oppida*, which even Roman generals described with respect. By the middle of the first century B.C., some fortifications had developed into massive hilltop edifices like Alesia, which took Caesar’s legions weeks to reduce. Against attackers armed with only short-range weapons such as the bow, sling, and spear, lacking siege engines and artillery, such *oppida* must have been nearly impregnable. This explains the relative absence of evidence that they were attacked until the Roman conquest. Many *oppida* enclosed so many inhabitants and such diverse activities that they have been described as “protourban centers”—that is, more like walled towns than just refuges or forts. For example, cities such as Paris, Toulouse, and Colchester began as *oppida*.

WEAPONS AND ARMOR

The earliest known weapons of war were made of stone, wood, and bone. While used for more prosaic purposes, axes, adzes, mallets, knives (of stone or bone), and hunting weapons such as bows, throwing or thrusting spears, and slings were all employed to kill humans. As noted above, embedded arrow points and weapon traumas from knives, axes, and clubs have been found on the skeletons of Upper Palaeolithic and Mesolithic foragers.

Neolithic. During the Neolithic, the evidence for “purpose-built” weapons of war is at best circumstantial. Weapon traumas on victims indicate that the primary weapons of Early Neolithic warriors were the bow and arrow and the groundstone axe/adze. LBK arrowheads were large triangular points that would have been difficult to withdraw, while

their lack of a stem made them likely to slip off the shaft when the arrow was extracted and remain to infect the wound. Food remains indicate that LBK farmers almost never hunted, so these points, as their design suggests, may have been purpose-built for warfare. Indeed, skeletons from this period bear embedded LBK arrowheads. These points are most prevalent in western LBK distribution, where other evidence for warfare is also common. The ubiquitous groundstone adzes of the Early Neolithic are often assumed to have been used solely for wood-working. As mentioned above, the perforated skulls of many war victims indicate that these tools were also used as weapons. Further proof is found in the fact that axes are found as grave goods in LBK adult male burials. Historically, prowess in war and the wielding of weapons was a much more common source of male status than skill at carpentry.

Bronze Age. How metallurgy appeared in Europe is still a matter of debate. Whatever its origin, Europeans immediately and most commonly used these new materials to make weapons.

Purpose-built weapons of war are among the earliest of metal artifacts. The first of these were triangular-bladed daggers with round pommels produced during the Chalcolithic by the makers of beakers. This form continued to be used for weapons and ornaments up until the Iron Age. Improvements in metal technology were signaled by the appearance of the Bronze sword in about 2300 B.C. Initially, these were short leaf-bladed weapons, heavily weighted toward the point and used to slash, but as knowledge of metalworking improved they became longer and slimmer. By the middle of the Bronze Age, true cut-and-thrust swords had been developed in central and eastern Europe, while rapier-like slashing swords were developed in the Aegean. The cut-and-thrust sword did not reach the Aegean (where early weapons show ties to Anatolia) until the Late Bronze Age. The first metal lance heads also appeared around 2300 B.C. They consisted of a dagger-like head with a long tang for attaching it to the shaft. The socketed spear tip followed shortly thereafter. These spears outnumber swords ten-to-one, suggesting that they were the primary weapon of common soldiers. It was not until the Late Bronze Age that bronze was used to create heads for arrows and javelins.

A major change in the way that war was waged arrived in central Europe with the Battle-Axe culture: the war chariot. By the Early Bronze Age, war chariots are known from Moravia, Slovakia, Hungary, and Transylvania. Early chariots were typically heavy carts, more like wagons than the graceful two-wheeled vehicles depicted in later art. Nevertheless, they enhanced the mobility of an army, allowing it to flank less-mobile opponents. They also increased the firepower of charioteers because they allowed more projectile weapons (arrows, javelins, etc.) to be brought rapidly to the front lines.

As weapon technology progressed, so did the need for more advanced personal defense, meaning metal body armor. The existence of baffled gates that force a warrior to expose his unshielded side implies that shields had been in use from the Early Neolithic. Early shields were undoubtedly made from perishable materials such as wood, bone, and treated leather. Early body armor made from such materials is known from the second millennium B.C. in the form of a boar tusk corselet from Aegina, Greece. Armor continued to be made from such perishable materials even in the metal ages because they were relatively inexpensive. No helmets are known before the Late Bronze Age, although they surely existed prior to that time.

Bronze armor was developed first in the Aegean and was unknown in Europe until about 1200 B.C. Armor dating from this time was discovered in a chieftain's grave in Caka, Slovakia. An early example from Dendra, Greece, consisted of bronze greaves (leg armor) and arm guards, and boar's tusk helmets, similar to those of Anatolia. By the Late Bronze Age, Aegean military equipment, such as the round shield, shows more of a central European character. By around 1000 B.C., European armor had assumed the basic forms it would keep with only minor variations for the next 2,000 years. For example, Urnfield warriors wore a bronze breastplate, greaves, and conical helmet with top knob and cheek guards, and they carried a round wooden shield sheathed in leather and sometimes bronze.

Iron Age. Iron was first worked in western Anatolia around 2000 B.C. By 1500 B.C., it was displacing bronze in that region for tools and, especially, weapons. Ironworking reached the Aegean around 1250 B.C., taking another 550 years to spread to the Britain.

In the eighth century B.C. there was an increase in iron usage in eastern and central Europe. In central Europe, it was associated with the early Celtic cultures of Hallstatt C and D. They were skilled ironworkers, producing a variety of iron weapons and tools, from socketed axes to billhooks. Their iron swords and spears were superior to the weapons of all but their southern neighbors. Not surprisingly, the well-armed warrior elite of the Late Hallstatt controlled riverine trade routes of central Europe and established trade ties with the Greeks to the south.

Later La Tène Celts developed a number of specialized modes of combat. They continued the development of chariot and mounted warfare, becoming the most formidable cavalry Europe had yet seen. Their armies were highly mobile, and their two and four wheeled chariots (*essenda*) gave them the advantage over all but the most disciplined and well-armed infantry. Elite chariot burials have been found across Europe. By the time of Caesar's conquest, chariots had gone out of fashion in combat on the Continent, but they were still so used in Britain.

Celtic warriors employed a wide array of weapons: arrows, javelins, short- and long-bladed swords, and—in Iberia—the *falcata*, a heavy cleaver-like weapon that the Roman historian Livy claimed could sever a head or a limb in a single stroke. Slings were almost certainly used much earlier but the “ammo dumps” of sling stones found beside Late Bronze and Iron Age fortifications, such as Maiden Castle, are the first clear evidence of their use in Europe. Both mounted and chariot-borne troops utilized javelins. They would rapidly advance, release their missiles, then retire to safety. The Celtiberians of Spain used a short stabbing sword, the *gladius*, so effectively against the Romans that the latter adopted it as their legions' principal weapon. Celtic warriors used long shields of an oblong or rectangular shape and wore horned or plumed metal helmets. A few of these have survived, although some were so fragile they were more theatrical than protective. Ornate “jockey cap” helmets with gold plating and coral inlays, such as the splendid fourth century B.C. examples from Amfreville and Agris, France, are known from the La Tène period.

The Celts' best warriors, called *gaesatae*, wore torcs, thick-braided circlets of metal, around their necks. *Gaesatae* usually fought naked, sometimes with their bodies painted blue with dye made from woad (a type of herb), in the front ranks of Celtic armies. Because of their reputation for ferocity, they were hired as mercenaries into many Mediterranean armies. According to classical authors, the Celts preferred to settle conflicts in single combat between opposing leaders or champions. The long blunt-ended swords, useful only for slashing, that equipped most Celtic warriors reflected this predilection for single combat. Because of their longer reach, these were best in open, uncrowded combat, but unwieldy in crowded close quarters, as the closed ranks of Roman Legions with their stabbing swords would demonstrate in many battles.

ART

Although rare, representations of homicide exist from the Palaeolithic onward, and depictions of warfare date from the Neolithic. They were created in every medium—paintings on cave walls and ceramics, sculpture, and engravings in stone, bone, ivory, and metalwork. Artistic representations are not photographs and do not always represent actual events, nor is their incidence directly related to the frequency or severity of actual conflict. Nonetheless, they do indicate that artists and audiences of the time were familiar with warriors, weapons, and combat.

One of the earliest depictions of warfare is from the Early Neolithic site of Morella la Villa–Cueva del Roure in Spain (c. 4900 B.C.). It shows combat between two groups of archers, one of four, the other of three. The larger group is both advancing in the center while flanking the smaller group on its more vulnerable right side. This painting indicates that even Neolithic warriors had knowledge of rudimentary tactics. There are other Neolithic conflicts depicted in Spain—eleven archers confronting nine at Les Dogues, fifteen archers opposing twenty at El Molino de las Fuentes. Several Bronze Age Scandinavian rock art scenes show groups of warriors with spears fighting on land and from ships. With the arrival of the Battle-Axe culture, images of chariot warfare appear in European art.

Beginning with the Hallstatt cultures, the number of objects decorated with martial scenes dramat-

ically increased. In part, this is due to the more durable media on which they were recorded. Copper, bronze, gold, and iron were all used to depict Celtic warriors, their equipment and tactics. Early Celtic bronze drinking bowls typically depict scenes of warfare. The Hallstatt D (c. 530 B.C.) burial couch from Hochdorf, Germany, is decorated with warriors riding on wagons and three warriors brandishing swords and shields. Similar bowls from Steiermark, Austria, and Certosa, Italy, depict Celtic warriors with axes, spears, oblong shields, and rounded helmets. The Vix krater (wine mixing bowl), a Greek import found in a tomb in France, shows infantry and charioteers. In addition to its skull shrine, the site of Entremont provides further evidence for the Celtic obsession with trophy heads in the form of a sculpted pile of severed human heads.

Classical authors testify to the accuracy of the depictions on Celtic objects. Diodorus Siculus described Celtic warriors as carrying man-sized shields with projecting bosses of bronze and wielding long swords or lances. According to the author, their apparel included bronze helmets with horns or projecting figures, chain mail, and iron breastplates. They were said to be accompanied by musicians playing harsh-sounding war trumpets. All of these are depicted on the Gundestrup Cauldron, a second century B.C. La Tène artifact found in Denmark.

See also Hochdorf (vol. 1, part 1); Maiden Castle (vol. 1, part 1); First Farmers of Central Europe (vol. 1, part 3); The Iceman (vol. 1, part 4); Late Neolithic/Copper Age Iberia (vol. 1, part 4); Sardinia's Bronze Age Towers (vol. 2, part 5); Late Bronze Age Urnfields of Central Europe (vol. 2, part 5); Mycenaean Greece (vol. 2, part 5); Oppida (vol. 2, part 6); Hillforts (vol. 2, part 6); Ironworking (vol. 2, part 6); The Heuneburg (vol. 2, part 6).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Carman, John, and A. F. Harding, eds. *Ancient Warfare: Archaeological Perspectives*. Stroud, U.K.: Sutton, 1999.
- Ellis, Peter B. *The Celtic Empire*. London: Robinson, 1990.
- Keeley, Lawrence H. *War before Civilization*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1996.
- LeBlanc, Steven A., and Katherine E. Register. *Constant Battles: The Myth of the Peaceful, Noble Savage*. New York: St. Martin's, 2003.

Milisauskas, Sarunas, ed. *European Prehistory: A Survey*. New York: Kluwer Academic/Plenum, 2002.

LAWRENCE H. KEELEY, RUSSELL S. QUICK

MAIDEN CASTLE

Maiden Castle is one of the largest and most impressive of the British hillforts. The site has considerable importance in the history of British archaeology, as it was originally excavated in the 1930s by Sir Mortimer Wheeler, one of the key figures in the development of British archaeology. His excavations were among the most extensive of the period and were crucial in developing the important concept of archaeological stratigraphy. They also established a diffusionist chronology for the Iron Age of southern Britain, which explained key changes in material culture as the result of invasions. Recent small-scale excavations by the author have reviewed aspects of the picture given by Wheeler but, more important, have provided a database of environmental evidence, which can be used to reconstruct the economy of the inhabitants. The hillfort is located close to the south coast of England, in the county of Dorset, and is situated on a low chalk ridge in the valley of the River Frome. The Roman town of Dorchester lies one mile to the north and appears to have been the natural successor to the hillfort.

Hillforts in this region were established in the first half of the first millennium B.C., and their appearance coincides with the dramatic changes that characterize the end of the Bronze Age and the beginning of the Iron Age. Maiden Castle had a much older history, however, and the Early Iron Age hillfort was constructed directly on top of an earlier Neolithic enclosure. This monument was an important community focus, and the large quantities of material recovered indicate that the enclosure was the focus for productive activities (flint ax manufacture) and had widespread contacts, particularly with communities in southwestern England. The hilltop appears to have lost its position as a center for the local community in the Bronze Age, and it is possible that it became a peripheral area located close to the boundaries of several distinct polities. The neutral character of the boundary location might have been a crucial reason for the establishment of the

hillfort. Many of the southern British hillforts were established in similar positions, and some actually incorporated earlier linear earthworks. The size of the enclosing boundary and the area enclosed by this boundary indicate that hillforts were large community enterprises and imply the coming together of several communities.

The original hillfort of Maiden Castle was built c. 500 B.C. An area of 6.4 hectares was enclosed by a single bank and a ditch more than 8.4 meters from top to bottom, which was penetrated by two entrances, one an unusual double gateway. This hillfort is comparable to many other hillforts built at this time, and there are similar examples within a mile. Maiden Castle, however, soon became the center for the locality and then the region. For the next three hundred years the enclosure was subject to an almost continuous program of construction that focused on the enclosing boundary. After an initial refurbishment of the original enclosure, it was decided to expand the area enclosed to the west to create a hillfort 19 hectares in area. At first, this area was enclosed by a simple dump rampart and had two impressive double entrances, facing east and west, respectively. Soon, further external ramparts were added, and the original inner rampart was heightened. By the second century B.C. the hilltop was enclosed by three to four lines of banks and ditches, and the inner rampart stood more than 5.5 meters high. The entrances also had been transformed. Initially, these entrances had been fairly simple, but the addition of extra ramparts was used to create a complex interweaving of banks and ditches, which confuse the unwary visitor and conceal the entrance.

Little is known about the first occupation of the hillfort, but by the middle of the third century B.C. the interior was densely occupied and well organized. The occupation was characterized by small roundhouses, large pit silos used for the storage of cereals, and distinctive above-ground storage facilities in square timber buildings. These structures are characteristic of all Iron Age settlements in southern England, and the circular houses are a feature that distinguish Britain from the adjacent areas of the continent. The interior of the settlement was divided by roads, which were clearly visible in the geophysical survey. The economy of the hillfort was dominated by agricultural activities, and large quan-

ties of barley and wheat indicate the importance of cereal production. Sheep were the most common animal, but cattle and, to a lesser extent, pigs were important also. Large quantities of ceramics and bone tools have been recovered, but metal tools and decorative objects are relatively rare in the Middle Iron Age contexts.

The normal explanation for the construction of these massive banks and ditches is that they reflect an increase in warfare caused by the breakdown of relationships at the end of the Bronze Age. This seems an inadequate explanation, because it does not explain the relative rarity of weapons such as swords and spears, which were common in the Bronze Age. The boundaries clearly served more complex uses than just simple defenses. It is possible that the creation of these enclosures symbolized the coming together of individual households and the foundation of a community separated and distinct from other local communities. The process of construction was an act that symbolically invoked a sense of belonging. It also provided an opportunity to compete with other communities, and the participation of communities that had been previously independent would suggest submission to the authority of the inhabitants of Maiden Castle. The massive investment in labor and resources that went into the construction of this “developed hillfort” testify to the involvement of a large number of people, and it is not surprising that Maiden Castle is the only hillfort in south Dorset of this size and complexity. By the third century B.C. the ramparts of Maiden Castle were an unambiguous indication of the status of the inhabitants and their authority over southern Dorset.

By the end of the first century B.C. the importance of the hillfort appeared to have declined. The rampart had not been enlarged for several hundred years, and the occupants seem to have abandoned the western extension. These changes coincide with the appearance of new settlements in the landscape surrounding the hillfort, and it is difficult not to conclude that people were moving out of the hillfort and that this represented a breakdown in the communal bonds that had been the strength of the community. These changes were associated with the increasing importance of material culture, and it appears that artifacts were being used to define in-

dividuals and to establish hierarchies that focused on individual identity.

The increasing importance of identity is reflected in the development of a distinctive regional burial tradition and the presence of a substantial cemetery in the eastern gateway of Maiden Castle. This cemetery is exceptionally large. Various other peculiarities, including paired burials, extended as opposed to crouched inhumations, an unusual range of grave goods, and bodies with signs of mortal injuries, make it unique. Wheeler used some of these features to present a dramatic historical reconstruction of the storming of the hillfort by the Romans, a very famous piece of historical conjecture. The story ignores many of the distinctive features of the cemetery, however, and although the Romans may

have killed a few people, there was no evidence to support the dramatic storming of the east gate. The cemetery is really an indication of the continued importance of the hillfort community in a period when there were dramatic changes to the organization of society.

See also Hillforts (vol. 2, part 6).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Sharples, Niall. *English Heritage Book of Maiden Castle*. London: Batsford, 1991.

———. *Maiden Castle: Excavations and Field Survey 1985–6*. London: Historic Buildings and Monuments Commission for England, 1991.

Wheeler, R. E. M. *Maiden Castle, Dorset*. London: Society of Antiquaries, 1943.

NIAL SHARPLES



POSTGLACIAL FORAGERS,
8000–4000 B.C.



INTRODUCTION

By about ten thousand years ago, the Pleistocene glaciers in Scandinavia and the Alps had retreated more or less to their current locations. The warmer climate allowed forests to arise over much of Europe that previously had been covered by ice and tundra. Rivers, lakes, and seas teemed with fish, while forests were full of game and edible plants. Such an environment presented many new possibilities for the hunting and gathering peoples who inhabited it. They responded to these challenges and opportunities with technological, social, and symbolic innovations.

This period, which began over ten thousand years ago and ended with the establishment of agriculture, is called the “Mesolithic” to indicate that it falls between the Palaeolithic, the “old” Stone Age of the glacial epochs, and the Neolithic, the “new” Stone Age of agriculture. In southern Europe, where the changes were not quite so dramatic, the term “Epipalaeolithic” is often used by archaeologists for this period. Until about the early 1970s, the Mesolithic did not receive much attention from archaeologists. Many regarded this period as one of cultural stagnation and poverty relieved only by the eventual appearance of agriculture. In the decades since, however, experts have come to view the time following the establishment of a mild, modern climate in Europe as one in which great changes resulted in a reasonably comfortable way of life. In some areas, the adoption of agriculture may even have been delayed by the natural abundance and the human responses to it. The Mesolithic period throughout Europe sets the stage for the develop-

ments in the millennia that followed. We have therefore chosen to begin the coverage in this encyclopedia with the postglacial hunters of the European forests and coasts.

The migratory reindeer herds that had provided so much of the diet during the final millennia of the Ice Age retreated to northern Scandinavia by about 8000 B.C. or even earlier. Territorial game such as deer and wild pigs colonized the new forests, so hunters no longer had to follow reindeer herds over vast distances. Instead, they could confine their hunting to a smaller territory. The forests also contained many edible plants that could be gathered easily. This allowed children to contribute to the family’s food supply by collecting nuts, berries, and mushrooms. Hazelnuts, which would have been harvested in large quantities and stored, provided an abundant and reliable supply of food. Tubers and rhizomes (the fleshy edible roots of plants) would have been another important source of nourishment. Evidence from pollen diagrams indicates that the postglacial foragers altered the forest by using axes and fire to create artificial clearings where hazel and other shrubs could flourish and where animals would gather. Runs of migratory fish, such as salmon, in the pristine European rivers would have provided seasonal abundances that needed to be preserved for later consumption by smoking and drying. Along the coasts, shellfish could be found in great quantities, and fish could be caught with spears, nets, and lines.

The coastline of Europe had not yet reached its modern shape, however. A hunter could walk across

what is now the southern part of the North Sea and get his feet wet only when he had to ford the common estuary of the Thames and Rhine. The Baltic was initially a freshwater lake dammed by land bridges between Denmark and Sweden. Rising sea levels eventually inundated these land bridges. At the same time, the land previously compressed under billions of tons of ice began to spring back upward. The combination of rising seas and rising land had a large impact on the archaeological record. Many sites that were once on dry land are now submerged, as indicated by the finds of artifacts on the floor of the North Sea and in Danish coastal bays. Elsewhere, such as in central Sweden, sites that were once located on the coast or on islands are now far inland and high above modern sea level.

The Mesolithic foragers adapted their technology to the new climatic conditions. Tiny flint pieces called microliths were inserted in handles of wood and antler to form composite spearpoints and knives. Antler was used to make a wide variety of harpoons. A particularly clever and effective fishing tool called a leister had two curving serrated pieces of antler or wood attached to the end of a handle. It would have been thrust down over the back of a fish to seize it. Willow and hazel branches were used to make conical fish traps that were set into streams and estuaries such that the fish could swim into them but could not escape. In some places, many such traps were set across wide bodies of water, which permitted the capture of fish on an immense scale. Underwater investigations in Denmark have revealed the scale of such fish trapping. The development of such large facilities would not have been possible in the absence of some notion of property rights, since a community, or even a single household, would not invest its time in building such installations if their yield could be claimed by outsiders.

During the Mesolithic, dugout canoes begin to appear often in the archaeological record. Although they are usually found waterlogged in the bogs of northern Europe, we can infer that they were in general use throughout the continent at this time. The emergence of such watercraft had an important effect on Mesolithic society. It permitted foragers to exploit resources much farther from home, provided they could reach them by water, while maintaining their permanent settlement in one place for a

large part of the year. A new concept of place and home replaced that of territory and home range held by the Ice Age hunting bands.

Archaeologists are only now beginning to consider such social aspects of the postglacial foragers. Evidence for their social lives can be gleaned from the many burials that have been discovered since the 1970s. Cemeteries at sites like Vedbæk in Denmark, Skateholm in Sweden, and Oleneostrovskii Mogilnik in Russia provide evidence of ritual behavior and perhaps social distinctions. Great care was taken in Mesolithic burial rituals. In many cases, red ochre (iron oxide) was sprinkled on the bodies. Objects such as red deer antlers and flint tools were often included in the grave with the body. At Skateholm, dogs were buried with the same care as people, reflecting their importance in Mesolithic life.

In central and southern Europe, Mesolithic foragers congregated around lake basins in the Alpine foothills and took advantage of the vertical distribution of resources in mountainous areas. Many new postglacial forager sites have been found in the Alps and in other upland regions in the 1990s and early 2000s. Caves near the Mediterranean coast and in the limestone areas at the head of the Adriatic were also attractive locations for settlement. In southern Greece, Franchthi Cave frequently was occupied by foragers throughout this period. By 8,500 years ago, following rises in the sea level, the coastline was only about a kilometer away from the cave. An increasing amount of fish and shellfish are found among the food remains in the area, along with many different plant species. Along the Atlantic coasts of Portugal and Spain foragers also took advantage of the rich marine life.

In the interior of the Balkans, an important and unusual series of Mesolithic sites has been found in the Iron Gates gorges of the Danube River, on the border between Yugoslavia and Romania. Here, at sites like Lepenski Vir, Padina, and Vlasac, people took advantage of the abundant fish in the river and game on the adjacent slopes. They lived in small huts, each with a stone-lined hearth, and buried their dead among the houses. A distinctive trait of the Iron Gates settlements is a style of sculpture that features human-like heads carved from the local limestone.

The postglacial foragers of Europe were remarkably creative in the ways in which they adjusted

to new environmental conditions. Recognition of this creativity has earned them greater respect from archaeologists, who now see this period as one of immense transformation rather than impoverishment. As a result of their successful adaptation to postglacial conditions, the Mesolithic foragers were

generally not anxious to adopt agriculture when it appeared nearly nine thousand years ago in southeastern Europe, but after some delay they integrated crops and livestock into their diet and blended into the farming population.

PETER BOGUCKI



POSTGLACIAL ENVIRONMENTAL TRANSFORMATION

The Holocene interglacial epoch began around 9500 B.C. with an abrupt warming of the climate across most of Europe. Although interglacial conditions were established rather quickly, it would be wrong to imagine that the natural environments of the Early Holocene were identical to those of the present day or that they have remained static since that time. For example, most regions experienced a climatic thermal optimum between 8000 and 4000 B.C., as indicated by the extension of species, such as the water chestnut and the pond tortoise, north of their present European climatic limits. In addition, several key features of the natural European landscape were not formed until some time after the start of the Holocene. In most coastal regions, for example, recognizably modern shoreline configurations were only achieved around 5000 B.C.

COASTAL ENVIRONMENTS

The repeated build up and decay of ice sheets during the Pleistocene had locked up and then released water from the hydrological cycle, causing sea levels to rise and fall. Global sea levels were lowered on average by more than 100 meters when the ice sheets and glaciers were at their peak, creating land bridges that made it possible to walk from the European mainland across to the British Isles. The configuration of the glacial coastline differed most strongly from that of the early twenty-first century in areas with shallow offshore gradients, such as the North Sea. In these areas, land was drowned by rising sea levels between the tenth and sixth millennia B.C. at a rate that must have been noticeable from one year to the next. Human populations had to relocate

themselves and their economic activities landward, as is shown by the changing locations of shell middens and other Mesolithic sites related to human habitation of the coastal areas.

In Southeast Europe, the lowered sea level caused the Black Sea to be isolated from the world oceans during glacial times because the Bosphorus Straits that connect them are only about 50 meters deep in the early twenty-first century. By the Early Holocene, world sea levels rose so that they may have become higher than those in the Black Sea, and around 5500 B.C. the two became reconnected. In *Noah's Flood*, William B. F. Ryan and Walter Pitman have proposed that seawater poured through the Bosphorus in a flood several hundred times greater than the world's largest modern waterfall. If true, human populations around the former Black Sea coast would have found the sea advancing toward them at about a kilometer and a half every day. Their memory of this possibly catastrophic event may provide the basis for the flood legend of the Sumerian Epic of Gilgamesh, which later came to be incorporated in the story of Noah in the Old Testament of the Bible.

Rising Early Holocene sea levels led to river valleys being drowned throughout Europe's coastal zones, with the end of the Early Holocene representing the time of maximum marine incursion inland. Since then, stabilized sea levels and river-derived siltation have led to a reversal in this trend, with the land pushing seaward at the mouths of major rivers, such as the Rhône. This process has left many ancient harbor cities, particularly around the

Mediterranean, stranded several miles inland from the coast during modern times. It should be noted that a different trend was experienced during the Holocene in some high-latitude regions, such as the northern part of the Baltic Sea. There the land lifted after the ice sheets melted, which forced land formations farther above the water than they had been previously.

PLANT AND ANIMAL RESOURCES

Prior to 9500 B.C., Europe north of the Mediterranean had been largely covered by tundra-steppe and boreal forest, and it had supported large herds of reindeer, wild horses, and other herbivores. However, in the subsequent two millennia, new tree species moved in, so by 7000 B.C., the dominant vegetation type had become mixed deciduous forest. With it came new woodland animals, such as red deer, aurochs (wild ox), and wild boar. As targets of human exploitation, these animals were more dispersed and less visible in the forests than had been the concentrated and easily culled fauna of the late-glacial tundra. Yet the mixed deciduous woodland contained hundreds of potentially edible plant species, ranging from hazelnuts through berries and fruit to fungi and bracken rhizomes.

Although the distribution of vegetation types had become essentially modern by 7000 B.C., their species composition continued to change. This can be seen from many pollen diagrams in which the characteristic feature is the continued arrival and rise to dominance of new woodland plant classifications. After the pioneer woods of birch and pine, the first deciduous trees to arrive in Northwest Europe were hazel and elm. Later arrivals included oak, lime, alder, and ash. Yet other trees—for example, beech—did not achieve their maximum extents until the declining stage of the Holocene, and some trees, such as spruce, may still be expanding their ranges. The Early Holocene forests formed an almost continuous blanket across most of the central and northern European lowlands during Mesolithic times. The hunter-forager communities in those areas preferred to locate their settlements in places where there were fewer trees. These included sites in forest clearings, along the seacoast, next to rivers and wetlands, and at higher elevations close to the upper limit for tree growth. A good example is the site of Star Carr in northern England, which was

the scene of pioneering archaeological investigations between 1949 and 1951 by Grahame Clark. His were among the first excavations to move beyond the study of stone tools to also include an examination of site economy and environment, which are revealed by bones, seeds, and pollen grains. Star Carr comprised a platform made of birch at the swampy edge of a lake, now filled. The waterlogged conditions are responsible for the excellent preservation of organic remains at the site. Wetlands such as this were rich in natural resources, including waterfowl, fish, and edible water plants, such as cress and water lily.

The seasonal rhythm of plant growth and animal movement in temperate woodland ecosystems strongly influenced the food schedules and lifestyles of Mesolithic hunter-forager groups. But people were already capable of modifying natural environments to suit their needs. For example, selective burning of vegetation is a traditional technique of environmental management that has been practiced by hunters and pastoralists for many millennia. The new vegetation growth after a fire increases grazing and browsing potential, and the number of deer or wild cattle that can be supported responds accordingly. Charcoal provides one of the best palaeoecological indications of past fire frequencies. Charcoal fragments in soil and peat profiles suggest that recurrent burning of upland vegetation took place during the Late Mesolithic in Europe. Hazel, which sprouts new growth in response to burning, is much more abundant in the early part of the Holocene than in any previous interglacial period—possibly an indirect result of Mesolithic use of fire.

THE IMPACT OF THE FIRST FARMERS

The advent of Neolithic agriculture brought greater potential for modifying natural environments and put humans into sharper conflict with nondomesticated species. In the long run, this has meant that predators, such as the wolf and the bear, are now rare across western and central Europe, whereas wild competitors, such as the aurochs, are now extinct. Decline in some nondomesticated animal populations is partly the result of hunting but more importantly due to habitat loss, given that farming requires at least partial clearance of the existing vegetation cover. Early agriculture is also associated

with the first substantial human impact upon the soil, an impact all the more permanent because of agriculture's association with a settled, or sedentary, way of life.

Between 7000 and 3500 B.C., Neolithic farming spread across Europe from the Near East, primarily northwestward along the Danube-Rhine axis. Neolithic farmers appear to have initially exploited only a small portion of the total landscape, selecting those particular habitats—notably alluvial and loess soils—best suited to their needs. Sites in the western Mediterranean and parts of northern Europe (e.g., those of the Ertebølle culture in Denmark) have shown evidence of transitional economies, indicating that, in those locations, agriculture may have been gradually adopted by preexisting Mesolithic populations. Evidence for the impact of Neolithic farmers upon European wildwoods was first recognized by Johannes Iversen in the form of clearance, or *landnám*, phases in pollen diagrams. There are three principal *landnám* phases:

1. an initial clearance stage, in which tree pollen declined relative to herb and grass pollen;
2. a farming stage, in which grasses, including cereal-type and weedy species, reached a maximum;
3. a regeneration stage, in which shrubs, such as hazel, increased before declining as more substantial trees replace them.

Clearance phases are also sometimes associated with a rise in the frequency of charcoal, suggesting that fire was employed in a “slash and burn” manner.

The effect of Neolithic clearance on the overall woodland cover was initially rather small, although more significant changes did take place in the composition of the natural vegetation. One of the species affected was the elm tree, and a sharp and usually permanent decline in the number of elm trees occurred during Neolithic times. Although the direct cause of this decline was most likely a catastrophic disease outbreak similar to the modern Dutch elm disease, the lack of subsequent recovery of the tree population is likely to have been linked to increasing human disturbance of forest ecosystems. Another group that responded to Neolithic agriculture was weeds. Species such as ribwort plantain, stinging nettle, docks, sorrels, and grasses appear with increasing regularity in post-Mesolithic

pollen diagrams. These plants thrive on disturbed ground, and they exploited humans for their dispersal and have remained a familiar part of European agricultural landscapes ever since.

CULTURAL LANDSCAPE CHANGE IN BARBARIAN EUROPE

Neolithic peasant farming societies started the long process of clearing Europe's forests to make way for farms, fields, and pastures. From Julius Caesar's description in his *De bello Gallico* that “the population is exceedingly large, the ground thickly studded with homesteads,” it certainly appears that, in France and lowland Britain, the landscapes were already largely agricultural at the time of the Roman conquest in the first century B.C. By medieval times, around A.D. 1000, the removal of the forests was almost complete. At the time of the Domesday survey of A.D. 1086, only 15 percent of England was still wooded, and more than twice that amount of land was devoted to growing crops. It is clear that the vast majority of primary forest clearance in lowland England had taken place before the Norman conquest of the eleventh century A.D.

The so-called barbarian cultures were therefore largely responsible for the transformation of Europe from a natural to a cultural landscape, although the pace and timing of this transformation varied among different regions. In some cases, significant opening of the primeval forest took place during Neolithic times; for example, land snails and pollen from buried soils and ditch fills at Avebury, Silbury Hill, and Stonehenge show that the chalk landscape of southern England had, by the second millennium B.C., already been changed from woodland to open pasture or scrub. In general, however, organized agricultural landscapes were more often created in the Bronze Age or Early Iron Age, particularly during the second and early first millennia B.C. In part of Spain, this was associated with the development of the *dehesa* system, which uses and conserves oak trees in an open parkland interspersed with cereal cultivation and grazing land, whereas farther north, landscape change is linked to the emergence of proto-Celtic and Celtic societies. These societies became hierarchical and tribal, with a mode of production progressively less dependent on domestic subsistence agriculture. Change was manifest in the landscape in the creation of organized arable field

systems and other forms of land allotment as well as in the creation of defensive hillfort settlements. Animals were no longer raised solely for meat but also were used for plowing, transport, and wool and milk production and to provide manure to fertilize the fields.

The Bronze Age saw an important extension of settlement into many upland regions, such as the Alps. A good example of this process is provided by Dartmoor in Southwest England, where large parts of the Bronze Age landscape have been preserved. Archaeological remains include low stone walls—or *reaves*—that are linked to the wider system of prehistoric land boundaries that cover the whole of Dartmoor. The Bronze Age economy was based on pastoralism, and the round stone farm dwellings in this area may have only been occupied seasonally as part of a transhumant pattern of land occupation, where livestock was moved between different areas. Pollen diagrams from peat deposits and buried soils record prehistoric woodland clearance and the inadvertent creation of acid moorland with podzolic and gley soils.

Late Holocene woodland clearance often had permanent consequences for soil resources. In some regions the fertile but superficial cover of loess—a wind-blown silt that had been deposited during glacial times—was eroded to leave skeletal, calcareous soils, the eroded soil having “sludged” downhill to form extensive colluvial deposits at the bases of slopes. Some of this eroded soil material was moved into river systems, which led to the widespread accretion of fine-grained floodplain alluvium in lowland rivers of northern Europe after 1000 B.C. At Braeroddach Loch in Scotland, soil erosion and consequent influx of sediment increased in a series of steps through time, starting with the arrival of Neolithic agriculture. In this lake catchment, soil losses under agricultural land use represent a thirty-fold increase compared with that under Early Holocene forest cover. Without doubt, land degradation in Northwest Europe has been related to increasing population growth and agrarian pressure. An extreme example of irreversible environmental change is provided by the limestone plateau of the Burren in western Ireland. The Burren’s thin soil cover, which had been able to support pine, yew, and birch forests during much of the Holocene, was almost totally eroded down karstic fissures during the Late

Holocene. All that is left is bare limestone pavement incongruously criss-crossed by Celtic fields with no soil inside them (fig. 1).

In many areas, such as the North European plain of Germany and Poland, the post-Roman period witnessed a decline in population, and pollen diagrams show that woodland regeneration took place. Yet the basic pattern of land occupation established in the pre-Roman Iron Age was often not greatly altered. And toward the margins of permanent settlement in northern Europe, as in Scandinavia, the first millennium A.D. was a formative period of landscape change. This is well illustrated in the Ystad Project, in which archaeologists, historical geographers, and palaeoecologists worked together to establish an integrated regional history of Holocene landscape change in an area of southern Sweden. The post-Roman period also saw the introduction of some new crops, such as rye and hemp-hop.

CLIMATIC CHANGES DURING LATER PREHISTORY

Although much less marked than during the Early Holocene, the period between 4000 B.C. and A.D. 1000 nonetheless experienced some significant shifts in climate. Notable among these was a progressive cooling following the Holocene thermal optimum. A range of biotic temperature indicators, including diatom algae, cladocera (microcrustaceans), pollen, and midge larvae, have been analyzed from lake sediment cores taken in various parts of boreal and mid-latitude Europe. Some of these records show cooling to 2–3°C (4–6°F) below modern values during the later third millennium and second millennium B.C., after which the climate recovered to modern values. Another climatic deterioration from warmer and drier to cooler and wetter conditions took place at the Subboreal-Subatlantic transition, a change dated in European peat bogs to around 600 B.C. At this humification feature, known as the *Grenzhorizont* (boundary horizon), dark, oxidized peat, typical of slow-growing mires and often including buried tree stumps, was replaced by relatively undecomposed sphagnum peat typical of wetter, fast-growing mires. The water balance of oceanic bogs in northwestern Europe reflects both temperature and precipitation effects, but the evidence favors temperature as the main forcing factor. Periods of wetter



Fig. 1. Limestone pavement at the Burren, Ireland. © TOM BEAN/CORBIS. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

bog surfaces most probably reflect declining summer temperatures that, in turn, impacted evapotranspiration.

High-latitude Europe has been intensely studied in terms of Holocene climate variability. This is because it possesses many natural climate archives with high temporal resolution, such as tree rings and varved lake sediments, and also because these northern regions were relatively little affected by human landscape disturbance. Tree-ring analysis (dendroclimatology) from regions such as Scandinavia and Ireland shows several periods of narrow growth rings that are inferred to have resulted from years of unusually severe climatic conditions. One such series of years occurred in the seventeenth century B.C. and may be linked to climatic cooling following the explosive eruption of the volcanic island of Thera in the Aegean Sea, whereas another took place in the sixth century A.D. Across much of mid-

latitude Europe, however, the effect of Late Holocene cooling and warming fluctuations was often disguised by increasing human disturbance of the vegetation cover.

CONCLUSION

Pollen diagrams from many areas of Barbarian Europe typically record three phases of human landscape activity between 8000 B.C. and A.D. 1000. The first was Mesolithic hunting and gathering under wildwood; the second was small-scale Neolithic-Chalcolithic “peasant” farming within secondary woodland; and the third phase was dominated by agricultural landscapes of fields and farms created under complex, stratified, Bronze Age, Iron Age, and later societies. Because clearance of the original woodland and consequent land degradation have a long antiquity in this corner of the world, European landscapes can only be understood by considering changes in prehistoric and early historic times as well as those in more recent centuries.

See also **Star Carr** (vol. 1, part 1).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Barber, K., B. Zolitschka, P. Tarasov, and A. F. Lotter. “Past Climatic Variability through Europe and Africa: Atlantic to Urals—The Holocene Climatic Record of Mid-Latitude Europe.” In *Past Climate Variability through Europe and Africa*. Edited by R. W. Battarbee, F. Gasse, and C. E. Stickley. Dordrecht, The Netherlands: Kluwer, forthcoming.
- Bell, Martin, and John Boardman, eds. *Past and Present Soil Erosion: Archaeological and Geographical Perspectives*. Oxford: Oxbow Monographs, 1992.
- Bell, Martin, and Mike J. C. Walker. *Late Quaternary Environmental Change: Physical and Human Perspectives*. Harlow, U.K.: Longman, 1992.
- Berglund, Bjorn E., ed. *The Cultural Landscape during 6000 Years in Southern Sweden: The Ystad Project*. Copenhagen, Denmark: Munksgaard International Booksellers and Publishers, 1991.
- Birks, Hilary H., et al., eds. *The Cultural Landscape: Past, Present, and Future*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1988.
- Brown, A. G. *Alluvial Geoarchaeology: Floodplain Archaeology and Environmental Change*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1997.
- Edwards, K. J., and K. M. Rowntree. “Radiocarbon and Palaeo-Environmental Evidence for Changing Rates of Erosion at a Flandrian Stage Site in Scotland.” In *Timescales in Geomorphology*. Edited by R. A. Culling-

- ford, Donald Allen Davidson, and J. Lewin, pp. 207–223. Chichester, U.K.: Wiley, 1980.
- Evans, J. G. “The Influence of Human Communities on the English Chalklands from the Mesolithic to the Iron Age: The Molluscan Evidence.” In *Climate Change and Human Impact on the Landscape: Studies in Palaeoecology and Environmental Archaeology*. Edited by F. M. Chambers, pp. 147–156. London: Chapman and Hall, 1993.
- Gearey, B. R., D. J. Charman, and M. Kent. “Palaeoecological Evidence for Prehistoric Settlement of Bodmin Moor, Cornwall, South-west England. Part II: Land Use Changes from the Neolithic to the Present.” *Journal of Archaeological Science* 27, no. 6 (2000): 493–598.
- Rackham, Oliver. *Ancient Woodland: Its History, Vegetation, and Uses in England*. London: Edward Arnold, 1980.
- Roberts, Neil. *The Holocene: An Environmental History*. 2d ed. Oxford: Blackwell, 1998.
- Ryan, William B. F., and Walter Pitman. *Noah’s Flood: The New Scientific Discoveries about the Event That Changed History*. New York: Simon & Schuster, 1998.
- Sherratt, Andrew. “Plough and Pastoralism: Aspects of the Secondary Products Revolution.” In *Pattern of the Past: Studies in Honour of David Clarke*. Edited by Ian Hodder, Glynn Isaac, and Norman Hammond, pp. 261–305. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1981.
- Snowball I., et al. “Holocene Climate Dynamics in High-Latitude Europe and the North Atlantic.” In *Past Climate Variability through Europe and Africa*. Edited by R. W. Battarbee, F. Gasse, and C. E. Stickley. Dordrecht, The Netherlands: Kluwer, forthcoming.
- Stevenson, A. C., and R. J. Harrison. “Ancient Forests in Spain: A Model for Land-Use and Dry Forest Management in South-West Spain from 4000 B.C. to 1900 A.D.” *Proceedings of the Prehistoric Society* 58 (1992): 227–247.

NEIL ROBERTS



THE MESOLITHIC OF NORTHERN EUROPE

FOLLOWED BY FEATURE ESSAYS ON:

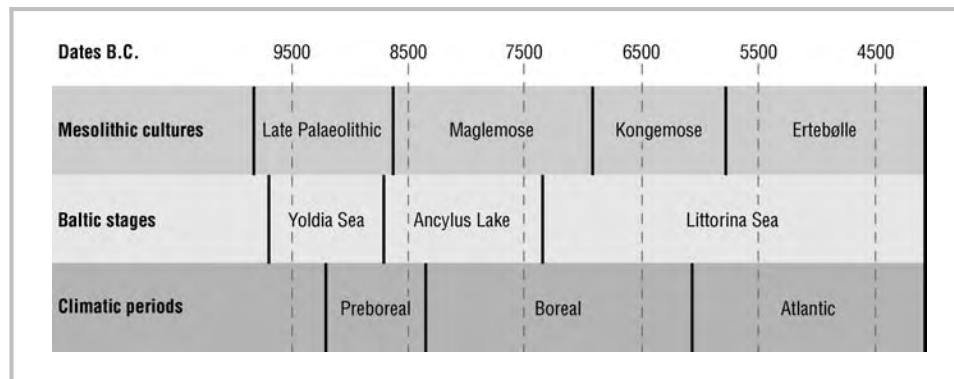
<i>Skatchholm</i>	140
<i>Tybrind Vig</i>	141

After the glaciers retreated from northern Europe at the end of the Ice Age, forests were soon established across northern Germany and Poland, southern Sweden and Norway, and all of Denmark. These forests were inhabited by hunter-gatherers who exploited the abundant game animals and the rich plant life found in these woodlands and the aquatic life in adjacent rivers, lakes, and seas. The postglacial foraging societies of northern Europe are often considered to be the classic manifestation of the Mesolithic way of life. Whether they were coastal communities accumulating immense shell middens or interior bands repeatedly visiting seasonal hunting camps, the Mesolithic groups of northern Europe left behind one of the richest archaeological records of hunter-gatherer societies anywhere in the world. Waterlogged sites in bogs and estuaries have yielded remarkable collections of wood, bone, and antler artifacts in addition to stone tools and early attempts at pottery. Seeds and animal bones are abundant, and new isotopic techniques have allowed archaeologists to study the diet of these foragers in great detail. Burials have provided information about social practices as well as evidence of an increasingly sedentary way of life.

THE BALTIC BASIN

In order to understand the Mesolithic of northern Europe, it is important to know the history of the Baltic Sea, and, in turn, it is necessary to know about two major geomorphological processes: eustasy and isostasy. Eustasy is the change in coastlines caused by rising sea levels that drown low-lying coastal areas, while the upward rebound of land previously burdened by millions of tons of ice is termed isostasy. The combined result of eustasy and isostasy is that many sites that were once on dry land are now under water, as indicated by the finds of artifacts on the floors of coastal bays, while sites elsewhere that were once located on the coast are now far inland or at a higher altitude.

The basin of the Baltic Sea first filled with fresh water from the remnants of the glacial ice to form the Baltic Ice Lake. Eventually (by about 12,200 years ago), so much water had accumulated that it had broken through to the North Sea across central Sweden. The resultant brackish gulf is known as the Yoldia Sea. About 10,800 years ago, the isostatic rebound of central Sweden blocked off the ocean access, leaving a body of fresh water known as the Ancylus Lake. It was dammed at its southern end until



Mesolithic chronology for southern Scandinavia. ADAPTED FROM LARSSON 1990.

some time just after 7000 B.C. The further tilting of the Baltic basin caused by continued isostatic rebound in the north and the total global melting of land ice then caused salt water to flow in through the Øresund, the strait between Denmark and Sweden, to form the Littorina Sea, the precursor of the modern Baltic. Continued eustasy and isostasy has resulted in significant changes in shorelines throughout the Baltic basin during the last several millennia.

Until the 1980s, the archaeological record of the Baltic basin was known almost exclusively from sites on dry land or in bogs, but submerged coastal sites have received greater attention in the years since. Near Kalundborg, along the west coast of the Danish island of Zealand, a swimmer can stand on the remnants of Mesolithic fish-trapping apparatus, for example. The recognition of isostasy as an important process has resulted in the discovery of sites much farther inland and at significantly higher altitudes than they had previously been expected, providing new information about Mesolithic settlement distributions.

MESOLITHIC CULTURES

Archaeologists have applied the traditional approach to defining “cultures” to the Mesolithic of northern Europe, based largely on changes in stone tool assemblages and the eventual appearance of distinctive artifacts such as pottery. This practice is most developed in northern continental Europe and southern Scandinavia, whereas elsewhere in Scandinavia, the Mesolithic is commonly just divided into periods such as “Early,” “Middle,” and “Late.”

The Maglemose-Kongemose-Ertebølle sequence from Denmark and southern Sweden is perhaps the best known Mesolithic sequence in Europe (see table). The Maglemosian culture (not named for any particular site, just derived from the Danish for “big bog”), was the first major Mesolithic culture of southern Scandinavia, characterized by stone axes, microlithic tools, stone picks, and bone and antler barbed points. It was succeeded in Denmark and southern Sweden by the Kongemose culture (after the lake settlement of Kongemosen in Zealand), which continues Maglemosian traditions with stone axes and antler tools but also adds large blades to the stone-tool inventory. During the Atlantic period, Kongemose in turn is succeeded in Denmark and the western Baltic by the Ertebølle culture, about which much will be said below. In northern Germany, Ertebølle remains are known locally as the Ellerbek culture.

In northern Poland and Germany, the Mesolithic cultural sequence is less sharply defined. The Komornica culture of northern Poland is roughly contemporaneous with the Maglemosian and shares broad similarities with it, and it is succeeded by the Chojnice-Pieńki culture. In northern Germany, a variety of local Mesolithic groups tracked the developments in southern Scandinavia.

EARLY MESOLITHIC MOBILE FORAGERS

The foraging societies of northern Europe at the beginning of the Holocene are known primarily from sites along the shores of lakes and bogs. At Friesack, about 150 kilometers northwest of Berlin, hunter-gatherers repeatedly visited the side of a lake be-

tween 8700 and 7800 B.C. They left few traces of their presence, but careful excavation has revealed over thirty visits separated by intervals ranging from a decade to a century. Waterlogged refuse layers at Friesack have preserved a remarkable array of finds. The Preboreal and early Boreal inhabitants of Friesack hunted red deer, roe deer, aurochs, beaver, rabbits, small carnivores, and birds; they also caught pike, catfish, and turtles. Many wooden artifacts, including arrows and a bow, along with nets and baskets, were found. Earlier occupations occurred primarily in the spring, while the later ones took place in the fall. This pattern of repeated seasonal visits to the shores of lakes and bogs was repeated countless times across northern Europe during the early Holocene.

The breakthrough around 7000 B.C. that connected the Littorina Sea to the North Sea inundated many coastal lowlands and the Mesolithic sites at the mouths of rivers and bays. Since the early 1980s, it has been possible to explore a number of submerged Mesolithic settlements, including several from the Preboreal period. The bottoms of the Øresund strait between Denmark and Sweden and of the Store Bælt strait between the Danish islands of Zealand and Fyn are now accessible to archaeologists wearing scuba apparatus. They have found several early Mesolithic sites on the Swedish side of the Øresund between 6 and 20 meters below the surface. At Pihlaken 4, trenches were dug with water nozzles and suction, resulting in the recovery of flint tools and bones from roe deer, red deer, and aurochs. Other sites were found during the construction of the bridge and tunnel between Denmark and Sweden during the 1990s. The new submerged finds indicate that early Mesolithic coastal settlement was probably as intensive as it was later in the Mesolithic.

While the coasts of southern Scandinavia were being inundated by early Holocene eustasy, central Sweden was experiencing dramatic coastline changes due to isostatic rebound. These changes had the most significant impact in the vicinity of the modern city of Stockholm. The rebound began as soon as the area was free of ice and is still continuing today. Soon after the ice retreated, the higher points of land began to poke through the surface of the Yoldia Sea as rocky islands. Since the ice front was not far to the north, icebergs must have floated

among them. By about 8000 B.C., a thin belt of islands extended to the east of the Swedish mainland for about 130 kilometers through this cold, watery world. Around this time, the first humans reached these islands either by boat or by walking across winter ice.

Until the latter part of the twentieth century, the Mesolithic sites of the Stockholm Archipelago were almost completely unknown. Several factors account for this. First, the continual upward movement of the land meant that these sites were far from the sea and on very high terrain. Archaeologists expected to find Mesolithic sites near the coast and in lowlands. The sites had indeed been on the coast, but what was the coast in 8000 B.C. is now 75 meters high and well inland. Second, most tools left by the inhabitants of these sites were made primarily from local white quartz, not flint. Quartz does not fracture like flint to make artifacts that look like the blades and flakes found farther south. Since quartz pieces lie everywhere across the landscape, tools made from quartz blend in with the nondescript pebbles and gravel strewn across the surface.

Once archaeologists learned where and how to find early Mesolithic sites in eastern Sweden, many were found, primarily in forested areas between 70 and 85 meters above modern sea level. The Södertörn Peninsula south of Stockholm was just a small cluster of rocky islets at the outer edge of the archipelago in 8000 B.C., and several hundred Mesolithic sites have been found there since the early 1980s. Also around 8000 B.C., pioneering foragers began to settle the islands of the Stockholm Archipelago, locating their shoreline camps on sheltered bays and along narrow straits between islands. Seal hunting probably drew Mesolithic pioneers to the outer archipelago, while sites on the larger islands closer to the mainland contain a greater variety of hunted animals. Agneta Åkerlund has argued that the inhabitants of the outer islands of the Stockholm archipelago persisted in a distinctive lifestyle that focused on fishing and sealing for several millennia.

Farther out in the Baltic, hunters arrived at Stora Förvar cave on the island of Stora Karlsö, off the coast of Gotland, around 7200 B.C., having crossed Ancylus Lake by boat. The coast of Gotland, as in the Stockholm Archipelago, was the location of gray-seal rookeries. Ashy Mesolithic layers at Stora Förvar contained the remains of more than a

thousand seals. Sea birds and fish were also caught. Human bones in the Stora Förvar deposits indicate the presence of children and adolescents along with male and female adults, so it appears that the site had been inhabited by entire families who came to stay for an extended period rather than by seasonal seal-hunting parties.

LATE MESOLITHIC SEDENTARY FORAGERS

After about 6500 B.C., the Mesolithic cultures of northern Europe became increasingly complex and varied. People became increasingly tied to smaller territories and specific locations. Some Kongemose and Ertebølle sites, such as Tågerup in southern Sweden, have habitation traces that suggest year-round occupation, while elsewhere, seasonal movements became constrained. The use of bulky items like large flint axes and pottery, fixed features such as fish weirs and traps, and the burial of the dead in cemeteries are important evidence for such sedentism. Yet the increased evidence for the use of dug-out canoes indicates that people living in permanent or semipermanent locations were also able to exploit much larger territories along the coasts and among the islands of the Littorina Sea and the North Sea and to move inland along rivers. Mesolithic settlement was also pushed farther north into Sweden and Norway.

The most famous Late Mesolithic sites of northern Europe are the Ertebølle shell middens. These are large deposits of seashells created by millions of individual actions of opening oysters, limpets, and scallops, extracting the meat, and tossing away the shell. The result is a dense, stratified concentration of shell that also includes flint tools and animal bones, yielding important information about diet and tool use. Such “kitchen middens” (in Danish, *køkkenmøddinger*) have long formed the core of our knowledge about the Late Mesolithic of northern Europe and dominate the general archaeological literature.

As important as the coastal shell midden sites are, it is important to recognize that they provide only a partial glimpse of life in the Late Mesolithic. It seems unreasonable to expect that people actually lived on these mounds of discarded shells, so it is necessary to look away from these coastal middens to find more substantial places of habitation. Other

important sites consist of the places where non-shell rubbish was discarded, especially the “discard zones” adjacent to shoreline settlements. A major development in the last decades of the twentieth century was the discovery of several Ertebølle cemeteries in Denmark and southern Sweden, as well as substantial facilities for catching fish on a large scale with traps and weirs. Finally, it is clear that Late Mesolithic people throughout this region did not abandon the interior lakes and bogs around which their activities had revolved during the preceding millennia, and archaeologists have begun to recognize the relationship between the interior and the coastal sites.

Late Mesolithic Interior Settlements. Ringkloster in eastern Jutland (Denmark) is a Late Mesolithic interior site located on the shore of Lake Skanderborg, about 20 kilometers inland from the coast. It consists of a shoreline habitation area and the “dump zone” in the adjacent lake. Ringkloster was occupied intermittently between about 5400 and 3550 B.C. Animal bones reflect both the hunting of terrestrial animals, especially wild boar, and the trapping of small fur-bearing mammals such as pine marten and otter. Seasonal indicators from the animal bones suggest a cold-weather occupation between the autumn and early spring. Bones of dolphin and marine fish point toward contact with the coast. Ringkloster may have been occupied either by Ertebølle foragers, who spent the rest of the year at the coast, or by members of an interior settlement system that was in contact with, but distinct from, the coastal dwellers.

Small islands in interior lakes of southern Scandinavia were favorite late Kongemose and Ertebølle settlement locations. Ageröd V, in the Ageröd bog in southern Sweden, was located on a small island in an immense marshy lake, about 400 meters from the nearest dry land. Fish traps in the surrounding lake provided a supply of perch, bream, and tench. The inhabitants of Ageröd V also went to the mainland to hunt red deer, roe deer, moose, and wild pig, although two of the hunters forgot their bows on the island.

A short distance inland from the modern Baltic coast in northern Poland, the site of Dąbki provides another example of a Late Mesolithic interior site. During several occupations between 5400 and

4600 B.C., the inhabitants of this site hunted beavers, deer, and ducks and caught several species of freshwater fish, especially pike and perch. Two seal bones are the only evidence of contact with the coast, however. The settlement layers at Dąbki contained pointed-base pottery much like that of the Ertebølle sites of southern Scandinavia, suggesting that the distribution of this ware was more widespread along the south Baltic littoral than previously thought.

Late Mesolithic Coastal Settlement. The famous Late Mesolithic settlements and shell middens of the Ertebølle culture of Denmark and southern Sweden were occupied between about 5800 and 3800 B.C. It is important to understand that coastal Ertebølle sites show considerable variability, and they must also be considered together with the interior Ertebølle settlements like Ringkloster for a full picture of Late Mesolithic life in southern Scandinavia.

The name “Ertebølle” comes from a large shell midden at the northern end of Jutland excavated in the mid-nineteenth century by a special commission set up to determine whether the shell mounds were natural or manmade. Since then many other Ertebølle sites have been excavated in eastern Jutland, the Danish islands, and southern Sweden, and related sites of the Ellerbek culture are found in northern Germany and Poland. The classic shell middens are generally found only in the western part of the Ertebølle area, where the high salt content of North Sea water produced large shellfish. Middens are either small or absent in eastern Denmark and southern Sweden because the lower salt content of the Baltic hampered mollusk growth.

Ertebølle itself, located on the Limfjord in northern Jutland, is a long, narrow midden about 140 meters long, 20 meters wide, and 2 meters thick, while the nearby site of Bjørnsholm is about 325 meters long and between 10 and 50 meters wide. Such an elongated shape running parallel to the shoreline is typical of Ertebølle shell middens, which are composed primarily of oyster shells, with some scallops, mussels, and periwinkles. Mixed among the shells are mammal, bird, and fish bones, flint tools, and hearths containing ash and charcoal. Careful excavation has revealed that these middens are not continuous accumulations but rather were

the product of many short occupations that produced piles of shell and refuse between 2 and 7 meters long and between 30 and 50 centimeters thick. Over several centuries, such repeated smaller accumulations built up to form the large middens. Near Ertebølle and Bjørnsholm, several smaller sites on headlands and small islands were special locations for seasonal activities. The general absence of evidence for structures suggests that the surfaces of the Ertebølle middens were primarily the location of food preparation and consumption. Other habitation areas are presumably nearby, perhaps behind the midden on the landward side, but the archaeological focus on the middens themselves has hampered their discovery. The middens may appear to be more important than they actually were in the Ertebølle settlement system, since even a small group eating shellfish can produce an enormous pile of discarded shells in a short time.

On the Danish island of Zealand and along the southern coast of Sweden, many inlets and fjords have yielded extensive traces of Ertebølle settlement without shell middens. In southern Zealand, ninety-seven Ertebølle sites have been found around Karrebæk-Dybsø Fjord, leading to the estimate that this estuarine ecosystem and its hinterland supported about two hundred and fifty people. Similar concentrations of population around fjords and estuaries are coming to light on both sides of the Øresund. Tågerup, for example, lies at the head of a narrow fjord on the Swedish side of the Øresund. Two large circular huts about 7.5 meters in diameter and a longhouse about 15 meters long indicate a substantial permanent Ertebølle settlement, much larger than the previous Kongemose occupation on the site.

A distinctive feature of Ertebølle settlements in Denmark and southern Sweden is the occurrence of pottery (fig. 1). It is unclear whether it was an indigenous development or was adopted from pottery-using farming communities to the south, although at the moment, it seems more likely to have been indigenous. Ertebølle pottery appears in two basic forms: thick-walled, pointed-base, sack-shaped vessels of various sizes and small oval bowls termed “lamps.” Whether or not the latter actually served as oil lamps is unknown. Although the pointed bases on the pots made it impossible to rest them



Fig. 1. Classic Ertebølle pointed-base pot and a smaller vessel interpreted as an oil lamp. THE NATIONAL MUSEUM OF DENMARK. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

upright on a hard surface, they were ideally suited for being set on the ground along a sandy shoreline.

Another important development of the Ertebølle culture was the development of large-scale installations to capture fish using either traps or weirs. Mesolithic fish traps are usually conical wicker baskets with a narrow funnel-like opening in one end. Fish could swim in with the current but could not find their way out again. A trap left in the water long enough would fill with fish by itself. A fish weir is a low, thickly woven fence in a tidal zone. When the tide comes in, fish swim along with it over the fence, but when the water recedes, they are trapped on the beach behind it. The existence of such stationary features reveals that: (1) local populations were large enough to make such construction worthwhile; (2) people controlled the rights to the fish that they caught and were not compelled to share the catch with others who had not participated in the construction (which might have dimin-

ished their motivation to make the effort); and (3) there was some means of preserving or storing the fish that could not be immediately consumed. Underwater investigations in Denmark, especially in conjunction with the building of the Store Bælt Bridge from Zealand to Fyn, have revealed the extent of passive fish trapping. Multiple belts of traps have been found preserved underwater in bays of the Danish islands, and stakes of fish weirs have been found at a number of submerged sites, such as at Tybrind Vig.

The discovery of submerged sites has added a new dimension to the study of the Ertebølle culture since the early 1980s. Most of these areas are covered by about 5 meters of water, but divers have been able to find evidence for activities that, during the Mesolithic era, took place in the intertidal zone as well as artifacts that were lost, discarded, or abandoned immediately offshore. Tybrind Vig, for example, has yielded a remarkable array of wooden

finds in addition to the usual artifacts from flint, bone, and pottery. Some of the most intriguing submerged Ertebølle/Ellerbek sites have been found recently on the northern coast of Germany on the floor of Wismar Bay, around the island of Poel. At Timmendorf-Nordmole, submerged refuse layers have yielded numerous well-preserved artifacts, including many wooden fish prongs called “leisters” (fig. 2), wooden stakes from fish weirs, and the remains of a dugout canoe. Most of the bones come from fish, especially eel and cod, as well as from sea mammals and birds. Radiocarbon dating of food residues on pottery indicate that the site was occupied between about 4400 and 4100 B.C., toward the end of the Ertebølle culture, just before the transition to agriculture in this region.

Ertebølle Cemeteries. In 1975 earth moving for a new school in the town of Vedbæk, north of Copenhagen in Denmark, revealed an Ertebølle cemetery. The cemetery was near the shoreline of what had been an inlet of the sea six thousand years ago. Although some graves had been destroyed by the construction, archaeologists found eighteen burials containing at least twenty-two individuals of various

ages. In many of the graves, red ochre (iron oxide) had been sprinkled over the corpses. The graves of older individuals often contained antlers of red deer. Many females had necklaces and belts of beads made from shell and animal teeth, while males were buried with flint tools.

Almost all of the Vedbæk burials were in an extended position, lying on their backs. One contained the skeletons of a young woman and a newborn infant. Beneath the mother’s head had been a cushion of some perishable material ornamented with snail shells and deer teeth. The baby’s body had been placed on a swan’s wing. More disturbing was the triple burial of a man, a woman, and a child. The man had a bone point in his neck, suggesting either a violent death or an arrow shot into the corpse.

When they were found, the Vedbæk burials caused quite a sensation because, aside from a few isolated single burials, no Ertebølle cemeteries were then known. In years since 1975, more Ertebølle cemeteries have been found, and now more than one hundred graves are known from this period. In the early 1980s, the Swedish archaeologist Lars Larsson of the University of Lund began excavations at sites at Skateholm in southern Sweden, along the shore of a prehistoric lagoon near the Baltic coast. Skateholm I and II are both cemeteries. Skateholm I yielded sixty-five burials, while twenty-two graves were found at Skateholm II. Several of the burials contained the skeletons of dogs, and some had grave goods as elaborate as those of people, including antlers and flint tools.

In 1990–1991 a submerged hunter-gatherer settlement site was found in southern Denmark at Møllegabet. During the excavation, the remains of a dugout canoe were found. The Møllegabet dugout was made from the trunk of a linden tree more than 60 centimeters in diameter. Some human bones were found around the boat, and after it had been taken to a laboratory, additional human bones were found in the soil inside. A return to the site revealed additional human bones that are believed to have washed out of the canoe.

The Møllegabet canoe contained the remains of a male about twenty-five years old. A skull fragment shows traces of a healed wound, probably inflicted by an axe. The body appears to have been covered

in sheets of bark. In the boat, an arrowhead was found. As at Vedbæk, it could have caused the death of this individual or may have been shot into the corpse after the person had died by other means. Antlers found nearby also may have belonged to the burial. The Møllegabet canoe burial suggests that the Nordic tradition of boat burials may have deep prehistoric roots.

The Ertebølle burials from southern Scandinavia reflect a society with complex rituals associated with death. Individuals (even sometimes dogs!) had distinct social identities and were carefully treated after they died. Certain locations were formally associated with the dead, thus marking important places in the landscape.

THE MESOLITHIC OF NORTHERN SCANDINAVIA

Once northern Scandinavia was free from ice, the land was available for human settlement. This region has seen considerable isostatic uplift, such that in some parts of northern Sweden, coastal Mesolithic sites may now lie more than 100 kilometers from the coast. Coastal Norway had already been the scene of hunter-gatherer settlement since early in the Holocene, and valleys in the mountainous interior of Norway and Sweden were settled almost as soon as they were clear of ice.

Alträsket is a Mesolithic coastal site at the northern end of the Gulf of Bothnia that is 25 kilometers inland and 100 meters above the present sea level. Excavations revealed several depressions along an ancient beach-terrace that were the locations of pit-houses with hearths. Other features with stones have been interpreted as “boiling pits.” Mammal bones include ringed seal and moose. As in the area near Stockholm, the northern part of the Baltic basin was an archipelago of rocky islets in the Littorina Sea. Alträsket was located on one such island.

At the far northern end of Norway, on the island of Sørøya, the site of Slettnes has also yielded traces of Mesolithic house depressions. Among these depressions were five large rocks covered with carvings of forest animals such as moose. Slettnes is far above the Arctic Circle, indicating that Mesolithic people were capable of adapting to cold conditions if the rich resources of the sea and the coastal forests made it attractive to do so.

CONCLUSION

The Mesolithic societies of northern Europe provide an important example of how rich natural resources, particularly those of lakes, streams, and seacoasts, can sustain substantial populations. Although agriculture became available in nearby parts of central Europe when communities of the Linear Pottery culture arrived around 5500 B.C. in northern Poland and Germany, there was little incentive to abandon the foraging way of life. Yet when the transition to agriculture did occur in southern Scandinavia about 3900 B.C., it was surprisingly rapid over the entire area between the southern Baltic coast and the Dalarna River in central Sweden. In northern Sweden and Norway, however, an essentially Mesolithic way of life persisted for many more centuries.

See also. Saltbæk Vig (vol. 1, part 1); **Archaeology and Environment** (vol. 1, part 1); **Postglacial Environmental Transformation** (vol. 1, part 2); **Skateholm** (vol. 1, part 2); **Tybrind Vig** (vol. 1, part 2); **The Mesolithic of Northwest Europe** (vol. 1, part 2); **First Farmers of Central Europe** (vol. 1, part 3); **Transition to Farming along the Lower Rhine and Meuse** (vol. 1, part 3); **Transition to Agriculture in Northern Europe** (vol. 1, part 3); **Consequences of Farming in Southern Scandinavia** (vol. 1, part 4).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Åkerlund, Agneta. “Separate Worlds? Interpretation of the Different Material Patterns in the Archipelago and the Surrounding Mainland Areas of East-central Sweden in the Stone Age.” *European Journal of Archaeology* 3, no. 1 (2000): 7–29.
- Andersen, Søren H. “Køkkenmøddinger (Shell Middens) in Denmark: A Survey.” *Proceedings of the Prehistoric Society* 66 (2000): 361–384.
- Gramsch, Bernhard, and Klaus Kloss. “Excavations near Friesack: An Early Mesolithic Marshland Site in the Northern Plain of Central Europe.” In *The Mesolithic in Europe: Papers Presented at the Third International Symposium, Edinburgh, 1985*. Edited by Clive Bonsall, pp. 313–324. Edinburgh: John Donald, 1989.
- Grøn, Ole, and Jørgen Skaarup. “Møllegabet II: A Submerged Mesolithic Site and a ‘Boat Burial.’” *Ærø: Journal of Danish Archaeology* 10 (1991): 38–50.
- Jochim, Michael. “The Mesolithic.” In *European Prehistory: A Survey*. Edited by Sarunas Milisauskas, pp. 115–141. New York: Kluwer Academic/Plenum Publishers, 2002.
- Karsten, Per, and Bo Knarrström. “Tågerup—Fifteen Hundred Years of Mesolithic Occupation in Western Scania:

- A Preliminary View.” *European Journal of Archaeology* 4, no. 2 (2001): 16–174.
- Larsson, Lars. “Settlement and Palaeoecology in the Scandinavian Mesolithic.” In *World Prehistory: Studies in Memory of Grahame Clark*. Edited by John Coles, Robert Bewley, and Paul Mellars, pp. 87–106. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1999.
- . “The Skateholm Project: Late Mesolithic Coastal Settlement in Southern Sweden.” In *Case Studies in European Prehistory*. Edited by Peter Bogucki, pp. 31–62. Boca Raton, Fla.: CRC Press, 1993.
- . “The Mesolithic of Southern Scandinavia.” *Journal of World Prehistory* 4, no. 4 (1990): 257–309.

PETER BOGUCKI

SKATEHOLM

Skateholm is a small coastal village located in the southernmost part of Sweden. A major part of the area close to the coastline comprises a wetland about 4 kilometers in length, running more or less parallel to the present coastline. During the Late Atlantic chronozone (c. 6800–4000 B.C.), which included several transgressions, an inlet was formed in stages. The freshwater from a couple of small rivers was mixed with inflowing saltwater, transforming the inlet into a basin with high levels of nutrition and diverse salinity levels advantageous to a wide variety of fish, birds, and mammals. Such an environment was quite attractive to humans in the Late Mesolithic with a base in fishing, hunting, and gathering. They settled on capes and islands close to the available resources. As a result of the transgressions, favorable sites for settlement subsequently were submerged, and the settlers had to move to suitable new camps. At least four such major settlement sites and several seasonal camps have been identified within the inlet, covering the time sequence 5200–4500 B.C.

Research has been adapted with a view to obtaining an overall picture of the infrastructure of the settlements in an attempt to identify activity areas of various types. This research applies, in particular, to the highest-lying sections with a partially disturbed, find-impooverished layer—in the majority of cases sites situated on slopes. Interest has concentrated on the upper sections of the settlement areas as the

result of research conducted at the Bøgebakken site on the Danish Øresund coast. In 1975 construction work was carried out on the upper reaches of this site, where several graves of Late Mesolithic age came to light. The question was raised whether the Bøgebakken phenomenon was anything other than unique.

At Skateholm the main area of interest, toward which the majority of fieldwork has been directed, has been the investigation of nearly ninety burials on two main sites, Skateholm I and Skateholm II, located just a couple of hundred meters apart. Investigations have shown that Skateholm II is somewhat older than Skateholm I. Both sites contain numerous graves, which also were related to a contemporaneous settlement. Within the compass of a small area it is possible to study similarities and differences in the pattern of settlement and burial customs over the space of several hundred years. The size, location, and great age of the two cemeteries are naturally of considerable interest to the researcher, although there is another, equally fascinating aspect that concerns insight into the symbolic world provided by the cemeteries and burials.

The processing of the Skateholm material has produced indications that point to a complicated burial ritual. These rituals concern not only the interment itself but also the whole range of activities from the moment it was realized that a person was dying up to the act of refilling the grave. The dying person appears to have eaten a “last supper” with a particular content, evidence of which is provided by the fish bones in the stomach. The positioning of the deceased in the grave and the composition of the grave goods followed a particular pattern. The ritual included the deposition not only of objects such as tools and ornaments, which are classified as grave goods, but also of the skeletal parts of animals. Food, including fish, also was placed in the grave.

Various activities took place in connection with the filling in of the grave. Food was eaten, and the leftovers were deposited in the filling material. Traces of wooden structures raised over the grave pit have been found. These structures had been burned down before the refilling of the grave. The Mesolithic mortuary practice also included a small number of cremations, three out of eighty-seven. Three main categories of body positions can be

identified: supine, seated, and crouching. The composition of the grave goods follows a more distinctive gender pattern than do the body positions. Tools, such as knives and axes, typically are found with men, whereas women have ornaments, such as belt decorations made of animal teeth. In addition various combinations of animal bones were sewn onto the clothes. Antlers also are found buried in a few graves. Red ochre was used frequently, more often than not covering only limited parts of the deceased person's body.

Certain differences in mortuary practice can be detected between the cemeteries. The crouching position, for example, is virtually unknown in the older cemetery at Skateholm II, whereas almost two of every five people interred at Skateholm I were placed in this position. The custom of depositing red deer antlers in graves is, on the contrary, quite unknown at Skateholm I, whereas it is a common feature at Skateholm II. At Skateholm the first evidence of dog graves was found. Dogs were provided with grave goods and were strewn with red ochre, reflecting a symbolism that appears to have applied to humans and dogs alike.

Investigations of grave fields such as those at Skateholm have radically influenced the approach to Late Mesolithic societies in northern Europe. The evidence of large grave fields with complex burial practices has added to the fund of information about the society. The Skateholm cemeteries thus can be placed in an interesting context with regard to both western and eastern Europe. Similarities exist between the cemeteries at Skateholm and those at Bøgebakken in eastern Denmark, for example. Several sites from the Late Mesolithic of southern Scandinavia have provided both cemeteries and single graves. Cemeteries in conjunction with large settlements seem to be a common feature.

Mesolithic cemeteries occur in western Europe in conjunction with shell middens, such as those at Téviec and Hoëdic in Brittany. New studies and radiometric dating of previously investigated cemeteries have provided a fresh and valuable perspective on Mesolithic cemeteries along the eastern Baltic coast and neighboring areas. The large cemetery at Oleneostrovskii Mogilnik in Karelia has been shown to be of Mesolithic age, and the cemeteries at Oleneostrovskii Mogilnik and at Zvejnieki in west-

ern Latvia are contemporary with the oldest known burials in Scandinavia.

See also *Oleneostrovskii Mogilnik* (vol. 1, part 3).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Larsson, L. "The Skateholm Project: Late Mesolithic Coastal Settlement in Southern Sweden." In *Case Studies in European Prehistory*. Edited by P. Bogucki, pp. 31–62. Boca Raton, Fla.: CRC Press, 1993.

LARS LARSSON

TYBRIND VIG

The Late Mesolithic Stone Age settlement of Tybrind Vig, which today is submerged, is located on the west coast of the Danish island Fyn (central Denmark) facing a sea called Lillebælt. Originally, it was a coastal settlement, but because of a geological tilting of the southwestern part of Denmark that has taken place since the Mesolithic, the prehistoric coastlines of this part of the country today are submerged. The site therefore now lies on the seafloor, c. 250 meters from the present-day coast and 2–3 meters below modern sea level. Because of the gradual rise in sea level, the habitation area proper (on dry land) was heavily eroded, while the lower and more protected parts of the site, mainly the waste or dump areas in the adjacent marine deposits, were and still are well preserved. There, the prehistoric remains have always been situated in wet, oxygen-free, and calcareous sediments, the best preservation conditions for "soft" organic materials, such as wood, bark, fibers, and bast, so far seen at northern European settlement sites.

The area around Tybrind Vig is hilly and was formed during the end of the Late Glacial of Denmark, c. 16,000 B.C. During the Mesolithic the site was located on a protected bay with shallow waters and connected to the more open sea (Lillebælt) by a narrow canal. The subsoil consists of a mixture of morainic clay and sand combined with gravel. The surrounding area was covered by primeval forest of lime, oak, and elm with thickets of hazel. Along the seashore there was a belt of seaweed.

The settlement was occupied during a gradual rise (transgression) in sea level, so the lower sedi-

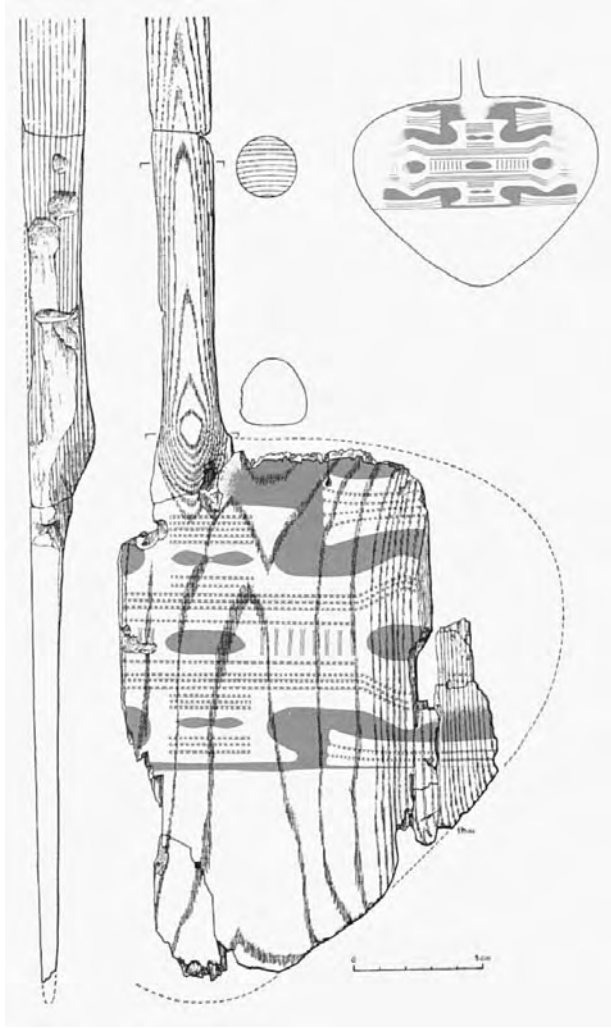


Fig. 1. Ornamented paddle from Tybrind Vig. COURTESY OF SØREN H. ANDERSEN, NATIONAL MUSEUM OF DENMARK. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

ments are more coarse and sandy, while the top horizons consist of fine-grained mud (*gyttja*). During the transgression the surrounding coastal areas were eroded, and a large number of forest trees died and fell into the water and later became embedded in the marine sediments. Today these tree trunks allow for exact dating by dendrochronology and also give an indication of the duration of habitation. Carbon-14 dates inform us that the occupation period spanned some 1,500 years, from about 5500 to 4000 B.C., that is, the entire duration of the Ertebølle culture in southwestern Scandinavia.

The Tybrind site is the first and still the most extensive underwater excavation of a Stone Age settlement in Nordic waters. It was there that the great

scientific potential of such sites became evident for the first time—mainly owing to the excellent preservation conditions for organic materials. This also was the site where Danish archaeologists learned how to excavate settlements on the seafloor and developed the necessary expertise and technical equipment for such investigations.

As mentioned, the habitation area proper eroded away during the transgression, and only the grave of a young girl and a newborn baby was still in place in this part of the settlement. All other finds of material culture and waste from the site were excavated in the adjacent marine deposits, where they had ended up during occupation. Besides the huge amount of waste, the area in front of the settlement also functioned as a “fishing ground,” evidenced by the presence of hundreds of stakes from destroyed fish fences, fishhooks (of bone), nets, net floats, fish weirs, and leister prongs. This area probably was the access to richly stocked waters that were the main reason for selecting this particular spot for habitation.

The hundreds of animal bones—mainly from fish (small cod, flatfish, and dogfish); sea mammals, such as gray seals and porpoises (but also one killer whale); and red and roe deer and wild boar—give evidence of the economy of the site. In the forest fur-bearing animals, such as pine marten, otter, fox, and badger, were trapped. The only domesticated animal was the dog. Hazelnuts and acorns were collected and roasted at the site. The types of animal bones and chemical analysis of human bones, combined with the wide array of fishing equipment and the location of the settlement, supports a clear dominance of a marine diet.

The excavation has shed light on many aspects of material culture and art. All the ordinary artifacts of the Ertebølle culture, such as flint, other types of stone, bone, antler, and pottery—as known from sites on dry land—have been recovered. Because of the long duration of occupation, some changes in the inventory also were seen, most notably, the oldest ceramics in southern Scandinavia, dating to c. 4700 B.C.

A large array of wooden implements has been found at the site. Among them are axe handles of different sizes, lances, spears, bows and arrows, and a variety of paddles. There also were several dugout

canoes, made of hollowed-out trunks of lime trees, one that measures 9.5 meters in length with a capacity of up to 700 kilograms. In addition, there are a variety of tool types that have never been encountered earlier from the northern European Late Mesolithic, and whose uses are obscure. The number and diversity of items of wooden equipment clearly show how essential this material was—it is estimated that only about 10 percent of the all the equipment consisted of flint.

The most extraordinary finds were textiles made of twisted strings of lime and willow knitted together in a technique called “needle netting”; these are the oldest European textiles found to date. There also are several ornamented paddles exemplifying a completely new type of Mesolithic craft working in “soft materials” (wood). The motifs are very different from those of earlier finds on ornamented bone, antler, and amber; these new designs consist of rounded curves, ovals, circles, and similar geometric shapes carved into the surface of the paddles and filled with a brown substance (possibly paint). For the first time we also have been able to analyze the remains of charred food crust from the inside of the pointed-bottom Ertebølle pots, telling us that they were used for cooking soup made of cod with a mixture of herbs of the grass family.

Excavation of this type of Mesolithic site opens up completely new avenues for Stone Age research in northern Europe. On dry land, agriculture or drainage has destroyed nearly all wetlands. On the seafloor we still can obtain a wide range of information, not only on material culture but also on subsis-

tence and the environment, information that was lost long ago in now dried wetlands.

See also *Saltbæk Vig* (vol. 1, part 1).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Andersen, Søren H. “A Submerged Ertebølle Settlement in Denmark.” In *European Wetlands in Prehistory*. Edited by John M. Coles and Andrew J. Lawson, pp. 253–280. Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1987.
- . “Mesolithic Dug-outs and Paddles from Tybrind Vig, Denmark.” *Acta Archaeologica* 57 (1986): 87–106.
- . “Tybrind Vig: A Preliminary Report on a Submerged Ertebølle Settlement on the West Coast of Fyn.” *Journal of Danish Archaeology* 4 (1985): 52–70.
- Jørgensen, Lise B. “Stone-Age Textiles in North Europa.” In *Textiles in Northern Archaeology*. Edited by Penelope Walton and John-Peter Wild, pp. 1–10. North European Symposium for Archaeological Textiles Monograph, no. 3. London: Archetype Publications, 1990.
- Trolle-Lassen, Tine. “Human Exploitation of Fur Animals in Mesolithic Denmark: A Case Study.” *Archaeozoologia* 1, no. 2 (1987): 85–102.
- . “Human Exploitation of the Pine Marten (*Martes martes* L.) at the Late Mesolithic Settlement of Tybrind Vig in Western Funen.” In *Nordic Late Quaternary Biology and Ecology*. Edited by Lars-König Königsson, pp. 119–124. Uppsala, Sweden: Societas Upsaliensis pro Geologia Quaternaria, 1986.
- . “Preliminary Report on the Archaeological and Zoological Evidence of Fish Exploitation from a Submerged Site in Mesolithic Denmark.” In *Second Fish Osteoarchaeology Meeting*. Edited by Natalie Desse-Breset, pp. 133–143. Centre de Recherches Archéologiques Notes et Monographies Techniques, no. 16. Paris: Éditions du C.N.R.S., 1984.

SØREN H. ANDERSEN



THE MESOLITHIC OF NORTHWEST EUROPE

FOLLOWED BY FEATURE ESSAYS ON:

<i>Mount Sandel</i>	151
<i>Star Carr</i>	153

The Mesolithic of northwest Europe is the period between the end of the last Ice Age and the widespread adoption of agriculture. During the Mesolithic the region was occupied by hunter-gatherers, but the term itself refers specifically to a technological stage. Translated literally, it means “Middle Stone Age” and was adopted in the 1920s, when this period was viewed as a not particularly interesting interlude between the old and new Stone Ages—the Palaeolithic and the Neolithic. This view is no longer accepted, and the Mesolithic is now seen as the period in northwest Europe when anatomically modern humans adapted to the challenges and opportunities of the Postglacial environment. Conventionally, it spans six millennia beginning about 10,000 B.C.

TECHNOLOGY

The diagnostic artifacts of the Mesolithic in northwest Europe are retouched blades of chert, flint, or similar stone, referred to as “microliths,” because of their often very small size; examples less than 10 millimeters long are common. These microliths were components in composite hunting weapons, usually arrows. One microlith provided the piercing tip, while others mounted in series down the shaft acted as barbs, not to secure the arrow in the wound

but to increase its size and stimulate bleeding. Examples have been found in Sweden, still mounted in their shafts. The adoption of the bow and arrow as the principal hunting weapon is a characteristic of the Mesolithic, although the origins of the practice lie among the Late Upper Palaeolithic communities at the end of the Ice Age.

Microliths underwent development over time, and the various stages that have been identified have been used by archaeologists to subdivide the period. This practice has been superseded by the widespread application of radiocarbon dating. Three broad typological categories, however, are still referred to widely in the literature (fig. 1). The earliest types of microlith found in the northern part of the region were made on relatively broad blades that had been obliquely snapped, or truncated, to produce a robust tip. The origins of this type are found in Late Upper Palaeolithic assemblages referred to as Ahrensburgian. One lateral margin was abruptly retouched to facilitate insertion into the arrow shaft, and additional retouching sometimes extended around the tip and the base. These broad-blade, obliquely blunted points are widespread in southern Scandinavia, but they also are the characteristic find of the period down to about 8000 B.C. in the British Isles, the Low Countries, and northeastern France.

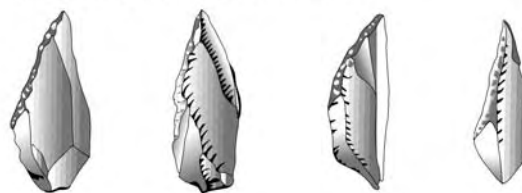
Assemblages in which this type predominates are referred to as Maglemosian in southern Scandinavia, but outside this region they are simply termed Early Mesolithic.

Farther south, obliquely truncated blades also dominate early assemblages, but the blades themselves tend to be narrower than those used in the north and the resulting microliths more geometric in form. They seem to have been influenced by the small, simple backed blades of the Late Upper Palaeolithic Azilian assemblages. In the literature these assemblages are termed Sauveterrian, named after the type site of Sauveterre-la-Lémance in France. During the period between 10,000 and 7000 B.C., microliths of this type spread from central and southern France throughout the region, replacing the broad-blade forms as the predominant type in the north in the eighth millennium B.C. During this period microliths also became smaller, narrower, and more geometric in form.

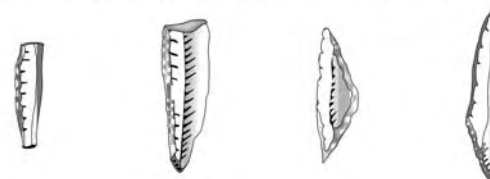
The third major technological stage was confined to mainland northwest Europe and saw the introduction from about 7000 B.C. of trapeze-shaped microliths. This stage is called the Tardenoisian, after the type site of Fère-en-Tardenois in France. The introduction of trapezoidal microliths suggests a change in hunting tactics, the trapezes being mounted singly at the end of the arrow shaft. Trapezes did not spread to the British Isles, where Late Mesolithic assemblages are characterized by the continued development of narrow-blade geometric microliths.

The Mesolithic hunter-gatherers of northwest Europe used a wide range of materials in addition to chert and flint, but because many were perishable, few examples survive. Bone and antler provide something of an exception, and two categories of implements made from these materials have been recovered in significant numbers: barbed projectile points and heavy-duty digging tools known as mattocks. Barbed points, which functioned as arrowheads, spearheads, and harpoon heads, also are known from Late Upper Palaeolithic assemblages; during the Mesolithic many different types were made to suit specific needs. The main change over time was in the production blanks, with long splinters of bone or antler being replaced about 8000 B.C. by blanks made from split sections of long bone or antler beam. The mattocks show fewer signs of

Early Broad-Blade Microliths ("Maglemosian" type)



Early and Late Narrow-Blade Microliths ("Sauveterrian" type)



Late Trapezoidal Microliths ("Tardenoisian" type)

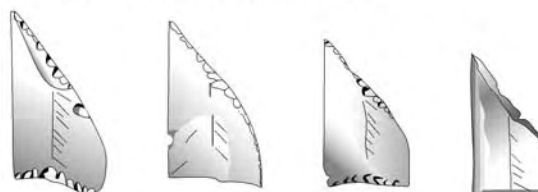


Fig. 1. Artifact types of the Earlier (Maglemosian) and Later (Sauveterrian and Tardenoisian) Mesolithic from northwest Europe. Widths of the microliths depicted here range from about 0.5 centimeters (narrow-blade) to 1.5 centimeters (trapezoidal).

development through time. Early Mesolithic examples are made from the basal sections of the antler, whereas antler beams were favored in the Late Mesolithic. Other, spectacular finds made from organic materials include several dugout canoes and basketwork fish traps.

SUBSISTENCE

The Mesolithic people of northwest Europe were hunter-gatherers, and their subsistence activities were governed by what was available. There are indications, however, that toward the end of the period, some groups were beginning to manage aspects of their environment through the controlled use of forest fires to enhance its productivity. Over the six millennia of the Mesolithic period, the environment of northwest Europe underwent a series of significant changes. In terms of plants and animals, species that had been driven out of the region or into its more southerly latitudes by the harsh conditions of the Ice Age migrated northward as the climate ameliorated. Throughout most of the Mesolithic the re-

gion was cloaked in a dense mantle of deciduous woodland, although the mosaic of species varied with latitude. For example, oak was predominant everywhere; in the south, warmth-loving species, such as pistachio, formed a significant component, whereas in the north, birch was often a major component.

These woodlands provided a home for a range of animals, many of which experienced human predation. The most favored animals appear to have been red and roe deer, wild cattle, and wild boar. Moose were important early in the period, but their absence after about 9000 B.C. suggests that habitat loss and predation had led to their extinction within the region. Small animals, such as hare, beavers, and pine martens, were trapped mainly for their pelts, and birds, especially waterfowl, also were taken. Evidence from a number of sites indicates that dogs had been domesticated by this time, and their status in society is reflected by the fact that they occasionally are found to have been given formal burial in cemeteries otherwise occupied by humans. Little is known about the use of plant resources, owing to the rarity with which such material survives, although hazelnuts are almost ubiquitous.

Aquatic resources, both freshwater and marine, made a significant contribution to subsistence, but their role needs to be evaluated in light of the major changes in sea level that occurred during this period. At the height of the Ice Age much of the Earth's water was locked up in continental ice sheets and, as a consequence, sea level was greatly reduced. Estimates vary, but eighteen thousand years ago the sea level around northwest Europe may have been as much as 130 meters lower than it is today. With the melting of the ice sheets, the sea level began to rise, but by the beginning of the Mesolithic it was still around 35 meters below the present level. Britain did not become an island until the middle of the eighth millennium B.C. The effect of these changes in sea level was profound. During the Early Mesolithic the area of the North Sea was dry land, and bands of hunters could walk dry-shod from the Low Countries to southeast England. As sea levels rose, the loss of land led to population displacement. It also produced lengthening of the coastline and flooding of estuaries. These processes greatly increased the availability of aquatic resources and fish; marine mammals and shellfish became important

components in later Mesolithic subsistence strategies. Substance patterns in Mesolithic northwest Europe can be illustrated by considering the faunal inventories recovered from numerous key sites.

The site of Star Carr in Yorkshire, England, provides a good example of subsistence during the Early Mesolithic. This site, which is one of several lying along the shores of a Late Glacial/Early Postglacial lake, experienced two periods of occupation during the middle of the ninth millennium B.C. As well as large numbers of Early Mesolithic microliths and barbed antler points, the excavators recovered bones of moose, wild cattle, red and roe deer, pine marten, fox, and beavers. Surprisingly, no fish remains were recovered, but birds included red-breasted merganser, red-throated diver, and great crested grebe. Edible plant remains reported from Star Carr were water chestnuts, bog bean, fat hen, and nettle, in addition to hazelnuts.

The site at Mount Sandel in the valley of the River Bann in Northern Ireland was occupied during the later part of the ninth millennium B.C., and the flint assemblage was dominated by narrow-blade, geometric microliths, although a few broad-blade forms also were present. Of the mammal bones recovered, 98 percent were of wild boar. Ireland was cut off from mainland Britain by rising sea level at an early stage in the Postglacial, and this specialization on a single species may have been due to the impoverished nature of the available fauna, few species having successfully established themselves before access was cut off. Among the birds recorded were mallard, teal, wigeon, grouse, capercaillie, and snipe or woodcock. Fish were well represented, and 80 percent of the identified bones came from salmon or sea trout. Eel and bass also were present, and plant remains included hazelnut shells, pear or apple pips, and water-lily seeds, all of which probably contributed to the diet.

The faunal assemblage from the small rock shelter of L'Abri du Pape in the Meuse Valley of Belgium provides good insight into the species preyed upon by the Mesolithic hunters of this part of northwest Europe during the eighth and early seventh millennia B.C. Mammals comprised red and roe deer, wild boar, wild cattle, otter, fox, and wild cat, although the quantities of each are small. Predation appears to have been focused on river fish and birds, of which more than thirty different species have

been identified. The fish species include carp, pike, catfish, eel, salmon, perch, and shad.

The sites of Tévéc and Hoëdic now lie on small islands off the coast of Brittany, but during the Mesolithic lower sea levels may have meant that they were on promontories joined to the mainland. These sites were excavated in the early years of the twentieth century, and the available details are not as extensive as for Star Carr and Mount Sandel. Nonetheless, the presence of trapezoidal microliths allows them to be placed in the later Mesolithic. Both sites consisted mainly of accumulations of food debris, called middens, into which had been inserted numerous human burials. Among the food species identified were shellfish, such as limpet, periwinkle, mussel, oyster, and scallop, and numerous fish bones, mainly of wrasse. Bird remains included waterfowl and auks; mammals consisted of red and roe deer, wild boar, fox and wildcat, and plants exploited included wild pear.

Finally, the excavated sites at Hardinxveld-Giessendam near Rotterdam in the Netherlands have provided abundant data on subsistence resources at the end of the Mesolithic and the beginning of the Neolithic. The site at Polderweg was situated on a riverbank and witnessed three phases of occupation during the latter part of the sixth millennium B.C. Throughout this period the main activity appears to have been pike fishing, probably undertaken during the second half of the winter. Roach, bream, tench, eels, catfish, and salmon also were caught, probably through the use of sophisticated traps. Beaver and otter were the most important mammals, probably trapped for their pelts, as were pine marten, wild cat, and polecat. The remains of wild boar and red and roe deer also were present in the assemblage. Fowling concentrated on ducks, and plant resources comprised acorns, hazelnut, water nut, wild apple, and various berries. The flint assemblage at Polderweg is dominated by simple blades but includes three arrowheads of a type normally found on Early Neolithic *Linearbandkeramik* sites in the region. The presence of simple bag-shaped pottery vessels also testifies to contacts between these Late Mesolithic hunter-gatherers and their Early Neolithic neighbors; unlike the nearby and slightly later site of De Bruin, however, domestic animals and cultivated grains are absent.

SETTLEMENT PATTERNS

It is thought that the Polderweg site was occupied mainly during January and February, and the issue of the seasonal availability of resources needs to be kept in mind when considering settlement patterns in the Mesolithic. In general, hunter-gatherers needed to live a mobile, seminomadic existence, moving from one area to another as resources became available at different times of the year. The deciduous woods of northwest Europe offered a fairly homogeneous environment, but seasonal movements would have been undertaken by most groups, migrating between the coasts and the interior and between the lowlands and uplands. Movement also would have been necessitated when resources in one region became exhausted or disturbance of prey species led to diminishing returns.

Two patterns of mobility can be identified. In one, the whole group moved on a fairly frequent basis, at least each season or more often, and hunting and gathering took place within a day's march of the residential location. The American anthropologist Lewis Binford coined the term "residential foraging" for this pattern of behavior. In the alternative pattern, moves were made less frequently, and part of the group might have remained in one location over several seasons while specialist task groups were sent out to hunt and gather farther afield. Binford calls this "logistic collecting." These two patterns each represent either end of a continuum, and it is unlikely that any Mesolithic population adhered to one extreme or the other. Rather, the emphasis probably shifted on a tactical basis from season to season and from year to year. Groups may have been residential foragers in spring and early summer, when resources were generally scarce, but shifted to a more logistic strategy in autumn, which was the season of plenty. Storage of the autumn abundance may have limited the need for frequent moves in the winter.

Settlement mobility is difficult to demonstrate, but it sometimes is possible to show that a site was occupied only at certain times of the year, with the implication that at other times the people were living elsewhere. Star Carr was visited mainly in the spring and summer, Mount Sandel in the autumn, and Polderweg during the winter. Another way of monitoring mobility is through the distribution of

raw materials. For example, flint found on Mesolithic sites in the Pennine uplands in northern England originated up to 80 kilometers away in Yorkshire, whereas material found at Polderweg came from the Meuse gravels 50 to 100 kilometers away. It may reasonably be assumed that these materials give an indication of the distances covered by the groups in the course of an annual cycle. Caution must be exercised in interpretation, however, as in the case of Wommersom quartzite, items of which also were found at Polderweg. This material outcrops naturally in a very restricted area of central Belgium, but artifacts made from it are found over an area of about 45,000 square kilometers, extending from the North Sea to the valleys of the Rhine and Meuse. Within this area the distribution can be subdivided into a core lying between the Meuse and Schelde in which Wommersom quartzite can form up to 77 percent of assemblages and a wider zone in which its contribution to assemblages is usually less than 5 percent. Whereas the distribution within the core area probably reflects the movements of individual groups to and from the source or the deployment of logistic task groups, the marked falloff indicated by the wider distribution is more reminiscent of the patterns generated by down-the-line trade or exchange.

These patterns of mobility have meant that archaeologists can encounter a range of site types. From the finds made, some appear to have been home bases where the whole group resided for at least part of the time, while others seem to have been the locations of more specialized activities. Among the latter are hunting camps used by logistic task groups when away from the home base and extraction sites, such as the locations where raw materials were collected and animals were killed. Home bases are the most common type of site identified in northwest Europe during the Mesolithic, which suggests that the most frequently followed pattern was one of residential foraging. Star Carr, Mount Sandel, and Polderweg probably are examples of home bases, although the latter two sites appear to have become hunting camps during a later phase of activity. The shell-midden sites along the Atlantic seaboard, such as Tévéc and Hoëdic and those on the island of Oronsay in the Hebrides, may reflect specialist activities.

Population numbers are notoriously difficult to estimate, but comparison with recent hunter-gatherer populations suggests that northwest Europe at the height of the Mesolithic is unlikely to have supported more than 100,000 people and possibly far fewer. Published estimates for the British Isles at the end of the Mesolithic suggest a range of between 2,750 and 5,500. Residential foragers usually lived in small groups, or bands, made up of just a few families. Archaeology can tell little about the social relations within and between these bands. In common with recent hunter-gatherer societies, bands probably were fairly egalitarian, with leadership provided on a tactical basis by skilled individuals. Older members would have had a valued role as repositories of knowledge and experience. Relations with other bands are likely to have ranged between amity and enmity, depending on the degree of competition over resources, and probably were managed by a complex system of alliances. Toward the end of the period, as population levels increased, more complex, hierarchical social structures may have emerged. During periods of abundance it would have been possible for several bands to come together, perhaps at regular intervals. Such gatherings would have been highly necessary both socially, for the exchange of information and the maintenance of alliances, and genetically, for the maintenance of a healthy gene pool through the exchange of marriage partners.

SETTLEMENT STRUCTURES

Very little is known about the kind of structures erected on Mesolithic settlements. This is hardly surprising, given the transitory nature of most settlements. Many temporary campsites may not have had any structures other than a windbreak and a fireplace. In areas where the geology was suitable, such as the Meuse Valley in Belgium, southwest France, and the limestone regions of England and Wales, caves were used on an occasional basis. Nowhere does this seem to have been a popular or widespread practice, however, and caves were used almost as frequently as burial grounds. Some early sources make reference to "pit dwellings," holes in the ground thought to have been roofed over and occupied as shelters. This view is no longer accepted, and these features now are interpreted as tree-fall hollows, the presence of Mesolithic finds in and around them being regarded as accidental. The

identification of a few substantial Mesolithic structures nonetheless indicates that this absence of evidence is in part due to the exigencies of survival.

The best examples of Mesolithic houses excavated in northwest Europe are the structures uncovered at Mount Sandel in Northern Ireland. There, three D-shaped huts were identified that could have been occupied at the same time. Each structure was 5.5 meters in diameter and had a central hearth. Walls were indicated by stake holes, which inclined inward, suggesting a superstructure of bent and tied saplings. The whole structure presumably was covered with vegetation or hides. These huts provided 30 square meters of floor space, and each could have accommodated a single family, suggesting a three-family co-residential group. Traces of similar structures have been reported from elsewhere in the region.

SYMBOLISM, RITUAL, AND BURIAL

Compared with the preceding Upper Palaeolithic, which saw the flourishing of cave art, the Mesolithic in northwest Europe is an impoverished period, with little more to offer than a few bone and antler implements with rudimentary abstract engravings and some putative anthropomorphic figurines. By far the best example is the 125-millimeter-high statuette from Willemstad, in North Brabant, the Netherlands, dated to the mid-sixth millennium B.C. This is carved on a plank of oak and consists of the head and part of the upper body; the gender is unspecified. It was found in a peat bog and probably was a ritual deposit rather than a casual loss.

Other evidence for ritual behavior, apart from burial, is virtually nonexistent. At the site of Star Carr in Yorkshire, England, twenty-one red deer antler frontlets were recovered. They had been adapted for wearing as headdresses; rather than simply regarding them as deer-stalking disguises, it has been claimed that they are evidence for a hunting ritual. This distinction between secular and ritual behavior probably did not apply in the ninth millennium B.C., and hunting may have been a highly ritualized activity. Similar modified frontlets are known from elsewhere in northwest Europe but not in such large numbers.

Burial is the one form of ritual behavior for which there is evidence throughout the region, but even so this area stands in poor comparison with

southern Scandinavia and the Baltic, from which most of the evidence about Mesolithic funeral practices has been derived. The fact that northwest Europe has produced a few hundred Mesolithic burials at most means that the great majority of people were not afforded the right of formal burial but had their mortal remains disposed of in some other way. A hint as to what happened to them is provided by the Mesolithic shell middens on the island of Oronsay in the Hebrides, Scotland. Excavation of a group of these sites failed to identify any formal burials but did recover a number of isolated bones, mostly of fingers and toes. The explanation that has been offered is that the dead were laid out on exposed platforms while they decomposed. When this process was complete, the bones were collected for disposal elsewhere; inevitably a few small bones would occasionally get lost. There is evidence for this practice from recent hunter-gatherers, and it represents a parsimonious explanation for the absence of numerous burials and the occurrence of isolated bones.

Some segments of the population were buried formally. In certain cases these were single individuals buried within or close to settlements. A good example is the burial of an adult woman of about fifty years of age during an early phase at the Polderweg settlement. She was laid on her back in an extended position (fig. 2). A greatly disturbed second burial was found nearby, along with those of three dogs. Caves featured prominently in Mesolithic burial rituals, both for individuals, as in the case of Cheddar Man, a burial of the late ninth millennium B.C. found in Goughs Cave, Cheddar Gorge, England, and for groups. Examples of the latter come from the Meuse Valley in Belgium, where ten to eleven female burials are reported from the Margaux Cave and five adults and six children from the Autours rock shelter. These cave burials all date to the ninth millennium B.C., as is also the case with the seventy or more burials reported from Avelines Hole, near Cheddar, England (most of them were found more than a century ago, however, and few details are available).

In northwest Europe the best examples of Mesolithic cemeteries outside caves are the Breton shell-midden sites of Tévéc and Hoëdic. In Tévéc ten graves contained the remains of twenty-three individuals, whereas at Hoëdic nine graves contained thirteen people. That many graves at these Late



Fig. 2. Late Mesolithic grave of an adult woman at Hardinxveld-Polderweg, The Netherlands. COURTESY OF DR. L. P. LOUWE KOOIJMANS, LEIDEN UNVIERSITY. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

Mesolithic sites contain more than one inhumation is particularly interesting, as collective burial was to become a major feature of funerary rites in the subsequent Early Neolithic period. One burial at Téviec, that of a young adult man, provides further in-

sight into life in the Late Mesolithic, in that he was found to have a transverse arrowhead embedded in his spine. Other cases of violent death are known from elsewhere in Europe, particularly southern Scandinavia and southeast Europe, and it has been suggested that the Late Mesolithic period witnessed the origins of formal warfare. The evidence is insufficient to support such a sweeping conclusion, but these cases do suggest a degree of interpersonal violence not witnessed earlier.

The end of the Mesolithic in the region is marked by a shift to the adoption of farming during the Neolithic. The reasons for this change are the subject of debate; environmental, economic, and social pressures have been proposed as the driving forces, and a single explanation is unlikely to apply throughout the region. What is not in question is that farming makes it possible to support a larger population, and population pressure must have played a part in convincing people of the advantages of adopting agriculture. The origins of farming are to be sought outside northwest Europe, in the Near East, Anatolia, and southeast Europe, and the process of adoption in northwest Europe was gradual, spanning at least a millennium. Domesticated sheep and goats are reported from the French Mediterranean site of Chateaufneuf-les-Martiques in the sixth millennium B.C., whereas domestic animals are not recorded in the north of the region before the mid-fifth millennium. At one time it was believed that farming was spread by Neolithic immigrants, but it is now considered more likely that it was adopted selectively by the indigenous Mesolithic population. Nevertheless, it remains the case that the species involved and the ideas about their management had to be introduced from outside.

Two sources of this influence can be detected in northwest Europe. On the one hand, on the Mediterranean coasts, elements of Neolithic culture, such as pottery and grinding stones, begin to appear in Mesolithic assemblages in the seventh millennium B.C. On the other hand, in the northeast, pottery and specialized types of arrowhead, derived from the Early Neolithic farmers of the *Linearbandkeramik* culture, appeared in late Mesolithic assemblages by the beginning of the fifth millennium. In both cases elements of material culture were adopted before the first signs of domestic crops or farm animals. Given the several million years of the span

of human history, the period of time over which farming was adopted in northwest Europe was brief, and by 4000 B.C. it had spread throughout the region. Hunting and gathering continued to be part of the way of life, however, for many communities for more than a millennium.

See also **Mount Sandel** (vol. 1, part 2); **Star Carr** (vol. 1, part 2); **First Farmers of Central Europe** (vol. 1, part 3); **Transition to Farming along the Lower Rhine and Meuse** (vol. 1, part 3).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Bonsall, Clive, ed. *The Mesolithic in Europe: Papers Presented at the Third International Symposium Edinburgh, 1985*. Edinburgh: John Donald, 1989.
- Crombé, Philippe, and Nicolas Cauwe. "The Mesolithic." In *Prehistory in Belgium*. Edited by Nicolas Cauwe, Anne Hauzeur, and Paul-Louis Van Berg. *Anthropologica et Prehistorica* 112 (2001): 49–62. (Special issue of *Anthropologica et Prehistorica* on the occasion of the Fourteenth Congress of the International Union for the Prehistoric and Protohistoric Sciences.)
- Louwe Kooijmans, L. P. *Archeologie in de Betuweroute, Hardinxveld-Giessendam Polderweg: Een mesolithisch jachtkamp in het rivierengebied (5500–5000 v. Chr.)* [Archaeology in the Betuweroute, Hardinxveld-Giessendam Polderweg: A Mesolithic hunting camp in the river area]. Rapportage Archeologische Monumentenzorg, no. 83. Amersfoort, The Netherlands: Rijksdienst voor het Oudheidkundig Bodemonderzoek, 2001.
- . *Sporen in het land: De nederlandse delta in de prehistorie* [Tracks in the country: The Dutch delta in prehistory]. Amsterdam: Meulenhoff Informatief, 1985.
- Mellars, Paul, and Petra Dark. *Star Carr in Context: New Archaeological and Palaeological Investigations at the Early Mesolithic Site of Star Carr, North Yorkshire*. Cambridge, U.K.: McDonald Institute for Archaeological Research, 1998.
- Péquart, Marthe, and Saint-Just Péquart. *Hoëdic: Deuxième station-nécropole mésolithique côtier armoricain*. Antwerp, Belgium: De Sikkel, 1954.
- Péquart, Marthe, Saint-Just Péquart, Marcellin Boule, and Henri-Victor Vallois. *Téviec: Station-nécropole mésolithique du Morbihan*. Archives de l'Institut de Paléontologie Humaine, no. 18. Paris: Masson Avril, 1937.
- Smith, Christopher. *Late Stone Age Hunters of the British Isles*. London: Routledge, 1997.
- . "The Population of Late Upper Palaeolithic and Mesolithic Britain." *Proceedings of the Prehistoric Society* 58 (1992): 37–40.
- Vermeersch, Pierre M., and Philip Van Peer, eds. *Contributions to the Mesolithic in Europe: Papers Presented at the*

Fourth International Symposium "The Mesolithic in Europe" Leuven, 1990. Leuven, Belgium: Leuven University Press, 1990.

Woodman, Peter C. *Excavations at Mount Sandel 1973–77*. Northern Ireland Archaeological Monographs, no. 2. Belfast, Northern Ireland: Her Majesty's Stationery Office, 1985.

CHRISTOPHER TOLAN-SMITH

MOUNT SANDEL

Mount Sandel is best known as the name of a Mesolithic settlement site that generally is regarded as producing the earliest securely dated evidence of human settlement in Ireland. The name of the site derives from a nearby prominent earthen fortification, which was used from the early medieval period to the seventeenth century. The fortification and the Mesolithic settlement lie on the edge of an escarpment 30 meters high and overlook the upper reaches of the estuary of the River Bann as it flows northward into the Atlantic Ocean. The River Bann is the second-largest river system in the island of Ireland and drains two-thirds of the state of Northern Ireland.

The potential of Mount Sandel first became apparent in the 1880s, with the recovery of a large number of chipped flint axes. The recovery of these "kitchen midden axes" at Mount Sandel and several other nearby localities and along the River Bann soon led several antiquarians (in particular William Knowles) to speculate that they were associated with what was thought of as the earliest Neolithic recolonization of northern Europe—what is referred to today as the Mesolithic period. During the 1930s, with the work of Hallam Movius, attention was focused more on the assemblages on the nearby Holocene raised beaches, and so interest in Mount Sandel waned. It was only with the work of Pat Collins in the 1960s and Peter Woodman in the 1970s that the full significance of Mount Sandel became apparent. The 1960s excavation concentrated on a series of deposits, at least partially slumped, on the slope below Mount Sandel Fort, while the excavations in the 1970s concentrated on an area that lay behind the fort, especially in fields where a major housing development was planned.

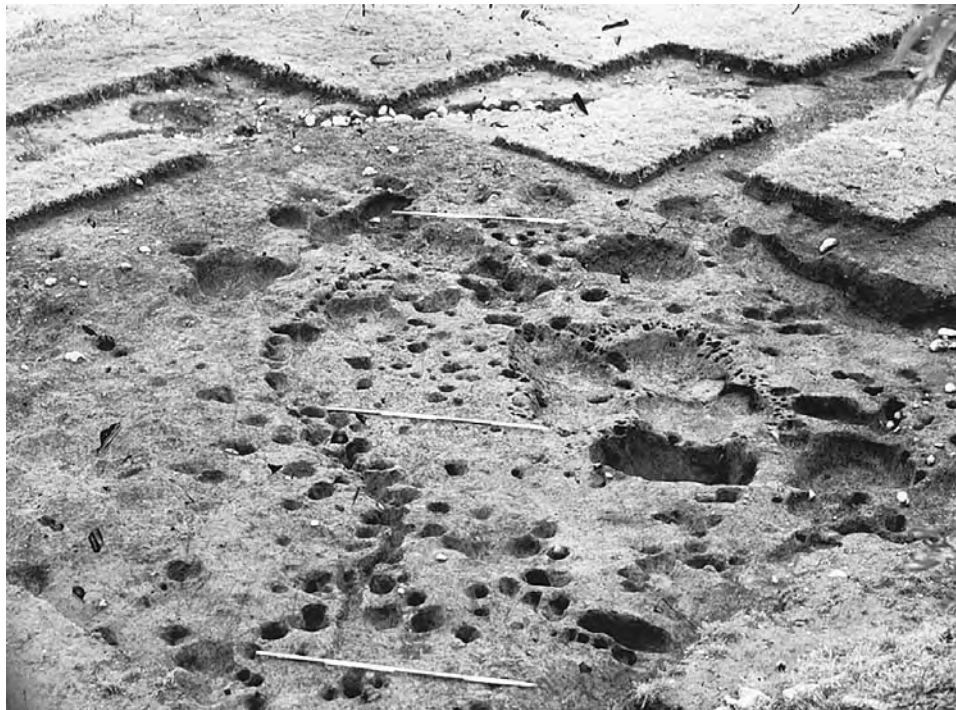


Fig. 1. View of the excavation of the hut foundations at Mount Sandel. COURTESY OF PETER WOODMAN. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

It had become conventional wisdom that the human occupation of Ireland began at 6000 B.C., but the excavations at the upper site in the fields have shown that the occupation at Mount Sandel began at a much earlier date. The radiocarbon dates from the site range from 8990±80 B.P. to 7885±80 B.P. Most of the dates from the main phase of occupation seem to be earlier than 7700 B.P. If the earliest dates are calibrated, it suggests that occupation at Mount Sandel could have begun by 8000 B.C. It should be noted, of course, that this date is approximately one thousand years after the beginning of the European Mesolithic. A few older dates from other sites also are known, but they either are from unreliable contexts or have such large standard deviations that the age spans of the dates renders them virtually useless.

The excavation of the upper site concentrated mainly in fields adjacent to Mount Sandel. Owing to extensive cultivation of the area, little evidence other than that in the topsoil was expected to survive. The actual excavation, however, uncovered extensive traces of structures, which represented the partially preserved remnants of numerous reoccupations of the site. A series of stake holes, hearths, pits,

and patches of dark charcoal-stained soil was uncovered. In one area a small, shallow depression had been enlarged and flattened, and in it a series of four almost circular huts had been built in sequence on roughly the same spot. These huts were built with stakes to form either an inverted bowl or wigwam-shaped hut, each of which would have been between 5 and 6 meters in diameter. Toward the center of each hut a shallow depression about 20 centimeters deep and up to a meter across had contained fires. Other pits were dug in the vicinity of each hut. A few were quite large, up to 1 meter in depth. Larger and more irregular hollows probably were created by tree falls. (In some parts of Europe these tree falls may have been misinterpreted as pit dwellings.)

As Ireland may have been an island for more than the past ten thousand years, it has a distinct ecology. During the Early Holocene, probably no more than ten indigenous mammals and a few freshwater fish species inhabited Ireland. In fact most of the large mammals as well as such fish as pike that normally would have been hunted or caught in the rest of northwestern Europe were not present in Ireland. Therefore one question of interest is how

early hunter-gatherers adapted to living in Ireland. Unfortunately, in many parts of Ireland the soils can be quite acidic, and so the faunal remains do not survive on many prehistoric settlement sites. At Mount Sandel, however, considerable quantities of bone, hazelnut shells, and other plant remains were thrown onto fires; as a result, the burned or carbonized organic remains survived. These remains often were recovered from layers where they had been left in hearths or dumped into other empty pits. Although limited in quantity, the organic material from Mount Sandel still provides one of the best pictures of the lifestyle of Mesolithic communities living in Ireland. The faunal remains from the excavation were dominated by the bones of migratory fish species, particularly salmonids, with lesser numbers of eels. Other fish species, including some sea bass, were rare. While a scatter of bird bones was recovered, the mammalian remains were made up of wild pig, three bones of hare, and a dog bone. The plant remains consisted of many thousands of fragments of hazelnut shells as well as a few water-lily and apple seeds.

The substantial nature of the dwellings and the careful positioning of the settlement to take advantage of a range of different environments suggest that the Mount Sandel site was used by a group of hunter-gatherers who remained at this one locality for a significant part of the year. Salmon could have been fished as they moved upstream during the spring and summer, and eels would have been caught as they came downstream in the autumn and early winter. Some of the fish and other resources, such as the hazelnuts, may have been stored throughout the winter. The bones of young piglets born in the early spring were found mixed in with the shells of hazelnuts, which presumably had been collected at the end of the previous autumn.

The stone tools from the site usually were made from flint and were, to some extent, similar to those found in adjacent parts of Europe. The most common artifacts were the small geometric microliths that would have been used in composite tools as knife-edges, barbs, and so forth. The most usual forms of microliths were elongated triangles and backed rods. The axe forms recovered from the site included broad-edged adzes (flake axes), small chopping tools (core axes), and numerous polished

stone axes. Polished stone axes are well-established features of the Irish Mesolithic.

Somewhat similar assemblages have been found throughout Ireland, from Lough Boora in the Irish Midlands to sites in the south of the island, such as Kilcummer, which overlooks the Cork Blackwater River. There is still no evidence of an earlier human presence in Ireland, either during the first thousand years of the Holocene or in the preceding three thousand years of the Late Glacial, when intermittent human presence is known in southern Britain. At the same time, there is no doubt that some of the implement types found at Mount Sandel are local forms, which would suggest the existence of an earlier phase of human settlement in Ireland.

See also The Mesolithic of Northwest Europe (vol. 1, part 2); Star Carr (vol. 1, part 2).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Mallory, James P., Thomas E. McNeill, and Barry N. Hartwell. *The Archaeology of Ulster from Colonization to Plantation*. Belfast: Institute of Irish Studies, Queen's University of Belfast, 1991.
- Woodman, Peter C. "A Mesolithic Camp in Northern Ireland." *Scientific American* 245 (August 1981): 120–132.
- Woodman, Peter C., ed. *Excavations at Mount Sandel 1973–1977*. Belfast: Her Majesty's Stationary Office, 1985.

PETER C. WOODMAN

STAR CARR

The Early Mesolithic site of Star Carr lies in North Yorkshire, England, 7 kilometers to the south of Scarborough, on the northern margins of an area of flat, peat-covered ground that in the early stages of the postglacial era (c. 8000–9000 B.C.) was occupied by a large lake, approximately 5 kilometers by 2 kilometers in extent. At the time of occupation (during a period of rising sea levels as the last glacial ice sheets melted) the site would have been approximately 10 to 12 kilometers from the coast, flanked by the limestone and gritstone hills of the North York Moors to the north and the chalk hills of the

Yorkshire Wolds to the south. Owing to the reduced sea levels, the whole of the southern North Sea basin at this time was dry land, allowing easy access to the Early Mesolithic groups from the adjacent areas of Denmark, northern Germany, and southern Sweden. Calibrated radiocarbon dates point to occupation of the site spanning a period of around three hundred years, from c. 8700 to 8400 B.C.

The classic excavations of the late Sir Grahame Clark at Star Carr between 1949 and 1951 revealed remarkable finds of both stone and bone or antler artifacts concentrated mainly within an area of 200 square meters in the heavily waterlogged deposits that occupied the shoreline area at the edge of the former lake. Clark interpreted the finds in terms of a closely spaced succession of occupations by small groups of hunters, which he estimated from the overall extent of the occupied zone to be in the region of at most twenty to twenty-five people, possibly equivalent to four or five families. The working of red-deer antlers was clearly a major activity at the site, employing the “groove-and-splinter” technique to detach long splinters of antler that were subsequently shaped into multiple-barbed spear points, of which no less than 191 were found on the site (see fig. 1). Other bone and antler artifacts included hafted “mattock heads” of moose (European elk) antler, bone pins, scrapers made from the split metapodial bones of wild oxen, antler-tine wedges, and parts of twenty-one “headdresses” consisting of thinned pairs of red-deer antlers, still attached to parts of the skull, and perforated for attachment either as hunting disguises or (more probably) ritual headgear employed in ceremonial activities. Associated stone artifacts included large numbers of flint microliths (of triangular, trapezoidal, and obliquely blunted forms), apparently employed as barbs and tips of wooden arrows, flint skin scrapers, burins (for working antler), rotary awls, and transversely sharpened flint axes or adzes, together with at least thirty perforated beads made from thin shale pebbles and a perforated pendant of North Sea amber. The only wooden artifact recovered was a fragment of (apparently) a wooden paddle (fig. 1).

The rich assemblage of animal bones recovered from the site included remains of at least twenty-six red deer (not counting antlers), seventeen roe deer,

sixteen aurochs (wild oxen), twelve elk (moose), and four wild pigs, as well as a few bones of wild birds and the remains of a domesticated dog. Surprisingly (for a lakeside site) no remains of fish were recovered. Although initial analyses of these remains suggested occupation mainly in the winter months of November to April (a conclusion based principally on the abundance of unshed red-deer antlers still attached to the skull), subsequent analyses of the faunal remains as a whole by Anthony Legge and Peter Rowley-Conwy (1988) point to occupation of the site mainly in the summer season, with the large quantities of red-deer antlers probably being imported into the site as a source of raw materials for tool manufacture from animals killed elsewhere. On the basis of the relative frequencies of different parts of the red-deer carcasses—and by analogy with similar patterns recorded on Inuit caribou-hunting sites—Legge and Rowley-Conwy suggested that the site most probably represented a repeatedly visited “hunting stand” probably occupied by small groups of male hunters who had their main base camps elsewhere. Winter sites, they suggested, could have been located on the adjacent North Sea coast while (as Clark had suggested in 1972) other summer-season camps could have been located on the uplands of the adjacent North York Moors, directly to the north. Other workers (including Clark himself) have preferred to see the site as a more general base-camp locality, with a strong component of both industrial and ceremonial activities represented on the site.

Fieldwork at Star Carr in the late 1980s amplified this pattern in several ways. An excavation 20 meters to the east of Clark’s original excavations revealed a short (6 meter) segment of wooden trackway, consisting of carefully split planks of aspen, up to 30 centimeters across and 3 meters in length, extending from the edges of the dry-land occupation zone toward the open waters of the lake—seemingly the earliest evidence for systematic carpentry so far recorded from Europe. Associated analyses of the lake-edge sediments by Petra Dark revealed successive levels of charcoal fragments, which suggested repeated and almost certainly deliberate burning of the lake-edge reed-swamp vegetation extending over a total time span of around three hundred years (from c. 8700 to 8400 B.C. in calibrated radiocarbon years). The burning could have been carried

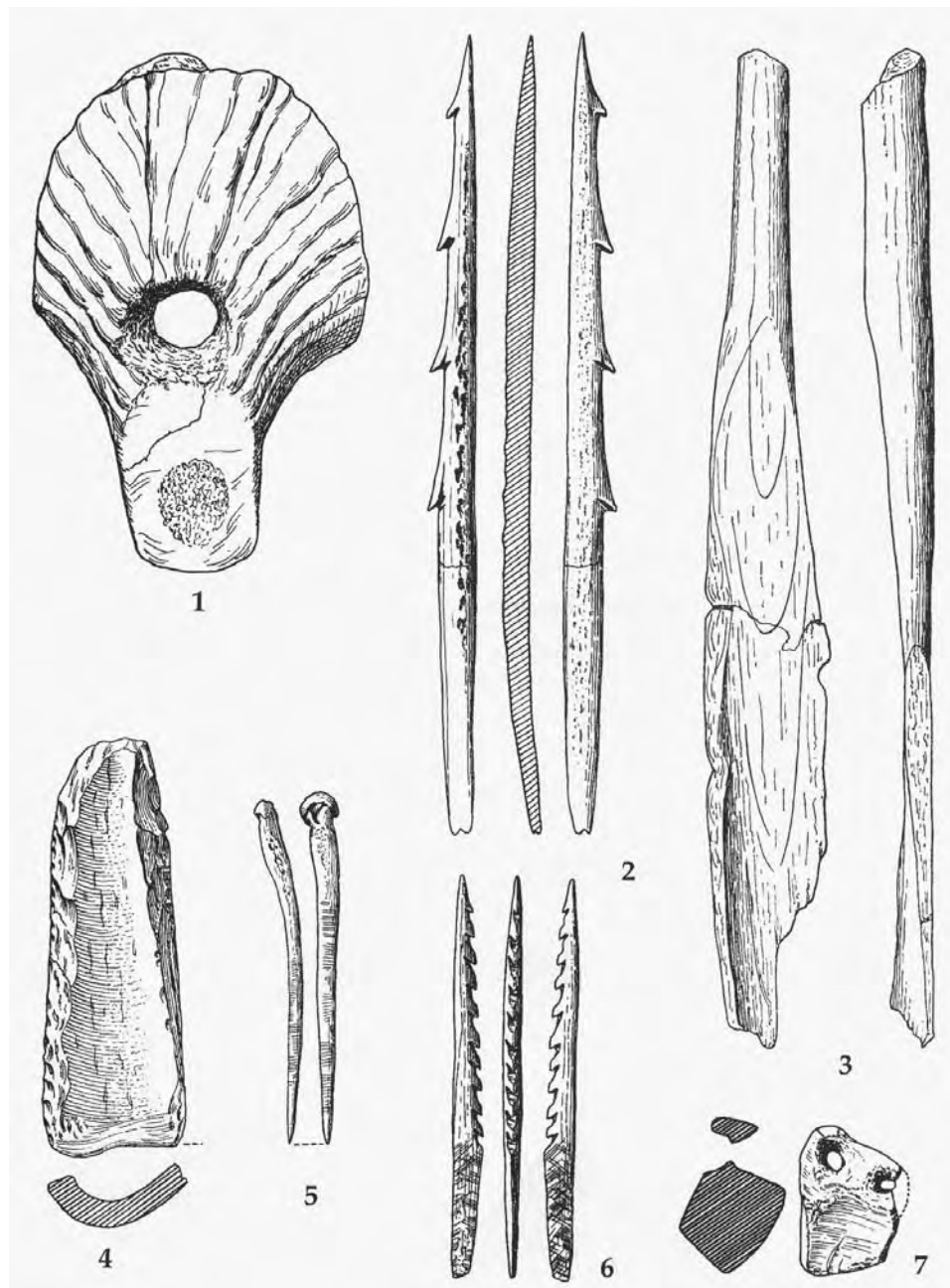


Fig. 1. Bone and antler artifacts and wooden "paddle" from J. G. D. Clark's excavations at Star Carr. FROM *EXCAVATIONS AT STAR CARR* BY J. G. D. CLARK. REPRINTED WITH THE PERMISSION OF CAMBRIDGE UNIVERSITY PRESS.

out either to attract animals to the new growths of reeds on the burned-over areas or (more prosaically) simply to clear away the dense growth of reeds between the occupation zone and the lake itself. Ongoing fieldwork as of 2003 in other parts of the lake basin by Tim Schadla-Hall and the Vale of Pickering

Research Trust has shown that at least a dozen other sites of the same period are located at various points around the shores and islands of the same lake, though as yet none of these have produced rich finds of bone and antler remains comparable to those from Star Carr itself.

The evidence from Star Carr and the adjacent sites forms part of a broader pattern of rapid human colonization of northern Europe as the ice sheets of the last glaciation rapidly retreated and the preceding open, tundra-like landscapes were replaced by the pioneering birch and pine forests of the early postglacial (Preboreal) period. Sites of similar age and with similar archaeological material have been recorded in Denmark (Klosterlund), southern Sweden (Henninge Boställe), and northern Germany (Duvensee, Friesack, Bedburg-Königshoven) and are generally grouped together under the term “proto-Maglemosian.” While these sites provide confirmation that similar patterns of adaptation and culture existed over a large part of the northern European Plain at this time (including, no doubt, large areas of land now submerged below the North Sea) the site of Star Carr remains unique in the extraordinarily rich and varied collection of bone and antler artifacts, and associated food refuse, recovered. It is generally seen not only as the “classic” site for this

earliest Mesolithic occupation of northern Europe, but as one of the most important Mesolithic sites so far investigated in Europe.

See also **Archaeology and Environment** (vol. 1, part 1); **The Mesolithic of Northwest Europe** (vol. 1, part 2); **Mount Sandel** (vol. 1, part 2).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Clark, J. G. D. *Star Carr: A Case Study in Bioarchaeology*. Reading, Mass.: Addison Wesley, 1972.
- . *Excavations at Star Carr*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1954.
- Legge, Anthony, and Peter Rowley-Conwy. *Star Carr Revisited: A Reanalysis of the Large Mammals*. London: Birkbeck College, 1988.
- Mellars, Peter, and Petra Dark. *Star Carr in Context: New Archaeological and Palaeoecological Investigations at the Early Mesolithic Site of Star Carr, North Yorkshire*. Cambridge, U.K.: McDonald Institute for Archaeological Research, 1998.

PAUL MELLARS



THE MESOLITHIC OF IBERIA

FOLLOWED BY FEATURE ESSAY ON:

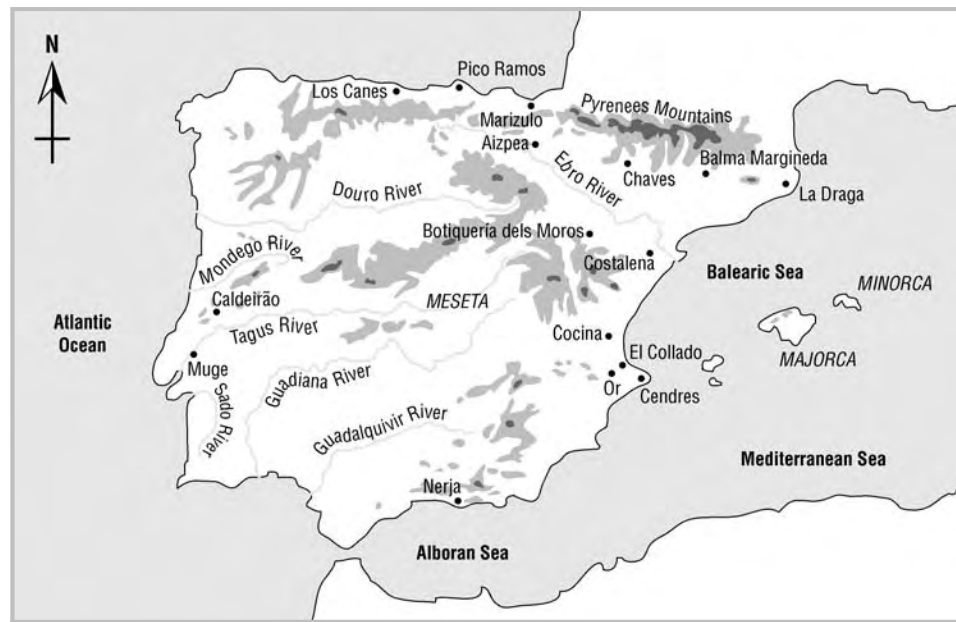
Muge Shell Middens 164

Until the end of the Ice Age hunter-gatherer settlement in the interior of Iberia must have been as important and permanent as that of the coastal regions of Asturias, Cantabria, the Basque country, Portuguese Estremadura, and the Mediterranean arch (from Gibraltar to the eastern flank of the Pyrenees). This is best exemplified by the open-air art and habitation sites of the Douro basin, particularly those found in the Côa River valley. After that, however, the interior *mesetas* show few signs of human occupation until almost 4000 B.C., when they were resettled extensively by farmers. No taphonomic biases that could explain this pattern have been identified, which suggests that it is indeed a genuine reflection of regional settlement histories.

The reasons behind this major reorganization of human settlement from the interior to the coasts probably are related to the abrupt climatic change that occurred at the transition from the Dryas III to the Preboreal periods (c. 9500 B.C.), when average temperatures rose by several degrees in a single generation. Another consequence of this process was the rapid flooding of the vast littoral platforms that extended beyond present-day coastlines, especially along the Atlantic. As a result an economic shift toward increased reliance on aquatic resources is evident in all coastal areas of the peninsula. It must be noted, however, that the inception of this trend can

be traced back to Magdalenian times (between c. 17,000 and c. 12,000 B.C.) in such areas as the Cantabrian coast and the bay of Málaga. In these areas, because of the abrupt submarine relief, today's coastal sites are quite close to the later Palaeolithic and Early Mesolithic seaside, permitting the preservation of an archaeological record of adaptations that elsewhere was destroyed by the rise in sea levels.

The effects of such a shift are most visible in the marked contrast that exists between the Portuguese sites located on each side of the Dryas III–Preboreal divide. Earlier, sites that were located no more than 10 kilometers away from the sea do not contain shell middens. Afterward, most sites are shell middens or else contain a significant shell-midden component, even if they are located at distances from the sea in excess of 40 kilometers. Given the distances involved, the accumulation of coastal and estuarine resources at such inland sites cannot have been related to procurement within the site's immediate environs. More likely it suggests the accumulation over time of the residues of small amounts of food transported and consumed upon arrival at or during the first days of the occupation of recurrently used seasonal or functionally specialized sites. Movement by water inside such territories must have been fairly easy and fast. Fed by precipitation well above that of the region's present-day Mediter-



Selected sites in Mesolithic Iberia.

anean climate, the rivers and streams of the Early Mesolithic flowed through freshly incised valley bottoms and therefore must have been larger and deeper, making for quite practical communication routes if canoes were used. In such a scenario the size of economic territories would have increased threefold, from about 500 square kilometers, hypothesized for the Upper Palaeolithic, to the some 1,500 square kilometers implied by the interpretation of the Early Mesolithic inland cave sites with shell middens as complementary to residential camps placed along the coast.

The critical role of aquatic foods in Preboreal times probably explains the apparent Mesolithic abandonment of the interior Iberian *mesetas*. Unlike European areas north of the Pyrenees, where contemporary occupation of the Continental hinterland is documented, the interior of Iberia lacks important lakes, and the rivers, even the largest, often dry out in the summer over extensive stretches. In any case the absence of human settlement from vast regions with a very dense temperate forest cover is documented in other parts of the world. A similar pattern, for instance, has been observed in southwest Tasmania, where at the time of contact the inland valleys had been devoid of humans from the beginning of the Holocene, despite the abundant

archaeological evidence of occupation throughout the Ice Age.

A further implication of the Portuguese evidence is that, by comparison with late Palaeolithic times, not only population densities but also the overall population size must have decreased significantly in the Early Mesolithic. In fact the area available for settlement became significantly reduced by the rise in sea level. Nevertheless the size of economic territories seems to have increased. This is the opposite of what would have happened if the same number of people settled the now smaller area available for occupation. Along the northwestern and southwestern coasts of seventeenth-century aboriginal Tasmania, individual bands of up to 50 people wintered at residential camps situated at intervals of about 50 to 100 kilometers and placed in the major estuaries of this 1,000-kilometer-long coastline. This seems to be a reasonable settlement analogy for the Iberian Mesolithic, at least along the Atlantic, where human adaptations operated under similar environmental constraints and with a similar economic basis.

THE CANTABRIAN COAST

In Cantabrian Spain the cultural transition from Azilian to Asturian stone tools takes place throughout the Preboreal, accompanying the transition

from glacial to fully temperate climatic conditions. The Azilian is a continuation of the Magdalenian with the same blade/bladelet stone technology rich in microliths but with different types of bone harpoons. The Asturian features macrolithic cobble (rock) tools. Most Asturian sites are shell middens accumulated in rock shelters and cave porches and are located in the region's narrow strip of plains and lowlands between the sea to the north and the Cantabrian Mountains to the south. The characteristic stone tool is the Asturian pick, a flat cobble (in this case a rock rolled by the sea or a river), 8–10 centimeters long, featuring a cortical (the outer, weathered, rolled “skin” of the cobble) base and a unifacially shaped point (shaped on one side only), triangular in cross section, which may have been used in the collection of plants. Food residues—mollusk shells, fish remains, and mammal bones—document the exploitation of the resources provided by the rich coastal waters, combined with the exploitation of the forests covering the adjacent hills and mountain slopes. *Patella* and *Monodonta* species (limpets) dominated among the mollusks and red deer among the land mammals, but aurochs, horses, wild boar, roe deer, chamois, and ibex also contributed to the menu. The little seasonality information that is available does not record summer occupations, suggesting that intensive shellfish gathering played a supplementary role, mostly during the cold season, when other resources (especially plant foods) were scarce or unavailable. Specialized sites high on mountains are known, as are a few occupations in intermediate territory. It is as yet unclear whether the latter sites represent logistical or seasonal establishments integrated in the settlement-subsistence system of the coastal lowlands or separate interior adaptations. The areas rich in raw materials for stone tools indicate rather small territories, which is more consistent with the second hypothesis.

No art objects are associated with the Asturian, but burial is documented, notably that of an elderly female from the Molino de Gasparín shell midden. Excavated in 1926, this woman was found in an extended position, with three picks laid on stones by her head. A mound, on top of which a fire had been lit, covered the body. Between 1985 and 1990 seven people, buried in three features, were excavated in the Los Canes cave (Asturias). The human

bones from this burial were dated by radiocarbon to the period between about 6000 and 5000 B.C. The cave contained no traces of habitation from this time period, suggesting that it was used only for funerary purposes. The bodies were placed in *decubito supino* (lying on the back) or in *decubito lateralis sinistro* (lying on the left side) in association with body ornaments—pierced red deer canines and perforated shells of *Callista chione*, *Trivia europaea*, and *Littorina obtusata*—bone tools, cobbles, and animal bones, conceivably representing meat offerings. One of the bodies a very gracile female, offered an extensive picture of dental problems, with caries, abscesses, and alveolar resorption (receding gums) affecting the upper jaw. No such pathological conditions are known in the other human remains from the regional Mesolithic, suggesting that toward the end of the period diets became richer in carbohydrates, specifically plant foods.

Pottery is present in this region from c. 4900 B.C., as evidenced by Accelerator Mass Spectrometry (AMS) radiocarbon dating of charcoal collected from the fabric of a sherd taken from Los Canes level C, above the stratigraphic horizon corresponding to the burials. Because no evidence for domesticates exists in this area before c. 4200 B.C., it would seem that such early pottery represents a technological introduction into a hunter-gatherer context, documenting the existence of exchanges with the groups of farmers that had become established in the upper Ebro basin. The survival of hunter-gatherer economies until well after 4900 B.C. is documented by Mesolithic levels in the cave sites of Pico Ramos and la Trecha, which date to as late as 4300 B.C. and contain no domesticates, animals or plants. Although the evidence at present is ambiguous and the existence of a pre-Megalithic Neolithic is suggested by different lines of evidence, it seems that in Cantabria, as well as in Galicia and northwestern Portugal, the appearance of peasant-shepherd groups roughly coincides with the beginnings of megalith building during the second half of the fifth millennium B.C. It seems clear that this is a local process, with little demographic input from the outside and high levels of cultural continuity, representing the adoption by local hunter-gatherers of economic and technological innovations acquired through trade and exchange.

Beyond the eastern border of the distribution of Asturian sites, stone tool assemblages in the coastal areas of the Basque country, labeled post-Azilian, are characterized by different kinds of flint microliths, with geometric types dominating toward the end of the sequence. Adaptations and the timing of economic changes, however, follow along the same lines documented for the Asturian, as exemplified by the stratigraphic sequence in the Santimamiñe cave from post-Azilian to Neolithic and by the beach site of Herriko Barra. The burial of a twenty-five-year-old man of average height, accompanied by a headless dog and a lamb, in level I of the Marizulo cave represents the earliest secure evidence of farming in the region; the human skeleton has been dated by radiocarbon to about 4150 B.C.

THE WESTERN FACADE

Asturian-like picks associated with other large core-and-flake stone tool assemblages made on beach cobbles and believed to date to the Early Holocene on geological or typological grounds are common finds along the shores of Galicia and northwestern Portugal. No *in situ* contexts with organic remains have been found; thus our knowledge of the period's human adaptations in these regions is scant. The continuity with the Asturian seaside in landscape and ecology, however, suggests that the Mesolithic settlement of these regions must have been organized along similar lines.

Many Preboreal and Boreal sites are known to the south of the Mondego River. Their geographic distribution is in apparent continuity with that of the latest Upper Palaeolithic, even if their other characteristics differ significantly, given the emphasis on aquatic resources and the apparent changes in mobility patterns and population sizes reviewed earlier. These changes are related to the major impact upon animal populations of the alterations in climate and vegetation: the biomass of large mammals was reduced drastically, open-space species (chamois and ibex) retreated to high mountain areas outside the region, and horses saw their habitat limited to the fluvial plains. As a result, from the end of the Dryas III (the Pleistocene or Ice Age) onward, the composition of hunted mammal faunas is dominated by red deer, along with aurochs, roe deer, wild boar, and lagomorphs (hares and rabbits).

Consideration of site size and assemblage composition indicates that sites from these periods can be divided into three groups. Extensive open-air sites containing a diversified stone tool component with several types of armatures (stone tools that can be used as arrow or spear points) are found in interior areas. Most lack organic preservation, which is an indirect indicator that subsistence activities relied on the exploitation of terrestrial resources alone. (The abandonment of mollusk remains would have created a carbonated environment favorable to the preservation of both shell and bone.) Small open-air sites containing scarce and less-diversified stone tool remains but featuring abundant remains of mollusks exist along the present-day coastline in locations that correspond to the bottoms of the estuaries of the time, when sea level was still lower than it is in the twenty-first century. A few caves and rock shelters feature organic remains related to the exploitation of food resources of terrestrial and coastal origin and tool assemblages that include several types of armatures, but the small overall size of the cultural accumulations suggests very short or rare stays. The most reasonable explanation for these differences is functional complementarity between recurrently occupied residential sites and smaller specialized or seasonal sites used or created in the framework of a highly mobile settlement system. In southern Portugal extensive sites covering many thousands of square meters and having hearth features associated with a core-and-flake macrolithic tool kit (such as Palheirões do Alegria in coastal Alentejo or Barca do Xarês in the Guadiana River region) have been dated to the Boreal. These sites correspond to palimpsests resulting from the accumulation of many different, repeated, and probably specialized occupations.

The onset of the Atlantic climatic optimum, c. 6500 B.C., brought about a major reorganization of settlement, which at that point focused on the inner parts of the estuaries of the rivers Mondego, Tagus, Sado, and Mira. Stone tool kits of the period are dominated by geometric microliths made in the framework of a sophisticated blade-bladelet production system featuring pressure flaking and indirect percussion, and they contrast markedly with those of the preceding phase, when armatures tended to be very small retouched bladelets extracted from small carinated cores. The exploitation of these re-

source-rich ecotones led to the formation of large heaps of bivalve mollusks, the extension of which (both in area and in height) significantly transformed the original topography of the terrain.

The Muge middens, in the Tagus, are the best example of this new kind of site, which is suggestive of sedentary or near sedentary residence, an inference that agrees with available seasonality evidence. The fact that these sites also functioned as cemeteries, indicating the existence of a proprietary relationship of the different bands with their territories that was transmitted across generations, points in the same direction. It is estimated that three hundred skeletons have been excavated from the different Muge sites and one hundred from those in the Sado Valley. The importance of aquatic foods is confirmed by stable isotope analysis of these skeletons, according to which such resources contributed with some 50 percent of the diet.

Occupation of these estuary habitats seems to have peaked in about 6000 B.C. and lasted until 4750–5000 B.C. From roughly 5500 B.C. these hunter-gatherers coexisted with farmers settled in the limestone massifs of the region between the Tagus and Mondego. Such earliest Neolithic groups possessed domestic sheep (whose bones were dated by radiocarbon at the cave site of Caldeirão) and are defined by a material culture that is totally lacking in contemporary Mesolithic shell middens. It includes such items as cardial-decorated pottery (Cardial Ware culture), polished stone axes, and flint tools obtained with a technology involving heat pretreatment of the rock. Among body ornaments, tear-shaped *Glycymeris* beads as well as pierced red deer canines and bone beads imitating their shape feature prominently. Caves are used as cemeteries, and stable isotope analysis of these remains indicates a fully terrestrial diet, in marked contrast to that of the people buried in the Muge and Sado middens. These two cultural packages with mutually exclusive geographical distributions must represent separate adaptive systems, not different functional or seasonal aspects of a single, highly diversified system. The similarities in culture and adaptation between the earliest Neolithic of Portugal and that of the Mediterranean regions to the east, combined with the enclave nature of its initial settlement pattern (the areas occupied are devoid of Mesolithic sites postdating the onset of the climatic

optimum), suggests that it represents a cultural intrusion not an in situ development.

The temporal, geographical, and archaeological features of the process indicate maritime pioneer colonization by small groups of farmers, their subsequent expansion leading, through intermarriage, to the absorption of the local Mesolithic groups, whose economy implied a significantly lower demographic potential. An alternative hypothesis is that of precocious adoption of the Neolithic package by hunter-gatherers living in the limestone massifs of Estremadura, while those living off the river estuaries would have retained the traditional way of life for several hundred more years. Studies of human skeletons provide results that can be construed as indicating significant continuity in populations across the Mesolithic-Neolithic boundary, in accordance with such an alternative model. No signs of the putative Late Mesolithic adopters, however, have been found in the limestone massifs (which seem to have been abandoned by humans after c. 6000 B.C., except for fleeting occupations at caves near the springs that dot its periphery).

Likewise there is no readily apparent explanation for why adaptations in the two areas followed such different strategies after the Neolithic package became available to both groups through the long-distance exchange networks in which all human groups living in coastal Portugal must have participated. Moreover significant continuity in skeletal morphological characteristics is to be expected if the external Neolithic input was small or if no significant genetically based differences in such features existed in the original Late Upper Palaeolithic Mediterranean stock from which the different groups involved in the process must have derived.

THE MEDITERRANEAN ARCH

Along the Mediterranean coast between Gibraltar and Valencia cultural continuity across the Pleistocene-Holocene boundary (c. 9500 B.C.) is clear and unambiguous. As in the better known Magdalenian-Azilian transition of the Cantabrian coast, regional late Magdalenian industries gradually evolved into what is called the Mediterranean Microlaminar Epipalaeolithic. The latter period is characterized by a decrease in the size and variety of bladelet armatures, which become restricted to a few types of backed elements, and by the scarcity,

if not altogether disappearance, of bone tools. The earliest such assemblages have been dated invariably to the period immediately before the Dryas III–Preboreal divide. They seem to have lasted until the middle of the eighth millennium B.C. By that time modest amounts of small-sized geometric microlithic armatures (crescents, trapezoids, triangles), reminiscent of the Sauveterrian phase of the Mesolithic of regions farther to the north, had been introduced in stone tool kits.

As in Portugal, the economic impact of the global climatic change is apparent in the dramatic increase in the consumption of aquatic resources. The trend was in place by later Magdalenian times, as shown by the Nerja cave sequence, which contains abundant fish remains. Their number is five times greater than that of rabbits in the Magdalenian, but, in the Preboreal levels, fish outnumber rabbits 10 to 1. The collection of sea and land mollusks as well as pine nuts and acorns also is attested to in the Early Mesolithic levels, even if the bulk of food supplies continued to be represented by the meat of red deer and ibex, as in the preceding later Magdalenian. The significant broadening of the menu also is exemplified by the remains of seals and of different species of birds, such as ducks and partridges. Available seasonality indicators suggest that Nerja was occupied in autumn and winter, which means that the exploitation of aquatic resources may have been most important during the cold season, as also may have been the case in Asturias and Cantabria. Summer camps and summer activities probably are recorded in open-air sites that remain to be identified; this exclusive representation of caves and rock shelters in the regional sample of sites significantly hinders understanding of its Early Mesolithic settlement.

After about 7000 B.C. regional stone tool assemblages change into what is called the Mediterranean Geometric Epipalaeolithic, featuring a blade/bladelet technology geared toward the extraction of blanks for the production of geometric armatures manufactured through the microburin technique. At the stratified cave site of Cocina, an earlier phase, dominated by trapezoids, can be distinguished from a later phase, dominated by triangles, mirroring the similar development apparent in the Portuguese shell middens of Muge. Ibex was the prime game animal, but this finding may be due to sample biases

because most sites of the period providing data on subsistence are located in mountainous environments. The exploitation of coastal marshes, estuaries, and lagoons, along the lines better exemplified by the Portuguese evidence, is documented by the shell midden of El Collado (Valencia), which also contained numerous burials. Fifteen individuals are reported, lying extended on their backs or their right sides. As in Los Canes, their legs were tightly flexed, and their feet were crossed or tucked together, a forced position that suggests that the corpses were somehow banded or bagged.

In all known deeply stratified cave sequences (such as Chaves, Or, and Cendres), the earliest Neolithic of the region dates to c. 5500 B.C., as proved by the direct dating of cereal remains from the sites of Mas d'Is (an open-air settlement) and La Falguera (a rock shelter). A wide variety of new types of bone tools and a new stone tool production system accompany the introduction of pottery, polished stone axes, wheat, barley, and sheep. Blade debitage probably resulted from pressure flaking, and there is evidence of heat pretreatment of the flint. Microliths are geometrics (almost exclusively trapezoid) used for the most part as sickle blades, but use of the microburin technique is not documented; instead, laminary products (stone tools with blade proportions, that is, elongated with roughly parallel edges) were systematically shortened through flexure-breaking techniques. Borers with thick, long points make their first appearance in the regional sequences. The marked discontinuity in settlement, economy, and basic technology suggests that this earliest Neolithic evidence represents a cultural intrusion, which is in agreement with its similarities to the Cardial cultural package of regions farther to the northeast. The presence of some Cardial pottery sherds in the uppermost levels of the long stratigraphic sequences of such inland sites as Cocina has been interpreted as evidence of interaction between immigrant farmers and the local hunter-gatherers, eventually leading to the adoption of agropastoral economies by the latter group.

The so-called macroschematic style of rock paintings, replicated in the decoration of ceramic vessels from Or, is another cultural manifestation of the region's first farmers. At several sites, particularly in Alicante (notably La Sarga), such paintings are

superimposed with animal motifs and hunting scenes of the Levantine art style, which for a long time was considered of Mesolithic age because of the nature of its themes. The stratigraphy of decorated panels now shows, however, that Levantine paintings date to the Late Neolithic and the Copper Age. The only positive manifestations of Mesolithic art in the region therefore are the limestone slabs decorated with linear or geometric patterns discovered at Cocina.

THE EBRO BASIN

At present the Mesolithic sites of the Ebro basin cluster in three geographically separate groups: the lower Aragon group, some 60 kilometers from the delta, including such well-known sites as Botiquería dels Moros and Costalena; the Pyrenean group, which dots the mountain range and its adjacent elevations from east (Navarra) to west (Andorra and northern Catalonia), featuring the major sites of La Balma de la Margineda and Aizpea; and the upper Ebro group, a continuation of the latter region into the province of Alava, where such sites as Kanpanoste Goikoa and Mendandia are located. The cultural-stratigraphical sequence, however, is largely uniform across this extensive area (some 85,000 square kilometers) and begins with a process of gradual transition from Magdalenian to Azilian-like small-blade assemblages akin to those of Mediterranean regions to the south. The Catalonian sites of Sant Gregori de Falset and Filador yielded two of the few portable art objects securely dated to this transitional period in Spain: a slab with the engraving of a female deer and a pebble painted with parallel lines. The appearance of notch-and-denticulate assemblages with Sauveterrian-like, very small geometrics after 8000 B.C. marks the end of the transition. Blade and trapezoid assemblages similar to those of the Mediterranean Microlaminar Epipalaeolithic arise after c. 7000 B.C. In its last stage new geometric types appear alongside the trapezoid: Cocina-type triangles in the lower Aragon sites and Sonchamps points (triangular points with inverse [inferior, ventral side] or bifacial [both sides] retouch) in the west Pyrenean sites.

Throughout the sequence the bones of land mammals (red and roe deer, ibex, chamois, wild boar, aurochs, horses, and rabbits) represent the bulk of food residues abandoned at habitation sites.

Favorable preservation conditions at the rock shelter of Aizpea allowed for the recovery of extremely abundant fish remains; contrary to the situation elsewhere in the Iberian Mesolithic, bone tools, particularly fishhooks, were numerous, suggesting that this component of the tool kit may be associated closely with the exploitation of riverine resources. Aizpea is a good example of the critical role that the use of freshwater foods must have played in the successful settlement of the region's inland areas. This area also relied on the economic exploitation of forest plants, which is indicated at the site by hazelnut shells and the remains of wild apples and other fruits recovered throughout the whole Mesolithic sequence. The land snail *Cepaea nemoralis*, whose shells are present in large numbers at many of the period's sites, probably was introduced by humans as food. The skeleton of a female lying on her back against the wall of the shelter, with no associated artifacts and dated to the latest Geometric period of occupation of Aizpea, is the only Mesolithic burial so far found in the region.

The earliest Neolithic is documented by cave sites in the Pyrenees, notably La Balma de la Margineda and Chaves, featuring levels with Cardial pottery and domesticated sheep and goats. The radiocarbon evidence suggests broad contemporaneity with the Valencian sites, and the shared features of the process indicate that the introduction of farming took place along the same lines better documented in the regions farther to the south. The lakeside village of La Draga (Banyoles, northern Catalonia) shows that, at least since about 5000 B.C. and probably well before that, Early Neolithic settlement was organized in permanent aggregates of wood houses 3–4 meters high and built from oak planks and posts.

See also Muge Shell Middens (vol. 1, part 2); Caldeirão Cave (vol. 1, part 3).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Alday Ruiz, Alfonso. "Los últimos cazadores-recolectores de la Iberia interior: La Alta-Media Cuenca del Ebro y la Meseta Norte." *Munibe* 54 (2002): 79–101.
- Araújo, Ana Cristina. "O concheiro de Toledo (Lourinhã) no quadro das adaptações humanas do Pós-Glaciário litoral da Estremadura." *Revista Portuguesa de Arqueologia* 1, no. 2 (1998): 19–38.

- Arias Cabal, Pablo. *De cazadores a campesinos: La transición al neolítico en la región cantábrica*. Santander, Spain: Universidad de Cantabria, 1991.
- Arias Cabal, Pablo, and M. D. Garralda. "Mesolithic Burials in Los Canes Cave (Asturias, Spain)." *Human Evolution* 11, no. 2 (1996): 129–138.
- Arias Cabal, Pablo, et al. "La transición al Neolítico en la región cantábrica: Estado de la cuestión." In *Actas de III Congreso de Arqueología Peninsular*. Vol. 3, *Neolitização e Megalitismo da Península Ibérica*. Edited by Vitor Oliveira Jorge and Jorge de Alarcão, pp. 115–131. Porto, Portugal: ADECAP, 2000.
- Arnaud, J. M. "The Mesolithic Communities of the Sado Valley, Portugal, in Their Ecological Setting." In *The Mesolithic in Europe*. Edited by Clive J. Bonsall, pp. 614–631. Edinburgh: John Donald, 1989.
- Aura Tortosa, J. Emili, and M. Pérez Ripoll. "El Holoceno inicial en el Mediterráneo español (11000–7000 BP): Características culturales y económicas." In *Los Últimos Cazadores: Transformaciones culturales y económicas durante el Tardiglacial y el inicio del Holoceno en el ámbito mediterráneo*. Edited by Valentín Villaverde Bonilla, pp. 119–146. Alicante, Spain: Instituto de Cultura Juan Gil-Albert, 1995.
- Aura Tortosa, J. Emili, et al. "The Far South: The Pleistocene-Holocene Transition in Nerja Cave (Andalucía, Spain)." *Quaternary International* 93–94 (July 2002): 19–30.
- Aura Tortosa, J. Emili, et al. "The Pleistocene-Holocene Transition in the Iberian Peninsula: Continuity and Change in Human Adaptations." *Quaternary International* 49–50 (March–May 1998): 87–103.
- Barandiarán, I., B. Martí, M. A. Rincón, and J. L. Maya. *Prehistoria de la Península Ibérica*. Barcelona, Spain: Ariel, 1998.
- Cava, A. "El Mesolítico en la Cuenca del Ebro: Un estado de la cuestión." *Zephyrus* 47 (1994): 65–91.
- González Morales, Manuel. *El Asturiense y otras culturas locales: La explotación de las áreas litorales de la región cantábrica en los tiempos epipaleolíticos*. Santander, Spain: Centro de Investigación y Museo de Altamira, 1982.
- González Morales, Manuel, and J. M. Arnaud. "Recent Research on the Mesolithic of the Iberian Peninsula." In *Contributions to the Mesolithic in Europe*. Edited by P. M. Vermeersch and P. Van Peer, pp. 451–461. Leuven, Belgium: Katholieke Universiteit, 1990.
- Jackes, Mary, David Lubell, and Christopher Meiklejohn. "Healthy but Mortal: Human Biology and the First Farmers of Western Europe." *Antiquity* 71 (1997): 639–658.
- Lubell, David, Mary Jackes, H. Schwarcz, M. Knyf, and C. Meiklejohn. "The Mesolithic-Neolithic Transition in Portugal: Isotopic and Dental Evidence of Diet." *Journal of Archaeological Science* 21, no. 2 (1994): 201–206.
- Utrilla, P., et al. "Le passage du Mésolithique au Néolithique ancien dans le bassin de l'Ebre (Espagne) d'après les datations C14." *Préhistoire Européenne* 12 (December 1998): 171–194.
- Zilhão, João. "From the Mesolithic to the Neolithic in the Iberian Peninsula." In *Europe's First Farmers*. Edited by T. Douglas Price, pp. 144–182. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 2000.

JOÃO ZILHÃO

MUGE SHELL MIDDENS

The existence of Mesolithic shell middens in the lower valley of the Tagus River, located some 50 kilometers northeast of Lisbon, was first reported in 1863 by Carlos Ribeiro, who immediately recognized them as counterparts of the recently discovered Danish "kitchen middens." The sites are located near the confluence with the Tagus of the Muge and Magos streams, a few meters above the extant water level; they occupy what, in the local palaeogeography of the Atlantic climatic period, was an ecotonal position: at the bottom of a very large estuary, close to extensive brackish-water mollusk banks and, at the same time, in a strategic location to secure access to other aquatic or wetland resources, such as fowl and fish, as well as to river-plain and forest game, such as aurochs, red deer, and wild boar.

Three sites in particular—Cabeço da Arruda, Cabeço da Amoreira, and Moita do Sebastião, located along the two banks of the Muge stream within a couple of kilometers of each other—have been the object of much research, focusing for the most part on the study of the numerous human remains recovered therein. In 1880, coinciding with the Lisbon meeting of the Ninth International Congress of Anthropology and Prehistoric Archeology, Ribeiro undertook systematic excavations at Cabeço da Arruda and Moita do Sebastião and invited congress participants to visit the sites. In his paper to the meeting, he informs that 120 skeletons were found; further work at the two sites carried out in 1884 and 1885 by Francisco Paula e Oliveira produced another 52 skeletons.

Paula e Oliveira's research was conducted under the auspices of the Geological Survey in Lisbon; research on the middens was continued in 1930–1931, 1933, and 1937 under the auspices of the Institute of Anthropology of the University of Oporto with further excavation of Cabeço da Arruda and new work at Cabeço da Amoreira. The principal investigator in the 1930s was António Augusto Mendes Correia, who earlier in the century had been the promoter of the *Homo afer*, var. *taganus*, designation for the dolichocephalic type—that is, the elongated head shape—predominating among the people buried in the Muge middens (see “Origins of the Portuguese,” 1919). The concept of “Homo after taganus,” which established a physical anthropological link with Africa, meant that the Muge people were an African race, or descended from African races. It was instrumental in substantiating the postulated corresponding cultural link with the idea that the flintworking Mesolithic culture known as the Tardenoisian (to which the French archaeologist Henri Breuil had ascribed the geometric industries found in the Tagus sites) derived from the Capsian. It also strengthened the then popular notion that, at the end of the Upper Palaeolithic, the Iberian Peninsula had been colonized by populations of North African origin. Mendes Correia assumed that “the miserable fisherman of the Muge were far from the standards of the Magdalenian [the last culture of the Ice Age, with its impressive cave art] civilization” and that “the *Homo taganus* should rather be included in a group of inferior races, Australoid or protoethiopian and probably of meridional origin.” According to Mendes Correia, these people would have contributed little, if at all, to the ethnogenesis of the Portuguese nation, whose roots should be sought in the dolmen builders of the later Neolithic period.

In the period 1952–1954, Octávio da Veiga Ferreira and Jean Roche carried out a salvage operation at Moita do Sebastião, the upper part of which, composed of mobile sediments, had been removed the year before for the construction of an agricultural facility. Of the original 2.5-meter-high mound, occupying an area of about 300 square meters, only the basal part remained, forming an east-west 32.5-by-12.5-meter elliptical area of hardened sediments with a maximum thickness of about 20 centimeters. The excavations revealed a series of features pene-



Fig. 1. In situ human skeletons from the 1953 excavations at Moita do Sebastião. COURTESY OF JOÃO CARDOSO. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

trating the bedrock of Pliocene sands, including an arrangement of postholes suggestive of a hut-like habitation with an area of about 37 square meters, as well as several burial pits containing thirty-four human skeletons, providing for the first time reliable information on funerary rituals. The bodies, always lying on their backs and with their heads raised, were emplaced in clusters of shallow pits, young children separate from adults. Perforated

shells of the small fluvial gastropod *Theodoxus fluviatilis* are the main body ornaments, sometimes arranged in collars or belts, but traces of red ochre were also found. The fact that a few skeletons were clearly associated with accumulations of unopened clamshells of *Scrobicularia plana* and *Tapes decussata* suggests the practice of food offerings.

No other excavation work has been carried out since the 1950s. Substantial portions of the original midden mounds still remain at Cabeço da Arruda and Cabeço da Amoreira, whereas only some of the Moita do Sebastião basal features have been preserved in situ. From the different accounts provided by the excavators, the total number of skeletons recovered over the years at the three sites can be estimated at about three hundred. In her analysis of the collections preserved in both Lisbon and Oporto, however, Denise Ferembach (1974) could only inventory 136 “more or less complete” individuals from Cabeço da Arruda and Moita do Sebastião: 25 percent were under fifteen years of age (two-thirds of those were under five), and among the adults of all ages, from eighteen to over fifty, that could be sexed, men (sixteen) predominated over women (nine). Ferembach’s study’s main concern was still the establishment of a “racial diagnosis.” It was concluded that the “protomediterranean” type predominated and that there were also small and gracile “cromagnoids,” as well as a few “alpine” and “mixed protomediterranean-cromagnoid” people. Since this mix still exists in modern-day Portugal, a

large degree of population continuity until the present was inferred.

Late-twentieth-century research on the collections has been able to establish the chronology of the sites and their sequence of occupation, based on radiocarbon dating and the composition of lithic assemblages. Moita do Sebastião, first occupied between 6100 and 5900 B.C., is the earliest, and features asymmetrical trapezes of different types. The latest is Cabeço da Arruda, first occupied c. 5600 B.C. and containing more segments and triangles than trapezes. The occupation of Cabeço da Amoreira, featuring the characteristic “Muge triangle” type of geometric microlith, must have fallen in the intermediate period.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Correia, António Augusto Mendes. “Origins of the Portuguese.” *American Journal of Physical Anthropology* 2, no. 2 (1919): 117–145.
- Ferembach, Denise. *Le gisement mésolithique de Moita do Sebastião, Muge, Portugal. II. Anthropologie*. Lisbon: Direcção-Geral dos Assuntos Culturais, 1974.
- Roche, Jean. *Le gisement mésolithique de Moita do Sebastião (Muge, Portugal)*. Lisbon: Instituto para a Alta Cultura, 1960.
- . *L’industrie préhistorique de Cabeço da Amoreira (Muge)*. Porto, Portugal: Instituto para a Alta Cultura, 1951.

JOÃO ZILHÃO



THE MESOLITHIC OF UPLAND CENTRAL AND SOUTHERN EUROPE

FOLLOWED BY FEATURE ESSAYS ON:

Iron Gates Mesolithic 175
Franchthi Cave 179

There was a surge of active research into the Holocene hunter-gatherers of central and southern Europe during the late 1980s and 1990s. Among the many reasons for growth in the intensity of investigation has been the increasingly strong argument for the role of Mesolithic hunter-gatherers in the spread and adoption of agriculture in Europe. Furthermore, many scholars no longer view the Early Holocene as the backwater of Pleistocene big-game hunters but rather as a dynamic period of socioeconomic as well as environmental changes, separate yet related to both the preceding Epipalaeolithic and the following Early Neolithic.

In addition to the attempts at “rethinking” the Mesolithic, anthropological and ethnological studies have found their way into archaeological research designs in places where they had not been active previously. This fact, in the case of Italy, prompted at least one researcher, Amilcare Bietti, to argue that a “paradigmatic shift in current Mesolithic research” had occurred, especially in northeastern Italy. Understandably, these trends are regional and uneven across the archaeological landscape. Therefore, in this account, divided according to regions, some sections are more substantial than others in terms of data and research.

BACKGROUND

The time period referenced here is the Holocene, the latest epoch of the Quaternary system. The Holocene started approximately eleven thousand years ago and extends to the present day. It is also known as the post-Pleistocene, following the Pleistocene ice age. Archaeologists are dealing with the Early Holocene, since the present is what might be called the Middle or Late Holocene. The Early Holocene can be divided roughly as follows, based on the stone tool industries most common for the central and southern European Mesolithic hunter-gatherers:

Pleistocene

Late Glacial Epipalaeolithic industries 13,500–11,000 years ago

Holocene (climatic subdivision: Preboreal/Boreal)

Early Sauveterrian 11,000–10,300 years ago
 Middle Sauveterrian 10,300–9,500 years ago
 Recent Sauveterrian 9,500–8,500 years ago

Holocene (climatic subdivision: Atlantic)

Castelnovian 8,500–7,300 years ago

The Sauveterrian industry received its name from a site in southwestern France, Sauveterre-la-

Lémance. Stone tools were found there in stratified order following early Azilian and late Magdalenian palaeolithic assemblages. The Sauveterrian industry is characterized by microliths (very small tools) made on small blades in geometric shapes, mainly triangles. The Castelnovian industry also is named after a site in France and is distinguished by trapezes made on regular and somewhat larger blades. There are regional differences to this scheme, sometimes with alternative names (e.g., “Tardenoisian” for Castelnovian), but for simplicity’s sake it is sufficient to think in terms of the two industries mentioned (fig. 1).

The main difference between the Preboreal/Boreal and the Atlantic is in the climate, the former being cooler and drier and the latter warmer and more humid. The underlying theme here is that the Holocene was a period of change in the hunting-gathering populations of Europe. The transformations are evident in the stone tool types, the fauna that were exploited, and the nature of landscape use. The reasons for such change were largely environmental, although concomitant social factors played a part as well. The major environmental developments of the Holocene were an increase in forestation and accompanying improvement in soil cover and plant resource variability and a rise in sea level, loss of coastlines, and fluctuations in inland water levels affecting both marine and riverine habitats and resources. Related to these environmental developments were alterations in the subsistence systems of the human populations as they adapted to and, in some cases, adopted strategies to manage the range of new resources.

Admittedly, the environmental shifts were slow in terms of human lifetimes and, as Michael Jochim put it in a chapter for *Europe’s First Farmers*, “would have been perceived as gradual changes in relative proportions of habitats and resources, not abrupt replacements.” The varied geographic, climatic, and environmental factors that have interplayed with cultural development among the various upland regions of central and southern Europe contribute to the difficulty of defining a homogeneous process of post-Pleistocene adaptation. A regional approach incorporates the varying factors and allows the researcher to compare regions rather than archaeological cultures.

ALPINE AND PRE-ALPINE REGIONS

In northeastern Italy, especially in the Adige valley, researchers have shown that site distribution differs between the Preboreal/Boreal age (c. 10,300–7,500 years ago), affiliated with the Sauveterrian chipped stone industry, and the Atlantic age (approximately 7,500–6,000 years ago), associated with the Castelnovian industry. The break between these two industries is not especially sharp, and their usefulness in supporting a meaningful comparative framework is limited. In the earlier period the sites were distributed both on Alpine valley bottoms and in the mountains at altitudes from 1,900 to 2,300 meters. Over time, the sites on the Alpine valley bottoms remained while the mountain sites became rarer, and even those high-altitude sites interpreted as Castelnovian camps are dated to the beginning of the Atlantic period. In addition, an increasing number of later, rather than earlier, sites have been found in the pre-Alpine zone and on the plains.

The change in site distribution has been related to ecological changes through time, accompanying a progressive shift from a cold, dry environment to temperate and more humid woodland. These changes included the expansion of forests and a rise in sea level, among others. The rise in heat and humidity between the Boreal and Atlantic caused the disappearance of ibex and chamois at lower altitudes, whereas expansion and restocking of oaks and hazelnut advanced the populations of red deer, roe deer, and wild boar in the Alpine valleys and plains. The retreat of the caprine habitat thereby affected land use, site distribution, and hunting patterns. It also had an impact on butchering patterns. Faunal evidence from three Adige valley sites, Pradestel, Romagnano III, and the Soman rock shelter, shows that seasonal hunting of caprines continued between the Boreal and Atlantic subdivisions. Because of the greater distances necessary to climb to hunt these animals, however, transport became a problem. Butchering and skinning began to take place at the hunting stations to reduce transport costs. Other important stratified sites include Vatte di Zambana (Adige valley) and Riparo Gabon (east of Trento).

High-altitude sites from this region are worth mentioning because they reflect later research efforts. The site of Vaiale, which is found at 830 meters above sea level, is considered a Sauveterrian site

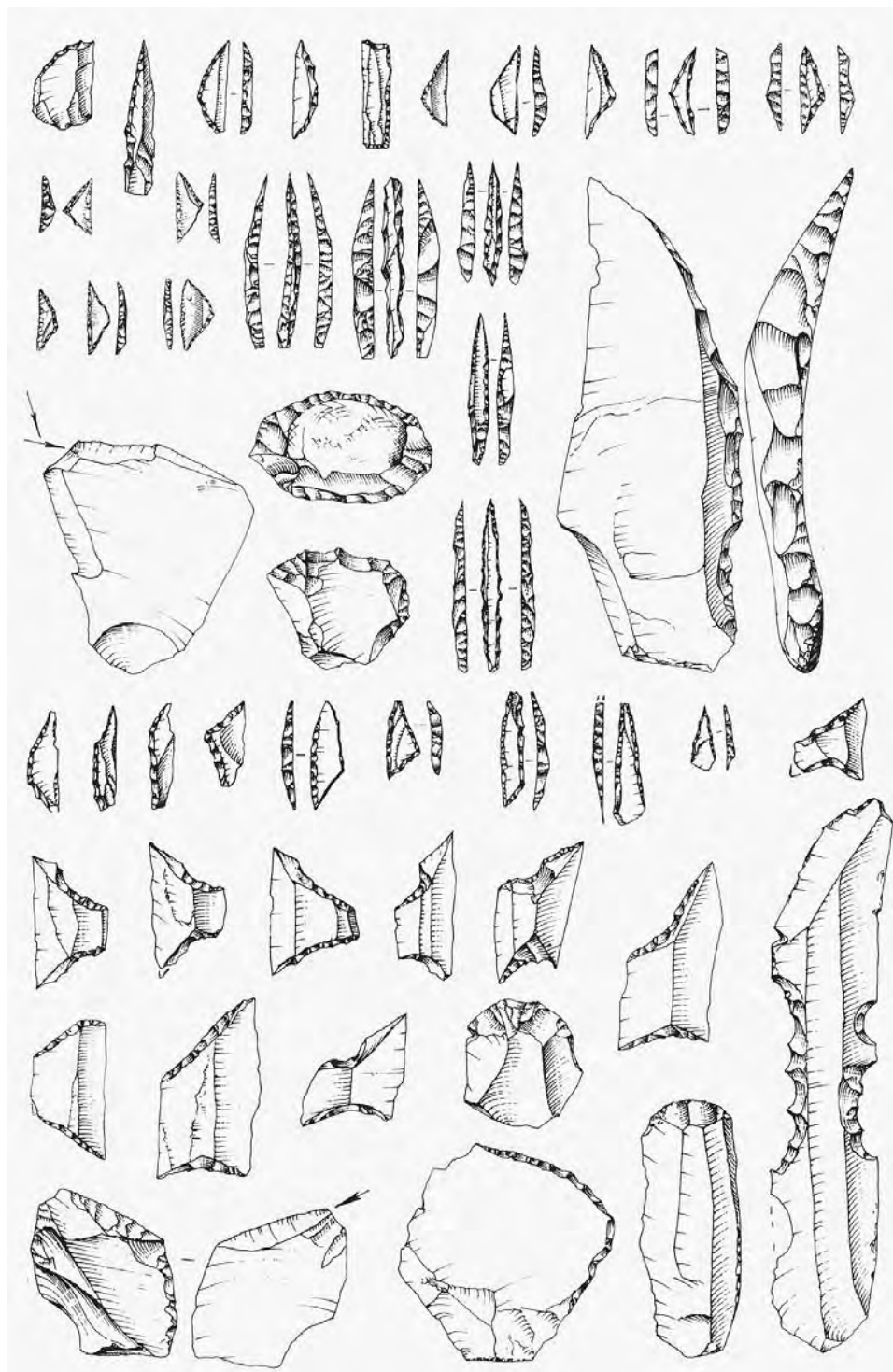


Fig. 1. Characteristic examples of Sauveterrian and Castelnovian industries from Riparo di Romagnano, Italy. COURTESY OF DR. MICHELE LANZINGER, MUSEO TRIDENTINO DI SCIENZE NATURALI. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

owing to the stone tool assemblage, which consisted of scalene triangles, backed points, microburins (of a type that reflects a particular manufacturing technique), cores, and debitage (waste flakes). Another Sauveterrian site, Rondeneto, is located at 1,780 meters above sea level. The stone tool assemblage there included a very small core, scalene triangles, backed blades and points, side scrapers, and microburins. Both of the sites are regarded as hunting camps.

A later assemblage, dated to the end of Boreal or the beginning of the Atlantic, was found at Lago delle Buse sites 1 and 2 (8,220±110 B.P., or 7040–6813 B.C.) at 2,000 meters above sea level. The assemblages also are considered Sauveterrian and are made up of microliths and side scrapers. A final example of a high-altitude site is Laghetti del Crestoso, at 2,000 meters above sea level in the Brescian Alps, dated to the middle Atlantic (6,790±120 B.P., or 5930–5445 B.C., and 6,870±70 B.P., or 5849–5592 B.C.). The complex is thought to be late Castelnovian and is interpreted as a seasonal campsite for hunting, possibly ibex.

These sites have provided valuable data for an understanding of Holocene resource and land-use patterns. For example, Lago delle Buse presents evidence for the growing presence of fire in the archaeological record, although it is not known whether it is due to human influence. It may have been used purposefully to promote fruit and nut species. It is believed that during the Holocene, fire came to be a major element that formed the structure of woods in the mountain and sub-Alpine zones. Other Alpine sites for which evidence of fire has been cited are located on the high plain of the Sette Comuni in the Alpine region.

Apparently, no evidence has been found for such activities in the Apennines or in the Valcamonica region. Carbonized hazelnut shells, however, were recovered from Sopra Fienile Rossino, a site in the Brescian Alps at 925 meters, dated 6,810 ± 70 B.P. (5765–5528 B.C.). Elsewhere, the archaeological record has given evidence for exploitation of hazelnuts (*Corylus avellana*) during the Mesolithic. It has been pointed out that hazelnuts are a nutritious food, easily carried and stored.

Laghetti del Crestoso is a more complex site than the other hunting camps mentioned, and the

presence of nonlocal lithic materials raises the issue of possible exchange networks during the Early Holocene. The overall evidence for such exchange networks is still meager, although the likelihood of such networks often is assumed, especially during the Castelnovian. Monteval de Sora (San Vito di Cadore in Belluno) is an important site in the Dolomites (a range in the eastern Alps), representing a rare example of a Mesolithic burial. The site, discovered in 1985, is located under the overhang of a large cliff on a terrace at 2,100 meters above sea level. The oldest occupation is Mesolithic in date, assigned to the Sauveterrian (c. 7,500 B.P., or 6500 B.C.) on the basis of tool typology. It also was occupied during the Castelnovian (c. 6,500 B.P., or 5500 B.C.) to which the burial belongs. The skeleton is of a robust man, 167 centimeters tall and about forty years of age. Accompanying the burial were stone tools and bone and antler artifacts, including pierced deer teeth.

NORTHERN APENNINE CHAIN

Eastern Liguria and the contiguous Tusco-Emilian Apennines are rather rich in surface finds dating to the Mesolithic. For example, the site of Gazzaro in the Emilian pre-Apennines produced the remains of a fireplace and animal bones. High-altitude Emilian sites include Passo della Comunella, at 1,619 meters (6,960±130 B.P., or 6020–5582 B.C.), and Lama Lite, at 1,764 meters (6,620±80 B.P., or 5622–5348 B.C.). In Tuscany the site of Piazzana lies at 820 meters and is slightly older (7,330±85 B.P. or 6366–5979 B.C.).

THE PLAINS

Research on the Po and Friuli plains has not been as intensive as in the Alpine areas, although it too has been gaining momentum since the last decade of the twentieth century. Published data from the Po plain for the Mesolithic are almost nonexistent, whereas the data from the Friuli plain have been gathered since the 1970s, most from survey. Only a few sites have been excavated, such as the Bierzo rock shelter. According to lithic typology, this site is Sauveterrian, as is the site of San Giorgio di Nogaro. Another site, Muzzana del Turgnano, is associated with the early Castelnovian, again on typological grounds.

In Friuli, as in many other areas, Mesolithic sites are found among the morainic hills, facing basins of

glacial origin that probably were flooded into the Holocene. Examples include the sites of Molin Nuovo, Rive d'Arcano, Corno-Ripudio, Cassacco, Porpetto, and sites along the Torres. It has been suggested that there was an emphasis on water resources, such as fish, aquatic turtle, and waterfowl, in this area, although the record is poor. Given the limited data at hand, one can still say that the pattern of site distribution does not appear to differ dramatically over time between the Early Mesolithic Sauveterrian and the later Castelnovian in this region.

THE KARST

The Trieste karst is bordered to the northwest by the alluvial deposits of the Isonzo River, to the northeast by the syncline of the Vipacco, to the southeast by the Val Rosandra, and to the southwest by the Adriatic Sea. The karst at one time was covered with a mixed oak woodland, mainly composed of oak, hornbeam, and ash. Forest clearance started during the fourteenth century A.D. and almost completely destroyed the original tree cover in four centuries. Mesolithic occupation in the Trieste karst has been known and studied for at least the second half of the twentieth century onward, largely owing to the efforts of speleologists in the region.

There are no open sites known from the Italian karst, although there are a few Mesolithic open sites from Slovenia and Istria. Breg is an open-air site in the region of Ljubljana (Slovenia) that has been excavated and dated to $6,830 \pm 150$ B.P. (5968–5440 B.C.). Faunal remains from Breg, as well as other sites in Slovenia, indicate that red deer, wild pig, and roe deer were hunted during the Early Holocene. In addition, remains of sea otter and fish have been found at this site as well as at the Mesolithic site of Pod Črmukljo, also near the Ljubljana marshes. Such finds, together with bone harpoons found at Breg and the site of Spehovka cave in the Slovenian karst, suggest that marine resources also were exploited by these hunter-gatherers.

In northeast Istria, Mesolithic deposits were found in the cave site of Pupičina, which dates to approximately 9,500–10,000 years ago. In addition to the stone assemblages, excavators found pierced seashells and pierced red deer canines. Several other sites are located in the region of Pupičina and are being studied as part of a larger project. These sites

include the Šebrn rock shelter (8400–7610 B.C.) and the open-air site of Kotle (Castelnovian, no dates). The results of the project have shed light on changes in resource use by foraging populations through time.

Grotta dell'Edera is a karst cave in Italy near Trieste at which research also is ongoing. The work at Edera has revealed superimposed fireplaces, hearths, cooking floors, and fire pits that represent temporary Mesolithic and Neolithic episodes of habitation. A Castelnovian fireplace, dating to about 6500 B.C., was found below the Neolithic levels. Within it were stone tools and sherds from two coarse pottery vessels, undecorated and not revealing of time or culture—an unusual association of Mesolithic tools and Neolithic pottery. In addition, three perforated beads, made of nonlocal sandstone, each measuring approximately 1.5 millimeters in diameter, were identified with this feature. Small pieces of sandstone and ochre, which are exotic to the limestone cave, also were uncovered. Finally, specimens of marine shells dominate the faunal remains from this fireplace, a situation found in similar caves of the same age. For example, at the caves of Azzura and Tartaruga, land mollusks had been found in conjunction with earlier levels, whereas sea mollusks and fishing came to dominate the faunal remains in the later levels, associated with Castelnovian industries.

Not surprisingly, the dates correspond generally to changes in sea level due to melting ice sheets, c. 8,000–7,000 years ago. Before that time, indirect evidence indicates that the northern Adriatic plain had supported rich ungulate fauna during the Pleistocene, while the inland areas were used sporadically, possibly on a seasonal basis. With the rise in sea level, the plain was reduced to a small area around the Gulf of Trieste. Approximately 20–25 kilometers of coastal plain in the northern Adriatic was submerged. The progressive rise in sea level during the Early Holocene is known to geologists but poorly related to the archaeological record at this time. The reduction of the resource base of this region should be taken into account, as should its demographic effects. In brief, the impact of the gradual loss of the plain that had existed in the northern Adriatic, extending as far south as Ancona and Zadar, doubtless is operative in Holocene developments. In addition to the inundation of earlier sites,

the rise of sea level would have had profound effects on inland waterways, estuaries, and lagoons.

CENTRAL AND SOUTHERN ITALY

Outside of the northern Adriatic zone are regions where the Mesolithic record still is not well known. It once was believed that hunter-gatherers of central and southern Italy continued to use Epipalaeolithic types of stone tools after the Pleistocene. A specific industry, known as the Romanellian, after the Grotta Romanelli in central Italy near Puglia, was dated between 9,000 and 10,000 years ago. These early assemblages contain small circular and irregular scrapers, burins, backed blades, microburins, and geometrics (segments and triangles). New research shows that following the Romanellian, there is a Sauveterrian-Castelnovian sequence, as elsewhere in the Mediterranean. Some sites of importance are the Grotta della Serratura in Campania, the Toppo dei Sassi and Grotta Latronico 3 in Basilicata and the Grotta Marisa and Grotta delle Mura in Puglia. Studies of faunal remains have shown that through time, hunting was mainly for red deer and boar rather than ibex and chamois, as seen farther north. There are regional variations on the pattern, however. For example, horse and cattle were hunted in the less wooded karst environment of the Salento peninsula of Puglia.

EASTERN ADRIATIC COAST

Evidence for Mesolithic sites farther south along the Adriatic coast (Dalmatia, Montenegro, and Albania) is minimal, although so-called Epigravettian assemblages have been found. Epigravettian (c. 12,000 years ago), which is the final phase of the Palaeolithic stone tool tradition called Gravettian, is known throughout Europe and characterized by backed blades. These continuities in assemblages suggest that perhaps there was less environmental change in this region than, for example, in northern Italy. Two major sites with Mesolithic tools in Montenegro are Crvena Stijena and Odmut (about seven thousand years ago) with Castelnovian-type industries. Even farther south, layers of Early Neolithic with Impresso pottery and “industries of Castelnovian aspect” (as noted by Djuricic to suggest a loose cultural affiliation of stone tool assemblages) have been recorded in western Montenegro, suggesting that the final hunter-gatherers in the region encountered the earliest food producers.

Continuing south, in Albania, close to the Greek border, an excavation at Konispol Cave reportedly has yielded Mesolithic materials. The excavators compared the site to Franchthi, a famous site in Greece with Mesolithic deposits. A survey in Albania, conducted to relocate the caves uncovered by Luigi Cardini in the 1930s, has reported at least three caves with potential Mesolithic stone tools. These sites are the Kanalit rock shelter (along the coast on the western side of the Dukat plain in the Acroceraunian mountains), the Kamenica cave (near Delvina), and Ksamili hill and village (near Butrint).

BALKANS

The Iron Gates Gorge sites along the Danube (Lepenski Vir, Padina, Vlasac, and others) are dealt with separately in this volume; they represent an exceptional opportunity to study Mesolithic hunter-gatherers in an unusual context. Aside from those sites, the Mesolithic record for the Balkans is not extensive. As was the case for southern Europe, the change from Late Glacial to Postglacial and into the Holocene was marked by change in forestation from pine to mixed oak, although specific regions would have been affected differently.

Generally, the contrast in climate and vegetation after the Pleistocene was greater close to the Alps than it was in the central Balkans. During the Late Glacial, Epigravettian industries were common east of the Alps, with types similar to those found in Italy. After this time there appear to have been three different traditions based on stone tool types, one being the Castelnovian, with similarities to that of southern Europe (France and Italy). It also shows ties to the previous Sauveterrian industries. A second tradition continued basic Epigravettian traditions, with some trapezes (the hallmark of Castelnovian industries) and includes such sites in Romania as Ripiceni-Izvor. The third is that found within the Iron Gates Gorge sites.

The situation in Greece is similar to that in the balance of the Balkans, namely, that Mesolithic settlement appears to have been very thin. A survey of the Mesolithic in Greece found less than a dozen sites, of which only two have been excavated and the results published. In addition, the distribution of the sites seems to be uneven, with large parts of Greece apparently unpopulated during the early

Postglacial. The reason for this sparseness could have been a lack of population, or perhaps it was related to environmental factors, such as rise in sea level and sedimentation of valleys, which would have buried sites under alluvium. This possibility is supported by the discovery of Mesolithic deposits in the Theopetra Cave, in eastern Thessaly. These deposits are given seven different dates, ranging from 9780 to 6700 B.C.

SOUTH-CENTRAL EUROPE

Western Zone. The western zone of South-Central Europe includes southern Germany together with adjacent parts of Austria (although knowledge of the Mesolithic from Austria generally is very poor) and Switzerland, a region with a well-studied Mesolithic record. The record is separated into Early and Late Mesolithic, with a date of c. 6600 B.C. dividing the two. The Early Mesolithic, or Beuronien, spanned about 2,500 years, from 7,800 to 10,300 years ago. The types are not so different from those of the Sauveterrian industries described earlier—that is, a magnitude of microliths, including triangles, backed bladelets, and micropoints. Sites from this period are many and include excavated caves, rock shelters, and open-air sites as well as surface lithic scatters. Late Mesolithic sites have trapezoidal microliths (not unlike types found in the Mediterranean Castelnovian assemblages), which presumably were used as transverse arrow points, regular blade technology, and extensive antler working.

One excavated site in the region is Henauhof Northwest 2, located along the old shoreline of the Federsee lake. The site consists of a hearth associated with a concentration of bone and antler fragments. Burned stones and bone fragments were found within the hearth. The tools included a trapeze and other microliths; two borers; two burins and three scrapers; two cores; a few regular, well-made blades; and numerous flakes. Dates of the charcoal were $7,260 \pm 180$ B.P. (6425–5716 B.C.) and $6,940 \pm 60$ B.P. (5945–5666 B.C.). Analysis of the organic remains suggested that the site had been a short-term, generalized-activity camp, forming part of a seasonal settlement system. Faunal remains show differences in hunting not unlike the Mesolithic farther south.

Compared with the density of sites in the Early Mesolithic, Late Mesolithic sites are relatively few in

the region. Population decline, differential site destruction by natural processes, and reorganization of settlement patterns leading to use of landscapes with lesser visibility have been offered as explanations. A good case has been made that Late Mesolithic groups in this region had wide-ranging networks of exchange and interaction, linking them indirectly to regions in the southwest and southeast of Europe. In addition, exploration has led to an extension of the Late Mesolithic (termed Terminal Mesolithic) that suggests overlap with the earlier food producers in the region and potential interaction between the late hunter-gatherers and the early food-producers about six thousand years ago.

Eastern Zone. The Mesolithic period is not well known in this region (present-day Hungary and western Slovakia). A Sauveterrian assemblage is known from the Slovak site of Sereď and one Castelnovian complex apparently has been uncovered in Moravia. Intensive surface surveys and stratigraphic excavations have been undertaken in the Zagyva basin in the northwestern part of the Great Hungarian Plain, which have led to the discovery of several Mesolithic sites (with Sauveterrian tool types) on lower elevations at the edges of ancient riverbeds. It is believed that the rivers most likely supported gallery forests during the Boreal, which would have made them attractive locations for camps, similar to those found near old lakebeds.

CONCLUSION

To a certain extent, the adaptations of the hunting-gathering populations following the Ice Age have tended to be underplayed; they are almost like a people without a history. These populations fall within a “transitional” period, and theorists who study transitions are inclined to look less to origins than to future states when seeking explanations. Thus, research on the Mesolithic tends to focus on the food-producing populations of the Neolithic, which follows and examines relationships between those people and their economies and the hunter-gatherers they displaced. Perhaps a more interesting approach is to examine the Mesolithic hunter-gatherers as humans who developed new strategies in the face of changing environments and social relations.

See also **Iron Gates Mesolithic** (*vol. 1, part 2*); **Franchthi Cave** (*vol. 1, part 2*).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Alciati, G., L. Cattani, F. Fontana, et al. "Mondeval de Sora: A High Altitude Mesolithic Campsite in the Italian Dolomites." *Preistoria Alpina* 28, no. 1 (1994) 28: 351–366.
- Barker, Graeme. "Early Holocene Environments and Subsistence Strategies in the Mediterranean Basin." In *Colloquium XIV Adaptations to Post-Glacial Environments*. Proceedings of the UISPP XIII Annual Congress, Forli, Italy. Vol. 7. Edited by S. Kozłowski and C. Tozzi, pp. 105–112. Forli, Italy: A.B.A.C.O., 1996.
- Biagi, Paolo. "Some Aspects of the Late Mesolithic and Early Neolithic Periods in Northern Italy." In *From the Mesolithic to the Neolithic*. Proceedings of the International Archaeological Conference, Damjanich Museum of Szolnok, September 22–27, 1996. Edited by Róbert Kertész and János Makkay. Budapest, Hungary: Archaeolingua, 2001.
- . "Mesolithic Exploitation of the Highland Zone: A Case Study for the Southern Alps." *Preistoria Alpina* 28, no. 1 (1992): 367–372.
- Bietti, Amilcare. "Normal Science and Paradigmatic Biases in Italian Hunter-Gatherer Prehistory." In *Perspectives on the Past: Theoretical Biases in Mediterranean Hunting-Gathering Research*. Edited by Geoffrey A. Clark, pp. 258–281. Philadelphia: University of Pennsylvania Press, 1991.
- Budja, Mihael. "The Transition to Farming in Southeast Europe: Perspectives from Pottery." *Documenta Praehistorica* 28 (2001): 27–48.
- Cannarella, Dante. "La storia delle ricerche del mesolitico sul Carso Triestino." In *Il Mesolitico sul Carso Triestino*. Edited by A. M. Radmilli, pp. 13–20. Trieste, Italy: Edizioni Svevo Trieste, 1984.
- Clark, Geoffrey A., ed. *Perspectives on the Past: Theoretical Biases in Mediterranean Hunter-Gatherer Research*. Philadelphia: University of Pennsylvania Press, 1991.
- Dalmeri, G., and M. Lanzinger. "Risultati preliminari delle ricerche nei siti mesolitici del Lago delle Buse, nel Lagorai (Trentino)." *Preistoria Alpina* 28, no. 1 (1992): 317–349.
- Djuričić, Liljana. "The Chipped Stone Industry from the Rock-Shelter of Trebački Krs." In *Prehistoric Settlements in Caves and Rock-Shelters of Serbia and Montenegro*. Fascicle 1. Vol. 16. Edited by Dragoslav Srejović, pp. 75–102. Belgrade, Yugoslavia: University of Belgrade, Center for Archaeological Research, 1996.
- Francis, Karen. "The Lost Caves of Luigi Cardini: Explorations in Albania 1930–2001." <http://www.shef.ac.uk/~caora/3/cardini.html>.
- Jochim, Michael A. "The Origins of Agriculture in South-Central Europe." In *Europe's First Farmers*. Edited by T. Douglas Price, pp. 183–196. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 2000.
- . *A Hunter-Gatherer Landscape: Southwest Germany in the Late Paleolithic and Mesolithic*. New York: Plenum Press, 1998.
- . "Surprises, Recurring Themes, and New Questions in the Study of the Late Glacial and Early Postglacial." In *Humans at the End of the Ice Age: The Archaeology of the Pleistocene-Transition*. Edited by Lawrence Guy Straus, Berit Valentin Eriksen, Jon M. Erlandson, and David R. Yesner, pp. 357–363. New York: Plenum Press, 1996.
- Kotsakis, Kostas. "Mesolithic to Neolithic in Greece: Continuity, Discontinuity or Change of Course?" *Documenta Praehistorica* 28 (2001): 63–74.
- Kozłowski, J. K., and S. K. Kozłowski. "Le mésolithique a l'est des Alpes." *Preistoria Alpina* 19 (1984): 37–56.
- Lenneis, Eva. "The Beginning of the Neolithic in Austria: A Report about Recent and Current Investigations." *Documenta Praehistorica* 28 (2001): 99–116.
- Miracle, Preston. "Mesolithic Meals from Mesolithic Middens." In *Consuming Passions and Patterns of Consumption*. Edited by Preston Miracle and Nicky Milner, pp. 65–87. Cambridge, U.K.: McDonald Institute for Archaeological Research, 2002.
- Miracle, Preston, N. Galanidou, and S. Forenbaier. "Pioneers in the Hills: Early Mesolithic Foragers at Šebn Abri (Istria, Croatia)." *European Journal of Archaeology* 3, no. 3 (2000): 293–329.
- Müller, Johannes. *Das Ostadriatische Frühneolithikum: Die Impresso-Kultur und die Neolithisierung des Adria-raumes*. 9 vols. *Prähistorische Archäologie in Südosteuropa*. Berlin: Wissenschaftsverlag Volker Spiess, 1994.
- Pluciennik, Mark. "Reconsidering Radmilli's Mesolithic." In *Studi sul Paleolitico, Mesolitico e Neolitico del Bacino dell'Adriatico in ricordo di Antonio M. Radmilli*. Edited by Paolo Biagi, pp. 171–184. Trieste, Italy: Edizioni Svevo Trieste, 2000.
- Starnini, Elisabetta. "Stone Industries of the Early Neolithic Cultures in Hungary and Their Relationships with the Mesolithic Background." *Studi sul Paleolitico, Mesolitico e Neolitico del Bacino dell'Adriatico in ricordo di Antonio M. Radmilli*. Edited by Paolo Biagi, pp. 207–220. Trieste, Italy: Edizioni Svevo Trieste, 2000.
- Zvelebil, Marek. "Concepts of Time and 'Presencing' the Mesolithic." *Archaeological Review from Cambridge* 12, no. 2 (1993): 51–70.
- . "Mesolithic Prelude and Neolithic Revolution." In *Hunters in Transition: Mesolithic Societies of Temperate Eurasia and Their Transition to Farming*. Edited by Marek Zvelebil, pp. 5–16. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1986.

BARBARA VOYTEK

IRON GATES MESOLITHIC

The Iron Gates region stands out for its exceptional record of human occupation during the Late Glacial and Early Holocene periods and for the unique insight it provides into the events surrounding the transition to agriculture in the Middle Danube basin. Here, along a 200-kilometer stretch of the river Danube that forms the border between Romania and Serbia, settlements of Mesolithic hunter-gatherers and Early Neolithic farmers have been found at more than thirty locations. The distribution of the sites is very much a reflection of the pattern of research. Surveys and rescue excavations undertaken in the 1960s to 1980s prior to construction of two dams across the Danube targeted valley floor areas on both sides of the river that would eventually be flooded. Very little archaeological exploration has taken place in areas farther from the river.

The majority of the known sites occur in the zone where the Danube has cut a series of deep gorges through the southern arm of the Carpathian Mountains. Rapids and whirlpools were a feature of this section of the river prior to dam closure. Sites have also been found downriver, in the more open section of the Danube Valley between the Iron Gates I and II dams. In spite of the contrast in physical setting, the archaeological records of the two zones show many similarities.

Scientific dating methods such as radiocarbon were not easily available at the time of the investigations, and excavators relied mainly on artifact typology and stratigraphy to date their sites. Since the 1990s research on surviving archaeological collections, involving AMS radiocarbon dating and other forms of scientific analysis, has led to a reassessment of the relative and absolute chronologies of the principal sites.

MESOLITHIC SETTLEMENT

Some archaeologists have argued that the Iron Gates Mesolithic exhibits a trend toward increasing social complexity and sedentism, culminating in the Late Mesolithic “Lepenski Vir culture” between c. 7000 and 5500 B.C. However, this view seems to owe more to the archaeologists’ expectations than to sound archaeological evidence. It has yet to be

demonstrated by, for example, seasonality studies of animal and plant remains or direct evidence of food storage that any of the Iron Gates sites were permanent, year-round settlements. Moreover, although Lepenski Vir has come to epitomize the Iron Gates Mesolithic, many of the archaeological “indicators” of complexity there—including much of the sophisticated architecture, art, and evidence of participation in long-distance exchange networks—probably date to a time when agriculture had a significant impact on the Iron Gates economy.

In fact there is no clear pattern of temporal change in the Iron Gates Mesolithic. The early stages are very poorly documented. Use of caves and rock shelters on the Romanian bank can be traced back to the Late Glacial period, c. 12,000 B.C. An open-air settlement had been established at Vlasac shortly after 9500 B.C., and there were occupations at Padina and Lepenski Vir by the early eighth millennium B.C. The duration of these Early Mesolithic settlements is unknown, and few architectural or other remains survive.

The character of Mesolithic settlement in the Iron Gates region is best represented at Vlasac on the Serbian bank of the Danube and Schela Cladovei in Romania. The evidence from these two sites relates mainly to a restricted period of the Late Mesolithic between 7100 and 6300 B.C. The inhabitants appear to have lived in trapezoidal “pit” houses. Hearths consisting of rectangular pits lined with stone slabs were found in some of the houses, but there were no other internal divisions. Sometimes the hearths were all that survived of the houses.

Burials are an important feature of both sites and occur within the confines of the settlements rather than in formal cemeteries. Eighty-five graves containing the remains of more than one hundred individuals were found at Vlasac, and more than sixty graves have been excavated at Schela Cladovei. Single inhumation was the norm; the dead were placed in simple earthen graves, often lying extended on their backs, but sometimes laid on one side with the legs and arms flexed. The skull was sometimes buried separately and, occasionally, groups of skulls have been found. There is persuasive evidence for the deliberate disposal of individual human bones, groups of disarticulated bones, and body parts still held together by soft tissue, probably linked to practice of excarnation—where the corpse

is first exposed to allow the flesh to either rot away or be removed by scavengers. Excarnated bones were either buried separately or added to graves containing an intact body (fig. 1). Ivana Radovanović in *The Iron Gates Mesolithic* (1996) has suggested that excarnation was reserved for individuals of higher status. However, apart from the presence of red ochre in many graves, burial goods are few and provide no clear evidence of social distinctions within the communities. Bones of dogs, the only domestic animal of this period, have been found in association with human remains at Vlasac, and there is one possible example of the separate burial of a dog—a practice known from the Mesolithic elsewhere in Europe.

Stable isotope analysis of collagen extracted from the human bones indicates a diet (and thus an economy) heavily dependent on fish, shellfish, and other aquatic resources. The bones of carp, catfish, and sturgeon were recovered in large quantities in Anglo-Romanian excavations at Schela Cladovei between 1992 and 1996. Many of the fish caught were enormous, some weighing as much as 200 kilograms. Large and small land mammals were hunted for their meat, hides, and pelts, and their bones were used as raw material for manufacturing a range of tools and weapons. Wild plants likely were collected for dietary and other purposes, but their remains have been recovered only in very small quantities, even when fine sieving and flotation have been used.

The chipped-stone artifacts from Vlasac and Schela Cladovei, though more numerous than those made of antler, bone, or boars' tusks, are less distinctive and are made almost exclusively from local sources of flint, radiolarite, and quartz. Decorated items are rare. They consist largely of stones and pieces of bone, often engraved with a net-like motif.

The strongest evidence that the inhabitants of Vlasac and Schela Cladovei engaged in trade and other forms of exchange with neighboring groups is the presence in some of the graves of the shells of marine mollusks, which probably originated in the Adriatic or Aegean. These certainly were acquired through exchange rather than procured directly from the source.

Intergroup contact may be manifested in other ways. Some of the adults buried at Schela Cladovei

died violently, shot by arrows equipped with bone points. Others suffered broken bones, including skull fractures, which also may have been the result of violence. The high incidence of arrow wounds at Schela Cladovei is unusual, but such evidence is not unique in the Iron Gates, and numerous other examples have been reported from sites across Europe dating to various stages of the Mesolithic. The causes of the violence at Schela Cladovei and its social context are unknown. It may signify conflict with other groups in the form of feuds or raiding, but retribution or ritual killing within the community (and even accidental shootings) cannot be ruled out.

Growing evidence indicates that the settlement record of the Iron Gates Mesolithic is not continuous. A conspicuous gap in the available radiocarbon dates between 6300 and 6000 B.C. suggests that many sites, including Vlasac and Schela Cladovei, were abandoned during that period. This coincided with a phase of cooler and wetter climate affecting much of western and central Europe, when the Danube and other river systems experienced more frequent and more extreme flooding. Faced with an increased threat from flooding, it is possible that people chose to relocate their settlements onto higher ground, either to more elevated terraces or onto the upland plateau at the edge of the valley—areas that were not surveyed archaeologically in the 1960s and 1970s.

The only site that can be shown to have remained in use during this period is Lepenski Vir. This remarkable site has a number of unusual, even unique, features. The architecture is more elaborate than that of any other site (fig. 2). The trapezoidal buildings, which show considerable variation in size, have specially prepared plaster floors and elaborate hearths, entrance facades, and other stone-built elements. Burials seem to have been deliberately located within or under some of the buildings. The site also has an unusually high frequency of decorated objects including stone “altars” and the famous sculptured boulders. These are between 15 and 60 centimeters in height, and were pecked and ground from sandstone boulders obtained near the site. Many are carved with abstract motifs. Others are figural, although usually only the head is clearly defined with exaggerated features such as large, often downturned mouths and bulging eyes. These

representational forms are sometimes described as fish-like or half fish and half human. The frequent placement of the sculptured boulders on the floors of buildings, and the apparently deliberate deposition of parts of red-deer skulls with antlers and parts of animal carcasses inside some of the buildings, can be interpreted as symbolic acts. The shape of the buildings may also be symbolic. On the opposite bank of the Danube is the imposing trapezoidal mountain of Treskavac. Although archaeology does not reveal the belief system of the Iron Gates Mesolithic, it is not stretching credibility to imagine Treskavac as the abode of spirits that exerted a powerful influence on the lives of the local inhabitants. All these features suggest that Lepenski Vir was a special site. Although there was a settlement there before 7500 B.C., many archaeologists believe that it eventually developed into a “sacred place,” used primarily for burial and ritual, and the plaster-floored buildings are often described as shrines or temples.

Curiously, the “shrines” and sculptured boulders appear in the archaeological record of Lepenski Vir at a time when many ordinary residential sites were abandoned. By continuing to use the site as a burial ground the group may have been seeking to maintain rights of ownership and inheritance to the land, the river and resources. It has been suggested that the sculptures were apotropaic, representations of ancestors or “river gods” that were intended to protect the site—the ritual home of the ancestors—from the unseen forces that were responsible for extreme and unpredictable floods.

CHANGES WITH REOCCUPATION

The settlements that had been abandoned c. 6300 B.C., including Schela Cladovei and Vlasac, were re-occupied c. 6000 B.C. From the outset a marked change in cultural patterns is apparent. The sites now contain the bones of domesticated livestock (cattle, pigs, sheep and/or goats) although hunting and fishing still contributed to the economy. Changes in material culture and technology are evident, reflected in the appearance of pottery, ground stone artifacts, and new forms of bone tools. There is evidence for trade or exchange in exotic materials, including obsidian and high-quality “Balkan” flint that originated outside the Iron Gates region. A new form of burial, where the body is curled up in

the fetal position, was introduced. All these features can be paralleled in early farming settlements of the Starčevo culture that start to appear in other parts of the Middle Danube basin c. 6000 B.C.

Two competing theories seek to account for these changes. Some archaeologists believe that the Iron Gates region, and the Danube gorges in particular, remained a refuge for hunter-gatherers for centuries after cereal cultivation and stock raising were introduced to the surrounding regions; they interpret the appearance of pottery and bones of livestock in the Iron Gates as the product of trade with neighboring farmers. Others argue that the Iron Gates Mesolithic people quickly adopted agriculture, pottery, and other elements of the Starčevo



Fig. 2. Trapezoidal buildings with carefully laid plaster floors, stone-bordered “hearths,” and other stone fixtures are a conspicuous feature of Lepenski Vir. In this example so-called altars—large tabular stones with artificially ground hollows in the upper surface—can be seen set into the floor behind the hearth and adjacent to the near side of the building. Such buildings began to be erected on the site during the Late Mesolithic before 6200 B.C., and their construction continued for at least 500 years during which time pottery and farming were introduced to the region. ARCHAEOLOGICAL INSTITUTE, BEOGRAD. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

culture—caught up in the same process of “Neolithization” that saw farming communities established over much of the northern Balkans by c. 5900 B.C. A third possible scenario is that Iron Gates region was colonized by immigrant farmers who ousted or exterminated the indigenous Mesolithic people and took over their traditional sites. While this idea cannot be discounted, as of 2003 there was no scientific evidence to support it. The weight of evidence appears to favor the second explanation. Pottery occurs in such quantity at Lepenski Vir, Padina, Schela Cladovei, and other sites that it is difficult to imagine it was all brought in from outside.

Lepenski Vir has produced other critically important data. This is the only site in the region where the events of the final Mesolithic and Early

Neolithic, c. 6300–5500 B.C., can be studied as an uninterrupted process. Research since the 1990s has cast doubt on the elaborate chronological subdivisions of the site proposed by the excavator, and it seems that the architectural and artistic traditions represented by the trapezoidal plaster-floored “shrines” and sculptured boulders persisted throughout this time range.

The people buried at Lepenski Vir are a continuous cross-section of the Iron Gates population of that period. Chemical analysis of their bones reveals a significant change in diet around the time that pottery and other “Neolithic” artifacts appear in the archaeological record. The group ceased to subsist mainly on fish and other aquatic foods and derived the greater part of its dietary protein from terrestrial sources. Such a major change in diet is likely to have required a direct investment in agriculture.

Although the label “Neolithic” can be assigned to the people and culture of the Iron Gates after 6000 B.C., echoes of their Late Mesolithic ancestry survive in the later artwork of Lepenski Vir and in the trapezoidal buildings that continued to be erected there and elsewhere in the Danube gorges.

See also *Transition to Farming in the Balkans* (vol. 1, part 3).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Bonsall, Clive, Vasile Boroneanț, and Ivana Radovanović. *The Iron Gates in Prehistory*. Oxford: Archaeopress, 2004.
- Bonsall, Clive, Mark G. Macklin, Robert W. Payton, and Adina Boroneanț. “Climate, Floods and River Gods: Environmental Change and the Meso–Neolithic Transition in Southeast Europe.” *Before Farming* 3–4, no. 2 (2002): 1–15.
- Radovanović, Ivana. *The Iron Gates Mesolithic*. Archaeological Series, no. 11. Ann Arbor, Mich.: International Monographs in Prehistory, 1996.
- Srejović, Dragoslav. *Europe’s First Monumental Sculpture: New Discoveries at Lepenski Vir*. Translated by Lovett F. Edwards. London: Thames and Hudson, 1972.

CLIVE BONSCALL

FRANCHTHI CAVE

Franchthi Cave, located on the southern Argolid peninsula of Greece, was excavated between 1968 and 1976 under the direction of Thomas W. Jacobson of Indiana University. Discontinuous occupation in the cave spans a period from approximately 35,000 through 5,000 years ago, covering the Upper Palaeolithic through the end of the Neolithic, from hunting and gathering to agricultural subsistence.

UPPER PALAEOLITHIC

The Upper Palaeolithic levels, dating to 35,000–10,000 years ago, are characterized by signs of sporadic hunter-gatherer occupation. The stone tools, mostly backed bladelets and microliths fashioned from local flint, were used to process the meat of the steppe ass, the most common animal hunted at this

time. Other game included red deer, wild pig, and ibex. Analysis of the sediments inside the cave has identified a major depositional hiatus between 17,000 and 13,000–12,000 years ago. When occupation resumed, plant remains indicate that wild lentils, pistachios, and almonds were collected at this time, and steppe ass continued to be hunted. Land snails also were consumed, as evidenced by two extensive deposits of charred and crushed shells in the cave. Toward the end of the Upper Palaeolithic period red deer became the dominant game animal. Obsidian also appears in small quantities. Analyses of the obsidian have identified it as coming from the island of Melos, about 150 kilometers southeast of the site, in the Aegean.

MESOLITHIC

The Mesolithic period at Franchthi Cave is subdivided into two phases, the Lower Mesolithic (8700–7900 B.C.) and the Upper Mesolithic (7900–7500 B.C.), based on a change in the stone tools and fauna. In the earlier period the lithic assemblage is characterized by various tools made by retouching or microflaking part of the stone flake. When done at one end of the flake it forms an end-scrapers, while retouching down one edge of the flake can form a serrated edge on a denticulate tool. The fauna are dominated by red deer, but pig and small fish also are represented.

The Upper Mesolithic saw a reappearance of microliths that were present in the Upper Palaeolithic. While there is evidence of an overall decrease in large fauna, remains of red deer still predominate. At this time as well large fish, such as tuna, appeared in the deposits. The overall increase in remains of plants, animal bones, and stone tools points to intensified occupation of Franchthi Cave during the Upper Mesolithic. While this habitation still may have been primarily seasonal in nature, there is evidence from oxygen isotope analysis of marine shells and plant and animal remains that year-round occupation also occurred.

Obsidian also was more prevalent at this time, which, along with the remains of large fish, suggests more extensive seafaring. Mapping of the seafloor in Koilada Bay through sub-bottom profiling has shown the transgression of the shorelines throughout the period of occupation of the cave, thus bringing the coast closer to the cave and eroding the



Fig. 1. Excavated area of Franchthi Cave looking toward mouth of cave. COURTESY INDIANA UNIVERSITY ARCHIVES. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

coastal plain. The shoreline was exploited for shellfish, as evidenced by numerous shells found in the cave deposits. It is possible that reed boats were used to travel in local seas and to Melos to procure obsidian. Use-wear analysis of some of the stone tools has shown that they were used to cut grasses, perhaps reeds or oats and barley.

Aside from a few fragments in the Upper Palaeolithic period, the first complete human burial dates to the Mesolithic. This man, about twenty-six years of age, was buried toward the front of the cave on a deposit of burned shell. Complete analysis of the bone remains from around and beneath this skeleton indicate that this area also had been used for cremation burials.

NEOLITHIC

Geological studies of the deposits in Franchthi Cave indicate another depositional hiatus of about 500 years between the latest Mesolithic and the earliest Neolithic deposits. The Neolithic period (7200–3500 B.C.) saw substantial changes in subsistence

practices at Franchthi Cave with the introduction of domesticated sheep and goats as well as wheat and domestic forms of barley and lentils. The first appearance of domesticates occurs in levels with few or no ceramics. The existence of an aceramic or prepottery phase in Greece has been debated over the years, as the earliest occupation layers of many Neolithic sites had little or no pottery. At Franchthi, the levels containing the earliest domesticated plants and animals but little or no pottery are labeled “Initial Neolithic.” The sherds that are present may have dropped in from upper layers or may be in situ and represent the rare use of ceramics by these first farmers.

Structures were built on the coastal plain in front of the cave, an area known as the *paralia*, or “beach,” in the Early Neolithic period. Coring in the bay in front of the cave has shown that a small hamlet may have extended about 100 meters beyond the present shoreline. The sea level was about 60 meters below the present level at this time.

Analysis of the ceramics has identified five phases of production, with the earliest phase still represented by relatively few pots, which were small and probably not made for cooking. In the Middle Neolithic most of the pottery was of a ware known as Urfirnis, decorated with geometric designs. These vessels, too, were not made for cooking but may have been for ritual use or special occasions. The Late Neolithic and final Neolithic phases saw the production of coarser ware that would have been suitable for cooking over an open fire, which suggests that cooking methods and food preparation techniques changed at this time.

Beads and amulets were common during the Neolithic. An area used for the manufacture of shell beads was discovered in the *paralia* deposits. The finds consisted of small flint borers and cockleshells or shell fragments in all stages of bead manufacture, including bead blanks, partially drilled beads, and numerous complete beads. Many more human burials are dated to the Neolithic period, predominantly the Middle Neolithic, including numerous infant burials. Grave goods in the form of a small marble bowl and a broken ceramic vessel accompanied one such infant burial inside the cave.

Franchthi Cave was abandoned about 5,000 years ago, probably as the result of a major rock fall that blocked the front third of the cave from the back two-thirds and left a window in the roof of the cave. Limited excavation between the building-sized boulders produced material mainly from the final period of the Neolithic.

COMPARATIVE SITES

No comparable site in Greece, with such a long span of occupation, has been excavated. Survey in the region of Franchthi Cave has uncovered few other Palaeolithic or Mesolithic sites and no Early Neolithic ones. Many of the earlier sites may have been flooded when sea levels rose, however. The Palaeolithic levels have some similarities to sites in Epirus, such as Asprochaliko, Kastritsa, and Klithi. Mesolithic deposits have been found in Thessaly at Theopetra Cave as well as several other cave sites in southern Greece. More typical Neolithic sites are the large tells (*magoulas*) in Thessaly, where stratified remains of villages form large mounds in the Thessalian plain.

IMPORTANCE OF FRANCHTHI CAVE

Franchthi Cave is an extremely important site, owing to the depth of the occupation strata, which provide new data on the chronology of lithic and ceramic sequences of southern Greece. Because of the intensive water sieving that was undertaken, it is one of only two Greek sites that have plant remains from pre-Neolithic levels. Together with studies of other biological remains, such as animal bones, marine mollusks, and land snails, these analyses have provided a fairly complete picture of the subsistence systems and environment throughout the occupation of the cave. Additional studies, such as sub-bottom profiling and pollen analysis from cores taken in the bay, show shoreline transgression during the site's occupation and Holocene vegetation in the region. These studies allow one to picture the environment of the time more accurately, as well as the changes the cave's inhabitants encountered.

Franchthi Cave also provides some of the earliest evidence of the introduction of agriculture to Europe. Although wild lentils and barley were present in the Mesolithic, domesticated forms did not occur until after a 500-year hiatus in occupation, at the same time as domesticated emmer and einkorn wheat as well as sheep and goats. Together with the building of the structures on the coast and the introduction of ceramics and new lithic types, this suggests that the Neolithic inhabitants of Franchthi Cave were newcomers rather than descendants of the Mesolithic inhabitants. The southwest Asian assemblage of cereals, legumes, sheep, and goats was brought by people, most likely from western Turkey, seeking new lands or trade. A similar Near Eastern assemblage of domesticated plants and animals can be traced across Europe between 8,000 and 4,000 years ago, as plants, people, and ideas moved or were exchanged from one region to the next.

See also **First Farmers of Europe** (vol. 1, part 3).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Demoule, Jean-Paul, and Catherine Perlès. "The Greek Neolithic: A New Review." *Journal of World Prehistory* 7, no. 4 (1993): 355–416.
- Farrand, William R. *Depositional History of Franchthi Cave: Sediments, Stratigraphy, and Chronology*. Excavations at Franchthi Cave, Greece, fascicle 12. Bloomington: Indiana University Press, 1999.

- Hansen, Julie M. *The Palaeoethnobotany of Franchthi Cave*. Excavations at Franchthi Cave, Greece, fascicle 7. Bloomington: Indiana University Press, 1991.
- Jacobsen, Thomas W., and William R. Farrand. *Franchthi Cave and Paralia: Maps, Plans, and Sections*. Excavations at Franchthi Cave, Greece, fascicle 1. Bloomington: Indiana University Press, 1988.
- Payne, Sebastian. "Faunal Change at Franchthi Cave from 20,000 BC to 3,000 BC." In *Archaeozoological Studies*. Edited by A. T. Clason, pp. 120–131. Amsterdam: North-Holland and American Elsevier, 1975.
- . "Animal Bones." In "Excavations in the Franchthi Cave, 1969–1971." Part I. Edited by T. W. Jacobsen. *Hesperia* 42, no. 1 (1973): 59–66.
- Perlès, Catherine. *Les industries lithiques taillées de Franchthi (Argolide, Grèce)*. Vol. 2, *Les industries du Mésolithique et du Néolithique Initial*. Excavations at Franchthi Cave, Greece, fascicle 5. Bloomington: Indiana University Press, 1990.
- . *Les industries lithiques taillées de Franchthi (Argolide, Grèce)*. Vol. 1, *Présentation générale et industries paléolithique*. Excavations at Franchthi Cave, Greece, fascicle 3. Bloomington: Indiana University Press, 1987.
- Shackleton, Judith C. *Marine Molluscan Remains from Franchthi Cave*. Excavations at Franchthi Cave, Greece, fascicle 4. Bloomington: Indiana University Press, 1988.
- Talalay, Lauren E. *Deities, Dolls, and Devices: Neolithic Figurines from Franchthi Cave, Greece*. Excavations at Franchthi Cave, Greece, fascicle 9. Bloomington: Indiana University Press, 1993.
- Van Andel, Tjeerd H., and Curtis N. Runnels. "The Earliest Farmers in Europe: Soil Preferences and Demic Diffusion Pathways." *Antiquity* 69 (1995): 481–500.
- . *Beyond the Acropolis: A Rural Greek Past*. Stanford, Calif.: Stanford University Press, 1987. (This book, written for the nonspecialist, examines the changes in settlement and environment in Greek prehistory.)
- Van Andel, Tjeerd H., and Susan B. Sutton. *Landscape and People of the Franchthi Region*. Excavations at Franchthi Cave, Greece, fascicle 2. Bloomington: Indiana University Press, 1987.
- Vitelli, Karen D. *Franchthi Neolithic Pottery*. Vol. 2, *The Later Neolithic Ceramic Phases 3 to 5*. Excavations at Franchthi Cave, Greece, fascicle 10. Bloomington: Indiana University Press, 1999.
- . *Franchthi Neolithic Pottery*. Vol. 1, *Classification and Ceramic Phases 1 and 2*. Excavations at Franchthi Cave, Greece, fascicle 8. Bloomington: Indiana University Press, 1993.
- Wilkinson, Anthony, and Susan T. Duhon. *Franchthi Paralia: The Sediments, Stratigraphy, and Offshore Investigations*. Excavations at Franchthi Cave, Greece, fascicle 6. Bloomington: Indiana University Press, 1990.

JULIE M. HANSEN



THE MESOLITHIC OF EASTERN EUROPE

FOLLOWED BY FEATURE ESSAY ON:

Oleneostrovskii Mogilnik 192

There is no other region in Europe where Mesolithic settlement was as fully represented and where hunter-gatherer communities continued to flourish until so relatively recently than eastern and northern Europe. Atlantic Scandinavia and the basin of the Baltic Sea, with their network of marine coastlines and freshwater shorelines, provided fertile grounds and rich waters for hunting, fishing, and gathering while the large rivers of eastern Europe, heading south to the Black and Caspian Seas, offered corridors to migratory species of sturgeon, salmon, and trout; to flocks of migratory birds; and to the animals that fed on them. It is impossible to do justice here to the full story of the development and transformation of hunting-gathering communities that utilized this landscape. It is possible only to focus on a few pivotal themes. The main features and principal events of the Mesolithic in this area, which primarily covers the forested regions of Europe east of the line marked by the Rivers Dnieper, Pripet, and Vistula, are discussed here.

During the Late Pleistocene, this area was partly buried under ice. As the ice melted with deglaciation, the sea first flooded the low-lying areas in peninsular Scandinavia, Latvia, Estonia, and Finland. The isostatic rebound of the landmass freed of ice followed, resulting in an overall emergence of the land over time, within the region. These processes

resulted in unstable and changing shorelines throughout the region. The beginning of the Postglacial period was marked by a rapid rise in temperature by 5–6 degrees centigrade, to around 15°C (59°F), July mean temperature. Climatic amelioration peaked during the Climatic Optimum of the Atlantic period (c. 7000–4000 B.C.), when the July mean temperature reached 21°C (69.8°F). The introduction of farming, which marked the conventional end of the Mesolithic period, began around 4000 B.C., just as the temperatures began to decline, reaching the current mean July level of 16°C (60.8°F).

Climatic changes facilitated changes in the biome, particularly in more northerly regions. In outline, the forest succession and the associated faunal changes were marked by the predominance of birch and pine in the Preboreal period (10,000–9000 B.C.); pine and hazel in the Boreal (9000–7000 B.C.); mixed oak forest of elm, oak, lime, and beech in the Atlantic (c. 7000–4000 B.C.); and more mixed broad-leaved–conifer forest in the cooler, more arid Subboreal (c. 4000–700 B.C.). The last period was marked by the disappearance of elm, a reduction in the presence of warmth-loving species and their contraction southward, the development of raised bogs over previously more produc-

tive wetlands, and the colonization of many eastern parts of the circum-Baltic area by spruce forests.

In terms of terrestrial food resources, these changes meant a shift from the open, reindeer-inhabited landscape of the Late Glacial and Early Postglacial to boreal areas with fauna dominated by moose, beaver, bear, and fur-bearing game. During the Atlantic period, temperate fauna of the broad-leaved woodlands included wild pig, red and roe deer, wild cattle, wild horse, and moose and fur-bearing game. In northern parts of the Baltic Sea basin (Norrland, Finland, Karelia, and northeast Russia), boreal woodland prevailed throughout and boreal fauna remained dominant. For aquatic resources, there were two main trends. First came the gradual colonization of developing aquatic environments by an increasingly broader range of marine and anadromous fish and various species of seal. Second, there were fluctuations in such resources as shellfish or anadromous fish in response to the changing salinity levels and temperatures of the water at different stages in the development of the Baltic Sea basin. In aggregate, these transformations indicated an increasingly rich and varied resource environment that peaked in the Atlantic and Early Subboreal periods (c. 7000–2500 B.C.).

The distribution of food resources also varied from region to region. The presence of the Gulf Stream substantially increased the productivity of the coastal regions along the North Atlantic seaboard, while inland resources concentrated in lacustrine, riverine, or estuarine habitats created by the process of deglaciation and changes in the hydrology of rivers, lakes, and seas. In contrast, the interior regions without many shoreline habitats—mostly moraine uplands, glacial outwash plains, and river basins covered by gravel, sand, and clay—were relatively poor in natural resources.

DEGLACIATION, COLONIZATION, AND THE DEVELOPMENT OF MESOLITHIC SOCIETY

Colonization and settlement of eastern and northern Europe is a key event in the history of hunter-gatherer communities of the area. During the Glacial Maximum (c. 22,000 to 18,000 years ago), the region was partly covered by the Scandinavian glacier. By 18,000 to 16,000 years ago, improved climatic conditions were causing ice sheets to melt and

expose new land for colonization by plants, animals, and humans. It took some four thousand years for the retreating ice to reach the southern margin of peninsular Scandinavia, where it lingered for some two thousand years. It was at this time that human groups from surrounding regions began to penetrate the ice-free margins of Fennoscandia, their routes much dependent on water and ice barriers in their path. This process of colonization was gradual, laying foundations for major patterns in the cultural diversity of eastern Europe during the Mesolithic.

Recolonization of eastern Europe took place with progressive settlement from the south. Although archaeological evidence usually is a poor indicator of human migration patterns, the spread of cultural traits (evident in the lithic industry and other artifacts) from the Ukraine and southern Ural region into virgin lands to the north supports the idea of such a dispersal into northern parts of eastern Europe and northern Asia. Many linguists and archaeologists regard the Ukrainian center as the original homeland of people ancestral to Finno-Ugric speakers.

Communities of this eastern tradition (Swiderian culture and the eastern tanged-point cultures) occupied southern flanks of the ice margin in eastern Poland, Belorussia, and northwest Russia at the end of the last glaciation. From these areas people first penetrated the eastern Baltic and the Karelian Isthmus, by about 9000 B.C., and then went on to colonize Finland, reaching the coast of the Bothnian gulf between 7500 and 6400 B.C. The end of the Swiderian culture, c. 9000–8000 B.C., marked the transition from an open-country reindeer-hunting culture to more broad-based communities exploiting resources of the forest, lakes, and the sea. One of the earliest fishnets, produced by people of this tradition, was found at Antrea on the Karelian Isthmus and dated to c. 8500 B.C.

Regional variants of this Early Mesolithic cultural tradition include the Komornica culture in northeastern Poland, Kudlaevka in Belorussia, Narva in Latvia, Kunda in Estonia, Veretye in northwestern Russia, and Suomusjärvi in Finland. The Swiderian cultural repertoire included double-platformed cores, tanged points, perforated antler axes, and single-barbed harpoons. In post-Swiderian times there was a trend toward microlithization, the development of the ground and pol-

ished axe element and of the antler-point industry, the appearance of bone pin-shaped points and of slotted bone points, an increase in backed pieces and micro-retouched bladelets, and the gradual disappearance of tanged points.

From these initial colonization episodes, we can trace the growth and florescence of Mesolithic communities over the following eight thousand years. It generally is agreed that these communities were characterized by technological, economic, and social complexity; effective use of resources; greater sedentation; and relatively high population densities, more so than in other parts of Europe. The evidence for such forms of complexity, for the logistic, operational structure of these residentially more permanent hunter-gatherers, as well as for the chronology of these developments comes mostly from coastal, lacustrine, and riparian zones.

The chronology of the Mesolithic can be divided broadly into early and late periods. The transformation of the Early Mesolithic Maglemose culture to the Late Mesolithic Kongemose culture marked the division in the southern Baltic region, at c. 7000 B.C. Cultural groups cognate with the Maglemose inhabited the eastern parts of the Baltic (Komornice in northwestern Poland; Neman in northeastern Poland; Neman, Narva, and Kunda in the eastern Baltic; Sandarna in southern Sweden; and Suomusjärvi in Finland). Salient features of their technological equipment included an evolved bone and antler industry, core and flake axes, and microblade/microlith technology that declined in use from the west to east, where the older tanged-point industry prevailed within such traditions as the Kunda in Estonia.

The beginning of the Late Mesolithic, at about 7000 B.C., was marked by the introduction of broader rhombic and trapezoidal microliths, a shift from microblade to core-and-blade technology, and numerous regionally specific new items. Regional groupings include the Kongemose and, subsequently, the Ertebølle in Scania, the late Suomusjärvi (*Litorina Suomusjärvi*) in Finland, the Chojnice-Piènki in northwestern Poland, the Janisławice in northeastern Poland, and the late Neman, Narva, and Kunda in the eastern Baltic and similar cultural units in Russia and the Ukraine.

The introduction of ceramics into this cultural context marked the beginning of another phase in

the prehistory of hunter-gatherers in eastern Europe. It is becoming increasingly clear that ceramics were first introduced into the area from southern Siberia at an earlier time than previously thought, possibly originating in China, where ceramics date to the Late Palaeolithic. The Volga-Ural interfluvium (where ceramics are dated to 8000 B.C.) and the Volga River corridor (first dated wares from 6000 B.C.) may have served as source areas for the distribution of ceramic technology among hunter-gatherers of eastern Europe. Pottery came into general use by 5400 B.C.

In southern Scandinavia, ceramic-using hunter-gatherers are regarded as still being of the Mesolithic Ertebølle culture, since little else changed in their cultural repertoire. In Finland, the Suomusjärvi culture ended at this time, and the Neolithic Combed Ware took over. In the eastern Baltic and Russia, the addition of ceramics to the existing cultural assemblages ushered in the Forest Neolithic. In keeping with the long-established tradition in Russian and Soviet research terminology, the term “Neolithic” is used here solely in its technological sense (to signal the introduction of ceramics) rather than in an economic one (to denote introduction of agropastoral farming). The pottery-using communities of northern Europe continued to manage their indigenous undomesticated resources through hunting, fishing, and gathering, with the addition of locally developed practices of resource management that may have led to taming but not to full domestication of some resources. In this sense, the Combed Ware Neolithic and Forest Neolithic cultures of eastern and northeast Europe are comparable to the better-known Ertebølle and related culture units of southern Scandinavia, northern Germany, and the Netherlands. The introduction of imported domestic plants and animals—cattle, sheep, goats, pigs, horses, pulses, and cereals—occurred very gradually from the south to the north of the region, mostly during the last five thousand years.

MESOLITHIC SOCIETY: SUBSISTENCE AND LAND USE

As in other parts of Europe in the Mesolithic, in eastern Europe the varying spatial and seasonal distribution of natural resources elicited a dual technological and economic response, which can be grouped under strategies of diversification and spe-

cialization. Economic diversification consisted of “encounter foraging” practiced by foraging groups with respect to a wide range of resources. This practice is reflected in the faunal evidence by the broad spectrum of food remains, made up of such land mammals as deer, pigs, cattle, horses, beaver, hare, and fish and game birds, and was characteristic of inland habitats. Economic specialization depended on the interception of seasonally aggregated migratory resources, especially sea mammals (seal, in particular), anadromous fish, waterfowl, fur-bearing animals, and reindeer in the north. Hunting often was carried out from seasonal aggregation sites or specialized camps, where the majority of faunal remains belong to a single species, as, for example, waterfowl at Narva-Riigiküla and seals at Konnu, Kopu, Loona, and Naakamäe, all in Estonia, and elsewhere in eastern Europe.

Recovery of plant remains depends on the season of a site’s occupation, the preservation conditions, the method of retrieval and sampling, and the processing technique. Despite the biases against finding evidence for plant use introduced by these factors, the body of information on the use of wild plants in Mesolithic Europe is growing steadily. Nuts, such as hazelnuts, as well as water chestnuts, berries, roots, tubers, and leafy plants formed an important element in the diet and were the focus of food-procurement strategies of Mesolithic hunter-gatherers. Moreover, in some areas, such as western Russia, southern Finland, Poland, Lithuania, and eastern Latvia, pollen evidence for burning and clearance is so extensive as to indicate deliberate woodland clearance and the maintenance of more open landscapes by Late Mesolithic groups as a part of a promotional strategy to increase the productivity of nut and fruit trees, shrubs, wetland plants, and, possibly, native grasses.

Artifactual evidence points to a widespread distribution of soil-working tools (hoes and antler mattocks), especially in lowland zones, which, together with the presence of reaping and grinding equipment, supports the argument for the existence of a plant-processing toolkit. There is little doubt that fishing, fowling, and hunting of sea mammals in coastal areas was an important part of the economy among the Late Mesolithic and Neolithic communities of eastern Europe. The distribution of fish weirs, fish traps, and nets shows that delayed capture

was a common practice, at least in the Late Mesolithic, although fishnets had been in use since the Early Mesolithic.

The fishing and sea hunting toolkits also included equipment for individual hunting by fishhook, fish spear (leister), and harpoon. Remains of boats and paddles are common on sites with good preservation of organic materials. The development of specialized methods of fishing, sealing, and fowling finds confirmation in faunal remains from many coastal areas, pointing to the existence of a logistic system of resource procurement. This sort of exploitation of seal and other coastal resources grew in the Late Mesolithic (after 7000 B.C.) and among ceramic-using hunter-gatherers, which is evident from studies of fauna, site locations, and the human diet. Indeed, some researchers have suggested, for example, that the adoption of ceramics significantly facilitated the processing and storage of seal oil and so encouraged specialization and trade.

Within such a system of economic organization, defined by the practice of hunting, fishing, and gathering, subsistence strategies may have evolved to include elements of resource management or husbandry and together produced an alternative to the agropastoral farming characteristic of the Neolithic. In northern and eastern Europe, there are indications that such an integrated system operated to varying degrees in some regions and that it was based to a large extent on the intensive use of plant foods, aquatic resources, and wild pigs. These practices may have included rudimentary forms of farming, using slash-and-burn clearance of woodland and the sowing of crops into the ash-enriched, but otherwise impoverished brown soils and podzols predominant in the area.

Let us look more closely at one typical settlement. Abora is a settlement along the shores of Lake Lubana in eastern Latvia, dated between 4100 and 2200 B.C. Similar hunting-and-gathering villages have been found along lakeshores elsewhere in Latvia and in northeastern Poland, Lithuania, northern Belorussia, Estonia, and northwestern Russia. As a rule, the cultural layers are associated with the most productive phase in the development of these lakeshore environments, marked by eutrophic fen or grass-peat deposits. Like Abora, the other settlements have substantial, elaborated wooden dwellings, often built on posts or wooden piles, with

ridged roofs with overhanging eaves. Internally, the dwellings are subdivided into rooms or have only one room with add-on sheds, bark floors, and stone-lined or boxed-in hearths. This design is typical of the substantial wooden architecture at Abora and other sites.

The sizes of dwellings range from 30 to 50 square meters. Large concentrations of material have been found within the buildings, pointing to fishing, hunting, and plant gathering, possibly even some form of cultivation. There is a difference of opinion concerning the extent of agropastoral farming. Nonetheless, large quantities of water chestnuts, hazelnuts, seeds of hemp, and hemp pollen, as well as pollen indicators of clearance and ruderals suggestive of open landscape, are signs of possible plant husbandry focused on native plants rather than cereals. Other evidence suggests the processing of hemp and nettle fibers in making clothes and cordage.

In contrast to coastal and lacustrine regions, the upland interior did not present early opportunities for residential permanence. The inland pattern was marked by greater residential mobility, firmer reliance on terrestrial resources, and more direct procurement strategies. Seasonally occupied base camps were located on the shores of smaller lakes and watercourses. From there, people moved in periodically during the year to temporary habitation sites and specialized camps within larger territories. Seasonal aggregation sites, which were a part of both the more sedentary coastal and the more mobile settlement patterns, played an important role within the inland organization of landscape. These were the main locations for the coming together of different communities for trade, exchange, social activities, and courting, as well as for the performance of rituals. To support large gatherings, such places often were placed in good fishing locations by rapids or at river narrows connecting larger lakes.

Long-distance contacts, circulation of exotic prestige items and sought-after raw materials, as well as channels for the dispersal of innovations were all maintained through trade and exchange. In eastern Europe the use of skis and sledges in winter and of boats in the summer months facilitated such contacts. The ritual dimension of such means of transport is shown by moose-headed carvings tipping the ski runners in northwest Russia and else-

where and by carvings of moose placed on the sterns of boats; moose were perceived as a messenger animal linking the worlds of water, earth, and especially sky. Examples of regional and interregional trade linking vast distances are too numerous to describe in detail. They include the circulation of flint and ochre in Poland; green Olonets slate and flint from Karelia across Finland, northwestern Russia, and the eastern Baltic; and amber from the eastern Baltic coast and flint from the Valdai Mountains within the eastern Baltic and Finland to northern Poland and other parts of northern Europe, the Black Sea, and Caspian regions. More evidence derives from the importation of metal artifacts, polished stone axes, and other items from outside the area.

MESOLITHIC SOCIAL ORGANIZATION

Our understanding of social structure and ideology in the Mesolithic—the Late Mesolithic in particular—is based principally on the evidence from burials, rock carvings, and sculpted, “ritual” artifacts found alone or among domestic debris. The distribution of major burials reflects not only the intensity of research but also the favorable ecological conditions of these areas for hunter-gatherer settlement: all burial grounds occur in coastal areas or in major lacustrine or riverine zones, marked by the concentration of aquatic resources. Burial grounds as such may have acted as territorial markers, indicating increased sedentation, territoriality, and claims to ownership of land and resources.

The burial grounds cover the entire Mesolithic period, from c. 10,000 B.C. to the end of the third millennium B.C. Some are considered cemeteries, in that the interments are grouped in burial grounds marked exclusively for ritual and burial; others are isolated interments within or underneath houses or within settlements. Some long-used locations, such as Zvejnieki in Latvia, saw burial customs change from cemetery burial in the Mesolithic to individual burial within the settlement among the ceramic-using hunter-gatherers of the so-called Forest Neolithic (c. 4000–2000 B.C.).

With 315 excavated burials, the cemetery at Zvejnieki, Latvia, ranks with Oleneostrovskii Mogilnik as among the largest in eastern Europe. The cemetery was used for more than four thousand years, between 7300 and 2800 B.C. Mortuary prac-

tice changed from the early (7300–6100 B.C.) to the later period (6100–2800 B.C.), when amber objects replaced tooth pendants as the most common grave goods and principal symbols of value. In the later period, too, burials were strongly associated with settlements, which is shown at Zvejnieki by the black soil transported from an adjacent settlement and deposited as grave fill. Despite these and other changes reflected in burials, we find throughout this period the same use of wild-animal symbolism as at Oleneostrovskii Mogilnik, as well as differences in social status similar to those at Oleneostrovskii Mogilnik. As at Oleneostrovskii Mogilnik, there are both individual and collective burials, indicating, perhaps, the presence of corporate groups. Grave-stones, small cairns, or stone linings marked some interments—features that notably are present in other parts of eastern and northern Europe.

The ending phase of the Zvejnieki cemetery is contemporary with burials at Abora, Latvia, where sixty-one interments were placed in the central part of a residential hunter-gatherer settlement. Single, dual, and collective burials as well as perforated tooth pendants, and sculptures of waterbirds, moose, beaver, bear, and snake attest to the same range of burial practices and symbolism seen at Zvejnieki and Oleneostrovskii Mogilnik. The absence of pottery is striking, since the Abora community belonged among ceramic-using hunter-gatherers. The same social and ideological arrangements appear to have lasted in this region until the middle of the second millennium B.C.

MESOLITHIC COSMOLOGY

Hunter-gatherer communities of long duration in the temperate and boreal zones of Eurasia organized their lives according to basic elements of a framework that promoted cultural and ideological continuity. Such structures included environmental variables, seasonal food-procurement regimes, and cosmological systems and were interpreted and reinterpreted by individuals, communities, and outside groups linked by contact and exchange. Social practices called for deliberate decisions and the manipulation and replication of tasks, during the course of which people introduced various changes. The new knowledge and skills then were incorporated into the existing tradition in relationship to existing rules. As an overarching system of beliefs,

mediated through ritual practice, this ideology provided the supervisory context within which social practices played out.

The key components of this overarching belief system, abstracted from Siberian and northeast European ethnohistorical data, focused on key structures. The first is that the universe is divided into three worlds defined by earth, water, and sky. A second structure was the notion of reciprocity between human beings, animal beings, and a supernatural, spirit world. A third was the role of the shaman as a religious leader of the community whose principal role was to act as a mediator between the three worlds in a three-level universe by practicing techniques of ecstasy (shaman), aided by his or her ritual equipment and spirit helpers. Ritual equipment almost always included a drum or other musical instruments, dress, bag, horned mask, and models of main spirit helpers. These models included waterbirds (as swimmers and flyers they can lead the shaman to all three worlds), the bear (as the master of other animals beings, and a celestial being), and the moose or deer (celestial beings too as guides to and in the heavens).

In the hunter-gatherer prehistory of eastern and northern Europe, the symbolism of rock-carving sites, of carved utilitarian objects, and of the ritual context of burials clearly related to the culture's system of beliefs. Material representations are to be found on sculpted terminals of wooden household utensils, such as spoon-bowls and ladles; zoomorphic axes and mace-heads; rock carvings, and zoomorphic ornamentation on pottery. Moose, bear, and waterbirds are the most common designs.

Rock-carving and rock-painting sites of northeastern Europe give perhaps the best record of the cosmology and ideology of the resident hunter-gatherers. Painted or engraved at several hundred such locations are thousands of images representing principally anthropomorphic figures, cervids, boats, sea mammals, bears, waterbirds, fishes, reptiles (snakes and lizards), tracks or footprints, weapons and hunting and fishing gear, and abstract designs. The youngest of such rock carvings can be dated through geological methods to c. A.D. 500.

In addition to such ritual locations, we find items of material culture in burials and on domestic sites. They also occur in what might be called “lost”

locations, often deposited in bogs and wet places, perhaps as votive artifacts that were carved, sculpted, or otherwise altered to instill ritual meaning in them. Such artifacts were widespread in the Stone Age and among later hunter-gatherer societies of the circumpolar regions. They refer to “messenger animals,” capable of communicating with nonterrestrial worlds. Among these items are bear- and moose-headed effigies (also known as terminals, because they sometimes are depicted in rock art mounted on poles) and diverse objects carved with the representation of these and other animals, for example, waterfowl, swans, ducks, snakes, beavers, and even human beings.

For the traditional societies of the boreal zone, birds, specifically waterbirds, played a role in guiding the dead to the underworld and in myths of world creation and regeneration. Given the multidimensional symbolism of the migratory life cycle of waterbirds, which is marked by regeneration (in spring) and death (in autumn), it is hardly surprising that zoomorphic artifacts, such as duck-headed ladles, are found commonly in archaeological contexts. These items are present among cultures ranging from the Narva in the eastern Baltic (4000–2500 B.C.) to the Ust-Poluy on the lower Ob River in western Siberia (500–300 B.C.).

Moose- and bear-headed terminals, which are depicted on poles at Namforsen, Sweden, and in rock carvings on the shores of Lake Onega (where Oleneostrovskii Mogilnik is located), find a direct parallel in the shaman’s *turnu*, a ritual rod used to mediate between the natural and supernatural worlds. Carvings of moose also may have had a broader significance; after killing and consumption, appropriate treatment of the carcass was thought to ensure the revival of the moose and continued success for the hunter.

The bear was as an animal of veneration, honored with special treatment; it was to be addressed with circumspection and only on ritual occasions. In Lapland as well as in western Siberia, communities engaged in a ritual of sending back the bear to bear country. Hunters would walk and sing together with bear soup, part of which was poured into a river as a votive offering; in this way, the essence of this messenger animal was returned to the “cosmic river.” In Lapland, we find ritually buried bear skulls and other bear graves that were accorded elaborate

treatment. Sculpted bear axes, bear-headed terminals, and images of bears in rock art are recurrent features of the symbolic repertoire of northern hunter-gatherers. It is important to note that the presence of such artifacts also served to ritualize habitual spaces where routine tasks occurred (such as cooking food) and which archaeologists often interpret as only practical, functional spots.

Finally, we can distinguish the existence of shamans in the prehistoric record of eastern and circum-Baltic Europe. Both rock art and burial evidence contains a range of symbols that, in ethnographic contexts, would be identified with the roles of a shaman. In rock art we find petroglyphs of anthropomorphic figures with horns and masks, from the shores of Lake Onega in Karelia, for example. There also are numerous petroglyphs of persons wielding moose-headed terminals, from Namforsen and other places, which correspond to the numerous finds of the artifacts themselves. In both instances, we can interpret the figures as shamans dressed in the guise of animals and carrying the *turnu*, or tree of life, symbolizing the ability to undertake a journey between different worlds, aided by reptiles and horned animals.

We also find interments that differ significantly from standard practice. Grave architecture, treatment of the body, and grave goods all clearly signify shamanistic roles and symbols. For example, four shaft graves at Oleneostrovskii Mogilnik containing four individuals (two males, one female, and one juvenile) in seated or reclining positions (while standard practice was to bury the dead as flat inhumations), can be comprehended as shamans’ graves. There are other exceptional burials that can be attributed to shamans. Among them are the rich burial of a thirty-year-old man from Jasnislawice, Poland, dated to 5600–5400 B.C.; a double burial from Duonkalnis, Lithuania, dated to about 5900 B.C.; and a triple burial from Vedbæk-Bøgebakken, Denmark, apparently of a male with a female range of goods, a female, and a child. As at Oleneostrovskii Mogilnik, female grave goods interred with a male might indicate the office of a shaman.

At Zvejnieki, both earlier (6200–3300 B.C.) and later (3300–2200 B.C.) phases contained extraordinary burials attributed to ritual specialists or shamans. In the earlier period, some 2,400 animal tooth pendants were arranged into headdresses and

buried with the deceased at one location. These burials belonged to nine males, eight adolescents, two females, and two other adults of undetermined age and sex, representing about 7 percent of all the burials, or about 25 percent of those with pendants. Ornamental headgear decoration has been found at only two other places, Oleneostrovskii Mogilnik in Karelia and Duonkalnis in Lithuania.

Amber pendants, rings, beads, and sculptures replaced tooth pendants in the later, Pit-Comb Ware ceramic phase. In four cases mortuary masks of red or blue clay covered the faces of the dead (three adult males and one adolescent), with amber rings pressed into the eye sockets. Similar finds were made at Hartikka and Pispä, southern Finland, and at Tudoszero, northern Russia. Both headgear and masks form an essential part of the shaman's ritual equipment, and we know of shamans being buried with their gear. These artifacts complement the more specific symbolism of finds representing messenger animals, such as bear, beaver, moose, snakes, and waterbirds.

CONCLUSION

More than in any other part of Europe, hunter-gatherers in the east and north confronted the challenges of a changing natural environment and of historical development in the surrounding regions. They successfully utilized the opportunities made available to them by deglaciation and the rapid development of postglacial habitats. They were selective in their choice of cultural innovations associated with agropastoralism, Neolithic technologies, and, later, metallurgy. Equally, they managed effectively the introduction of agropastoral farming and exploited the opportunities offered by contacts and trade with the more complex cultures to the south and west, as they gradually became part of a world trading system.

These “pick and choose” strategies resulted in original cultural transformations and in effective systems of management, which, in turn, led to remarkably long-term cultural stability and a social life of complexity unknown elsewhere among hunter-gatherers of Europe. This society was characterized by a hunting-gathering lifestyle into times more recent—in some cases, the early historical period—than in any other part of Europe, except northern Scandinavia. These peoples contributed in no small

measure to the genetic and cultural heritage that forms the basis of contemporary modern society of eastern Europe today.

See also *The Mesolithic of Northern Europe* (vol. 1, part 2); *Oleneostrovskii Mogilnik* (vol. 1, part 2).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Antanaitis, Indre. “Concerning the Transition to Farming in the East Baltic.” *Documenta Praehistorica* 26 (1999): 89–100.
- . “Interpreting the Meaning of East Baltic Neolithic Symbols.” *Cambridge Archaeological Journal* 8, no. 1 (1998): 55–68.
- Burov, G. M. “Some Mesolithic Wooden Artefacts from the Site of Vis 1 in the European North East of the U.S.S.R.” In *The Mesolithic in Europe*. Edited by Clive Bonsall, pp. 391–401. Edinburgh: John Donald, 1989.
- Clark, John Grahame Douglas. *The Earlier Stone Age Settlement of Scandinavia*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1975.
- . *Prehistoric Europe: The Economic Basis*. London: Methuen, 1952.
- Clarke, D. L. “Mesolithic Europe: The Economic Basis.” In *Problems in Economic and Social Archaeology*. Edited by G. Sieveking, I. H. Longworth, and K. E. Wilson, pp. 449–481. London: Duckworth, 1976.
- Cyrek, K., R. Grygiel, and K. Nowak. “The Basis for Distinguishing the Ceramic Mesolithic in the Polish Lowland.” In *Problems of the Stone Age in Pomerania*. Edited by Tadeusz Malinowski, pp. 95–126. Warsaw, Poland: Warsaw University, 1986.
- Dolukhanov, Pavel M. “Evolution of Lakes and Prehistoric Settlement in Northwestern Russia.” In *The Wetland Revolution in Prehistory*. Edited by Bryony Coles. Exeter, U.K.: Prehistoric Society, 1992.
- . “The Late Mesolithic and the Transition to Food Production in Eastern Europe.” In *Hunters in Transition: Mesolithic Societies of Temperate Eurasia and Their Transition to Farming*. Edited by Marek Zvelebil, pp. 109–120. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1986.
- . *Ecology and Economy in Neolithic Eastern Europe*. London: Duckworth, 1979.
- Dolukhanov, P. M., A. Shukurov, D. Gronenborn, D. Sokoloff, V. Timofeev, and G. Zaitseva. “The Neolithic in Central and Eastern Europe: Chronology of Dispersal.” *Journal of Archaeological Science* (forthcoming).
- Eidsman, C.-M. “The Hunter, the Games and the Unseen Powers: Lappish and Finnish Bear Rites.” In *Hunting and Fishing*. Edited by H. Hvarfner, pp. 159–188. Norrbottens, Sweden: Norrbottens Museum, 1965.

- Eliade, Mircea. *Shamanism: Archaic Techniques of Ecstasy*. Translated by Willard R. Trask. London: Penguin Books, 1989.
- Fischer, Anders, ed. *Man and Sea in the Mesolithic: Coastal Settlement above and below Present Sea Level*. Oxbow Monograph, no. 53. Oxford: Oxbow Books, 1995.
- Goldstein, Lynne. "One-Dimensional Archaeology and Multi-Dimensional People: Spatial Organisation and Mortuary Analysis." In *The Archaeology of Death*. Edited by Robert W. Chapman, Ian A. Kinnes, and Klaus Randsborg, pp. 53–67. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1981.
- Hällström, Gustaf A. *Monumental Art of Northern Sweden from the Stone Age*. Stockholm, Sweden: Almqvist and Wiksell, 1960.
- Holliman, S. E. "The Gendered Peopling of North America: Addressing the Antiquity of Systems of Multiple Genders." In *The Archaeology of Shamanism*. Edited by Neil S. Price, pp. 123–134. London: Routledge, 2001.
- Ingold, Tim. *The Appropriation of Nature: Essays on Human Ecology and Social Relations*. Manchester, U.K.: Manchester University Press, 1986.
- Jaanits, K. "Two Late Mesolithic/Early Neolithic Coastal Sites of Seal Hunters in Estonia." In *Man and Sea in the Mesolithic: Coastal Settlement above and below Present Sea Level*. Edited by Anders Fischer, pp. 247–249. Oxbow Monograph, no. 53. Oxford: Oxbow Books, 1995.
- Jelsma, Johan. *A Bed of Ochre: Mortuary Practices and Social Structure of a Maritime Archaic Indian Society at Port au Choix, Newfoundland*. Groningen, The Netherlands: Rijksuniversiteit Groningen, 2000.
- Kozłowski, S. K. "A Survey of Early Holocene Cultures of the Western Part of the Russian Plain." In *The Mesolithic in Europe*. Edited by Clive Bonsall, pp. 391–401. Edinburgh: John Donald, 1989.
- Larsson, Lars. "The Colonization of South Sweden during the Deglaciation." In *The Earliest Settlement of Scandinavia and Its Relationship with Neighbouring Areas*. Edited by Lars Larsson, pp. 141–156. Acta Archaeologica Lundensia, no. 24. Stockholm, Sweden: Almqvist and Wiksell, 1996.
- . "The Skateholm Project: Late Mesolithic Coastal Settlement in Southern Sweden." In *Case Studies in European Prehistory*. Edited by Peter Bogucki, pp. 31–62. Ann Arbor, Mich.: CRC Press, 1993.
- . "Late Mesolithic Settlements and Cemeteries at Skateholm, Southern Sweden." In *The Mesolithic in Europe*. Edited by Clive Bonsall, pp. 367–378. Edinburgh: John Donald, 1985.
- Loze, Ilze. "The Adoption of Agriculture in the Area of Present-Day Latvia (the Lake Lubana Basin)." *Baltic-Pontic Studies* 5 (1998): 59–84.
- Matiskainen, Heikki. "Discrepancies in Deglaciation Chronology and the Appearance of Man in Finland." In *The Earliest Settlement of Scandinavia and Its Relationship with Neighbouring Areas*. Edited by Lars Larsson, pp. 252–262. Acta Archaeologica Lundensia, no. 24. Stockholm, Sweden: Almqvist and Wiksell, 1996.
- Mellars, Paul, ed. *The Early Postglacial Settlement of Northern Europe: An Ecological Perspective*. London: Duckworth, 1978.
- Nowak, Marek. "The Second Phase of Neolithization in East-Central Europe." *Antiquity* 75 (2001): 582–592.
- Nuñez, Milton. "Finland's Settling Model Revisited." *Hel-sinki Papers in Archaeology* 10 (1997): 93–102.
- . "On Subneolithic Pottery and Its Adoption in Late Mesolithic Finland." *Fennoscandia Archaeologica* 7 (1990): 27–50.
- Rimantienė, Rimute. "Neolithic Hunter-Gatherers at Šventoji in Lithuania." *Antiquity* 66 (1992): 367–376.
- . "The Neolithic of the Eastern Baltic." *Journal of World Prehistory* 6, no. 1 (1992): 97–143.
- Rowley-Conwy, Peter. "Economic Prehistory in Southern Scandinavia." In *World Prehistory: Studies in Memory of Grahame Clark*. Edited by John Coles, Robert M. Bewley, and Paul Mellars, pp. 125–159. Proceedings of the British Academy, no. 99. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1999.
- . "Cemeteries, Seasonality, and Complexity in the Ertebølle of Southern Scandinavia." In *Harvesting the Sea, Farming the Forest: The Emergence of Neolithic Societies in the Baltic Region*. Edited by Marek Zvelebil, Lucyna Domańska, and Robin Dennell, pp. 193–202. Sheffield, U.K.: Sheffield Academic Press, 1998.
- Rowley-Conwy, Peter A., and Marek Zvelebil. "Saving It for Later: Storage by Prehistoric Hunter-Gatherers in Europe." In *Bad Year Economics: Cultural Responses to Risk and Uncertainty*. Edited by Paul Halstead and John O'Shea, pp. 40–56. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1989.
- Schild, R. "Radiochronology of the Early Mesolithic in Poland." In *The Earliest Settlement of Scandinavia and Its Relationship with Neighbouring Areas*. Edited by Lars Larsson, pp. 285–296. Acta Archaeologica Lundensia, no. 24. Stockholm, Sweden: Almqvist and Wiksell, 1996.
- Schmidt, R. A. "Shamans and Northern Cosmology: The Direct Historical Approach to Mesolithic Sexuality." In *Archaeologies of Sexuality*. Edited by Robert A. Schmidt and Barbara L. Voss, pp. 220–235. London: Routledge, 2000.
- Timofeev, Vladimir I. "The Beginning of the Neolithic in the Eastern Baltic." In *Harvesting the Sea, Farming the Forest: The Emergence of Neolithic Societies in the Baltic Region*. Edited by Marek Zvelebil, Lucyna Domańska,

- and Robin Dennell, pp. 225–236. Sheffield, U.K.: Sheffield Academic Press, 1998.
- . “On the Problem of the Early Neolithic in the East Baltic Area.” *Acta Archaeologica* 58 (1987): 207–212.
- Vuorela, I. “The Transition to Farming in Southern Finland.” In *Harvesting the Sea, Farming the Forest: The Emergence of Neolithic Societies in the Baltic Region*. Edited by Marek Zvelebil, Lucyna Domańska, and Robin Dennell, pp. 175–180. Sheffield, U.K.: Sheffield Academic Press, 1998.
- Zhilin, Mickle G. “The Western Part of Russia in the Late Palaeolithic–Early Mesolithic.” In *The Earliest Settlement of Scandinavia and Its Relationship with Neighbouring Areas*. Edited by Lars Larsson, pp. 273–284. Acta Archaeologica Lundensia, no. 24. Stockholm, Sweden: Almqvist and Wiksell, 1996.
- Zvelebil, Marek. “Indo-European Dispersals and the Agricultural Transition in Northern Europe: Culture, Genes and Language.” In *The Roots of Peoples and Languages of Northern Eurasia* IV. Edited by Kyösti Julku, pp. 318–343. Turku, Finland: Finno-Ugric Historical Society, 2002.
- . “Agricultural Frontiers, Neolithic Origins, and the Transition to Farming in the Baltic Basin.” In *Harvesting the Sea, Farming the Forest: The Emergence of Neolithic Societies in the Baltic Region*. Edited by Marek Zvelebil, Lucyna Domańska, and Robin Dennell. Sheffield, U.K.: Sheffield Academic Press, 1998.
- . “Hunter-Gatherer Ritual Landscapes: Spatial Organisation, Social Structure, and Ideology among Hunter-Gatherers of Northern Europe and Western Siberia.” *Analecta Praehistorica Leidensia* 29 (1997): 33–50.
- . “Plant Use in the Mesolithic and the Implications for the Transition to Farming.” *Proceedings of the Prehistoric Society* 60 (1994): 35–74.
- . “On the Transition to Farming in Europe, or What Was Spreading with the Neolithic.” *Antiquity* 63 (1989): 379–383.
- . “Wetland Settlements in Eastern Europe.” In *European Wetlands in Prehistory*. Edited by John M. Coles and Andrew J. Lawson, pp. 94–116. Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1987.
- . “Mesolithic Prelude and Neolithic Revolution.” In *Hunters in Transition: Mesolithic Societies of Temperate Eurasia and Their Transition to Farming*. Edited by Marek Zvelebil, pp. 5–15. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1986.
- . *From Forager to Farmer in the Boreal Zone: Reconstructing Economic Patterns through Catchment Analysis in Prehistoric Finland*. BAR International Series, no. 115. Oxford: British Archaeological Reports, 1981.
- Zvelebil, Marek, and Paul M. Dolukhanov. “The Transition to Farming in Eastern and Northern Europe.” *Journal of World Prehistory* 5, no. 3 (1991): 233–278.
- Zvelebil, Marek, and P. Jordan. “Hunter Fisher Gatherer Ritual Landscapes: Questions of Time, Space, and Presentation.” In *Rock Art as Social Representation*. Edited by J. Goldhahn. BAR International Series, no. 794. Oxford: Archaeopress, 1999.

MAREK ZVELEBIL

OLENEOSTROVSKII MOGILNIK

As the mists were lifting above the lake, a small boat—a dugout canoe—was taking the chieftain’s body on his last journey, beyond the water toward the island of the dead. Like a shadow, the island emerged from the mist, surrounded by the dark green waters of Lake Onega. The shaman pounded his drum; the elders wielded symbols of their community, shaped in the image of the moose; and the boatmen hurried on to release their load. As the boat drew closer to the shore, a pair of swans took off from the shallows. This was a good omen. They were taking with them the soul of the deceased, his freed and timeless soul, northward to the underworld, and the mood of the living lifted with the mists. The soul of the old chieftain was about to be buried amid feasting and ceremonies, together with his earthly remains, symbols of office, ceremonial dagger and other weapons, headdress, pendants and necklaces, and various other possessions. Rays of the early summer sun broke through the cloud, more than eight thousand years ago.

In local folklore Olenostrovskii Mogilnik (also called Olenii Ostrov or Deer Island) was known as the island of the dead, but it was not until the mid-twentieth century that the local population discovered that the island held the largest Mesolithic cemetery in Europe. More than eight thousand years ago people were buried there, and the picture sketched here is based on a reconstruction of events occurring at that time (fig. 1). The body in the rich grave numbered 100 may indeed have belonged to a shaman or a chieftain.

Located on a small island within Lake Onega in Karelia, the cemetery was discovered as a consequence of quarrying activities in the 1920s, and

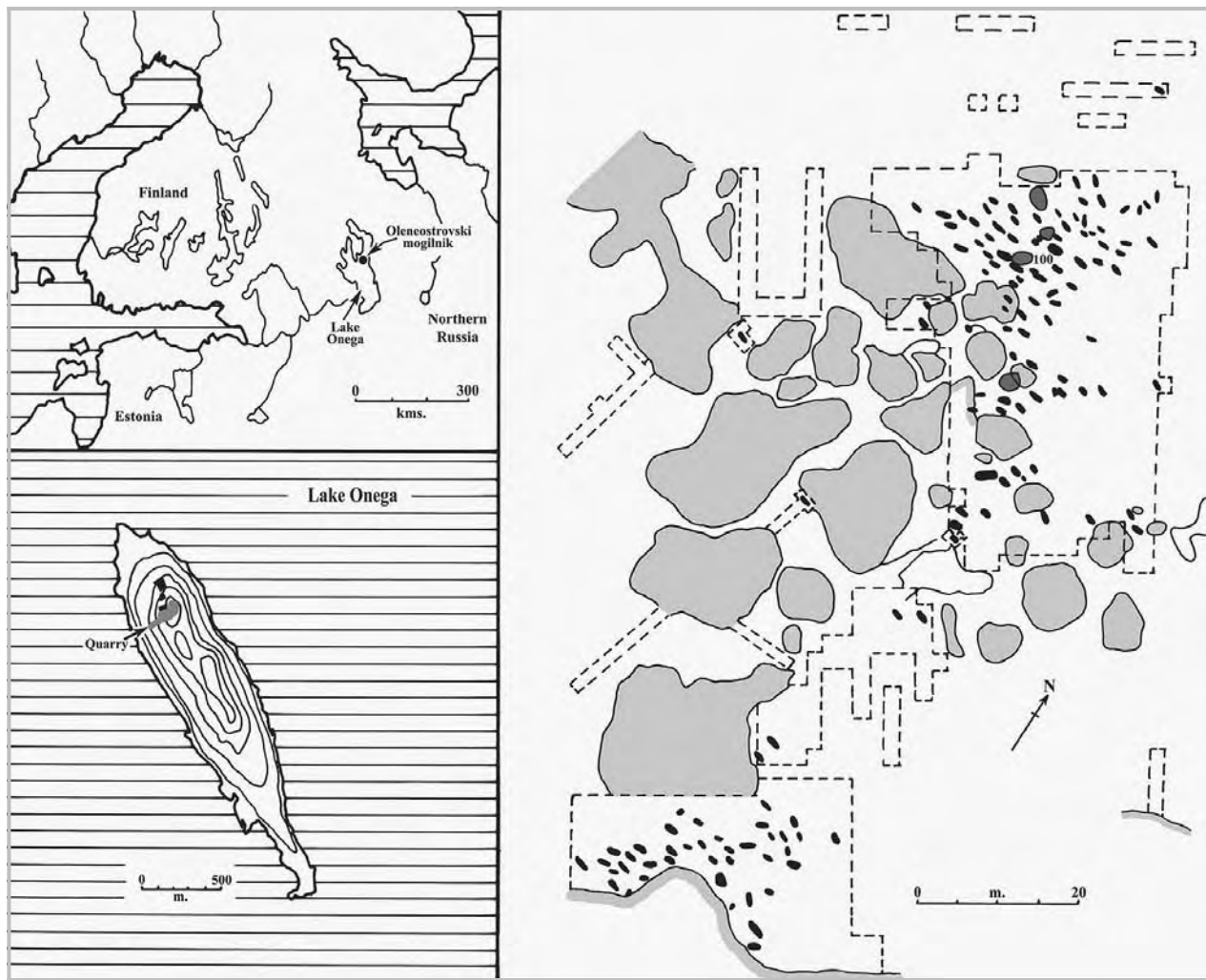


Fig. 1. Plan of Oleneostrovskii Mogilnik cemetery. COURTESY OF MAREK ZVELEBIL. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

many of the graves were destroyed or disturbed before excavation. Excavated by Soviet archaeologists in the 1930s and 1950s, the cemetery was subsequently interpreted in several different ways. In all, archaeologists managed to excavate 177 burials in 141 distinct mortuary features, but the total number of burials must have been nearer 500. Radiocarbon dating of the skeletons places the cemetery in a period between 6400 and 6000 B.C. This unexpectedly early date is fully consonant with the Mesolithic character of artifacts from the site.

It seems that two groups, possibly lineages or clans, were using Oleneostrovskii Mogilnik. This is evident from two spatial clusters within the cemetery: the northern cluster is associated with moose sculptures (fig. 2) and the southern cluster with

snake and human effigies. The snake and human representations seem to be combined into a single zooanthropomorphic tradition, different from the northern group, whose identity was symbolized by moose representations. Thus, two separate populations shared the use of Oleneostrovskii Mogilnik. The northern cluster was used by people with northern European and Uralic features, more indigenous to the area, while the southern area was used by people with southern European and Siberian features, who might have been newcomers to the area. This interpretation underlines the genetic heterogeneity of the people who used the cemetery. Rather than supporting the existence of two distinct, non-communicating groups, these graduated differences in appearance and genetic makeup instead may reflect “unimpeded gene flow” across the forest zone

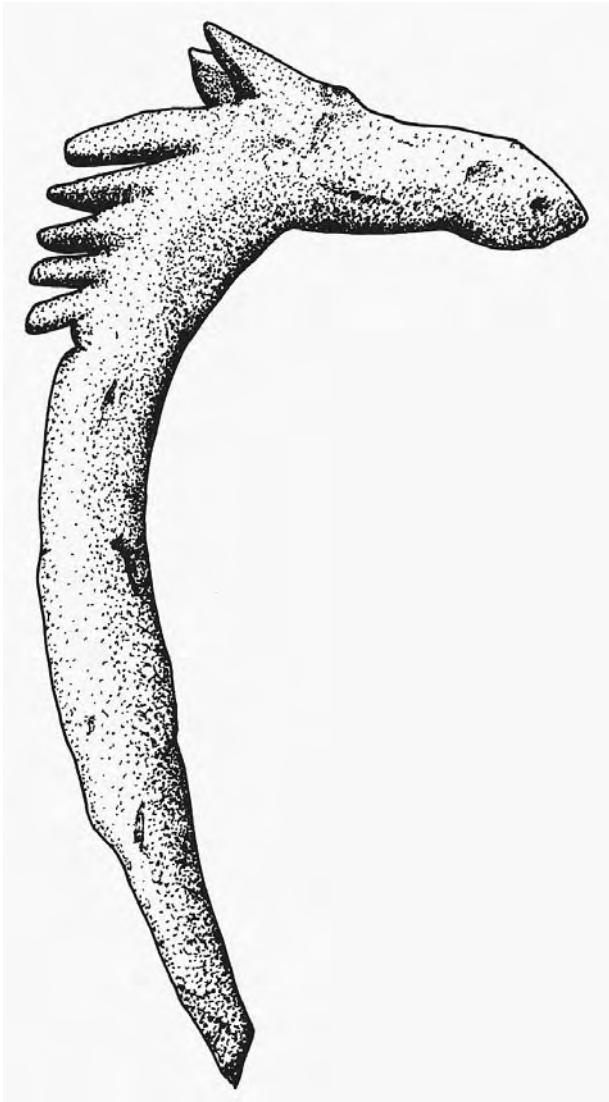


Fig. 2. Moose-headed terminal from graves at Oleneostrovskii Mogilnik cemetery. COURTESY OF MAREK ZVELEBIL. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

of eastern Europe, brought about by long-distance travel, intermarriage, and partner exchange that was usual among the northern hunter-gatherer populations.

In all, 7,132 artifacts were found with the burials, and the vast majority consisted of the pierced incisors of moose (4,372 pieces) and beavers (1,155 items) and bear tusks (170 artifacts), modified to hang as a part of a headdress, pendant, or necklace. The remaining artifacts included six bone daggers, thirteen flint and sixty slate ritual knives, carved

bone or stone pendants, and fourteen sculptures made of antler. More utilitarian tools included harpoons, fishhooks, sinkers, awls, needles, flint blades, scrapers, spearheads, and arrow points made from both bone and flint. Unworked animal bones were relatively rare and included those of beaver, reindeer, moose, wolf, bear, and dog.

The number and composition of grave goods, together with burial arrangements and elaboration of the graves, formed the basis of mortuary analysis and interpretation of the social composition of the Oleneostrovskii society. Such mortuary analysis revealed the existence of at least seven social dimensions, expressing band membership; social differentiation related to gender, age, and personal wealth; and three other specialized ranks. Gender distinctions were expressed through the articles placed in the graves of the deceased. Bone points, bone harpoons, axes, flakes, and slate knives were associated with males. An absence of implements but inclusion of ornaments and perforated beaver incisors was associated with females.

The types of perforated tooth pendants exhibited a clear hierarchical order relative to each other, which corresponded to the number and variety of other goods found in the graves. Graves with bear tusks denoted the wealthiest people, followed by graves containing either moose or beaver incisors, and, finally, graves with no pendants. These wealth ranks varied with age, so that the adults possessed the greatest quantities, while the young and the old had fewer goods. Such age-dependent change was less pronounced among females, possibly indicating that female wealth markers were obtained through either affinal or consanguine ties to males.

In four shaft graves at Oleneostrovskii Mogilnik, there are interments that are significantly different from the others, and in terms of grave architecture, treatment of the body and the grave goods relate to shamanistic roles and symbols. In contrast to the others, these graves are oriented westward. They include two males, one female, and one juvenile—in a seated or reclining position. Their interpretation as shamans' graves relies on their western orientation (while others faced east), which can be explained as facing the entrance to the underworld, the domain of spirit ancestors of the shamans and of the rulers of the underworld. The recovery of beaver mandibles from one of these graves rein-

forces the argument, since mandibles of beaver form part of the shamans' attire among some Siberian groups, in reference to the perceived medicinal and ritual qualities of the beaver. The presence of beaver incisors in the shaft graves, irrespective of sex, is significant, as this category of pendants normally is associated with females at Oleneostrovskii Mogilnik. Both men and women took on the shaman's role as spiritual mediator with the underworld; consequently, the shaman's robe retained symbols of both genders.

Two other special ranks are represented at the cemetery. The first can be seen in a series of eleven individuals, all male, who were interred with bone projectile points as the sole grave good, suggesting the presence of a sodality, or all-male hunting group with special abilities or responsibilities connected to hunting. The second rank is represented by a set of nine graves—two in the southern cluster and seven in the northern one—where the deceased were buried with carved effigies. This social status could be held by adults of either sex and was most common among older individuals. It was independent of personal wealth, as all three wealth ranks were represented among these burials. The apparent relationship between the effigies and the spatially separate clusters of the cemetery suggests that these persons held some office or social position related to the central ritual identity of the bands. The range of ages among the officeholders (from adolescent to old) and the independence from personal wealth may suggest an ascriptive or hereditary dimension to this social position.

The elaborate burial in grave 100 represents one of the shaft burials, where the individual, a robust middle-aged male, was buried in a reclining position. The deceased was sent off to another world with more than five hundred artifacts carefully placed over and around his body, particularly around the head and shoulders, around the pelvic region, and below the knees. This arrangement suggests that some of the pendants were attached to what was perhaps a funeral garment and possibly a headdress. The deceased was equipped with a quiver that held arrows and a large bone dagger with flint inserts. It has been suggested that the placement of these artifacts, the almost vertical positioning of the body, and other features of the burial rite indicate

that the deceased was exposed for viewing intentionally, so as to produce a memorable visual effect.

The construction of the grave was equally elaborate. The body was buried in a long pit covered in ochre, sealed by a layer of sand, and topped by large stones. Possibly, an external sign, such as a wooden pole, marked the location of the burial. There were three other persons interred in such vertical or sloping shaft graves. Both males and females could assume this social status, and it seemed to have a positive correlation with an individual's wealth, as three of the four individuals possessed grave assemblages of the highest wealth level. The range of artifacts and the conditions of burial are consistent with one researcher's observation that these are the graves of ritual specialists, or shamans. It was the shamans, or the effigy holders, who were most likely to act as community elders or chieftains.

In summary, while the ritual roles could be inherited (as evidenced by child or juvenile effigy holders), the wealth could not. It tended to decline in old age. Such patterned decline in status goods with age may reflect intergenerational circulation of symbolic artifacts as age- and gender-related social roles were passed from one age group to another. Much of the grave equipment reflected the age and sex-specific social role of an individual at the time of death. At the same time, both men and women could acquire a high-status position, although men tended to acquire higher rank more often than did women.

Over what period of time was Oleneostrovskii Mogilnik used? The length of use and the frequency of interments have a major bearing on the broader significance of the cemetery. O'Shea and Zvelebil's reconstruction of the Oleneostrovskii Mogilnik cemetery and its society suggests that a community of about four hundred to five hundred people used the cemetery. The duration of its use was relatively brief, perhaps 80 to 120 years, or four to six generations. Other researchers have identified chronological differences between the northern and southern clusters within the cemetery and posit a longer period of use, perhaps as long as five hundred years. On the available evidence, this would mean one burial every three years.

Even if we accept that the total number of people buried was about five hundred, it would mean

that there was about one burial per year. Used so intermittently, Oleneostrovskii Mogilnik could not have acted effectively as an ideological and ethnocultural sacral center, a necropolis founded by a chieftain ancestor that was central to the identity of the group, or a focus for seasonal gatherings meant to maintain extensive social ties of the broader community. Even though burial of people at Oleneostrovskii Mogilnik probably was selective, its adduced function would have required one or two ceremonial gatherings per year (late spring and early autumn). This would suggest a shorter, rather than longer episode of use, on the order of one hundred to two hundred years.

Oleneostrovskii Mogilnik is only one among several burial grounds in northern and circum-Baltic Europe displaying such mortuary variation. Other similar cemeteries have been found in Scandinavia, Northwest Russia, and the eastern Baltic. Mortuary analysis of major burial grounds, such as Oleneostrovskii Mogilnik, Skateholm (Sweden), or Zvejnieki (Latvia), indicates that many of the Mesolithic communities in northern and eastern Europe correspond to the “delayed-return” foragers in the ethnographic record (i.e., foragers invest in food-procuring activities that have long-term results, such as building fish weirs or dams). Social structure in the Mesolithic appears to have been more hierarchically ranked than was the case among the more complex hunter-gatherers of modern times. Status distinctions along the major social dimensions of age, sex, and achieved status are discernible in general terms, and there is evidence for inherited social differentiation (inherited social stratification) at Skateholm, Zvejnieki, and Oleneostrovskii Mogilnik as well as at other cemeteries along the Atlantic coast in Denmark, France, and Portugal.

The Oleneostrovskii Mogilnik cemetery also gives a wealth of information about the cosmological beliefs held by the Mesolithic hunter-gatherers. This system of beliefs, structured by analogy to more modern Siberian shamanism, is based on the concept of a three-tier universe (upper or sky world, middle or earth world, and the underworld associated with water, ocean, and the north). The tiers are linked by a *turnu*, or a tree of life, providing a conceptual axis linking the three worlds. It is further based on the existence of more souls than one, including at least the free soul and the body soul. The

body soul is manifested by breathing and it lives and dies with an individual; the free soul enters a human or an animal at birth, perhaps from an ancestor, and departs at death to the underworld, or sometimes to the upper world depending on the status of the individual. Communication takes place between human beings and deities, spirits, and animal beings for the benefit of the whole living community. Most communication was conducted by shamans with the help of spirits, among whom the most prominent took the shape of waterbirds (as swimmers and fliers that could lead the shaman to all three worlds), bear (as the master of other animal beings), and moose or deer (as a messenger celestial being, a guide to the heavens, and a link between the three worlds). Artifacts at Oleneostrovskii Mogilnik are replete with symbolism that can be understood by reference to these meanings, and similar motifs and symbols are replicated on rock carvings and paintings of the region, as at Besov Nos on Lake Onega, on the White Sea petroglyphs, and elsewhere in northern Europe.

It is within this ritual and cosmological context that people from the Oleneostrovskii Mogilnik community were buried—often on islands or promontories; marked by ritual separation by water from settlements; and guided by animal spirits, such as images of swans, duck, or moose and deer, to the other worlds. Ceremonies involved extraterrestrial communication by shamans with the aid of ritual equipment: the drum, mask, headdress, bag, and bones or images of ritually significant animals—beaver, snake, waterbirds, deer, and bear. Finds at the cemetery reflect this ritual code of practice.

In such ways, people of the Oleneostrovskii Mogilnik community and beyond—indeed, the people of the Mesolithic in northern and temperate Europe—could make sense of the world around them. With the aid of such understanding, they could organize their social roles and relationships and negotiate with one another for power, prestige, and social standing in the community within an accepted code of practice. These social roles and social standings were played out and remembered in rituals surrounding death and symbolized by artifacts deposited in their burials. Oleneostrovskii Mogilnik, together with other burial grounds, offers an exceptionally informative and specific glimpse into

the social lives and communal beliefs of hunting and gathering people eight thousand years ago.

See also *Skateholm* (vol. 1, part 2).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Aldenderfer, Mark. "Ritual, Hierarchy, and Change in Foraging Societies." *Journal of Anthropological Archaeology* 12, no. 1 (1993): 1–40.
- Antanaitis, Indre. "Interpreting the Meaning of East Baltic Neolithic Symbols." *Cambridge Archaeological Journal* 8, no. 1 (1998): 55–68.
- Gurina, N. N. "Oleneostrovski Mogil'nik." In *Materialy i Issledovaniya po Arkheologii SSSR*. Moscow: Nauka, Akademia Nauk SSSR, 1956.
- Holliman, S. E. "The Gendered Peopling of North America: Addressing the Antiquity of Systems of Multiple Genders." In *The Archaeology of Shamanism*. Edited by Neil S. Price, pp. 123–134. London: Routledge, 2001.
- Ingold, Tim. *The Appropriation of Nature: Essay on Human Ecology and Social Relations*. Manchester, U.K.: Manchester University Press, 1986.
- Jacobs, Ken. "Return to Olenii'ostrov: Social, Economic, and Skeletal Dimensions of a Boreal Forest Mesolithic Cemetery." *Journal of Anthropological Archaeology* 14, no. 4 (1995): 359–403.
- Jordan, Peter D. *Material Culture and Sacred Landscape: The Anthropology of the Siberian Khanty*. Walnut Creek, Calif.: AltaMira Press, 2003.
- Larsson, Lars. "The Skateholm Project: Late Mesolithic Coastal Settlement in Southern Sweden." In *Case Studies in European Prehistory*. Edited by Peter Bogucki, pp. 31–62. Boca Raton, Fla.: CRC Press, 1993.
- Meiklejohn, Christopher, Erik Brinch Petersen, and Verner Alexandersen. "The Anthropology and Archaeology of Mesolithic Gender in the Western Baltic." In *Gender and Material Culture in Archaeological Perspective*. Edited by Moira Donald and Linda Hurcombe, pp. 222–237. New York: Palgrave Macmillan, 2000.
- Neeley, M. P., and G. A. Clark. "Measuring Social Complexity in the European Mesolithic." In *Contributions to the Mesolithic in Europe*. Edited by Pierre M. Vermeersch and Philip Van Peer, pp. 127–138. Leuven, Belgium: Leuven University Press, 1990.
- Nielsen, E. Kannegard, and E. Brinch Petersen. "Burials, People, and Dogs." In *Digging into the Past: 25 years of Archaeology in Denmark*. Edited by Steen Hvass and Birger Storgaard. Translated by John Hines and Joan F. Davidson, pp. 76–80. Århus, Denmark: Royal Society of Northern Antiquaries, 1993.
- O'Shea, John. *Mortuary Variability: An Archaeological Investigation*. Orlando, Fla.: Academic Press, 1984.
- O'Shea, John, and Marek Zvelebil. "Oleneostrovskii Mogilnik: Reconstructing Social and Economic Organisation of Prehistoric Hunter-Fishers in Northern Russia." *Journal of Anthropological Archaeology* 3, no. 1 (1984): 1–40.
- Oshibkina, S. V. "The Material Culture of the Veretie Type Sites in the Region to the East of the Lake Onega." In *The Mesolithic in Europe*. Edited by Clive Bonsall, pp. 402–413. Edinburgh: John Donald, 1989.
- Pentikäinen, J. *Shamanism and Culture*. Helsinki, Finland: Ernika Co., 1998.
- Popova, Tatiana. "New Discoveries on the Sculptures of Oleni Island, Lake Onega." *Folklore* 18/19 (2001): 127–136. http://haldjas.folklore.ee/Folklore/vol18/oleni_is.pdf.
- Price, T. Douglas. "The Mesolithic of Western Europe." *Journal of World Prehistory* 1, no. 3 (1987): 225–332.
- Price, T. Douglas, and K. Jacobs. "Olenii Ostrov: First Radiocarbon Dates from a Major Mesolithic Cemetery in Karelia, USSR." *Antiquity* 64 (1990): 849–853.
- Ramqvist, Per. "Rock-Art and Settlement: Issues of Spatial Order in the Prehistoric Rock-Art of Fenno-Scandinavia." In *European Landscapes of Rock-Art*. Edited by George Nash and Christopher Chippendale, pp. 144–157. London: Routledge, 2002.
- Rowley-Conwy, Peter. "Economic Prehistory in Southern Scandinavia." In *World Prehistory: Studies in Memory of Grahame Clark*. Edited by John Coles, Robert Bewley, and Paul Mellars, pp. 125–159. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1999.
- . "Cemeteries, Seasonality, and Complexity in the Ertebølle of Southern Scandinavia." In *Harvesting the Sea, Farming the Forest: The Emergence of Neolithic Societies in the Baltic Region*. Edited by Marek Zvelebil, Lucyna Domańska, and Robin Dennell, pp. 193–202. Sheffield, U.K.: Sheffield Academic Press, 1998.
- Schmidt, Robert A. "Shamans and Northern Cosmology: The Direct Historical Approach to Mesolithic Sexuality." In *Archaeologies of Sexuality*. Edited by Robert A. Schmidt and Barbara L. Voss, pp. 220–235. London: Routledge, 2000.
- Stoliar, Abram D. "Milestones of Spiritual Evolution in Prehistoric Karelia." *Folklore* 18/19 (2001): 80–126. <http://haldjas.folklore.ee/Folklore/vol18/treasure.pdf>.
- Woodburn, James. "Egalitarian Societies." *Man* 17 (1982): 431–451.
- Zvelebil, Marek. "People behind the Lithics: Social Life and Social Conditions of Mesolithic Communities in Temperate Europe." In *Peopling the Mesolithic in a Northern Environment*. Edited by Lynne Bevan and Jenny Moore, pp. 1–26. BAR International Series. Oxford: British Archaeological Reports, forthcoming.

———. “Concepts of Time and ‘Presencing’ the Mesolithic.” *Archaeological Review from Cambridge* 12, no. 2 (1993): 51–70.

Zvelebil, Marek, and Peter Jordan. “Hunter Fisher Gatherer Ritual Landscapes: Questions of Time, Space, and Pre-

sentation.” In *Rock Art as Social Representation*. Edited by J. Goldhahn, pp. 101–128. BAR International Series, no. 794. Oxford: British Archaeological Reports, 1999.

MAREK ZVELEBIL



TRANSITION TO
AGRICULTURE, 7000–4000 B.C.



INTRODUCTION

Archaeologists have long regarded the transition from hunting and gathering to agriculture as one of the most important developments in human history. V. Gordon Childe (1892–1957) and Robert Braidwood (1907–2003) were among the first scholars to emphasize the importance of this change in human society. At its root was the shift from the reliance on wild plants and animals to domesticated plants and livestock. Domestication is the process by which humans are able to control the reproduction of plant and animal species and thus select for various desirable characteristics. In the Near East, just before ten thousand years ago, people began to select for desirable characteristics in wheat and barley and in sheep and goats. Later, cattle, pigs, lentils, and peas were added to the list of early domesticates. Throughout the millennia that followed, many more species of plants and animals were domesticated in other areas around the world, including China, Africa, and several regions in the Americas.

The transition to agriculture in the Old World traditionally marks the beginning of the archaeological period known as the “Neolithic,” the final major division of the Stone Age. For many years, archaeologists noted that the Neolithic also saw the emergence of pottery production and ground stone tools, although these traits now have been shown to occur in pre-agricultural societies as well. Today, archaeologists see that the adoption of domestic plants and animals is only a single symptom of a major societal and economic transformation. During this period, people changed their views of many

things, including the returns expected from their quest for food, acceptable levels of risk and uncertainty, their ability to change their environment, property rights and residential stability, definitions of kinship and residential groupings, and the benefits of more children. Most of these changes began back in the Mesolithic period, but they came together during the Neolithic to produce a dramatic change in society.

Farming spread from the Near East across Europe between 8,500 and 4,000 years ago. In some areas colonizing farmers dispersed into new habitats. Elsewhere, local hunter-gatherers adopted crops and livestock. Archaeologists must differentiate between these two processes, a challenging task. Despite some claims for local domestication, it appears that all the principal species of plants and animals used by the early European farmers initially were domesticated in southwestern Asia, so there is no “pristine” center of domestication in Europe itself. Radiocarbon dating has been immensely helpful in tracing the spread of agriculture in Europe.

Around 6500 B.C. the first European farmers appeared in Greece. Immigrants from Anatolia colonized fertile floodplains, lived in houses built of mud brick or adobe, grew emmer and einkorn wheat, and raised sheep and goats. These communities were similar to contemporaneous settlements in the Near East, although some of the details are significantly different. Native foragers in other parts of Greece also made the transition to agriculture, as reflected at sites such as Franchthi Cave.

From its initial European toehold in Greece, agriculture spread along two routes: west through the Mediterranean basin to Spain and Portugal and north and northwest along the Danube drainage and then into the river valleys that drain into the Baltic and North Seas. Within about two thousand years of the first appearance of agriculture in Greece, farming reached the Atlantic Ocean and the English Channel. It did not spread at a uniform speed. Sometimes the leading edge of farming jumped forward very quickly, and sometimes it stood almost still for centuries.

The Mediterranean dispersal followed coastal routes. Domestic livestock, especially sheep, as well as cereals and pottery appeared at sites along the coasts of Italy and southern France, such as Arene Candide (in Liguria, Italy), which differed little from the camps of the local foragers. Apparently, these items were passed along from community to community and integrated into the hunter-gatherer economy. Watercraft probably were crucial in enabling this contact.

The spread of agriculture north from Greece into the Balkans was the result of either colonization by farmers or local adoption of crops and livestock. The attraction of early farming communities to alluvial soils hitherto sparsely settled by foragers suggests that some population movement occurred. It is apparent, however, that certain Mesolithic groups adopted domestic plants and animals. In the Iron Gates gorges along the Danube, the inhabitants of such sites as Lepenski Vir (in Serbia) brought crops and livestock into their economy alongside fish, deer, and wild plants.

In the river valleys of central Europe, colonization by farmers was the primary means by which agricultural communities were established. Known from their incised ceramics as the Linear Pottery culture (alternatively, *Linearbandkeramik* or LBK), these people lived in timber longhouses, sometimes more than 30 meters long, along the tributaries of major central European rivers. They usually settled on a fine-grained soil called “loess” that they could farm for many years without much of a decline in fertility. In the west Linear Pottery communities reached the area of Paris, while in the north some ventured onto the North European Plain along the lower Oder and Vistula Rivers. Unlike the pattern in southeast Europe, where sheep and goat were the

major livestock species, bones of domestic cattle are the most common types found on Linear Pottery sites.

The coasts of the Baltic and North Seas and the Atlantic Ocean were densely settled by Mesolithic hunter-gatherers. Nearly a thousand years after the Linear Pottery farmers appeared in the adjacent inland areas, the foragers of northern and western Europe saw no need to adopt domestic plants and animals. Their hunting, fishing, and collecting economy was more than adequate. Gradually, however, these peoples selectively adopted domestic plants. Shortly after 4000 B.C., cultivation and stock keeping became more important than foraging in northwestern Europe, Scandinavia, Britain, and Ireland. As in the Mediterranean area, such watercraft as dugout canoes made it possible to transport domesticated plants and animals to the British Isles and much of southern Scandinavia.

A similar pattern is observed in the alpine regions of central Europe. Around the upland lakes of Switzerland and adjacent areas of Germany, France, Italy, Austria, and Slovenia, Neolithic settlements replaced the camps of Mesolithic foragers. Originally thought to have been built on wooden piles placed out over the water of the lakes, these “Swiss lake dwellings” are now known to have been on the lakeshores. Their marvelous preservation of organic material, such as seeds, cloth, wood, and netting, has provided a glimpse of artifacts and food remains not often recovered at other sites.

Not everyone in Europe converted to agriculture. In parts of northern and eastern Europe, foragers continued relatively unaffected by the farming way of life, despite evidence for contacts between the two populations. Fishing and hunting continued to be the primary sources of food for many more centuries. These forest peoples readily adopted pottery, however, so it seems that they were in contact with farmers and made a conscious decision not to imitate them completely.

After the initial establishment of agricultural communities, it took some time for the mature farming systems that characterized later prehistoric periods to emerge. New types of cereals, such as bread wheat, and rye, were introduced, and different combinations of livestock species were tried and refined over the next two millennia. New local styles

of pottery and houses soon replaced those of the earliest farmers, and extensive trade networks connected farming communities. The first traces of competition and warfare are seen in the archaeological record. At the same time, however, it is impor-

tant to note just how quickly agriculture spread throughout Europe. It clearly was an idea that appeared at an opportune time, when conditions were ideal for its rapid adoption and dispersal.

PETER BOGUCKI



CROPS OF THE EARLY FARMERS

It is generally accepted that the first farmers of Europe grew crops that had been cultivated in the Near East for two thousand years before reaching the shores and inland plains of Greece. Plant remains from Early Neolithic sites indicate that the earliest farming villages, dating to about 6700 B.C., grew emmer, einkorn, and bread wheat; two-row barley; lentils; bitter vetch; peas; and flax. With the exception of emmer wheat, wild species of all of these plants can be found in modern Greece, and several have been recovered from pre-Neolithic levels at Franchthi Cave in the southern Argolid. Nonetheless, there are no data to show that these species were domesticated in Greece; rather, they appear to have been imported along with domesticated emmer wheat from the Near East.

THE FIRST FARMERS

The only site in Greece to have produced pre-Neolithic plant remains is Franchthi Cave in the southern Argolid. There, wild barley (*Hordeum spontaneum*) and wild lentils (*Lens species*) were collected as early as 10,000 B.C., at the end of the Upper Palaeolithic and throughout the Mesolithic occupation of the cave, until about 6000 B.C. It is possible that both of these plants as well as wild oats (*Avena species*) were cultivated during this period, but there is no conclusive evidence to support this suggestion. In addition, there was a depositional hiatus in the cave sediments that lasted about five hundred years, after which domesticated emmer wheat and domestic sheep and goats appeared in the deposits. Neither wild nor domestic barley turned up again until the Middle Neolithic period, about

5000 B.C. A few lentils are present in the Early Neolithic levels, but it is not possible to state whether these lentils are wild or domesticated.

In northern Greece, in particular the Thessalian plain, remains of the earliest farming communities are found at the base of large multiperiod mounds, or *magoulas*. These Early Neolithic villages are fully agricultural, with the complete assemblage of Near Eastern crops. There is no underlying Mesolithic material at these sites to suggest the use or even presence of the wild progenitors of these crops. Until the results of analyses of plant remains from Mesolithic levels at Theopetra Cave, in northern Thessaly, have been completed, it is necessary to look to the Near East for the origins of these crops.

CEREAL CROPS

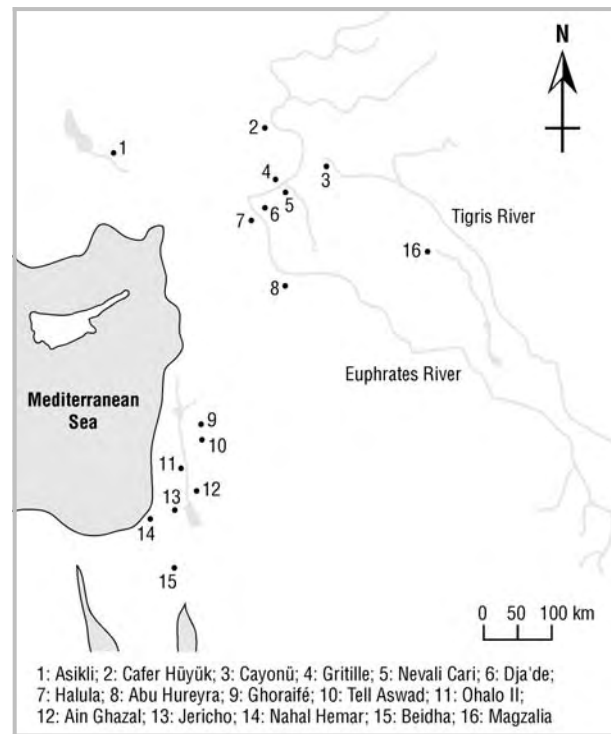
The earliest domesticated plants found on Near Eastern sites are einkorn wheat (*Triticum monococcum*), emmer wheat (*Triticum turgidum* subspecies *dicoccum*), two-row barley (*Hordeum distichum*), rye (*Secale cereale*), lentils (*Lens culinaris*), peas (*Pisum sativum*), bitter vetch (*Vicia ervilia*), chickpea (*Cicer arietinum*), and flax (*Linum usitatissimum*). In addition, poppy (*Papaver somniferum*) was domesticated in western Europe, from where it spread eastward. With the exceptions of rye, chickpea, flax, and poppy, all of these species occur in the earliest Neolithic sites in Greece.

The identification of domesticated plants is not always straightforward, especially given the distortions and other damage resulting from carbonization, the most common form of preservation on ar-

archaeological sites. Nonetheless, with cereals it is more often possible to identify domesticated versus wild forms from archaeological material. The principal difference between wild and domesticated cereals is the capacity of the wild plant to propagate its seeds through the breakage of the rachis into segments (spikelets) upon ripening; thus the plants are referred to as “brittle rachis” types. Each spikelet carries one or more seeds, depending on the species. When it falls to the ground, the spikelet becomes embedded in cracks in the sediment during the dry spring and early summer months. There it lies dormant until the autumn rains, when a certain proportion of the grains germinate. The rachis segments of the wild type have a smooth scar where the segments have separated from each other by the formation of an abscission layer at the base; this is similar to the layer of tissue formed at the end of a leaf petiole that causes the leaf to fall from the tree in autumn. On a domesticated cereal the tough (non-shattering) rachis segments that have been separated through threshing have a rough, jagged scar, but otherwise they may be found with several segments or a whole ear still intact.

The change from the wild-type brittle rachis to the domestic-type tough rachis is the result of a spontaneous mutation at a single point on the chromosome. Within any wild stand of cereals there will be a small percentage of these mutated forms. The conscious or unconscious selection for and subsequent cultivation of this type of cereal eventually led to the development of fully domesticated fields. How and why this took place is still the topic of debate, and a thorough discussion of this issue is beyond the scope of this essay. Suffice it to say that it is possible to identify wild and domesticated cereals on the basis of the remains of the rachis or spikelet segments.

A second difference between wild and domesticated cereals is in the size and shape of the grains. With sufficient well-preserved material, it usually is possible to distinguish the two. Careful measurements of the length, width, and breadth of the grains and the ratios of these measurements also have proved effective in separating wild and domesticated forms as well as one species from another. It is useful to examine each crop, their wild progenitors, and their natural distribution in the Near East



Selected sites where remains of wild and domesticated grains have been found. DRAWN BY JULIE M. HANSEN.

to gain insight into the plants grown by the first farmers of Europe.

Einkorn Wheat. The wild progenitor of einkorn is *Triticum monococcum* subspecies *boeoticum* (fig. 1), which is widespread today in central Anatolia, with stands in the Levant and the Balkan Peninsula as well. It grows on rocky, dry soils and is hardier than other species of wheat. Remains of wild einkorn have been found on such Epipalaeolithic sites as Abu Hureyra and Mureybet in Syria. The earliest certain remains of domesticated einkorn wheat are found at Cafer Hüyük in southeastern Turkey, dated to 7400–7000 B.C. Although it is not as common as emmer wheat, einkorn is present in small quantities in the earliest farming sites in Thessaly, such as Argissa, Otzaki Magoula, and Soufli Magoula, dated to about 6200 B.C.

Emmer Wheat. The wild progenitor of emmer is *Triticum turgidum* subspecies *dicoccoides* (fig. 1), which is found in the modern southern Levant, Southeast Turkey, and the Zagros Mountains. It grows in oak park forest and steppe or steppe forest

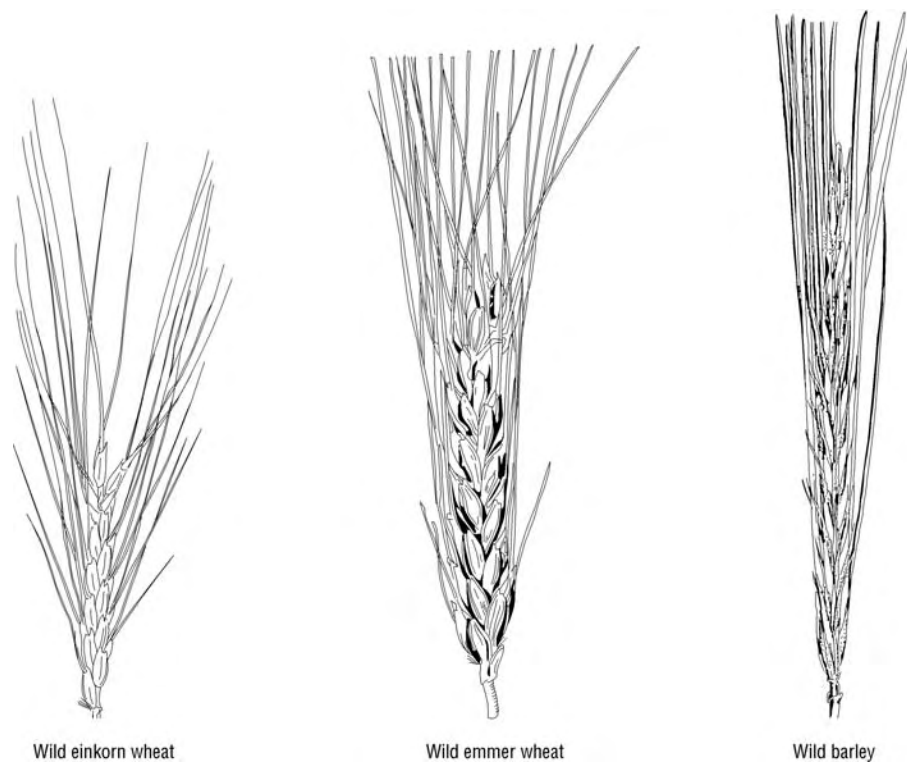


Fig. 1. Some early cereal grains. ADAPTED FROM ZOHARY AND HOPF 1988.

on basalt and limestone. The wild species of emmer wheat has been recovered from the site of Ohalo II in Israel, dated to nineteen thousand years ago. The domesticated form is identified from Cafer Hüyük X–XIII (7400–7000 B.C.), although it also may be present at Tell Aswad (Syria), dated to 7600–7700 B.C. Emmer wheat is present on nearly all Near Eastern sites dated to 7300 B.C. or later that have yielded plant remains. It also predominates on the earliest farming sites in Europe and was the primary domesticated cereal crop as agriculture spread from east to west across the Continent.

Early naked wheat is of two types that are difficult to distinguish in the archaeological record. Bread wheat (*Triticum aestivum*) is the result of a cross between emmer wheat and *Aegilops squarrosa*, a wild grass that is distributed principally in modern northern Iran and farther east. It also occurs in eastern Turkey and northern Syria. Macaroni, or hard wheat (*Triticum durum*), is a naked wheat resulting from a mutation of emmer wheat that causes the grain to be released easily from its husk.

Bread wheat and hard wheat can be distinguished only through careful examination of spike-

let remains. Such remains are not often preserved on archaeological sites in quantities sufficient to facilitate this distinction, however. Thus most palaeoethnobotanical reports record naked wheat as *Triticum aestivum/durum*. The first clear evidence of naked wheat on an archaeological site in the Near East comes from Asikli in Turkey, dated to 6800–6400 B.C. It first appears in Greece at the site of Knossos on Crete, dated to 8200–7600 B.C., and on the mainland at Otzaki Magoula in Thessaly, for which no radiocarbon dates exist. These remains, however, occur in the earliest levels of the site that are contemporary with the Knossos remains and those at Argissa, also in Thessaly, which dates to 6200–5400 B.C.

Barley. Barley also is found both as a hulled and a naked variety as well as in a two-row and a six-row form. The wild progenitor of two-row hulled barley, the earliest domesticated type, is *Hordeum spontaneum* (fig. 1), which is fairly widespread in the so-called Fertile Crescent, that is, in the Levant, and in the foothills of the Taurus and Zagros Mountains. Genetic data suggest that barley may have been domesticated in two areas of the Near East. A possible

form of domesticated barley occurred at Tell Aswad about 7700 B.C. The earliest securely identified domesticates are from Ain Ghazal in Jordan, dated to 7000–6500 B.C.

Wild barley was found at Franchthi Cave in Greece in Upper Palaeolithic and Mesolithic levels dated between 8500–6700 B.C. No barley was found after this point, however, until domestic two-row barley was found in Middle Neolithic levels dated to just after 5980–5640 B.C. Thus it is not possible to argue for indigenous domestication of this species at Franchthi Cave or elsewhere in Greece.

Six-row barley results from a mutation of the two-row type, causing three grains to develop in each spikelet rather than two. It is difficult to distinguish two-row barley from six-row barley in an archaeological sample without sufficient numbers of seeds. The morphological difference between the two species is the basal twisting of the lateral grains of six-row barley. When these lateral grains are seen in a sample, it can be stated with some certainty that six-row barley is present. Their absence does not necessarily mean, however, that this species is not present but only that the lateral grains have not been recovered, preserved, or recognized. At the same time, the presence of twisted grains does not preclude the presence of two-row barley as well. Naked barley is a later development in the Near East, occurring first in Pre-Pottery Neolithic B (PPNB) sites, such as Jericho, Tell Aswad, and Abu Hureyra between 7000–6400 B.C.

Rye. Rye (*Secale cereale*) was thought to have been initially domesticated in Europe, where it is an important modern crop, but studies of plant remains from Epipalaeolithic and Pre-Pottery Neolithic sites in Syria have shown that it was first domesticated in the Near East. The wild progenitor of domesticated rye is most likely *Secale cereale* sp. *vavilovii*, which grows in fairly dense stands on the lower slopes of Mount Ararat in eastern Turkey and in south-central Turkey near the border with Syria. In the past the distribution of this plant was probably more widespread. Another species of wild rye, *Secale montanum*, and domesticated rye were found in the Epipalaeolithic levels of Abu Hureyra, Syria, dated to 11,000 to 10,600 years ago. Domesticated rye appears with domesticated emmer and einkorn

wheat in the PPNB levels of this site as well as at Can Hasan III in Turkey. The first appearances of domesticated rye in Europe are in the Late Neolithic site of Skoteini in Euboeia, Greece, and several Eneolithic sites of the Gumelnitsa culture (5000–4300 B.C.).

Legumes. The three important legume crops that are found on Early Neolithic sites are lentils (*Lens culinaris*), peas (*Pisum sativum*), and bitter vetch (*Vicia ervilia*). Chickpeas (*Cicer arietinum*) are also among the early domesticated legumes in the Near East, but they do not become common until the Late Neolithic in Greece. The principal difference between wild and domestic legumes, as with cereals, is their ability to propagate their own seeds. The pods of wild legumes are dehiscent, that is, they split upon ripening, thus scattering the seeds. In domesticated legumes the pods are indehiscent and remain closed when they mature. Since pods are rarely preserved on archaeological sites, it is the increase in seed size that generally has been used to distinguish between wild and domesticated species, but this is a gradual development and cannot be established with certainty at the earliest agricultural sites. Thus legumes from Neolithic contexts are not always identified as the domesticated species, although they usually are presumed to have been cultivated.

The wild progenitor of domestic lentils is *Lens orientalis*, which has a distribution in the foothills of the Zagros and Taurus Mountains, a distribution similar to those of the wild cereals. This species, along with two others, *Lens nigricans* and *L. ervoides*, also are known from modern Greece. Lentils were recovered from Upper Palaeolithic and Mesolithic levels at Franchthi Cave in Greece, but it is not possible to determine their species. The lentils from Neolithic levels in the cave are, on average, somewhat larger than the earlier specimens, but there is a significant overlap in seed diameter; thus it is not possible to state with certainty that the Neolithic lentils are the domesticated *Lens culinaris*. Together with the depositional problems mentioned earlier, this precludes the possibility of determining whether or not lentils were domesticated in Greece separately from a Near Eastern origin. Lentils are present at one Mesolithic site (Balma Abeurador/Hérault) in southern France, dated to about 6700 B.C., but all other finds are from Neolithic or later

contexts, where the other Near Eastern crop plants are present.

It is possible to distinguish wild peas (*Pisum humile*) from the domesticated variety (*Pisum sativum*) on the basis of the rough seed coat found in the former. Unfortunately, seed coats are not often preserved in archaeological material, making identification uncertain at times. Wild pea was identified at Franchthi Cave from Mesolithic levels on the basis of the rough seed coat that was preserved on one specimen. Botanical evidence suggests that peas were domesticated in the Near East, probably from populations of *P. humile* in Turkey and Syria. Like lentils, peas have been identified from Balma Abeurador/Hérault in southern France and elsewhere only in Neolithic and later contexts.

Modern use of bitter vetch is primarily as fodder for animals, but it was a common legume collected in the Epipalaeolithic of the Near East and probably was cultivated in the earliest agricultural sites. Wild bitter vetch grows in modern Turkey and northern Iraq and can be found as a weed in cereal crops. In Europe bitter vetch was identified in the Upper Palaeolithic levels of Franchthi Cave in Greece and also occurs in the Middle Neolithic at this site. In Thessaly the earliest appearance of bitter vetch is in the Aceramic Neolithic levels of Sesklo. Along with lentils and peas, it is present at Balma Abeurador but is otherwise found only on Neolithic and later sites in Europe with the Near Eastern assemblage of crop plants.

The wild progenitor of domesticated chickpea is *Cicer reticulatum*, which grows in modern Southeast Turkey. It can be distinguished from the domesticated form by the reticulate or netlike pattern of ridges on its seed coat, which becomes smooth in the domesticated species. The earliest remains of chickpeas are reported from Pre-Pottery Neolithic A (PPNA) levels at Jericho and PPNB levels at Cayönü and Abu Hureyra. In Greece the first evidence of chickpeas is at the Early Neolithic site of Otzaki Magoula in Thessaly, but it does not appear on other sites until the Late Neolithic. It is not found in the northern Balkans or elsewhere in Europe until the Bronze Age.

Flax. Wild flax (*Linum bienne*), the progenitor of the domesticated species, is widespread from western Europe to the Near East and Caucasia. It grows

in moist or wet environments near springs. The primary morphological difference between wild and domesticated flax forms is the development of an indehiscent capsule and larger seeds in the latter. Wild flax has been identified from Epipalaeolithic and Early Neolithic sites in the Near East. Domesticated flax is present from Pre-Pottery Neolithic B levels at Ramad in Syria, dated to c. 7200 B.C. The latter findings were attributed to the domesticated species on the basis of seed length, which ranged from 3.2 to 4.1 millimeters; the wild species do not exceed 3.0 millimeters. Domesticated flax has been recorded from Early Neolithic sites in northern Greece, and it is present in the earliest farming sites in central Europe south of the Danube, dated to 5700–5500 B.C. It occurs with the full complement of Near Eastern domesticated plants and was brought into the region at this time.

Poppy. The only plant that most likely was domesticated in Europe is the poppy (*Papaver somniferum*). The wild progenitor of this plant is *Papaver somniferum* subspecies *setigerum*, which is native to the western Mediterranean basin. The primary difference between the wild and domesticated plants is the indehiscence of the capsule in the domesticated species. Poppy seeds are underrepresented on archaeological sites, because they are so small that their recovery depends on careful flotation methods with screens of 0.5-millimeter mesh or smaller. Poppy seeds occur on Late Neolithic sites in southern France and Spain as well as in central Europe. Thus it is a later addition to the suite of cultivars introduced from the east, although the absence of poppy from earlier sites may be due to the recovery techniques rather than to their absence from the sites. Remains of poppy seeds or capsules have not been recovered from Neolithic contexts in the Near East or southeastern Europe.

FARMING PRACTICES

The conditions under which crops were grown, such as soil types, season of planting and harvesting, and crop-processing methods, can be determined to some extent from the weed assemblage associated with the crop plants. Weeds have a range of environmental requirements that dictate the types of soils in which they can grow best, such as light, sandy loam versus heavy clay-rich soils. Like all plants, weeds will flower and set seed within a particular

time range corresponding to climate and daylight length. In some cases, this timing mimics that of the crop the weed infests, such as wild oats, which set seed at the same time, late spring, as do the winter-sown cereals emmer and einkorn wheat. Crop-processing activities, such as the method of harvesting, may be determined by knowing such characteristics as the height of weeds that occur in archaeological deposits. The presence of low-growing weeds among the cereal grains may indicate that the crops were harvested by cutting the stems fairly low to the ground. With respect to the earliest agricultural sites in Europe, relatively few remains exist overall, and many of the small seeds cannot be identified as to species or even genus. Nonetheless, it is possible to suggest some agricultural practices from the available evidence.

At the preceramic site of Argissa in the Thessalian plain, plants such as oat (*Avena species*), ryegrass (*Lolium temulentum*), and corn cockle (*Agrostemma githago*) are typical weeds of winter-sown cereals and would have infested the emmer and einkorn crops. At the same time, the presence of species belonging to the Chenopodiaceae family (e.g., lamb's-quarter) and the Polygonaceae family (e.g., dock) suggest that some crops may have been spring grown on heavy soils. The exact species represented from these families have not been identified, so it is not possible to be certain of this suggestion.

At the Early Neolithic sites of Sesklo in Thessaly and Toumba Balomenou in Boeotia, heavier soils also were cultivated, based on the presence of bedstraw (*Galium aparine*) as well as Chenopodiaceae and Polygonaceae species. Species of these families along with mallow (*Malva species*) and purslane (*Portulaca species*) also provide an indication of possibly spring-grown crops. *Portulaca* is a typical weed of legume crops. At these early agricultural sites cereals might have been sown in the autumn, when the rains made the soils easier to work with a hoe. Legumes, such as lentils, peas, and bitter vetch, could have been sown on the same land in the spring, after the cereal harvest. There is not enough evidence to indicate that fallowing and crop rotation were practiced, although it certainly is possible.

Analysis of the settlement pattern of the earliest farming village in Thessaly suggests that, while some sites were located in the floodplain of the Peneios River, others were established to the south,

well away from this watercourse but still in the lowlands of the plain. Still others were in the uplands 100 to 200 meters above sea level. In each of these areas the soils would have varied, and thus the farming practices and weed types also would have been somewhat different. Farmers nearest a river that flooded annually may have taken advantage of the deposition of silt to plant crops primarily in the spring. In the drier areas of the basin and in the uplands, farmers would have had to rely on autumn and winter rains and would have planted their crops accordingly.

The scale of farming most likely was small. None of the excavated sites has shown evidence of storage facilities in the form of pits, silos, or large ceramic vessels that could have held a large surplus of grain or other crops. Rather, it seems likely that agriculture provided sufficient food for the households with seed held back for the next year's crop. Storage, in this case, could have been in the form of baskets or bags that have not survived.

SUMMARY

The primary crops grown by the first farmers in Europe initially were domesticated in the Near East and brought to Greece about eight thousand years ago. Although wild forms of a number of the crops can be found in preagricultural sites in Greece and France, the domesticated forms of these plants appeared with the rest of the Near Eastern assemblage of crops. Poppy is the only plant that initially was domesticated in Europe, although there is no clear evidence for its presence before the Late Neolithic.

In Greece the earliest farming villages are located in various types of environments, such as near rivers, on drier lowland, or in uplands. For those sites for which data exists, it seems that planting took place both in the spring on heavy soils and in the autumn on drier rain-fed soils. Farming would have been conducted on a small scale with sufficient cereals and legumes for the household rather than production of surplus for the community or for exchange.

See also *Archaeology and Environment* (vol. 1, part 1); *Beginnings of Farming in Northwestern Europe* (vol. 1, part 3); *Agriculture* (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Halstead, Paul. "The Development of Agriculture and Pastoralism in Greece: When, How, Who, and What." In

- The Origins and Spread of Agriculture and Pastoralism in Eurasia*. Edited by David R. Harris, pp. 296–309. London: UCL Press, 1996.
- Hansen, Julie. *The Palaeoethnobotany of Franchthi Cave*. Excavations at Franchthi Cave, Greece, fascicle 7. Bloomington: Indiana University Press, 1991.
- Hopf, Maria. “South and Southwest Europe.” In *Progress in Old World Palaeoethnobotany: A Retrospective on the Occasion of 20 Years of the International Work Group for Palaeoethnobotany*. Edited by Willem van Zeist, Krystyna Wasylikowa, and Karl-Ernst Behre, pp. 241–279. Rotterdam, Netherlands: A. A. Balkema, 1991.
- Kroll, Helmut. “Südosteuropa.” In *Progress in Old World Palaeoethnobotany: A Retrospective on the Occasion of 20 Years of the International Work Group for Palaeoethnobotany*. Edited by Willem van Zeist, Krystyna Wasylikowa, and Karl-Ernst Behre, pp. 161–177. Rotterdam, Netherlands: A. A. Balkema, 1991.
- Perlès, Catherine. *The Early Neolithic in Greece: The First Farming Communities in Europe*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 2001.
- Price, T. Douglas, ed. *Europe’s First Farmers*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 2000.
- Sarpaki, Anaya. “Toumba Balomenou, Chaerona: Plant Remains from the Early and Middle Neolithic Levels.” In *Res Archaeobotanicae*. Edited by Helmut Kroll and Rainer Pasternak, pp. 281–300. Kiel, Germany: Oetker-Voges, 1995.
- Willcox, George. “Archaeobotanical Evidence for the Beginnings of Agriculture in Southwest Asia.” In *The Origins of Agriculture and Crop Domestication*. Edited by A. B. Damania, J. Valkoun, G. Willcox, and C. O. Qualset, pp. 25–38. Aleppo, Syria: International Center for Agricultural Research in Dry Areas, 1998.
- Zohary, Daniel, and Maria Hopf. *Domestication of Plants in the Old World: The Origin and Spread of Cultivated Plants in West Asia, Europe, and the Nile Valley*. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2000.

JULIE M. HANSEN



LIVESTOCK OF THE EARLY FARMERS

Although dogs, the first domestic animal, were already widespread among the later hunter-gatherers of Europe, livestock (domestic herd animals) appeared only with the first farmers (Early Neolithic). Like plant agriculture, these animal domesticates originated in the Near East. While in the Near East plant agriculture precedes herding, domestic plants and animals arrived in Europe as part of a mixed farming package. By the time it reached Europe, this package included the main farm animals of today (excluding the horse): cattle, sheep, goats, and pigs. However, they would not have looked much like our familiar barnyard animals, since they were still quite close to their wild ancestors in appearance.

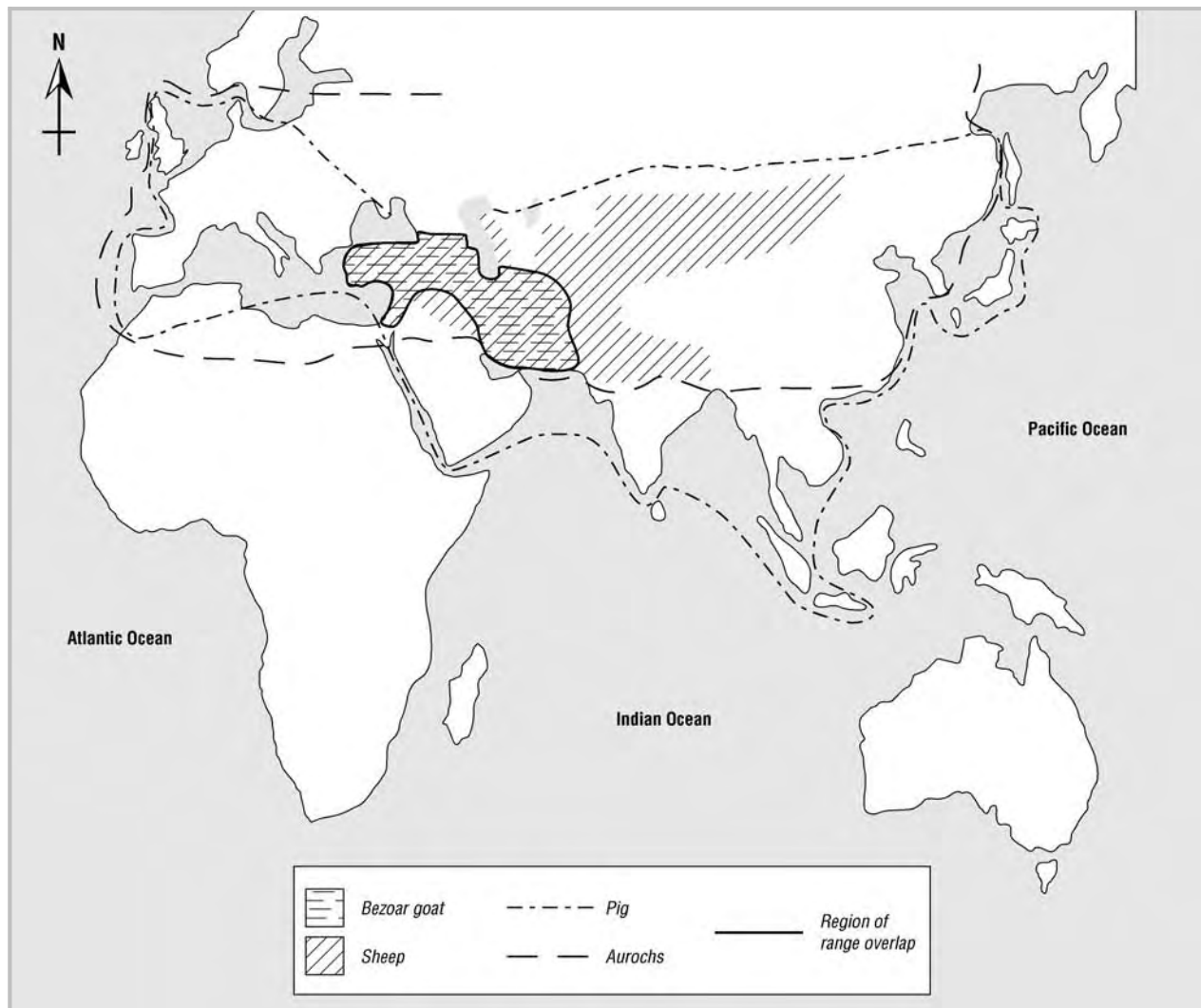
ANIMAL DOMESTICATION

Animal domestication is a complex process involving both biological and social changes that may occur at different rates. The key change is from hunting to herding: controlling the movement and breeding of animals and protecting them from predators. This control may be loose or tight; stricter control will lead to more rapid biological changes. On the other hand, if livestock are allowed or even encouraged to interbreed with wild populations, as is sometimes the case even today, there will be no genetic isolation of wild and domestic populations and therefore little opportunity for biological differentiation.

Once a domestic population is isolated, a number of physical and behavioral changes are likely to occur. These include changes in the color of the

coat, the size and shape of horns, the shape of the face, and body proportions. The breeding season may become longer and less seasonal. Early herders may have deliberately selected for docile behavior; in any case more placid animals fare better under domestication. This probably accounts for the reduction in brain size seen in most domestic animals. Although the reasons for this are unclear, the early domesticates (including dogs, sheep, goat, cattle, and pigs) decreased in size compared to their wild ancestors. While herders sometimes may have selected for smaller animals that were easier to control, it is likely that most of this happened without conscious intervention. Domestic animals often must subsist on limited food (due to the restriction of their movements), which would favor smaller animals. Human control of breeding and protection from predators would also relax some of the pressure to be large. In any case, this is a particularly useful feature of domestication from the archaeological point of view. Size change can be detected by measuring the anatomical features of the animal bones recovered from archaeological sites, providing one of the key methods for identifying animal domestication.

Size changes must be interpreted cautiously, however. Work on goats from Ganj Dareh in Iran, the site with the earliest evidence of goat domestication, shows that an apparent reduction in size actually results from killing off most of the larger males at an early age. Zooarchaeologists usually only measure mature bones, since it is difficult to compare measurements of bones that have not reached their



Ranges of the wild ancestors of early livestock. ADAPTED FROM DAVIS 1987.

full size. This illustrates that size reduction, which does occur later in the domestication process in many animals, must be assessed by examining the entire range of measurements, not just by comparing means. There is also geographical variation in the size of both wild and domestic animals, so assemblages from different areas should not be compared uncritically.

Size diminution can happen quite rapidly, within a few generations, if control of breeding and movement is strict, or even within a single generation if it results not from genetic change but from limited food. However, under looser herding regimes it may be very slow to appear. Therefore, another important technique for detecting ancient

herding is based on the demographic changes to the population of herded animals, which can be reconstructed in archaeological assemblages from age and sex profiles. While herding practices will vary depending on the goals and wealth of the herder, no herd will last long unless the herder takes care to preserve an adequate breeding population. This means keeping a large number of females into adulthood, while males are more likely to be slaughtered early. Hunters often target prime adult animals, but herders tend to slaughter animals for meat at a younger age. Adult animals eat more and are expensive to maintain, especially through the winter when they may need to be provided with fodder. Thus an animal bone assemblage resulting from hunting wild animals will tend to have mostly adults, with

males present in equal or even greater numbers than females. An assemblage derived from herded animals, on the other hand, will be dominated by younger animals. Generally only mature animals can be sexed osteologically, and these will be mostly female. Unusual hunting strategies may sometimes mimic herding, but in general this approach, combined with other supporting data, provides a good indication of domestication.

Since the 1900s, an additional tool has become available through the application of DNA “fingerprinting” techniques to animals. By comparing the DNA of wild and domestic animals, geneticists can establish their degree of relatedness and suggest which wild populations are ancestral to the domesticates. Using the “molecular clock” (the estimated rate of random mutations in mitochondrial DNA), they can also estimate the date at which domestic and wild populations separated. This application of genetics is in its infancy, and results are often contradictory. So far most of the studies are based on living animals, although some are beginning to include ancient DNA from archaeological bones. Studies based solely on living animals present a problem in that domestic animals have been much affected by breeding programs of the last few centuries, and wild populations have been dramatically reduced. We can expect that an increased use of ancient DNA and more cooperation between geneticists and archaeologists will soon lead to improvements in research and that DNA studies will make a major contribution to tracing the origins of domestic animals in the near future.

Herding also leads to profound changes in the human population. Caring for animals means that at least part of the human population must adapt itself to the animals’ needs: taking them to pasture, often at a distance, or providing them with fodder. Human labor must be devoted to tending the flocks, and therefore is less available for gathering, hunting, fishing, and other tasks. Domestic animals have owners, changing property relations among the people and providing a new source of wealth. Unlike other kinds of material wealth, such as metals, animal wealth is capable of reproducing and augmenting itself (although also capable of sudden and drastic loss through drought or epidemic). The wealth value of domestic animals may have been as important as their food value in the spread of herd-

ing. Finally, while it is more intangible, one of the most important changes that animal herding effected on humans may have been the alteration in worldview and ideology. The herders’ attitude of control and husbanding of resources for future benefit is likely to have had profound consequences beyond herding. Indeed, there are indications of a major shift in religion and ideology at about the time of animal domestication in the Near East, with this new view then spreading with herding into Europe and elsewhere. Briefly, occasional images of gazelles are replaced by a proliferation of imagery of bulls and human females. This new imagery has been interpreted in various ways, most stressing a new concern with either fertility or dominance of the natural world (and perhaps of the human world as well). There is debate about whether the adoption of herding brought about this shift, or whether the change in attitude came first and made animal domestication thinkable, but it is clear that the two are closely linked.

SHEEP AND GOATS

Sheep and goats appear to have been the first livestock to be domesticated, at roughly the same time (about 10,000 years ago), in the Near East. While they soon became linked in a mixed herding economy, they appear to have been domesticated separately in different locations.

Domestic sheep (*Ovis aries*) are descended from the Asiatic mouflon (*Ovis orientalis*). The mouflon found on Mediterranean islands are not native, but are actually feral descendents of early domestic sheep brought by Neolithic settlers. Wild mouflon inhabited the foothills and lower mountain slopes from central Anatolia through the northern Levant to Iran. The earliest occurrence of domesticated sheep is often given as about 11,000 B.C. at Zawi Chemi Shanidar in Iraq. However, this claim, based on an early application of demographic techniques, is now rejected by specialists. At present, solid evidence of sheep domestication first appears in the northern Levant region (Syria and southeast Turkey) at about 7500 B.C., although there are some indications that the process may have begun there somewhat earlier. Both genetic and archaeological evidence support an independent domestication in South Asia at roughly the same time, but these sheep are of less relevance to Europe.

There have been claims for independent local domestication of sheep in southern France and Iberia, but it is now clear that these are based on either mixing of deposits from different periods or misidentified ibex and chamois. With no good evidence for wild ancestors in Europe, the sheep of the early farmers can confidently be considered domestic livestock. These early sheep would have looked very much like the wild mouflon. They were a little smaller, and the horns were reduced, especially in females. Like the mouflon, they lacked wool, having a brown, hairy coat. Mouflon and early domesticates have a short woolly undercoat in the winter that is shed in the spring. Woolliness, attested by artistic depictions and textile remains, first appears about 3000 B.C. Thus the sheep of Europe's first farmers were used for meat. Demographic profiles suggest that sheep's milk was not consumed in significant amounts at this point in time, either.

The wild ancestor of domestic goats (*Capra hircus*) is the bezoar goat (*Capra aegagrus*). The range of the wild goat is similar to that of the mouflon, but it tends to occupy higher and more rugged terrain. Bezoar goats do not occur in Europe. Just as with sheep, the animals that were once believed to have been a wild subspecies of the goat on Crete are now known to be descended from domesticated bezoar goats. The closely related ibex (*Capra ibex* and, in the Pyrenees, *C. pyrenaica*) is found in Europe and has sometimes complicated identifications. The ibex, however, has never been domesticated. Demographic evidence from bone assemblages indicates that goats were domesticated in the Zagros Mountains region of Iran and Iraq (somewhat east of the area of sheep domestication) at about 8000 B.C.; changes in horn shape twisting followed slightly later. Genetic evidence suggests that while there may have been two additional domestications (or additions of wild females to domestic flocks), these were much later.

By at least 7300 B.C. and possibly earlier, domestic sheep and probably domestic goats were present in central Anatolia, and their bones exhibit size reduction from the wild form. It is not yet known whether these animals spread from the apparent center of domestication to the east or whether they were independently domesticated locally. In any case, this is likely to have been the ultimate source area for European domestic sheep and goats.

CATTLE

The wild ancestor of cattle (*Bos taurus*), the aurochs (*Bos primigenius*), has been extinct since 1627. In contrast to sheep and goats, the aurochs (plural: aurochsen) was widespread across the northern Old World, ranging across most of Europe and Asia as well as North Africa (fig. 1). Thus there were potentially more areas in which cattle could have been domesticated. Genetic evidence suggests two independent domestication events, in the Near East or Europe (taurine cattle) and in South Asia (zebu). Some have also claimed an independent domestication in North Africa, but the evidence is so far not definitive. The archaeological evidence does support domestication events in South Asia and in Europe or the Near East, but the details of domestication in the western area remain unclear. All evidence suggests that cattle domestication followed that of sheep and goats (except perhaps in Africa). This is not surprising, considering that the aurochs was a large and dangerous animal with huge horns.

Çatal Hüyük, a Neolithic site in central Anatolia (7300–6200 B.C.), has been cited as a center of cattle domestication, on the basis of limited data from a preliminary report in the 1960s. However, work at the site in the 1990s has shown that the cattle here were wild. There is suggestive but not definitive evidence for domestic cattle in southeast Anatolia (Çayönü) at about 8500 B.C. and in the Levant about 7500 B.C. Cattle were transported to Cyprus (where they were not part of the native fauna) by 8000 B.C. Although this demonstrates their importance to the human colonists, it does not necessarily mean they were herded. Neolithic settlers brought many animal species to Cyprus, some of which seem to have been left to run wild and then hunted (e.g., fallow deer). The introduction of cattle was ultimately unsuccessful. Cattle disappeared from Cyprus within a few centuries and did not reappear until the Late Chalcolithic/Early Bronze Age (by then they were clearly domestic). Domestic cattle appeared in western Anatolia and in Greece by 6800–6500 B.C., but without a sequence indicating local domestication. Although eastern Anatolia seems the most likely location of initial cattle domestication, further research is needed.

PIGS

Domestic pigs and their ancestor, the wild boar, are usually placed in the same species (*Sus scrofa*). The

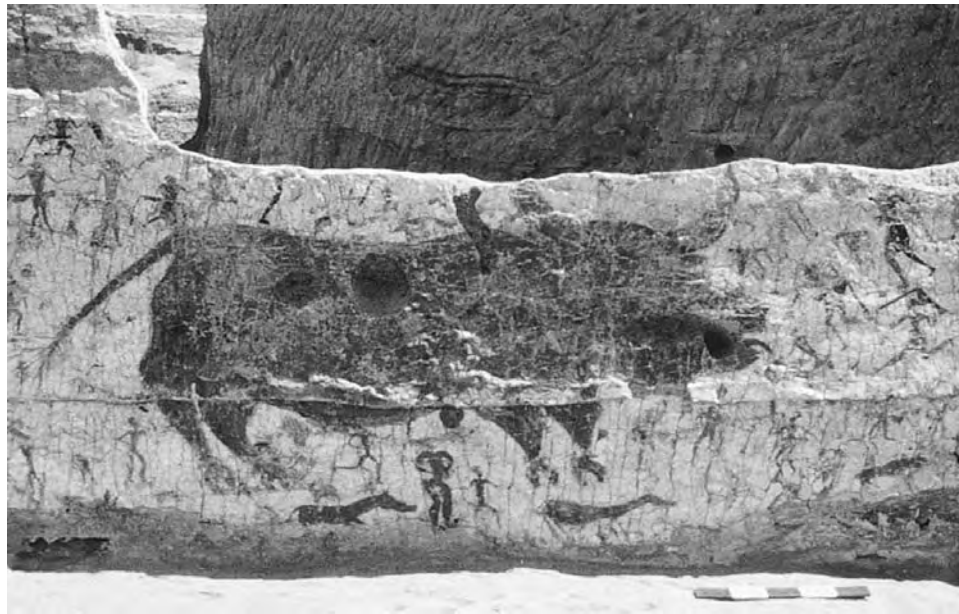


Fig. 1. Rock carving of Neolithic cattle. PHOTO COURTESY PICTURES OF RECORD, INC. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

range of wild boar is similar to that of cattle, and the history of pig domestication is even less well known, although new research (particularly by the group headed by Keith Dobney at the University of Durham) may ameliorate this situation. Genetic evidence supports separate origins for European and Asian domestic pigs, but as of 2003, it cannot yet address how many domestication events occurred or locate them more precisely. Archaeological evidence supports separate domestication in China and in Europe or the Near East, with eastern Anatolia the most likely candidate in the latter area. This is the only part of the Near East where pigs are abundant at early archaeological sites. Pig domestication has been claimed at Hallan Çemi in eastern Anatolia at about 10,000 B.C., a site otherwise lacking domestic plants and animals. The evidence presented as of 2003 is less than fully convincing, however. There is somewhat more convincing but still less than definitive size and demographic evidence from nearby Çayönü at about 8500 B.C., accompanied by cereal agriculture. By 7000 B.C., pigs in the domestic size range appeared in the Levant, and by 6800 B.C. in Greece. While it is possible that pigs were domesticated independently in Europe, and occasional claims have been made to this effect (e.g., the Crimean region, southern Scandinavia, Iberia), the evidence is weak. Eastern Anatolia is

currently the only area that approximates a sequence of intensive use and progressive change in size and demography.

EARLY HERDERS OF EUROPE

As outlined above, evidence indicates that the livestock of Europe's first farmers derived from animals domesticated in the Near East. In Europe, herding spread together with plant agriculture. Roughly speaking, mixed farming spread from southeast to northwest, with an additional early route along the borders of the Mediterranean on the south.

Southeast Europe. This area includes Greece and the Balkans and extends slightly into Hungary. The earliest sites with domesticates are in Greece, mainly in Thessaly and Greek Macedonia. Even at these first sites, starting about 7000 B.C., all four herd animals were present. Sheep and goats, especially sheep, predominated in these Mediterranean zones. About a thousand years later, farmers and their herds expanded into the northern Balkans. Although cattle and pigs later become more numerous in these temperate zones, to which they are much better adapted than sheep and goats, the earliest farmers for the most part raised mainly sheep and goats, retaining the Mediterranean pattern. This likely reflects different uses for the small and

large stock, with sheep and goats providing daily meat and cattle reserved largely for feasts and sacrifices. There may have been initial resistance to using cattle as an ordinary meat supply.

Southwest Europe. Early farmers and their livestock reached Italy, southern France, and Iberia at about the same time as the northern Balkans, following a coastal route. The occurrence of small numbers of domestic sheep and goats in Mesolithic (hunter-gatherer) deposits has led to claims of local domestication. As noted above, these can be dismissed since the region is now known to be outside the range of the wild ancestors. Another interpretation is that these animals were acquired by local hunter-gatherers from nearby farming communities, whether through exchange, bridewealth, or theft. This remains a definite possibility, but as of 2003 the evidence derived from multiperiod cave sites and could also be interpreted as the result of postdepositional mixing of sediments. At many sites the domestic fauna is limited to sheep and goats. However, the early Neolithic is known almost entirely from cave sites, which may have been special-purpose herding camps not representing the full range of activities. The few open sites that have been excavated also include domestic cattle and pigs. It would appear, then, that early livestock arrived in southwest Europe as a package but that the herding regime of sheep and goats differed from that of cattle and pigs. The cave sites suggest seasonal movement of the small stock to upland grazing.

Central Europe. Mixed farming expanded from the northern edge of southeast Europe into central Europe at about 5500 B.C. All four herd animals are present at these early sites, with cattle predominating. By this time cattle had also become more prominent in the assemblages of the source area in temperate southeast Europe. Ceramic sieves that may have been used in cheesemaking (perhaps this will ultimately be confirmed by evolving techniques of residue analysis) suggest that dairying played some role in herding. Domestic pigs are present but scarce in these Early Neolithic (*Linearbandkeramik*, or LBK) assemblages. Since this was prime habitat for pigs, this scarcity probably reflects a cultural devaluation rather than economic necessity. Indeed they gain importance through time in this region.

Eastern Europe. Eastern Europe here refers roughly to the European portion of the former Soviet Union, although the focus is on the area north of the Black Sea (modern Ukraine and vicinity). Agriculture and herding came much later to the north, only with the Bronze Age or even later. North of the Black Sea lies a region of steppe, cut by major rivers running roughly north-south: the Bug, the Dnieper, and the Dniester. Before the domestication of the horse, the steppe zone was difficult for people to settle. Thus agriculture and herding appeared first in the river valleys. Starting at about 6000 B.C., the Mesolithic hunting and gathering groups who already occupied these valleys began to acquire domestic animals, mostly cattle and pigs, from their Neolithic neighbors in southeast and central Europe. Evidence as of 2003 suggests that this was much more a gradual process of adoption than a migration of incoming farmers.

Northwest Europe. Farming and herding reached the Atlantic fringe of Europe (Brittany, the Netherlands, southern Scandinavia, and Britain) only about 4000 B.C. The livestock consisted of cattle, pigs, and sheep, with cattle predominating in the earlier Neolithic. Many of the faunal assemblages studied are from ceremonial sites and may not reflect daily consumption patterns. On the other hand, they indicate the importance of cattle, in particular, in feasts and rituals. In 2003, residue analysis of British Neolithic pottery confirmed what had been argued (somewhat controversially) on the basis of demographic data: that cattle were used for dairy production as well as for meat. There is debate about the roles of colonization by farmers from Central Europe versus adoption of “neolithic” traits by the substantial populations of local hunter-gatherers. In any case, it is fair to say that the local Mesolithic population played an active and important part in the transition to agriculture and herding. Particularly in southern Scandinavia, there may have been an extended period of gradual adoption of herding, initially on a small scale.

SUMMARY

The livestock of Europe’s first farmers—comprising sheep, goats, pigs, and cattle—was almost certainly derived from animals domesticated in the Near East, although later interbreeding with local wild or tamed cattle and pigs may have occurred. These

four animals spread as a package, along with cereal agriculture from southeast Europe, gradually through the rest of the continent. The earlier farmers in southern Europe tended to raise mostly sheep and goats, even where these were ill-suited to the local environment. Later farmers, including the first farmers to reach central, eastern, and northwest Europe, switched to cattle as the primary herd animal.

See also **Humans and Environments** (vol. 1, part 1); **Domestication of the Horse** (vol. 2, part 4); **Animal Husbandry** (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Bogucki, Peter I. *Forest Farmers and Stockherders: Early Agriculture and Its Consequences in North-Central Europe*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1988.
- Bökönyi, Sándor. *History of Domestic Mammals in Central and Eastern Europe*. Translated by Lili Halápy. Budapest: Akadémiai Kiadó, 1974.
- Bradley, Daniel G. "Genetic Hoofprints: The DNA Trail Leading Back to the Origins of Today's Cattle." *Natural History* 112, no. 1 (2003): 36–41.
- Cauvin, Jacques. *The Birth of the Gods and the Origins of Agriculture*. Translated by Trevor Watkins. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 2000.
- Clutton-Brock, Juliet. *A Natural History of Domesticated Mammals*. 2d ed. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1999.
- Copley, Mark S., et al. "Direct Chemical Evidence for Widespread Dairying in Prehistoric Britain." *Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences* 100, no. 4 (2003): 1524–1529.
- Crabtree, Pam J. "Early Animal Domestication in the Middle East and Europe." In *Archaeological Method and Theory* 5. Edited by Michael B. Schiffer, pp. 201–245. Tucson: University of Arizona Press, 1993.
- Davis, Simon J. M. *The Archaeology of Animals*. New Haven, Conn.: Yale University Press, 1987.
- Halstead, Paul L. J. "The Development of Agriculture and Pastoralism in Greece: When, How, Who and What?" In *The Origins and Spread of Agriculture and Pastoralism in Eurasia*. Edited by David R. Harris, pp. 296–309. London: UCL Press, 1996.
- MacHugh, David E., and Daniel G. Bradley. "Livestock Genetic Origins: Goats Buck the Trend." *Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences* 98, no. 10 (2001): 5382–5384.
- Price, T. Douglas, ed. *Europe's First Farmers*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 2000.
- Rowley-Conwy, Peter A. "Wild or Domestic? On the Evidence for the Earliest Domestic Cattle and Pigs in South Scandinavia and Iberia." *International Journal of Osteoarchaeology* 5, no. 2 (1995): 115–126.
- Tchernov, Eitan, and Liora R. Kolska Horwitz. "Body Size Diminution under Domestication: Unconscious Selection in Primeval Domesticates." *Journal of Anthropological Archaeology* 10, no. 1 (1991): 54–75.
- Thomas, Julian. "The Cultural Context of the First Use of Domesticates in Continental Central and Northwest Europe." In *The Origins and Spread of Agriculture and Pastoralism in Eurasia*. Edited by David R. Harris, pp. 310–22. London: UCL Press, 1996.
- Zeder, Melinda A., and Brian C. Hesse. "The Initial Domestication of Goats (*Capra Hircus*) in the Zagros Mountains 10,000 Years Ago." *Science* 287, no. 5461 (2000): 2254–2257.
- Zilhão, João. "The Spread of Agro-Pastoral Economies across Mediterranean Europe: A View from the Far West." *Journal of Mediterranean Archaeology* 6, no. 1 (1993): 5–63.

NERISSA RUSSELL



FIRST FARMERS OF EUROPE

FOLLOWED BY FEATURE ESSAYS ON:

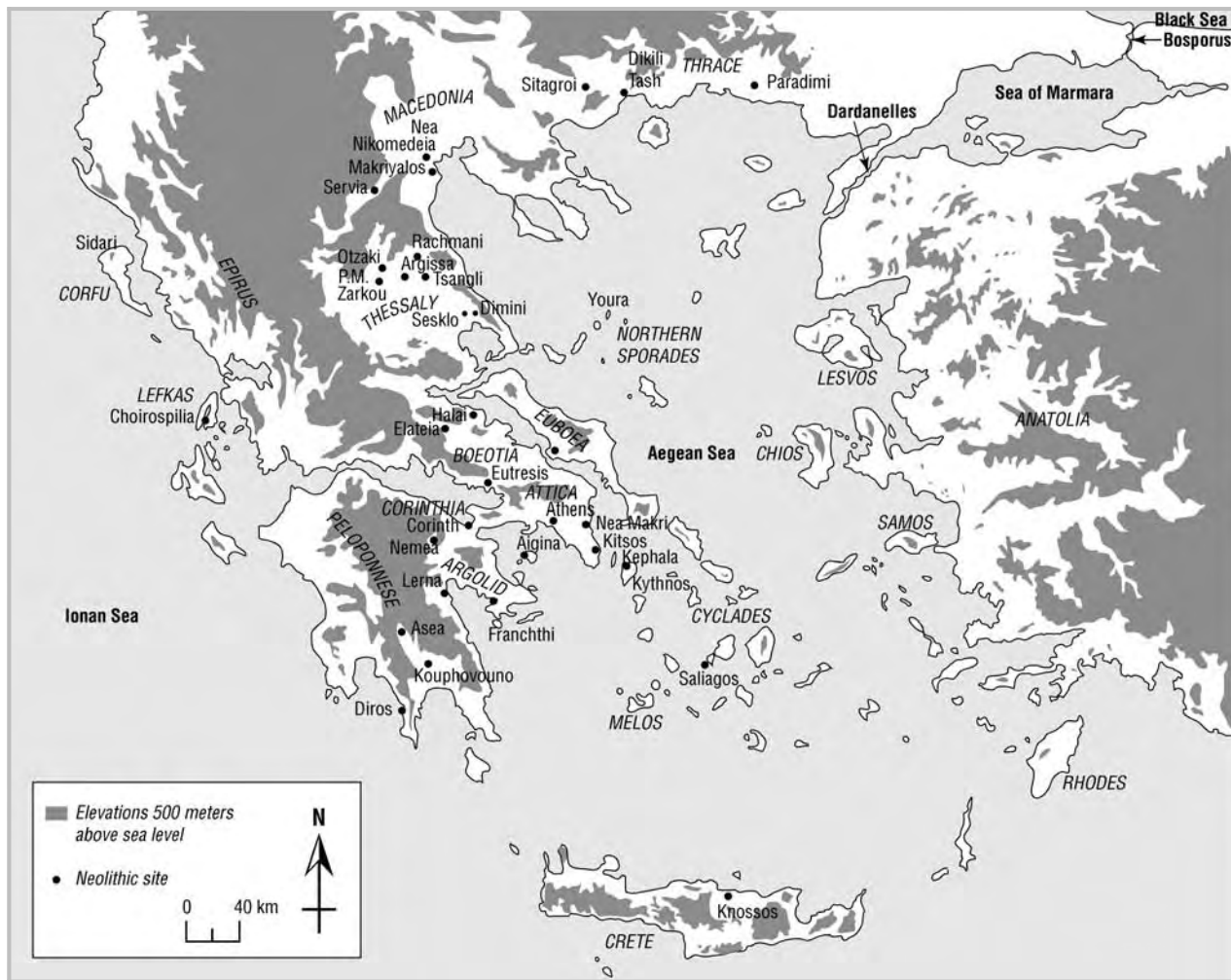
<i>Achilleion</i>	226
<i>Last Hunters and First Farmers on Cyprus</i>	229

The first farmers in Europe arrived on the shores of Greece as migrants in the first quarter of the seventh millennium B.C. They brought with them an economy based on the cultivation of wheat, barley, peas, and beans and the herding of sheep, goats, cows, and pigs. The striking feature of this Early Neolithic (“New Stone Age”) culture was its life in compact villages. These villages were recognizably modern in form and had populations of perhaps 300 or 400 people, four times larger than the loosely organized bands of foragers that had preceded them in the Palaeolithic and Mesolithic periods. The first farmers came from western and southern Anatolia (modern Turkey) and sailed across the Aegean Sea to Crete and mainland Greece. A second wave of migrants, much smaller than the first, may have infiltrated into northern Greece by land through Turkish Thrace. The precise coordinates of the point of origin and the forces that set all these migrants in motion remain among the most controversial issues in Aegean prehistory.

Greece before the arrival of Neolithic immigrants was sparsely inhabited. Upper Palaeolithic foragers (c. 42,000–15,000 B.C.) had occupied many parts of Greece, including Thessaly, Epirus, and the Argolid, at the end of the Pleistocene era. They left behind hearths, animal bones, plant re-

mains, and stone tools in small caves and rock shelters. After the last glacial maximum (c. 20,000 B.C.), most of the known Palaeolithic sites were abandoned, and by the end of the Pleistocene the human presence in Greece was greatly reduced. Large tracts of land, and all of the islands, appear to have been unoccupied for several millennia. People trickled back into the country during the following Mesolithic period in the early Holocene (c. 9000–7000 B.C.). Mesolithic sites are found in Epirus, Thessaly, the Argolid, and some islands (e.g., Corfu in the Ionian Sea, Youra, and Kythnos in the Aegean). Mesolithic foragers were evidently seafarers specializing in the intensive exploitation of marine and other aquatic resources, such as shellfish and large deep-sea fish. They confined their settlements to the coastal fringes of the mainland, where they left their stone tools, plant remains, hearths, and human burials in caves and at open sites situated among the sand dunes that overlooked the estuaries and lagoons that were formed by the rapidly rising level of the sea. The best-known site of this period was excavated at the Franchthi Cave in the southern Argolid (Peloponnese) in the 1960s and 1970s.

It was for a time thought possible that these Mesolithic foragers, whose origins and connections,



The concentration of sites in eastern and central Neolithic Greece (as shown) suggests that migrants came from the east, probably Anatolia. ADAPTED FROM RUNNELS AND MURRAY 2001.

if any, are with the Palaeolithic foragers who preceded them, may have independently taken the first steps toward the domestication of plants and animals that form the backbone of the later Neolithic economy. This hypothesis of independent local invention of agriculture, however, is not supported by archaeological evidence and has been abandoned. The first farmers brought their village-based farming economy with its domesticated plants and animals with them from regions where it was already an old and established pattern. The archaeological record shows that the farmers appeared suddenly c. 7000–6800 B.C., bringing with them not just a new economy but also an entirely new way of life, material culture, and settlement pattern. There is a clear cultural break between the latest Mesolithic

communities and the new Neolithic village-based societies.

CHARACTERISTICS OF GREEK NEOLITHIC VILLAGES

Before turning to the important question of the homeland of the migrants and the reasons for their migration, the characteristics of Europe's earliest farming culture should be described. The chronological range for the first farmers spans the early seventh to the early sixth millennium B.C., a period archaeologists call the Early Neolithic period. The Neolithic in Greece as a whole consists of four periods, designated Early, Middle, Late, and Final, and it ends c. 3200 B.C. with the beginning of the

Bronze Age. This article is concerned only with the first of these periods.

The first villages are found in the eastern half of the country, from Macedonia in the north to the Peloponnese Peninsula in the south. The largest concentration of villages is in Thessaly. The islands were not inhabited, except for the largest (such as Crete, Euboea, and Corfu), where there were no more than one or two sites. The mainland cannot be described as densely inhabited. There are probably no more than about three hundred Early Neolithic sites, and their total population at the time was no more than a few tens of thousands. The villages are found well inland, often near a copious spring or a perennial river, such as the Peneios River in Thessaly. The early farmers apparently selected only the best and most reliable soils for farming. Studies of pollen from cores taken from lakes and swamps show that forest cover was not adversely affected by clearing of fields for nearly a thousand years after the first farmers arrived. One can conclude from this that village farming was simple, based on the clearing of small fields that could be cultivated with digging sticks and hoes to grow wheat, barley, and pulses. Herds of cattle and sheep were grazed on meadows in nearby hills. Villages were relatively few in number and small in size, and they were distributed more or less evenly throughout large areas: there are about 120 Early Neolithic sites in eastern Thessaly with an area of nearly 1,000 square kilometers, and this is the most densely populated region. There was little competition among the villages for resources, and if one can judge by the seemingly undifferentiated architecture and burial practices, little in the way of social competition within them.

This does not mean that these farming communities were simple in the way of the earlier Palaeolithic bands. The material culture recovered by archaeologists throws much light on the lives of these people, pointing to a level of complexity unparalleled in earlier periods. Early Neolithic villages had an open plan, as can be seen at Nea Nikomedeia in Macedonia (fig. 1) and Sesklo in Thessaly, with rectangular houses of wattle-and-daub construction (upright wooden poles set in foundation trenches and with smaller branches woven between them and plastered over with puddled clay) or of mud brick laid in courses on fieldstone foundations (fig. 2). Roofs were thatch and clay supported by cross

beams and a system of internal clay buttresses or wooden supports. Windows and doors, judging from surviving clay house models found on Neolithic sites, were few and simple. Internal arrangements were not very complex either: an open central hearth for light, heat, and cooking; some stone- or clay-sided boxes for storage; and a few raised benches of clay to serve as furniture. Textiles probably brightened and softened the interiors, and the outside walls were perhaps painted. The decorations on the walls of the house models have geometric designs resembling textiles and painted pottery.

The inventory of Neolithic material culture is rich and varied. Metals in the earliest period were unknown. Shell and bone were used to fashion hooks, fastenings for clothing, and personal ornaments in the form of bangles and amulets. Curious mushroom-shaped plugs of fine stone are thought to be studs for the ears or lips. Stamps of stone and clay with geometric designs reminiscent of textile designs may have been used to stamp pigment on skin and textiles or perhaps to mark ownership of goods. Fine-grained rocks, often imported from distant sources, were fashioned into ground stone celts, rectangular or trapezoidal implements with beveled edges mounted in antler sleeves and wooden handles, used as axes and adzes. Flaked-stone tools were fashioned from long parallel-sided blades of flint and obsidian. The high quality of the blades suggests that specialized flintknappers served Neolithic communities, and the importation of obsidian from the island of Melos to all the mainland sites is evidence of organized long-distance trade. Remarkable also are large blades of light-brown flint, nearly a chalcedony, that were imported from outside Greece, perhaps from Bulgaria or Romania. Small figurines of clay and stone—often, but not exclusively, depicting females—have abstract proportions and features, especially curious coffee bean-shaped eyes. These easily recognizable figurines have excited considerable discussion, particularly from proponents of a so-called mother goddess cult. Careful analysis of the figurines and their contexts has failed, however, to provide a clear-cut explanation of their meaning, and they may be anything from children's toys to representations of votaries or a variety of ghosts, spirits, or deities.

Decorated pottery constitutes one of the most interesting classes of finds from Early Neolithic vil-

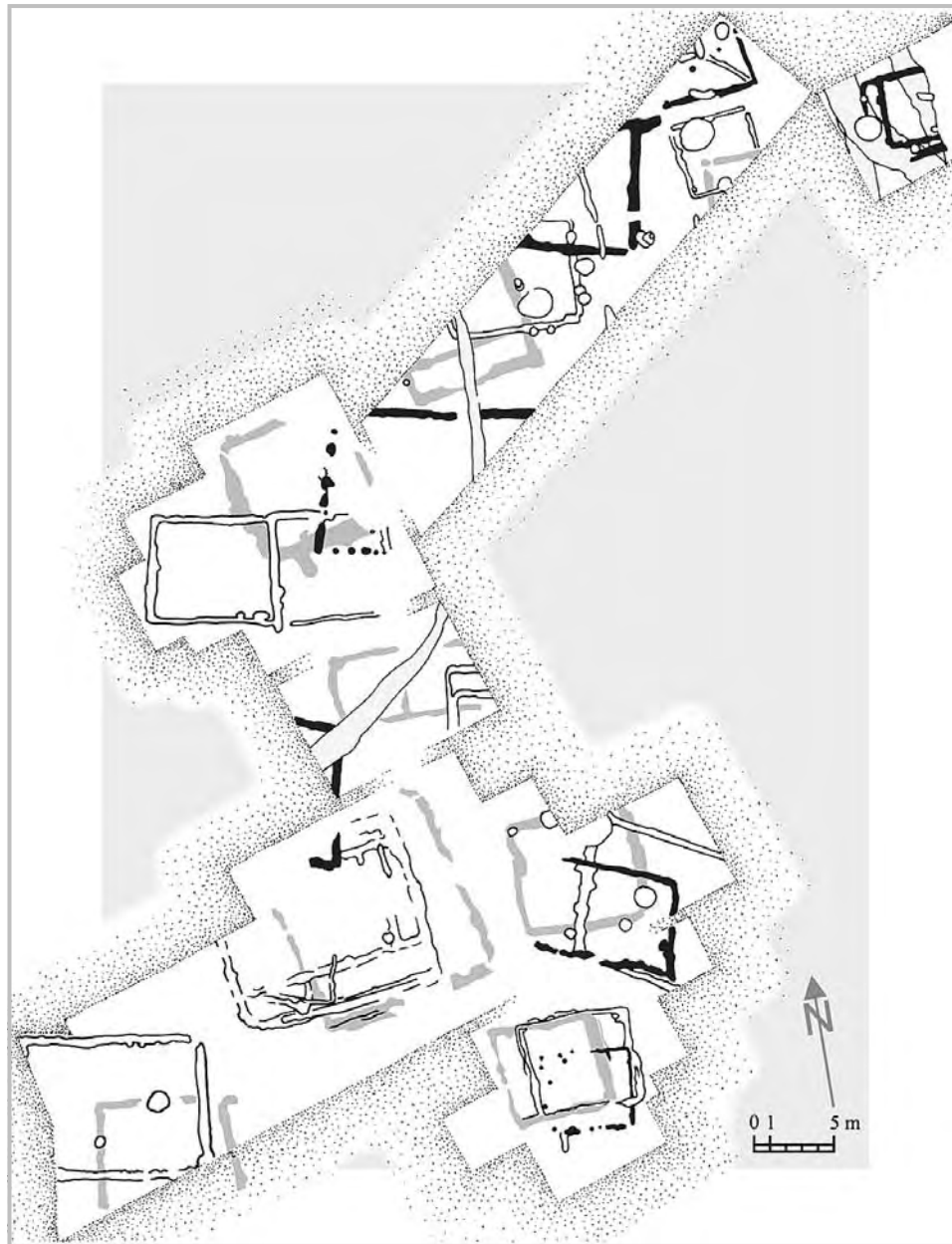


Fig. 1. Site plan of Nea Nikomedeia. Open village plan for Early Neolithic settlements in Greece. REPRINTED WITH PERMISSION OF CAMBRIDGE UNIVERSITY PRESS AND GERARD MONTHIEL (AFTER PYKE AND YIOUNI 1996).

lages. In the earliest phases it is painted in one dominant color, either red or black, but it soon came to be painted with abstract geometric designs that again call to mind shapes seen in modern local textiles and basketry. The shapes are simple, with small rounded bowls and jars predominating. The shapes and their specific decorations vary from region to region, which suggests to archaeologists that after an initial colonization the different regions of Greece

(e.g., Thessaly, Peloponnese, Crete) began to develop along parallel but independent lines. The analysis of the designs found on the pottery of the later phases has been used to establish connections between sites within regions, perhaps resulting from the practice of marital exogamy (in this case, female potters moving from their home villages to their husbands' villages). The Neolithic pots do not seem to have been used for cooking or storage, and one



Fig. 2. Typical Neolithic house construction of stone foundations, mud-brick walls, and clay-covered wooden roof. REPRINTED WITH PERMISSION OF CAMBRIDGE UNIVERSITY PRESS AND GERARD MONTHEL.

of their most important uses was perhaps to signal status and communicate symbolic messages encoded in the decoration.

Such glimpses into the social lives of the first farmers offered by the evidence of jewelry, figurines, and pots are tantalizing but incomplete. As already noted, the generally undifferentiated house architecture within settlements does not point to great differences in wealth or status. Although larger and more finely constructed buildings have been identified at Nea Nikomedeia and Sesklo, these may be shrines, chieftains' houses, or some other kind of public buildings. The evidence is too slight to reach reliable conclusions.

Burial practices are widely believed by archaeologists to be good indicators of the status and standing of the living, and rich graves found among poor ones are usually interpreted to mean that similar differences in wealth existed among the living. Neolithic burial practices are as difficult to interpret as the figurines, pottery, and architecture. Children are found buried under house floors, but this sort of intramural burial is common in societies around the world and through time. Adult burials, curiously, are only rarely encountered. The detailed study of the Neolithic burials at Franchthi Cave serves to illustrate the evidence. In the millennium from 6500 to 5500 B.C. there are eight burials consisting of infants or young children interred in pits. Adult

burials are missing, although individual bones from adults were found throughout the site. Even given the limitations of preservation and excavation, it must be inferred that the majority of adults were disposed of elsewhere. To judge from earlier and later burial practices in Greece, adult bodies were disposed of in ways that may have included cremation, exposure, and interment.

Burial goods are sparse. Only one grave had unequivocal offerings, a baby with a broken (ritually “killed”) pot and a small marble bowl with three feet. Clear indications of differences of wealth and status are otherwise not seen. The different methods of disposal for adults and infants may be an indication of rank, status, and position. At Franchthi there were also isolated bones from hands and feet among other parts of the body, some of which were found in rooms of houses. This interesting emphasis on body parts may be an echo of the widespread Near Eastern practice of honoring ancestors by retaining body parts (often the head) for veneration in houses. While it is too soon to draw firm conclusions about Europe’s first farmers from this scanty evidence, clearly the belief systems and social lives of these people may have been more complex than the simple architecture of the villages would otherwise lead one to believe.

THE ORIGINS OF THE FIRST EUROPEAN FARMERS

Whence came the first farmers in Europe? Nearly a century of archaeological research has given a decisive answer to this question. All lines of evidence point to the Near East, specifically the region stretching from the Levant north through Syria and Turkey to the Zagros Mountains in Iraq, as the place where village-based agricultural economies made their first appearance. This core area, a vast arc encompassing many different environments and climatic niches, was labeled the Fertile Crescent by the American archaeologist James Henry Breasted. The wild ancestors of the plants and animals that form the core of modern agricultural economies are found here, as are the remains of Early Neolithic sites, such as Jericho, Abu Hureyra, and Jarmo. These sites date from as early as 10,500 B.C., much earlier than any sites in Greece. The principal characteristics of these early villages include rectangular houses made of mud brick on stone foundations in

open villages, pottery, “coffee bean-eye” female figurines, and polished stone axes. The material culture is much the same as that found in Greece and many parts of Southwest Asia as well.

Although the chief characteristics of Neolithic life were developed in the Fertile Crescent, the Neolithic culture of Greece has a particular resemblance to the Neolithic cultures found in Anatolia (modern Turkey). Research in the late twentieth century established that Anatolia was one of the core areas where Neolithic civilization got its start. Large Early Neolithic towns are found here, as early as any found in the Near East (e.g., Çayönü in the southeast and Aşıklı Hüyük, Çatal Hüyük, Can Hasan, and Hacilar on the Anatolian Plateau). These sites flourished at the end of the eighth millennium B.C., the culmination of a long period of established village life. They provide close parallels with the early Greek Neolithic culture, particularly features such as internal adobe buttresses in houses, figurines, decorated pottery, stamps with geometric decoration, and an industry of obsidian blades. The Greek Neolithic can be seen as a peripheral extension of the Anatolian cultural core.

Undoubtedly some, perhaps all, of the inhabitants of Early Neolithic Greek sites arrived as immigrants. On the island of Crete the site at Knossos (later the site of a Minoan palace) was founded nearly nine thousand years ago. This typical Neolithic village has no precedent on the island. The village has rectangular houses built of mud brick on rectangular foundations in a typical Neolithic open plan. The monochrome pottery, figurines, axes, and obsidian blades have no exact parallels, but they are very similar to the cultural products of Anatolia. Taking into account that there were no human inhabitants of the island before the foundation of this village and that the domesticated plants and animals (wheat and barley, sheep and goats) the villagers cultivated had no wild ancestors on the island, the conclusion that the farmers at Knossos arrived as seafaring migrants is inescapable—and indeed unsurprising. The exploitation of obsidian from the quarries on the Cycladic island of Melos, documented at Franchthi Cave throughout the Mesolithic period, is clear evidence for the presence of seafarers plying the Aegean Sea in the two millennia preceding the appearance of Neolithic villages in Greece. Mesolithic sites are found on some islands

(e.g., Kythnos and Corfu), as are some Neolithic sites, not only on Crete but also on Corfu, Youra, and Euboea. The existence of these islands (with their resources of fish, birds, seals, turtles, and obsidian) was most likely well known to the inhabitants of coastal Anatolia long before the time of the first migrations of farmers.

Where in Anatolia did the first farmers come from? The exact location is not known, but the southern coast around Antalya and the western coast in the general vicinity of Izmir are likely candidates. These points on the Aegean coastline have always been the natural outlets for the inhabitants of the fertile Anatolian Plateau, even into the modern day. Neolithic sites are known in these areas, but no one site or group of sites can yet be identified as the “mother culture” for the Greek Neolithic. Colonists would have followed strings of islands from the Dodecanese to the Cyclades and to Crete and the mainland, never losing sight of land as they moved among the islands that are scattered across the Aegean like stepping-stones. Alternatively they could have taken a northern route through Turkish Thrace into Macedonia and Thessaly. From the Early Neolithic sites in northwestern Turkey clustered around the Sea of Marmara (the Fikirtepe culture), migrants could have sailed south through the strait known as the Dardanelles into the Aegean, retracing as it were the voyage of Jason and the Argonauts, or they could have traveled westward along the land route that later became a Roman military highway called the Via Egnatia, which connected Constantinople (Istanbul) to ports on the Adriatic Sea. Perhaps all of these routes were exploited at one time or the other.

Immigrant farmers may have encountered small pockets of Late Mesolithic peoples when they arrived on Greek shores. It has been argued on the basis of the occurrence of certain Mesolithic stone tool types among those of more characteristic Neolithic type that the farmers at Franchthi Cave may have taken some of the locals in their midst. No evidence exists to indicate that the Mesolithic peoples themselves took any independent steps that led to agricultural origins. Their sites were few, very small, and widely scattered. In contrast, Neolithic sites were much larger, more densely concentrated, and usually completely new foundations. (Franchthi Cave, Sidari in Corfu, and perhaps Theopetra in

Thessaly may be exceptions.) The plants and animals cultivated and herded are typical Near Eastern domesticated species, and there is little or no evidence for independent experimentation in the Mesolithic with plant or animal domestication. In short, all the evidence available points to a major cultural break between the Mesolithic period and the succeeding Neolithic period.

EXPLAINING NEOLITHIC MIGRATION

The hypothesis that the first farmers migrated in sufficient numbers to colonize new lands can no longer be seriously doubted. The archaeological evidence already discussed supports it, as does the pattern of radiocarbon dates for Early Neolithic sites with progressively younger dates as one moves westward from the Near East into Europe. These dates show a steady march of Neolithic culture across the Continent. There are also strong genetic links between modern-day Europeans and Near Easterners that can be explained by assuming a shared ancestry, something that has been confirmed by genetic studies beginning in the 1980s. This migration, or demic diffusion as it is called by archaeologists, certainly was a major force in Greece and southeastern Europe, even if the migrants mixed to greater or lesser degrees with native populations left over from the Mesolithic as they appear to have done in northern and western Europe.

A theoretical model used to explain demic diffusion, the Wave of Advance, was developed in biology to predict the pattern of spread of new species of animals through novel environments. According to this model, a population of organisms is more or less stable at its geographic center but tends to expand at its margins in small-scale random movements of individuals. These movements collectively create a bow-shaped wave where population continues to advance geographically, even if at a very slow and locally unpredictable way. Imagine mice introduced to a deserted island. Once established they will begin to spread. Behind the frontier, geographically speaking, that divides the part of the island with mice and without mice, the mouse population will eventually stabilize as the animals adapt to their new environment. On the edge, however, because mice have no competitors in the uninhabited area, the population will continue to grow, and mice will

spread. The resulting moving population edge or frontier is the Wave of Advance. Theoretically at least, early farmer populations behaved much the same way. Even after the population in much of Anatolia had reached a balance point among people, the land suitable for agriculture, and the technology to exploit that land, the population would continue to expand outward, at least along the frontier, to new valleys and new shores where there were few competitors for land and resources.

The Wave of Advance is a good descriptive model, but archaeologists want also to account for the specific historical and individual circumstances that induced particular cultural groups to leave their homelands and cross the Aegean to Europe. The circumstances, or incentives, that induced or persuaded early farmers to take the risk of an open-sea crossing to Greece or the equally dangerous overland passage through Thrace were no doubt many and complex. The general line of speculation, however, focuses on a relatively narrow range of possibilities. The idea of population pressure at home can be eliminated. The available farmland in Anatolia was by no means exhausted by Early Neolithic farmers, and millions of people live there in the twenty-first century, demonstrating that, technology permitting, the agricultural potential of the region is vast. The technology of early farmers, however, was based on the considerably less-efficient use of local irrigation, digging sticks, and hoes. The best soils located near springs and rivers were perhaps preferred by these farmers, and they were willing to move from valley to valley or island to island in search of them. Perhaps there was a population movement analogous to that which brought the Norse to Iceland, Greenland, and Vinland: limitations imposed by the inheritance of the best land to only one or a few children. Those who did not stand in line to inherit land sufficient to support new families, especially those on the frontier, may have elected to move into uninhabited lands, where they could have their pick of choice lands to cultivate.

Another possibility for the migration of early farmers to Greece is that adventurers, who have lived in every age, explored new lands and then returned with like-minded family and friends to become colonists. The study of the homesteaders and pioneers in the New World has revealed that the motives of these people were truly diverse. Some

sought the wilderness to found utopian social or religious communities, and the same thing has been suggested for the earliest Aegean farmers. Perhaps they were escaping from the social and economic upheavals that apparently affected much of the Near East and Anatolia c. 7000 B.C. and after. Many sites were burned or abandoned at this time, and there is evidence for local displacements of populations that continued for some time. These disruptions may have been caused by climatic change, warfare, economic and religious movements, or some other kind of social convulsion. Whatever the explanation, the Aegean migrants may have been attempting to avoid the conditions at home by moving to remote and previously uninhabited regions.

The precise historical reasons for the coming of the first farmers to Europe may never be known, but it can be said with some certainty that Greece was the first part of Europe to have an established Neolithic culture. The newcomers originated in Anatolia and the Near East, and once they were established on European soil, they developed an independent and distinctive civilization that flourished for millennia. The descendants of these first farmers may well be the ancestors of modern-day Greeks, who can fairly lay claim to being the first Europeans in the modern sense. Without any doubt, the discovery by archaeologists of this prehistoric migration of farmers from Anatolian shores to the Greek mainland is one of the great intellectual achievements of modern science.

See also **Franchthi Cave** (vol. 1, part 2); **Knossos** (vol. 2, part 5).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Ammerman, Albert J., and L. L. Cavalli-Sforza. *The Neolithic Transition and the Genetics of Populations in Europe*. Princeton, N.J.: Princeton University Press, 1984. (Discusses the Wave of Advance model and the hypothesis of demic diffusion, testing them with archaeological and genetic data.)
- Andreou, Stelios, Michael Fotiadis, and Kostas Kotsakis. "The Neolithic and Bronze Age of Northern Greece." In *Aegean Prehistory: A Review*. Edited by Tracey Cullen, pp. 259–327. Boston: Archaeological Institute of America, 2001. (Gives details for many of the Early Neolithic sites in Thessaly and Macedonia.)
- Chikhi, Lounès, Richard A. Nichols, Guido Barbujani, and Mark A. Beaumont. "Y Genetic Data Support the Neolithic Demic Diffusion Model." *Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences* 99 (2002): 11008–11013.

- Demoule, Jean-Paul, and Catherine Perles. "The Greek Neolithic: A New Review." *Journal of World Prehistory* 7, no. 4 (1993): 355–416.
- Halstead, Paul, ed. *Neolithic Society in Greece*. Sheffield, U.K.: Sheffield Academic Press, 1999. (Important essays by leading specialists in the field.)
- Jacobsen, T. W., and Tracey Cullen. "A Consideration of Mortuary Practices in Neolithic Greece: Burials from Franchthi Cave." In *Mortality and Immortality: The Anthropology and Archaeology of Death*. Edited by S. C. Humphreys and Helen King, pp. 79–101. London: Academic Press, 1981.
- Özdoğan, Mehmet, and Nezih Başgelen, eds. *Neolithic in Turkey: The Cradle of Civilization*. Istanbul: Arkeoloji ve Sanat Yayınları, 1999. (Overview of the Anatolian Neolithic sites discussed in this article that also documents that disruptions at the end of the eighth millennium B.C. may have triggered Aegean migrations.)
- Papathanassopoulos, George A., ed. *Neolithic Culture in Greece*. Athens: Goulandris Foundation, 1996. (A region-by-region review of Neolithic culture by noted specialists in each field, with excellent maps and illustrations.)
- Perles, Catherine. *The Early Neolithic in Greece: The First Farming Communities in Europe*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 2001.
- Pyke, Gillian, and Paraskeri Yiouni. *Nea Nikomedeia I: The Excavation and the Ceramic Assemblage*. BSA supplementary volume no. 25. London: British School at Athens, 1996.
- Runnels, Curtis N. "The Stone Age of Greece from the Palaeolithic to the Advent of the Neolithic." In *Aegean Prehistory: A Review*. Edited by Tracey Cullen, pp. 225–258. Boston: Archaeological Institute of America, 2001. (Provides evidence for the paucity of native inhabitants in Greece in the millennia preceding the appearance of the first Neolithic farmers.)
- Runnels, Curtis, and Priscilla Murray. *Greece before History: An Archaeological Companion and Guide*. Stanford, Calif.: Stanford University Press, 2001.
- Theocharis, Demetrios R., ed. *Neolithic Greece*. Athens: National Bank of Greece, 1973.
- Thorpe, I. J. *The Origins of Agriculture in Europe*. London and New York: Routledge, 1996.
- Van Andel, Tjeerd H., and Curtis N. Runnels. "The Earliest Farmers in Europe." *Antiquity* 69 (1995): 481–500. (A specific case study of the colonization of Thessaly at the beginning of the Neolithic that tests the hypothesis that land near perennial water was preferentially selected by early farmers.)

CURTIS RUNNELS

ACHILLEION

The densest group of Neolithic settlements in all of Europe is found in the rich plain of Thessaly in central Greece. Most of these sites are related to Sesklo, a Thessalian site where first the "Neolithic triad" (pottery, domesticated plants, and animals) was identified in 1901. Ever since, this red-painted pottery has been referred to as "Sesklo" ware, no matter where it is found. Achilleion, a Sesklo site, is located on the southern edge of the eastern part of the plain. A Greek-American team excavated this site in 1973 and 1974, and the director, the late Marija Gimbutas, published the results in 1989. Achilleion produced a long sequence of radiocarbon dates (c. 6400–5600 B.C.) and is among the earliest of Neolithic sites in Greece. The goals of the project were, first, to explore this site for evidence of a "pre-pottery Neolithic," that is, levels with domestication but no pottery; second, to obtain data for radiocarbon dating; and, last, to understand the life of the villagers, as evidenced by their houses, pottery, tools, technology, symbols, and what they traded, herded, hunted, planted, and gathered.

STRATIGRAPHY AND LIVING SPACE

Four squares, each 5 by 5 meters (A–D), were placed at the summit of the low-lying mound, and sterile soil was reached in A, B, and Test Pit East at a depth of 5 meters. Test pits and small soundings were dug to establish the extent of habitation. Based on the soil stratigraphy, the carbon dates, and the seriation of a huge sample of pottery (more than 100,000 sherds), four phases were defined (Achilleion I–IV) covering about eight hundred years of early to classical Sesklo.

Building practices changed over time. The standard, adopted in Achilleion II, of stone foundations with walls made of posts interlaced with brush and sealed with mud plaster varied over time only by number and size of rooms. Excavation near a house wall exposed a "courtyard" of Achilleion III (c. 6000 B.C.) filled with artifacts and features that included an unusual stone and clay platform with round, pebble-lined indentations, 30 centimeters in diameter, at each corner. On the platform were five figurines, stone cutting and grinding tools, and associated pottery sherds, apparently representing outdoor domestic activity of a communal nature.

The two-room structure of Achilleion IV was referred to as a “shrine” because figurines, special pottery, and tools were clustered in one room; although this interpretation is debatable, the recovery of figurines and other cult objects indicates a lively symbolic life. Exposure of other “living” floors illustrates the dense combination of tools, artifacts, rubbish piles, partial structures, hearths, ovens, and other items of the material culture of Neolithic village life.

POTS AND POTTERS

The Achilleion I (c. 6500 B.C.) villagers produced simple monochromatic pink, gray, tan, or dark brown wares; later potters added dark red-brown (Achilleion II) and, in phases III and IV (c. 6000–5700 B.C.), burnished red-buff and red-orange. Favored shapes were rounded, open and closed, some with high necks and ring-bases. Linear designs of red paint on a white slip background were first tabulated in late Achilleion I (triangles and crossed lines) and the very characteristic step pattern introduced in phase II (c. 6300–6150 B.C.). Products of phase III and IV (c. 6000–5600 B.C.) seem to have been the work of more knowledgeable and adventurous potters launching checkerboard, boxes, filled-lozenge, nesting chevrons, and the most recognized of Sesklo motifs—the flame pattern and its elaborations. Potters making crude and fine wares had developed into crafters.

TOOLS, TASKS, AND CRAFTS

The many and varied artifacts and features imply workers, crafters, and apprentices or helpers in a village in which men and women, young and old, all participated. Among the numerous items (and associated workers’ activities) were: clay spindle whorls and spools (shepherds, spinners, weavers); fine and coarse pottery and polishers (potter specialists); imported obsidian for cutting tools (traders, cooks, farmers); stone adzes, axes, and grinders and carbonized plant remains (stone carvers, sowers, reapers, cooks, consumers) (fig. 1: 3, 6); mat impressions on clay (basket and mat makers); bone tools (herders, hunters, and cooks) and the recycling of bones ground and shaped into tools (fig. 1: 7).

Conservation of resources was detected by presence of the “silica gloss” on the edge of small chipped stone blades—part of a composite sickle.

These were inserted, as “teeth,” into a groove prepared in a wood or antler handle. As the sickle was used in reaping, free silica in the plants fused onto and dulled the teeth. The reaper removed, rotated, and reinserted them, producing a reusable sickle; and his/her conserving behavior is identifiable when the shiny silica gloss covers opposite margins of the small blades.

ANIMAL AND PLANT HUSBANDRY

The settlers planted and reaped domesticated cereal crops (emmer and einkorn wheat, barley, and perhaps oats), either in mixed fields or separately. They added lentils in Achilleion I and II and peas in Achilleion III and IV. Wild pistachio nuts, acorns, and wild grapes were collected. Subsistence also was based on those animals husbanded by the villagers: sheep, goats, cattle, pigs, and dogs (the latter not for food); all had been domesticated by the time the first pit house had been erected in Achilleion I. The same mixed seed material and faunal remains have been identified from other early Neolithic Thessalian sites.

Wild animals did not play an important role in the diet, but hunters exploited the forested mountains for red deer, ibex, wild cat, and boar as well as the plain for wild cattle and fallow and roe deer. Wild ancestors allow for local domestication, but it is assumed that sheep and goat, already domesticated, were brought to Thessaly from either the north or the east (the Balkans in the case sheep and Anatolia for goats).

SYMBOLISM

Achilleion is noted especially for the recovery, in an archaeological context, of a large and varied assemblage of small clay schematic human and naturalistic animal figurines (fig. 1: 1–5). These items were studied by the excavator Marija Gimbutas, who interpreted them as symbols of the “gods and goddesses of Old Europe,” representing prehistoric religion, cult practice, and matriarchy. “Old Europe” encompasses Neolithic through Chalcolithic Greece and the Balkans (c. 7000–3500 B.C.), where virtually all excavations of prehistoric sites reveal similar figurines and various cult objects. The Thessalian sites of these millennia were the richest, and the ubiquity of the pottery designs and especially the figurines, with masks as faces and “coffee bean”

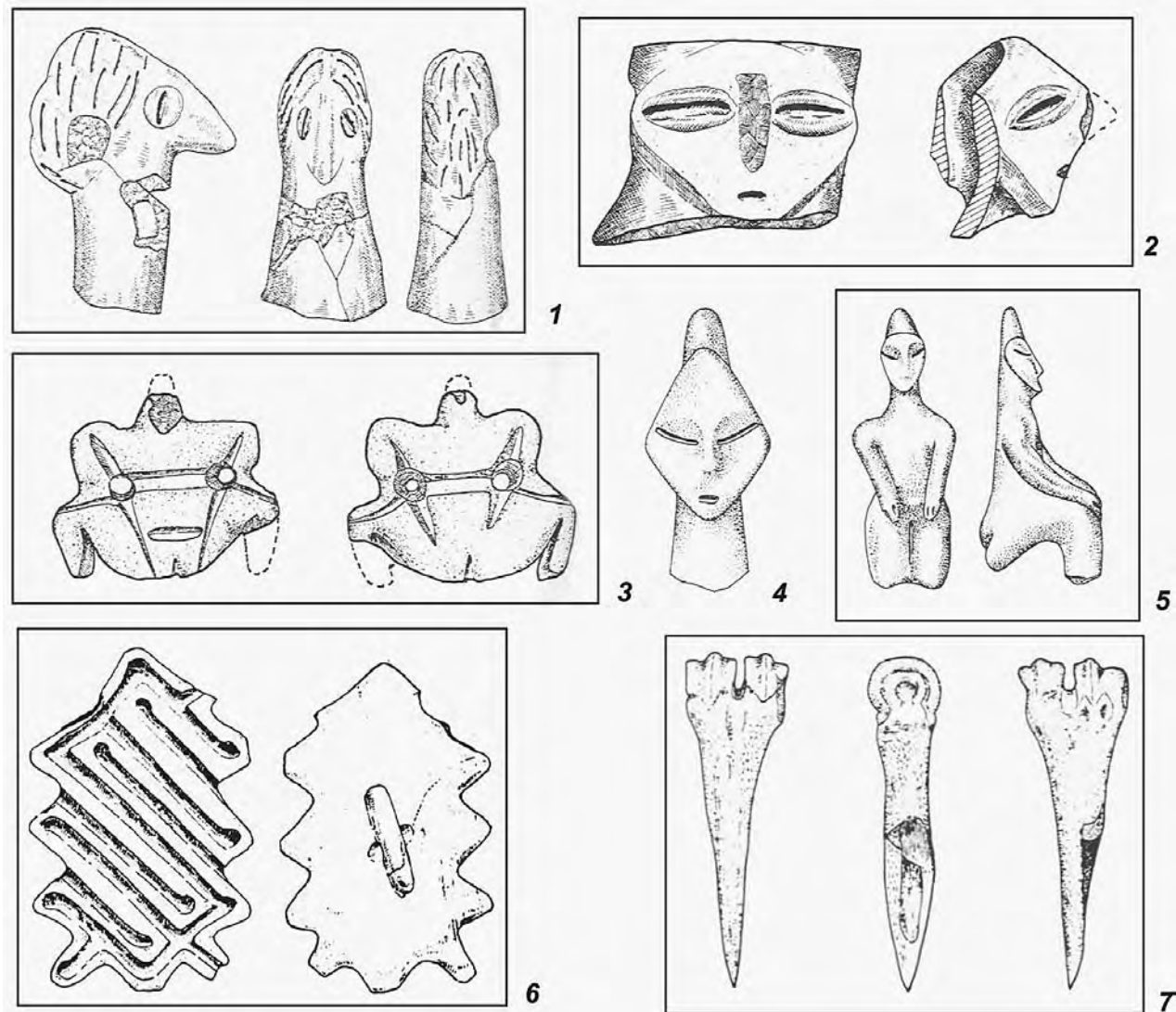


Fig. 1. Examples of figurines and tools (from Gimbutas, Winn, and Shimabuku 1989), measurements: height, width in centimeters: (1) head with coiffeur (from “shrine” of Achilleion IV), baked clay, 6.1, 4.6; (2) face mask (with “coffee-bean” eyes) on rim shard (Achilleion IV), baked clay, 3.4, 2.9; (3) polished black “greenstone” frog (Achilleion I), 3.2, 2.9; (4) face mask (removable) on stand (Achilleion III/IV), mask: 3.8, 3.0, stand: 5.9, 2.0, baked clay; (5) seated figure (male god?), head reconstructed (Achilleion IV) 5.2, 3.7, baked clay; (6) labyrinthine alabaster seal or mini-game board with handle for suspension (Achilleion III), 6.3, 3.9; (7) bone awl (Achilleion III) 6.5, 2.3. COTSEN INSTITUTE OF ARCHAEOLOGY, UCLA. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

eyes (fig. 1: 1, 2, 4, 5), suggests that they were easily recognizable symbols standing for a kind of cultural association. Some of them also may symbolize a household cult of regeneration (fig. 1: 3).

Gimbutas’s analysis has been the subject of controversy and is part of an ongoing debate that has been summarized by Richard Lesure. Nevertheless, her ideas captured the popular imagination and led some feminist writers to proclaim that once God was a woman.

THE CONTRIBUTION OF ACHILLEION

The rich recovery of material culture provides an opportunity to look at how life at Achilleion worked—in some ways quite sophisticated and elaborate for the mid-seventh to mid-sixth millennia B.C., without even considering the symbolism embedded in the ubiquitous and challenging figurine assemblage. For example, a raw material, obsidian, was used systematically for small cutting blades over the eight hundred years of settlement, possibly be-

cause it holds a sharp cutting edge. The source of this volcanic glass is the island of Melos in the Cycladic group, some 300 kilometers away. Transporting raw materials from afar required considerable effort, which endows them with extra value. Although it is not known what the Achilleion villagers offered in return, one can infer that planning, organization, and a long-term procurement strategy (or strategies) were successfully in operation—a certain and exciting example of the abilities and social dynamics of the villagers.

One of the goals of this excavation was to locate a pre-pottery Neolithic level, which had been reported when Dimitrios Theocharis, the late dean of Thessalian prehistory, tested the site in 1961. The evidence from the lowest Achilleion I levels (c. 6500 B.C.), however, always included pottery. The absence of this pre-pottery horizon at Achilleion suggests that the first settlers probably were not a local population but rather agriculturalists from elsewhere who brought with them the knowledge of pottery making and fully domesticated plants and animals—the Neolithic triad. Based on the pottery styles, and present knowledge of plant and animal domestication, these first settlers could have been from Anatolia or the Near East, who arrived with maritime traders or colonists or both, as suggested by Catherine Perlès and Kostas Gallis. Chronology is an essential issue in prehistory because there are no written records. Thus the forty-two calibrated radiocarbon dates from Achilleion, tied to the development of an Early to Middle Neolithic village, is a contribution in and of itself, one which will reverberate in terms of this time period in Greece and throughout the Balkans for some time to come.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Gallis, Kostas I. "The Neolithic World." In *Neolithic Culture in Greece*. Edited by George A. Papathanasopoulos, pp. 23–37. Athens, Greece: Goulandris Museum of Cycladic Art, 1996.
- Gimbutas, Marija. *The Goddesses and Gods of Old Europe*. London: Thames and Hudson, 1974; Berkeley: University of California Press, 1982.
- Gimbutas, Marija, Shan Winn, and Daniel Shimabuku. *Achilleion: A Neolithic Settlement in Thessaly, Greece, 6400–5600 B.C.* Monumenta Archaeologica, no. 14. Los Angeles: UCLA Institute of Archaeology, 1989.
- Lesure, Richard G. "The Goddess Diffracted: Thinking about the Figurines of Early Villages." *Current Anthropology* 43, no. 4 (2002): 587–610.

Perlès, Catherine. *The Early Neolithic in Greece: The First Farming Communities in Europe*. Cambridge World Archaeology. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 2001.

ERNESTINE S. ELSTER

LAST HUNTERS AND FIRST FARMERS ON CYPRUS

The Mediterranean islands produced some of the most sophisticated ancient cultures in the world. Nonetheless, archaeologists know relatively little about the islands' early prehistory. There is scant evidence that most were occupied before the Neolithic period, the economic transition from mobile hunting and gathering to domestic food production and sedentary ways of life. The traditional paradigm was that the Mediterranean islands were late recipients of Neolithic colonists, who imported complete Neolithic "packages," consisting of domesticated plants and animals and a sedentary lifestyle, but left few material linkages to their homelands. Many researchers believed that the Neolithic on the islands was little more than a footnote within the broader Neolithic world. New research, however, is altering this view substantially. A focus of these studies has been the eastern Mediterranean island of Cyprus, where investigations are dramatically fueling the debate about when and why the island was occupied.

PRE-NEOLITHIC HUNTERS

With few exceptions, there are limited data supporting pre-Neolithic occupation on virtually any of the Mediterranean islands. Claims for earlier occupations are unsubstantiated. Then came the discovery of Akrotiri Aetokremnos ("Vulture Cliff") in Cyprus (fig. 1), which documented an occupation at c. 10,000 B.C. calibrated. This small collapsed rock shelter ranks as the earliest well-documented human presence on any of the insular Mediterranean islands. Aetokremnos not only is the oldest site on Cyprus, but also, and more controversially, it is associated with a huge assemblage of the endemic and extinct Cypriot pygmy hippopotamus. More than 500 individual hippos are present, as are smaller numbers of other animals. The evidence suggests that humans were instrumental, at least in part, in finalizing the extinction of these unique animals.



Fig. 1. Overview of Akrotiri Aetokremnos. This site is located on the steep sides of the cliffs in the center of the photograph. COURTESY OF ALAN H. SIMMONS. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

While there are numerous Pleistocene fossil sites in Cyprus and other Mediterranean islands, these animals have not been associated with humans. Skeptics of Aetokremnos dispute such a connection, but a careful reading of the evidence strongly supports the direct association of pygmy hippos with cultural activities. When all aspects of Aetokremnos are examined, the most parsimonious explanation is cultural in nature. A small group of humans could have been the trigger to eradicate remnant hippo populations who were suffering ecological stress due to climatic change and thus were on the verge of extinction.

Aetokremnos is significant for several reasons. First, it firmly establishes a human presence on Cyprus in the early tenth millennium B.C., making it one of the earliest occupied Mediterranean islands. Here the distinction made by John Cherry between

“occupation” and “colonization” is important, as Aetokremnos appears to represent a relatively short-lived (about five hundred years or less) occupation rather than an actual colonization episode. Second, Aetokremnos has ramifications for how islands are occupied, indicating that Neolithic technology was not necessary. Third, Aetokremnos is one of the very few sites anywhere in the world dating to the Pleistocene-Holocene boundary that shows a direct relationship between extinct megafauna and human hunters. Finally, Aetokremnos has challenged research paradigms on many of the Mediterranean islands concerning the nature of archaeological data. For many years scholars believed that the islands were too impoverished to have supported hunter-gatherer populations. The archaeological “signature” of such groups, however, is quite ephemeral, and it is now clear that small sites, such as Aetokremnos, have been ignored for far too long.

NEOLITHIC FARMERS

Although many of the Mediterranean islands have Neolithic occupations, most archaeologists believed that these first colonists were relatively late, ceramic-bearing Neolithic peoples. They arrived from the mainland and developed somewhat isolated and in many ways “impoverished” insular cultures compared with their Levantine or Anatolian neighbors. Cyprus was little different, except that the Cypriot Neolithic is the most developed and oldest of any on the Mediterranean islands and has an aceramic component. It was during the Aceramic Neolithic that Cyprus actually was colonized.

The Aceramic Neolithic in Cyprus is termed the “Khirokitia culture” after the type site for the period, a large and substantial agricultural settlement. During the Khirokitia culture, lasting from c. 7000 to 5000 B.C., there were few Levantine or Anatolian parallels, and overall it often was viewed as less sophisticated than its mainland counterparts. This is expressed by an unrefined chipped-stone technology and typology, by the continuance of circular structures rather than a transformation to rectangular ones, and by limited evidence of substantial ritual or symbolic behavior. Khirokitia peoples settled in various locations, but major communities were situated within 10 kilometers of the Mediterranean Sea.

These colonists apparently arrived on an island with few resources; certainly the endemic fauna no longer existed. They introduced a limited number of domesticated plants and animals, including caprines, pigs, and apparently wild deer, presumably for hunting. Oddly cattle were conspicuously absent until the Bronze Age, despite their occurrence in Neolithic contexts on the mainland and on other Mediterranean islands. The Khirokitia culture is followed, after an apparent chronological gap, by the Ceramic Neolithic (the Sotira culture). While this is a pattern similar to that on the mainland, the Sotira culture also is often characterized as relatively non-descript.

Until the discovery of Aetokremnos, the Khirokitia culture represented the first occupation of Cyprus. Aetokremnos presented a chronological dilemma, in that it is some three thousand years earlier and there is little evidence to suggest that it was ancestral to the Khirokitia culture. Perhaps those responsible for Aetokremnos chose not to participate in the tumultuous changes associated with the Neo-

lithic revolution on the mainland and simply decided to leave for uncharted but nearby territory. They could have been generalized late Natufian or Early Neolithic (Pre-Pottery Neolithic A [PPNA]) people who arrived on an unoccupied island, found residual herds of a unique fauna, hunted them into extinction, and then left. But they did not forget Cyprus. It is here that new research has made Aetokremnos more plausible and added to the complexity of the Cypriot Neolithic. These investigations, which must be evaluated not only in a Cypriot context but also within a broader perspective assessing the transmission of a Neolithic “package” from the mainland, have documented an earlier component to the Aceramic Neolithic. They also suggest much more complex economic strategies than previously believed. In particular there is now evidence of cattle.

These findings revolve around three newly studied sites. Two coastal occupations, Parekklisha Shillourokambos and Kissonerga Mylouthkia, predate the Khirokitia culture, with radiocarbon determinations of c. 8000 B.C., if not earlier. These discoveries extend the Aceramic Neolithic on Cyprus to a period roughly contemporary with the early mainland Pre-Pottery Neolithic B (PPNB) and has been termed the “Cypro-PPNB.” Both sites share artifactual similarities with the Levant and contain complex features, including wells. Significantly neither is a large village of the type typically associated with the Cypriot Neolithic. Of particular importance is the documentation of limited quantities of *Bos* (cattle) at Shillourokambos, thereby placing this important economic species firmly within the Early Neolithic of Cyprus.

The third site is Ais Yiorkis, a small non-village locality. It is significant for several reasons, including its location in an upland rather than a coastal setting; the presence of a technologically refined chipped-stone assemblage; and especially its economic implications, because limited numbers of *Bos* have been found, similarly to Shillourokambos. Unlike Shillourokambos and Mylouthkia, Ais Yiorkis appears to date to the early Khirokitia culture, although additional radiocarbon determinations are required to resolve its chronological placement.

SIGNIFICANCE

What does this research mean to the early prehistory of both Cyprus and other Mediterranean islands?

First, it is now known that people were in Cyprus much earlier than has been suspected and that the island could support a primarily hunting adaptation. Second, this research unfolds a story of an economically sophisticated Neolithic adaptation. Not all early settlements were restricted to the coastal areas of Cyprus, nor were they all villages. Cattle have been found at two nontypical sites, indicating an economic dichotomy selecting against keeping them in villages. The cattle from Ais Yiorkis and Shillourokambos also may have ritual significance; certainly there is considerable evidence on the mainland for ritual treatment of cattle during the Neolithic. Was there a similar reverence for these animals in Cyprus? Finally, these investigated sites apparently contain limited architecture; such localities previously have not been accorded much attention on the Mediterranean islands. This is significant because it is now apparent that small, limited-visibility sites often contain far more substantial and diverse materials than was anticipated.

In summary, Cyprus clearly was a Neolithic "colony" far earlier and longer than researchers initially believed, and at least during the earliest Neolithic (the Cypro-PPNB) close relationships were maintained with the Levantine mainland. It also is apparent that principal economic animals, including cattle, were under enough human control to be transported by sea to Cyprus during the Neolithic. The island can no longer be considered an isolated cultural backwater of the Neolithic world. From at least the Late Epipalaeolithic, Cyprus, with its strategic Mediterranean location, was a component in a world on the cusp of the Neolithic revolution.

See also **Copper Age Cyprus** (vol. 1, part 4); **Bronze Age Cyprus** (vol. 2, part 5).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Cherry, John F. "The First Colonization of the Mediterranean Islands: A Review of Recent Research." *Journal of Mediterranean Archaeology* 3, no. 1 (1990): 145–221.
- . "Pattern and Process in the Earliest Colonization of the Mediterranean Islands." *Proceedings of the Prehistoric Society* 47 (1981): 41–68.
- Held, Steve. *Pleistocene Fauna and Holocene Humans: A Gazetteer of Paleontological and Early Archaeological Sites on Cyprus*. Studies in Mediterranean Archaeology, no. 95. Jonsered, Sweden: Paul Åströms Förlag, 1992.
- Knapp, A. Bernard, with Steve Held and Sturt Manning. "The Prehistory of Cyprus: Problems and Prospects." *Journal of World Prehistory* 8, no. 4 (1994): 377–453.
- LeBrun, Alain, Sophie Cluzan, Simon Davis, Julie Hansen, and Josette Renault-Miskovsky. "Le néolithique pré-céramique de Chypre." *L'anthropologie* 91 (1987): 283–316.
- Patton, Mark. *Islands in Time: Island Sociogeography and Mediterranean Prehistory*. London: Routledge, 1996.
- Peltenburg, Edgar, et al. "Agro-Pastoralist Colonization of Cyprus in the 10th Millennium bp: Initial Assessments." *Antiquity* 74, no. 286 (2000): 844–853.
- Simmons, Alan. *Faunal Extinction in an Island Society: Pygmy Hippopotamus Hunters of Cyprus*. New York: Kluwer Academic-Plenum Publishers, 1999.
- . "Of Tiny Hippos, Large Cows, and Early Colonists in Cyprus." *Journal of Mediterranean Archaeology* 11 (1998): 232–241.
- Stanley-Price, Nicholas. *Early Prehistoric Settlement in Cyprus: A Review and Gazetteer of Sites, c. 6500–3000 B.C.* BAR International Series, no. 65. Oxford: British Archaeological Reports, 1979.
- Swiny, Stuart, ed. *The Earliest Prehistory of Cyprus: From Colonization to Exploitation*. Boston: American Schools of Oriental Research, 2001.
- Todd, Ian, ed. *Vasilikos Valley Project 6. Vol. 1, Excavations at Kalavassos Tenta*. Studies in Mediterranean Archaeology 71:6. Göteborg, Sweden: Paul Åströms Förlag, 1987.

ALAN H. SIMMONS



TRANSITION TO FARMING IN THE BALKANS

FOLLOWED BY FEATURE ESSAYS ON:

<i>Obre</i>	240
<i>The Farming Frontier on the Southern</i>	
<i>Steppes</i>	242

The nature of the transition from foraging to farming in southeastern Europe is the subject of considerable debate among archaeologists. It is not possible to draw a neat distinction between the argument for adoption and even innovation of agricultural practices by local foragers and the establishment of farming communities by immigrants. New data suggest that the widely accepted model of Neolithic colonization by makers of painted pottery from early farming communities in Greece and Anatolia may not hold true. Pottery and domesticates found in contexts associated with indigenous hunter-gatherers indicate that Mesolithic foragers may have played an important role in the adoption of the Neolithic economy.

The Balkans make up a complex geographic region in the shape of triangular peninsula with a wide northern border, narrowing to a tip as it extends to the south, embedded in southeastern Europe. The Turkish word *balkan*, which means “woody mountain,” was introduced in the fifteenth century to name a mountain in northern Bulgaria. It was adapted quickly to the more general area of the mountain ranges between the Adriatic and the Black Seas. The term “Balkan Peninsula” was first used in the nineteenth century to designate this

area. We use the term “Balkan” today in cultural and political nomenclature, but it also is appropriate in denoting a concrete geographical and historical region.

In the northeast and north, the Balkans are exposed to the steppe regions of the Ukraine and to the Carpathian Basin. The Black, the Aegean, the Mediterranean, and the Adriatic Seas surround them in the east, south, and the southwest. The straits of the Bosphorus and the Dardanelles in the southeast are a natural gateway between the Balkans and Anatolia and beyond to Asia. In the northwest, the valley of the Danube and the flat Pannonian plain connect it to central Europe. Proceeding north from Greece into the central and northern Balkans, one moves from a dominantly Mediterranean and sub-Mediterranean environment into an increasingly Continental one. Mountains divide the region into small units, in which distinct ethnic groups have been able to sustain themselves. They also subdivide every district into vertical ecological zones, ranging from more valuable lowland farming areas to less valuable wooded or rocky uplands. This variety of ecological niches supported different cultures in close proximity to one another.

THE MESOLITHIC ROOTS OF THE BALKAN NEOLITHIC

By the beginning of the Boreal period (c. 8000 B.C.), the environment of the Balkans was similar to that of today. The region was populated with hunter-gatherer groups, but while their presence in central and northern Europe is well documented, only a thin settlement pattern is observable in the Balkans. Mesolithic sites are unequally distributed throughout the region, and some clusters are reported along the Aegean seacoast as well in Thessaly, the Dinaric Alps in the Adriatic, the Ionian hinterland, and along the Danube in the northern Balkans. It has been hypothesized that the Mesolithic social system comprised exogamous and territorial bands economically based on common access to resources. Indeed, the conclusion often drawn is that large parts of the region were completely uninhabited during the Early Postglacial period, and the absence of Mesolithic habitation from many areas has been accepted as a fact by numerous scholars.

The initial appearance of Neolithic communities, characterized by tell type sites in Thessaly, therefore was linked to the farming communities that were believed to have migrated from the Near East and colonized the southern Balkans. It became broadly accepted that immigrating farmers brought all the knowledge and skills of farming, with cultivation removing many of the risks and uncertainties, allowing accumulation and redistribution and thus making sharing undesirable.

In this orthodox model, the transition to farming in the Balkans was related to intrusive agricultural communities originally from Anatolia that established Neolithic settlements, from which they gradually colonized the entire region. Thus, the microregion settled first by Anatolian migrants, and identified as the primary center of "Neolithization" in Europe, corresponds with the distribution of "preceramic" and "monochrome" pottery occupations in the active floodplains of Thessaly on the southern tip of the Balkans. The colonization of the entire region is believed to relate to a subsequent wave of northward migration that was recognized in the dispersal of pottery with white or red painted decoration in the northern and eastern Balkans and of Cardial-Impresso pottery along the Adriatic coast.

The prevailing assumption of many archaeologists has been that fully formed Neolithic communities spread northward along a dynamic agricultural frontier zone. This model suggests a steady expansion of people into Europe, driven by population growth resulting from agricultural surpluses and the displacement or absorption of the sparse hunter-gatherer populations. Archaeologists often have drawn maps of the distribution of Early Neolithic sites and dates that have depicted a continuously moving Neolithic frontier in which there was no prolonged chronological overlap between hunter-gatherers and the onset of early farming. The lack of evidence of hunter-gatherer sites in the Balkans led to speculation that an extremely sparse Mesolithic population would have allowed farmers to expand and colonize the region rapidly.

It is evident, however, that the present distribution of Late Mesolithic and Early Neolithic sites has been very much affected by long-term and catastrophic processes that restructured the geomorphologic features and reshaped the relief of the Balkans in the Holocene. In plotting sites on a general map of southeastern Europe and in hypothesizing spatial discontinuity between Mesolithic and Neolithic settlements, we must take into consideration the fact that the patterns available to research are the outcomes of consecutive cycles of alluviation, erosion, and sedimentation; the rise in Mediterranean sea level; and modern anthropogenic impacts on the landscape. Many coastal and riverside sites still remain unavailable, and others have been erased entirely from the surface as the result of intensive present-day agricultural activities. The distinction between Neolithic and Mesolithic sites also has been based on general typological categorizations that were used to define the cultural sequences of hunter-gatherers and farmers. This dichotomy maintains the perception that farming practices could be embedded only in typologically determined Neolithic "cultural" contexts. From this point of view it is impossible to ignore the fact that the spatial distribution of Early Neolithic settlements may not reflect the actual spread of farming practices and changes in subsistence strategies.

The idea that early farming in southeastern Europe spread through its adoption by local foragers, rather than through migration, is still not accepted widely. The Balkans often are excluded as an area of

primary domestication of wild einkorn (*Triticum boeoticum*), although on the tip of the Balkan Peninsula present-day habitats for wild einkorn exist. Among the archaeobotanical remains collected from the Mesolithic deposits in the Theopetra cave in Greece, wild einkorn wheat has been reported. Although einkorn wheat appears to be less common than two other founder cereals, emmer wheat (*Triticum dicoccum*) and barley (*Hordeum vulgare*) in the Levantine Neolithic, this is certainly not the case in the Balkans, where much richer remains of einkorn wheat are available. Einkorn prevails over emmer wheat in the number of pure hoards, retaining its principal role throughout the Neolithic and even later periods. In emphasizing the importance of new subsistence practices introduced by first farmers, such as replacement of collected seeds by cultivated cereals, we should not overlook that the Neolithic pollen records in the Balkans do not reflect forest clearing and the creation of patches of cultivated land. Thus, we should not exclude the possibility that indigenous foragers were more involved in the establishment of farming communities in the Balkans than archaeologists admit.

THE “NEOLITHIZATION” OF THE BALKANS

A revolution in cuisine occurred when Neolithic villagers started to use pottery. Since V. Gordon Childe put forward the idea that pot making is a virtually universal characteristic of Neolithic communities as well an indicator of its cultural identity and origin, the appearance of pottery in the Balkans has been considered to mark the dispersal of Early Neolithic cultures from Anatolia. In the absence of precise dating evidence and without the retrieval of botanical and faunal remains, the assessment of any particular site in the Balkans as being of Neolithic age traditionally has been made on the presence of pottery fragments.

From this perspective, after the Anatolian immigrants, who either did not use pottery or made monochrome pottery, gained their initial toehold on the floodplains of Thessaly, subsequent northward expansions were correlated with regional pottery distributions assumed to reflect two streams of migrating farmers. The first was defined by the dispersal of white or red painted pottery that marked the inland migration toward the southern

Carpathian Basin, which eventually became the Starčevo-Körös-Criș complex of Neolithic cultures. The second migration was linked to the Cardial-Impresso pottery dispersal, restricted to the eastern Adriatic and Ionian coastal area. In one microregion recognized in the central Balkans in Bosnia, the two streams overlapped. The combination of painted and Cardial-Impresso pottery identified in the Early Neolithic settlement deposits at Obre was interpreted as a composite Starčevo-Impresso culture.

The validity of this model of northward migration and colonization by farmers has been questioned. Emphasis has been laid on the growing evidence of pottery deposited in the so-called aceramic settlement layers, which strongly contradicts the concept of a Pre-Pottery Neolithic in Greece. Some researchers, however, continue to interpret the transition to farming in Greece as having taken place through the arrival of the first occupants, bringing with them the full Neolithic “package” of domesticated plants and animals but not pottery. The idea of a demographic explosion in the floodplains of the rivers and lakes in Thessaly first occupied by immigrant farmers and a subsequent rapid migration toward the northern Balkans also remains speculative. Indeed, it took twelve hundred years to colonize the nearest floodplains in Macedonia and another three hundred years to reach the Danube in the northern Balkans.

The traditional concept of white painted ware as the earliest Neolithic pottery of the central and eastern Balkans also has been called into question. Several clusters of well-stratified sites exist, where layers of unpainted pottery—with monochrome and Impresso decoration—are separated stratigraphically from those of white painted ceramics. Such monochrome and Impresso assemblages in Poljanica, Orlovec, Koprivec, and Obhodov in the eastern Balkans have been related contextually to microliths, trapezes, and rudimentary agriculture. In the central and northern Balkans forty-six sites with early ceramics have been identified. Essentially, archaeologists found that the monochrome and Impresso pottery at these sites is embedded contextually in semisedentary or sedentary hunter-gatherer occupations in the region, such as at Lepenski Vir and Padina in the Danube gorges. The pottery assemblages consist principally of monochrome ceramics of simple forms and limited Impresso tech-

niques. Ninety percent of the pots are undecorated, and the decorations on the rest consist of impressed ornaments, shaped by fingertips and fingernails, the edges of freshwater shells, and awls.

Unfortunately, most of the Iron Gates pottery assemblages are still scantily published. In interpreting the Mesolithic cultural phases at the Lepenski Vir I and II sites, the excavator pointed out that monochrome pottery fragments had been found lying on the floors of fifteen Mesolithic trapezoidal buildings. In the initial reports, the Lepenski Vir pottery was discussed out of its context, owing to its presumed inconsistency with a model of hunter-gatherer technology that excluded ceramic manufacture; instead, it was attributed to vertical displacement of Neolithic artifacts and post-depositional disturbance. Later research confirmed, however, that the pottery indeed was associated with the famous stone statues and other decorated sculptures, altars, and artifacts ornamented with various symbols and deposited on the floors of the same buildings.

Most intriguing is the correlation of complete pots found in situ, stone statues and sculptures, and groups of newborns and children buried below the floors in the rear of certain buildings. A remarkable symbolic structure was preserved in centrally positioned trapezoidal building 54. A pot with spiral ornaments, illustrating local decorative principles and symbolism, was placed deliberately in what was identified some years ago as the sanctuary of a sun deity. It was associated with the burials of two newborns, red and black sculptures, and an altar.

It has been hypothesized that early ceramics at Lepenski Vir indicate increased interaction between the two social networks, farming communities outside the gorge and the hunter-gatherer community inside, which led to the collapse of the latter group. Alternatively, it is possible that the pots served as containers for foods that appeared in the context of a dietary shift from aquatic resources to terrestrial resources. As stable isotope analyses have shown, terrestrial resources probably included a major agricultural component, despite the fact that domesticates have not been documented in these contexts.

In contrast to the prevailing assumption that pottery is a marker of settled Neolithic life, it is possible to argue to the contrary. We can say instead

that the pottery at Lepenski Vir was a new technology and a novel medium used for visual display, whether as serving dishes for the living or in sacrificial rituals to dead children buried beneath the buildings. This pottery acted as an integral part of a set of symbols consisting of standardized settlement architecture, location of burials and burial practices, stone sculptures and statues, and mortars and altars, which, taken together, reflect an ideological integration and define a cultural identity of non-farming communities in the region.

A similar pattern of early monochrome and Impresso pottery dispersal has been seen in Ionian and Adriatic coastal areas. In some contexts, it was connected with hunter-gatherer stone tool assemblages. This ornamental principle evidently was of long duration, as painted pottery did not exist in coastal regions before the Middle Neolithic. Although no direct evidence of pre-Neolithic pottery production is available in the Balkans, we can take into account the presence of some unbaked clay masses as well as certain associated monochrome, primitive, and slightly baked pottery documented in a Late Mesolithic context in the Theopetra cave. We also have mentioned the typologically and chronologically well grounded hypothesis that Thessalian ceramic techniques were developed on the spot and were not part of the baggage of immigrating farmers.

Not many radiocarbon dates are available for the Balkans, to anchor the irregular distribution of monochrome and Impresso pottery chronologically. The dates we have show the evident contemporaneity of the contexts, whether in the southern or northern Balkans or in Ionian or Adriatic coastal areas. These styles of pottery occurred over a very broad area but in a narrow time span in the Balkan interior and along the Ionian and Adriatic coasts during the second half of the seventh millennium B.C. Probability distributions of the radiocarbon dates from Lepenski Vir, Donja Branjevina, and Poljanica in the northern and eastern Balkans, Sidari on the island of Corfu, and Vela Spilja on the eastern Adriatic coast reflect striking parallels with one another and with early pottery-using levels at Sesklo and Achilleion in the southernmost part of the Balkans. No chronological gap is evident between the first appearances of pottery in Greece and pottery in the Balkans. The contextual attachment of mono-

chrome and Impresso pottery to the hunter-gatherer world and its widespread distribution contradict the traditional models of centers of so-called Neolithization and subsequent migration toward the margins of the Early Neolithic world.

The basic premise of this discussion is that the dispersal of farming in southeastern Europe was embedded in the existing regional, pre-Neolithic social and historical structures. Dispersal was effected by the network of social relationships and contacts and by traditional socially and culturally defined principles of inter-generation and inter-community transmission of knowledge. Through contact in the course of local and regional migrations, people were the agency for such transmissions, for the incorporation of such innovations as domesticates and pottery, and for changing the structural framework of the social context.

THE EVIDENCE FROM DNA

Evidence from the tracing of lineages in mitochondrial DNA (mtDNA) from extant European populations supports the evidence from pottery distributions of a strong indigenous component in the transition from foraging to farming in the Balkans. It is believed that most modern European mtDNA was formed neither through Early Upper Palaeolithic colonization by modern humans nor as a result of Neolithic immigration from the Near East. Instead, mtDNA is thought to have been distributed via Late Pleistocene movements within Europe itself. It has been suggested that less than 10 percent of extant lineages date back to the initial colonization of Europe by anatomically modern humans and that perhaps 10–20 percent of lineages arrived during the Neolithic. Most other lineages seem to have arrived during the Middle Upper Palaeolithic and expanded during the Late Upper Palaeolithic. The Neolithic contributions to extant mtDNA vary regionally, with incoming lineages in the minority, compared with the situation of the indigenous Mesolithic. This is true even in those regions where pioneering colonization of uninhabited areas has been postulated. Regional analysis shows that the Neolithic contribution to mtDNA of incoming lineages was about 20 percent in southeast, central, northwest, and northeast Europe. In Mediterranean coastal areas, it was even lower than 10 percent, similar to the percentage in Scandinavia.

Although this research is still in its infancy and the subject of some controversy, the available mtDNA evidence indicates that immigrating farmers played a relatively subsidiary role in the introduction of farming to the Balkans. It appears instead that populations that had been resident in the area for thousands of years were not replaced or driven out by immigrating farmers from Anatolia. The archaeological boundary that reflects the isolation of the Adriatic coast is evidence of the dominant social and ideological continuity, which correlates well with the low percentage (about 10 percent) of incoming Near Eastern genetic lineages. Elsewhere in the Balkans, the higher contribution of Near Eastern genetic stock (about 20 percent) may correlate with circulation of people and goods over long distances, which accelerated the social and ideological restructuring of hunter-gatherer communities.

THE ESTABLISHMENT OF FARMING COMMUNITIES IN THE BALKANS

After these early traces of indigenous ceramic innovation and adoption of Neolithic characteristics by hunter-gatherers, a more robust and consolidated group of Neolithic communities developed in many parts of the Balkans during the final quarter of the seventh millennium and the first part of the sixth millennium B.C. Marked differences exist between the settlements found in the southern Balkans and those in the central and northern Balkans. The former sites are more closely related to contemporaneous sites in Greece, while the latter reflect a clear adaptation to a temperate, Continental environment. Named for type sites and geographical features, the southern complex embraces cultures known as Kremikovci and Karanovo I, while the northern complex comprises the Starčevo-Körös-Criș cultures.

In contrast to the earlier distribution of monochrome and Impresso pottery in both interior and coastal areas, a clear distinction between the Adriatic coast and the Balkan interior emerged at this time. While red or white painted pottery was adopted throughout most of the Balkans, a Cardial-Impresso ornamental technique came into use during the final centuries of the seventh millennium B.C. along the Ionian and Adriatic coasts, in a band that extended 30 kilometers into the Adriatic hinterland. Neither painted pottery technology nor ac-

companying artifacts arrived on the eastern Adriatic coast. The pattern may suggest selective processes of integration of the “Neolithic package” into existing hunter-gatherer social systems and subsistence strategies.

The Kremikovci–Karanovo I Complex. Starting around 6200 B.C., numerous substantial Neolithic settlements appeared along the rivers of western and southern Bulgaria and adjacent territories. These floodplain communities adopted some, but not all, of the architectural techniques in use in Greece, building houses from timber and clay but without stone foundations or mud bricks. Their sites comprised clusters of small, rectangular, one-room or two-room houses that were repaired and rebuilt over time to form mounds, or tells, of superimposed habitation. Later houses were built in line with the floor plans of earlier ones, indicating continuity of occupation over several centuries.

Two of the most important Early Neolithic sites in this area are found at Chevdar in western Bulgaria and Karanovo in south-central Bulgaria. At both these sites, farming communities chose locations close to good alluvial soils for the cultivation of einkorn and emmer wheat, barley, peas, beans, and vetch. At Chevdar, palaeobotanical analysis of large, homogeneous samples points to a sophisticated crop-processing technique. Among domesticated animals, sheep and goats were the most important, with cattle and pigs in subsidiary roles. In the lowest layer of the Karanovo tell (Karanovo I), rectangular houses were about 7–8 meters on a side and often contained ovens and grindstones.

The pottery of the Kremikovci–Karanovo I complex consists of first white and then red painted ceramics in a variety of vessel forms. In addition to pottery vessels, Neolithic peoples began making figurines and models of human beings, animals, furniture, and buildings. Of greatest importance are the anthropomorphic figurines found from Macedonia north to southern Hungary. Many represent women; others have no recognizable sexual features, although they are seldom explicitly male. Although archaeologists are not certain of the purpose of these figurines, Douglass Bailey has suggested that they were part of the ceremonies by which the social units reflected by the architecture of these settlements were created and maintained.

Burials from Kremikovci–Karanovo I sites are relatively scarce. Many of them are of children or infants. Inhumation burials are found commonly under house floors or close to buildings, sometimes in rubbish pits. It is difficult to generalize about the nature and quantity of grave goods. When grave goods are present, they generally consist of ceramic vessels, bone tools and ornaments, and flint tools.

The Starčevo–Körös–Criş Complex. The earliest Neolithic in the central and northern Balkans is defined by the Neolithic settlements clustered into the Starčevo–Körös–Criş complex. It consists of groups known as “Starčevo” in the central Balkans and “Körös” in the Carpathian Basin. Coarse barbotine (a rough application of clay that then is streaked with a finger or a stick, so that parallel ridges are raised) and impressed wares dominate in both groups. In contrast, red monochrome and painted pottery items are insignificant components in the development of these groups.

Orthodox interpretations of the southeastern European Neolithic transition still maintain that part of the population of these southern Balkan communities migrated northward separately and established the Criş group in enclaves in Transylvania, Romania. The primary Criş colony was recognized at Gura Baciului and defined by red monochrome pottery and white dotted decoration. The concept of a Starčevo culture was introduced in the 1920s when the type site at Starčevo, about 20 kilometers east of Belgrade, was excavated. In the 1930s Harvard University and the American School of Prehistoric Research became involved in research at this site. At the same time, excavations started at the site of Kotacpart in Hungary. Pottery similar to that at Starčevo was found at other sites located along the Körös River in Hungary, representing a group that became known as the Körös culture. A lack of well-stratified sites still favors typological ceramic sequences as a basic tool in establishing the Early Neolithic chronological framework in the region.

This grouping takes into account typological similarity and variation in pottery styles, but it also is driven by the recognition of modern political territorial boundaries. Thus, “Starčevo culture” relates to the Early Neolithic sites in Serbia, whereas “Körös” is applied to those groups located in southeastern Hungary and “Criş” to Early Neolithic sites

in Romania. Radiocarbon dating shows that the Starčevo-Körös-Criș complex appeared as early as 6200 B.C. and lasted until the second half of the sixth millennium B.C., indicating a chronological overlap with the Early Neolithic sites of Thessaly, Macedonia, and southern Bulgaria and with the early *Linearbandkeramik* settlements of the Carpathian Basin.

It is not just pottery distribution that marks the Starčevo-Körös-Criș complex. High-quality “Balkan” flint, also termed “yellow-spotted” flint, represents the most abundant raw material within the complex. Although a clear picture of the source of this raw material is still lacking, there are indications that certain regions of northeastern Bulgaria are the most probable locations for its origin. At other sites, local raw materials were used, particularly in more northern areas. At the Körös site of Endrőd 39, however, a hoard contained 101 blades made from Bulgarian flint.

The Starčevo agricultural settlements in the valleys are situated on riverbanks or low terraces, set on mounds of alluvial sand and levees that rise above marshes. The settlement patterns are considered to be “tactical” in the sense that locations were occupied according to short-term needs rather than long-term strategies. There is little spatial differentiation within the settlements. Starčevo sites contain rich remains of cultural material and food residues, but with thin stratigraphic layers and enigmatic evidence for permanent structures. Quadrangular houses are reported in the latest phase, but some researchers have claimed that pits that form the main archaeological features at Starčevo sites are pit dwellings or pit huts.

The best example of a Starčevo settlement is the late seventh and early sixth millennia B.C. camp at Divostin in Serbia. The dwellings at Divostin were round or elliptical in plan. Some had concentrations of stones in the middle of their floors, which would have supported posts holding up the roofs of pit houses. In some buildings, small hearths were built. The Divostin pit houses were not very large, measuring no more than 4–5 meters in diameter. They were no deeper than 0.5 meters. A variety of ceramics, flint tools, animal bones, and anthropomorphic figurines were deposited in the dwellings. In the Danube gorges, Starčevo settlements frequently were stratified above Mesolithic habitation layers,

and the houses maintained a uniform trapezoidal form and size as well the spatial structure of the settlement. The pattern is in marked contrast to the long-term tell settlements and surface houses found at this time in the southern Balkans.

Emmer and einkorn wheat, six-row barley, and peas have been found at Starčevo settlements, but a lack of attention to seed retrieval has minimized empirical support for hypotheses on the nature of plant exploitation. It is broadly accepted that agricultural practice may have been minimal at this time. There are many Starčevo sites, on the other hand, whose animal bone assemblages have been analyzed in detail. Domesticated sheep and goats prevailed in stockbreeding, but cattle and pigs did not play a significant role in the subsistence patterns of the Starčevo and Körös cultures. The habitats were less well suited for breeding sheep and goats than cattle, as the wild ancestor of the cattle, the aurochs (*Bos primigenius*), used to live here in large herds. Some researchers have argued that there was local domestication of cattle and pigs, but faunal data are equivocal at best on this point. An alternative pattern of animal use was identified in the Danube gorges sites and on Transylvanian sites. There, a small variety of cattle predominated among the domesticated animals, whereas sheep and goats seemed less important. Pigs were almost entirely absent. At Körös sites in the levee and back swamp habitats of southern Hungary, fish bones are especially common, indicating a substantial aquatic component in the diet.

The burials were dispersed in habitation areas across the region. Skeletons are found in a crouched position, with almost no grave offerings. An auroch’s head with horn cores is associated with some burials, and various animal bones were placed in others. A large pit dug between the two buried people, with no grave goods and filled with a large amount of bones of dogs and wild horses, may provide indirect evidence of ritual or competitive feasting.

CONCLUSION

The transition from hunting and gathering to agriculture in the Balkans cannot be explained simply in terms of Neolithic immigrants originating in Anatolia and pushing steadily northward and westward, displacing indigenous foragers. Instead, it appears

that there was an initial period during which pottery production and incipient agriculture were broadly and rapidly disseminated among pre-Neolithic communities during the second half of the seventh millennium B.C. Subsequently, Early Neolithic communities with strong local roots appeared in the final centuries of the seventh millennium B.C. In the southern Balkans, substantial settlements, such as Chevdar and Karanovo I, showed signs of long-term occupation and a strong commitment to agriculture, whereas in the central and northern Balkans, settlements of the Starčevo-Körös-Criş complex appear to have been shorter-term habitations with a broader spectrum of subsistence resources.

See also **Iron Gates Mesolithic** (vol. 1, part 2); **Crops of the Early Farmers** (vol. 1, part 3); **Obre** (vol. 1, part 3); **The Farming Frontier on the Southern Steppes** (vol. 1, part 3).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Ammerman, Albert J., and Luigi L. Cavalli-Sforza. *The Neolithic Transition and the Genetics of Populations in Europe*. Princeton, N.J.: Princeton University Press, 1984.
- Bailey, Douglass W. *Balkan Prehistory: Exclusion, Incorporation, and Identity*. London: Routledge, 2000.
- Bonsall, Clive, Gordon T. Cook, Rosemary Lennon et al. “Stable Isotopes, Radiocarbon, and the Mesolithic-Neolithic Transition in the Iron Gates.” *Neolithic Studies*, no. 7. *Documenta Praehistorica* 27 (2000): 119–132.
- Borić, Dusan. “The Lepenski Vir Conundrum: Reinterpretation of the Mesolithic and Neolithic Sequences in the Danube Gorges.” *Antiquity* 76 (2002): 1026–1039.
- Budja, Mihael. “The Transition to Farming in Southeast Europe: Perspectives from Pottery.” *Neolithic Studies*, no. 8. *Documenta Praehistorica* 28 (2001): 27–48.
- Cavalli-Sforza, Luigi L., and Francesco Cavalli-Sforza. *The Great Human Diasporas: The History of Diversity and Evolution*. Translated by Sarah Thomas. Reading, Mass.: Addison-Wesley, 1995.
- Gallis, J. K. “The Neolithic World.” In *Neolithic Culture in Greece*. Edited by George A. Papathanassopoulos, pp. 23–37. Athens: Nicholas P. Goulandris Foundation, 1996.
- Garašanin, Milutin, and Ivana Radovanović I. “A Pot in House 54 at Lepenski Vir I.” *Antiquity* 75 (2001): 118–125.
- Kosse, Krisztina. *Settlement Ecology of Early and Middle Neolithic Körös and Linear Pottery Cultures in Hungary*. BAR International Series, no. 64. Oxford: British Archaeological Reports, 1979.
- Kyparissi-Apostolika, Nina. “The Mesolithic/Neolithic Transition in Greece as Evidenced by the Data at Theopetra Cave in Tessaly.” *Neolithic Studies*, no. 7. *Documenta Praehistorica* 27 (2000): 133–140.
- Perlès, Catherine. *The Early Neolithic in Greece: The First Farming Communities in Europe*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 2001.
- Renfrew, Colin. “Archaeogenetics: Towards a Population Prehistory of Europe.” In *Archaeogenetics: DNA and the Population Prehistory of Europe*. Edited by Colin Renfrew and Katie Boyle, pp. 3–12. McDonald Institute Monographs. Cambridge, U.K.: McDonald Institute for Archaeological Research, 2000.
- Richards, Martin, and Vincent Macaulay. “Genetic Data and the Colonization of Europe: Genealogies and Founders.” In *Archaeogenetics: DNA and the Population Prehistory of Europe*. Edited by Colin Renfrew and Katie Boyle, pp. 139–151. McDonald Institute Monographs. Cambridge, U.K.: McDonald Institute for Archaeological Research, 2000.
- Richards, Martin, Vincent Macaulay, E. Hickey et al. “Tracing European Founder Lineages in the Near Eastern mtDNA Pool.” *American Journal of Human Genetics* 67, no. 5 (2000): 1251–1276.
- Sykes, Bryan, and Colin Renfrew. “Concepts in Molecular Genetics.” In *Archaeogenetics: DNA and the Population Prehistory of Europe*. Edited by Colin Renfrew and Katie Boyle, pp. 13–22. McDonald Institute Monographs. Cambridge, U.K.: McDonald Institute for Archaeological Research, 2000.
- Todorova, Henrieta. “Der balkano-anatolische Kulturbereich vom Neolithikum bis zur Frühbronzezeit.” In *In the Steps of James Harvey Gaul*. Vol. 1, *James Harvey Gaul In Memoriam*. Edited by Mark Stefanovich, Henrieta Todorova, and Harald Hauptmann, pp. 27–54. Sofia, Bulgaria: James Harvey Gaul Foundation, 1998.
- van Andel, Tjeerd H., and Curtis N. Runnels. “The Earliest Farmers in Europe: Soil Preferences and Demic Diffusion Pathways.” *Antiquity* 69 (1995): 481–500.
- Willis, Katherine J., and Keith D. Bennett. “The Neolithic Transition—Fact or Fiction? Palaeoecological Evidence from the Balkans.” *Holocene* 4 (1994): 326–330.
- Zohary, Daniel, and Maria Hopf. *Domestication of Plants in the Old World: The Origin and Spread of Cultivated Plants in West Asia, Europe, and the Nile Valley*. 3d ed. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2000.

MIHAEL BUDJA

OBRE

Two stratified Neolithic and Chalcolithic sites at Obre, 65 kilometers northwest of Sarajevo in Bos-

nia, are located on the bank of the Trstionica tributary a few kilometers from the Bosna River, the main prehistoric highway in the western Balkans. Twenty-two radiocarbon dates have established that the sites were occupied between 6230 and 4780 B.C. Obre's position between the Adriatic Sea and the central and eastern Balkans placed it at the center of a long-distance exchange dynamic encompassing the entire Balkan Peninsula and the central Mediterranean.

Two seasons of archaeological research at Obre in the 1960s resulted in excavations totaling 928 square meters at two locations (Obre I and Obre II). The first small-scale excavations took place in 1963–1965; more excavations were completed in 1967–1968 by a joint project of the National Museum of Sarajevo and the University of California at Los Angeles. The principal investigators were Alojz Benac and Marija Gimbutas. The main objective of the research was to establish the genesis and the chronology of the Late Neolithic Butmir culture, and Obre was chosen because of its ideal vertical stratigraphy. Although the first-year fieldwork was intended as a search for the Butmir village cemetery, Early and Middle Neolithic settlements were found instead. As the well-preserved stratified sequence, including the remains of houses, burials, artifacts, and organic materials, was revealed, the importance of Obre as a key site in interpreting the Neolithic and Chalcolithic cultural continuum in western Balkans became apparent.

Obre I (dated 6230–5990 to 5300–4900 B.C.) represents the Early and Middle Neolithic chronological sequence and the succession of Starčevo-Impresso and Kakanj cultures. Obre II (dated 5310–4910 to 4780–4440 B.C.), about 250 meters upriver, opened a wider perspective for the study of the genesis of Butmir culture. At its earlier level, Obre II consists of a continuum of Kakanj culture followed by a clear typological break in pottery production and in the pattern of domestic animal exploitation. The pig replaces transhumant animals (sheep and goats) in popularity. Cattle, however, are the primary domesticate throughout each level. The change from seasonal transhumance to more settled patterns of animal husbandry perhaps indicates a shift toward a more intensive economy involving more localized site catchments utilization for general resources. The later levels at Obre II

showed no signs of depositional hiatus and represent the sequential phases of Late Neolithic Butmir culture.

The earliest occupation at Obre is believed to have been by populations that paralleled each other's arrival into the microregion: one population came from the Pannonian Plain on the north, the territory of Starčevo culture, and the other population entered from the Adriatic coast on the south, the territory of Cardium-Impresso culture. Migrations have been traced in overlapping distributions of specific pottery shapes. Starčevo culture was characterized by the altars, three- or four-footed vessels and pottery with incised and painted ornaments and barbotine surface treatment, whereas the pottery of Impresso-Cardium culture was monochrome and had impressed ornaments shaped by the edges of marine shells. In the earliest settlement the complete Neolithic package of domesticated animals (cattle, sheep, goats, and pigs) and the main cultivated cereal crops (emmer and einkorn wheat, field peas, and lentils) was recorded. The earliest radiocarbon date from the site shows the existence of a farming settlement in central Bosnia in about 6230–5990 B.C. (the earliest level at Obre I).

The Middle Neolithic village at Obre I is hypothesized to correlate with the genesis of local Kakanj culture, marked by stylistic changes in pottery: the painted and Cardium-Impresso pottery found at earlier levels disappears, barbotine surface treatment continues, and the use of monochrome ceramic becomes dominant. Rhytons, vessels with four zoomorphic legs supporting a red-painted oval recipient with a large handle fixed to the top of the bowl, replace the altars found at previous levels. Almost identical vessels were found on the Adriatic and Ionian coast, in the Dinaric Alps, and in Thessaly, supporting the idea that rhytons may have been prestige items connected with salt distribution in the Balkans. Evidence indicates that copper was known at this stage of settlement, and the presence of obsidian, probably from Lipari Island, indicates contacts with the central Mediterranean.

The sequential settlement deposit at Obre II was attributed to Late Neolithic Butmir culture. The continuity in the carbon-14 dating sequence and in cultural tradition at Obre has suggested to some researchers that there was a hiatus between Obre I and Obre II. Obre II exhibits a complete dis-

appearance of highly popular pottery forms from the phases represented at Obre I, and the second location offers the sudden appearance of a fine black burnished pottery completely devoid of tempering as well as pottery having a thin red design on black or gray painted ceramics. The sand tempering of the previous period (Obre I) was replaced by the use in the coarser ceramics and for certain polished ware of an intentionally crushed limestone temper. However, the Butmir pottery is characterized by spiral and band-painted and incised ornamental motifs. The most exquisite are globular vases painted with red or black bands and decorated with interconnected spirals, in relief or incised, which are white or red incrustated. Particularly characteristic is the combination of different spiral patterns at Obre II. The heterogeneous stylistic elements and the presence of imports among Obre II artifacts implies intra-Balkan and trans-Adriatic exchange networks and long-distance connections, evidence that may be connected to the change in economy marked by the shift in the composition of the domestic herd toward the less-transhumant animals.

Obre II comprises eight habitation horizons of the Butmir culture embedded in the time span 5310–4910 to 4780–4440 B.C. Architectural remains consisted of solid rectangular aboveground houses; several had apsidal (semicircular) ends and sacrificial structures. Houses were built of massive vertical posts supporting heavy walls of wattle and daub. They were up to 15 meters long, and some were subdivided by an internal clay wall into two rooms. A domed beehive-shaped oven with a clay platform in front and an ash pit, including a pot for collection of ashes, stood by the wall in the middle of the large room. Clusters of clay and wooden containers for storage of grain, together with a variety of pots and loom weights, were also found in the rooms.

Twenty-five human burials were identified within the habitation area at Obre I and II; only two of those were adults. Most of the infant burials were of stillbirths. Infants and children were buried in front of houses in a contracted position; none of their burials showed any remains of a pit, and there were no grave goods found at children's burial places. The adults, by contrast, were buried in a contracted position (crouched body rests on the left [most commonly] or right side) and were accompa-

nied by grave goods such as painted pottery, an altar, and personal ornaments. A small stone mound marked one of the adult burials.

See also The Farming Frontier on the Southern Steppes (vol. 1, part 3).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Benac, Alojz. "Prelazna zona" [The transitional zone]. In *Praistorija jugoslavenskih zemalja* [The prehistory of Yugoslav countries]. Vol. 2, *Neolitsko doba* [Neolithic period], pp. 363–470. Centar za balkanološka ispitivanja. Sarajevo: Akademija nauka i umjetnosti Bosne i Hercegovine, 1979.
- . "Obre I: Neolitsko naselje starčevačko-impreso i kakanjske kulture na Raskršću" [Obre I: The Neolithic settlement of Starčevo-Impresso and Kakanj culture at Raskršće]. *Glasnik Zemaljskog muzeja Bosne i Hercegovine (Arheologija)* 27/28 (1973): 5–103.
- . "Obre II: Neolitsko naselje butmirske grupe na Gornjem polju" [Obre II: The Neolithic settlement of Butmir culture at Gornje polje]. *Glasnik Zemaljskog muzeja Bosne i Hercegovine (Arheologija)* 26 (1971): 5–300.
- Gimbutas, Marija. "Chronology of Obre I and II." *Wissenschaftliche Mitteilungen des Bosnisch-Herzegowinischen Landesmuseums* 4, heft A, Archäologie (1974): 15–35.
- . "Conclusions." *Wissenschaftliche Mitteilungen aus Bosnisch-Herzegowinischen Landesmuseums* 4, heft A, Archäologie (1974): 357–358.
- Sterud, Eugene L. "Prehistoric Population of the Dinaric Alps: An Investigation of Interregional Interaction." In *Social Archaeology: Beyond Subsistence and Dating*. Edited by C. L. Redman et al., pp. 381–406. Studies in Archaeology. New York: Academic Press, 1978.

MIHAEL BUDJA

THE FARMING FRONTIER ON THE SOUTHERN STEPPES

North of the Black and Caspian Seas lies the Pontic-Caspian grassland, the western tongue of the vast steppe that covers the center of the Eurasian continent. North of the grassland was, eight thousand years ago, an equally vast forest. The precise location of the border between the forest and the steppe has shifted with changes in the world's climate, but since the end of the last Ice Age the lowland basins of the Black and Caspian Seas have been arid grass-

lands or deserts fringed on the north by upland forests. The transition zone, the forest-steppe, has always been among the most productive and pleasant environments in Europe because of its mixture of forest and meadow, sufficient rain but not too much. Both hunter-gatherers and early farmers were attracted to the forest-steppe. They came face to face in the forest-steppe of the East Carpathian piedmont, northwest of the Black Sea, about 5800–5600 B.C.

It was a meeting that utterly changed both ways of life because it provided the means for humanity to profit from the Eurasian grasslands: domesticated cattle and sheep. Cattle and sheep were grass processors. They soon spread into plains that formerly were grazed only by wild horses and antelope, and they converted grass into leather, milk, yogurt, cheese, meat, marrow, and bone—the foundation for life and wealth. The steppe region began to witness the emergence of societies committed to stockbreeding while the forest-steppe northwest of the Black Sea remained the home of increasingly prosperous and productive mixed farmers. An economic-cultural frontier formed between them. It remained the most clearly defined and contrastive cultural frontier in prehistoric Europe for about twenty-three hundred years, 5600–3300 B.C.

FIRST FARMERS: THE CRIȘ CULTURE

The people who brought the first domesticated cattle and sheep into the Pontic-Caspian region were immigrants who belonged to the Criș culture. They were the leading edge of a broad movement that had snaked northward out of Greece and Macedonia into the temperate forests of the Balkans and the Carpathian Basin beginning around 6300 B.C. Small groups of Criș farmers moved into the mountains of Transylvania and spilled over the eastern Carpathian ridges into the steep valleys of the Seret and Prut Rivers about 5800 B.C. Others moved up the Seret and Prut from the Lower Danube Valley, avoiding the arid steppe lowlands near the Black Sea, where rainfall agriculture was impossible. In the East Carpathian piedmont these groups created a northern and a southern variant of the East Carpathian Criș culture, which survived until about 5300–5100 B.C.

Archaeologists have found at least thirty Criș settlement sites in the East Carpathian piedmont. Most were built on the second terrace of a river,

overlooking the floodplain; some were on steep-sided promontories (Suceava) or high ridges (Sakarova I). The more substantial homes had sunken floors and contained a kitchen area with a domed clay oven; lighter structures were built on the surface and had an open fire in the center of the single room. Settlements consisted of a few families living in perhaps three to ten simple dwellings, surrounded by agricultural fields, gardens, plum orchards and pastures for the animals. Ceramic vessels were handmade by the coiling method, and included a variety of fine wares with polished red-brown surfaces—tureens, round-bodied jars, bowls with carinated sides, and cups on pedestals. Two copper beads were found at the Criș site of Selishte, dated 5700–5500 B.C. (6830±100 B.P.), among the oldest metal artifacts in Europe. No Criș cemeteries are known nor is it known what the Criș ordinarily did to commemorate their dead.

The clay used to make Criș wall plaster and pottery contains impressions of seeds and chaff from cultivated wheat (emmer, einkorn, and spelt varieties), barley, and peas. Emmer and einkorn made up 70 percent of the identified wheats from the Criș site of Sakarovka I, and wheat composed two thirds of the identified grains. Wheat and peas were not native to southeastern Europe—like sheep, they were exotics, domesticated in the Near East, carried to Greece by immigrant farmers, and propagated through Europe from Greece. Flints included many blades 5 to 10 centimeters in length with edges showing “sickle gloss” from cutting grain; the blades were slotted into curved antler sickle handles. Most of the meat in the diet was from cattle and pigs, with red deer a close third, followed by some domesticated sheep—a distribution of species that suggests a largely forested environment.

The Criș people were different from the local foragers in many ways: they made different kinds of flint tools (large blade tools versus the foragers’ microlithic tools); they lived in different places (on the better-drained soils of the second terrace, convenient for farming, while foragers preferred the floodplain, convenient for fishing); their polished stone axes were different; their economy was different; their pottery was quite different; and their tastes were different. Criș pioneers ate mutton, the meat of an animal (*Ovis aries*), foreign to southeastern Europe. The local foragers never acquired that

taste. Some archaeologists have speculated that the East Carpathian Criș culture might have been an acculturated population of local foragers who had adopted a farming economy, rather than immigrant pioneers from the Danube Valley. This is unlikely given the numerous similarities in material culture to the Danubian Criș culture and the differences from the local foragers. But in any case, no one believes that the Criș people were genetically “pure,” whatever that means. The important point is that the people who lived in Criș villages were *culturally* Criș in the material signs of their identity, and therefore almost certainly in nonmaterial signs like language as well. And the Criș *culture* came, without any doubt, from the Danube Valley. Territorially, Criș farmers never penetrated east of the Prut-Dniester watershed. East of the Prut a substantial population of foragers became the filter through which stockbreeding economies were introduced to Pontic-Caspian societies farther to the east.

FORAGERS BECOME FARMERS: THE BUG-DNIESTER CULTURE

At the Soroki II site in the forest-steppe zone of the Dniester Valley, a camp of Mesolithic foragers, without pottery, was covered by a Neolithic level, with pottery. The Mesolithic level (2) was dated about 6500–6200 B.C., and the Neolithic level (1) about 5700–5500 B.C. Some of the ceramic vessels in the top layer looked very much like Criș pots—round-bodied, narrow-mouthed pots on a ring base. But they were made locally, using clay tempered with sand and chopped vegetal matter, and most of the pots in this level were quite different from Criș in shape and decoration. The clay contained seed imprints of cultivated cereals—emmer and einkorn, the same suite of cereals cultivated by the Criș culture. Level 1 also yielded bones of domesticated cattle and pigs, apparently borrowed like the imported wheat from the Criș culture. In the time interval between levels 2 and 1 Criș farmers appeared in the hills to the west, and the foragers of the Dniester Valley began to emulate them, making pottery, cultivating domesticated cereals, and keeping domesticated cattle and pigs. In the South Bug Valley, east of the Dniester, there are many sites with similar flint tools and ceramics. Together, the Dniester and South Bug sites define the Bug-Dniester culture, the earliest native Neolithic culture northwest of the Black Sea. It began around

5700–5600 B.C. and survived until about 5100–4900 B.C.

The Bug-Dniester foragers borrowed domesticated cattle and pigs and cultivated cereals almost as soon as Criș farmers made them available. Criș ceramic vessel shapes, if not potters’ methods, were copied as well. Why? What was so attractive about the Criș diet and even the pottery vessels in which it was served? There are three possibilities. One is that the pre-Neolithic Bug-Dniester foragers were running out of good hunting and fishing grounds and were already looking for ways to increase the amount of food that could be harvested within their hunting territories—an economic explanation. But forager population densities do not seem to have been so high, and the abundant tree pollen in Criș-period soils indicates that the Criș pioneers had little impact on the forest around them, so their arrival did not greatly reduce deer populations. The second possibility is that the foragers were impressed by the continuous abundance of food available for feasting and festivals among Criș farmers. Socially ambitious foragers might have begun to cultivate gardens and raise cattle to sponsor similar public feasts among their own people, even making serving bowls like those used in Criș villages—a political and ideological explanation, and one that also explains why Criș pots were copied. The third possibility is that there was some kind of natural disaster in or near the Bug-Dniester region that suddenly created a crisis in both the ecological and political arenas, pushing the old foraging system to its limits at just the moment when Criș farmers arrived. That sounds highly improbable, but curiously enough, an enormous natural disaster might have shocked the region, possibly at about the right time.

The geologists William Ryan and Walter Pitman have argued that the Black Sea was just a large brackish lake with a surface level about 100 meters beneath that of the Aegean Sea until sometime between about 6300–5600 B.C. At some point between those dates the saltwater of the Aegean Sea broke through the Bosphorus Strait, previously just a long bay open to the Aegean, and poured into the Black Sea basin. If the breakthrough was sudden it would have created a fifty-year-long waterfall twelve times bigger at its peak than Niagara, until the Black Sea rose to the level of the Aegean. Some geologists think the breakthrough might have happened earli-

er or developed more gradually, although radiocarbon dates from the bottom of the Black Sea do suggest that its salinity and shell species changed between about 6300 B.C. (with Caspian-type shells) and 5600 B.C. (with Aegean-type shells). Before the breakthrough, what is now the northern part of the Black Sea would have been a broad grassy plain bisected by the Crimean Mountains and crossed by large rivers. If this plain was submerged suddenly about 5800–5600 B.C., the foragers who lived there would have retreated into the hills, creating a crisis that perhaps led to the adoption of a new economy.

The Bug-Dniester people adopted only selected parts of the Criș cultural pattern. In Criș settlements domesticated animals contributed 70 to 80 percent of the bones in kitchen middens. In Bug-Dniester settlements in the Dniester Valley, the earliest Neolithic levels contained about 24 percent domesticated animal bones, while middle-phase sites had about 44 percent and late sites 55 percent domesticated animals. Domesticated animals exceeded hunted wild game only in the latest phase. Bug-Dniester cooks did not offer mutton, and Bug-Dniester bakers initially did not use Criș-style saddle querns to grind their grain; instead they used small, rhomboidal stone mortars of a local Late Mesolithic style. They preferred their own chipped flint axes to the smaller polished stone Criș axes. Their smaller chipped flint tools were also different. Their pottery was quite distinctive. The “local” look of most Bug-Dniester pottery might reflect the influence of indigenous Pontic-Caspian forager ceramic traditions of Dnieper-Donets I type that had developed about 6000–5800 B.C. in the Dnieper Valley, to the east.

THE LINEAR POTTERY AND CUCUTENI-TRIPOLYE CULTURES

During 5300–5200 B.C. a new farming culture, the Linear Pottery culture, moved into the East Carpathian piedmont from southern Poland, gradually replacing the Criș culture. The cultural frontier between Linear Pottery and late Bug-Dniester did not disappear—it just moved a little to the east, from the Prut to the Dniester. Linear Pottery sherds were found in late Bug-Dniester sites (Soroki V in the Dniester, Basikov Ostrov in the South Bug Valley) and Bug-Dniester sherds at the Linear Pottery site of Novi Rusești. The frontier was porous to peo-

ple—no fortifications or other signs of conflict are known, and the sherd exchanges imply direct contact—but the cultures on either side remained quite different.

Around 5100–4900 B.C. a new kind of material-culture complex appeared in the East Carpathian piedmont: the Cucuteni-Tripolye culture (called Cucuteni in Soviet Romania and Tripolye in Ukraine, but a single prehistoric complex). Most of the new customs that defined the Cucuteni-Tripolye culture (house styles, pottery styles, and domestic rituals centered on female figurines) were copied from the Boian culture of the Lower Danube Valley, and indicate a strong new connection with that region. One result was a growing trade in copper bracelets, rings, and beads made from Balkan copper. In the Prut Valley, where Criș and Linear Pottery farmers had lived the longest, elm and lime trees, desirable for timber house construction, declined while open fields and meadows expanded. A stable form of village-based intensive farming developed in an increasingly open and cultivated landscape. Tripolye villages spread eastward into the Dniester and South Bug Valleys in today’s Ukraine. The Tripolye A town of Mogil’noe IV near Gaiovoron, among the first established in the South Bug Valley, had more than one hundred buildings and covered 15 to 20 hectares, with a population of perhaps four hundred to seven hundred. The Bug-Dniester culture finally disappeared. Late Bug-Dniester traditions had little or no visible influence on early Tripolye house types, rituals, or tools—although some of the earliest Tripolye sites in the South Bug Valley (Lugach, Gard 3) display some Bug-Dniester decorative motifs on their ceramics. The frontier between Cucuteni-Tripolye societies and those visibly derived from local Mesolithic forager cultures shifted eastward to the watershed between the South Bug and the Dnieper.

THE DNEIPEP-DONETS CULTURE

Many sites in the Dnieper Valley were excavated in the 1950s during dam construction below the Dnieper Rapids. Sites around the rapids such as Igren 8, Pokhili, and Vovchok showed the same sequence of cultures: Mesolithic at the bottom; then an Early Neolithic culture called Surskii with shell-tempered pottery and microlithic flint tools (beginning perhaps around 6200 B.C.); then Dnieper-

Donets phase I (DDI) with comb-impressed and vegetal-tempered pottery (dated perhaps 6000–5400 B.C.); and on top, Dnieper-Donets II (DDII) with sand-tempered pottery with “pricked” or “stabbed” designs and large flint blade tools (dated 5400–4300 B.C.). The shift from hunting and fishing to herding economies occurred in the Dnieper Valley during the DDII period.

DDII is recognized by changes in pottery (larger, more decorated flat-based pots), flint tools (more large blades), cemeteries (the appearance of communal ossuary pits containing up to fifty skulls and fragmentary skeletons, with up to 170 individuals in a cemetery), the first use of metal ornaments (copper and even gold beads, imported through the Tripolye A culture), and the adoption of a new food-production economy. Domesticated cattle, pigs, and now even sheep were raised and eaten. Some DDII flint blades show “sickle gloss,” and one impression of a barley seed was found in a DDII clay pot, so there is a little evidence that might suggest cereal cultivation, but the evidence for agriculture is much less convincing than the evidence for stockbreeding. Domesticated cattle (averaging 25.7 percent of bones), imported sheep and goats (averaging 20.2 percent), and (wild?) horses (averaging 12.1 percent) were the dominant food animals at three DDII occupation sites in the Dnieper Valley.

Social hierarchy seems to have emerged at the same time. A few individuals now were buried with rare prestige objects: gold rings, copper ornaments, polished stone maces, and burnished plaques made of boar’s tusk. At the cemetery of Mariupol, one male was buried wearing forty tusk plaques sewn to his thighs and shirt, and numerous strings of shell and mother-of-pearl beads. He also had a polished porphyry four-knobbed mace-head, a bull figurine carved from bone, and seven bird-bone tubes. A child, one of the few buried at Mariupol, wore forty-one boar’s-tusk plaques and a cap armored with eleven whole boar’s tusks. The exceptional wealth of this child, and of others, hints at the inheritance of status. An elite seems to have emerged in the Dnieper-Azov steppes during DDII. It was defined partly by its access to exotic ornaments, including copper; partly by the display of indigenous signals of status (boar’s-tusk plaques, polished stone maces); perhaps partly by differences in the treatment of the body after death (exposed, or with buri-

al of only the skull, versus not exposed, with burial of the whole body); and perhaps partly by the possession and public sacrifice of domesticated animals.

THE SPREAD OF STOCKBREEDING

Stockbreeding spread very rapidly across the European steppes, sweeping from the Dnieper-Azov steppes eastward to the Volga-Ural region in one hundred to two hundred years. But then the diffusion came to an equally rapid halt. The cultures to the north, in the forest zone, remained foragers for another 2,500 years. The steppe cultures east of the Urals in northern Kazakhstan also stubbornly rejected stockbreeding for equally as long, until about 2500 B.C. An economic-cultural frontier emerged around 5000 B.C. at the forest-steppe boundary in the north and along the Ural River in the east, separating societies that owned animals from those that hunted them.

Domesticated animals were a new kind of wealth. They could be owned, stolen, traded, and offered as gifts or sacrifices. But the adoption of stockbreeding—and perhaps of some cereal cultivation, in the Dnieper Valley if not in the Volga—had different effects in different places. The region between the Dnieper Rapids and the Sea of Azov, the heart of DDII territory, had funeral rituals and pottery types different from those found on the middle Volga River between Saratov and Samara, the heart of the Khvalynsk culture. There was another kind of response in the drier southeastern steppes between the lower Don and the lower Volga, where the Orlovka culture used copper and kept some domesticated animals but did not have elaborate funerals or even cemeteries. And yet another response developed at the moister northern edge of the steppes, in the Samara River valley, where the Samara culture had its own distinct ceramic styles, cemeteries, and burial posture. One of the interesting things about the period from 5000 to 4500 B.C. is the variety of local adaptations to stockbreeding across the different river valleys of the Pontic-Caspian steppes.

Still, a few things were shared across large distances. The veneer of community appeared most clearly in a shared set of markers among local elites: copper beads and bracelets, boar’s-tusk ornaments, polished stone maces, and, curiously, bird-bone tubes (found in rich graves at both Mariupol and Khvalynsk). Boar’s-tusk plaques of exactly the same

type were found at the DDII cemetery of Yasinovatka and at S'yezzhe in the Samara Valley, about 400 kilometers to the east—as far as Rome is from Paris. Copper was widespread. The Khvalynsk I cemetery on the Volga, dated 5000–4500 B.C., contained 34 copper ornaments concentrated in 11 of 158 graves: copper wire rings, small copper beads, and round-sectioned spiral hoops. At least some of the copper came from Balkan Mountain ores, mined in the region of modern Bulgaria, probably traded through the Tripolye A culture. The polished stone mace was made in different forms in the Dnieper Valley (Nicol'skoye), the middle Volga (Khvalynsk), and the North Caspian region (Varfolomievka). But a mace is a weapon, and its wide adoption as a symbol of status suggests a change in the politics of power. Between 5000–4500 B.C. a new kind of social hierarchy based on the ownership of cattle and sheep (and possibly horses) became established in the Pontic-Caspian steppes.

Some have speculated that the first domesticated animals and copper in the western steppes could have been acquired from the cultures of the Caucasus Mountains or from Central Asia, rather than from the west as described here. These theories date from the 1950s, when a Central Asian source was popular, or the 1970s, when a Caucasian source was considered. But radiocarbon dates from the 1980s and 1990s show that the Eneolithic of the European steppes began much earlier than was previously thought, around 5400–5200 B.C. Although there were Neolithic and Eneolithic cultures in southern Central Asia (Djeitun) and in the southern Caucasus valleys (Shulaveri) at this date, no bridge or cultural connection linked these distant farming communities to the European steppes. Yet contact between Criş–Linear Pottery farmers and foragers of the Dnieper-Dniester zone is well documented archaeologically between 5800–5200 B.C., and trace elements in the copper from Khvalynsk suggest a Balkan source. Also, the cultivated cereals that appeared in Bug-Dniester sites and later in the Pontic-Caspian steppe river valleys composed a Balkan-Danubian crop suite (emphasizing emmer wheat and naked barley), not a Caucasian crop suite (emphasizing bread wheat, *T. aestivum*). A western source seemed therefore more likely based on data from the late twentieth century.

Wool sheep were introduced to the Eurasian steppes well after the period described here. Sheep covered with wool were mutants, bred for that trait, and it seems likely that they first appeared in Mesopotamia about 4000 B.C. The earliest direct evidence for woollen fabrics in the steppes or steppe borderlands is from about 3000 B.C., although wool sheep may have been present earlier. So the stockbreeding system described here was pre-wool—the only textiles were linens, made from flax. Wool sheep gave the steppe people textiles that shed water, took dyes very well, and could be used for tents, clothing, and trade goods. The age of wool quickly also became the age of bronze weapons, wagons, and copper mines in the steppes, a combination of commodities and technologies that would make steppe societies truly wealthy for the first time after about 3000 B.C. The social and economic foundation for this later wealth was established when Criş farmers appeared in the East Carpathian piedmont about 5800 B.C.

See also **Transition to Farming in the Balkans** (vol. 1, part 3); **First Farmers of Central Europe** (vol. 1, part 3); **Domestication of the Horse** (vol. 1, part 4).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Anthony, David. "The Opening of the Eurasian Steppes at 2000 B.C." In *The Bronze Age and Early Iron Age Peoples of Eastern Central Asia*. Vol. 1. Edited by Victor H. Mair, pp. 94–113. Washington, D.C.: Institute for the Study of Man in collaboration with the University of Pennsylvania Museum Publications, 1998.
- Lillie, Malcolm C. "Mesolithic and Neolithic Populations of Ukraine: Indications of Diet from Dental Pathology." *Current Anthropology* 37, no. 1 (1996): 135–142.
- Potekhina, Inna D., and Dmitriy Y. Telegin. "On the Dating of the Ukrainian Mesolithic-Neolithic Transition." *Current Anthropology* 36, no. 5 (1995): 823–826.
- Ryan, William, and Walter Pitman. *Noah's Flood: The New Scientific Discoveries about the Event that Changed History*. New York: Simon & Schuster, 1998.
- Telegin, Dmitriy Y., and Inna D. Potekhina. *Neolithic Cemeteries and Populations in the Dnieper Basin*. Translated from the Russian by V. A. Tikhomirov. Edited by J. P. Mallory. BAR International Series, no. 383. Oxford: British Archaeological Reports, 1987.

DAVID W. ANTHONY



SPREAD OF AGRICULTURE WESTWARD ACROSS THE MEDITERRANEAN

FOLLOWED BY FEATURE ESSAYS ON:

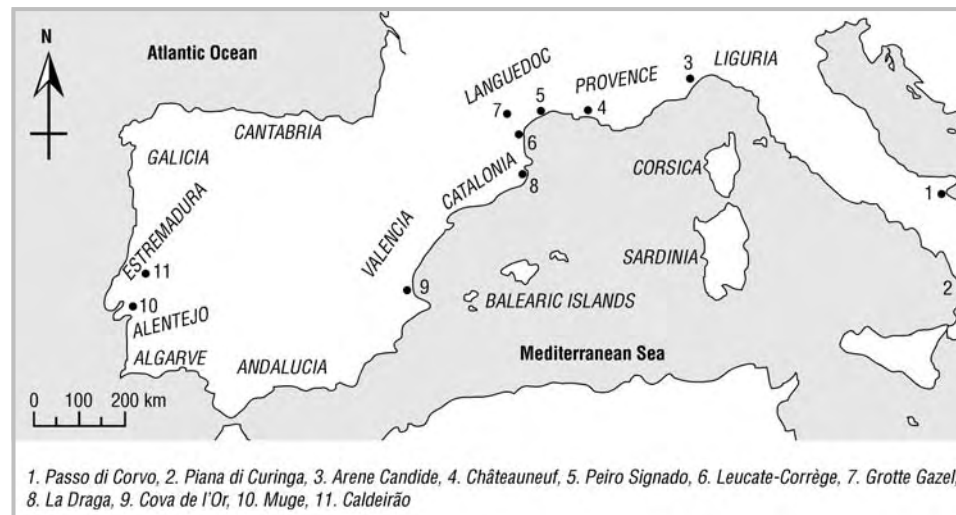
<i>Arene Candide</i>	253
<i>Caldeirão Cave</i>	255

The beginnings of agriculture in the western part of the Mediterranean basin (which includes Italy, southern France, and Spain as well as major islands, such as Sardinia, Corsica, the Balearics, and, traditionally, Portugal) are associated archaeologically with the start of the Neolithic period. The earliest agricultural sites are known to have appeared across the western Mediterranean around 5500 B.C. The environment at this time was not significantly different from today's, the Ice Age having ended c. 12,000 B.C., and the climate having gradually warmed to roughly its present state. It was a typical Mediterranean climate, characterized by hot, dry summers and wet winters. The western Mediterranean was populated largely by mixed forests of oak, lime, and elm in the lower altitudes, changing to fir at higher elevations. The current open, brushy landscape characteristic of the modern Mediterranean is the result of erosion from millennia of agriculture, which did not really take hold for a thousand years after its initial appearance. Deer, ibex, and boar roamed the region and were hunted widely.

The western Mediterranean is replete with limestone caves, as a result of the uplift of Jurassic and Cretaceous geological beds. It also has an abundance of clay deposits (important for making pot-

tery), with rich alluvial plains good for raising crops, separated by relatively dry uplands for hunting. With the melting of the Pleistocene glaciers, the sea levels in the western Mediterranean gradually began to rise. Flooded river valleys became rich coastal estuaries brimming with shellfish, fish, and waterfowl. Many Mesolithic (the last prehistoric period before the arrival of agriculture) archaeological sites are from estuarine shell middens. Middens are large piles of shells that sometimes contain artifacts and even burials left by prehistoric populations. Some of the largest in Europe are the Portuguese middens near the town of Muge in the Tagus valley. The rise in sea level had one additional consequence—it submerged sites. The sea level during the Early Neolithic was about 10 meters lower than it is now. A very few early coastal agricultural sites, such as Leucate-Corrège, just north of Perpignan in France, were discovered by dredging operations, but most undoubtedly have been lost.

After a century of excavation and study, we have a basic framework of knowledge regarding the spread of agriculture in the western Mediterranean. Identified sites tend to be primarily caves, although that probably stems from the fact that caves are visible features in the landscape (unlike open sites,



Selected sites in the western Mediterranean. ADAPTED FROM BARNETT IN PRICE 2000.

which are evident mostly by their artifact scatters). Pre-agricultural Mesolithic sites other than middens are mainly caves or rock shelters, where flaked stone tools typically are found with butchered remains of deer and boar. The tools are quite small, sometimes less than a centimeter in length, and geometrically shaped, with transverse arrowheads (the business end being a blade edge that cuts into the target). It is thought that the Mesolithic people who created these sites lived in nuclear family units. They tended to disperse to the highlands to hunt in the summer and then aggregate along the coasts for the winter.

These flaked stone tool forms did not disappear during the Neolithic, and it seems that many Mesolithic sites continued to be inhabited into the Early Neolithic at this critical transition phase. The Early Neolithic material complex most notably contains pottery, along with the earliest groundstone axes and other groundstone objects, such as bracelets. There is direct evidence of domesticated forms of wheat and barley as well as domesticated sheep. The appearance of sheep is confirmed by the presence in site deposits of their bones, which can be distinguished from remains of wild species, such as ibex. Evidence of domesticated cereals has been recovered as carbonized remains in ancient fire pits as well as the occasional grain impression in the wall of an Early Neolithic pot.

Excavation of numerous classic cave sites has helped archaeologists date and define the material culture of these first agricultural populations. The

ceramics are the most distinctive and informative. They were fired at low temperatures, without a kiln, and have distinct patterns of manufacture and decoration. A particular type of stamp-impressed early pottery, termed *Impresso*, was first identified from Arene Candide (5800–5300 B.C.) in Ligurian Italy. Other key cave sites with the more classic Cardial pottery are in the west, at Châteauneuf-les-Martigues near Marseilles (5750–5500 B.C.), La Grotte Gazel on the southern flank of the French Montagne Noir (4900–4830 B.C.), Cova de l'Or in Valencian Spain (5900–5300 B.C.), and Caldeirão in central Portugal (5900–5600 B.C.).

The earliest of early pottery, sometimes termed *Le Vrai Cardial* (true Cardial) is well made and highly burnished, and it is distributed broadly across the western Mediterranean; it may have been a trade good. Although only simple pyrotechnic methods were available to fire this pottery, which would have affected its hardness and durability, a great deal of labor went into manufacturing and decorating each vessel. The decorative style of these vessels is uniform, with a standard technological “recipe” of manufacture, showing a shared manufacturing tradition. Most important, many of these vessels have been carried over long distances. Later Cardial vessels have more regional styles, are less well made and decorated, and appear not to have been carried over short distances or used locally.

In addition to cave sites, some open-air sites have been excavated, indicating a diversity of settle-



Fig. 1. Example of Cardial-impressed pottery from eastern Spain, made by pressing the edge of the shell of the mussel *Cardium edule* into the wet clay. MUSEU ARQUEOLÓGIC MUNICIPAL CAMIL VISEDÓ MOLTO (ALCOI, ALICANTE/ESPAÑA). REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

ment, typically in small villages. In Italy, Passo di Corvo, a walled settlement, and Piana di Curinga, a village of wattle-and-daub huts, represent two such sites. In France the site of Peiro Signado sits on a hilltop near the coast, and Leucate-Corrège was a coastal site now submerged. The site of La Draga in Spain has evidence of wooden walkways similar to the classic Neolithic lake dwellings of Switzerland.

WHY DID AGRICULTURE SPREAD?

Agriculture appears to have spread through this area fairly quickly during the sixth millennium B.C. With the help of radiocarbon dating, it is possible to trace the rate of agricultural dispersal in the western Mediterranean. In 1971 Albert Ammerman and Luigi Cavalli-Sforza proposed a “wave of advance” of early agriculture of approximately 5 kilometers a year for this area, much faster than the rate for other parts of Europe. João Zilhão, a Portuguese prehistorian, later reexamined the dates for the western Mediterranean area and proposed that the rate was closer to 10 kilometers a year. This would mean that

agricultural societies spread from Italy to Portugal in just one hundred years.

There is good information about the possible mechanisms for the spread of agriculture in the Mediterranean basin. Boats have been discovered at Mesolithic sites, so people at this time could have traveled faster and over longer distances than by foot on land. Moreover, the landscape was not empty. The spread of agriculture could have been either helped or hindered by the existence of the pre-agricultural populations that already inhabited the Mediterranean estuaries and caves. Finally, the earliest agricultural communities in this area may not have been sedentary farming villages but rather communities using a combination of domesticated and wild foods. The arrival of agriculture in the western Mediterranean area certainly was accompanied by a period of rapid cultural and economic change that formed the foundation for subsequent prehistoric developments.

Theories of the spread of agriculture across the western Mediterranean have evolved from “ages” to “revolutions” and then to models of human economic and social behavior. For the most part, pre-agriculturalists are thought to have had an economy based on the hunting of animals and fishes and the gathering of shellfish, berries, seeds, roots, and other edible plants. This lifestyle is the basis for the term “hunter-gatherers.” Also known as “foragers,” they depended on the collection of foods from the natural environment. Early agriculturalists are seen as subsistence farmers or pastoralists, not highly productive but able to guard against difficult times by storing surplus or keeping herds. Still, the basic question concerning the adoption of farming by gathering societies or the migration of agricultural villagers persists.

The most promising of the models of the transition to agriculture build upon the concept of frontiers—zones that lie between groups with different economies or ethnic territories, across which people, goods, ideas, innovations, and conflicts pass. Frontiers where the economic strategies are mismatched, for example, between agriculturalists and hunter-gatherers, are the ones likely to move as one strategy replaces the other. Thus, frontier models seem to explain the agricultural transition in the western Mediterranean and elsewhere.

The Ammerman and Cavalli-Sforza “wave of advance” model mentioned earlier was one of the first frontier models, and the most basic. As a population-diffusion (migration) model, it proposed that agricultural settlements spread outward at a regular rate in a wave, similarly to a ripple moving across the surface of water. It was easy to model mathematically, yet could not accommodate important variables. The types of agriculture or hunting and gathering being practiced on either side of the agricultural frontier could easily affect the rate of agricultural spread as well as possible cultural resistance or receptivity. Social factors would have determined whether these groups interacted peacefully or through conflict. Geography, environment, climate, and transportation (such as boats) also could have influenced the rate of spread. Obviously, some of these factors contributed to the five- to tenfold inaccuracy of this model’s proposed dispersal rate in the Mediterranean.

Given the few data we have about these transitional agricultural societies, it is unlikely that any mathematical model, no matter how complex, can ever be tested. Archaeologists may never excavate even 1 percent of all the sites inhabited during this period. Most of the materials made and used were organic and have long since decayed and disappeared. Moreover, it is difficult to reconstruct the ways in which they might have been used by prehistoric peoples. Radiocarbon dating, the best technique we have for identifying contemporaneous sites, provides a statistical estimation accurate to about one hundred years at 64 percent likelihood. That time span represents roughly five generations of habitation, which makes it very difficult to relate to real people and the activities that produced particular sites.

There are alternate ways to improve our understanding of these sites. Researchers have used frontier descriptions as models to understand how agriculture might have spread across the western Mediterranean. This method has allowed archaeologists to incorporate more variables or even to lay predictive patterns over an actual rather than a theoretical landscape. By looking at real situations and the large-scale impacts of small-scale societies, we can gain a better idea of the potential underlying forces.

These ethnographic models derive mostly from studies of present-day small scale societies (band- or village-level societies), where it is assumed that such societies are more traditional and therefore somewhat like our prehistoric ancestors. These models have been used extensively to better understand how foragers and farmers might have interacted in the past, as agricultural economies were established. Exemplars of prestige exchange are based on studies of potlatching among populations along the northwest coast of America or on Polynesian prestige trade rings. Ideas about simple hunting-and-gathering groups come from studies of migratory groups in the Kalahari Desert of southern Africa and from interior Australia. Examples of aggressive agricultural populations similarly come from the study of twentieth-century Pacific societies or village agriculturalists of South America and Africa, whereas notions of simple farmers are taken from studies of “subsistence” farmers of Africa and elsewhere.

The nature of the societies on either side of the agricultural frontier greatly influenced the rapid transition in the western Mediterranean. Some scholars have viewed pre-agricultural populations as relatively simple family-sized groups, whereas others have seen them as more complex societies with exchange networks, driven by competition for prestige. Similarly, on the agricultural side, cultures can be viewed either as very simple farmers not much better off than their forager neighbors or as true village agriculturalists. None of these four options ideally captures what it must have been like in the western Mediterranean six thousand years ago, but it is a good start and one based on ethnographic studies of real peoples.

The notion that simple subsistence farmers made contact with simple gathering groups cannot account for the rapid agricultural spread across the Mediterranean, as there is no predominant inequality, such as prestige or settled agriculture, to move the frontier. Complex foragers or complex agriculturalists could have effected this change. Brian Hayden has developed a model for the emergence of agriculture through prestige competition. His theory is that among some foraging societies there was competition for status. Agricultural products represent storable wealth as well as a potentially greater food supply. With prestige competition among foragers, power was accumulated through prestigious

objects or through obligations. Agricultural items, such as domesticated animals, would have been an innovative and therefore prestigious object in such a setting. They could have been rapidly dispersed through such a culture, with agricultural dependence as an unintended consequence of the desire to accumulate prestige.

In 1986 Marek Zvelebil, an archaeologist at the University of Sheffield, presented the concept of adoption as the *availability* model for the transition from foraging to farming. In this model there are three zones across a frontier between agriculturalists and foragers. First, in an availability zone, where domestic plants and animals as well as pottery and other new items became available to foragers by trade, but these items did not really affect the overall economy of the group. A desire for prestige or power would have driven individuals to invest in these innovations. In subsequent phases, farming developed as an alternative economic strategy alongside foraging. Last, settled farming consolidated as the principal economic strategy.

How does the evidence in the western Mediterranean support this theory? The availability model proposes stratified Mesolithic populations with a network of trade in prestige goods. It predicts the initial appearance of domesticated plants and animals within a predominantly foraging economy. It does not require early settled agricultural villages.

Evidence of pre-agricultural trade is slim. There are few signs of the movement of material goods during the Mesolithic, but there also is little recoverable and traceable material. The stone sources used to make flaked tools in the latest Mesolithic times come from more local regions than in earlier periods, so they probably were not exchanged. It is possible that there were valued exchange items made of organic materials that do not survive. From the earliest Neolithic period, however, there is evidence of trade. It has been shown that the earliest pottery, Cardial, was transported long distances, as were the earliest groundstone axes. The exchange of obsidian, a volcanic glass used to make very distinct flaked tools, also began across the Mediterranean at this time.

In terms of economy, there is evidence from many Early Neolithic sites that wild species initially predominated among the deposits. Bones of wild

deer and boar at first outnumbered those of domesticated sheep at many Early Neolithic cave sites. The proportions of wild to domesticated animals gradually changed over a period of hundreds of years, until domesticated animals came to dominate the archaeological assemblages. The animal bones recovered from Early Neolithic coastal sites, such as Leucate-Corrège, include the remains of species hunted at different times of the year, indicating that there were permanent settlements at this time that were not necessarily agricultural villages.

The results are mixed in terms of making the case for adoption. There is no good evidence of trade before the first agricultural sites, but trade of objects clearly is present at these Early Neolithic sites and is quite uniform across the western Mediterranean. Still, there might have been trade in organic materials, such as furs or meat, or in social obligations, such as labor. The availability model for agricultural adoption correctly predicts the proportions of wild to domesticated animals. With boats, it would have been possible for these innovations to spread rapidly enough to get from Italy to Portugal in one hundred years.

Equally, village agriculturalists also might have migrated rapidly across the Mediterranean, even in a landscape already occupied by Mesolithic foragers. Zilhão has proposed a model of *enclave colonization*. Enclave colonization involves resettlement by small seafaring groups of agriculturalists across the western Mediterranean. It is described as the budding off of small groups to found new agricultural colonies. This budding off might have been driven by offspring required to homestead enclaves as part of their entry into adulthood or through inheritance or as part of planned enterprises. Upon arrival, they would have assimilated or displaced local foragers, despite their smaller numbers, due to the inherent superiority of a production economy. This agricultural economy would have provided a stable surplus of food that would have allowed their populations to grow and to trade successfully with local foragers.

How do the data support enclave colonization? This model predicts rapid spread through the establishment of far-flung settled villages. Because these societies initially were smaller and more isolated than the resident Mesolithic societies, they might have had to settle in areas that were undesirable or relatively unused by resident foragers or to have

been readily adopted by the foraging groups. This theory also requires that a “package” of domesticated plants and animals and new technologies, such as pottery and groundstone axes, spread as a uniform and interdependent economic strategy.

Certainly, it seems as if agricultural items spread across the western Mediterranean at almost the same time, insofar as the relative inaccuracies of radiocarbon dating permit us to say. This is in contrast to a more piecemeal adoption of innovations that might have taken place had they been brought across the Mediterranean as unlinked prestige trade items. Zilhão also has identified upland areas in regions of the western Mediterranean, particularly in the Estremadura of central Portugal, where there appears to have been little or no Mesolithic habitation, yet a strong Early Neolithic occupation. Just to the south, in the Tagus estuary, are the remains of some of the largest Mesolithic shell middens in Europe. This area could have been a region leaped over and not colonized by agricultural enclaves.

In terms of economy, there is no strong evidence of a dramatic shift to full-scale agriculture. As mentioned earlier, most Early Neolithic sites are dominated by the bones of wild, not domesticated, animals. It is possible, of course, that these initial agriculturalists ate mostly wild animals because they traded locally with foragers or that they added to their food supplies with regular hunting, as do many modern peoples.

CONCLUSION

How can we distinguish what really went on when agriculture first spread across the western Mediterranean? Neither adoption nor migration models seem to single-handedly match up with the thin amount of information we have collected. Mesolithic foragers could not have traded for agricultural goods without moving, and early agriculturalists could not have moved without coming in contact with whomever was there already. There are tantalizing bits of evidence, such as the rapid spread of domesticated plants and animals and new technologies like pottery. There also is evidence of the birth or rapid expansion of trade routes at this time. Still, there is the persistence of flaked stone tool traditions, habitation, and economy across the transition. The models we are using, based on modern ex-

amples, will have to expand beyond the simple one of migration versus adoption.

Zvelebil has described more flexible options that will provide a good testing ground. These include individual frontier mobility (spread through kinship-based exchanges of individuals or small groups), leapfrog colonization (highly selective colonization by seafaring peoples), and infiltration (gradual penetration by groups that assume a subordinate political position and perform specialized tasks). As we broaden our perspectives and find ways to evaluate these models, we will come closer to understanding what it was like at the moment when the first inklings of the foundations of European civilization spread across the western Mediterranean.

See also **Muge Shell Middens** (vol. 1, part 2). **Caldeirão Cave** (vol. 1, part 3).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Ammerman, Albert J., and Luigi L. Cavalli-Sforza. *The Neolithic Transition and the Genetics of Populations in Europe*. Princeton, N.J.: Princeton University Press, 1984.
- Barnett, William K., and John W. Hoopes, eds. *The Emergence of Pottery: Technology and Innovation in Ancient Societies*. Washington, D.C.: Smithsonian Institution Press, 1995.
- Price, T. Douglas, ed. *Europe's First Farmers*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 2000.
- Renfrew, Colin. *Before Civilization: The Radiocarbon Revolution and Prehistoric Europe*. London: Jonathan Cape, 1973.
- Zilhão, João. “Radiocarbon Evidence for Maritime Pioneer Colonization at the Origins of Farming in West Mediterranean Europe.” *Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences* 98, no. 24 (2001): 14180–14185.
- Zvelebil, Marek, ed. *Hunters in Transition: Mesolithic Societies of Temperate Eurasia and their Transition to Farming*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1986.

WILLIAM K. BARNETT

ARENE CANDIDE

Arene Candide is a spacious and pleasant cave in Liguria in northwestern Italy directly overlooking the Mediterranean, midway between Genoa and the

French border. The opening is in a cliff face 90 meters above sea level. Arene Candide means “white sands,” referring to a sand dune that once lay against the cliff (which was quarried during the twentieth century). The dune probably never provided access to the cave, however, which could be approached only by a path from above. The topography is steep; even at the height of the last glacial period, when sea level was more than 100 meters lower than it is now, the cave was only a few kilometers from the sea.

The cave has seen excavation since the nineteenth century, but most information comes from two twentieth-century campaigns. Luigi Bernabò Brea and Luigi Cardini carried out a classic excavation in 1940–1942, continuing in 1948–1950. Unusually for their time, they excavated by stratigraphic layers rather than by arbitrary levels, and they used screening to recover small objects. Many samples of various types of material (among them charcoal and shells) also were taken. The findings of these excavations were published in part by the excavators. Full publication of the material by a team of specialists was led by Roberto Maggi. A second major excavation was undertaken by Santo Tinè in 1972–1977, which also has been published.

The excavations revealed many stratigraphic layers extending into the Pleistocene. Most of the available material is Neolithic, although Cardini excavated terminal Pleistocene deposits. In 1942 a sondage, a narrow test pit into the deeper layers, was excavated into the lower layers. The bottom of the cave was never reached, but on 1 May 1942 a spectacular find was made: an Upper Palaeolithic burial belonging to the Gravettian culture. The skeleton was of a young male adult, nicknamed *il Principe* (the prince) because of his rich grave goods. These items comprised three decorated objects made of moose antler, a long flint blade, and hundreds of snail shells that probably were used to decorate a hat (which has decayed). The skeleton has been radiocarbon dated to c. 24,000–23,000 B.P. (c. 22,000–21,000 B.C.). Even more significant, analysis of carbon isotopes in his bones (which reveal diet because seafood contains more carbon 13 than other foods) shows that 20 to 25 percent of his diet was marine foods—a reflection of the short distance to the seashore in his day.

Later in the Pleistocene there was substantial Epigravettian occupation in the period 13,000–11,000 B.P. (11,000–9000 B.C.). At the start of this period the cave was used for burials. Some eighteen individuals were excavated, making this Europe’s largest Pleistocene cemetery. The grave goods were rich. There was much red ochre (and several ochre grinders) as well as red deer canines, perforated pebbles and shells, beaver mandibles, and skeletons of corncrakes and choughs (small birds in the crane and crow families, respectively). Most common were tail vertebrae from red squirrels; perhaps squirrel tails were stitched onto clothing.

At the start of the Holocene the site was abandoned. There are few traces of Mesolithic settlement anywhere in Liguria. As a result, when the cave was reoccupied at the start of the Neolithic, one can be sure that the population had immigrated—perhaps from somewhere along the Italian coast to the southeast. The earliest agricultural immigrants arrived around 5700–5600 B.C., based on a direct date from a grain of barley. These people were makers of Impressed pottery, so-called because of its impressed decoration; over about the next two centuries this style evolved into the classic Cardial style, decorated with impressions of the edges of cockle (or *Cardium*) shells. In addition to cereals and perhaps pulses, the farmers kept domestic cattle and sheep; the latter may have been milked, which would be a very early example of dairying. Goats were apparently absent until the Middle Neolithic. There may have been wild pigs, but most of the meat came from domestic stock.

Cardial pottery and agriculture spread very rapidly along the coasts of France, Spain, and southern Portugal. How this was accomplished is debated. Some researchers argue that local Mesolithic hunter-fishers played a crucial role and others that Neolithic immigrants were responsible. Arene Candide lies near the start of the Cardial expansion, and as already seen, agriculture must have reached the site via an immigration; this may support the immigrant Neolithic argument elsewhere in the western Mediterranean.

The Early Neolithic at Arene Candide continued until about 4900–4700 B.C. Occupation during this period was not particularly intensive and may have been intermittent or seasonal. Contacts with coastal communities to the west are suggested by

small amounts of flint from southern France and also by the importation of large pottery vessels made elsewhere and imported as finished objects. These vessels probably were too large to carry overland, given the steep topography, and might have been carried by boat.

The start of the Middle Neolithic is marked by an abrupt transition to *bocca quadrata* (square-mouth) pottery. Much more archaeological material is found for this time period, and the cave by then probably was a permanently occupied base. For the first time, there was contact across the Ligurian Mountains with the interior of northern Italy: some 12 percent of the flint was imported from an Alpine source. There is evidence of many domestic activities. Cereal pollen is common, and the numerous querns suggest that it was ground inside the cave. Animals were stabled inside the cave, too; soil micro-morphology (the microscopic analysis of soil particles) shows that the animals' bedding was burned from time to time. This bedding was made of plant material, including a species of heather, represented by its pollen and charcoal.

The Late Neolithic started just before 4000 B.C., and during this period there was a diminution of occupational intensity. The cultural transition again is rapid, with the appearance of the Chassey type of pottery (reddish in color, fine walled, undecorated but polished, and well made), similar to that in southern France. A French connection also is revealed by the fact that over half of all the flint was imported from the Rhône delta. After the Late Neolithic, occupation declined further. Intermittent occupation took place through the Bronze Age, with later traces of a little Iron Age and Roman occupation at the top.

Arene Candide is one of the key sequences of the western Mediterranean, thanks partly to its well-preserved stratigraphy and partly to the quality of the excavations by Bernabò Brea and Cardini. New information continues to come from the site and doubtless will do so for many years to come.

See also *Caldeirão Cave* (vol. 1, part 3).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Bernabò Brea, Luigi. *Gli Scavi nella Caverna delle Arene Candide*. 2 vols. Bordighera, Italy: Istituto Internazionale di Studi Liguri, 1946 (vol. 1), 1956 (vol. 2).

Binder, Didier, and Roberto Maggi. "Le Néolithique ancien de l'arc liguro-provençal." *Bulletin de la Société Préhistorique Française* 98, no. 3 (2001): 411–422.

Cardini, Luigi. "La necropoli mesolitica delle Arene Candide (Liguria)." *Memorie dell'Istituto Italiano di Paleontologia Umana* 3 (1980): 9–31.

Maggi, R., ed. *Arene Candide: A Functional and Environmental Assessment of the Holocene Sequence (Excavations Bernabò Brea–Cardini, 1940–50)*. *Memorie dell'Istituto Italiano di Paleontologia Umana*, no. 5. Rome: Ministero per i Beni Culturali e Ambientali, 1997.

Pettitt, P. B., M. Richards, R. Maggi, and V. Formicola. "The Gravettian Burial Known as the Prince ('Il Principe'): New Evidence for His Age and Diet." *Antiquity* 77 (2003): 15–19.

Rowley-Conwy, Peter. "From Arene Candide to the Atlantic: The Bernabò Brea Excavations and Early Domestic Animals in the West Mediterranean." In *Atti del Congresso in Onore di Luigi Bernabò Brea*. Edited by G. Spadea and E. Starnini. Rome: Ministry of Culture, forthcoming.

Tinè, Santo, ed. *Il Neolitico nella Caverna delle Arene Candide (Scavi 1972–1977)*. Collezione di Monografie Preistoriche ed Archeologiche, no. 10. Bordighera, Italy: Istituto Internazionale di Studi Liguri, 1999.

Zilhão, João. "Radiocarbon Evidence for Maritime Pioneer Colonization at the Origins of Farming in West Mediterranean Europe." *Proceedings of the National Academy of Science* 98, no. 24 (2001): 14,180–14,185.

PETER ROWLEY-CONWY

CALDEIRÃO CAVE

The site of Gruta do Caldeirão is near the city of Tomar, Portugal, about 150 kilometers northeast of Lisbon. The entrance opens about 120 meters above sea level and dominates a small valley at the bottom of which a temporary stream flows into the Nabão River, the tributary of the Tagus River that cuts (from north to south) the small limestone plateau where the cave is located. The stratigraphic succession defined in the cave's "back chamber" is about 6 meters thick and features three major discontinuities that divide it into four major blocks. At the bottom are Middle Palaeolithic levels K through P, dated to more than 28,000 B.P. (beyond 30,000 B.C.); these are followed by early Upper Palaeolithic and Solutrean levels Fa through Jb, dated to more

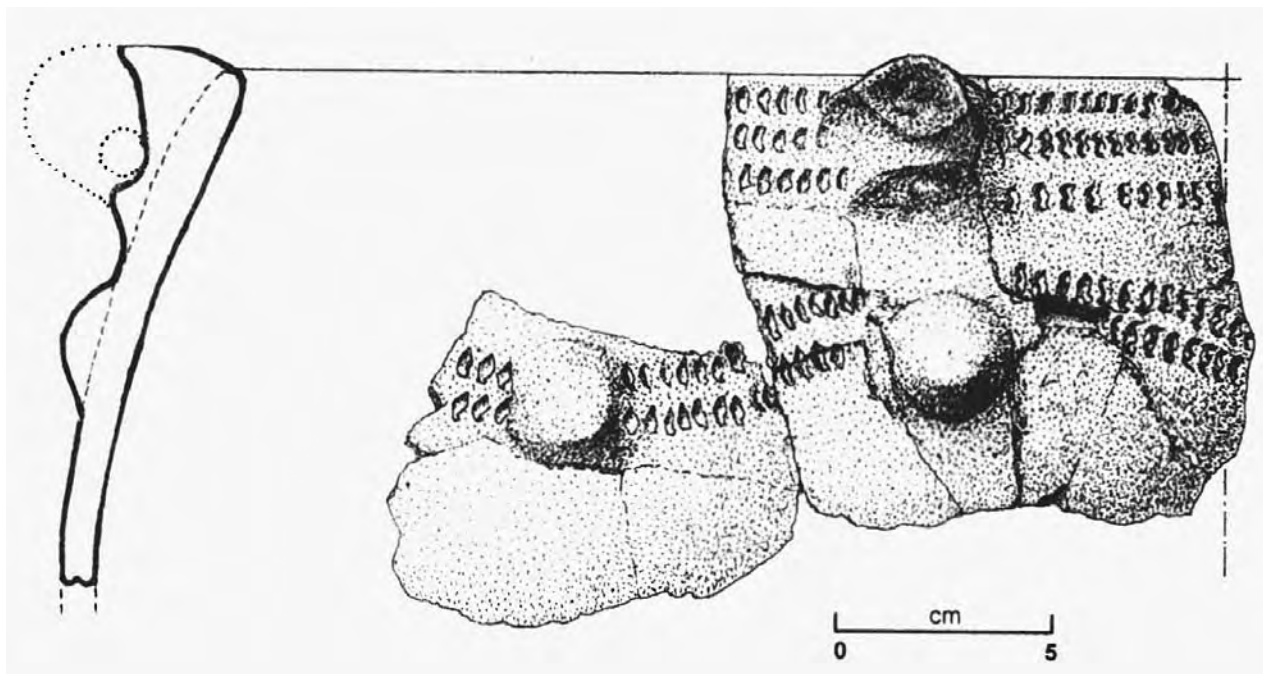


Fig. 1. Fragments of decorated Cardial-impressed vessel from Caldeirão Cave. COURTESY OF JOÃO ZILHÃO. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

than 18,000 B.P. (beyond 20,000 B.C.), and by Magdalenian level Eb, dated to between c. 16,000 and c. 10,000 B.P. (between c. 17,500 B.C. and c. 9500 B.C.). The accumulation of the overlying Neolithic and post-Neolithic deposits began with level Ea, c. 6000 B.C.

The Early Neolithic remains form two different archaeological horizons, NA2 and NA1. The earliest, NA2, is a funerary context defined by an assemblage of human bones and associated pottery, ornaments, lithics, and animal bones. Most of this material was recovered as discrete concentrations inside level Eb. The hiatus in sediment deposition after the end of the last glacial explains the intrusion, because it implies that the floor of the cave at the time of the first Neolithic human activities was still the same that existed at the end of the Magdalenian era. As a result of those activities, as well as of the contemporary disturbance caused by burrowing animals, the remains of the Early Neolithic burials became incorporated in the immediately underlying deposits. The contents of the latter, therefore, were a mix and for the most part accumulated in the cave much earlier—a common phenomenon in Mediter-

ranean caves but one that often goes unnoticed and is responsible for much of the controversy regarding the exact timing of the appearance of farming in the region.

Horizon NA2 contains the remains of at least four adult individuals and a child, and estimates based on the dental material suggest that a fifth adult is also present. The spatial distribution of the bones and associated artifacts suggests that a female was buried against the north wall and that a cardial-decorated ceramic vessel was emplaced with her. A male buried against the south wall has been associated with three microliths (one trapeze and two segments), and a second nearby male has been associated with a cluster of 120 shell beads made of the species *Theodoxus fluviatilis* (freshwater snail), *Hinia pfeifferi* (netted dog whelk), and *Glycymeris glycymeris* (dog cockle). The postdepositional scattering of these inferred contexts further suggests that the bodies were not placed inside protective burial features but simply laid down on the cave floor. The location of the clusters of cranial material suggests that the heads were probably leaning against the side walls.

The human bone material ascribed to horizon NAI represents a minimum of thirteen individuals: six were less than fifteen years old; two were between fifteen and twenty; and five were adults, two of whom (one male and one female) were still young (twenty to twenty-five), and the other three of whom (two males and one female) were of an older age. The postdepositional disturbance, or the scattering and breakage of the human skeletons by such animal cave dwellers as foxes and badgers, was in this case too severe to identify patterning in the spatial distribution of the different people. Burial gifts in horizon NAI include polished stone axes and impressed (epicardial) ceramic vessels.

The animal bones indicate that this burial site was also episodically used as a warm-season shelter for the hunting of wild boar and the herding of sheep. Permanent villages in the region of this site are still archaeologically unknown but must have been located farther south, in the good soils of the alluvial plain of the Nabão. The absence of cereal grains or other direct proof of the existence of domesticated plants in the cave deposits must be related to the specialized use of the site; it does not mean that agriculture was not part of the economic system. Stable isotope analysis of the human bone shows a diet where aquatic resources were absent, in sharp contrast with the evidence for regional late Mesolithic people; the latter, moreover, do not seem to have settled inland areas devoid of close access to the sea or the major estuaries. The fact that such a settlement was achieved by Early Neolithic people strongly indicates that cereal agriculture was introduced at the same time as domesticated animals. The Cardial ceramics in horizon NA2 can therefore be taken as a proxy for the complete Neolithic package, which means that the presence of ceramics presumes the presence also of other things that accompany it in western Mediterranean Europe: cereal agriculture, plus sheep and goats, as the basis of the economy and the diet, as well as sedentary village life, and, where technology is concerned, polished stone axes.

Stylistically, this pottery is relatively evolved; the decoration is restricted to a band below the rim, occupying the space between small, horizontally perforated handles, from which garlands of impressions descend to the body, bridging the space between regularly placed buttons. Similar vessel types associ-

ated with identical radiocarbon ages are also known from nearby sites in the northern half of the Central Limestone Massif of Estremadura such as Buraca Grande (Pombal) and Pena d'Água (Torres Novas). Stylistically earlier, baroquely decorated Cardial vessels have been recovered in the cave burial site of Galeria da Cisterna (Almonda karstic system, Torres Novas), located about 40 kilometers to the southwest of Caldeirão; they are associated with characteristic ornaments (pierced red deer canine teeth and bone beads imitating their shape) directly dated by AMS radiocarbon dating to c. 5423 B.C.

The contemporaneity and the close similarity in vessel decoration and personal ornamentation between Cisterna and such sites as Cova de l'Or on the Mediterranean coast of Valencia, Spain, support the hypothesis that the spread of farmer-herders along the shores of Mediterranean and south-Atlantic Iberia was effected through a process of maritime pioneer colonization. The sourcing of raw materials—shells and clay—used for the manufacture of artifacts recovered in such inland sites as Caldeirão is consistent with this hypothesis, since it indicates exchange systems oriented toward the estuaries and the sea. Given the dating evidence, it would seem that it took some six generations before the descendants of the Neolithic people who first arrived in coastal Portugal started to settle in the Nabão Valley. Since the physical anthropological analysis of the Caldeirão human remains reveals no signs of stress, it must be inferred that the new economic system they brought with them was successful right from the beginning.

See also **Spread of Agriculture Westward across the Mediterranean** (vol. 1, part 3); **Arene Candide** (vol. 1, part 3).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Zilhão, João. "Radiocarbon Evidence for Maritime Pioneer Colonization at the Origins of Farming in West Mediterranean Europe." *Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences* 98 (2001): 14180–14185.
- . "From the Mesolithic to the Neolithic in the Iberian Peninsula." In *Europe's First Farmers*. Edited by T. Douglas Price, pp. 144–182. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 2000.
- . "The Spread of Agro-Pastoral Economies across Mediterranean Europe: A View from the Farwest." *Journal of Mediterranean Archaeology* 6, no. 1 (June 1993): 5–63.

———, ed. *Gruta do Caldeirão: O Neolítico Antigo*. Trabalhos de Arqueologia 6. Lisbon: Instituto Português do Património Arquitectónico e Arqueológico, 1992.

JOÃO ZILHÃO



FIRST FARMERS OF CENTRAL EUROPE

FOLLOWED BY FEATURE ESSAYS ON:

<i>Bruchenbrücken</i>	266
<i>Bylany</i>	269

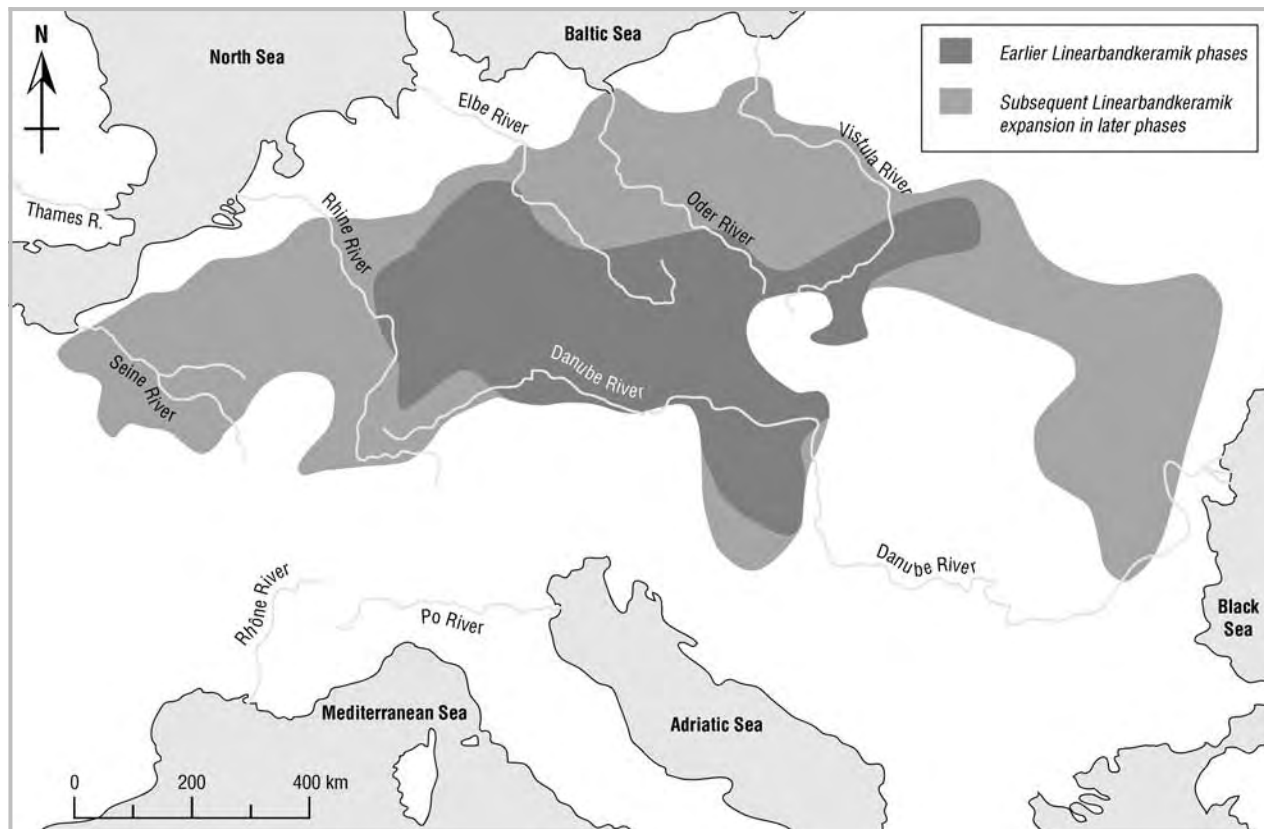
A millennium after agriculture was first introduced to Greece and the southern Balkans (the Sesklo and Karanovo/Kremikovci cultures) and half a millennium after its introduction to the northern Balkans (the Starčevo, Körös, and Criş cultures), peoples of the *Linearbandkeramik* (LBK) culture first farmed on the Hungarian Plain near Budapest. Within a period of seven to eight hundred years, these peoples had spread through most of central Europe, to the boundary of the North European Plain. They brought with them new practices not seen earlier in these areas, including agriculture and stock rearing; construction of large, permanent houses and settlements; and the production of pottery. While traditional views of the LBK culture saw these peoples as peaceful, self-sufficient migrants who largely replaced the indigenous hunting-gathering peoples of central Europe, new research has established that the expansion of the LBK involved more complex social interactions, at times including extreme violence.

THE LINEARBANDKERAMIK CULTURE

The LBK culture (named after its linear style of incised pottery decoration) first appeared on the

Hungarian Plain, near Budapest, and subsequently spread into Bohemia, Moravia, Slovakia, southern Poland, parts of the Ukraine, Moldavia, northern Romania, Lower Austria, Germany, Alsace, the Dutch Limburg, Belgium, the Aisne Valley, and the Paris basin. This culture was identified by the German archaeologist Friedrich Klopffleisch (1831–1898) at the end of the nineteenth century, and many archaeologists continue to use the German name *Linearbandkeramik* or *Linienbandkeramik* or sometimes simply *Bandkeramik*. The English translation, also frequently seen in archaeological literature, is Linear Pottery culture, while the French name is *Céramique Rubanée*. An older usage, introduced by V. Gordon Childe in the 1920s as the foundation of his Danubian sequence of cultures in prehistoric central Europe, but no longer in common use, is Danubian I.

Although a large body of radiocarbon dates is available from LBK sites throughout Europe, difficulties with calibration and resolution make it virtually impossible to construct a chronology relying on carbon-14 dating alone. The LBK period typically is divided into four chronological phases based on the evolution of ceramic decoration: Oldest, Older, Younger, and Youngest. More precise regional chronologies have been developed for



Extent of *Linearbandkeramik* settlement. ADAPTED FROM LÜNING, KLOOS, AND ALBERT 1989.

most areas of the LBK distribution, however. Similarities with Early Neolithic material culture from the northern Balkans (Körös), in conjunction with radiocarbon dates, place the origin of the LBK culture at c. 5700 B.C. Oldest-phase LBK sites appear over a large area, comprising the Hungarian Plain, Lower Austria, southern Bohemia and Moravia, eastern Germany, the Danube Valley in southern Germany, and as far west as the Main Valley near Frankfurt. Dates for these sites are virtually indistinguishable from one another, indicating rapid dispersal. The Older phase of the LBK culture began c. 5500–5300 B.C. and saw the first settlement of the Rhine Valley (as far north as Belgium and the Netherlands) and southern Poland. During the Younger and Youngest phases there was further expansion into the Ukraine, Moldavia, northern Romania, and the Paris basin in the west. The sites that are farthest west did not appear until c. 4900 B.C., which would indicate that, on average, the LBK culture spread into Europe at a rate of 3.5–5 kilometers per year.

HISTORY OF RESEARCH

Finds of LBK ceramics have been noted in central Europe since the 1700s, and pits containing LBK material were first excavated during the 1800s. These sites were referred to as “pit houses” and were thought to represent the dwellings of the first farmers. It was not until Werner Buttler and Waldemar Haberey’s excavations at Köln-Lindenthal in the 1920s, however, that a full settlement was recovered and the LBK longhouse first recognized.

Since then, hundreds of LBK sites have been fully or partially excavated, making the LBK one of the most extensively researched cultures in European prehistory. LBK sites have been excavated in Hungary, the Czech Republic, Slovakia, the Ukraine, Moldavia, Romania, Poland, Austria, Germany, Luxembourg, the Netherlands, Belgium, and France. Some of the most extensive work was carried out during the 1970s on the Aldenhovener Platte (near Cologne) and the Helmstedt coal seam near Braunschweig, where strip mining allowed for salvage excavation of all LBK sites along entire

stream courses. Additional large-scale excavations have been carried out in southern Poland, including settlement survey on a regional level. The Hungarian Plain and the southern Czech Republic also have been intensively investigated. In the west the Dutch Limburg, the Belgian Hesbaye, the Aisne Valley, and the Paris basin all have been surveyed and excavated extensively. A newer University of Frankfurt project has focused on the excavation of Oldest LBK settlements throughout Germany and Austria.

LINEARBANDKERAMIK MATERIAL CULTURE

LBK farmers preferred to found their villages on soils formed from loess or redeposited loess (although in some areas fewer than 50 percent are situated on such soils) in close proximity (500 meters or less) to second- or third-order streams. In many cases, sites (Köln-Lindenthal, Elsloo, and Olszanica, for instance) clearly were large, permanent settlements with numerous contemporaneous longhouses and, sometimes, associated cemeteries. Excavations on the Aldenhovener Platte indicate, however, that in other instances, LBK “villages” actually were isolated farmsteads separated by several hundred meters. Little remains of LBK sites other than the bottoms of post holes and pits, owing to post-Neolithic erosion; it nonetheless is clear that certain sites were fortified with ditches, and such features as wells and ovens also have been discovered. Sites typically are situated in “clusters” (*Siedlungskammern*) of as many as forty sites each, often within a single stream valley.

LBK peoples built massive timber longhouses, usually several meters wide, with the longest being tens of meters in length. Longhouses (recognizable only as post molds) typically consist of two or four outer post rows (the walls) and three rows of inner support posts that held up the roof. Earlier longhouses in western Europe have a characteristic pattern of central post rows in a Y or 7 formation; this pattern is replaced by a single straight row in later houses. Longhouses were modular, with a middle section often interpreted as living quarters; a northwestern section with full surrounding wall trench, generally taken to be a winter stall for animals; and a southeastern section with heavy double posts, usually seen as a raised grain loft. Longhouses always have a central section but may or may not have

northwestern and southwestern sections. At many sites, however, the majority of houses have all three segments, arguing against a correlation between house size and the social status of its occupants. No original occupation surface has ever been recovered, but analysis of soil phosphate content has shown no functional difference among the three sections.

LBK stone tools typically are made from broad, long blades with flat platforms struck from unidirectional cores or from flakes. Oldest-phase LBK stone tools more commonly (40 percent as opposed to 20 percent in the later LBK culture) are composed of smaller, narrower blades, in some cases with faceted platforms. Typical tools include end scrapers, sickle blades and armatures (with heavy “sickle gloss,” indicating use), and borers. Except for rare examples, burins are virtually absent. Projectile points are present in small numbers (less than 1 percent of a total assemblage) at eastern sites but are much more common (as much as 20 percent of total finds) in the west. At Oldest LBK sites, many of these points are geometric microliths, often trapezes—this trend continued into later phases of the eastern LBK. At western sites the classic “Danubian” triangular point type is more prevalent. Groundstone adzes (of the D-section “shoe last” type) and axes (the *Flachhacke*) are ubiquitous at LBK sites, as are saddle querns (grinding stones).

LBK ceramics (fig. 1a–e) usually are divided into two types, well-made and elaborately decorated fine ware and a plain coarse ware. While coarse ware almost certainly was used for storage and cooking, the function of fine-ware pots is understood less well. They may have been serving vessels. Oldest LBK pots generally were organically tempered and flat-bottomed, and the decorated examples almost always have a spiral or meander pattern of two or three bands. During later LBK culture phases, round bottoms and inorganic temper were employed almost universally. The three-quarter spherical bowl (*Kümpf*) replaced the low bowl as the most common vessel type, and decorative motifs became ever more elaborate. During the Younger phase, a distinct east/west stylistic division was evident, with eastern ceramics being characterized by relative stylistic uniformity. Youngest western ceramics show the development of local style zones, roughly corresponding to separate river systems. In addition to pots, ceramic figurines, clay “altars,”

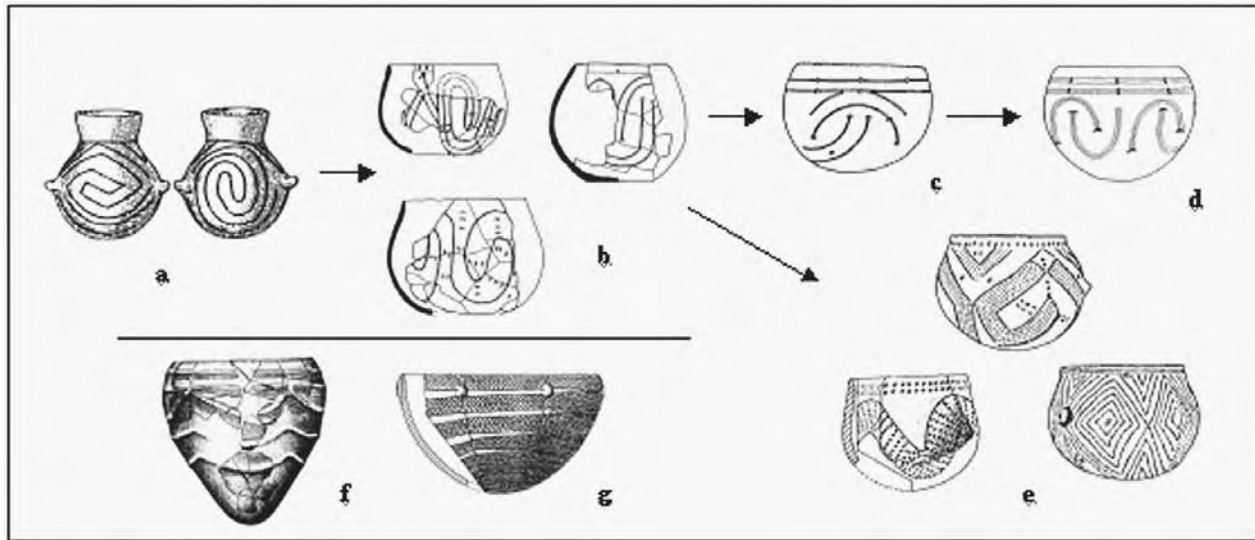


Fig. 1. Early Neolithic ceramics: (a) oldest LBK; (b) Flomborn/Ačkovy/Zofipole; (c) Notenkopf; (d) Želiecovce; (e) youngest Western styles; (f) La Hoguette; (g) Limburg (redrawn after Bogucki 1995, Constantin 1985, Lüning, Kloos, and Albert 1989, Müller-Karpe 1968, Preuß 1998). COURTESY OF LAWRENCE KEELEY. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

and anthropomorphic and zoomorphic vessels are found at earlier LBK sites (particularly eastern ones) and clearly are related to similar objects discovered at Balkan Neolithic sites. Objects of this type became considerably less common in later LBK contexts.

SUBSISTENCE ECONOMY

The introduction of agriculture to central Europe coincided with the beginning of the Atlantic climatic phase, a period of warmer temperature (by about 2 degrees Celsius), more humidity (8–22 percent wetter), and milder winters than today's. Atlantic Europe was covered almost entirely by mixed broadleaf forest (elm, oak, and linden/lime), but pollen cores suggest that LBK communities cleared a substantial amount of this forest upon first settlement.

The faunal and floral assemblages at Oldest LBK sites typically contain about 20 percent wild species and 80 percent domesticated species. These domesticates include cattle; sheep and goats; pigs; dogs; emmer, einkorn, and spelt wheat; legumes (peas and vetch); and flax. Oldest sites display a degree of diversity in their assemblages, with southern sites (such as Schwanfeld, Strögen, and Neckenmarkt) having a majority of sheep and goats, north-

ern sites (such as Eitzum and Eilsleben) having cattle, and western sites (Bruchenbrücken and Goddelau) having pigs. Emmer and einkorn forms of wheat were the most common domesticated plants, but the small number of sickle blades has led some researchers to argue that agriculture was practiced less intensively at Oldest LBK villages than at later ones.

After the Oldest LBK phase, domesticates composed as much as 95 percent of all faunal and floral remains, with cattle the most important species in terms of total calories. Emmer wheat remained the most abundant cereal, with einkorn taking second place and spelt wheat third. Small amounts of barley and rye also are known. Wild resources continued to be exploited in small amounts and numbers, including aurochs, wild pigs, red deer, horse, fish, wild fruits (apples and pears), and berries (blackberries and raspberries). There was some regional variation; for example, non-domesticates make up between 20 percent and 50 percent of assemblages at some southern and extreme eastern LBK sites.

Initially, it was believed that LBK communities practiced slash-and-burn cultivation and that the constant need for new land fueled the rapid dispersal of LBK peoples into central Europe. It has since

become clear that many LBK sites were settled continuously for several hundred years. Experimental agricultural studies have established that Neolithic farming practices would have been sustainable for hundreds of years on heavy, loess-derived soils, such as those settled by LBK peoples. LBK peoples probably cleared small fields within about a kilometer of villages for both farming and grazing, with one person estimated to require approximately 0.4 hectare of land per year.

LINEARBANDKERAMIK SOCIETY

It was long held that LBK villages were largely self-sufficient farmsteads with limited long-distance contact and that little social organization existed beyond the village level. It has now become apparent that LBK communities were socially integrated with their close neighbors and had such ties over distances of hundreds of kilometers. For instance, such goods as *Spondylus* shell were traded into central Europe from the Black Sea and Aegean Sea. In some cases, villages obtained almost their entire supply of flint from distant sources, for instance, Bylany (in the present-day Czech Republic), which obtained flint from Olszanica, more than 200 kilometers distant. It has been suggested that periodic trade expeditions might have been sent out to obtain such materials.

At Langweiler 8 (Aldenhovener Platte), flint from the Netherlands probably was brought in and worked into finished tools before being redistributed to other LBK sites in the immediate vicinity. Evidence of such interdependence between neighboring villages is known in numerous cases. At Langweiler 2 an overabundance of a particular narrow pit feature (*Schlitzgrubbe*) may indicate that peoples at the site specialized in hide preparation and export. Production specialization is apparent at many LBK sites in the Hesbaye region of Belgium, with evidence of trade in utilitarian goods (pottery and lithics), a practice that may have helped cement social and military alliances.

Cooperation on a regional level also is evidenced by the amount of labor that periodically would have been required to build longhouses and, in particular, fortifications, which also would have necessitated the aid of the inhabitants of several sites to defend them. There is little indication, however, that any form of hereditary status inequality existed

in LBK society. Status seems to have come with age, with older men (groundstone axes) and older women being the only ones buried with grave goods. Some researchers have posited a form of “big-man” status competition within LBK society. There is little concrete archaeological material to support such a hypothesis, however, other than evidence from a small number of sites at which houses with larger numbers of groundstone axes and other materials were found. It is only in the context of the late western LBK that there is support for status differentiation, for instance, at Rixheim (a cemetery in Alsace), where there were a few people with very elaborate personal ornamentation.

CONFLICT AND WARFARE

It once was believed that the LBK expansion essentially was a peaceful process of population replacement. A substantial body of evidence now concludes that LBK society was, at times, intensely violent. Fortification enclosures (taking the form of interrupted V- or U-profiled ditches with inner palisade lines or trenches, sometimes with baffled or screened gates) are known from well over a hundred LBK sites representing most regions and phases. They are most common in the later phases of the western LBK. LBK sites generally were not located in naturally defensible locations, however, and most ditches seem to have filled in rapidly shortly after construction. This would suggest that whatever threats necessitated the construction of fortifications, they were not foreseen at the time of initial settlement and tended to be short lived. Nonetheless, at some sites (Schletz-Asparn, Eilsleben, and Köln-Lindenthal, for instance), there were several phases of fortification.

One review of LBK burials has shown that approximately 2.2 percent of people at eastern LBK sites suffered traumatic injuries during their lifetimes, whereas in the west the rate of injury was nearly 19 percent. While both values are extremely high, they are consistent with other evidence supporting the notion that western LBK society was far more violent than was eastern LBK society. For instance, it is likely that this difference explains the much higher number of projectile points in western LBK assemblages.

Many theories have been advanced concerning the cause and nature of these conflicts. At Vaih-

gen/Enz (a fortified site near Stuttgart), numerous skeletons were found in two large garbage pits, and fragmented human remains were scattered throughout the site. Many of these remains show evidence of traumatic injury. Upon metrical analysis, the skeletal material from these atypical “burials” was found to be far more robust than that from typical semi-flexed LBK burials (lying on the side with slightly bent knees and arms) at the site’s cemetery. These may well have been indigenous hunter-gatherers who were killed during conflict with incoming farmers. While fragmented bones (skulls, mandibles, and long bones) are known from other western LBK sites, they have not been subjected to a similar analysis. Nevertheless, a no-man’s-land, 20–25 kilometers wide, between terminal Mesolithic sites and LBK sites in northeastern Belgium indicates that in at least some cases conflict occurred between incoming farmers and indigenous hunter-gatherers.

Evidence of violence between LBK communities is becoming increasingly well documented. The most extreme examples are found at massacre sites, of which two are known. At Talheim (the Middle Rhine Valley), an excavated pit contained thirty-four skeletons with many head wounds caused by blows with LBK axes or adzes as well as arrows. Most of the wounds were located on the back of the victim’s skull, indicating that the person was attacked while fleeing. The demographics indicate that an entire village population was killed. At Schletz-Asparn (near Vienna), between sixty-six and three hundred people were killed and thrown into the site’s fortification ditch, where they were left exposed for several months. Again, the victims were killed with LBK axes or adzes and arrows. The underrepresentation of young women in the burial population may indicate that the attackers carried them off.

Violence seems to have been so common and extreme at the later western LBK sites that some researchers have referred to this phase as a “crisis” period. In addition to high rates of burial trauma and large numbers of fortified sites, there is evidence of cannibalism (split long bones with charring) at such sites as Herxheim, where large caches of skulls were found, and Ober-Hörgern. There was an apparent concern with securing interior water supplies via wells or cisterns at several sites that were all located

within a few hundred meters of running water. In the Kaiserstuhl region (the Upper Rhine Valley), some LBK communities appear to have relocated into more defensive hilly locations off loess soils. At the same time that fortifications were constructed, long-distance trade networks appear to have collapsed, with sites in the Rhine Valley, for instance, forced to rely on inferior local raw materials rather than ones they previously had obtained from the Dutch Limburg.

Lowered water tables and other signs of increasing aridity have been noted at many LBK sites during later phases. Population pressure also has been suggested as a potential source of conflict. Some researchers have related new cult practices evident in the late LBK to this “crisis” period. There is, for example, possible evidence of human sacrifices (of women, in particular) at so-called cult caves, such as the Jungfernhöhle, and numerous skeletons of children as young as five or six years old have been uncovered in the fortification ditch at Menneville (Aisne Valley). Nevertheless, declining environmental conditions alone cannot explain why the western LBK was so much more violent than the eastern LBK. While it is now clear that violence was a common occurrence in Early Neolithic central Europe, the causes of this violence are not yet entirely clear.

ORIGINS AND EXPANSION OF THE *LINEARBANDKERAMIK*

The first LBK communities were located on the Hungarian Plain, but the exact origins of the LBK culture remain mysterious. Much LBK material culture (pottery, lithics, groundstone, ceramic figurines) and economy has clear ties to the northern Balkan Early Neolithic. Other aspects, most notably the LBK longhouse, are novel. While there is overlap between the distribution of early LBK sites and Körös sites, no site has yet been excavated that would indicate a distinct transition from one material culture to the other. Oldest-phase LBK sites in Hungary (Budapest III, Becseheley, Bicske, and Medina, among others) already have the full “package” of LBK material culture and economy. It has been suggested that the LBK represents acculturation by Mesolithic hunter-gatherers after contact with farmers to the south, but the extremely low density of Late Mesolithic sites in Hungary makes this argument equally difficult to support.

LBK sites throughout the Oldest distribution area appeared simultaneously (within the resolution limits of radiocarbon dating), indicating an extremely rapid spread of LBK culture. The LBK typically has been viewed as a clear example of prehistoric migration, owing to the rapidity of expansion, the uniformity and novelty of material culture, and the foreign origins of plants and animals. Still, it has been argued that the Oldest LBK phase involved a considerable degree of indigenous incorporation.

Such arguments are based on the continuation of certain Mesolithic trade networks that brought material in from areas well outside the Oldest LBK region (Meuse Valley flints and Szentgál radiolarite from the Bakony Mountains, for instance), the overall greater diversity of resource usage and higher percentages of wild resources (compared to later phases), and certain aspects of the Oldest LBK lithic industry that show continuity with the preceding Mesolithic. For instance, faceted blade platforms are present at some LBK sites but not at others, mirroring their distribution during the Mesolithic. Likewise, projectile point styles show an east/west divide, again mirroring the Mesolithic pattern. These “Mesolithic” traits are present only in small numbers, however, and the majority of Oldest LBK culture sites have no continuity with the preceding Mesolithic. Indeed, one review of radiocarbon dates from central Europe has shown that the majority of Mesolithic sites had ceased to be occupied several hundred years before the appearance of the first LBK communities.

A study of the bone chemistry of bodies from cemeteries of the Older and Younger/Youngest LBK phases in southwestern Germany (Flomborn, Schwanfeld, and Dillingen) has determined that approximately 60 percent of people of the Older phase (the first settlement in the Rhine Valley) had “non-local” chemistry profiles. This percentage drops considerably at the Younger/Youngest cemeteries. “Nonlocal” people seem to have received different burial treatment—their burials lack stone axes, and their heads are oriented toward the northwest rather than the southeast. Strontium levels in these remains were found to be consistent with origins in sandy uplands contexts, which were not occupied by LBK groups or Mesolithic peoples, who preferred major river valleys. The possibility, not yet

substantiated, exists that these people represent incorporated Mesolithic foragers.

It remains possible that there was a degree of interaction between LBK farmers and indigenous peoples in western central Europe. In addition to typical LBK ceramics, two somewhat enigmatic ceramic types, La Hoguette and Limburg (fig. 1f, g), have been discovered in small numbers at western LBK sites. Both La Hoguette and Limburg ceramics are clearly different from LBK ceramics in form, decoration, and technological methods (particularly the use of bone temper). La Hoguette ceramics are found primarily at Oldest and Older LBK sites in the Middle Rhine Valley, but they have been seen in “Mesolithic” contexts. For instance, at the Bavans rock shelter, La Hoguette ceramics were present in association with Mesolithic lithic remains and what is thought to be domesticated sheep or goat bones, with possible dates as early as 5800 B.C. Limburg ceramics are encountered almost exclusively at LBK sites of the Younger/Youngest phase in the Lower Rhine Valley, Belgium, and France. To date, Limburg ceramics have not been uncovered in any other secure context. The significance of these two wares has been much debated but never resolved. While it seems likely that La Hoguette ceramics were of Mesolithic manufacture, no strong evidence of Mesolithic origin has been uncovered for Limburg ceramics. Both types appear to be stylistically influenced by Epicardial wares from southern France, though they are not similar to each other.

Indigenous hunter-gatherer involvement in the formation of LBK communities has been argued most plausibly for the Oldest LBK period. Such a process might have taken place during later phases of expansion, but the evidence is at best speculative. The vast majority of material culture and cultural practice first seen in central Europe in the context of the LBK shows little or no connection to the preceding Mesolithic. At present, the archaeological record suggests that actual human migration was the primary mechanism by which agriculture was first introduced into central Europe. The reasons for this migration are not certain, but numerous theories have been put forth, including population pressure, favorable ecological conditions for the introduction of Middle Eastern crops to central Europe (the onset of Atlantic climatic conditions), and so

cial pressures (conflict and movement as a means of relieving such tensions).

CENTRAL EUROPE AFTER THE LINEARBANDKERAMIK

The trend toward the development of regional styles and practices evident in the later phases of the LBK culture continued into the post-LBK period (after c. 4800 B.C.), when several related “daughter” cultures emerged. Among these cultures is the Rössen in western Germany and the Netherlands, the Villeneuve/Saint Germain in France, the Blicquy in Belgium, the Stichbandkeramik (Stroke-Ornamented Pottery culture) in eastern Germany, and the Lengyel in much of the eastern LBK region. These cultures are distinguished not only by differences in ceramic style but also by varying subsistence adaptations and cultural practices. In general, later Early Neolithic peoples were much less densely settled throughout central Europe, which sometimes is attributed to the late LBK “collapse.”

The expansion of LBK peoples for the most part seems to have halted at the boundaries of the North European Plain (except in Poland), where for as long as a millennium they were in contact with complex hunter-gatherers to the north. It has been suggested that Lengyel communities gave rise to the earliest Funnel Beaker communities in the Polish lowlands, continuing the expansion of agriculture onto the North European Plain and into southern Scandinavia.

See also **The Mesolithic of Northern Europe** (vol. 1, part 2); **The Mesolithic of Northwest Europe** (vol. 1, part 2); **Bruchenbrücken** (vol. 1, part 3); **Bylany** (vol. 1, part 3); **Beginnings of Farming in Northwestern Europe** (vol. 1, part 3); **Transition to Farming along the Lower Rhine and Meuse** (vol. 1, part 3); **Transition to Agriculture in Northern Europe** (vol. 1, part 3); **Milk, Wool, and Traction: Secondary Animal Products** (vol. 1, part 4); **Brześć Kujawski** (vol. 1, part 4).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Bogucki, Peter. “How Agriculture Came to North-Central Europe.” In *Europe’s First Farmers*. Edited by T. Douglas Price, pp. 197–218. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 2000.

———. “The Linear Pottery Culture of Central Europe: Conservative Colonists?” In *The Emergence of Pottery: Technology and Innovation in Ancient Societies*. Edited by W. K. Barnett and J. W. Hoopes, pp. 89–98. Smith-

sonian Series in Archaeological Inquiry. R. M. Adam and B. D. Smith, general editors. Washington, D.C.: Smithsonian Institution Press, 1995.

Constantin, Claude. *Fin du Rubané, céramique du Limbourg et post-Rubané: Le néolithique le plus ancien en bassin parisien et en Hainaut*. BAR International Series, no. 273(ii). Oxford: BAR International Series, 1985.

Gronenborn, Detlef. “A Variation on a Basic Theme: The Transition to Farming in Southern Central Europe.” *Journal of World Prehistory* 13, no. 2 (1999): 123–210.

Lüning, Jens, Ulrich Kloos, and Siegfried Albert. “Westliche Nachbarn der bandkeramischen Kulture: La Hoguette und Limburg.” *Germania* 67, no. 2 (1989): 355–393.

Milisauskas, Sarunas. “Early Neolithic: The First Farmers in Europe, 7000–5500/5000 B.C.” In *European Prehistory: A Survey*. Edited by Sarunas Milisauskas. New York: Kluwer Academic/Plenum Publishers, 2002.

Müller-Karpe, Hermann. *Handbuch der Vorgeschichte Zweiter Band: Jungsteinzeit*. Munich: C. H. Beck, 1968.

Preuß, Joachim. *Das Neolithikum in Mitteleuropa: Kulturen-Wirtschaft-Umwelt vom 6. bis 3. Jahrtausend v.u.Z.* Vols. 1, 2. Weissbach, Germany: Beier and Beran, 1998.

LAWRENCE H. KEELEY, MARK GOLITKO

BRUCHENBRÜCKEN

The site of Bruchenbrücken lies about 5 kilometers south of Friedberg, Germany, in the Wetterau region, a loess plateau between the Taunus hills and the Vogelsberg and Spessart massifs. Excavations were conducted during the early to mid-1980s in the course of a research project based at the Johann Wolfgang Goethe University in Frankfurt, Germany. A new excavation campaign began in the spring of 2003 as housing development in the area continued. Bruchenbrücken is a multicomponent site with features dating to the earliest Linear Pottery culture (called *Linearbandkeramik*, or LBK, in German; LBK I c. 5400–5250 B.C.), younger LBK (LBK II c. 5250–5000 B.C.), Middle Neolithic (c. first half of the fifth millennium B.C.), and Bronze Age (unclear dates at this site).

The site became famous for its earliest LBK component, notably the association of classic earliest LBK material with that of another Early Neolithic tradition from western and west-central Europe

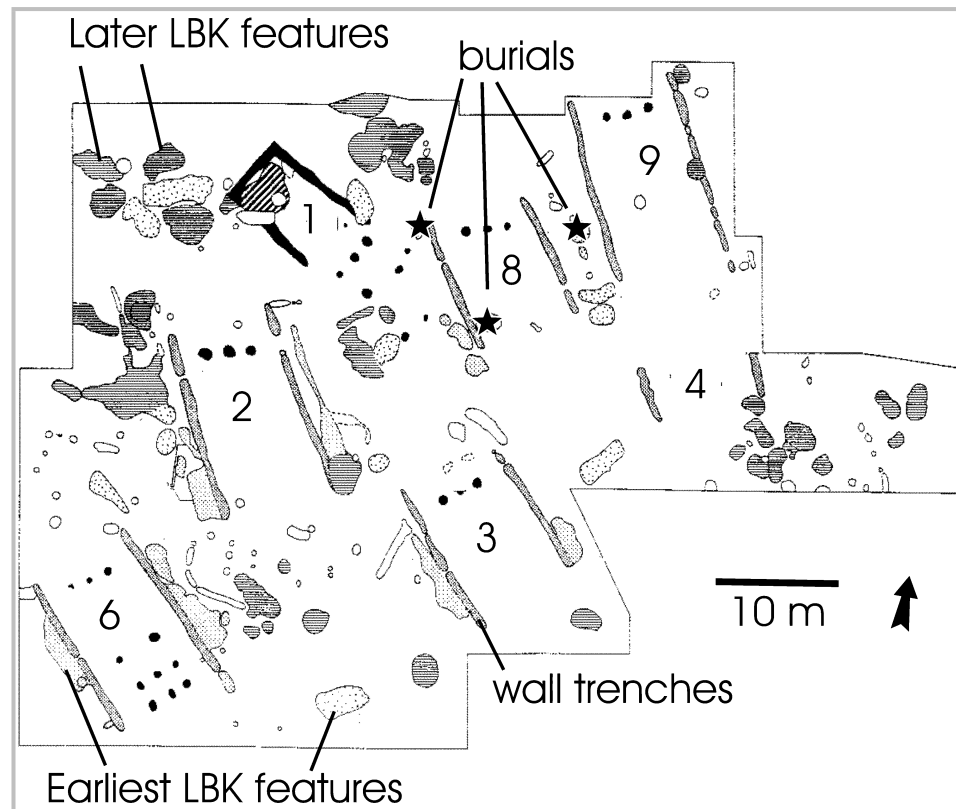


Fig. 1. Site plan of Bruchenbrücken. COURTESY OF DETLEF GRONENBORN. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

known as “La Hoguette.” This contemporaneous occupation would have taken place between 5350 and 5250 B.C. The site plan (fig. 1) shows the remains of six houses dating to the earliest LBK (2, 3, 4, 6, 8, and 9) and one (1) dating to the younger LBK. Earliest LBK houses are arranged in two rows and are oriented in a direction that is roughly NNW–SSE, the southern row showing a slight turn toward the west. Because of the close proximity of the house plans to one another, it can be ruled out that they were contemporaneous. It seems more likely that neighboring structures represent succeeding buildings, with the new structure erected close to its predecessor. Owing to continuous occupation of the site during the LBK period and resulting disturbances in the extraction pits alongside houses, it has not been possible to seriate archaeological material in more than a very rough order. Another problem has been the numerous vessel refittings (reconstruction of ceramic vessels with sherds to achieve a possible idea of the original vessel’s shape and decoration), notably from houses 2, 3, and 6. As a result of these taphonomic problems,

a stable internal earliest LBK chronology could not be established. At the end of the earliest LBK there seems to have been a hiatus, and the site was resettled at an advanced stage of LBK II, after about 5200 B.C. At that point Bruchenbrücken became occupied continuously, until the end of the LBK in about 5000 B.C.

The archaeological material recovered from the site shows wide-ranging links to surrounding regions. About 80 percent of the lithic material from the earliest phase came from the Maas Valley, which lies at a distance of 250 kilometers. There are, however, no LBK sites dating to this period between the Wetterau and the Maas, so the large amount of “exotic” flint needs explanation. It may be linked with La Hoguette pottery (fig. 2). La Hoguette is a ware attributed to Late Mesolithic forager-horticulturalists (who had adapted small-scale agricultural practices) that is distributed across a wide area along the Rhine and its adjacent uplands and reaches as far as the English Channel in northern France. The ware can be distinguished from LBK pottery by shape, texture, and decoration tech-

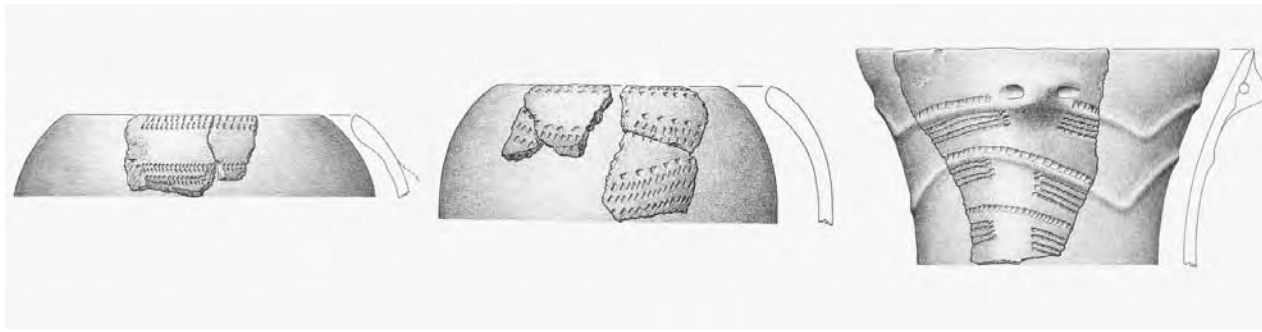


Fig. 2. Fragments of La Hoguette pottery from Bruchenbrücken, Friedberg, Germany. FROM LÜNING, KLOOS, AND ALBERT 1989. COURTESY OF K. F. RITTERSHOFER. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

nique. In addition to La Hoguette ware, a triangular point was excavated from an earliest LBK pit. Formerly such items were mistakenly called “Danubian points” because of their abundant appearance on western LBK sites. It is now clear that they actually represent a central and western European Late Mesolithic tradition. Not unexpectedly, this point also was manufactured out of Maas Valley flint.

Apart from the typological differences, there are two different blade-manufacturing techniques. The shape of a few blades shows clear traces of a western European Late Mesolithic core-reduction tradition, while the majority of blades were produced in the technique of the central European Late Mesolithic and Early Neolithic. These lithic traditions are technologically exclusive of each other and result in differing end products; both are regionally exclusive as well.

Thus at Bruchenbrücken there are two differing pottery traditions, two distinct lithic traditions, and raw material imports in considerable quantity from an area that was not, at the time, settled by LBK villages. Considering the entirety of this evidence, one might justifiably think of two discrete yet contemporaneous ethnic groups that interacted economically and certainly also socially. One group, the manufacturers of La Hoguette pottery and triangular points, has local Late Mesolithic roots. These people had come under the influence of innovations ultimately going back to the southern French Mediterranean coast. New evidence from pollen profiles taken a little distance from Bruchenbrücken shows that the environment had been altered artificially as early as 5700–5000 B.C. Heliophytic (sun-loving)

plants increase in number, and *Plantago lanceolata* (a weed associated with animal husbandry) indicates a human presence. Pollen from a poppy variety indigenous to southern France (*Papaver setigerum*) shows that the innovations would have come from this direction. There also were slight indications of cereal pollen of an undetermined variety. The changes in the composition of the natural vegetation can be attributed to an economy that was based on horticulture and some stockbreeding, notably sheep and goats.

There are numerous sites in central Europe where some remains of sheep and goats, and also cattle, have been found in Late Mesolithic layers. The most revealing site is Stuttgart–Bad Cannstatt, where a layer with La Hoguette pottery and evidence of a western European Late Mesolithic lithic tradition has been excavated, first in the 1960s and then during the early 1990s. The analysis of the newly available faunal and botanical material showed that the site was occupied briefly by a small band during the spring and fall seasons. The group had rested at the location for only a few days and then had continued with its yearly exploitation cycle (yearly or seasonal exploitation of the natural environment). Domestic animal remains belong to sheep and goats that were slaughtered on the spot and prepared for a meal, as is indicated by the presence of a spice weed (*Allium ursinum*, or wild garlic).

Other remains stem from the local, typical wild fauna, such as red or roe deer, aurochs, and many smaller animals. Wheat pollen shows that cereals were consumed at the site. It is likely that wheat was

not grown at this location but was brought in from elsewhere, maybe from LBK farmsteads. Because the occupation dates to 5500–5300 B.C., it cannot be ruled out that the people of Bad Cannstatt had contact with the earliest LBK sites, some of which lie close together. It is thus not impossible that wheat was obtained through exchange with farmers, but no definite artifacts of LBK origin have been found.

Stuttgart–Bad Cannstatt is a site type complementary to the LBK settlement of Bruchenhöfen. It was not maintained by LBK farmers but by La Hoguette forager-horticulturalists. Both sites give insights into the complex interrelationship and co-existence of two different populations at the transition from the Mesolithic to the Neolithic in central Europe.

See also **First Farmers of Central Europe** (vol. 1, part 3); **Bylany** (vol. 1, part 3); **Transition to Agriculture in Northern Europe** (vol. 1, part 3).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Brunnacker, Margit, Winfried Reiff, Edelgard Soergel, and Wolfgang Taute. “Neolithische Fundschicht mit Harpunen-Fragmenten im Travertin von Stuttgart–Bad Cannstatt.” *Fundberichte aus Schwaben Neue Folge* 18 (1967): 43–60.
- Gronenborn, Detlef. “A Variation on a Basic Theme: The Transition to Farming in Southern Central Europe.” *Journal of World Prehistory* 13, no. 2 (1999): 123–210.
- Kalis, Arie J., et al. “Der La-Hoguette-Fundhorizont in der Wilhelma von Stuttgart–Bad Cannstatt: Anthrakologische, archäopalynologische, bodenkundliche, malakozoologische, radiometrische, und säugetierkundliche Untersuchungen.” In *Zeit-Räume: Gedenkschrift für Wolfgang Taute*. Vol. 2. Edited by B. Gehlen, M. Heinen, and A. Tillmann, pp. 649–672. Bonn, Germany: Deutsche Gesellschaft für Ur- und Frühgeschichte/Rudolf Habelt, 2001.
- Lüning, Jens, ed. *Ein Siedlungsplatz der Ältesten Bandkeramik in Bruchenhöfen, Stadt Friedberg/Hessen*. Universitätsforschungen zur Prähistorischen Archäologie 39. Bonn, Germany: R. Habelt, 1997.
- Lüning, Jens, Ulrich Kloos, and Siegfried Albert. “Westliche Nachbarn der bandkeramischen Kultur: Die Keramikgruppen La Hoguette, und Limburg.” *Germania* 67 (1989): 355–393.
- Schweizer, Astrid. *Archäopalynologische Untersuchungen zur Neolithisierung der nördlichen Wetterau, Hessen*. Dissertationes Botanicae 350. Berlin and Stuttgart, Germany: Gebrüder Borntraeger Verlagsbuchhandlung, 2001.

DETLEF GRONENBORN

BYLAN Y

Bylany is one of the key sites of the *Linearbandkeramik* (Linear Pottery or LBK), which is probably the best-known culture of Neolithic Europe, a remarkably uniform phenomenon across a vast area from France to Hungary. Although many large LBK settlements have been excavated, the importance of the Bylany project resides in its pioneering nature, its scale and longevity (excavations and analysis spanning nearly fifty years), and the ideas it continues to generate.

Bylany is located near Kutná Hora in Bohemia (Czech Republic), some 70 kilometers east of Prague. A series of settlement “microareas” lie in the valley of the Bylanka stream. The soil is now, as in the Neolithic, a fertile brown chernozem on a loess base. The main settlement at Bylany I, the focus of this article, lies on a gentle north-facing slope cut by smaller stream channels that were active during the Neolithic. Discovered in 1952, the site was excavated by Bohumil Soudský as the first major project of the Czech Archaeological Institute. Between 1953 and 1967, 7 hectares of the 30 hectare site were uncovered. The work set new standards in archaeological excavation and had an international impact. Only one excavation comparable in size had taken place previously, at Köln-Lindenthal in Germany. But Köln-Lindenthal was excavated at a time when Neolithic houses were thought to be pit dwellings, so the post-built structures were misinterpreted as granaries. Bylany therefore represents the first large-scale modern excavation of an LBK settlement. While Soudský later moved on to research the LBK of the Paris Basin, work continued at Bylany, led by Ivan Pavlů and others, to analyze and publish Soudský’s data, and to explore the regional landscape.

Pavlů sees the work at Bylany in terms of several distinct phases of research, gradually expanding the area and periods represented. Since the 1970s a small LBK settlement, a *Stichbandkeramik* (Stroked Pottery, or SBK) cemetery, an SBK circular ditched enclosure (or “rondel”), and an Eneolithic (Copper Age) settlement have been excavated, all within 1.5 kilometers of Bylany I. Much can now be said about two millennia of settlement and ritual activity at Bylany. No Mesolithic remains have been found, de-

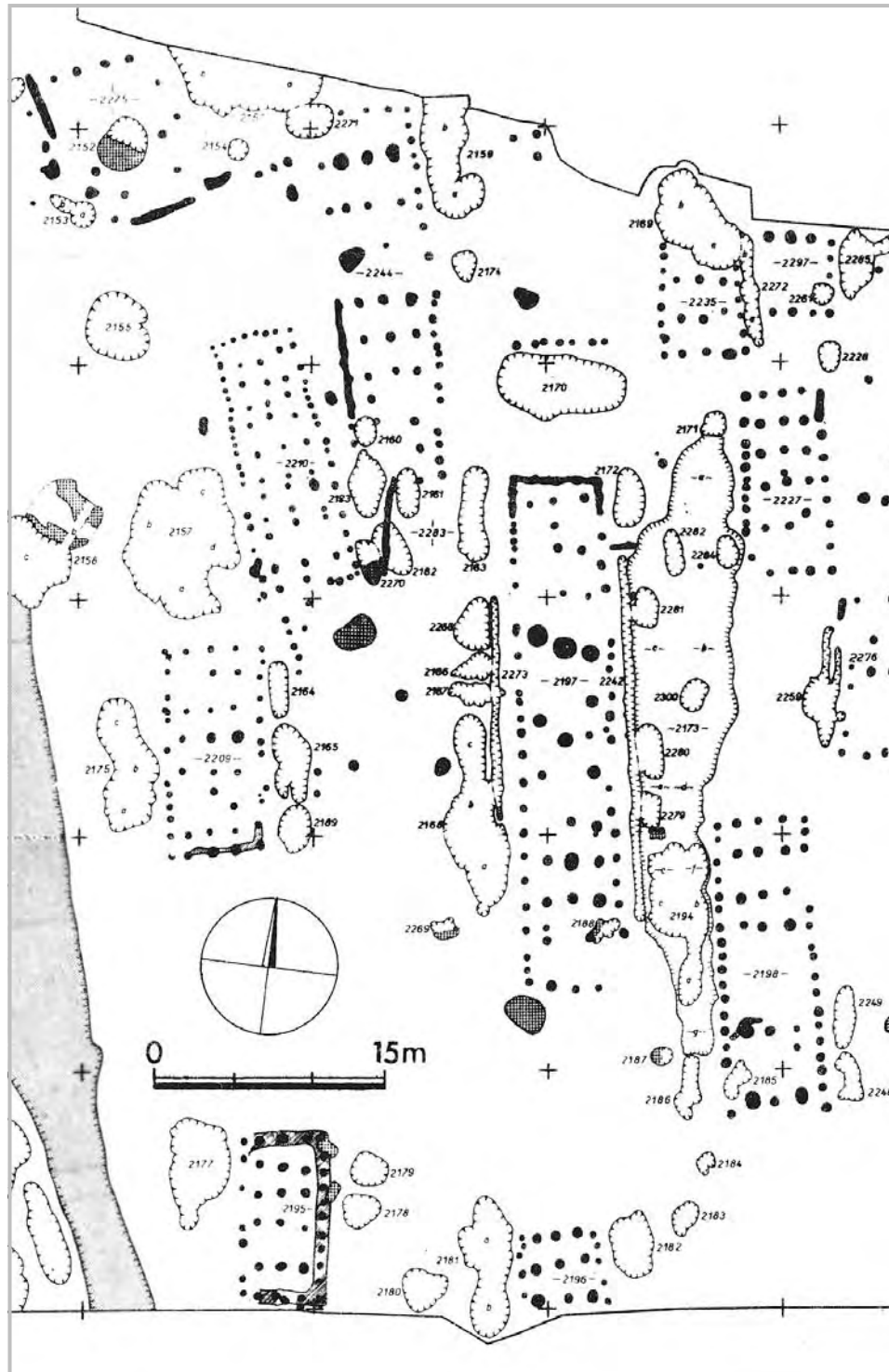


Fig. 1. Portion of site plan of Bylany showing LBK houses and borrow pits of various sizes and phases. COURTESY OF INSTITUTE OF ARCHAEOLOGY. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

spite intensive fieldwalking; the LBK occupation begins in that culture's earliest phase, marked by organic-tempered pottery, and it spans the second half of the sixth millennium B.C. The succeeding SBK and Lengyel phases cover most of the fifth millennium B.C., while the Eneolithic settlement dates to around 3000 B.C.

At Bylany 1 some 130 house plans were uncovered, along with several hundred pits and other features. Only a few of these are the typically trapezoidal or apsidal SBK and Lengyel structures. The LBK houses conform to the standard pattern: rectangular timber longhouses averaging 20 meters in length, all uniformly oriented north-south (the entrance presumed to be at the southern end), with a tripartite, modular ground plan, the smaller buildings comprising just one or two of these modules. Some of the later houses had their external walls set in a continuous bedding trench rather than a row of discrete postholes. The largest houses (more than 45 meters long) were formerly interpreted as communal structures ("clubhouses"), but their associated finds are not qualitatively different.

Around most houses, usually flanking the long sides, are irregular pits containing large quantities of artifacts. They are assumed to be borrow pits, dug to provide clay for the walls and then left open to collect contemporary household rubbish (although the occurrence of intrusive SBK sherds may indicate more complex formation processes). Pavlů has defined a "building complex" as all features within an arbitrary 5 meters' distance of the house; farther away lay other groups of pits, perhaps marking areas of communal activity. Finds from the pits are dominated by pottery, but ground and chipped stone is also present. It is the latter assemblage, including flint imported from Poland, that hints at the networks of exchange and interaction that sustained the LBK as an entity.

Despite the great density of structures at Bylany they rarely intercut: like many, but not all, LBK settlements, old house sites were not built upon, whether for practical (if a mound remained) or symbolic reasons. Rather than stratigraphy, the basis of the site phasing is a quantitative analysis of the banded motifs on the pottery, based on the proportions of impressed (*Notenkopf*, or "music note") and incised decoration. Already in the 1950s Soudský was using a computerized system of finds

recording, based on punched cards. More recently, discriminant analysis has tested and refined the sequence of occupation and by the 1980s some twenty-five settlement phases were recognized, with up to ten houses within the excavated area in any one phase.

The Bylany chronology has sparked much debate about the nature of LBK society and economy. Following earlier scholars, Soudský saw discontinuities in the ceramic phasing as evidence of "cyclical" agriculture, based on slash-and-burn cultivation: the community abandoned the site when the soil was exhausted and returned periodically when vegetation had regenerated. The economy was seen as primarily agricultural, supplemented by animal husbandry, although there is little direct evidence: bone rarely survives on the acid, loess soils favored by LBK communities. The cyclical model was heavily criticized in the 1970s; other sites, such as Elsloo in the Netherlands, did not show these breaks, and the analogy with tropical agriculture was inappropriate. The theory was replaced by a model of settled horticulture, with large settlements giving rise to "daughter" sites as population increased—the archetypal example being the vast Aldenhovener Platte excavations in the Rhineland.

Although the hiatuses at Bylany remain, Pavlů now argues, less dogmatically, for an irregular development of settlement, with breaks marked by the increased deposition of (nonportable) grindstones in the preceding phase and a planned layout of houses at each reoccupation—this layout became less ordered over time as houses went out of use and were replaced. The new understanding fits with Alasdair Whittle's critique of the sedentary horticulture model for the LBK: instead he sees "tethered" or "restrained" mobility (both seasonal and periodic) articulated through a "commitment to place" encapsulated in the formality of the longhouse. There remains the paradox, first expressed by Gordon Childe, that these "commodious and substantial" houses often lack evidence for prolonged occupation—but this now has to be understood in social and symbolic terms, not the perceived constraints of economy and environment. Perhaps the longhouse served primarily as a metaphor for the construction of social order. Further insights will only come, as in recent publications on Bylany, through linking detailed analysis of data with innovative interpreta-

tions. Once the basis for a narrow economic model, Bylany in the twenty-first century is producing new stories about life in the Neolithic.

See also **First Farmers of Central Europe** (vol. 1, part 3); **Bruchenbrücken** (vol. 1, part 3); **Transition to Agriculture in Northern Europe** (vol. 1, part 3).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Buttler, Werner, and Waldemar Haberey. *Die bandkeramische Ansiedlung bei Köln-Lindenthal*. Berlin: De Gruyter, 1936.
- Childe, Vere Gordon. *The Dawn of European Civilization*. 6th ed. London: Routledge and Paul, 1957.
- Lüning, Jens. "Research into the Bandkeramik Settlement of the Aldenhovener Platte in the Rhineland." *Analecta Præhistorica Leidensia* 15 (1982): 1–30.
- Modderman, P. J. R. "Linearbandkeramik aus Elsloo und Stein." *Analecta Præhistorica Leidensia* 3 (1970).
- Pavlů, Ivan. *Life on a Neolithic Site: Bylany: A Situational Analysis of Artefacts*. Prague: Institute of Archaeology, 2000. (Detailed material-culture studies.)
- , ed. *Bylany: Varia 1: Forty-five Years of Neolithic Studies at Bylany*. Prague: Archeologický Ústav, 1998. (Site reports and studies of formation processes, pottery technology and eco-data.)
- Pavlů, I., J. Rulf, and M. Zápotocká. "Bylany Rondel: Model of the Neolithic Site." *Památky Archeologické Supplement* 3 (1995): 7–123. (Excavations at the SBK enclosure, and its landscape context.)
- , eds. "Theses on the Neolithic Site of Bylany." *Památky Archeologické* 77 (1986): 288–412. (A series of papers on chronology and methodology.)
- Pavlů, I., M. Zápotocká, and O. Soudský. *Bylany Katalog: Výzkum 1953–1967*. 5 vols. Prague: Archeologický Ústav, 1983–1987. (Illustrated catalog of features and finds from Bylany I.)
- Rulf, J., ed. *Bylany Seminar 1987: Collected Papers*. Prague: Institute of the CAS, 1989. (Papers on various aspects of Bylany and the Neolithic of central Europe.)
- Soudský, B. "The Neolithic Site of Bylany." *Antiquity* 36 (1962): 190–200. (First English-language summary.)
- Soudský, B., and I. Pavlů. "The Linear Pottery Culture Settlement Patterns of Central Europe." In *Man, Settlement and Urbanism*. Edited by Peter J. Ucko, Ruth Tringham, and G. W. Dimbleby, pp. 317–328. London: Duckworth, 1972. (Classic statement of the "cyclical" model.)
- Whittle, Alasdair. *Europe in the Neolithic: The Creation of New Worlds*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1996. (For the LBK, see chap. 6.)

JONATHAN LAST



BEGINNINGS OF FARMING IN NORTHWESTERN EUROPE

FOLLOWED BY FEATURE ESSAYS ON:

<i>Neolithic Sites of the Orkney Islands</i>	281
<i>Hambledon Hill</i>	283
<i>Transition to Farming along the Lower</i>	
<i>Rhine and Meuse</i>	286

By the end of the fourth millennium B.C. most of the peripheral archipelagos of northwestern Europe had been colonized by Neolithic farmers and exploited for animal husbandry and cereal growing. At that time in the whole of northwestern Europe cattle—and livestock in general—were central to the economy and to symbolical systems, buried with the dead, accumulated in deposits, and represented on megaliths. Even in coastal areas stable isotope analyses (using carbon and nitrogen) quite paradoxically show evidence of a diet based mainly on terrestrial resources. This situation is strikingly different from the marine-based diet found in the same regions at the end of the Mesolithic, that is, one or two millennia earlier, depending on the region considered.

This essay reviews the processes involved in the far-reaching economical, social, and cultural transformations that led from harvesting the sea to stock rearing. Most curiously, while they led to the same results in the overall region, they varied widely in their nature and rhythms in the different parts of northwestern Europe. A new, “Neolithic” way of life appeared as early as 5000 B.C., or even a bit earlier, in the Paris basin and in western France, but it took a millennium for animal husbandry and crop

growing to cross the English Channel and settle in Britain. The appearance and diffusion of domesticates and cultigens, as well as farming techniques, might have involved a native Mesolithic component in Brittany and, to some extent, in Ireland. In contrast, the establishment of farming in the Paris basin seems to have been linked largely to the arrival of new population groups, which were connected to the Rhine Valley and central Europe. Acknowledging that diversity of situations, the following text is divided into discussions of each particular region.

THE PARIS BASIN

In the Paris basin farming appeared abruptly at the end of the sixth millennium B.C., in connection with the arrival of a late *Linearbandkeramik* population originating from more easterly areas. This culture, represented from the Balkans to the eastern fringe of the Paris basin, had very long houses and a distinctive pottery style with linear designs. It was responsible for the spread of domesticates and cultigens in its distribution area. Whether this diffusion also involved an active role of local Mesolithic populations—via exchanges and acculturation—is still a matter of debate. In the Paris basin, however, the

situation seems relatively clear. During the last centuries of the sixth millennium B.C., in the eastern part of this region, a “package” of new techniques—plant growing, animal husbandry, stone polishing, and pottery making—appeared, together with longhouses and single inhumations in flat graves.

Cuiry-les-Chaudardes, in the Aisne Valley 150 kilometers northeast of Paris, is a famous village of this period. It was rebuilt several times and includes about thirty very long houses. Hamlets of this kind also existed in the Marne, the Seine, and the Yonne Valleys. *Linearbandkeramik* people introduced peas (*Pisum sativum*), lentils (*Lens culinaris*), emmer (*Triticum dicoccum*), einkorn (*Triticum monococcum*), and naked barley (*Hordeum vulgare* var. *nudum*) to the Paris basin. Flax (*Linum usitatissimum*) and poppy (*Papaver somniferum*), represented at some *Linearbandkeramik* sites in Germany, the Netherlands, and Belgium, have not been found so far. As for domestic animals, cattle (*Bos taurus*), pigs (*Sus scrofa domestica*), sheep (*Ovis aries*), and sometimes goats (*Capra hircus*) are present at *Linearbandkeramik* sites of the area. Animal husbandry usually relied on cattle and sheep. Dog (*Canis familiaris*) remains are very scarce at sites of this period, but this only means that the species probably was not consumed.

The hypothesis of local domestication of cattle and pigs (technically possible, as their wild progenitors—aurochs [*Bos primigenius*] and wild boar [*Sus scrofa scrofa*] respectively—were present in western Europe) that had been promoted for some time has been rejected in the light of new metrical analyses and, with respect to cattle, DNA results. Sheep and goats, which had no wild ancestors in Europe, were domesticated in the eastern Taurus region in present-day Turkey and in the Zagros region on the border between present-day Iraq and Iran during the ninth millennium B.C. and the beginning of the eighth millennium B.C. From the beginning of the seventh millennium they spread across Europe following the two main streams of Neolithic dispersal: along the northern coastline of the Mediterranean and across the Continent following the Danubian corridor. When they entered the Paris basin, shortly before 5000 B.C., these species had a long history of relations with humans and had traveled about 3,000 kilometers from their point of origin.

Scholars lose track of the Mesolithic cultures in the Paris basin several centuries before the arrival of the *Linearbandkeramik*. The direct causes of this disappearance are unclear, although they probably are linked to the arrival of farming groups. Data documenting the end of the Mesolithic are scarce in this region, but the evidence from sites at Noyen-sur-Seine in the southeast or at Dreuil-lès-Amiens in the north, both dated to the middle of the sixth millennium B.C., shows no warning of an imminent change. Both sites have yielded quantities of large game bones and no trace of domestic plants or animals. Noyen-sur-Seine, located at the very bottom of an old branch of the Seine, very likely was a fishing camp, as shown by numerous eel (*Anguilla anguilla*) and pike (*Esox lucius*) bones as well as the presence of fish traps made of willow twigs and hooks made of boar tusk enamel.

By the mid-fifth millennium the hamlets of longhouses vanished from the Paris basin, and causewayed enclosures appeared. In the southern part of the region an original culture, the “Cerny group,” emerged. Its pottery retained features from the *Linearbandkeramik*, but other characteristics were entirely new: funerary practices, for instance, with the erection of earthen long barrows clustered in large cemeteries, which replaced the *Linearbandkeramik* small graveyards of flat graves. Balloy and Vignely, south and east of Paris respectively, as well as Passy-sur-Yonne and Villeneuve-la-Guyard, in northern Burgundy, are important cemeteries from this period. Grave goods included new items, such as wild boar tusks, deer canines, carnivore teeth, pond turtle (*Emys orbicularis*) shells, bird talons, and flint arrowheads. They evoke a very different universe from the one represented by joints of domestic animals placed in *Linearbandkeramik* graves. These new symbols might have had their roots in the Late Mesolithic, as suggested by the evocation of hunting and the close parallels with items recovered at the famous, well-preserved Late Mesolithic cemeteries of Tévéc and Hoëdic in Brittany discussed below.

Important changes also took place in the economic sphere. The production of flint blades, previously important, declined, and the lithic industry shifted toward a heavy, flake-based one. Animal husbandry focused almost completely on cattle exploitation, and crop growing was marked by the dis-

appearance of lentils and peas and the introduction, probably via connections with the south of France, of a new cereal, the bread-type wheat (*Triticum aestivum/durum*).

At the same time in the northeast of the Paris basin the Rössen and Epi-Rössen cultures developed in connection with the Rhine Valley. Although they were different from their *Linearbandkeramik* predecessor in the Paris basin, they retained an important blade component in their flint industries. Animal husbandry, which relied partly on pigs, showed significant differences with both the *Linearbandkeramik* and the Cerny group. On the basis of the Cerny group and the post-*Linearbandkeramik* Rössen culture, a northern branch of the Chasséen culture (*Chasséen septentrional*) and a westerly branch of the Michelsberg culture developed and interacted in the Paris basin toward the end of the fifth millennium.

A new cereal, the hulled barley (*Hordeum vulgare* var. *vulgare*), appeared in the records of this period and tended to replace the naked variety (*Hordeum vulgare* var. *nudum*). Poppy, which had been present for a long time in more easterly regions, is evident on several sites of either culture. Wetlands started to be extensively exploited at that time. The settlements of Bercy on the eastern outskirts of Paris and Louviers in Normandy are situated in regularly flooded areas, at the bottom of the Seine and the Eure Valleys respectively. Their locations offer good parallels with the Late Mesolithic site of Noyen-sur-Seine, but they are devoted to different activities: Bercy and Louviers probably are linked to the use of good pastures for cattle and not to fishing. The latter point is confirmed by stable isotope analysis (especially nitrogen) that shows no indication of freshwater fish in the human diet.

BRITTANY AND WESTERN FRANCE

Claims have been made that domestic animals appeared at the very end of the Mesolithic in Brittany. These claims relied on cattle and sheep remains at Beg-an-Dorchenn, near Quimper, in the southwest of this region, and at Tévéc, near Quiberon, in the south. Some of these remains have been reexamined and turned out to be of much more recent date (Iron Age). Moreover, the reanalysis of the faunal assemblages from settlements dating to the end of the Mesolithic in this part of western France has not

verified remains of any domestic animals except dogs. (Remains of this species have been found at Tévéc.) The meat supply was based on a combination of shellfish, fish, large terrestrial and marine wild mammals, and various birds, mostly ducks and auks. Stable isotope analyses (carbon) have shown that among these different food sources, marine items were the most important. Livestock also is absent from funerary contexts at Tévéc and Hoëdic, two Late Mesolithic cemeteries in the south of Brittany. In these contexts grave goods of animal origin are deer antlers, deer and wild boar mandibles, carnivore paws, and white-tailed eagle (*Haliaeetus albicilla*) talons.

In the 1990s, however, two complete bovine skeletons, in all likelihood domestic, were discovered below a long mound at Locmariaquer, in the Gulf of Morbihan. They were associated with an early date, c. 5300–5000 B.C., which corresponds locally to the Late Mesolithic. There are two potential sources for these domesticates. The first is the area to the south of the Loire estuary, where Neolithic elements of southern origin (Late Cardial), dating to the final centuries of the sixth millennium, have been found. The second is the eastern part of Brittany, where a village with longhouses of Ville-neuve-Saint-Germain (a culture of *Linearbandkeramik* descent) character has been dated to the beginning of the fifth millennium. Other research has discovered a Mediterranean Neolithic influence on the late Mesolithic lithic processing techniques in southern Brittany, suggesting that a southern route is most likely.

Acquiring domesticates does not translate into becoming a farmer if technical knowledge was not transferred at the same time. Unfortunately, we have no zooarchaeological record of what followed this very first occurrence of livestock in Brittany, acidic soils often being merciless to bones. A few sites of the fifth millennium B.C., located farther south in west-central France, have yielded faunal samples containing sparse domesticate remains. They could indicate a gradual adoption of animal keeping, but more conclusive data is needed.

In Brittany stable isotope data showed a dramatic shift of the human diet from seafood to terrestrial resources occurring during the fifth millennium B.C. This shift presupposes a profound economic change and could have resulted from the adoption

of farming. Whatever the real place of domestic animals in the Neolithic economy of Brittany and west-central France at that time, there is strong evidence that cattle and small livestock were at the center of symbolic systems in these regions. They are represented on megaliths of this period, as on the broken slab reused as capstones at Gavrinis and Locmariaquer, in the Gulf of Morbihan, and buried with the dead, as in the long mound of Saint Michel at Carnac (also in the Gulf of Morbihan). Their horns also adorn bowls of the Chambon and Monbolo groups, which extend from the Loire estuary to the Pyrenees in the mid-fifth millennium.

The appearance of domestic plants and plant growing in western France is not easy to trace either, data being scarce and incomplete. Bread-type wheat is the most common cereal found in the early to mid-fifth millennium B.C. in western Normandy, Brittany, and west-central France. This tends to confirm the role, also evident in pottery styles and lithic technology, played by the Mediterranean Neolithic, together with a Neolithic of *Linearbandkeramik* origin, in the dissemination of farming in the western part of France. Examples of naked and hulled barley also have been found at sites of the mid-fifth millennium B.C. Neolithic farming also spread over peripheral islands, and most of them were exploited for animal keeping and probably cereal growing before the turn of the third millennium B.C. Settlements in Brittany dated to this period on Houat Island, off the southern coast, and on Molène Island, off the western coast, contained quantities of domestic animal remains, mostly of cattle and sheep.

SOUTHERN BRITAIN

Strikingly, there is no evidence of domestic livestock or cultigens in Britain before the first centuries of the fourth millennium B.C., even though farming had appeared at about the end of the sixth millennium on the other side of the English Channel, in the Rhine Valley and in northern France. Domestic animals and cultivated plants seem to have appeared in great numbers in southern England around 3900–3700 B.C., often in causewayed enclosures (Maiden Castle, Dorset, and Windmill Hill, Wiltshire) or in funerary contexts, as in earthen long barrows (e.g., Fussell's Lodge, Wiltshire), where they outnumber other species.

The sacred character of tombs and the still unclear function of monumental enclosures have led many authors to consider faunal and plant remains found in these contexts as not representative of what really was produced and consumed in everyday life. Similar characteristics (with domesticates far outnumbering wild animals and cereal grains found in high concentrations) have been noted from non-causewayed enclosure sites in southern England, such as the settlement at Runnymede, Surrey, or in middens at Hazleton and the Stumble (in Gloucestershire and Essex respectively). The picture provided by causewayed enclosures perhaps is not that far from the economic reality of the period. This could signify that farming had taken over abruptly in southern England sometime around 4000 B.C.

With the exception of the Maiden Castle assemblage, the faunal spectra in southern England at the beginning of the fourth millennium B.C. correspond to those identified in the Paris basin and adjacent areas to the east during the last centuries of the fifth millennium and the first centuries of the fourth millennium in both causewayed enclosures and unenclosed settlements. These assemblages either are overwhelmingly dominated by cattle or else feature pigs as a major element. The first type (cattle) belongs to Cerny and Chasséen contexts (mostly in the western half and south of the Paris basin) and the second (pigs) to Rössen and Michelsberg contexts (in the northeast of the Paris basin and the Rhine Valley). This could point toward the Paris basin and to the Rhine Valley as areas of origin for the husbandry practices that appeared in southern Britain at the beginning of the fifth millennium B.C. Supporting this point of view are metrical data that show that Early Neolithic cattle from southern Britain were distinctly smaller compared with the local aurochs (which seriously weakens any hypothesis of local domestication). They also were very close in size to contemporary domestic bovines from the Paris basin and, to some extent, from western Germany.

Cereals found at Early Neolithic sites of southern England are mostly emmer and bread wheat, with einkorn and barley also sometimes represented. These were all species known at that time on the other side of the English Channel. These finds are in agreement with indications yielded by the Early Neolithic ceramic evidence, with the widespread

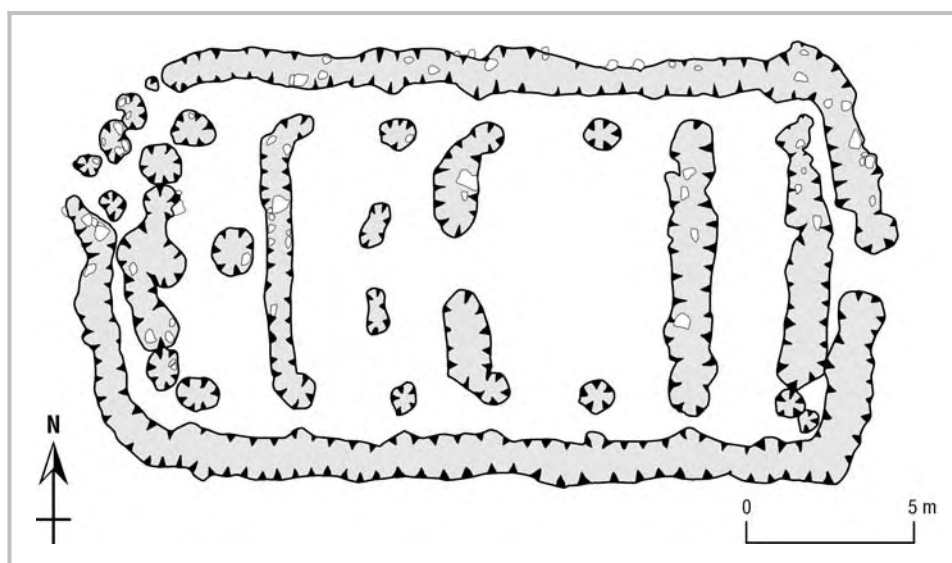


Fig. 1. The Balbridie timber hall plan (Grampian, Scotland). ADAPTED FROM FAIRWEATHER AND RALSTON 1993.

Carinated Bowl style echoing, though not exactly matching, Continental Michelsberg and northern Chasséen (*Chasséen septentrional*) pottery. Direct proof of contact across the English Channel is also offered by the presence of jadeite axes of Alpine origin in the south of England (and elsewhere in Britain and Ireland) around 3800 B.C. The presence of a few metadolerite axes from Plussulien (a polished axe workshop in the center of Brittany) in the south and the southwest of Britain also suggests contacts along a more westerly route.

SCOTLAND

As in southern Britain, there is no trace of domestic livestock or cultivated plants in Scotland before c. 4000 B.C. In this region acid soils have destroyed most of the zooarchaeological record relevant to the transition from the Mesolithic to the Neolithic. In coastal areas, however, shell middens have compensated for this acidity and have produced valuable data regarding the Late Mesolithic use of animals and the human diet. Several sites (namely, Cnoc Coig, Caisteal Nan Gillean, and Cnoc Sligeach) on the island of Oronsay (Inner Hebrides), dated to the end of the sixth millennium into the fifth millennium, produced quantities of limpet shells (*Patella* sp.) and remains of fish, mainly saithe (*Pollachius virens*); gray seal (*Halichoerus grypus*); harbor seal (*Phoca vitulina*); red deer (*Cervus elaphus*); wild

boar (*Sus scrofa scrofa*); and marine birds, among them, auks, gannet (*Sula bassana*), geese, and ducks. Morton, in Fife, on the eastern coast of Scotland, yielded similar data.

As in the Mesolithic of Brittany, stable isotope analyses carried out on Mesolithic human bones from Oronsay confirmed the importance of marine items in the diet. None of these sites has produced bones of domesticated animals. Mesolithic plant remains found at Staosnaig on Colonsay (an island near Oronsay) and at Morton do not represent cultivated crops either but include a wide collection of wild greens, such as lamb's-quarter (*Chenopodium album*), corn spurrey (*Spergula arvensis*), and at Staosnaig, a huge quantity of hazelnuts (*Corylus avellana*). (A cereal grain found at Staosnaig was radiocarbon dated to the second millennium B.C.)

A much different picture is furnished by one of the first Neolithic sites in Scotland, at Balbridie, in the Grampians. Dated to c. 3900–3800 B.C., it has a large timber hall, 24 by 12 meters (fig. 1), and has produced large quantities (more than 20,000) of charred cereal grains. Emmer wheat is the most important, followed by naked barley and bread wheat. Flax seeds also were present in the assemblage. As mentioned earlier, this plant has not been found in the Paris basin and western France but was encountered in the Neolithic of more easterly territories,

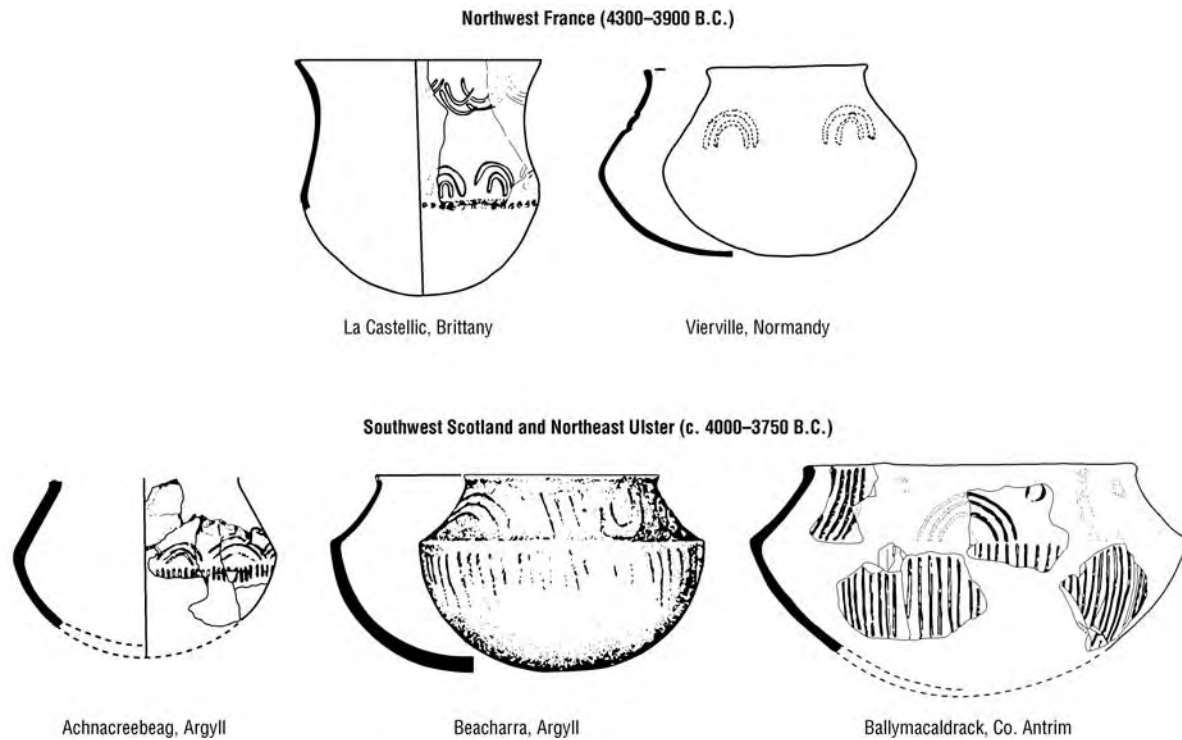


Fig. 2. Carinated bowls from Normandy and Brittany and from southwest Scotland and northeast Ulster, c. 4000 B.C. AFTER SHERIDAN 2000, MODIFIED, COURTESY ALISON SHERIDAN.

such as Belgium, the Netherlands, and Germany. This would suggest that domestic crops were introduced to eastern Scotland from a region situated in one of those areas.

Connections with the easterly territories also are implied in the timber hall architecture that finds good parallels in the Rössen culture. Unfortunately, Balbridie hall did not produce bones, nor did other Early Neolithic sites of mainland Scotland. Key information on Neolithic animal keeping has been obtained from the Orkney Islands. Probably already known to Mesolithic people, as revealed by lithic evidence, the Orkney archipelago was reached by farmers c. 3600 B.C., only a few centuries after the appearance of farming in the rest of Britain. The Knap of Howar, on the island of Papa Westray, is a small farmstead dated to this period. Shellfish, fish, and seabirds still were exploited at that time, as in the Mesolithic of mainland Scotland, but domestic animal bones far outnumber them in the assemblage. Animal husbandry relied on cattle and sheep; there was evidence of pigs as well but in far smaller quantities. Domestic animals had to be brought to the islands by sea, which indicates the existence of

large seaworthy boats. The same is true of the Outer Hebrides, where farmers landed during the fourth millennium, introducing cattle, sheep, and pigs.

Paradoxically, Neolithic farmers of about 3000 B.C. also brought a wild species—red deer—to the Orkneys (from where it disappeared sometime during the Middle Ages) and at roughly the same time to the Outer Hebrides. In the Orkneys isolation of these animals on small islands quickly led to a significant reduction in their stature. Reasons for their introduction are unclear; the need for antlers as raw material does not seem to be a sufficient explanation, and a deposit of complete animals, at the Links of Noltland (Westray, Orkney), a site dated to the late third millennium or early second millennium B.C., argues that symbolic aspects are not to be neglected. However this deposit is explained, this example weakens any rigid definition that might be offered of the domestication process and domestic status.

IRELAND

Red deer was a major terrestrial resource for most of the Mesolithic groups in Europe. Research has

	Paris Basin	Brittany	Southern Britain	Southern Ireland
Introduction of domesticates or local domestication	Introduction	Introduction	Introduction	Introduction
Date	c. 5000 B.C.	Around or prior to 5000 B.C.	c. 4000/3800 B.C.	c. 4300–4000 B.C.?
Context	Farming pioneers	Late Mesolithic?	Farming pioneers?	Late Mesolithic
Origin assumed				
Cattle	Danubian World: Eastern France, Germany	Danubian World? Paris Basin? Dates could also fit with the Mediterranean stream	Northern Chasséen or Michelsberg? Paris Basin	NO DATA AVAILABLE - But France or Spain should be considered
Sheep	Danubian World: Eastern France, Germany	NO DATA AVAILABLE	Northern Chasséen or Michelsberg? Paris Basin or Rhine Valley/ W Germany?	NO DATA ANALYZED
Pig	NO DATA ANALYZED	NO DATA AVAILABLE	NO DATA ANALYZED	NO DATA AVAILABLE
Acquisition of domesticates by hunter-gatherers	NO EVIDENCE	YES? Locmariaquer	NO EVIDENCE	YES - Ferriter's Cove, Dalkey Island, Kilgreany
Introduction of husbandry techniques	YES	NO DATA AVAILABLE	YES	YES?
Origin assumed	Danubian World	NO DATA AVAILABLE	Chasséen/Michelsberg	Castellic?

The appearance of animal husbandry in northwestern Europe. ADAPTED FROM TRESSET 2002.

shown, however, that the species probably was absent at that time from Ireland. It is likely that it was (re)introduced to the island at approximately the same time as it was to the Orkneys and the Outer Hebrides, at the turn of the third millennium, at least one millennium after the end of the Mesolithic in the area. Thus, Irish Mesolithic peoples did not know red deer and relied primarily on wild boar, birds, and fishes (mostly members of the salmon family and eels) with shellfish as well on the coastline.

Domestic animals (mostly cattle but perhaps also sheep) seem to have appeared for the first time in coastal contexts, in middens dated to the end of the Irish Mesolithic (mid- to late fifth millennium B.C.). The radiocarbon date obtained directly from one cattle bone recovered at the Late Mesolithic site of Ferriter's Cove, in the Dingle Peninsula (southwestern Ireland), is situated c. 4350 B.C. At that date animal husbandry and plant growing had not yet taken hold in Ireland nor in neighboring Britain. As cited earlier, sheep and goats originated in the Near East and could not have been domesticated from wild progenitors in Ireland. Aurochs (*Bos primigenius*) were absent from earlier, Pleistocene

and Early Holocene, contexts and probably never existed in Ireland.

This evidence points strongly to one or more episodes of contact between certain parts of Ireland and the western Continent, where domesticates and husbandry appeared during the sixth millennium B.C. (in Spain, Portugal, and southern France) and the early fifth millennium B.C. (in northwestern France). The appearance of a pottery style of Breton inspiration (the “Castellic” style) at the end of the fifth millennium or at the beginning of the fourth millennium at Achnacreebeag, on the Argyll Peninsula in the north of the Irish Sea (fig. 2), might substantiate such contact. The process of domestication introduction in a Late Mesolithic context noted at Ferriter's Cove has a close parallel in Brittany one millennium earlier. The few stable isotope data obtained from human bones from Ferriter's Cove do not reveal any important impact of this introduction on diet, which continued to rely mainly on marine resources. As in Brittany, there is no proof that the presence of domesticates led to the adoption of animal keeping; it is not known whether or not husbandry techniques were introduced at the same time as the animals.

Information at present supports the idea that definitive animal husbandry and plant growing appeared in Ireland c. 3800–3700 B.C. as part of the “Neolithic package” that included houses, pottery making, stone polishing, and the building of funerary monuments. Sites at Tankardstown, in County Limerick, and at Cloghers, in County Kerry, that date to this period have produced evidence of rectangular house layouts together with the bones of cattle and sheep. Numerous grains of emmer wheat also have been found at Tankardstown. House plans dating to the beginning of the fourth millennium are widespread in Ireland, but owing to the acidity of soils, bones have been preserved at only a few. The pottery style represented at Tankardstown is of the Carinated Bowl tradition, also widespread in Britain (see above). Thus, the appearance of farming c. 3800–3700 B.C. does not seem to be linked to the introduction of livestock in the second half of the fifth millennium.

The appearance of farming in northwestern Europe was a long and complex process, stretching over nearly two millennia and effected through exchanges, influences, colonization, and acculturation. From that point of view, distinct regions tell rather different stories (see table): colonization of new territories most likely played a role in the dissemination of farming techniques together with livestock and crops in the Paris basin, in southern Britain, and to some extent in Scotland. In Brittany and in fifth-millennium Ireland more complex processes of interaction between farming incomers and local foragers seem to have been involved in the introduction of domesticates. In Ireland it is likely that two separate episodes of introduction occurred, one affecting some coastal areas during the late fifth millennium, the other, more widespread and from a different source, occurring at the beginning of the fourth.

Another striking dimension of the process is the numerous long-distance contacts involved, following routes between the Lower Rhine Valley and the eastern coast of Britain, the Paris basin and southern England, and the Continental facade and the Irish Sea. These long-distance contacts are perceptible through the circulation of very different items, such as pottery styles, lithic technologies, polished axes, cereals, and domestic animals. No general model can capture this complexity, and Gabriel Cooney’s

statement in *Landscapes of Neolithic Ireland* that it is essential to think about the Neolithic “in terms of local worlds linked by exotic elements” exactly applies here.

See also *The Mesolithic of Northwest Europe* (vol. 1, part 2); *First Farmers of Central Europe* (vol. 1, part 3); *Neolithic Sites of the Orkney Islands* (vol. 1, part 3); *Hambledon Hill* (vol. 1, part 3); *Transition to Farming along the Lower Rhine and Meuse* (vol. 1, part 3); *The Megalithic World* (vol. 1, part 4); *Avebury* (vol. 1, part 4); *Barnenez* (vol. 1, part 4); *Boyne Valley Passage Graves* (vol. 1, part 4).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Bakels, Corrie. “The Neolithization of the Netherlands: Two Ways, One Result.” In *Plants in Neolithic Britain and Beyond*. Edited by Andrew S. Fairbairn, pp. 101–106. Neolithic Studies Group Seminar Papers, no. 5. Oxford: Oxbow Books, 2000.
- . “Archaeobotanical Investigations in the Aisne Valley, Northern France, from the Neolithic up to the Early Middle Ages.” *Vegetation History and Archaeobotany* 8, nos. 1–2 (1999): 71–77.
- Cooney, Gabriel. *Landscapes of Neolithic Ireland*. London: Routledge, 2000.
- Fairbairn, Andrew. “On the Spread of Crops across Neolithic Britain with Special Reference to Southern England.” In *Plants in Neolithic Britain and Beyond*. Edited by Andrew S. Fairbairn, pp. 107–121. Neolithic Studies Group Seminar Papers, no. 5. Oxford: Oxbow Books, 2000.
- Fairweather, Alan, and Ian B. M. Ralston. “The Neolithic Timber Hall at Balbridie, Grampian Region, Scotland: The Building, the Date, the Plant Macofossils.” *Antiquity* 67 (1993): 313–323.
- Kiely, Jacinta. “A Neolithic House in Cloghers, Co. Kerry.” In *Neolithic Settlement in Ireland and Western Britain*. Edited by Ian Armit, Eileen Murphy, Eiméar Nelis, and Derek Simpson. Oxford: Oxbow Books, forthcoming.
- Marchand, Grégor. *La néolithisation de l’ouest de la France: Caractérisation des industries lithiques*. BAR International Series, no. 748. Oxford: J. and E. Hedges, 1999.
- Mellars, Paul. *Excavations on Oronsay: Prehistoric Human Ecology on a Small Island*. Edinburgh: Edinburgh University Press, 1987.
- Mithen, Steven, Nyree Finlay, Wendy Carruthers, Stephen Carter, and Patrick Ashmore. “Plant Use in the Mesolithic: Evidence from Staosnaig, Isle of Colonsay, Scotland.” *Journal of Archaeological Science* 28 (2001): 223–234.
- Mordant, Claude, and Daniel Mordant. “Noyen-sur-Seine: A Mesolithic Waterside Settlement.” In *The Wetland*

- Revolution in Prehistory*. Edited by Bryony Coles, pp. 55–64. Exeter, U.K.: Prehistoric Society, 1992.
- Péquart, Marthe, Saint-Just Péquart, Marcellin Boule, and Henri-Victor Vallois. *Téviec: Station-nécropole mé-solithique du Morbihan*. Paris: Archives de l'Institut de Paléontologie Humaine, 1937.
- Richards, Mike P., and Paul Mellars. "Stable Isotopes and the Seasonality of the Oronsay Middens." *Antiquity* 72 (1998): 178–184.
- Robinson, Mark A. "Further Considerations of Neolithic Charred Cereals, Fruits, and Nuts." In *Plants in Neolithic Britain and Beyond*. Edited by Andrew S. Fairbairn, pp. 85–90. Neolithic Studies Group Seminar Papers, no. 5. Oxford: Oxbow Books, 2000.
- Schulting, Rick J., and Mike P. Richards. "Dating Women and Becoming Farmers: New Palaeodietary and AMS Dating Evidence from the Breton Mesolithic Cemeteries of Téviec and Höedic." *Journal of Anthropological Archaeology* 20 (2001): 314–344.
- Sharples, Niall. "Antlers and Orcadian Rituals: An Ambiguous Role for Red Deer in the Neolithic." In *Neolithic Orkney and Its European Context*. Edited by Anna Ritchie, pp. 107–116. Cambridge, U.K.: MacDonald Institute for Archaeological Research, 2000.
- Sheridan, Alison. "Achnacreebeag and Its French Connections: Vive the 'Auld Alliance.'" In *The Prehistory and Early History of Atlantic Europe*. Edited by Jon C. Henderson, pp. 1–15. BAR International Series, no. 861. Oxford: Archaeopress, 2000.
- Tresset, Anne. "De la mer au bétail en domaine atlantique: Unité et diversité des processus d'apparition de l'élevage à la marge nord-ouest de l'Europe." *Anthropozoologica* 36 (2002): 13–35.
- . "Early Husbandry in Atlantic Areas: Animal Introductions, Diffusion of Techniques, and Native Acculturation at the North-western Margin of Europe." In *The Prehistory and Early History of Atlantic Europe*. Edited by Jon C. Henderson, pp. 17–32. BAR International Series, no. 861. Oxford: Archaeopress, 2000.
- Troy, Christopher S., et al. "Genetic Evidence for Near Eastern Origins of European Cattle." *Nature* 410 (26 April 2001): 1088–1091.
- Vigne, Jean-Denis. "Les débuts néolithiques de l'élevage des ongulés au Proche-Orient et en Méditerranée." In *Premiers paysans du monde: Naissances des agricultures*. Edited by Jean Guilaine, pp. 143–168. Paris: Éditions Errance, 2000.
- Whittle, Alasdair, Joshua Pollard, and Caroline Grigson. *The Harmony of Symbols: The Windmill Hill Causewayed Enclosure*. Oxford: Oxbow Books, 1999.
- Wijngaarden-Bakker, Louise H. "Faunal Remains and the Irish Mesolithic." In *The Mesolithic in Europe*. Edited by Clive Bonsall, pp. 125–133. Edinburgh: John Donald Publishers, 1990.
- Woodman, Peter C., Elisabeth Anderson, and Nyree Finlay. *Excavations at Ferriter's Cove, 1983–95: Last Foragers, First Farmers in the Dingle Peninsula*. Bray, Ireland: Wordwell, 1999.
- Woodman, Peter C., Margaret McCarthy, and Nigel Monaghan. "The Irish Quaternary Fauna Project." *Quaternary Science Reviews* 16 (1997): 129–159.

ANNE TRESSET

NEOLITHIC SITES OF THE ORKNEY ISLANDS

Fifteen kilometers off the northern tip of Scotland at latitude 59° north lie the Orkney Islands. This northerly location makes Orkney a land of contrasts. During the summer, the days are long, with only a few hours of darkness, while in winter the situation is reversed. The islands have a desolate but verdant landscape on which few trees are found. Thus the sky and the horizon dominate all views of Orkney. Under the fertile soil lies sandstone bedrock that yielded the stone slabs that provided much of the building material used by the prehistoric inhabitants of these islands in the absence of timber.

The Orkney Islands were settled by farmers in the first half of the fourth millennium B.C. Radiocarbon dates place the oldest recorded Neolithic settlement at Knap of Howar (on the tiny island of Papa Westray) between 3600 and 3100 B.C., but since this is a fairly elaborate habitation site, it seems likely that pioneers reached Orkney somewhat earlier. The Neolithic settlement at Knap of Howar appears to have been a farmstead with two adjacent oval houses. Both are built of sandstone slabs with a main entrance at the west end. One of the houses is larger, 10 meters long and 4.5 meters wide, while the smaller one is 7.5 meters long and about 3 meters wide. Both are divided into rooms with large upright stone slabs. The large house is interpreted as the dwelling, while the smaller as a workshop, but it is puzzling why they were built as separate units rather than sharing a wall. Alongside the houses is a thick midden, or trash heap, containing bones of cattle, sheep, pigs, whales, seals, sea birds, mollusks, and fish. Grain and pollen from wheat and barley provide faint traces of cultivation.

Neolithic settlement on the Orkney Islands expanded in the late fourth millennium B.C. Along the



Fig. 1. Remains of the Neolithic site of Skara Brae, Orkney. © JOHN GARRETT/CORBIS. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

Bay of Skail on the largest Orkney island, called the Mainland, a settlement was constructed five thousand years ago at Skara Brae, again using the best local alternative to timber, sandstone slabs. After being occupied and rebuilt over several centuries between about 3100 and 2500 B.C., Skara Brae was abandoned and slowly covered over by drifting sand and turf. In 1850 a severe storm tore away the turf and opened the sand to erosion, revealing the buried settlement. In the 1920s the renowned prehistorian V. Gordon Childe cleared the sand from the houses and exposed the settlement plan at Skara Brae, one of his rare excavation projects. Since then, Skara Brae has become one of the most famous Neolithic settlement sites in Europe, although its unusual character often relegates it to only a brief mention in surveys of European prehistory.

The central precinct of Skara Brae consists of at least eight sandstone houses that had been built in hollows scooped into an old midden, or trash heap. The consolidated midden fill provided external backing for the walls, and the decision to build in

it was made consciously. Each house consists of a large rectangular area between 4.5 and 6 meters across with a central hearth. In some houses, smaller alcoves, or cells, open from this central chamber. The houses are connected by tunnel-like passages roofed with stone. We do not know how the houses were roofed, but in light of the general scarcity of timber on Orkney, it is possible that they had rafters of whale ribs covered by hides. Since the house walls survive at a height of about 3 meters, movement under the roof would have been easy even if it was flat.

Of particular interest are the stone fittings within the houses that Childe interpreted as built-in furniture. Slabs and blocks of stone were fashioned into tiered shelf units, often characterized as “dressers,” that may have held family belongings, although they could just as easily have stored vessels with food. Stone chests along the sides of the houses may have been filled with heather, straw, and furs to make beds. Stone pits in the floors had their seams filled with clay to make them watertight and

may have served to store shellfish, either for human consumption or for bait. In the center of each house was a sunken stone-lined hearth.

The inhabitants of Skara Brae fished, kept cattle, pigs, goats, and sheep, and cultivated barley and wheat on a small scale, very similar to the economy at Knap of Howar. There is some evidence that deer were hunted, and stranded whales were prized as sources of massive amounts of fat and meat. Small fragments of sea-bird eggs suggest that these were gathered.

The pottery found at Skara Brae is known as Grooved Ware due to its characteristic decoration, and it was made in the form of large vessels up to 60 centimeters in diameter. Bone was used for many types of artifacts, including beads for necklaces and awls for working hides. Some of the most distinctive artifacts at Skara Brae are carved stone balls of unknown function, although one theory interprets them as badges of status and prestige.

Several sites with houses similar to those at Skara Brae have been found in the Orkney Islands. Rinyo on the island of Rousay is one such site, although it is not as well preserved as Skara Brae. The settlement at Links of Noltland on the island of Westray is believed to be substantially larger than Skara Brae. It seems that Orkney was the location of quite a few such Neolithic farming communities during the period between 3100 and 2500 B.C.

The most important Neolithic settlement excavated since 1980 on Mainland Orkney is Barnhouse, located on a low promontory in the center of the island, very close to several passage graves and stone circles. Barnhouse was constructed in several stages, with houses built, demolished, and built over. One house was rebuilt four times. The houses were freestanding, without the midden backing and connecting passageways observed at Skara Brae. Two of the houses are more complex and much larger than the others. The larger of the two is a square space 7 meters across with walls up to 3 meters thick, set on a clay platform that in turn was surrounded by a stone wall. It contained a large central hearth and a stone “dresser.” The function of this building is difficult to discern. Was it the residence of a high-status individual, or was it a communal ceremonial hall?

Some of the most important information from Barnhouse has come from the chemical analysis of

residues on sherds of Grooved Ware. Many of them tested positive for residues of wheat and barley, cattle meat, and, most interestingly, milk. The need to keep milk cool in upright vessels where they could not be knocked over suggests a function for the stone “dressers” and perhaps the other stone furniture as well.

The windswept Neolithic landscape on Orkney must have been dramatic. Coastal and interior communities with stone houses kept livestock, grew grain, and fished. Immense passage graves like Maes Howe and Quanterness were the repositories for the dead members of these communities. Silhouetted against the sky were ceremonial stone circles such as the Ring of Brodgar and the Stones of Stenness. Although remote from the main developments of prehistoric Europe, the Neolithic sites of the Orkney Islands provide a glimpse of a thriving tribal society making use of everything it could wring from the land and the sea.

See also **Beginnings of Farming in Northwestern Europe** (vol. 1, part 3); **The Megalithic World** (vol. 1, part 4).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Childe, V. Gordon. *Skara Brae: A Pictish Village in Orkney*. London: Kegan Paul, 1931.
- Renfrew, Colin, ed. *The Prehistory of Orkney*. Edinburgh: Edinburgh University Press, 1985.
- Richards, Colin. “Monuments as Landscape: Creating the Centre of the World in Late Neolithic Orkney.” *World Archaeology* 28 (1996): 190–208.
- Ritchie, Anna. *Prehistoric Orkney*. London: Batsford, 1995.
- , ed. *Neolithic Orkney in Its European Context*. Cambridge, U.K.: McDonald Institute, 2000.

PETER BOGUCKI

HAMBLEDON HILL

Hambledon Hill is set as an “island hill” on the northwest edge of the Cretaceous ridge as it crosses southern England where Cranborne Chase and the North Dorset Downs are cut through by the River Stour as it flows to the south coast just east of Bournemouth. At this point the chalk downland, of which Hambledon Hill is geologically a part, over-

looks an area of the broad inland floodplain of the Stour and tributary rivers to the northwest known as the Vale of Blackmoor. Rich dairy farming land now, this area in early prehistory would have presented a variegated range of potentials for both farming and hunting-gathering. The chalk downland appears to have been covered largely by woodland rich in oak, elm, ash, and birch. The River Stour and its northern tributary, the Iwerne, at the confluence of which Hambledon Hill stands, in themselves would have formed an important economic resource as well as being the focus of routes to the site.

Modern Hambledon Hill lies 6 kilometers northwest of Blandford Forum, Northeast Dorset (at British National Grid reference ST 848123). The site, of principally Neolithic date, comprises a complex of enclosures set on and around the hilltop that fall into the category of “causewayed” or “interrupted ditch” enclosures that occur widely throughout southern England and that increasingly are being recognized in Wales and Ireland. Some one hundred examples are known, although as yet none of established Neolithic date has been located in northern England or Scotland. These sites are found most often in valley settings, often occupying low spurs at the point where tributary streams enter the floodplain, where they usually are detected by aerial photography. Particularly in southern England, however, many have been known since the early twentieth century, surviving as much reduced earthworks on spurs and eminences of the Cretaceous and Jurassic ridges of the region. It is to this class that Hambledon Hill belongs. Sites of similar type and date occur widely in Northwest Europe from the Baltic to central France.

The investigation of Hambledon took place between 1974 and 1986 and was characterized by four specific approaches. First, a “landscape” perspective was developed of this massive site (the hill itself occupies some 120 hectares) and its hinterland. Second, very large-scale sampling strategies were adopted, involving mechanical topsoil clearance. The subsoil surface had been heavily eroded by solution and agricultural activity (since the Bronze Age), and considerable care had to be exercised to locate and excavate the features of Neolithic date. Third, stratigraphical analysis and taphonomic study were intensively applied to gain maximum in-

formation from the very large bodies of artifactual, faunal, and botanical material located on the site. Fourth, a program of radiocarbon dating, involving more than 160 assays, has been undertaken to provide a sensitive chronometer for this disparate mass of material.

The enclosure complex at Hambledon Hill focuses upon an 8-hectare single-causewayed ditched enclosure set, slightly askew, upon the crown of the hill at the point where the three spurs of the hill—north, east, and southeast—meet (see fig. 1). This enclosure is isolated from easy approach from the east and southeast spurs by a series of cross-spur ditches (and almost certainly was isolated from the northern spur before the introduction of the later Iron Age hillfort there eradicated any trace). Set within the southeast cross-spur ditches and immediately south of the focal causewayed enclosure was a small “Dorset-type” long barrow orientated north to south. Its mound had long been destroyed, but its ditches, encircling the south end, were still available for investigation.

These components, set at the focus of the complex, can perhaps be treated as a whole. They jointly, and broadly, compose the earliest facet of Neolithic activity on the site (c. 3800–3600 B.C.), although the long barrow may be of a little later date than the enclosure. Whatever the primary role of the enclosure, it soon was associated with the deposition of debris that appears to have been drawn from extravagant feasting of a periodic nature. Deposition of “prestigious” imported objects (pottery and stone axes) deliberately is evident in groups on the floor of the ditch and in successive recuttings and disturbances in its filling as well as in pits dug in the interior. Considerable quantities of human bone were included among this debris, especially skulls, with one articulated mass of human bone showing clear signs of gnawing by dogs. Some of the bone also showed signs of cut marks that might be associated with defleshing, or cutting the meat off the bone. This part of the complex is interpreted as an area associated with the exposure and treatment of human cadaver material of both sexes and all ages, with associated ceremonial activity, taking place over an extended period of time.

At the tip of the southeastern spur another causewayed enclosure of 1-hectare extent had been constructed at approximately the same date, per-

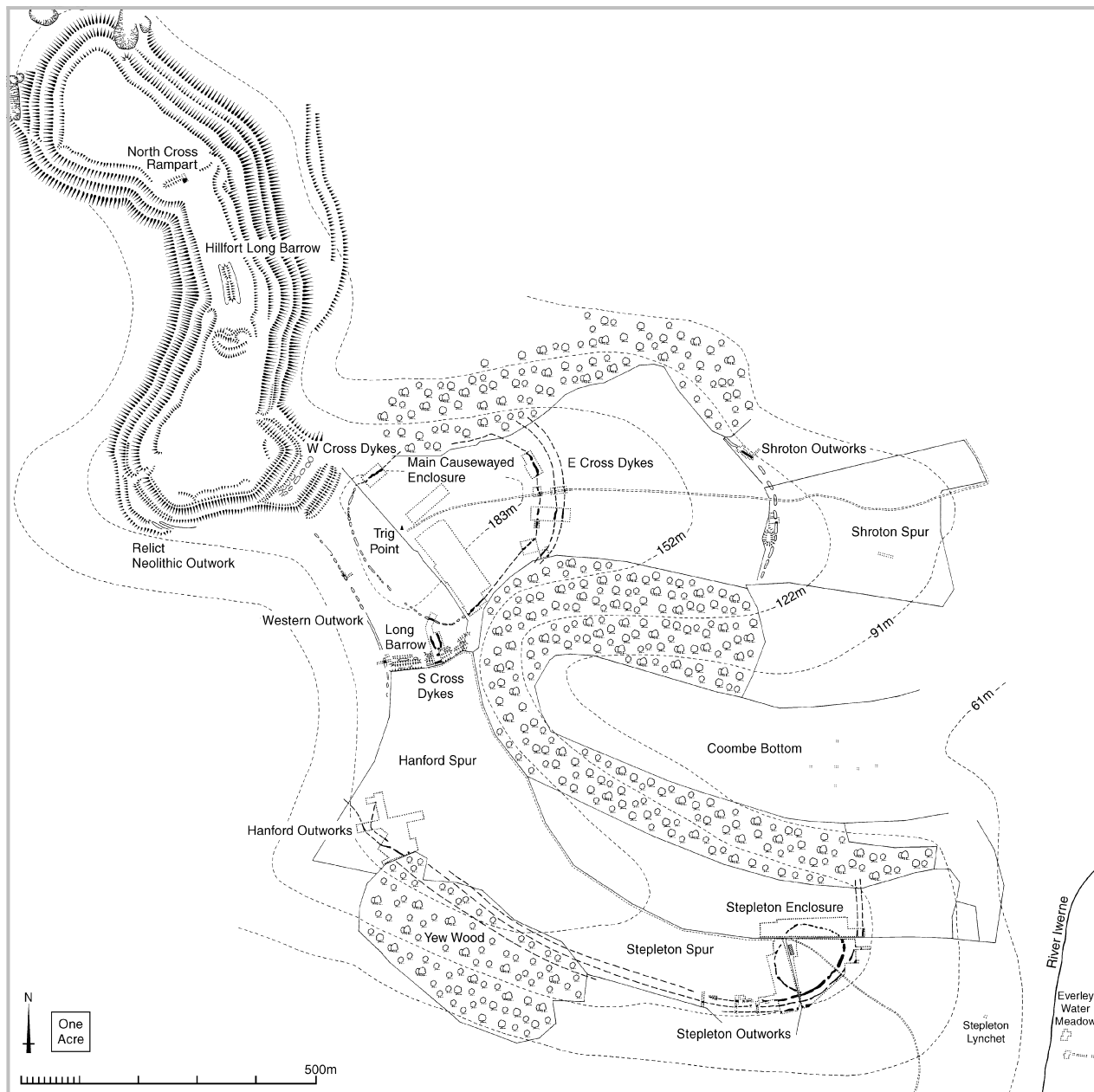


Fig. 1. Site plan of Hambledon Hill. COURTESY OF THE HAMBLEDON HILL PROJECT AND ROGER MERCER. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

haps a little later (known now as the Stepleton enclosure). Deposits on this site, both in the ditches and in features of the interior, suggest a function distinct from that of the focal enclosure just described, not so closely associated with funerary activity but nevertheless ceremonial and not domestic in its character. At both this enclosure and the hill-top example the food consumed on the site seems already to have been prepared upon its appearance there; in fact there is evidence that it was extrava-

gantly prepared and consumed. It may have been the surplus from a hinterland community producing emmer wheat and barley, cattle primarily raised for milk products, as well as sheep and pigs. Only the upper part of the food preparation chain, those parts of the crop or animal actually consumed, is present on this site, however. People came there with a hamper, as it were, to feast. They did not live there; they visited relatively seldom and probably seasonally.

After considerable time had elapsed, the whole hilltop (60 hectares) was enclosed with a series of “outworks” that presented an unassailable facade to all sides (3600–3400 B.C.). Again, in at least two episodes, these defenses (so sited and constructed) apparently were burned and indeed attacked. Two young men, both killed by arrows, lay in the ditch of one of these outworks, their skeletons almost intact. One of these young men seems also to have been partly defleshed.

This center of high prestige, subject to widely originating importation of specialized goods and a possibly isolated center for ceremonials that were associated, probably among other things, with circumfunerary activity over a period of several hundred years, eventually became a focus of power that attracted recurrent episodes of aggression. The program of excavation activity on or near the site continued into the Early, Middle, and Late Bronze Age, the Iron Age, and ultimately the Anglo-Saxon period.

See also *Long Barrow Cemeteries in Neolithic Europe* (vol. 1, part 3).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Mercer, Roger J. *Hambledon Hill: A Neolithic Landscape*. Edinburgh: Edinburgh University Press, 1980.

ROGER MERCER

TRANSITION TO FARMING ALONG THE LOWER RHINE AND MEUSE

The transition from hunting and gathering to food production along the Lower Rhine and Meuse Valleys between c. 5500 and 3500 B.C. is part of a much wider cultural transformation that covered the whole North European Plain from Holland to Poland. Prehistoric living conditions varied widely over the landscapes of this region. Moreover, variability in research conditions in the main natural zones has resulted in unequal data sets from the various zones, forcing investigators to use different research strategies.

MAIN ENVIRONMENTAL ZONES OF THE LOWER RHINE AND MEUSE BASINS

The lower courses of the Rhine and Meuse Rivers run through the country of the Netherlands, in the northwest corner of Europe, facing the southern part of the North Sea. About half of the Netherlands' territory consists of the combined lowland delta of several rivers, including the Rhine, Meuse, and Scheldt, which unload their sediments as they flow into the North Sea. The other half of the Netherlands, to the east and south of the delta, consists of uplands covered by Pleistocene sediments: a wide belt of sandy soils, with a patch of loess in the most southern part of the country. In this discussion, these three environmental zones—delta, sand, and loess—figure prominently.

The Delta Lowland. The lowlands of the western Netherlands measure about 200 kilometers along the coast and extend over 100 kilometers inland. The delta has been drained and transformed into the famous Dutch polderland, but geological research provides a picture of its ancient landscapes. Along the coast were tidal flats, salt marshes, tidal creeks, and lagoons. Behind this tidal zone were extensive peat swamps, and along the rivers a levee and back-swamp landscape formed.

In regard to archaeological sites, the delta is a sedimentary and preservative environment that is also dynamic and thus destructive. Although many sites have been destroyed by erosion, other places were protected by sedimentation. Prehistoric sites of the delta are highly informative for archaeologists, because they have: (1) superbly preserved organic material; (2) natural stratigraphy in sediments that can be correlated with habitation; and (3) intra-site patterns preserved by clay and peat covers. Field research is expensive and technically difficult, but the rewards are great.

The Sand Upland. The upland sand region of the eastern and southern Netherlands is an almost-flat Late Glacial cover sand landscape, less than 30 meters above sea level but with occasional sand and gravel hills as high as 100 meters. It is drained by small streams, and the eastern part of the region is dominated by the lower course of the Meuse. About 90 to 100 kilometers wide, the sand region contrasts archaeologically with the delta lowlands. Neo-

lithic living surfaces still lie uncovered at the present ground level. Sites are surface scatters easily discovered in farmland by survey. Thousands of sites are known, but their information content is low. Material of all periods is often mixed up and difficult to separate, while organic material, bone included, does not survive in the acidic sand.

The Loess Zone. To the south of the sand zone, in the southern province of Limburg, lies the northern fringe of the European loess belt, a region with very specific conditions and a core area for prehistoric occupation and archaeological research. It is a landscape of rolling hills and river terraces, all loess-covered, rising to a height of 300 meters. Slope erosion, colluviation, and alluviation have erased upland evidence of Neolithic occupation and have buried sites on the valley floors. Only the loess communities that preferred plateau locations and dug deep “artifact traps” in the form of pits, silos, and ditch systems are archaeologically known in some detail. The communities established by the *Linearbandkeramik* (also known as the Linear Pottery culture or LBK) farmers of the sixth millennium B.C. are a prime example.

THE ARCHAEOLOGICAL RECORD, 5500–3500 B.C.

The Loess Zone. The LBK settlement cluster on the loess of southern Holland is one of the most thoroughly investigated Early Neolithic microregions in Europe. Beginning in the 1950s, excavations by P. J. R. Modderman at Sittard, Elsloo, and Stein provided detailed plans of LBK settlements. This work permitted the development of a typology of longhouses and led to studies of LBK settlement systems, settlement structure, stone-adze and flint procurement, and social structure. In the late 1980s, large-scale research continued with excavation of the palisaded early LBK settlement of Geleen-Janskamperveld.

Our detailed knowledge of the LBK settlements results from the happy coincidence of their heavy construction and deep pits on plateau-edge locations that were subject to moderate surface erosion. Information is thus available on site location, settlement layout, houses, raw material acquisition, technology, and plant use (based on charred macroremains). Bone has decayed almost completely in the

decalcified loess. Environmental reconstruction is based on pollen diagrams from rare valley-floor peat deposits and on charcoal and seed identifications from pit fills. Charcoal from pits has provided dates that place the LBK occupation of southern Holland between c. 5500 and 4900 B.C., which is consistent with the dating of this culture across central Europe.

The loess of southern Holland has yielded considerably less evidence for the Rössen culture that followed the LBK in northwestern Europe, as well as for subsequent Neolithic cultures. A Rössen site has been discovered at Maastricht-Randwijck in a Meuse Valley-bottom location. Only the lower parts of some pits remained, but these yielded artifacts, charcoal, and plant remains. The Rössen culture was succeeded by the Michelsberg culture around 4300 B.C. Undated but certainly post-Rössen flint scatters are documented in the Limburg loess zone, especially on higher locations overlooking valleys. The most prominent Michelsberg sites are still the Neolithic mining centers, dated from 4000 B.C. onward. The well-known Rijckholt mines, with at least 600 and possibly many more shafts, have been investigated by professional miners.

The Sand Upland. The sand upland has yielded over four thousand Stone Age surface sites, but with no intrasite patterns and often mixed assemblages. Dating is based exclusively on flint technology, typology, and raw material. Despite intensive research, special sites that might have had a central function, like earthworks or ritual centers, are absent, nor is there burial evidence.

The Delta Lowlands. People settled in the Rhine-Meuse delta from the Mesolithic onward, and by lucky chance some of their sites have been discovered in special microregions that escaped erosion and where conditions for preservation, recovery, and excavation were favorable. Of particular interest are the dune tops and creek levees that provided small dry spots in the delta wetlands. Stone Age people settled on these high spots, and their rubbish was strewn down the slopes and into the surrounding marshlands, where it was covered over and preserved by later sediments and peat.

Two clusters of Early Neolithic sites, dated c. 4300–4200 B.C., occur in the freshwater peat zone,



Fig. 1. One of the three fish traps made from red dogwood twigs found at Bergschenhoek, The Netherlands. © RIJKSMUSEUM VAN OUDHEDEN, LEIDEN. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

one in the IJsselmeer Basin, the other in the Rhine/Meuse district. The first cluster, near the village of Swifterbant, includes settlements and small inhumation cemeteries on dune tops and on the levees of former creeks. The Swifterbant sites are highly informative due to the preservation of intrasite organization, preservation of bone and botanical remains, and the absence of earlier and later contamination. The second cluster lies in the Alblasserwaard peat district, where systematic prospection revealed that most of the approximately 100 known dune tops were used as settlement locations in several Neolithic phases. No settlement structures survive on these dune-top sites, but Neolithic refuse layers on the dune slopes and in the peat cover are full of information, including wooden and bone artifacts, animal bones, botanical remains, and pollen.

An exceptional site was discovered in 1976 north of Rotterdam near the village of Bergschenhoek, eight meters below sea level, where a small campsite was situated in a wetland landscape that was originally on a peaty lakeshore. Microstratigraphy indicated that the camp was used for ten to

twenty years. The remains were silted over shortly after its final abandonment and preserved in very good condition. These include reed bundles that formed the living surface, remains of a dugout canoe, impressive fish traps, and fish remains—scales included. Dated c. 4300 B.C., it can be considered a fowling-fishing station of early agricultural communities in distant regions. Many, perhaps thousands of such sites lie hidden under the delta deposits.

After 4000 B.C., the dune-top site of Hazendonk provides a cultural yardstick for the next two millennia. Phases of intensive occupation were separated by periods of occasional use or even abandonment. The main activities at this site were fishing and hunting, primarily of wetland animals such as beaver and otter but also of large game such as red deer, roe deer, and wild boar. Most surprising is the presence in all occupation phases of domestic animals and plants, as well as pottery and polished axes, marking it as a fully Neolithic site. Yet its location is not one that is favorable for crop cultivation, so the cereals must have been brought in from elsewhere. Hazendonk must have served as a special

camp for fishing, fowling, hunting, and herding by societies in transition to a fully agrarian economy.

CULTURAL GEOGRAPHY, SUBSISTENCE, AND SETTLEMENT SYSTEMS

“Classic” Early Neolithic LBK settlements are restricted to the loess zone to which their agricultural system seems to have been intimately linked. But the situation there is complicated by the appearance of two unusual pottery styles, not found farther east, named La Hoguette and Limburg. These have distinct southwestern connections that reach as far as the Mediterranean. Their pottery is generally found in low percentages as an admixture in LBK pit fills. La Hoguette seems to be the earlier of the two, possibly even preceding the earliest LBK in our area of study.

The LBK communities were fully agrarian before their appearance on the Limburg loess. Crops included emmer and einkorn wheat, linseed/flax, lentils, peas, and poppy seeds, all but the last with Near Eastern origins. The poppy has west Mediterranean sources and, in addition to the La Hoguette-Limburg pottery, is a strong argument for contact with that region. The poppy seed is found mainly in the westernmost LBK and only occasionally in central Europe. Charred weed remains indicate small, shaded fields in the woodland. Experimental data suggests good yields over long time spans without manuring. Zoological evidence from the loess region is scarce but seems to indicate a low interest in hunting (only about 10 percent of the animal bones are from wild animals). Cattle are the dominant domesticated species, with pig second and sheep/goat third.

On the sand north of the loess, LBK adzes and arrowheads are thinly spread all over the Meuse Valley as far north as Nijmegen. Neolithic pottery—never more than a few sherds on a site and restricted to later LBK phases—is found only in the southern twenty to thirty kilometers of the sand bordering the loess and generally in association with an LBK flint assemblage. There is some non-LBK pottery on these sites, too. A “pure Limburg” assemblage (without any LBK sherds) has been found at Kesselcyk, and La Hoguette-related sherds were found as far north as Gassel on the fringes of the delta.

What do these modest but significant finds north of the loess reflect? Exchange with Late

Mesolithic groups? Expeditions or wanderings from the loess to the north for prospection, hunting, or cattle herding? Or even an extension of permanent Neolithic settlement into this zone? How are La Hoguette, Limburg, and LBK related? The “pure” La Hoguette and Limburg assemblages in this zone might reflect separate, possibly semiagrarian, groups outside the LBK territory. The Late LBK sites with pottery might be seen as a growing penetration of this zone, possibly with transhumant cattle camps. The wider spread of arrowheads and axes tells us that the zone up to 100 kilometers north of the loess must be considered a contact or “availability” zone.

The change from LBK to Rössen around 4900 B.C. represents the transition to a pottery style that had developed along the Upper Rhine between Mainz and Strasbourg. As with the LBK, there is a similar involvement with the area north of the loess, but the Rössen culture probably made wider and more intensive use of this zone. Ephemeral Rössen sand sites lie not far from the loess boundary, and there is a wider and denser spread of two leading types of groundstone implements, the high-perforated shoe-last adze and the broad wedge. The Rössen culture reflects continuity from LBK society, but with a distinct transformation, not only in pottery style but also in economy and settlement system.

Significant economic changes took place during the LBK/Rössen transition, reflected by site location and botany. The crop spectrum changed to bread wheat and barley instead of the earlier einkorn/emmer combination. Moreover, site location seems to have been less prescribed and extended to valley floors. One may speak perhaps of a better adjustment to the specific geographical qualities of the regions as opposed to the more rigid LBK traditions. The subsistence evidence for the Michelsberg culture that succeeded the Rössen is very limited, but many archaeologists argue that it can be considered a “normal” agrarian Neolithic society. It is a great handicap that the Michelsberg sand sites lack biological evidence, which complicates the interpretation of the earliest delta evidence in its wider geographical context.

Until recently, we did not know much about the Mesolithic communities of the sand zone and the delta. In the early 1990s, some modest pottery

finds on sites in the Northeast Polder of the IJsselmeer District were dated to c. 4500 B.C., and two baseless (but perhaps originally point-based) pots from Bronneger, in Drenthe Province, yielded accelerator dates of charred crusts at c. 4700 B.C. Based on these finds, it was assumed that the area was used by a western Mesolithic counterpart to the Ertebølle hunter-fisher-gatherer communities of southern Scandinavia.

In 1993 coring in advance of the construction of a new railway line near Rotterdam led to the discovery at Hardinxveld of Late Mesolithic sites on the tops of two small dunes about five meters below sea level. These sites were occupied during the period 5500–4450 B.C. Finds at these sites include the burials of humans and of dogs; many different wooden artifacts, including paddles, bows, and a dugout canoe; and large quantities of animal bone, including fish, birds, beaver, otter, wild boar, and red deer. In the upper levels (4700–4450 B.C.), the earliest bones of domestic animals north of the loess zone were uncovered in modest numbers, including cattle, pig, sheep, and goat. Cereals, however, are still absent in this phase. Finally, a small amount of pointed-base pottery appeared on these sites about 5000 B.C. Thus we have our first glimpse of the communities who may have been in contact with the LBK and Rössen farmers of the loess, 100–150 kilometers distant across the sand belt.

The next stage to be considered is the period of 4300–4100 B.C.. In the northern part of the delta the Swifterbant group can be identified. Its pottery technology and style have close similarities with Late Ertebølle, employing pointed bases, flaring rims, simple shoulder decoration, coiling, and organic temper. The flint industry is, however, quite different and derived from a local Late Mesolithic microblade tradition. Some groundstone broad wedges demonstrate a continuity of adze exchange until this phase. There is, however, one major difference from Scandinavian Ertebølle: the delta sites are distinctly semiagrarian, as will be described below. Contemporaneous assemblages in the southern half of the delta (Hazendonk 1, Brandwijk, Bergschenhoek) have distinct technological and stylistic connections to the southeast, that is to the Late Rössen of the Rhineland. But there are also traits in common with Swifterbant along with some original characteristics.

The early delta Neolithic sites (4300–4100 B.C.) are located in agriculturally unattractive zones and on locations that offered restricted opportunities for farming and animal husbandry. Surprisingly, all sites produced quantities of charred seeds and chaff of cereals, and bones of domestic animals make up 10 to 50 percent of the total. In view of the location of the sites and evidence of many hunted animals (mainly beaver and otter), successive occupations by specialist hunters provides the most plausible interpretation for all Hazendonk levels. The Swifterbant levee sites, with evidence for complete households (milk teeth of children, burials), are probably summer residences, with permanent settlement as a second option. Bergschenhoek is undoubtedly a repeatedly used short-term winter fowling-fishing camp.

This type of subsistence in the delta could be called not only semiagrarian but also “extended broad spectrum,” since all classical Mesolithic subsistence activities (hunting, fowling, fishing, foraging) were extended with animal husbandry and at least the consumption, if not also the growing, of cereals. But the delta Neolithic sites are only the wetland elements of larger regional settlement systems. The presumed upland sites of these systems are as yet hardly known.

Some adoption of agriculture, more specifically animal husbandry, had begun north of the loess at least around 4500 B.C., while crop cultivation is only attested about five centuries later. The process was predominantly, if not exclusively, one of addition and not a new wave of colonization. Neolithic elements were included in a basically native Mesolithic society: early pottery styles have distinct regional traits; settlement systems and subsistence strategy have firm Mesolithic roots and contrast to the “full Neolithic” of the loess zone.

We can conclude several things. First, apparently the delta wetlands were perceived as an attractive environment and that the demonstrably variable means of subsistence apparently was fully acceptable at that time. Second, in view of the ecological constraints of the delta environment, communities with a similar or even fuller adoption of food production should be presumed on the upland sand, independent of the functional interpretation of the delta sites. Third, the wide occurrence of Michelsberg sites in the Meuse Valley—contrasting with the ab-

sence of upland sites farther north—might be partially caused by the use of the highly diagnostic and conspicuous large Rijckholt flint artifacts, but it might also reflect a more permanent and stable settlement system.

EXPLAINING THE TRANSITION TO AGRICULTURE

We have to cope with not one but essentially with two problems: first, why did the Mesolithic people of the North European Plain *not* turn to agriculture in LBK times and, second, why they did they then adopt agriculture in the second half of the fifth millennium B.C.? This change took place all over Northern Europe—not exactly in the same way everywhere, but that’s not so astonishing in view of the size of Northern Europe. One might think of a technical or agro-technical improvement that made agriculture, especially crop-cultivation, sufficiently attractive to be adopted around 4200 B.C. The development of the ard, a light plow, might meet these requirements. It allowed the cultivation of large fields with relatively low yields on the poor or even acid northern soils. More speculative is the idea that improved crops were developed for cultivation in these conditions and at these latitudes, but there are no archaeological arguments in this respect.

Perhaps this is a situation that has no good modern analogy. We are studying the confrontation between fully agrarian colonist-settlers who practiced hoe cultivation and broad-spectrum hunter-gatherers with presumably restricted mobility. They met in an unspoiled temperate environment with full opportunities for all communities involved to select optimal site locations for their activities. Both populations, the colonists and the natives, had widely different cultural roots. Those of the LBK and its successors are traced to southeastern Europe and ultimately the Near East. They were non-mobile and built heavy, more than minimally functional, housing. Most striking, however, is their attitude toward nature, their perception of environment. Their way was to play it safe—to adopt a low-risk strategy. This meant that they utilized a very narrow range of subsistence activities, which are reflected in their choice of specific settlement locations on the edges of loess plateaus or along brooks in loess-covered districts and in their reliance on cat-

tle and cereals. In other words, they disregarded the natural food sources of the area to a large extent.

The Mesolithic “natives” and their descendants, in contrast, had their roots far back in the Late Palaeolithic of Northern Europe. Their subsistence shows an appreciation of everything nature offered. Their perception of nature clearly was different from that of the LBK people. They were, moreover, mobile, with light “minimalist” housing.

Such differences in mentality can possibly explain the lack of adoption of Neolithic elements in the millennium of contact between 5500 and 4500 B.C. Fundamentally different attitudes had to be bridged. This implies that each culture complex gradually had to transform in the other’s direction. The adoption of cattle and crops at a given moment by the native communities might have had something to do with the lowering of risks in the harsh season, with the perceived prestige involved with agriculture, or with technological innovation that made the growing of crops more attractive than it had been before.

See also **The Mesolithic of Northern Europe** (vol. 1, part 2); **The Mesolithic of Northwest Europe** (vol. 1, part 2); **First Farmers of Central Europe** (vol. 1, part 3); **Transition to Agriculture in Northern Europe** (vol. 1, part 3).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Louwe Kooijmans, Leendert P. “Hardinxveld Sites in the Rhine/Meuse Delta, the Netherlands, 5500–4500 cal B.C.” In *Mesolithic on the Move: Papers Presented at the Sixth International Conference on the Mesolithic in Europe, Stockholm 2000*. Edited by Lars Larsson et al., pp. 608–624. Oxford: Oxbow Books, 2002.
- . “Shippea Hill and After: Wetlands in North European Prehistory and the Case of the *Donken*.” In *World Prehistory: Studies in Memory of Grahame Clark*. Edited by John N. Coles, Robert Bewley, and Paul Mellars, pp. 107–124. Proceedings of the British Academy, no. 99. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1999.
- . “Understanding the Mesolithic/Neolithic Frontier in the Lower Rhine Basin, 5300–4300 cal B.C.” In *Understanding the Neolithic of North-western Europe*. Edited by Mark Edmonds and Colin Richards, pp. 407–427. Glasgow, Scotland: Cruithne Press, 1998.
- . “The Mesolithic/Neolithic Transformation in the Lower Rhine Basin.” In *Case Studies in European Prehistory*. Edited by Peter Bogucki, pp. 95–145. Boca Raton, Fla.: CRC Press, 1993.
- Modderman, P. J. R. “Linear Pottery Culture: Diversity in Uniformity.” *Berichten van de Rijksdienst voor het Oud-*

heidkundig Bodemonderzoek: Proceedings of the State Service for Archaeological Investigations in the Netherlands 38 (1988): 63–139.

LEENDERT P. LOUWE KOOIJMANS



TRANSITION TO AGRICULTURE IN NORTHERN EUROPE

FOLLOWED BY FEATURE ESSAYS ON:

<i>Sarup</i>	301
<i>Long Barrow Cemeteries in Neolithic Europe</i>	304

The beginning of the Neolithic is defined as a change in economy where domesticates become part of the subsistence. Other aspects of material culture, such as pottery, certain axes, longhouses, and burial mounds, are not a priori associated with the term “Neolithic.” Cereals and livestock were introduced from the Middle East and spread through southeastern Europe to central and northern Europe. This process moved by fits and starts; domesticates extended very quickly over vast areas, followed by a standstill lasting up to several hundred years. The first Neolithic culture to make its way into central Europe was the *Linearbandkeramik* (5700–4900 B.C.). In northern Germany the earliest domesticates are found in the context of late Ertebølle-Ellerbek culture c. 4700–4600 B.C. In southern Scandinavia food production appears with the advent of the Funnel Beaker culture and at some late Ertebølle sites c. 4000–3900 B.C. The spread of food production in central and northern Europe is a process that has been the focus of debate and many investigations. The main question is whether farming spread through colonization or by the indigenous adoption of ideas by the local population. A combination of migration and local adoption is a third option.

The transition to agriculture in northern Europe began during the Atlantic climate zone, characterized by a relatively warm and damp climate; a dense climax forest of linden, oak, elm, and ash; and cyclical sea-level changes called the Littorina transgressions. By about 4000 B.C. the start of the Subboreal climate zone brought about a change toward a cooler and drier climate, but still warmer than today. A drastic decline in elm c. 3900 B.C. took place over central and northern Europe; this decline appears to have been a natural phenomenon caused by elm disease. Clearing of the woodlands is indicated by fewer numbers of the dominant trees of the primeval climax forest (linden, oak, and ash) and by a second growth of light-demanding trees, such as birch, poplar, willow, and hazel. Deforestation probably reflected the work of farmers as they made way for fields and pastures.

Around 5700–5600 B.C. the *Linearbandkeramik* culture brought the first farming settlements to the central European uplands as well as to parts of the North European Plain along the Oder and Vistula Rivers. The *Linearbandkeramik* economy was based almost entirely on domesticated plants and animals, and its settlements are concentrated on fertile loess soils along streams. The spread

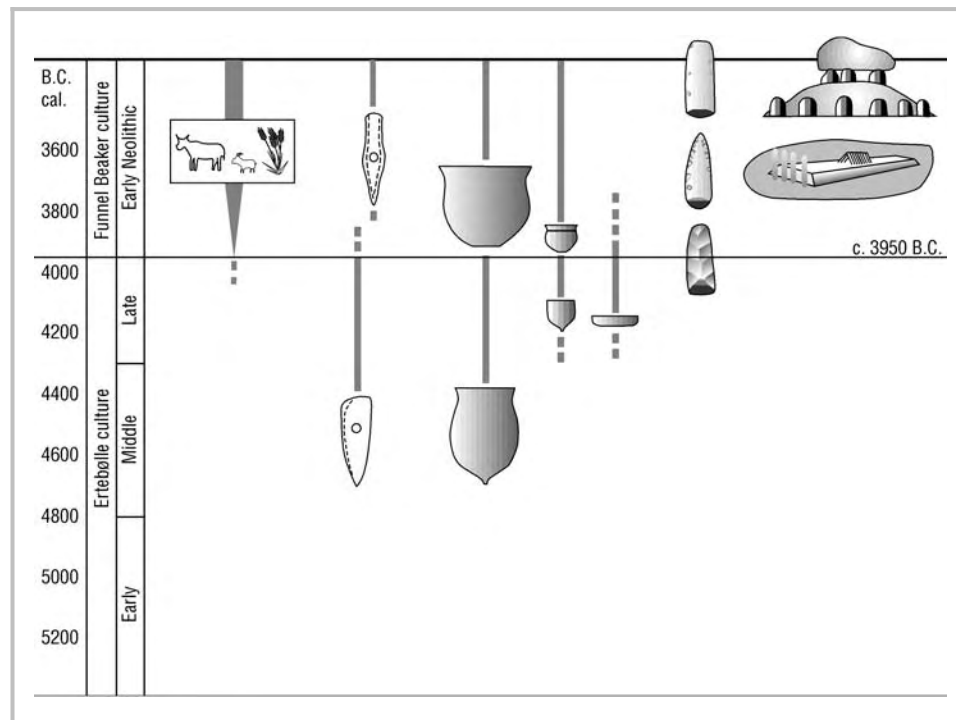


Fig. 1. Schematic of changes in material and economic culture between Ertebølle and Early Neolithic Funnel Beaker cultures in Denmark-Scania. ADAPTED FROM FISCHER IN FISCHER AND KRISTIANSEN 2002.

of the *Linearbandkeramik* is commonly attributed to the colonization of habitats favorable to agriculture through the progressive movement to the north and west of farming peoples from the Danube Valley. Analyses of strontium isotopes from *Linearbandkeramik* skeletons in the Rhine Valley suggest that local people also may have been involved in the establishment of these early farming communities.

After about 4900 B.C. central Europe continued to be occupied by farming peoples descended from the original *Linearbandkeramik* communities, among them, the Rössen culture of central and southern Germany, the Stroke-Ornamented Pottery culture of eastern Germany and Bohemia, and the Lengyel culture of Poland, Slovakia, and Hungary. These groups pursued the same general way of life of the *Linearbandkeramik* farmers through most of the fifth millennium B.C. An important development during this period is exchange, particularly in the form of stone axes, between the farming communities of central Europe and the Mesolithic foragers of southern Scandinavia. Still, for several centuries, the northern frontier of farming did not extend farther than the lowlands of northern Poland

and Germany. At this time, the Late Mesolithic Ertebølle-Ellerbek culture flourished along the Baltic coast.

THE ERTEBØLLE-ELLERBEK CULTURE

The Mesolithic Ertebølle culture is found c. 5400–3950 B.C. in the western Baltic area: southern Sweden, Denmark, and northern Germany between the Elbe and the Oder Rivers. Ertebølle is roughly contemporary with *Linearbandkeramik* and descendant groups farther south. In Schleswig-Holstein the local name is Ellerbek; in Mecklenburg it is the Lietzow group. In Scandinavia Ertebølle is divided into an older aceramic phase, from 5400 to 4600 B.C., and younger phase with pottery, T-shaped antler axes, and imported axes. Shell middens are a characteristic feature of coastal sites in the northern Ertebølle region, where the salinity of the sea was sufficient to support the growth of oysters. Burials appear in greater numbers and with more variety compared with the burials of earlier periods.

Ertebølle Technology. Ertebølle flint technology was based on blades used to produce arrowheads

with a transverse edge, end scrapers with a convex edge, and tanged scrapers with a concave edge. There were flat-trimmed flake axes and core axes; core axes with a special edge trim and, in a few cases, polish are characteristic of the final days of the Ertebølle. Antler axes with shaft holes near the burr date from the older Ertebølle, while T-shaped antler axes, in which a shaft hole was drilled through the center of the large antler beam, are characteristic of the younger Ertebølle. T-shaped antler axes have a wide European distribution in fully Neolithic contexts, where they appear earlier than in Ertebølle. Such an axe was found in the oldest layer at Rosenhof in northern Germany, dating to c. 5100 B.C. In Denmark T-shaped antler axes appear c. 4600–4500 B.C. Groundstone axes were made of green stone. Numerous wooden artifacts are known from this time period, many examples, such as fences, traps, leisters, dugout canoes, and paddle oars (some decorated in curvilinear designs), relate to fishing. Wooden bowls and spoons also occur. Ornamental beads were made from animal teeth, and bone rings were carved from shoulder blades. Combs were carved from bone as well.

Two shapes of pottery vessels were common in the Ertebølle; there were shallow, oval bowls presumably used as lamps and pointed-bottom vessels in three sizes—small beakers and medium and large pots used for drinking, cooking, and perhaps storage. Pottery from Schleswig-Holstein (Germany) has been dated on the basis of food remains found in the pots: dates range from 5300–5100 B.C. at Schlammersdorf (site 5) to 4300–4100 B.C. for the youngest Ertebølle examples, at Wangels. The oval lamps date from 4400–4200 B.C., but they also have been found in the context of Funnel Beaker sites at Siggeneben-Süd in Germany. In Denmark Ertebølle pottery appeared c. 4600 B.C.; the youngest pottery is dated to 4250–3870 B.C.

The source of this pottery has been sought in other Mesolithic groups along the Atlantic coast, such as Roucadour in southern France, or in Comb-Ceramic groups in the eastern Baltic, such as the Narva group in Latvia, beginning in 5300–5200 B.C. Only a few examples of imported pottery have been found among the farmers to the south, at such sites as Rosenhof in Schleswig-Holstein, Mölln and Hammer in southern Holstein, and Lietzow-Buddelin and Parow (site 4) in Mecklenburg. These

sherds could have derived from the Stroke-Ornamented Pottery group. Perforated shoe-last axes were imported from the *Linearbandkeramik* area, where they were in use for about a millennium. A small group of triangular axes made from exotic stone were imported from the south during the late Ertebølle, together with a few copper axes. The Ertebølle region west of the Great Belt, which is the strait between Zealand and Fyn, is characterized by such artifacts as T-shaped antler axes; bone combs, rings, and disks; bird-bone points; a straight type of harpoon; and a special shape of the pointed bottom of pottery vessels. In the eastern group many bone objects are absent; Limhamn stone axes, a curved type of harpoon and vessels with a different shape of pointed bottom were used. Imported stone axes of the shoe-last type and the late triangular axes are found mainly south of the Baltic and among the eastern Ertebølle peoples.

Ertebølle Settlement Patterns, Settlement Types, and Houses. Ertebølle settlements are concentrated in coastal and riverine environments with good fishing opportunities. Typically, settlements each comprise a large central site occupied more or less continuously year-round and numerous small, seasonal sites both on coasts and along inland freshwater systems. This more permanent form of habitation was made possible by the resource stability provided by fishing using nets and traps. Analyses of carbon 13 in Ertebølle skeletons indicate that marine foods were as big a part of the diet as they are among modern people on Greenland.

Large central sites include settlements with shell middens, such as Bjørnsholm, Ertebølle, and Norsminde in northern and eastern Jutland, and sites without middens, such as Smakkerup Huse in Zealand, Tybrind Vig on the island of Funen, Skateholm in Scania, and Wangels in Schleswig-Holstein. Among the examples of special extraction camps are Aggersund in northern Jutland, where swans were hunted during winter. An inland site, Ringkloster, was used in the winter for hunting wild boar and fur-bearing animals. The coastal site of Ølby Lyng was occupied in the fall and winter for the purpose of fishing and hunting migrating porpoises, seals, and certain marine birds. Other sites in the Åmose swamp in central Zealand appear to have been smaller summer camps. There seems to have been a pattern of seasonal movement between the coast and

inland areas on Zealand. It has been suggested that there was a split between inland and coastal peoples in Schleswig-Holstein. Territories of about 15 kilometers in diameter have been inferred in fjords along the eastern coast of Jutland, and it has been proposed that there were territories some 40 kilometers in diameter on Zealand, based on stylistic differences in the shape of flake axes.

At the settlements, burials are found farthest from the coast and at the highest elevations, sometimes placed between habitations; alternatively, living areas, such as dwellings, hearths, and sites of waste disposal, are located just below burials. Right along the shore there is typically a midden (with or without shells), and immediately offshore would have been the fish traps, dugout canoes, and a dump. On the settlement itself, usually only flint and charcoal are preserved, while the waterlogged dump area contains well-preserved organic remains. Some sites of the Ertebølle culture had round huts with an off-center hearth, such as those at Lollikhuse (5.5 × 4.0 meters) and at Nivå (2.5 × 3.5 meters), both in northern Zealand. In Scania substantial houses have been found at Tågerup (15 × 7 meters) and Skateholm I (10.7 × 6.5 meters). These houses each had one interior row of posts supporting the roof, a slightly sunken floor, and a noncentral hearth.

Ertebølle Burials. Numerous burials are known, especially from the older Ertebølle culture. At Skateholm in southern Scania, burial grounds were found in relation to two Ertebølle settlements; at the older, Skateholm II (5800–4900 B.C.), there were twenty-two burials, and at the younger, Skateholm I (5300–4800 B.C.), sixty-five burials were located. In addition, eleven graves contained dogs. At Vedbæk-Bøgebakken twenty-two women and men of all ages were buried in seventeen graves, which were simple earth-cut, trough-shaped pits.

Burials in the extended supine position are the most common, but at Skateholm some bodies were found lying on their sides, and others were buried in a sitting position in narrow, funnel-shaped pits. Most burials were inhumations, but a few cremations also were found. The dead were buried in their clothes, perhaps wrapped in fur or hides and sometimes in sheets of bark. The men were given knives, daggers, and axes, and the women wore ornaments

made from animal teeth. Concentrations of red ochre were found in the head and chest areas. Apart from the ritual activities connected with the ancestors, offerings made in wet places may have been part of the Ertebølle cult. The items deposited typically were shoe-last axes, a few pots, and a stash of beads made from animal teeth.

THE EARLIEST TRACES OF AGRICULTURE IN NORTHERN EUROPE

In Schleswig-Holstein in northern Germany, there were traces of agriculture as early as 4700–4600 B.C., suggesting that domesticates were adopted in a late Ertebølle-Ellerbek context. In the Lietzow group of Mecklenburg and Rügen, no agrarian elements appeared during the late Ertebølle. In southern Scandinavia domesticates appear c. 3950 B.C.; only a few finds indicate the presence of domesticates during the final centuries of the Ertebølle culture.

According to Sönke Hartz and colleagues, the adoption of food production in Schleswig-Holstein can be divided into three phases, illustrated by cultural layers at three settlement sites: Rosenhof, Wangels, and Siggeneben-Süd. These phases cover the Ertebølle and the early Funnel Beaker cultures. In phase A (c. 5100–4100 B.C.), evidence of early agriculture among the Ertebølle people is provided by pollen analyses showing deforestation and cereal growing along the Baltic coast from 4770 to 4580 B.C. The earliest cattle bones show up at Rosenhof c. 4700 B.C. Cattle were the only domestic animal apart from dogs, but they represented only 1 to 2 percent of the mammal bones. The material culture and the economy at Rosenhof at this stage are otherwise purely Mesolithic.

For phase B (c. 4100–3900 B.C.), pollen analyses continue to show cereal cultivation. At Wangels crop processing is indicated by quern stones and a charred emmer grain. Livestock was the main meat source, constituting 50 percent of the mammal bone finds; hunting declined. Numerous sheep or goats are present as well. Flint, bone, and antler tools still reflect Ertebølle traditions. The earliest Funnel Beaker pottery is dated from charred food remains to 4100–3800 B.C. at the coastal site of Wangels, the inland site of Bebensee, and Parow (site 4) in Mecklenburg. Types of pottery include

slender and wide bowls, flasks, disks, and lugged amphorae (i.e., pottery with decorative knobs or bosses). Stabs below the rim are the main decoration; two vessels have thickened rims. The Rosenhof pottery vessels form the closest parallel to that from Wangels, but similarities can be found in Michelsberg and post-Stroke-Ornamented Pottery groups to the south and early Funnel Beaker examples in eastern Denmark. A drastic change took place in the settlement pattern during phase B, along with increased dependence on farming. Smaller settlement units replaced the large year-round settlements that had been based on hunting of sea and land mammals.

Phase C (3900–3500 B.C.) is exemplified by a pure Funnel Beaker assemblage from Siggeneben-Süd. Pottery types and decoration are similar to those of phase B, but beakers constitute 90 percent of the inventory. The earliest polished flint axes appeared, and typical Ertebølle tool types of flint, bone, and antler disappeared at this time. Domesticated animals, primarily cattle and pigs, made up 60 percent of the small quantity of bones from Siggeneben-Süd. Some hunting and fishing took place, as evidenced by arrowheads, leister prongs, and a small number of sea mammal bones. Pollen analyses and more charcoal both inland and along the coast indicate the practice of swidden agriculture.

Funnel Beaker Distribution, Dates, and Local Groups. The Funnel Beaker culture was distributed across the North European Plain to the north of the groups that followed the *Linearbandkeramik* between the Netherlands and the Vistula River valley. The earliest Funnel Beaker radiocarbon date, obtained at Sarnowo in central Poland, was 4400 B.C. Most other dates suggest that the start of the Funnel Beaker was closer to 4000 B.C. In southern Scandinavia the earliest Funnel Beaker stage dates to 3950–3500 B.C., the middle stage to 3500–3200 B.C., and the final stage to 3200–2800 B.C. The oldest Funnel Beaker site, at Åkonge in the Åmose on Zealand, dates to 3950 B.C.

Pottery is the characteristic element of material culture and included funnel-necked beakers, two-handled or four-handled amphorae, flasks, bowls, and flat clay disks. Decoration of the early pottery usually was limited to a series of stabs below the rim. Large vessels may have thickened rims with finger

impressions. Clay disks often have finger impressions on the rim. Later, decoration of the vessel body with vertical incisions became very common. Flint tools of the period comprised flint axes with pointed or thin, butt-end, flat-trimmed daggers; round scrapers; transverse arrowheads; and knives. Flat hammer axes and club heads were made of ground stone. Amber beads and pendants were used as ornaments, and jewelry also was made of small disks and wire spirals. Copper was imported in the form of flat axes with splayed edges.

Vegetation and Agriculture. During the Early Neolithic, 3950–3500 B.C., only small plots were cultivated, using digging sticks to prepare the soil. Charred grain and pottery with grain impressions date to 3780 B.C., but cereal appeared earlier in the pollen diagrams. The oldest domesticated animals date to 3960 B.C.: in Zealand there were cattle at Åkonge and sheep or goats at Lollikhuse. Livestock may have been more important than cultivation. Cattle were dominant, followed by pigs; sheep and goats were of minor importance. Extensive swidden agriculture and plowing with the primitive ard did not appear before c. 3600 B.C. Until then, wild resources remained an important part of the diet.

Funnel Beaker Settlement. Early Neolithic settlements were relatively small and mobile and were located on light, sandy soils. The habitation was spreading inland at this time, but sites still were located in the vicinity of lakes and streams or on the coast. Settlements, earthen long barrows, and bog deposits reflect the local Early Neolithic community. By about 3600–3200 B.C. a three-tier settlement pattern had been organized around regional centers at causewayed enclosures and surrounded by small communities, each with a settlement, a cluster of megalithic tombs, and bog deposits. This was a period of intense construction of thousands of megalithic tombs and numerous enclosures, as well as elaborate sacrifices in the bogs. During the final Funnel Beaker period, 3200–2800 B.C., habitation became concentrated in large settlements. In terms of size, the early settlements covered c. 500–700 square meters, increasing to 4,000 square meters in the middle stage and 20,000–30,000 square meters in the final stage, according to a study from eastern Jutland.

Many sites, such as Muldbjerg and Åkonger in Åmose, show evidence of continued exploitation of wild resources. The top layers of several Ertebølle shell middens date to the Early Neolithic. At Bjørnsholm, northern Jutland, a settlement and a long barrow located adjacent to a shell midden indicate that some coastal sites were more permanent. Limited grain cultivation and livestock supplemented an otherwise Mesolithic lifestyle at this site.

The internal structure of the Funnel Beaker settlements is still uncertain, and preservation of organic remains is rare, except at some riverine and coastal sites. At Mosegården, eastern Jutland, a settlement of about 500 square meters was preserved beneath an earthen long barrow dating to c. 3900 B.C. The remains include a living area with scattered postholes, perhaps representing two to three huts; a hearth; a dump area; and light debris from artifacts. Structures of small oval houses 10–18 meters long and 4–6 meters wide, with a single row of three to eight central posts, have been found at a few Early Neolithic sites: Bygholm Nørremark in Jutland, Ornehus and Skræppegård on Zealand, Limensgård on Bornholm, and Mossby in Scania. These small longhouses sometimes were supplemented by other types of houses, such as one D-shaped structure from Hanstedgård, Jutland.

Causewayed enclosures were constructed between 3500 and 3100 B.C. in Denmark. A common feature for the twenty-three sites found thus far in Denmark is a system of parallel ditches or ditches combined with palisades enclosing a natural promontory. The enclosures vary in size from 1.6 to 20 hectares. The interior generally is void of finds. Deposits of whole pots, heaps of tools or animal bones, and human skulls or part of skulls represent ritual activities in the ditches. In some places there were traces of fire. The causewayed enclosures have been interpreted as ritual sites serving as regional centers for scattered tribal communities. Activities may have been related to the ancestor cult, as indicated by the human skulls in the ditches. It has been suggested that the interior areas served as temporary repositories for the dead before the skeletons were placed in megalithic tombs.

Funnel Beaker Burials. One type of burial was simple inhumation in the extended supine position,

without a mound; these burials sometimes are called “flat graves” or “earth graves” and are possibly a continuation of the Ertebølle tradition, as seen at Dragsholm, northern Zealand. These nonmonumental burials continued throughout the Funnel Beaker period, as is evident at Stålmosegård, Zealand. Similar graves have been found in earthen long barrows enclosed by large timber settings or trenches, a new feature appearing at the very beginning of the Funnel Beaker culture over a wide area from Jutland to the Elbe-Saale region in Germany and from Kujavia in Poland to Lower Saxony. In general, trapezoidal earthen mounds are present in the east, in Kujavia and western Pomerania, and rectangular mounds are common in the west, in Lower Saxony; trapezoidal mounds are found in both zones. Ian Hodder has suggested that continental longhouses were the prototype for the long barrows. The nearly contemporary villages of Lengyel longhouses (such as those at Brześć Kujawski) and Funnel Beaker long barrow cemeteries in Kujavia have been proposed as the possible origins. The already established timber mortuary architecture was translated into megalithic monuments constructed of large boulders during the middle period of the Funnel Beaker culture. Only selected bones were deposited in the megalithic graves; the bodies were skeletonized elsewhere, perhaps at the causewayed enclosures.

Bog Deposits. Wetlands were chosen for deposition of selected items, most often individual pots (or sometimes several pots) with food and occasionally the remains of large ceremonies involving sacrifices of cattle and humans. At Sigersdal, northeastern Zealand, the skeletons of two women, ages sixteen and eighteen, one with a cord around her neck, were found together with a large lugged vessel. The skeletons date to c. 3500 B.C. and may be the oldest human sacrifices in Europe. At Gammellung, Langeland, a votive deposit from the beginning of the Middle Neolithic comprised five oxen, four pigs, one goat, one dog, and three humans. At least two of the oxen and a forty-year-old woman were killed with a violent blow to the head. Bones were split to extract the marrow, indicating that the deposit represented the remains of a large feast. These bog offerings seem to have been part of a fertility cult. Other depositions included such valuables as polished flint axes and amber.

EXPLAINING THE TRANSITION TO AGRICULTURE IN NORTHERN EUROPE

Three explanatory models have been discussed for the introduction of agriculture within the Ertebølle distribution area: immigration by farmers or acculturation of foragers, caused by a food crisis brought on by economic-ecological changes or by socioeconomic competition. In the case of the *Linearbandkeramik*, the most persuasive argument in favor of immigration is the appearance of a new culture as a “package” different from what had been present earlier. This does not appear to have been the case in northern Europe. In terms of both flint and pottery technology the late Ertebølle and the early Funnel Beaker cultures were very much alike. Such continuity in material culture makes a large-scale migration unlikely, but limited migration by small groups of farmers or assimilation of single individuals might have occurred. Another problem with the migration theory is how to explain what became of the substantial Mesolithic population in the Ertebølle area. Minor differences exist in the skeleton remains from the Ertebølle and Funnel Beaker cultures, but the comparison is made between populations that existed a thousand years apart. Almost no skeletons from the time of the transition to agriculture have been found.

Food Crisis. The logic of the migration hypothesis is, in part, that farming was a more advantageous and superior way of life. This opinion changed under the influence of ethnographical studies in the 1960s that suggested that only minimal labor was required to sustain life as a hunter-gatherer and that the transition to farming would be more demanding. Many ideas have been put forward to explain why the apparently well adapted Ertebølle people would choose to become farmers. It has been proposed that population pressure resulted from a more sedentary lifestyle on the permanently inhabited coastal sites. An increase in inland sites also has been noted, but evidence from the early part of the Neolithic does not support growth in the population.

Ecological changes have been invoked to explain an imbalance between population and resources, especially marine resources. At the same time, regression in sea level may have produced an expansion in beach ridge formations and a decline

in shallow-water fishing. Climate changes are cyclically recurrent, however, and apparently did not have adaptational consequences earlier in the Ertebølle period. A unique episode of a decrease in tidal amplitude may have caused a shift from marine to more brackish conditions, as reflected in a corresponding decline in the numbers of oysters seen in shell middens.

The natural reduction in numbers of oysters has been proposed as the cause of the adoption of domesticates as an alternative food source. Oysters allegedly filled a gap in resources in late winter. This explanation does not seem plausible, considering that farming was adopted at the same time in areas without a natural supply of oysters. At the Bjørnsholm shell midden in northern Jutland, Neolithic artifacts appear in the oyster layer before a change from oysters to cockles took place. A more brackish environment possibly meant a decline in productivity. Nonetheless, fishing was still important in the Early Neolithic, although the carbon-13 content of Neolithic skeletons confirms a diet based on terrestrial rather than marine resources. Despite the changes, there is no proof of a food crisis during the late Ertebølle period. The most persuasive argument against the food-crisis hypothesis is probably that farming played only a limited role in the subsistence economy during the first several hundred years of the Neolithic within the Ertebølle region.

Socioeconomic Competition. Competition for prestige and power has been posited as the impetus for the introduction of domestic food sources among the Mesolithic Ertebølle people. Exotic and highly desirable goods were exchanged through far-reaching networks. Small societies gained prestige through the value of the exchanged goods. Gift exchange might have taken place during feasts where special foods were served. The Ertebølle people had a tradition 800 to 1,000 years long of exchanging goods with neighboring communities, which is documented by imports of ceramics and axes made of exotic raw materials. Such exchange possibly intensified during the final Ertebølle period, as reflected in such artifacts as jadeite and copper axes. Exotic foods might have been received as prestigious gifts at first, which would explain the imprints of cereal grains in Ertebølle pottery at Løddeborg and Vik in Scania and the remains of cattle at Smakkerup Huse, Zealand.

Through an inflationary process it became more difficult to maintain power and prestige and more advantageous to start producing domesticates for exotic prestige food, such as cereal-based alcoholic beverages and different kinds of meat. Livestock also served as a measure of wealth in its own right. A gradual change then took place toward greater social inequality, more surplus production, increased specialization, and larger capacity to redistribute goods and food.

CONCLUSION

Local hunter-gatherer groups appear to have adopted agriculture to a limited extent in southern Scandinavia before the major cultural changes that accompanied the arrival of the *Linearbandkeramik* and the emergence of the Funnel Beaker culture. Domestic foods initially served as a supplement to the Mesolithic diet. A mixed economy lasted for about five hundred years during the early Funnel Beaker period in southern Scandinavia. Continuity in flint and pottery technology and burial rites suggest local development of the Funnel Beaker culture, influenced by the introduction of ideological trends from the south, including new fashions in elite weapons and burial monuments. Perhaps an escalating process of socioeconomic competition led first to the adoption of domesticates and later to a fully agrarian subsistence economy, followed by another wave of major cultural changes in settlement and ritual.

See also **Archaeology and Environment** (vol. 1, part 1); **The Mesolithic of Northern Europe** (vol. 1, part 2); **Skateholm** (vol. 1, part 2); **Tybrind Vig** (vol. 1, part 2); **First Farmers of Central Europe** (vol. 1, part 3); **Sarup** (vol. 1, part 3); **Long Barrow Cemeteries in Neolithic Europe** (vol. 1, part 3); **Consequences of Farming in Southern Scandinavia** (vol. 1, part 4).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Andersen, Søren, and Erik Johansen. "An Early Neolithic Grave at Bjørnsholm, North Jutland." *Journal of Danish Archaeology* 9 (1992): 38–58.
- Bogucki, Peter I. *Forest Farmers and Stockherders*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1988.
- Fischer, Anders. "Food for Feasting? An Evaluation of Explanations of the Neolithisation in Denmark and Southern Sweden." In *The Neolithisation of Denmark: 150 Years of Debate*. Edited by Anders Fischer and Kristian Kristiansen, pp. 341–393. Sheffield, U.K.: J. R. Collis Publications, 2002.
- Hartz, Sönke, Dirk Heinrich, and Harald Lübke. "Coastal Farmers: The Neolithisation of the Northern-most Germany." In *The Neolithisation of Denmark: 150 Years of Debate*. Edited by Anders Fischer and Kristian Kristiansen, pp. 319–340. Sheffield, U.K.: J. R. Collis Publications, 2002.
- Hodder, Ian. *The Domestication of Europe: Structure and Contingency in Neolithic Societies*. Oxford: Basil Blackwell, 1991.
- Keeley, Lawrence H. "The Introduction of Agriculture to the Western North European Plain." In *Transitions to Agriculture in Prehistory*. Edited by Anne Birgitte Gebauer and T. Douglas Price, pp. 81–95. Madison, Wis.: Prehistory Press, 1992.
- Klassen, Lutz. "The Ertebølle Culture and Neolithic Continental Europe." In *The Neolithisation of Denmark: 150 Years of Debate*. Edited by Anders Fischer and Kristian Kristiansen, pp. 305–317. Sheffield, U.K.: J. R. Collis Publications, 2002.
- Koch, Eva. *Neolithic Bog Pots from Zealand, Møn, Lolland and Falster*. Copenhagen, Denmark: Der Kongelige Nordiske Oldskriftselskab, 1998.
- Madsen, Torsten. "Barrows with Timber-Built Structures." In *Digging into the Past: 25 Years of Archaeology in Denmark*. Edited by Steen Hvass and Birger Storgaard and translated by John Hines and Joan F. Davidson, pp. 96–99. Copenhagen, Denmark: Royal Society of Northern Antiquaries, 1993.
- . "Settlement Systems of Early Agricultural Societies in East Jutland, Denmark: A Regional Study of Change." *Journal of Anthropological Archaeology* 3, no. 1 (1982): 197–236.
- Midgley, Magdalena. *TRB Culture: The First Farmers of the North European Plain*. Edinburgh: Edinburgh University Press, 1992.
- Nielsen, Poul Otto. "Settlement." In *Digging into the Past: 25 Years of Archaeology in Denmark*. Edited by Steen Hvass and Birger Storgaard and translated by John Hines and Joan F. Davidson, pp. 92–95. Copenhagen, Denmark: Royal Society of Northern Antiquaries, 1993.
- Price, T. Douglas, and Anne Birgitte Gebauer, eds. *Last Hunters, First Farmers: New Perspectives on the Prehistoric Transition to Agriculture*. Santa Fe, N.Mex.: School of American Research Press, 1995.
- Whittle, Alasdair. *Europe in the Neolithic: The Creation of New Worlds*. Cambridge World Archaeology. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1996.

ANNE BIRGITTE GEBAUER

SARUP

Around 3400 B.C., in the Fuchsberg phase of the Funnel Beaker culture, a Neolithic enclosure with several causeways was constructed on a sandy promontory in the village of Sarup in the southwestern area of Funen, Denmark. The enclosure defined an elongated area of 8.5 hectares, 6 hectares of which were uncovered between 1971 and 1984 (fig. 1). Watercourses bound two of the three sides of the promontory; the third side was bordered by a palisade fence, four-sided fences built on the outside of the palisade, a fenced entrance passage, and two parallel rows of segmented ditches with several causeways between them. The enclosure was constructed in a period characterized by marked human impact on the environment, in the clearance of land for cultivation and grazing. In this timeframe the building of megalithic graves, or dolmens, began. In the two centuries c. 3400 B.C., both types of monuments (causewayed enclosures and megalithic graves) were constructed in the Atlantic region of western Europe.

The palisade on the Sarup enclosure originally stood in a trench, which could be followed for 572 meters. The planks were of split-oak trunks with diameters up to 42 centimeters. The close-standing planks of the palisade probably rose at least 3 meters above the ground. On the outer side, but close to the palisade, amounts of pottery, burned bones (including those of humans), scorched stones, and charcoal for hearths were found. Joined to the palisade or placed in the gaps between the ditches, nineteen four-sided fences were uncovered (fig. 1). No finds explain the function of these fences, but they must have had special significance because the placement of the ditches respects them. The entrance was a 1.6-meter-wide gap in the palisade, shielded by a fence 3 meters in front of it. Access to the entrance was along a path 2–3.5 meters wide, which at one spot was restricted by a cross fence to only 1.4 meters, so that nothing wider could come in (fig. 2).

In front of the palisade and fences lay two parallel rows of segmented ditches. Originally, the ditches were about 15 meters long, 4 meters wide, and between 0.20 and 2.0 meters deep. At the base of the ditches there occasionally were special finds or

layers, for example, of decomposed organic deposits, whole pots or large fragments of pots, skulls of cattle, sheep, or pigs, plus human skulls or skull fragments and other bones. Only a very few flint artifacts have been found in the ditches. Above the bottom layers a homogeneous fill of the original upcast was thrown back deliberately from the heaps of upcast subsoil until then placed along both sides of the ditches. There is no evidence that the site had been fortified with banks.

Excavations of two-thirds of the interior of the Sarup enclosure have produced eighty-seven features dating to the same period. Most of them were scattered small pits, but some of the features had a special function, for instance, deposit of ritual materials (whole pots and axes), storage, or waste disposal. In a few of the pits there was considerable waste material, but the segmented ditches had only a few samples of waste. The finds from the site consisted of mainly materials specially selected by the inhabitants, such as human bones, axes, and whole or crushed pots. The material had been deliberately smashed, in the case of pottery, or burned, in the case of axes, grain, and human bones.

Some 150 years later, in about 3250 B.C., another enclosure was constructed on the promontory at Sarup. In the form of a crescent, this uncovered enclosure demarcated an area of about 3.5 hectares on the southern point of the sandy promontory. This structure also comprised a palisade fence, four-sided fences, and two parallel rows of ditches. In the interior 144 features were found. Some of them were small pits, perhaps postholes, but others were used for deposits of ritual materials and still others for storage. Three pits contained the burned human bones of adults. In this period passage graves were built, and very high quality pottery was manufactured and frequently offered in front of the graves—perhaps to a kind of prehistoric deity.

About thirty Neolithic enclosures have been found in Scandinavia. All these sites belong to the Funnel Beaker culture and date to a very short period between 3400 and 3200 B.C. The finds from all the enclosures are of special types (those that do not represent a daily life or settlement), with little or no debris but with selected bones of animals and humans, flintaxes, pots, etc. The enclosures seem originally to have been used for a short interval only, but

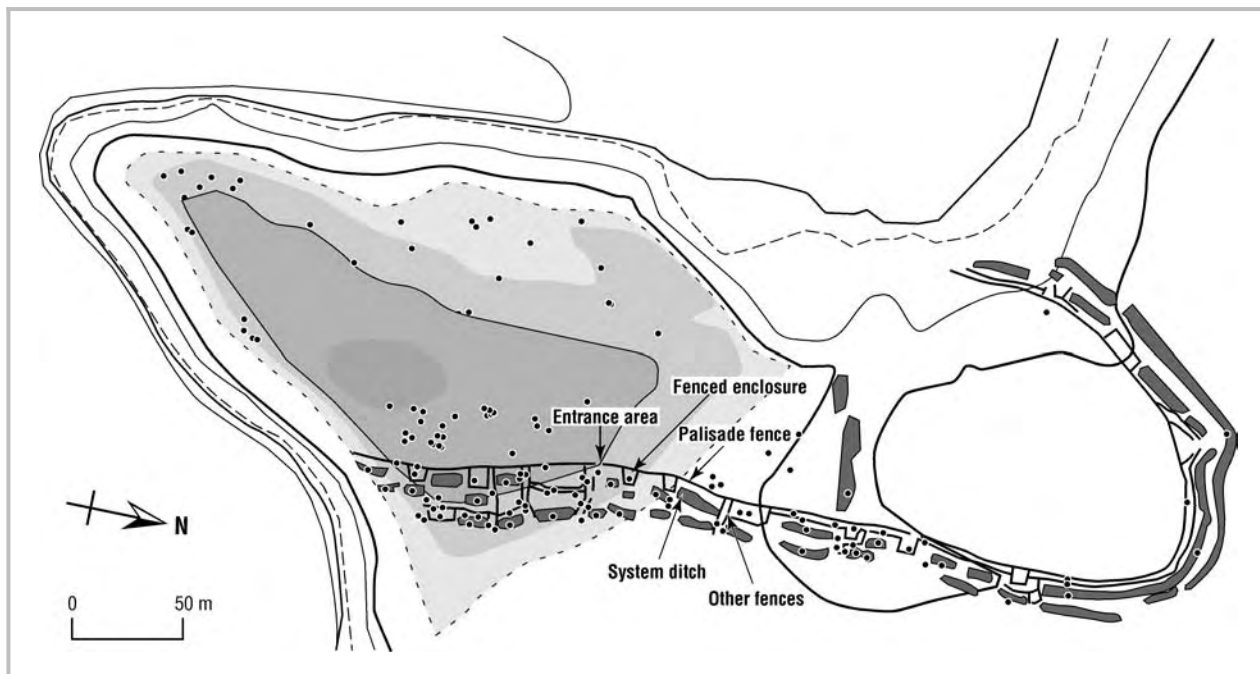


Fig. 1. Site plan for Sarup I, with features from the Fuchsberg phase (3400 B.C.) marked. Various types of features in the enclosure system are also shown: palisade fence; entrance area; small four-sided fences; and big four-sided fences. ADAPTED FROM ANDERSEN 1997.

the ditches later were reused. A couple of hundred years later, most of these places became settlements.

Hundreds of enclosures of the Michelsberg, Chasséen, Windmill Hill, and Wartberg cultures, characterized by segmented ditches, have been discovered since 1882 in western Europe. Although these cultures were not entirely contemporaneous, they do have many features in common. These enclosed sites could have served similar functions. Excavations of the enclosures have provided much new information about the Neolithic period. This new type of monument must be looked at in connection with the contemporary megalithic graves and settlements. Since 1988 intensive surveys of the fields around the Sarup site have been carried out. Within less than 20 square kilometers, 152 sites have been found from the periods of the two Sarup sites, that is, between 3400 and 3200 B.C.

Twenty-two of the sites are regarded as settlements. These were of limited size, about 500 square meters, and were situated in different zones, which means that the Stone Age farmers made use of a variety of topographical situations, with sites for hunting and fishing, for cattle herding, for pig farming,

and for cereal cultivation. The settlements had many different tool types and clear evidence of tool-making, plus a variety of livestock and cultivated cereals. The analyses of the settlements reveal significant differences with respect to size, location, and finds. The small settlement units suggest that only one or two families were living there, for a short period.

In the area around Sarup, 121 megalithic graves, now preserved only as plow-damaged sites, can be added to the four previously known. The damaged sites were found by intensive field survey. Twenty-eight of these megalithic graves have been excavated, and in the coming years many of the other graves will have to be excavated because intensive plowing is quickly destroying them. The megalithic graves developed in Denmark between 3400 and 3200 B.C. from small dolmen chambers reminiscent of the body-length earthen graves of the preceding period, to large dolmen chambers, to dolmens with a passage, and then to passage graves. The chambers often were placed within an enclosure or a barrow surrounded by a row of stones in a circular or oblong form or a palisade in a trench. A very small dolmen, less than 1 meter long, was

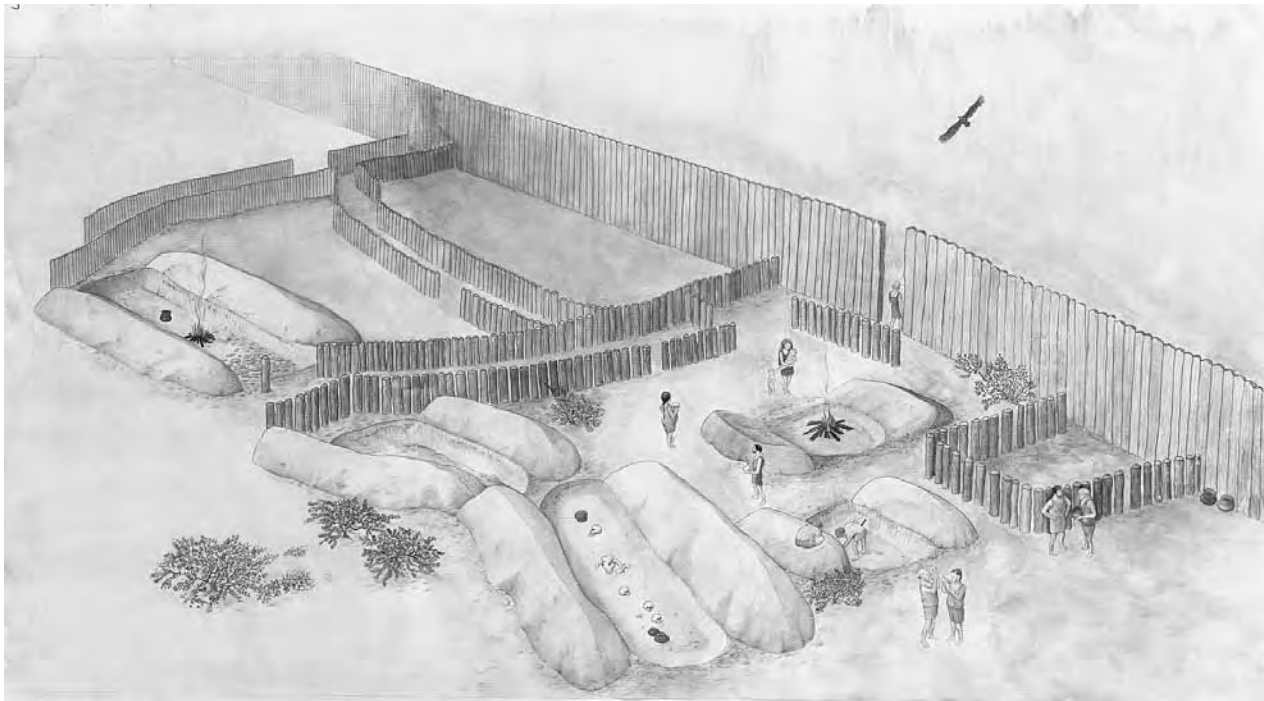


Fig. 2. Graphic reconstruction of the entrance area at Sarup I, looking southwest. DRAWING BY LOUISE HILMAR. COURTESY OF NIELS ANDERSEN. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

placed at the bottom of a segmented ditch within an enclosure.

The distribution of megalithic graves close to Sarup indicates that they frequently were concentrated in clusters, dividing the area into units of equal size, which perhaps can be treated as territories. Division of the land into units of equal size together with the many small settlements of uniform size may be signs of the social organization of a segmented tribal society. It is of special interest that no complete primary burials have ever been found in the megalithic grave, only body parts. A similar situation exists at the causewayed enclosures, where only parts of buried individuals have been found. These details indicate a link between the megalithic graves and the causeway enclosures.

The enclosures and the megalithic tombs were erected some six hundred years after the introduction, in about 4000 B.C., of a farming economy in Denmark. Traces of the earliest forms of agriculture are finds of grain and domesticated animals and vague signs in the pollen diagrams of pollen from grain. At this time the first funerary monuments, the long barrows without chambers, containing the re-

mains of one or more persons, appear. Significant changes in the landscape are first found in about 3400 B.C., at the time of the enclosures and megalithic tombs. Studies of pollen grains show that there was a smaller quantity of pollen pertaining to oak and lime forest and a higher proportion from birch and, later, hazel. Proportions of pollen of grasses and herbs characteristic of an open landscape also increased. These changes represent the deliberate creation of open areas for both cereal cultivation and grazing, which is known as Iversen's *landnam* ("land taking" or, simply, "land occupation").

Beneath some megalithic barrows there are traces of a primitive scratch plow, the ard. Working with an ard drawn by bullock required large fields cleared of big stones, trees, and stumps. The fields were plowed only a few times, and then the Neolithic peoples had to move on to new areas, looking for fresh land to cultivate. The introduction of the ard may have brought with it a series of changes in social relations, specifically, men undertaking cultivation and women carrying out tasks related to settlement. Land rights and inheritance would have become important, because a great deal of work had been invested in clearing plots for cultivation.

Rights to the land could have led easily to conflicts between different groups.

In the Sarup, the enclosure is placed conspicuously in the center of a wide area of land featuring groups of megalithic tombs. The enclosure must have been shared by several groups, from the evidence of the labor expenditure necessary for construction alone. It is possible to interpret the enclosure, with division by many four-sided fences and segmented ditches, as a picture that correlates to the settlement pattern of the surrounding area. The individual segments may have symbolized or been associated with a family, a settlement, a clan, or a land unit. When the deceased were temporarily buried in the enclosure, they were brought into a wider community; there, during a dangerous transitional phase, they underwent transformation into members of the realm of the dead. Participation in the building of the enclosure and in the activities that took place there must have strengthened the social, economic, and religious institutions. Through a network of this kind a social forum was created, which would have facilitated the resolution of conflicts over, for instance, land rights and food distribution in time of shortage. It might have represented an element of stability in a period that saw many new and important innovations and profound changes in social structures.

About 3100 B.C. further social changes took place in the Sarup area. The pattern consisting of a major enclosure associated with a large number of small settlements and building of megalithic tombs came to an end, and a concentration of settlement at a few sites began. One of them, on the promontory of Sarup itself, was about 4 hectares in size, or 80 times larger than the settlements of former centuries, which suggests a more stable economy. These changes indicate that the big ritual landscapes were in use for a period of only about two hundred years, when the final and most profound evolution took place from a society of hunter-gatherers to one of farmers.

See also *The Megalithic World* (vol. 1, part 4);
Consequences of Farming in Southern Scandinavia
 (vol. 1, part 4).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Andersen, Niels H. "Neolithic Enclosures of Scandinavia."
 In *Enclosures in Neolithic Europe: Essays on Causewayed*

and Non-Causewayed Sites. Edited by Gillian Varndell and Peter Topping, pp. 1–10. Oxford: Oxbow Books, 2002.

———. *Kult og ritualer i den ældre bondestenalder* (Cult and rituals in the TRB culture). Århus, Denmark: Kuml, 2000.

———. *Saruppladsen*. Vol. 2, *Tekst*. Vol. 3, *Katalog*. Jutland Archaeological Society Publications, no. 33. Århus, Denmark: Jysk Arkæologisk Selskab, 1999.

———. *The Sarup Enclosures*. Vol. 1, *The Funnel Beaker Culture of the Sarup Site Including Two Causewayed Camps Compared to the Contemporary Settlements in the Area and Other European Enclosures*. Jutland Archaeological Society Publications, no. 33. Århus, Denmark: Jysk Arkæologisk Selskab, 1997.

Darvill, Timothy, and Julian Thomas, eds. *Neolithic Enclosures in Atlantic Northwest Europe*. Neolithic Studies Group Seminar Papers, no. 6. Oxford: Oxbow Books, 2001.

Oswald, Alastair, Carolyn Dyer, and Martyn Barber, eds. *The Creation of Monuments: Neolithic Causewayed Enclosures in the British Isles*. Swindon, U.K.: English Heritage, 2001.

Raetzl-Fabian, Dirk. *Calden: Erdwerk und Bestattungsplätze des Jungneolithikums: Architektur-Ritual-Chronologie*. Universitätsforschungen zur Prähistorischen Archäologie, no. 70. Bonn, Germany: Dr. Rudolf Habelt, 2000.

Whittle, Alasdair, Joshua Pollard, and Caroline Grigson. *The Harmony of Symbols: The Windmill Hill Causewayed Enclosure, Wiltshire*. Oxford: Oxbow Books, 1999.

NIELS H. ANDERSEN

LONG BARROW CEMETERIES IN NEOLITHIC EUROPE

In the middle of the fifth millennium B.C. new cultural groups emerged in northern and western Europe. They arose as a consequence of a long period of contact and mutual influence between the central European Danubian farmers and the indigenous hunter-gatherers who encircled the Danubian world. These new communities, best exemplified by the northern Funnel Beaker and the western Cerny cultures, not only incorporated elements of an agropastoral economy and new material culture into the hunter-gatherer milieu but also, perhaps more significantly, created a new vision of the world through restructuring within the social and ritual spheres.

One of the symbols of this process was the emergence of monumentality—dramatically expressed in the creation of monumental long barrow cemeteries.

Although long barrows—earthen mounds with timber-built burial chambers—have been known for a very long time, their significance in the development of the Neolithic funerary tradition always has been overshadowed by the scholarly attention directed mainly toward the so-called megaliths (Greek *megas*: large; *lithos*: stone). Megaliths, by virtue of spectacularly surviving stone-built chambers, indeed represent the most tangible remains of the Neolithic populations. Yet because timber and earth were the principal medium of construction of long barrows—the former prone to quick natural decay and the latter easily subject to destruction through several millennia of plowing and other industrial activities—these monuments have remained largely in the background of archaeological research. Spectacular discoveries during the 1980s in the southern Paris basin, however, once again have focused scholarly attention on this important phenomenon.

The distribution of long barrows in continental Europe is vast. They reach from southern Scandinavia in the north to Moravia in the south and stretch westward through Normandy deep into central France, with long mounds equally prominent along the Atlantic coast; the Channel Islands form a convenient link between the continental and British barrows. Within this distribution, however, the monumental cemeteries (conglomerations of a dozen or more barrows) make a highly significant appearance on the periphery of the disintegrating Danubian world. They are found in the regions of Kujavia and western Pomerania in Poland, in France on the Plaine de Caen, along the river valleys of the Yonne, Seine, and Marne, and on the Plaine de Beauce. These are precisely the areas of intensive cultural contacts between the indigenous hunter-gatherers and the early Danubian farmers, and here the long barrow cemeteries constitute a prelude to the monumentality of the Neolithic funerary tradition in Europe.

Cemeteries of up to a hundred barrows are intimated in the early-nineteenth-century surveys from western Pomerania, in northwestern Poland—all long destroyed in the building of roads, farmhouses, and field walls. Smaller cemeteries of up to a dozen

barrows still survive in Kujavia in Poland, while those discovered through aerial surveys in France—where several millennia of plowing and other activities have obliterated all surface traces—comprise up to thirty structures. Although the barrow cemeteries display considerable variety, with elements of design, construction, and rituals clearly reflecting both natural and cultural conditions prevalent in different regions, certain aspects of location and spatial arrangement within the cemeteries and burial practices transcend geographical boundaries, emphasizing the wider, European character of this phenomenon.

CEMETERIES: SPACE AND ORGANIZATION

The location of the cemeteries suggests that “islands”—natural elevations within a relatively boggy, marshy, and waterlogged environment—may have been selected deliberately for burial purposes. The Kujavian cemeteries of Sarnowo and Wietrzykowo were surrounded by marshy valleys and streams. At Barkær, on the Djursland Peninsula in Jutland, a pair of barrows, each nearly 90 meters long, was located on a hill in the sea inlet of Kolind Sund. The gravel elevations within the ancient meanders of the river Yonne in France, upon which the cemeteries of Passy and Escolives (fig. 1) had been located, also appear to have been “islands,” frequently cut off by the river from the surrounding land.

Other features have an equally wide occurrence, for example, foundation of cemeteries on abandoned settlements and arrangement of the barrows within the cemeteries. The cemetery of Sarnowo was founded upon an abandoned Funnel Beaker settlement, possibly when the inhabitants chose to move onto slightly higher and drier land directly to the north. Foundations of small, rectangular houses, together with traces of an ancient plowed field, have been found underneath the earthen mounds. Although scholarly opinion with respect to the plowed field at this site is strongly divided, some of the later Danish mounds were unarguably placed upon previously cultivated fields, with plow marks surviving under the protection of the mound.

The arrangement of barrows in a fanlike pattern (fig. 2), witnessed as far apart as Kujavia and the Yonne valley, is reminiscent of the spatial arrange-



Fig. 1. Aerial view of the long barrow cemetery at Escolives, Yonne Valley, Burgundy, in process of excavation. COURTESY OF MAGDALENA S. MIDGLEY. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

ments of houses in villages of the late Danubian settlements in these regions. The idea of a house of the living serving as a prototype for a house of the dead has a long ancestry. It goes back to the mid-nineteenth century, when Sweden's Sven Nilsson speculated on the similarities between the ground plans of Eskimo houses and the Swedish passage graves. Since then many scholars have raised this possibility, most notably V. Gordon Childe, whose suggestion that the northern European barrows approximated the habitations discovered at the late Danubian Brześć Kujawski settlement in Kujavia, has had a profound impact. Indeed, the original, if misguided, interpretation by P. V. Glob of the two long barrows from Barkær as being the remains of "Danubian-style" longhouses is a perfect example of similarities between the two forms. In Kujavia this pattern can be shown by comparing the layout of barrows at Sarnowo with the arrangement of houses at Brześć Kujawski. The two sites are only 15 kilometers apart and may well have been contempo-

rary toward the final stages of the occupation of the Brześć Kujawski village. Similar arrangements are characteristic of other Kujavian cemeteries, such as Obałki, Leśniczówka, and Wietrzychowice.

In the southern Paris basin the barrows are reminiscent of individual Danubian houses by virtue of their shape and delineation by ditches, with some of the medium-sized barrows at Escolives offering a perfect dimensional and conceptual match. The site of Balloy, at the confluence of the Seine and Yonne Rivers, offers the most spectacular evidence for such an interpretation. Here, a late Danubian settlement of several trapezoidal houses was inhabited about 4700 B.C. After the village had lain abandoned, a group of people of the Cerny culture used the same location to create, in about 4500–4450 B.C., a large ceremonial center devoted to burial and other rituals.

They constructed a causeway enclosure and, to the northwest, they built a monumental cemetery of seventeen barrows. At least five of these barrows

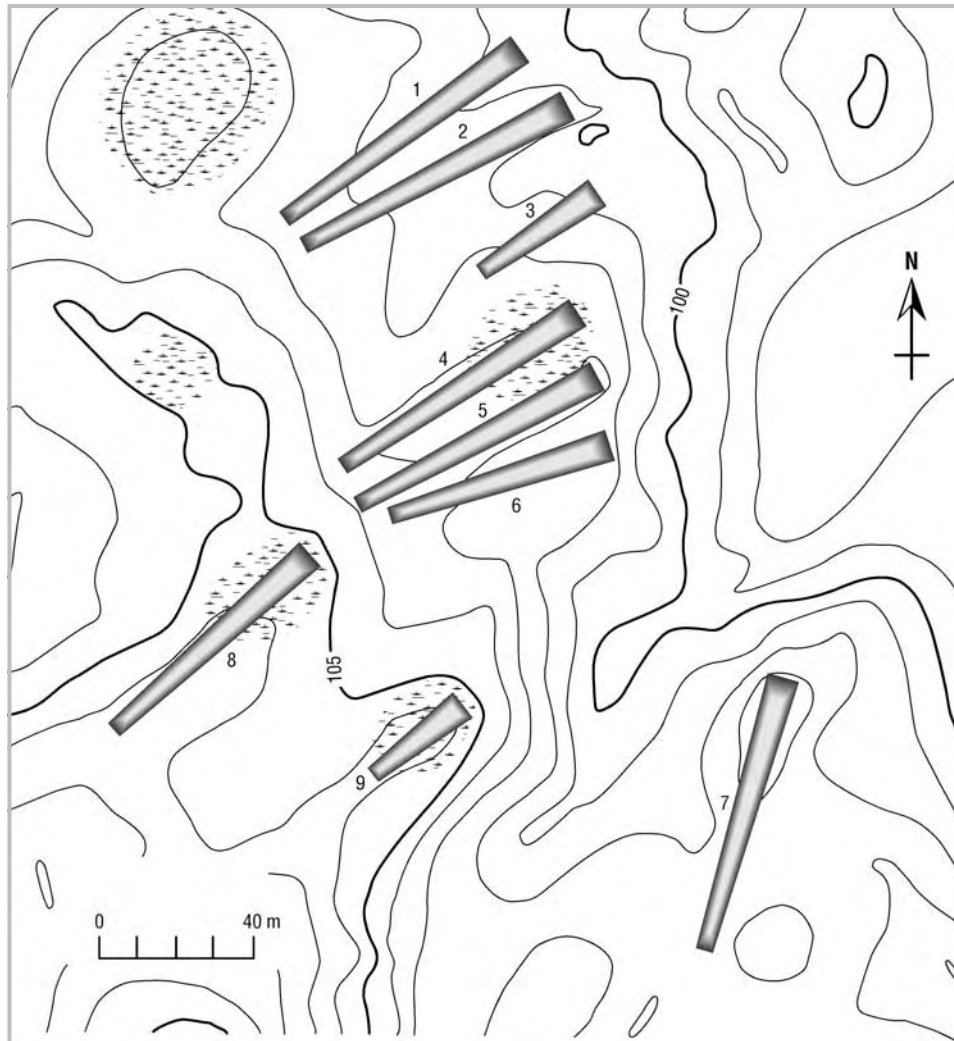


Fig. 2. Plan of the cemetery at Sarnowo, in Kujavia, displaying the fanlike arrangement of the long barrows. DRAWN BY MAGDALENA S. MIDGLEY.

were placed on top of earlier houses; the orientation is exactly the same, the barrows covered the houses precisely, and these house remains were much better preserved than those that remained uncovered. The evidence from Balloy shows beyond any doubt that, while ruined, the houses were still visible on the surface, to guide the positioning of the burial mounds some two hundred years after the settlement had been abandoned. The desire to place barrows upon disused settlements was prevalent even in those regions that had never been settled by the Danubian communities. The long barrow cemetery at Sachsenwald, near Hamburg, is a good example, and many of the individual long barrows from Den-

mark similarly were located upon abandoned Funnel Beaker settlements.

THE MOUNDS, GRAVES, AND BURIALS

The shapes of the mounds vary from oval, rectangular, and trapezoidal to triangular, with lengths ranging from as little as 20 meters to as much as 300 meters; the width rarely exceeds 10 meters. In central France, a region not well endowed with stone for building material, the barrows were defined by ditches, which, as was noted at certain of the Passy and Escolives monuments, may have had timber posts placed in them, forming a sort of palisade.

Such timber palisades are well documented in Denmark, where they occasionally were burned and, in rare cases, as at Bygholm Nørremark in eastern Jutland, were aggrandized by replacement with a substantial stone curb. By contrast, in Kujavia, where glacial erratic boulders were present in abundance, the mounds were retained within a stone curb that generally did not exceed 1 meter in height, although the mounds themselves seem originally to have been piled up to a much greater height. In all cases such enclosures delineated a sacred area in which burials were placed and where small timber temples sometimes allowed for the performance of ceremonies accompanying the funerary ritual.

Usually, one or two graves oriented east-west are found within a barrow, although more such graves are not uncommon. One of the barrows at Escolives contained three separate graves placed on the main axis, at least six were noted at Rybno in Kujavia, and in one of the barrows at Balloy eight centrally placed graves were discovered in excavation. The graves display a remarkable variety of constructions: pits lined with timber planks or, exceptionally, with thin stone slabs are prevalent in France. Rectangular boxes made from wooden planks standing on the surface, supported within an external stone frame and often covered by a mantle of field stones, typically are encountered in Kujavia and Denmark; the little stone cairns regularly tumbled into the grave upon the decay of a timber roof. In other instances, the bodies, either in coffins or wrapped in shrouds, were simply placed at the bottom of the grave pit.

At least some of the timber graves were intended to be accessible after the initial burial: the disturbance of bones in a double grave at Escolives indicates that the second person was placed there quite some time after the first burial. Indeed, such chambers may have served as prototypes for the future megaliths in these regions. At Barkær one of the graves is clearly a stone replica of a neighboring timber chamber, with the end stones shaped like thick wooden planks. The practice of covering some of the French grave pits with a huge stone slab of the kind discovered at Malesherbes, Loiret, represents a different facet of this development.

Human remains generally are poorly preserved, but where skeletons survive, they reveal that the dead were buried in an extended position with arms

stretched out along the sides of the body, a tradition commonly practiced by the preceding Mesolithic communities. Anthropological analyses indicate that both sexes and all ages, from newborn babies to adults, were buried in the long barrows. Because, clearly, only a small percentage of the population was buried within these cemeteries, they were without doubt privileged places reserved for selected individuals. The presence of children is particularly significant and confirms some form of social elevation of those who were afforded burial in the barrows; the children hardly could have distinguished themselves otherwise in their short lives.

The grave goods are typically scanty, although the French burials tend to be more richly equipped than those of Kujavia or Denmark. A ceramic pot or two, flint tools, and jewelry are common grave furnishings; some people wore necklaces of wild animal teeth, shells, and, in the more northerly latitudes, amber beads. Rare finds of copper beads and rings in northern Europe suggest that metals, while they were exotic, were making their way northward from the central European production centers.

Certain items encountered in a significant number of graves merit consideration. Hunting within the Funnel Beaker and Cerny cultures is witnessed through animal remains on settlements and, more significantly, finds expression in funerary contexts. While complete arrows do not survive, the number and positioning of the arrowheads are indicative of quivers full of arrows arranged alongside the deceased. The placement of what is essentially hunting equipment, in the context of a funerary ritual within an agricultural community, may emphasize the indigenous nature of these communities, whose ancestry was rooted deeply in the local hunting-gathering background. On the other hand, the accompanying presence of bones of domesticated animals and, in the Cerny context, vessels decorated with stylized bucrania (cattle skulls) identify an equally strong agricultural connection.

INTERPRETATION OF THE MONUMENTAL CEMETERIES

At first glance the long barrow cemeteries signal a dramatic break with preceding traditions: demonstratively monumental architecture, different burial customs attesting to social transformations, and the

emergence of new hierarchies within the Neolithic societies of the mid-fifth millennium B.C. Their significance lies not only in these new manifestations but also, and equally, in the encoded symbolism that reflects the merging of the Danubian and hunter-gatherer worlds.

Cemeteries first emerged in Europe in the Mesolithic, as witnessed at Skateholm in Scania or Vedbæk on Zealand, with Hoëdic and Téviéc in Brittany providing corresponding examples along the Atlantic. The principles of these burial traditions are seen clearly within the Funnel Beaker and Cerny funerary practices. While the Danubian farmers also buried their dead in cemeteries at the periphery of their settlements, it was the villages, with massive timber-built longhouses, that were an important symbol of the stability and permanence of the world of these early farmers.

By the middle of the fifth millennium B.C. the Danubian villages were magnificent abandoned ruins, with their dilapidated houses still impressively marking the landscape. They thus provided a powerful image of an ancestral place still accessible to the living communities. While the vernacular tradition of that period is, sadly, unknown, we would be wrong to assume that there was not an entire store of tales, songs, and superstitions associated with these abandoned villages. On occasions, pilgrimages to these sacred places would have evoked powerful memories of ancestors and times past. It is not surprising that such a distinctive symbol was transferred from the domestic to the funerary sphere, resulting in a village of the living becoming, both physically and metaphorically, a permanent abode of the dead.

See also **Brześć Kujawski** (*vol. 1, part 4*); **The Megalithic World** (*vol. 1, part 4*).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Albrethsen, S. E., and E. Brinch Petersen. "Excavation of a Mesolithic Cemetery at Vedbæk, Denmark." *Acta Archaeologica* 47 (1976): 1–28.
- Bradley, Richard. *The Past in Prehistoric Societies*. London: Routledge, 2002. (See, in particular, chap. 2.)
- Childe, V. Gordon. "The Origin of Neolithic Culture in Northern Europe." *Antiquity* 23 (1949): 129–135.
- Delor, Jean-Paul, et al. "L'implantation des nécropoles monumentales, au sud du Bassin parisien." In *La culture de Cerny: Nouvelle économie, nouvelle société au Néolithique*. Edited by C. Constantin, D. Mordant, and D. Simonin, pp. 381–395. Mémoires du Musée de Préhistoire d'Ile-de-France, no. 6. Nemours, France: Éditions APRAIF, 1997.
- Duhamel, P. "La nécropole monumentale Cerny de Passy (Yonne): Description d'ensemble et problèmes d'interprétation." In *La culture de Cerny: Nouvelle économie, nouvelle société au Néolithique*. Edited by C. Constantin, D. Mordant, and D. Simonin, pp. 397–448. Mémoires du Musée de Préhistoire d'Ile-de-France, no. 6. Nemours, France: Éditions APRAIF, 1997.
- Kristiansen, K. "Ard Marks under Barrows: A Response to Peter Rowley-Conwy." *Antiquity* 64 (1990): 322–327.
- Larsson, Lars. "Man and Sea in Southern Scandinavia during the Late Mesolithic: The Role of Cemeteries in the View of Society." In *Man and Sea in the Mesolithic: Coastal Settlement above and below Present Sea Level*. Edited by A. Fisher, pp. 95–104. Oxbow Monograph, no. 53. Oxford: Oxbow Books, 1995.
- Liversage David. *Barker: Long Barrows and Settlements*. Copenhagen, Denmark: Akademisk Forlag Universitetsforlaget i København, 1992.
- Madsen, T. "Earthen Long Barrows and Timber Structures: Aspects of the Early Neolithic Mortuary Practice in Denmark." *Proceedings of the Prehistoric Society* 45 (1979): 301–320.
- Midgley, Magdalena S. "The Earthen Long Barrow Phenomenon in Europe: Creation of Monumental Cemeteries." In *Památky archeologické Supplementum 13 (In Memoriam Jan Rulf)*, pp. 255–265. Prague, Czech Republic: n.p., 2000.
- . *The Origin and Function of the Earthen Long Barrows of Northern Europe*. BAR International Series, no. 259. Oxford: British Archaeological Reports, 1985.
- Mordant, D. "Le complexe des Réaudins à Balloy: Enceinte et nécropole monumentale." In *La culture de Cerny: Nouvelle économie, nouvelle société au Néolithique*. Edited by C. Constantin, D. Mordant, and D. Simonin, pp. 449–479. Mémoires du Musée de Préhistoire d'Ile-de-France, no. 6. Nemours, France: Éditions APRAIF, 1997.
- Niesiolowska-Śreniowska, Ewa. "The Early TRB 'Ploughmarks' from Sarnowo in Central Poland: A New Interpretation." *Oxford Journal of Archaeology* 18, no. 1 (1999): 17–22.
- Nilsson, S. *The Primitive Inhabitants of Scandinavia*. 3d ed. London: Longmans, Green, 1868.
- Péquart, Marthe, and Saint-Just Péquart. *Hoëdic: Deuxième station-nécropole du Mésolithique côtier armoricain*. Antwerp, Belgium: De Sikkel, 1954.

Péquart, Marthe, Saint-Just Péquart, Marcellin Boule, and Henri-Victor Vallois. *Téviec: Station-nécropole Mé-solithique du Morbihan*. Archives de l'Institut de Paléontologie Humaine, Mémoire no. 18. Paris: Masson & Cie, 1937.

MAGDALENA S. MIDGLEY



CONSEQUENCES OF
AGRICULTURE, 5000–2000 B.C.



INTRODUCTION

Between about 5000 and 2000 B.C. prehistoric society in Europe transformed itself yet again. What had been a collection of pioneer farmers and foragers on the brink of agriculture became a series of developed farming and herding societies. Although each part of Europe was different, there were several widespread developments. Agriculture became a stable economic system, and in each area a sustainable mix of cultivated plants and livestock permitted farming hamlets to be self-sufficient. People ceased to consider their herds simply as tame sources of meat and began to see them increasingly as providers of useful products while still alive, such as milk, wool, and pulling power. Alongside stone, bone, and pottery, metals came to be used first for ornaments and then for tools. Finally, people began to invest considerable effort in ceremonial behavior, which manifested in the form of burial monuments, ritual locations, and the first use of bogs for offerings.

Archaeologists in Europe call this period by a variety of names. It perhaps is most common in continental Europe to regard it as the later part of the Neolithic period; thus, “Late Neolithic” generally is appropriate as a universal designation for these societies. In northern Europe and the British Isles, where agriculture arrived the latest, this period spans virtually the entire Neolithic; for this reason, local divisions into Early, Middle, and Late Neolithic are more compressed. In southeastern, southern, and central Europe, where copper came into use as the earliest metal, archaeologists often speak of the “Copper Age” (or “Chalcolithic,” from a combina-

tion of Greek words for “copper” and “stone”). Finally, especially in older publications, the term “Eneolithic” is used in southeastern Europe, although it is falling out of favor in more general application.

AGRICULTURE SUCCEEDS

After the initial period of agricultural dispersal, communities that relied on domesticated plants and animals became ubiquitous throughout Europe, except in the most remote northern regions. In only one area, coastal Sweden and the island of Gotland, was there a relatively brief abandonment of cultivation in favor of a return to an economy based on marine resources. Everywhere else, a combination of farming and stock herding succeeded as the dominant economic strategy.

Agriculture is inherently risky. Weather can cause variations in crop yields, while livestock can become ill or be stolen. Risks, however, can be calculated, and educated gambles can be made. Farmers and herders are astutely aware of their environment and can assess the risks that they are taking. As farming came to be ubiquitous uncertainty—the simple inability to know what is going to happen next—diminished. Within a few centuries of the initial use of domesticated plants and animals in a region, the Late Neolithic farming communities had accumulated a store of knowledge and experience that enabled them to deal with risk rather than uncertainty, which had important implications for other aspects of social life.

Once much of the uncertainty had been removed from agriculture and an appropriate mix of domesticated plants and animals for a particular region had been established, people could devote more attention to aspects of life other than making sure they were fed. Attachments developed to particular locations and territories, and it was necessary to define clearly who was kin and who was not, so that fields and grazing lands could remain in the family. Trading relationships emerged between communities, but raiding and conflict also were a part of life, as people strove for social and economic advantages. More attention could be paid to public ceremony and the creation of sacred locations for burial and ritual.

SECONDARY ANIMAL PRODUCTS

Although dairying had been practiced in many areas in earlier centuries, it was during the later part of the Neolithic that livestock came to be valued for the products that they could provide while they continued to live. Just as domestication required a shift in the relationship between people and animals from hunting to tending, the use of so-called secondary products, such as milk, wool, and pulling power required a change in how animals were viewed. No longer were they valuable just for the meat and leather that could be obtained from them only once, when they were killed. Cattle, sheep, and goats could furnish important resources throughout much of their lives, before making their final contribution to the human diet when they died. Pigs, of course, afforded no such secondary products, so they continued to serve exclusively as sources of meat and hides.

When the living animal became valuable, it began to be viewed as a true source of wealth. A household with sheep and goats to produce milk and wool had additional resources at its disposal. Milk could be made into cheese, which could be stored longer, while wool offered new possibilities for garments and furnishings. The greatest advance, however, was the use of cattle to pull plows and wagons. Plows could break through tough soils that previously had been difficult to cultivate and also increased the area that a single household could plant. Wagons could move harvested crops, firewood, animal carcasses, and many other large, bulky items easily across land. Using animal traction, a

household could expand the amount of labor at its disposal.

On the steppes that connect Europe and Asia horses were domesticated c. 4500 B.C., affording new transportation possibilities. In particular, the combination of horse riding and an economy based on herds of sheep permitted the development of the system of nomadic pastoralism that came to characterize this region for several subsequent millennia. One result of animals' taking on value was that the possibilities increased for imbalances in household wealth to emerge. Some families may have been able to amass larger herds than others, while others may simply have been unlucky or foolish in the ways in which they managed their resources. It is possible that the roots of the social inequality that emerged more clearly in later periods of European prehistory had their roots in the Late Neolithic.

MANY TYPES OF SETTLEMENTS

One of the most remarkable aspects of Late Neolithic Europe is the diversity seen in settlements. They range from large collections of many houses to groups of only a few structures, from tightly clustered agglomerations to widely dispersed farmsteads. In certain places, such as the Balkans, settlements with clay houses were continually rebuilt in the same location, forming mounds, or tells, while in northern and western Europe, the rebuilding and relocating of timber structures resulted in little significant accumulation of debris. If timber was not available, houses and even their interior furnishings were made from stone, as in the remarkable settlements on the Orkney Islands.

The variation in Late Neolithic settlements is additional evidence for strong local attachments and the emergence of regional customs and traditions in domestic architecture. Houses are square, rectangular, oval, or round, depending on local styles and the materials available. There also are clear local preferences for settlement locations. For example, in the lake basins of the Alpine foreland, houses were built on piles driven into the soft mud of the lake shores, whereas on the island of Bornholm in the Baltic Sea, settlements with longhouses were erected along streams at the fall line, where the interior plateau meets the narrow coastal plain. In some areas, settlements were constructed on defensible points in the terrain or were surrounded by ditches and

palisades; elsewhere they were open and easily approached.

In general, however, it is possible to say that the houses of Late Neolithic Europe and their inhabitants were grouped into what might be called “hamlets.” It is unlikely that there was any long-term political leader of such a community, and their constituent households were still relatively autonomous. They needed to act together on occasion, and in such situations, temporary leaders might emerge. It is still too early, however, to see much evidence of hereditary social ranking, which did not become apparent until the Bronze Age.

THE QUEST FOR COPPER

The Late Neolithic inhabitants of Europe had mastered the art of pottery manufacture, which was the first process that resulted in the chemical transformation of a raw material to a new state from which it could not revert to its natural form. Once potters had achieved temperatures that were high enough to smelt metals from their native ores, the same principles of “pyrotechnology” were applied to minerals. Copper became the first metal to find its way into common use in Late Neolithic Europe. When smelted from its ore, copper could be hammered and cast into shiny ornaments and tools.

Between 4500 and 3000 B.C., copper use became exceptionally common in southeastern Europe and on the Iberian Peninsula. Miners followed copper seams, heating and then dashing cold water on the metal-bearing rocks to fracture them. The smelted copper then was transported over long distances. For example, the copper used at sites in north-central Poland came from as yet undetermined sources in the Carpathians, as least 500 kilometers away.

Most Late Neolithic copper was made into ornaments, such as beads, bracelets, and pendants. Making these ornaments was relatively simple, since the copper could be hammered into sheets and strips and then rolled. One burial at Osłonki in northern Poland contained a headdress around the skull made from several dozen copper strips that had been bent around a belt of leather or cloth. Later, copper was cast into tools, such as the massive copper axes found in the great cemeteries of the Carpathian Basin, such as Tiszapolgár in Hungary. By the end of the fourth millennium B.C., coppersmiths

were able to manufacture relatively graceful tools, such as the copper axe carried by the Iceman whose corpse was found in the Alps in 1991.

The greatest number of Late Neolithic copper artifacts are in graves and hoards, where they were deliberately buried. This practice removed copper from circulation in society and enhanced its value and desirability even more. In many regions the possession of copper ornaments and tools became another way for a household to accumulate and display its wealth.

RITUAL, CEREMONY, AND MONUMENTS

Perhaps the most spectacular development of Late Neolithic Europe was the establishment of clear locations for ritual and the building of public monuments. The landscape was transformed not just by clearing land for fields and pastures but also by investing particular locations with profound meanings. The Irish archaeologist Gabriel Cooney has written of “sacred landscapes” in which natural and artificial features held particular significance for generations of prehistoric inhabitants. Everywhere in Europe, Late Neolithic peoples created these sacred landscapes. In Denmark and northern Poland offerings began to be deposited in bogs and marshy depressions. High in the Carpathians, circular ditched enclosures probably were places where ceremonies were held. On the Salisbury Plain in England, the first bank and ditch was constructed at Stonehenge, and to the north there was the great stone circle at Avebury. Enigmatic standing stones called “menhirs” began to be erected at many locations in Brittany.

Perhaps the most impressive expression of Late Neolithic ceremonial architecture was the construction of large stone burial monuments called “megalithic tombs” in an arc reaching from Sweden in the north through France, Britain, and Ireland and south to Spain and Portugal. Tens of thousands of megalithic tombs were built, using large boulders to form chambers and passages that were covered over with mounds of earth or cairns of stones. Most megalithic tombs were collective burial monuments, in which deceased members of a community or a clan were buried together. They were opened repeatedly, and the bones of earlier generations were pushed aside to make space for new corpses.

Although their basic function seems clear, archaeologists continue to debate the broader significance of megalithic tombs for Neolithic society.

CONCLUSION

During the Late Neolithic we begin to see the traces of regional variation and local identity that persisted throughout later prehistoric times. Such economic practices as the use of secondary animal products and patterns of long-distance trade began to

emerge. The landscape was restructured dramatically, yet people continued to live in fairly small communities with relatively few differences in access to status, power, and wealth. Nonetheless, Europe during the Late Neolithic finally starts to become “recognizable” to us, as we look backward from the twenty-first century, much more familiar than the worlds of the postglacial hunter-gathers or the pioneer farmers of earlier millennia.

PETER BOGUCKI



EARLY METALLURGY IN SOUTHEASTERN EUROPE

FOLLOWED BY FEATURE ESSAY ON:

*Early Copper Mines at Rudna Glava and
Ai Bunar* 322

The earliest technologies employed by humans and their hominid ancestors, such as stone tool manufacture, were developed nearly two million years ago by reducing raw materials that occur in nature to a specific form or shape (e.g., a nodule of chert was reduced to a flake). Later, humans began to develop more complex composite technologies that required the combination of separate naturally occurring raw materials to create something new and different (e.g., clay, fire, and water were combined to create ceramics). The developments of these techniques mark important moments in the prehistory of humanity, but the innovators were limited by their inability to produce durable artifacts that could be reused and refashioned when they were worn-out or broken. Once the pot broke, it had to be thrown away. When the stone tool was resharpened so many times that it no longer fit into its haft, it had to be discarded.

It was not until human societies learned to develop technologies that would let them turn rock into metal that they would be able to create artifacts that could be used to the point of exhaustion and then re-created into something new. With the advent of metallurgy, the products manufactured by a human technology could be reused and recycled several times, thus making both the products

themselves and the knowledge involved in their production more precious and valuable to their makers. Unfortunately, these very characteristics—reusability and recyclability—of metal artifacts make the study of early metallurgy extremely difficult for archaeologists. Simply because the tools were so valuable, they seldom were left behind in their original forms for archaeologists to find.

THE AUTONOMY OF METALWORKING IN SOUTHEASTERN EUROPE

Metallurgy, like several other early technologies, developed independently across the world in several different cultural contexts—in North America, Central America, Southeast Asia, the Near East, Mesopotamia, and southeastern Europe. As a result, the precise timing of the advent of early metallurgy and its spread throughout the world has been a topic of much discussion.

Since the beginning of the twentieth century, archaeologists have uncovered evidence for copper production during the Neolithic and the Copper Age in the Balkan region of southeastern Europe, the Near East, and Mesopotamia. The prevalent theoretical paradigm during the early 1900s assumed that most cultural innovations occurred ear-

liest in the Near East and spread by processes of cultural diffusion and migration throughout Eurasia. This *ex oriente lux* (light from the east) framework was encouraged by relative dating methods that forced archaeologists to establish regional chronological sequences based upon typological similarities in artifact types found in stratigraphic sequences—or corresponding layers—at different sites. It was not until the advent of absolute dating methods, such as radiocarbon dating, that archaeologists were able to establish independent absolute chronological sequences for specific regions that then could be related to absolute sequences in other areas.

In a seminal article entitled “The Autonomy of the South-East European Copper Age,” Colin Renfrew convincingly demonstrated, using both absolute and relative dating methods, that the development of copper smelting technology occurred earlier in the Balkans than in the Near East and Mesopotamia. In addition, Renfrew argued, metallurgy was not “a single invention, but a number of distinct and separate discoveries.” He noted that in most areas the first stage would have been the hammering and drilling of native—or naturally pure—copper to produce beads. This stage would have been followed by annealing—a process of heating and cooling to facilitate shaping—and hammering the metal into a desired form. This procedure naturally would have led to forming the melted metal in casts. Finally, he suggested, the process of melting and casting would have led to the addition of other rocks, including ores, which would have led to smelting—extracting the metal from rocks—and eventually to alloying—or mixing—copper with other metals, such as tin and arsenic, to produce bronze.

While the precise chronological relationship between early metalworking technology in southeastern Europe and southwestern Asia remains unclear, by the fifth millennium B.C. copper production in southeastern Europe was more sophisticated than its Asian counterpart and dramatically influenced trade networks and socioeconomic organization.

EARLY COPPER ARTIFACTS

A few native copper artifacts dated to the eighth millennium B.C. have been identified at Çayönü in eastern Anatolia and to the seventh millennium B.C.

at Çatal Hüyük in southwestern Anatolia. At the beginning of the sixth millennium B.C., the Hassuna and Halaf cultures in Mesopotamia boasted modest assemblages containing copper and lead ornaments, all cold-hammered from native materials.

The earliest copper artifacts in southeastern Europe appeared late in the sixth millennium B.C. at such sites as Lepenski Vir. Archaeologists, including Henrietta Todorova, have suggested that, in addition to being used to produce artifacts, colorful azurite and malachite ores (both copper carbonates) may also have been used for body decoration. At Lepenski Vir, malachite and azurite beads were found in Early Neolithic contexts. And small ornamental copper artifacts, such as awls, beads, rings, and armbands, were found on settlements and in cemeteries throughout the Balkans.

By the middle of the fifth millennium B.C., much larger copper tools were being produced, initially in the form of flat copper axes and later in the form of “hammer-axes” with a hole for hafting, called a shaft-hole. By the end of the fifth millennium B.C., toolmakers were producing ax-adzes and large chisels. Interestingly, at the beginning of the fourth millennium B.C., the variability in copper tool types decreased considerably, suggesting a shift in the organization of production that was perhaps related to the exhaustion of productive ore sources in the area of modern-day Bulgaria and Serbia and to the discovery of more remote sources, possibly in the Transylvania region.

COPPER PRODUCTION

One of the biggest stumbling blocks archaeologists encounter when trying to understand the organization of prehistoric copper production is the fact that, unlike most other early technologies, such as ceramic and chipped-stone manufacture, the production of copper artifacts leaves behind almost no traces. Chipped-stone production, a reductive technology, leaves behind flakes and debitage each time an artifact is modified. Similarly, pots frequently break when they are being fired or at some point during their use, leaving behind fragments that cannot be efficiently reused for the archaeologist to find.

Not only does copper production leave little residue, the copper products themselves can be reused to the point of exhaustion and then reincor-

porated—or recycled—into new products. As a result, the current understanding of copper production techniques is based only upon the very sparse evidence that remains behind in those areas where copper was initially exploited, where the artifacts themselves were produced, and where the artifacts finally came to be deposited in the ground.

PRODUCTION TECHNIQUES

The earliest copper artifacts found in Neolithic contexts in southeastern Europe were produced from native copper sources that easily could be manipulated by cold-hammering techniques. These techniques were no more complex than those that had been used to produce stone tools for ages: once identified and acquired from the source, the raw materials were drilled and pounded into the desired shape. Similarly, annealing would have built on well-known techniques, such as heat treating lithic raw materials to promote their flaking characteristics.

The extraction of metals from ores, however, is a process that requires extensive knowledge of both the chemical properties of the raw materials themselves and the atmospheric conditions necessary for manipulating the raw materials to produce and modify the metals. As a result, metalworkers in several ethnographic societies are treated like shamans—respected individuals who have restricted access to specific knowledge. Frequently, metalworkers establish guilds or secret societies into which novices are inducted through elaborate rites of passage and long apprenticeships.

Native copper, which occurs naturally but is rare, requires a temperature of 1,083°C (1,981°F) to reach a molten state. The smelting of copper metal from ores, such as malachite and azurite, does not require as high a temperature, but it must occur in an oxygen-deprived atmosphere, also called an oxygen-reduced environment. Both of these conditions can be achieved, with substantial effort, in an open fire with a crucible or in a furnace or kiln. Normally, additional geological materials, called fluxes, must be added to the ore at high temperatures in the reducing atmosphere to remove impurities from the metal. The fluxes fuse with the impurities during the melting process to create a waste product, called slag, that separates from the remaining crude copper.

Renfrew noted that the conditions necessary for smelting copper had already been achieved in the fifth millennium B.C. by craftspeople who produced the graphite-decorated pottery that became common throughout the southern Balkans during that time. Like smelting, the graphite decoration was created in an oxygen-reduced, heated environment. The widespread use of graphite decoration indicates not only that potters knew how to create the atmospheric environments necessary for smelting copper but also that they were experimenting with different rare minerals while producing pots.

COPPER EXPLOITATION CONTEXTS

Unlike the raw material sources for producing stone tools and ceramics, which occur in several different types of environments throughout southeastern Europe, sources of copper ore occur only in very specific microenvironments. The copper ore sources in southeastern Europe are concentrated in veins that run through limestone massifs in the Balkans, particularly in Bulgaria and Serbia, where mines dating to the Copper Age have been discovered. Copper sources also occur in Transylvania, but so far there is no evidence to suggest these sources were exploited in prehistory.

COPPER PRODUCTION CONTEXTS

Extensive research since the 1970s has helped develop an understanding of the nature of copper ore exploitation and mining. Unfortunately, the elusive nature of metallurgical technology, which leaves behind very little evidence, prevents a good understanding of where the remaining steps of copper production occurred.

Scant evidence from contemporary settlements throughout the region suggests that access to the ore sources was unrestricted throughout the end of the Neolithic and during most of the Copper Age. Most steps of copper production—including smelting, annealing, casting, molding, and recycling—probably occurred on regular habitation sites and not at special-purpose sites, as seems to have been the case at the end of the Copper Age. There were several contemporary settlements within a short distance of the mines at Ai Bunar that produced copper oxide fragments that derived from the mines themselves. But there is no evidence to suggest that these settlements were special-purpose settlements that

were responsible for smelting the copper from the ore. No contemporary settlements have been identified in the vicinity of the mines at Rudna Glava.

The vast majority of evidence for copperworking derives from infrequent finds of copper slag and ore fragments at settlement sites. At the site of Selevac in Serbia, Ruth Tringham and Peter Glumac reported finding a single piece of copper slag and several small fragments of ore that they suggest indicate on-site processing. Copper slag traced to the source at Rudna Glava has been found at the site of Slatino in southwestern Bulgaria. Slag has also been discovered at the sites of Vadastra in Bulgaria, Anza in Yugoslavia, and Sitagroi and Mandalo in northern Greece.

The presence of copper slag at these settlement sites suggests that copper processing occurred as part of the normal economic activities carried out by people living in southeastern Europe during the late fifth and early fourth millennia B.C. There is no evidence to suggest that access to the copper sources was restricted during this time, and the absence of specific settlements or specific parts of settlements dedicated to copper processing suggests that each individual household most likely was responsible for producing its own copper artifacts, just as each most likely was responsible for producing its own ceramics.

By the end of the Copper Age, c. 3000 B.C., some settlements were probably divided into areas that were specifically dedicated to copper processing. Evidence at the site of Vučedol in Croatia demonstrates this development. Located on the right bank of the Danube River, about 5 kilometers east of Vukovar, on a loess terrace about 30 meters above the river, the site comprises 4 flat-topped mounds that were occupied at various times throughout the Neolithic and the Copper Age. During the Copper Age, the settlement extended across most of the site, covering an area of approximately 3 hectares (7.4 acres). The site is considerably larger than contemporary sites in the vicinity and may have been a regional economic and social center.

The highest part of the site at Vučedol was separated from the rest of the settlement by two parallel ditches. These ditches enclosed a large rectangular structure that was considerably larger than the

houses located in surrounding residential areas, and this area also produced the only evidence of copper smelting on the site. Stašo Forenbaher has argued that this part of the settlement may have been occupied by a local elite that exercised control not only over Vučedol but also over the production and exchange of precious goods and that dominated the smaller settlements in the area. Unfortunately, there is little convincing evidence for the presence of an elite class within that or any other settlement of the Late Copper Age in the area. Thus, while the settlement may have been an economic and ideological center where copper processing occurred, it seems unlikely that it would have been the center of a chiefdom.

Sometime during the Copper Age, however, there seems to have been a shift in the methods of copper production. Whereas it had been a task carried out by individual households at the beginning of the period, by the end of the period it had become a task carried out by a specific subset of the population. But this general pattern of increasing specialization does not seem to have been associated exclusively with metalworking. Timothy Kaiser and Barbara Voytek have argued that there was a general trend toward increasing specialization and more intensive production in households during this time in southeastern Europe. The trend extends to various aspects of economic organization, including ceramic and textile production and subsistence practices.

COPPER DEPOSITIONAL CONTEXTS

A great deal can be learned about the economic organization of prehistoric societies by studying how and where they exploited and processed copper ores, but it is considerably more difficult to understand how copper tools themselves were used and perceived by the people who produced them. To approach this question, it is necessary to study those contexts where copper objects came to be deposited in the ground, either intentionally or accidentally.

The vast majority of copper artifacts from the Neolithic period, until about 4500 B.C., have been discovered in burials or as random finds in settlement deposits. With the exception of a fishhook at the Early Vinča site of Gornea, nearly all copper artifacts from this period are small and associated with body decoration, including beads, rings, and arm-

bands. However, copper artifacts from the Copper Age, after about 4500 B.C., are found in three different types of depositional contexts: in settlements, in burials, and as stray finds (which means that their provenience is uncertain or unknown). The artifacts found in settlements tend to be small and fragmentary and related either to body decoration, such as beads, pendants, and rings, or to domestic tasks, such as awls used in sewing and textile production. The copper artifacts found in burials tend to be either small ornaments associated with body decoration or much larger, more functional tools, including hammer-axes, adzes, and chisels. Several of these large tools are reported as stray finds.

Although nearly half of the smaller objects exhibit evidence of use, few of the larger artifacts, whether found in burial contexts or as stray finds, appear to have been used at all. This leads some authors, such as Douglass W. Bailey, to suggest that the larger, more extravagant copper artifacts were intended primarily for display and not for functional uses. It is equally likely that used large artifacts are found less frequently than used small artifacts because the large artifacts were continually being recycled and small artifacts were not or because large artifacts were not considered appropriate as burial goods if they had been used. Indeed, the wide variety of artifact types and their occurrence in several different social contexts suggests they filled diverse social roles—as functional tools, items of prestige, and items of display.

GOLD

About the same time copper began to be extensively exploited in the region, artifacts of gold also began to circulate and be deposited in the ground, primarily in mortuary contexts. Compared with the complex technological processes necessary to process copper, little smelting is required to work gold. Since the raw material is itself very soft, it easily can be beaten and hammered without being heated. Gold is available in streams in Bulgaria, and nuggets may have been mined there in prehistory.

The vast majority of gold in southeastern Europe comes from the Black Sea coast of Bulgaria. Most of the gold artifacts are small ornaments of body or clothing decoration found in burials. Over three thousand gold objects were recovered from the fifth millennium B.C. cemetery near the site of

Varna. Gold artifact types in the Varna cemetery include cinched beads, thin sheets, spirals, diadems, earrings, lip covers, lip plugs, bracelets, and a penis sheath. Other gold artifacts have been found in fifth millennium B.C. contexts on the Great Hungarian Plain and at other sites in northern and eastern Bulgaria.

As Alasdair Whittle has noted, it may seem counterintuitive, but the paucity of gold in burials during this period in southeastern Europe may be a reflection not of gold's high social value but rather of its low social value, perhaps because of the ease with which it could be worked. Given this interpretation, the preponderance of gold in the cemetery at Varna may therefore be explained as having been a substitute for copper.

GENERAL TRENDS OF EARLY METALLURGY IN SOUTHEASTERN EUROPE

Throughout the Neolithic period, until about 5000 B.C., the farmers and herders of southeastern Europe exploited the rich deposits of nearly pure native copper located in the Balkan mountains to make trinkets—beads and other small artifacts—that were used primarily for ornamentation and body decoration. During this time, they used techniques of manufacture that did not differ considerably from the techniques they used to exploit lithic raw materials, such as chert.

About 5000 B.C., the early metalworkers learned to adapt techniques they had developed to make graphite ceramics to smelt copper from carbonate ores, such as malachite and azurite. This innovation probably occurred independently in southeastern Europe, and by the middle of the fifth millennium B.C., metalworkers there had far surpassed the quantity and quality of work being carried out in the Near East and Mesopotamia. Much larger artifacts, including axes, adzes, and chisels, were being produced from ores that were excavated at complex mining sites, such as Ai Bunar and Rudna Glava. There was a general increase across the region in the quantity and variety of types of artifacts that were produced throughout the fifth millennium B.C.

By the end of the fourth millennium B.C., copper production decreased considerably in the Balkans, perhaps because of the overexploitation

of local resources. Some authors, such as E. N. Chernykh, suggest that metalworking became more primitive during this time, when the mines at Rudna Glava and Ai Bunar also fell into disuse. Once again, objects made of copper became smaller types associated with ornamentation and body decoration.

Beginning in the middle of the fourth millennium B.C., metalworkers in the northern Balkans began to experiment with different alloys. They mixed copper with other metals, such as arsenic, which in some cases occurred as a natural impurity in copper ores. They quickly learned that these “arsenic bronzes” improved the quality of the final product by making the material harder and generally easier to work. By the second millennium B.C., probably via diffusion from Anatolia, the metalworkers learned that one of the best alloys for copper was tin. The combination of these two metals created a new material that was much harder and much more durable than copper but that could be recycled and reused in a similar fashion. That material was bronze.

See also **Warfare and Conquest** (vol. 1, part 1); **Early Copper Mines at Rudna Glava and Ai Bunar** (vol. 1, part 4); **Varna** (vol. 1, part 4).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Bailey, Douglass W. *Balkan Prehistory: Exclusion, Incorporation, and Identity*. London: Routledge, 2000.
- Chapman, J. C., and R. F. Tylecote. “Early Copper in the Balkans.” *Proceedings of the Prehistoric Society* 49 (1983): 373–379.
- Chernykh, E. N. *Ancient Metallurgy in the USSR: The Early Metal Age*. Translated by Sarah Wright. New York: Cambridge University Press, 1992.
- . “Aibunar—A Balkan Copper Mine of the Fourth Millennium B.C.” *Proceedings of the Prehistoric Society* 44 (1978): 203–217.
- Forenbaher, Stašo. “The Late Copper Age Architecture at Vučedol, Croatia.” *Journal of Field Archaeology* 21, no. 3 (1994): 307–323.
- Glumac, P., and R. Tringham. “The Exploitation of Copper Minerals.” In *Selevac: A Neolithic Village in Yugoslavia*. Edited by Ruth Tringham and Dušan Krstić, pp. 549–565. Los Angeles: Institute of Archaeology, University of California, Los Angeles, 1990.
- Jovanović, B. *Rudna Glava: Najstarije rudarstvo bakra na Centralnom Balkanu* [Rudna Glava: The oldest copper mine in the central Balkans]. Belgrade, Serbia: Arheološki Institut, 1982.

———. “The Origins of Copper Mining in Europe.” *Scientific American* 242, no. 5 (May 1980): 152–167.

———. *Metallurgija Eneolitskog Perioda Jugoslavije* [Metallurgy of the Eneolithic period in Yugoslavia]. Belgrade, Serbia: Arheološki Institut, 1971.

Kaiser, Timothy, and Barbara Voytek. “Sedentism and Economic Change in the Balkan Neolithic.” *Journal of Anthropological Archaeology* 2, no. 4 (December 1983): 323–353.

Musée des antiquités nationales. *Le Premier or de l'humanité en Bulgarie 5e millénaire*. Paris: Ministère de la culture, de la communication, des grands travaux et du Bicentenaire: Éditions de la Réunion des musées nationaux, 1989.

Renfrew, Colin. “The Autonomy of the South-East European Copper Age.” *Proceedings of the Prehistoric Society* 35 (1969): 12–47.

Shepherd, R. *Prehistoric Mining and Allied Industries*. London and New York: Academic Press, 1980.

Todorova, Henrietta. “The Neolithic, Eneolithic, and Transitional Period in Bulgarian Prehistory.” In *Prehistoric Bulgaria*. Edited by Douglass W. Bailey and Ivan Panayotov with Stefan Alexandrov, pp. 79–98. Madison, Wis.: Prehistory Press, 1995.

———. *The Eneolithic in Bulgaria in the Fifth Millennium B.C.* Translated by Vessela Zhelyaskova. Oxford: British Archaeological Reports, 1978.

Tringham, Ruth, and Dušan Krstić. *Selevac: A Neolithic Village in Yugoslavia*. Los Angeles: Institute of Archaeology, University of California, Los Angeles, 1990.

Whittle, Alasdair. *Europe in the Neolithic: The Creation of New Worlds*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1996.

WILLIAM A. PARKINSON

EARLY COPPER MINES AT RUDNA GLAVA AND AI BUNAR

Extensive research by eastern European scholars has reshaped our understanding of early copper ore mining techniques that were used during the Late Neolithic and Early Copper Age in the Balkans. Since the late 1960s, archaeological investigations at two copper mines—Rudna Glava and Ai Bunar—have revealed the complexity of early copper metallurgical techniques and revised our understanding of early copper exploitation strategies and their relationship to other socioeconomic processes.

One of the most well-known prehistoric copper mines is the site of Rudna Glava in eastern Serbia. The site, located 140 kilometers east of Belgrade on the Romanian border, was a magnetite mine until the late 1960s. Archaeological excavations by Borislav Jovanović in the 1970s revealed over twenty prehistoric mine shafts that followed veins of copper ore throughout the limestone massif.

The mine was excavated in antiquity using techniques that had been employed for thousands of years to exploit lithic resources, such as chert. Armed with stone mauls and antler picks, the prehistoric miners followed the vertical veins of copper ore into the hillside. They employed a method of heating and cooling to break up the ore and facilitate quarrying. First they would light fires along the wall face. Then they would throw water onto the hot rock, causing it to crack and thus making it easier to chip apart. Some of the veins were followed 15 to 20 meters into the center of the hill, with small horizontal access platforms extending off the main shaft. In those cases where the shaft appeared to be in danger of collapsing the miners built stone supporting walls out of the debris they excavated.

The mine at Rudna Glava is well dated to the Late Neolithic and Early Copper Age, a period also known as the Chalcolithic, which took place during the second half of the fifth and the first half of the fourth millennium B.C. This dating is based on pottery from the Vinča culture that was found in the mine shafts. Jovanović recorded three different accumulations of pottery in the shafts. The oldest, which was found on an access platform in the mine along with a damaged antler tool and a large stone maul, dates to the transitional phase, known as the Gradac phase, between Early and Late Vinča, during the fifth millennium B.C. The two other pottery concentrations are characteristic of Late Vinča culture and date to the early fourth millennium B.C.

Another early copper mine was excavated at the site of Ai Bunar in northern Bulgaria in the Sredna Gora Mountains of central Bulgaria. The mine at Ai Bunar is roughly contemporary with the mine at Rudna Glava, and the miners used similar techniques. They excavated narrow open trenches to follow the veins of copper carbonates into the hills. As at Rudna Glava, archaeologists found antler picks and stone mauls in the mine shafts, in addition

to two shaft-hole copper tools and the remains of three human individuals.

The ceramics found at Ai Bunar are characteristic of the ceramics found in the sixth layer at the Karanovo tell (Karanovo VI) and date to the late fifth millennium B.C. While this discovery demonstrates that the mines at Ai Bunar were in use during the later fifth millennium B.C., other evidence suggests the mines probably were in use somewhat earlier, possibly as early as the end of the sixth millennium B.C. Copper objects and ore that have been demonstrated chemically to have derived from the sources at Ai Bunar were found at several sites in south-central Bulgaria that are contemporary with Karanovo V, a phase that dates to the beginning of the fifth millennium B.C.

Chemical analyses, primarily lead isotope analyses, carried out by E. N. Chernykh, Noël H. Gale, and several Bulgarian specialists have demonstrated that Ai Bunar and Rudna Glava were not the only sources for copper ore in prehistory. The analysis of copper artifacts from several sites in south-central Bulgaria suggests that at least four other copper sources were exploited, though they remain unidentified.

A handful of other copper mines have been located in northern Thrace, one of which contained Karanovo V and VI pottery, and another prehistoric mine also is known to have existed at Mali Sturac, a site in the Rudnik mountain range in central Serbia. Unfortunately, none of these sites has been extensively explored, and little has been published about them.

See also Early Metallurgy in Southeastern Europe (vol 1, part 4); The Early and Middle Bronze Ages in Temperate Southeastern Europe (vol. 2, part 5).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Bailey, Douglass W. *Balkan Prehistory: Exclusion, Incorporation and Identity*. London: Routledge, 2000.
- Chernykh, E. N. *Ancient Metallurgy in the USSR: The Early Metal Age*. Translated by Sarah Wright. New York: Cambridge University Press, 1992.
- . "Aibunar—A Balkan Copper Mine of the Fourth Millennium B.C." *Proceedings of the Prehistoric Society* 44 (1978): 203–217.
- Jovanović, B. *Rudna Glava: Najstarije rudarstvo bakra na Centralnom Balkanu* [Rudna Glava: The oldest copper mine in the central Balkans]. Belgrade, Serbia: Arheološki Institut, 1982.

———. “The Origins of Copper Mining in Europe.” *Scientific American* 242, no. 5 (May 1980): 152–167.

———. *Metalurgija Eneolitskog Perioda Jugoslavije*. *Prevodilac: Veroslava Poznanović* [Metallurgy of the Eneolithic period in Yugoslavia]. Belgrade, Serbia: Arheološki Institut, 1971.

WILLIAM A. PARKINSON



MILK, WOOL, AND TRACTION: SECONDARY ANIMAL PRODUCTS

Zooarchaeologists distinguish between primary animal products, such as meat, bone, and marrow, and secondary products, such as milk, wool, and traction (animal labor). Primary products, also known as slaughter products, require the death of the animal and thus can be harvested only once. Secondary products are extracted from the living animal. This is a crucial distinction because secondary products permit a higher yield from the same number of animals. While people can acquire primary products from either wild or domestic animals, secondary products normally are available only from domestic herds. Some researchers have suggested that secondary products may have been the motivation for animal domestication, but the evidence does not support their use to any significant extent until considerably later than the time when animals were domesticated.

It is difficult to study the use of secondary products in prehistory because they typically are not preserved in the archaeological record. Most primary products leave relatively direct evidence in the form of animal bones. Bones are by-products of meat consumption, and bone breakage patterns can indicate their use for marrow. For the most part, secondary product use must be approached indirectly. Sometimes artistic representations portray these products or their use, but it is quite possible for societies to use them without leaving a pictorial record. Indeed, with the exception of the use of animal traction to draw wheeled vehicles, the first artistic depictions of secondary products generally are much later than their earliest use. Thus, the most

widely employed method to detect the use of secondary products is the demographic study of the animal bone assemblage.

Such a study focuses on the differing herding strategies that are necessary to achieve significant production of secondary products. If meat is the main concern and secondary product use is absent or insignificant, most males typically are slaughtered at a juvenile or subadult stage, when growth slows and more feed produces little additional weight gain. If herders want milk, they need lactating females, and they must limit competition from the infant animals through slaughter or early weaning. Thus, most males likely will be slaughtered as infants, and the herd will consist mainly of adult females. Both males and females produce wool, so when wool is the desired secondary product, the herd will consist of both sexes, and most animals will live into adulthood. Traction (pulling plows or vehicles) also requires adults, and males or castrates may be better suited to the task. Each strategy creates a distinctive kill-off pattern, or mortality profile. Age and sex information can be derived from the study of the animal bone remains to reconstruct these strategies.

MILK

All mammals produce milk, so it is certainly possible that ancient herders used dairy products from the beginning of animal domestication. There are real advantages to dairy products. Animal milk is a good substitute for human milk when a mother dies or cannot produce adequate milk. Dairy products pro-

vide a sustainable source of protein and fat that substantially enhances the productivity of the herd. For example, Paul Halstead has calculated that a Greek Neolithic (early farming) village of 40 to 240 inhabitants could meet its caloric needs with 2,400–14,400 sheep if the villagers ate only the meat, but they would need only 1,000–6,000 sheep if they used the milk as well. Dairying thus could be used to reduce herd size and devote more land to agriculture or, alternatively, to keep more animals alive for their wealth value while still deriving protein and calories from the herd. Moreover, processed milk products, such as cheese, can be stored, unlike fresh meat or milk.

There are also drawbacks to dairy production, however. Even with today's electric milking machines, dairy farmers know that maintaining dairy herds is a labor-intensive undertaking. The animals need to be milked regularly (at least once a day) to maintain production. (For maximum yield, modern dairy farmers milk two or even three times daily, at regular intervals.) To accomplish this, either the milking animals must be kept near the settlement—requiring fodder because there probably will not be enough pasture nearby—or a remote dairy-processing camp must be set up in the mountain pastures and some people will have to spend considerable time there. Any milk that is not consumed immediately must be processed and stored.

Lactose intolerance poses a further difficulty. Lactose is the form of sugar found in milk. Mammals normally drink milk only in infancy. The ancestral condition in humans, just as in other mammals, is to lose the ability to digest lactose after infancy as a result of shutting down production of the enzyme lactase. This is still true of most living humans. Human populations with a long history of drinking milk (in East Africa and central and northern Europe) have evolved the capacity to continue producing lactase throughout life. It is safe to assume that the people who first domesticated herd animals would not have been able to digest their milk in adulthood. Even people with lactose intolerance are able to consume dairy products if they are fermented (as are cheese and yogurt), which significantly reduces the lactose content. Little is known about the origins of these fermented products, but the techniques to produce them could not have been developed until after milk already was in use. Most pres-

ent-day populations that use dairy products, in fact, are not lactose tolerant and rely mainly on fermented dairy products.

Lactose tolerance seems to have developed where it was important to use fresh milk: in arid East Africa, where the water content may have been useful, and in northern Europe, where the lactose itself was helpful. Lactose enhances calcium absorption and helps prevent rickets in places where vitamin D intake from sunshine or fish is inadequate. In sum, an extended period of cultural or biological adaptation or both would be necessary before animal milk could make a significant contribution to the adult diet.

While milk may have been consumed occasionally from the earliest days of herding (sheep and goats were domesticated c. 8000 B.C.), there is little sign that it was used to any significant extent until much later. The mortality profiles of early herds reflect a meat-oriented herding strategy. At this point there are too few mortality profiles to gain a clear picture of when dairy achieved prominence in various regions. Current evidence suggests not simple diffusion from a center of origin or a single horizon of change, but more piecemeal adoption according to local conditions. Mortality profiles indicate dairy use by about 6000 B.C. in northern Italy (sheep and goats), 5800 B.C. in western Iran (sheep and goats), 5500 B.C. in Greece (sheep), 4000 B.C. in the northern Balkans and the alpine forelands of Switzerland (sheep, goats, and cattle), and 1000 B.C. in Britain but quite possibly as early as 3500 B.C. (cattle).

The mortality evidence has drawbacks, however. The mortality profiles from archaeological sites rarely are a close match to the idealized meat, milk, or wool herding strategies. This probably results from a combination of differential loss of the bones of young animals, which are softer and more fragile, and the fact that prehistoric herders, who were not involved in market economies, practiced less-specialized forms of herding than those seen today. A further difficulty relates to the let-down reflex. Milk is held in the mammary glands until it is “let down” into the milk ducts. Lactating females generally let down their milk through a hormonal reaction in response to the suckling of their infants. Not all animals let down their milk if their own offspring is not present, and some researchers have suggested that this would have been true of early domesticates.

There are many stratagems for “tricking” the mother into letting down, however. These schemes include the use of surrogate offspring and the use of a tube to blow air into the mother’s vagina (triggering a hormonal reaction). Experts disagree over how great a problem this would have been for early herders. Those who see it as a major impediment suggest that offspring would have had to be kept alive and milk shared with them, which would clearly alter the mortality profile from what is expected for dairy. One instructive study examines medieval Irish cattle mortality profiles. In this case documentary evidence indicates that cattle were kept primarily for dairy, but the mortality profile of the archaeological remains shows later kill-off than expected, between one and two years of age. At best, dairy mortality profiles indicate a herd structure that would support the use of milk but do not provide evidence that it actually was used.

Given these ambiguities, it is useful to seek other lines of evidence. One study of sites in Israel takes a more direct approach. Studies of present-day livestock show that lactating female sheep suffer calcium loss in their bones if they are nutritionally or otherwise stressed. Reasoning that ancient dairy animals would have been stressed at least sometimes, the researchers used X rays to measure the bone mass of sheep and goat specimens from several sites spanning the Neolithic, Chalcolithic, and Bronze Age. While there was some local variation, such calcium loss does not appear before the Chalcolithic (fifth millennium B.C.) and then intensifies in the Middle Bronze Age. So far, this promising but labor-intensive method of analysis has not been applied elsewhere. It is encouraging, however, that it accords well with the mortality profile evidence from the Chalcolithic sites.

Artifacts also have provided evidence for dairy use. Bowls resembling those now used in dairying have been found at Swiss Neolithic sites, where mortality profiles also suggest the use of milk. Ceramic sieves from the Early Neolithic Linear Pottery culture of central Europe (c. 5500 B.C.) may have been used in cheese making (fig. 1). Such arguments rest on analogies to modern uses of artifacts, however. Chemists now have developed a more direct method. It is possible to detect and identify lipid and protein residues from milk on ancient pottery. Analyses of lipid residues on pottery fragments

have provided chemical evidence for the widespread use of milk products during the Neolithic in Britain, about 4100–3500 B.C. The earliest artistic depiction of milking is on a Sumerian cylinder seal from c. 3300 B.C., probably well after the inception of dairy use in the Near East.

WOOL

Wild sheep (*Ovis orientalis*) are hairy rather than woolly, and early domestic sheep would have been the same. These sheep have a short woolly undercoat in the winter, which is shed in the spring. Under domestication, this woolly layer became longer and was retained year-round while the outer hair (or kemp) was reduced. The pigment in the coat also was lost. Thus, the development of wool was necessary before sheep could be managed for wool production.

Wool is a perishable material that is rarely preserved in archaeological deposits. There are, however, occasional finds of textiles or textile impressions or other preserved fibers. The earlier finds, from the Upper Palaeolithic through the Neolithic, are all vegetable fibers. In the Neolithic of Europe and the Near East, these fibers usually are flax (linen). Wool appears only c. 3000 B.C. in the Near East and about 500 years later in Europe.

It is difficult, but in some cases possible, to distinguish male and female sheep bones other than the relatively fragile and archaeologically rare horn cores. This problem is compounded by the challenge of distinguishing sheep and goat bones, yet it is primarily sex ratios (the presence of adult males in numbers nearly equal to females) that differentiate wool from dairy mortality profiles. As a result, there are few analyses that can pinpoint wool use on the basis of mortality profiles, and researchers can say only that demographic evidence generally supports the picture derived from fiber remains.

There is more indirect evidence from the bones, however. At the beginning of the Bronze Age, a new population of larger sheep abruptly appeared in Europe, probably spreading rapidly from the steppe zone of eastern Europe. Sheep also became more common in temperate Europe at this time. Given that Bronze Age figurines seem to represent woolly sheep, many researchers believe that these large steppe sheep were the first woolly sheep to reach Europe, largely replacing the earlier hairy sheep. It

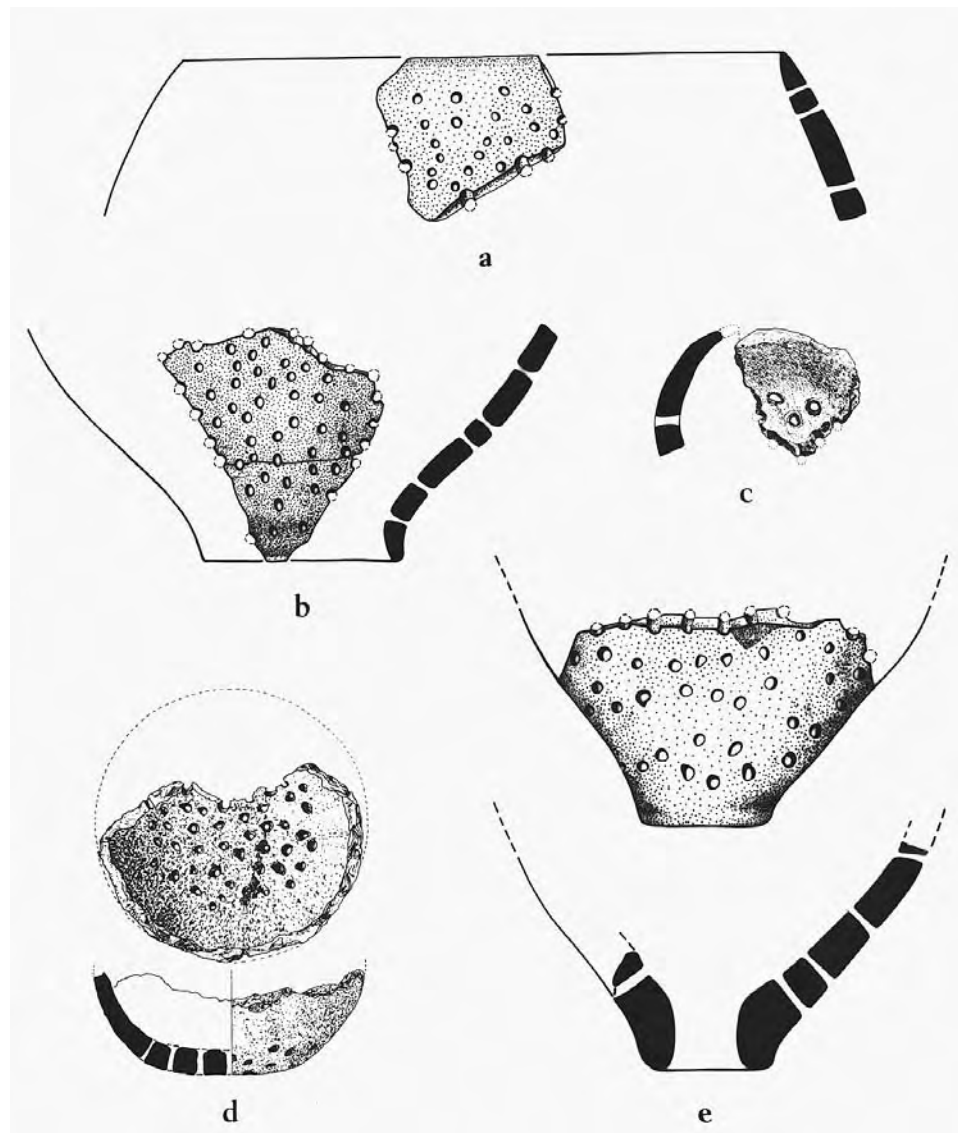


Fig. 1. Ceramic sieves of the *Linearbandkeramik* (5500-5000 B.C.) in central Europe. Key: a,b,e = Brześć Kujawski, Poland; c = Murr, Germany; d = Ditzingen-Schockingen, Germany. REPRINTED WITH THE PERMISSION OF CAMBRIDGE UNIVERSITY PRESS AND PETER BOGUCKI.

is worth noting that this pattern of rapid spread differs from the pattern of dairy use, which appeared more patchily and over a much longer period of time. Of course, the situation is somewhat different. In this case a preexisting textile industry based on flax could readily adopt wool, and the switch depended on a new kind of animal rather than simply different herding practices.

TRACTION

Harnessing animals to supplement human muscle power often is hailed as a critical step in the intensifi-

cation of human energy use. Animal-drawn carts and plows permit higher agricultural yields and facilitate their transport both locally and over long distances. Chariots drawn by horses or donkeys also transformed warfare. There are many ways of using animal labor, but here the focus is on transport and plowing. In prehistoric Europe cattle and horses mainly performed these functions.

Domestic horses made their first appearance in most of Europe at this time. While horses were at times a major meat source on the Eurasian steppe, in most of Europe their adoption appears to have

been based primarily on their role in transport as well as their wealth and status value. This is not to say that horses were never eaten, but they did not form a significant part of the diet, and there is no indication that they were raised primarily for meat.

In the case of cattle, an animal already long used in Europe for meat and by this time probably also for milk, traction was a new role, in addition to providing food. The use of cattle for traction meant that more animals were allowed to reach adulthood. Bulls or oxen (castrated bulls) probably were used for this purpose, although female cows pull carts in the modern-day Balkans. Traction is more difficult than dairy or wool use to detect in mortality profiles because only a few animals might have been kept for this purpose (and, like the Balkan cows, they might have been used for meat and milk as well). Animal bone studies can detect the presence of oxen. Castration tends to alter the shape of the horns (reflected in the bony horn cores, which are preserved, whereas the keratinous horn sheath usually is not). It also affects the growth pattern, so that limb bones tend to be longer and narrower than they are in intact males. Recognizing oxen, however, depends on finding a reasonable number of intact horn cores and limb bones. Particularly in the Neolithic, animal bones often were processed heavily for their marrow and fat content, leaving them highly fragmented. Thus mortality profiles do not provide a clear picture of the inception of the use of cattle for traction.

Another approach is to examine changes in the bones themselves. Extensive use for traction stresses the bones and joints of the animal, causing remodeling of the bones and such pathological conditions as osteoarthritis. Studies applied to faunal remains of the northern Balkans have suggested the use of cattle in traction (probably plowing) in the Late Neolithic, c. 4500 B.C. Other studies of later and modern cattle have developed criteria for the alterations caused by use in traction, but they have not yet been applied widely to early animal bone assemblages.

Other evidence has been brought to bear on the appearance of plowing in the archaeological record. The plows themselves probably were made of perishable materials, such as wood (although some Late Bronze Age plows are preserved in bog deposits). Plow marks, however, often are preserved below burial mounds in northern Europe in the

Late Neolithic and Bronze Age (from c. 4000 B.C.). This probably was not simply a result of happening to build a mound on a plowed field but rather a ritual turning or penetration of the earth as part of the funerary ceremony itself. It is also most likely the ritual significance of plowing that has led to its frequent representation in Bronze Age rock art in much of western Europe (fig. 2). In any case, these are clear indications that plowing was practiced by 2500 B.C. The location of sites on heavy soils where they had not been found previously also has been seen as indirect evidence for plowing in the Late Neolithic of the northern Balkans, c. 4500 B.C.

In sum, much detail remains to be filled in, but drawing on the various lines of evidence it is reasonable to suggest that plowing began in southeast Europe in about 4500 B.C. and was practiced in northwest Europe by 4000 B.C. Clearly, plowing was entrenched across Europe by 2500 B.C., probably earlier. Thus, the plow, too, may have spread fairly rapidly, although somewhat earlier than wool.

Wheeled vehicles, which are inherently mobile, seem to have spread even faster. On current evidence, they appeared at about the same time in Europe and the Near East, c. 3500 B.C. (fig. 3). At this point wheeled vehicles are depicted in pictographs and models in Mesopotamia and surrounding regions. Likewise, in northern Germany a burial mound covers a set of wagon ruts, and in Poland a depiction of a wagon appears on a pot of the Middle Neolithic Funnel Beaker culture. To date, the earliest evidence of wheeled vehicles on the eastern European steppe is slightly later, in about 3100 B.C., but perhaps earlier finds will come to light, as this seems one possible route connecting Mesopotamia and the northern European plain. All of these early vehicles are slow, four-wheeled carts, apparently drawn by cattle. At this same time burials of pairs of cattle appear in eastern and northern Europe, probably yoked pairs sacrificed as part of ceremonies.

There is considerable debate concerning whether horses were ridden before or after they were used to draw carts and chariots. It is clear, at least, that the domestic horses that reached Europe from the steppe zone to the east were not used primarily for food and presumably were for some kind of transport. Animal bone remains at archaeological sites suggest that they were rare and probably were kept only by the elite classes that emerged in the fourth

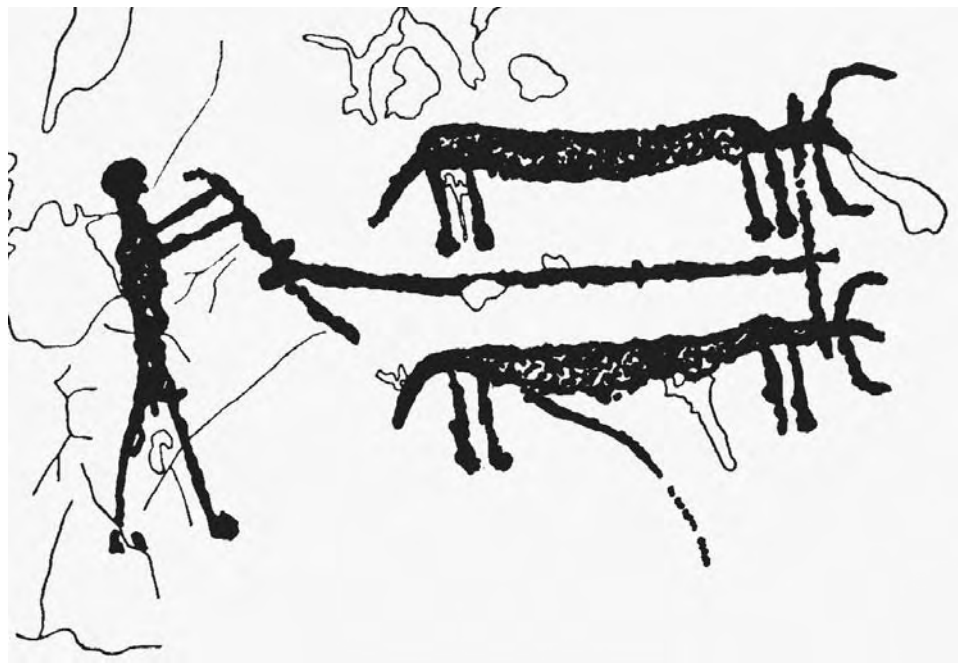


Fig. 2. Rock art depiction of plowing with cattle. COPYRIGHT © 2003 BY WARA, CENTRO CAMUNO DI STUDI PREISTORICI, 25044 CAPO DI PONTE, ITALY. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

millennium B.C. A few horses appeared in graves of the Tiszapolgár culture of the Carpathian Basin shortly before 4000 B.C. They then disappeared, so perhaps they were isolated imports that did not establish a local breeding population. They turned up again in this area c. 3500 B.C. and slightly later in northern Europe. They did not become common throughout Europe until the Early Bronze Age, in about 2500 B.C.

THE SECONDARY PRODUCTS REVOLUTION

Gordon Childe, in a metaphor of lasting power, characterized the major economic, social, and ideological changes accompanying the origins of agriculture as the Neolithic Revolution. In an analogy to this concept, Andrew Sherratt has proposed a similarly crucial Secondary Products Revolution (SPR). The premise of the SPR is that dairy, wool, and traction appeared at roughly the same time in the Near East and Europe and that the use of products derived from living animals rendered animal husbandry dramatically more productive, with profound consequences.

In the SPR model, dairy, wool, and traction are linked into an integrated system quite different

from the mixed farming model (with animals raised only for meat) that preceded it. Plowing increased agricultural productivity by permitting cultivation of larger areas and the use of heavier (and often more fertile) soils. Animal transport facilitated agriculture and made it possible for cities to draw their sustenance from a larger surrounding area, promoting economic integration at a regional level. In this view, it is no accident that animals used primarily for transport (horses, donkeys, and camels) were domesticated at about this time.

Wool provides a valuable, nonperishable, and easily transportable product that can be raised in areas that are marginal for agriculture. This probably contributed to the development of specialized pastoralism. The protein, fat, and calories of dairy products offered a source of animal nutrients that was an alternative to meat. Thus, herders could afford to keep animals alive for wool production and traction. Use of living animal products made the animals more valuable, adding to their overall worth. This value encouraged raiding and so may have contributed to increased warfare.

Comparative studies of contemporary societies have shown that plow agriculture leads to a greater investment in a particular plot of land, and, in this

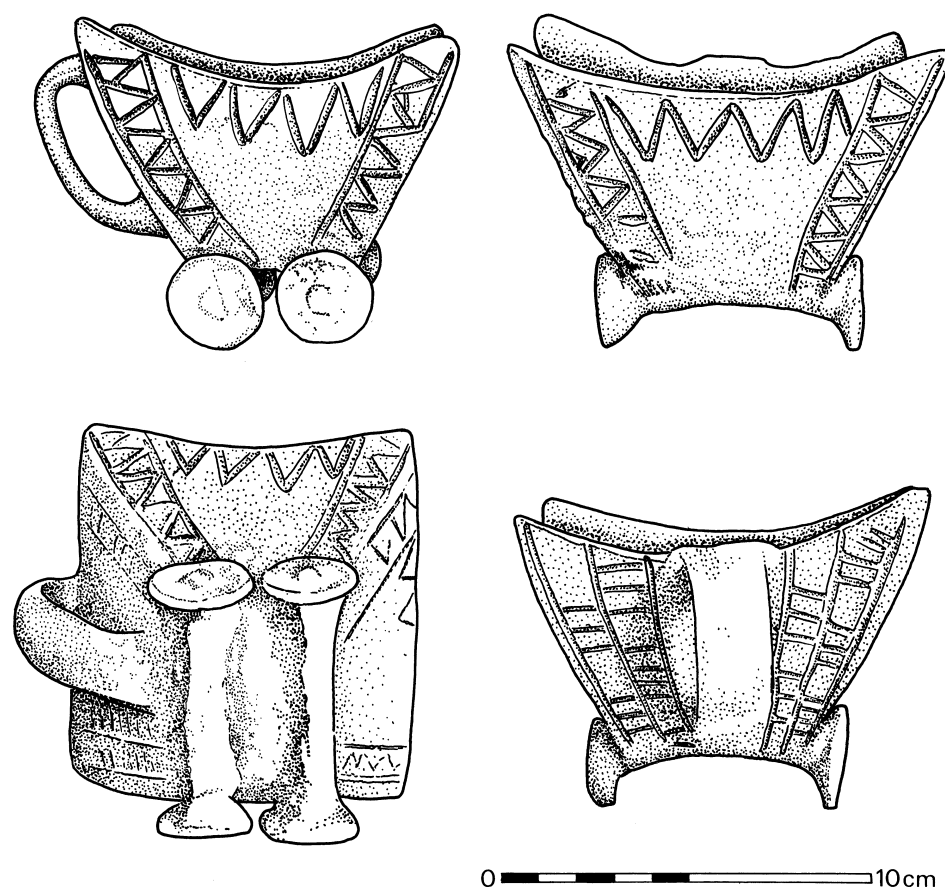


Fig. 3. Clay cup in the shape of a cart from Szigetszentmárton, Hungary (Baden culture, c. 3000 B.C.). REPRINTED WITH THE PERMISSION OF CAMBRIDGE UNIVERSITY PRESS AND ALASDAIR WHITTLE.

context, land tenure and inheritance rules take on new significance. In general, women perform most of the labor in hoe agriculture, whereas men do most of the work in plow agriculture. If this was true in prehistoric Europe, it means that this period marked a major change in gender roles. Rock art that shows men plowing supports this argument, although the association of ards (early plows) with female-associated artifacts in bog hoards in Late Bronze Age Denmark might mean that women plowed in some cases. If the generalizations from contemporary societies are followed, hoe agriculture typically is associated with matriliney (tracing descent through the female line) and plow agriculture with patriliney (tracing descent through the male line). Together with the new importance of wealth in both land and livestock, providing higher stakes for inheritance, the kinship system may have experienced considerable change.

These changing roles may have led to an imbalance in power between men and women. Sherratt suggests that female labor may have been devoted increasingly to the weaving of woolen textiles; women also may have been involved in dairy production. Sherratt also believes that men came to dominate the economy, whereas women were relegated to the domestic sphere. Growing textile production for exchange, however, may have given women considerable economic power.

The enhancement of land and livestock wealth brings with it greater opportunity to create inequalities of wealth and power. Along with improved transport, Sherratt believes that this underlies another of Childe's concepts: the Urban Revolution, or the rise of the first cities in the Near East. He also suggests that the use of animal traction had important long-term effects. Regarding traction as the first step in the mechanization of agriculture, lead-

ing to further mechanization, Sherratt claims that it ultimately explains why the Industrial Revolution happened in the Old World rather than the New World.

Many researchers have critiqued the concept of the SPR, particularly the claim that dairy, wool, and traction appeared more or less simultaneously. As already noted, dairy, in particular, may have a rather longer history, and the various elements of the SPR seem to have spread at different rates and perhaps by different routes. Nevertheless, most researchers agree that there seemed to be a significant intensification of secondary product use starting in about 3500 B.C. There also are signs of changes in settlement patterns, inequality, and gender roles at roughly this time and indications that herding may have taken on greater importance in relation to plant agriculture. It is important to remember, however, that this was not a unified phenomenon across Europe but instead was locally variable. Wheeled vehicles seemed to be more important in eastern and northern Europe, whereas plows were more significant in western Europe, for example.

Moreover, as is often the case, the direction of causality is not clear. Sherratt thinks that the use of secondary products drove the other changes and that secondary product use, in turn, was necessitated by population growth that required intensified food production. Because, however, secondary products permitted herders to slaughter fewer animals, it may be that it was not the secondary products that converted livestock into wealth but the wealth value of living animals that motivated the use of secondary products. In any case, extensive use of these living animal products had wide-ranging consequences for the societies keeping the animals.

See also **Domestication of the Horse** (vol. 1, part 4).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Amoroso, Emmanuel C., and Peter A. Jewell. "The Exploitation of the Milk-Ejection Reflex by Primitive Peoples." In *Man and Cattle*. Edited by Arthur E. Mourant and Frederick E. Zeuner, pp. 126–137. London: Royal Anthropological Institute of Great Britain and Ireland, 1963.
- Bakker, Jan Albert, Janusz Kruk, Albert E. Lanting, and Sarunas Milisauskas. "The Earliest Evidence of Wheeled Vehicles in Europe and the Near East." *Antiquity* 73 (1999): 778–790.
- Bartosiewicz, László, Wim Van Neer, and An Lentacker. *Draught Cattle: Their Osteological Identification and History*. Tervueren, Belgium: Musée Royale de l'Afrique Centrale, 1997.
- Bogucki, Peter I. "Animal Traction and Household Economies in Neolithic Europe." *Antiquity* 67 (1993): 492–503.
- . "The Antiquity of Dairying in Temperate Europe." *Expedition* 28, no. 2 (1986): 51–58.
- Bökönyi, Sándor. *History of Domestic Mammals in Central and Eastern Europe*. Translated by Lili Halápy. Budapest, Hungary: Akadémiai Kiadó, 1974.
- Childe, V. Gordon. *Man Makes Himself*. New York: New American Library, 1951.
- Copley, M. S., et al. "The Earliest Direct Chemical Evidence for Widespread Dairying in Prehistoric Britain." *Proceedings of the National Academy of Science* 100, no. 4 (2003): 1524–1529.
- Craig, Oliver E., Jacqui Mulville, Michael Parker Pearson, Robert J. Sokol, Keith Gelsthorpe, Rebecca Stacey, and Matthew J. Collins. "Detecting Milk Proteins in Ancient Pots." *Nature* 408, no. 6810 (2000): 312.
- Gibbs, Liv. "Identifying Gender Representation in the Archaeological Record: A Contextual Study." In *Reader in Gender Archaeology*. Edited by Kelley Hays-Gilpin and David S. Whitley, pp. 231–254. London: Routledge, 1998.
- Halstead, Paul L. J. "Counting Sheep in Neolithic and Bronze Age Greece." In *Pattern of the Past: Studies in Honour of David Clarke*. Edited by Ian Hodder, Glynn L. Isaac, and Norman Hammond, pp. 307–339. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1981.
- Harris, Marvin. "Lactophiles and Lactophobes: Milk Lovers and Milk Haters." In his *Good to Eat: Riddles of Food and Culture*. New York: Simon & Schuster, 1985.
- McCormick, Finbar. "Early Faunal Evidence for Dairying." *Oxford Journal of Archaeology* 11, no. 2 (1992): 201–209.
- Payne, Sebastian. "Kill-Off Patterns in Sheep and Goats: The Mandibles from Asvan Kale." *Anatolian Studies* 23 (1973): 281–303.
- Ryder, Michael L. *Sheep and Man*. London: Duckworth, 1983.
- Sherratt, Andrew G. "Plough and Pastoralism: Aspects of the Secondary Products Revolution." In *Pattern of the Past: Studies in Honour of David Clarke*. Edited by H. Hammond, I. Hodder, and G. Isaac, pp. 261–305. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1981. (Reprinted with new information in *Economy and Society in Prehistoric Europe: Changing Perspectives*. Edited by A. Sherratt, pp. 158–198. Princeton, N.J.: Princeton University Press, 1997.)
- . "The Secondary Exploitation of Animals in the Old World." *World Archaeology* 15 (1983): 90–104. (Re-

printed with new information in *Economy and Society in Prehistoric Europe: Changing Perspectives*. Edited by A. Sherratt, pp. 199–228. Princeton, N.J.: Princeton University Press, 1997.)

———. “Mobile Resources: Settlement and Exchange in Early Agricultural Europe.” In his *Economy and Society in Prehistoric Europe: Changing Perspectives*. Princeton, N.J.: Princeton University Press, 1997. First published in *Ranking, Resource, and Exchange: Aspects of the Ar-*

chaeology of Early European Society. Edited by A. Colin Renfrew and Stephen J. Shennan, pp. 13–26. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1982.

Smith, Patricia, and Liora R. Kolska Horwitz. “Radiographic Evidence for Changing Patterns of Animal Exploitation in the Southern Levant.” *Journal of Archaeological Science* 11, no. 6 (1984): 467–475.

NERISSA RUSSELL



LATE NEOLITHIC/COPPER AGE SOUTHEASTERN EUROPE

FOLLOWED BY FEATURE ESSAYS ON:

<i>Varna</i>	341
<i>Ovcharovo</i>	344

The end of the Neolithic period in southeastern Europe was marked by several changes in settlement layout, house form, and economic and ritual organizations, which suggest that the farming societies that inhabited the region underwent a social transformation at the end of the period, about 4500 B.C. This article outlines the various changes that occurred during the Late Neolithic (c. 5000–4500 B.C.) and the Copper Age (c. 4500–3000 B.C.) throughout southeastern Europe.

The area discussed here extends from the Carpathian Basin south to the Thessalian Plain, including the modern-day countries of Hungary, Romania, the former Yugoslavia, Bulgaria, Albania, Macedonia, and northern Greece. This region forms a relatively cohesive geographic unit that is bounded on the north and west by the Austrian and Slovakian Alps and on the east by the Carpathian Mountains. The geographic layout of the region, consisting of several small, discrete microregions, each with its own set of local resources, encouraged regional differentiation among the farming societies that inhabited the area at the end of the Neolithic period. This was a sort of prehistoric version of Balkanization that persisted in the region until the twentieth century.

CHRONOLOGY

In most of northern and western Europe the Neolithic period led directly into the Bronze Age, but the phases in southeastern Europe included a formal Copper Age, or Chalcolithic period, that started throughout the region c. 4500 B.C. In Greece, where the Bronze Age began slightly earlier than it did farther north in the Balkans and in the Carpathian Basin, this time period is called the Final Neolithic and extended from approximately 4500 to 3300 B.C. In the central Balkans, that is, in Bulgaria, Macedonia, and Albania, the time period from c. 4500 to 3000 B.C. is labeled the Eneolithic. In the former Yugoslavia the same time period is called the Eneolithic or the Chalcolithic, and in Hungary and western Romania it is termed the Copper Age.

Despite the regional variations in the names that archaeologists have given to this time span, the phase generally is defined by a dramatic increase in the exploitation of copper as a raw material source for producing artifacts. In the first half of the twentieth century archaeologists thought that copper was not utilized at all until the Copper Age. As detailed knowledge of the region has grown from additional excavations and from the development of more precise dating techniques, it has become clear that the exploitation of copper as a source of raw

material began in several parts of the region during the Neolithic. Early copper use, however, focused primarily on the production of small artifacts, such as beads, hooks, and decorative trinkets from “native” (pure) copper. By contrast, copper artifacts dating to the fifth millennium B.C. tend to be much more massive than their trinket predecessors. These items include adzes and axes that were produced not simply by hammering native copper into specific shapes but by much more intensive processes of excavating copper-bearing minerals (e.g., malachite) from mines, extracting the copper from the ore (a process called smelting), and casting artifacts in pre-made molds.

Thus while the Copper Age initially was defined on technological grounds as a time when humans first began to exploit copper resources, it now is considered to be a period that saw a dramatic increase in the level of production and the widespread use of smelting to form more massive cast tools. Even more important, the Copper Age has come to be defined as a period when societies throughout eastern Europe underwent dramatic changes in economic and social organization that established the social framework for the transitions in political organization that occurred during the Bronze Age.

LATE NEOLITHIC: CULTURAL AREAS

During the Late Neolithic in southeastern Europe settlement systems developed in association with specific sites that continued to be occupied or reoccupied for hundreds or sometimes thousands of years. The frequent reoccupation of specific sites sometimes resulted in the formation of stratigraphically superimposed habitation layers that grew several meters high. These types of sites—commonly called “tells”—are typical of the period, but they certainly are not the only kinds of settlements in the region. In one synthesis of the Late Neolithic in eastern Hungary, entitled *The Late Neolithic of the Tisza Region*, for example, Nándor Kalicz and Pál Raczky placed Late Neolithic site types into three different categories—formal tell settlements, tell-like mounds, and flat settlements. Even this classification is simply shorthand for differentiating sites with various vertical stratigraphic layers into analytical units that basically refer to how long and how frequently each site was occupied and reoccupied.



Fig. 1. Neolithic “sickle god” figurine from the Hungarian site of Szegvár-Tűzköves, Tisza culture, c. 5000 B.C. © GIANNI DAGLI ORTI/CORBIS. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

On a larger scale and almost certainly in relation to the development of these more formalized, highly structured local settlement systems, the Late Neolithic saw the crystallization of more discretely defined regional groups across the landscape. By and large these regional groups are distinguished essentially by differences in ceramic assemblages, but in some areas, such as eastern Hungary, the distinctions extend beyond ceramics to settlement organization and even to subsistence practices. This pattern of regional variation differs dramatically from the patterns of the earlier Neolithic and the Copper Age, both of which are characterized by large-scale regional homogeneity, with very similar house forms, ceramic traditions, and settlement layouts extending over very large geographic areas.

In and around the Thessalian Plain in northern Greece, which had substantial occupation throughout the Neolithic and saw the development of tell

sites earlier than the northern Balkans, the Late Neolithic is interpreted largely through the extensive excavations at the site of Dimini, dating to the end of the sixth millennium B.C. Habitation continued at certain other sites, such as Sesklo, a tell that had been established at the end of the Early Neolithic. New sites also began to appear in fresh areas, such as Sitagroi in Thrace.

North of Greece, in south-central Bulgaria, the Karanovo tell, which shows occupation levels dating to the beginning of the sixth millennium B.C., is one of the best-published sites in the region. For years it has been the main site through which all relative regional stratigraphic sequences have been established. Throughout the twentieth century archaeologists used the 12 meters of cultural occupation layers at Karanovo not only to link internal phasing relationships in southeastern Europe but also to develop the relationships of the phases in southeastern Europe relative to those in Anatolia and farther east.

The stratigraphic layers at the Karanovo tell have been divided into six major levels. The earliest phases (I–III) generally correspond to the Early and Middle Neolithic of the region. Phases IV and V conform roughly to the Late Neolithic and phase VI to the Early Copper Age. Findings at other multiphase—or “multicomponent”—tell sites in the region, such as Azmak, located just to the west of Karanovo, have not been published fully, but they suggest that successive, though not necessarily continuous, reoccupation throughout the Neolithic was a common phenomenon.

Farther north, in the former Yugoslavia, the tell of Vinča long has dominated the attention of the archaeological world. Located in northern Serbia, the site was occupied from the Middle Neolithic through the beginning of the Copper Age. There the stratigraphic levels have been divided into four main phases. Level A corresponds more or less to the Middle Neolithic and levels B and C to the Late Neolithic. Level D is associated with the Early Copper Age. The Vinča culture extended over most of Serbia and parts of Bosnia and Croatia and into the Banat region of southwestern Romania. As in northern Greece, Macedonia, and parts of Bulgaria, more sites seem to have been established in regions that previously had been sparsely inhabited.

In the Carpathian Basin two cultural trajectories that succeeded the Middle Neolithic Linear Pottery

culture developed on either side of the Danube River about 5000 B.C. In the eastern basin, in the area known as the Great Hungarian Plain, Late Neolithic societies along the Tisza River began to separate into the much smaller regional cultural groups (called Tisza, Herpály, and Csőszhalom) that were distributed in different regions of the plain. The subdivision of the plain into three discrete cultural groups occurred gradually throughout the Late Neolithic.

West of the Danube, in Transdanubia, Late Neolithic settlements are assigned to the earlier phases of the Lengyel culture (Lengyel I and II). Unlike the eastern Carpathian Basin, where a relatively abrupt break is apparent in the cultural sequence between the Late Neolithic Tisza-Herpály-Csőszhalom complex and the succeeding Early Copper Age Tiszapolgár culture, sites of the Lengyel culture exhibited much more continuity into the Copper Age (Lengyel III). Whereas the societies east of the Danube seem to have witnessed a somewhat abrupt transformation that affected several aspects of social organization at the beginning of the Copper Age (about 4500 B.C.), those west of the Danube acquired social characteristics associated with the Copper Age over a much longer time.

LATE NEOLITHIC: ECONOMIC AND SOCIAL ORGANIZATION

Economically the various Late Neolithic groups continued the generalized farming, herding, hunting, fishing, gathering subsistence patterns that had been established earlier in the period. There was a great deal of variation in different regions, probably relating to the local conditions of the microregions. Late Neolithic societies throughout the region relied primarily on domestic plants and animals, most of which were exploited at even the earliest Neolithic sites in southeastern Europe and the Near East. The principal domestic plants were varieties of wheat and barley, with lentils, bitter vetch, chickpeas, and flax occurring in lesser quantities. The main domestic animals were cattle, sheep, goats, and pigs. During the Late Neolithic these animals seem to have been used primarily for meat rather than for milk, cheese, and other “secondary” products.

While the Late Neolithic villagers of southeastern Europe relied predominantly upon these do-

mestic resources for subsistence, they also continued to make use of wild resources available in the local environment. These resources included large wild animals, such as roe deer, red deer, and wild boar, as well as smaller mammals, such as wild hare. In addition they availed themselves of aquatic (fish) and estuarine (birds) resources.

Two types of wheat (emmer and einkorn) and hulled barley were grown in this region in Late Neolithic times. These and other forms of wheat and barley have appeared in varying amounts at sites across the region and were complemented by legumes, which served not only to supplement a diet based primarily on cereals but also to increase the nitrogen content of the soil. In northern Greece, in Late Neolithic contexts at Sesklo, emmer wheat prevailed with einkorn also found in significant quantities. In the Late Neolithic at that site there also were wild figs, grapevines, almonds, and oats. Emmer wheat has been found in the botanical remains from Late Neolithic Dimini, along with einkorn wheat, six-row barley, naked barley, lentils, peas, fava beans, bitter vetch, chickpeas, grass peas, and wild grapevines and almonds. Similar botanical remains were discovered in Late Neolithic contexts at Karanovo in Bulgaria, Anza in Macedonia, Obre in Bosnia-Herzegovina, and Gomolava in Serbia. In the central and northern Balkans and in the Hungarian Plain wild apples also occur in very small numbers.

Faunal assemblages in the north tend to have somewhat higher numbers of wild animal bones, a pattern that seems to hark back to the earliest Neolithic in the region. Although there was a great deal of regional variation, the occupants of the southern Balkans kept more sheep and goats (ovicaprids) during the Late Neolithic than did the villagers of the northern Balkans and the Carpathian Basin, where more cattle were exploited. For example, 50–85 percent of the bones in faunal assemblages at sites in northern Serbia, southwestern Romania, and eastern Hungary represent domestic animals, the vast majority of which are cattle. Throughout the Neolithic assemblages in northern Greece, by contrast, there are many more domestic animals, primarily sheep and goats.

The relative increase in cattle in the northern Balkans toward the end of the Neolithic is related to a tendency to utilize animals not only for their

primary products, such as meat, fur, and bone, but also for their secondary products, such as milk, cheese, and traction for plowing. The precise timing of this Secondary Products Revolution, a term coined by Andrew Sherratt, remains the subject of much debate, because it has significant implications for the development of economic systems in prehistoric Europe.

Within Late Neolithic settlements in the region, most socioeconomic activities—from subsistence activities to pottery making—seem to have been carried out by the members of individual households. Marshall Sahlins called this pattern the “domestic mode of production,” and it predominates in tribal societies, within which social status and political clout usually are based not on hereditary relationships (ascribed ranking) but on the proven ability of each potential leader to earn that status (achieved ranking) within a social network.

Despite the lack of evidence for hereditary social ranking in the period, the layout of settlements and the organization of burial practices at various sites indicate complexly structured social relationships. For example, Dimini in northern Greece was divided into groups of houses arranged around courtyards, suggesting that the social group that occupied the settlement was subdivided into smaller units. A similar pattern is evident at the massive (roughly 50 hectares) site of Makriyalos, where several large rectangular buildings were constructed, probably to serve as gathering places for diverse segments of the population. Farther north, at Selevac and at the smaller site of Divostin (phase II) in Serbia, the distribution of houses across the settlements suggest that the settlements similarly were divided into smaller social units.

In eastern Hungary, Polgár-Csőszhalom on the upper Tisza is a large site with a multiditched mound—called a “rondel”—located at the western edge of a very large horizontal settlement. At least five ditches and palisades enclosed an area about 180 meters in diameter with perhaps fifteen burned houses at the center. The floor of one building (house 9) yielded an assemblage of miniature statuettes, clay sun disks, and footed bowls and a pit that produced 259 copper bead fragments, copper wire fragments, and bone tubes. The ashy fill that surrounded the disarticulated copper and bone artifacts led the director of the project, Pál Raczky, to

hypothesize that this was a sacrificial pit and that the central area of the roundel served as a sacred precinct or sanctuary.

Alongside the roundel, running roughly east-west, was a horizontal settlement covering an area of some 28 hectares, with several timber-framed longhouses (measuring 8–12 × 4–5 meters) organized into compounds that contained cylindrical wells and small clusters of graves. The settlement is divided internally into discrete groups that probably reflect independent social units, and the roundel feature suggests that this site, like other tells on the Hungarian Plain, probably also functioned as a regional economic and ideological center.

Throughout the Neolithic period burials tended to occur in and around settlements, frequently in small groups or clusters, which most researchers assume were related to some sort of social unit. Cremation burials at Dimini, dating to the late sixth millennium B.C., have been found under floors and near hearths, while primary and secondary burials were discovered in ditches that surrounded the site of Makriyalos in Macedonia. In the early fifth millennium B.C., at Gomolava (associated with the Vinča culture), nearly thirty people, mostly males, were buried in an unused part of the settlement. To the north, on the Great Hungarian Plain, intramural burials also occur within and around the settlements at tell sites, such as on the roundel at Polgár-Csőszhalom and at Hódmezvászárhely-Gorzsa, Berettyóújfalú-Herpály, and Vészt-Mágor. Burials also are found at horizontal settlements, such as the flat settlement at Polgár-Csőszhalom and at Öcsöd-Kováshalom.

Late Neolithic sites, especially tells, frequently were enclosed with extensive systems of ditches and walls that may have served many functions, from fortifications for defense to symbolic features that separated the site from its hinterland. Whatever the purposes of such features, they represent a significant time investment in the construction of the settlements, which attests to the durability and long-term habitation of specific spots in the landscape. Makriyalos in western Macedonia had three concentric ditches, while later sites in the Lower Danube, such as Polyanitsa and Ovcharovo, had a single substantial wall that surrounded the settlement. Farther north, in the Great Hungarian Plain, the settlement at Polgár-Csőszhalom had a fortified roundel remi-

niscient of those at Lengyel sites in Transdanubia, while such sites as Hódmezvászárhely-Gorzsa and Öcsöd-Kováshalom were encompassed by large ditches that were rebuilt to encircle the settlement as it expanded.

Neolithic tells in southeastern Europe were re-occupied for hundreds or even thousands of years. It is likely that they served as centers for ideological and economic interaction, but their importance has been drastically overemphasized, primarily because, for a very long time, they were the only sites to have been investigated. As survey and excavation around these sites, and at other, non-tell settlements, increased in later years, it became clear that the tells frequently formed the tethering points for social interactions among different types of settlements within the various regionally discrete cultural groups.

COPPER AGE: CULTURAL AREAS

The beginning of the Copper Age, about 4500 B.C., is characterized by several technological and socioeconomic changes throughout central and southeastern Europe. From the Carpathian Basin to the Aegean Sea, several trends suggest that the area underwent a social transformation at this time. These trends include a dramatic increase in the production and distribution of tools fashioned from smelted and native copper sources; a tendency toward larger, more homogeneous stylistic provinces or cultural areas; a bias toward smaller and more numerous settlements throughout the landscape; the establishment of formal cemeteries; and the restructuring of the long-distance trade networks that had characterized the region throughout the Neolithic. In addition to these overall patterns it also is assumed that the impact of the Secondary Products Revolution began to affect economic systems seriously at about this time.

In northern Greece the Final Neolithic period extended from c. 4500 B.C. to 3300 B.C., when it led into the Early Bronze Age. Throughout northern Greece there seems to have been a decrease in the number of sites inhabited during this time, which corresponds more or less to the later occupation at Sitagroi (phase III) and the construction of large surrounding walls at Pefkakia and Mandalo.

In Bulgaria the Early Chalcolithic corresponds with level VI at the Karanovo tell. There, as in east-

ern Hungary, there seems to have been an increase in site numbers at this time, perhaps associated with the foundation of more non-tell settlements. During the fourth millennium B.C. in south-central Bulgaria—the Transition or Hiatus period—there was an overall decline in the numbers of sites. The sites in the northeastern area of the country and in southern Romania were associated with the Gumelna culture until about 4000 B.C., then with the Krivodol-Salcua complex, and finally with the Cernavoda culture, ending in about 3000 B.C.

Throughout most of the former Yugoslavia the time period from about 4500 to 3800 B.C. is associated with level D at the Vinča tell and then with the Bubanj-Hum culture. In northernmost Serbia, western Romania, and eastern Hungary the time span from c. 4500 to 3800 B.C. is associated with the Tiszapolgár culture, which gave way directly to the Bodrogkeresztúr culture. Throughout the western Balkans, the Carpathian Basin, and westward, the Baden culture extended over a large region at the end of the Copper Age (beginning about 3300 B.C.). Curiously the western half of the Carpathian Basin experienced a much less drastic break from the Late Neolithic, with Lengyel culture (Lengyel III) settlement sites exhibiting a great deal of continuity throughout the Early Copper Age. After about 4000 B.C. sites in Transdanubia show evidence of a relationship to the Balaton-Lasinja cultural complex.

COPPER AGE: ECONOMIC AND SOCIAL ORGANIZATION

It is difficult, from the archaeological record, to identify precisely the factors responsible for the changes that occurred throughout southeastern Europe about 4500 B.C. However, it seems that there were two major contributing factors, first the widespread use of copper, not only for trinkets but also as a source of raw material for producing much more massive tools, and, second, the extensive effects of the Secondary Products Revolution.

Despite the abrupt disruption of trade networks in several areas, which would imply that the use of copper flourished very early in the Copper Age, the actual quantity of production began to increase significantly only after 4000 B.C. Large copper tools appeared slightly earlier in Bulgaria than elsewhere, toward the end of the fifth millennium B.C. While

copper mines definitively dated to this period are known from Bulgaria, eastern Serbia, and Thrace, the spatial and social contexts of the various steps associated with the manufacture of large tools in the Copper Age remain a mystery. Very meager evidence from such sites as Selevac in Serbia indicates that, even during the Late Neolithic, copper smelting may have occurred in domestic contexts. By the end of the Copper Age such sites as Vučedol in Croatia experienced an almost industrial level of production.

Although the precise timing remains unclear, most archaeologists agree that the advent of the Secondary Products Revolution had a major impact on economic systems during the Copper Age. The primary evidence for the revolution derives from faunal assemblages, which indicate that many domestic animals were kept alive longer so they could be used for secondary products.

In northern Greece and throughout most of the central Balkans significant continuity is evident on settlements from the Late Neolithic into the Early Copper Age. In the eastern Carpathian Basin most Copper Age settlements are quite small (less than 1 hectare) and are not associated with Late Neolithic tells. Although Copper Age settlements are present at some tell sites, such as Vészt-Mágor, almost without exception the Copper Age stratigraphic levels on tell sites are separated from those of the Late Neolithic by buried soil horizons that indicate a hiatus in occupation.

During the fourth millennium B.C. the number of sites declined dramatically in most of the region. The majority of tells were abandoned at this time, including most of those in Bulgaria and southern Romania. On the Great Hungarian Plain site numbers decreased substantially during the Middle Copper Age (Bodrogkeresztúr culture) and again during the Late Copper Age, which is known almost exclusively from burials.

The later fifth millennium B.C. also witnessed the establishment of the first formal cemeteries independent of settlements in southeastern Europe. This trend suggests that there was a reorganization in the burial ritual, which throughout the Neolithic took place within settlements. During the Copper Age, by contrast, several large cemeteries appeared across the region. Frequently these cemeteries were

isolated in the landscape and were not associated with specific settlements, suggesting that they probably were used by several different settlements. Thus whereas Neolithic burial rites tended to focus primarily on small social groups, probably households and families, the emergence of independent Early Copper Age cemeteries in the region indicates that burial rituals may have served to integrate inhabitants of several different villages.

This shift from intramural burial to formal cemeteries seems to have been made primarily in the eastern Carpathian Basin around 4500 B.C. and slightly earlier in northern Bulgaria, at the beginning of the fifth millennium B.C. In northern Greece a formal cemetery containing cremation burials was established several hundred meters from the tell settlement of Platia Magoula Zarkou later in the fifth millennium B.C. In the Lower Danube large cemeteries associated with the Hamangia culture, such as Cernavoda and Durankulak, each produced hundreds of burials dating to the beginning of the fifth millennium B.C. Although these cemeteries were associated with contemporary settlements, later cemeteries in northeastern Bulgaria, such as Varna, and on the Great Hungarian Plain, such as Tiszapolgár-Basatanya, were not connected directly with settlement sites. The establishment of formal cemeteries continued throughout the Copper Age. On the Great Hungarian Plain during the later fourth millennium B.C. people of the Baden culture sometimes were buried with cattle, as at the large cemeteries of Alsónémedi and Budakalász.

At the end of the fourth millennium a new form of burial, under large mounds of earth called *kurgans*, became common across the northern part of southeastern Europe from the Lower Danube to the Carpathian Basin. These burials have earlier parallels in the east, in Moldova and the Ukraine, and such scholars as Marija Gimbutas have associated them with the first wave of influence of Indo-European speakers in Europe. Other researchers, such as Colin Renfrew, have contended that the spread of Indo-European occurred at the beginning of the Neolithic. While the *kurgan* burials of the Late Copper Age certainly have parallels to the east that might indicate a sort of demic migration into the region, they remain very poorly understood. Only once the tradition of *kurgan* burial can be associated with specific settlement phases will the un-

derstanding of the social dynamics of the later Copper Age become clear.

THE END OF THE NEOLITHIC IN SOUTHEASTERN EUROPE

The changes that occurred at the end of the Neolithic in southeastern Europe created the cultural framework for the social trajectories of various societies during the Bronze Age, when the first convincing evidence for the development of hereditary social ranking in the region is found. From the establishment and eventual abandonment of tell sites to the founding of formal cemeteries and the major impacts of the Secondary Products Revolution, the end of the Neolithic in southeastern Europe witnessed a social transformation that had dramatic effects on economic, political, and ideological aspects of life for years to come.

See also **Early Metallurgy in Southeastern Europe** (vol. 1, part 4); **Early Copper Mines at Rudna Glava and Ai Bunar** (vol. 1, part 4); **Milk, Wool, and Traction: Secondary Animal Products** (vol. 1, part 4); **Varna** (vol. 1, part 4); **Ovcharovo** (vol. 1, part 4); **The Early and Middle Bronze Ages in Temperate Southeastern Europe** (vol. 2, part 5).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Bailey, Douglass W. *Balkan Prehistory: Exclusion, Incorporation, and Identity*. London: Routledge, 2000.
- Bognár-Kutzián, Ida. *The Early Copper Age Tiszapolgár Culture in the Carpathian Basin*. Translated by Gedeon Dienes. *Archaeologica Hungarica*, new series no. 48. Budapest, Hungary: Akadémiai Kiadó, 1972.
- . *The Copper Age Cemetery of Tiszapolgár-Basatanya*. *Archaeologica Hungarica*, new series no. 42. Budapest, Hungary: Akadémiai Kiadó, 1963.
- Bökönyi, Sándor. *History of Domestic Mammals in Central and Eastern Europe*. Translated by Lili Halápy. Budapest, Hungary: Akadémiai Kiadó, 1988.
- Brukner, Bogdan, Borislav Jovanovi, and Nikola Tasic, eds. *Praistorija Vojvodine* [The prehistory of Voivodina]. Novi Sad, Serbia: Institut za Izučavanje Istorije Vojvodine, 1974.
- Chapman, John. *The Vinča Culture of South-East Europe: Studies in Chronology, Economy, and Society*. BAR International Series, no. 117. Oxford: British Archaeological Reports, 1981.
- Demoule, J.-P., and C. Perlès. "The Greek Neolithic: A New Review." *Journal of World Prehistory* 7 (1993): 355–416.

- Dennell, Robin. *Early Farming in South Bulgaria from the VI to the III Millennium B.C.* BAR International Series, no. 45. Oxford: British Archaeological Reports, 1978.
- Ecsedy, István. *The People of the Pit-Grave Kurgans in Eastern Hungary.* Translated by Judit Ecsedy. Budapest, Hungary: Akadémiai Kiadó, 1979.
- Gimbutas, Marija A. *The Civilization of the Goddess: The World of Old Europe.* San Francisco, Calif.: Harper San Francisco, 1991.
- Gimbutas, Marija A., M. R. Dexter, and K. Jones-Bley. *The Kurgan Culture and the Indo-Europeanization of Europe: Selected Articles from 1952 to 1993.* Journal of Indo-European Studies monograph no. 18. Washington, D.C.: Institute for the Study of Man, 1997.
- Jovanović, Borislav. *Rudna Glava: Najstarije rudarstvo-bakra na centralnom Balkanu* [Rudna Glava: The oldest copper mine in the central Balkans]. Belgrade, Serbia: Arheološki Institut, 1982.
- Kalicz, Nándor. *Clay Gods: The Neolithic Period and the Copper Age in Hungary.* 2d rev. ed. Translated by Barna Balogh. Budapest, Hungary: Corvina Kiadó, 1980.
- Kalicz, Nándor, and Pál Raczky. "The Late Neolithic of the Tisza Region: A Survey of Recent Archaeological Research." In *The Late Neolithic of the Tisza Region: A Survey of Recent Excavations and Their Findings.* Edited by Pál Raczky, pp. 11–30. Budapest and Szolnok, Hungary: Szolnok County Museums, 1987.
- McPherron, Alan, and Dragoslav Srejovi. *Divostin and the Neolithic of Central Serbia.* Pittsburgh, Pa.: Department of Anthropology, University of Pittsburgh, 1988.
- Raczky, Pál, ed. *The Late Neolithic of the Tisza Region: A Survey of Recent Excavations and Their Findings.* Budapest and Szolnok, Hungary: Szolnok County Museums, 1987.
- Renfrew, Colin. "The Autonomy of the South-East European Copper Age." *Proceedings of the Prehistoric Society* 35 (1969): 12–47.
- Sahlins, Marshall. *Stone Age Economics.* New York: Aldine, 1972.
- Sherratt, Andrew. *Economy and Society in Prehistoric Europe: Changing Perspectives.* Edinburgh: Edinburgh University Press, 1997.
- Todorova, Henrieta. *The Neolithic Period in Bulgaria in the Fifth Millennium B.C.* BAR International Series, no. 49. Oxford: British Archaeological Reports, 1978.
- Todorova, Henrieta, ed. *Kupferzeitliche Siedlungen in Nordostbulgarien.* Munich, Germany: Beck, 1982.
- Tringham, Ruth, and Dišan Krstić, eds. *Selevac: A Neolithic Village in Yugoslavia.* Los Angeles: Cotsin Institute of Archaeology, University of California, Los Angeles, 1990.
- Whittle, Alasdair. *Europe in the Neolithic: The Creation of New Worlds.* Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1996.

WILLIAM A. PARKINSON

V A R N A

Varna is a fifth millennium B.C. cemetery located on the Bulgarian Black Sea coast. Excavated in the 1970s and 1980s by Ivan Ivanov of the Varna Museum, the cemetery radically changed the understanding of the social structure of Late Neolithic southeastern Europe. No absolute dates are available; correlation with contemporary dated sites suggests that Varna was in use between 4900 and 4400 B.C.

EXTRAVAGANT GRAVE GOODS

Discovered by chance by a farmer plowing his fields in 1972, Varna contains almost three hundred burials. It is one of the largest cemeteries in southeastern Europe from this period, and its graves contain some of the most extravagant assemblages of goods for any period of European prehistory. Although pottery vessels are the most common inclusion, the concentrations of gold, copper, and shell are particularly striking. Ceramic vessels aside, two types of objects dominate the finds: tools and body ornaments.

The three thousand gold objects (which together weigh more than 6 kilograms) from Varna represent the first use of gold metallurgy anywhere in the world. At Varna gold was fashioned into more than thirty shapes, ranging from hammered sheet plates, convex circular disks, individual solid or cinched beads, and small rolled loops to large doughnut-shaped bracelets and arm rings. Diadems, lip studs, and earrings are matched by more erotic and gendered objects, such as a sheet-gold penis sheath with open head and holes at the base for attachment to the body. All of these objects were used as body ornaments, attached to skin, hair, or clothing or, like the bracelets, worn as jewelry. Some reference to animals is clear from the horned sheet-gold clothing appliqués found in one burial and the solid gold animal astragalus found in another.

travagance of their size and the infrequent evidence that they were used before deposition in the graves. Another category of unused tool placed in the Varna burials consists of extraordinarily long flint blades. Deposition of superblades complements that of the large copper tools; both are extravagant objects, the products of specialist knowledge, skill, and experience, the association with which would have advertised specific elements of the deceased individual's identity.

Although extraordinary in number when taken together, the exotic and lavish Varna grave goods are concentrated in disproportionately few burials. Of the 211 graves that were undisturbed and for which published data exist, 170 contained 10 or fewer objects, and 23 contained no grave goods at all. Overall, the most common grave good was pottery, which appeared in 80 percent of burials. Only 18 graves (a mere 8.5 percent of the entire cemetery) contained the extraordinarily large assemblages of exotic pieces; some of these burials had hundreds of gold items.

Incomplete site publication prevents firm conclusions about grave-good association with different ages or sexes, but patterns do emerge. Varna has burials of men, women, and children as well as some graves with large numbers of goods but no skeletons. The excessive concentrations of grave goods, however, occur almost exclusively in the adult male graves or in the bodiless burials. For example, in grave number 43 a man about 40 to 50 years old was buried with the following objects: 890 gold beads, 42 round gold appliqués, 16 gold rings, 11 gold lip plugs or earplugs, 10 other gold appliqués, 6 sheet-gold rings for covering an axe handle, 5 sheet-gold rings for covering a bow, a *Spondylus* bracelet with 2 pieces of sheet-gold covering, 2 convex gold disks positioned over the deceased's knees, a stone axe scepter with four sheet-gold shaft coverings, 2 flat gold plates at the deceased's waist, a gold penis sheath, 4 gold arm rings, 3 copper axes, a copper chisel, a copper awl, a copper point, a flint point, 3 flint blades (one of which was a superblade 39 centimeters long), 2 stone axes, 2 bone points, and 4 ceramic pots and a lid. Similarly extraordinary assemblages come from many of the bodiless graves.

Exceptionally, sheet gold was used to cover axe heads and scepter handles. A few pots had designs painted on with a gold solution. Colin Renfrew has argued that the use of sheet gold to cover objects that were made of less exotic materials, such as stone or wood, created the illusion of a large solid gold axe or scepter. The effort expended on this work proves that gold was a highly valued material in the fifth millennium B.C. *Spondylus* and *Dentalium* shell also was used to make ornaments, particularly beads, pendants, rings, and bracelets.

A very different range of objects was made from the other major exotic material—copper. Whereas gold and shell were fashioned into body ornaments and jewelry, copper was used to make tools. Most striking are massive axes, adzes, and chisels, although smaller objects, such as awls, also were present. The significance of the copper tools is in the ex-

CONSEQUENCES FOR RECONSTRUCTING SOCIAL STRUCTURE

Unusually for the region, the cemetery at Varna is not associated with a nearby settlement tell. Together with the lack of complete publication, it is difficult to assess the site's contribution to the understanding of contemporary Balkan social structure in the fifth millennium B.C. Finds from smaller cemeteries at other sites, such as Golyamo Delchevo, Vinitsa, and Devniya, have been published more fully and provide comparative contexts for interpretation. At these sites two important patterns are evident.

First, as at Varna grave-good distribution is uneven, with more grave goods deposited with men's bodies than with women's and more with adults than with children. As at Varna, in terms of the number of grave goods, bodiless graves are more similar to men's than to women's or children's burials. The distribution of copper objects in these cemeteries reinforces the age and sex distinction: more were placed with men (and bodiless burials) than with women and more with adults than with children. Thus in terms of grave-good assemblages there was a clear distinction among certain individuals, with some men being inhumed with disproportionately large numbers of objects and with a much higher proportion of exotic objects.

Against this pattern of distinction among individuals within cemeteries runs a second, apparently contradictory pattern. Although there are exceptions, across individual cemeteries most bodies were placed in common positions (crouched on their sides or lying on their backs with legs straight) with their heads pointing in the same cardinal direction. It appears that, while grave assemblages expressed differences among individuals, similarities in body positioning signified membership within a common social group. This contradiction is best understood in terms of the contemporary relationship between the place of death (that is, the extramural cemetery) and the place of living (the settlement village).

In the fifth millennium B.C. the ceremonies and deposition of bodies with special objects started to concentrate in special places away from village houses and activities. This was different from what had happened in previous millennia, when burials were placed within the boundaries of a village, often

under the floors of houses or in nearby pits. The shift to an extramural burial ground, within sight of the village but physically distinct from it, provided a place for death and its display that was separate from the day-to-day reality of life that took place in the village. Death had become a very public, extremely visually provocative ceremony, during which people illuminated the identities of particular, predominantly male members of the community.

While Varna's size, the scale of grave-good deposition, and the lack of an associated settlement tell make this site different from the inland cemeteries, all of the cemeteries, Varna included, shared similar principles that directed the ceremony and props of death and the role that events of burial played in publicly expressing individual status. Burial was the big stage, and on it the leading characters of local life played out their prominent (as well as supporting) roles. Furthermore it is in the light of the role that mortuary ceremony played in public expressions of status and hierarchy that the purpose of the bodiless graves becomes clear. Traditionally these burials are termed "cenotaphs" and are interpreted as symbolic burials of local residents who died far away from their homes. It is much more likely that bodiless burials are the remains of political events enacted when elites and local authorities needed to use mortuary ceremony to make highly visible, public statements about social structure but when no member of the community needed burying.

SIGNIFICANCE OF VARNA IN THE INTERPRETATION OF EUROPEAN PREHISTORY

The spectacular finds from Varna and their clear disproportionate distributions focusing on adult males and cenotaphs had an irreversible impact on the existing interpretation of southeastern European prehistory. The Balkan Neolithic no longer could be reconstructed as egalitarian in political makeup or as the home to mother goddess-worshipping, peaceful, sharing, matriarchal early farming communities. It was immediately clear that these traditional interpretations were bankrupt. Because of the Varna material, but also because of the finds from many other sites and various reinterpretations of older excavations, the Neolithic of southeastern Europe is understood as a dynamic, pulsating period in which so-

ciety was riven with conflict and tension and in which tremendous efforts were invested in proposing and maintaining competing versions of reality.

See also *Transition to Farming in the Balkans* (vol. 1, part 3); *Early Metallurgy in Southeastern Europe* (vol. 1, part 4).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Bailey, Douglass W. *Balkan Prehistory: Exclusion, Incorporation, and Identity*. London: Routledge, 2000. (The best available overview of the region for the period; includes discussion of Varna, other contemporary sites, mortuary practice, and social structure at the time.)
- Chapman, John. "Social Inequality on Bulgarian Tells and the Varna Problem." In *The Social Archaeology of Houses*. Edited by Ross Samson, pp. 48–92. Edinburgh: Edinburgh University Press, 1990.
- Fol, Alexander, and Jan Lichardus, eds. *Macht, Herrschaft, und Gold: Das Gräberfeld von Varna und die Anfänge einer neuen europäischen Zivilisation*. Saarbrücken, Germany: Moderne Galerie des Saarland-Museums, 1988. (Contains a partial catalog of the cemetery with good photographs of the most exciting Varna grave goods.)
- Renfrew, Colin. "Varna and the Emergence of Wealth in Prehistoric Europe." In *The Social Life of Things: Commodities in Cultural Perspective*. Edited by Arjun Appadurai, pp. 141–168. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1986.

DOUGLASS W. BAILEY

OVCHAROVO

Ovcharovo, a Bulgarian settlement tell and cemetery dating from the fifth millennium B.C., was excavated in the early 1970s under the direction of Henrietta Todorova of the Archaeological Institute of the Bulgarian Academy of Sciences. Positioned at the eastern edge of a small streambed, close to both adjacent arable land and forested uplands, the site was a large, multilayer settlement, typical for this period in the Lower Danube region.

Ovcharovo is significant in that it remains the only completely excavated settlement with fully published Late Neolithic material from the north Balkans. Other contemporary sites in the region, such as Polyanitsa, Golyamo Delchevo, and Vinitza in Bulgaria, and Gumelnița and Cășcioarele in southern Romania, either have been excavated in-

completely or have not been published fully. The intentional burning of houses in Ovcharovo's later phases conserved large assemblages of material, preserved in situ, unlike abandoned houses that have been emptied of useful contents. Multinational interdisciplinary studies, especially of flora and fauna but also of radiocarbon dates, further establish Ovcharovo as an exception to the methods applied to sites in this region.

Within the 6-meter height of the tell thirteen major building horizons were identified, although recent reanalysis of the site has questioned inherent assumptions of the homogeneity across each building phase and the contiguity between each (assumed) successive phase. At least one major hiatus in occupation occurred. The site was occupied during the final stage of the Late Neolithic Ovcharovo culture (building horizon II), the early and middle Eneolithic Polyanitsa culture (horizons III–VII), and the late Eneolithic Kodzhaderman–Gumelnița–Karanovo VI culture (horizons XI–XIII). Radiocarbon analyses of seeds and also of large wooden beams document site use from 4900 to 4300 B.C.

A center for long-term habitation, as evidenced by repeated repair and rebuilding of buildings, Ovcharovo was the focus for a range of domestic and agricultural activities, especially large-scale field cultivation of wheat and barley and the herding of cattle, sheep, and goats. Domestic animals always outnumbered wild ones; among the domesticated species, cattle, sheep, and goats were in the majority. Several houses had large silos (3 by 4 meters) that contained significant quantities of carbonized cereal grain; most houses had large, lidded storage pots (up to 20 liters), grinding stones, and ovens. Spindle whorls and loom weights (almost two hundred) document textile production, and the mortality patterns of cattle suggest that they provided traction for plowing or for transportation.

Individual settlement horizons (each covering an area c. 40 by 50 meters) consisted of half a dozen or more buildings, each with several rooms. Walls were made from large posts set into the ground around which were intertwined smaller branches and twigs that, in turn, were covered with a mixture of mud, clay, grasses, and other plants. In some buildings of the earlier phases, wooden planks were used to make floors, roofs, or both, and it is possible

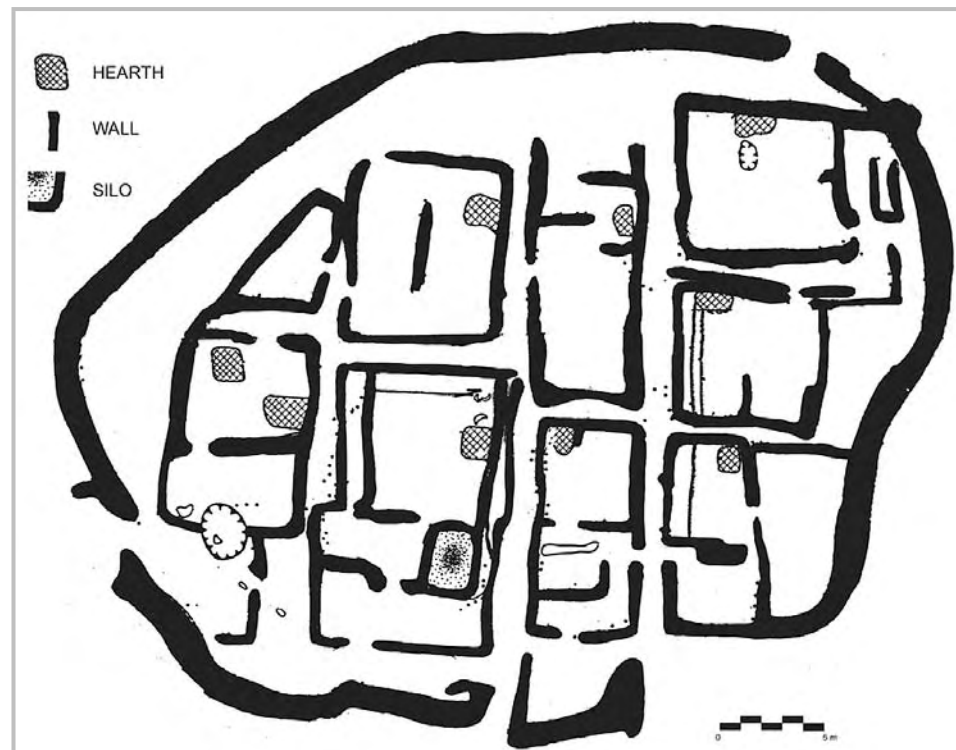


Fig. 1. Site plan of Ovcharovo. COURTESY OF DOUGLASS W. BAILEY AFTER TODOROVA ET AL. 1983. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

that some structures had a second story. Buildings shared a common orientation (north-south by east-west) and a similarity in size, although some were particularly large (up to 10 by 10 meters). Most had one or more internal rooms. Almost all had large ovens or hearths, grinding stones, clay platform benches, large quantities of bone, stone, and horn tools (many of which were suitable for digging or working the soil), and ceramic vessels. Almost one hundred ceramic anthropomorphic figurines were found, as were many house models and a few zoomorphic figurines.

Post-excavation interpretation of the floor plans of the buildings has had a major impact on our understanding of social organization for this region in this period. Douglass Bailey and John Chapman have used spatial data from site plans to reconstruct life at the tell, highlighting an increase over time in privacy, exclusion, and incorporation. Many houses had several internal rooms, and particular parts of houses had specific economic functions or social values. At the village level a perimeter bank demarcated the area deemed appropriate for habitation.

The very small amount of space left open from construction suggests not only that settlement space was highly valued but also that most activities took place within the closed, private places of individual buildings and involved small groups of people. These reinterpretations of the spatial record have contributed to larger discussions of the rise of the house and the household as the primary social institution in Balkan life during the sixth and fifth millennia B.C.

The evidence for large-scale cultivation and the cramped internal organization of village and house space suggest that complex rules and mechanisms for organizing labor and its products structured life at Ovcharovo. Conflict, tension, and disagreement would have been inevitable. Attempts to resolve tension or at the least to project authority and leadership are clear in the contemporary emergence of a new set of expressive objects (especially jewelry but also pottery of increasingly complex form and brilliant decoration). Novelty in material form was complemented by new raw materials (copper, gold, marine shells, and graphite). The ceremonial depo-

sition of these objects in the burials of particular individuals in extramural cemeteries (another novel element for this period in this region) was one attempt to resolve conflict and to promote preferred social relationships of power.

Questions of site origin and abandonment have attracted traditional answers. These have been attributed, respectively, to the immigration of culture groups that already were used to settled village life and violent invasions from the northeast. Work on similar sites in southern Romania indicates that settling down to permanent village life more likely was linked to gradual geomorphic stabilization of river valley floodplains. Additional work at the contemporary Bulgarian tell at Podgoritsa suggests that the end of occupation of sites such as Ovcharovo may be tied to rises in the water table and consequent losses of arable land at the end of the fifth millennium B.C. Whatever the causes of tell origin and abandonment at Ovcharovo, the same pattern is evident in these times across the northern Balkans (i.e., north of the Stara Planina mountains and south of the Carpathians).

See also **Late Neolithic/Copper Age Southeastern Europe** (vol. 1, part 4).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Bailey, Douglass. *Balkan Prehistory: Exclusion, Incorporation, and Identity*. London: Routledge, 2000. (The standard text for the Neolithic of southeastern Europe; includes discussions of Ovcharovo and other contemporary settlement tells.)
- . “The Life, Times and Works of House 59 from the Ovcharovo Tell, Bulgaria.” In *Neolithic Houses in Northwest Europe and Beyond*. Edited by T. Darvill and J. Thomas, pp. 143–156. Oxford: Oxbow Books, 1996.
- . “The Living House: Signifying Continuity.” In *The Social Archaeology of Houses*. Edited by R. Samson, pp. 19–48. Edinburgh: Edinburgh University Press, 1990.
- Bailey, Douglass, R. Andreescu, A. J. Howard, M. G. Macklin, and S. Mills. “Alluvial Landscapes in the Temperate Balkan Neolithic: Transitions to Tells.” *Antiquity* 76, no. 292 (2002): 349–355.
- Bailey, Douglass, R. E. Tringham, J. Bass, M. Hamilton, H. Neumann, M. Stevanović, I. Angelova, and A. Raduncheva. “Expanding the Dimensions of Early Agricultural Tells: The Podgoritsa Archaeological Project, Bulgaria.” *Journal of Field Archaeology* 25, no. 4 (1998): 373–396.
- Boyadzhiev, Yavor. “Chronology of Prehistoric Cultures in Bulgaria.” In *Prehistoric Bulgaria*. Edited by D. W. Bailey and I. Panayotov, pp. 149–192. Madison, Wis.: Prehistory Press, 1995.
- Chapman, John. “Social Inequality on Bulgarian Tells and the Varna Problem.” In *The Social Archaeology of Houses*. Edited by R. Samson, pp. 48–92. Edinburgh: Edinburgh University Press, 1990.
- Todorova, Henrietta. “The Neolithic, Eneolithic, and Transitional Period in Bulgarian Prehistory.” In *Prehistoric Bulgaria*. Edited by D. W. Bailey and I. Panayotov, pp. 79–98. Madison, Wis.: Prehistory Press, 1995.
- . “Kultzene und Hausmodell aus Ovčarovo, Bez. Targovište.” *Thracia* 3 (1974): 39–46.
- Todorova, Henrietta, V. Vasilev, Z. Janusević, M. Kovacheva, and P. Valev. *Ovcharovo. (Razkopki i Proučvaniya 9)*. Sofia: Bulgarian Academy of Sciences, 1983. (This is the original excavation publication.)
- Vasilev, V. *Izsledvane na Phaunata ot Selishtna Mogila Ovcharovo*. Interdistisiplinari Isledvaniya, no. 13. Sofia: Bulgarian Academy of Sciences, 1985. (A detailed report on the animal remains from the site.)

DOUGLASS W. BAILEY



COPPER AGE CYPRUS

The sequence of small-scale settlements that characterized society on Cyprus, the third-largest Mediterranean island, from the fifth to the third millennium B.C. is divided into Late Neolithic and Chalcolithic periods.

LATE NEOLITHIC CYPRUS

Following a lengthy period with virtually no evidence for settlement, Cyprus was inhabited by small, neatly organized villages comprising subrectilinear houses crowded inside surrounding enclosure walls and ditches. They are the Late Neolithic communities that emerged c. 4500 B.C. and went on to form Copper Age society from about 3800 to 2400 B.C. These Late Neolithic people may have originated among indigenous survivors of Aceramic Neolithic groups, or they may have come from the adjacent mainland, or a combination of both. Their hoe-based agricultural society often is referred to as the Sotira culture, named after a hilltop village in the southern foothills that provides evidence for an important series of habitations and simple pit burials in an extramural graveyard.

In contrast to the exposed position of Sotira, other settlements, such as Ayios Epiktitos-Vrysi on the north coast or Philia-Drakos A in the center of the island, had significant underground components. Subterranean houses at Vrysi nestled in deep hollows, and a web of tunnels underpinned the settlement at Philia. The island was sparsely populated in the Late Neolithic, and the absence of weaponry or threatening animals implies the existence of other reasons for recurrent defenses and subterranean fea-

tures. Houses eventually were built beyond the village enclosure walls at several settlements, and thus the population grew noticeably.

The Neolithic islanders remained unaffected by contacts with the outside world, but the widespread occurrence of beads and pendants of picrolite, a soft blue-green stone primarily from a single riverine source near Sotira, is evidence of exchanges among the islanders. Their most remarkable product, however, was pottery executed in a vivacious painted style in the north and a monochrome version in the south. While the red paint of the monochrome pottery was still wet, potters combed away the paint in multiple sinuous bands to reveal the white slip beneath. These two major styles of c. 4500 B.C. represent some of the earliest pottery from an island that was to become renowned for its inventive ceramic traditions.

EARLY CHALCOLITHIC CYPRUS

The Late Neolithic villages were not rebuilt after c. 4000 B.C., and when stone houses reappear some five hundred years later, they are uniformly circular in plan and are established at new locations. According to the excavator Porphyrios Dikaios, Sotira was abandoned because of an earthquake, and scholars have used this alleged devastation to account for population dislocations throughout the island. Earthquakes, however, tend to have localized effects, and another possibility for the transformation concerns demography. Late Neolithic villages, as already mentioned, tended to increase in size. Rather than developing into an urban society, expanding

jections and breasts. Ceramic examples often are painted all over with linear designs. Stone carvers at this time also employed blue-green picrolite to execute the first of a genre that, in its more fully developed form, became one of the most famous expressions of Cypriot prehistoric art, the cruciform figurine.

MIDDLE CHALCOLITHIC CYPRUS

The classic site of the Cypriot Copper Age is Erimi, located beside the Kouris River on the southern coast. During the 1930s, its 5.5-meter-deep stratigraphy disclosed a gradual change from timber to stone buildings. Broadly speaking, this trend is still valid for the Early to Middle Chalcolithic period, from c. 3900 to 2800 B.C. Notable in its later phases are circular stone-based structures, cruciform figurines, and some metalwork. Thus, this period as a whole sometimes is referred to as the time of the Erimi culture. Excavations at Erimi consisted only of a small sounding. More informative insight on major developments within village polities was gained from Kissonerga-Mosphilia periods 2–3B. This western site is much larger than other settlements, although it does not seem to have been a center for redistribution.

The Development of Independent Households.

Earlier timber shelters, with grain silos and external food preparation installations at Kissonerga, were replaced by stone buildings in such a way that areas previously used for communal storage were appropriated into the building space. Public facilities were enclosed and made private. Instead of pits, which would be awkward inside a house, large storage pots were introduced to store foodstuffs. Social changes thus had an impact on technology. Sequential construction of freestanding circular buildings in the same location also points to the development of property rights and inheritance. From these changes it may be inferred that the sharing ethos of earlier times was giving way to more autonomy within society.

These novel buildings, dating to c. 3300 B.C., epitomized the standard house design of the Copper Age, one found in all lowland regions of the island. With an average diameter of some 7 meters, the single-room structures were separated in terms of function into four segments. Houses often were

abandoned, with their contents left intact, so it is possible to reconstruct what happened in these segments. Access was under a porch and through the south-facing entrance, where one entered the relative darkness of the room. Two brighter areas would have attracted the eyes first. In the central area was a raised, white-plastered, circular hearth that contained a small fire. On the right there was a gleaming, white-paved segment bordered by two low ridges that radiated from the central hearth. Some wall benches are preserved here. This may have been a reception or sleeping room. Burials, presumably of household members, were found just outside the building, beside this elaborate segment. Only adult females and children seem to have been buried beside the houses in this period.

The remaining segments were for storage and work. On the left as one entered were stocks of tools, such as stone axes, hammerstones, and grinders. At the back were storage pots and cooking facilities. Although internal space was not partitioned, the recurrent patterning means that people enacted their daily lives in a similar manner in all the island villages. Where houses were destroyed suddenly, it is clear from concentrations of equipment in the middle of the floor that much work was carried out around the central hearth, a natural focus of all these buildings. Destruction by fire may have been deliberate; at Mylouthkia, for example, the body of a juvenile was found inside a burned structure, and there had been no attempt either to remove him for burial or to retrieve the hundreds of serviceable items that lay in the debris.

Expressions of Social Divisions. Copper Age Cyprus flourished around 3000 B.C., the last period before external contacts modified the island-bound identity of society. During this era, buildings became elaborate; metalwork, ornately painted pottery, the most exquisite figurines, small statuary, and zoomorphs in the shape of centaurs appear; and possible foreign imports were introduced into a cemetery at Souskiou, a southwestern complex. The occurrence of richly endowed cemeteries is exceptional because burial was conventionally within settlements. Society was becoming more heterogeneous.

It is only at Kissonerga-Mosphilia Period 3B that archaeologists gain some idea of village organi-

zation. Its inhabitants moved into an open area of the site, where they fashioned a newly imagined community, spatially unrestricted by preexisting buildings. They created two sectors. In one, the high sector, they erected a group of imposing structures demarcated from the rest of the settlement by a stone-paved track and a perimeter wall with a shallow ditch. Apart from their exceptional size and careful construction, buildings here were distinguished by the use of calcarenite stones, which were transported some distance to the site by humans, for there were no pack animals on the island. Human haulage on this scale and repavings of a public track suggest that an authority existed to mobilize labor for the benefit of the group that lived in the high sector. The floor plaster of the eastern segments of the buildings was very hard and thickly laid on aggregate or gravel foundation. For the first time, walls partitioned internal space into rooms. As a consequence of this elaboration, interpersonal relations changed, with more formal segregation of activities: reception and sleeping areas were divorced from work and storage zones.

The structures of this high sector formed a circle about 25 meters in diameter around an open space that contained the remains of numerous earth ovens. Sealed food was cooked for a day or so on top of heated stones at the base of these oven pits. On the western side of the sector stood the "Red Building," so called for one of its red painted floors and the red inlays embedded in its white-plastered walls. Although part of the structure is missing, its standard plan indicates that its interior was about 130 square meters, the largest known prehistoric building in Cyprus. In the reception and sleeping segment were some thirty-three pots, including capacious serving bowls, their interiors painted with swirling and other designs. These luxury presentation vessels no doubt impressed guests and others at feasts, suggested by the proliferation of adjacent earth ovens. Comparable containers in houses outside the high sector are smaller and far less ostentatious.

Among the earth ovens were pits with deliberately deposited special objects. One of these contained a remarkable assemblage of about fifty pieces associated with a ceramic building model covered by two large bowls, each carefully split in half. Some nonfunerary ritual was enacted in a public arena

here, as evidenced by the intentional arrangement of the objects, several of which were mutilated. Moreover, the decorative symbolism on the walls of the building model was concealed by application of a post-firing opaque coating.

The building model is a unique expression of Cypriot art c. 3000 B.C. On its circular floor is a raised central hearth with two ridges radiating to the wall, exactly as in excavated houses. The door pivots in a socket and loop. Above the red-framed entrance are two rows of deliberately broken projections. The external walls are painted with stepped bands and rectangles placed obliquely, with internal checkerboard panels, a polelike motif fringed with festoons, and ascending sets of rectilinear elements.

Packed in and around the model were numerous objects, many purposely broken. They include eight pottery figurines, ten stone figurines, one anthropomorphic vessel, a model four-legged stool, nineteen white stone objects (mostly pestles), a pristine triton shell, and a bone needle. Almost all figurines depict females, and most were seated on stools. In one case, the painted head and arms of a baby emerge between the legs of a standard, but ornate figure. Given the similar posture of most female representations of the period, they probably are birth figures rather than goddesses or generalized fertility idols. The whole assemblage may have served didactic roles, used at initiation and other life-cycle rites. Its association with a building model symbolizes the strong connection between the life histories of houses and females in Chalcolithic society.

In terms of the spatial organization of Kissonerga 3B, cooking, feasts, and ceremonies related to the formal "killing" of objects that carried strong ideological messages distinguished the high sector. The central open space was suitable for a communal gathering, and so it was an arena for the communication of symbolic distinctions between different parts of the local population. In terms of chronology, the destruction and burial of all these objects happened a little before a major transition in Copper Age Cyprus.

LATE CHALCOLITHIC CYPRUS

The centuries between c. 2800 and 2400 B.C. are crucial for assessments of the nature of indigenous society before and during some of the most pro-

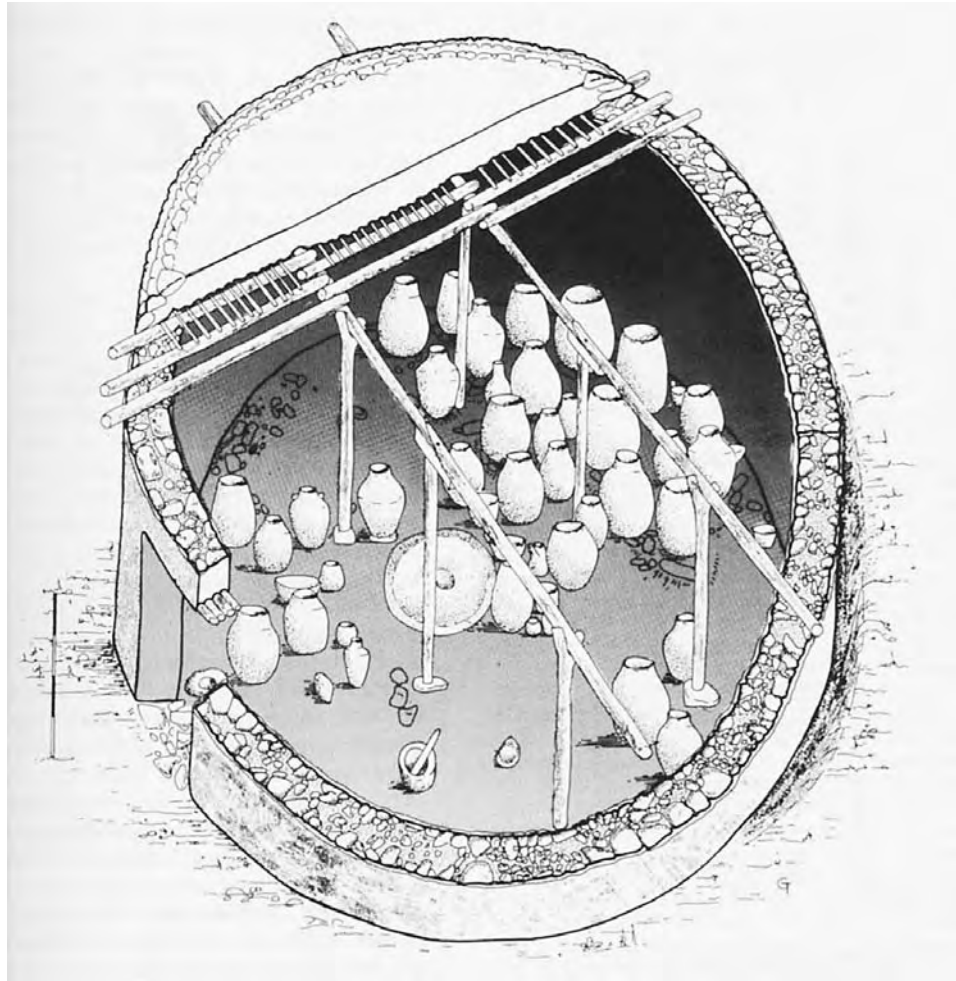


Fig. 1. Reconstruction of the Pithos House at Kissonerga, c. 2500 B.C. LEMBA ARCHAEOLOGICAL RESEARCH CENTRE. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

found changes in the prehistory of Cyprus, ones that ushered in the Early Bronze Age. So dramatic are these transformations that it is difficult to isolate more than a few vestiges of Copper Age cultures in succeeding periods. Opinion is divided as to whether the process was induced by migrants, by aspiring local leaders, or by a combination of the two.

Developments on the island in the early to middle third millennium B.C. were poorly understood until, once again, Kissonerga-Mosphilia provided varied and detailed information. Settlements of Kissonerga Period 4 were built on top of the abandoned Middle Chalcolithic high and low sectors. There were two phases, an earlier one of dispersed structures, including the unusually well equipped Pithos House, named after the thirty storage vessels found inside, and a successor with three clusters of

houses (fig. 1). Although all the houses conformed to the circular types of the Copper Age, there are sharp differences with the preceding age.

From the outset, the new community rejected the cruciform birth figurine that was such a key feature of society before 3000 B.C. The removal of these important symbols implies a radical transformation of sociopolitical organization. Power became identified more directly with control of subsistence and other resources. This is seen most clearly in the concentration of storage and commodities in the Pithos House. Copper slag and metal products were found here, together with a rudimentary oil press. The residents, therefore, had privileged access to metal and olive oil. Later, these were the twin pillars of Cypriot Bronze Age political and economic power. The multiple sources of authority in one res-

idence point to an early instance of overt economic management of people, labor, and surpluses rather than the benign coordination and redistribution of resources.

There are signs that changes took place together with islanders' increasing involvement with the outside world, contemporary with Old Kingdom Egypt (2686–2181 B.C.). This contact phase is typified by the deployment of new fashions and knowledge to sharpen power differentials and not by the importation of significant quantities of long-distance exchange items. They include the appearance of stamp seals and pottery traditions, perhaps betraying specific drinking customs, from Anatolia. The new spurred annular pendant of shell is of a type known in northern Syria. From the mainland of the Levant or Egypt came exotic faience beads.

Cyprus by then was engaged with long-distance trade routes between the Near East and the Aegean. This was mainly an eastern initiative that conveyed items by maritime routes along southern Anatolia. Coastal islanders had access to esoteric knowledge and were exposed to more complex polities. Often, where contact occurs between groups of different sociopolitical and economic complexity, it brings about significant transformations in less “developed” societies. This change may have occurred on the island. For example, males increasingly appeared in the burial record, chambers for multiple burials were introduced, children were demoted to impoverished and poorly defined pits and scoops, and a discrete mortuary enclosure inside Kissonerga was used to provide an internal focus for maintaining social differences by reference to the dead.

There were undoubtedly other circumstances that fuelled instability in Cyprus in the mid-third millennium B.C. Population growth and environmental degradation, for example, led to resource stress. One result was intensification of production, a feature documented by the diversification and specialization of crop-processing equipment as well as the use of larger tools. Disequilibrium may account for the destruction and abandonment of the small compound-like village of Lemba, also in the west. Pressures on resources contributed to eventual system collapse.

It was at this juncture, c. 2500 B.C., the more explicitly Anatolian features appeared on the island.

They constitute a phenomenon known as the Philia, named after a cemetery in the central region. It is possible that people with radically new traditions, such as farming with ox-drawn plows, coexisted with more conventional Copper Age groups in what is, after all, a regionally divided island. Only at Kissonerga is there a sequence of occupation in which the Philia follows the Chalcolithic; the Philia stage, however, was poorly preserved, and the site soon was abandoned. Very few Philia settlements replace the many recorded Late Chalcolithic sites, and so debate continues about the exact interaction between the two groups and what became of the people of Copper Age Cyprus.

See also **Bronze Age Cyprus** (vol. 2, part 5).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Bolger, Diane. *Erimi-Pamboula: A Chalcolithic Settlement in Cyprus*. BAR International Series, no. 443. Oxford: British Archaeological Reports, 1988.
- Dikaios, Porphyrios. *Sotira*. Philadelphia: University of Pennsylvania, 1961.
- Dikaios, Porphyrios, and J. R. Stewart. “The Stone Age and the Early Bronze Age.” In *The Swedish Cyprus Expedition*. Vol. 4. Lund, Sweden: Swedish Cyprus Expedition, 1962.
- Held, Steven. “Insularity as a Modifier of Culture Change: The Case of Prehistoric Cyprus.” *Bulletin of the American Schools of Oriental Research* 292 (1993): 25–34.
- . “Colonization and Extinction on Early Prehistoric Cyprus.” In *Acta Cyprus: Acts of an International Congress on Cypriote Archaeology Held in Göteborg on 22–24 August 1991*. 3 vols. Edited by Paul Åström, pp. 104–164. Studies in Mediterranean Archaeology. Pocketbook 114.2. Jonsered, Sweden: Åström, 1992.
- Hunt, Sir David, ed. *Footprints in Cyprus: An Illustrated History*. 2d rev. ed. London: Trigraph, 1990.
- Karageorghis, Vassos. *The Coroplastic Art of Ancient Cyprus*. Vol. 1, *Chalcolithic—Late Cypriote I*. Nicosia, Cyprus: A. G. Leventis Foundation, 1991.
- Knapp, A. Bernard, Steven O. Held, and Sturt W. Manning. “The Prehistory of Cyprus: Problems and Prospects.” *Journal of World Archaeology* 8, no. 4 (1994): 377–453.
- Manning, Sturt. “Prestige, Distinction, and Competition: The Anatomy of Socioeconomic Complexity in Fourth to Second Millennium B.C.E. Cyprus.” *Bulletin of the American Schools of Oriental Research* 292 (1993): 35–58.
- Manning, Sturt, and Stuart Swiny. “Sotira Kamminoudhia and the Chronology of the Early Bronze Age in Cy-

- prus." *Oxford Journal of Archaeology* 13, no. 2 (1994): 149–172.
- Peltenburg, Edgar. *Lemba Archaeological Project (Cyprus)*. Vol. 2, part 1A: *Excavations at Kissonerga-Mosphilia, 1979–1992*. Studies in Mediterranean Archaeology 70:2. Jonsered, Sweden: Åström Verlag, 1998.
- . "Kissonerga in Cyprus and the Appearance of Faience in the East Mediterranean." In *Trade, Contact, and the Movement of Peoples in the Eastern Mediterranean: Studies in Honour of J. Basil Hennesy*. Edited by Stephen Bourke and Jean-Paul Descoeurdes, pp. 31–41. Mediterranean Archaeology Supplement, no. 3. Sydney, Australia: Meditarch, 1995.
- . "Settlement Discontinuity and Resistance to Complexity in Cyprus, ca. 4500–2500 B.C.E." *Bulletin of the American Schools of Oriental Research* 292 (1993): 9–23.
- , ed. *Early Society in Cyprus*. Edinburgh: Edinburgh University Press, 1989.
- Steel, Louise. *Cyprus before History: From the Earliest Settlers to the End of the Bronze Age*. London: Duckworth, 2003.
- Webb, Jenny M., and David Frankel. "Characterizing the Philia Facies: Material Culture, Chronology, and the Origin of the Bronze Age in Cyprus." *American Journal of Archaeology* 103, no. 1 (1999): 3–43.

EDGAR PELTENBURG



LATE NEOLITHIC/COPPER AGE EASTERN EUROPE

FOLLOWED BY FEATURE ESSAYS ON:

<i>Domestication of the Horse</i>	363
<i>Kolomischiina</i>	368

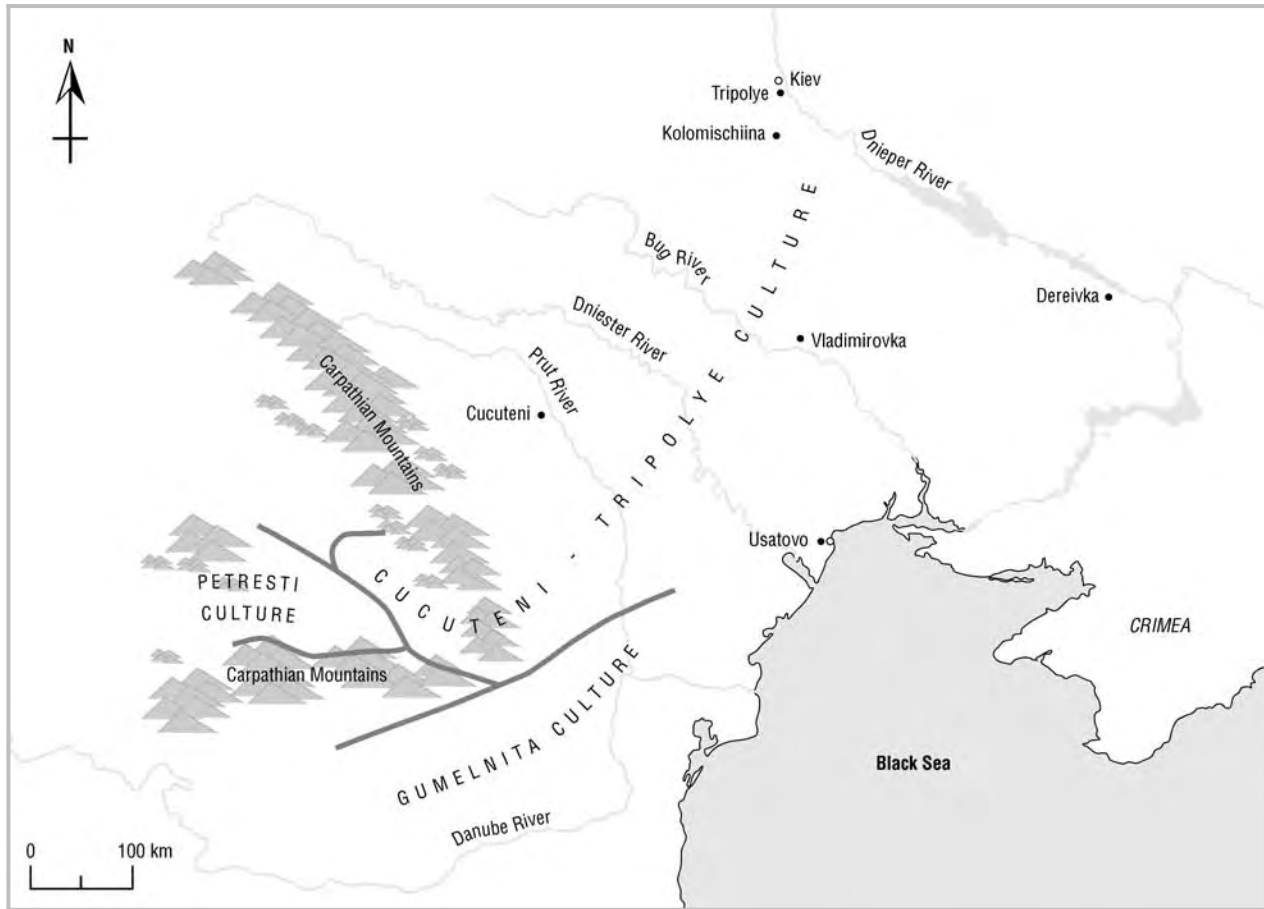
Between 5000 B.C. and 2500 B.C. the area east of the Carpathians and north of the Black Sea was populated by a diverse collection of societies with economies based on farming and herding. This discussion focuses on the territory of the modern-day nation of Ukraine, although it includes adjacent areas as well. Central to this discussion are several principal Late Neolithic/Copper Age (sometimes called “Eneolithic”) cultures of this region: the Cucuteni-Tripolye, the Sredny Stog, and the Pit Grave (also known as Yamnaya) cultures.

Throughout this region, various researchers see different patterns of culture development, which are cited herein. While the later stages of the Dnieper-Donets culture are considered, these communities are discussed primarily in the context of their role as the indigenous precursors to the Sredny Stog and Tripolye cultures, which occupied the region after c. 5000–4500 B.C. Tripolye is, in effect, the same cultural group as Cucuteni, named after the type site of Cucuteni, located in the valley of the middle Prut in Romania. The culture in Ukraine and Moldova is named after the type site of Tripolye, situated to the south of Kiev.

In considering these communities, an additional and complicating factor comes into play in the

periodization (or the attribution to cultural period) of the Neolithic and Copper Age communities. This stems from the fact that groups that have a characteristically Neolithic economy exist alongside groups with what is effectively a Copper Age economy. This dichotomy is particularly evidenced in the areas to the west and east of the Dnieper and also to the northern and southern areas of eastern Europe. The communities occupying the regions to the north of east-central Europe retain a predominantly fisher-hunter-gatherer economy, with poorly developed pottery styles, across eastern Europe, the Urals, and Siberia and into the Baikal region during much of the period studied.

The areas to the south developed varying expressions of Neolithic and evolved Copper Age economies, although in the case of the Dnieper-Donets communities, elements of the economies and material culture of both the northern and southern regions are in evidence. In the Late Neolithic, the spread of Corded Ware pottery is associated with assemblages of battle-axes, beakers, and amphorae. In northeastern Europe the integration of Corded Ware ceramics was accompanied by limited numbers of domesticates within the prevailing hunting economies and the intensification of eco-



Distribution of civilizations and selected Cucuteni-Tripolye sites. ADAPTED FROM DUMITRESCU 1964.

conomic and cultural interactions across Europe. The distribution of Corded Ware assemblages extends from Holland in the west, across northern and central Europe to the Upper Volga and Middle Dnieper in the east.

The Corded Ware assemblages are associated with a shift toward the increased exploitation of domesticated animals and highly dispersed settlement patterns. Plow agriculture is attested and a wider range of soils in differing environments are being exploited. While early researchers have attributed the widespread appearance of the Corded Ware assemblages with an invasion of nomadic pastoralists from the south Russian steppes, the assemblage, characterized by Corded Ware pottery and battle-axes in burials, is most likely indicative of changing roles of the individual in society. Earlier communities emphasized the group identity; the Corded Ware assemblages indicate a status-related emphasis

on males, the rise of the individual, and an emphasis on personal wealth and status. In addition, the assemblages reflect the widespread movement of prestige items through trade and/or exchange across large areas of Europe during the later Neolithic.

It should be noted that in the absence of radiocarbon dating for many sites, associations and chronologies often are developed on the basis of artifact typology. This method has been shown to be of questionable value upon occasion. Our consideration of the Late Neolithic/Copper Age cultures of eastern Europe includes later investigations. While presenting interesting overviews and a reconsideration of the Late Neolithic/Copper Age sequences, even the newer studies sometimes are marred somewhat by the evident lack of detail resulting from limitations in the radiocarbon dating of sites, which is clearly a significant problem in the context of complex cultural developments.

ENVIRONMENTAL BACKGROUND

In terms of geography this region of the Russian Plain, dissected by broad river valleys, is characterized by low relief. The Russian Plain rarely rises higher than 200 meters above sea level and is drained by large rivers, such as the Vistula, Dnieper, and Dniester, which flow into the Baltic and Black Seas. In general, the rivers that drain the southwestern part of the countries of the former Soviet Union have a low gradient. The exception is the point where these rivers cross swells in the underlying solid geology, which result in the formation of rapids at such locations as Kuibyshev on the Volga and Dnepropetrovsk on the Dnieper. At these places the underlying geology also has an impact upon the direction of the rivers' flow, causing the rivers to shift from their general southeastern direction toward the southwest. The "elbows" of the Dnieper, Don, and Donets are particularly noteworthy in this respect.

The region experiences a Continental climate, being semiarid in its southern areas. In the steppe zone, which extends from west to east between the Carpathians and the Caucasus for some 1,000 kilometers and 600–700 kilometers northward from the Crimean peninsula, the soils are characterized as black earth chernozems on loess. These loess soils formed from fine, wind-blown material in the arid and cool climatic zones to the south of the ice sheets that had expanded southward across the Russian Plain during the Pleistocene period, before c. 10,000 years ago.

On the northern margins of the loess zone, the soils that formed under the mixed-oak woodlands and open grasslands of the forest steppe are well drained and fertile but more varied, as the result of physiographic, climatic, and biological factors. During the period from about 4000 to 2000 B.C., a climatic optimum led to the expansion of broad-leaved forest. This actually had a negative effect on the soils of this zone, resulting in reduced soil productivity. It also has been argued that the loess soils to the south of the forest-steppe zone were very prone to depletion and erosion once the vegetation cover was removed. Arguing against this negative view is the fact that these soils have been shown to be excellent for wheat cultivation, becoming depleted only in modern times through overexploitation.

It was in this region, with mixed broad-leaved forests to the north and steppe to the south, that the Dnieper-Donets culture developed. The nature of the landscape, with poor water resources away from the major rivers and their tributaries, would tend to result in a focus of activity toward the river valleys. This certainly appears to have been the case with the earlier Dnieper-Donets communities, who clearly exploited the resource-rich river valleys throughout their development in the later Mesolithic and Neolithic periods, between c. 7500 and 4500 B.C. It has been suggested that vegetable foods would have constituted about 30–40 percent of the diets of these earlier populations, with many of the potentially edible wild plants species concentrated in wetland habitats, such as the rivers, lakes, and coastlines of Europe.

DNIEPER-DONETS AND THE MARIUPOL-TYPE CEMETERIES

About two hundred sites and an equivalent number of radiocarbon determinations are used in dating the Neolithic and Copper Age cultures of Ukraine. The Dnieper-Donets culture/Mariupol-type cemeteries continued until c. 4500–4000 B.C., and, as such, their development fully overlapped the Tripolye periods A1 and A2 through to the B1–2 transition between c. 5500 and 4000 B.C. These cemeteries are named after the "type" site of Mariupol, which was excavated in southern Ukraine, to the north of the Sea of Azov. They are attributed to the Dnieper-Donets culture. Chronologically, the Mariupol-type cemetery series also slightly overlapped the later Sredny Stog cultures, between c. 4500 and 4000 B.C., on the basis of a few dates from the Mariupol-type cemetery of Nikolskoye.

There is evidence from later-stage Dnieper-Donets sites to suggest that these communities were using domesticated plants and animals, either through exchange with adjacent Tripolye culture groups or through active agropastoralism. Indications of settlement are sparse, however, represented by limited remains of semi-subterranean huts. Direct evidence for culture contacts and exchange comes from the Dnieper-Donets cemetery of Nikolskoye, which has been dated to between 5400 and 3900 B.C. and holds an imported Tripolye pot. Similarly, Tripolye pottery forms have been recovered from the Dnieper-Donets settlement site of Pus-

tynka 5. In addition to ceramics, the cemetery of Nikolskoye has numerous miniature copper beads, a copper pendant, and a gold pendant associated with the later stages of burial; these finds have clear associations with the Tripolye culture. Thus, we have solid evidence for contact between the later-stage Dnieper-Donets communities and the incoming farming cultures.

Despite what may have been mutually beneficial trade-and-exchange networks, it appears that the northeastward expansion of Tripolye and the northward expansion of the Sredny Stog groups were directly influential in marginalizing the indigenous Dnieper-Donets community. At the end of their existence, the latter culture groups apparently were relegated to an area about one third of the size of their original territory in the northern regions of the Dnieper-Pripyat basins. Thus, after c. 4400 B.C. two principal cultures are thought to have occupied southern Ukraine—Tripolye and the Sredny Stog groups—with the Pit-Comb culture populating northeastern Ukraine and the Lower Mikhailovka culture inhabiting the lower Dnieper southward to the Crimean peninsula.

THE PIT-COMB POTTERY CULTURE

Another important development at this time (c. 4500 B.C.) is the appearance of the Pit-Comb pottery culture in northeastern Ukraine and the North European Plain. In its early stage this culture, made up of fisher-hunter-gatherers, had affinities with groups in the region of the Volga and Oka Rivers; there is no sign of the use or knowledge of domesticates. Although there are no cemeteries of this culture in the Ukraine, evidence from the Volga-Oka drainage system indicates that the group buried their dead in a fashion similar to that of the Dnieper-Donets communities. The dead were laid on their backs and buried with grave goods comprising animal tooth pendants and flint implements.

The Pit-Comb pottery culture, having developed between about 4500 and 2800 B.C., overlapped chronologically with the middle and later periods of the Dnieper-Donets culture, stages B and C of the Tripolye culture, and the Globular Amphora, Funnel Beaker, and Sredny Stog cultures. The Pit-Comb culture occupied the northern and northeastern regions of Ukraine and adjacent areas and also was located in areas where Dnieper-Donets cul-

ture sites, such as Kozlovka, Poltava, and Alexandria, were situated. As with most sites in the Ukrainian region, the Pit-Comb culture sites focused on the river regions, around the Desna, Siem, southern Donets, Worskla, Psla, and Suly Rivers, which include tributaries in the upper Dnieper system.

It appears that the only pottery forms associated with this culture are point-based jars with mineral tempers decorated with horizontal rows of pits. Occasionally, the patterning has an alternating pit-and-comb decoration—hence the name Pit-Comb culture. Artifacts made of bone include barbed harpoon points, arrowheads, adzes, and fishhooks; the flint and stone inventory comprise scrapers for processing hides, knives, chisels and awls, arrowheads, and axes.

THE CUCUTENI-TRIPOLYE CULTURE

The Cucuteni-Tripolye culture has been dated on the basis of some sixty-five radiocarbon determinations from thirty-five sites between 5500 and 2300 B.C. The Tripolye culture, named after the site of Tripolye to the west of the Dnieper River (Ukraine), about 20 kilometers south of Kiev, has been referred to as one of the most important Neolithic cultures of eastern Europe. This culture expanded eastward from Romania into Ukraine, to occupy the forest-steppe zone to the west of the Dnieper River. About a thousand sites have been attributed to this culture. While Tripolye is considered part of a single cultural entity, along with the Cucuteni culture, differing regional research initiatives and varying degrees of investigation of culture sites have resulted in the development of two discrete chronologies for each culture, Tripolye in Ukraine and Cucuteni in Romania. Here the name “Cucuteni-Tripolye” is used in discussing general characteristics of the larger entity, and “Tripolye” alone refers specifically to sites and their chronology in Ukraine.

The economy of the Cucuteni-Tripolye culture was mixed, with both the exploitation of domesticated plants and animals and the gathering of wild plants and hunting of wild animals. Among the material recovered from the fired clay used in the floors of Cucuteni-Tripolye dwellings, imprints of hulled wheat, naked six-row barley, and hulled barley have been recovered, although the latter was only rarely



Fig. 1. Binocular-shaped Tripolye vessel, Ukraine, c. 3500–3000 B.C. THE STATE HERMITAGE MUSEUM, ST. PETERSBURG. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

represented. Other species include bread wheat and, occasionally, broomcorn millet, along with pea, bitter vetch, pulses, and grapes. At Majdanetskoe, located between the Southern Bug and Dnieper Rivers and dating to 3650–3000 B.C., peas formed perhaps 75 percent of the plant remains recovered during excavations. Wild plant species identified from Cucuteni-Tripolye sites attest to woodland food collecting: among them, cornelian cherry, plum, hawthorn, pear, and wild grapes. In addition, edge gloss on a harvesting tool from Mirnoje might testify to intensive collecting activities.

Domesticated animals included cattle, sheep, goats, and pigs, and remains of wild animals represented red deer, roe deer, wild pig, moose, and horse. Fishing, too, appears to have been an important element in the subsistence economies of earlier Cucuteni-Tripolye communities. Moreover, while domesticates often outnumber wild species, there is evidence that the hunted animals could have represented up to 60 percent of the animals eaten at certain Cucuteni-Tripolye sites. Thus, while Cucuteni-Tripolye is considered a farming culture, the economy remained mixed throughout its existence, although the emphasis on hunting varied in the latest periods.

At numerous early Tripolye sites, such as Klishchey yar (3990–3770 B.C.) and Soroki-Ozero (3970–3510 B.C.), there are indications that cattle breeding was an important element of the economic activity of these communities. Conversely, at Kolomischiina II in stage BII of Tripolye, wild animals constituted about 79.5 percent of the fauna, while the stage CI site of Kolomischiina I had 80 percent wild animals in its faunal assemblage. At the later-stage sites in the steppe zone, sheep and goats seemed dominant over cattle and horses among the domesticated faunas.

In its earliest stages the Cucuteni-Tripolye settlements have signs of two-storied dwellings, probably housing a single family. Settlements initially were located in the river valleys of the region, perhaps representing acculturation of existing groups. Expansion of settlement into the loess lands away from the river valleys might indicate the movement of Cucuteni-Tripolye farming groups into adjacent regions. Such a strategy would be logical, in that local knowledge certainly would have made the occupation of a new region easier and more viable than uninformed expansion.

There is no evidence for cemeteries in the early to middle stages of Tripolye, although some houses have been found to have people buried beneath their floors. Excavations at the late-stage cemetery of Vykhatintsy on the middle Dnieper showed that the dead were buried in a contracted position on their left sides, usually with their heads to the east or northeast.

Early settlement sites were quite small, basically comprising small hamlets of perhaps a dozen houses. The maximum expression of settlement size is reached at such sites as Vesely Kut (150 hectares in area) and Majdanetskoe (stage CI, c. 3790–3000 B.C.) which was 200 hectares in area and contained in excess of two thousand dwellings and storage buildings. Fortifications of two-story buildings have been inferred. Although it was thought at first that fortification was in response to a threat from such steppe groups as the Sredny Stog to the east, it is apparent that some internal conflict between Tripolye groups, in terms of competition for resources, may have played a part in these developments. The occurrence of burial mounds over Tripolye sites seems to have been a later, post-Tripolye phenomenon in certain cases. The superimposition of burials over

Tripolye sites might represent the symbolic reclamation of territory by subsequent culture groups.

The investigations at sites such as Kolomishiina have indicated that smaller buildings may have functioned as stores or dedicated production areas for pottery or grain processing. Building 7 at Kolomishiina, for example, is a small enclosure, roughly 24 square meters, with about twenty vessels and no evidence for a hearth, which suggests that this building was simply a storage hut. The layout of the houses indicates that while they were large, they were not necessarily used exclusively for habitation. Areas of clay flooring show evidence of grain-processing activities. Whereas there is clear evidence for an expansion of population into the later middle phase of Tripolye, estimates of population size would need to account for the areas of these “houses” that were given over to grain processing and other storage activities.

On the basis of calculations of settlement sites like Kolomishiina I, which may have had about five hundred inhabitants, or eighty families, it has been suggested that Tripolye culture sites would have needed 250 hectares of arable land under cultivation to sustain the population, with another 250 hectares lying fallow. The mean population density is thought to have been about nineteen persons per square kilometer. The fact that not all of the structures at such sites as Kolomishiina I would have functioned as dwellings has led researchers to conclude that this estimate represents a maximum population density after c. 3600 B.C. in the territory of the Tripolye culture in Ukraine.

Throughout its development, the Cucuteni-Tripolye culture produced fine pottery forms and clay anthropomorphic figurines. Pottery forms varied and included vases, beakers, bowls, binocular vases, and hollow stands. Pottery decoration developed toward a trichrome style characterized by an orange pottery painted with black-and-white patterns, as the culture expanded into Moldova. The anthropomorphic figurines varied in design but generally were of a female form, less than 100 millimeters tall, with stylized legs, buttocks, chest, head, and face, in either a standing or a semireclining position. The female figurines have been interpreted as a symbol for fertility, as grains of wheat and barley have been recovered from the clays of many of these

figurines from Luka-Vrublivetska, which is dated to c. 4950–4550 B.C.

Increasing climatic aridity after c. 3500–3200 B.C. is believed to have caused instability in the Tripolye farming economy, leading to economic diversification. Many sites exhibit declines in ceramic production and house building. After c. 3320 B.C. in the middle Dnieper area, a shift in economy toward stockbreeding is evident in one variant of this culture. Discrete groups within the Tripolye culture expanded their ranges within the territory of Ukraine during the latter period, and significant elite burials are evident, perhaps suggesting the development of military-oriented chiefdoms.

THE SREDNY STOG CULTURE

In general, Sredny Stog and its component subcultures are thought to have overlapped the end of Tripolye period A, c. 4500 B.C., through to Tripolye stage C2, c. 3200–2800 B.C. Some one hundred settlements are known from this culture. These settlements contrast with Tripolye culture sites in that there is a lack of defense, with dwelling sites and cemeteries being open and located in the forested river valleys on the west side of the middle Dnieper and eastward to the Donets and lower Don.

In the Sredny Stog economy stockbreeding originally was thought to have been important, with the horse dominating assemblages, but this earlier hypothesis was revised in light of newer investigations. It now appears that the evidence from such sites as Dereivka testifies to the hunting of horse as opposed to its domestication; coincidentally this species also has been identified in low numbers on Tripolye A period sites between 5500 and 4500 B.C.

In its earliest stage, c. 4500–4300 B.C., Cucuteni-Tripolye imports are found on Sredny Stog sites, reinforcing the fact that exchange was occurring. More dramatic evidence for contact has been recovered from the middle-stage Tripolye site of Nezvizko 3. At this site, an aged man of a physical type similar to that of Sredny Stog people and buried in a style resembling that of Sredny Stog burials, was found to have facial injuries inflicted by a stone axe. These injuries were not the immediate cause of death, however, as study of the skeleton suggested that this person survived for perhaps ten to fifteen years after the injuries were inflicted. It has been

suggested that he might reflect the intermingling of Cucuteni-Tripolye and Sredny Stog populations.

The development of the Sredny Stog culture has been viewed as a result of the migration of pastoralists into the Dnieper and northern regions of the Black Sea. Various models exist, however, for the development of the Sredny Stog culture, which in its latter stage is characterized by a Corded Ware pottery stage. An alternative hypothesis is that this culture arose from the local Neolithic groups in the Azov and lower Don regions. Other researchers see its genesis in the Dnieper region, again as a direct derivative of earlier Neolithic traditions. As these various arguments suggest, the identification of Sredny Stog as a discrete entity that developed between c. 4500 and 2800 B.C. could be and has been questioned by the studies of different researchers. This lack of agreement stems from the fact that the sites used to define this culture are datable to different periods and have inconsistencies in terms of their associated artifact inventories.

Perhaps foremost among the sites used to define the Sredny Stog culture is the settlement of Dereivka, which dates to 4500–3800 B.C. This settlement is located on the right bank of the Omelnik, a tributary of the Dnieper, and is the most impressive site within the Sredny Stog culture complex, being about 2,000 square meters in area and defined by a possible fence or palisade structure. A shell dump comprising *Unio* and *Palludino* shells delineates this fence or palisade. In effect, this deposit represents a midden, with stones, ash, broken pottery of rounded or point-based form, and a range of artifacts throughout the layers. The Dereivka “complex” has produced some twenty-three thousand finds.

The evidence from the stratigraphy at this site suggests that it may have been subject to periodic reoccupation over a considerable period of time. This is particularly evident at structure 3, where a hearth was identified overlying its north wall. This structure, located immediately east of house 1, has been referred to as a “domestic activity complex.” This feature may have been a more superficial structure, however, possibly a temporary fishing hut, as circular formations of stone, probably used for post packing, were located throughout its interior. The identification of this structure as a temporary dwelling used during fishing expeditions is supported by

the finds of about twenty ceramic, violin-shaped net sinkers (found nowhere else at the site), a bone fish-hook, and heaps of scales and fish bones in the hearth. The evidence clearly indicates that the inhabitants of the site repaired their fishing gear and processed their catch of such species as perch, roach, carp, and pike at this location.

This site has many house structures that are rectangular in shape, with the largest measuring 13 by 6 meters in area. Semi-subterranean houses have been identified at Alexandria in the Donets region, and surface dwellings comparable to those at Dereivka have been recovered at Konstantinovka on the lower Don. At Dereivka, house 2, situated on the southern side of the site, is a rectangular building with two hearths. Clay figurines were recovered from the northwestern corner of this building. They comprised a large fragment of a female statuette and a second piece resembling the head of an anthropomorphic image.

Under the north wall of the house was the ritual interment of a dog. This animal was buried in a large pit beneath the occupation horizon; it had been positioned on its side with its legs extended and its head pointing forward. According to the excavator of this site, this interment represents the cult of guardian animals, a common practice among the Copper and Bronze Age cultures of Tripolye, Yamnaya, and Corded Ware. One of the other pits at this site held a figurine of a boar and a fragment of a second object, two fragments of statuettes, and two bridle cheekpieces made from antler.

The associated cemetery has been placed at between 4400 and 4000 B.C. on the basis of a radiocarbon determination from burial 5. Other researchers have suggested a later date, c. 3500 B.C., for this site. Among the artifacts associated with the burials at Dereivka are copper beads and a red clay bowl of Tripolye type. The dating of Dereivka to Tripolye B2–C1, as opposed to stage C2, would be consistent with the radiocarbon dating of both the settlement and the cemetery site. Other Sredny Stog cemeteries feature equivalent burial practices, with people laid on their backs and with their legs flexed in small grave groups of two to five individuals, separated from other groups in the cemeteries. Single interments usually are covered with red ochre. These small burial groupings are believed to represent discrete family or kin-based groups, the

identity of which remained significant even after death.

At Dereivka, horse remains made up more than half of the fauna at the site, and the presence of antler cheekpieces has been cited as an indication of the early domestication and riding of horses. Research has shown, however, that this phenomenon was, in fact, a much later activity and not contemporary with the Copper Age phase of activity at Dereivka. It appears that the economy of the Sredny Stog culture was mixed, with a combination of stockbreeding, including sheep and goats, cattle, and pigs; agriculture; and hunting and fishing. Some processing of plant foods is implied by the presence of querns and grinders at Dereivka, although it should be remembered that the processing of wild plant remains took place from a very early time in this region. The range of wild animals hunted encompassed red and roe deer, moose, wild boar, beaver, otter, badger, wolf, and fox.

The pottery of the Sredny Stog culture exhibits a new decorative motif after c. 4000 B.C., when cord ornament is used to decorate the pots. Stone tools associated with the economic activities of Sredny Stog groups include knives, scrapers, arrowheads and spearheads, with antler tools including hammers and mattocks as evidenced at Dereivka.

It has been reported that the Sredny Stog culture groups differed economically from such cultures as the Cucuteni-Tripolye, in that they were steppe cattle breeders who used point-based pottery and had only superficial settlements (as opposed to the concentrated habitations of the Cucuteni-Tripolye culture). They did bury their dead in a fashion similar to that of the Cucuteni-Tripolye groups, in that they buried their dead in the flexed position. However, the burial ritual differs in relation to specific positioning as Sredny Stog burials were interred on their backs, whereas the Tripolye burials were positioned on their sides with their hands placed near their faces.

In the region between the lower Dnieper and Crimea, a third significant culture group, the Lower Mikhailovka, has been identified. This culture group coincided chronologically with the Corded Ware stage of the Sredny Stog culture. At Mikhailovka the settlement remains of the Lower Mikhailovka group have been shown to underlie those of the Yamnaya culture.

The evidence recovered from such sites as Mikhailovka on the Dnieper indicates that this was a cattle-breeding steppe culture with a well-defined artifact inventory. Although faunal remains are sparse, it appears that cattle, sheep and goats, horses, pigs, and dogs, alongside hunting, made up the subsistence base of this culture. Pottery forms were mainly flat-based, dark in color, poorly decorated, and burnished. Imports of Tripolye painted pottery in Lower Mikhailovka burials support a Tripolye B2–C2 age between 4000 and 2800 B.C. or, more precisely, between 3700 and 3000 B.C. The burial ritual comprised interment in the supine position or with the knees drawn up toward the body, the use of ochre, and the erection of *kurgans* (burial mounds), with cists and stele used in burial constructions. Burial goods are not numerous, but finds of pottery, copper awls, and shell ornaments have been recovered.

One particularly interesting element of the ritual activities associated with the Lower Mikhailovka culture is the existence of altars or offering places associated with the *kurgans*, which have been found beneath the mounds. The evidence suggests that ritual deposits were created either before or during the burial ceremony. In this context pottery finds associated with the burials have been interpreted as representing the remains of the funeral feast which formed an integral part of the burial ritual.

THE PIT GRAVE CULTURE (YAMNAYA)

By the end of the Copper Age, most of the Pontic-Caspian region was occupied by the Pit Grave (Yamnaya) culture, which has been described as one of the major cultural-historical entities of prehistoric Europe. The early Pit Grave culture groups initially settled in the steppe zone of eastern Europe c. 3000–2900 B.C., either absorbing or displacing such indigenous groups as the Tripolye and post-Mariupol populations. (The Russian term for “pit grave” is *Yamnye pogrebeniia*, derived from *yama*, which literally means “pit.”) Researchers in this region have suggested that Yamnaya may have differing origins; the Volga region and the Dnieper (Sredny Stog) are possible heartlands for this culture, along with the region to the southeast, in the Caucasus.

Whatever the mechanisms of its initial development, it is clear that by c. 2500–2000 B.C. the Pit

Grave culture encompassed the steppe and forest steppe from the Urals in the east to the Lower Danube in the west. In general, the subsistence base of this culture is believed to have focused primarily on pastoralism. There is evidence of cultivated plants, derived from imprints on ceramics and from physical remains from such sites as Mikhailovka 3. The evidence is sparse, but it usually is accepted that agriculture formed an integral element of subsistence strategies.

The full expression of the *kurgan* tradition is associated with the Pit Grave culture after c. 2500 B.C. Despite the proliferation of *kurgans* in Ukraine and the northern Pontic steppe region, less than fifteen settlement sites are known; where there is evidence of settlement activity, it often takes the form of insubstantial camps, probably reflecting the nomadic pastoralism that dominated the economy of the steppe at that time. Faunal species exploited by the Yamnaya culture groups include such domesticates as cattle, sheep and goats, horses, and pigs. A broad range of wild animal remains comprise red deer, aurochs, wild boar, onager (wild ass), and steppe antelope (saiga), alongside smaller species, such as beaver, fox, otter, and hare.

As noted, exceptions to the described settlement pattern exist, especially at Mikhailovka on the lower Dnieper. The Yamnaya culture settlement evidence at this site comprises two phases of activity, the earliest of which occupied an area of about 1,500 square meters. James Mallory has noted that at this site there were both semi-subterranean and surface structures, along with large quantities of ceramics, tools, and faunal remains. The second phase of Yamnaya settlement saw expansion of this site to cover about 1.5 hectares and its fortification with ditches and stone walls.

The suggestion has been made that the *kurgans* erected by this culture functioned not only as grave mounds but possibly also as fixed points in the barren steppe, which could assist in guiding movement through the landscape. They also served to emphasize communal and familial links with the ancestors, and as such they reinforced communal rights to the land through the longevity of association afforded by ancestral ties.

As might be anticipated in a society where the economy was based on pastoralism, cattle formed

an integral part of the rituals revolving around the burial of the ancestors, and many faunal remains come from burial contexts. The dead were laid on their backs, with the legs flexed and the head oriented to the east or northeast, and covered with ochre. Some extended supine burials, as noted for the Neolithic Dnieper-Donets culture, have been identified in the Danube-Dniester interfluvium. Of particular interest are the signs of amputation of the hands or feet of the buried persons. Although this rite has no parallels elsewhere in the Yamnaya cultural area, it is a characteristic of Late Glacial/Early Holocene cemeteries at the Dnieper Rapids, such as Voloshkoe, which dates to c. 10,400–9200 B.C.

Additional Yamnaya and later-stage burials have been recovered from excavations of the *kurgan* mounds. Yamnaya burials within the mounds often number between fifteen and thirty interments, suggesting family or group or tribal burial grounds. The graves are deep shafts, either square or rectangular in shape and often lined with timber; the burials are found in chambers, usually covered with logs. The existence of barrow mounds before the establishment of the Pit Grave culture (Yamnaya) and their reuse by Pit Grave people show that the first *kurgans* were in evidence from stage BII/CI at such sites as Vishnevoe. Early-stage Yamnaya burials often are unaccompanied by grave goods, but later examples have produced a wide range of artifacts, such as copper and flint knives, boar tusk pendants and beads, and such tools as scrapers, axes, and sickle blades. Other finds of equipment and tools associated with this culture include flint, bone, and antler tools, among them, mattocks and harpoons, and such weapons as daggers, stone battle-axes and maces, and arrowheads. Copper knives, chisels, awls, and adzes appear to have been produced locally.

While the economic activities of the Yamnaya groups were structured to accommodate prevailing natural conditions, with mixed farming in open, forested river valleys and stockbreeding in the open steppe zone, one of the most significant factors in the development of these mobile economies was the invention of wheeled transport. James P. Mallory has noted that evidence for both two- and four-wheeled carts or wagons has been recovered from Yamnaya burials, such as the Storozhevaya cemetery near Dnepropetrovsk on the Dnieper. Other finds

of carts have been made at Staryi Kodak (lower Dnieper) and north of the Sea of Azov at Akkermen. Horse riding also is documented at this time. The “head and hooves” burials of the crania and lower limbs of sheep and, occasionally, horses are encountered. This ritual has been interpreted as a cult activity because the remains have been recovered in situations that indicate that they were placed over the buried person, as part of the burial ritual. Finally, it has been suggested that the extensive adoption of the Pit Grave tradition might reflect the ultimate expression of societal modification aimed at counteracting the climatic changes responsible for the deterioration of such groups as the Cucuteni-Tripolye culture. This modification took the form of a reorientation of subsistence economies and settlement patterns in order to avoid the impacts of worsening climate in relation to the previous agricultural economies employed by the Tripolye culture groups.

See also **Ritual and Ideology** (vol. 1, part 1); **Kolomishiina** (vol. 1, part 4); **Bronze Age Herders of the Eurasian Steppes** (vol. 2, part 5).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Bunyatyay, E. P. “On the Correlation of Agriculture and Pastoralism in the Northern Pontic Steppe Area during the Bronze Epoch.” In *Late Prehistoric Exploitation of the Eurasian Steppe*. Edited by Marsha Levine, Yuri Rassamakin, Aleksandr Kislenco, and Nataliya Tatarintseva, pp. 30–39. Cambridge, U.K.: McDonald Institute for Archaeological Research, 1999.
- Dolukhanov, Pavel M. *The Early Slavs: Eastern Europe from the Initial Settlement to the Kievan Rus*. London: Longman, 1996.
- Dumitrescu, Vladimir. “Origine et évolution de la civilisation de Cucuteni-Tripolie.” *Archaeologia* 14 (1964): 1–37.
- Mallory, James P. *In Search of the Indo-Europeans: Language, Archaeology, and Myth*. London: Thames and Hudson, 1989.
- Rassamakin, Yuri Y. “The Eneolithic of the Black Sea Steppe: Dynamics of Cultural and Economic Development 4500–2300 B.C.” In *Late Prehistoric Exploitation of the Eurasian Steppe*. Edited by Marsha Levine, Yuri Rassamakin, Aleksandr Kislenco, and Nataliya Tatarintseva, pp. 59–182. Cambridge, U.K.: McDonald Institute for Archaeological Research, 1999.
- . “The Main Directions of the Development of Early Pastoral Societies of Northern Pontic Zone: 4500–2450 B.C. (Pre-Yamnaya Cultures and Yamnaya Culture).” In *Baltic Pontic Studies*. Vol. 2, *Nomadism and Pastoralism in the Circle of Baltic-Pontic Early Agrari-*

an Communities: 5000–1650 B.C. Edited by S. Kadrow et al., pp. 29–70. Poznań, Poland: The Institute of Prehistory, 1994.

- Sulimirski, Tadeusz. *Prehistoric Russia: An Outline*. London: John Baker, 1970.
- Telegin, D. Y. “Neolithic Cultures of the Ukraine and Adjacent Areas and Their Chronology.” *Journal of World Prehistory* 1, no. 3 (1987): 307–332.
- Videiko, M. Y. “Tripolye—‘Pastoral’ Contacts: Facts and Character of the Interactions, 4800–3200 B.C.” In *Baltic Pontic Studies*. Vol. 2, *Nomadism and Pastoralism in the Circle of Baltic-Pontic Early Agrarian Communities: 5000–1650 B.C.* Edited by S. Kadrow et al., pp. 5–28. Poznań, Poland: The Institute of Prehistory, 1994.

MALCOLM LILLIE

DOMESTICATION OF THE HORSE

Who was the first human to jump on the back of a wild horse? When did the first successful ride happen—that astonishing moment when some adolescent first hung on to a horse’s mane and galloped through the village while everyone stared as if he (or she?) had begun to fly? That moment, irretrievably lost, changed history. Today horses are such an accepted part of the culture that all transportation technologies—even rocket engines—are still measured in horsepower. Horses, unlike other domesticated animals, are more important for transportation than as a source of milk, meat, or fibers. The domestication of the horse was both a zoological and a technological innovation, which is one reason the study of horse domestication is so complicated. Certain discoveries hold out the hope that we might eventually understand this seminal event much better.

WHERE WERE HORSES FIRST DOMESTICATED?

In 2001 geneticists at Uppsala University (Sweden) established that modern domestic horses have such wide variation in their mitochondrial DNA that they could not have descended from a single ancestor or small group of ancestors that lived in one place within the past ten thousand years. Similar studies conducted on modern domestic sheep (*Ovis aries*) and European/Near Eastern cattle (*Bos taurus*) had quite different results—these species are so

homogeneous in their genetic makeup that they almost certainly *are* the descendants of single ancestors that lived recently. A single pair of wild sheep and only a few bull and cow pairs became the ancestors of almost all of our millions of modern domesticates—thus it is worthwhile investigating where those ancestral pairs were brought into a domesticated way of life.

Modern horses, though, are mongrels by comparison, probably because wild horses continued to interbreed with domesticated stock until modern times. Horse keepers encouraged the incorporation of new domesticates from previously isolated wild horse populations, whereas cattle and sheepherders did not. Breeding with wild horses was thought to enhance some of the qualities desired in domesticated horses—strength, speed, intelligence, and competitiveness—while most of these same qualities are undesirable in domesticated cattle and sheep. The contrast in character testifies to the very different demands humans have placed on horses, but it should not derail the search for the place where domestication took place. The earliest domesticated horses must have lived somewhere. One can accept that the genetic history of the modern horse is quite complicated without abandoning the search for the beginning of the story.

The first people to think seriously about the benefits of keeping, feeding, and raising tamed horses must have been familiar with wild horses. They had to have lived in a place where humans spent a lot of time hunting wild horses and studying their behavior. The geographic area where this was possible contracted significantly about ten thousand to fifteen thousand years ago, when the modern era of warm climate began and arctic steppe tundra—a favorable environment for Ice Age horses—was replaced by dense forest over much of the Northern Hemisphere. The horses of North America became extinct as the climate shifted, for reasons that are still poorly understood.

In Europe and Asia large herds of wild horses survived only in the steppes in the center of the Eurasian continent, leaving smaller populations isolated in pockets of naturally open pasture (marsh-grass meadows, alpine meadows, and arid *mesetas*) in Europe, Anatolia (modern Turkey), and the Caucasus Mountains. In these places, however, horses never became an important part of the human food quest

over the long term—there were not enough wild horses left outside the steppe environment to make focusing on them worthwhile. In Anatolia, for example, small populations of wild horses survived long enough to be hunted occasionally by the Neolithic occupants of Çatal Hüyük and other farming villages in about 7400–6200 B.C., but they were hunted out during the Neolithic. In Western Europe horse bones account for more than 5 percent of the animals hunted at only a few early postglacial sites. Only in the Eurasian steppes were there large postglacial wild horse populations, and in steppe archaeological sites postglacial humans regularly hunted wild horses for more than half of their meat diet. For this reason alone one should look first to the Eurasian steppes for evidence of the earliest domestication.

Three equid species were hunted in the Ukrainian and Russian steppes north of the Black and Caspian Seas between 8,000 and 5,500 B.C. In the Caspian Depression, at such Mesolithic sites as Burovaya 53, Je-Kalgan, and Istai IV, garbage dumps dated before 5500 B.C. contain almost exclusively the bones of the horse and the onager, *Equus hemionus*. The latter is a fleet-footed animal smaller than a horse and larger than an ass, native to dry steppe and semidesert environments. Onagers were then very successful; their natural range extended from the Caspian steppes across Iran and into the Near East. Hunters in the arid Caspian steppes specialized in horse and onager hunting into the late sixth millennium B.C., at sites such as Dzhangar and Kair-Shak III. A second equid, *Equus hydruntinus*, was hunted in the slightly moister environment of the Black Sea steppes, where its bones are found in Mesolithic sites at Girzhevo and Matveev Kurgan, dated to the late seventh millennium B.C. This small, gracile animal, which then lived from the Black Sea steppes westward into Bulgaria and Romania, became extinct before 3000 B.C.

The true horse, *Equus caballus*, was more adaptable; it ranged across both the Caspian Depression and the Black Sea steppes, and it survived in both environments long after both *E. hemionus* and *E. hydruntinus* were hunted out. Horse bones were more than 50 percent of the identified animal bones at Girzhevo and Matveev Kurgan, a pattern that was repeated at Ivanovskaya on the Samara River, an eastern tributary of the Volga, and in Neolithic sites

in the southern foothills of the Ural Mountains. All these sites were relatively small. Small camps imply that the hunters lived and hunted in small groups, probably using ambush techniques rather than large communal drives. Their taste for the flesh of wild equids created a familiarity with them and their habits that later would make the domestication of the horse possible.

WHY WERE HORSES DOMESTICATED?

The first domesticated animals north of the Black and Caspian Seas were introduced by farmers of the Criş culture who migrated from the broad Lower Danube Valley into the forested eastern Carpathian foothills, spilling into the Seret and Prut River valleys about 5800–5600 B.C. The ownership of cattle and sheep made possible an entirely new political economy in the region. Domesticated animals constituted capital that could be loaned, offered at public ceremonies, and given as gifts. The connection between animals and power would become the foundation on which new forms of ritual and politics would develop among steppe societies. Between 5400 and 5200 B.C. cattle and sheep were adopted by the Dnieper-Donets culture (also known as the Mariupol culture, after the cemetery of Mariupol) in the steppe valleys of the Dnieper and Donets Rivers north of the Black Sea. By 5200–5000 B.C. the people of the Volga-Ural steppes, far to the east, had begun raising cattle and sheep as well. An economic boundary formed at the eastern and northern edges of the Volga-Ural steppes; beyond this frontier, the native foragers rejected domesticated animals for another 2,500 years.

The techniques of cattle herding would have suggested obvious possibilities to anyone familiar with horses. Both cattle and horse bands follow the lead of a dominant female. The cowherd needs only to control that female to control the whole herd—a technique easily applied to horses. A dominant male, the bull or the stallion, normally guards the wild band, a job taken by a human in a domestic herd. Thus, males present a similar management problem in both species, and they have the same iconic status as symbols of virility and strength. When people who depended on equid hunting began to keep domesticated cattle, it would not have been long before someone tried to apply cattle management techniques to horses.

What was the incentive to tame horses if the people who did it already had cattle and sheep? The first horse tamers would not have been able to predict the ultimate advantages of leaping onto the back of a fast, powerful, and aggressive creature naturally more inclined to fight or run from humans than to carry them. Horses, however, are easier to feed through the winter than cattle or sheep. Cattle and sheep push snow aside with their noses, whereas horses use their hooves. In deep or continuous snow the noses of cattle and sheep become bloody and sore, and if they are not provided with fodder they will stand and starve in a field where there is ample winter forage just beneath their feet. Horses will paw ice and snow away with their hard hooves and feed themselves. They are supremely well adapted to the cold grasslands of our planet, where they evolved. People who lived in cold grasslands with domesticated cattle and sheep soon would have seen the advantage in keeping horses, if just for a cheap supply of winter-season meat. It is possible that this phase of horse keeping, when horses were primarily a source of meat, began as early as 5000 B.C. in the Pontic-Caspian steppes.

WHEN WERE HORSES DOMESTICATED?

The cemetery of Khvalynsk, located in the Russian steppes on the west bank of the Volga River, between Saratov and Samara, contained the graves of more than two hundred people and dated to about 5000–4500 B.C. During this first period of stockbreeding in the steppes, domesticated animals were sacrificed to accompany the dead. Animal sacrifices were placed in graves, at the edges of grave openings, and on the ground above filled-in graves at Khvalynsk. Igor Vasiliev, the excavator, reported a minimum of sixty-one sheep, twenty-one cattle, and eleven horses as sacrifices. Most of these animals were represented by just the leg bones, but seventeen sheep and nine cattle still had parts of both the head and the lower leg bones—probably the remains of hides with the head and feet still attached. Only cattle, sheep, and horses were offered in the Khvalynsk funeral sacrifices—except for one deposit, containing a single bird. Three graves held the bones of horses combined with cattle or sheep or both.

The ritual grouping of horses with cattle and sheep would be explained most easily if horses were

managed like cattle and sheep, tamed and controlled by human herders. At the related cemetery of S'yezzhe on the Samara River, an above-grave ritual deposit contained red ochre, broken pottery, shell beads, a bone harpoon, and the skulls and lower leg bones of two horses. Two figurines of horses carved on flat pieces of bone were placed near this red-ochre-stained deposit. Similar funeral deposits of horse bones and carved horse images have been found at other contemporary cemeteries in the western steppes (Varfolomievka and Lipovi Ovrage). Symbolically, horses were treated in the burials like domesticated cattle and sheep—they occupied the same ritual category as livestock. It thus seems likely that horses already were domesticated or on the way to domestication by about 5000–4500 B.C. in the steppes north of the Black and Caspian Seas.

THE ORIGIN OF HORSEBACK RIDING

It is difficult to distinguish the bones of early domesticated horses from those of their wild cousins. Contemporary feral populations differ in bodily form in different environments—Chincoteague ponies are smaller than Nevada mustangs, for example. The leg bones of postglacial horses from southeastern Europe or Germany tended to be a little thicker than those of typical steppe horses, but the whole range in leg thickness can be found in one archaeological site, as at La Adam cave in the Dobruja region of Romania. It is thus difficult to identify a morphological variant that clearly indicates domestication and that cannot be ascribed to the regional environment or interregional movement of wild horse populations.

It has been doubly difficult to distinguish the bones of a mount from those of a horse merely eaten for dinner. Riding leaves few traces on horse bones—only six thoracic vertebrae are known to show riding-related pathologic features, and these bones rarely are preserved at archaeological sites. A bit, however, leaves marks on the teeth, and teeth usually survive very well. Bits are used only to guide horses from behind, to drive or to ride. They are not useful if the horse is pulled from the front, as pack-horses are, so evidence for bit use implies riding or driving.

Most horses that have been ridden or driven frequently with a bit—90 percent in a study of modern

bitted horses—show bit wear on their lower second premolars (P_2 s). A well-positioned bit is supposed to sit on the tongue and gums in the space between the front and back teeth, called the “bars” of the mouth. But X-ray photographs taken at the University of Saskatchewan (Canada) show that a horse can use its tongue to elevate and retract the bit, pushing it back into the grip of its premolars. The horse has to force the bit back into its cheeks, which prevent the bit from moving back farther than the front half of the P_2 . Thus, all wear from bit chewing is concentrated on one part of one tooth (the P_2), unlike the wear from chewing anything else.

A metal bit creates distinctive abrasions on the enamel of the P_2 , usually concentrated on the first cusp; it also wears down a bevel or facet on the front (mesial) corner of the tooth, also usually on the first cusp. Horses that chew on a rope or leather mouthpiece, like those probably used for the oldest bits, show the same wear facet in the same place, but its surface is smooth and polished, not abraded. Measurement of the depth of the wear facet easily distinguishes populations of bitted horses from horses who have never worn bits. Horses that have not been bitted do not have a wear facet on the mesial corner of the P_2 . In our study of such horses, the median measurement of the dip on the mesial corner of the tooth was only 0.5 millimeters. We regard a 3-millimeter-deep facet as the threshold for identifying bit wear in archaeological cases. If several mature horses, three years old or older, from a single archaeological site have mesial bevels of 3 millimeters or more on their P_2 s, it is evidence either for numerous cases of a very rare natural pathological condition or for the use of bits.

The oldest archaeological collection of numerous horse P_2 s with wear facets in excess of 3 millimeters is from the site of Botai in northern Kazakhstan. Botai was a settlement of specialized horse hunters who seem to have ridden horses to hunt horses, a peculiar practice that existed only in northern Kazakhstan during the period 3500–3000 B.C. Sites of the Botai type and of the related Tersek type contain 65–99.9 percent horse bones, indicating that the meat diet came almost exclusively from horses. Five of the nineteen measurable P_2 s studied at Botai, representing at least three different horses, had significant bevel measurements: two of 3 millimeters, one of 3.5 millimeters, one of 4 millimeters, and

one of 6 millimeters. A 3-millimeter wear facet was also found on one P₂ from a Tersek site very much like Botai, Kozhai 1, in the steppes just west of Botai, dated to the same period. One can be reasonably certain that some Botai and Tersek horses were bitted and ridden.

Dogs and horses were the only domesticated animals these people had—the Botai-Tersek communities essentially were mounted foragers. They possessed no cattle or sheep, no wheeled vehicles, and no bronze metallurgy—all things that their Yamnaya culture neighbors in the Volga-Ural steppes to the west had during the same period. Botai-Tersek sites have large and well-studied collections of horse bones, but that does not mean that riding actually began there. It is likely that Botai-Tersek people acquired domesticated horses and the idea of riding them from their western neighbors, who had been managing domesticated cattle and sheep, and probably horses, for fifteen hundred years before 3500 B.C.

The appearance of riding at Botai suggests that other cultures of the Eurasian steppes were riding horses by about 3500–3000 B.C.—and probably earlier. A man on foot can herd about two hundred sheep with a good herding dog. A man on horseback can herd about five hundred. Riding greatly increased the efficiency and productivity of herding economies and probably was used also in tribal raiding, long before riders were organized and armed in a way that finally made them effective against urban armies.

THE SPREAD OF HORSEBACK RIDING

Riding was not a sport of kings before 1000 B.C. In fact, an adviser to one Near Eastern king, Zimri-Lim of Mari, warned him in about 1770 B.C. that he should not dishonor his kingship by riding horses; instead, he should ride in a chariot. Teams of elegantly outfitted horses drew chariots into battle as early as 1800–1900 B.C. in the Near East and Anatolia, and it was in this capacity that horses first were used widely by royalty. Horses initially appeared in small numbers in Anatolia and Iran around 3000 B.C., perhaps imported to breed with asses to produce mules, which were stronger than asses and better suited than horses to the hot Near Eastern climate. The earliest artistic images of

horses appeared in about 2300–2000 B.C.; they showed horses alone or men riding on horseback. The identity of these riders or their function is not known, but riding was not adopted by Near Eastern elites, and it was not used in state-level warfare.

Between about 2800 and 2000 B.C. ponderous four-wheeled battlewagons were used in Near Eastern warfare. They were pulled by asses (*Equus asinus*) or onagers (*E. hemionus*), native equids but smaller and weaker than horses. The chariot was a light, two-wheeled vehicle designed specifically for speed, made possible by the invention of the spoked wheel, which greatly reduced its weight. Chariots could take advantage of the superior speed of horses, which began to be imported in large numbers when the chariot was invented, about 2000 B.C. It is not clear where chariots were invented—they appeared in graves in the Eurasian steppes around 2000 B.C. and could have spread from there through the Iranian Elamites into Mesopotamia during the Third Dynasty of Ur. Alternatively, they might have been invented in the Near East and spread northward into the steppes. Regardless of their origin, chariots were expensive to make, the horses that pulled them were exotic foreign beasts, and both chariot teams and drivers needed long training, so horse-drawn chariots were automatic signals of status and wealth. Once they appeared, elite chariot corps dominated warfare between the kings of the Near East for centuries.

The effective use of cavalry in urban, state-level warfare depended on three tactical and technical innovations: the organization of large bodies of riders into units that attacked and retreated on command; the invention of the short, recurved compound bow, which made it easier to shoot from a moving horse; and the development of molds to cast metal arrowheads of standard weight and size, which made archery more accurate. These three innovations came together in the western Eurasian steppes in about 1000 B.C., perhaps as a result of contact between tribal steppe riders and state-level military organizations in the Near East or the Caucasus Mountains. Within a few centuries cavalry replaced chariots on the battlefields of the Near East and the western Eurasian steppes. Warfare and world history were changed forever.

See also *Warfare and Conquest* (vol. 1, part 1); *Milk, Wool, and Traction: Secondary Animal Products*

(vol. 1, part 3); *Late Neolithic/Copper Age Eastern Europe* (vol. 1, part 4).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Anthony, David W., and Dorcas Brown. "Eneolithic Horse Exploitation in the Eurasian Steppes: Diet, Ritual and Riding." *Antiquity* 74 (2000): 75–86.
- Anthony, David W., Dmitri Y. Telegin, and Dorcas Brown. "The Origin of Horseback Riding." *Scientific American* 265, no. 6 (1991): 94–100.
- Clutton-Brock, Juliet. *Horse Power*. Cambridge, Mass.: Harvard University Press, 1992.
- Levine, Marsha. "Botai and the Origins of Horse Domestication." *Journal of Anthropological Archaeology* 18, no. 1 (1999): 29–78.
- Meadow, Richard H., and Hans-Peter Uerpmann, eds. *Equids in the Ancient World*. Wiesbaden, Germany: Ludwig Reichert Verlag, 1991.
- Olsen, Sandra L., ed. *Horses through Time*. Boulder, Co.: Roberts Rhinehart Publishers for Carnegie Museum of Natural History, 1997.
- Priakhin, A. D., and V. I. Besedin. "The Horse Bridle of the Middle Bronze Age in the East European Forest-Steppe and the Steppe." *Anthropology and Archaeology of Eurasia* 38, no. 1 (1999): 39–59.
- Uerpmann, Hans-Peter. "Die Domestikation des Pferdes im Chalkolithikum West- und Mitteleuropas." *Madrider Mitteilungen* 31 (1990): 109–153.
- Vila, C., et al. "Widespread Origins of Domestic Horse Lineages." *Science* 291, no. 5503 (2001): 474–477.

DAVID W. ANTHONY

KOLOMISCHIINA

The Tripolye culture site of Kolomischiina is located to the west of the Dnieper River, near the modern village of Halepye, about 35 kilometers south of Kiev, Ukraine.

Tripolye culture settlements within the modern boundary of Ukraine number about one thousand. The sites vary in size from about 4 to 400 hectares, and at the smaller end of the range they consist of small hamlets of a dozen or so houses. The site of Vladimirovka, on the right bank of the river Siniukha (a tributary of the southern Bug River), has five concentric rings encompassing 162 houses on

a site that covered an area of about 900 by 800 meters. Larger settlements have houses and associated structures numbering in the hundreds, and at the Ukrainian site of Majdanets'ke, some twelve hundred to seventeen hundred buildings, or perhaps more, have been identified through aerial photographic and site surveys.

On the basis of about sixty-five radiocarbon determinations the entire span of the Tripolye culture is known to encompass the period c. 5500–2300 B.C. During the middle and later phases of Tripolye culture development, between c. 4500–3500 B.C., settlements were located either on the floodplains of the region's rivers or on promontories formed by higher terraces of these rivers. Though undated in absolute terms, the settlement of Kolomischiina is placed in the Tripolye periods B–C1, between c. 4500–3000 B.C., and the site is located on a typical promontory. Tripolye settlement sites in Ukraine, predictably, were usually located close to a spring or water source.

Kolomischiina is a relatively small settlement, consisting of thirty-nine buildings arranged in two concentric circles. Despite its small size, this settlement layout would still have provided a measure of defense for the inhabitants.

The area covered by the site known as Kolomischiina is defined by the dimensions of the outer ring of buildings, which consisted of thirty-one structures in a circle (or more accurately, an ellipse) of 160 by 170 meters diameter. An inner circle had a diameter of 70 by 75 meters, and contained eight structures. The houses all have their entrances facing toward the center of the site. Larger settlements of the Tripolye culture in Ukraine have been defined as covering 250 hectares (Dobrovody), 270 hectares (Majdanets'ke), and up to a maximum of 3.5 by 1.5 kilometers (Talljanky).

Despite its modest size, Kolomischiina is a significant site in the history of the investigations into the nature of Tripolye occupation sites. Prior to the implementation of the "Tripolean expedition" in 1934, a series of archaeological surveys and excavations aimed at enhancing knowledge of the Tripolye culture in the Ukraine; excavations of Tripolye culture sites had been of only limited scope, encompassing either trench or small area excavations. Due to the limitations imposed by these investigations,

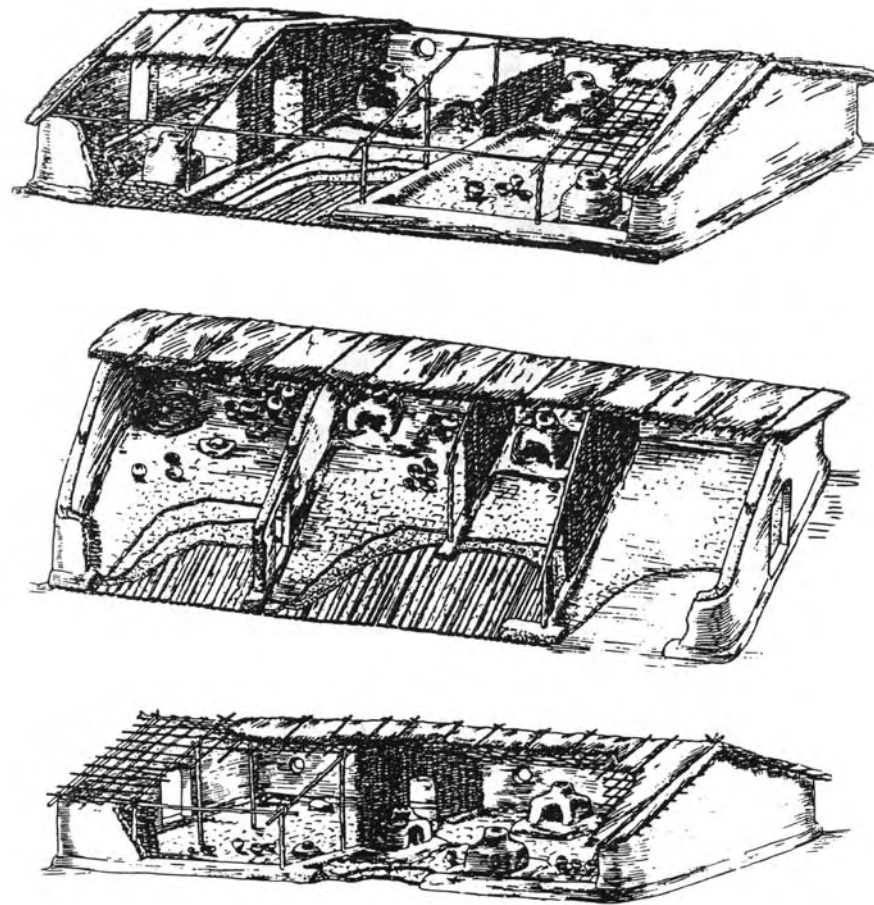


Fig. 1. Longhouse construction at Kolomischina I: dwellings 24 (upper), 11 (middle), and 2 (lower). FROM PASSEK AND KRICHEVSKIY 1946.

many conclusions relating to the precise nature and function of these sites remained tentative and unconfirmed. This was especially the case in relation to the interpretation of the fired clay or plaster platforms found on settlement sites. Earlier excavators had concluded that these features were ritual in nature. The new excavations at Kolomischina confirmed that these platforms (*ploshchadki* in Russian) did in fact represent the foundations of rectangular houses or buildings built on the ground surface. This building technique contrasts to that of earlier periods, where the houses were “sunk” about 0.9–1.0 meter below the ground level.

During the excavations at Kolomischina about 13,000 square meters of the site were excavated over a five-year period. The excavations indicated that the central area of the settlement may have

been used for stock keeping and possibly as a site for festivals or ceremonies. Concentrations of animal bone, pottery, and plaster were found in proximity to the dwellings or structures. In the northeastern part of the settlement a thick cultural layer (possibly middens)—comprising *Unio* shells, the bones of both wild and domesticated animals, and fish remains, along with similar material to that found closer to the dwellings, such as pottery fragments, pieces of plaster, and some broken tools and fragments of clay figurines—were excavated. The clay figurines featured various domesticated animals and human figures, primarily females. Pottery was decorated either with various incised impressions and stamps or, in later periods, with the application of paint motifs using white or black paint in spiral forms and with the application of red, black, and

brown colors. Regional variability in pottery decoration is evident in the north and eastern areas of the Tripolye cultures distribution.

T. S. Passek interpreted the *ploshchadki* at Kolomischina as large rectangular houses built of wattle and daub supported on a framework of wooden posts, with many ovens or kilns. These houses or structures were rectangular in plan, up to 30 meters long and 5–8 meters wide, and often about 100–120 square meters in area. Of the thirty-six dwellings at Kolomischina, twenty-two were constructed in the above style. The structures had floors constructed from wood and clay, the latter mixed with chaff (chopped hay or straw). The fired clay was laid out in long, rectangular “rolls” or “bricks,” with the gaps between them sealed by unfired clay.

Although this layer often covered the whole floor area, in certain buildings—such as building N1 at Kolomischina—it only covered a part of the house. The clay floors are interpreted as being used in those parts of the dwellings that were used for the drying, preparation, and storage of grain.

The fired clay floors also provided a base, which was reinforced by additional layers of up to 0.2 meter in thickness, for the ovens and kilns of the large houses. The additional clay plates raised the ovens above the floor by up to 0.3 meter. At Kolomischina these structures were shown to be rectangular in shape, about 2 by 1.8 meters or 2.0 by 2.2 meters and between 1.6 and 2.0 meters in height, and with the front walls painted red. It appears that the larger houses were portioned off, so that individual family units had their own designat-

ed living space. In each of these “apartments” the group had its own oven, grinding stones, storage vessels, and food preparation and eating vessels.

Clay models of houses have been recovered from sites such as Kolomischina II (on the middle Dnieper River), and these reflect the general form of the houses exposed through excavation. Other clay models from Novye Rusešty and Rassokhovatka suggest that some Tripolye houses may have been two-story structures. The expansion of settlement indicates expansion of population into the latter stages of the Tripolye culture. The settlement of Kolomischina, as discussed above, is placed in the Tripolye periods B–C1, between c. 4500–3000 B.C.: a time when the economy, population and material culture inventory of this culture reached its zenith.

See also *Slavs and the Early Slav Culture* (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Dolukhanov, Pavel M. *The Early Slavs: Eastern Europe from the Initial Settlement to the Kievan Rus*. London: Longman, 1996.
- Ellis, Linda. *The Cucuteni-Tripolye Culture: A Study in Technology and the Origins of Complex Society*. BAR International Series, no. 217. Oxford: British Archaeological Reports, 1984.
- Passek, T. S., and E. Yu. Krichevskiy. “Tripolskoe poselenie Kolomiščina (Apat rekonstrookchii)” [The Tripolye culture site of Kolomischina: An attempt at reconstruction]. *Kratkie Soobshcheniia o Doladakh I Polevykh Issledovaniakh Institute Istorii Materialno Kultury* 12 (1946): 14–22.

MALCOLM LILLIE



LATE NEOLITHIC/COPPER AGE CENTRAL EUROPE

FOLLOWED BY FEATURE ESSAYS ON:

<i>Brześć Kujawski</i>	378
<i>Rondels of the Carpathians</i>	382

The central European Late Neolithic begins with the appearance of the Lengyel and Rössen cultures around 4800–4700 B.C. and ends with the introduction of bronze metallurgy around 2200 B.C., spanning approximately twenty-five hundred years. Not all archaeologists subscribe to this definition, however. In Hungary the Neolithic is considered to have ended when copper-using societies appeared (4700–4600 B.C.), and a distinct Copper Age, or Chalcolithic, is recognized. These were Neolithic farming and stock-raising societies that used a new metal technology; thus, in this survey, the Copper Age is included in the Late Neolithic.

Since central Europe (Austria, the Czech Republic, Germany, Hungary, Poland, and Slovakia) is a vast area with many geographic and climatic conditions, Neolithic peoples, taking advantage of their own local resources, varied in their economic adaptations: farming, herding, and trading. Their individual cultural developments, of course, were as unique as those of any selection of cultures today. It can be assumed that those cultures that shared traits were linked in some way: language, ethnicity, history, or myth. Owing to this link, several cultures are named for their unique material culture, especially in terms of ceramic types. Hence, we have the “Funnel Beaker,” “Globular Amphora,” “Corded

Ware,” and “Bell Beaker” cultures. Other cultures are named after regions or sites they inhabited, for example, Lengyel.

There was considerable cultural homogeneity in house form, settlement organization, and subsistence practice among Early Neolithic farming societies in central Europe. In contrast, the Late Neolithic is a period of increasing cultural diversity and complexity. While there were continuities from the Early Neolithic, changes can be observed in economy, settlement, society, rituals, and beliefs. These adaptations include technological advances, the appearance of settlement hierarchies, the mining of flint, agricultural innovations, and ecological changes. Wagons, simple plows, horse riding, metallurgy, and wool production made their first appearance in central Europe at this time.

The greater number of settlements and larger cemeteries suggest a slight increase in population at the beginning of the period. A few centuries later some regions had population densities that were never achieved during the Early Neolithic. Areas occupied by hunters and gatherers decreased or disappeared as farmers moved into zones previously inhabited by foragers. There is also more evidence of warfare. The Late Neolithic societies exhibited

B.C.	Hungary	Eastern Slovakia	Western Slovakia	Austria	Czech Republic
2000					
2500				Bell Beaker	Bell Beaker
3000	Vučedol-Zók	↑	↑		Corded Ware
3500	Baden	Baden	Baden	Baden	Baden
4000	Bodrogkeresztúr	Bodrogkeresztúr	Bajč-Retz	Bajč-Retz	Funnel Beaker
4500	Tiszapolgár Tisza	Tiszapolgár	Lengyel	Lengyel Stroke Ornamented	Lengyel Stroke Ornamented
5000	Szakálhát	Bükk			
5500	Linear Pottery	Linear Pottery	Linear Pottery	Linear Pottery	Linear Pottery
6000	Körös				

Simplified chronological sequence for Austria, Czech Republic, Hungary, and Slovakia.

more variation and complexity in social and political organization than was evident in the Early Neolithic. Burial and settlement data suggest that some small, egalitarian societies may have been transformed into those with inherited social inequality. These are perhaps best termed ranked societies or simple chiefdoms, in which status and authority differentiated some individuals or families from others. We base this conclusion on the settlement data and the small number and size of the Funnel Beaker culture (4200–3500 B.C.) burial mounds in Poland. These structures usually contain one or two individuals, and we assume that only high-status persons were selected for interment in these mounds.

CHRONOLOGY AND CULTURAL SEQUENCE

For brevity's sake, the range of cultural variation is underemphasized in this survey, and the chronological scheme is simplified. The earliest major Late Neolithic cultures in central Europe were the Lengyel and Rössen. A few hundred years later, the Funnel Beaker (sometimes called, in German, the TRB or Trichterbecher culture) and Tiszapolgár cultures made their appearance. The disappearance of the Lengyel and Rössen cultures, however, does not mean that local populations were replaced or elimi-

nated. Archaeologists have subdivided these cultures into various phases and regional groups. For example, the Funnel Beaker culture in eastern Germany comprises the Baalberge, Salzmünde, Walternienburg, and Bernburg groups. In north-central Poland, the Lengyel-type culture is called the Brześć Kujawski group.

Remains of the Lengyel culture are found in lower Austria, the Czech Republic, Slovakia, Poland, Hungary, and northern Croatia, but Funnel Beaker settlements were not limited to central Europe. They existed in Poland, the northwestern Ukraine, the Czech Republic, Slovakia, lower Austria, northern Germany, the Netherlands, Denmark, southern Sweden, and even, to a small extent, southern Norway. In central Europe the earliest Funnel Beaker material dates to c. 4300–4200 B.C., whereas Funnel Beaker settlements in Scandinavia (4100–4000 B.C.) represent the earliest Neolithic occupations in northern Europe. In the latter part of the fourth millennium B.C. different cultures, such as Globular Amphora (3100–2500 B.C.) and Baden (3500–2900 B.C.), start to dominate the central European landscape. Globular Amphora sites are present in eastern Germany, the Czech Republic, Poland, and northwestern Ukraine; Baden culture sites occur in Hungary, northwestern Romania,

B.C.	Southern Germany	Northern Germany	Southern Poland	Northern Poland
2000	Bell Beaker		Bell Beaker	
2500	Corded Ware	Corded Ware	Corded Ware	Corded Ware
3000		Globular Amphora	Globular Amphora	Globular Amphora
3500	Horgen		Baden	
4000		Funnel Beaker	Funnel Beaker	Funnel Beaker
4500	Michelsberg			
5000	Rössen Stroke Ornamented	Rössen	Lengyel Stroke Ornamented	Lengyel Stroke Ornamented
5500	Linear Pottery	Linear Pottery	Linear Pottery	Linear Pottery

Simplified chronological sequence for Germany and Poland.

Serbia, Slovakia, the Czech Republic, eastern Austria, and southern Poland.

A little later, around 3000–2900 B.C., the Corded Ware (also called Single Grave or Battle-Axe) culture spread over an enormous territory, from the Rhine in the west to the upper Volga in the east and from Finland to the Alps. By 2700 B.C. the Bell Beaker culture appeared in western and central Europe, but in some western European countries it is placed in the Early Bronze Age. In some regions of central Europe Late Neolithic cultures overlap geographically and chronologically with one another. For example, the late Lengyel was contemporaneous in northern Poland with the earliest Funnel Beaker.

MAJOR INNOVATIONS IN THE LATE NEOLITHIC

By 3500–3000 B.C. plows, wagons, copper metallurgy, horse riding, wool production, and the milking of cows, goats, and sheep were present in central Europe. These innovations had repercussions in economy, warfare, transportation, gender relations, and beliefs. When and where these numerous innovations first appeared is the subject of archaeological debate. Dairying may have occurred as early as 5000 B.C. Milk can be consumed sour, fermented, or processed into a wide variety of products, such as cheese; these products evade the problem of lactose

intolerance, as little lactose remains in them. Domesticated horses were present in central Europe around 4000 B.C., and by 3500–3000 B.C. people were riding them. Horse riding gave people the ability to cover long distances in a relatively short period of time. Moreover, the riding of horses influenced warfare; riders could plunder or attack communities far away from home.

The first wagons appeared in central Europe around 3500 B.C. At Bronocice in Poland, a vessel incised with wagon motifs was found in a late Funnel Beaker culture pit, which was dated to 3400 B.C. (fig. 1). What was the function of the earliest oxen-pulled wagons? Besides their practical purposes, such as transporting harvested crops, fodder, and firewood, it has been suggested that they had ritual or religious purposes. The first use of simple plows occurred around 4000–3500 B.C., as is indicated by marks found under Funnel Beaker mounds. Even simple ox-drawn plows could turn the earth to a greater depth than could digging sticks, thereby enabling greater crop yields. The plow probably facilitated the expansion of farming from the zones of easily worked soils cultivated during the Early Neolithic. Plows and wagons also represented a labor-saving technology, making many tasks easier and faster. Copper mining and smelting were conducted in the Carpathians by 4500 B.C. The first copper artifacts were made by hammering smelted copper;

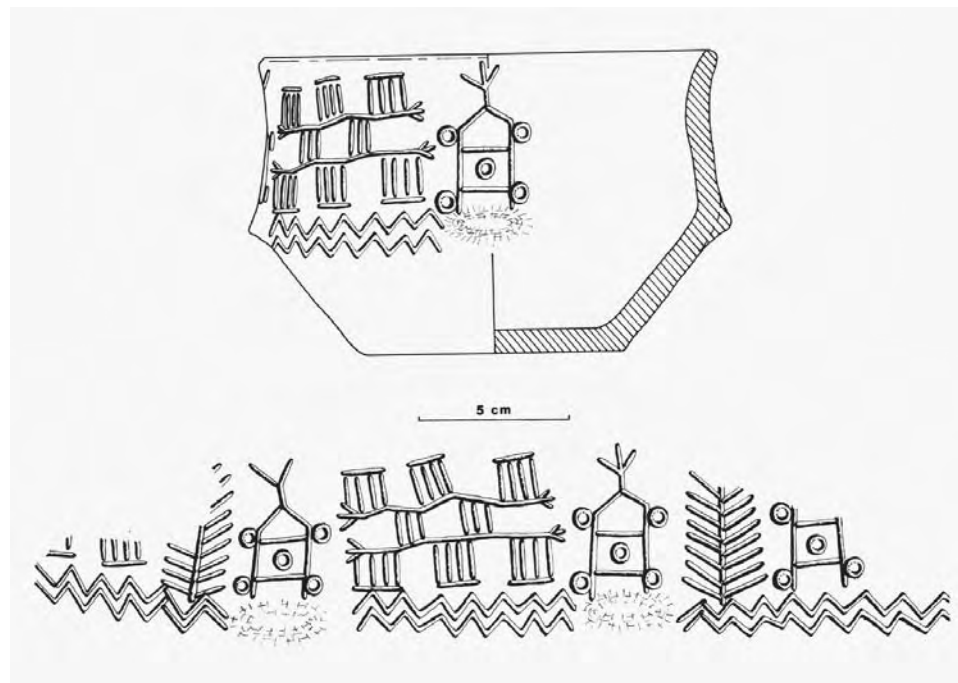


Fig. 1. Funnel Beaker vessel with a wagon motif, Bronocice, southeast Poland. COURTESY OF SARUNAS MILISAUSKAS. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

later, the melted metal was cast into various forms, such as axes with shaft holes.

SETTLEMENT

Lengyel, Rössen, and Funnel Beaker settlement organization included large and small sites. Unlike those of the preceding Early Neolithic period, Lengyel settlements more frequently were located at higher elevations in Hungary, Slovakia, and the Czech Republic. Settlement systems in north-central Poland consisted of large residential sites with smaller satellite sites. Large Lengyel settlements, such as Zengövarkony in Hungary, Svodin and Žlkovce in Slovakia, Těšetice-Kyjovice in Moravia, and Friebritz and Falkenstein in Austria, range in size from 20 to 30 hectares. Smaller sites had areas of several hectares, for example, Nowa Huta in Poland. The Lengyel and Rössen peoples built trapezoidal longhouses and also rectangular structures. Longhouses were found at the Lengyel sites of Brześć Kujawski and Oślonki in Poland, Jelšovce in Slovakia, Postoloprty in the Czech Republic, and the Rössen site of Inden I in Germany. At Brześć Kujawski approximately fifty houses were excavated.

The trapezoidal Lengyel houses range in length from 15 to 40 meters and in width from 6 to 10 meters. Longhouse construction and other domestic needs, such as firewood, required large quantities of wood.

Tiszapolgár culture (4500–4000 B.C.) sites typically are small, 0.5–1.0 hectares. The houses are likewise small, 5–6 meters in length. There is variation, however, in Funnel Beaker settlement patterns in the loess lands of central Europe and on the North European Plain. In southeastern Poland and northwestern Ukraine, small, medium, and large Funnel Beaker sites are found. Some Funnel Beaker settlements, such as Bronocice in Poland, grew in size and complexity. The large sites located at high elevations yield a great variety of archaeological materials and usually are spaced several kilometers from one another. It is possible that they politically dominated the smaller sites in the region. Funnel Beaker house sizes vary. In central Europe we find both large and small rectangular houses constructed of a framework of posts with mud-daubed walls.

Around 3500–3000 B.C. most large settlements disappeared in central Europe. Some archaeologists

suggest that war and incursions of pastoralists from eastern Europe contributed to the collapse of large settlements, although local developments, such as ecological changes, also have been proposed. There is very little domestic architectural data from Globular Amphora, Corded Ware, and Bell Beaker sites, in contrast to the wealth of such information from Lengyel and Rössen sites. Most of our information about these cultures comes from burials. Seasonal Globular Amphora settlements were 0.1–0.5 hectares in area, whereas the rare permanent settlements had areas of 1.0 hectare or more and contained a few small square or trapezoidal houses, 10–55 square meters in area.

With the appearance of the Corded Ware culture (2900–2400 B.C.), mound burials started to dominate the landscape, and seasonal camps and rare permanent settlements are also found. Remains of rectangular wooden houses have been discovered in the Bay Coast (Haffküstenkulyur or Rzucewo) Group of the Corded Ware culture along the east Baltic coast, but for other groups we have very poor evidence for any structures. Archaeologists have long speculated about Globular Amphora and Corded Ware identities, using the stylistic attributes of pottery and stone tools to distinguish language and ethnic groups. Some archaeologists have equated these cultures with Indo-European-speaking peoples. Since cultural traits such as burial mounds, cord-ornamented pottery, and battle-axes occur in both the Corded Ware and the Pit Grave (Yamnaya) cultures, some archaeologists believe that the Corded Ware peoples were immigrant descendants from Pit Grave populations in southern Russia and Ukraine.

ECONOMY

Lengyel, Rössen, and Funnel Beaker peoples continued to practice a mixed farming economy based on cereals and domestic animals. More upland areas in the loess regions of central Europe were exploited for farming. Wheat was the most important cereal in the diet of Lengyel and Rössen populations, but garden plants, such as lentils and field peas, also were cultivated. The major domestic animals were cattle, pigs, and sheep and goats, but cattle predominate at most sites. People also kept domesticated dogs, and remains of domesticated horses occur after 4000 B.C. Fishing, hunting, and the collecting

of wild plants, seeds, and nuts also were practiced. Wild plants were used for food, medicine, and basket making. At some Lengyel sites the bones of wild animals make up 50–60 percent of the faunal sample.

Such simple agriculture must have had its good and bad years, and in the latter years hunting and gathering may have meant the difference between survival and starvation. Wild game supplied the Late Neolithic people with meat as well as raw materials for tools, clothing, and ornaments. It is difficult to demonstrate the role that hunting played in gender and social relations. Possibly, men hunted large animals, such as aurochs, while both sexes and children hunted or snared small game and birds. The killing of aurochs gave the hunter greater prestige than the killing of roe deer.

The importance of herding animals was greater in the economies of the Globular Amphora, Baden, and Corded Ware cultures. Because archaeologists have found only a little settlement data at Globular Amphora and Corded Ware sites, they speculate that these cultures, possibly nomadic, depended chiefly on herds of domesticated animals. However, it is difficult to establish such pastoralism on the basis of archaeological finds. Globular Amphora and Corded Ware burials often contain the remains of domesticated animals, such as cattle and pigs. Since pigs are not herded animals, the high frequency of their finds in the Globular Amphora burials suggests a nonpastoral economy, assuming such frequencies reasonably reflect their day-to-day subsistence significance.

By 4000 B.C. large areas of central Europe had been cleared of forests. In some areas forest steppe environments developed, which may have encouraged more widespread herding of domestic animals. In central Europe cattle and sheep could have been pastured in the spring, summer, and fall, but they would have been stalled and fed during the winter. It is possible that seasonal movement of herds was practiced. Regional Corded Ware groups differed in their economic adaptations. In Switzerland they were mainly agriculturists, whereas along the eastern Baltic coast they depended heavily on seal hunting. In southern Poland they were transhumant herders.

TRADE

There was extensive exchange of raw materials, manufactured items, and ideas between various Late Neolithic communities. Not all communities were self-sufficient in raw materials, such as flint. For example, in central Europe, Jurassic flint from the Kraków area in Poland, flint from the vicinity of Rügen in Germany, banded flint from the Krzemionki Opatowskie region in Poland, and Świeciechów flint from the Annopol area in Poland were exchanged between the Funnel Beaker settlements. These flint varieties traveled hundreds of kilometers from their geological sources. Lengyel communities traded flint, stone, copper, shells, obsidian, and salt in briquettes, weighing 0.5–1.0 kilograms. Thus, trade allowed communities to obtain products that were not available locally.

Rivers likely were important as trade routes, since land travel was difficult. Copper ornaments, beads, spirals, and disks occur in Lengyel burials. Copper artifacts found in north-central Poland came from sources at least 500 kilometers away in the Carpathians. Such traded artifacts had little utilitarian purpose, but they may have displayed and justified the wealth or social standing of some individuals. Individuals and families did not accumulate them for generations; instead, many were deposited in burials.

FLINT MINING AND SALT EXPLOITATION

The human body requires salt, and it is assumed that the wild meat diets of Palaeolithic and Mesolithic groups supplied sufficient amounts. Reliance by Neolithic farmers on cereals with low salt content made it necessary to add salt to food. The earliest known exploitation of salt was carried out by the Lengyel people, who took it from springs, such as the ones in the Wieliczka region of southeastern Poland. The evidence consists of salt-making vessels and the results of chemical analyses of vessels for traces of salt. In the Saale valley of eastern Germany, some Late Neolithic sites have yielded vessels used in salt making.

The demand for flint products, such as axes for woodworking, warfare, and ritual activities, led to extensive mining of good flint sources, such as Kleinhems in Germany, Mauer in Austria, and Krzemionki Opatowskie in Poland. The latter site was

one of the largest mines, producing the banded flint that Funnel Beaker peoples were the first to utilize. The peak period of flint mining here occurred during the Globular Amphora occupation. Approximately a thousand shafts, 4–11 meters deep, extended through an area 4 kilometers long by 30–120 meters wide. Mining tools, such as antler picks and stone hammers, were found in this area. Thousands of flint axes and chisels were produced here. The frequent occurrence of banded flint axes in Globular Amphora burials indicates not only their utilitarian application but also their importance as symbols in the belief system and their value as goods in the social system. Banded flint axes were distributed by exchange as far away as 600 kilometers from Krzemionki Opatowskie.

WARFARE

Evidence for Late Neolithic warfare includes such artifacts as arrowheads and battle-axes, skeletal material bearing signs of inflicted wounds, and fortified settlements. There is more evidence for conflict during this period, since V-section ditches and palisades surrounded numerous settlements, although not all such enclosures were constructed only for defense purposes. Many were multifunctional; they also were used for rituals and ceremonials as well as the keeping of domestic animals. Some sites, such as the one at Makrotrasy in the Czech Republic, may have had astronomical significance.

The construction of enclosures indicates that households and communities cooperated in communal labor. Ditches at Lengyel sites, such as Hluboké Mašůvky in the Czech Republic, Žilkovce in Slovakia, and Falkenstein and Wetzleindorf in Austria, enclosed large areas, 5–12 hectares. In Slovakia and the Czech Republic most fortifications were located within settlements. The extremely large enclosed area, 30 hectares, at Svodin in Slovakia, contained two fortifications belonging to different occupations, while the houses were outside the enclosure.

Burial data suggest that it was men who were involved in fighting. Antler axes and arrowheads, which could have been used as weapons, usually are associated with men's burials, as at Brześć Kujawski in Poland. The hypothesized herding economy of the Corded Ware culture (2900–2400 B.C.) and the presence of battle-axes at their sites are interpreted

as evidence for warfare. Herded animals are a mobile resource, and they would have been relatively easy to steal. Cattle raiding may have caused a warlike value system to develop at this time.

MORTUARY DATA

The Late Neolithic burial patterns varied widely. The Lengyel, Rössen, and Tiszapolgár peoples buried their dead in cemeteries or in and around their settlements. Lengyel cemeteries were found at Zengővárkony in Hungary, Svodin in Slovakia, and Aszód in Hungary. At Svodin 161 graves were excavated. In other regions, such as Kujavia in Poland, Lengyel burials containing men, women, and children were dispersed within settlements. Ancestors continued to live symbolically in the same settlement, never separated from the living. Most of the dead were buried in flexed positions in pits, with the skeleton oriented east-west, and most graves held a single person. When double burials are found they usually contain a woman and a child. Cremations are rare.

The Funnel Beaker peoples practiced different burial rites. Impressive tombs occur in northern Germany and northern Poland, reminding one of the megalithic tradition. Funnel Beaker burial mounds of the Kujavian type in northern Poland were constructed of stone and earth, with a trapezoidal ground plan and range of 25–150 meters in length, 4–10 meters in width at the broader end, and 3–5 meters in width at the narrower end. Large stones were placed around the perimeter of these mounds, which usually held one or two people. Men and women typically received different mortuary treatment. At the Tiszapolgár cemetery men were buried with flint tools, weapons, and copper tools, and their burials were richer than those of women were. Pottery was associated mainly with women.

There is considerable variation in Globular Amphora burial practices. The most characteristic burials are stone cist graves, 2.5–6.0 meters long and 1.0–2.0 meters wide, dug into the ground with mounds of stone and earth erected over them. There also are graves without stone construction and some lined with wood. In northern Germany existing Funnel Beaker megalithic structures frequently were used for burials. The dead were buried in a contracted position, generally no more than five

people to one grave. Completely articulated skeletons are rare; disarticulated individuals are common. It may be that the recently deceased were placed in trees or on scaffolds, and only when the flesh had been removed or had decayed were they interred. The most common grave goods are pottery vessels, flint axes, and animal remains, especially the lower jaws of wild or domesticated pigs.

Corded Ware mortuary sites include mounds and flat (moundless) graves. Some of the flat graves originally may have had mounds that were subsequently destroyed by historic farming activity. A pit would have been dug into the ground and a mound of dirt piled above it. This mound most frequently contained a single skeleton in a contracted position. The builders of Corded Ware mounds emphasized their location in the landscape by selecting the highest local elevations. They presumably stood as symbols of death rituals for many years. Mounds also could have symbolized a community's claim to a landscape or the higher social status of the persons interred in them.

HEALTH AND PALAEOPATHOLOGY

Palaeopathological studies of human skeletons have supplied information about diseases, anomalies, and degenerative processes. At the Tiszapolgár cemetery in Hungary, some skeletons had the following diseases, pathological conditions, and injuries: paralysis of arms, deformation of the skull, osteoporosis, neurosis of the spinal cord, fractures of the spine, head wounds, brain tumors, stiff spine, and arthritis. Among the Tiszapolgár people many disabled or diseased adults survived only through the help of their fellows. Life expectancy of the Tiszapolgár people was roughly thirty years. Of the fifty-four people assigned to the early phase at the Tiszapolgár cemetery, ten had an estimated age of fifty or more; thus a person had an 18.5 percent chance of surviving to age fifty. Half of the children died by the age of twelve. The length of extended adult skeletons averaged 170 centimeters for males and 160 centimeters for females, but the stature of living individuals probably was several centimeters greater.

RITUAL

Most information about ritual behavior is derived from human and animal figurines, anthropomorphic and zoomorphic pottery, burials, and struc-

tures that could have served sacred purposes. All Late Neolithic cultures performed various burial rituals. Fired clay figurines, especially of women, are often considered to have been used in rituals. There are many interpretations of figurines. They have been considered educational aids, representations of people or ancestral figures, dolls, or vehicles of healing and magical powers. Human and animal figurines are not numerous in north-central Europe; they are more prevalent in southern regions, such as Hungary.

There are two types of early Lengyel vessels that could have been used in rituals. The first depicted animals and humans figuratively; the second incorporated representations of body parts, such as the nose, on the outer surface of the vessel. Lengyel sites known as rondels, that is, circular ditched enclosures with openings at four opposing points, probably were used for ceremonials. Most information on Globular Amphora and Corded Ware ritual comes from burials. The numerous pig bones in Globular Amphora burials suggest that animals played an important role in mortuary rituals or feasts. Cattle burials also are associated with the Globular Amphora and Baden cultures. These burials may reflect the importance of domestic animals in economy and rituals and as symbols of wealth and social prestige. The drinking of alcoholic beverages, such as beer and mead (produced by fermenting honey and water), probably occurred during ritual activities. Baden pottery types, represented in cups, beakers, and other vessels with handles, reflect the increasing diversity of beverages consumed.

See also **Long Barrow Cemeteries in Neolithic Europe** (vol. 1, part 3); **Brześć Kujawski** (vol. 1, part 4); **Rondels of the Carpathians** (vol. 1, part 4); **Corded Ware from East to West** (vol. 1, part 4).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Bakker, Jan Albert, Janusz Kruk, Albert E. Lanting, and Sarunas Milisauskas. "The Earliest Evidence of Wheeled Vehicles in Europe and the Near East." *Antiquity* 73, no. 282 (1999): 778–790.
- Bognár-Kutzián, Ida. *The Copper Age Cemetery of Tiszapolgár-Basatanya*. Budapest, Hungary: Hungarian Academy of Sciences, 1963.
- Bogucki, Peter I. *Forest Farmers and Stockherders: Early Agriculture and Its Consequences in North-Central Europe*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1988.
- Gimbutas, Marija. *The Civilization of the Goddess: The World of Old Europe*. San Francisco: Harper, 1991.

- Grygiel, Ryszard, and Peter Bogucki. "Early Farmers in North-Central Europe: 1989–1994 Excavations at Oslonki." *Journal of Field Archaeology* 24, no. 2 (1997): 161–178.
- Hodder, Ian. *The Domestication of Europe: Structure and Contingency in Neolithic Societies*. Oxford: Blackwell, 1990.
- Kempisty, Andrew, and Piotr Włodarczak. *Cemetery of the Corded Ware Culture at Żerniki Górne*. Translated by Andrzej Lewandowski. Warsaw, Poland: University of Warsaw, 2000.
- Kruk, Janusz. *The Neolithic Settlement of Southern Poland*. Edited by J. M. Howell and N. J. Starling. Translated by M. Hejwowska. Oxford: BAR International Series, no. 93. Oxford: British Archaeological Reports, 1980.
- Midgley, Magdalena S. *TRB Culture: The First Farmers of the North European Plain*. Edinburgh: Edinburgh University Press, 1992.
- Milisauskas, Sarunas, ed. *European Prehistory: A Survey*. New York: Kluwer Academic/Plenum Publishers, 2002.
- Milisauskas, Sarunas, and Janusz Kruk. "Archaeological Investigations on Neolithic and Bronze Age Sites in Southeastern Poland." In *Case Studies in European Prehistory*. Edited by Peter Bogucki, pp. 63–94. Boca Raton, Florida: CRC Press, 1993.
- Pavúk, Juraj. "Lengyel-Culture Fortified Settlements in Slovakia." *Antiquity* 65, no. 247 (1991): 348–357.
- Sherratt, Andrew. *Economy and Society in Prehistoric Europe: Changing Perspectives*. Princeton, N.J.: Princeton University Press, 1997.
- Whittle, Alasdair. *Europe in the Neolithic: The Creation of New Worlds*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1996.

SARUNAS MILISAUSKAS

BRZEŚĆ KUJAWSKI

Brześć Kujawski (pronounced "brzheshch koo-YAV-sky") is one of several large Neolithic settlements that flourished between about 4500 and 4000 B.C. on the lowlands of north-central Poland. The settlements are found primarily in the region known as Kujavia located to the west of the Vistula River, an area of low, rolling terrain with many streams, lakes, and marshes. Brześć Kujawski and similar sites are important because they represent the first large agricultural settlements on the lowlands of northern Europe and for their presence on the frontier between farming societies to the south and the foraging peoples to the north.

Agriculture had come to Kujavia a thousand years earlier, as indicated by the appearance of settlements of the Linear Pottery culture, but it developed very slowly as the farmers adjusted to the new terrain and soils. The Linear Pottery settlements existed as small frontier outposts among the indigenous Mesolithic hunter-gatherers. After several centuries, large Neolithic settlements sprang up at Brześć Kujawski, Osłonki, Krusza Zamkowa, and several other locations about 4500 B.C. They clearly descended from Linear Pottery antecedents, but they belonged to a later Neolithic group known as the Lengyel culture, named after a site in Hungary. Even within the Lengyel culture, however, Brześć Kujawski and its neighbors are distinctive and are known as the “Brześć Kujawski Group.”

The Neolithic settlement at Brześć Kujawski was discovered in 1933 by farmers digging gravel from deposits beneath their fields on a low ridge of land bordering Lake Smętowo. While digging, they found artifacts and skeletons. Luckily, an archaeologist named Konrad Jażdżewski (1908–1985) was working nearby, and when he learned of these discoveries he came to investigate. He immediately recognized that this was potentially an important find and began excavations. Over the next six years, he cleared the topsoil from more than 10,000 square meters, exposing one of the largest Neolithic settlements discovered before World War II.

Jażdżewski noticed that one of the most apparent Lengyel features at Brześć Kujawski was the long narrow trenches dug into the clay and gravel subsoil, sometimes reaching a meter or more below the surface. These trenches formed trapezoidal outlines 20 to 30 meters long, 5 to 6 meters wide at one end and 2 to 3 meters at the other. Clearly, these were structures of some sort because there were indications that the trenches had held upright posts. Among these trapezoidal enclosures were large pits with very irregular bottoms dug into the clay subsoil.

At the time, the prevailing belief was that Neolithic people lived in the pits, which were thought to have been roofed over with flimsy shelters. But what were the trapezoidal post structures? Archaeologists who had recently excavated Linear Pottery post structures at Köln-Lindenthal in Germany had proposed that they might have been barns or granaries. They could not imagine people living in them.

But one of Jażdżewski’s workers remarked that if he had to live in one of the muddy clay pits, he would break his legs slipping around in it. Jażdżewski concluded that the Lengyel timber structures at Brześć Kujawski really were Neolithic houses and that the pits served some other purpose.

Eventually this view prevailed, and archaeologists now know that the big pits in fact were the places where clay was dug for plastering the walls of houses built with timber posts set into foundation trenches. At Brześć Kujawski, more than fifty such houses have been found, both during Jażdżewski’s excavations in the 1930s and during further excavations by Ryszard Grygiel and Peter Bogucki in the 1970s and 1980s. They are oriented along an axis running northwest-southeast, with the wide end toward the southeast. The reason for this orientation of the houses or for their trapezoidal shape is not clear. Many of their outlines overlap, indicating that they were built and rebuilt at different times. Burned clay plaster in the filling of the foundation trenches indicates that a number of the houses were destroyed by fire. The nearby clay pits were filled up with debris, animal bones, charred seeds, and artifacts like broken pieces of pottery. Other pits were used for storage or as the locations of workshops (fig. 1).

Scattered among the houses at Brześć Kujawski are also nearly sixty graves. Most graves contain skeletons that are in a crouched position with their arms drawn up to the chest. Males always lie on their right side and the females on their left, with their heads pointing toward the south or southeast. Archaeologists do not know the reason for this practice, but clearly it reflected an important fundamental belief. Accompanying the skeletons are artifacts. Many of the male graves have flint blades or axes made from large deer antlers, whereas female graves often contain copper ornaments, shell beads, and bone arm-rings.

The copper artifacts found at Brześć Kujawski and similar sites in Kujavia represent the earliest known use of copper in this part of Europe, around 4400 B.C. Although the source of the copper has not yet been established, it was probably either in the Alps or in the Balkans, hundreds of kilometers away. It was smelted and then hammered into ribbon, not cast. From the copper ribbon, metalworkers made beads, pendants, and head ornaments.

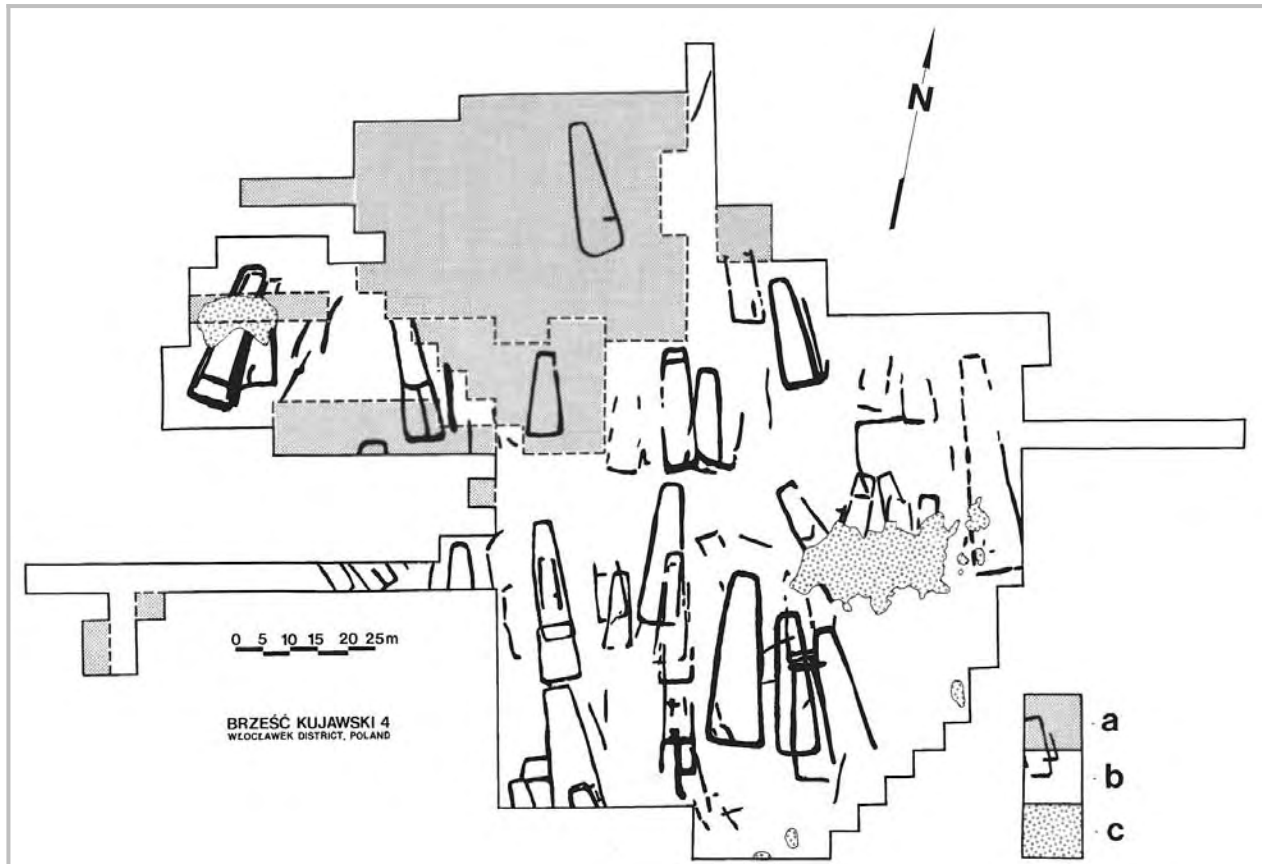


Fig. 1. Plan of excavated area at Brześć Kujawski, site 4, showing outlines of Neolithic longhouses. A = areas excavated, 1976–1984; B = areas excavated, 1933–1939; C = areas disturbed by gravel digging. COURTESY OF PETER BOGUCKI. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

Some burials had lavish displays of copper, whereas others had none (fig. 2). After a short time, the copper supply was cut off, and the latest burials at Brześć Kujawski do not contain such ornaments.

The inhabitants of Brześć Kujawski and its neighboring settlements also acquired flint from sources more than 200 kilometers away in southern Poland. When they really needed a sharp edge they used “chocolate” flint (with a deep brown color) and Jurassic flint from these distant quarries. In addition, they made stone axes by grinding local stones into shape. Antler axes were made by breaking off the base of a thick beam of red deer antler, then grinding it to make an edge. Experiments done in Denmark indicate that such antler axes could have been used for cutting soft wood. It is also possible that they were used in the killing and butchering of livestock.

The rubbish deposits at Brześć Kujawski have yielded the bones of domestic cattle, sheep, goats, and pigs, along with the remains of wild animals like red deer, roe deer, wild horses, and beavers. Most of the bones belong to domestic livestock, while the wild animals appear to have been hunted only occasionally. The beavers were caught for their pelts. In addition, archaeologists have recovered the bones from fish like perch and pike, several types of waterfowl, and the shells of turtles. Carbonized grain is mostly emmer wheat.

About 10 kilometers west of Brześć Kujawski is the settlement of Osłonki (pronounced os-WON-key), excavated by Ryszard Grygiel and Peter Bogucki in 1989–1994. Like Brześć Kujawski, Osłonki is located on a low crest of land surrounded on three sides by water. In addition to thirty longhouses and eighty rich graves like those at Brześć



Fig. 2. Neolithic burials at Brześć Kujawski showing orientation of skeletons with heads toward the south-southeast. The larger skeleton of the male is lying on its right side, females on their left sides. COURTESY OF PETER BOGUCKI. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

Kujawski, the excavators found traces of a substantial fortification ditch that protected the settlement on its side where there was not a natural water barrier. At the moment, no similar earthwork is known from a site of the Brześć Kujawski Group. Across a lake basin from Osłonki is another Neolithic settlement at Miechowice with additional graves and longhouses.

On the basis of the discoveries at the settlements of the Brześć Kujawski Group, researchers have been able to reconstruct the Neolithic society that flourished in this part of the North European Plain between 4500 and 4000 B.C. Each longhouse was occupied by a household whose members farmed, kept livestock, and hunted when the opportunity presented itself. The deceased inhabitants of each household were buried near the house, so it is clear that a sense of continuity across generations was important. Some households were able to acquire copper and flint from distant sources, thus

demonstrating success in conducting their affairs, but such prestige was fleeting. The consistent orientation of the bodies in the graves reflects deeply held common values.

In the end, the intensive pattern of land use for farming, herding, and hunting that supported settlements like Brześć Kujawski and Osłonki was not sustainable, and these sites were abandoned. Instead of concentrations of houses occupied for a long period of time, subsequent inhabitants of this region spread themselves more widely across the landscape in shorter-lived settlements. Yet echoes of the Brześć Kujawski longhouses can be seen in the trapezoidal shape of the Kujavian long barrows of the Funnel Beaker culture built between 3900 and 3400 B.C.

See also **First Farmers of Central Europe** (vol. 1, part 3); **Long Barrow Cemeteries in Neolithic Europe** (vol. 1, part 3); **Late Neolithic/Copper Age Central Europe** (vol. 1, part 4); **Consequences of Farming in Southern Scandinavia** (vol. 1, part 4).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Bogucki, Peter. "A Neolithic Tribal Society in Northern Poland." In *The Archaeology of Tribal Societies*. Edited by William A. Parkinson, pp. 372–383. Ann Arbor, Mich.: International Monographs in Prehistory, 2003.
- Bogucki, Peter, and Ryszard Grygiel. "Neolithic Sites in the Polish Lowlands: Research at Brześć Kujawski, 1933–1984." In *Case Studies in European Prehistory*. Edited by Peter Bogucki, pp. 147–180. Boca Raton, Fla.: CRC Press, 1993.
- . "Early Farmers of the North European Plain." *Scientific American* 248, no. 4 (1983): 96–104.

PETER BOGUCKI

RONDELS OF THE CARPATHIANS

The rondels—earthworks comprising very formal, circular arrangements of banks, ditches, and timber palisades—remain the most enigmatic structures of the central European Neolithic. The first such enclosure was discovered at Kropy, in Bohemia, in 1885 but it was not until the late 1970s, mainly through excavations in Moravia and Slovakia, that rondels were recognized as an important class of Middle Neolithic site. Most of these sites are known from aerial reconnaissance, with only a handful having been excavated. Their limited distribution, a relatively narrow horizon of use, and rather enigmatic evidence about their function all ensure that the rondels continue to be the subject of heated debate.

The distribution of the rondels is one of their curious features; they are found in a relatively small area of central Europe, from Bavaria in the west to Slovakia in the east, with just a few outliers known in Hungary. Apart from several Bavarian examples, most of the rondels lie to the north of that very important prehistoric communication route, the River Danube.

However, this known distribution is changing dramatically. The political changes of the late 1980s in central Europe have permitted aerial reconnaissance of previously unexplored areas. An intensive flying program in Saxony, for example, has identified many new rondels, extending their distribution farther to the north; many more sites may well come to light in the future.

Examples excavated by the end of the twentieth century suggested that rondels were built and

used for a very short period. They are associated with the Late *Stichbandkeramik* IVa–Lengyel Ia–Oberlauterbach cultural groups. The available radiocarbon dates fall between 4800 and 4500 B.C., with the majority centering on 4700 B.C. Thus the phenomenon seems to have had a very brief existence, lasting perhaps barely more than a century and a half and involving only a few generations.

The ditches are arranged concentrically and vary in number from one to five (fig. 1). In the classic form there are four opposed narrow entrances that tend to be oriented on the cardinal points. Often there are concentric timber palisades within, or occasionally outside, the ditches, which respect the arrangement of other features. It is this very formal circular layout that, although differing in detail from one site to the next, nevertheless seems to adhere to a preconceived overall plan and thus distinguishes the rondels from other earlier and later Neolithic enclosures.

The ditches were V-shaped in section, up to 5 meters deep and 8 meters wide. Sometimes they were re-cut: segments of ditches near the entrances at Künzing-Unternberg, in Bavaria, were renewed four times (on four separate occasions). But generally the ditches were filled up quickly, with the profiles displaying characteristic thin bands of dark and light soil. The poverty of cultural materials further confirms that the ditches stood open for only a brief time.

The ditch circuit usually has four openings allowing access to the interior. Sometimes the entrances are formalized by the turning of the ditch terminals outward (Svodín and Bučany in Slovakia, Bylany in Bohemia) or inward (Hornsburg 3 in Austria); occasionally the terminals join the outer and the inner ditch together (Kothingeichendorf and Künzing-Unternberg in Bavaria or Friebritz 2 in Austria). They may be narrowed further by means of palisades, creating a clearly focused passageway to the interior. The timber palisades, usually one or two in number, follow the circular shape defined by the ditches, delimiting a similar but smaller area inside. Palisades have also been encountered outside the ditches (Těšetice-Kyjovice in Moravia).

Few features in the interior of the rondels can be associated with their use. The traces of a small rectangular building at Bučany, Slovakia, are quite

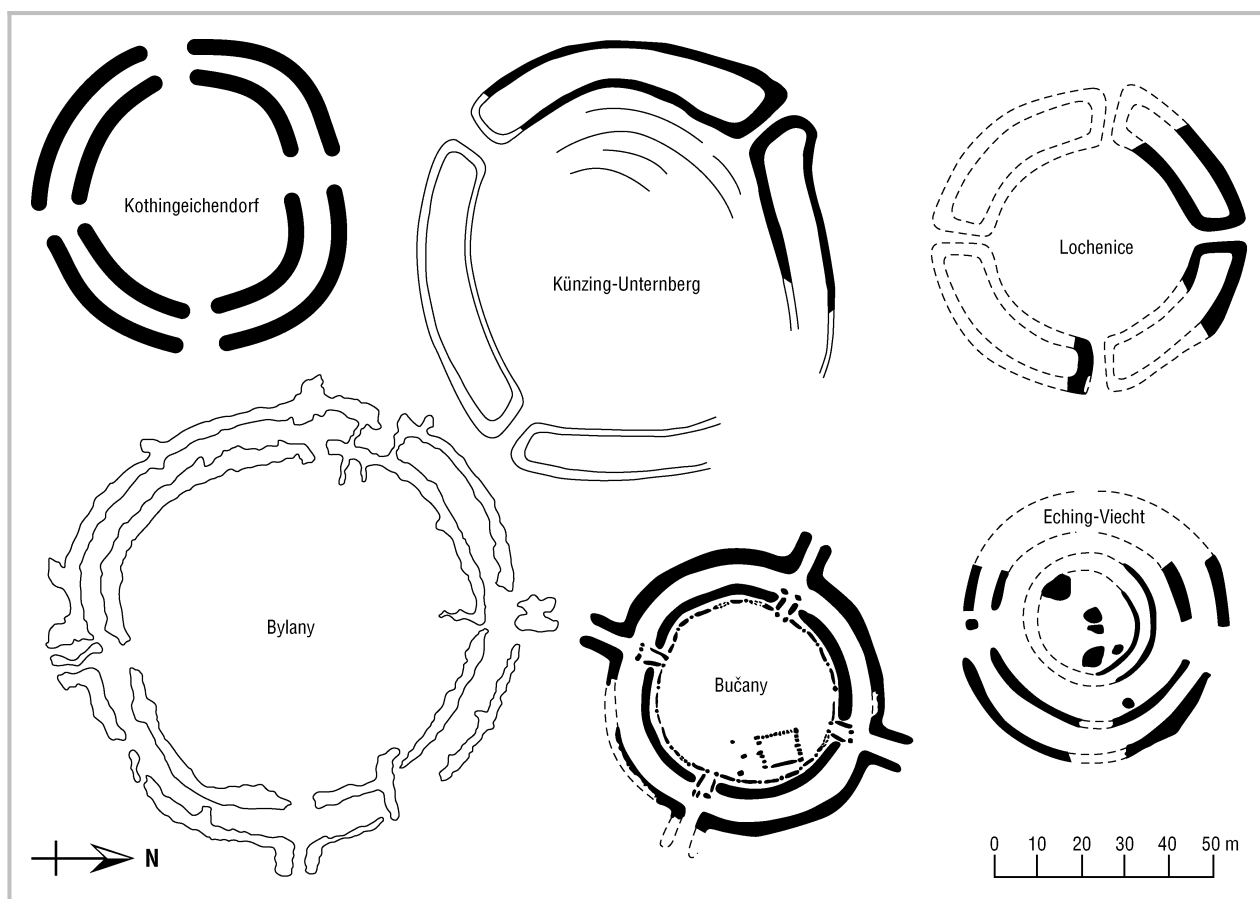


Fig. 1. Plans of rondels from the Middle and Upper Danube area. ADAPTED FROM PODBORSKÝ 1988.

exceptional. At Bylany, Bohemia, there were several carefully constructed pits, which may represent graves or places of special offering. Similar features were found at Těšetice-Kyjovice, Moravia, where one pit contained fragments of painted pottery and a human skull. Generally, however, the interiors of the rondels seem to be free of other contemporary structures.

Attempts at classification of the rondels have included the number of ditches (single-, double-, and multiple-ditched enclosure), the geometry of the layout (from circular to flattened), and the number and construction of entrances. The size seems to be an important factor as it may not only indicate the number of people allowed into the interior but, more significantly, reflect the manpower that communities could muster in order to carry out the construction.

Some archaeologists have argued that rondels are defensive in nature and that the ditches and pali-

sades should be seen as features of fortification; the Slovakian rondels, for example, have been interpreted as fortified settlements by J. Pavúk. But although many rondel enclosures were, indeed, located in areas that were settled, there is no evidence of any contemporary settlement within the enclosures themselves. The possible presence of one building inside the Bučany rondel is hardly sufficient to interpret it as a defensive settlement. Similarly, settlement traces to the outside of the enclosing ditches (at Svodín in Slovakia, Těšetice-Kyjovice in Moravia, and, at a somewhat greater distance, at Bylany in Bohemia) are not suggestive of defenses.

Effectively, there is little archaeological evidence that could indicate the rondels' function. The purpose of digging ditches and piling up earthen banks to enclose a small area of the open landscape may appear difficult to comprehend to the modern mind. It is perhaps for this reason that most scholars tend to lean toward interpretations involving cult

and ritual activities. That these sites do not appear to have been maintained after their initial construction, but rather were allowed to become ruined, suggests that it was the construction rather than any prolonged activities in the interior that may have been of primary importance. Indeed, on a number of sites, a new rondel was built either on the same spot (Svodín) or very close by (Bylany), as if to emphasize the importance of engaging in further construction.

The short duration of this phenomenon—a century and a half at the most—as well as its clearly limited cultural associations suggest that the creation of the rondels was a response to the very specific needs faced at that time by the communities within the Carpathian Basin. Such needs could have been economic, social, political, or possibly even environmental, or a combination of all these factors. Within the cult and ceremonial sphere, arguments range from some sort of environmental catastrophe that necessitated the monitoring of meteorological and astronomical events, via the creation of communal centers devoted to ceremonies of thanksgiving for prosperous societies, to an increased need for previously dispersed communities to come together, at least for communal and ritual purposes.

See also *Bylany* (vol. 1, part 3).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Midgley, M. S., I. Pavlů, J. Rulf, and M. Zápotocká. "Fortified Settlements or Ceremonial Sites: New Evidence from Bylany, Czechoslovakia." *Antiquity* 67 (1993): 91–96.
- Pavlů, I., J. Rulf, and M. Zápotocká. "Bylany Rondel. Model of the Neolithic Site." In *Památky archeologické: Supplementum* 3 (1995) 9–123.
- Pavúk, J. "Lengyel-Culture Fortified Settlements in Slovakia." *Antiquity* 65 (1991): 348–357.
- Petrasch, J. "Mittelneolithische Kreisgrabenanlagen in Mitteleuropa." *Bericht der Römisch-Germanischen Kommission* 71 (1990): 407–564.
- Podborský, Vladimír. *Těšetice-Kyjovice 4: Rondel osady lidu s moravskou malovanou keramikou* [Těšetice-Kyjovice 4: Rondel from a settlement of the Moravian painted pottery culture]. Brno, Czech Republic: Univerzita Jana Evangelisty, 1988.
- Trnka, Gerhard. *Studien zu mittelneolithischen Kreisgrabenanlagen*. Mitteilungen der prähistorischen Kommission der österreichischen, no. 26. Vienna: Akademie der Wissenschaften, 1991.

MAGDALENA S. MIDGLEY



NEOLITHIC LAKE DWELLINGS IN THE ALPINE REGION

FOLLOWED BY FEATURE ESSAYS ON:

<i>The Iceman</i>	392
<i>Arbon-Bleiche 3</i>	395

Neolithic lake dwellings of circum-alpine central Europe are found in Switzerland and southern Germany (mostly around Lake Constance), Bavaria, northeastern France, northern Italy, western Austria, Slovenia, Croatia, Albania, and Greece. These Neolithic and Bronze Age settlements, with their spectacularly preserved wooden and organic objects lying beneath the water table, are found near modern lakeshores or in peaty areas. Most of these Neolithic settlement layers are located in the Swiss midlands between the Jura mountain range and the Alps on the major lakes. Intensive highway and railroad construction between 1960 and 2000 in Switzerland, often along lakeshores or crossing peaty ground, brought to light many prehistoric settlements. Continuous development projects in big cities like Zurich, located on lakes, also resulted in the discovery of new lake dwelling sites.

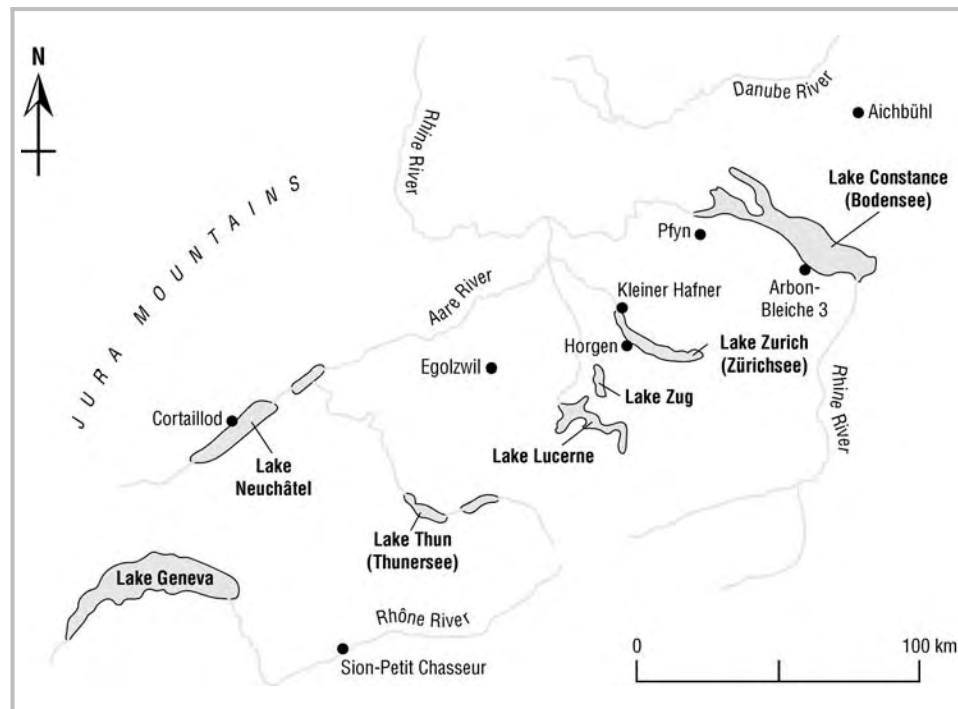
What did these lake dwellings look like? Archaeologists can find an answer to this question by looking at modern waterside dwellings in Southeast Asia and West Africa, but these villages normally are situated along riverbanks, not by lakes. Most such houses are constructed on high wooden posts because of seasonal variations in river levels. This might be one of several reasons that prehistoric lake dwellings sometimes were built above the ground, although

ground-level houses also existed. Each site is different, however, and unstable ground also might explain the use of these long posts to support dwellings.

DISTRIBUTION AND DATING

In Switzerland many sites came to light around the bigger lakes, among them, Lake Neuchâtel, Lac du Biemme, Lake Zurich, Lake Zug, and Lake Constance. Lakeshore settlements are less common around Lake Geneva. The reasons are not known, but differences in topography and environment as well as less survey work may be possible explanations. There also are lake dwellings around smaller lakes and in or near peat bogs.

The distribution of lake dwellings is determined largely by preservation, modern construction activities, and the intensity of survey work. Climatic conditions, prehistoric human impact, and the topographic situation are chiefly responsible for how eroded the sites are by lake action or the flow of rivers into the lakes. Because lake dwelling layers lie below the water table, there is no oxygen in the layers. Aerobic bacteria, which are responsible for decay, are thus scarce, and organic materials—such as fruits, seeds, leaves, wood, and even fragments of



Selected Neolithic lake dwellings in the Swiss Alpine region.

textiles—frequently are preserved. As with sites in dry sediments, animal bones, flint, or stone tools and ceramics also are present but in much better condition. Tools made from animal bones or from red deer antler, for example, are preserved with all their manufacture and use wear clearly visible (fig. 1).

Swiss Neolithic lake dwellings were built between 4300 B.C. and 2450 B.C. Because of differences in the conditions of preservation, certain time periods (e.g., 3800–3650 B.C.) are well documented with many sites, and other periods (e.g., 3600–3400 B.C. or 3370–3250 B.C.) have gaps, with no known sites, from several decades to more than 100 years. There probably were villages, but they were not preserved.

Owing to superb preservation and the fact that wood was the most widely used construction material, many wooden house construction elements, such as posts and planks, survive, allowing archaeologists to date the lake dwelling sites precisely. The dating method of dendrochronology exploits the fact that tree growth is influenced by unstable climatic conditions that change from year to year. Tree-ring thickness likewise varies every year. Dur-

ing the spring and summer of a year when the weather has been favorable, trees form a broad tree ring. In a year with unfavorable weather, trees form only a thin ring. The thickness of the tree rings can be measured, and thickness curves can be connected by comparison with sequences from trees of known date, starting with wood from a modern tree, continuing with a piece of wood from an old house, and ending with prehistoric wood (e.g., lake dwelling posts).

It is possible, in fact, to date oak in central Europe back as far as twelve thousand years. This method requires a piece of wood with a minimum of thirty tree rings and is most precise when the outermost tree ring is still present. With dendrochronological methods one can date the wood from lake dwellings to within a year or even a season (spring–summer or autumn–winter) of its cutting, even when settlements are 4,500–6,500 years old. Other dating methods, such as carbon 14 or typology, help researchers place these sites within a chronological context.

RESEARCH HISTORY

Written sources dating to the fifteenth century refer to the remains of old settlements in Swiss lakes.

Often the authors recognized the fields of posts when the water level of the lakes sank or the water was clear. Ferdinand Keller, president of the Antiquary Society in Zurich, examined many such finds, discovered by different Swiss lakesides during construction work. It was only in 1854, however, that he recognized that these wooden posts, animal bones, and other artifacts came from prehistoric settlements.

In the winter months of 1854 the water level in Lake Zurich was exceptionally low. People in the village of Obermeilen decided to build a wall to extend the land. Wooden posts, animal bones, and artifacts of stone, bone, and clay were unearthed. A local teacher, Johannes Aeppli, collected the finds and presented them to Keller, who realized that they must be from a prehistoric settlement. Keller first published these discoveries in a newspaper on 17 March 1854. The discoveries and their publication garnered worldwide interest. Subsequently, finds from these prehistoric settlements are in museum collections around the world.

In the following years there were many more excavations of lake dwellings. From analogy with ethnographic examples from Southeast Asia, Keller interpreted the fields of excavated posts as construction elements of house platforms. Today it is known that these fields are composed of posts from several settlement layers. Dendrochronological dating permits archaeologists to discover which posts belong together as individual houses. The findings from these wooden construction elements, along with various artifacts and plant and animal remains, have all been detailed. Ludwig Rütimeyer identified and published information concerning animal bones from several lake dwellings, and Oswald Heer did the same for plant remains. Even with what is known today, and despite the imprecise dating of the finds, both scientists published accurate identifications of these remains and interpreted them in stimulating ways. Thus began a long and venerable tradition of archaeozoological and archaeobotanical research in Switzerland.

EXCAVATIONS

The stratigraphy or “cultural layers” of lake dwelling settlements have a dark brown color that comes from the plant remains they contain and stains even the animal bones. If there are several cultural layers



Fig. 1. Antler axe in situ, 3384–3370 B.C. Arbon-Bleiche 3, Thurgau, Switzerland. AMT FÜR ARCHÄOLOGIE DES KANTONS THURGAU, FRAUENFELD, SWITZERLAND.

preserved at one site, they usually are separated by naturally deposited white lake sediments, the so-called lake marl. Stratigraphic profiles typically display mixed deposition, with dark brownish cultural layers and white natural layers. The lake marl was deposited when the lake levels rose and covered the villages by more than 1–2 meters.

Wooden posts or postholes where posts were removed can be seen in the cultural layers. Dendrochronological samples are taken from each extant post. When the dates and position of each post are determined, individual houses can be reconstructed from the confusing mass of posts. During excavation the location of each artifact is recorded, making it possible to reconstruct special activity or storage areas. The animal bones and normal kitchen and food refuse are collected by square meter or even smaller units, allowing archaeozoologists to detect

possible differences in diet between households. All botanical remains cannot be collected, so they are sampled. These soil samples are wet-sieved through varying mesh sizes to separate the remains into units of different size. These sub-samples contain botanical remains as well as bones from fish, amphibians, reptiles, birds, small and large mammals, and even the remains of insects. Identification of all these organic remains helps archaeologists reconstruct the diet of the inhabitants and tells something about agricultural practices and the environment.

LIFE IN THE NEOLITHIC ALPINE REGION

Environment. During the fifth and fourth millennia B.C. the Swiss alpine foreland was covered by forest, with only small, naturally open areas. The settlers needed to clear forest to create fields for cultivation. At first, these arable fields were small. The densely forested landscape could not support large herds of domestic animals. It is thought that in summer, cattle must have been led into the forest for grazing, whereas in winter people collected and stored leaf fodder for them. It is likely that in winter the animals grazed around the settlements and ate winter fodder, such as fern leaves, blackberry leaves, and catkins (as analyses of their excrement show). These limited food supplies would have kept herd sizes small, however. As the human population grew, bigger fields were needed, and the human impact on the environment became more profound. From about 3000 B.C. more remains of plants from open fields are present in soil samples taken from settlements. Bones of birds and mammals, such as hare, typical of open landscapes, become more numerous in the faunal assemblages. Because the landscape around the villages was used more intensively, wild animals, such as aurochs or moose, were driven out of their habitats and become rarer in the excavated material.

Human activities also gradually altered the lakeshore area. Continuous clearing resulted in larger areas of open landscape, so that rain eroded soil, causing more minerals to flow into the lakes. Together with all the waste from the villages, the lake waters slowly became more eutrophic. This process can be traced from around 3500 B.C. in the reed belts bordering the lakeshores. These reed belts created special habitats for water birds and a haven for

big pike. With the opening up of the landscape for more arable lands and fields at the end of the Neolithic lake dwelling period, increasing numbers of domestic animals, especially cattle, could be kept. Thus, after 3400 B.C., wooden wheels and carts started to be employed at these settlements.

Villages and Houses. The lake dwelling villages of the alpine foreland were constructed on a soft, porous ground surface of lake marl near the lakeshores. Deep-sunk posts were needed to stabilize the houses. Normally, wall and roof construction was separated from the construction of the floors. Different kinds of posts and post sizes and distinct types of wood were used in various parts of the dwellings. Because the ground was soft, the floors had to be rebuilt every four to five years and the wall posts renewed. This explains the presence of post-holes without posts.

Smaller posts and planks between the main upright posts were used to construct the walls. Thin hazel withes were woven between the smaller "posts," and clay was smeared over the wall to fill in gaps. Some roof shingles were made of white fir. Most of these houses were 6 to 12 meters long and 3 to 6 meters wide. Some houses were divided into two rooms, one large room with a fireplace and a smaller one. Clay ovens also were built. It is thought that the roof spaces were used as sleeping and storage areas.

About every ten years these houses needed to be renewed or rebuilt. The dendrochronological dates reveal that the life span of a village, as elsewhere in the Neolithic world, would have been ten to thirty years. Houses stood in two or more rows and typically were oriented with their shorter sides facing the water. The distances between the long sides of the houses were very small. Villages of various sizes, ranging from 500 to 10,000 square meters, are characteristic of the third and fourth millennia B.C. There could have been villages with only six to ten houses but also villages with as many as one hundred houses. If six to eight persons occupied each house, populations may have ranged from fifty to eight hundred people. Larger villages tended to become more numerous over time as the population grew until the end of the Neolithic, with ever more intense human impact on the environment.

Vessels. The house was the center for large families of several generations. Cooking was carried out at the fireplace, where pots of cereals, herbs, meat, or fish cooked with herbs for several hours. The pots were large, up to 40 centimeters high and 20–25 centimeters in diameter. The form of the pot depended on the cultural traditions of the village. For example, in Mediterranean-influenced cultures, such as the Cortaillod culture (elsewhere known as the Lagozza culture in Italy and Chassey culture), the bases of pots were rounded. In eastern-influenced cultures, like the Pfyn culture (3800–3500 B.C.), pot bases were flat. There were many variants, among them, tall ceramic forms and flat vessels, also used for food storage. Whole pots containing charred cereals have been found in some houses. Most of the harvested grains probably were stored in such vessels. The few other pot types include beakers, jugs, and miniature cups. From five to twenty ceramic vessels were used in each dwelling.

Until the period of the Corded Ware culture (2750–2400 B.C.) toward the end of the Neolithic, ceramics were more or less undecorated. There are, however, differences between vessels produced in the eastern part of the Corded Ware culture distribution area and the western part. Vessel forms varied. The impressed cord used to decorate these pots had a Z twist in the west and an S twist in the east. Many wooden vessels also were made, in particular, flat forms, beakers, and spoons, mostly of ash and elder.

Tools and Raw Materials. An assortment of implements was needed in each house. The most frequently encountered tools are those made from animal bones or red deer antler. Before bronze came into common use, bone and antler represented the “plastic” of the Neolithic period. Different types of awls were employed to work leather and to weave textiles or basketry. Other bone or antler points were used as arrowheads or to catch fish. Bone chisels could be used to manufacture objects from wood, bark, or even softened antler. One important bone tool, employed at these settlements between 3700 and 2700 B.C., was a special type of comb made of several halved and pointed ribs from cattle or red deer, used to separate linen fibers.

Axes or adzes were indispensable for all work at this time. The fact that all parts of lake dwelling

houses were built with wood underscores the importance of these tools. Clearing arable land necessitated felling trees, which likewise required axes and adzes. Antler was the raw material used to make sleeves. The production of the wooden handles and stone blades was very time consuming and finding the appropriate raw materials was also not very easy. This made the handle and axe blade valuable. Easily manufactured antler sleeves acted as protection, absorbing part of the shock of the axe bows during use. Their use marks an important technical innovation in this period.

Antler, bone, and especially teeth also were important raw materials for making ornaments. Tusks from male wild boars were formed into pendants that reflected both the elegance and courage of the hunter. The canines and metapodial bones of dogs, wolves, and bears were perforated and used to make finery. So-called green stone was the raw material used in the production of groundstone blades as well as chisels. Flint was used to knap knives, sickles, scrapers, or arrowheads. The distribution of all these artifacts, debris from their manufacture, and half-finished bits and pieces show that these tools were produced in every household. Only from 3100 B.C. is there evidence for specialized production of tools, such as like groundstone celt blades.

Special melting pots and copper objects, such as celts and jewelry, show that from 3900 B.C. copper was produced locally and used just in eastern Switzerland. Only from the later fourth millennium can copper be found anywhere in Switzerland. Ötzi, the famous Iceman, who lived in about 3200 B.C., carried an axe with a copper blade. Finds of linen, spindle whorls, and loom weights show that textiles were woven in these villages, and evidence points to specialized linen textile production from 3100 B.C.

Nutrition. When the climate was good the lake dwellers’ diet was based on plants, mainly cereals, comprising 60–70 percent of all consumed calories. The remainder of the calorie intake came from mammal and fish meat as well as milk and milk products. The diet also varied depending on the season. Most vitamins were consumed between late spring and autumn. In the winter vitamins were provided by stored nuts and dried fruit. When the climate deteriorated, people became more reliant on hunted meat and fish as well as nuts and wild

fruit. When the bad conditions were prolonged, the inhabitants of the lake dwellings may even have starved.

Analyses of the few available human skeletons, and especially human excrement, provide some clue to the health of these people. They certainly suffered from parasites, the eggs of which have been found in their excrement. Eggs of tapeworms show that raw fish was consumed. Between famine and illness, it is clear that the inhabitants of the lake dwelling settlements did not enjoy perfect health.

All Neolithic lake dwelling settlements contain rich assemblages of wild and domestic mammals or fish as well as remains of collected and cultivated plants. Why did these people need to hunt and gather in combination with subsistence food production? The proportions of wild and domestic animal bones and plant remains found at the settlements has varied through time, and these variations were not related to cultural changes but rather to climatic fluctuations. Long-term deterioration in the climate led to bad cereal harvests. Because cereals contain many more calories than meat, they were much more important in terms of nutrition. If a harvest was bad, fewer calories were produced. People therefore sometimes were forced to hunt and to collect more to complement their diets. The proportion of wild animal bones found at the sites increases parallel with poor climatic conditions.

Cereals and Other Plants. In the fourth millennium B.C. a naked wheat (macaroni wheat) and six-row barley were the main cereals grown in the northern alpine foreland. Beginning around 3400 B.C. hulled emmer wheat became increasingly common, replacing naked wheat in the early third millennium B.C. There also were regional specialties in cereal growing. In some parts of western Switzerland, einkorn was eaten. The cereals were threshed inside the villages, as large amounts of chaff and pollen in the cultural layers testify. Cereals were consumed either as bread or as a component of “hot-pot” meals. An entire loaf of carbonized bread from the fourth millennium B.C. was found in Twann. Cereal grains often are visible in carbonized crusts found on the inside of pottery sherds together with microscopic fragments of cereal bran.

Flax and opium poppy were cultivated widely. Whereas opium poppy appeared in quantity at the

beginning of the lake dwelling period, flax became more important from around 3600 B.C. onward. Flaxseeds were consumed as food and the stem made into fibers for linen textiles. We do not know how the poppy flower itself was used. Only the seeds are found in large numbers, with the capsules absent. Perhaps the poppy was put to medicinal purposes, although the oil-rich seeds also could have been eaten. Legumes are astonishingly rare, with only peas found in small quantities.

Wild plant remains occur in very large amounts on these sites. The most important of these plants collected for the diet of the lake dwellers, especially in terms of calories, was the hazelnut. Acorns had some importance as well, and apples also were widespread. The gathered wild apples were cut in half with bone knives and then dried. Stocks of such apple halves have been found in burnt layers. Other seasonally available fruits were collected, including blackberries, raspberries, wild strawberries, and sloes. Almost every plant brought into the settlements could be used for some purpose, whether for food, medicine, dye, or animal fodder.

Domestic and Wild Animals. As elsewhere in Neolithic Europe, cattle, sheep, goats, pigs, and dogs were kept. It is possible that the domestic horse was introduced during the period of the Corded Ware culture (around 2700 B.C.). Until about 3900 B.C., when the human population was still small and the forest cover dense, sheep, goats, and pigs were more economically significant than cattle. Afterward, until 3400 B.C., cattle became more important, although the population density of domestic animals still was not very high. Only from 3400 B.C. did pig numbers start to grow. More open landscape from about 2800 B.C. encouraged increases in the numbers of the domestic species, especially cattle. Chemical analyses of residues in pots show that from 3400 B.C. cow’s milk was consumed. From this time forward, cattle also gained importance as draft animals. Sheep began to be exploited for their wool after 2700 B.C. With the appearance of wool textiles, buttons and needles made from bone or antler also became more common. Sheep grew larger and were slaughtered older if they came from wool-producing herds.

The most important game animal during all prehistoric periods in Switzerland was the red deer.

It was exploited for meat, antlers, and its skin. During times of climate deterioration, up to 80 percent of the mammal bones found at lake dwelling sites may have come from red deer. During the thirty-seventh century B.C. the poor weather lasted for several decades. Intensive red deer hunting, in fact, may have wiped out the population in the region of Zurich for several years.

Roe deer, wild boar, fox, wolf, bear, and beaver were hunted regularly. Less common are bones from aurochs, European bison, moose, chamois, ibex, and smaller fur-bearing animals. Bird bones are still more rare, even in the sieved samples, perhaps because they were eaten where they were caught. Frog bones, however, frequently appear in sieved soil samples. It is not surprising, given the lakeside location of these settlements, that fish played an important role in the diet of these Neolithic villagers. The presence of their bones in soil samples and the finding of such artifacts as nets, hooks, and harpoons confirm their importance in the diet. Pike were caught by the shore, and other species were fished from dugout canoes in open water.

Travel and Trade. The dense forests of Neolithic Switzerland were an obstacle to travel. The easiest way to move through the landscape was over water. Villages could communicate and trade easily with each other in the lake areas, with people traveling in dugout canoes (examples of which have been found). There also were contacts over longer distances. Thus, raw materials such as flint from northern Italy or eastern and central France or rock nodules for stone celts from southeastern France were traded to distant places. Another example of these far-flung contacts is the decorated clay vessels from Arbon-Bleiche 3, which are best known from sites of the Baden culture in Hungary, Slovakia, and Bohemia.

Social Class and Religion. The absence of special buildings and the equal size of houses suggest that there was no social differentiation at this time. Grave goods would give some indication of social diversity, but graves are not very numerous compared with the number of villages. During the fifth and fourth millennia B.C. people mostly buried their dead in stone cists, each containing several skeletons placed on their sides in a contracted position. There

are also cists with only one person, such as one in Lenzburg, where a single, very tall man about thirty-five years old was interred. He was buried together with many special grave goods, including beads, pendants made from dog canines, bone tools, and a bow with arrows. His burial may be an example of a chieftain's grave. Unique Neolithic burial structures, such as the grave stele in Sion, come from later in the third millennium B.C., but normally all sepultures were collective. On the whole, the impression is of societies where differentiation possibly existed along age and gender lines but was not hierarchical.

The few Swiss Neolithic graves found contain grave goods showing that people believed in life after death. The fact that only a few graves have been located, compared with the overall number of settlements, shows that many people were buried in ways that left no trace. Did these individuals have other beliefs about what happens after death? Did they practice a different religion?

Symbolic life also was displayed in pendants. Were pendants that were made from dog canines or metapodials an expression of a particular belief? It is clear that agricultural societies, which were affected so strongly by the vagaries of weather, believed strongly in some kind of religion. Perhaps opium also was consumed as a drug among these peoples.

CONCLUSION

At the end of the Neolithic in Switzerland, prehistory once again loses its sharp focus for archaeologists. Almost no sites between 2400 and 1800 B.C. have been preserved. While Early and Late Bronze Age lake dwellings exist, sites from the Middle Bronze Age (1500–1250 B.C.) are missing. After 800 B.C. information comes only from dry sites, where organic materials are poorly preserved and dating is less exact. The Swiss lake dwellings are unique in the way that they open a window on the world of small farming and hunting societies in this region. Although we may never know what these people called themselves, we now have a much clearer idea of how they interacted with and exploited their environment.

See also **The Iceman** (vol. 2, part 4); **Arbon-Bleiche 3** (vol. 2, part 4); **Sion-Petit Chausseur** (vol. 1, part 4).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Akeret, Örne, Jean Nicolas Haas, Urs Leuzinger, and Stefanie Jacomet. "Plant Macrofossils and Pollen in Goat/Sheep Faeces from the Neolithic Lake-Shore Settlement Arbon Bleiche 3, Switzerland." *Holocene* 9, no. 2 (1999): 175–182.
- Höneisen, Markus, ed. *Die ersten Bauern*. Zurich, Switzerland: Schweizerisches Landesmuseum, 1990. (Vol. 1, *Schweiz*; vol. 2, *Einführung, Balkan und angrenzende Regionen der Schweiz*.)
- Hosch, Sabine, and Stefanie Jacomet. "New Aspects of Archaeobotanical Research in Central European Neolithic Lake Dwelling Sites." *Environmental Archaeology* 6 (2001): 59–71.
- Hüster-Plogmann, Heidemarie, Jörg Schibler, and Karlheinz Steppan. "The Relationship between Wild Mammal Exploitation, Climatic Fluctuations, and Economic Adaptations: A Transdisciplinary Study on Neolithic Sites from Lake Zurich Region, Southwest Germany and Bavaria." In *Historia animalium ex ossibus*. Edited by C. Becker, H. Manhart, J. Peters, and J. Schibler, pp. 189–200. Rahden, Germany: Leidorf, 1999.
- Schibler, Jörg, Heidemarie Hüster-Plogmann, Stefanie Jacomet, Christoph Brombacher, Eduard Gross-Klee, and Antoinette Rast-Eicher. *Ökonomie und Ökologie neolithischer und bronzezeitlicher Ufersiedlungen am Zürichsee: Ergebnisse der Ausgrabungen Mozartstrasse, Kanalisationsanierung Seefeld, AKAD/Pressehaus und Mythenschloss in Zürich*. Monographien der Kantonsarchäologie Zürich, no. 20. Zurich, Switzerland: Direktion der Öffentlichen Bauten des Kantons Zürich, Hochbauamt, Abt. Kantonsarchäologie, 1997. (With an English summary.)
- Schibler, Jörg, Stefanie Jacomet, Heidemarie Hüster-Plogmann, and Christoph Brombacher. "Economic Crash during the 37th and 36th centuries BC in Neolithic Lake Shore Sites in Switzerland." *Anthropozoologica* 25–26 (1997): 553–570.
- Stöckli, Werner E., Urs Niffeler, and Eduard Gross-Klee. *Die Schweiz vom Paläolithikum bis zum frühen Mittelalter*. Vol. 2, *Neolithikum*. Basel, Switzerland: Verlag Schweizerische Gesellschaft für Ur- und Frühgeschichte, 1995.

JÖRG SCHIBLER, STEFANIE JACOMET,
ALICE CHOYKE

THE ICEMAN

On 19 September 1991 a couple from Heidelberg, Germany, were hiking high in the Tirolean Alps when they spotted what turned out to be a desiccat-

ed, yellow-brown human body lying at an altitude of more than 3,200 meters (10,500 feet) by the Similaun glacier in the Ötztaler Alps. At first believed to be one of the modern corpses that occasionally come to light in these mountains, the Iceman, Similaun Man, or "Ötzi," as the body was nicknamed, proved to be the oldest fully preserved human that has so far come down from prehistory.

Contrary to popular belief, Ötzi is not a mummy but a naturally preserved body. It was not preserved in a glacier but rather seems to have undergone the same process as did the frozen mammoths of Siberia, in that the buildup of ice in the sediments enveloping the body caused its preservation: the ice layers desiccated the soil and dehydrated the corpse. Unlike freeze-drying, which leaves an object intact, this process shrivels the body. The corpse was excavated very crudely, using ski poles, ice picks, and a pneumatic hammer. Nobody had any idea of its age or importance. Damage was caused, particularly to the left hip. It then was taken to Universität Innsbruck (Innsbruck University), Austria, and the many objects and garments later found in the vicinity were taken to Mainz, Germany, to be preserved. Precise measurements at the spot where the body was found proved that it had been lying 93 meters (305 feet) inside the Italian border. For this reason, on 16 January 1998 Ötzi was transferred to a permanent home in the new Südtiroler Archäologiemuseum (South Tyrol Museum of Archaeology) in Bolzano, Italy, where he is displayed today in a chamber with constant humidity and a temperature of -6°C (21°F), along with all his restored equipment.

The first assessment was that the Iceman's axe had a bronze blade and that the Iceman himself probably was about 4,000 years old. Subsequent examination, however, showed that the metal was almost pure copper, and radiocarbon dating of the body, of grass from the garments, and of artifacts placed the Iceman at c. 5,350–5,100 years ago, the Copper Age (Late Neolithic) in this region. The immense importance of the Iceman is that, for the first time, researchers are presented with a time capsule: a figure from the remote past together with his everyday clothing and equipment. This is in stark contrast to the vast majority of prehistoric human remains, which are in the form of skeletons or ashes or which, even when buried or mummified, are ac-

accompanied by specially chosen clothing and objects. Of course, organic materials—from which most ancient artifacts were made—normally disintegrate through time and thus elude the archaeologist completely. The Iceman's well-preserved and frozen equipment and garments have revealed an enormous amount of information about the tremendous range of materials that played a major role in prehistoric life—before this discovery, absolutely nothing was known of Copper Age clothing or perishable equipment in Europe.

For example, no fewer than eighteen types of wood have been identified in the Iceman's seventy artifacts. The articles include a flint dagger with an ash haft, or handle, in a woven grass sheath; an unfinished yew longbow; a deerskin quiver with fourteen arrows of viburnum and dogwood, only two of which were finished; an axe with a yew handle and a copper blade glued in place with birch pitch and leather straps; two sewn birch-bark containers that held what may be embers for starting a fire; a fur backpack with a frame of hazel and larch; a net of grass twine that may have been used for catching birds or small game; a short rod of linden with a fire-hardened piece of antler embedded at one end, probably used for working flint tools; two round pieces of birch fungus attached to leather slips, which are thought to have had a medicinal purpose; and a marble disk with a perforation at its center attached to a leather strip and a tassel of leather thongs.

Microscopic analysis of the tool surfaces showed traces of animal hair, blood, and tissue, suggesting that the Iceman recently had killed or butchered a number of animals, such as chamois, ibex, and deer. Deposits of large, partly cooked or heated starch grains on the axe blade, where lashed to the shaft, have led to the suggestion that one of his last acts was to repair or refit the shaft while eating porridge.

The Iceman's clothing comprised much-repaired leather shoes (with bearskin soles and deerskin uppers) stuffed with grass for insulation; goat-hide leggings and loincloth; a calfskin belt and pouch; a cape of woven grass or reeds of a type still worn by Alpine shepherds in historical times; a coat made up of pieces of tanned domestic goat hide sewn together with animal sinews; and a bearskin cap. Archaeologists are surprised that he was wearing nothing of wool, even though textile fragments



Fig. 1. A reconstruction of what the Iceman might have looked like before frozen on the Tirolean Alps. © SOUTH TYROL MUSEUM OF ARCHAEOLOGY, ITALY, WWW.ICEMAN.IT. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

are known from this period in Europe. Everything appears beautifully adapted to the Alpine conditions. Indeed, experiments with exact replicas worn or carried by a man following sheep in their transhumance, or seasonal migration, up through the snow have shown that the coat was warm, the longbow was invaluable as a climbing pole, and the copper axe also was very useful for climbing in snow. The Iceman's shoes proved to be a disaster—fragile, with no traction in snow and no resistance to water. Why, with his beautifully designed clothing and equipment, was he wearing such useless footgear?

HOW DID HE DIE?

Ever since the discovery, much speculation has centered on the Iceman's identity and the cause of his death. It has been suggested that he was a hunter,

a shepherd (but he has no shepherding equipment), a metal prospector (because of traces of arsenic in his hair, perhaps from copper smelting), and, inevitably—following one fad in archaeology—a “shaman” (for which there is no evidence whatsoever). DNA analysis of his intestinal contents has revealed that his last meal consisted of red deer meat and possibly cereals and that earlier he also had eaten ibex. Pollen from the hop hornbeam in his stomach has shown that he died in late spring or early summer—probably in June. It is known from the pollen (which he inhaled about six hours before death), as well as from the specific kinds of flint in his equipment, that he came from the Katarinaberg area, to the south in Italy, where he doubtless inhabited a farming village.

The man was in his middle to late forties (quite old for the time) and dark-skinned. He stood about 1.57 meters (5 feet, 2 inches) in height and was of average build, weighing about 50 kilograms (110 pounds). He was not in good physical condition and clearly had lived a hard life. His lungs were blackened by the smoke from fires, he had hardening of the arteries, his teeth were worn (probably from coarsely ground grain) albeit free of cavities, his toes showed traces of frostbite, and some of his ribs had been fractured and then had healed. There are small tattoos, mostly short lines and a cross, at various points on his lower back, knees, ankles, and left wrist, which were made by rubbing charcoal into small cuts. These marks may have been therapeutic, being linked to the places where he clearly had arthritis, and speculation has even been made about ancient acupuncture methods.

Finally, one of his fingernails was recovered. (Like his hair, the nails had fallen off the body in the course of his preservation.) Dark lines in the nail revealed that he was prone to regular periods of severe disease or malnutrition (which affected nail growth) during the months before his death. Despite melodramatic published accounts that portrayed him as a desperate man, fleeing from a “pogrom” or massacre in his village, he actually appeared to be an already enfeebled person who perhaps had been caught by a storm on the mountain and succumbed to the elements. Even today sudden storms are all too frequent in this region and can find the most experienced traveler unprepared. The fact that the Iceman was naked, or almost naked, when he was

found points strongly to hypothermia, a condition that makes one feel incredibly hot just before freezing to death, leading one to strip off clothing; this has been confirmed by analyses that indicate that his body had an elevated temperature at death.

A CT scan later showed something that earlier X rays had missed—the presence of what appears to be a stone arrowhead lodged in the Iceman’s upper-left shoulder. A hole in the shoulder blade is thought by some researchers to be an entry wound, and a minute slit in his back is thought by some to be the external entry wound that never healed, although it could well be damage caused during the Iceman’s manhandling at the time of discovery. Nevertheless, reckless speculation immediately began that he had been stalked and murdered or deliberately sacrificed by an archer. It has not been established that this arrowhead caused his death; if it did so, where is its shaft? After all, the Iceman’s own arrows were preserved beautifully, so why did the shaft of this one disappear? Could it be something other than the vestige of an old hunting accident?

Two deep wounds also have been detected on his right hand and wrist, and it appears that something sharp penetrated the base of his right thumb, causing a serious injury not long before he died. These marks also have led to speculations about hand-to-hand fighting. If the Iceman was indeed defending himself, fighting for his life against a knife-wielding attacker, as has been suggested, then one would expect to find many more slash marks on his forearm or puncture wounds in vital areas of the body. In short, even after years of study, the Iceman is still presenting researchers with enigmas and surprises, and we still do not know how he died, let alone what his occupation was or why he was on the mountain.

Nonetheless, Ötzi unquestionably is one of the greatest archaeological finds of all time, a unique package of data about the life and culture of Europeans in the Copper Age. A tremendous amount has been learned from him and his equipment by using a wide range of scientific techniques. The Iceman also has become one of the most famous people in the world, visited by tens of thousands every year. Despite all the poking and prodding he has undergone at the hands of scientists, his remains are treated with great respect by the public. In the museum at Bolzano, one needs to mount a podium and

peer through a small window to see Ötzi, and the audio recording reminds the visitor that this is not a museum exhibit but a human corpse. Several other museums around the world have full-size reconstructions of the Iceman as he might have looked in life, complete with garments and equipment. Like many other finds with global appeal, the Iceman has made a considerable contribution to the popularity of archaeology. His greatest legacy undoubtedly is the vast amount of information he has provided from beyond the grave, information that, but for the sharp eyes of two hikers, might have been lost forever.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Bahn, Paul G. "Last Days of the Iceman." *Archaeology* 48, no. 3 (1995): 66–70.
- Fleckinger, Angelika, and Hubert Steiner. *The Iceman*. Bolzano, Italy: Folio Verlag Bolzano and South Tyrol Museum of Archaeology, 1998.
- Fowler, Brenda. *Iceman: Uncovering the Life and Times of a Prehistoric Man Found in an Alpine Glacier*. New York: Random House, 2000.
- Moser, Hans, Werner Platzer, Horst Seidler, and Konrad Spindler. *The Man in the Ice*. Vol. 4, *The Iceman and His Natural Environment*. Edited by Sigmar Bortenschlager and K. Oeggl. Vienna and New York: Springer Verlag, 2000.
- Rollo, Franco, Massimo Ubaldi, Luca Ermini, and Isolina Marota. "Ötzi's Last Meals: DNA Analysis of the Intestinal Content of the Neolithic Glacier Mummy from the Alps." *Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences* 99, no. 20 (2002): 12594–12599.
- Roberts, David. "The Iceman." *National Geographic* 183, no. 6 (1993): 36–67.
- Spindler, Konrad. *The Man in the Ice: The Discovery of a 5,000-Year-Old Body Reveals the Secrets of the Stone Age*. New York: Harmony Books, 1994.
- Südtiroler Archäologiemuseum (South Tyrol Museum of Archaeology). <http://www.archaeologiemuseum.it>.

PAUL G. BAHN

ARBON-BLEICHE 3

The site Arbon-Bleiche 3 is on the Swiss side of Lake Constance, within the territory of the modern village of Arbon. The site of the Neolithic lake-dwelling settlement lies a few hundred meters back

from the present-day lakeshore. In Neolithic times the village was situated in a bay, near small inlets. Three excavation campaigns between 1993 and 1995 saw nearly half of the Neolithic village recovered, including remains of twenty-five houses plus two small storehouses. The entire village must have comprised about fifty houses. If we calculate about six to ten persons for each house, the population of the village would have ranged between three hundred and five hundred.

Based on samples from the house posts, dendrochronology gives exact dates for the settlement and helps trace its construction history. The first building work in the village began in the year 3384 B.C., when a single dwelling was raised. In the following year, only two more houses were built. More houses were constructed over the next few years, until the entire village had been completed. This settlement history makes it clear that during the construction of Arbon-Bleiche 3, part of the village community must have lived elsewhere, in another village.

In the year 3370 B.C., catastrophe struck as the entire village burned. Arbon-Bleiche 3 had existed only fifteen years and was never rebuilt. Thus, archaeologists were presented with a single-layer settlement containing material deposited over a very short time, making it easy to reconstruct the village plan. All the houses had been constructed using posts of white fir and arranged in separate rows with their long sides facing the lake. There also seems to have been one broad lane running toward the lakeshore. Some evidence suggests that the house floors were raised slightly above the ground.

From this period not much evidence exists for lake-dwelling sites and cultural developments in Switzerland, probably the result of climatic conditions that led to erosion of the deposited archaeological layers. Arbon-Bleiche 3 was preserved fortuitously by the presence of a nearby small river. Flooding from the river covered the remains of the destroyed village with a protective layer of sand.

The Pfyn culture predominated in the region of Lake Constance before the thirty-fourth century B.C. Its material remains are characterized by, among other things, ceramic pots with S-profile walls. After this time Horgen culture finds dominate at Late Neolithic sites. These ceramics look like



Fig. 1. Reconstruction of the lake-dwelling site Arbon-Bleiche 3, Thurgau, Switzerland.
 PHOTOGRAPH BY D. STEINER. AMT FÜR ARCHÄOLOGIE DES KANTONS THURGAU, FRAUENFELD, SWITZERLAND.
 REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

buckets with typically straight, thick walls. The ceramic vessels from Arbon-Bleiche 3 display forms and characteristics of both the Pfyn and Horgen cultures. Bone or antler tool types also display typological overlaps. The find material from Arbon-Bleiche 3, therefore, seems to mark a transition between these two cultures.

Among the ceramic vessels from Arbon-Bleiche 3 were a few pots decorated in a totally different style. Comparable forms and ornaments can be found on sites of the central European Boleráz group of the Baden culture in Bohemia, Moravia, and Hungary. Archaeologists first thought that these pots and vessels represented important evidence. Mineralogical analysis of the burned clay from these vessels has shown, however, that they were made of local clay. Craftspeople from Arbon must have copied this foreign form, examples of which perhaps originally were brought by a woman marrying into the village community or imported as traded ware.

Axe blades made of ground stone or red deer antler also were found everywhere in the village. These blades were fixed directly into ash-wood handles, as opposed to what appears at both older and later sites, where axe or adze blades were fixed into antler sleeves. There is evidence that during the previous two centuries, a series of climatically influenced economic crises took place. Red deer was hunted intensively and possibly became extinct in some regions. This may be why craftspeople had to forgo using antler sleeves as a shock-absorbing material between the blades and the valuable wooden handles. Direct hafting became the tradition. It was only from the thirty-second century B.C. onward that antler sleeves were used once again around Lake Zurich and Lake Constance.

About seventy thousand animal bones were collected and analyzed, together with botanical remains and small bones from mammals, birds, amphibians, and fish, from more than seventy soil samples. In addition, pollen, macro plant remains (plant parts and seeds), and sediments from several

profile columns were analyzed. Their identification has made possible the reconstruction of the environment around Arbon as well as agricultural and animal husbandry practices, in addition to plant gathering and hunting strategies and the food eaten by the village inhabitants. Agriculture was based on cereals (mainly tetraploid naked wheat, emmer, and barley), with large amounts of poppy and flax. A large portion of the caloric intake came from collected plants, of which hazelnuts were by far the most important. Human excrement (in the form of large masses of various berry seeds) and cereal threshing remains are most common in the zones between the houses, reflecting the custom of dumping garbage outside the buildings.

Botanical analyses of the sheep/goat and cattle feces showed that animals stayed inside the village only in winter. Their food was “collected” around the village in the form of plants, such as ferns or blackberry leaves. Masses of mistletoe leaves or pollen from early-flowering catkin-bearing shrubs suggest that such plants as alder or willow probably were used as fodder in late winter or very early spring. It is likely that during the summer animals were pastured away from the village. About 50 percent of the consumed meat came from hunted animals, especially red deer. Most of the meat from domestic animals came from pig and cattle. Thus, hunting was important in supplying food, especially during times of food-production crises. The small bones extracted from the soil samples show that the inhabitants also must have consumed frogs and a great deal of fish. Whitefish was most common, although there were also many bones from large pike.

The distribution of hand-collected bones and bones from soil samples indicate that the people liv-

ing in houses nearer the lake consumed more pigs and caught more whitefish. Because whitefish must be caught in open water, it may have been that these people had dugouts. People from inland houses hunted more red deer and caught more pike. These differences may be evidence of very early separation and specialization in food production, which also may reflect the beginnings of social differentiation. There are no big differences between houses as far as cultivated plants are concerned.

The excavations of the well-preserved site of Arbon-Bleiche 3 took place at a time when the full range of scientific analyses could be applied to the artifacts and rich biological data. The site presents us with a more reliably detailed model for Late Neolithic village life in central Europe than we have ever possessed.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Akeret, Örne, Jean Nicolas Haas, Urs Leuzinger, and Stefanie Jacomet. “Plant Macrofossils and Pollen in Goat/Sheep Faeces from the Neolithic Lake-Shore Settlement Arbon Bleiche 3, Switzerland.” *Holocene* 9, no. 2 (1999): 175–182.
- De Capitani, Annick, Sabine Deschler-Erb, Urs Leuzinger, Elisabeth Marti-Grädel, and Jörg Schibler. *Die jungsteinzeitliche Seeufersiedlung Arbon Bleiche 3: Funde*. Archäologie im Thurgau, no. 11. Frauenfeld, Switzerland: Amt für Archäologie Kanton Thurgau, 2002.
- Hosch, Sabine, and Stefanie Jacomet. “New Aspects of Archaeobotanical Research in Central European Neolithic Lake Dwelling Sites.” *Environmental Archaeology* 6 (October 2001): 59–71.
- Leuzinger, Urs. *Die jungsteinzeitliche Seeufersiedlung Arbon Bleiche 3: Befunde*. Archäologie im Thurgau, no. 9. Frauenfeld, Switzerland: Departement für Erziehung und Kultur des Kantons Thurgau, 2000.

JÖRG SCHIBLER, STEFANIE JACOMET,
ALICE CHOYKE



THE MEGALITHIC WORLD

FOLLOWED BY FEATURE ESSAYS ON:

<i>Avebury</i>	406
<i>Barnenez</i>	408
<i>Boyne Valley Passage Graves</i>	413
<i>Trackways and Boats</i>	415

The megalithic world was created as a result of the adoption of agriculture along the Atlantic coast of western Europe by local Mesolithic hunter-gatherers, with a few immigrant Neolithic farmers from central Europe and the Mediterranean. This transition had taken place by about 5500 B.C. in Spain and Portugal, 5000 B.C. in Southwest France, 4700 B.C. in Northwest France, and 4000 B.C. in southern Scandinavia, Britain, and Ireland.

Although these groups by then were cultivating cereals and keeping sheep, cattle, and pigs, there is little evidence for major clearances of woodland to grow crops. Pollen analysis suggests mostly small-scale clearance, and the earliest convincing field systems (from Céide Fields in western Ireland) date to about 3500 B.C. Many excavated sites have produced the remains of wild plant and animal foods, and these items continued to be an important element in the diet, although scientific analyses of human bone chemistry suggest that seafood by this time had been abandoned.

The ephemeral nature of the settlements matches the lack of evidence for large-scale clearance, that is, there seem to be no large communities

requiring a large cleared area for their subsistence needs. It has been argued that the overall lack of houses points to a quite mobile society, showing continuity with the Mesolithic. Many houses have been found in Ireland, however, so there, at least, existed a fairly settled lifestyle of single households (fig. 1). Large rectangular houses, such as Balbridie in Scotland, Lismore Fields in England, and Balleygalley in Ireland, may have been special-purpose buildings connected with grain production or the exchange of flint. The rectangular house at Le Haut-Mée in Brittany, in Northwest France, may indicate a community of incoming farmers from the Paris basin, using flint and flint technology brought from that area.

In Britain villages of round stone houses appeared in the Orkney Islands off the northern coast of Scotland in about 3300 B.C. The best-known site is Skara Brae on Orkney's Mainland, with several very similar houses in terms of layout, size, and internal features facing one another. The same kinds of sites are known elsewhere in Orkney, for example, Barnhouse, on Mainland, where the houses are remarkably uniform in appearance except for one larger building—a massive structure resembling a



Fig. 1. Reconstruction of an Irish Neolithic house. COURTESY OF NICK THORPE. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

tomb—right next to the village. Similar contemporary developments are seen in southern Scandinavia, where there are very large sites; their arrangement has yet to be confirmed by excavations. In Brittany the settlement of very large houses at Pléchéatel developed at about the same time.

MONUMENTS TO THE DEAD

It is not farming and housing that best demonstrates the changed relationship between people and land; the most dramatic change comes with the appearance of a variety of monuments, especially burial mounds and enclosures. Although there have been claims that some burial mounds, such as Carrowmore in Ireland (fig. 2), predate the Neolithic, the radiocarbon dates at that site are not for actual burials but come from charcoal, which could easily derive from earlier activity in the same place.

The importance of these monuments is clearly shown by their early development. In many areas along the Atlantic, including Spain, Brittany, southern Britain, and Denmark, radiocarbon dating has established that the first monuments appeared early

in the Neolithic. Older theories of a long “pioneer phase,” during which farming communities evolved to the stage at which they had the free time to construct monuments, have been abandoned. Instead, it is clear that these monuments were essential to the societies that created them, perhaps in part because of the dispersed nature of communities in their everyday lives.

The earliest examples of these burial monuments have been identified as stone-chambered tombs or megalithic tombs. In some cases, these are impressive monuments, built to last and to dominate the landscape. Many contain elaborate carvings, although later examples also can be rather small and unimpressive. They occur along the Atlantic coast from Portugal to Ireland and up to southern Scandinavia.

There is great debate over the origin of megaliths and burial in stone-chambered tombs, which emerged during the fifth millennium B.C. It is on the evidence from Brittany that debate has centered. The oldest theory of the origin of megaliths was that they represented the spread of a religious cult by



Fig. 2. Megalithic cemetery at Carrowmore in Ireland. © DOUGLAS PEEBLES/CORBIS. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

megalithic missionaries. This possibility was ruled out, however, by the impact of radiocarbon dating, which showed that the Atlantic megaliths were much older than their supposed Mediterranean forebears.

The rejection of a Mediterranean inspiration for megaliths led to suggestions of a local origin. In Late Mesolithic Brittany, at Tévéc and Hoëdic, small islands off the coast, these plausible ancestors to megalithic burial occur in shell middens. There are twenty-three burials at Tévéc and fourteen at Hoëdic. Men, women, and children were interred together in stone-lined pits, covered, in the most elaborate examples, by small heaps of stone (cairns). In one case a small upright stone marked the burial. These burials date to the period 5500–4500 B.C.

Thus the idea of multiple burial existed among the hunter-gatherers of Brittany before the emergence of monuments, negating the possibility of a purely local development of megaliths. The living community's ancestors were placed visibly in the

landscape, with the result that they became an important part of future social developments. Focusing such attention on their ancestors could have represented a way for the living to demonstrate their rights to the territory they controlled—perhaps fishing rights in the case of the hunter-gatherers on the coast of Brittany and presumably land and its wealth in the case of Neolithic groups. Earlier models, such as that of Renfrew, suggested that megalithic tombs acted as territorial markers for societies under pressure because of the lack of land to the west to absorb a growing population. The evidence from pollen analysis, however, shows that the impact of farming was too slight for this explanation to hold true, and it may be that other resources, such as stone suitable for making axes and ornaments, were just as desirable as farming land.

One of the most dramatic developments in the study of Breton prehistory has been the discovery that many passage graves contain reused standing stones (menhirs) with a set of carvings different from those in the tombs themselves. At Gavrinis,

one of the most elaborate tombs, the uncovering of the top of the chamber capstone revealed that it was part of a substantial carved stone, which joined with the capstones from two other mounds. The carvings on this 14-meter-high stone, and on another possibly original stone, are of cattle, sheep, and goats; axe plows (which look like plows with axe-shaped blades); and axes. These items clearly are representative of food production through the stages of clearance, cultivation, and pasturing, perhaps a celebration of the introduction of agriculture. The largest of these standing stones—Le Grand Menhir Brisé (Great Broken Standing Stone), some 21 meters (70 feet) long—was not reused. Reexamination of older excavations also has shown that groups of menhirs formed the first phase of activity at numerous places that later saw the construction of stone-chambered tombs.

The discovery of a series of long burial mounds at Passy-sur-Yonne, with central European material and burial customs, in Burgundy, central France, has revived the theory of an outside origin for megalithic burials. The earliest stone-chambered tombs in France, according to radiocarbon dating, are in Brittany rather than the Paris basin, however. Crucially there are equally early megalithic tombs in Iberia, which lies well away from any central European influences. In Iberia the possibility has been raised that, just as in Brittany, megalithic constructions began with menhirs, some carved with a shepherd's crook, but this speculation needs to be supported by dating evidence. Some of the earliest tombs have small chambers that were sealed by mounds. Others could be reentered through low passages; unfortunately, this meant that material was added to and removed from the chambers over thousands of years, making it difficult to be sure of the earliest activity. This problem is common across the megalithic tombs of western Europe.

In southwest France the tomb complex at Bougon has been intensively investigated. At least ten tombs were constructed over a thousand years, beginning with simple round chambers containing a dozen skeletons and imported pottery and stone beads and ending with massive extensions to existing mounds, increasing the length of the monument by more than 60 meters (200 feet) in one case. These extensions cover only a few burials, if any, so they must be primarily for displaying the construc-

tion abilities of the builders. Little can be said about the skeletal contents of Breton stone-chambered tombs, owing to the acid soil of the area, but they certainly contain a range of elaborate finds. The items include pottery from funerary ceremonies, small axes, polished stone disk rings thought to be symbols of wealth, and long flint blades from the mines at Grand Pressigny in central France. Careful excavation has revealed that such sites as Barnenez were constructed in several stages and that both long and round mounds were built early in the Neolithic, covering simple stone boxes. Later monuments incorporated a passage, so that the chamber at the center of a mound could be reentered many times. Many also are elaborately decorated, with stones in the passage and chamber covered with carvings.

In northern France and Holland, long, rectangular mounds covered a single large chamber. Early tombs contained up to fifteen bodies of women, men, and children, with earlier skeletons moved aside to make room for later burials. At La Chaussée-Tirancourt, a late tomb dating to after 3000 B.C., remains from more than 350 persons were found in the chamber, which was divided into 3 compartments. The burials had taken place over a long period, with individual acts of selective burial taking place, so that a group of six children were buried together, for example. The items accompanying the burials were quite ordinary compared with those in the Breton tombs. Similarly at Bronneger in Holland the burials were accompanied only by local pottery.

The earliest chambered tombs in Denmark are relatively small and simple, probably owing to the lack of suitable stone. They are very common, comprising perhaps fifty thousand examples overall. The tombs mostly contain few burials, often only a single person, and grave goods of pottery and local flint work and amber. Later passage graves (dating to after 3700 B.C. in southern Scandinavia) are larger and more prominent in the landscape and contain many more bodies, in the case of southern Sweden up to two hundred. Even though Scandinavian passage graves were small compared with those elsewhere, they represent the scene of intense later activity. For example, the small Västra Hoby tomb in Sweden had been emptied out in the eighteenth century, but excavations recovered some fifty thou-

sand fragments of decorated pottery from the area in front of the tomb, more than any other passage grave in Northwest Europe. These finds generally are interpreted as offerings to the honored ancestors occupying the tomb.

Chambered tombs in Britain and Ireland often are larger and more elaborate. Early examples contain more burials than do those in Scandinavia, but grave goods are rare. Some large tombs are located very prominently in the landscape, and only a small proportion of the earth or stone mound is needed to cover the burial chamber. The most elaborate tombs of the Cotswold-Severn group of western England and Wales, such as West Kennet, have numerous chambers, which were used to bury groups selected by age and sex. Passage graves appeared in Britain and Ireland, too, after 3700 B.C. These examples are some of the finest of all stone-chambered tombs, including Maes Howe on Mainland, the largest of the Orkney Islands, and Newgrange and Knowth in the Boyne Valley of Ireland. Their scale meant that they were targeted by tomb robbers long ago—Maes Howe by the Vikings, if the runic inscription inside the tomb is true. Surprisingly there are no signs of later worship, except that at Newgrange and Knowth smaller tombs were built around the massive one, perhaps so that their occupants could rest in the shadow of these powerful ancestors.

The second major form of burial monument from this period, found in areas where stone was lacking, is the earthen long barrow, with burials in graves or inside a wooden chamber under a long mound of earth. These monuments appeared in the Early Neolithic, around 4500 B.C., in the Kujavian lowlands of Poland and spread from there to France, Holland, Scandinavia, and Britain. Most research work has been carried out on those of Denmark and Britain. Danish examples were built from the very beginning of the Neolithic, around 4000 B.C. In Denmark grave goods are quite common—excavations produce pottery, amber, flint work, and pieces of copper imported from the Alps.

There is a wide range of variation in terms of burial structure. The simplest type is just a grave; closed graves, in which the bodies were sealed by wood or stones, are the most common. The construction of long mounds was a communal undertaking, given the size of the task and discoveries of

lines of stakes dividing the mound area into sections. The general lack of survival of bones (in these mostly acidic soils) makes it difficult to say more than that few people were buried. A rare exception is Bygholm Nørremark, where the first grave contained an adolescent with an amber bead and an arrowhead (possibly the cause of death), and the second held four adults buried in pairs, with their heads pointing in opposite directions and without grave goods.

Earthen long barrows in Britain are roughly rectangular or trapezoidal in shape and are found mostly in the lowlands. In this area mounds of earth cover burials placed inside a wooden chamber, here, too, small by comparison with the total area of the mound. As with chambered tombs, grave goods are rare, even in places where there are more than fifty burials, for example, at Fussell's Lodge in England. The skeletons often seem to have been deliberately disarticulated, suggesting that a community of ancestors was important, rather than individuals. Even there, only a small percentage of the population was interred in a burial monument; others came to rest in enclosure ditches, caves, pits, bogs, shores, and rivers. Over time even fewer were granted monumental burial, ending up with single burials.

ENCLOSING THE LIVING AND THE DEAD

From about 3800 B.C., causewayed enclosures, so called because of the large number of causeways, or gaps, in the ditch circuit, appeared across northwestern Europe. In the Loire region of western France they are usually thought to have been defensive enclosures, because of the deep ditches (sometimes several circuits) cut into rock, remains of collapsed drystone walls, and *pince-de-crab* (crab's pincers) entrances. Excavations have shown that the *pince-de-crab* entrances often were later additions, sometimes after the ditch behind had filled up; in those cases, they could not have been defensive. Many enclosures produce burials on the ditch floor, sometimes with pottery. Radiocarbon dates suggest a range of 3500–2900 B.C. for the dates of these sites, more than a hundred of which have been identified from aerial photographs. They have much in common with southern Scandinavian enclosures, some thirty of which were constructed from about 3400 to 3150 B.C., contain ditch burials, and have

small enclosed areas tacked on to the outsides of the sites. The vast majority of these enclosures sit on promontories surrounded by wetland or open water. The ditch layout is mostly single, although double lines of ditches are known. This relatively open barrier either cuts off a promontory or forms a boundary around the whole site. At some sites a timber palisade supplements the ditches.

The layout of the sites is simple, with the exception of Sarup on Fyn, Denmark. At this site there are two lines of ditches, with individual ditch segments fenced off, fence lines and a timber palisade behind the ditches, and small enclosures outside the palisade, with two formal entrances. It may be that attempts were made to control entry into the enclosure. Sarup is by far the most intensively explored of the enclosures, having undergone almost total excavation. Deliberately placed deposits in the ditches included pottery, flint work, and adults' and children's jaws and skulls. Stone settings near the ditch base had pottery, animal bones, and charcoal in and below the stones amid layers of charcoal and burnt soil, suggesting that the charcoal sometimes was still smoldering when it was buried. The palisade trench contained considerable amounts of pottery, far more than in the interior of the enclosure; complete vessels were placed along the palisade. Neither the ditches nor the palisade was in use for long, maybe just a single year. Given this short history, the effort involved in creating the Sarup enclosure is remarkable. Some 100,000 work hours would have been expended on its construction. Inside the Sarup enclosure were twenty offering pits, some containing complete pots and carbonized wheat without weed seeds, indicating a painstaking selection of grain.

Other sites have produced similar traces of placed deposits. The bases of ditches at many sites contained whole pots, piles of flint tools, heaps of animal bone sometimes mixed with human bone, and human skulls. Traces of fire have been noted in the ditches at several sites. The site of Toftum, Denmark, was constructed and abandoned in a short time. Some deliberate filling in of ditches included the deposition of complete vessels, but other parts of the ditches were backfilled with cultural debris, including heaps of shells, flint, and potsherds.

Few sites have seen the exploration of large areas of the interior of the enclosure, but some have produced offering pits, as at Sarup. At Årupgard, in

Denmark, pits have been found to contain complete pots and a hoard of Alpine copper and local amber. The major excavations at Sarup and Toftum showed that these were very short-lived sites of conspicuous consumption and therefore unlike the fixed burial mounds. These important places were not forgotten, however, as many large Middle Neolithic settlements occupy the sites of enclosures.

In Britain and Ireland some seventy causewayed enclosures are known, predominantly from southern England but with examples from Scotland and Northern Ireland as well. The distribution is not continuous, however, even in southern England. Enclosures were being constructed by 4000 B.C.—unlike the examples in southern Scandinavia, they were a significant monumental element from the beginning of the Neolithic. Enclosures in this region were located in peripheral locations, away from main areas of contemporary settlement and often in small woodland clearings. Perhaps the activities carried out inside enclosures were seen as socially dangerous and therefore had to be separated from everyday life. Many enclosures had a concentric spatial arrangement, with up to four circuits of ditches. These ditches were the primary focus of depositional activity of various kinds but also saw episodes of recutting. Different ditch segments may have been maintained by particular family or clan groups; this arrangement would have explained the wide variations in ditch segments and their later contents, which will have reflected the history of the group responsible for them.

At the main enclosure at Hambledon Hill, England, forty-five burials were recovered from the 20 percent of the ditch that was excavated, pointing to some two hundred bodies altogether. The excavated burials were predominantly of children; indeed there were twice as many as adult burials. This is a common pattern, with children being buried much more often at causewayed enclosures than in earthen long barrows. Elsewhere enclosures consistently have produced human skeletal remains.

In the ditch at Etton were specially placed deposits; they comprised small heaps of butchered animal bones on the ditch base, including a neatly tied bundle of cattle bones next to a partly dispersed group of hazelnuts, a complete upturned vessel on a birch-bark mat, and a sheet of folded and trimmed birch bark. At Hambledon Hill long, narrow depos-

its of organic material containing animal bone, pottery, flint work, and human bone were placed along the bottom of the ditch, possibly in leather bags. The animal bones were identified as feasting debris. Enclosure ditches often produce exotic materials; they may have played a major role in exchange. Stone axes are quite common finds at enclosures, frequently appearing long distances from their source. Thus at Hambledon Hill there were axes from hundreds of miles away in Britain and even from continental Europe as far away as the Alps. Pottery also came from a hundred miles away. Enclosures were not markets, however, from which objects would be redistributed, for the exotic items brought to enclosures remained there.

Some sites later were given defenses, possibly becoming settlements. The clearest candidates are Hambledon Hill and Crickley Hill in southern England. At Hambledon Hill several enclosures later were enclosed by a defensive ditch and a timber palisade. This defense eventually was attacked and destroyed, as evidenced, for example, by the remains of two young men killed by arrowheads buried in the ditch at the same time that the timber palisade was burned down. At Crickley Hill, where large numbers of arrowheads have been found, the palisade was burned, and then the site was abandoned for settlement. No single explanation can cope with the variety of British enclosures, but there are some clear themes: consumption, control over access, and destruction.

Evidence of violent death occurs throughout the megalithic world, as at the three tombs at Châtelliers-du-Vieil-Auzay in western France. Each tomb contained pairs of males, one killed by arrows and the others by axe blows to the head. That some of these deaths may have been attributable to executions rather than warfare is suggested by the discovery in Sigersdal Mose (bog), Denmark, of two women, one with the cord used to strangle her still around her neck.

UNECONOMIC EXCHANGES

Although conflict is often thought of as the opposite of peaceful exchange, such does not seem to have been the case in the megalithic world, in that the same communities that were fighting also were involved in wide-ranging exchange networks. Polished axes of both flint and hard stone were pro-

duced and traded on a massive scale. They were used mainly for tree felling, but they clearly had much more than purely economic importance. This can be seen in the production, exchange, and deposition of axes. Flint axes were produced at mines and stone axes at open quarries. Some mines were massive; for example, there were five thousand shafts at Rijckholt in Holland. At the Plussulien quarry in Brittany about five thousand axes a year were produced for some twelve hundred years. Although this seems like industrial production, at some sites the workers deliberately chose to quarry at difficult locations. For example, at Langdale in northern England quarrying took place on a steep mountainside, even though equally good stone can be seen on the surface along a 19-kilometer (12-mile) stretch. In Ireland people rowed out to Rathlin Island to quarry stone, despite the availability of geologically identical rock on the mainland. In addition most axes were polished all over, although only the cutting edge needs to be polished to improve performance—modern experiments confirm that this was the most time-consuming part of the whole process.

These noneconomic concerns also appear in the distribution of axes. The long-distance exchange of axes is well known, with scientific analysis showing that jadeite axes from the Alps moved across a distance of 2,400 kilometers (1,500 miles) to Scotland. The key to the importance of jadeite axes is not that they were of better quality but that they were visually distinctive and so were obviously imports. This is a very common pattern: across western Europe imported axes were of no better quality than local products but apparently were desirable because they were exotic. In southern Scandinavia massive, unwieldy flint axes were produced from distinctively colored flint and then exchanged over the longest distances. Axes from Rathlin were traded to England and Langdale axes to Ireland. On the Channel Islands off the coast of Normandy, only 16 percent of axes on Jersey are made from the local source, with imports coming from Brittany, Normandy, and the neighboring island of Guernsey. The Jersey axes, however, were clearly desirable on Guernsey, where more are found than on the island where they were produced.

Finally, axes also are marked out in their deposition. Many are found deliberately buried. In south-

ern Scandinavia hoards contained longer axes than those found in settlements. They also are typical finds in bogs, rivers, and lakes, leading to the idea that the axes were offerings to gods or spirits, as also seems a likely explanation for the amber necklaces found in bogs in southern Scandinavia. After about 3300 B.C. many of these exchange networks shrink, and southern Scandinavia and Holland became part of the Corded Ware or Single Grave culture of individual burials in graves with pots and battle-axes under small, round mounds, looking more toward Germany and eastern Europe. In Atlantic France, Spain, and Portugal megalithic tombs continue until the introduction of copper and the transformation of society.

Developments were quite different in Britain and Ireland, however. There a range of new monuments emerged, while settlements once again became small and hard to spot. The largest were cursus monuments (rectangular bank-and-ditch enclosures, some of which are several miles long), constructed perhaps as processional ways across landscapes and incorporating older earthen long barrows into their course. The best-known monuments are the henges—the earliest and most famous being Stonehenge in southern England. A henge is defined as a bank-and-ditch enclosure with the bank outside the ditch; thus it was clearly not defensive. The external bank outside the ditch could have been a visual barrier or a platform from which to observe ceremonies in the interior. The sites range in size from very small, about 15 meters (50 feet) in diameter, to massive, more than 370 meters (1,200 feet) in diameter. Avebury in southern England is an example of the latter. They have substantial ditches, and there often are restrictions on the entrance, perhaps showing control over access. A variety of activities have been recorded inside henges, evidenced by pits, post circles (unconvincingly claimed to be buildings at some sites, such as Durrington Walls in southern England), stone circles, and even burials, but these are rare. The objects deposited at henges frequently are elaborate, exotic, and strange, such as functionally useless chalk axes.

Stonehenge is unusual in many respects. It is the earliest example of a henge monument, construction having started around 3000 B.C. It is perhaps transitional between causewayed enclosures and henges, because the bank is outside the ditch,

with a ring of posts inside. A large number of cremation burials were deposited in the ditch, the bank, and the posthole circle, and timber structures (largely destroyed by later activity) and lines of posts were erected inside. The site was transformed around 2600 B.C., when the bluestone circle was constructed from stones transported more than 650 kilometers (400 miles) from Wales and the avenue was created, perhaps to commemorate the route taken in moving the stones from the River Avon.

Timber circles also were constructed on their own, for example, Greyhound Yard in southern England, which is perhaps 370 meters (1,200 feet) across, and the West Kennet group near Stonehenge. Sometimes these timber circles were converted to stone circles, for instance, the Sanctuary, located at the end of an avenue of stones leading from the Avebury henge. Stone circles were monuments in their own right; these circles are found mainly in the north and west of Britain in rocky areas, most impressively at Callanish in the Hebrides of Scotland, with a circle at the heart of a series of stone avenues.

The supreme achievement of the megalithic world was the enormous mound of Silbury Hill near Avebury. Just over 150 meters (500 feet) in diameter and 40 meters (130 feet) high, the chalk and soil piled up to a volume of 3.8 million cubic meters (12.5 million cubic feet). Despite three excavations, no burial has been found below the mound; it appears to be a ceremonial site, with survey work following the collapse of an old excavation tunnel pointing to an original spiral course around the mound. As with so many other features of the megalithic world, Silbury Hill shows how beliefs, religious or magical, lay behind the creation of the archaeological remains uncovered in modern times.

See also **Neolithic Sites of the Orkney Islands** (vol. 1, part 3); **Hambledon Hill** (vol. 1, part 3); **Sarup** (vol. 1, part 3); **Avebury** (vol. 1, part 4); **Barnenez** (vol. 1, part 4); **Boyne Valley Passage Graves** (vol. 1, part 4); **Corded Ware from East to West** (vol. 1, part 4); **Stonehenge** (vol. 2, part 5).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Andersen, Niels H. *Sarup*. Vol. 1, *The Sarup Enclosures*. Jutland Archaeological Society Publications no. 33. Århus, Denmark: Jutland Archaeological Society, 1997. (Contains a wide-ranging discussion of Neolithic enclosures.)

- Bradley, R. *The Significance of Monuments: On the Shaping of Experience in Neolithic and Bronze Age Europe*. London: Routledge, 1998.
- Burl, H. Aubrey W. *A Guide to the Stone Circles of Britain, Ireland, and Brittany*. New Haven, Conn.: Yale University Press, 1995.
- . *From Carnac to Callanish: The Prehistoric Stone Rows and Avenues of Britain, Ireland, and Brittany*. New Haven, Conn.: Yale University Press, 1993.
- Cunliffe, Barry. *Facing the Ocean: The Atlantic and Its Peoples, 8000 B.C.–A.D. 1500*. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2001.
- Darvill, Timothy, and Julian Thomas, eds. *Neolithic Enclosures in Atlantic Northwest Europe*. Oxford: Oxbow Books, 2001.
- Joussaume, Roger. *Dolmens for the Dead: Megalith-Building throughout the World*. Translated by Anne and Christopher Chippindale. London: Batsford, 1988.
- Mohen, Jean-Pierre. *Standing Stones: Stonehenge, Carnac, and the World of Megaliths*. Translated by D. B. Baker and D. J. Baker. London: Thames and Hudson, 1999. (A small, popular book.)
- . *The World of Megaliths*. Translated by Helen McPhail. New York: Facts on File, 1990.
- Patton, Mark. *Statements in Stone: Monuments and Society in Neolithic Brittany*. London: Routledge, 1993.
- Ritchie, Anna, ed. *Neolithic Orkney in its European Context*. Cambridge, U.K.: McDonald Institute for Archaeological Research, 2000.
- Scarre, C., ed. *Monuments and Landscape in Atlantic Europe: Perception and Society during the Neolithic and Early Bronze Age*. London: Routledge, 2002.
- Thorpe, I. J. N. *The Origins of Agriculture in Europe*. London: Routledge, 1996.
- Varndell, Gillian, and Peter Topping, eds. *Enclosures in Neolithic Europe: Essays on Causewayed and Non-Causewayed Sites*. Oxford: Oxbow Books, 2002.
- Whittle, Alasdair W. R. *Europe in the Neolithic: The Creation of New Worlds*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1996.

I. J. N. THORPE

AVEBURY

The great henge monument of Avebury represents one of the largest and best-preserved Neolithic sites surviving in England. Henges, which are unique to the British Isles, are ditched enclosures, often of

roughly circular form, with a surrounding bank and ditch entered through causeways, within which were structural arrangements and alignments of standing stones, timbers, and pits. Avebury is part of a dense Neolithic complex of surrounding monuments and domestic activity that date from early in the Neolithic (c. 3800–4000 B.C.) to the Bronze Age (c. 2000 B.C.). The henge represents a final phase of building activity and appears to replace the nearby earlier causewayed enclosure site of Windmill Hill.

The complex (which is repeated in similar form and sequence at a number of other ceremonial sites in southern Britain) includes first a dense concentration of Neolithic long barrows for collective burial (at least 25 are known from within 10 kilometers of Avebury), together with evidence for occupation and ritual activity, such as mortuary enclosures. The complex is followed by later Neolithic monument building, including avenues of posts and stones, burials, circular ceremonial buildings, enclosures, and henges. At Avebury an immense artificial mound called Silbury Hill dates from this phase together with enclosures and buildings or circles at the Sanctuary, Beckhampton, West Kennet, and other sites. Such landscapes and monuments are considered to have been intentionally designed as part of the “sacred geography” of the Neolithic world.

Avebury is located in central southern England, in the county of Wiltshire, some 130 kilometers (80 miles) southwest of London. It lies within a basin in rolling chalk downland, which offered an easily cleared, well-drained, and fertile environment to the early farming communities of prehistory. Located at a height of between 150 and 200 meters (about 500 to 600 feet) above sea level, the hilly landscape is dissected by small streams and river, draining to the River Thames, with Avebury broadly visible from the landscape around it. Local resources also included sarsen stone (a hard siliceous sandstone used for constructing the stone circles), which is scattered over the area along with flint.

The Neolithic in Britain began about 4000 B.C. with the arrival of agricultural practices and associated domestic artifacts from continental Europe, including pottery and groundstone axes. For several centuries the clearance of natural vegetation and woodland formed a major activity, one that is well



Fig. 1. Village of Avebury and Stone Circle. © ADAM WOOLFITT/CORBIS. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

documented in the Avebury area, revealing a progressively open and managed landscape. The Windmill Hill enclosure was constructed in the middle of the fourth millennium B.C. and was in use well into the third millennium B.C. Avebury and other henges were built in the first two-thirds of the third millennium B.C., often over many centuries. Stone circles were constructed from late in the third to the early second millennium B.C. (c. 2200–1600 B.C.). At Avebury dating evidence has been obtained from the surrounding ditch, showing it was constructed between 2900 and 2600 B.C. Dating the stone circles is more difficult. Carbon-14-dated charcoal from the outer circle suggests erection between 2500 and 1700 B.C. (broadly contemporary with the much damaged stone Beckhampton Avenue, c. 2400–2200 B.C., which lies to the west of Avebury and is under archaeological investigation). The inner circles, however, remain undated by modern methods, and the presence of lower chalk packing (a harder and geologically earlier chalk excavated

from the deepest parts of the great ditch and not exposed elsewhere) around the standing stones suggest an early date.

The henge of Avebury had an immense ditch and bank; excavation shows that the ditch was 10 to 14 meters deep, with the spoil (dirt) made into a huge outer bank reaching originally to a height of as much as 6 meters. There were four causewayed entrances, each about 20 meters wide, and aligned north-northwest, south-southeast, east-southeast, and west-southwest. The southern entrance was connected to a stone avenue (the West Kennet Avenue) and there may have been additional standing stones linking Avebury with sites at Beckhampton. The “circle” reached a diameter of about 350 meters (1,140 feet), and covered 11.5 hectares (28.5 acres). The now-reduced standing stones within the circle were arranged as an outer circle of some 95 to 100 stones surrounding a number of other arrangements, including two inner circles each with a diameter of about 100 meters and at one time com-

prising some 25 to 30 stones each. At the center of the northern circle was a “cove” of three huge stones, and at the center of the southern circle was an arrangement of small standing stones known as the “Z” feature surrounding the “obelisk,” an upright monolith. Resistivity and other remote sensing techniques have identified several other potential settings of timbers, stones, and earth within the henge, which may include timber buildings such as found at Woodhenge and the Sanctuary. These settings may have been aligned on solar, lunar, and other celestial observations, forming a simple astronomical observatory, although this has never been proven. Excavations undertaken in 1908–1922 by Harold St. George Gray and in 1934–1939 by Alexander Keiller explored the ditch and the standing stones and showed how the site was constructed. However, artifactual finds mostly in ditch and stone-hole deposits have been few, and they include later Neolithic and Beaker pottery, flint tools, rare animal and human bones, and antlers. Some scholars interpret the placement of such artifacts, for example, at the terminal ends of ditches, as symbolic and intimately connected to the ceremonies and activities of Avebury.

Avebury is one a small group of so-called superhenges, which are of great size and are spread across Britain and parts of Ireland. Other sites include Marden (530 meters diameter) and Durrington Walls (525 meters diameter), both in Wiltshire; Mount Pleasant (370 meters diameter) in Dorset; Knowlton (227 meters diameter) in North Dorset; the Giant’s Ring (180 meters diameter) near Belfast in Northern Ireland; Dowth Q (175–165 meters diameter) in Ireland; and the Ring of Brodgar (123 meters diameter) in Orkney. Stonehenge, in comparison, has a diameter of only 110 meters. The “superhenges” enclosed settings of wood posts, stones, pits, and circular buildings and were located within landscapes of dense prehistoric activity with large and prominent monuments. Typically they seem to be part of a long succession of monumental ceremonial landscapes and monuments, often originating around clusters of Early Neolithic long barrows and causewayed enclosures. By the later Neolithic in the mid-third millennium B.C., the long barrows and related sites had been replaced by henges, avenues, rare large round burial mounds—such as Duggleby Howe in Yorkshire, Knowth in Ireland, and Maes

Howe in Orkney, Scotland—and other individual graves, structures, and enclosures.

Research since the late twentieth century has concentrated on interpretations of the meaning of henges and how they were perceived by their builders and users. In particular phenomenology has become a popular means to investigate prehistoric sites. Phenomenology is a personal and interpretative approach to the human experience of landscapes and places and involves a philosophy of space, society, and perception. It is thought that the enclosures were used for the enactment of ceremonial and religious activities involving large numbers of people. The banks and ditches may have served the function of providing a viewing area while at the same time excluding active participation from the onlookers. Landscape research and reconstruction has provided important evidence about tree clearance and land use and shows a reversion to scrub and grassland during the third millennium B.C. Such changes may have been the result of economic and social upheaval, and monument building in the form of henges and avenues might express new social identities and belief systems.

See also Neolithic Sites of the Orkney Islands (vol. 1, part 3); Boyne Valley Passage Graves (vol. 1, part 4); Stonehenge (vol. 2, part 5).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Burl, Aubrey. *Prehistoric Avebury*. New Haven, Conn.: Yale University Press, 2002.
- Malone, Caroline. *Avebury*. London: Batsford, 1989.
- Pollard, Joshua, and Andrew Reynolds. *Avebury: The Biography of a Landscape*. Stroud, U.K.: Tempus, 2002.
- Ucko, Peter J., Michael Hunter, Alan J. Clark, and Andrew David. *Avebury Reconsidered from the 1660s to the 1990s*. London: Unwin Hyman, 1991.

CAROLINE MALONE

BARNENEZ

An immense dry-stone cairn at Barnenez in the Finistère region of Brittany, France, contains eleven passage graves and ranks among the most important prehistoric monuments of western Europe (fig. 1). It overlooks the Morlaix inlet in the commune of

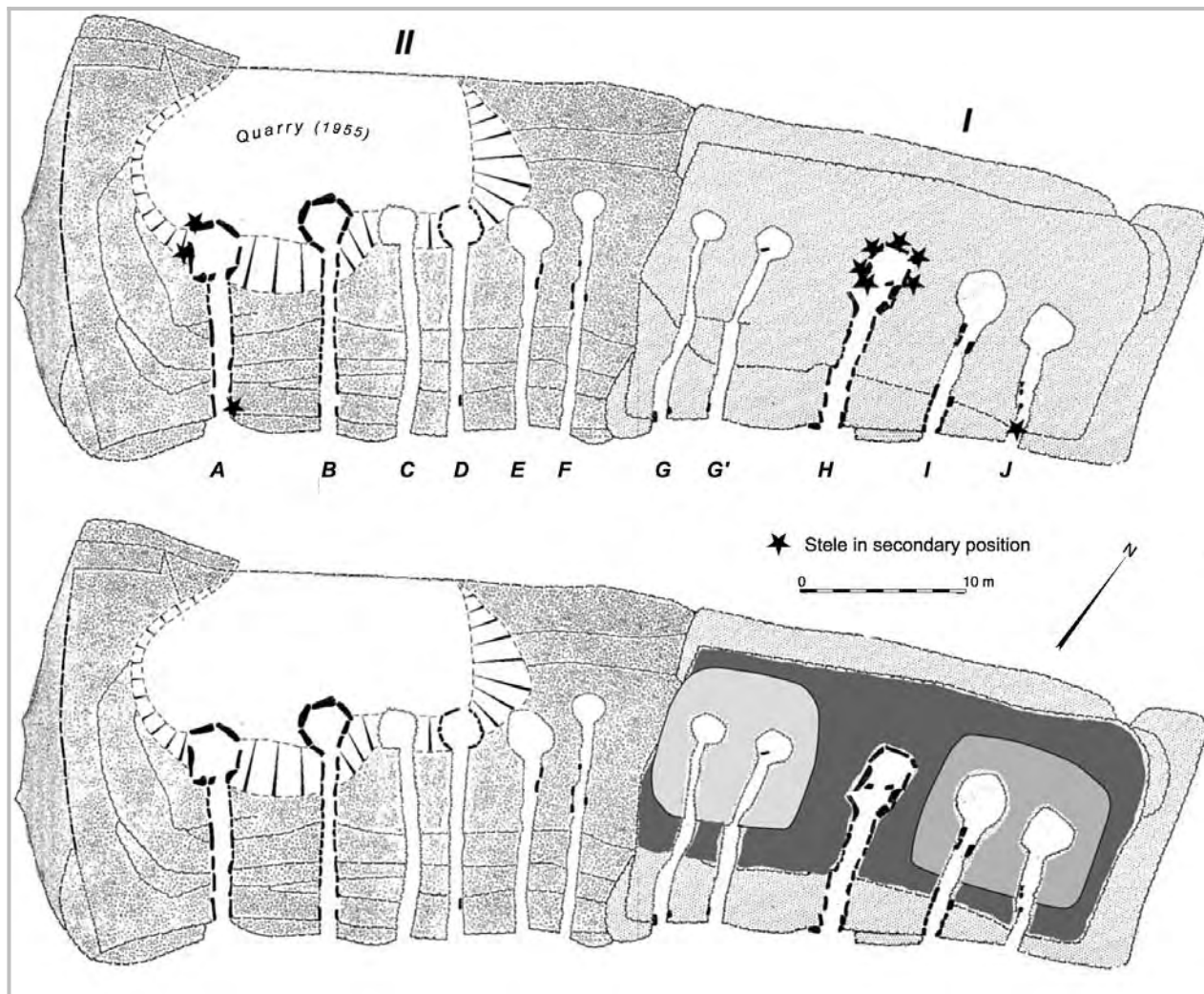


Fig. 1. Plan of the Barnenez mound (adapted from Giot 1989) with position of the decorated steles, and interpretation of the architectural sequence. COURTESY OF SERGE CASSEN. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

Plouézoch. Analysis of the construction of the cairn and the form of its passage graves indicates that the monument was built in several phases. Although some initial radiocarbon dates among a long series, when recalibrated, suggested that the Barnenez tombs were built very early in the fifth millennium B.C., analyses of the forms of the tombs and the contexts of the charcoal samples used for dating now point toward a date of approximately 4300–4100 B.C.

The footprint of the Barnenez cairn takes the form of a trapezoid. The entire monument is 74 meters long on its east-west axis, 29 meters wide at the western end, and 17.5 meters wide at the eastern end. Its eleven passage graves (A, B, C, D, E, F,

G, G', H, I, and J) lie roughly parallel to each other. The passages enter at the south and run north to the chambers. Some of the Barnenez passage graves are constructed using dry-stone walling (flat stones stacked up) and corbeled vaulting (in which each course of stones is shifted toward the center of the chamber until the roof is eventually closed in). Others have orthostats (large upright stones) roofed over with capstones (large boulders laid flat across the orthostats, fig. 2). In several instances, orthostats are combined with dry-stone construction.

The Barnenez site was discovered in the mid-1950s. A quarry had been established at the site, and a pit opened in the mass of stones revealed buri-



Fig. 2. View of the northern part of Barnenez mound: the cairn, destroyed by a modern quarry, gives a glimpse of the internal megalithic chambers A (background) and B still covered by a stone slab. COURTESY OF SERGE CASSEN. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

al chambers A, B, C, and D. They were brought to the attention of archaeologist Pierre-Roland (P.-R.) Giot, who headed the Anthropology Laboratory of the National Center for Scientific Research at the University of Rennes. At that time France lacked the archaeological resources it has today, but Giot spearheaded efforts to carry out a rescue excavation. At his insistence, work in the quarry was stopped. Consequently, France applied a national rule that the accidental discoverer of an archaeological site would be responsible for its preservation. Giot began his research in 1955 and closed most parts of the monument to the public while conducting his studies.

Barnenez and the neighboring monument of Carn were the first European passage graves to be radiocarbon dated. The first reported dates—in the first half of the fifth millennium B.C.—surprised scientists, who had expected a late-fourth millennium B.C. date, based on typological classification of the architecture. The unexpectedly early dating made it

possible to affirm the presence of a Breton identity on the French archaeological landscape, this at a time when the preservation of Neolithic monuments was gaining importance. Giot's research accelerated the rate of learning about megalithic architecture and its origins. Nonetheless, it was not until 1987, more than thirty years after the site's discovery, that Giot's scientific monograph on Barnenez and Carn was published, giving archaeologists the hard data and scientific analysis to assess his conclusions.

THE ARCHITECTURE

Eleven passage graves stretch through the body of the Barnenez cairn, all of which open to the south through a rectilinear facade. Rather than being the product of one or two construction stages, this massive monument was in reality constructed in several stages, offering successive states that were very different from the final appearance of the enormous stone mound as it appears in its restored form. The Barnenez construction phases have been the subject

of debate among archaeologists, but a plausible sequence based on the form of the burial chambers is presented here.

The cairn is divided into two distinct parts that can be identified by the composition of their respective building materials, which are of distinct geological origin and have different colorations, at least on their outer surfaces. One part of the cairn contains five graves in a high topographical location; the other includes the six remaining chambers built on the slight downslope. The second group of graves seems to be the more recently constructed, but the design of the graves are similar from one part of the massive structure to the other. In fact, it is necessary to consider these two constructions in detail to realize that the sequencing is more complex than it appears and involves the chronology of individual graves.

To understand these differences fully, it is necessary to sidetrack to a classification principle of the chambered tombs of western France. The typologies of megalithic funerary architecture in Brittany are well established and have been steadily improved by a long line of researchers. Despite the limitations of classifying funerary architecture, a main goal of such classifications is to define the structure and organization of the internal space. Examples include passage graves with a well-differentiated single chamber, passage graves and chambers divided into compartments, and passage graves and chambers with widened openings.

This classification of the Breton chambered tombs is based on a spatial differentiation of the tomb interiors into two principal parts: a burial chamber and an access passage to the burial chamber. These parts are naturally linked, and their relationship changed over time. As the chambers developed and grew longer, the access passage and surrounding burial mound grew shorter. This typological sequence of megalithic burial places is not rigidly established but rather is driven by a dynamic evolution leading from the first passage graves (moving from the fifth to the fourth millennium B.C.) up to the gallery graves (end of the fourth millennium B.C.). In the earlier tombs, there is a strong differentiation between the chamber and the entrance passage, while in later tombs the differences in width and height between chamber and passage grow smaller and eventually disappear.

It is exactly this progressive loss of differentiation of the internal space of the graves that makes it possible to distinguish the various phases in the Barnenez cairn. Thus, in the eastern cairn, the central tomb (H) differs typologically from the adjacent tombs (G and G'; I and J). Until recently, the carvings and megalithic construction of tomb H led to its interpretation as a sort of temple or monument of prestige, while the neighboring tombs that used only dry stone were interpreted as ritual spaces that were in simultaneous service with tomb H.

Such simultaneous use is thrown into doubt, however, upon examining the tomb interiors. The extreme differentiation between chamber and passage in tombs G, G', I, and J, not only discernible in plan but also in elevation (with vault heights reaching five meters), contrasts with the absence of such features in tomb H. Analysis of the variation in chamber and passage shape now allows new speculations on the layout and construction sequence of the original monument: Two small adjacent cairns initially coexisted, each containing two first-generation passage graves, G and G', I and J. Subsequently, tomb H was built between these two earlier cairns, according to a distinct plan and with distinct materials. The whole tomb complex was covered by a more enveloping cairn, making it necessary to lengthen the passageways of the older monuments.

The construction sequence of the second part of the massive cairn can also be reexamined according to this model. Application of the classification principle again differentiates tombs A and B, placed at the western extremity, from the other four adjacent chambers to the east. The lack of internal differentiation is seen in the volumes of the chambers of tombs A and B, where the ceiling heights are barely higher than the passage heights. They are indeed constructed differently than the neighboring tombs, using massive capstones rather than corbeled vaults. This method is the result of a choice to reduce the chamber volumes, and it is identical to the construction of the Table des Marchands, another famous monument of Brittany that cannot date further back than 3800 B.C. Tombs C and D exhibit a little more differentiation between passage and chamber than A and B, and the next ones, E and F, even more so. It is possible to imagine an initial small cairn containing these older passage graves

as suggested by similar narrow sections in their passageways.

During the final process of covering over the graves with a pile of stones, it was necessary to lengthen the pre-existing passageways to adapt to the elongated trapezoidal plan of the final monument. It can be clearly seen that the orientation of the passageways in the two parts of the Barnenez cairn differ by several degrees. It was necessary to extend the passageways so that their opening could be reestablished on a relatively straight, rather than concave, facade.

QUESTIONS ABOUT RADIOCARBON DATING

Radiocarbon dating carried out on charcoal samples from Barnenez initially identified the monument as the oldest stone architecture in western Europe. The dating was seen as a successful application of the radiocarbon technique and was used to support arguments for a “long” chronology of Breton megalithic monuments beginning close to 5000 B.C. But a careful reinterpretation of the samples that were originally analyzed prior to the early 1990s has questioned these findings.

The oldest Barnenez radiocarbon date (between 5010 and 4400 B.C.) comes from the excavation conducted in chamber G in 1968. The charcoal samples were collected from the clay soil of the chamber, and this soil, as Giot wrote in *Barnenez, Carn, Guennoc*, was apparently intentionally brought in to level out the floor of the chamber. In tomb F, the charcoal samples came from a forty-centimeter-thick layer of sterile clay topped by the layer of gravel that contained the archaeological material (between 4705 and 3955 B.C.). In chamber A (between 4550 and 3895 B.C.), the charcoal samples were taken from a supply of broken stones deposited there to level out the natural slope of the terrain. As can be seen in all the cases, the materials from which the charcoal samples were collected—the sterile clay layer and soils brought from outside—do not in any way date the construction of the tombs. Instead, it is probable that the charcoal resulted from fires that occurred long before the monument was constructed.

When viewing Barnenez within the overall regional typological sequence of mortuary monuments, it appears that a more realistic date for the

construction of its earliest passage graves would lie in the last centuries of the fifth millennium B.C. It was perhaps not until several centuries later that the monument reached its final form. Although a revision in dating of several centuries closer to the present may seem relatively insubstantial on the scale of the millennia of later prehistory, it is important to provide an accurate chronological position for the type of mortuary architecture seen at Barnenez. At the same time, it is important to keep in mind that this architecture was the product of a long period of development of monumental mortuary construction in the west of France. In this regard, the carved upright stones, or orthostats, found in several of the Barnenez tombs assume new significance.

MEGALITHIC SYMBOLISM AND STELAE AT BARNENEZ

Several orthostats from the chambers and passageways have carvings made by pecking on the rough surfaces of the granite. Motifs include axe blades, bows, horned signs, and goddesses, but the images are open to a variety of interpretations (in one recent view, the horned signs are judged to be birds and the goddesses to be phalluses). An important observation is that the stones on which they appear seem first to have been used elsewhere as upright standing stones or stelae and then were subsequently incorporated into the tomb architecture at Barnenez.

It is now known that passage graves appeared in Brittany only after the development of two phenomena of prime importance that took place between 4700 and 4300 B.C.: the use of upright stones as burial markers and public stelae and the creation of burial mounds. The marking of human burials by devices on the surface is one of the developments that indicates the transition from the Mesolithic to the Neolithic period. At first these markings were unobtrusive, characterized by deposits of earth over the individual grave pit. Later these mounds, or barrows, grew increasingly more ostentatious, in some cases extending more than one hundred meters in length and rising to more than ten meters in height. The concept of the stone stela quickly came to accompany these round and long barrows. In addition to the funerary stelae associated with the stone cist graves, gigantic public stelae were set up in lines, of which the most spectacular culmination is seen at

the colossal site of the Erdeven-Carnac-La Trinité complex. There, thousands of upright stones were erected over a distance of several kilometers.

All the stelae at Barnenez, decorated or not, visible or hidden, give evidence of only one chronological stage before 4300 B.C. They can be viewed as proof of a formative period of monumentalism that preceded the construction of the first passage graves. It took place after Neolithic populations from the Parisian basin had settled on the fertile loess lands of Armorica (the ancient name of Brittany) around 4900 B.C. In the coastal areas they encountered the settlements of hunter-fisher-gatherer societies that already knew of the Neolithic presence far to the east. Given these earlier developments, the passage graves at Barnenez can be seen as a central point in the tradition of Neolithic mortuary monumentalism. The passage graves were preceded by long or short or round barrows and stelae and were followed by the construction of gallery graves. This sequence began early in the fifth millennium B.C. and concluded about 3000 B.C.

See also *Boyne Valley Passage Graves* (vol. 1, part 4).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Bailloud, Gérard, et al. *Carnac: Les premières architectures de pierre*. Patrimoine au présent. Paris: CNRS, 1995.
- Boujot C., and Serge Cassen. "Le développement des premières architectures funéraires monumentales en France occidentale." In *Paysans et Bâtisseurs: L'émergence du Néolithique atlantique et les origines du Mégalithisme, Actes du XVIIe colloque interrégional sur le Néolithique. Vannes 29–31 octobre 1990*, p. 195–211. Rennes, France: Revue Archéo. de l'Ouest, Supp. no. 5, 1992.
- Cassen, Serge. "Des dates conventionnelles isolées aux séries par SMA: Un emploi raisonné pour une chronologie assistée par le radiocarbone du VIe au IIIe millénaire en Armorique." In *Archéologie, Patrimoine culturel et datation par le C14 par spectrométrie de masse par accélérateur*, pp. 18–21. Paris: Minist. De la Culture, Centre de Rech. Des Musées de France, Musée du Louvre, 2002.
- . "Material Culture and Chronology of the Middle Neolithic of Western France." *Oxford Journal of Archaeology* 12, no. 2 (1993): 197–208.
- Cassen, Serge, and Jean L'Helgouac'h. "Du Symbole de la crose: chronologie, répartition et interprétation." In *Paysans et Bâtisseurs: L'émergence du Néolithique atlantique et les origines du Mégalithisme*. Actes du XVIIe colloque interrégional sur le Néolithique. Vannes 29–31 octobre 1990, pp. 223–235. Rennes, France: Revue Archéo. de l'Ouest, Supp. no. 5, 1992.
- Cassen, Serge, and J. Vaquero. "La Forme d'une chose." In *Éléments d'architecture (Exploration d'un tertre funéraire à Lannec er Gadouer, Erdeven, Morbihan. Constructions et reconstructions dans le Néolithique morbihannais. Propositions pour une lecture symbolique)*. Edited by Serge Cassen, pp. 611–656. Chauvigny, France: Editions chauvinoises, Mémoire 19, 2000.
- Chambon, P. "Analyse des dépôts sépulcraux des dolmens F0 et B2 de Bougon." In *Les Tumulus de Bougon. Complexe, Deux-Sèvres: Complexe mégalithique du Ve au IIIe millénaire*. Edited by Jean-Pierre Mohen and Chris Scarre, pp. 132–143. Paris: Errance, 2002.
- Giot, Pierre-Roland. *Les stèles de l'Age du fer dans le Léon, Finistère*. Rennes, France: Institut culturel de Bretagne, Université de Rennes I, 1989.
- . *Barnenez, Carn, Guennoc*. Rennes, France: Travaux du Laboratoire d'Anthropologie, Préhistoire, Université de Rennes I, 1987.
- Giot, Pierre-Roland, Jean L'Helgouac'h, and Jean-Laurent Monnier. *Préhistoire de la Bretagne*. Rennes, France: Editions Ouest-France, 1998.
- Gouletquer P. "Barnenez-ar-Zant et ses symboles." In *La Bretagne linguistique. Centre de recherche bretonne et celtique* 7 (1991): 103–133.
- L'Helgouac'h, Jean. "De la Lumière aux ténèbres." In *Art et symboles du Mégalithisme européen: Actes du 2ème Colloque international sur l'art mégalithique, Nantes, juin 1995*. Edited by Jean L'Helgouac'h, Charles-Tanguy Le Roux, and Joël Lecornec, pp. 107–124. Rennes, France: Association pour la diffusion des recherches archéologiques dans l'ouest de la France, 1997.
- Scarre, Chris, Roy Switsur, and Jean-Pierre Mohen. "New Radiocarbon Dates from Bougon and the Chronology of French Passage-graves." *Antiquity* 67 (1993): 856–859.
- Visset, L., Jean L'Helgouac'h, and J. Bernard. "La Tourbière submergée de la pointe de Kerpenhir à Locmariaquer (Morbihan), étude environnementale et mise en évidence de déforestations et de pratiques agricoles néolithiques." *Revue archéo. de l'Ouest* 13 (1996): 79–87.

SERGE CASSEN

(TRANSLATED BY JEANNE S. ZANG)

BOYNE VALLEY PASSAGE GRAVES

The name "Brugh na Bóinne" (the Bend of the Boyne) refers to a small area of the valley of the

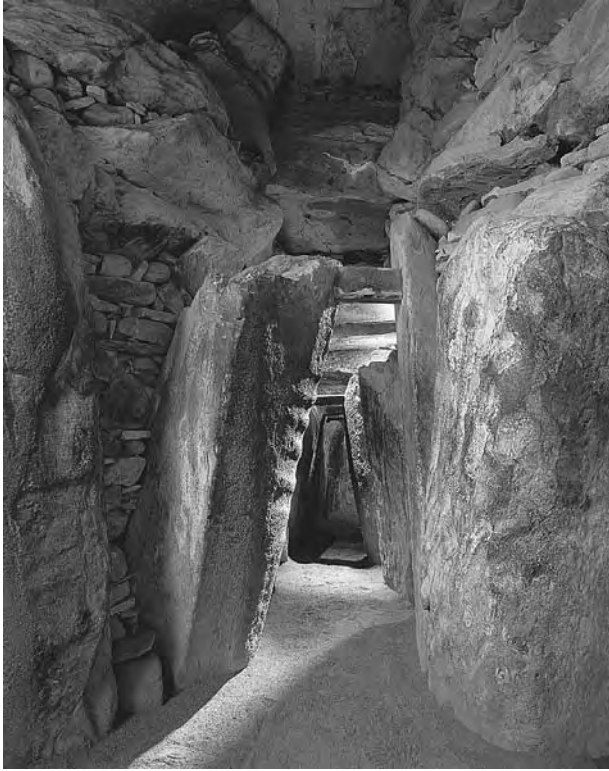


Fig. 1. Interior corridor of the passage grave at Newgrange, Ireland. © GIANNI DAGLI ORTIS/CORBIS. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

River Boyne north of Dublin in County Meath in the eastern part of Ireland. It is one of Europe's most significant archaeological areas, containing evidence for human activity that has extended (with gaps) since about 4000 B.C. In all, twelve separate archaeological phases are represented at this location, with significant monuments and artifacts surviving for each.

One Boyne Valley phase, however, has produced more spectacular monuments than others: the phase characterized by megalithic passage tombs, which were built and used over a period during the Neolithic that extended from sometime before 3000 B.C. to 2500 B.C. or even later. As the name implies, passage tombs consist of a passage that led into a chamber. The principal structural elements of these tombs are large upright stones, called orthostats, that are roofed over with capstones. In some tombs the chamber is somewhat bottle-shaped, while others have a much more elaborate cruciform-shaped chamber. Burial was mainly con-

finied to the chambers. The burial rite was cremation, and it was usual for a burial deposit to contain the remains of more than one individual. Successive burial also occurred. Sometimes grave goods accompanied the deposit. Grave goods were usually of a personal nature and consisted of beads of stone and bone, which were parts of necklaces, and bone pins that could have fastened cloaks. Tools or weapons were not included. The passage and chamber were covered by a circular cairn of smaller stones or by an earthen mound, often outlined by a curb of smaller upright stones.

Evidence for about forty passage tombs has been found at Brugh na Bóinne, with half of them occurring at Knowth. These tombs average 16 meters in diameter. But Brugh na Bóinne is especially known for the presence of three massive monuments that are among the largest known passage tombs, each covering about an acre of ground. These are found at Dowth, Knowth, and Newgrange. All have features of their location and structure in common. Each is located on an elevation, the mound is circular in shape, and the tombs and curbs were constructed from huge stones, hence the use of the term "megalithic" to describe them. The mound at Dowth is 85 meters in diameter and 15 meters high. It is the least well-preserved of the three great sites. In 1847 excavations at Dowth involved the digging of a large pit in the center that has never been filled in. The mound is delimited by a series of curbstones; there is evidence for about sixty. Further examples exist, but these are now covered by slip from the mound. Underneath the mound are two passage tombs, the entrance to both opening toward the west. The larger tomb is 12.5 meters long and has a cruciform chamber, but two small annexes open off the right-hand recess. The other chamber is 8.25 meters long and has a circular chamber from which a recess opens on the south side.

Knowth consists of a cemetery of twenty tombs, one being the massive mound that measures 95 by 80 meters and 11 meters high. The mound contains two tombs placed back to back, discovered in 1967 and 1968. The example that opens to the east is the larger and more complex. Its passage is nearly 40 meters long. The cruciform-plan chamber is 6 meters high and has a corbelled roof, in which flat stones were laid with each course progressively

closer to the center, forming a beehive-shaped dome over the chamber. The west tomb is more than 34 meters long. Toward the inner end of Knowth West the passage bends to the right before expanding into a somewhat bottle-shaped chamber. Around the mound are 127 curbstones averaging 2 meters long. The grave goods were standard, beads of stone or pottery and bone pins, but one object, a flint macehead, stood apart from the others due to its elaborate geometric art and technique of manufacture. The site has also produced evidence for settlement predating the passage tomb.

Newgrange is a truly impressive monument consisting of a mound formed from loose stones, 85 meters in diameter and 11 meters high. Its chamber was discovered in 1699, so little has survived of its original contents. The passage at Newgrange, as at Knowth East, leads into a cruciform-plan chamber with a corbelled roof, 6 meters high. The tomb is 24 meters long, with its entrance on the southeastern side. A stone-lined slot above the entrance allows the rising sun on the shortest day of the year (21 December) to shine down the passage into the chamber. On the outside there is a surrounding circle of free-standing stones, the largest of which is about 2.5 meters high.

A remarkable feature of the Brugh na Bóinne passage tombs is the presence of designs engraved on many of the structural stones that form the passages and chambers. These are nonrepresentational and geometric forms with circles, spirals, and lozenges the most common motifs. Due to damage over centuries a number of the structural stones are missing, but on the evidence of what survives it may be that in total a thousand stones with art were used at Brugh na Bóinne. This is by far the largest number of decorated stones from any one place in Europe. This art can be looked on as part of ritual activities.

The Boyne Valley passage tombs constitute the largest and most spectacular of several major megalithic cemeteries in Ireland. Other concentrations of passage tombs are known from Lough Crew, also in County Meath, and from Carrowkeel and Carrowmore in County Sligo. While these cemeteries have similar general characteristics, each has specific features. Although the sites are called “cemeteries” due to their obvious mortuary role, it is also clear

that Neolithic people visited and used these localities for a variety of ceremonial activities.

The magnitude of the major tombs suggests clearly that passage tomb society was wealthy, innovative, and economically stable. The economy was based on mixed farming. Indeed there must have been a substantial population in that area. This population would have included experts in different fields. Some had a knowledge of geology, as a particular type of rock with specific characteristics was chosen as the foremost structural element. These stones did not come from the immediate area; building the tombs required transporting large stones weighing several tons over some distance, an enormous undertaking. Achieving the actual construction of the tombs, furthermore, must have involved specialists, especially architects and engineers. For that time, around five thousand years ago, passage tomb society was probably the most advanced of any in Europe. Brugh na Bóinne was an integral part of this society; for several centuries it was a place where vibrant Late Stone Age society flourished and developed and even influenced areas abroad.

See also *The Megalithic World* (vol. 1, part 4); *Avebury* (vol. 1, part 4); *Stonehenge* (vol. 2, part 5).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Eogan, George. *Knowth and the Passage Tombs of Ireland*. London: Thames and Hudson, 1986.
- O’Kelly, Michael J. *Newgrange: Archaeology, Art and Legend*. London: Thames and Hudson, 1982.

GEORGE EOGAN

TRACKWAYS AND BOATS

Throughout prehistory humans negotiated access through their environment via structures such as trackways and roads and through the use of a range of boats in riverine, estuarine, and coastal contexts. Evidence supports the hypothesis that prehistoric populations had the ability to cross significant water bodies, such as the North Sea.

TRACKWAYS

From northern Europe alone—in Britain and Ireland, the Netherlands, Denmark, and northern Ger-

many—roughly one thousand trackways and roads have been discovered, primarily through exposure during commercial and private peat-cutting activities. Perhaps one of the more famous, and certainly most intensively studied, trackways recovered to date is the Sweet Track found in the Somerset Levels, a large expanse of peat land in Somerset County, southwest England. The Somerset Levels is a low-lying area on the southern side of the Severn Estuary. Fieldwork has been carried out in the Somerset Levels since the nineteenth century, but the formation of the Somerset Levels project in 1973 under the direction of John Coles and Bryony Coles enabled systematic surveying and recording of the wetland archaeology of the Levels. The Sweet Track ran for a distance of about 2 kilometers from the base of the Poldern Hills on the south side of the Levels in a northeasterly direction to a sand island called Westhay.

One of the most important aspects of waterlogged archaeology is that waterlogging excludes oxygen from the burial environment, making it anaerobic and thereby inhibiting the activities of bacteria and fungi—key agents in the decay process. Waterlogging preserves a wide range of materials, resulting in the recovery of significant organic evidence for past human activities. The Sweet Track is an excellent example of the preservation afforded by waterlogging. It was discovered during peat cutting in 1970 by Ray Sweet, after whom it was named. This trackway is a single-plank walkway constructed across the reed and sedge beds of the Levels. Environmental evidence collected during excavation and sampling—in particular, the specific environmental preferences of the beetle species whose remains were recovered from the peats in which the trackway was preserved—indicates that in certain areas the trackway crossed pools and areas of open water.

The trackway was constructed using split oak trees to produce planks of about 3.4 meters long and 0.6 meters wide. Pegs of hazel and alder were used to secure poles of ash, alder, hazel, or elm that formed the substructure of the track, with the pegs hammered in obliquely to produce a secure base for the plank walkway. Over the basal structure thus produced, peat and vegetation were deposited to provide further support for the upper planks. These planks were made of oak, set down parallel to the basal poles and wedged in place between the tops

of the pegs. Finally, the planks themselves were occasionally secured in place by vertical pegs driven through holes that were cut toward the ends of the planks. The excavations carried out along the trackway showed that it followed the line of an earlier trackway, called the Post Track, which was constructed of long planks of ash and lime laid on the marsh surface and marked by posts of hazel spaced at 3-meter intervals along its route.

The excellent preservation of the Sweet and Post Tracks has provided significant insights into the woodworking capabilities of prehistoric populations. Numerous finds have been recovered in close proximity to the trackway since its initial discovery by Ray Sweet, who himself found a Neolithic “leaf-shaped” arrowhead when he found the first ash plank of the trackway. Other finds include numerous flint artifacts including an unused flint axe. A particularly important discovery was of a jadeite axe, a polished light green stone, which was in perfect condition. The significance of this axe is that its source is the foothills of the European Alps, indicating long-distance exchange networks that would presumably have required transport across the North Sea or English Channel. The precise dating of the trackway, afforded by dendrochronological (tree-ring) analysis of the oak planks, indicates that this axe found its way to southwest England in 3806 or 3807 B.C., the year the trees were felled. This precise calendar age provides a context for other finds along the trackway, including a broken pot with its contents of hazelnuts, a wooden dish, and several leaf-shaped arrowheads. One of these arrowheads retained the resin used to secure it to its shaft, whereas another retained a part of the shaft and evidence for its binding.

The Sweet Track is just one of many trackways found in the Somerset Levels, but in 2003 it was the earliest yet known. Other forms of trackway continued to be constructed across the Levels into the later prehistoric periods up to c. 500 B.C.

In Ireland, systematic survey and excavation undertaken by the Irish Archaeological Wetland Unit has recovered more than one thousand prehistoric sites in the wetlands of County Longford, County Mayo, and County Offaly. Many of these sites are trackways, called *toghers* in Ireland, and given that there are about 1.2 million hectares of wetland in Ireland, the need for routes across the bogs is readi-

ly apparent. Trackways of all periods from c. 3650 B.C. to A.D. 1450, except for a hiatus at c. A.D. 1–500, had been recovered from the Irish bogs as of the early 2000s.

One such site is Curraghmore-16 in County Offaly, a single-planked oak walkway 580 meters long, which is estimated to have been built c. 1625–1435 B.C. on the basis of radiocarbon dating. In a fashion resembling the construction of the Sweet Track, the Curraghmore planks were secured by pegs driven through mortise holes cut in their ends. The distinguishing feature of Curraghmore-16's construction is the extreme narrowness of the planks; at about 0.2 meters wide, they are among the narrowest in a single-plank walkway ever discovered in Ireland.

In the Moundillon Bogs of County Longford, Ireland, the opposite end of the chronological range of planked trackways is found. The planked corduroy road of Corlea-1, first studied scientifically in 1984, is the first known Iron Age trackway from the Irish wetlands. Dendrochronological analysis dates this trackway at 148 B.C. Corlea-1 is made from oak sleepers about 3 or 4 meters long (on average), placed side by side over longitudinal roundwood rails, or runners, of oak. Numerous wooden artifacts were recovered from under the track's timbers: these finds included parts of a wagon, pieces of buckets, handles, and a piece of timber with markings comprising lines thought to represent the earliest evidence for writing in Ireland.

Trackway finds and associated artifacts constructed in wood provide significant insight into the woodworking capabilities of prehistoric and historic communities. Past communities split oaks to produce planks and managed woodland to ensure sustainable timber supplies. Woodland management also assured the provision of roundwood poles for use in the making of "hurdles," woven wooden panels used in another form of trackways and similar to fencing panels still in use today in some areas. The presence of mortise holes and reused structural timbers of buildings found in some trackways also provide insight into possible woodworking practices used in prehistoric house construction.

BOATS

Throughout prehistory humans used water-borne transport to facilitate movement in their landscape.

Such craft included hide boats, sewn-plank boats, and dugout or logboats. In the Stone Age fjords of Halskov and Lindholm, Denmark, at least 21 Mesolithic boats have been excavated. In total, some 250 logboats have been recovered from Denmark, 57 of which date to the Stone Age. The Mesolithic boats are found in coastal contexts and are dated to 5400–3900 B.C. The excavated evidence, supported by experimental studies, indicates that the Danish logboats were made by hollowing out tree trunks with an axe, a technique considered quicker and more controlled than the use of fire. The boats were constructed from linden trees and were about 6 or 7 meters long; their hulls were between 1 and 4 centimeters thick. A finished boat had a pointed bow and a stern with a separate bulkhead. Such logboats would probably have been capable of crossing large expanses of sea, allowing their navigators to travel between 20 and 40 kilometers from the mainland.

One of the most significant forms of prehistoric boats are the Bronze Age sewn-plank boats recovered from the Humber Estuary on the east coast of England, from the Welsh side of the Severn Estuary, and from Dover in southeastern England. These craft attest an advanced level of technological skill in boatbuilding beginning c. 2000 B.C. Experimental studies have shown that these craft would have the potential for crossing the North Sea and could possibly have been propelled by sail as well as by paddling. The finds from Ferriby on the Humber Estuary in Yorkshire have been interpreted by their original finder, Edward V. Wright, as being from a boatyard or similar facility. The original find of a Ferriby boat was made in 1937. A half-scale reconstruction of Ferriby 1, a sewn-plank boat dated to 1880–1680 B.C., was undertaken in 2003 (fig. 1). The maximum length of boat discovered in the Humber is about 16 meters. The keel plank was curved upward at the bow and stern, and the side planks were tied in to the keel. An unusual aspect of these craft was the use of stitches to hold the planks together. Finds of planking and aspects of the construction identified from the study of these timbers have shown that between 2000 and 1600 B.C. these craft would have been substantial; the boats themselves would have weighed about 4 tons empty, and they were able to carry a cargo of 7 tons or about thirty passengers.



Fig. 1. Ferriby boat reconstruction, 2003. COURTESY OF MALCOM LILLIE. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

The sewn-plank boats from England all reflect an advanced level of construction technique, suggesting that the original construction and development of these craft may date back to the very earliest part of the Bronze Age, at c. 2500–2000 B.C. Their social and economic context would thus coincide with the rise in importance of the individual, a shift from the Neolithic emphasis on communal societies. The fact that variations occur in Britain during the Neolithic is significant in that the Yorkshire region of England has individual burials from c. 3000 B.C. Individuals were buried with “prestige” items thought to reflect the status or importance of the individual who was buried. Many of the prestige items were traded from the Continent, arriving in Britain in a manner probably similar to the circumstances that brought the jadeite axe found at the Sweet Track. The development of prestige exchange networks in the Bronze Age and possibly the later Neolithic may reasonably be associated with the sort of boats found at Ferriby and elsewhere in Britain.

Furthermore, the Yorkshire region is a known source of jet, a black stone that was polished and used to make necklaces, buttons, and other items. Objects made from jet are found throughout the British Isles in burial contexts associated with “important” individuals, from the Neolithic into the Bronze Age between c. 3000–1600 B.C., signifying that long distance trade in Whitby jet is synchronous with the rising importance of the individual in British prehistory.

The Humber Estuary was also the site of a significant logboat discovery: a craft 12.78 meters long and 1.4 meters wide, constructed from a single oak tree that was felled between 320 and 277 B.C., was recovered from the wetlands adjacent to the Humber. Excavation has shown that this Iron Age vessel, known as the Hasholme boat, may have been carrying a cargo of meat, and in the absence of evidence to the contrary, it is usually assumed that this craft was used for the transport of cargo in riverine contexts. The size of the single oak tree from which the Hasholme logboat was constructed suggests that oak forests still existed in the British landscape into the Iron Age period. Environmental evidence from the Humber region has suggested that the area to the north of the Humber may have been heavily forested throughout the Bronze Age, when the Ferriby boats were constructed, and remained wooded into the Iron Age.

Prehistoric populations around the world exhibit advanced woodworking capabilities from early times. Trackways and watercraft attest a considerable level of technical expertise, using techniques that are still in use in the twenty-first century. The need to cross watery areas such as bogs and rivers or seas is stimulated by the everyday requirements of access to resources such as the plants, birds, and animals in the wetlands of the Somerset Levels. The movement of cargo, as in the case of Hasholme, where meat may have been transported, or the Ferriby craft, which may have been integral to the Early Bronze Age exchange networks that were a fundamental part of society at that time, was equally important throughout both the prehistoric and the historic periods around the world.

See also Boats and Boatbuilding (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Coles, John, and Bryony Coles. *People of the Wetlands: Bogs, Bodies, and Lake-Dwellers*. London: Thames and Hudson, 1989.

———. *Sweet Track to Glastonbury: The Somerset Levels in Prehistory*. London: Thames and Hudson, 1986.

Wright, Edward V. *The Ferriby Boats: Seacraft of the Bronze Age*. London: Routledge, 1990.

MALCOLM LILLIE



CONSEQUENCES OF FARMING IN SOUTHERN SCANDINAVIA

Before the advent of agriculture, hunter-gatherers settled southern Scandinavia, during the later sixth millennia and the fifth millennia B.C. They are known in the archaeological literature as the Ertebølle culture—Ertebølle being one of the large shell middens (*køkkenmødding* in Danish) on the Limfjord in northern Jutland. In cultural terms, such hunter-gatherer communities occupied a substantial area of northern Europe: in Schleswig-Holstein, Mecklenburg, and as far east as the Polish Baltic coast, although the shell middens seem to be confined to Danish fjords. Research in southern Scandinavia during the last quarter of the twentieth century onward has vastly altered the picture of these communities. They are now seen as economically and technologically resourceful, engaged in elaborate social processes leading to the enhancement of the individual's social standing, and possessing a clear vision of their place within the natural and cultural world and within a social and economic sphere that included people with a vastly different lifestyle—the Neolithic farmers.

BEFORE FARMING: THE LATE MESOLITHIC HUNTER-GATHERERS

The Ertebølle communities lived inland as well as along the extensive coastlines, exploiting very rich natural environments; a mixture of hunting of game, fishing, seal hunting, and gathering of plants and sea mollusks often enabled year-round settlement. The Ertebølle hunter-gatherers were skilled craftspeople with a rich tool kit manufactured in flint, stone, and antler, and individuals adorned themselves with jewelry made of animal teeth, shell

beads, and amber. Some of these materials, through form and decoration, indicate geographically discrete styles, suggesting regional groups in need of expressions of social, spiritual, and economic identities. At least some groups buried their dead in cemeteries: those from Skateholm in Scania and Vedbæk on Zealand provide evidence of complex burial rituals expressed in the position of the dead, the choice of grave goods, and the accompanying burial ceremonies. This evidence has vastly expanded modern understanding of the Late Mesolithic hunter-gatherers' view of the world and their relationship with nature and with other contemporary groups.

More significantly, these hunter-gatherers did not live in isolation and were more than aware of developments farther south, where the early so-called Danubian farmers were establishing themselves from the mid-sixth millennium B.C. on the fertile loess soils of central Europe. Discoveries of items of an exotic as well as a quotidian nature that derive from the Danubian sphere speak vividly of trading links and exchanges between the Ertebølle hunter-gatherers and the southerly farmers. There is little doubt that ceramic technology, so enthusiastically adopted by the Ertebølle communities around 4700 B.C., derived from the south. Perforated Danubian axes (*Schubleistenkeile*), made of hard crystalline rocks unavailable in the north, were very attractive to hunter-gatherers, and discoveries of such axes in Ertebølle graves and from votive deposits indicate that possession of such exotic tools was prestigious and enhanced the status of those who could procure them. Gifts of domesticated animals and caches of



Selected sites in southern Scandinavia.

cereals featured in these transactions, and there is no doubt that the southern Scandinavian hunter-gatherers were familiar with agricultural foodstuffs and practices.

All these items demonstrate trade and exchange links between communities with different lifestyles; return gifts offered by the hunter-gatherers could have been equally attractive, comprising flint, bone, and antler tools; perishable commodities, such as foodstuffs (plant, protein, and honey); salt; skins and furs; and even laborers and marriage partners. Thus the issue of why the southern Scandinavian hunter-gatherers did not engage in agricultural pursuits until the very end of the fifth millennium B.C., and even then continued with the traditional econo-

mies side by side, remains one of the great debates of southern Scandinavian archaeology.

THE TRANSITION TO AGRICULTURE

The adoption of agriculture was part of a much wider process of transition from hunting and gathering to farming across the whole of the North European Plain. From a purely geographical point of view, southern Scandinavia—that is, the area from the Danish border with Schleswig-Holstein in the south to central Sweden in the north—was one of the last regions in which agriculture was established. Different groups took up the Neolithic elements at varied rates and in differing combinations. It is reasonable to assume that at least five hundred years

separated the first indigenous attempts at farming on the southern fringes of the North European Plain and the final appearance of farming in southern Scandinavia.

The idea of large-scale colonization by farmers migrating from the south is no longer supported, and it generally is accepted that hunter-gatherers themselves adopted agriculture. There is, however, little consensus on the precise nature of this process. Scholars working within an economic paradigm argue that it was only a dramatic change in the climate—to drier and warmer conditions—that forced the hunter-gatherers to engage in agriculture. Some researchers have viewed the adoption of farming as the result of a dramatic depletion of natural resources, for example, of seasonal staples such as oysters, whereas others suggest that the effects of climatic change on soil conditions permitted cereal growing to be taken up more fully. In either scenario the change is seen as swift, taking place at some time between 4100 and 3900 B.C.

In contrast to this economically oriented view, social processes also have featured prominently in discussion of the transition. The Swedish scholar Kristina Jennbert has long espoused the idea of a “fertile gift”—the slow and gradual introduction of cereals and domesticated animals into the hunter-gatherer milieu. This idea finds support in Denmark, suggesting that the process may have been more gradual than originally envisaged. Excavations at Visborg on the Mariager Fjord in northern Jutland have brought to light a coastal kitchen midden that dates to the final Ertebølle and the earliest Funnel Beaker culture (also known as *Trichterbecher* or TRB culture and *Tragtbegekultur* in Danish). Here, during the early TRB period, game hunting, fishing, seal hunting, and fowling continued, but alongside these traditional pursuits, a few domesticates—cattle and pigs—were kept, and small quantities of crops were grown. The signs of a similar process of transition have been noted in the Store Åmose bog on western Zealand. Here technological changes in the manufacture of flint tools are seen as a slow and gradual process spanning the Late Mesolithic and the Early Neolithic, even though the appearance of polished flint axes is rather sudden.

While the debate on the mechanics of the transition remains firmly embedded within the specific paradigms espoused by individual scholars, the

change ultimately must be seen as a complex process. The uniqueness of it, in southern Scandinavia and elsewhere on the North European Plain, lies in the active participation of the indigenous hunter-gatherers, who modified and transformed the central European “Neolithic package” in response to their own needs and thus created an entirely singular Neolithic culture—the so-called *Tragtbegekultur*.

NEOLITHIC FUNNEL BEAKER CULTURE COMMUNITIES IN SOUTHERN SCANDINAVIA

The adoption of farming had a profound impact on southern Scandinavian communities. In terms of chronology, the Funnel Beaker culture—so named after its characteristic funnel-necked pot known in German as *Trichterrandbecher* (fig. 1)—traditionally is divided in Scandinavian chronology into two major horizons: the Early Neolithic (EN I and II: 4100/4000–3400 B.C.) and the Middle Neolithic (MN I–V: 3300–2800/2700 B.C.). Each of these horizons has been refined on the basis of distinctive ceramic styles, which, in general, find support in other dating evidence.

Not surprisingly, there was a considerable degree of continuity with the preceding Mesolithic, but many aspects of everyday life were given a new content and symbolism, not just through novel economy but also, even more significantly, in the transformations in all cultural, social, and ideological spheres. By way of illustrating some of these phenomena, one may consider aspects of settlement, industrial development, and ceremonial activities, all of which demonstrate the originality and profundity of this historically momentous process.

Funnel Beaker Settlement and Land Use. The early farmers in southern Scandinavia had a strong preference for lighter soils, locating their settlements in hilly landscapes interspersed with bogs, marshes, and stretches of open water. Such topography emphasized the importance of both the dry higher ground and the low-lying wetter landscape; it also ensured ecological diversity with a combination of forest, meadow, and arable land offering ideal conditions for early agriculture. The only reliable evidence of agricultural activities comes from the presence of cereal crops and bones of domesticated animals on settlement sites. It was the Danish

palaeobotanist J. Iversen who, in the 1940s, first recognized the possibility of interpreting the influence of humans on the natural environment through the study of pollen records. Subsequent research in this field, using pollen from bog deposits and from old land surfaces preserved beneath the burial mounds, has led to an understanding of the type and extent of anthropogenic activities of the early farmers. While there are regional variations, pollen analyses from various localities in Scania, eastern Denmark, and northern Jutland show that, during the EN, open lime or birch forests were maintained for small-scale cereal cultivation and intensive grazing of cattle and pig. In the MN, coppiced hazel woodlands were used for permanent cereal growing, with repeated burnings for the improvement of grazing.

While cereals of various types (wheat and, later, barley) and domesticated animals (cattle, pigs, sheep, and goats) began to contribute more to the overall economy, many of the hunting and fishing stations established during the Ertebølle continued to be used by the Funnel Beaker farmers. In the Store Åmose, farmers still made use of the earlier hunting and fishing locations. The small island of Hesselø north of Zealand was popular during the winter months with seal hunters. Sølager, by the Roskilde Fjord, may have been the hunting outpost for those living at Havnelev, 3 kilometers farther inland, and was used to catch birds that migrated in the winter. The old kitchen middens continued to be occupied: at Norsminde, eastern Jutland, and at Bjørnsholm and Visborg, northern Jutland, there is evidence of farming settlements just outside the midden zone, suggesting that permanent occupation was possible along the coast.

Initially settlements appear to have been small. This finding may reflect the preservation conditions rather than the original size, because many are found preserved under the earthen long barrows. Numerous sites, including the famous Barkær site on Djursland Peninsula that once was thought to be a classic Danubian-style longhouse, have been reinterpreted convincingly as long barrows placed upon early TRB settlements. The actual settlement structures are difficult to decipher: light buildings of unclear construction noted at Mosegården and Lindebjerg and D-shaped houses postulated elsewhere (Hanstedgård and possibly Troldebjerg). Only



Fig. 1. Funnel-necked beaker from Sarup, Fyn—a vessel form which gave name to this vast cultural complex. COURTESY OF NIELS ANDERSEN. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

when the Funnel Beaker culture became fully established, from the MN onward, do larger sites appear. (The late settlement at Spodsbjerg on Langeland, for example, apparently extended over 300,000 square meters.) As if in exact opposition to the early Funnel Beaker settlement pattern, many of these later settlements had been located upon abandoned ceremonial causewayed enclosures. This phenomenon is well recognized, but initially it led to some difficulties in interpretation, evoking concepts of fortified settlements for which there is no evidence. House structures become clear only toward the end of the TRB, with some of the best-preserved examples being on the island of Bornholm.

The settlement of this island is a remarkable testimony to the navigational skills of the Neolithic farmers. The 37-kilometer-wide strait separating the island from the Swedish mainland is known for very strong currents and changing winds, and the crossing must have been one of the most hazardous enterprises of that time. Excavations on the southern part of the island, at Limensgård and Grødbygård, have brought to light remarkable remains of several long rectangular Funnel Beaker houses, up to 22 meters in length, revealing sophisticated architecture based on complex arrangements

of central and side posts supporting the roofs of the structures.

Flint and Ceramic Industries. One of the consequences of the introduction of farming to southern Scandinavia was the development of a new kind of industry catering to the needs of farmers, that is, mining for flint and mass production of tools—most important, axes. Whereas small implements, such as knife blades, scrapers, sickles, and even arrowheads, usually could be made from abundantly available surface flint, the manufacture of axes for forest clearance and woodworking required good-quality flint in large nodules. The chalky cliffs of the eastern Danish islands, as well as chalky deposits in southern Scania and northern Jutland, provided deeply placed primary flint deposits that were exploited by means of surface extraction as well as deep-shaft mining.

The northern flint mines at Ålborg, Bjerre, Hov, and Kvarnby as well as the numerous quarries and workshops from eastern Denmark provide details of the extraction and production processes. These activities clearly were carried out by specialists with expert knowledge of mining techniques, flint properties, and tool manufacture. The flint nodules were subject to on-the-spot quality control: one of the Kvarnby shafts had on its floor about three hundred roughly worked nodules that had been tested and rejected. Similarly abandoned axe preforms also have been found near workshops along the eastern shores. Hoards of axe blanks indicate that axes normally left the mines as blanks, to be worked and traded elsewhere, although workshops outside the shafts at Kvarnby show that at least some tools were finished and even hafted on the spot.

Experiments in axe manufacture conducted by Danish archaeologists show that an individual craftsperson must have had a precise notion of what the finished product should look like and that the production of a rough-out (the initial rough form, with a few hammerings only to give it a shape, from which an axe would be made) could have been accomplished in about ten minutes. Further knapping for about two hours was needed to produce a well-proportioned axe, but the polishing, which ultimately is responsible for the aesthetics and the excellent working quality of the Scandinavian Funnel Beaker axes, was the truly time-consuming process, taking from six to thirty hours of work.

The enormous scale of these industrial activities is difficult to imagine. Not only were the axe manufacturing centers able to satisfy the seemingly continuous demand for axes as tools, used both locally and for long-distance exchange with communities in the western part of the North European Plain, but they also produced a surplus that became an important social resource employed in a variety of votive and ceremonial contexts. Just like the pottery, an essential everyday tool, such as the flint axe, also was considered an important social resource with symbolic prestige, used in complex intercommunal exchanges and freely disposed of in waterlogged locations, at megalithic tombs, and in causewayed enclosures.

Pottery is the most common find in all Funnel Beaker contexts. The manufacture and use of ceramic vessels were very important. Nonetheless, the strongly decorative character of Funnel Beaker pottery means that it features in the archaeological literature more as a tool for the construction of elaborate typochronologies than as a significant element of the material culture, enlightening archaeologists as to its role in the quotidian and ceremonial spheres of activity. In everyday life clay vessels were used for storing and cooking food. While the late Ertebølle hunter-gatherers were keen ceramic makers, the Funnel Beaker vessels are technologically greatly improved. The tempering was increased to withstand high temperatures and to prolong the life span of the pot as a cooking vessel, and there was a wider range of forms and decoration. In the early Funnel Beaker, bowls generally were used in the mixing and serving of food, whereas beakers were used as cooking pots—staining on their exterior walls clearly reveals foodstuffs that boiled over. Later the beakers were replaced by a variety of bowls, hanging vessels, and simple, virtually undecorated bucket shapes. Throughout the Funnel Beaker, flat clay disks also were used in culinary activities; the name “baking plates” may well reflect their function.

Apart from household activities, from the very beginning pottery was employed in a wide range of contexts extending well beyond the domestic arena. It seems that some of the most expertly made and beautifully decorated vessels, such as the so-called pedestal bowls, were produced deliberately for display and use in ceremonies and rituals. Thus pots, together with other objects, were deposited in bogs

and at the edges of lakes. They were manufactured and disposed of at ceremonial enclosures and also played a significant role in the funerary ritual, as grave goods and in ceremonies that involved wasteful and extravagant destruction of pottery (doubtless containing food offerings) outside ancestral tombs.

The Ritual and Ceremonial Landscape.

Through their agricultural practices, the farmers did alter the natural environment around them: forests were cut to create land suitable for crop fields, meadow pastures, and settlements. Their most powerful and lasting legacy, however, was achieved not so much through agricultural practices but rather through the creation of a rich ceremonial landscape—a theatrical setting for social interaction and for the expression of rituals on a scale never before encountered in Scandinavia. The most dramatic aspect of this ceremonial landscape manifests in the presence of burial monuments and enclosures. Less tangibly, but no less significantly, votive offerings of pottery and hoards of flint axes and other goods are witness to the heavily ritualized consumption of commodities, suggestive of an ever growing competitive nature among the Scandinavian farmers.

Votive offerings placed at lake edges, deep in the marshy and boggy areas, and in other watery locations, seem to have been made by the late Ertebølle hunter-gatherers, perhaps symbolically linking the natural and the cultural worlds in which they lived. The Scandinavian farmers continued these traditions, on a greatly intensified level, with peak activity between 3500 and 2950 B.C. The hundreds of flint axe hoards, disposed of in wet environments in close proximity to settlements and tombs, underscore the scale of the flint industry, which was capable of sustaining not just the economic but also the ritual demand for axes. They also emphasize the social significance of agriculturally marginal land. This importance of watery places is particularly well documented on the Danish islands, where the bog deposits make ritual use of ceramics, foodstuffs, and, occasionally, even human sacrifices.

The excellent records for peat extraction in the Store Åmose bog on Zealand, going as far back as the 1870s, provide a fascinating source of information on the bog pots and associated deposits. Unlike the goods seen in funerary contexts, the vast majori-

ty of vessels represent the most common domestic category, the beaker. At least some were used for cooking before their deposition; traces of fish have been identified, and wooden spoons sometimes are found inside the pots. In their classic form, these votive offerings—in addition to flint axes—comprise various combinations of pots with amber jewelry and domesticated and wild animals. Complete skeletons of domesticated cattle, with remains of sheep, goat, deer, birds, and fish, are some of the exceptional finds that have come to light from Store Åmose. Human sacrifices also were part of these lakeside rituals, and at least some of the Neolithic bodies found in bogs represent individuals who met with violent death by arrow, strangulation, or drowning through being weighted down with stones. What guided people to dispose of material goods, animals, and humans in lakes and rivers is not known, but such practices demonstrate that material culture was an important symbolic resource used in mediation between humans and their natural environment.

The megalithic tombs of southern Scandinavia are dramatic, monumental structures, and their prominence in the archaeological record is such that, until the late 1930s, it was not uncommon to refer to the Funnel Beaker culture, both here and in Germany, as the “megalithic culture.” New discoveries and theoretical approaches to Neolithic burial, however, have altered the perception of the “megaliths” in relation to other forms of contemporary burials. Megaliths now are regarded as only one of the many expressions of monumental burial that have become an accepted feature of the Neolithic of northwestern Europe. Scandinavian research at the end of the twentieth century has contributed significantly to the recognition of this phenomenon.

Thus the earliest burial chambers of the Scandinavian Neolithic, dated from c. 4100/3900 B.C., were constructed in timber. Some of these so-called flat graves remained without any elaborate superstructure, as, for example, at Dragsholm on west Zealand; others at one stage or another were enveloped in massive earthen mounds. While these barrows, their graves, and associated structures display a range of different forms that reflect the local customs and preferences of individual communities, the tradition offers a background against which the

megalithic chamber may be seen as a stone version of an already popular grave form.

From the middle of the nineteenth century, the stone-built tombs—the so-called megaliths—inspired Scandinavian scholars. Sven Nilsson was among the first to concern himself seriously with the Scandinavian megaliths, and he was followed by another Swede, Oscar Montelius. While the latter is remembered primarily for his typologies of the Scandinavian Bronze Age, he also was the first to present a typology of the southern Scandinavian megaliths. Since then many typo-chronological schemes have been presented to account for the development of this phenomenon. While many types have been proposed, in principle, there are two basic categories: the dolmen (*stendysse*) and the passage grave (*jettestue*), each with a variety of forms. The construction of dolmens began toward the end of the EN (Fuchsberg phase), soon after 3700 B.C., while passage graves do not contain materials that are older than the MN Ib (Klintebakke phase), dating to 3300 B.C.

Hand in hand with the elaborateness and complexity of megalithic architecture goes the refinement of the funerary ritual. The earliest dolmens appear to have contained single inhumations accompanied by few grave goods, but the majority of tombs display a different ritual. In contrast to timber chambers, the accessibility of the stone-built chambers permitted repeated use of the interior, and in some cases, remains from as many as two hundred individuals have been found. In the interior, piles of bones with skulls carefully placed on top were described by nineteenth-century archaeologists as chaotic. The selection, manipulation, and arrangement of human remains—thus active engagement with ancestral bones—were socially significant to the users of the tombs. Associated rituals are expressed most dramatically in the deliberate placement and subsequent destruction of pottery by the entrances to the tombs.

The tombs, which most likely operated on a local, village level, were complemented in the wider landscape by ceremonial enclosures devoted to communal activities for scattered populations. These sites are endowed with their own architectural identity, which seems to have arisen as a cumulative effect of numerous ceremonial acts: cutting and recutting ditches, piling up banks, and erecting pali-

sades. The activities involve deposition of materials that cannot be considered normal domestic refuse. Burned cereal grain and animal remains in the form of skulls of cattle, sheep, pigs, and dogs are suggestive of feasting. Depositions of selected items, such as flint axes, weapons, ceramics, and ornaments as well as partial human remains in the ditches are reminiscent of votive activities performed at water-logged locations.

The distribution of votive river and lake places, the megalithic tombs, and the causewayed enclosures within the range of .5 to 2 kilometers from settlements—as well as the distribution of artifacts at and between these locations—implies transport, communication, and physical movement. Thus another consequence of the Neolithic in southern Scandinavia was the creation of transport and communication routes, some of which were used over many millennia. The old medieval Haervay-Heerweg route, from Viborg in northern Jutland to Hamburg (Germany) and beyond, has been shown to have originated in the TRB period, with the megaliths its oldest markers and with the Neolithic flint axes manufactured at Bjerre and Hov the earliest goods to have traveled along it.

THE DEMISE OF THE FUNNEL BEAKER CULTURE

The end of the Funnel Beaker culture in southern Scandinavia some time between 2900 and 2700 B.C. was, like its origins, a complex process; it is poorly documented in the archaeological record, and its interpretation remains largely intuitive. In global terms the TRB culture was followed by another massive, pan-European phenomenon, the largely pastoral Corded Ware culture. In Denmark, the Corded Ware is referred to as the Single Grave culture (*Enkeltgravskultur*) because single graves are the most diagnostic type of site. In Sweden it is known as the Battle-Axe culture (*Stridsyxekultur*) after the profusion of this type of stone weapon. This situation in southern Scandinavia is complicated further by the presence of another cultural complex, the Pitted Ware culture—named after the characteristic decoration of ceramics with deep, pit-like impressions.

The relationship between the Pitted Ware culture, found mainly in southeastern Sweden and northeastern Denmark, and the Funnel Beaker cul-

ture is unclear. The chronological position of Pitted Ware culture—emerging in the archaeological record toward the later part of the Funnel Beaker culture and contemporary with the early stages of the Corded Ware culture—as well as the fact that it was based largely on hunting and gathering pose serious problems of interpretation. The Pitted Ware culture generally has been thought of as one of the numerous groups in the circum-Baltic region that continued the traditional foraging way of life. With the exception of ceramics, its material culture seems to have been geared toward hunting and fishing activities. Nonetheless, investigation of sites in Scania and northeastern Jutland shows that such groups, in some regions at least, were familiar with cereal crops and domesticated animals, even if they themselves were not actively engaged in agricultural production.

Against the background of the available evidence, it is difficult to imagine that in the shadow of the dynamic agricultural communities of the Funnel Beaker populations continued to exist that by and large followed the traditional hunting and gathering way of life. Scholarly opinions tend toward the view that at the end of the Funnel Beaker culture some communities, living in proximity to coasts and estuaries, simply may have returned to a greater reliance on hunting, fishing, and gathering. This could have been caused by a combination of factors, including environmental, economic, and ideological changes within the TRB itself. In most areas of southern Scandinavia this process of change resulted in the emergence of the pastorally oriented Corded Ware culture, whereas around the southern Kattegat zone, for a time at least, some communities seem to have faced this transitional time by returning to the rich natural resources available there.

Although in the past fanciful notions of horse-mounted eastern warriors were evoked to explain the appearance of the Corded Ware culture in Europe, it now seems that a local, if regionally diversified, emergence is a more appropriate working concept. Indeed there is sufficient evidence to show a degree of continuity from the late Funnel Beaker culture to the subsequent Corded Ware culture and to demonstrate that the process of social and economic change, which ultimately led to the emergence of the Corded Ware culture over much of southern Scandinavia, can be perceived within the

later Funnel Beaker culture. The settlement and economy of the Corded Ware were rooted in the preceding period, although there are some regional differences. Thus in eastern Denmark and Scania, there is little evidence for change in land use, and on Bornholm and the southern Danish islands, settlement continued more or less uninterrupted on sites previously occupied by the Funnel Beaker culture. Initially at least the extant megalithic tombs in this region offered convenient burial places, since many Corded Ware burials can be identified as late additions.

The exploitation, in the later Funnel Beaker culture, of secondary animal products, such as milk and wool, began to change the overall role of cattle and sheep, leading to an increase in the sizes of herds, which, in turn, led to a demand for larger expanses of grazing land. There was a gradual opening of the landscape in eastern Denmark, but the clearest evidence for this process comes from western Jutland. There, analyses of old land surfaces preserved under Single Grave barrows have shown not only a progressive uptake of new landscapes at the time of the transition but also a conversion of vast areas into permanent pastures.

With reference to the basic material culture of the Corded Ware, elements such as beakers, amphorae, the use of cord in decoration, thick-butted flint axes, and indeed weapons in the form of the battle-axe were already familiar types, although they clearly acquired different social significance. Indeed, within the social sphere of the later Funnel Beaker culture, one may point to the progressive shift toward recognition of the individual through the increased presence of small, single graves. This is most dramatically illustrated by the so-called stone-packing grave cemeteries from western Jutland, where Corded Ware barrows with individual graves are found in large numbers (fig. 2). Moreover the emphasis on tools and weapons, rather than ceramics, in the ceremonial and funerary activities of the Corded Ware also may be said to have begun within the Funnel Beaker culture. Toward the end of the TRB, deposits in waterlogged environments and offerings in front of megalithic tombs and in association with other forms of burial—particularly the stone-packing graves—consist predominantly of stone and flint tools and weapons, with ceramics no longer fulfilling an important communicative role.

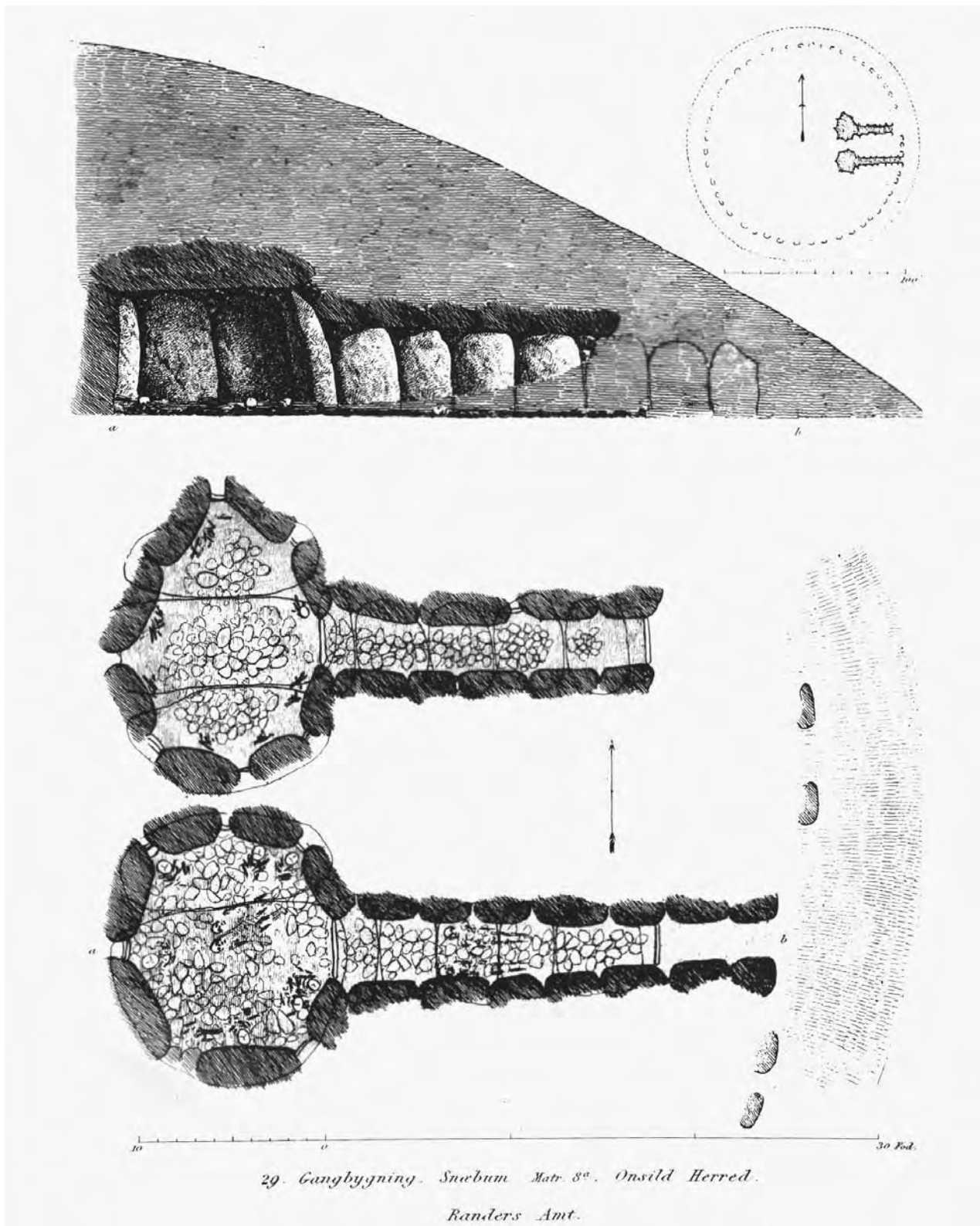


Fig. 2. Sæburn Passage Graves, Jutland, with complex burial deposits. FROM MADSEN 1900. COURTESY OF MAGDELENA S. MIDGLEY.

Thus irrespective of the wider, pan-European processes of cultural change toward the end of the third millennium B.C., the developments in southern Scandinavia demonstrate that it was local traditions, rather than extraneous ideas, that shaped the cultural patterns for the next millennium.

CONCLUSION

The Early Neolithic of northern Europe, in its Funnel Beaker cultural manifestation, is a consequence of extensive and prolonged contacts between the indigenous hunter-gatherers and the more southerly farmers. The southern Scandinavian hunter-gatherers played an important role in this historically significant process. While intellectual orthodoxies see the Neolithic economy as leading to social and ideological changes, the evidence from southern Scandinavia and from other regions of the North European Plain indicates that there the change in subsistence and diet may not have been the prime mover.

The archaeological record indicates that, whereas the proportion of domesticated foodstuffs was increasing steadily if slowly, the principal changes originated in the sphere of ideology and social relations. It was here that the dynamic and competitive nature of the late hunter-gatherer communities found a path for expressing new social, religious, and undoubtedly, political needs. This ultimately led to the emergence of an entirely singular vision of themselves and the world around them—the world of the northern European Neolithic farmers. This new world, however, was never static. It possessed its own energy, which was able to sustain new initiatives for more than a millennium and which, in its turn, contributed to subsequent cultural patterns across the whole of southern Scandinavia.

See also **The Mesolithic of Northern Europe** (vol. 1, part 2); **Sarup** (vol. 1, part 3); **Corded Ware from East to West** (vol. 1, part 4).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Andersen, Søren H. "Bjørnsholm: A Stratified *Køkkenmødding* on the Central Limfjord, North Jutland." *Journal of Danish Archaeology* 10 (1991): 59–96.
- . "Norsminde: A *Køkkenmødding* with Late Mesolithic and Early Neolithic Occupation." *Journal of Danish Archaeology* 8 (1989): 13–40.

- Bonsall, C., M. G. Macklin, D. E. Anderson, and R. W. Payton. "Climate Change and the Adoption of Agriculture in North-western Europe." *European Journal of Archaeology* 5, no. 1 (2002): 9–23.

- Bradley, Richard. *The Passage of Arms: An Archaeological Analysis of Prehistoric Hoards and Votive Deposits*. 2d ed. Oxford: Oxbow Books, 1998. (Explains new developments and covers well the interpretation of the southern Scandinavian Neolithic votive deposits from watery environments.)

- Fischer, Anders. "Trade in Danubian Shaft-Hole Axes and the Introduction of Neolithic Economy in Denmark." *Journal of Danish Archaeology* 1 (1982): 7–12.

- Fischer, Anders, and Kristian Kristiansen, eds. *The Neolithisation of Denmark: 150 Years of Debate*. Sheffield, U.K.: J. R. Collis Publications, 2002. (The fascinating debate on the transition from hunting-gathering to farming, as expressed in Danish literature in the second half of the nineteenth century and the twentieth century, has been translated into English.)

- Hvass, Steen, and Birger Storgaard, eds. *Digging into the Past: 25 Years of Archaeology in Denmark*. Copenhagen, Denmark: Royal Society of Northern Antiquaries, 1993. (A comprehensive survey of Danish prehistoric research of the last quarter of the twentieth century; new discoveries are brought together by specialists, with theoretical ideas and interpretations.)

- Jennbert, K. "'From the Inside': A Contribution to the Debate about the Introduction of Agriculture in Southern Scandinavia." In *Harvesting the Sea, Farming the Forest: The Emergence of Neolithic Societies in the Baltic Region*. Edited by Marek Zvelebil, Lucyna Domańska, and Robin Dennell, pp. 31–35. Sheffield, U.K.: Sheffield Academic Press, 1998.

- Koch, Eva. *Neolithic Bog Pots from Zealand, Møn, Lolland, and Falster*. Copenhagen, Denmark: Kongelige Nordiske Oldskriftselskab, 1998. (Excellent study of the Neolithic pots deposited in bogs and lakes on the island of Zealand and recovered, more than four thousand years later, through peat extraction. Good information on associated finds and a full catalog.)

- Madsen, A. P. *Gravhøje og Gravfund fra Stenalderen I Danmark: Fyen og Jylland*. Copenhagen, Denmark: Gyldendalske Boghandel, 1900.

- Midgley, Magdalena S. *Funnel Beaker Culture: The First Farmers of the North European Plain*. Edinburgh: Edinburgh University Press, 1992. (The only general survey of the entire Funnel Beaker culture available in English.)

- Pedersen, L. "7000 Years of Fishing: Stationary Fishing Structures in the Mesolithic and Afterwards." In *Man and Sea in the Mesolithic: Coastal Settlement above and below Present Sea Level*. Edited by A. Fischer, pp. 75–86. Oxbow Monograph, no. 53. Oxford: Oxbow Books, 1995.

- Rudebeck, E. "Flintmining in Sweden during the Neolithic Period: New Evidence from Kvarnby-S. Sallerup Area." In *The Human Uses of Flint and Chert*. Edited by G. de Sieveking and M. H. Newcomer, pp. 151–157. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1987.
- Skaarup, Jørgen. *Yngre Stenalder på øerne syd for Fyn* [The Neolithic on the islands south of Fyn]. Rudkøbing, Denmark: Langelands Museum, 1985. (Complete catalog of Funnel Beaker finds from the southern Danish islands, in Danish with English summaries.)
- Stafford, Michael. *From Forager to Farmer in Flint: A Lithic Analysis of the Prehistoric Transition to Agriculture in Southern Scandinavia*. Århus, Denmark: Århus University Press, 1999.
- Tilley, Christopher. *An Ethnography of the Neolithic: Early Prehistoric Societies in Southern Scandinavia*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1996.
- Zvelebil, M., and P. Rowley-Conwy. "Transition to Farming in Northern Europe: A Hunter-Gatherer Perspective." *Norwegian Archaeological Review* 17, no. 2 (1984): 104–128.

MAGDALENA S. MIDGLEY



PITTED WARE AND RELATED CULTURES OF NEOLITHIC NORTHERN EUROPE

FOLLOWED BY FEATURE ESSAY ON:

Ajvide 435

The arrival of farming in northern Europe around 4000 B.C. changed substantially the life of prehistoric communities in the Baltic Sea basin and southern Scandinavia. Archaeologically, this event was marked by the development of the Funnel Beaker (also known as *Trichterbecher*, or TRB) cultural tradition—indeed, in the view of most scholars, Funnel Beaker culture arose as a result of the adoption of new farming practices and cultural traditions (such as new ways of making pottery, production of long-bladed flint and of polished stone tools, and new burial practices and house construction) by the local hunter-gatherer communities after a prolonged period of contact with the first farmers to the south, in central Europe. In terms of lifestyle changes, these hunter-gatherers-turned-farmers adapted farming to the local conditions by placing emphasis on stock keeping, by building more permanent villages away from coastal locations and shifting from a largely marine diet to one that was more terrestrial, and by developing complex ceremonies and rituals having to do with the celebration of ancestors and the burial of the dead. In the landscape, such rites were symbolized by earthen long barrows, megalithic chambered tombs, ritual earthworks, such as ditch and bank enclosures (causewayed camps), and other impressive structures. But

northern Europe's first farmers also continued with hunting and gathering, and in terms of land use, their strategies to some extent followed earlier land use patterns, prompting some researchers to agree with Per Johansson's suggestion that farming "was only one ingredient in locally varying subsistence practices." The health and life span of the Funnel Beaker people remained broadly the same as that of their hunting-gathering ancestors.

However, this process of "Neolithization," marked by the dispersal of the Funnel Beaker tradition, covered only the southern part of northern Europe: Denmark, Scania, central Sweden, and coastal southern Norway. To the north and east, vast areas of northern Europe continued to be inhabited and utilized by hunting and gathering communities that now engaged in contact and exchange with the Funnel Beaker and similar farming settlements as they became a part of a new agricultural frontier zone. Such communities developed their own ways of coping with the challenges and opportunities offered by the relative proximity of the farming world; they made changes and adjustments, while at the same time retaining a hunting-gathering lifestyle—in some cases, into the historical period. This is a fact little appreciated by most scholars of European prehistory, who tend to see

the introduction of farming into northern Europe as the end of the hunting and gathering communities there. But the history of hunter-gatherers in Europe did not end five thousand or six thousand years ago. In eastern and northern Europe it continued for another two or three thousand years, and in some regions, hunter-gatherer communities—transformed into reindeer herders and commercial hunter-gatherers—have continued into the twenty-first century. Pitted Ware and related cultural traditions in northern Europe form an early stage in this exceptional cultural development.

IDENTIFICATION AND LOCATION

Pitted Ware culture is defined by a characteristically shaped ceramic, which is round-based or pointed-based as well as flat-bottomed and which is decorated by rows of pits and incisions pressed into the body of the pot before firing. In shape and decoration, this ceramic reflects influences from northeastern Europe, where a major ceramic tradition became established in the sixth and fifth millennia B.C. Known as Combed, or Pit-Comb, Ware, this tradition originated probably in eastern Siberia and China in the Late Palaeolithic and so constitutes the oldest ceramic tradition anywhere. Although Funnel Beaker technological and stylistic elements are evident in Pitted Ware—demonstrating close relations between the two communities—Pitted Ware as a whole represents the westernmost extension of this ancient ceramic tradition.

The repertoire of Pitted Ware cultures varied from region to region, reflecting perhaps the heterogeneous nature of this tradition: that is, in each region, different ancestral communities participated in the constitution of the local culture. For example, the manufacture of stone tools reflected regional sources of raw materials, as did the production and stylistic variation of stone axes. One fairly widespread element of Pitted Ware culture was the use of fishhooks, harpoons, and nets and sinkers, as well as the use of lanceolate flint points (arrowheads or spearheads), which were sometimes serrated or fixed with a tang (or both) and which were probably used in the hunting of marine mammals.

Pitted Ware settlements are located in coastal regions of northern Europe: along the southern coasts of peninsular Scandinavia from southern Norway to central (“middle”) Sweden, along the

northern coast of Jutland, and on major islands in the Baltic: Öland, Gotland, and Åland between Sweden and southern Finland. There are some Pitted Ware sites in the interior, such as Alvastra, but such locations tend to be multicultural aggregation sites and may not have belonged to any one community. Such coastal orientation suggests a focus toward the exploitation of marine resources, and this was indeed the case.

DAILY LIFE: ECONOMY, DIET, RITUAL

Bone remains from Pitted Ware sites show that sealing, fishing, and capture of waterfowl were the mainstays of the Pitted Ware economy. The only terrestrial animal of any importance was the pig, which appears to have supplemented the diet of Pitted Ware communities on special occasions.

The economy of the Pitted Ware people, like their material cultures, varied from one region to another. Studies of seasonality of occupation on Pitted Ware sites in central Sweden (around Stockholm) suggested to Stig Welinder that, at first, Pitted Ware communities spent most of the year at their main village on the coast, making seasonal forays inland to hunt for pigs and fur-bearing animals and to engage in exchange with farming communities in the interior. Later on, islands off the coast became more important, and people switched to a seasonal exploitation of seals and other resources in the archipelago in the spring and the autumn when these resources were the most abundant.

On Gotland in the central Baltic, seals made an overwhelming contribution to the diet of Pitted Ware communities. Cultural layers of Pitted Ware settlements such as Västerbjers, Ire, and Ajvide revealed bone remains of seals, pigs, dogs, fish, and waterbirds. At Ajvide, an extensive dark cultural layer was saturated with seal train oil and numerous seal bones and was interpreted as a “seal-altar,” a ritual seal-butchering area. On the nearby island of Åland, people of Jettbole seem to have treated seal skulls in a special ritual manner, and clay figurines found there combined seal and human features.

The clearest indication of Pitted Ware diet, however, comes from the stable isotope carbon and nitrogen analyses of human bones and teeth. Skeletons buried on Gotland offer evidence that seal was by far the predominant element of the Pitted Ware

diet, so much so that Gunilla Eriksson has described the Pitted Ware people on Gotland as “the Inuit of the Baltic.”

At the same time, however, pigs feature as an important part of bone assemblages found on many Pitted Ware sites. It is clear that pigs had to be brought to Gotland, Åland, and other islands by human agency—pigs do swim, but not that far. The size and shape of some of the pig bones suggest some sort of selective breeding, perhaps domestication. This is a classic problem for archaeology: Were these pigs domesticated? And if so, why did people eat mostly seal? Scholars have argued about this for some time. Some favor a domestic pig hypothesis; others argue for them being wild; and still others suggest that people kept semiwild “freeland pigs” that were under partial control of human beings who fed them surplus seal and fish and so tamed them without exercising much control over their reproduction. It is clear from the stable isotope analyses that none of the pigs examined had any marine input in their diets; they consumed completely terrestrial foods. This argues in favor of the wild pig hypothesis, although it does not explain how wild pigs got to be on Gotland in the first place. The evidence also suggests that pigs were consumed on ritual occasions only—the intermittent pig feasts did not occur often enough to make a mark in the stable isotope record, but they did generate enough pig bones to feature prominently in the bone remains. It is clear that the pig was a ritually significant animal: carved boar tusks and pig jaws were deposited in the graves of the Pitted Ware people.

It seems that Pitted Ware communities buried their dead in cemeteries, although most of the evidence for this comes from a single region: the island of Gotland, where around 180 graves, distributed over several burial sites, usually with associated cultural layers, were found. At Västerbjers, flat-grave inhumations contained grave goods such as ceramics; worked boar tusks; pendants of seal, dog, and fox teeth; awls, spears, harpoons, and fishhooks of bone; stone and flint axes, hollow-edge axes; flint, slate, or bone arrowheads; stabbing weapons of deer antler; bone plaques and awls; perforated bone disks; tubular beads of dentalium and cylindrical bone beads; and bones of seals and pigs. Slate artifacts, battle-axes, and several other artifacts testify to far-ranging contacts with other regions of the Baltic

and northern Europe. All age groups, from children to mature adults, were buried in the cemetery. Although there is some variation in the grave goods, there is no clear pattern indicating a special social standing by gender, age group, or any other grouping. It seems that grave goods reflected life history and social status on an individual basis. The time span of the cemetery has been radiocarbon dated to 2850–2500 B.C.

ORIGIN, DURATION, AND SIGNIFICANCE OF PITTED WARE CULTURE

The origin and duration of the Pitted Ware culture have been a matter of some debate among prehistorians. On the one hand, the Pitted Ware tradition has been represented as a wholesale return of the Neolithic society to hunting after the initial experiment with farming: Fredrik Hallgren, for example, maintains that “farmsteads in the interior were deserted in favour of coastal settlements, where the main livelihood was fishing and sealing.” On the other hand, Pitted Ware culture is regarded by some researchers as an offshoot of an essentially farming society: they see Pitted Ware societies as pig-herding farmers who occasionally cultivated cereals, or else they view Pitted Ware artifacts as a signature of Funnel Beaker or Corded Ware farmers who might have traveled to the seaside to get some fish and seal. Another view, however, rejects both of these interpretations. As Gunilla Eriksson correctly notes, Pitted Ware was a hunter-gatherer society with its own sense of identity. The clue to its existence lies in the history of contacts between foragers and farmers in the first five hundred years of Stone Age farming in southern Scandinavia (4000–3400 B.C.).

Pitted Ware culture seems to have arisen in the fourth millennium B.C., and its tradition falls into a time between 3500 and 2500 B.C. The culture emerged in the context of two events. First, it coincided with the disappearance in some regions of the first farming settlements of the Funnel Beaker tradition, which for the previous four hundred years had occupied the interior regions of the southern part of Scandinavia. And second, it was associated with the strengthening of contacts and exchange with hunting-gathering communities in Finland and the eastern Baltic, evident in artifact imports and stylistic traits. Pitted Ware tradition was replaced in most

regions by the Corded Ware culture before or by 2500 B.C., which in turn gave rise to a range of cultural traditions combining Pitted and Corded Ware elements in the Early Bronze Age.

Pitted Ware culture, represents a broader historical development: a case of innovating hunter-gatherers active in a contact zone between foragers and farmers. As people adopted farming practices within the context of the Funnel Beaker culture, hunting and gathering traditions were not forgotten. After a few generations, coastal regions—where fishing and sealing presented a more viable alternative to farming for subsistence—returned to a hunting and fishing lifestyle, with seal and pig forming the focus of activities. This shift in emphasis was supported by the presence of agricultural communities inland and farther afield (as in Denmark and Poland), where the demand for seal fat and oil, furs, and perhaps various forest products supported the development of specialized hunter-gatherer strategies for trade. The presence of large amounts of ceramics, the size of the pots, jars with remnants of seal oil, and mineralogical indicators of the movement of pottery between Pitted Ware sites and the southern shores of the Baltic all suggest such trade. Within a few generations, these activities created a separate set of communities with a separate set of symbolic expressions: the Pitted Ware culture. The model for these symbols was provided by contact with the cognate hunter-gatherer communities farther east: perhaps Pit-Comb Ware in Finland, Combed Ware cultures in the eastern Baltic, and other similar groups.

Pitted Ware culture was eventually absorbed into a foraging-farming society of the Early Bronze Age about four thousand years ago. But the set of strategies its people generated provided a viable alternative to becoming farmers. These strategies focused on contact and exchange with the farming world, while remaining a hunting and gathering community. Such use of the agricultural frontier zone was also developed successfully by many other foraging communities in northern and eastern Europe, as the evidence from large, wealthy villages such as Kierikki in northern Finland or Sarnate in Latvia indicate. Augmented by fur trade and reindeer husbandry, commercial hunter-gatherers—a lifestyle pioneered by the bearers of the Pitted Ware

culture—has been continuing successfully to the present day.

See also **Ajvide** (vol. 1, part 4).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Ahlfont, K., M. Guinard, E. Gustafsson, C. Olson, and S. Welinder. "Patterns of Neolithic Farming in Sweden." *TOR* 27 (1995): 133–184.
- Bogucki, Peter. "Sustainable and Unsustainable Adaptations by Early Farming Communities of Northern Poland." *Journal of Anthropological Archaeology* 15, no. 3 (1996): 289–311.
- . "The Linear Pottery Culture of Central Europe: Conservative Colonists?" In *The Emergence of Pottery: Technology and Innovation in Ancient Societies*. Edited by William K. Barnett and John W. Hoopes, pp. 89–99. Washington, D.C.: Smithsonian Institution Press, 1995.
- . *Forest Farmers and Stockherders: Early Agriculture and Its Consequences in North-Central Europe*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1988.
- . "The Establishment of Agrarian Communities on the North European Plain." *Current Anthropology* 28, no. 1 (1987): 1–13.
- Edemno, R., M. Larsson, B. Nordquist, and E. Olsson. "Groperkeramikerna: Fanns de?" In *Regionalt och interregionalt: Stenåldersundersökningar i syd-och mellansverige* [Regionality and interregionality: Stone Age research in southern and middle Sweden]. Edited by Mats Larsson and Eva Olsson, pp. 135–213. Stockholm, Sweden: Riksantikvarieämbetet, 1997.
- Ekman, J. "Djursbentmaterialet från stenålderslokalen Ire, Hangvar sn, Gotland." In *Gotlands mellanneolitiska gravar* [Middle Neolithic graves in Gotland]. Edited by Gunborg O. Janzon, pp. 212–246. Stockholm, Sweden: Almqvist and Wiksell, 1974.
- Eriksson, Gunilla. "Part-time Farmers or Hard-Core Sealers? Västerbjers Studied by Means of Stable Isotope Analysis." In *Norm and Difference: Stone Age Dietary Practice in the Baltic Region*. Edited by Gunilla Eriksson, pp. 1–36. Stockholm, Sweden: Snabbtryck, 2003.
- Hallgren, F. "Lineage Identity and Pottery Design." In *Halvags kust till kust: Stenålderssamhallen i forändring* [Coast to coast: Stone Age societies in transition]. Edited by H. Knutsson, pp. 5–27. Uppsala, Sweden: Uppsala Universitet, Department of Archaeology and Ancient History, 2000.
- Johansson, Per. *The Lure of Origins: An Inquiry into Human-Environmental Relations, Focused on the "Neolithization" of Sweden*. Uppsala, Sweden: Wikstroms, 2003.
- Jonsson, Leif. "From Wild Boar to Domestic Pig: A Reassessment of Neolithic Swine of Northwestern Eu-

- rope.” In *Nordic Late Quaternary Biology and Ecology*. Edited by L. K. Königsson, pp. 51–70. Uppsala, Sweden: Societas Uppsaliensis pro Geologia Quaternaria, 1986.
- Lepiksaar, Johannes. “The Holocene History of Theriofauna in Fennoscandia and Baltic Countries.” In *Nordic Late Quaternary Biology and Ecology*. Edited by L. K. Königsson. Uppsala, Sweden: Societas Uppsaliensis pro Geologia Quaternaria, 1986.
- Lindqvist, Christian. “The Importance of Fine Mesh Sieving for the Interpretation of Faunal Remains at Ajvide and Other Neolithic Dwelling Sites on Gotland.” In *Remote Sensing*. Vol. 1. Edited by Göran Burenhult, pp. 91–111. Stockholm, Sweden: Stockholm University, Department of Archaeology, 1997.
- Lindquist, Christian, and Göran Possnert. “The Subsistence Economy and Diet at Jakobs/Åjvide and Stora Forvar, Ekstra Parish, and Other Prehistoric Sites on Gotland in Long-Term Perspective.” In *Remote Sensing*. Vol. 1. Edited by Göran Burenhult, pp. 29–90. Stockholm, Sweden: Stockholm University, Department of Archaeology, 1997.
- Madsen, Torsten. “Where Did All the Hunters Go? An Assessment of an Epoch-Making Episode, in Danish Prehistory.” *Journal of Danish Archaeology* 5 (1987): 229–247.
- Meiklejohn, Christofer, Erik Brinch Petersen, and V. Alexandersen. “The Later Mesolithic Population of Sjælland, Denmark, and the Neolithic Transition.” In *Harvesting the Sea, Farming the Forest: The Emergence of Neolithic Societies in the Baltic Region*. Edited by Marek Zvelebil, Robin Dennell, and Lucyna Domanska, pp. 203–212. Sheffield, U.K.: Sheffield Academic Press, 1998.
- Midgley, Magdalena. *TRB Culture: The First Farmers of the North European Plain*. Edinburgh: Edinburgh University Press, 1992.
- Nielsen, E. Kannegard, and E. Brinch Petersen. “Burials, People and Dogs.” In *Digging into the Past: 25 Years of Archaeology in Denmark*. Edited by Steen Hvass and Birger Storgaard. Translated by John Hines and Joan F. Davidson. Copenhagen, Denmark: Royal Society of Northern Antiquaries, 1993.
- Nielsen, Paul Otto. “The Beginning of the Neolithic: Assimilation or Complex Change?” *Journal of Danish Archaeology* 5 (1987): 240–243.
- Nowak, Marek. “The Second Phase of Neolithization in East-Central Europe.” *Antiquity* 75 (2001): 582–592.
- Prescott, Christopher. “Was There Really a Neolithic in Norway?” *Antiquity* 70 (1996): 77–87.
- Price, T. Douglas, ed. *Europe's First Farmers*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 2000.
- Price, T. Douglas, and Anne Birgitte Gebauer, eds. *Last Hunters, First Farmers: New Perspectives on the Prehistoric Transition to Agriculture*. Santa Fe, N.Mex.: School of American Research Press, 1995.
- Rowley-Conwy, Peter, and Jan Stora. “Pitted Ware Seals and Pigs from Åjvide, Gotland: Methods of Study and First Results.” In *Remote Sensing*. Vol. 1. Edited by Göran Burenhult, pp. 111–121. Stockholm, Sweden: Stockholm University, Department of Archaeology, 1997.
- Solberg, Bergljot. “The Neolithic Transition in Southern Scandinavia: Internal Development or Migration?” *Oxford Journal of Archaeology* 8 (1989): 261–296.
- Welinder, Stig. “Overåda: A Pitted Ware Culture Site in Eastern Sweden.” *Meddelanden från Lunds Universitets Historiska Museum 1969–1970* (1971): 5–98.
- Zhao, Chaohong, and Xiaohong Wu. “The Dating of Chinese Early Pottery and a Discussion of Some Related Problems.” *Documenta Praehistorica* 27 (2000): 233–239.
- Zvelebil, Marek. “The Agricultural Frontier and the Transition to Farming in the Circum-Baltic Region.” In *The Origins and Spread of Agriculture and Pastoralism in Eurasia*. Edited by David Harris, pp. 323–345. London: UCL Press, 1996.
- . “Hunting, Gathering, or Husbandry? Management of Food Resources by the Late Mesolithic Communities of Temperate Europe.” In *Before Farming: Hunter-Gatherer Societies and Subsistence*. Edited by Douglas V. Campana. MASCA Research Papers in Science and Archaeology. Philadelphia: University of Pennsylvania Press, 1995.
- Zvelebil, Marek, Robin Dennell, and Lucyna Domanska, eds. *Harvesting the Sea, Farming the Forest: The Emergence of Neolithic Societies in the Baltic Region*. Sheffield, U.K.: Sheffield Academic Press, 1998.
- Zvelebil, Marek, and Paul M. Dolukhanov. “The Transition to Farming in Eastern and Northern Europe.” *Journal of World Prehistory* 5, no. 3 (1991): 233–278.
- Zvelebil, Marek, and Peter Rowley-Conwy. “Transition to Farming in Northern Europe: A Hunter-Gatherer Perspective.” *Norwegian Archaeological Review* 17, no. 2 (1984): 104–128.

MAREK ZVELEBIL

AJVIDE

Ajvide is a large settlement and cemetery on the west coast of the Swedish island of Gotland in the central Baltic Sea. It belongs to the Pitted Ware culture, chronologically placed in the Middle Neolithic, but this is a case where the term “Neolithic” does not carry with it the usual connotations of agriculture.

Gotland is a large island, measuring some 130 by 70 kilometers, located about 85 kilometers off the coast of Sweden and twice that distance from Latvia; it was never joined to either mainland but has been an island since the retreat of the Ice Age. It has a spectacular archaeological record and often has been considered culturally distinct from mainland Sweden. The longest archaeological sequence comes from the cave site of Stora Förvar, on a small island just off Gotland's west coast. This site reveals occupation from early in the Mesolithic, based mostly on marine resources: fish, seals, and birds. Early excavations also yielded pig bones, but direct dating of these bones has indicated that they are later intrusions into the Mesolithic layers. The largest terrestrial mammal on Gotland in Mesolithic times was the hare, an animal that could have colonized the island by crossing the sea ice that forms in the cold winters. Pigs, weighing far more than hares, apparently could not have colonized the island in this way.

Gotland was the northeasternmost limit of the Early Neolithic expansion of farming. During the time of the Funnel Beaker culture, farmers introduced cereals, cattle, sheep, and pigs, and for some centuries they exploited the interior of the island—a settlement pattern markedly different from that of the predominantly coastal Mesolithic. Carbon isotopes from the food people eat can be recovered from their bones and give a clue to their diet, because there is less carbon 13 in seafood than in terrestrial food; at Ajvide the change toward a terrestrial diet is reflected in the carbon-13 measurements from human bones. Because the Baltic Sea was always brackish rather than very saline, the Mesolithic human remains from Gotland produced a carbon-13 result that in the North Sea area indicates only a partially marine diet; in the Baltic, however, it probably represents a diet based almost completely on marine foods. In the Early Neolithic the diet was as fully terrestrial as in other agricultural areas.

Ajvide is the most important of the sites that show what happened during the early part of the Middle Neolithic: a recession of agriculture and a resurgence of coastal hunting and fishing. The carbon-13 measurements indicate a diet as thoroughly marine as in the Mesolithic, reflected in the coastal settlement pattern: the interior of the island (once again) was largely unoccupied. It is not clear why

hunting and fishing regained preeminence at this time, but one factor may have been a small rise in sea level. This rise increased the salinity in the Baltic, enriching and expanding its natural resources. It is even possible that the harp seal established a short-lived breeding population at this time.

In any event, the coasts of Ajvide were occupied from c. 3300 to 2900 B.C. by coastal hunters and fishers of the Pitted Ware culture. Conditions of preservation are excellent: the site has yielded 2 tons of pottery and 3.5 tons of animal bones. Some seventy graves have been excavated, containing skeletons of varying ages, including an unusually high proportion of children. Adult graves contain diverse grave goods; one individual was buried with a large number of pig jaws and others with ceramics, harpoons, and fishhooks. Remarkably, some of the children have harpoons just as impressive as those of the adults, even though they were too young to have been proficient hunters.

Status, at least as reflected by grave goods, may have been inherited rather than attained. One of the most remarkable graves held the skeleton of a twenty-year-old woman. Across her knees was a row of perforated teeth of seal, fox, and dog, which may have been attached to the hem of a garment. On her breast were the jaws of five hedgehogs, and around her head were many hedgehog spines, apparently the remains of headgear made of hedgehog skins.

Hunter-gatherers did not usually establish cemeteries unless they lived in fixed settlements and claimed ownership of the land they occupied. Such permanent settlements were occupied for extended periods of the year or were occupied year-round. Ajvide may well have been inhabited all year: pigs were killed during the autumn and winter, seals were hunted in winter and spring, and the numerous fish would have been most easily caught during the summer. The major economic difference between Ajvide and sites of the Mesolithic is that pigs were present at Ajvide. Some researchers have argued that pigs were domestic and others that they were wild; this question remains unresolved.

Ajvide has produced many postholes, although it is difficult to isolate the ground plans of individual structures. In the center of the settlement was a large black area several meters in diameter caused by the spillage of large quantities of oil rendered from

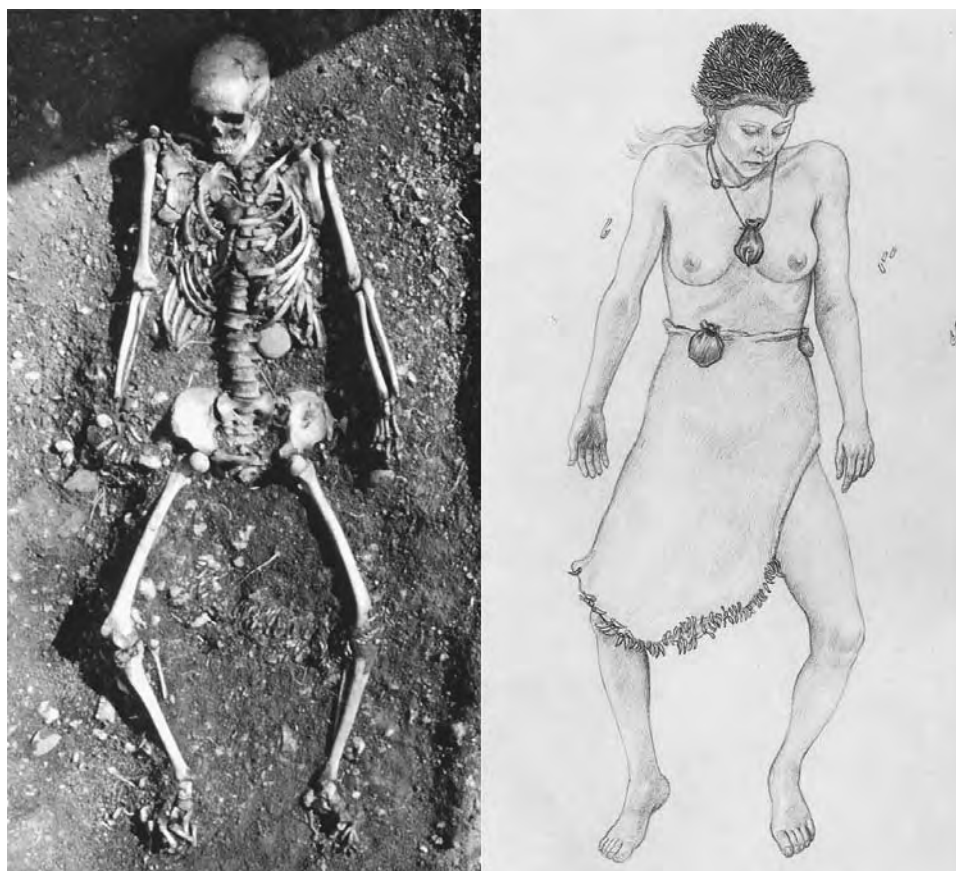


Fig. 1. Ajvide grave 2 as excavated (left). Reconstruction of interment (right) showing animal teeth on garment hem, bag containing five hedgehog mandibles on breast, and hedgehog-skin cap. GÖRAN BURENHULT. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

seal blubber, the smell of which was unmistakable during excavation. This could have resulted from purely economic activity, but at Ajvide the area may have had ritual connotations. The oil patch was demarcated by a series of large postholes, and the graves were placed in an arc around it. Some of the graves themselves were impregnated with seal oil. An economic product as valuable as seal oil may well have been imbued with ritual meaning.

After some centuries, agriculture returned to Gotland, and Ajvide was abandoned. Modern excavation and the application of scientific techniques have revealed the primary importance of Ajvide among the Pitted Ware sites on Gotland. The site shows that the appearance of agriculture need not have been an irreversible process and that under certain conditions hunting and fishing were a viable alternative, at least in the medium term.

See also *The Mesolithic of Northern Europe* (vol. 1, part 2).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Burenhult, Göran. "Säljägare och svinherdar på Ajvide" [Seal hunters and swineherds at Ajvide]. In his *Ajvide och den moderna arkeologin*, pp. 15–21. Falköping, Sweden: Natur och Kultur, 1997.
- Jonsson, L. "From Wild Boar to Domestic Pig: A Reassessment of Neolithic Swine of Northwestern Europe." In *Nordic Late Quaternary Biology and Ecology*. Edited by L.-K. Königsson, pp. 125–129. Uppsala, Sweden: Societas Upsaliensis pro Geologia Quaternaria, 1986.
- Lindqvist, C., and G. Possnert. "The Subsistence Economy and Diet at Jakobs/Ajvide, Eksta Parish, and Other Prehistoric Dwelling and Burial Sites on Gotland in Long-Term Perspective." In *Remote Sensing: Applied Techniques for the Study of Cultural Resources and the Localization, Identification, and Documentation of Sub-Surface Prehistoric Remains in Swedish Archaeology*. Vol. 1, *Osteo-Anthropological, Environmental, Econom-*

- ic, and Technical Analyses*. Edited by Göran Burenhult, pp. 29–90. Theses and Papers in North European Archaeology, no. 13a. Stockholm, Sweden: Institute of Archaeology, University of Stockholm, 1997.
- Molnar, P., C. Olson, and J. Storå. “Döda ben och levande förhistoria” [Dead bones and living prehistory]. In *Arkeologi i nordén* [Archaeology in Scandinavia]. Vol. 1. Edited by Göran Burenhult, pp. 128–131. Stockholm, Sweden: Natur och Kultur, 1999.
- Österholm, Inger. *Bosättningsmönstret på Gotland under Stenåldern: En analys av fysisk miljö, ekonomi, och social struktur* [Settlement patterns in Gotland in the Stone Age: An analysis of physical environment, economy, and social structure]. Theses and Papers in Archaeology, no. 4. Stockholm, Sweden: University of Stockholm, Institute of Archaeology, 1989.
- Österholm, S. “Traceable Remains of Train-Oil on Neolithic Seal-Hunter Sites.” In *Remote Sensing: Applied Techniques for the Study of Cultural Resources and the Localization, Identification, and Documentation of Sub-Surface Prehistoric Remains in Swedish Archaeology*. Vol. 1, *Osteo-Anthropological, Environmental, Economic, and Technical Analyses*. Edited by Göran Burenhult, pp. 113–127. Theses and Papers in North European Archaeology, no. 13a. Stockholm, Sweden: Institute of Archaeology, University of Stockholm, 1997.
- Rowley-Conwy, P., and J. Storå. “Pitted Ware Seals and Pigs from Ajvide, Gotland: Methods of Study and First Results.” In *Remote Sensing, Applied Techniques for the Study of Cultural Resources and the Localization, Identification, and Documentation of Sub-Surface Prehistoric Remains in Swedish Archaeology*. Vol. 1, *Osteo-Anthropological, Environmental, Economic, and Technical Analyses*. Edited by Göran Burenhult, pp. 113–127. Theses and Papers in North European Archaeology, no. 13a. Stockholm, Sweden: Institute of Archaeology, University of Stockholm, 1997.

PETER ROWLEY-CONWY



LATE NEOLITHIC ITALY AND SOUTHERN FRANCE

FOLLOWED BY FEATURE ESSAYS ON:

<i>Sion-Petit Chasseur</i>	446
<i>The Neolithic Temples of Malta</i>	450

Mediterranean southern France and Italy were closely linked in the Late Neolithic era, sharing similar climates, landscapes, and natural resources as well as modern boundaries. The Alps along the northern limits of Italy and eastern France linked communities together within a common cultural milieu, the Lagozza-Chassey cultures, which were also linked to the Cortaillod culture of Switzerland. The Tyrrhenian coasts of western Italy and southern France were likewise linked, sharing Neolithic origins in the western Mediterranean Cardial culture. Cardial culture represented the primary introduction of domesticated plant and animal species in the western Mediterranean and is characterized by its pottery decorated with shell impressions, known as the Cardial Impressed style. From central Europe, different “Danubian” and Balkan-Neolithic processes had an impact on central France and northern Italy, through distinctive pottery forms, shell ornaments, styles of lithic technology, and settlement from the late seventh millennium through the late sixth millennium across central and southwestern Europe.

The region’s topography is remarkably mountainous (it includes the ranges of the Alps, Pyrenees, Apennines, Sila, and the Massif Central as well as the Languedoc and Provence Garrigues); it is a

landscape made up of dry limestones and other rocks, with lowlands restricted to the major river valleys and the limited plains of the Tavoliere and Catania. Such topography restricted opportunities for rapid economic or social developments over many areas, until the new technology and social systems of the Bronze Age hastened change.

In general, the Italian Peninsula and Sicily and Sardinia retained distinctive cultural characteristics during much of the Neolithic, often rather isolated from neighboring lands, whereas the north of Italy, with its shared Alpine margins, was more connected with cultural developments in central and western Europe. In the Late Neolithic, the French Chassey, the northern Italian Lagozza, and the Swiss Cortaillod cultures all developed in parallel, using similar pottery and artifact assemblages, even though local conditions dictated different settlement and economic styles. Some raw materials, especially hard Alpine rock for axe manufacture, flint, and the rare island sources of obsidian (especially from Sardinia and Lipari), promoted active economic contacts across considerable distances by land and sea.

The Neolithic traditions of megalithic architecture were adopted during the Neolithic–Copper Age in the western Mediterranean, particularly in

France, Corsica, and Sardinia, whereas megalithic constructions in Italy were rare, limited to Bronze Age Apulia in the southeast.

KEY ARTIFACT TYPES AND STYLES

The cultures of the Italian Late Neolithic are most easily defined through their pottery. They fall into distinctive regional styles and separate the peninsula from the Po Valley and Alpine zone through finely made and distinctive forms and decoration. The general trajectory of pottery style development in both Italy and southern France follow similar paths, with local ceramic styles of the later Middle Neolithic period subsumed within very large “cultures” in the Late or Final Neolithic, only to fragment again into regional groups in the Copper Age.

Pottery. In southern Italy, distinctive painted ceramic fine wares represented highly valued commodities. Across Italy, pots were widely traded—along with obsidian, fine lithics, and polished axes—in networks that connected the Po Valley with the south. Such high-prestige goods were often deposited in graves and cult sites far from their places of origin. The production of such pottery had its origins in the earliest Neolithic painted pottery. By the Late Middle Neolithic, distinctive Trichrome pottery styles (c. 5000–4300 B.C.), first the Lipari, Scoloria, and Capri styles and then the Ripoli of central Italy and the Serra d’Alto of the south and Sicily, dominated the fine wares in circulation. Comprising jars, cups with elaborately modeled handles, and miniature flasks, the forms typically had rounded, flared rims and were decorated with curvilinear, “flame,” and geometric painted patterns.

The later phase of the southern Italian Late Neolithic was characterized by a uniform pottery culture—the so-called Diana-Bellavista type. This was a red-slipped and burnished pottery that evolved between c. 4300–3700 B.C., comprising forms that ranged from globular jars to highly carinated bowl shapes but always with distinctive rolled, trumpet-shaped lug handles. As in the Middle Neolithic, much of this material was deposited in graves and cult sites and was extensively traded alongside obsidian, especially obsidian from Lipari. Pottery of this type is especially known from the cemeteries of Bellavista near Taranto and Contrada di Diana on Lipari. Local ceramic styles (such as brown-slipped

wares) were maintained at sites such as La Romita di Asciano near Pisa and Norcia in the Umbria areas of Tuscany, Umbria, and Marche alongside imported Diana-Bellavista and Lagozza elements (trumpet lugs and scratched geometric patterns). The end of the Neolithic in the peninsula is marked by the darker ceramic styles of the Copper Age. Several phases and cultures create a complex picture for this era, but essentially, smooth, burnished, rounded forms, one- and two-handled cups, jars, flasks, bowls, and large storage vessels typify the central Italian Rinadone and Conelle-Ortucchio and the southern Italian Gaudo pottery styles.

In northern Italy, the cultural sequence of the mid–Late Neolithic saw a variety of earlier ceramic styles spread across the Po Valley and take hold in the surrounding mountain region. The Middle Neolithic in the north had been dominated by variations of the Square-Mouthed pottery culture. For example, in the eastern plain, the Quinzano (represented at La Vela in Trento) was a late Square-Mouthed pottery with incised curvilinear (*meandrospirale*) decoration. The pottery typically had a flared four-sided shape rising from rounded bases and foot rings, and it took the form of jars and cups, often decorated with bands of incised patterns. Assemblages included *pintaderas*, or clay stamps, with spiral patterns, possibly used for body painting or fabric decoration. The central part of the western Po Valley and the Alps maintained local forms, such as the Isolino of Lombardy with its coarser incised and cordoned pottery, normally modeled as open bowls with footed bases and handled jars. By the Late Neolithic, as in southern Italy, local styles were subsumed within a broad cultural identity—Lagozza. The dark, burnished pottery of this group ranged from wide open (and often sharply carinated) and wide, flat bowls to narrow-necked, wide-bellied jars, characterized by vertical “panpipe” lugs and small button lugs around the rims and vessel bodies. Incised geometric decorations, carefully and precisely scratched, were applied around the inner rims of bowls and in bands around the bodies of some pots. The Lagozza style was replaced by the Copper Age Remedello pottery, which contained Beaker elements together with rounded and carinated forms and angled strap handles reminiscent of those in peninsular Italy.

The sequence of pottery styles in Liguria links Italy and France. Sites such as the Arene Candide cave in Liguria include classic Lagozza and Chassey material. The Cardial Impressed pottery of the Early Neolithic of southern France was replaced in the Middle and Late Neolithic by pottery from the almost ubiquitous Chassey culture. The Chasséen du Midi pottery types of the south are finely made bowls, jars, and plates, often with carinated or baggy round-based profiles. The repertoire of incised geometric motifs around the body of the vessel together with lugs, buttons, and suspension handles and the characteristic vertical panpipes parallel the Lagozza style. Extravagant patterns were applied to vase supports in central France and beyond, and sometimes pots were encrusted with white or red paste to enhance the patterns. Elements of the French Chassey continued in local styles in the succeeding Final Neolithic–Copper Age. The Véraza and Ferrières styles occur in the western areas of southern France (in the Pyrenees and on the Aude), employing hachured triangle patterns on the pottery. Farther east, in Provence and Languedoc, the Treilles group on the (Grande) Causses and the Gourgasién–Saint Ponien groups in Languedoc have plain and decorated pottery, often with cordons and geometric incised bands together with asymmetrical and crenellated arrowheads and distinctive winged beads. The Fontbousse culture of the Late Neolithic extends into the Copper Age and is characterized by jars and carinated vessels that have channeled, incised, and impressed patterns arranged in distinctive checkerboard and garland designs. Broadly speaking, the mainland pottery styles link loosely with those of the Tyrrhenian Islands, where the Corsican Terrinien and Sardinian Bonu Ighinu–Ozieri cultures developed in parallel.

Stone. The lithic assemblages of Late Neolithic peninsular Italy are characterized by the production of large, long blades that replaced lingering microlithic traditions. Tools were retouched, forming triangular, leaf-shaped, barbed, and transverse arrowheads. Lithic technology in northern Italy remained more deeply embedded in its Mesolithic origins, with geometric tranchet-blade technologies still present in the Lagozza culture. Retouching became highly developed in the Final Neolithic and Early Copper Age; large and finely flaked daggers

and knives are especially characteristic of the Remedello and Rinadone cultures.

Obsidian use reached its maximum level of use in the Late Neolithic, with the massive exploitation of the Lipari source. Work by A. J. Ammerman at Piano di Curinga in Calabria, close to Lipari, showed how coastal communities there specialized in the reduction and working of raw obsidian, presumably for onward trade. Sardinian obsidian from the Monte Arci sources was also traded—north to Corsica and southern France from the sixth millennium B.C.—and has been found throughout the Midi and southern Languedoc. Areas such as the Adriatic coast, distant from obsidian sources, generally had little material in their assemblages and instead made use of local flint and chert. Fine flint was mined from early in the Neolithic on the Gargano Promontory in northern Apulia at sites such as Defensola, and it was traded over considerable distances. Fine honey flint in the Lessini Mountains of Veneto was similarly prized and is found across northern Italy. The Copper Age Ice Man had Lessini flint in his kit. In France, local flint supplied regional needs, although mined sources like Le Grande Pressigny in west-central France clearly dominated trade across the region for some artifacts.

Polished volcanic and metamorphic stone (such as nephrite, amphibolite, and jadeite) was highly prized for the production of axes, adzes, and polished stone rings, amulets, and beads. The sources of these rare and widely spaced rocks were in the Maritime Alps of France and Italy and the Sila of Calabria. Finished objects were traded across the western Mediterranean, even as far as Malta, Britain, and northern France; for example stone rings of chlorite were prized in northern Italy (and Sardinia). Other functional stone sources (suitable for grindstones, querns, hammers, and ornaments) were located in many rocky areas, such as the Alps and the Massif Central, and supplied axes across France and Italy.

Other Materials. The emergence of metal use in the Copper Age was manifested in the appearance of copper flat axes, halberds, daggers, pins, rings, and knives in the Lagozza, Remedello, and Fontbousse cultures together with rare ornaments of gold, silver, or both (especially in the Remedello

and Gaudio cultures). The wetlands of northern Italy have preserved organic materials and artifacts from the Late Neolithic and Copper Age, including bone fishhooks and wooden bowls, combs, tools, hafts for axes, arrows, and bow fragments. These offer a parallel to the extraordinary preservation of the Swiss and French Alpine lake dwellings and indicate the technologically rich world of the Late Neolithic–Copper Age communities in the region.

Dating. The Late Neolithic in Italy and southern France spans the mid-fifth millennium to the mid-third millennium B.C., with local sequences of differing lengths and antiquity. The presence of local metal ores provided technological triggers in areas such as Tuscany and the Alps, with the emergence of early metalwork erupting by the end of the fourth millennium B.C. Organic remains from wetland sites—Lagozza and Remedello, for example—offer potential for detailed dendrochronology and thus for increased understanding of local sequences. However, the period is still one where cultures changed slowly and, in many cases, persisted for more than half a millennia.

HOUSE FORMS AND SETTLEMENT PATTERNS

Early Neolithic settlement sites included rock shelters and caves, as at Arene Candide in Liguria, Grotta del Santuario Della Madonna at Praia a Mare in Calabria, and Grotta dell’Uzzo in Sicily, as well as open settlements along coasts, plains, and river valleys. Detailed settlement evidence in southern Italy for the Late Neolithic is surprisingly sparse in comparison to the great ditched earlier sites, with few extensively excavated examples. Site locations were invariably closely linked to good agricultural soils in lowland plains, basins, and valleys, and surveys have indicated expansion during the Late Neolithic into more marginal areas, including low hillsides and terraces, generally below 400 meters. A survey of the Acconia area in Calabria showed how the density and size of settlements increased in the Late Neolithic, often extending more than 2 kilometers. Surveys suggest that sites covered several hectares but that enclosure ditches or walls were not used to define the limits. Huts were substantial, made of wattle, daub, and timber; hearths, pits, cobbled floors, and paving are known. In rocky upland places, stone walling was used in construction. Similar evidence

for Late Neolithic expansion emerged from surveys of the Ofanto Valley and the Biferno Valley in Southeast Italy, confirming the general pattern of population and settlement increase from the fifth to the fourth millennia B.C.

In central Italy the semiditched site of Ripoli in the Abruzzo extended some 300 by 120 meters across and contained about fifty structures arranged in small groups of 3 to 6 houses and middens closely associated with burials. Other Ripoli culture sites indicate similar evidence, and the ditch-enclosed Pianaccio di Tortoreto contained some eighty structures. Houses at Santa Maria in Selva ranged from 5 to 10 meters long and were divided internally with hearths. Settlements consisting of sunken floors or large pits of 1.5 to 5 meters in diameter from Catignano and Pianaccio are the substructures of houses that otherwise consisted of stone spreads, cobbles, wattle and daub, and timber. Some sites had specialized areas for industrial activity, such as the trampled floors remaining from obsidian working at Torre Spaccata in Lazio. Toward the end of the Neolithic, survey suggests that settlement numbers declined, as semifortified, larger, and more centralized locations were selected.

The evidence from northern Italy is very different, since organic survival in the Po Plain has enabled more complete preservation. From early in the Neolithic, timber structures, pits, and gullies built close to rivers and lakes demonstrate effective wetland settlement and exploitation. Some sites were strategically placed, such as the prominent hill of Rocca di Rivoli in Veneto. This site had scant traces of ditches, pits, hearths, and dumps of burned daub. La Vela in Trento was arranged at the head of a valley, with terraces, ditches, alignment of post-holes, and rectangular cobbled surfaces suggesting dwelling areas. Defensive sites were selected to control hillsides and access points across the plain and mountain areas. The Late Neolithic Lagozza culture exploited caves in some areas, but most settlement preferred lowland or terrace locations. Wood platforms as at Remedello and Fiaivè were constructed at the edges of lakes; settlements formed at these sites are similar to those known from the Swiss, French, and German Alpine lakes and anticipate the later *terremare* Bronze Age lake settlements.

In southern France as in Italy, there was an increase in the number of settlements in the Late

Neolithic. Several hundred sites—both caves and open settlements—in Provence alone have produced Chassey material. Although few have been fully excavated, Saint Michel-du-Touch near Toulouse provides remarkably complete evidence, with its multiple ditches, palisade trenches for tree trunks, and some three hundred cobbled zones indicating houses, hearths, and pits. The site is located on a 30-meter-high promontory at the confluence of the Garonne and Touch Rivers. Nearby Ville-neuve-Tolosane forms a 30-hectare concentration of settlement, comprising more than 200 structures arranged as hamlets, each 50 to 100 meters apart. Chassey sites varied considerably in size across the region, though most are smaller. Caves and rock shelters were maintained in use through the Neolithic, probably as seasonal shelters for pastoralists.

In the final Neolithic to transitional Copper Age period, an increased number of settlements with stone-built longhouses were constructed, and some of these are well preserved in Languedoc and Provence, on the limestone plateaus or in the Garrigues. The finest sites belong to the Fontbuisse culture of Languedoc (in Hérault, Gard, Ardèche) and consist of clusters of up to 50 closely packed drystone-walled longhouses, each up to 15 meters long and varying considerably in size. Some sites included an extra-large communal house. Typical Languedoc house plans at La Conquette and Gravas showed each house was a separate unit, containing several different activity areas. Hearths against the rear wall faced the main entrance and artifacts were scattered in discrete groups, including storage vessels lined along the end walls. Some Fontbuisse sites in Languedoc (Boussargues and Lebois) had enclosure walls incorporating several circular “tower” constructions, suggesting the sites were highly fortified, although some scholars believe the enclosures were stock enclosures. Open settlements on the coastal plains and in the Rhône Valley comprise similar elements, although without the drystone constructions. In Provence, the Couronne culture comprised settlements on the limestone landscape of stone and timber houses associated with small plots of arable land.

SUBSISTENCE DATA

The Late Neolithic saw the establishment of more intensive and productive cereal and pulse produc-

tion across large areas of the lowlands of Italy and southern France. New introductions included several varieties of wheat (including bread wheat) and barley together with peas, broad beans, lentils, flax, and a wide variety of collected fruits and nuts. Stock animals were generally dominated by caprines in the south, with smaller numbers of cattle and pigs, and pigs seem to have declined in Italy as forest browse was removed. In central Italy the balance of stock gradually changed from a mainly caprine-based economy to one dominated by cattle and pigs, and some sites were clearly highly specialized for one type of animal. In the mountains of Liguria, analysis of the fauna from Arene Candide suggests that caprines and probably cattle were milked early in the Neolithic, confounding the popular belief that secondary products were a later development. The study also showed that pigs were only domesticated in the Late Neolithic, since wild boars had supplied pork throughout most of the Neolithic. Hunted animals, especially red deer, were significant in some cult deposits, such as the Apulian caves of Pacelli, Cala Colombo, and Ipogei Manfredi and the Apennine caves of Abruzzo and Tuscany, although probably hunted food never amounted to more than a small part of the food supply at these sites. Significantly, many areas became less intensive in the Late Neolithic, as settlement expanded into less-productive landscapes. In particular, the Lagozza economy in the Po Valley seems to have become extensive, showing a greater reliance on fishing and hunting alongside herding, cereal farming, and the development of secondary products and pig production in the wooded areas. As more marginal land was exploited for grazing, seasonal movement between the mountains and the coastal plains prompted the development of long-lived transhumance. In southern France, similar patterns of mixed farming were practiced, with caprines the dominant stock over most of the Garrigues and uplands and cattle and pigs only significant in lowland, valley, and coastal areas. The importance of hunted and gathered food also declined in the Late Neolithic in France, although river valleys, coastal zones (such as the Rhône Delta), and the dry uplands may have had more specialized economies focused on wild foods, fish, and hunted animals. Transhumance was likely to have been practiced in the Late Neolithic–Copper Age, with the seasonal movement of stock from upland to lowland, and this is attested by the

large numbers of cave sites used as temporary shelters containing artifacts and animals remains.

TRADE, EXCHANGE, AND INTERREGIONAL CONTACT

The emergence of the western Mediterranean obsidian exchange network demonstrates the scale and complexity of Late Neolithic interaction. The scientific recognition of the different island sources (Lipari, Pantelleria, Palmarola, and Sardinia), through neutron activation and chemical analysis, has provided new insights into the changing components of Neolithic assemblages.

The main obsidian sources during the Neolithic were Sardinia and Lipari; obsidian from these two islands circulated widely in central and northern Italy and southern France alongside the inferior Palmarola material in the Middle Neolithic. By the Late Neolithic, the pattern of distribution was dominated by Lipari obsidian, so at Arene Candide, the balance changed from Middle Neolithic levels, in which equal quantities of obsidian originated in Lipari, Sardinia, and Palmarola, to Late Neolithic levels, where only some 13 percent of the assemblage came from Sardinia and 87 percent came from Lipari. The same pattern seems to be borne out across northern Italy, and caches of cores have been located at what may be redistribution centers in the Apennines at sites such as Pescale. In France, the situation is less well understood, but Sardinian obsidian certainly competed effectively with local flint sources across much of the Rhône Delta, the coast of Languedoc, and southern Provence.

The axe and hard-stone trade also developed into an extensive network, linking the dispersed sources of raw material to consumers across the region. Greenstone and other attractive fine-grained igneous and metamorphic rock was exploited in the Maritime Alps, Jura (France), and Calabria and eastern Sicily; some quarry areas have been broadly identified from microscopic analysis. Local sites seem to have acted as collecting centers for onward exchange. Utilitarian axes, hammers, and grindstones were sourced from the basalt areas of the Massif Central, Basilicata, Lazio, Campania, and eastern Sicily and supplied relatively local exchange networks. Flint, although more generally available across the predominantly limestone landscapes of southern France and Italy, still circulated widely.

Major flint sources were located in the Gargano of Apulia, the Ibeli Hills of southeastern Sicily, the Lessini Mountains of northeastern Italy, and across France, most famously the Grande Pressigny from the Loire, which was especially exploited in the first half of the third millennium B.C. Flints and cherts are usually identified through color and texture, and certain prized materials, such as banded, speckled, or highly colored flint and chert, had extensive distributions.

Other traded materials included fine pottery, such as the southern Italian painted pottery that occurs in the Po Valley and at Arene Candide, and the Ripoli, Serra d'Alto, and monochrome Diana styles, all circulated alongside obsidian and fine stone. Marine shells were also exchanged, including *Spondylus* and large conch shells, to regions as distant as the Abruzzi uplands. Doubtless, many organic materials moved alongside the durable objects, but of these, of course, there is no trace.

BURIAL PRACTICES

The Middle and Late Neolithic in Italy mark the transition from collective and informal burial to individual burials in formal cemeteries. In peninsular Italy, burial had been in settlement ditches and caves, often without grave goods or formal arrangement of the corpse. Bones were sometimes venerated and displayed, as at the Grotta Funeraria at Matera. In the Middle Neolithic, at the cave complex of Grotta Scaloria, multiple burials (perhaps as many as thirty to forty), loosely associated with pottery and grave goods, were part of a cult site. Nearby, however, more formal arrangements found at the site of Azzolini at Molfetta contained some fifty-six graves of individuals and their grave goods. Many of the ditched settlements included later formal burial areas, as at Serra d'Alto, where discrete cist, pit, or rock-cut trench structures contained a burial with simple pottery, lithics, and ornaments. Scoglio del Tonno at Taranto included a cemetery within a ditched enclosure of two cists and two ditch graves containing a total of eight individuals with a large number of pots and lithics. At Ripoli in Abruzzo the cemetery arrangements may reflect the social organization of the community; the trench graves, each containing between two and fourteen crouched corpses, were furnished with pottery, bone, and lithic tools. One female burial included

a dog. The Late Neolithic cemetery of Bellavista near Taranto was constructed of twenty closely packed burial pits. Similar small cemeteries of pits and cists have been identified across southern Italy and Sicily.

Other burials were placed in caves used for cult activity, and frequently these had child burials, animal offerings, and an array of symbolic artifacts and other. Some caves—such as Grotta Latronico in Basilicata and Grotta Lattaia in Tuscany—had hot springs, volcanic steam fumaroles, stalagmites, and other curiosities that enhanced the liminal character of the burial places. In the Copper Age, more formal cemeteries and a greater emphasis on the dead developed, including large and often richly furnished cemeteries, such as Laterza in Apulia, Gaudio in Campania, and the many Rinadone cemeteries of Tuscany-Lazio. These often prominently located sites involved rock-cut tombs or trench, fossa, and ditch graves that employed both collective and individual burial rites. The grave goods of these cemeteries comprised specialized funerary pottery (including flasks and cups for drinking), fine flint, ornaments, and rare metal objects. Similar formal cemetery areas close to settlements also typified funerary practices in northern Italy. At La Vela in Trento, cists formed the burial structures for carefully northwest-southeast-oriented corpses. Late Neolithic Lagozza graves were also cists and arranged in groups of up to twenty-five inhumations, as at Villeneuve and Sarre in the Aosta Valley, usually with grave goods consisting of a few pots, shells, flints, and (rarely) polished stone. These graves had much in common with the Chassey across the Alps in France. The Early Copper Age cemeteries of the Remedello involved large cemeteries of collective graves, often with more than one hundred corpses and with rich grave goods. These included copper ornaments, halberds, flint axes, daggers, and arrowheads but rarely pottery. In the Ligurian Mountains, cave burials, such as at Tana Bertrand, continued the old traditions of collective burial.

The burial structures of southern France are markedly different from those of Italy, particularly because the construction of megalithic burial monuments—dolmens—reached its peak in the Late Neolithic and Copper Age. Several hundred megalithic structures survive in varying styles, locations, forms, and sizes across the region. Cave burials also

persisted, often with a hundred corpses or more placed on the floors of caves, occasionally with cremations among them. The cave of Pas de Julié in Languedoc contained more than three hundred individuals. Such burial caves were often restricted in size and ease of access—which added to their mystery and exclusiveness—and in many cases they appear to have been used for a short time only.

The dolmen burials, conversely, contain grave goods representing long and successive use, even though the numbers of burials were usually only between ten and sixty individuals. Some dolmens represent dramatic events and contain numerous bodies, stacked one upon the other, containing embedded arrowheads, presumably the result of skirmishes, as at Roaix in Provence. Typical grave goods included flint tools, arrowheads, daggers, and sickles, with rare copper objects in the later contexts. Pottery was rarely deposited in graves in Provence. The Chassey cemetery at Les Moulins à Saint-Paul-Trois-Châteaux in the Rhône Valley contained some forty trench and pit graves dating from 4400–3800 B.C. with deposits of collective burials, stones, bones, wood, and isolated human body parts. At Le Gournier near Montélimar, some twenty-eight circular pit graves contained single and multiple burials, where the skulls sometime were placed on large stones, and burials were accompanied by pottery, flint, and (rarely) animal remains. Farther west in the Aude and Pyrenees areas, similar traditions of cave burial continued, although cemeteries of cists and cairns and pit burials developed. These include the Chasséen burials at Saint-Michel du Touch and Villeneuve-Tolosane, where corpses were buried with pots, ornaments, tools, and (often) animal body parts, such as a teenage burial with hedgehog jaws and an old woman with boar's tusk pendants. Some burials suggest emergent hierarchy, with numerous grave goods and impressive, large overlying constructions.

The dolmen varied in form and shape from round cists enclosed in stones to long passages covered by slabs. Rock-cut tombs, such as those near Arles, were also in use in what was a period of widely varied funerary traditions.

ART AND RITUAL

The Late Neolithic represents a period of developing art styles: of pottery that was elaborately made

and decorated, of painted and incised motifs that occurred on pottery and *pintaderas*, and of rare cave and rock art. The Grotta di Porto Badisco in southern Apulia is a decorated Neolithic cult cave that contains two long corridors and one short corridor of restricted galleries that were painted in ocher and guano. The designs compare closely with those on Serra d'Alto- and Ripoli-style painted pottery, having zigzags, cross-hatching, and mazelike patterns. Some figurative images also suggest hunting scenes, and the complex is dated across the mid-Late Neolithic. Idols and figurines were made throughout the Neolithic in Italy, with examples from sites such as Passo di Corvo in the Middle Neolithic and Arnesano (Taranto) and Grotta Pacelli (Bari) in the Late Neolithic. Rock art in the Alpine areas seems to have commenced in the Neolithic, although it was principally a Bronze Age and Iron Age phenomenon. Images from Val Camonica, Mont Bego, and other areas of the Maritime Alps represent animal and human scenes, constructions, patterns, suns, and so on, suggesting aspects of prehistoric cosmology.

See also **Sion-Petit Chasseur** (vol. 1, part 4).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Guidi, Alessandro, and Marcello Piperno, eds. *Italia Preistorica*. Rome: Laterza, 1992.
- Guilaine, Jean. *De la vague à la tombe: La conquête de la Méditerranée, 8000-2000 avant J.-C.* Paris: Seuil, 2003.
- Guilaine, Jean, and Jean-Louis Roudil. *Les civilisations néolithiques en Languedoc*. Vol. 2, *La préhistoire française*. Paris: Centre national de la recherche scientifique (CNRS), 1976.
- Malone, Caroline. "A Review of the Neolithic of the Central Mediterranean." *Journal of World Prehistory*. Forthcoming.
- Phillips, Patricia. *Early Farmers of West Mediterranean Europe*. London: Hutchinson, 1975.
- Radmilli, Antonio Mario, ed. *Guida della Preistoria Italiana*. Florence, Italy: Sansoni, 1975.
- Scarre, Christopher, ed. *Ancient France: Neolithic Societies and Their Landscapes, 6000-2000 B.C.* Edinburgh: Edinburgh University Press, 1983.
- Whitehouse, Ruth. *Underground Religion: Cult and Culture in Prehistoric Italy*. London: Accordia Research Centre, 1992.

CAROLINE MALONE

SION-PETIT CHASSEUR

The Petit Chasseur site in Sion, in the southern canton of Valais, Switzerland, was the subject of systematic excavations from 1961 to 1992. This archaeological field has yielded one of the most complete cultural sequences of the Valais area and even of the whole Alpine region for the Neolithic period and the beginning of the Bronze Age. The occupations date to the beginning of the Neolithic period, the fourth millennium B.C., up to the Iron Age, around 500 B.C. But the international renown of the site owes itself to the megalithic necropolis (four dolmens and nine cists), chronologically tied to the end of the Neolithic period, where an impressive set of twenty-eight anthropomorphic stelae have been excavated (fig. 1).

CHRONOLOGY OF THE NECROPOLIS

The megalithic necropolis is made up of thirteen monuments, designated MI through MXIII, which have various shapes and variable dimensions. The cultural horizons involved are the Valaisian final Neolithic period, which is not well known, the civilization of Bell Beaker ceramics, and the Early Bronze Age. Nine phases of occupation can be distinguished.

- Phase 1. Construction of dolmen MXII. This triangular-based tomb did not yield any anthropomorphic stelae. The furniture belongs to the Valaisian final Neolithic period.
- Phase 2. Construction of dolmen MVI. The material of this triangular-based tomb belongs to the final Neolithic age. The anthropomorphic stelae of this era belong to type A.
- Phase 3. Dolmens MI, MV, and MXI. These three tombs do not have bases but still have side entrances. The funeral furniture belongs to the civilization of Bell Beaker ceramics. The stelae reused in the constructions are of types A and B.
- Phase 4. Desecration of dolmen MVI. The old burial remains of the dolmen are removed to make way for new Bell Beaker burials.
- Phase 5. Small cists. The Bell Beaker societies construct a number of small cists (MII, MIII, MVII, MVIII, MIX, and MX), including only type B stelae.

Phase 6. Desecration of graves and burials of children. The last type-B stelae are erected at the beginning of the Early Bronze Age (fig. 2). Slabbed altars are arranged in front of monuments MVI and MXI. The old graves are systematically pillaged and desecrated, the funeral furniture scattered, the human bones gathered together and burned. A woman still lies in dolmen MXI. A few children are buried in a flexed position, either inside the old chambers (MV) or outside in small adventitious chests (MVI and MXI). The numerous traces of fire that can be found at the site appear to be related to a ritual to “condemn” the funeral area.

Phase 7. Cairns and jar burials. The necropolis continues to be sporadically visited during the Early Bronze Age, but the dead cease to be buried there. The monuments disappear gradually under piles of stones, around the edges of which are placed large jars as offerings.

Phase 8. Hut. Still in the Early Bronze Age, a hut is constructed at the location of the necropolis.

Phase 9. Graves in open ground. Funerary activity resumes at the end of the Early Bronze Age with a series of burials in extended position in open ground at a time when most of the monuments have disappeared, covered over by deposits.

STELAE: TYPE A AND TYPE B

Practically all the fragments of stelae discovered at Petit Chasseur have been representations of anthropomorphic personages possibly of rank, probably all males, given the abundance of representations of weapons. Two sets of stelae are distinguished. The first set, called type A, has a relatively plain geometric decoration, but it does have numerous representations of copper daggers with triangular blades and half-moon shaped handles, frequent in the Remedello civilization. Remedello is a Late Neolithic group, located in northern Italy, characterized by large necropoli with individual tombs. The artifacts include copper or flint daggers, polished or copper axes, and cups, tronconical jars with incised decorations. One stela also includes a pendant made up of two disks with nested circles. This set is related to

a period of the Valaisian final Neolithic period, between 2700 and 2450 B.C., about which there is still not a great deal of information. It is not known whether or not this type of stela dates back to an older period, since dolmen MXII has not yielded any incised slabs.

The second set, called type-B stelae, has been attributed to the Bell Beaker period—that is, the period between 2450 and 2150 B.C.—and is very richly decorated, especially with regard to clothing ornaments. The triangular daggers have disappeared and are replaced by representations of bows and arrows. The head, of which there are at least two complete specimens, is now well marked, whereas the anatomical details are reduced to a simple rectangular nose.

STELAE AND SYMBOLIC THOUGHT

The functional significance of these stelae remains unclear, and the question of whether these human portrayals represent high-ranking persons, divinities who protect those persons, or gods remains unanswered. But the vision of the world partially expressed in the stelae at Sion has comparable representation in the stelae and monumental compositions of Trento, the Camonica Valley, and the Valtellina in Italy: patterns, series of personages holding hands, numerous weapons (axes, halberds, and daggers), various ornaments (such as gorgets or double spiral pendants), checker works that could represent textiles, rare swing plows, and figures of animals (including wild species, such as deer, ibex, chamois, and boars) are associated in similar anthropomorphic compositions throughout the Alpine Neolithic.

Researchers agree that these associations are the expression of a complex ideology in which the sun plays a dominant role, but archaeology does not offer the means to go much further into the analysis of this type of symbolic structure. The stelae of the Petit Chasseur site nevertheless show that this ideology can be expressed in the framework of a necropolis, therefore certainly associating it with a cult of the dead.

STELAE AND SOCIAL CONTEXT

The social context in which the stelae are situated may be inferred from the analysis of the “ritual” associated with visits to the necropolis. The necropo-

lis has numerous traces related to the often lively functioning of the graves. The archaeological structures that date strictly from the Neolithic phases show evidence of varied activities, including the construction of grave markers, the erection of stelae, the placing of bodies in the monuments, the smashing of stelae and their reuse, the overturning of graves, the despoiling of graves, the secondary placing and regrouping of skulls, the filling in of graves, and the lighting of fires in front of the monuments.

The erection of the stelae in front of the funerary monuments seems to be related to the social consecration of an eminent person during his or her lifetime on the occasion, for example, of a takeover of power or alliance ceremonies between families. The stelae could also be associated, however, with a funerary ritual taking place at the time of death of that same person.

The destruction of the stelae is more difficult to interpret, but the destruction of the incised effigies can perhaps be seen as a voluntary act that fits into a specific social context. The persons who smashed the stelae to use them as mere construction elements were aware of their meaning since, in the same era, they were carving other stelae that were absolutely identical and erecting them around the graves. Two explanations of these practices seem plausible. The first involves the destruction of the effigy, which, from a ritual perspective, constitutes a radical breaking point that may be related to the natural death of an actual person occupying a high-ranking position in the society. The second involves the destructions associated with the erections of new effigies, which are the expression of tensions existing within the society and the signs of struggles carried out by the various leaders for the control of political power. Thus, in this second case, one can speak of a situation of social death.

This type of explanation lends a certain weight to the idea of a link between the living individual and the stela. The social evolution at the end of the Neolithic period shows the change from egalitarian societies characteristic of the first farmers to societies set up in a more hierarchical manner and organized into chieftaincies. Within these chieftaincies, the individual may acquire a privileged position in the community owing to various strategies aimed at increasing his political power.

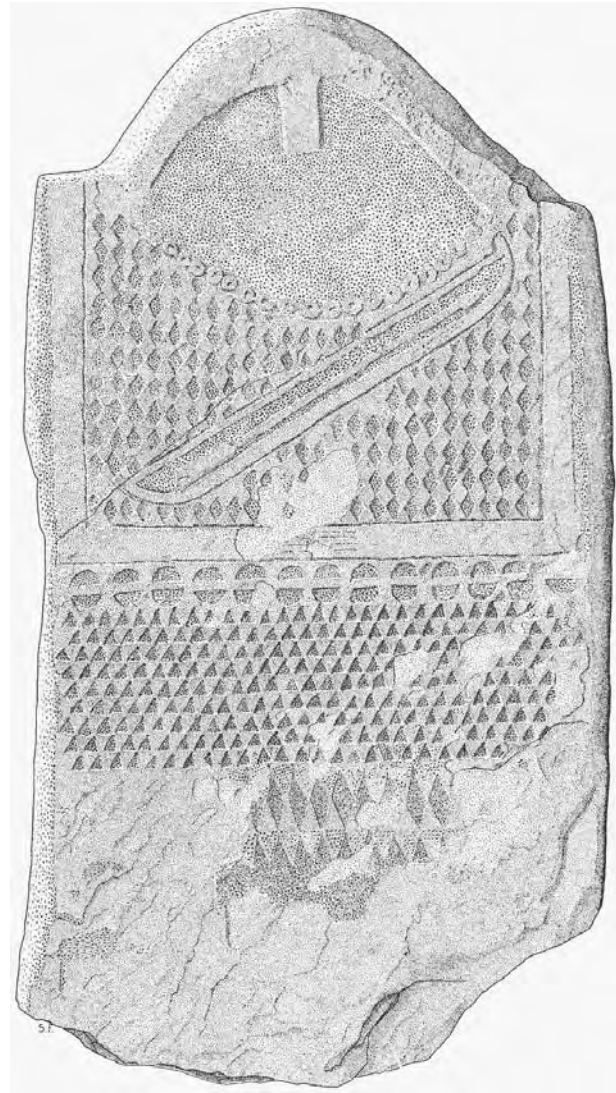


Fig. 2. Slab from dolmen MXI, type B stela. Height: 157.5 cm. DRAWING BY SÉBASTIEN FAVRE. COURTESY OF MARIE BESSE. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

In the stelae of Petit Chasseur, one can perhaps see the expression of this change and the sign of the emergence of a warrior elite. These changes, which accompany the appearance of metallurgy in the Alps, foreshadow later developments in the civilizations of the Bronze Age. In western Europe the third millennium B.C. was characterized especially by the very broad diffusion of the civilization of Bell Beaker ceramics from the Iberian Peninsula to Poland. While, on the one hand, the ideology of this cultural group can be discerned through the expression of iconographic representations, the stelae, on

the other hand, seem to be present only in the Alpine environment.

In this context, it is interesting to recall that the memory of the Petit Chasseur necropolis in Sion, and probably the memory of the chiefs that were buried there, was perpetuated throughout the Early Bronze Age. Throughout that period, people continued to visit the sites and place large ceramic jars as offerings around the graves while the monuments were gradually covered over by the soil carried along by the runoff from the dominating slopes. The sites, moreover, were reused as cemeteries around 1500 B.C., in an era when the burial ritual had been completely modified.

See also **Bell Beakers from West to East** (vol. 1, part 4).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Besse, Marie. *L'Europe du 3^e millénaire avant notre ère: Les céramiques communes au Campaniforme*. CAR 94. Lausanne, Switzerland: Les Cahiers d'Archéologie Romande, 2003.
- Favre, S., A. Gallay, K. Farjon, and B. de Peyer. *Stèles et monuments du Petit-Chasseur: Un site néolithique du Valais (Suisse)*. Geneva: Département d'anthropologie et d'écologie de l'Université, 1986.
- Favre, S., and M. Mottet. "Le site du Petit-Chasseur III et le dolmen MXII." In *Dans les Alpes à l'aube du métal, archéologie et bande dessinée*. Edited by Alain Gallay, pp. 113–118. Sion, Valais, Switzerland: Musées cantonaux du Valais, 1995. (Exhibition catalogue.)
- . "Le site du Petit-Chasseur III à Sion VS: MXII, un dolmen à soubassement triangulaire du début du III^e millénaire." *Archéologie suisse* 13, no. 3 (1990): 114–123.
- Gallay, Alain. "Historique des recherches entreprises sur la nécropole mégalithique du Petit-Chasseur à Sion (Valais, Suisse)." In *Autour de Jean Arnal*. Edited by Jean Guilaine and Xavier Gutherz, pp. 335–358. Montpellier, France: Université des sciences et techniques du Languedoc, 1990.
- . "Sion, Petit-Chasseur." In *Le Valais avant l'histoire: 14,000 av. J.-C.–47 apr. J.-C.* Edited by Alain Gallay. Sion, Valais, Switzerland: Musées cantonaux du Valais, 1986. (Exhibition catalogue.)
- . "The Western Alps from 2500 to 1500 B.C. (3400–2500 B.C.): Traditions and Cultural Changes." *Journal of Indo-European Studies* 9, nos. 1–2 (1981): 33–55.

MARIE BESSE

(TRANSLATED BY JEANNE S. ZANG)

THE NEOLITHIC TEMPLES OF MALTA

The megalithic structures of the islands of the Maltese archipelago are the earliest freestanding buildings in world, dating from the fourth millennium B.C. They form a class of megalithic monument unparalleled in the prehistoric central-western Mediterranean area, since they are ceremonial and habitable structures rather than the more familiar megalithic mortuary constructions of western Europe. Some thirty such structures, mostly grouped together in local clusters, also include mortuary temples constructed belowground, which seem to have functioned as temples for the dead, with the insertion of hundreds or even thousands of burials over several centuries. In one case, Brochtorff's Circle at Xaghra on the island of Gozo, the mortuary complex of natural caves was surrounded by a megalithic circle and connected via a ceremonial path, marked by other megalithic monuments, to the Ggantija temple complex about half a kilometer distant. This complex appears to be one of the earliest in Malta, with the main temple dating from the Ggantija phase at the beginning of major temple building. Massive landscape change and dense settlement in modern times have obscured or destroyed the settings of many sites, and their original extent remains unclear.

RELATIONSHIP TO EUROPEAN AND MEDITERRANEAN PREHISTORY

The appearance of megalithic monuments in the western Mediterranean represents an earlier episode in Neolithic activity than the blossoming of prehistoric Maltese architecture. These early phases were invariably linked to the varied tomb-building traditions, especially those in France, Spain, and Portugal. These dolmens date from the late sixth millennium to the late fourth millennium B.C. and link the western Mediterranean with the Atlantic coast within a shared tradition of passage graves, dolmens, gallery graves, and other rough standing-stone structures and menhirs (individual standing stones). The Maltese temples (fourth to third millennia B.C.) appear to have developed locally, without apparent links to other cultures in the Mediterranean; indeed the crude dolmens of the Bronze Age (second mil-

lennium B.C.) of Malta seem to postdate the completion of the temples by centuries.

Early cultural links, however, are documented in the origins of Neolithic settlement on Malta, which has strong affiliations with the Stentinello culture of Sicily and Calabria. Similar stamped and impressed pottery with geometrically arranged decorations (Ghar Dalam style); Neolithic artifacts, such as polished stone axes and obsidian and flint tools; agricultural practices; and raw materials derived from Sicily, Italy, and the surrounding islands, suggest colonization of the Maltese islands from Italy rather than from other zones of the Mediterranean. The first settlement was in the mid-sixth millennium B.C., and a relationship between Malta and southern Italy and Sicily was maintained for at least another millennium in the sharing of similar cultural identities and raw materials, such as “Diana” style pottery (a red-slipped pottery with distinctive trumpet-shaped lugs and rounded forms) and obsidian. Thereafter close cultural similarity with Italy and Sicily ceased, and the distinctive Maltese Temple cultures became dominant, without apparent inspiration from elsewhere. Curiously, though, the material culture of Sardinia bears similarities in complex pottery forms (such as tripods and decoration), burial monuments (such as multiple-chambered rock-cut tombs), and iconography in the form of menhirs with heads, fat figurines, and sculptures of the human form.

LOCATION

The Maltese islands lie at the crossroads of the Mediterranean, between Sicily and southern Italy and Tunisia in North Africa, and roughly midway between the eastern and western Mediterranean. The location is remote in terms of Mediterranean islands, however, and Malta appears to have remained uninhabited by early human groups until agriculture became well established in the Neolithic. The distances—80 kilometers from Sicily and 290 kilometers from Tunisia—meant that navigation by small seagoing craft in prehistory was always a rather precarious activity, and thus Malta was more isolated culturally and economically than most other islands in the Mediterranean. The agricultural conditions on the islands were fertile, and the limestone-clay landscape provided an environment rich

enough to support dense prehistoric populations and a variety of raw materials. Environmental reconstruction of the prehistoric landscape suggests that the originally wooded islands were cleared rapidly of their tree cover and that one basic resource thereafter was scarce—sizable quantities of wood for buildings or boats.

CHRONOLOGY

Archaeological research over the last three or four decades of the twentieth century established a secure radiocarbon sequence of absolute dates for Malta’s prehistory and demonstrated the great antiquity of the temples. The dates of course provide an estimated carbon-14 range rather than a precise calendar, and the dating of stone buildings is always beset with problems. At present there is no sign of a Palaeolithic-Mesolithic occupation, and the first settlement is dated to about 5000–4300 B.C., with the Ghar Dalam phase of impressed pottery and early farming. The later Neolithic Grey and Red Skorba phases date from about 4500–4000 B.C., the latter associated with increasingly complex ritual sites and material culture. The Early Temple period is defined by the Zebbug and Mgarr phases, around 4100–3600 B.C., when small family rock-cut tombs and curious rounded structures were built. The first large and impressive temples date from the Ggantija phase, c. 3600–3200 B.C., when culturally the Maltese islands displayed structures and material wholly different from neighboring regions in Sicily and Italy. The main flowering of the temples occurred over the next millennium, with the Saffieni (3300–3000 B.C.) and the Tarxien periods (3000–2500 B.C.), when many temples were built and earlier ones enlarged and embellished.

The Temple culture appears to have ceased abruptly in the middle of the third millennium and was replaced by an apparently intrusive culture bearing close similarity to the Early Bronze Age cultures in southern Italy and Sicily. The newly introduced rite of cremation burials, metalwork in a nonmetalworking technology, and very different pottery and artifacts, such as curious flat Helladic-style figurines and a locally distinctive ceramic tradition with stylistic links across the central Mediterranean, confirm a total break with the previous indigenous cultural sequence. These Bronze Age cultures, the Tarxien

cemetery and its successor the Borg-in-Nadur, developed locally but in parallel with Mediterranean neighbors in Pantelleria, Sicily, and southern Italy.

KEY FEATURES

The so-called temples were built of local limestones, from a combination of unworked and rough coralline and smoothly cut, shaped, and carved softer globigerina limestone. The stone is important, since very large rough slabs allowed for the realization of the huge megalithic structures, which then were embellished with the finely finished softer stone. The temples normally were arranged in a series of semicircular apses around central corridors in a trefoil form, which in turn opened to an entrance shaped by impressive trilithons and threshold steps facing a large, open court. Some courts, as at Ggantija, were on raised manmade terraces and form an impressive approach to the high, curved facade of the temple. The size of the individual apses and temples seems to have been limited by building materials, where the length of stone or timber to span roofs may have been restricted.

Typical apses are between 5 and 8 meters in diameter and, when paired across the corridor, allow a maximum width of 15 to 20 meters. The depth of many temples is some 20 to 30 meters, and the whole then is encapsulated within massive outer walls and a facade. The most elaborate and late temples, such as Tarxien and Hagar Qim (fig. 1), have complex ground plans around several separate corridors and entrances, whereas the earlier and simpler structures focus on an end apse with pairs of apses on either side, usually two or four, as seen at Ggantija and Mnajdra north.

The artistic embellishments to the temples in the form of carvings, reliefs, pecked and drilled stone surfaces, altars, painted plaster walls, and finely finished plaster floors are a particular characteristic of Maltese temples. Decorative forms include floral and geometric patterns, spirals, animals, and human forms and are remarkably sophisticated, rivaling art in contemporary Egypt or the Near East. The shape of stones and their finish was significant, and altars made up of stones in pillar and triangle forms, as at Hagar Qim and Brochtorff Circle, appear to be shrines to male and female genitalia and thus perhaps fertility symbols. In other examples, plants, stacked ram's horns, rows of male animals,

or carvings of suckling pigs may have comparable symbolic associations.

FINDS

The material culture of the Temple period is remarkable for its craftsmanship and unique style. Pottery developed distinctive forms and handles, with jars, cups, and bowls designed for domestic use and for ritual feasting. There also were miniatures for ritual offerings. Dumps around some temples have revealed great quantities of drinking cups and jars, indicating the scale of use. Stone tools made from imported rock, obsidian, and flint or local chert were formed into knives, scrapers, and axes. Greenstone was imported from Italy and ground into tiny axe amulets, which often accompanied the dead as grave goods. Animal bones were carved into utilitarian tools (spatulas, points, and needles) and also beads and amulets, along with seashells, which were used as personal ornaments and even musical instruments. The most distinctive objects are the figurines and phalluses made from clay and stone. These items include the famous "fat ladies"—small and large seated or kneeling figurines, standing skirted priest figures, and a range of both realistic and highly symbolized human forms (fig. 2). A rare group includes human and fish figures seated or lying on couches, known principally from the hypogea (underground burial chambers), although a huge pair of seated stone figures is included in the outer wall of Hagar Qim. A cache of six stick figures was found together with three other carvings at the Brochtorff Circle; they represent a new category of cult figure. The location of such finds appears, from surviving archaeological records, to be highly significant, since figurines and cult material seem to be placed in close proximity to shrines, altars, and thresholds into special areas and under floors.

ANALYSIS AND INTERPRETATION

The temples have been subject to much study since they were discovered in the late eighteenth century, and interpretations have changed alongside the developing discipline and fashions in archaeology. Themistocles Zammit undertook the first significant research early in the twentieth century, first with his work at the Hal Saflieni Hypogeum and then with the excavation of Tarxien Temple. Earlier only clearance and crude excavation had taken place, removing without record the bulk of pre-



Fig. 1. Monolithic altars stand at the ruins of Hagar Qim, a Neolithic temple on Malta. The pits and pockmarks in the limestones are caused by long-term erosion. © ROGER WOOD/CORBIS. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

served sediment at the majority of temple sites. Zammit recorded material carefully and presented his findings to a wide community. Work by John Evans in the 1950s followed by that of David Trump in the 1960s provided new data, phasing, dating, and publications, enabling comparative studies of Malta and establishing the antiquity of the prehistoric sequence. Of the thirty or so known individual temples, there are about twenty complexes that remain sufficiently intact to assess their form and scale. They each comprise two to five structures, some of which are apsed temples and others of which are ancillary buildings. The reduced state of many sites means that interpretation is difficult, and few have been systematically excavated or studied. One area of potential research has been the orientation of the temples, which shows a consistent pattern: temples face south, southeast, or southwest, looking out from their entrances. Equally this orientation might be reversed (as in a Christian

church), and then the view from the entrance of the Maltese temples would be looking north at the altars.

The repeated form of the temples and the clearly demarcated areas within them signal that they are not domestic houses but instead have a ritual function. The locking holes in doorjambs, the restricted lines of sight from the entrances to the areas within, the large ceremonial courtyards outside, and the apparently large quantities of exotic, rare, highly stylized artistic objects and decoration all suggest a ritual or cult use. Studies have focused on the role of ritual specialists, perhaps those portrayed in the so-called priest figurines, who may have controlled access and activity in the temple complex. The large quantities of animal bone stacked within Tarxien and the dumps of pots and bones at other sites, such as Ggantija, indicate the slaughter of animals and special feasting and consumption of food and drink on a large scale. The scale of prehistoric Maltese

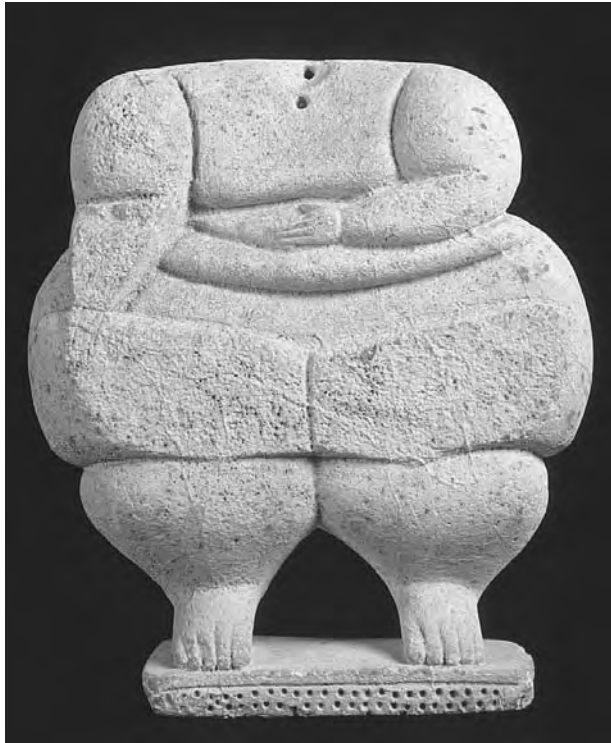


Fig. 2. This figurative statuette, now headless, once stood at Hagar Qim. Male and female forms at Neolithic temples could be standing, seated, or kneeling, and depictions ranged from realistic to highly symbolized. © ARALDO DE LUCA/CORBIS. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

populations has been much discussed, since the rocky 314 square kilometers (121 square miles) could support only a limited population, estimated variously between five thousand and ten thousand people maximum. The twenty separate temple complexes may have served local communities of only three hundred to five hundred people and may have been built for a variety of different functions and cults.

Only two sites currently have associated burial hypogea—Tarxien with Hal Saflieni and Ggantija at Xaghra on Gozo with the Brochtorff Circle. Crude estimates at Hal Saflieni in about 1910 suggested on the basis of one recorded chamber a potential population of seven thousand buried people. The much disturbed (and still incompletely excavated) site of Brochtorff Circle produced more than 200,000 human bones, representing a minimum population of 800 people. As Colin Renfrew has shown, however, when the long time scale of use of these hypogea is tallied with the total number of individuals,

the contributing population is quite small, with the addition of only a few corpses each year.

COMPARABLE SITES

The Maltese temples have no direct parallels and form a unique group of sites. The closest parallels are burial sites found in contemporary Sicily and Sardinia, where the tradition of rock-cut tombs evolved along with that of Malta. In Sardinia the Ozieri culture, in particular, is noted for elaborate hypogea, which involve several chambers and passages and the carving (and ochre painting) of such forms as bulls' horns. Figurines also were carved, and the small, fat, and detailed figures of the Late Neolithic Bonu Inghinu and the Ozieri flat steatite figurines offer a broad parallel to Maltese art. A large site in southeastern Sicily at Calaforno is a comparable burial complex.

SIGNIFICANT ADVANCES

The work at the Brochtorff Circle at Xaghra on Gozo (1987–1994) has enabled the first detailed study of the human populations of early Malta and has shown details of population structures, disease, health, and burial ritual that were hitherto unknown. Over the long occupation of the site, the buried population apparently became less well nourished, as shown by the state of teeth as well as through studies of child and infant bones, where deficiencies in vitamins and minerals appear to have been significant. This may be an indicator of overpopulation and general economic stress toward the end of the Temple period and may help explain the collapse of the Temple culture.

Other factors to explain the Maltese temples are under discussion, such as: the apparent lack of fish in the diet; the enormous physical investment in temple-building activity; the possible political structures that directed activities, tribute, redistribution, and production; and indeed the old explanation of invaders, famine, and disease. Advances in understanding depend on future fieldwork on settlement (evidence of which is elusive and mostly destroyed), genetics, economics, and environmental change. A major initiative, in the form of protective conservation legislation, has begun to ensure the future preservation of the sites, especially those inscribed as World Heritage Sites by UNESCO, at Ggantija, Tarxien–Hal Saflieni, Mnajdra, and Hagar Qim.

See also *The Megalithic World* (vol. 1, part 4).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Evans, John Davies. *The Prehistoric Antiquities of the Maltese Islands: A Survey*. London: Athlone Press, 1971.

Malone, C., S. Stoddart, A. Bonnano, T. Gouder, and D. Trump. "Mortuary Ritual of Fourth Millennium B.C. Malta: The Zebbug Tomb from the Brochtorff Circle (Gozo)." *Proceedings of the Prehistoric Society* 61 (1995): 303–346.

Stoddart, S., A. Bonanno, T. Gouder, C. Malone, and D. Trump. "Cult in an Island Society: Prehistoric Malta in the Tarxien Period." *Cambridge Archaeological Journal* 3, no. 1 (1993): 3–19.

Trump, David H. *Malta: Prehistory and Temples*. Valletta, Malta: Midsea Books, 2002.

———. *Malta: An Archaeological Guide*. 3d ed. Valletta, Malta: Progress Press, 2000.

CAROLINE MALONE



LATE NEOLITHIC/COPPER AGE IBERIA

FOLLOWED BY FEATURE ESSAY ON:

Los Millares 464

Since the late nineteenth century European prehistorians have pondered the significance of the megaliths, fortified settlements, and decorated figurines of the Late Neolithic and Copper Age of Iberia, including the Balearic Islands. Many early scholars, such as the French prehistorian Émile Cartailhac and the Belgian mining engineer Louis Siret, attributed the development of these cultural features to invasions by or contacts with distant eastern Mediterranean cultures, such as the Mycenaean, Minoan, Phoenician, or Egyptian. The development of radiocarbon and thermoluminescent dating in the 1960s, however, undermined these traditional frameworks and demonstrated that Late Neolithic and Copper Age Iberian cultures predated or were roughly contemporary with their supposed eastern Mediterranean inspirations. There is also no archaeological evidence that similar objects originated in the eastern Mediterranean at this time, as some prehistorians of the late nineteenth century also noted. For these reasons archaeologists interpret the cultural transformations of the Late Neolithic and Copper Age of Iberia as the product of local sociopolitical, economic, and ecological forces. There were certainly, however, exchange networks or contacts among groups within the Iberian mainland, among mainland groups and populations on the Balearics, and among Iberians and peo-

ples in North Africa and the western Mediterranean in general. Archaeologists are engaged in assessing the nature of these interactions and their role in the evolution of late prehistoric Iberian societies.

CHRONOLOGY

The Late Neolithic and Copper Age of the Iberian Peninsula lasted from 4500 to 2200 B.C. The Late Neolithic (sometimes referred to as the Almería culture in southeastern Spain or the Alentejo culture in southern Portugal) dates from 4500 to 3250 B.C. and was associated with the construction of the first megalithic tombs and the establishment of hilltop settlements. The Copper Age (also known as the Chalcolithic, Eneolithic, Vila Nova de São Pedro [VNSP] culture, Los Millares [LM] culture, or Bronze I) lasted from 3250 to 2200 B.C. and was characterized by the development of copper metallurgy, fortified settlements, and new ceramic types, such as bell beakers. In the Tagus River estuary of Portugal and in southeastern Spain it is possible to subdivide the Copper Age into a pre-beaker, Early Copper Age (3250–2600 B.C.) and a beaker, Late Copper Age (2600–2200 B.C.). Those archaeological sites that provide the best chronometric evidence for cultural changes between the Late Neolithic and Copper Age are Zambujal, Penedo de Lexim, Castelo de Santa Justa, and Leceia in Portugal and



Selected sites in Late Neolithic/Copper Age Iberia.

Cerro de la Virgen, Montefrío, Horno de Segura, Carigüela, Terrera Ventura, and Moncín in Spain.

Comparable to the Late Neolithic and Copper Age of mainland Iberia was the Pretalayotic period on the Balearics (3000–1300 B.C.). During this time open-air and enclosed settlements were established, and megalithic monuments known as *navetas* and *navetiformes* (boat-shaped structures) were built. Beaker pottery also was introduced, and copper metallurgy began. The best-known sites from this period include Son Ferrandéll-Oleza and Son Matge, both on Majorca. At the end of the Copper Age in Iberia many settlements were abandoned, and burials ceased to be used. The causes of these discontinuities are unclear, but they may be related to climatic and environmental change, social conflict, or a realignment of the political order.

Much has been written about the chronology and architectural development of the Iberian megaliths. Traditionally prehistorians believed that the tombs developed in a continuous sequence, either from large and elaborate tombs to smaller ones or from simple, small ones to larger ones. Absolute dating of the Iberian megaliths suggests, however, that the evolutionary sequence may be more complex than is traditionally conceived. For example, some of the simpler megalithic cists are contemporary with the larger, more complex passage graves.

ENVIRONMENTAL SETTING

Iberia is a complex mosaic of different climates, topography, geology, and vegetation, and this diversity played an important role in the evolution, economies, and interactions of Iberian peoples. The existence of these diverse ecosystems contributed to the development of numerous distinctive, though related, culture areas in the Late Neolithic and Copper Age. These areas include those of northwestern Iberia, the Beira Alta and Beira Baixa provinces of Portugal, southwestern Portugal, southeastern Spain in Valencia, the Spanish Meseta, and the Balearics (principally Minorca and Majorca).

Iberia, including the Balearics, comprises two major environmental zones: an Atlantic north and west zone and a Mediterranean south and east zone. The Atlantic zone experiences relatively high rainfall (more than 1,200 millimeters per annum) and cooler temperatures, whereas the Mediterranean zone has less rainfall (less than 800 millimeters per annum) and a warmer climate. The mountain ranges of Iberia provided the geological and mineral resources used to make polished stone tools, beads, and metals and also acted as partial barriers to human groups. The coasts, estuaries, and rivers, which are rich in animal and plant resources, were attractive locations for human settlement through-

out Iberian prehistory and served as important transportation and communication routes.

During the Late Neolithic and Copper Age the vegetation that dominated Iberia was deciduous woodland in more humid zones and climax evergreen woodland in more arid zones. Pollen studies suggest, however, that both climate change (increasing aridity) and anthropogenic degradation occurred during the Copper Age and that these factors caused a decline in arboreal species. A similar shift took place around 3000 B.C. on the Balearic Islands, with the appearance of olives (*Olea*) attesting to a phase of aridity. Also at this time the *Myotragus balearicus*, a small endemic goat, began the process of extinction, probably owing to both increasing aridity and human overexploitation.

SETTLEMENT AND BURIAL PATTERNS

Late Neolithic and Copper Age sites are known throughout the Iberian Peninsula, along the coast and in the interior (including the *meseta*) and in the uplands and lowlands. During the Late Neolithic human groups occupied caves, rock shelters, and open-air sites, particularly on hilltops at the confluence of rivers. During the Copper Age some of these hilltop sites were walled and had circular/semicircular towers, or bastions, built into their walls. Settlements were established in more arid and marginal zones during the Copper Age of both the mainland and the Balearics, and some form of water management or irrigation may have been required to farm in these zones. This expansion into more marginal landscapes is a trend also seen throughout much of western Europe, such as southern France, at the time.

The typical size of a settlement area during the Iberian Copper Age was 1 hectare, with population estimates for these settlements ranging from a dozen to more than 1,000 individuals. There are, however, larger sites, such as Los Millares in Spain (5 hectares), and some exceptionally large sites, such as Perdigões (16 hectares) and Ferreira do Alentejo (50 hectares) in Portugal and La Pijotilla (80 hectares) and Marroquies Bajos (113 hectares) in Spain. Scholars have debated whether or not the larger sites, such as Los Millares, can be called “urban.” Within the enclosed area of some of these settlements, specialized activities, such as pottery

production and copper smelting, often took place. Circular houses (*cabanas*) were built regularly within and outside the settlement walls. Storage pits are a typical feature of Copper Age settlements; at the site of El Gárcel (Spain), more than three hundred such storage facilities were found. When these pits are located in stratified contexts (such as at the sites of Almizaraque and Ciavieja in Spain), they appear to have been used early in the sequence and then went out of use; it is presumed that storage in pottery vessels replaced the use of storage pits.

During the Late Neolithic and Copper Age there were two patterns in which settlements and burials were established. In western and northern Iberia settlements generally were separated spatially from burials. In southern Iberia, however, particularly in southeastern Spain and along the Guadiana River, tombs sometimes were located close to or as integral parts of settlement areas. Cemetery/settlement complexes are found at Los Millares, Valencina de la Concepción, and La Pijotilla (Spain) and Perdigões (Portugal). Based on a major study of the megaliths of the Iberian Peninsula, conducted by the German couple Vera Leisner and Georg Leisner, a great deal is known about the location and content of burials during the Late Neolithic and Copper Age. In addition to megaliths, burials of this time—which typically were collective—also were housed in caves, rock shelters, and rock-cut tombs.

ARTIFACTS AND ART

Many artifacts are characteristic of the Late Neolithic and Copper Age of Iberia, but because of the size of Iberia and the diversity of cultures that developed there, not all of these artifacts appear in all parts of Iberia. Furthermore, some objects may be found only in settlements and not in burials and vice versa. The typical artifacts of the Late Neolithic include ceramics known as *copos* (cups), with channeled decoration, found principally in Portuguese Estremadura. In southeastern Spain the appearance of *almagra* ware (pottery covered with an iron oxide slip) generally has been viewed as representative of the Late Neolithic, although archaeologists now recognize that *almagra* ware sometimes is found in later Copper Age contexts as well.

Objects found chiefly in Copper Age contexts include *Symbolkeramik* (pottery with incised ocular decorations), cheese strainers (*quejeiras* in Portugal

and *queseras* in Spain), and ceramics with impressed *folha de acácia* (acacia leaf) designs and *bordos almendrados* (almond-shaped rims), the latter two types found principally in Portugal. During the Late Copper Age beakers of the earlier Maritime and All-Over Ornamented (AOO) types and the later Ciempozuelos (in central and southeastern Spain), Salamó (in Catalonia, Spain), and Palmela (in coastal Estremadura, Portugal) types are found. Also emblematic of the Iberian Copper Age are copper awls, fishhooks, and axes, although despite the name for this phase, the presence of metal objects is relatively rare on sites at this time. Objects found throughout the Late Neolithic and Copper Age of Iberia include polished stone tools (made of amphibolite, basalt, and dolerite) and flint blades, arrowheads, and daggers. Engraved slate plaques, primarily found in burials of southwestern Iberia, also are typical of this period.

During the Late Neolithic and Copper Age artistic expression in portable objects, monumental architecture, and rock art flourished. A wide range of artifacts, such as pottery (*Symbolkeramik*), engraved slate plaques, and *baculi* (the latter in the shape of shepherds' curved staffs), and cylindrical idols (made of bone, limestone, and clay) were decorated with geometric designs, anthropomorphs or deities, zoomorphs, weapons, and solar motifs. Megaliths (including menhirs and anthropomorphic stelae), caves and rock shelters, and open-air rock faces also were decorated with many of the same motifs as were found on the portable objects; sometimes they were engraved, and sometimes they were painted. Because of shared motifs throughout megalithic art and patterns in the placement of certain of these motifs, some scholars have suggested the existence of a megalithic art "code." Scholars also have noted the resemblance of megalithic Iberian art to megalithic art found in other regions of western Europe, such as Ireland, and posit that these similarities were the result of contact or exchange.

ECONOMY

During the Late Neolithic the herding of livestock and agriculture were practiced, but it was not until the Copper Age that a fully agricultural and sedentary lifestyle was established in Iberia. Groups farmed wheat and barley and supplemented their

agricultural base by herding sheep, goat, cattle, and pigs; hunting wild game (such as boar and deer); gathering wild plants and plant products (such as acorns); fishing; and collecting shellfish, particularly along the Atlantic and Mediterranean coasts. Richard Harrison argued that during the Copper Age Iberia underwent a Secondary Products Revolution, as did other regions of prehistoric Europe. There is archaeological, botanical, and faunal evidence that agriculture intensified during this period, livestock began to be used for their secondary products (dairy, traction, and transportation), and viticulture and woodland management were carried out. There is some debate about whether irrigation was practiced. Some authors have argued that there is archaeological evidence for water management structures and for crops that would have required irrigation (such as flax in southeastern Spain). Other scholars have used carbon-isotope analyses of archaeological seed remains to reason that, with the exception of fava beans, there is no evidence that irrigation was practiced during the Iberian Copper Age.

Craft specialization during the Late Neolithic and Copper Age is indicated by the production of bifacially flaked flint tools, engraved slate plaques, groundstone tools, copper objects, and decorated ceramics. The precise nature of this specialization and its impact on social and political relationships are under investigation. For example, the small-scale inefficient technology used in the production of copper objects during the Iberian Copper Age suggests that metallurgical specialization was part-time, kin-based, and dispersed. Evidence for copper metallurgy was found at Zambujal (Portugal), Los Millares (Spain), and Son Matge (Majorca). Similarly Stašo Forenbaher's study of the production of bifacial stone artifacts from Portuguese Copper Age sites concluded that relatively few specialists would have been involved in the manufacture of these objects. Moreover because of the restricted types that they produced, they would have not had a great impact on the economy. Sites that were involved in the specialized production of flint tools have been identified at Los Cercados, Las Canteras, Almizaraque, and Los Millares in Spain and at Casas de Baixo in Portugal.

During the Late Neolithic and Copper Age there was trade in unfinished and finished items

made of stone (including flint, granite, amphibolite, dolerite, callais, and slate), ceramics, and copper. There also is evidence for exchange between Iberia and North Africa; on some Iberian sites North African ivory and ostrich eggshells have been found, and on sites in North Africa beaker ceramics sometimes are seen. The variety and concentration of goods at certain larger sites, such as La Pijotilla (Spain), suggest that they may have functioned as central places for the distribution of goods.

SOCIOPOLITICAL ORGANIZATION

During the Late Neolithic and Copper Age of Iberia marked social inequalities and differentiation appeared for the first time in Iberia. The precise nature of these social distinctions, however, is unclear. For example, whether individuals were distinguished by inherited social rank or whether some groups in Iberia could be classified as state societies are subjects under discussion. Archaeologists also differ in their opinions as to the factors that contributed to the social complexity in evidence during this period. Some have emphasized the water-management requirements of the arid zones of Iberia, whereas others emphasize population pressure or the trade of valued material or symbolic resources.

The variations in tomb types; their sizes, locations, and visibility; the number of people buried within them; and the quantity and quality of goods found with these individuals all suggest that Late Neolithic and Copper Age societies ranked and differentiated its members. For example, it seems reasonable to suggest that persons buried within some of the larger megaliths, such as the extraordinarily large Anta Grande do Zambujeiro in Portugal, with its 6-meter-high orthostats, or standing stones, were of a higher status than those housed in smaller megaliths. Similarly persons buried individually within a megalithic tomb probably were of a higher rank than those buried in larger groups. At the megalithic cemetery/settlement site of Los Millares, Spain, the tombs with the highest proportion of prestige goods were located closest to the settlement.

There are also important regional differences in burial elaboration and grave goods during the Late Neolithic and Copper Age. The richest and most varied tombs on the Iberian Peninsula are in the arid

zone of southern Spain and the Mediterranean zones of central and southern Portugal (fig. 1). Tombs that are less varied and poorer in grave goods are situated in the Atlantic zones of Iberia, such as Galicia, Spain, and northern Portugal. Several scholars have suggested that this regional variability is related to the labor or risk involved in cultivating the landscape. In arid regions, where it was riskier to farm and where some form of water management or irrigation most likely was practiced, there were more opportunities than in more humid zones for aggrandizing persons to establish permanent control over agricultural systems and to emerge as elites, with political, economic, and ideological power.

Late Neolithic and Copper Age tombs in Iberia often were used over many hundreds of years to bury people. At times new tombs were built adjoining older tombs, such as at Farisoa I, Portugal, presumably to house members of the same or related social groups. This behavior suggests that people at the time placed a high value on collective identities as well as on ancestral ties. Such continuities may have resulted from a need to legitimize family or lineage rights to land or resources.

There is both direct and indirect evidence for violent conflict during the Iberian Copper Age. The construction of elaborate systems of fortification with bastions, sometimes involving several lines of drystone walls (such as at Los Millares and Zambujeiro, see fig. 2), suggests that there was a need for defense and a heightening of political tensions. Weaponry, such as copper daggers, and painted images of armed people in caves also are indicative of militarism. More direct evidence of violent conflict has been found in the burials at Atalayuela, the Hipogeo de Longar, and San Juan ante Portam Latinam, all in Spain. At the Hipogeo de Longar, a tomb in which at least 112 people of different ages and sexes were buried with few grave goods, four persons were found with arrowheads embedded in their skeletons. At San Juan ante Portam Latinam, 289 people were discovered, and nine had arrowheads in them. At Valencina de la Concepción, Spain, bodies had been thrown into rubbish ditches within the settlement area, apparently without grave goods.

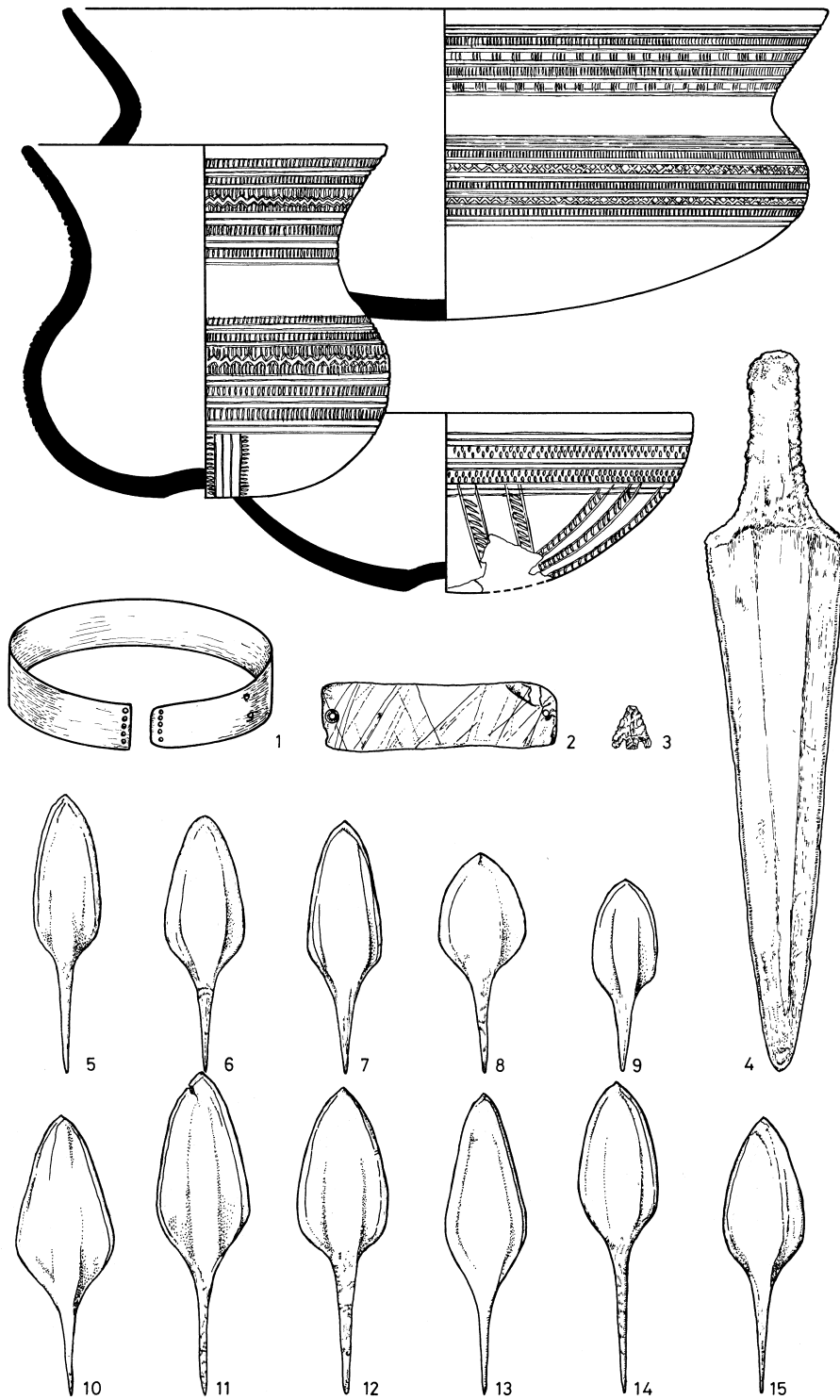


Fig. 1. Grave offerings from Fuente Olmedo, Spain, including Beaker ceramics, gold diadem, stone wristguard, flint arrowhead, and bronze Palmela points. FROM *THE BEAKER FOLK* BY RICHARD HARRISON, PUBLISHED BY THAMES AND HUDSON, LTD., LONDON. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.



Fig. 2. Hilltop site of Zambujal, Portugal, overlooking the Rio Sizandro. PHOTOGRAPH BY HERMANFRID SCHUBART, DEUTSCHES ARCHÄOLOGISCHES INSTITUT MADRID, #18-72-20. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

IDEOLOGY AND RITUAL BEHAVIOR

The clearest evidence for ideology and ritual behavior can be seen in association with the burials of the Late Neolithic and Copper Age. Throughout this period people—sometimes numbering more than two hundred—were buried in collective tombs, including megaliths, caves and rock shelters, rock-cut tombs, and corbel-vaulted tombs. Toward the end of the period, during the Late Copper Age Beaker phase, there was a tendency toward individual burials, perhaps reflecting the emergence of a new social order in which the memory of individuals took precedence over the memory of groups. Systematic analyses of human remains from this period are rare, however, largely because skeletal remains are poorly preserved or have disappeared altogether as the result of the acidity of the soils in which many of the tombs are found.

Megalithic tombs in particular have been an important source of information about ritual behavior during the Late Neolithic and Copper Age of Iberia. Michael Hoskin recorded the orientations of hundreds of Iberian megaliths and noted their highly regular orientation, with their passages facing east at approximately the axis of the midwinter sunrise. This easterly orientation seems to be a common pattern among megalithic tombs throughout the Mediterranean and may reflect a common ideology about the significance of the rising sun, a shared timekeeping function of the megaliths, or some combination of these two factors. Megalithic tombs on the Balearic Islands tend to face toward the west.

Scholars also have noted that the chambers of most Iberian megalithic tombs were constructed with seven orthostats. Some researchers have suggested that the number seven held important symbolism for Late Neolithic and Copper Age peoples, although Victor dos Santos Gonçalves argues that the number seven may be simply the result of practical architectural considerations. An odd-numbered group of stones would be the result of erecting one stone across the passage entrance; given the size of the chambers, erecting six additional standing stones would be a natural consequence.

Funerary rites during the Late Neolithic and Copper Age of Iberia included both primary burials and the secondary treatment of corpses. In the case of some primary burials, the central part of the body was cremated to eliminate the viscera. In the case of

secondary burials, clusters of bone groups, such as crania or long bones, were buried together. Fires sometimes also were set within the tomb chamber, probably to purify the interior of the tomb. Grave offerings often are found with the deceased, and some objects seem to have been especially made to accompany the dead, such as polished stone axes and adzes (often found unused in burials) and engraved stone plaques.

The engraved plaques, made on slate and schist, have been the subject of a great deal of research since the late nineteenth century. To date there are more than one thousand published plaques. Traditionally they were viewed as representations of the Mother Goddess, or Eye Goddess—a deity supposedly derived from the eastern Mediterranean. With the collapse of the “diffusionist” framework in the mid-twentieth century and considering the fact that only about 4 percent of the plaques depict eyed beings, the question of the function and meaning of the plaques, the majority of which have only geometric designs, has remained unresolved. Katina Lillios analyzed the distribution of these geometric plaques by design, tomb, and region and suggests that the plaques may have been ancient coats of arms and that their designs symbolically recorded the lineage affiliation and genealogical history of elite persons.

Another curious feature of Late Neolithic and Copper Age Iberian ritual is trepanation—the drilling and removal of a part of the skull. This practice appears to have been carried out while the person was alive, as indicated by the regrowth of bone surrounding the opening. Examples of trepanned skulls are known from Cova de la Pastora (Spain). Trepanation also is known from other late prehistoric cultures in Europe, such as those in France and Britain. Whether this practice was part of a healing process or was used to remove a piece of the skull for use in other rituals is unclear.

Like megalithic burials, menhirs, such as Penedo Comprido (Portugal), and stone circles, such as Almendres (Portugal), also were important features of the symbolic world of Late Neolithic and Copper Age Iberia. Some of the menhirs are phallic, which may reflect their association with fertility (as in later Iberian folklore) or with power. Some menhirs have engravings of solar motifs, which, when viewed in light of Michael Hoskin’s research on the patterned

orientations of megaliths, may suggest that ancient Iberians tracked the movements of celestial bodies for agricultural or ritual cycles, as many ancient groups in western Europe also may have done.

See also **The Mesolithic of Iberia** (vol. 1, part 2); **Milk, Wool, and Traction: Secondary Animal Products** (vol. 1, part 4); **Los Millares** (vol. 1, part 4); **Bell Beakers from West to East** (vol. 1, part 4); **El Argar and the Bronze Age of the Iberian Peninsula** (vol. 2, part 5); **Iberia in the Iron Age** (vol. 2, part 6); **Early Medieval Iberia** (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Bueno Ramirez, Primitiva, and Rodrigo de Balbin Behrmann. “L’art mégalithique dans la Péninsule Ibérique—une vue d’ensemble.” *L’Anthropologie* 96, nos. 2–3 (1992): 499–572.
- Cardoso, João Luís. *Leceia 1983–1993: Escavações do Povoado Fortificado Pré-histórico*. Oeiras: Câmara Municipal de Oeiras, 1994.
- Cartailhac, Émile. *Les âges préhistoriques de l’Espagne et du Portugal*. Paris: Ch. Reinwald, 1886.
- Chapman, Robert. “Urbanism in Copper Age and Bronze Age Iberia?” *Proceedings of the British Academy* 86 (1995): 29–46.
- . *Emerging Complexity: The Later Prehistory of South-East Spain, Iberia, and the West Mediterranean*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1990.
- Forenbaher, Staso. *Production and Exchange of Bifacial Flaked Stone Artifacts during the Portuguese Chalcolithic*. Oxford: BAR, 1999.
- Gilman, Antonio. “Assessing Political Development in Copper and Bronze Age Southeast Spain.” In *From Leaders to Rulers*. Edited by Jonathan Haas, pp. 59–81. New York: Kluwer Academic/Plenum Publishers, 2002.
- . “Unequal Development in Copper Age Iberia.” In *Specialization, Exchange, and Complex Societies*. Edited by Elizabeth M. Brumfiel and Timothy K. Earle, pp. 22–29. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1987.
- Gonçalves, Victor dos Santos. “Time, Landscape and Burials. I. Megalithic Rites of Ancient Peasant Societies in Central and Southern Portugal: An Initial Review.” *Journal of Iberian Archaeology* 1 (1999): 83–109.
- Harrison, Richard J. “The ‘Policultivo Ganadero’; or, The Secondary Products Revolution in Spanish Agriculture, 5000–1000 BC.” *Proceedings of the Prehistoric Society* 51 (1985): 75–102.
- . *The Beaker Folk: Copper Age Archaeology in Western Europe*. London: Thames and Hudson, 1980.
- Hernando Gonzalo, Almudena. “The Funerary World and the Dynamics of Change in Southeast Spain (Fourth–Second Millennium BC).” In *The Archaeology of Iberia: The Dynamics of Change*. Edited by Margarita Díaz-Andreu and Simon Keay, pp. 85–97. London: Routledge, 1997.
- Hoskin, Michael. *Tombs, Temples and Their Orientations: A New Perspective on Mediterranean Prehistory*. Bognor Regis, U.K.: Ocarina Books, 2001.
- Leisner, Georg, and Vera Leisner. *Antas do Concelho de Reguengos de Monsaraz*. Lisbon: Uniarch, 1951.
- Lillios, Katina T. “Some New Views of the Engraved Slate Plaques of Southwest Iberia.” *Revista Portuguesa de Arqueologia* 5, no. 2 (2002): 135–151.
- . “Amphibolite Tools of the Portuguese Copper Age (3000–2000 B.C.): A Geoarchaeological Study of Prehistoric Economics and Symbolism.” *Geoarchaeology* 12, no. 2 (1997): 137–163.
- Valera, Antonio C., Miguel Lago, Cidália Duarte, and Lucy Shaw Evangelista. “Ambientes funerários no complexo arqueológico dos Perdigões: Uma análise preliminar no contexto das práticas funerárias calcolíticas no Alentejo.” *ERA Arqueologia* 2 (2000): 84–105.
- Waldren, William H. *Beaker Culture of the Balearic Islands: An Inventory of Evidence from Caves, Rock Shelters, Settlements and Ritual Sites*. Oxford: Archaeopress, 1998.

KATINA T. LILLIOS

LOS MILLARES

Settlement and funerary records of the ancient Mediterranean offer evidence that the third millennium B.C. was a time of both warfare and increasing social inequality in the region. One of the key sites where such evidence occurs is at Los Millares, in the middle Andarax Valley, Almería province, in the Andalusia region of southeast Spain. The site comprises a fortified settlement, located on a promontory and further defended by outlying forts, and a cemetery of megalithic tombs located immediately outside the fortifications and on the same promontory. The site was discovered and excavated originally in 1892 by Louis Siret. Modern excavations have been carried out by Martín Almagro and Antonio Arribas in 1953–1957 and then by Arribas and Fernando Molina beginning in 1978.

The settlement itself occupies an area of 5 hectares and was fortified by four dry-stone walls, which have either been excavated or are visible from aerial photographs. The inner wall defines what excava-

tors call a “citadel” area on the tip of the promontory above the River Andarax, with evidence for stratified occupation deposits. The second wall surrounds an area with further huts with stone foundations and timber superstructures. One of these huts, rectangular in shape, contains evidence for both the smelting and casting of copper artifacts. Some 80 meters beyond this lies the third wall, which is a more imposing structure: as a result of at least five phases of rebuilding, the wall reaches a maximum thickness of 9 meters and has external towers, some of which are more than 6 meters in diameter. The fourth, exterior wall lies some 50 meters farther out and seals off access to the settlement from one side (on the River Andarax) to the other side (the Rambla de Huéchar) of the promontory, a distance of more than 400 meters. External bastions are located at 11- to 15-meter intervals, and in two cases they contain evidence for copperworking. At its peak the main entrance consisted of a barbican structure, with two walls projecting 12.5 meters beyond the wall, and traces of an external ditch. A large density of circular structures is indicated within this wall. According to preliminary reports of the excavations since 1978, the earliest occupation at Los Millares was mainly confined to the “citadel” and areas surrounded by the second and third walls. Exterior structures and deposits were then incorporated in the fortified area by the construction of the outer wall. By the end of the occupation the settlement area had contracted to the “citadel” and the area immediately around it.

At least thirteen contemporary, small structures interpreted as “forts” have been found on the crests of hills to the south and southwest of the settlement, as well as to the southeast on the opposite side of the Rambla de Huéchar. Large-scale excavations have been carried out in Fort 1, which was constructed in more than one phase and consisted of a central tower, two concentric walls with external bastions, and two external ditches. The area enclosed by the walls had a diameter of 30 meters, whereas the area within the outer ditch was 50 meters wide. Within Fort 1 there was evidence for areas of flintworking and copperworking and the production of flour using grinding stones set on stone platforms.

Between the main settlement and the forts to the south of the site was a cemetery of more than

80 megalithic stone tombs, the majority of which had central chambers of 3 to 4 meters in diameter, with false vaults and entrance passages. The tombs were built using dry-stone construction and covered with retaining mounds of stone and earth. Communal burials, normally of up to thirty and exceptionally more than one hundred individuals, were placed in these tombs, along with artifacts of copper, stone, bone, pottery, flint, and nonlocal materials such as ivory and ostrich-egg shell (both from North Africa). Although the cemetery was in use at the same time as the settlement and forts, the exact chronology of tomb construction and use is unclear. Radiocarbon dates from the settlement, the cemetery, and Fort 1, as well as from contemporary, related sites in southeast Spain span the period c. 3000–2250 B.C.

The fortifications, domestic structures, and communal tombs of Los Millares clearly represent an increase in labor investment compared with the preceding Neolithic occupation of the region. The funerary evidence suggests unequal access to wealth items between different kinship or descent groups, and those tombs with the largest concentrations of such wealth items are located nearer to the settlement. It is debatable how far such social groups controlled the production of wealth items and of basic subsistence. There is limited evidence for specialized production. The majority of lithics were produced from local raw materials, but there is also evidence of interregional exchange and production in excess of presumed needs for projectile points and grain in Fort 1. The source of this grain is unknown, but it may be tribute from settlements in the immediate hinterland of Los Millares. These settlements were all visible from the forts and in turn their inhabitants were able to monitor areas outside the visibility of those living at Los Millares. Along with other evidence, this suggests the existence of increased social tensions, but not yet the emergence of exploitation and social classes.

Los Millares is the largest and most impressive fortified settlement of the third millennium B.C. in southeast Spain. Such settlements are now known to have been more numerous than was thought in the mid-twentieth century. They are also known to extend from southeast Spain through Andalusia and then north through Portugal and western Spain to the Douro Valley. In all nearly one hundred such

sites were known by the end of the twentieth century, although there is great variation in their size, form, function, construction methods, longevity, and association with funerary sites. Los Millares has the advantage of larger-scale excavations (only Zambujal, in central Portugal, has been the subject of comparable fieldwork) and the potential to yield answers to a range of questions on the relationship between production and social inequality in pre-state societies in Iberia, as well as shedding light on the broader context of the Mediterranean at this time.

See also **Late Neolithic/Copper Age Iberia** (*vol. 1, part 4*).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Arribas, Antonio, et al. "Informe preliminar de los resultados obtenidos durante la VI campaña de excavaciones en el

poblado de Los Millares (Santa Fe de Mondújar, Almería) 1985." *Anuario Arqueológico de Andalucía 1985 2* (1987): 245–262.

Cara Barrionuevo, L., and J. M. Rodríguez López. "Análisis de distribución espacial de las comunidades megalíticas en el valle del río Andarax (Almería)." *Arqueología Espacial 3* (1984): 53–75.

Chapman, Robert. *Archaeologies of Complexity*. London: Routledge, 2003.

———. *Emerging Complexity: The Later Prehistory of South-East Spain, Iberia, and the West Mediterranean*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1990.

Molina, F., et al. "Programa de recuperación del registro arqueológico del Fortín 1 de Los Millares. Análisis preliminar de la organización del espacio." *Arqueología Espacial 8* (1986): 175–201.

ROBERT CHAPMAN



CORDED WARE FROM EAST TO WEST

The term “Corded Ware culture” (*die Schnurkeramikultur*) was introduced by the German archaeologist Friedrich Klopffleisch in 1883. The name is taken from cord impressions found on the surface of vessels found in archaeological sites across a large portion of central and eastern Europe. Researchers were able to recognize relatively early, at the beginning of the twentieth century, that the Corded Ware phenomenon was widespread and culturally important. Subsequently, a number of groups that inhabited the region in the third millennium B.C. have been identified as belonging to the Corded Ware culture.

Cord impressions were easy to identify on the surface of vessels. It should be noted, however, that later research has revealed that cord ornamentation was connected not only to the Corded Ware culture; it was also known to the Funnel Beaker culture, Globular Amphora culture, and various steppe cultures. In addition, not every Corded Ware vessel had this ornamental decoration. However, a basic list of artifacts associated with the Corded Ware culture was compiled in the early twentieth century and included stone axes, beakers, amphorae, arrowheads, and flint flakes. These were usually found in single-burial tombs covered by a barrow. An important observation concerned the orientation of the body according to gender. Most often the body was placed on an east-west axis with the face turned south, but men were placed on their right side (with the head to the west), while women were laid on their left side (with the head to the east). It must be

stressed that they were not accompanied by traces of permanent settlements.

In the annals of archaeology, the first part of the twentieth century was a time when each archaeological culture was identified with a specific people who had definitely described sociocultural characteristics. So it happened in this instance. Soon literature on the subject contained the obligatory hypothesis about the nomadic-warrior character of the “Corded Ware People” and their key role in the Indo-European migration into central and eastern Europe.

In the 1930s archaeologists began studying the stylistic sequences within individual regions. In the lead of this movement were Danish (C. J. Becker in 1936; P. V. Glob in 1945) and German (K. W. Struve in 1955) archaeologists, who studied the northern area of the Corded Ware culture that was considered a separate unity called the Single Grave culture (*die Einzelgrabkultur*). The typological and chronological charts they created are still used as the basis for ordering other regional groupings of Corded Ware. Significant modifications appeared only at the end of the twentieth century, when carbon-14 and dendrochronological dating methods were used on a wider scale.

THE OLDEST SITES AND THE GENESIS PROBLEM

The question of the origins of the Corded Ware culture has absorbed the attention of many archaeologists. In the mid-twentieth century, it appeared that the initial phase of Corded Ware was similar across

Europe at roughly the same time, and thus the concept of a “Pan-European Horizon” (also known as the “A-Horizon”) emerged. The Pan-European Horizon was characterized by distinctive amphorae, beakers, and axe forms, with single burials under barrows sometimes surrounded by a palisade. The existence of an early Pan-European Horizon of Corded Ware has come into question, however, for it appears that the artifact types associated with it persisted into later periods alongside other artifact types. It now appears that the origins of the Corded Ware culture must be addressed regionally and that accurate dating of finds is essential.

Many different views have been voiced concerning the genesis of the Corded Ware culture. There is a division between archaeologists who allow for participation in this process by pastoral societies of the steppes near the north shore of the Black Sea and those who think that Corded Ware is a core central European phenomenon. In both camps, there are many differing views. Among the advocates of a steppe origin, the differences center on the degree that the “steppe factor” played in the genesis of Corded Ware culture, while those who favor central European roots are divided as to where specifically in central Europe the genesis of Corded Ware took place. With the passage of time, there has emerged a tendency to tone down the debate, which was quite polarized in the first part of the twentieth century. The net effect of this process was that it strengthened the position of those hypotheses that link these formerly antagonistic camps within the framework of a single model.

One can make a list of the similarities that Corded Ware shares with other cultures that preceded it in central Europe. Deserving of stress is the scale of similarities to the Funnel Beaker culture. On one hand, both the Corded Ware and Funnel Beaker cultures covered similar territory; both attribute importance to battle-axes; both give priority to beakers and amphorae among their vessels; and both employ a similar ceramic technology. On the other hand, in the context of central Europe, the Corded Ware culture also had foreign characteristics. These include the priority of single burials, the building of barrows, a lifestyle that used temporary settlements, and a renaissance in the use of the bow (resulting in the numerous finds of flint arrowheads).

TERRITORIAL EXTENT AND CHRONOLOGY

Knowledge about the Corded Ware domain has been in flux for many years. The domain was a central and eastern European phenomenon. Its western boundary was the Rhine River. To the south it reached the Alps and occupied the Upper Danube River basin to the mouth of the Morava River. It was present in Moravia, and it reached Wolyn and Podolia along the northern curve of the Carpathians. In the east it was found in the upper basin of the Dnieper River and the upper Volga. Its northern border ran through Scandinavia and the German shores of the North Sea to the mouth of the Rhine.

Corded Ware chronology is based on ceramic ware, though in the north, battle-axe types are also important. The oldest ceramic artifacts of the A-Horizon include beakers and amphorae. As Corded Ware developed, greater regional differentiation took place. Artifacts from the later years of the culture can be described as the horizon of local groups. At that time the individual Corded Ware agglomerations were so varied that only knowledge about their genesis allowed archaeologists to treat them as part of a single cultural whole.

An absolute chronology of Corded Ware is based on accurate dating using the carbon-14 method, although there are enclaves (Switzerland and southwestern Germany) that have very accurate dendrochronological dates. In general, carbon-14 dating places Corded Ware throughout the third millennium B.C. There is, however, definite regional differentiation as to the beginning and ending dates.

The earliest-known carbon-14 dates for Corded Ware come from Kujavia and Małopolska in central and southern Poland. These include a grave at Krusza Zamkowa in Kujavia and a barrow at Średnia in Małopolska dating to the transition from the fourth to the third millennium B.C. Carbon-14 dating of the remaining central European regions shows that Corded Ware appeared after 2880 B.C. Around that time, in 2725 B.C., the first pile settlements (dwellings built on pilings at the edge of lakes) appeared in the Alpine foothills. Such sites have yielded materials characteristic of Corded Ware. The latest dates, about the middle of the third millennium B.C., are from the Russian Plain. The most likely hypothesis, then, is that Corded Ware

first appeared (on the transition between the fourth and third millennia B.C.) in the central part of its domain and spread from east to west. In 2725 B.C. it reached its southwestern edge. About 2500 B.C., Corded Ware spread in another direction, to the northeast, and it is eventually found on the upper Volga.

Dates for the disappearance of the Corded Ware culture also vary. The pile settlements with Corded Ware in the Alpine foothills, which yield the most accurate information, disappeared about 2440 B.C. The years between 2300 and 2100 B.C. were a period during which the Corded Ware culture ended in most regions, especially in the southern part of its domain (basins of the Danube, Upper Rhine, Elbe, and Vistula). Only in the Russian Plain did it last until 2000 B.C.

In many regions (from the Lower Rhine basin to Kujavia and Małopolska), the Corded Ware culture appeared alongside the late periods of the Funnel Beaker culture. In the area between central Germany and the Russian lowland, one can observe a long period where it existed alongside the Globular Amphora culture. In Kujavia, this lasted through the entire development of the local Corded Ware culture. In the western part of its domain (to the Vistula River), one can observe its contemporaneity with the Bell Beakers, a period lasting to the middle of the third millennium B.C. To the east of that river, Corded Ware appeared among various groups of the Pit-Comb Pottery cultures (also known as the East European Forest Neolithic). In sum, Corded Ware was a phenomenon that lasted nearly one thousand years, during the entire third millennium B.C., and encompassed all of central and much of northeastern Europe.

INTERNAL DIFFERENTIATION

The Corded Ware culture shows great regional differentiation, most visible in the typological attributes of the ceramic ware. Because of this, researchers separate out many groups and archaeological cultures within its borders. Their list is not permanent, and from time to time, some entries are eliminated, while others are added.

The Corded Ware variants most solidly grounded in literature are as follows: the Single Grave culture; the Protruding Foot Beaker culture; Corded Ware of the Alpine Pile Dwellings; Central German

Corded Ware; Bohemian-Moravian Corded Ware; Małopolska Corded Ware; Złota culture; Battle-Axe culture; the Rzucewo culture; Middle Dnieper culture; and the Fatianovo culture.

The structure of the Corded Ware domain is thought to have been influenced by many factors. The first is linked to long-lasting regional development. Most of the “corded” agglomerations took in regions with long traditions of regional development that went back to the beginnings of the Neolithic. The second factor that influenced the shape of Corded Ware regionalization was the network of far-reaching trade routes, and the Corded Ware agglomerations were usually situated on its nodal points. The third factor was the location of sources of raw materials. Most important to the Corded Ware peoples were supplies of flint, stone (especially that used for the manufacture of axes, such as amphibolite, basalt, diabase, and gabbro), and amber. Metal, basically only copper, did not play a major part in the Corded Ware culture, although simple copper ornaments may be found in the Corded Ware graves in the southern and central parts of its domain.

Single Grave Culture. Research into the Single Grave culture played a key role in the course of research into the whole of Corded Ware. On its basis, a typology of basic Corded Ware objects and finds was worked out. The Single Grave culture is known mainly for graves covered by barrows, in which one individual was laid in the fetal position on an east-west axis. In addition to the barrow burial rite introduced by the Single Grave culture, other types of tombs (mainly megalithic) dating to a previous time in prehistory were still being used by this group. The grave goods in the burials became standardized. The constant elements were the battle-axe and the beaker. In addition, flint axes were placed in the graves along with flint flakes and amber objects, among which the most spectacular are disks several centimeters in diameter with a central hole. There are few visible traces of settlements, though it is thought that there was significant progress in this regard during the Single Grave era. Dwellings were being built in the form of post houses of a light construction. The basic method of subsistence was the raising of livestock (especially cattle). Pollen diagrams indicate that open areas (pastures) increased as forest was cleared. In the pollen diagrams there

is no indication of an increase in grain cultivation. During the development of the Single Grave culture, the practice of making sacrifices by depositing artifacts in swamps continued from previous cultures.

Protruding Foot Beaker Culture. The Protruding Foot Beaker culture is the best-known part of the Corded Ware story. It is found along the Lower Rhine, in a key place for long-range contacts between the British Isles and the Alpine area, as well as along the Atlantic shore to the Baltic Sea. There exists an accurate typology of its basic object: the beaker. Much is known about the culture's settlements. To assure proper living conditions (that is, a dry place on the wet landscape of the Rhine Delta), permanent settlements were built on artificial platforms consisting of layers of shells, organic remains, and clay. The dwellings were rectangular huts of post construction. The funeral rites were characterized by the presence of flat graves as well as barrows, in which according to the Corded Ware custom, only one individual was laid. The Protruding Foot Beaker culture is also important because in 1955 Johannes D. van der Waals and Willem Glasbergen were able to demonstrate stylistic links that its beakers shared with the Bell Beakers. This became a basis for one of the main models for the genesis of the Bell Beakers called the "Dutch Model."

Corded Ware of the Alpine Pile Dwellings. The Corded Ware culture in Switzerland and Southwest Germany is known exclusively from pile dwellings, a rich source of information about many aspects of life thanks to the excellent way in which the artifacts have been preserved, especially organic ones. These include many objects made from bone (including pins and discs), food remains, and remains of the wooden structures. The custom of building settlements on pilings on the shores of lakes was known earlier in this area of Europe, and the Corded Ware people were only another, and by no means the last, users of the technique. Thanks to the large number of wooden elements that were preserved, good chronological data exists for each of these settlements. It is known with accuracy the year and season (spring, autumn) when the structures were built, repaired, and abandoned. In this part of Europe, the appearance of Corded Ware did not change the lifestyle of the inhabitants. They were

farmers who busied themselves in planting grain and raising animals, mainly cattle and pigs. They also took advantage of other opportunities offered by the rich lakeshore environment, practicing fishing, hunting, and gathering.

Central German Corded Ware Culture. The Central German Corded Ware culture is known mainly from flat, single-burial graves, where the body was placed in the classical Corded Ware position (on an east-west axis with the face to the south; women on their left side with the head pointing to the east, men on the right side with the head pointing to the west). The usual cemetery consisted of from several to dozens of graves. Many types of vessels richly ornamented with cord impressions were placed in the graves, along with faceted battle-axes. Infrequently, there were also copper items in the shape of wire decorations and beads.

An interesting find in this group was the grave at Göhlitzsch. On one of the stone slabs forming the grave there was engraved the image of a reflex bow and quiver. It is one of the earliest representations of this technologically advanced form of bow. This confirms the significance of bow-hunting equipment in the entire Corded Ware culture. Relatively little is known of the economic base of these people. The fact that they lived in a region that had a long agricultural tradition might be an indicator that they engaged in farming practices, especially the raising of animals.

Bohemian-Moravian Corded Ware. Bohemian-Moravian Corded Ware is known mainly from large cemeteries consisting of flat graves. At the largest of these, in Vikletice, 164 graves were explored. This probably testifies to the longevity of the settlement in the area by Corded Ware peoples. It is a fact, however, that few traces of settlements have been found. The grave goods are mostly ceramic ware. Often an individual would be buried with many vessels, mainly amphorae and beakers but also cups, pitchers, pots, and bowls. Rich corded decoration is found mainly in Bohemia, while in Moravia, undecorated ceramic ware was more common. The lack of decoration was especially pronounced during the earliest periods of development. Among the battle-axes there are also found faceted axe heads. Compared with other sites, there are relatively few bow-hunting artifacts, such as flint

arrowheads. Other objects placed in the graves were flint axes (whose edges are the only smoothed parts), flakes, stone maces, pendants made of animal teeth, and simple copper decorations.

Małopolska Corded Ware. Małopolska Corded Ware in southern Poland is known mainly from cemeteries, where at most a few dozen individuals were buried (the largest number of graves in one place totaled sixty-four at Żerniki Górne). These were single-burial graves, mostly flat. Barrows were also numerous, but they did not form unified cemeteries. Instead, they often followed one after another along the crest of a rise in the terrain. The individual was placed on a north-south axis, opposite the east-west arrangement found in the other Corded Ware regions. A characteristic of the Małopolska Corded Ware culture is the so-called catacomb tombs, consisting of a vertical shaft dug in the loess subsoil, at the bottom of which was a chamber where the body was placed. Usually the grave goods consisted of one or two vessels, heart-shaped arrowheads, flakes, and stone objects, such as battle-axes. The few settlements found exhibited impermanent dwellings. The thesis that the Małopolska Corded Ware culture had a pastoral character is widely accepted, not only on a theoretical basis but also on the basis of physical evidence.

Złota Culture. The Złota culture is a local Małopolska phenomenon linked to the larger circle of Corded Ware. It is known from multiple-burial graves lined with stone slabs in which individuals were laid in the fetal position with many grave goods, primarily ceramic ware. Much of this pottery had complex cord decoration (e.g., wavy cord impressions) and various forms that were connected not only with Corded Ware but with the Funnel Beaker, Globular Amphora, and Baden cultures. In addition, the objects found in the Złota graves included amber items, such as rectangular plates, various types of buttons with a V-shaped hole, and tubular beads. There were also flint axes with a smoothed edge, flint arrowheads, pendants made from animal teeth (especially dog teeth), bone awls, and beads made of shell. The Złota phenomenon is dated to the first part of the third millennium B.C. It still creates much controversy and to date has no single interpretation.



Fig. 1. Characteristic battle-axes reminiscent of boats belonging to the Boat-Axe subgroup of the Corded Ware culture. © THE NATIONAL MUSEUM OF DENMARK. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

Battle-Axe Culture. The Battle-Axe culture is also known as the Boat-Axe culture (*die Bootaxtkultur*). It is located in southern and central Sweden and southern Norway. Artifacts from this culture were found mostly in graves, and the most characteristic items are battle-axe heads, especially examples with an extended shaft sleeve, that curve upward at each end like the prow and stern of a boat. There also exist remains of settlements that were composed of lightly constructed huts of rectangular shape and post construction.

Rzucewo Culture. Unlike the other Corded Ware groups, the Rzucewo culture (also known as the East Baltic Coastal culture or *Haffküstenkultur*) is known mainly from its substantial settlements, which were often built on pilings and situated on the shores of lakes or Baltic bays. From these settlements have survived many artifacts, some made of

organic materials. From them also have survived many items of ceramic ware that are typologically differentiated, among which are shallow bowls (most likely lamps that burned animal fat). Another characteristic of the Rzucewo culture is flint scrapers with a smoothed working edge. The working of amber was very important in this culture. There were mines and workshops where several typical items were produced, among them buttons with a V-shaped hole. The people supported themselves by exploiting the rich environment of their seashore niche (fishing, shellfish collecting). Sea mammals (seals and porpoises) were an important item on their menu, whereas agricultural products were of lesser importance. This lifestyle was known earlier on the southeastern shores of the Baltic. It was, for example, practiced by the Narva culture of the Early Neolithic period.

Middle Dnieper Culture. The Middle Dnieper culture is known mainly from graves, both barrow and the flat form. The most common orientation is on the north-south axis. Grave goods include chiefly beakers, often with round bottoms, flint axes, stone battle-axes, and infrequently, items made of amber and copper. A few settlements are known to have existed, built with rectangular shelters partly sunk into the ground. The Middle Dnieper culture was considered by some researchers to be the link connecting Corded Ware with steppe cultures.

Fatianovo Culture. The Fatianovo culture is the most northeastern and the chronologically latest of the Corded Ware groups. Its emergence is connected to influences from the west and southwest that came from other Corded Ware groups. It is known from cemeteries consisting of flat graves, where the placement of the body differs from most Corded Ware burials elsewhere. The body was laid on its back, usually on a north-south axis. Grave goods consisted of stone battle-axes, flint axes, and bulbous vessels with round bottoms, most often decorated with cord impressions only on their upper parts.

GENERAL CHARACTERISTICS OF CORDED WARE

Corded Ware was a phenomenon that covered a large area, from the Rhine in the west to the Volga in the east, from the Danube in the south to the

Arctic Circle in the north, and it lasted about a thousand years. The terrain it occupied had a highly differentiated ecology. Before the appearance of the Corded Ware culture, this region was a place where many cultures with varied beginnings developed. The characteristic attributes of the Corded Ware culture were partly a legacy of previous cultures and partly something totally new for inhabitants in that part of Europe.

It is time to pose the basic question: what was Corded Ware? But this must be supplemented by a second question: was Corded Ware the same thing in all regions? The second question must be answered negatively. The Corded Ware culture in the Alpine region and the Rzucewo culture on the southeast Baltic are clearly different from the rest of the Corded Ware domain. These were instances linked to specific ecological niches that had been exploited in a similar fashion over long phases of prehistory. In this framework, Corded Ware is one of many episodes and by no means the last. It does not seem likely that the appearance of Corded Ware in these areas could be ascribed to the immigration of a new population. Both instances, however, indicate something extremely important: the attractiveness of the Corded Ware way of life for Neolithic societies. Another example of this was the late northeastern expansion (that is, the Fatianovo culture) into areas that were ecologically and culturally different from those found in central Europe.

In the remaining parts of the Corded Ware domain, the culture can be treated as a moderately homogenous whole despite the many regional differences seen in the typological attributes of the artifacts. The primary evidence of homogeneity is the widespread use of single-burial graves. Though this type of grave was known in many regions of central Europe earlier in the Neolithic, it had fallen into disuse. Just prior to development of the Corded Ware culture, the prevailing burial rite was multiple-person graves, whose most visible examples were the megalithic tombs. Corded Ware did not make a break with this tradition—megaliths were still used—but the preferred method of burial was the grave with a single body. This change reveals the beginning of the individualization process. This phenomenon is one of the cornerstones of modern Western civilization. It depended on the establishment of the individual as an active element in social

change, in contrast to the groups of early farmers whose real identity lay in being a member of the community. Individualization was a necessary phase on the way to discovering a specific concept of personal freedom within European civilization.

Another element to consider is the role of sex in Corded Ware burials. Throughout Corded Ware culture, there was a definite opposition to placing men and women in the same positions in graves (most often women were laid on their left side with the head pointing east, whereas men were laid on their right side with the head toward the west). On this basis researchers conclude that the internal organization of the Corded Ware people was based on a definite assignment of gender roles. The right to burial was not equal for both sexes. There were many more male burials, fewer female, but the rarest were those of children (they were often buried together with an adult). While the issue of gender variations is meaningful, it is not as important as the individualization process reflected in the burials.

The building of barrows, an activity that has numerous religious connotations, harks back to the idea of a holy mountain, an eternal axis, and a place of conjunction between heaven and earth. This shows that there was a significant belief in the after-life. That theory is confirmed by the frequency with which amber, a material thought to be of a heavenly nature, appears among the grave goods. The presence of weapons in the form of battle-axes (less often of axes for chopping wood), archery sets, and knives (whose remains consist of flint sherds) show that Corded Ware societies placed an emphasis on the warrior role, suggesting that the hunter-warrior had the highest status in society.

Another characteristic of Corded Ware culture is indicated by the beakers, often richly decorated and well-made drinking vessels. Their presence in the graves indicates that this activity had a ritual character. The development of such customs in Neolithic societies of central Europe was observed by Andrew Sherratt. He showed that the ritual drinking of beverages (probably of an intoxicating nature) has deep local roots, reaching as far back as the Funnel Beaker culture, and was known after the passing of Corded Ware, for example in the Bell Beakers.

An intensive search for prehistoric settlements, much of it taking place near the end of the twentieth

century, resulted in the discovery of a small number of sites in various parts of the Corded Ware domain. The surprising fact was that the traces found were very similar to each other. The settlements, as a rule, were small with light-post construction used in the building of rectangular dwellings.

The unavailability of data (due especially to the lack of settlements) has limited the ability to reconstruct the economic basis of the Corded Ware culture. At the same time, it is possible to interpret this situation as evidence supporting the idea of a migratory lifestyle. Other data serves to confirm this. The pollen profiles correlate the presence of Corded Ware with an increase in grasslands and a decreased activity in the growing of grain. Scarce osteological data indicates that cattle and small ruminants were important. Fundamentally, then, it appears that most Corded Ware groups should be treated as animal breeders or even herders. The exceptions to this rule are the inhabitants of the pile dwellings in the Alpine lands and on the Baltic shore and the groups in the northeastern portion of the Corded Ware domain.

A picture emerges of an animal-breeding society, whose members wandered with their herds over a relatively large territory. Their social structure was organized on different roles for men and women, where men held the superior position. A major role was assigned to a group of adult men: the hunter-warriors who raised their prestige through the possession of ornamental battle-axes, knives, and bow-hunting equipment and who participated in ritual drinking using decorative beakers. The world of their spiritual beliefs was connected to the supernatural.

The genesis of the Corded Ware culture must have been a protracted and complicated process that involved representatives of the traditional central European cultures as well as peoples who came from the steppes near the Black Sea. It does not seem probable that the action of local factors could be limited to any of the regional enclaves. The main local element in the genesis of Corded Ware was the Funnel Beaker culture. The second influence was the steppe societies, but at this time it is not possible to determine whether it was a direct migration of people from the steppes near the Black Sea or the steppe characteristics reached the northern European lowlands through the agency of eastern or south-

ern neighbors. Two possible routes could have played a role in this process: a northern route that connected the lowland with the steppes through Wolyn and the Upper Vistula basin and a southern route running from the steppes near the Black Sea to the mouth of the Danube, then upriver to the Tisza basin and across the Carpathians toward the north (similar to the so-called third-wave migration of barrow-building [“Kurgan”] peoples described by Marija Gimbutas). It is not known which of the two may have played a greater role in the process.

CORDED WARE AND THE INDO-EUROPEAN QUESTION

It may be said with regard to the Indo-European problem that the Corded Ware culture was in the right place at the right time. The widely accepted hypothesis that the people of the Corded Ware culture were animal breeders or herders appeals to the imagination of the researchers as far as the oldest Indo-Europeans are concerned. Corded Ware is also the first culture in central Europe whose characteristics are visibly linked to the Indo-European examples.

As for the Corded Ware role in the process of bringing Indo-European influences into Europe, the archaeologists have no single view. This depends on the model, and of these there are many. Most often the Corded Ware culture is considered to be the archaeological representation of a part of the Indo-European peoples—that is, the ancestors of the Balts, Celts, Germans, Italian peoples, and Slavs. In this sense, Corded Ware sites reveal the process of the Indo-Europeanization of all of central, northern, and northeastern Europe.

SUMMARY

Two conclusions can be stated about the Corded Ware culture. The first is somewhat surprising. It turns out that the actual knowledge of this phenomenon has not changed much since the beginning of the twentieth century. A much larger base of sources has been thoroughly analyzed using modern methods, but the core of the knowledge about Corded Ware remains the same: archaeologists still think that this was a culture of animal breeders and possibly herders.

The second conclusion is that the Corded Ware culture played a most important role in long-term

social development. The appearance of individualization, as illustrated in Corded Ware burials, was an undoubted breakthrough. With this development, the individual (especially the adult male, the hunter-warrior) became an active object in the process of social change. The field for competition between individuals began to open. An increasingly complicated social hierarchy developed, and with it grew the demand for items and raw materials that raised the status of their owners. This entire process was coded into the rituals of the culture. As these rituals grew more complex, they increased the social differentiation of the group. From this there was but a small step to stratification and the creation of social classes. In this way, the Corded Ware culture opened the gate through which the early prehistoric societies of central Europe started their march toward modern European culture.

See also *Archaeology and Language* (vol. 1, part 1); *Late Neolithic/Copper Age Central Europe* (vol. 1, part 4); *Neolithic Lake Dwellings in the Alpine Region* (vol. 1, part 4); *Consequences of Farming in Southern Scandinavia* (vol. 1, part 4); *Bell Beakers from West to East* (vol. 1, part 4).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Andersen, Søren T. “Early Agriculture.” In *Digging into the Past: 25 Years of Archaeology in Denmark*. Edited by S. Hvass and B. Storgaard, pp. 88–91. Århus, Denmark: Royal Society of Northern Antiquaries and Jutland Archaeological Society, 1993.
- Buchvaldek, Miroslav, and Drahomír Koutecký. *Vikletice: Ein schnurkeramisches Gräberfeld*. Praehistorica 3. Prague: Universita Karlova, 1970.
- Czebreszuk, Janusz. *Schyłek neolitu i początki epoki brązu w strefie południowo-zachodniobałtyckiej (III i początki II tys. przed Chr.)*. *Alternatywny model kultury*. Poznań, Poland: Wydawnictwo Naukowe UAM, 2001.
- Czebreszuk, Janusz, and M. Szmyt. “The III Millennium bc in Kujawy in the Light of Radiocarbon Dating.” In *The Absolute Chronology of Central Europe 3000–2000 B.C.* Edited by J. Czebreszuk and J. Müller, pp. 177–208. Studien zur Archäologie in Ostmitteleuropa 1. Rahden/Westfalen, Germany: Leidorf, 2001.
- Czebreszuk, Janusz, and Johannes Müller, eds. *The Absolute Chronology of Central Europe 3000–2000 B.C.* Studien zur Archäologie in Ostmitteleuropa 1. Rahden/Westfalen, Germany: Leidorf, 2001.
- Furholt, Martin. *Die absolutchronologische Datierung der Schnurkeramik in Mitteleuropa und Südkandinavien*. Bonn, Germany: n.p., 2003.

- Gimbutas, Marija. "Proto-Indo-European Culture: The Kurgan Culture during the 5th to the 3rd Millennia B.C." In *Indo-European and Indo-Europeans*. Edited by C. Cardona, H. M. Hoenigswald, and A. Senn, pp. 155–197. Philadelphia: University of Pennsylvania Press, 1970.
- Hafner, Albert. "Vom Spät- zum Endneolithikum: Wandel und Kontinuität um 2700 v. Chr. in der Schweiz." *Archäologisches Korrespondenzblatt* 32, no. 4 (2002): 517–531.
- Hallgren, Fredrik. "The Battle Axe Culture in Northern Middle Sweden." In *Early Corded Ware Culture: The A-Horizon—Fiction or Fact?* Edited by P. Siemen, pp. 105–118. *Arkæologiske Rapporter*, no. 2. Esbjerg, Denmark: Esbjerg Museum, 1997.
- Kempisty, Andrzej, and Piotr Włodarczak. "Cemetery of the Corded Ware Culture in Żerniki Górne." *Światowit*, supp. ser. P: Prehistory and Middle Ages, 5 (2000): special issue.
- Koško, Aleksander. "The Migration of Steppe and Forest-Steppe Communities into Central Europe." *Journal of Indo-European Studies* 18, nos. 3–4 (1990): 309–329.
- Krainov, Dmitrii A. "On the Problem of Origin, Chronology, and Periodization of the Fatyanovo-Balanovo Culture Community." In *Die kontinentaleuropäischen Gruppen der Kultur mit Schnurkeramik*. Edited by M. Buchvaldek and C. Strahm, pp. 321–327. *Præhistorica* 19. Prague: Universita Karlova, 1992.
- Krzak, Zygmunt. *The Złota Culture*. Wrocław, Poland: Ossolineum, 1976.
- Lanting, J. N., and Johannes D. van der Waals. "Beaker Culture Relations in the Lower Rhine Basin." In *Glockenbecher Symposium Oberried 1974*, pp. 1–80. Bussum/Haarlem, The Netherlands: Fibula-van Dishoeck, 1976.
- Machnik, Jan. "Die neuesten ¹⁴C-datierten Fundstellen der Schnurkeramikultur in den Karpaten." In *Tradition und Innovation: Prähistorische Archäologie als historische Wissenschaft: Festschrift für Christian Strahm*. Edited by B. Fritsch, M. Maute, I. Matuschik, J. Müller, and C. Wolf, pp. 257–273. Rahden/Westfalen, Germany: Verlag Marie Leidorf GmbH, 1998.
- Mallory, James P. *Indo-Europeans: Language, Archaeology and Myth*. London: Thames and Hudson, 1994.
- Mazurowski, Ryszard F. "Amber Treatment Workshops of Rzucewo Culture in Żuławy." *Przegląd Archeologiczny* 32 (1985): 5–60.
- Neustupný, Evžen. "Economy of the Corded Ware Cultures." *Archeologické rozhledy* 21 (1969): 43–68.
- Ottaway, Barbara S. "Copper Artifacts of the Corded Ware Complex." In *Die kontinentaleuropäischen Gruppen der Kultur mit Schnurkeramik*. Edited by M. Buchvaldek and C. Strahm, p. 283–290. *Præhistorica* 19. Prague: Universita Karlova, 1992.
- Renfrew, Colin. *Archaeology and Language: The Puzzle of Indo-European Origins*. New York: Cambridge University Press, 1988.
- Schlichtherle, Helmut, ed. *Pfahlbauten rund um die Alpen*. Archäologie in Deutschland. Sonderheft. Stuttgart, Germany: Konrad Theiss Verlag, 1997.
- Sherratt, Andrew. "Alcohol and Its Alternatives: Symbol and Substance in Pre-Industrial Cultures." In *Consuming Habits: Drugs in History and Anthropology*. Edited by J. Goodman, P. E. Lovejoy, and A. Sherratt, pp. 11–46. London and New York: Routledge, 1995.
- Siemen, Palle, ed. *Early Corded Ware Culture: The A-Horizon—Fiction or Fact?* *Arkæologiske Rapporter*, no. 2. Esbjerg, Denmark: Esbjerg Museum, 1997.
- Waals, Johannes D. van der, and Willem Glasbergen. "Beaker Types and Their Distribution in the Netherlands." *Palaeohistoria* 4 (1955): 5–47.

JANUSZ CZEBRESZUK
(TRANSLATED BY PETER OBST)



BELL BEAKERS FROM WEST TO EAST

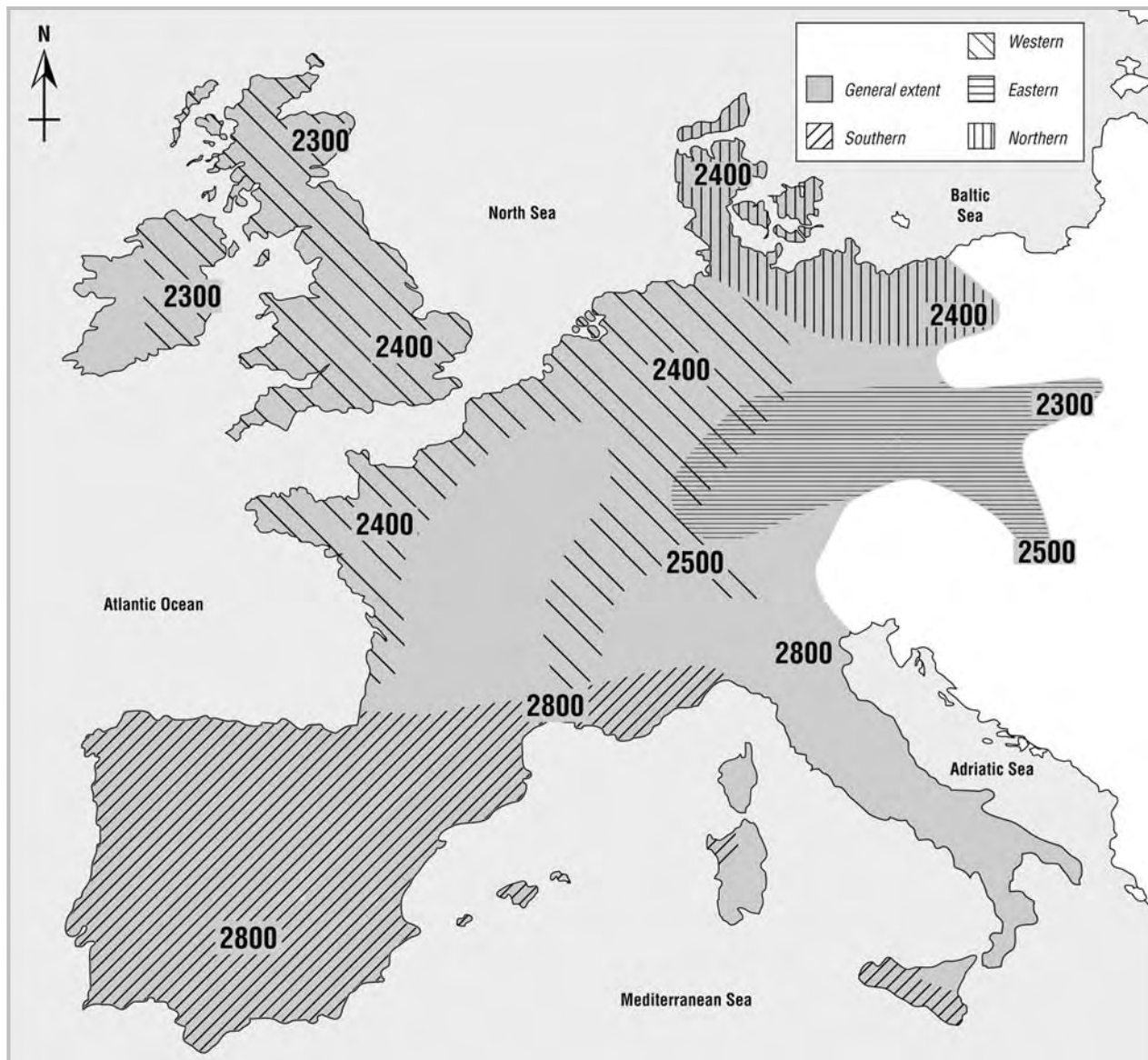
One of the most puzzling archaeological phenomena of prehistoric Europe is the widespread appearance of a specific form of ceramic vessel, a decorated, thin-walled, handleless drinking cup known as a bell beaker, throughout western and central continental Europe and the British Isles during the second half of the third millennium B.C. The bell beakers were often found in male burials that also included archer's wrist guards of polished stone, V-perforated buttons (with two holes drilled from one side at an angle until they converged to form a single V-shaped channel), and copper daggers. Archaeologists refer to this phenomenon as the "Bell Beaker complex" or, more efficiently, simply as "Bell Beakers."

Bell Beakers came to the attention of archaeologists at the end of the nineteenth century when researchers from various countries became aware of the very richly decorated vessels whose shape was reminiscent of an inverted bell. In the early twentieth century, archaeologists throughout western Europe began to adopt a naming convention using the word "bell." In France, these vessels came to be called *Vases Campaniformes*, and the German prehistorian Paul Reinecke conformed to the terminology used by Germany's western neighbors by introducing the term *Glockenbecher*. In the British Isles the term "Bell Beakers" was introduced by Lord Abercromby in the study he published about the phenomenon in 1912.

As the nineteenth century became the twentieth, researchers made the first basic determinations about Bell Beakers. A collection of artifacts charac-

teristic of this phenomenon had been assembled. It was ascertained that these artifacts were most often found in graves throughout western and central Europe. Chronologically, Bell Beakers were assigned to the end of the Neolithic (often called the Copper Age). These first determinations made researchers aware of the extraordinary geographic spread of Bell Beakers and the richness of objects that characterized it. At the time, Bell Beakers were presumed to be the culture of a single people who had spread very quickly across the expanse of western and central Europe over a relatively short time, so the main problem for researchers was to find the place where this culture originated. Most archaeologists of the early 1900s considered the "Beaker People" to have been very mobile and warlike folk, who occupied themselves with raising animals and conducting trade. In some discussions they were described as itinerant traders who spread the knowledge of metallurgy to central and western Europe.

The first all-encompassing model for explaining the genesis of Bell Beakers was proposed by Spanish researchers Pedro Bosch-Gimpera (1926) and Alberto del Castillo Yurrita (1928). In archaeological literature, their theory is called the Spanish Model. It stated that the Bell Beaker phenomenon started on the Iberian Peninsula and from there its peoples, practicing trade, expanded as far as central Europe. Later research, concentrating on the typology of finds in various regions, complicated the picture of Bell Beakers. A breakthrough in this regard were the studies published in 1955 by Dutch researchers J. D. (Johannes D.) van der Waals and Willem Glas-



Extent of Bell Beakers in Europe, the earliest dates of their appearance, and their provinces. Dates are based on radiocarbon dating of short-lived samples (based on Müller and van Willigen 2001). PROVINCES FROM HARRISON 1980; EXTENT FROM CZEBRESZUK AND SZMYT 2003.

bergen that presented a scheme of evolution for the bell beaker vessels. In their opinion this form developed from the beakers of the Corded Ware culture on the Lower Rhine. In the literature this view is known as the Dutch Model. They proposed that there had been an entire sequence of stylistic transformations in the beakers. Those taken to be the oldest were transitional types of beakers called “corded-bell.” In addition, there were vessels decorated on their entire surface with cord impressions, which were called “all-over-corded” beakers, or

AOC. Beakers ornamented on their entire surface were termed “all-over-ornamented” beakers, or AOO. The next form, an unmistakably bell-shaped phase of typological development, was the so-called Maritime beaker. At the end of the sequence were beakers of the Veluwe type. Subsequently, the Maritime beakers were found to be the stylistically oldest form of bell beaker in all the key Bell Beaker regions of Europe. To this day, the Maritime bell beaker remains a basic component in understanding the internal chronology of the Bell Beakers.



Fig. 1. Reconstruction of a Bell Beaker burial from southern England with the skeleton in typical contracted position accompanied by a beaker and a copper dagger in a stone-lined pit. THE ART ARCHIVE/SALISBURY AND S. WILTS MUSEUM/EILEEN TWEEDY. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

About the same time that the Dutch Model was formulated, Edward Sangmeister proposed the so-called Reflux Model of Bell Beaker origins and distribution. Typological studies done in many regions showed that not all Bell Beaker attributes were connected with Spain, one of the main problems being the fact that corded decoration was absent there. Sangmeister proposed that after the initial phase of Bell Beaker development and expansion from the Iberian Peninsula in the direction of central Europe, a second phase of development took place, this being the “reflux” or reverse flow of Bell Beakers back to the Iberian Peninsula in a new version that had been enriched by central European contributions. Sangmeister, like some of his contemporaries, was becoming aware that it was increasingly difficult

to find a single region where Bell Beaker attributes originated.

In the 1970s the Dutch Model gained strong support because a series of carbon-14 datings confirmed its typological sequence. It was an argument that convinced most archaeologists, mainly on the Continent, to accept the Dutch Model. At approximately the same time in the British Isles, new concepts were gaining voice. These addressed concepts far removed from the traditional question about the genesis of an archaeological culture linked to a specific people. Archaeologists such as David L. Clarke called on their colleagues to address the issue of the Bell Beakers from new perspectives. This general appeal was followed by concrete proposals, examining Bell Beakers as a result of processes that were being

played out in the social or religious spheres rather than representing the actual movements of peoples. Colin Burgess proposed that Bell Beakers be analyzed as a cultural “package”: a collection of artifacts displaying a single type of cultural behavior, which in this instance involved the custom of communal libations. This concept was further developed by Andrew Sherratt, who proposed that Bell Beakers reflect the introduction of fermented beverages and the social privileges associated with the consumption of alcohol. Stephen Shennan devoted much attention to the thesis that Bell Beakers are not a classical archaeological culture but a gathering of specific objects that appear in various cultural contexts.

Such perspectives resulted in a change of approach in research on the Bell Beakers. The questions of the genesis and “Beaker People” became less important to archaeologists. The term “Bell Beaker culture” was no longer used, and archaeologists substituted “Bell Beaker phenomenon,” “beaker package,” or simply “Bell Beakers.” Interpretations of the phenomenon reached for a totally different concept of understanding and generally placed Bell Beakers in the frame of a large cultural change that took place as the Neolithic Age passed to the Bronze Age and social stratification was emerging.

ARCHAEOLOGICAL CHARACTERISTICS AND SPATIAL DIFFERENTIATION

Characteristics of archaeological information on Bell Beakers should be viewed on two levels, taking into consideration: the attributes unique to the phenomenon over the entire area where they appear and attributes specific to individual regions. This division is most apparent among pottery. The collection of Bell Beaker vessels is divided into those that are richly ornamented and those that lack ornamentation. Most of the ornamented vessels are various forms of bell-shaped beakers that provide a classic indicator of the Bell Beaker phenomenon and are known throughout its entire domain. Yet all unornamented vessels and a small part of the ornamented ones have a regional quality, and their local, non-beaker genesis is often mentioned. At the very outset it is necessary to mention that there are a limited number of non-ceramic artifacts that also fall into the first group—those that are found through-

out the Bell Beaker domain. The rest of the attributes that describe various cultural characteristics find their place in the second category. For example, there is no single type of grave or settlement that was typical for the entire Bell Beaker phenomenon.

CORE BEAKER ATTRIBUTES

The basic artifact that gives its name to the phenomenon is the bell-shaped beaker. It is a carefully made vessel, having smooth surfaces that are usually an intense orange color, which has a marked resemblance to metal vessels made of copper or gold. The walls of the beaker are relatively thin, which is another point of resemblance to metal vessels. There are many types of bell beakers, such as those mentioned above: AOO, AOC, Maritime, or Veluwe type. Generally, the tendency for stylistic change in bell-shaped beakers lies in the changes in their proportions (from tall and slender to more squat) and the growing intricacy of the decoration.

An important characteristic of the bell-shaped beakers is decoration known as “zoned ornamentation.” Looking from top to bottom, one can see bands of ornamentation on the vessel separated by bands without ornamentation (see fig. 1). The decoration was done using four basic techniques: cord impressions in damp clay; engravings with a sharp tool; impressions made with a comb; and less often—and primarily in southwestern Europe—application of red paint. The ornamentation was often incrustated with a white substance. There are many varieties of zoned ornamentation: narrow bands characteristic of the Maritime beakers; wide bands in both single- and multiple-band configurations; and the so-called metope decoration, in which the ornamentation is contained in a wide band that recalls in its layout the friezes of classical Greek buildings.

The second group of objects characteristic to the Bell Beakers was the archery set. Archery must have had a deep cultural significance, because in addition to the flint arrowheads known from earlier cultures, we have been able to find stone plates thought to be archer’s wrist guards and the so-called shaft straighteners. The flint arrowheads exhibit a very high quality of manufacture. They have a complicated shape and are covered with a regular surface retouch. Several varieties are known: tanged arrowheads, the so-called heart-shaped points, and

triangular arrowheads. Specific to Bell Beakers are stone archery plates that protected the wrist of the hand holding the bow. It is a formally rich group of objects, often decorated, which consisted of both four-hole and two-hole types.

The so-called shaft straighteners were used to polish the arrow shaft. They consisted of two stones, each of which had one flat surface with a single straight groove in it. When the two stones were placed together with their grooved sides facing each other, an opening resulted through which it was possible to pull the shaft.

With Bell Beakers, cutting weapons, mainly daggers, first appeared in Europe. These were commonly made of copper and their characteristic typology was uniform throughout the entire Bell Beaker area. This type is described by the term “tanged dagger.” The fact that copper was used, a relatively soft metal, indicates that these had ceremonial rather than utilitarian uses. In the northeast part of the Bell Beaker domain (from Jutland to the regions on the lower Vistula River) flint daggers were manufactured on a large scale.

An invention of Bell Beakers are the so-called dagger scepters or halberds, in which the metal edge similar to that of a dagger is mounted transversely on a wooden handle. We know them from the British Isles and central Europe, and they are widely interpreted as insignia of authority and, more generally, symbols of high social rank.

Another metal product, the so-called Palmela points are known mainly in southwest Europe. A single unequivocal explanation of their use has yet to be formulated. The larger examples could have been used as daggers, while the smaller ones were definitely arrowheads.

Other objects of sheet metal (copper and gold) are also associated with Bell Beakers. These are in the form of earrings (hair decorations), lunulae, and other less-frequently seen objects, such as flat axe heads, awls, or pins.

Buttons with a V-shaped opening were made from various materials, not only horn and bone but also from various semiprecious stones (e.g., jet) and amber. They were of various shapes, but most commonly were round. In the southwestern Bell Beaker area, buttons of the Tortuga type were also made.

Both types of buttons are considered to have served as necklace beads, parts of headdresses, or as decorations sown onto garments.

Still another form of object specifically connected to the Bell Beakers are models of bows made from bone, horn, or boar tusks. They are found mainly in central Europe and appear to have been connected to the religious sphere of life, a confirmation of the high regard given to bow hunting.

SPREAD AND REGIONAL DIFFERENTIATION

The line that divides Europe into areas with and without beakers runs along the Vistula River south to the Moravian Gate, as far as the Central Danube in the vicinity of Budapest, then makes a wide curved turn to the shores of the Adriatic in the region of the Po River delta. The area with Bell Beakers takes in not only a large part of Europe west of this line, but also parts of northern Africa in Algeria and Morocco.

This area is unevenly covered with Bell Beaker sites. They are mostly found in settlement centers—places that have a long tradition of regional development, where settlements of prehistoric societies concentrated over many periods. In the entire Bell Beaker domain there are no examples of sites being found in areas that had a marginal cultural significance in previous times.

There are dozens of regions in Europe and Africa that have concentrations of Bell Beaker settlements. A general geographic apportionment of Bell Beakers was proposed in 1980 by Richard J. Harrison. He divided the beaker area into three main provinces: southern, western, and eastern. In central Europe, this general apportionment should be supplemented by one additional province—the northern—encompassing the area between Jutland, in Denmark, and the lower Vistula River.

The Southern Province. This province takes in the entire Iberian Peninsula, southern France, the Balearic Islands, Sardinia, and Sicily, and it also includes the enclaves in northern Africa (Morocco and Algeria). Especially characteristic to this province are the following objects: Palmela points and V-perforated Tortuga buttons. Characteristic among the ceramic ware is the squat shape of the beaker that typologically corresponds to the S-shaped profile bowls

(e.g., Palmela-type bowls) and the frequent painting of the vessel surfaces with red paint.

In this province are found fortified settlements, such as Zambujal and Vila Nova de São Pedro. These settlements had stone walls, bastions, and moats carved into the rock. Their beginnings are connected to earlier cultures, but there is no question that they were used during Bell Beaker times. Traces of metallurgical works were found in many settlements, especially for copper and gold. The southern province is noted for its high production of metal objects. These included daggers, earrings, flat axe heads, Palmela points, awls, and other items.

The funeral rites included single and multiple burials. Many of the dead were placed in rock-cut tombs and in various types of megalithic tombs. These were usually complicated constructions that included hallways and round chambers (similar to the *tholos* constructions found in the Aegean area). The dead were placed in the fetal position, on their sides, directly on the rock. Caves and grottos were also used for burials.

The Western Province. This province includes the Atlantic shores of France, the British Isles, the entire Rhine basin as far as Switzerland, and the lower part of Germany to the west of the lower Elbe. In this area three main concentrations can be identified: in Brittany, southern England, and on the Lower Rhine. The first two are characterized by the presence of many objects from the megalithic tradition. Combined with Bell Beakers, the megalithic tradition reached its peak, the best example being the “beaker” phase at Stonehenge. In Brittany there is a visible connection to the Iberian area in the form of the Palmela point found there. Characteristic to the western province is the large number of metal items made of copper and gold. These include halberds, lunulae, daggers, and flat axe heads. These are all objects that had definite prestige and insignia value. Burials continued to be made in various types of megalithic monuments, especially in Brittany. In the British Isles and on the Lower Rhine the graves are mainly single burials, with the body placed on its side in the fetal position, often covered by a barrow. In this province we also have much evidence of settlement sites. This is mainly in the form of traces of rectangular post houses. In the British Isles we find a greater variety of house types.

The Eastern Province. This province includes the areas of the upper and central Danube (up to Budapest), the Bohemian-Moravian basin, and the upper basins of the Oder and Vistula Rivers. Among the most characteristic objects found in the eastern province are the model bows made from bone. There were also many copper daggers. In this province, Bell Beakers come into contact with the Balkan Early Bronze Age tradition, and vessels from both traditions appear in the same context.

Bell Beaker artifacts in this area come mainly from single-burial graves where the body was placed in the fetal position and positioned on a north-south axis. The placement of the body (the direction of head and the orientation of the face) was dependent on gender, although the rules governing orientation were regional in nature. For example, in Moravia men were placed on their right side, women on their left side, whereas in Bohemia the positions were reversed. A specific feature of the burial rites in this province is the frequent use of cremation, which was most likely a continuation of earlier traditions from the Balkan area where this custom was known during the Neolithic. Remains of permanent settlements with dwellings are known only in the vicinity of Budapest and consist of large post houses.

The Northern Province. This province includes Jutland in Denmark, then stretches through northern Germany to the lower Elbe, then across northern Poland to the lower Vistula basin. A characteristic attribute of this province is the intense manufacture of flint daggers. Numerous metal items, especially lunulae and halberds, indicate a connection with the western province. A key factor in reconstructing the placement of the northern province in the framework of Bell Beakers is amber. Here were the main centers where amber objects were manufactured and exported to other localities.

This area has yielded many finds of Bell Beaker settlement sites. These often consisted of rectangular huts, built using post construction techniques, with a partly sunken floor. An analysis of house construction in Jutland showed that the Bell Beaker phase was not a time of radical changes but rather a continuation of the steady developments that had been taking place since the beginning of the Neolithic. Bell Beaker burials are known from both the

megalithic tombs as well as from a few individual burials where the body was placed in the fetal position.

In the above geographic division of Bell Beakers there are no sharp, definite lines of demarcation. There are many regions that can be characterized by their own Bell Beaker attributes. One such center, for example, is the area on the Saale River in eastern Germany where the attributes of the western and eastern provinces were combined into a unique whole.

METALLURGY

In all the places where Bell Beakers appear we also see the development of metallurgy. This consisted of the working of copper and gold, where most of the objects are made from hammered sheet metal (lunulae, earrings, pins) or simple casting methods (daggers, flat axe heads, Palmela points, halberds). From a typological viewpoint one can speak of a Bell Beaker style that has a uniform character that takes in the whole of the Bell Beaker domain—a rather large area. This was the oldest single-origin style for metal objects in Europe. In addition to the manufactured objects, we are also familiar with the tools used for metalworking. These are of the “smithy” type, mainly stone anvils of various sizes and chiseling tools. Bell Beakers represent a breakthrough where the majority of European societies adapted to the widespread use of metal. Thus began an era where metal objects were always present in society, along with the techniques for working the material. (Earlier there had only been sporadic episodes where the use of metal objects was widespread, for example, in the horizon of the Lengyel, Polgár, and Brześć Kujawski cultures, c. 4500–4000 B.C.)

CHRONOLOGY

In the archaeological literature, there exists a widely held theory about the principal trends in the stylistic development (i.e., the relative chronology) of Bell Beaker ceramic ware. At the beginning were the Maritime beakers, after which follow various types of ceramic ware that have a regional dimension characterized by more squat proportions. A principal change has occurred in our knowledge of the duration of the Bell Beaker period. The image of Bell Beakers as a short-term event that took place at the end of the Copper Age and the beginning of the

Bronze Age is a thing of the past. Accurate chronological data from carbon-14 testing of samples from various regions show that Bell Beakers were a long-lasting and dynamic phenomenon. An analysis by Johannes Müller and Samuel van Willigen published in 2001 took into consideration selected carbon-14 determinations on short-lived substances such as bone and plant seeds while omitting samples from long-lasting sources such as wood charcoal. Results of this dating provide a picture of an extended Bell Beaker development period having various features in different regions. Its earliest beginnings were in the southern province (Iberian Peninsula, southern France, and northern Italy) about 2800 B.C. The latest dates extend into the first centuries of the second millennium B.C. and are found in the western and northern provinces. Chronological data show that the development of Bell Beakers took place from the west (more specifically from the southwest) toward the east and northeast.

POSITION OF BELL BEAKERS IN THE PROCESS OF CULTURAL CHANGE

While searching for an explanation for the Bell Beaker phenomenon one must take into consideration not only the characteristic attributes described above. Two other aspects are of importance: the cultural base on which the Bell Beaker phenomenon was shaped and the world of the early Bronze Age cultures that succeeded the Bell Beakers.

Three basic varieties of cultural base can be named: the megalithic world, the Corded Ware culture, and the Late Neolithic/Early Bronze Age cultures of Carpathian culture basin. In the megalithic zone of western Europe, the Bell Beakers made use of megalithic tombs as well as single graves. Various forms of stone tombs were used, several of which can be seen in the famous cemetery of Sion-Petit Chasseur in Switzerland. In the time of the Bell Beakers there was a flowering of megalithic constructions in the form of complex circles and avenues. These are widely known from examples in southern England. Stonehenge, for example, was developed to its fullest during the Bell Beaker era. Therefore, it can be said that in the megalithic zone, the appearance of Bell Beakers does not break the megalithic tradition, but rather brings it to its apogee.

Likewise, in places where the Bell Beakers came in contact with the Corded Ware culture, the two

coexisted. However, there is a definite contrast between the cultural behavior of Bell Beakers and that of the Corded Ware culture, which can be described as a dialectic connection between them. This fact can be best observed in the burial rites. For example, in the Upper Danube both the Bell Beakers and the Corded Ware culture used the same form of mortuary expression (single burial, the body in the fetal position lying on its side, with the two genders placed in opposite ways), but the two groups differ in the specific placement of the bodies.

In the Carpathian culture basin there was interaction between Bell Beakers and the oldest groups of the Early Bronze Age (successors to the Vučedol culture). These contacts developed differently from those in the Corded Ware zone, but similarly to that in the megalithic regions. There are no visible cultural barriers in the development of contacts, which on the level of archaeological practice is problematic for the researchers: there exist many contexts where it is difficult to assign items definitely to one or the other cultural tradition.

Given this evidence, it is difficult to describe the appearance of the Bell Beakers as an invasion that led to radical disruptions in the process of historical change. However, this general picture does not exclude the possibility that in some regions the genesis of Bell Beakers was combined with the phenomenon of migration. One example of this process can be seen in the part of southern Poland known as Małopolska.

In examining the Early Bronze Age cultures that appeared immediately after the disappearance of the Bell Beakers, significant trends are evident. In this domain were the earliest places in Europe (outside the Aegean area) where bronze was made. The list of cultural successors to Bell Beakers is long. Among them are the Wessex, Únětice, Polada, Armorican, Rhône, and Montelavar cultures. Each is characterized by its own style of bronze artifacts, rich deposits of metal objects, an elaborate, stratified society, and an extensive network of cultural contacts. It is difficult to imagine that this prosperous civilized zone was only coincidentally contiguous with the domain of Bell Beakers.

WHAT WERE THE BELL BEAKERS?

It is not accidental that the question is “*what* were” and not “*who* were” the Bell Beakers. The latest re-

search confirms the traditional view that Bell Beakers spread from west to east and, more specifically, from southwest to northeast. But the dimensions, from the geographic and the chronological perspective, preclude the possibility of explaining this phenomenon as the expansion of a “Beaker People.” In some exceptional instances we can speak about the anthropological characteristics of people who are associated with beaker ware, a situation which we have in Małopolska. In a general comparison, however, the individuals associated with the Bell Beaker “peoples” exhibit great variation in anthropological types and represent a large number of the major European cultural groups from the third and the beginning of the second millennia B.C. While the theory of a “Beaker People” has been discarded, this does not preclude the fact that some migration did occur within the Bell Beaker domain. A spectacular example of this is the rich burial of a man in Amesbury, not far from Stonehenge in southern England. On the basis of isotope testing of the man’s teeth, archaeologists concluded that he had spent his youth in the Alpine regions, while his son, buried nearby, was a native Briton.

What were Bell Beakers? The main characteristics are as follows:

- They were distributed throughout half of Europe, covering an immense area roughly equivalent to that now occupied by the countries of the European Union.
- The history of Bell Beakers is contained in a time frame that extends for more than one thousand years (though in specific regions the time frame is always shorter).
- They were a phenomenon with internal dynamics. Starting in the southern province they spread from west to east and lasted the longest in the northern province and in the British Isles.
- The central feature of Bell Beakers was a set of artifacts connected with the drinking of specific beverages, war, and hunting.
- These objects were always carefully made, thus having an intrinsic cultural value for their users and are most often found in graves in which a single body was laid in the fetal position on its side.
- The general typological evolution of Bell Beaker artifacts is similar in all regions; their forms

are rather unified in the beginning (as can be seen in the Maritime beakers) but in time acquire regional differentiation.

- Bell Beakers are closely linked to metallurgy, mainly of copper and gold. As a consequence, metallic items became common across a wide expanse of prehistoric Europe, leading to the manufacture of the first stylistic metal objects on the Continent.
- The Bell Beaker phenomenon was culturally mobile and moved with great ease from region to region but was concentrated in the established settlement centers.
- Bell Beakers quickly combined with traditional forms that existed in the various regions. As a result, the appearance of Bell Beakers created no radical interruption in the process of cultural evolution.
- In the places reached by Bell Beakers, there was a period of civilized prosperity that continued even after the phenomenon had disappeared during the Early Bronze Age.

What then were Bell Beakers? Among the proposed answers, archaeologists now assign a greater role to social factors. These concepts are mainly being developed by British archaeologists. Researchers treat Bell Beakers as a cultural “package.” A significant element of this package must have been the libation ritual where the bell-shaped beaker was used. The remaining elements of this package, such as the archery set or the dagger, belong to different spheres of life: war and the hunt. Andrew Sherratt has argued that the beakers were used for the consumption of an alcoholic beverage, probably beer or mead, as part of a growing pattern of warrior feasting and hospitality. The characteristic artifacts of the Bell Beaker complex may well have served as status symbols of an emerging elite whose presence became clearer in the Early Bronze Age of the second millennium B.C. Such theories point to Bell Beakers as an important part of the long process that formed the warrior caste in the societies of later prehistoric Europe. The phenomenon became the basis for the creation of the first permanent hereditary elites among the inhabitants of Europe.

See also **Early Metallurgy in Southeastern Europe** (vol. 1, part 4); **The Megalithic World** (vol. 1, part 4); **Sion-Petit Chasseur** (vol. 1, part 4); **Corded Ware**

from East to West (vol. 1, part 4); **The Early and Middle Bronze Ages in Central Europe** (vol. 2, part 5); **Bronze Age Britain and Ireland** (vol. 2, part 5).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Abercromby, John. *A Study of the Bronze Age Pottery of Great Britain and Ireland and Its Associated Grave Goods*. Vol. 1. Oxford: Clarendon, 1912.
- Besse, Marie. “Bell Beakers Common Ware during the Third Millennium B.C. in Europe.” In *Similar but Different: Bell Beakers in Europe*. Edited by Janusz Czebreszuk. Poznań, Poland: n.p., 2003.
- Bocksberger, Olivier J., Alain Gallay, and Louis Chaix. *Le Site Préhistorique du Petit-Chasseur (Sion, Valais)*. 8 vols. Lausanne, Switzerland: Département d’anthropologie de l’Université de Genève, 1976–1989.
- Buttler, J. J., and J. D. van der Waals. “Bell Beakers and Early Metal-working in the Netherlands.” *Paleohistoria* 12 (1966): 42–139.
- Burgess, Colin. *The Age of Stonehenge*. London: Dent, 1980.
- . “The Beaker Phenomenon: Some Suggestions, Part I: General Comments and the British Evidence.” In *Settlement and Economy in the Third and Second Millennia B.C.: Papers Delivered at a Conference Organised by the Department of Education, University of Newcastle upon Tyne, January 1976*. Edited by Colin Burgess and Roger Miket, pp. 309–323. British Archaeological Reports, no. 33. Oxford: British Archaeological Reports, 1976.
- Cartailhac, Émile. *Les âges préhistoriques de l’Espagne et du Portugal*. Paris: C. Reinwald, 1886.
- Clarke, David L. *Beaker Pottery of Great Britain and Ireland*. 2 vols. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1970.
- Czebreszuk, Janusz. “Bell Beakers in the Sequence of the Cultural Changes in South-Western Baltic Area.” In *The Northeast Frontier of Bell Beaker*. Edited by Janusz Czebreszuk and Marzena Szmyt. BAR International Series. Oxford: British Archaeological Reports, 2003.
- Czebreszuk, Janusz, and Marzena Szmyt. “The Northeast Frontier of Bell Beakers: First Step to Outline.” In *The Northeast Frontier of Bell Beaker*. Edited by Janusz Czebreszuk and Marzena Szmyt. BAR International Series. Oxford: British Archaeological Reports, 2003.
- Harrison, Richard J. *The Beaker Folk: Copper Age Archaeology in Western Europe*. London: Thames and Hudson, 1980.
- Kunst, Michael. “Invasion? Fashion? Social Rank? Consideration concerning the Bell Beaker Phenomenon in Copper Age Fortifications of the Iberian Peninsula.” In *Bell Beakers Today: Pottery, People, Culture, Symbols in Prehistoric Europe*. Edited by Franco Nicolis, pp. 81–90. Trento, Italy: Provincia Autonoma di Trento, Servizio Beni Culturali, Ufficio Beni Archeologici, 2001.

- Lanting, J. N., and J. D. van der Waals. "Beaker Culture Relations in the Lower Rhine Basin." In *Glockenbecher Symposium Oberried 1974*, pp. 1–80. Bussum, The Netherlands: Fibula-Van Dishoeck, 1976.
- Müller, Johannes. "Economic Continuity and Political Discontinuity in Central Europe during the Third Millennium B.C." In *The Northeast Frontier of Bell Beaker*. Edited by Janusz Czebreszuk and Marzena Szmyt. BAR International Series. Oxford: British Archaeological Reports, 2003.
- Müller, Johannes, and Samuel van Willigen. "New Radiocarbon Evidence for European Bell Beakers and the Consequences for the Diffusion of the Bell Beaker Phenomenon." In *Bell Beakers Today: Pottery, People, Culture, Symbols in Prehistoric Europe Proceedings of the International Colloquium Riva del Garda (Trento, Italy) 11–16 May 1998*. Edited by Franco Nicolis, pp. 59–80. Trento, Italy: Provincia Autonoma di Trento, Servizio Beni Culturali, Ufficio Beni Archeologici, 2001.
- Shennan, Stephen. "The Appearance of the Bell Beaker Assemblage in Central Europe." In *Beakers in Britain and Europe: Four Studies. Contributions to a Symposium Organised by the Munro Lectureship Committee, Edinburgh University*. Edited by Roger Mercer, pp. 51–70. BAR Supplementary Series, no. 26. Oxford: British Archaeological Reports, 1977.
- Sherratt, Andrew. "Sacred and Profane Substances: The Ritual Use of Narcotics in Later Neolithic Europe." In *Sacred and Profane: Proceedings of a Conference on Archaeology, Ritual, and Religion, Oxford 1989*. Edited by Paul Garwood et al., pp. 50–64. University of Oxford Committee for Archaeology Monographs, no. 32. Oxford: Oxford University Committee for Archaeology, 1991.
- . "Cups That Cheered: The Introduction of Alcohol to Prehistoric Europe." In *Bell Beakers of the Western Mediterranean: Definition, Interpretation, Theory and New Site Data. The Oxford International Conference, 1986*. Edited by William H. Waldren and Rex Claire Kennard, pp. 81–106. BAR International Series, no. 331. Oxford: British Archaeological Reports, 1987.
- Vandkilde, Helle. *From Stone to Bronze: The Metalwork of the Late Neolithic and Earliest Bronze Age in Denmark*. Århus, Denmark: Jutland Archaeological Society, 1996.
- Waals, J. D. van der, and Willem Glasbergen. "Beaker Types and Their Distribution in the Netherlands." *Paleohistoria* 4 (1955): 5–47.

JANUSZ CZEBRESZUK
(TRANSLATED BY PETER OBST)



Europe



URAL MOUNTAINS

ATLANTIC OCEAN

North Sea

Baltic Sea

CARPATHIAN MTS.

ALPS

PYRENEES

APPENNINES

DINARIC ALPS

BALKAN MTS.

Black Sea

CAUCASUS MTS.

Caspian Sea

Mediterranean Sea

Ionian Sea

Aegean Sea

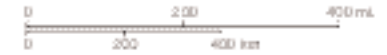
Malta

Sicily

Sardinia

Balearic Islands

Corsica





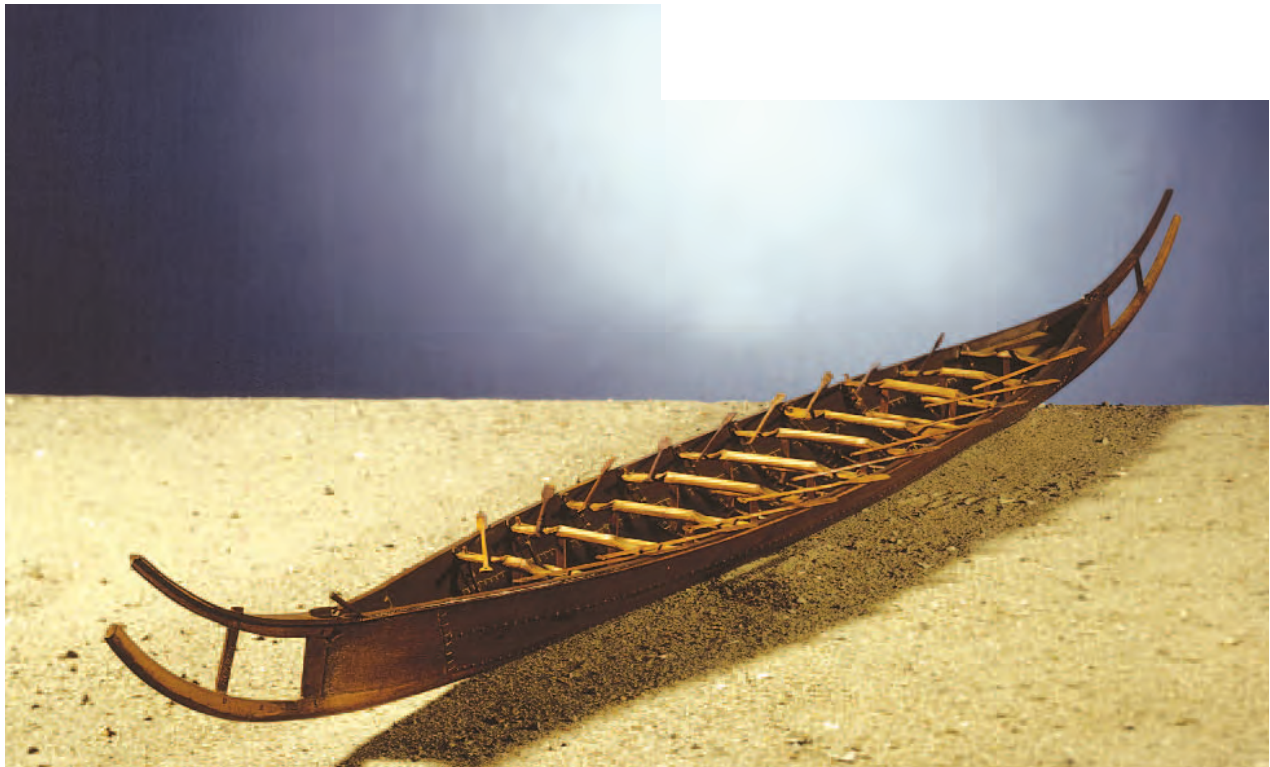
Tollund Man The bog body of the Iron Age man from Tollund Mose in central Jutland, Denmark, c. 220 B.C. His body was deposited in the bog, presumably after being hanged, and was preserved under a thick layer of peat until discovered in 1950.
© CHRIS LISLE/CORBIS. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.



TOP RIGHT: Hochdorf Reconstruction of the Hochdorf chamber, a richly outfitted grave from c. 550 B.C. Grave goods, such as the gold ornaments, bronze couch, and rich textiles found here, give evidence of the social status of the buried. ROSE HAJDU, FOTOGRAFIE, STUTTGART. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.



BELOW: Hjortspring Model of the boat deposited in the Hjortspring bog, southern Denmark, c. 350–300 B.C. The original boat, of which little remains, was more than 19 meters long. © THE NATIONAL MUSEUM OF DENMARK. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.





BELOW: The Mesolithic of Northern Europe Excavations at the Late Mesolithic stratified shell midden at Norsminde, Jutland, Denmark. Such deposits contain the leftover shells from consumption of shellfish by hunter-gatherers. COURTESY OF SØREN H. ANDERSEN, NATIONAL MUSEUM OF DENMARK. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.





TOP RIGHT: Arene Candide Reconstruction of life inside Arene Candide in northwestern Italy during its Middle Neolithic heyday, c. 4700–4000 B.C. ON CONCESSION OF MINISTERO PER I BENI E LE ATTIVITÀ CULTURALI–SOPRINTENDENZA PER I BENI ARCHEOLOGICI DELLA LIGURIA. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

BELOW: Neolithic Sites of the Orkney Islands Decorated stone artifact from the Neolithic site of Skara Brae, Orkney Islands, c. 3100–2500 B.C. © ADAM WOOLFITT/CORBIS. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.





TOP LEFT: Copper Age Cyprus Cruciform figurine, a symbol of fertility, from Yiacia, c. 3000 B.C. Height: 15.3 cm. DEPARTMENT OF ANTIQUITIES, CYPRUS. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.





OPPOSITE PAGE: The Iceman The Iceman on display at the Bolzano museum after being frozen on the Tirolean Alps over 5,000 years ago. © SOUTH TYROL MUSEUM OF ARCHAEOLOGY, ITALY, WWW.ICEMAN.IT. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

TOP RIGHT: Boyne Valley Passage Graves The Great Mound of the megalithic passage grave from Knowth, Ireland, was built more than 5,000 years ago. © RICHARD CUMMINS/CORBIS. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

BELOW: Trackways and Boats The Neolithic trackway at Sweet Track is an elevated pathway that ran nearly 2 kilometers across swamps in Somerset, England, almost 6,000 years ago. SOMERSET LEVELS PROJECT (JOHN COLES). REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.





TOP RIGHT: Bell Beakers from West to East Bell-shaped beaker with plain and decorated horizontal zones from Late Neolithic burial near Salisbury in southern England, c. 2200 B.C. THE ART ARCHIVE/DEVIZESMUSEUM/EILEENTWEEDY. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.



MIDDLE RIGHT: Bell Beakers from West to East Late Neolithic flint dagger from southern Sweden, c. 2000 B.C., that imitates forms of metal daggers characteristic of Bell Beaker assemblages in central Europe, including the simulated mold mark on the handle. THE ART ARCHIVE/HISTORISKA MUSÉET STOCKHOLM/DAGLI ORTI. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.



BELOW: Corded Ware from East to West Cord-impressed vessels from southern Scandinavia in forms typical of the Corded Ware/Single Grave/Battle-Axe cultural complex of the mid-third millennium B.C. THE ART ARCHIVE/HISTORISKA MUSÉET STOCKHOLM/DAGLI ORTI. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.





ANCIENT EUROPE

8000 B.C.–A.D. 1000

ENCYCLOPEDIA OF THE BARBARIAN WORLD

Peter Bogucki & Pam J. Crabtree

ANCIENT EUROPE

8000 B.C.—A.D. 1000



ANCIENT EUROPE

8000 B.C.—A.D. 1000

ENCYCLOPEDIA OF THE BARBARIAN WORLD

VOLUME II

BRONZE AGE TO EARLY MIDDLE AGES

(C. 3000 B.C.—A.D. 1000)

INDEX

Peter Bogucki & Pam J. Crabtree
Editors in Chief



CHARLES SCRIBNER'S SONS®

THOMSON
—★—
GALE



Ancient Europe 8000 B.C.–A.D. 1000: Encyclopedia of the Barbarian World

Peter Bogucki and Pam J. Crabtree, Editors in Chief

Copyright © 2004 by Charles Scribner's Sons

Charles Scribner's Sons is an imprint of The Gale Group, Inc., a division of Thomson Learning, Inc.

Charles Scribner's Sons™ and Thomson Learning™ are trademarks used herein under license.

For more information, contact
Charles Scribner's Sons
An imprint of the Gale Group
300 Park Avenue South, 9th Floor
New York, NY 10010
Or visit our Internet site at
<http://www.gale.com>

ALL RIGHTS RESERVED

No part of this work covered by the copyright hereon may be reproduced or used in any form or by any means—graphic, electronic, or mechanical, including photocopying, recording, taping, Web distribution, or information storage retrieval systems—without the written permission of the publisher.

For permission to use material from this product, submit your request via Web at <http://www.gale-edit.com/permissions>, or you may download our Permissions Request form and submit your request by fax or mail to:

Permissions Department
The Gale Group, Inc.
27500 Drake Rd.
Farmington Hills, MI 48331-3535
Permissions hotline:
248 699-8006 or 800 877-4253, ext. 8006
Fax: 248 688-8074 or 800 762-4058

LIBRARY OF CONGRESS CATALOGING-IN-PUBLICATION DATA

Ancient Europe 8000 B.C.–A.D. 1000 : encyclopedia of the Barbarian world / Peter Bogucki, Pam J. Crabtree, editors.
p. cm.

Includes bibliographical references and index.
ISBN 0-684-80668-1 (set : hardcover : alk. paper) — ISBN
0-684-80669-X (vol. 1) — ISBN 0-684-80670-3 (vol. 2) — ISBN
0-684-31421-5 (e-book)

1. Antiquities, Prehistoric—Europe—Encyclopedias. 2. Prehistoric peoples—Europe—Encyclopedias. 3. History, Ancient—Encyclopedias. 4. Europe—History—To 476—Encyclopedias. 5. Europe—History—392-814—Encyclopedias. I. Bogucki, Peter I. II. Crabtree, Pam J.

D62 .A52 2004
936—dc22

2003015251

This title is also available as an e-book.
ISBN 0-684-31421-5

Contact your Gale sales representative for ordering information

Printed in the United States of America
10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2 1



EDITORIAL AND PRODUCTION STAFF

Project Editor

Alja Kooistra Collar

Assisting Editors

Cindy Clendenon, Shawn Corridor, Sharon Malinowski

Copy Editors

Marcia Merryman Means

Lisa Dixon, Gretchen Gordon, Jeffrey J. Hill, Jean Fortune Kaplan,
Jane Marie Todd

Proofreader

Carol Holmes

Indexer

J. Naomi Linzer

Image Researcher

Deanna Raso

Senior Art Director

Pamela Galbreath

Imaging

Lezlie Light, Leitha Etheridge-Sims, Mary Grimes, Dan Newell, Dave
Oblender, Christine O'Bryan, Kelly A. Quin, Denay Wilding

Cartographer

XNR Productions

Line Illustrator

GGIS Information Services

Composition

Datapage Technologies International

Manufacturing

Wendy Blurton

Senior Editor

John Fitzpatrick

Publisher

Frank Menchaca



CONTENTS

VOLUME I

<i>List of Maps</i>	xv
<i>Preface</i>	xvii
<i>Maps of Ancient Europe, 8000–</i> <i>2000 B.C.</i>	xix
<i>Chronology of Ancient Europe, 8000–</i> <i>1000 B.C.</i>	xxv
<i>List of Contributors</i>	xxix

1: DISCOVERING BARBARIAN EUROPE

Introduction (<i>Peter Bogucki and Pam J. Crabtree</i>)	3
Humans and Environments (<i>I. G. Simmons</i>)	7
Origins and Growth of European Prehistory (<i>Paul G. Bahn</i>)	14
The Nature of Archaeological Data (<i>Pam J. Crabtree and</i> <i>Douglas V. Campana</i>)	22
Tollund Man (<i>Helle Vandkilde</i>)	26
Survey and Excavation (<i>Albert Ammerman</i>)	29
Saltbæk Vig (<i>Anne Birgitte Gebauer</i>)	36
Dating and Chronology (<i>Martin Bridge</i>)	40
Archaeology and Environment (<i>Petra Dark</i>)	47
Settlement Patterns and Landscapes (<i>John Bintliff</i>)	55
Trade and Exchange (<i>Robert H. Tykot</i>)	65
Status and Wealth (<i>Peter S. Wells</i>)	72
Hochdorf (<i>Peter S. Wells</i>)	79
Gender (<i>Janet E. Levy</i>)	81
Ritual and Ideology (<i>John Chapman</i>)	90
Hjortspring (<i>Peter S. Wells</i>)	99
Archaeology and Language (<i>David W. Anthony</i>)	101

Warfare and Conquest (<i>Lawrence H. Keeley and Russell S. Quick</i>) . . .	110
Maiden Castle (<i>Niall Sharpley</i>)	118

2: POSTGLACIAL FORAGERS, 8000–4000 B.C.

Introduction (<i>Peter Bogucki</i>)	123
Postglacial Environmental Transformation (<i>Neil Roberts</i>)	126
The Mesolithic of Northern Europe (<i>Peter Bogucki</i>)	132
Skateholm (<i>Lars Larsson</i>)	140
Tybrind Vig (<i>Søren H. Andersen</i>)	141
The Mesolithic of Northwest Europe (<i>Christopher Tolan-Smith</i>)	144
Mount Sandel (<i>Peter C. Woodman</i>)	151
Star Carr (<i>Paul Mellars</i>)	153
The Mesolithic of Iberia (<i>João Zilhão</i>)	157
Muge Shell Middens (<i>João Zilhão</i>)	164
The Mesolithic of Upland Central and Southern Europe (<i>Barbara Voytek</i>)	167
Iron Gates Mesolithic (<i>Clive Bonsall</i>)	175
Franchthi Cave (<i>Julie M. Hansen</i>)	179
The Mesolithic of Eastern Europe (<i>Marek Zvelebil</i>)	183
Olencostrovskii Mogilnik (<i>Marek Zvelebil</i>)	192

3: TRANSITION TO AGRICULTURE, 7000–4000 B.C.

Introduction (<i>Peter Bogucki</i>)	201
Crops of the Early Farmers (<i>Julie M. Hansen</i>)	204
Livestock of the Early Farmers (<i>Nerissa Russell</i>)	211
First Farmers of Europe (<i>Curtis Runnels</i>)	218
Achilleion (<i>Ernestine S. Elster</i>)	226
Last Hunters and First Farmers on Cyprus (<i>Alan H. Simmons</i>)	229
Transition to Farming in the Balkans (<i>Mihael Budja</i>)	233
Obre (<i>Mihael Budja</i>)	240
The Farming Frontier on the Southern Steppes (<i>David W. Anthony</i>)	242
Spread of Agriculture Westward across the Mediterranean (<i>William K. Barnett</i>)	248
Arene Candide (<i>Peter Rowley-Conwy</i>)	253
Caldeirão Cave (<i>João Zilhão</i>)	255
First Farmers of Central Europe (<i>Lawrence H. Keeley and Mark Golitko</i>)	259
Bruchenbrücken (<i>Detlef Gronenborn</i>)	266
Bylany (<i>Jonathan Last</i>)	269
Beginnings of Farming in Northwestern Europe (<i>Anne Tresset</i>)	273
Neolithic Sites of the Orkney Islands (<i>Peter Bogucki</i>)	281
Hambledon Hill (<i>Roger Mercer</i>)	283

Transition to Farming along the Lower Rhine and Meuse (<i>Leendert P. Louwe Kooijmans</i>)	286
Transition to Agriculture in Northern Europe (<i>Anne Birgitte Gebauer</i>)	293
Sarup (<i>Niels H. Andersen</i>)	301
Long Barrow Cemeteries in Neolithic Europe (<i>Magdalena S. Midgley</i>)	304

4: CONSEQUENCES OF AGRICULTURE, 5000–2000 B.C.

Introduction (<i>Peter Bogucki</i>)	313
Early Metallurgy in Southeastern Europe (<i>William A. Parkinson</i>)	317
Early Copper Mines at Rudna Glava and Ai Bunar (<i>William A. Parkinson</i>)	322
Milk, Wool, and Traction: Secondary Animal Products (<i>Nerissa Russell</i>)	325
Late Neolithic/Copper Age Southeastern Europe (<i>William A. Parkinson</i>)	334
Varna (<i>Douglass W. Bailey</i>)	341
Ovcharovo (<i>Douglass W. Bailey</i>)	344
Copper Age Cyprus (<i>Edgar Peltenburg</i>)	347
Late Neolithic/Copper Age Eastern Europe (<i>Malcolm Lillie</i>)	354
Domestication of the Horse (<i>David W. Anthony</i>)	363
Kolomischiina (<i>Malcolm Lillie</i>)	368
Late Neolithic/Copper Age Central Europe (<i>Sarunas Milisauskas</i>)	371
Brześć Kujawski (<i>Peter Bogucki</i>)	378
Rondels of the Carpathians (<i>Magdalena S. Midgley</i>)	382
Neolithic Lake Dwellings in the Alpine Region (<i>Jörg Schibler, Stefanie Jacomet, and Alice Choyke</i>)	385
The Iceman (<i>Paul G. Bahn</i>)	392
Arbon-Bleiche 3 (<i>Jörg Schibler, Stefanie Jacomet, and Alice Choyke</i>)	395
The Megalithic World (<i>I. G. N. Thorpe</i>)	398
Avebury (<i>Caroline Malone</i>)	406
Barnenez (<i>Serge Cassen</i>)	408
Boyne Valley Passage Graves (<i>George Eogan</i>)	413
Trackways and Boats (<i>Malcolm Lillie</i>)	415
Consequences of Farming in Southern Scandinavia (<i>Magdalena S. Midgley</i>)	420
Pitted Ware and Related Cultures of Neolithic Northern Europe (<i>Marek Zvelebil</i>)	431
Ajvide (<i>Peter Rowley-Conwy</i>)	435
Late Neolithic Italy and Southern France (<i>Caroline Malone</i>)	439
Sion-Petit Chasseur (<i>Marie Besse</i>)	446
The Neolithic Temples of Malta (<i>Caroline Malone</i>)	450
Late Neolithic/Copper Age Iberia (<i>Katina T. Lillios</i>)	456
Los Millares (<i>Robert Chapman</i>)	464

Corded Ware from East to West (<i>Janusz Czebreszuk</i>)	467
Bell Beakers from West to East (<i>Janusz Czebreszuk</i>)	476

VOLUME II

<i>List of Maps</i>	xv
<i>Maps of Ancient Europe, 3000 B.C.–</i>	
<i>A.D. 1000</i>	xvii
<i>Chronology of Ancient Europe, 2000 B.C.–</i>	
<i>A.D. 1000</i>	xxiii

5: MASTERS OF METAL, 3000–1000 B.C.

Introduction (<i>Peter Bogucki</i>)	3
The Significance of Bronze (<i>Mark Pearce</i>)	6
The Early and Middle Bronze Ages in Temperate Southeastern Europe (<i>H. Arthur Bankoff</i>)	12
The Early and Middle Bronze Ages in Central Europe (<i>Vajk</i> <i>Szeverenyi</i>)	20
Spišský Štvrtok (<i>Helle Vandkilde</i>)	31
The Italian Bronze Age (<i>Mark Pearce</i>)	34
Poggiomarino (<i>Francesco Menotti</i>)	42
El Argar and Related Bronze Age Cultures of the Iberian Peninsula (<i>Antonio Gilman</i>)	45
Sardinia's Bronze Age Towers (<i>Emma Blake</i>)	50
Bronze Age Britain and Ireland (<i>Joanna Brück</i>)	54
Stonehenge (<i>Caroline Malone</i>)	61
Flag Fen (<i>Francis Pryor</i>)	67
Irish Bronze Age Goldwork (<i>Mary Cahill</i>)	69
Bronze Age Scandinavia (<i>Helle Vandkilde</i>)	72
Bronze Age Coffin Burials (<i>Helle Vandkilde</i>)	80
Bronze Age Cairns (<i>Helle Vandkilde</i>)	82
Late Bronze Age Urnfields of Central Europe (<i>Peter Bogucki</i>)	86
Bronze Age Herders of the Eurasian Steppes (<i>David W. Anthony</i>)	92
Bronze Age Transcaucasia (<i>Laura A. Tedesco</i>)	101
Bronze Age Cyprus (<i>A. Bernard Knapp</i>)	108
The Minoan World (<i>David B. Small</i>)	116
Knossos (<i>Louise Steel</i>)	121
Mycenaean Greece (<i>John Bintliff</i>)	126

6: THE EUROPEAN IRON AGE, C. 800 B.C.–A.D. 400

Introduction (<i>Pam J. Crabtree</i>)	137
---	-----

Celts (<i>Susan Malin-Boyce</i>)	140
Hallstatt and La Tène (<i>Susan Malin-Boyce</i>)	144
Celtic Migrations (<i>Susan Malin-Boyce</i>)	149
Germans (<i>Peter S. Wells</i>)	151
Oppida (<i>John Collis</i>)	154
Manching (<i>Susan Malin-Boyce</i>)	158
Hillforts (<i>Barry Raftery</i>)	160
Origins of Iron Production (<i>Michael N. Geselowitz</i>)	164
Ironworking (<i>Michael N. Geselowitz</i>)	167
Coinage of Iron Age Europe (<i>Colin Haselgrove</i>)	169
Ritual Sites: Viereckschanzen (<i>Matthew L. Murray</i>)	174
Iron Age Feasting (<i>Bettina Arnold</i>)	179
La Tène Art (<i>Barry Raftery</i>)	184
Iron Age Social Organization (<i>Ian Ralston</i>)	191
Greek Colonies in the West (<i>Peter S. Wells</i>)	198
Vix (<i>Peter S. Wells</i>)	205
Greek Colonies in the East (<i>Gocha R. Tsetskhladze</i>)	208
Iron Age France (<i>John Collis</i>)	212
Gergovia (<i>John Collis</i>)	219
Iron Age Britain (<i>Timothy Champion</i>)	222
Danebury (<i>Barry Cunliffe</i>)	229
Iron Age Ireland (<i>Bernard Wailes</i>)	232
Irish Royal Sites (<i>Bernard Wailes</i>)	239
Iron Age Germany (<i>Bettina Arnold</i>)	241
Kelheim (<i>Peter S. Wells</i>)	247
The Heuneburg (<i>Bettina Arnold</i>)	249
Iberia in the Iron Age (<i>Teresa Chapa</i>)	253
Etruscan Italy (<i>Rae Ostman</i>)	260
Pre-Roman Iron Age Scandinavia (<i>Sophia Perdikaris</i>)	269
Iron Age Finland (<i>Deborah J. Shepherd</i>)	276
Iron Age Poland (<i>Przemysław Urbanczyk</i>)	281
Biskupin (<i>A. F. Harding</i>)	286
Iron Age Ukraine and European Russia (<i>Gocha R. Tsetskhladze</i>)	289
Iron Age East-Central Europe (<i>Peter S. Wells</i>)	296
Iron Age Caucasus (<i>Adam T. Smith</i>)	303
Dark Age Greece (<i>John Bintliff</i>)	312

7: EARLY MIDDLE AGES/MIGRATION PERIOD

Introduction (<i>Pam J. Crabtree</i>)	321
Emporia (<i>John Moreland</i>)	324
Ipswich (<i>Keith Wade</i>)	331
Viking Harbors and Trading Sites (<i>Dan Carlsson</i>)	334
Dark Ages, Migration Period. Early Middle Ages (<i>Pam J. Crabtree</i>)	337
History and Archaeology (<i>Genevieve Fisher</i>)	340
State Formation (<i>Tina L. Thurston</i>)	346
Trade and Exchange (<i>Tina L. Thurston</i>)	351

Coinage of the Early Middle Ages (<i>Alan M. Stahl</i>)	356
Gender in Early Medieval Europe (<i>Christine Flaberty</i>)	361
Animal Husbandry (<i>László Bartosiewicz</i>)	366
Agriculture (<i>Peter Murphy</i>)	371
Mills and Milling Technology (<i>Colin Rynne</i>)	376
Migration Period Peoples	380
Angles, Saxons, and Jutes (<i>Genevieve Fisher</i>)	381
Baiuvarii (<i>Thomas Fischer</i>)	384
Dál Riata (<i>Elizabeth A. Ragan</i>)	386
Goths between the Baltic and Black Seas (<i>Przemysław Urbańczyk</i>)	388
Huns (<i>László Bartosiewicz</i>)	391
Langobards (<i>Neil Christie</i>)	393
Merovingian Franks (<i>Bailey K. Young</i>)	396
Ostrogoths (<i>Karen Carr</i>)	402
Picts (<i>Colleen E. Batey</i>)	403
Rus (<i>Rae Ostman</i>)	406
Saami (<i>Lars Ivar Hansen and Bjørnar Olsen</i>)	408
Scythians (<i>Jan Chochorowski</i>)	411
Slavs and the Early Slav Culture (<i>Michał Parczewski</i>)	414
Vikings (<i>Sophia Perdikaris</i>)	417
Visigoths (<i>Karen Carr</i>)	419
Viking Ships (<i>Ole Crumlin-Pedersen</i>)	423
Jewelry (<i>Nancy L. Wicker</i>)	426
Boats and Boatbuilding (<i>D. M. Goodburn</i>)	430
Clothing and Textiles (<i>Rae Ostman</i>)	433
Viking Settlements in Iceland and Greenland (<i>Thomas H. McGovern</i>)	436
Hofstaðir (<i>Thomas H. McGovern</i>)	442
Viking Settlements in Orkney and Shetland (<i>Gerald F. Bigelow</i>)	445
Early Christian Ireland (<i>Terry Barry</i>)	450
Clonmacnoise (<i>Heather A. King</i>)	456
Raths, Crannogs, and Cashels (<i>James W. Boyle</i>)	460
Deer Park Farms (<i>C. J. Lynn</i>)	462
Viking Dublin (<i>Patrick F. Wallace</i>)	466
Dark Age/Early Medieval Scotland (<i>Elizabeth A. Ragan</i>)	469
Tarbat (<i>Martin Carver</i>)	476
Early Medieval Wales (<i>Harold Mytum</i>)	480
Anglo-Saxon England (<i>Genevieve Fisher</i>)	489
Spong Hill (<i>Catherine Hills</i>)	496
Sutton Hoo (<i>Martin Carver</i>)	498
West Stow (<i>Pam J. Crabtree</i>)	500
Winchester (<i>Martin Biddle</i>)	501
Viking York (<i>P. V. Addyman</i>)	508
Merovingian France (<i>Bailey K. Young</i>)	511
Tomb of Childeric (<i>Bailey K. Young</i>)	519
Early Medieval Iberia (<i>David Yoon</i>)	525
Pre-Viking and Viking Age Norway (<i>Sophia Perdikaris</i>)	533
Pre-Viking and Viking Age Sweden (<i>Nancy L. Wicker</i>)	537

Pre-Viking and Viking Age Denmark (<i>Tina L. Thurston</i>)	542
Finland (<i>Deborah J. Shepherd</i>)	548
Poland (<i>Przemysław Urbańczyk</i>)	554
Russia/Ukraine (<i>Rae Ostman</i>)	563
Staraya Ladoga (<i>Rae Ostman</i>)	568
Hungary (<i>László Bartosiewicz</i>)	572
Czech Lands/Slovakia (<i>Petr Meduna</i>)	580
Germany and the Low Countries (<i>Peter S. Wells</i>)	586
Southern Germany (<i>Thomas Fischer</i>)	593

Glossary 599

Index 615



MAPS

VOLUME I

Maps of Ancient Europe, 8000–2000 B.C.	xix–xxiv
European and Mediterranean obsidian sources	68
Selected sites in Mesolithic Iberia	158
Selected sites where remains of wild and domesticated grains have been found	205
Ranges of the wild ancestors of early livestock	212
The concentration of sites in eastern and central Neolithic Greece	220
Selected sites in the western Mediterranean	250
Extent of <i>Linearbandkeramik</i> settlement	260
Selected sites of Copper Age Cyprus	348
Distribution of civilizations and selected Cucuteni-Tripolye sites . .	355
Selected Neolithic lake dwellings in the Swiss Alpine region	386
Selected sites in southern Scandinavia	421
Selected sites in Late Neolithic/Copper Age Iberia.	457
Extent of Bell Beakers in Europe, the earliest dates of their appearance, and their provinces	475

VOLUME II

Maps of Ancient Europe, 3000 B.C.–A.D. 1000	xvii–xxii
Tin deposits in Europe	7
Principal trade routes of the Early and Middle Bronze Ages	28
Poggiomarino, Italy, and environs.	43
Selected sites in southeast Iberia	46
Eurasia about 2000 B.C. showing general location of selected cultures	93
Bronze Age Transcaucasia	102
Selected sites in Bronze Age Cyprus.	109
Minoan Crete and selected sites	117
Some of the principal <i>oppida</i> in Europe.	155



VOLUME II

Iron production sites from 800 to 400 B.C.	165
Distribution of Greek pottery of the fourth quarter of the sixth century B.C. (not including east Greek pottery).	199
The Black Sea region with major Greek colonies and local peoples.	209
Selected sites in Iron Age France.	213
Selected sites in Iron Age Ireland	233
Selected hillforts in the West Hallstatt Zone in southwest Germany.	243
Selected sites and selected populi of Iron Age Iberia	254
Provinces and traditional cultural regions of Finland	277
Selected sites and major polities in Bronze Age and Iron Age Caucasia	304
Main emporia (<i>wics</i>) of northwest Europe	325
Some Viking harbors and towns in the Baltic Sea region.	335
Major copper sources and oxhide ingot findspots	352
Key sites and kindred territories of early Dál Riata	387
Extent of the Wielbark culture during the third century A.D. and second half of the fourth century A.D.	389
The traditional view of Syagrius's kingdom, stretching across most of northern Gaul.	397
Extent of Ostrogothic migrations	402
General extent of Pictland.	404
Location of Slavs in the beginning of sixth century A.D. in light of written sources and of archaeological data	415
Extent of Visigothic migrations	420
Scotland in the mid-sixth century and c. A.D. 900	470
Selected sites in early medieval Wales	481
Selected sites in early medieval Iberia	526
Selected Pre-Viking and Viking Age sites in Denmark	543
Early medieval towns in Russia, Scandinavia, and Byzantium	564
Early Migration period population movements.	573
The Czech lands from the arrival of the Slavs to the beginnings of the Czech Premyslide state	582
General features of southern Germany	594



MAPS OF ANCIENT EUROPE, 3000 B.C.—A.D. 1000

Human geography is an essential dimension of archaeology. The locations that ancient people chose for their settlements, cemeteries, and ritual activities are very important for understanding how European societies developed and declined.

Archaeological sites are found throughout Europe. The maps on the following pages show the locations of selected sites mentioned in the text and give an overview of their distribution on a large scale. Smaller and more detailed maps accompany many specific entries.

For clarity, we have divided Europe into five major regions: Northwestern Europe, which covers the British Isles and nearby portions of the Continent; Northern Europe, which includes the North European Plain and Scandinavia; Southwestern Europe, the Iberian Peninsula and the lands around the western Mediterranean; Southeastern Europe, which includes the Danube Basin and Greece; and Eastern Europe, the area east of the Bug River and the Carpathians. Areas beyond these maps, such as the Caucasus and Cyprus, are covered in smaller maps in the relevant articles.

Maps in this volume cover some of the sites mentioned in parts 5 through 7, from the Bronze Age to the Early Middle Ages.





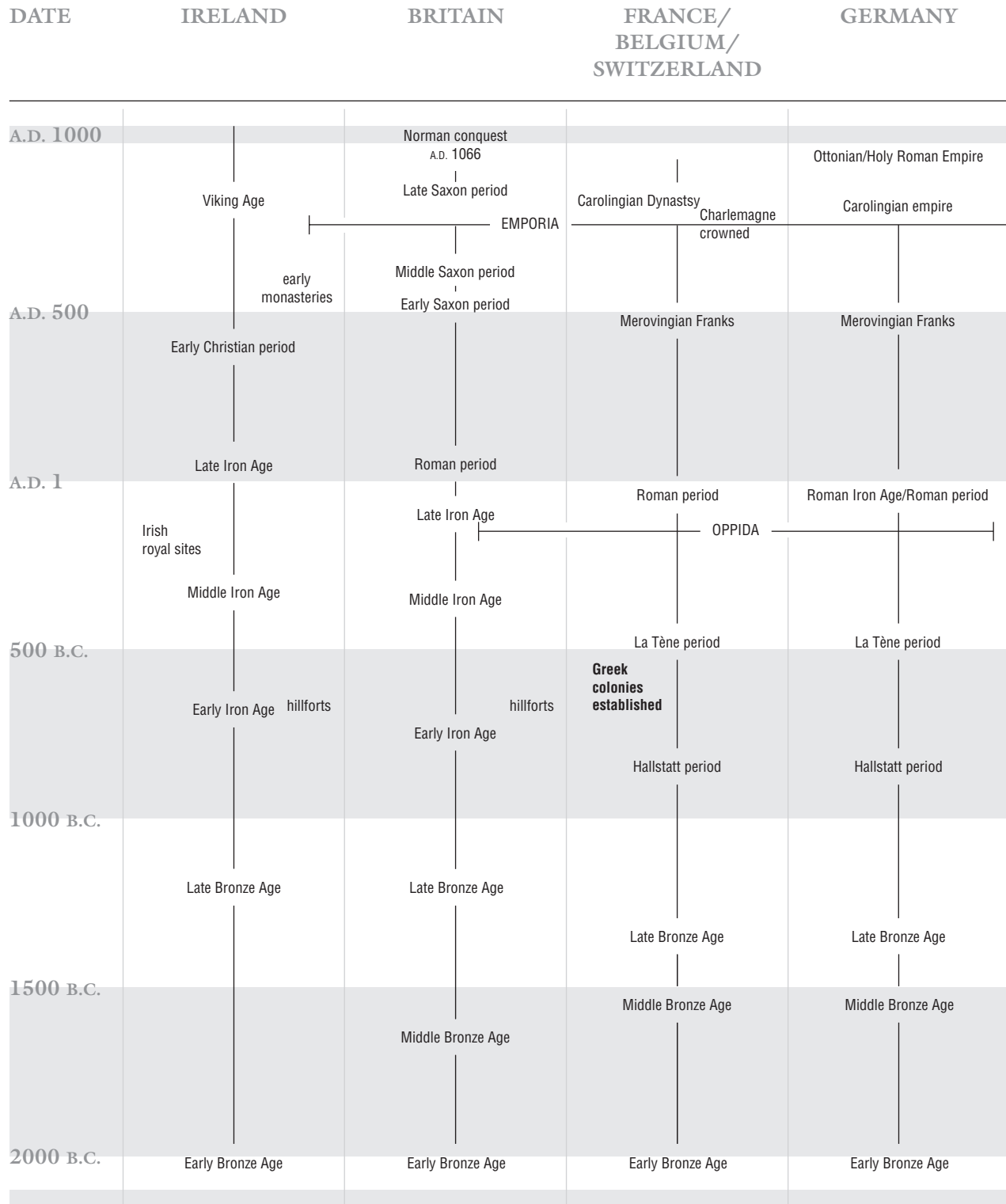




CHRONOLOGY OF ANCIENT EUROPE, 2000 B.C.–A.D. 1000

Archaeologists need to make sense of how the archaeological record fits together in time and space. A simple tool for organizing this information is a chronological chart, which can be thought of as a timeline running vertically, with the oldest developments at the bottom and the most recent at the top. The vertical lines indicate the duration of cultures and people, whose date of first appearance is indicated by the label at the bottom of the line. The horizontal lines indicate cultures and events that spanned more than one geographic region. Historical events or milestones appear in boldface type.

During the last two millennia B.C. and the first millennium A.D., the archaeological record in Europe gets progressively more detailed. The broad developments of the earlier period discussed in volume I now take on greater specificity in time and space. For that reason, the following chronological chart is organized somewhat differently from the one in volume I: instead of large regions, it is now necessary to view the past in terms of particular countries or smaller regions and in 500-year increments. The chronological chart should be used in conjunction with the individual articles on these topics to give the reader a sense of the larger picture across Europe and through time.



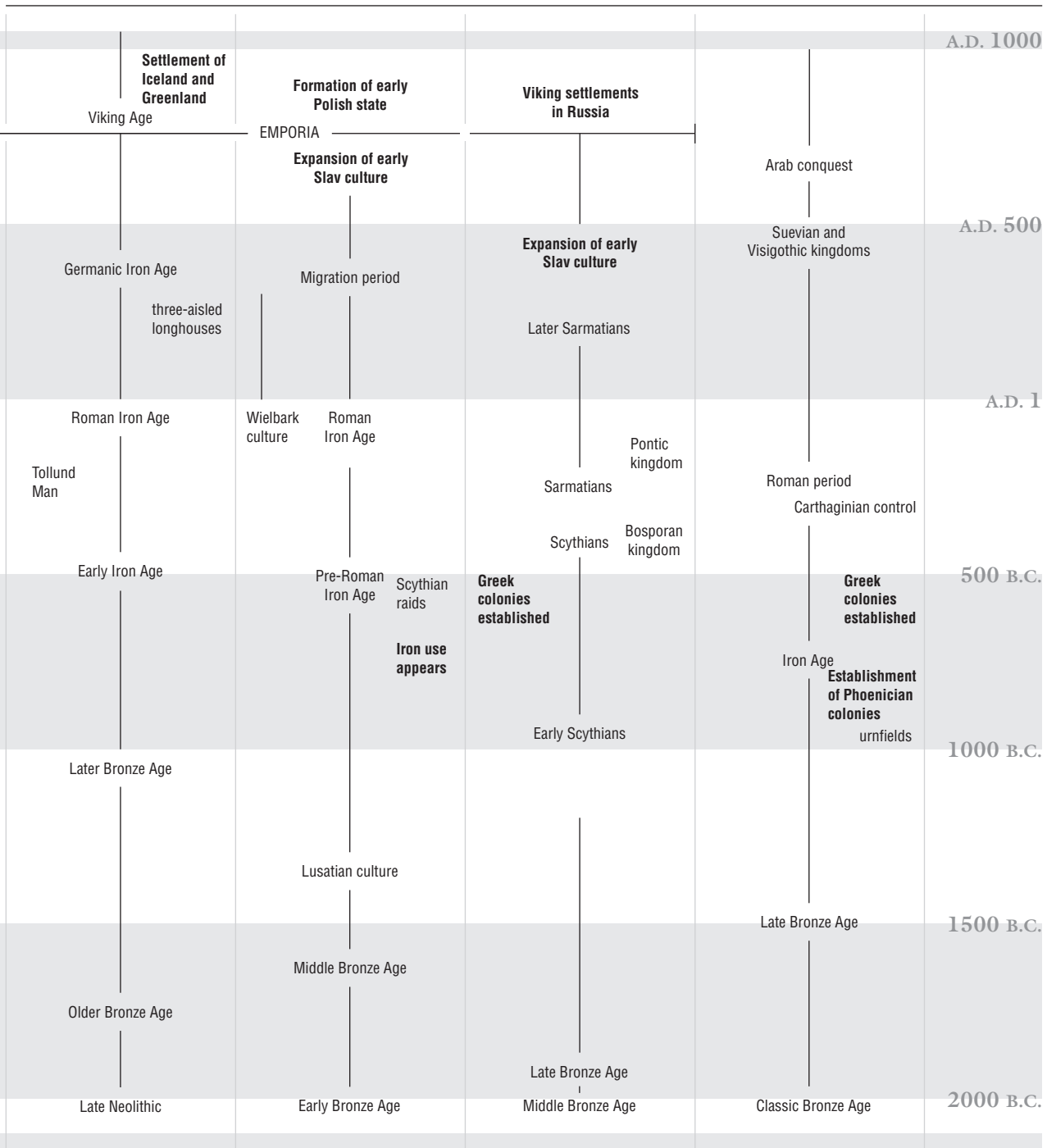
SCANDINAVIA

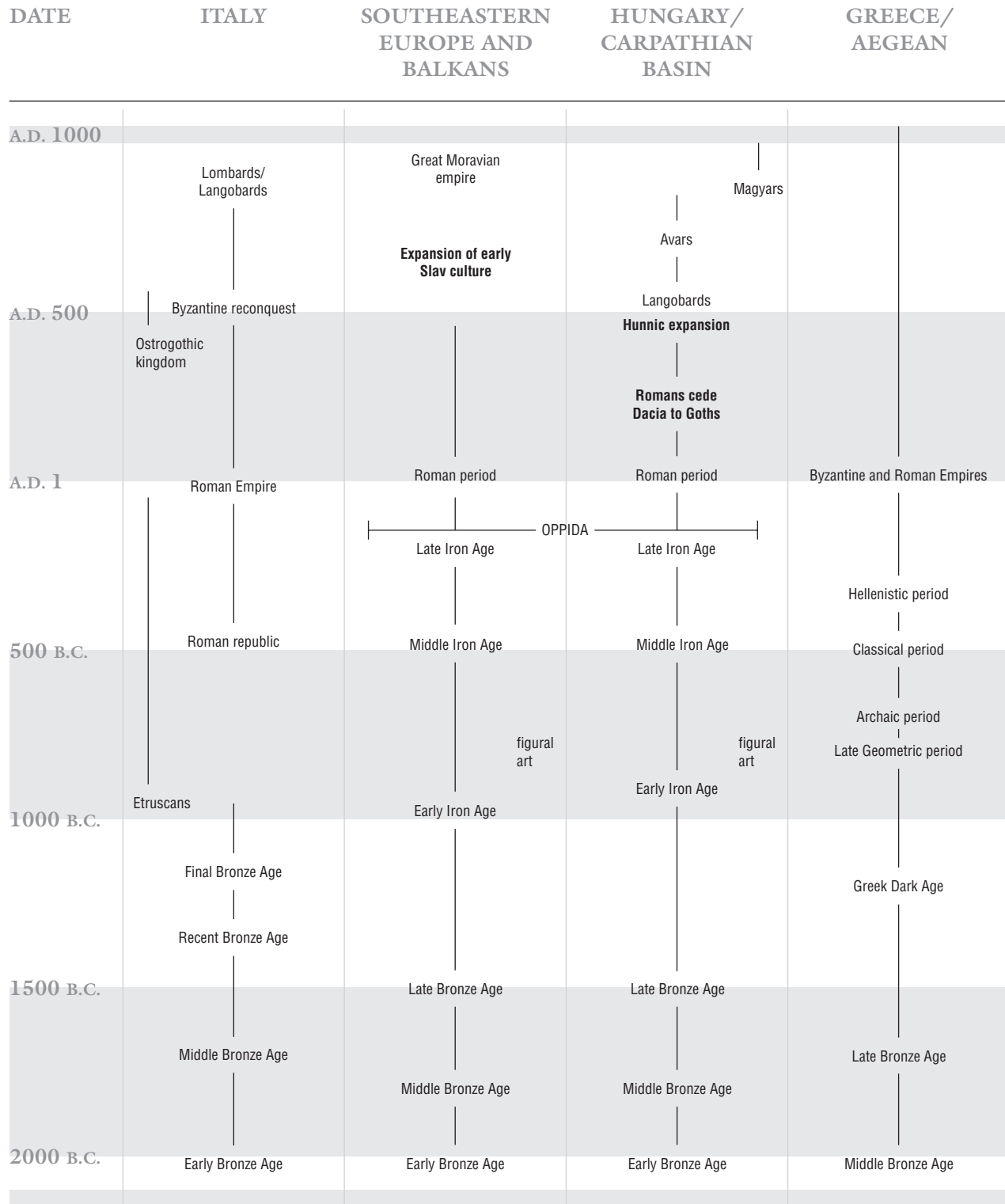
POLAND

RUSSIA/
UKRAINE

IBERIA

DATE







MASTERS OF METAL,
3000–1000 B.C.



INTRODUCTION

During the third and second millennia B.C., societies emerged from the Atlantic to the Urals that were characterized by the use of bronze for a wide variety of weapons, tools, and ornaments and, perhaps more significantly, by pronounced and sustained differences in status, power, and wealth. The period that followed is known as the Bronze Age, a somewhat arbitrary distinction based on the widespread use of the alloy of copper and tin. It is the second of Christian Jürgensen (C. J.) Thomsen's tripartite division of prehistory into ages of Stone, Bronze, and Iron based on his observations of the Danish archaeological record.

Society did not undergo a radical transformation at the onset of the Bronze Age. Many of the social, economic, and symbolic developments that mark this period have their roots in the Late Neolithic. Similarly, many of the characteristics of the Bronze Age persist far longer than its arbitrary end in the first millennium B.C. with the development of ironworking. The Bronze Age in Europe is of tremendous importance, however, as a period of significant change that continued to shape the European past into the recognizable precursor of the societies that we eventually meet in historical records. Professor Stuart Piggott, in his 1965 book *Ancient Europe from the Beginnings of Agriculture to Classical Antiquity: A Survey*, calls it "a phase full of interest" in which the preceding "curious amalgam of traditions and techniques" was transformed into the world "we encounter at the dawn of European history."

CONTINUITY FROM LATE NEOLITHIC

In most parts of Europe, the Late Neolithic societies described in the previous section blend imperceptibly into the Early Bronze Age communities. No one living in the late third millennium B.C. would have suspected that archaeologists of the nineteenth century A.D. would assign such significance to a modest metallurgical innovation. At the beginning of the second millennium B.C., people continued to inhabit generally the same locations, live in similar types of houses, grow more or less the same crops, and go about their lives not much differently from the way they lived in previous centuries. There were, of course, some subtle yet significant differences. For example, in Scandinavia, Bronze Age burial mounds generally occur on the higher points in the landscape, while Neolithic ones are in lower locations.

The major changes of the Early Bronze Age are not a radical departure from patterns observed in the later Neolithic. Rather, they are an amplification of some trends that began during the earlier period, including the use of exotic materials like bronze, gold, amber, and jet, and the practice of elaborate ceremonial behavior, not only as part of mortuary rituals but also in other ways that remain mysterious. These changes reflected back into society during the following millennium to cause a transformation in the organization of the valuables and the ways in which the possession of these goods served as symbols of power and status. Thus, by the end of the Bronze Age, prehistoric society in much of Europe was indeed different from that of the Neolithic.

MAKING BRONZE

Bronze is an alloy of copper with a small quantity of another element, most commonly tin but sometimes arsenic. The admixture of the second metal, which can form up to 10 percent of the alloy, provides the soft copper with stiffness and strength. Bronze is also easier to cast than copper, allowing the crafting of a wide variety of novel and complex shapes not hitherto possible. The development of bronze fulfilled the promise of copper, a bright and attractive metal that was unfortunately too soft and pliable by itself to make anything more than simple tools and ornaments.

During the course of the Bronze Age, we see a progressive increase of sophistication in metallurgical techniques. Ways were found to make artifacts that were increasingly complicated and refined. Now it was possible to make axes, sickles, swords, spearheads, rings, pins, and bracelets, as well as elaborate artistic achievements such as the Trundholm “sun chariot” and even wind instruments such as the immense horns found in Denmark and Ireland. The ability to cast dozens of artifacts from a single mold makes it possible to speak of true manufacturing as opposed to the individual crafting of each piece. Some scholars have proposed that metal-smithing was a specialist occupation in certain places. Such emergent specialization would have had profound significance for the agrarian economy, still largely composed of self-sufficient households. Some metal artifacts, such as the astonishing Irish gold neck rings, seem to be clearly beyond the ability of an amateur to produce.

Copper and tin rarely, if ever, occur naturally in the same place. Thus one or the other—or both—must be brought some distance from their source areas to be alloyed. Copper sources are widely distributed in the mountainous zones of Europe, but known tin sources are only found in western Europe, in Brittany, Cornwall, and Spain. Thus, tin needed to be brought from a considerable distance to areas of east-central Europe, such as Hungary and Romania, where immense quantities of bronze artifacts had been buried deliberately in hoards. Similarly, Denmark has no natural sources of copper or tin, but it has yielded more bronze artifacts per square kilometer than most other parts of Europe.

It is in this need to acquire critical supplies of copper and tin, as well as the distribution of materi-

als such as amber, jet, and gold, that we see the rise of long-distance trading networks during the Bronze Age. Trade was no longer something that happened sporadically or by chance. Instead, materials and goods circulated along established routes. The Mediterranean, Baltic, Black, and North Seas were crossed regularly by large boats, while smaller craft traversed shorter crossings like the English Channel.

BURIALS, RITUAL, AND MONUMENTS

Much more than both earlier and later periods, the Bronze Age is known largely from its burials. In large measure, this is due to the preferences of early archaeologists to excavate graves that contained spectacular bronze and gold trophies. Settlements of the period, in contrast, were small and unremarkable. This imbalance is slowly being corrected, as new ways are developed to extract as much information as possible from settlement remains.

Bronze burials are remarkable both for their regional and chronological diversity, although occasionally mortuary practices became uniform over broad areas. The practice of single graves under barrows or tumuli (small mounds) is widespread during the first half of the Bronze Age, although flat cemeteries are also found in parts of central Europe. Some of the Early Bronze Age barrows are remarkably rich, such as Bush Barrow near Stonehenge and Leubingen in eastern Germany. Occasional graves with multiple skeletons, such as the ones at Amesbury in southern England and Wassenaar in the Netherlands, may reflect a more violent side to Bronze Age life. Around 1200 B.C., there was a marked shift in burial practices in much of central and southern Europe, and cremation burial in urns became common. The so-called urnfields are large cemeteries, sometimes with several thousand individual burials.

Alongside the burial sites, other focal points in the landscape grew in importance. The megalithic tradition in western Europe continued the practice of building large stone monuments. Stonehenge, begun during the Late Neolithic, reached its zenith during the Bronze Age, when the largest upright sarsen stones and lintels still visible today were erected, and other features of the surrounding sacred landscape, such as the Avenue, were expanded.

At widely separated parts of Europe, in southern Scandinavia and the southern Alps, large rock outcrops were covered with images of people, animals, boats, and chariots, as well as abstract designs. Offerings were made by depositing weapons and body armor into rivers, streams, bogs, and especially springs.

STATUS, POWER, WEALTH

The variation in the burials has led to the very reasonable view that the Bronze Age was characterized by increasing differences in the access by individuals to status, power, and wealth. Admittedly, burial evidence may overemphasize such differences, but a compelling case can be made that certain burials, such as the oak-coffin tombs of Denmark, reflect the high status of their occupants. The amount of effort that went into the construction of some Bronze Age mortuary structures and the high value ascribed to the goods buried with the bodies—and thus taken out of use by the living—is consistent with the expectations for such a stratified society. These are not the earliest examples of astonishingly rich burials in European prehistory, as the Copper Age cemetery at Varna attests. The displays of wealth in some Bronze Age burials are so elaborate and the practice is so widespread, however, that it is difficult not to conclude that society was increasingly differentiated into elites and commoners.

Evidence for such social differentiation appears late in the third millennium B.C. in widely separated areas. Among these are the Wessex culture of southern England, builders of Stonehenge; the Unětice culture of central Europe, whose hoards of bronze artifacts reflect the ability to acquire tin from a considerable distance; and the El Argar culture of southern Spain, who buried many of their dead in large ceramic jars. Somewhat later, in places such as Denmark and Ireland, lavish displays of wealth provided an opportunity for the elite to demonstrate their status.

Archaeologists have pondered the question of what form these differentiated societies took. Some have advanced the hypothesis that they were organized into chiefdoms, a form of social organization

known from pre-state societies around the world. In chiefdoms, positions of status and leadership are passed from one generation to the next, and this elite population controls the production of farmers, herders, and craft specialists, whose products they accumulate, display, and distribute to maintain their social preeminence. As an alternative to such a straightforwardly hierarchical social structure, other archaeologists have advanced the notion that Bronze Age society had more complicated and fluid patterns of differences in authority and status, which changed depending on the situation and the relationships among individuals and groups. Whatever position one accepts, it is clear that social organization was becoming increasingly complex throughout Europe during the Bronze Age.

The most complex societies were found in the Aegean beginning in the third millennium B.C. On the island of Crete, the Minoan civilization developed a political and economic system dominated by several major palaces in which living quarters, storerooms, sanctuaries, and ceremonial rooms surrounded a central courtyard. Clearly, these were the seats of a powerful elite. During the mid-second millennium B.C., the fortified town of Mycenae on the Greek mainland, with its immense royal burial complexes, became the focus of an Aegean civilization that was celebrated by later Greek writers such as Homer and Thucydides. Bronze Age developments in the Aegean proceeded much more quickly than in the rest of Europe, and the Minoans and Mycenaean were true civilizations with writing and an elaborate administrative structure.

The Bronze Age continues to pose many challenges to archaeologists. In particular, the significance of age and gender differences in Bronze Age society will need to be explored to a greater degree, as will the possible meanings of the remarkable sacred landscapes created by monuments and burials. The roles of small farmsteads and fortified sites need to be better understood. The European Bronze Age is a classic example of how new archaeological finds, rather than providing definitive answers, raise more questions for archaeologists to address.

PETER BOGUCKI



THE SIGNIFICANCE OF BRONZE

Bronze is an alloy, a crystalline mixture of copper and tin. The ratio is set ideally at 9:1, though it varied in prehistory as a result of either manufacturing conditions or the deliberate choice of the metalworker. Bronze can be cast or hammered into complex shapes, including sheets, but cold hammering has an additional effect: it elongates the crystals and causes work hardening. Through work hardening, effective edges can be produced on blades, but the process can be exaggerated, leading to brittleness and cracking. Heating, or annealing, causes recrystallization and eliminates the distortion of the crystals, canceling the work hardening but enabling an artifact to be hammered into the desired shape. Moreover, the presence of tin improves the fluidity of the molten metal, making it easier to cast and permitting the use of complex mold shapes.

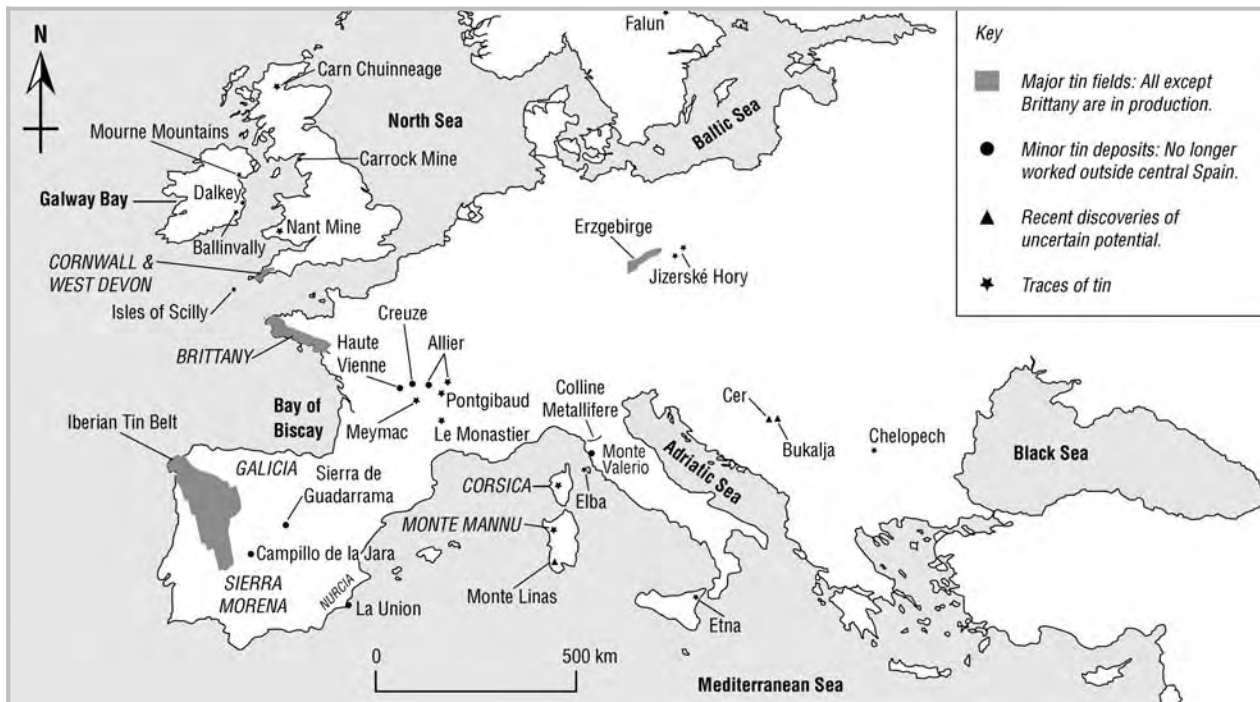
Because of the long history of research on the topic of European prehistory, the sequence of metallurgical development is well known. Newer work, particularly in the southern Levant, has shed fresh light on the context of metallurgy in a milieu of developing social complexity. Bronze production on a significant scale first appeared in about 2400 B.C. in the Early Bronze Age central European Únětice culture, distributed around the Erzgebirge, or “Ore mountains,” on the present-day border between Germany and the Czech Republic. It is no accident that these mountains have significant tin reserves, which many archaeologists believe probably were exploited in antiquity, although this point is the subject of controversy. Farther west, tin bronze was introduced rapidly to Britain from about 2150 B.C.,

so that there was no real Copper Age. Here, the earliest good evidence for tin production is provided by tin slag from a burial at Caerloggas, near Saint Austell in Cornwall, dated to 1800 B.C. Significantly, Cornwall is a major tin source.

ARSENICAL COPPER: THE FIRST STEP

An issue that divides many modern scholars is the extent to which ancient metalworkers were aware of the processes taking place as they smelted, refined, melted, and cast: Were the metalwork and its compositions achieved by accident or by design? This controversy is an aspect of the modernist versus primitivist debate, which pits those who see the people of prehistory as very much like ourselves, practicing empirical experimentation, against those who doubt the complexity of former societies and their depth of knowledge.

This is particularly the case with respect to arsenical copper, an alloy containing between 2 percent and 6 percent arsenic, which was used in the Copper Age of Europe during the fourth and third millennium B.C. It continued to be produced and to circulate for some time after the introduction of tin bronze. Like bronze, arsenical copper is superior in its properties to unalloyed copper. The arsenic acts as a deoxidant. It makes the copper more fluid and thus improves the quality of the casting. Experimental work has shown that cold working of the alloy leads to work hardening. Thus, while arsenical coppers in the as-cast or annealed state can have a hardness of about 70 HV (Vickers hardness), this



Tin deposits in Europe. ADAPTED FROM PENHALLURICK 1986.

hardness can be work hardened to 150 HV. In prehistoric practice hardness rarely exceeded 100 HV, however; this hardness compares favorably to that of copper, which also can be work hardened. It has been claimed, however, that many of the artifacts in arsenical copper were produced accidentally and that their properties were not as advantageous, as is sometimes claimed. This is argued not least because of the tendency of arsenic to segregate during casting (to form an arsenic-rich phase within the matrix of the alloy and, in particular, close to the surface of the artifact).

Some copper ores are rich in arsenic, such as the metallic gray tennantite or enargite, and it is argued that arsenical copper was first produced accidentally using such ores; the prehistoric metalworkers then would have noticed that the metal produced was mechanically superior to normal copper. Furthermore, arsenic-rich ores could have been recognized from the garlic smell they emit when heated or struck. Arsenic, however, is prone to oxidation, producing a fume of arsenious oxide; this fume is toxic and would deplete the arsenic content of the molten metal unless reducing conditions (i.e., an oxygen-poor environment) were maintained at all times. The “white arsenic smoke” and white residue pro-

duced during melting and hot working probably would have been noticed by metalworkers as correlating with certain properties of the material. This loss probably explains the greatly varying arsenic content of Copper Age arsenical copper.

Whether or not arsenical copper was produced deliberately, it has been noted that daggers were made preferentially of arsenical copper in numerous early copper-using cultural groups of the circum-Alpine area, such as Altheim, Pfynd, Cortaillod, Mondsee, and Remedello. Similar patterns have been noticed in Wales, and in the Copper Age southern Levant there was differentiation between utilitarian metalwork in copper and prestige/cultic artifacts in arsenical copper. Although arsenical copper produces harder edges than does copper, this deliberate choice of raw material may have been based on color rather than mechanical properties. As a result of segregation, arsenic-rich liquid may exude at the surface (“sweating”) during the casting of an artifact in arsenical copper, resulting in a silvery coating.

THE COMING OF TIN

Cassiterite, tin oxide ore, is present in various areas of Europe in placer deposits. These are secondary



Fig. 1. Sheet-bronze armor from Marmesses, France.
RÉUNION DES MUSÉES NATIONAUX/ART RESOURCE, NY. REPRODUCED
BY PERMISSION.

deposits that are produced by the erosion of ore-bearing rock, and the cassiterite is then redeposited in alluvial sands and gravels. The high-density, hard, dark pebbles of “stream tin” presumably would have been known to prehistoric people searching for gold. Stannite, a sulfide of tin, sometimes occurs in ore bodies in association with chalcopyrite and pyrite, and the weathered part of such deposits would contain cassiterite.

Tin, however, is very rare. Although some placer deposits probably would have been worked out and are therefore not known today, tin’s distribution is very uneven in Europe. Indeed, it is perhaps no accident that its earliest regular use appeared in the Únětice culture, around the tin-rich Erzgebirge. It has been suggested that the rich “Wessex” graves of the early second millennium in south-central England owe their wealth to their control of the rich Cornish tin of the southwest peninsula. The gold Rillaton cup, from Cornwall, tends to support such a hypothesis as it documents the accumulation of

wealth presumably amassed through the tin trade. Other major sources occur in western Iberia and Brittany, although there is no hard evidence for their working in the Bronze Age. In Anatolia Early Bronze Age mining is known at Kestel and tin processing nearby at Göltepe, in the Taurus Mountains of southern Turkey.

It is thought that the complex societies of the Aegean and eastern Mediterranean obtained their tin from Turkey, Afghanistan, or the eastern desert of Egypt. The presence of tin ingots in the Ulu Burun shipwreck, which sank about 1300 B.C. near Kaş off the southern coast of Turkey, shows that metallic tin was circulating in the Late Bronze Age Mediterranean. Tin smelting is relatively inefficient (the slags at Caerloggas contain 45 percent tin oxide), but it can be added easily to copper by putting cassiterite and a flux (to facilitate the chemical reaction) on the surface of molten copper under charcoal. Bronze Age metallic tin (which is, in fact, unstable) is found rarely, which supports the hypothesis that the direct addition of tinstone (cassiterite) to molten copper was preferred. This process also guarantees a consistent alloy, whereas arsenical copper production could not be controlled so easily.

As noted, bronze presents distinct mechanical advantages over copper. The presence of tin improves the fluidity of the molten metal, making it better suited for casting, and lowers its melting point: 10 percent tin will lower the melting point of bronze by some 200 degrees. Bronze in its as-cast state has a hardness of about 100 HV, which can be improved to about 170 HV by cold working. It is probably no accident that the widespread use of stone arrowheads and daggers declines only with the change from arsenical copper to bronze in the Early Bronze Age (as, for example, in northern Italy). This is partly because bronze becomes more widely available as a result of increased production but also as metal edge tools increase in effectiveness.

LEAD ADDITIVES

During the Late Bronze Age lead was used as an additive to bronze. Lead certainly improves casting, lowering the melting point of the alloy and improving its viscosity, but the main reason for its use may have been to bulk out copper in a period of metal shortage. Breton socketed axes often have high lead

contents, and in Slovenia it is noticeable that different artifact types contained varying amounts of lead, axes having 6–7 percent and sickles 3–4 percent. Deliberately added lead appears in British bronze in the Wilburton phase (1140–1020 B.C.), continuing in the succeeding Ewart Park (1020–800 B.C.) and Llyn Fawr (800 B.C. onward) phases.

COPPER PROCUREMENT

Copper is more common in Europe than is tin, and it is likely that prehistoric miners worked outcrops that are of no economic significance today. Bronze Age mines are known at Ross Island (2400–2000 B.C.) and Mount Gabriel (1700–1500 B.C.) in southwest Ireland, and workings at Alderley Edge in England date to the first half of the second millennium B.C. There are extensive contemporary underground workings at Great Orme's Head, Llandudno, on the north coast of Wales, and mining also is documented at Cwmystwyth and Nantyreira in the west of the country and at Parys Mountain on the island of Anglesey.

In Spain mining is documented at Chinflon in the south and at El Aramo and El Milagro in the north, while in southern France it is known at Cabrières and Saint-Véran-les Clausis. There is Copper Age mining in Liguria, in northwestern Italy, at Libiola and Monte Loreto, and the ores around Rudna Glava, near Bor in Serbia were exploited from a very early date (fifth millennium B.C.). There are also fifth millennium dates for the mines at Ai Bunar, and Bronze Age working is indicated at Tymnjanka in Bulgaria. There is some evidence for Copper and Bronze Age mining at Špania Dolina and Slovinky in central Slovakia. None of these mines, however, seems to be on the same scale as Bronze Age workings in Austria and Russia. The Mitterberg mines are situated in the Salzbach valley, near Salzburg in Austria; here, there are Bronze Age adits up to 100 meters long, and it has been calculated that as much as 18,000 tons of copper were produced in prehistory. At Kargaly, southwest of the Urals in European Russia, it seems that mining was conducted on a massive scale, with an estimated 1.5–2 million tons of ore produced.

METALS ANALYSIS AND PROVENANCE

A large body of metals analysis exists for prehistoric Europe; the Stuttgart program of spectrographic

analysis, for example, effected some 22,000 analyses. Many of the sampled artifacts date to the Copper and Early Bronze Age, as it was thought that compositional analysis would be particularly useful in shedding light on the emergence of metallurgy in Europe. Statistical analyses of these data have thrown up metal composition groups, although these are contested. There are numerous methodological problems. Prehistoric artifacts do not have homogeneous compositions, not least because of segregation of elements in cast artifacts. Unfortunately, some of the elements determined by these analyses show this characteristic, such as arsenic, whose segregation we have already discussed. Furthermore, ore bodies vary in composition through the outcrop, so that provenance is difficult to ascertain. Recycling seems to have been practiced from the Early Bronze Age (because one of the advantages that metal presents over stone tools is that broken artifacts can be repaired easily and the raw material reused), which means that metals from different sources may have been melted together. Finally, the effect of alloying on the composition of impurities in metal is not understood completely.

Sometimes compositional groups correspond with artifact types. The Early Bronze Age ingot rings (*Ösenhalsringe* or *Ösenringe*), very commonly found to the north of the eastern Alps in southern Bavaria, lower Austria, and Moravia, represent one example. They frequently are made from a metal that is conventionally referred to as “C2,” or “*Ösenring* metal,” and which probably is linked to Austrian copper sources. Peter Northover has used data on impurity groups and alloy types to argue convincingly about metal circulation zones in Britain and northwestern Europe. He also was able to suggest sources for the supply—for example, the earliest metal used in Britain seems to have come from Ireland, and, in the Late Bronze Age, metal from central European sources was used.

METAL AND SOCIETY

It is a commonplace of prehistory that the development of the metals industry is linked to the growth of social complexity. It is, however, worth noting that it was the Australian prehistorian Vere Gordon Childe, in his *The Dawn of European Civilization*, who saw the “qualities . . . which distinguish the Western world” as beginning in the Bronze Age. It

is, however, debatable whether the metals trade caused the emergence of elites or whether, conversely, their emergence favored the development of metallurgy.

Metal is a medium for producing efficient tools and weapons that could be repaired without the loss of material, but it also is uniquely suitable as a mark of status. It was scarce, particularly in the earlier phases of its use, and this rarity was compounded by the use of tin, which was even scarcer than copper. Metalworkers with the requisite skills to perform the “magical” transformation of green copper ore into metal may have been equally scarce. Metal would have caught the light in a way that no other substance in use at the time did; bronze, in particular, could be formed, by casting or working, into complex shapes to make ornaments, tools, and weapons but also sheet metal. The latter material could be used in the production of armor—helmets, grieves, and shields—and vessels. Sheet armor, which is arguably less efficient than leather or wood, would have had a definite display function, as would bronze vessels, not least because of the expertise required for their manufacture. The Greek epic poet Homer, author of the *Iliad* and the *Odyssey*, who wrote in the first half of the first millennium B.C., gives us a picture of the heroic warriors at the siege of Troy. His Late Bronze Age Aegean warriors bear impressive bronze sheet armor, helmets, and shields, which are regularly described as “shining” or “flashing.”

The use and possession of metal therefore can be seen as a measure of wealth, and this is particularly true for an area such as Denmark, which was entirely dependent on outside sources for its copper and tin. Such attempts to ascribe value to prehistoric commodities are risky, because we can only speculate on the relative scarcities of raw materials or the cost of labor input and guess at the ritual significance or the biographies of artifacts. For example, in much epic literature weapons acquire value by virtue of their previous owner, like Achilles’ spear in Homer’s *Iliad*.

Because copper and tin are distributed unevenly, the desire for raw materials bound together European society in a metals trade. We are not sure which organic commodities were traded for metal, but control of resources and craft specialists seems to have acquired increasing importance. Thus, Late

Bronze Age fortified settlements of the Urnfield period appear to have acted as regional metallurgical centers, and some smaller settlements seem to have had no production of their own. The importation of Continental scrap metal into Late Bronze Age Britain is evidenced by the cargo of the Middle Bronze Age Langdon Bay ship, wrecked off Dover in the English Channel. Mining gave upland communities, naturally poor in agricultural resources, such as the Late Bronze Age Luco/Laugen groups of Trentino–Alto Adige in the Italian Alps, a commodity to tie them in to wider economic and status networks.

THE SOCIAL POSITION OF BRONZEWORERS

A key concept in understanding the growth of social complexity is that of craft specialization, where individuals are dedicated to specific economic tasks rather than participating in domestic food production. As copper metallurgy developed, many crafts emerged, including prospecting, mining and ore dressing, smelting, and refining, casting, and finishing. It is likely that at least some of these crafts were protected, secret knowledge. Gordon Childe (in *The Bronze Age*) suggests that bronzesmiths were an itinerant caste, outside the social structures of society, who traveled from settlement to settlement to ply their trade. Increasing documentation for metalworking within settlements, as at the Italian lake villages of Ledro and Fivè, coupled with the lack of support for this model in the ethnographic literature, has led archaeologists to argue for permanent workshops: community-based and possibly part-time production. Thus, Michael Rowlands has suggested locally based seasonal production. Metal types can have surprisingly wide distributions, and the transmission of models or ideas (rather than itinerant smiths) is documented, for example, by the early Urnfield flange-hilted swords, which show close similarities from the east Mediterranean to western Europe.

Excavations by Stephen Shennan at an Early Bronze Age mining village in the Salzach valley, Sankt Veit–Klinglberg, indicate that the metal smelters were already craft specialists, importing foodstuffs and using ores won from various outcrops. In the Late Bronze Age the massive concentrations of smelting slag found, for example, on the

Lavarone-Vezzena plateau in the Trentino Alps, in southern Italy, or on Cyprus suggest large-scale industrial production, although it is significant that both are tied in to the Mediterranean markets of the period.

METALS MAKE THE WORLD GO ROUND

It is not clear to what extent bronze and the metals trade in general were responsible for the growth of social complexity in Bronze Age Europe. Was bronze a relatively minor component in complex patterns of wealth display involving many perishable elements (such as livestock, furs, and textiles), which do not survive in the archaeological record? Is the significance of bronze that it provided the catalyst for the development of complexity, as has been claimed for the southern Levant, or was the emergence of the elites of barbarian Europe an independent phenomenon? It seems that social stratification already had begun to develop in Neolithic Europe, and copper and then bronze gave the emergent elites a useful and rare raw material whose control enabled them to consolidate their power as well as a perfect vehicle for display. The “beauty” of the Bronze Age warrior was very much bound up in his armor, his shining bronze.

See also **Origins and Growth of European Prehistory** (vol. 1, part 1); **Early Copper Mines at Rudna Glava and Ai Bunar** (vol. 1, part 4).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Budd, Paul. “Eneolithic Arsenical Copper: Heat Treatment and the Metallographic Interpretation of Manufacturing Process.” In *Archaeometry* 90. Edited by Ernst Pernicka and Günther A. Wagner, pp. 35–44. Boston: Birkhäuser, 1991. (Budd doubts that arsenical copper was as advantageous as has been claimed and whether it was produced deliberately.)
- Charles, James A. “The Coming of Copper and Copper-Base Alloys and Iron: A Metallurgical Sequence.” In *The Coming of the Age of Iron*. Edited by Theodore A. Wertime and James D. Muhly, pp. 151–181. New Haven, Conn.: Yale University Press, 1980. (An excellent treatment, exploring hypotheses to explain developments, with particular attention to arsenical copper.)
- Chernykh, Evgenii N. *Ancient Metallurgy in the USSR: The Early Metal Age*. Translated by Sarah Wright. New Studies in Archaeology. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1992.
- Childe, Vere Gordon. *The Bronze Age*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1930. (An influential, but very dated account of the Bronze Age.)
- . *The Dawn of European Civilization*. London: Kegan Paul, 1925. (A dated account, but containing interesting ideas.)
- Coghlan, Herbert H. *Notes on the Prehistoric Metallurgy of Copper and Bronze in the Old World*. 2d ed. Occasional Papers on Technology, no. 4. Oxford: Pitt Rivers Museum, 1975.
- Harding, Anthony F. *European Societies in the Bronze Age*. Cambridge World Archaeology. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 2000. (See, in particular, pp. 197–241.)
- Northover, J. Peter. “The Exploration of the Long-Distance Movement of Bronze in Bronze and Early Iron Age Europe.” *Bulletin of the Institute of Archaeology, London* 19 (1982): 45–72.
- Pearce, Mark. “Metals Make the World Go Round: The Copper Supply for Frattesina.” In *Metals Make the World Go Round: The Supply and Circulation of Metals in Bronze Age Europe*. Edited by Christopher F. E. Pare, pp. 108–115. Oxford: Oxbow Books, 2000.
- . “Reconstructing Prehistoric Metallurgical Knowledge: The Northern Italian Copper and Bronze Ages.” *European Journal of Archaeology* 1, no. 1 (1998): 51–70.
- Penhallurick, Roger D. *Tin in Antiquity: Its Mining and Trade throughout the Ancient World with Particular Reference to Cornwall*. London: Institute of Metals, 1986.
- Rowlands, Michael J. *The Production and Distribution of Metalwork in the Middle Bronze Age in Southern Britain*. BAR British Series, no. 31. Oxford: British Archaeological Reports, 1976.
- Shennan, Stephen. *Bronze Age Copper Producers of the Eastern Alps: Excavations at St. Veit-Klinglberg*. Universitätsforschungen zur prähistorischen Archäologie 27. Bonn, Germany: Habelt, 1995.
- Tylecote, Ronald F. *The Prehistory of Metallurgy in the British Isles*. London: Institute of Metals 1986. (Despite the British focus, a useful review of technological change.)

MARK PEARCE



THE EARLY AND MIDDLE BRONZE AGES IN TEMPERATE SOUTHEASTERN EUROPE

The earlier part of the Bronze Age in temperate southeastern Europe (c. 2200–1500 B.C.) presents a confusing picture to the unwary archaeologist. Although over the years more publications have appeared in English, German, and French, many basic site reports and syntheses are only fully available in Hungarian, Romanian, Bulgarian, Serbian, or other indigenous languages. Often the names of apparently identical archaeological cultures change with bewildering abandon as one crosses modern national borders or even moves between regions of the same country. This part of the world has a history (beginning in the mid-nineteenth century) of antiquarian collecting and detailed specialist typological studies, especially of ceramics and metal objects, with far less effort expended on the more mundane aspects of prehistoric life. Only since the 1980s have studies become available that incorporate the analysis of plant and animal material from Bronze Age sites, and these are far from the rule.

To some extent, this is due to the nature of the archaeological record, that is, the sites and material that have survived from the Early and Middle Bronze Ages. With the exception of habitation mounds (tells) and burial mounds (tumuli), both of which have a limited distribution in the earlier part of the Bronze Age, most sites are shallow, close to the modern ground surface, and easily disturbed. Farming and urban development have been more destructive to these sites than to the more deeply buried sites of earlier periods. The typically more dispersed settlement pattern of the Bronze Age in

most of this region results in smaller sites, more vulnerable to the vagaries of history than the more concentrated nucleated sites of the later Neolithic or Eneolithic (sometimes called Copper Age) of the fifth and fourth millennia B.C. Sometimes only cemeteries or only settlements are known from a region during the Early or Middle Bronze Age, thus preserving only a part of the remains of the once-complete cultural system and making synchronization with other regions and reconstruction of Bronze Age life difficult. Radiocarbon (carbon-14) dates, although becoming more common for this period, are not abundant. They are rarely the product of a research program that stresses good archaeological context and high-precision dating of short-lived samples. The absolute chronology of the period is therefore somewhat lacking in precision, although the broad outlines are clear.

Taking the above strictures into account, this article treats the Early and Middle Bronze Ages in temperate southeastern Europe as a single “period,” although it distinguishes discrete Early and Middle Bronze Age “cultures,” as they are defined by archaeologists working in the area. In this the article follows John Coles and Anthony Harding in *The Bronze Age in Europe* (1979), who point out that the distinction between Early and Middle Bronze Ages, while chronologically valid, is arbitrary in cultural terms and that both of these periods (lasting a total of 500 to 750 years to the middle of the second millennium B.C.) are much more similar to each

other than to the succeeding Late Bronze and Early Iron Ages.

GEOGRAPHY AND LANDSCAPE

Southeastern Europe, as the term will be used here, includes the Hungarian Plain, the southern part of the Carpathian arc and its interior, and the drainage of the Middle and Lower Danube and its tributaries. This diverse area encompasses territory found in the modern states of Hungary, Romania, Bulgaria, and the former Yugoslavia (Slovenia, Croatia, Bosnia and Herzegovina, Macedonia, and Serbia and Montenegro). The phrase “temperate southeastern Europe” specifically excludes Greece and those parts of the southern Balkan Peninsula that have a Mediterranean climate. By contrast, temperate southeastern Europe has a Continental climatic regime: hot summers and cold winters, with rainfall distributed throughout the year. Vegetation is highly variable, from deciduous forests (with evergreens at the higher elevations) to grassy plains and swampy lowlands. In the earlier part of the Bronze Age, from about 4000 to 3500 B.P., the climate was slightly warmer, cooling off toward the period’s end to a climate roughly similar to that of modern times. The malarial swamps along the slower lowland rivers and the Lower Danube were undrained, and the uncleared mountain slopes were more heavily forested. Before modern drainage projects, flooding was common on the Hungarian Plain, and the area between the Danube and the Tisza Rivers was inhospitable to settlement, marshy, and difficult to cross. This landscape must have patterned Bronze Age settlements and contact in ways that differed from what is seen today.

Four thousand years ago the rivers and their valleys served as important routes through the difficult terrain of the Dinaric Alps, the Balkans, and the Carpathian mountain ranges. Although a determined cross-country walker could traverse most of these mountains, following the river valleys was probably the preferred route, especially when carrying burdens or leading pack animals. The broad alluvial flats were also favored farming terrain, with farmsteads and larger settlements located on the terraces above. Thus contact between sites seems to have been easier and more intense in the Bronze Age along larger rivers and their tributaries than it was with equally distant sites across the mountains.

Archaeologically this is often evident in the characteristic decoration of pottery or the shapes of metal objects, which may be limited to an area bounded by a river valley or mountain range. While such a distribution has sometimes been taken to be coterminous with a prehistoric ethnic or political boundary, this conclusion is not necessarily warranted.

The mountains of temperate southeastern Europe contain resources that were in great demand in the earlier part of the Bronze Age. Their forests provided wood for fires and for construction and sometimes wild game for furs and food (as the bones from mountain sites such as Ljuljaci in central Serbia seem to indicate). The Carpathians of Romania and the mountains of eastern Serbia had metal ores—copper, lead, and silver among them—that are known to have been worked at this time and even earlier. Although the exact mechanism of the trade for these ores and their products, both finished and unfinished, is still a matter of discussion among archaeologists, the ubiquity of metal objects throughout the entire region is indicative of the importance of these resources.

The landscape of the earlier part of the Bronze Age was not only natural but also culturally constructed. The inhabitants of temperate southeastern Europe in the early second millennium were not the earliest people to occupy that territory. Farming settlements had been established some four thousand to five thousand years earlier along the river valleys and the adjacent fertile loess plains (whose soil originally was windblown dust from the glaciers). Reoccupied over the years, some of these had grown to mounds of imposing stature, looming over the flatter river valleys or the Hungarian Plain. While some of those in eastern Hungary and western Romania, such as Pecica and Tószeg, remained occupied during the Early Bronze Age, most of the large habitation mounds of the rest of southeastern Europe were abandoned by 4000 B.C., well before the Bronze Age began. Such is the case with the tell sites of northeastern and north central Bulgaria and southern Romania. The looming presence of these abandoned sites and their former inhabitants may well have played a part in Bronze Age worldview and mythology. Like the modern inhabitants, the prehistoric peoples could have used these sites as topographical reference points that tied a mythic past to their present. Even more immediate, the tumulus

burials of the earlier Bronze Age bound the land to known and imagined ancestors, real or fictive progenitors of living people.

LIFE IN THE EARLIER BRONZE AGE: COMMONALITIES

The beginning of the Bronze Age in temperate southeastern Europe in the centuries around 2000 B.C. is in many senses an arbitrary point. Bronze ornaments and tools do become more common. However, neither the smelting of copper ores, the production and use of copper implements, nor the alloying of copper (with either arsenic or tin) to make a harder, more easily worked metal is the defining characteristic of this period. Copper mines (as at Rudna Glava in eastern Serbia and Ai Bunar in south central Bulgaria) and copper artifacts (such as those from Vinča on the Middle Danube) are known from the Eneolithic or Copper Age (4500–2500 B.C.), up to two millennia before the onset of the Bronze Age. Easily made useful small flint blades were still common. The beginnings of metal technology did not apparently cause a major change in the productive technology of southeastern Europe. Indeed some of the earliest Early Bronze Age metal artifacts are ornaments, such as pins, torcs, and hair rings, which may have immediately indicated the status of the wearer while making the most economical use of the metal. The bronze flat axes and riveted triangular daggers of the earliest period may also have conveyed and conferred a degree of status to the possessor. Certainly the more highly decorated examples of the metalsmith's art seem to have been prized more for show than for work.

By the earlier part of the Bronze Age, this region had been occupied for some four millennia by societies that based their subsistence on agriculture and stock raising. Several types of wheat and barley as well as legumes, fruits, and berries are found on Early Bronze Age sites. Although the mix of animals varied somewhat from site to site, possibly due to local geographic and ecological factors, bones from most of the Early and Middle Bronze Age sites that have been analyzed from this region indicate that cattle predominate, followed by sheep or goats and then pigs. Wild animals were of only minor importance for food in most cases, although deer and even aurochs were still being hunted. Transhumant pastoralism, moving the flocks to the uplands in the

summer and lowlands in the winter, might have been practiced in the Balkans, but this remains unproven.

The transition from Late Neolithic and Chalcolithic societies to those of the Bronze Age was not sudden but rather a gradual accretion of small interconnected changes in economy, ideology, and social structure that produced a distinctly different picture by the beginning of the second millennium B.C. As Peter Bogucki points out in his *Origins of Human Society* (1999), one of the important ways in which Bronze Age societies differed from those found earlier in the same region relates to the development of animal traction. This builds on Andrew Sherratt's idea of a Secondary Products Revolution, which envisions a major change in the utilization of animals occurring in the fourth millennium B.C. Prior to this time, according to Sherratt, domestic animals, such as sheep, goats, and cattle, were important primarily as food. They were part of a system of food resources that worked synergistically, each part contributing to and amplifying the results of the effort as a whole. Thus domestic animals were "food on the hoof," partial insurance against bad crop years, able to live on uncleared or agriculturally marginal land and able to graze on harvested fields, which they improved by reducing the stubble and producing fertilizer. This model of mixed agriculture and animal husbandry, which was developed by archaeologists based on data from the prehistoric Near East, was also generally valid for the farming ecology of southeastern Europe. Sherratt's model of a Secondary Products Revolution retains this important food-system role for domestic animals but adds further, "secondary," uses: milk and milk products from cattle, goats, and sheep; wool from sheep; traction from cattle (and horses a bit later, in the late fourth millennium). Bogucki sees this latter use of domestic animals as crucial to the developments that led to Bronze Age society, in which social inequality and differences in wealth are generally agreed to be greater than those of the preceding periods.

In modern economic terms, using cattle for traction transformed them from food resources to productive assets. Thus ownership or access to cattle (as well as to land and the human labor force, possibly displacing the latter) became a way in which households and larger kin groups could negotiate

their influence and social power. Like differences in land productivity or control of labor, it became another way in which inequality among households and kin groups might be engendered and maintained. Animal traction, first appearing in this region in contexts of the Eneolithic Baden culture (fourth millennium B.C.), made it possible to transport bulky loads (especially wood and stone) more easily as well as speeding up forest clearance and plowing. Wagon models and wooden disk wheels have been found in very Early Bronze Age (around 2000 B.C.) contexts in Hungary (Somogyvár-Vinkovci culture) and Romania (early Wietenberg); plows of this time are not attested for temperate southeastern Europe but are known from other parts of the Continent.

With animal traction decreasing the necessity of a large human labor pool for critical agricultural and subsistence tasks, households could be more widely distributed over the landscape. By 2000–1500 B.C. the settlement pattern of dispersed farmsteads of several related families who shared draft animals and participated together in time-critical agricultural tasks, such as plowing and reaping, contrasts sharply with the more nucleated settlements of the fifth and fourth millennia. With a few exceptions, such as the Early Bronze Age Hungarian Plain tell settlements and some reoccupied fifth millennium tells in south central Bulgaria, “villages” are unknown. The typical inhabitant of southeastern Europe in the earlier Bronze Age lived in a farmstead or hamlet of ten to fifty people. Demographically, in order to survive and reproduce the next generation, the breeding population must be larger than this. Thus although the people of this time lived in small communities, they were necessarily cognizant of other such communities around them. In fact one could think of this settlement pattern, in the words of Anthony Harding, as a “dispersed village.” Not all households of this village were equal; some had access to resources denied to others and may have indicated this in various ways by dress, ornaments, or behavior. Many of the households must have been related by blood or marriage over several generations, providing transgenerational pathways to power and recognition, cohesive “institutional memory,” and multiple role models for mundane and specialized statuses and tasks.

The structures that households occupied, whether in “dispersed villages” or tell settlements, were generally similar in plan and construction. With few exceptions, they are built of wattle and daub, characterized by weaving or tying smaller sticks to an armature of larger posts and covering the resultant wall with a thick plaster of mud, often with chaff or other plant material mixed in. Houses so constructed probably had thatched roofs with center poles supported by a line of posts. Easy to make, the construction provided insulation from the cold and was (aside from the roof) relatively fire-proof. House interiors were either one room or were subdivided by wattle walls; floors were of beaten earth. Storage pits for grain and often an interior hearth completed the inventory. The usually rectangular houses vary in size, possibly reflecting the number of inhabitants and the stage of household development, but most are about 8 to 10 by 4 to 6 meters. Other notable structures of the earlier Bronze Age of this region are “semisubterranean” houses, whose remains are found as pits dug into the subsoil. These tend to be smaller than the aboveground wattle-and-daub houses and may in some cases represent cellar holes or special function structures.

Archaeologists have disagreed over the characterization of the political system of earlier Bronze Age societies. It is generally acknowledged that they cannot be called bands (the technologically simplest, most “egalitarian,” smallest-scale type of society in an evolutionary hierarchy) and do not fit into the category of states (the largest, most complex, ranked or socially stratified societal type). Most agree that true states did not emerge in Europe until late in the Iron Age, at least a thousand years later. The societies of the earlier Bronze Age have been called tribes or chiefdoms. As defined by Elman Service in *Primitive Social Organization* (1962), tribes, larger than a band, are made up of a larger number of groups that are self-sufficient and provide their own protection. Leadership is personal and charismatic and usually temporary; there are no permanent political offices that contain real power. The tribal society is made up of discrete “segments,” from families to lineages, which combine when necessary to oppose “segments” of equal size. A chiefdom, according to Service and others, is a centrally organized regional population that numbers in the

thousands. This population is characteristically more dense than that of simple segmented tribes and usually has evidence of heritable social ranking and economic stratification along with “central places” that coordinate economic, social, and religious activity. The social and political system is hierarchical and pyramidal, with a small, powerful group of elite decision makers and a large mass of lower-status subjects. Religion and legitimate coercion act to assure social control, and craft specialization and redistribution characterize the economic system.

The question of which type of political system best describes the polity of the earlier Bronze Age in temperate southeastern Europe remains open. Its importance lies in the tantalizing nature of the fragmentary data about the social forms of this period and the illusory explanatory power of this evolutionary socioeconomic model. Thus archaeologists often emphasize the supposed ranked nature of Bronze Age society. This ranking is most evident in cemetery assemblages, where some graves are “richer” than others, as judged by the material, the number, or the workmanship of grave goods. The association of mortuary variability with status differences in such prehistoric contexts is far from simple or proven, but one cannot deny that such variability exists and seems to increase as the Bronze Age develops. Similar patterned variety is not generally found in other aspects of the archaeological record of the earlier Bronze Age, except possibly at the very end of the Middle Bronze Age. In multistructure settlements or in “dispersed villages,” houses are usually of roughly similar size and construction. Importance or social ranking of a household or kin group does not seem to be able to be inferred from intrasettlement patterning or house location. Except in a very small number of cases, the domestic inventories of cooking and storage vessels, tools, and food preparation implements give little clue as to the ranking of the occupants.

LIFE IN THE EARLIER BRONZE AGE: PARTICULARS

The local groups of the earlier Bronze Age are, above all, identifiable by their ceramics and, to a lesser degree, their metal inventory. Much research since the mid-nineteenth century has been devoted to distinguishing the types and styles of these artifacts and their distributions in time and space. This

is connected with an emphasis on collectible artifacts, the excavation of cemeteries (where such artifacts are more often found complete than in settlements), and a stress on local differences rather than areawide similarities. In fact, as has been pointed out above, attention to the lifeways of this period clearly indicates the areawide shared characteristics of these societies. Moreover the (often casually implicit) assumption that communities with shared ceramic or metal types correspond to ethnic groups in the modern sense has been objected to on both theoretical and ethnographic grounds. Nonetheless most archaeologists working in the area continue to speak of the spatial and temporal distributions of these favored artifact types and styles as delineating “cultures” and “cultural groups.”

Encompassing an area from Budapest to the Balkans and the Carpathians, the earliest sites considered to be Bronze Age on the Hungarian Plain and its lowland extensions are occupied by people using Somogyvar, Vinkovci, Kisapostag, Nagyrev, and Hatvan ceramics. These wares are found in small settlements and tells such as Tószeg, near Szolnok (Hungary) on the Tisza River, the eponymous sites of Vinkovci (Serbia) or Nagyrev (Hungary), and cemeteries such as Kisapostag (Hungary). Vinkovci pottery is known from sites as far south as the Morava Valley of central Serbia. Although the regional typologies are complex, in general the handmade pottery is smoothed and often burnished, plain or decorated with combed or brush-like exterior surface roughening (especially Hatvan and Nagyrev) or sometimes with simple linear motifs of incised (often with white chalk filling) or applied lines. Widemouthed jugs, bowls, and cups with one or sometimes two handles are common forms as well as simple larger urn shapes. The houses in the habitation sites conform to the typical Early Bronze Age wattle-and-daub construction and form. Cremation burials are the rule in Hatvan and Nagyrev cemeteries, while the people using Kisapostag and Somogyvar pottery practiced inhumation.

The Early Bronze Age sites of the lower Maros (Romanian, Mures) River, with a ceramic tradition closely associated with Hatvan and Nagyrev, are among the most extensively studied of any sites of this time. Settlements are found on the river terraces and ridges lifted above the plain. Tell settlements,

such as Periam or Pecica near Arad (Romania), have been known and investigated for more than a century. Aside from the ceramic inventory and relative chronology, these excavations have provided only a small glimpse into the lives of these people. Wattle-and-daub house remains, apparently of large rectangular houses with interior plaster hearths, and storage pits later used for refuse indicate that they shared the common mixed farming economy of the earlier Bronze Age, supplemented by hunting and fishing. A wide variety of points, punches, awls, and needles were made of bone, but little metal was found in the settlements.

Almost on the modern border between Serbia, Hungary, and Romania, the cemeteries of Mokrin (in Serbia) and Szöreg and Deszk (in Hungary) are the last resting places of these Maros villagers of four thousand years ago. These are inhumation cemeteries, sometimes containing several hundred skeleton graves (Mokrin has 312) and associated grave goods of pottery and metal. This type of burial was the most common in the earlier Bronze Age of temperate southeastern Europe and indeed throughout Europe as a whole at this time. The dead were laid in the earth in a contracted position, often with the males oriented one direction and the females the other, usually with the head turned to face the same way. Grave goods were variable, allowing archaeologists to distinguish “rich” from “poor” graves. Typically at least some ornaments (pins, necklaces, bracelets, hair rings, beads), weapons or tools (daggers, axes), or pottery were interred with most of the burials. The ornamental metal objects, such as large curved knot-headed pins and hair rings worn by women, were often made of copper; necklaces, bracelets, and implements were made of bronze. The pottery was handmade, fine burnished black ware, made into graceful biconical shapes of small jugs with flaring rims and two handles or lugs on the shoulder or wider-mouthed bowls. Incised decoration on the pottery, although present, was rare.

As noted above, the association of mortuary variability with status differences in such prehistoric contexts is far from simple or proven. The richest graves contain gold, as well as copper and bronze, while the poorest contain only pottery or no grave goods at all. Some of the women were buried with extensive grave goods, possibly reflecting their own

or their husband’s status. The skeletons themselves provide information concerning health and nutrition. At Mokrin, in at least eleven cases, evidence was found for trephination, a procedure where an opening was made in the skull while the person was alive. Its purpose is unknown; relief of some mental or physical illness has been suggested. The number of children’s graves indicates high childhood mortality, and pathologies caused by illnesses, such as meningitis, osteomyelitis, sinusitis, and otitis media, have been documented. With high perinatal and childhood mortality, the chances for living into the teens was predictably low. Survivors to adulthood were old at thirty-five, and few lived beyond fifty.

Deeper in the Balkans, the transition to the Bronze Age is still murky. A few burials under tumuli with ceramic grave goods reminiscent of Vinkovci or typologically earliest Vatin (Early to Middle Bronze Age from the area south of the Maros) pottery have been found in western Serbia. Novacka Cuprija in the mountains bordering the Morava River valley in central Serbia is a small farmstead or hamlet site. Pottery from a series of pits dating to about 1900 B.C. bears close resemblance to Vinkovci-style pottery across the Danube. Botanical and zooarchaeological analyses indicate that the Early Bronze Age inhabitants were practicing mixed farming and animal husbandry, growing several types of wheat, barley, lentils, and fruits. Even farther into the mountainous Balkan region, the scatter of small sites in western Bulgaria, although using a different style of pottery, seem to document a similar way of life. Only in central and southern Bulgaria did stable farming settlements with substantial houses, as at Ezero or Yunacite, persist for long enough to form sizable tells.

From about 1800 to 1500 B.C. changes in the habitation and burial sites in temperate southeastern Europe delineate the period that is traditionally called the Middle Bronze Age. These changes include a general preference for cremation burial rather than inhumation, an increase of metal objects and weapons in graves and hoards, and a stronger tendency to place at least some sites on defensible locations, often surrounded with a wall. These changes were long explained as betokening times of more unrest. More recent studies have emphasized the multiple possible reasons for these phenomena, including gradual development of chiefly or tribal so-

cieties, emulation of developing Mediterranean societies, economic and social changes that promoted an ideology of male display (involving weapons, but not necessarily large-scale or widespread warfare), changes in metallurgy and technology, or shifts in religious beliefs. The names given to Middle Bronze Age “cultures” vary from region to region, but as in earlier Bronze Age times, the main distinctions seem to be those of ceramic decoration, while the general pattern of life exhibits many commonalities. Thus the people using Incrusted Ware in central Hungary do not differ in many respects (except their preference for certain pottery shapes and designs) from their Vatia Ware neighbors to the east or their Fuzesabony or Otomani contemporaries across the Tisza River. These in turn bear recognizable similarities to the sites in Oltenia and the southern Banat (from the Maros south to the Danube in Serbia) occupied by people using (respectively) Tei and almost identical Vatin pottery. The investigation of many of the excavated settlement sites has emphasized stratigraphic and typological analysis over the analysis of the more mundane foodways and domestic activities.

Initial Hungarian-American excavations at Szazhalombatta, along the Danube south of Budapest, and more complete German-Serbian excavations at Feudvar near Mosorin illustrate a trend toward broader-based research designs that investigate the household economy and everyday life. At Feudvar excavators uncovered a Middle Bronze Age settlement surrounded by a strong wattle-and-daub palisaded wall. Rows of rectangular wattle-and-daub houses of varying sizes (up to 12 by 6 meters) separated by narrow alleys filled the occupied area. Some of these had plastered low-relief designs around the windows and doors. Most had interior plastered hearths and grain storage vessels; some had loom weights and grinding stones on the floors. The pottery is of Vatin type, finely polished carinated vessels with incised and sometimes white-filled geometric and linear patterns. This was a farming settlement, as indicated by the common finds of carbonized one-row and two-row wheat and barley, beans, and legumes, harvested with the help of bronze and flint sickles. At least some of this grain, according to the excavators, went into beer production; no trace of wine or grapes has been found. Aside from the common domestic animals, wild cat-

tle, deer, and wild pigs were hunted. Fishing with harpoon or hooks (and probably nets) was also an important source of food. Animal bone, horn, and antler, found in large numbers in the refuse pits of Feudvar, were worked into tools and ornaments, often decorated with intricate designs of concentric circles and meanders. Similar designs are found on contemporaneous Middle Bronze Age metal shaft-hole axes and swords. While some archaeologists see Mycenaean influence in such motifs, they may equally well have been developed locally.

These were by no means urban societies. Middle Bronze Age settlements like Feudvar, Zidovar, or Dupljaja in the Yugoslav Banat region or the Otomani settlement of Salacea in the Transylvania region of Romania were the largest population centers of their time, possibly numbering a hundred or more people. They usually chose locations that had not been previously inhabited or at least had been abandoned for some time. Nucleated settlements are not numerous; the majority of the population still lived in smaller dispersed hamlets or farmsteads. Goods seem to have moved freely across the landscape. Bronze tools and weapons are found in some abundance several hundred kilometers distant from the nearest ore sources. Textiles and food products may have formed an archaeological invisible part of exchange networks. Cremation burial is the rule, often in burnished biconical urns with incised designs accompanied by smaller vessels whose carinated shapes may imitate metal.

The pattern of life developed in temperate southeastern Europe in the earlier Bronze Age is distinctively European in flavor. In this microcosm one can already perceive the later landscape of hamlets and small towns, farmsteads and fields almost lost in the forested mass of the Continent. The artwork of Bronze Age peoples on metal and ceramics emphasizes a strong local identity within a wider, perhaps only indirectly and hazily perceived community. Their names, their gods, their lives gone for millennia, the people of the Early and Middle Bronze Ages of southeastern Europe left a legacy lasting to early modern times.

See also Transition to Farming in the Balkans (vol. 1, part 3); The Early and Middle Bronze Ages in Central Europe (vol. 2, part 5).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Bailey, Douglass. *Balkan Prehistory: Exclusion, Incorporation, and Identity*. London: Routledge, 2000.
- Bailey, Douglass, and Ivan Panayotov, eds. *Prehistoric Bulgaria*. Monographs in World Archaeology, no. 22. Madison, Wis.: Prehistory Press, 1995.
- Bogucki, Peter. *The Origins of Human Society*. Oxford: Blackwell, 1999.
- Coles, John, and Anthony Harding. *The Bronze Age in Europe*. London: Methuen, 1979. (A basic source for information about this period; dated, but still very useful.)
- Gimbutas, Marija. *Bronze Age Cultures in Central and Eastern Europe*. The Hague: Mouton, 1965.
- Girić, Miodrag. *Mokrin: Nekropola ranog bronzanog doba* [Mokrin: A cemetery of the Early Bronze Age]. Belgrade: Serbian Academy of Arts and Sciences, 1971. (Basic site report on a large Early Bronze Age cemetery; Serbian and English text.)
- Hänsel, Bernhard, and Predrag Medović, eds. *Feudvar I: Das Plateau von Titel und die Šajkaška: Titelski Plato I Šajkaška*. Kiel, Germany: Verlag Oetker/Voges, 1998.
- Harding, Anthony. *European Societies in the Bronze Age*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 2000.
- . “Bronze Age in Central and Eastern Europe.” *Advances in World Archaeology* 2 (1983): 1–50.
- Mohen, Jean-Pierre, and Christiane Eluère. *The Bronze Age in Europe*. New York: Harry Abrams, 1999. (Although containing only a small section of southeastern temperate Europe, this small volume has some very good artifact illustrations.)
- O’Shea, John M. *Villagers of the Maros: A Portrait of a Bronze Age Society*. New York: Plenum Press, 1996.
- Service, Elman. *Primitive Social Organization*. New York: Random House, 1962.
- Sherratt, Andrew. “Plough and Pastoralism: Aspects of the Secondary Products Revolution.” In *Pattern of the Past: Studies in Honour of David Clarke*. Edited by Ian Hodder, Glyn Isaac, and Nicholas Hammond, pp. 261–305. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1981.
- Tasić, Nikola, ed. *Kulturen der Frühbronzezeit des Karpatenbeckens und Nordbalkans*. Belgrade: Prosveta, 1984. (Good collection of articles on the Bronze Age of temperate southeastern Europe by Hungarian, Yugoslav, and Romanian scholars.)

H. ARTHUR BANKOFF



THE EARLY AND MIDDLE BRONZE AGES IN CENTRAL EUROPE

FOLLOWED BY FEATURE ESSAY ON:

Spišský Štvrtok 31

The definition and chronological framework of the Bronze Age is by no means uniform within the archaeological literature. Various areas had different paths and rhythms of change and development, and regional traditions of research influenced the labeling and periodization of the archaeological material in many ways. Thus, the Bronze Age begins in the last centuries of the fourth millennium B.C. in the Near East and the Aegean, around the middle of the third millennium B.C. in the northern Balkans and the Carpathian Basin, and around 2300 B.C. in central Europe—despite the fact that bronze itself became widespread a few centuries later. The Early Bronze Age of central Europe can be divided up into an early phase from about 2300 to 2000 B.C. and a later phase from about 2000 to 1600 B.C. The Middle Bronze Age (with its own subdivisions) spanned the time between about 1600 and 1350 B.C.

Central Europe will be taken here to consist of modern-day Germany, Switzerland, Austria, the Czech Republic, Poland, and Slovakia. The geography of this vast area varies widely. It is dominated by large alluvial plains—the Danube Valley, the North European Plain, the Carpathian Basin—and bordered by high mountains, namely the Alps in the south and the Carpathians in the east, along with

lower mountainous areas in central Germany, Bohemia, and southern Poland. The large rivers of central Europe (the Danube, Rhine, Oder, and Elbe) and their tributaries provided natural corridors for communication, travel, and trade. The area has a temperate Continental climate: cold, wet winters and warm, moist summers, with precipitation evenly distributed throughout the year. The Bronze Age falls into the so-called Subboreal climatic phase (about 3000–1000 B.C.), with only a slightly lower average temperature and a drier climate than that of today. Climatic changes altered vegetation during this period. Although deciduous forests continued to dominate most of the area, their composition changed: previous forests of oak, linden, and elm gave way to beech, with lime disappearing almost entirely. Human impact had its effect on the landscape as well. Deforestation due to opening up arable land and pasture reached its peak in the Late Neolithic and Early Bronze Age during the phase of initial occupation of various environmental niches and decreased afterward. Local variation was, however, caused by different scales of wood use: copper mining in the eastern Alps and central Germany required a large amount of wood, as did the continuous rebuilding of timber houses in the Alpine lake settlements, to the extent that regeneration of local forests did not occur.

MATERIAL REMAINS

Pottery Styles. The various environmental zones of central Europe—despite the natural routes connecting neighboring regions—accommodated human groups with fairly diverse material cultures. The most frequent trace of this diversity is evident in the pottery of these communities, and its study constitutes the bulk of traditional archaeological studies. Pottery is classified into regional stylistic groups, often named after “type-sites” or some important characteristic of the style. These groupings are sometimes referred to as “archaeological cultures,” a dubious, normative category often equated with prehistoric ethnic groups. Although such an interpretation has come to be strongly questioned, some knowledge of these groupings is essential because archaeological material from various regions is often referred to by these labels.

In Slovakia, for example, the first half of the Early Bronze Age in the western part of the country is characterized by Nitra pottery; in the east we find the so-called Košťany material. Later on the Nitra develops into Únětice and Mad’arovce styles, whereas Košťany is followed by Otomani style in the east, with similar or identical material from east Hungary (Füzesabony, Gyulavarsánd) and north-west Romania (Otomani). In Austria, the Czech Republic, Germany, and Switzerland the final phase of Bell Beaker assemblages appear at the very beginning of the Early Bronze Age, which later gives way to various local developments: Straubing and Adlerberg in Germany; Unterwölbling and Wieselburg in Austria; and Únětice (or Aunjetitz) in the Czech Republic, some parts of Germany, and southwestern Poland—the final phase of which is termed *Böheimkirchen* in Austria and *Věteřov* in the Czech Republic. The Middle Bronze Age shows a more unified picture in terms of pottery styles, with most of central Europe covered by Tumulus culture type or related material with some local variation.

Settlements. The material remains of the period come from various contexts and locations—settlements, burials, and metal hoards—and show significant differences in their geographical and temporal distribution. As for settlements, their occurrence during the Early and Middle Bronze Ages varies considerably both spatially and temporally. Large areas show no signs of settlement at all, and

the extension of occupation can only be reconstructed on the basis of the distribution of graves and hoards. In many cases, where settlement remains are found, they only consist of pits dug into the subsoil. There are, however, some areas where archaeologists have good knowledge of house forms, internal settlement organization, and larger settlement patterns as well, especially from the later part of the Early Bronze Age.

The most widespread house form of the Early Bronze Age appears to have been a rectangular timber-frame construction with large posts in the corners and along the longer sides of the houses. The walls were formed by these posts, which were set roughly 1 to 2 meters apart and the gaps filled with reed or wattle and daub. Houses like these were found in the Czech Republic (e.g., at Pospoloprty, Blšany, or Březno), Austria (at Franzhausen or Böheimkirchen), or on the so-called tell settlements (multilayered settlement mounds) of Slovakia. Sizes could vary considerably even within settlements—from smaller buildings, measuring 4 by 6 meters, to larger ones, like a house at Březno that measured 32 by 6.5 meters. Some houses might have internal divisions into two or three rooms (e.g., at Nitriansky Hrádok in Slovakia) or have central posts to support a ridged roof. Other techniques of construction are known as well. Houses might have stone foundations or foundation ditches, they might have wooden plank floors, or they might have been entirely made of wood with the so-called *Blockbau* technique resulting a “log cabin.”

Some of the best-preserved buildings come from lake dwellings in the Alps (southern Germany and Switzerland) preserved in the waterlogged environment. At Zurich-Mozarstrasse rectangular buildings were excavated that had sleeper beams laid directly on the floor and perforated by mortise holes through which posts were inserted and rammed into the ground. A number of various house types have been recovered in Cham-Obervil on Lake Zug and at Padnal near Savognin in Switzerland as well. In Padnal the earliest settlement layer had post-and-plank-built houses, sometimes with stone foundations, in one case with a floor of wooden planks. In later phases houses had stone foundations and wooden walls, and their floors were sometimes paved with stone.

In the Middle Bronze Age evidence for house forms becomes much scarcer. Some earlier settlements in Switzerland (e.g., Bodaman-Schachen) and Slovakia (e.g., Veselé) continued uninterrupted until the end of the initial phase of the Middle Bronze Age, with house types described above. A few other finds—for example from Tannhausen in Bavaria—also confirm the existence of post-built houses with wattle-and-daub walls. Other sites, as at Nitra in Slovakia, show new types: small semisubterranean houses about 3.5 meters wide and 5 meters long.

By looking at larger patterns, a number of different settlement types might be distinguished. Aside from the rarely detectable—small and short-lived—villages and hamlets, one special class is hill-top sites such as those found, for example, in southern Germany and Moravia, located on strategically important locations and rising above and controlling their immediate environment. Similar locations were chosen for larger settlements with impressive fortifications of ditches, ramparts, and palisades. About thirty such sites are known from Slovakia alone, the excavated ones displaying a well-organized, almost urbanistic internal layout, sometimes having narrow alleys between houses that line up in rows; comparable settlements make their appearance in southern Poland, the Czech Republic, and southern Germany.

Such sites were part of a settlement system with a hierarchy of at least two levels. They emerged in the later phase of the Early Bronze Age and indicate an increase both in local warfare and social complexity. They usually occupy easily defensible locations along important trade routes along river valleys, usually at distances of some 10 to 20 kilometers from each other, and were surrounded by smaller, undefended sites.

Burial. In many cases evidence of burial is the only record attesting the prehistoric occupation of an area during the Early and Middle Bronze Ages in central Europe. In this period, burial was usually by inhumation, either under or without a mound. The standard rite in the Early Bronze Age was flat inhumation in cemeteries of various sizes. Bodies were interred either on their sides in a crouched position with their legs bent and pulled upward, or they were placed flat on their backs. Specific details, however,

varied from region to region. In this respect, two large groups may be discerned. In the Danube Valley burial rites show a strict gender differentiation in terms of the orientation of the body: men were placed on one side, and women were placed on the other side with their heads lying in the opposite direction. In both groups, resultingly, the face was looking in the same direction. Cemeteries with this kind of burial ritual include the one at Gemeinlebarn in Austria, with grave numbers reaching into the hundreds; at Franzhausen, with well over one thousand graves; and a large number of smaller cemeteries in southern Germany (e.g., at Singen). Graves are arranged in a similar manner in eastern Slovakia, northeast Hungary, and around the area of the borders between Hungary, Romania, and Serbia, although the specific orientation of graves varies regionally. Sometimes even cemeteries near each other show differences in this respect. In the Rhine Valley and in Switzerland graves containing similar material culture do not observe such a differentiation between the sexes, nor do the many smaller cemeteries of the Únětice (or Aunjetitz) area.

In addition to the regular burial rites, exceptional modes of interment have also been observed. Cremation became more frequent around the end of the Early Bronze Age, especially in southwest Slovakia, most probably due to more intense connections with the rest of the Carpathian Basin, where this rite had been practiced since the beginning of the Bronze Age. A number of special burials have been found within the previously described inhumation cemeteries as well. In cemeteries with Únětice-type material, sometimes double or multiple burials occur, usually containing the bodies of a man and a woman or an adult and a child or children, suggesting a close relationship between the buried persons. At some Bohemian sites these multiple burials contained the remains of dismembered skeletons; in other cases the head of the deceased was cut off before burial. In many cases traces of wooden coffins or other wooden constructions were found. Sometimes grave pits were walled by stone slabs or marked by stone stelae on the surface.

Grave goods are usually sex-specific in all these burials. Most graves contain personal ornaments, weapons, tools, and pottery. In the earlier part of the Early Bronze Age (c. 2300–2000 B.C.) metal items—usually made of copper—were rare. Male

graves were sometimes furnished with triangular copper or bronze daggers, sometimes flat or flanged axes, and (rarely) pins or earrings or hair rings. Female graves contained mostly ornaments, like copper earrings and bracelets. Nonmetal items included flint tools and weapons (arrowheads, scrapers, etc.), bone objects (e.g., awls, pins), or beads made of various materials (such as faience, amber, bone, antler, shells). In the later part of the Early Bronze Age (c. 2000–1600 B.C.) bronze grave goods become more widespread and numerous. New types included various pins, bronze axes, neck rings, bronze pendants, and diadems.

A number of Early Bronze Age graves stand out among the others both in terms of their construction and the richness of their grave goods: these are the so-called princely burials of the Únětice area. Two famous burial mounds are located in Saxo-Thuringia in central Germany. At Leubingen, a barrow about 35 meters in diameter and 8–9 meters high was excavated in 1877. Under the earthen mound a circular ditch surrounded a stone cairn covering a rectangular wooden chamber. A skeleton of an elderly man was laid on the oak planks covering the floor. Another skeleton, probably that of a child, was laid across his hips. Grave goods consisted of a pot, a halberd, three small triangular daggers, two flanged axes, three chisels, two gold “eyelet” pins, one gold spiral bead, a massive gold bracelet, and two gold hair rings.

The other famous barrow near Helmsdorf, excavated in 1907, had a similar size. Here, a stone wall surrounded the central cairn, under which a wooden chamber was found. The floor of the chamber was paved with stone slabs in the northern half and covered with reed in the southern end. The skeleton of an adult man was laid down in a contracted position on its right side on the floor of the chamber. The grave goods—a broken clay vessel, a stone hammer, remains of a bronze dagger and a chisel, a bronze flat axe, a gold spiral bead, two gold earrings, and two gold pins—were placed on the bier as well. At various places, the construction showed traces of burning, probably the results of burial feasts or an attempt at firing the whole structure. (Excavation at a similar barrow, near Dieskau, could only confirm that it had been robbed. However, a gold “hoard” from the same site—three

bracelets and a flanged axe—was most probably part of the grave goods deposited in the barrow.)

Because they were made of wood, the burial chambers could be analyzed using dendrochronological methods, providing a date of about 1800 B.C. for the burial at Helmsdorf and about 1900 B.C. for that at Leubingen, putting both at the beginning of the later part of the Early Bronze Age.

Interment under barrows became the standard burial rite in the Middle Bronze Age throughout central Europe. Forms and structure of grave construction differed from region to region, sometimes even within one barrow cemetery. Interment was usually by inhumation; cremation, however, became more and more frequent in some areas, such as Bavaria and eastern Slovakia. Barrows might consist of a simple earthen mound above a grave pit; they might have circular ditches around them; or they might be covered by stones. In some instances stone cist graves were used as well. Grave goods in the Middle Bronze Age still usually consisted of personal ornaments, weapons, and tools. Richer male graves contained a sword, a dagger, and an axe, poorer graves have only one or two of these items. Female graves were furnished with ornaments and jewelry—mostly pins, bracelets, pendants, or belt buttons.

Often these grave goods provide an opportunity to reconstruct prehistoric clothing and the various ways ornaments and jewelry were worn, especially by women. An elaborate bronze headgear for women could be reconstructed based on the finds from three graves from the Early Bronze Age cemetery at Franzhausen in Austria. In the Middle Bronze Age, round spiked or heart-shaped pendants might be worn hanging from a necklace or sewn on the neck of a dress. Bronze pins fastened the dresses in the front at the height of the chest; decorated spiral-ended bands were worn on the ankle; and small bronze buttons were attached to belts or skirts. Bracelets and spiral-ended finger rings were common ornaments as well.

METALLURGY

A development in metallurgical techniques and raw materials used for the production of metal objects is one of the main characteristics of the Bronze Age. Although copper had already been in use since the seventh and sixth millennia B.C. in Anatolia, bronze

(copper alloyed with tin) makes its appearance much later, in the third millennium B.C., giving its name to a whole prehistoric period. Bronze first appeared in the Near East; the largest concentration of finds appears in Mesopotamia, Iran, and Anatolia, in the early third millennium B.C.—paradoxically in areas without the necessary raw materials. It appears in the Carpathian Basin by the middle of the third millennium B.C. and by the end of the millennium it was the most commonly used metal from the Atlantic coast to Southeast Asia.

What caused such a fast adoption of the new material and the techniques of its production? Bronze is easier to work, especially to cast, than pure copper. It has a lower melting point and is less prone to subsequent fragmentation due to blistering during casting. Tin also hardens the metal, both after casting and hammering, resulting in more efficient tools and weapons. However, in the earliest phase of bronze metallurgy, bronze was rarely used to produce weapons and tools; rather, it was used for jewelry, ornaments, or vessels. This suggests the value placed on other qualities of the metal: possibly its texture and color, since the addition of tin gave copper a golden-brownish shine similar to that of gold, which was also greatly valued in prehistoric times. Furthermore, tin is a rare material with few sources in Europe, and it must have been procured separately from copper from great distances. This could have significantly contributed to its value and attraction as raw material for precious objects.

Procurement. Major sources of tin in Europe are found in Cornwall in Great Britain and in the Bohemian Erzgebirge (Ore Mountains), both of great importance in prehistoric times. Less significant deposits are in Bretagne, the French Massif Central, and northwestern Iberia. Copper sources are more numerous and had already been exploited from the Late Neolithic. One important development, however, was that, whereas in earlier times surface deposits of copper oxides had been used, in the Early Bronze Age sulphide copper ores began to be extracted from greater depths, triggering an intensification of mining activities. Central Europe probably was supplied from a number of different copper sources: the eastern Alpine area, the Harz Mountains in central Germany, the northern Carpathians in eastern Slovakia, and the eastern Carpathians in Transylvania. This latter area probably provided

most of the gold used in the Bronze Age of central Europe as well. Although direct traces of prehistoric exploitation are rare, a fairly well studied Bronze Age mining area is known in the Austrian Alps at Mitterberg, southwest of Salzburg. In order to extract the sulphide ores, large pits were created in the rock—with picks, stone hammers, and the help of fire (causing cracks in the rock)—and those pits sometimes later turned into shafts running up to 100 meters long. The separation of the ores took place outside the shafts, probably with the help of water, and the smelting of metal from the ore was usually carried out farther down the mountain slopes. Such intensity of extraction required tremendous organization, especially to facilitate the lighting, ventilation, and drainage of the shafts. The specialized communities carrying out the actual mining were dependent on others for food production and for the procurement of the huge amount of wood that was needed during cracking the rocks, extraction, supporting the shafts, and smelting the ores.

Production. The production of bronze artifacts by bronzesmiths could take place anywhere in local workshops. Based on finds of metallurgical equipment (molds, crucibles, small conical clay nozzles for bellows, stone hammers, and so forth) and the distribution of various types of objects, it seems certain that all areas had their own metalworking centers even when no raw materials were available locally. Based on typological differences, three major metalworking provinces may be discerned in the Early Bronze Age: a Danubian group in the north Alpine area; the Únětice province in central Germany, Bohemia, Moravia, and western Poland; and a Carpathian group in Slovakia with strong ties to more southerly centers within the Carpathian Basin. Early Bronze Age bronze objects include ring ingots, sheet bronze bosses (round, decorated bronze sheets with a half-spherical knob/boss in the middle), spectacle spiral pendants, spiral bracelets and finger rings, metal plaques, arm and leg spirals, simple and solid-hilted triangular daggers, flat and flanged axes, and racket-headed pins with folded tops.

In the later Early Bronze Age there was an even greater variety of metalwork. Daggers became longer and ogival in shape; flanged axes, shaft-hole axes, and halberds appeared, and a number of new

pin forms came into use, the most important of which was the pin with perforated spherical head. An important innovation was the manufacture of bronze vessels, of which so far only one is known, found in Skeldal, Denmark, but produced in the Únětice area. The Middle Bronze Age witnessed a typological unification of the area, and the introduction of new types, like longer pins with seal-shaped heads or pins with sickle-shaped twisted shafts, wide ribbed bracelets, heart-shaped pendants, small two- or four-riveted daggers with rounded or trapezoid heels, palstaves, tweezers, and, importantly, new forms of swords.

Hoard. One of the most striking phenomena of the Bronze Age is the deposition of metalwork in hoards. The hoards vary greatly from each other in terms of number of items, number of types buried, or the locations in which they were buried, among other elements. One very important aspect of hoards, however, was the burial of ingots and fragmented objects. Ingots seem to be intermediate forms well suited for transport and easy to cast, serving mainly the purpose of enabling the movement of the raw material to a smith's workshop. However, another aspect seems to be just as significant. The so-called ring ingots of the Early Bronze Age show a remarkable uniformity in their weight (usually 180–200 grams), similar to some forms of early flanged axes and, later, rib-shaped ingots. This might suggest that they played the role of standard weights and units of exchange within a pre-monetary economic system. The copper in the ingots exhibits a uniform and unusual composition that might be a result of some unique treatment that made it appropriate for such a special use. This interpretation, however, still does not explain the burial of these ingots and axes in hoards containing hundreds of identical pieces. Was such a withdrawal from circulation the result of overproduction beyond the propensity of local consumption? Or was the practice of hoarding intended as an offering for gods, in the hope of receiving a supernatural “guarantee” for the hoarded items’ value as currency in the secular sphere? Whatever their purpose, these kinds of hoards soon disappear from the archaeological record, and a similar function seems to have been transferred to bronze fragments broken to pieces of identical weight that appear in hoards from the turn of the Early to Middle Bronze Age (e.g.,

in the famous hoards of Bühl and Ackenbach) and that have a long history through the Late Bronze Age.

Gold and Silver. Although objects made of bronze abound in the material of this period, artifacts of precious metals are much scarcer. Whereas silver is extremely rare, there are a few important and well-known examples of the use of gold. The finds of “chiefly graves” with gold grave goods from Leubingen and Helmsdorf are perhaps the most famous. In other, less spectacular, graves gold hair rings are sometimes found, and occasionally hoards of gold objects are recovered as well, like that from a fortified settlement at Bernstorf in Bavaria. The most impressive products of Early Bronze Age gold metallurgy, however, are the gold beakers from Fritzdorf near Bonn and Gölenkamp near Hannover in Germany and from Eschenz in Switzerland, dated to around 1600/1500 B.C. They show some similarity to silver beakers found in Brittany and other golden beakers from France and Great Britain, thus connecting them to an Atlantic network of workshops.

AGRICULTURE

The wealthiest segment of Bronze Age society—the chiefs and their immediate retinue—had easy access to the prestigious products of the local and faraway metalworking centers, but most of the population lived under much more modest circumstances. Their most important daily concern was the production of food—the maintenance of the subsistence economy. The communities of central Europe at this time practiced mixed farming: growing crops and raising stock. The most commonly cultivated plants of the Bronze Age were those of the Neolithic as well: emmer, einkorn, and barley. Somewhat less significant were flax, peas, and lentils. Newly introduced species included spelt, millet, broad beans, and oats. There might have been an increase in barley cultivation during the Bronze Age, possibly due to its use as a raw material for making the alcoholic beverages consumed at important social occasions and rituals. Most domesticated animals—cattle, sheep, goats, pigs, and dogs—were inherited from Neolithic times as well. One major change was an increase in the exploitation of the horse—which remained fairly rare after its introduction in the Final

Neolithic—suggesting an increase in its use as a traction animal and for riding.

The Bronze Age witnessed an intensification in the agricultural practices carried down from the Neolithic, a process that began in the Final Neolithic with the introduction of a number of important innovations sometimes termed the “Secondary Products Revolution”: the exploitation of animals for secondary products (milk and other dairy products, power for traction, wool for textile production) and the introduction of plowing with wooden ards (primitive light plows). These innovations made possible a greater diversification of subsistence strategies reflected by changes in land use, occupying a wider range of locations. In many areas pastoralism and transhumance seem to have gained greater importance, with possibly larger numbers of animals kept for their primary and secondary products. This tendency seems to be even more pronounced in the Middle Bronze Age, as reflected by a much more dispersed settlement pattern.

RITUAL AND RELIGION

Although the reconstruction of agricultural practices can be carried out fairly straightforwardly based on plant and animal remains, the observation and interpretation of prehistoric rituals and religious life is a much more difficult task. Without written documents archaeologists can only rely on the recognition of special contexts in which some of the material remains occur, and from this they must try to reconstruct complex systems of beliefs that influenced most spheres of life.

The multilayered settlement mounds of Slovakia and the central and eastern part of the Carpathian Basin provide an interesting case to point out for description. These tells were built up during hundreds of years through the cyclical burning of houses and their rebuilding at the same location, on top of the ruins of their predecessors. This cyclical, constantly recurring practice is best explained as a conscious action, the deliberate destruction of living place, most probably connected to the life cycles of their owners. The rebuilding of the same structures in the same places can be viewed as connected to the worship of ancestors and ancestral places. Although destruction implies discontinuity, the rebuilding reinforces continuity and legitimation through a connection with the past and the ancestors. Special

places having some significance in local mythologies were probably also singled out for settlement and continuous (re)occupation.

These settlements were the location of many special depositions, in pits or wells. At Gánovce in central Slovakia, for example, a deep well apparently containing ritual depositions was found in the middle of a settlement. The fill contained a large amount of pottery, plant and animal remains, burned ashes, human bones, birch bark cups, and one of the earliest iron objects in Europe: a sickle blade. Other settlements contain similar depositions of pottery and of bronze and gold objects in pits among houses or under the house floors. Some of these hoards contain only pottery—usually sets of intact drinking cups, which makes clear that the hoards were not simply rubbish pits. The cups seem to be the remains of feasts and rituals connected to various social occasions, like rites of passage, and suggest the consumption of alcoholic beverages on such events, after which the vessels used were buried.

Indeed, one of the most important, archaeologically visible, prehistoric ritual activities was the deposition of hoards of copper, bronze, and gold objects. Although previous generations of archaeologists tended to interpret these as personal or communal property buried in times of danger and never subsequently retrieved, an interpretation that views the hoarding as an element of ritual is becoming more and more accepted. Many of the hoards were buried in special, isolated locations in the landscape: in rivers, lakes, or fens; under large rocks; in caves; in mountain passes; on top of hills or mountains. Sometimes the contents and the mode of deposition of the hoards point at their ritual nature as well. Objects were deposited in waters or fens from where they could never be retrieved. The arrangement of the buried objects sometimes shows a great degree of care, which contradicts the interpretation that the items were hastily hidden valuables. In other cases the objects were deliberately damaged or fragmented, seemingly in order to avoid further profane use. The deposition of such votive assemblages now appears to represent a gift exchange between humans and supernatural forces through which people hoped to establish reciprocal obligations and influence the gods. At some of these sacred places the burial of hoards continued through

hundreds of years; such places later became sanctuaries dedicated to gods. For example, around Melz in northern Germany a large concentration of Early Bronze Age hoards was observed. At Dresden-Dobritz four metal hoards, one pottery deposition, and a hoard of metal vessels were found within a small area, on a strip of land 200–300 meters long and 80 meters wide along the river Elbe. At Berlin-Spandau remains of a post-built structure, a sort of pier leading into the water, were recovered. A selected group of objects had been deposited here in the Early and Middle Bronze Ages, probably not at the same time, but over a long period. All the artifacts were weapons, and some of them arrived here from longer distances. Two swords came from northern Germany or Scandinavia, a solid-hilted dagger came from Denmark, and another sword came from eastern France. This and similar sites show that these sacred locations had interregional significance, similar to the famous sanctuaries of classical Greece.

A unique and highly significant find from the Bronze Age fortified settlement of Mittelberg near Nebra in central Germany shows again that such settlements were indeed ritual centers as well. Beside a hoard of bronze objects (two swords, two flanged axes, a chisel, and fragments of arm spirals) dated to around 1600 B.C., a bronze disk with gold inlays was recovered in a stone cist (fig. 1). The inlays represent the sun, the crescent moon, and the starry sky, with the Pleiades constellation of seven stars clearly recognizable. Two gold bands on the rim present the horizon while a third band between them seems to be a representation of a ship—an object that will gain significant ritual connotation in the later history of the Bronze Age—traveling across the nocturnal celestial ocean. Although a full study of this new find has not been published yet, it will most certainly enrich our understanding of prehistoric astronomy, mythology, and cosmology.

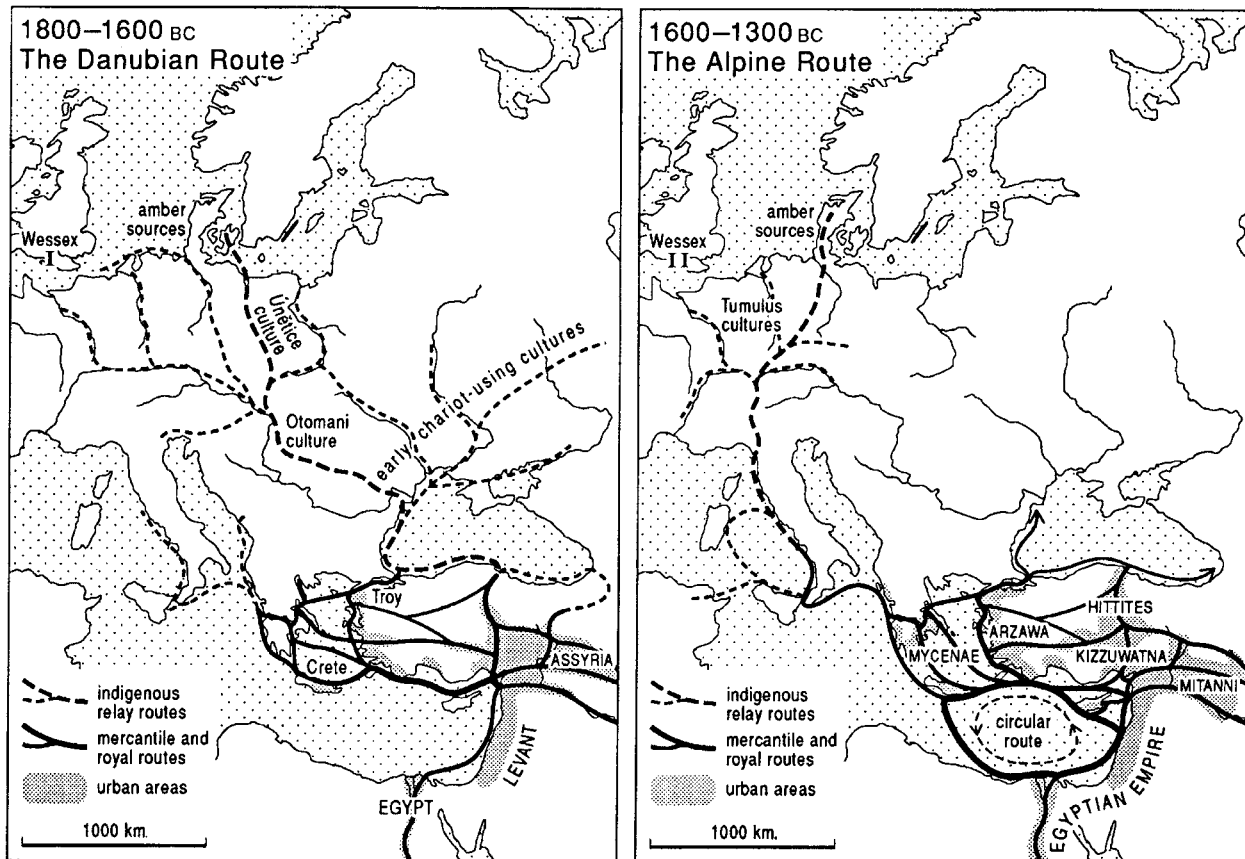
EXCHANGE NETWORKS

Trade and exchange were important factors in the social and economic development of any given area, triggering important changes and contributing to the increase of social complexity. In addition to the flow of raw materials and finished objects, exchange networks also provided a framework for the flow of information through which important inventions,

innovations and new technologies spread throughout Europe. These networks can be mapped by identifying the distribution of rare materials (e.g., amber, tin, copper, and gold) or the appearance of objects outside their densest distribution area where they were most probably manufactured.

The most important and widely exchanged raw materials of the Bronze Age were, obviously, tin and copper, used to manufacture bronze objects. Although the sole source of tin in central Europe is the Erzgebirge (Ore Mountains) in Bohemia, copper is more widely found, as described above. Amber is found on the shores of the Baltic Sea and western Jutland in Denmark. Other traded raw materials must have included gold, probably from Transylvanian sources, and salt from seashores and surface deposits, for example in the area around Halle on the Saale River in central Germany. Exchanged finished products include bronze objects, sometimes pottery, and also archaeologically invisible, or almost untraceable, items like textiles, furs, and possibly foodstuffs.

Although traffic in these commodities wove a web of connections throughout central Europe on the basis of already existing trade patterns, by the Bronze Age central Europe also had become part of a much larger exchange network that is sometimes



Principal trade routes of the Early (left) and Middle (right) Bronze Ages. MAPS BY ANDREW SHERRATT. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

labeled a “prehistoric world-system.” Although temperate Europe played only the role of a “margin” in the system of the Near Eastern “core area” and an important “periphery” in Anatolia, these links were a significant factor in the development of social and economic complexity.

It seems that emerging urban centers in Anatolia established connections with European communities around the mouth of the Danube and beyond. During the Early Bronze Age (c. 2300–1600 B.C.), the Danube became an important axis of exchange along which objects and information about new technologies were exchanged. Ring ingots and so-called Cypriot wound-wire pins reached Troy (in northwest Asia Minor), Egypt, and Byblos (modern Jubayl, Lebanon) on the Levantine coast. Transylvanian gold might have traveled to Anatolia. The systematic use of copper alloys might have been begun as a result of Anatolian contacts: indeed, a non-European source for the tin of the earliest European bronze artifacts, produced before the exploi-

tation of Bohemian tin started, cannot be excluded. A few exotic items—like a slotted dagger of Anatolian or Aegean origin found together with amber beads, wound-wire pins, and an ingot ring at Kyhna in Saxony—made their ways into the center of the Continent. These stimulated already existing local exchange cycles and triggered a demand for prestige items obtained through long-distance connections.

In the later Early Bronze Age another innovation reached the Carpathian Basin and central Europe via this route: the two-wheeled “chariot.” Although constructions probably remained simple, these were still elite items and remained so for a long time, as rich wagon burials of the Late Bronze Age and Early Iron Age show. Decorated antler cheekpieces for bridle bits found in Slovakian and Moravian fortified sites also attest their connection to the local elites. These fortified sites along the tributaries of the Danube were located on the most important trade routes to the north: the source of amber. Prestigious bronze objects such as decorated

shaft-hole axes and solid-hilted swords produced in the Carpathian Basin or a small bronze vessel manufactured in the Únětice area reached Denmark via this network (fig. 2, left). Central Europe also had important connections with the Atlantic area, as shown by the appearance of so-called Armorico-British-type daggers in the cemetery of Singen in southwestern Germany or two amber beads from Switzerland: one with gold casing found at Zurich-Mozartstrasse and a star-shaped one from Arbon-Bleiche, both probably manufactured in the Wessex area in Great Britain.

In the Middle Bronze Age this axis of trade shifted. The Danube became less important, routes to northern Europe realigned along a north-south axis via Germany, and the passes through the Alps from central Europe to Italy gained significance. Through this route European communities came into indirect contact with Mycenaean communities establishing connections with the Tyrrhenian coast in western Italy. Baltic amber reached Mycenae and was found in the famous Shaft Graves. Since at this time no other amber finds are known to Greece, this seems to be an instance of directional trade with only few intermediaries (fig. 2, right). At Bernstorff (Bavaria, southern Germany), in a Middle Bronze Age fortified hilltop settlement dated to about 1600–1400 B.C., a number of amber beads were found (together with the hoard of gold objects mentioned above), two of which deserve special attention. One of them had a face of a man carved on one side with a few incised signs on the other side. The other one had four incised signs on it, three of which have been identified as Linear B signs—the writing of the Late Bronze Age Mycenaean kingdoms of Greece—whereas the fourth probably represents a ship. It seems that the raw material—amber—reached the Aegean world from the Baltic area where it was written on using the local writing system. Later on it returned to central Europe and was deposited at a local fortified center.

SOCIETY AND COMMUNITY

In the early third millennium B.C. a new concern with prestige and social stratification, and the representation of these through the deposition of copper objects, is observable in the archaeological record. In the first phase of the Early Bronze Age (c. 2300–2000 B.C.), this tendency continues, although with

regional differences: in Bohemia and central Germany, only a narrow range of variation in grave goods is observable, whereas in the Danube Valley an increase in the differentiation of grave goods—suggesting slightly greater social differentiation—is apparent from the beginning of the Bronze Age. This incipient social ranking seems based on an increasing intensification of the subsistence economy, since greater social stratification seems to emerge in fertile and agriculturally very productive regions not too far away from metal sources. Later on, however, with the increase of bronze production, metal artifacts do not simply reflect social status. It seems that access to, and control of, metal sources and prestige items circulating in exchange networks became necessary sources of political and economic control.

In the later phase of the Early Bronze Age (c. 2000–1600 B.C.), the different nature of economic and political power and a greater social differentiation is also reflected by the emergence of two-level settlement hierarchies in certain regions, where one or two fortified sites surrounded by a number of smaller, undefended settlements dominated and controlled smaller areas, usually along river valleys. These settlements were probably the residences of local chiefs and their immediate retinue and served as nodal points in exchange networks and as centers of economic production. Various regions, however, reacted in various ways to the intensification of bronze production. In the northern periphery, in central Germany and Poland, the chiefly burial mounds and their rich grave goods are probably witnesses of the emergence of the monopolistic position of local elites in terms of access to metal and prestige-goods exchange. Such a monopoly of the elite could not develop in areas closer to metal sources with more dense exchange networks. In those areas a much more competitive situation emerged, leading to warfare and the construction of fortifications around local centers. This was accompanied by the crystallization of a male warrior ethos, expressed in the much more elaborate and richly decorated weaponry of the elite, deposited in large numbers in graves and hoards.

The Middle Bronze Age (c. 1600–1350 B.C.) saw again a transformation of these structures. It has been argued that the changes in material cultural distributions during this period, showing a much greater uniformity throughout the whole of central

Europe, are characteristic of more expansive communities with an economy placing greater emphasis on stock raising and mobility. The warrior ideology seems to have spread to the west and was adapted to a more decentralized social and political environment, as monumental burial mounds furnished with weaponry and other symbols of wealth show. Similarities not just in material culture in general, but also in the combination of weapons and status symbols over large areas, indicate the existence of a warrior elite without centralized leadership. These communities probably formed loose alliances strengthened by the exogamous marriage practices of their leaders. This phenomenon is easily reconstructable on the basis of the appearance of foreign female ornament sets in various areas. These connections delineate a north-south axis of connections and movement of women that coincides with the main axis of trade relations. This may be related to new strategies of transmitting properties as well. Exogamous marriage is usually a characteristic of decentralized, expansionist societies and is accompanied by the paying of bride wealth mostly consisting of movable wealth (instead of land). Thus, in this period marriage patterns were more open, enabling the formation of alliances between smaller chiefdoms and establishing long-distance exchange networks.

Similar changes are observable during the later prehistoric development of European societies as well. The processes of centralization (with an emphasis on access to land and characterized by fortified centers) and decentralization (with greater mobility and dispersed settlements) return almost cyclically, leading finally to the emergence of archaic states just before the expansion of the Roman Empire, which substantially transformed the social and economic landscape of the Continent.

See also **Milk, Wool, and Traction: Secondary Animal Products** (vol. 1, part 4); **Late Neolithic/Copper Age Central Europe** (vol. 1, part 4); **Bell Beakers from West to East** (vol. 1, part 4); **The Significance of Bronze** (vol. 2, part 5); **Spišský Štvrtok** (vol. 2, part 5); **Late Bronze Age Urnfields of Central Europe** (vol. 2, part 5).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Coles, J. M., and A. F. Harding. *The Bronze Age in Europe: An Introduction to the Prehistory of Europe c. 2000–700 B.C.* London: Methuen, 1979.

Harding, A. F. “The Bronze Age.” In *European Prehistory. A Survey*. Edited by Sarunas Milisauskas, pp. 271–334. New York: Kluwer Academic/Plenum, 2002.

———. *European Societies in the Bronze Age*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 2000.

Kadrow, Slawomir. “Social Structures and Social Evolution among Early-Bronze-Age Communities in South-Eastern Poland.” *Journal of European Archaeology* 2, no. 2 (1994): 229–248.

Kristiansen, Kristian. *Europe before History*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1998.

———. “The Emergence of the European World System in the Bronze Age: Divergence, Convergence, and Social Evolution during the First and Second Millennium B.C. in Europe.” In *Europe in the First Millennium B.C.* Edited by Kristian Kristiansen and Jorgen Jensen, pp. 7–30. Sheffield Archaeological Monographs 6. Sheffield, U.K.: Collis, 1994.

Pare, Chris, ed. *Metals Make the World Go Round: The Supply and Circulation of Metals in Bronze Age Europe*. Oxford: Oxbow, 2000.

Primas, Margarita. “Bronze Age Economy and Ideology: Central Europe in Focus.” *Journal of European Archaeology* 5, no. 1 (1997): 115–130.

Shennan, Stephen J. “Settlement and Social Change in Central Europe, 3500–1500 B.C.” *Journal of World Prehistory* 7, no. 2 (1993): 121–161.

———. “Central Europe in the Third Millennium B.C.: An Evolutionary Trajectory for the Beginning of the European Bronze Age.” *Journal of Anthropological Archaeology* 5 (1986): 115–146.

Sherratt, A. G. “The Emergence of Élites: Earlier Bronze Age Europe, 2500–1300 B.C.” In *Prehistoric Europe: An Illustrated History*. Edited by Barry Cunliffe, pp. 244–276. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1998.

———. “What Would a Bronze-Age World System Look Like? Relations between Temperate Europe and the Mediterranean in Later Prehistory.” *Journal of European Archaeology* 1, no. 2 (1993): 1–57.

Sørensen, M. L. S. “Reading Dress: The Construction of Social Categories and Identities in Bronze Age Europe.” *Journal of European Archaeology* 5, no. 1 (1997): 93–114.

Treherne, Paul. “The Warrior’s Beauty: The Masculine Body and Self-Identity in Bronze-Age Europe.” *Journal of European Archaeology* 3, no. 1 (1995): 105–144.

VAJK SZEVERÉNYI

SPIŠSKÝ ŠTVRTOK

The fortified hilltop settlement of Spišský Štvrtok is one of the most significant sites of the earlier prehistory of central Europe. It dates to the transitional period between the Early and the Middle Bronze Age with a cultural affiliation to the Otomani-Füzesabony culture, c. 1700–1500 B.C. The village of Spišský Štvrtok (located in an area called Spišská Nová Ves, which is also a town) is situated on an oblong hill adjacent to a valley in the undulated country of eastern Slovakia at Myšia Hôrka in the Carpathian Basin. The hill rises very steeply on the western side and more gradually on the east, in modern times with a growth of forest. The fortification on the summit, about 625 meters above sea level, comprises about 6,600 square meters with thirty-nine houses and a cult place in addition to a complex system of ramparts, bastions, and ditches. There are two occupation phases: the end phase of the Early Bronze Age and the first phase of the Middle Bronze Age.

The site became known to the scientific community in the 1930s due to still-visible walls and several spectacular surface finds. It was systematically excavated in 1968–1974 under the direction of Dr. J. Vladar from the Archaeological Institute of the Slovakian Academy of Science in Nitra. The site is wholly examined and is in an excellent state of preservation. Vladar has described the excavation results in several small reports while the final report still awaits.

A stone wall encircles the entire settlement except at the gate, which is located at the eastern, more accessible, side. Here the fortification is reinforced with two additional walls and with a broad stone-lined ditch, which may have been water-filled. The intervals between the walls were filled in with gravel probably derived from digging the broad ditch. The latter runs north to south, uninterrupted, along the outer side of the rampart and a wooden bridge presumably existed at the gate.

The walls are built of thin stone slabs, which were brought in from the neighborhood at a distance of 2–3 kilometers. At the base, the rampart had a total width of 7.5 meters. The height is estimated at about 4 meters. Possibly a wooden palisade was erected on the top as a further reinforce-

ment. The entrance to the settlement is flanked by two circular bastions of nearly 6 meters across—probably watchtowers. The gate itself widens considerably toward the outside, probably to make room for a defensive unit of warriors in case the settlement was attacked.

Only a minor part of the area encircled by the fortification was built up. The settlement consisted of stone houses, the foundations of which had been preserved, and streets divided the occupied space. According to the excavator the settlement had a clear bipartite division suggesting the existence of an elite and a broader stratum occupied with crafts. Finds from the craftsmen's quarter indicated the manufacture of a whole series of different products in cloth, stone, pottery, bone, antler, gold, and bronze. Houses inhabited by the privileged part of the population were of a much better quality, were situated in the best-protected part of the stronghold, and contained various treasures. Valuables of weapons and ornaments in bronze and gold had been deposited in chests below the floors. These finer houses were organized in a U shape around a slab-plastered "town square."

Spišský Štvrtok is merely one of several contemporary sites with fortifications known from southeast Slovakia, notably Bárca, Nižná Myšľa, Streda nad Bodrogom, and Gánovce. Similar sites belonging to the Otomani-Füzesabony culture—and broadly dating to the span 1700–1500 B.C.—exist in adjoining regions of Hungary and Romania. Some settlements were fortified and situated on hilltops, such as the strongholds of Otomani and Sălacea in Romania and several of the Slovakian sites. Fortified sites may be situated also in the swampy areas between rivers. Moreover, there are so-called tell settlements with ring walls, such as Tószeg-Laposhalom at the river Tisza on the Hungarian Plain and the nearby tells of Gyulavarsánd and Socodor just across the border in Romania. Large open settlements are also known, apparently without fortifications, but situated in naturally defensible locations.

Fortified settlements also occur in related cultural groupings in nearby southwest Slovakia (Nitriansky Hradok, Mad'arovec, Malé Kosihy, Veselé), Moravia (Blučina, Hradisko, Věteřov), and lower Austria (Böheimkirchen). The phenomenon apparently has a wide geographical distribution over

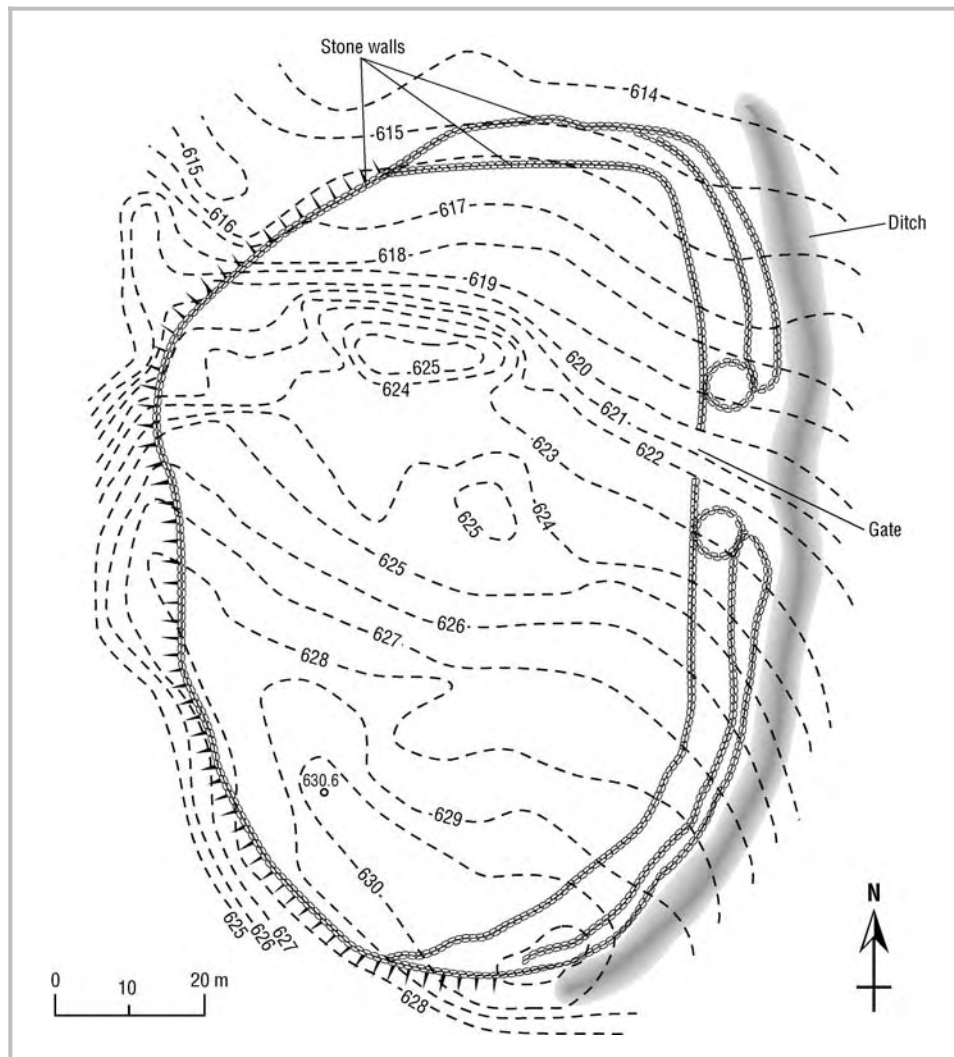


Fig. 1. Plan of the ramparts of the fortified hilltop settlement at Spišský Štvrtok in present-day Slovakia. ADAPTED FROM VLADAR 1975.

eastern central Europe and the Balkans especially in the period c. 1700–1500 B.C.

Some of the principal paraphernalia of the Bronze Age have roots in the complex cultural mosaic of the Carpathian Basin at the threshold to the Middle Bronze Age. The hillforts were mediators of inventions that passed through this region on their way to central and northern Europe from Eurasia and the Aegean. The spearhead, the sword, the four-spoked wheel, the chariot, and horse management are among these innovations. The first swords appeared in the Carpathian Basin in eastern Hungary and Romania around 1600 B.C.—only one hundred years after the appearance of the bronze spearhead in roughly the same region. Such quality

metalwork was in high demand all over central and northern Europe at this time. Exotica such as amber beads were traded in from the north and people of the Otomani-Füzesabony culture made contacts with stratified palace-based societies in early Mycenaean Greece.

Excavations suggest that all these sites should indeed be interpreted as protected centers of crafts and trade. They were probably also residences of local elites, who identified more closely with neighboring elites than with nonelite groupings in their local area. This identification involved more than peaceful communication through networks of alliance and exchange. The frequency of fortified sites, the occurrence of mass graves, the energy invested

in ramparts and earthen works, the emphasis on horse culture and bronze weaponry—the entire cultural picture provided by the excavations indicates ongoing rivalries and hostilities between elite groups, probably about the control of valuables, their production, and distribution. Ritual depositions of weapons and ornament at the sites, or near them, probably also connect to the waging of wars. Hoards have been found for instance at Hajdúsámson, Apa, Bárca, Věteřov, Böheimkirschen, and Mad'arovce. The central position of these fortified sites, surrounded by satellite villages and hamlets, bears witness to increased inequality and hierarchy: in other words, to an extremely hot social climate. Finally, around 1600–1500 B.C., this volatile social climate gave rise to the emergence of the Tumulus culture, which brought new forms of social conduct, ideology, and personal appearance among the elite. The rapid spread of Tumulus material and immaterial culture across temperate Europe should probably be seen in light of this strategic background of exchange, alliance, and warfare in the Carpathian Basin and around the Middle Danubian region.

See also The Early and Middle Bronze Ages in Central Europe (vol. 2, part 5).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Bader, T. “Bemerkungen zur Bronzezeit im Karpatenbecken, Otomani/Füzesabony-Komplex.” *Jahresschrift für Mitteldeutsche Vorgeschichte* 80 (1998): 43–108.
- Jockenhövel, Albrecht. “Bronzezeitliche Burgenbau in Mitteleuropa. Untersuchungen zur Struktur frühmetallzeitlicher Gesellschaften.” In *Orientalisch-Ägäische Einflüsse in der europäischen Bronzezeit*, pp 209–228. Monograph 15. Mainz, Germany: Römisch-Germanischen Zentralmuseums, 1990.
- Neugebauer, J.-W.. “Die Stellung der Veterovkultur bzw. ihrer Böheimkirchner Gruppe am Übergang von der frühen zur mittleren Bronzezeit Niederösterreichs.” *Archäologisches Korrespondenzblatt* 9 (1979): 35–52.
- Shennan, S. E. “From Minimal to Moderate Ranking.” In *Ranking, Resource, and Exchange: Aspects of the Archaeology of Early European Study*. Edited by Colin Renfrew and Stephen J. Shennan, pp. 27–32. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1982.
- Sherratt, Andrew. “What Would a Bronze Age World System Look Like? Relations between Temperate Europe and the Mediterranean in Later Prehistory.” *Journal of European Archaeology* 1, no. 2 (1993): 1–58.
- Tihelka, Karel. “Der Veterover (Witterschauer) Typus in Mähren.” In *Kommission für das Äneolithikum und die ältere Bronzezeit, Nitra 1958*, pp. 77–109. Bratislava, Slovakia: Slovakian Academy of Science, 1961.
- Vladar, J. “Spišský Štvrtok. Befestigte Siedlung der Otomani-kultur.” In *III. Internaler Kongress für slawische Archäologie Bratislava 7.–14. September 1975*, pp. 2–24. Nitra, Slovakia: Slovakian Academy of Science, 1975.

HELLE VANDKILDE



THE ITALIAN BRONZE AGE

FOLLOWED BY FEATURE ESSAY ON:

Poggiomarino 42

Italy lies between the east and west Mediterranean, but it also represents the point of contact between the Mediterranean world and Europe north of the Alps, a point of contact especially important during the Bronze Age. The easy passes across the mountains north from the Po plain make the northern Adriatic basin a key area for understanding European prehistory, and indeed the key site of Frattesina is to be understood in this context. The themes that dominate the Italian Bronze Age are the wetland sites of the north—both lake villages and *terremare* settlements—and the pastoral economy which adapted so effectively to the mountainous peninsula. The Bronze Age saw two cycles of development: the first comes to an end at about 1200 B.C. and the second lays the foundation for Iron Age urbanism and social complexity. Connections between the Italian Bronze Age and the Aegean World will also be discussed here.

The Italian Bronze Age has traditionally been dated by reference to central European metalwork and to eastern Mediterranean imports. The growing availability of radiocarbon dates (although these are still quite rare) and, more importantly, dendrochronological dating of Alpine wetland sites, both in Italy and farther north, has meant that a more accurate dating scheme is being worked out. The dating of the end of the Bronze Age is still quite con-

troversial, with most scholars arguing for a point between 1000 and 900 B.C. The Italian Bronze Age is conventionally divided into four segments: the Early Bronze Age (2300–1700 B.C.), the Middle Bronze Age (1700–1350 B.C.), the Recent Bronze Age (1350–1150 B.C.), and the Final Bronze Age (1150–950 B.C.). Italian scholars generally describe the Recent and Final Bronze Ages as the “Late” Bronze Age, a matter of confusion for English speakers, who would normally refer to the Recent Bronze Age as the Late Bronze Age. The Italian convention will be used here, as it aids understanding of the literature.

For the purposes of discussion, Italy is divided into three regions: (1) the north, roughly the Po Valley and the Alpine valleys, but including Liguria in the west; (2) the center; and (3) the south, Sicily and the smaller islands. For much of its history, northern Italy has been culturally closer to central Europe than to the Mediterranean world.

EARLY BRONZE AGE

The Early Bronze Age begins at about 2300 B.C. and marks the start of a new cultural cycle in northern Italy, which continues with few substantial changes until the end of the Recent Bronze Age. The Early Bronze Age is characterized by the Polada culture, which has roots in the preceding Bell

Beaker phenomenon and shows strong links to central Europe. Polada settlements seem to be preferentially in wetland locations, both in the morainic hills along the Alpine margin (where Cavriana is located) and around the larger lakes, but also in the plain to the north of the Po River (where Lagazzi del Vhò and Canàr are found). The choice of wetland locations—which were common in northern Italy during the Early, Middle, and Recent Bronze Ages—is difficult to explain, but they seem to be a cultural constant. Little is known of settlement in the plain to the south of the Po, though this area was inhabited in the Copper Age and densely settled in the Middle and Recent Bronze Ages. Interestingly, evidence of metal hoards has been found in this area. Burial evidence, however, is almost completely absent in the Early Bronze Age of northern Italy, though the presence of human skulls at some sites (such as Barche di Solferino) suggests alternative methods of disposing of the dead, perhaps by exposure.

Metalworking seems to have taken place in settlements, as indicated at Ledro, Rivoli, and Monte Covolo. The hoards, which seem to have been deposited away from settlements, often consist of assemblages of a single artifact. For example, the Savignano hoard consists of ninety-six flanged axes. The Pieve Albignola hoard, from the western plain to the north of the Po, comprised thirty-seven axes, both finished and unfinished, some from the same mold. Such hoards are usually interpreted as traders' hoards. Prestige artifacts, in amber and faience, are found in settlements, but there is little evidence for overt social ranking.

In central Italy, the eastern seaboard is characterized by the Ripatransone culture, whereas to the west, the Rinaldone culture continues from the Copper Age into the early phases of the Early Bronze Age, to be followed by the Montemerano-Scoglietto-Palidoro culture. The economy seems to show a growing reliance on pastoralism, with the presence of grazing camps both on the coastal plain and the uplands. Settlements include defended sites, like Crostoletto di Lamone and Luni sul Mignone, as well as caves, valley-bottom sites, and wetland sites, such as Ortucchio in the Fucino Basin. Social differentiation is indicated by the Tomba della Vedova (Tomb of the Widow), at Ponte San Pietro, where the warrior chief is accompanied by

his sacrificed bride with a dog guarding the entrance to the grave. A dagger and halberd are used to signal burials at Montemerano II, at Teramo, and at Popoli. Cave cults continue from the preceding Copper Age, as at Cetona, a cave with a *stillicide* (continuous) water drip, where seeds were offered in pots.

In southern Italy, the Early Bronze Age Laterza culture of the early part of the period is succeeded by the Palma Campania culture. The Proto-Apenne phase sees the appearance of sites, such as Toppo Daguzzo and La Starza, that may be central places. Tufariello, near Buccino, and Coppa Nevigata have defensive, stone-built walls. Bronze artifacts are rare, except in grave assemblages, and rich tombs are infrequent—an example is the warrior burial at Parco dei Monaci, Matera, accompanied by a flanged axe and two daggers. Olive and vine cultivation, as seen in Proto-Apenne levels at Tufariello as well as at La Maculufa in Sicily, indicate agricultural intensification—the cultivation of fruit trees requires high levels of labor input.

In Sicily, Castelluccio culture sites indicate the spread of settlement in central and southeastern areas—the upland locations of many sites suggesting a pastoral economy based on the raising of sheep. The multiple-burial ritual makes the recognition of social hierarchy difficult, but stone-walled fortified sites, such as Branco Grande and Timpa Dieri, at Melilli, are known on the coast. In contrast, Manfria in western Sicily is an undefended village with oval huts.

The situation in the Lipari Islands (also known as the Aeolian Islands), which lie between Sicily and Italy, seems to indicate growing insecurity, and the low-lying sites of the early Capo Graziano phase, such as Casa Lopez and Filo Braccio in Filicudi or Contrada di Diana on the island of Lipari, give way to later defensive sites, such as La Montagnola on Filicudi or the acropolis on Lipari. The material culture of the islands shows parallels with Tarxien material on Malta.

MIDDLE BRONZE AGE

The Middle Bronze Age begins at about 1700 B.C. Its inception is traditionally fixed as marked by the appearance of Aegean pottery in peninsular Italy, but it corresponds to clear historical phenomena.

In the central Po Plain, many settlements, such as Lagazzi del Vhò, are abandoned at the beginning of the Middle Bronze Age and others, such as Castellaro del Vhò immediately to the north, are founded. The period sees large numbers of settlements established in the central area both to the north and to the south of the Po. The banked and ditched settlements of the plain are generally referred to as *terremare*. It is clear from the material culture and the choice of wetland locations that the *terremare* are closely related to the circum-Alpine lake villages (*palafitte*) to the north, even though the Swedish archaeologist Gösta Säflund argued against this relationship in 1939. In the western Po Valley, there seems to be less attraction to water, although there are wetland sites, such as Mercurago. In the east, the fortified hilltop sites, known as *castellieri*, of the Venezia-Giulia Karst show clear connections with developments farther east.

It has been argued that the wetland societies of the central Po Plain, the Alpine *palafitte*, and the *terremare* of the plain show evidence of contact with the Danubian-Carpathian region. Artifacts underlying this theory include antler horse bits and sword burials (as at Povegliano). What is certain is that the *terremare* of Emilia show a dramatic increase in settlement density, reaching levels of up to 1 site per 25 square kilometers. Nineteenth-century reports of urban planning were widely disregarded as fantasy, but evidence from modern excavations at the Santa Rosa di Poviglio *terremare* and from the Alpine lake village at Fiaivè has confirmed these assertions. The complex drainage works and the pile-built dwellings indicate that this society must have been highly organized. However, little evidence exists for overt social ranking. Simple and undifferentiated cremation burial begins in the Late Middle Bronze Age *terremare*, and the sword burials that appear in the Veneto Plain to the north may be indicative of male warrior status rather than social ranking. Metal production seems to have been settlement based, as demonstrated at Castellaro del Vhò.

In central and southern peninsular Italy, the Middle Bronze Age is conventionally referred to as the Apennine Bronze Age. This period sees the establishment of a settlement pattern based on the exploitation of both lowland and upland areas. In 1959, Salvatore M. Puglisi proposed a model, based

on ethnographic analogy, of transhumant pastoralists using lowland pasture in winter and upland pasture (often snow-covered in the winter) during the summer. This was criticized in 1967 by Carl Eric Östenberg, who, on the basis of his excavation results from Luni sul Mignone, argued that sedentary agricultural communities existed during this period. Most scholars now accept the integrated economic system proposed by Graeme Barker in 1981. This model maintains that some groups or communities moved into the Apennine uplands during the summer months to exploit the grazing, while others remained at their permanent cereal-dependent settlements in the lowlands. Indeed, the evidence of sheep, goats, pigs, and cattle at most lowland sites suggests a mixed form of animal husbandry. Whatever its exact form, transhumant pastoralism allowed the carrying capacity of sites to be raised by moving flocks for part of the year and thus represented a form of economic intensification. The close cultural connections of the material culture of the peninsula, albeit with local aspects, argue for the importance of this mobility in establishing social relations between groups. Metalwork seems to have had a relatively limited distribution in central Italy, and this picture of low-level trade is reflected in the lack of Aegean material in this part of Italy. Likewise, there is little evidence for social hierarchy, although two rock-cut longhouses with hearths were found at Luni sul Mignone.

Three monumental tombs at Toppo Daguzzo show the emergence of elite groups. In Tomb 3 there were two levels of inhumations—an upper level of about ten disarticulated skeletons without grave goods and a lower level that consisted of eleven burials, six males accompanied by bronze weapons, four females (three with precious beads), and a child.

The site of Thapsos is situated on an islet linked by an isthmus to the mainland just north of Syracuse in eastern Sicily. There, in the early part of the Middle Bronze Age, circular and sub-circular huts were built, their roofs supported by a central post. The second phase at the site, which extends into the Recent Bronze Age, is claimed to be semi-urban and to be of eastern inspiration. There are rectangular buildings arranged around paved courtyards and streets, and the settlement seems to have been defended by stone walls. The regular planning seems

to indicate some degree of political control, and Sebastiano Tusa has drawn attention to its formal similarities with Gla in Boeotia. Like the settlement on the islet of Ognina, south of Syracuse, which dates to the same period, Thapsos was probably sited for maritime trade. This seems to be confirmed by the fact that most Middle Bronze Age settlements in eastern Sicily are close to the coast.

The Middle Bronze Age type site on the Lipari Islands is Punta Milazzese on the island of Lipari. Situated on a rocky headland, it consists of about fifty drystone huts. This site and the settlements at Portella on Salina and the acropolis at Lipari, both defensively located, met with violent destruction at the end of the period. Casting molds on Lipari and Salina indicate a local metalworking industry.

RECENT BRONZE AGE

In northern Italy, the Recent Bronze Age (c. 1350–1150 B.C.) saw substantial continuity from the preceding period. In the west, the cremation cemeteries of the Middle Bronze Age Scamozzina-Monza group are succeeded by the Canegrate group, which show strong Transalpine affinities. Their relatively dense settlement pattern, which seem to be based on dryland villages, are in some cases relatively large. One of these is Boffolara at Garlasco, which measures 5 hectares. Although dry locations were preferred for settlements, river depositions of metalwork, in the Adda in the west and in the Livenza in the east, suggest a ritual focus on water. It is interesting, however, that this practice did not seem to occur in the central area, which is characterized by wetland settlement.

While in the early part of the Middle Bronze Age the *terremare* of the central Po Plain were usually no larger than 2 hectares, in the Recent Bronze Age some *terremare* were abandoned and others became quite large. Santa Rosa di Poviglio goes from 1 hectare to 7 hectares, Fondo Paviani is 16 hectares, and Case del Lago is 22.5 hectares. This apparent settlement hierarchy is not supported by evidence from *terremare* cremation cemeteries, though the presence in some sites of inner fortified “keeps” may identify the residence of elite groups. On the other hand, they may be nothing but community refuges. The *palafitte-terremare* system collapsed dramatically at around 1200 B.C., with a rapid depopulation of the central Po Plain. Al-

though there is no satisfying explanation for this catastrophic event, its chronological contemporaneity with the collapse of the palace societies of the eastern Mediterranean may suggest some sort of connection between the two areas. Although direct evidence of contact is rare, it is interesting that stone weights identified in the *terremare* show the use of eastern Mediterranean measures.

The Recent Bronze Age of central Italy, a period sometimes referred to as the Sub-Apennine, sees the relocation of sites to defended locations. The suspicion that this may be at the behest of emerging elites is confirmed by larger than average huts at, for example, Narce. The settlement at Luni sul Mignone expands dramatically, and a clear settlement hierarchy appears in Latium and Tuscany. The increase of settlement in the Monti della Tolfa may be linked to the presence of copper resources, while wetland and cave sites are abandoned. Metalwork depositions in rivers and lakes and also in caves, as at Cetona, indicate a ritual focus on such locations. Separate groups of tombs in cemeteries at Crostolletto di Lamone and Castelfranco Lamoncello, in the Fiora Valley, indicate the importance of group (perhaps family) identity.

In southern Italy there are a number of fortified coastal settlements at ports, such as Porto Perone, Coppa Nevigata, and Scoglio del Tonno, along the Apulian coast (see fig. 1). These sites seem to have participated in trade with the eastern Mediterranean and show evidence of craft specialization. In the interior, Sub-Apennine sites are often found in locations that provide good natural defenses. Some of these are sites, like Toppo Daguzzo or La Starza, that show continuity from previous periods, while others, such as Timmari and Botromagno, are new sites. However, the inland sites did not seem to participate in the maritime trade or the developments seen on the coast. Vivara, an island site in the Gulf of Naples, also shows important links with the Aegean.

The earliest Late Helladic pottery found at the site of Broglio di Trebisacce in the plain of Sybaris, excavated by Renato Peroni, dates to the end of the Middle Bronze Age. The Recent Bronze Age saw the production of Aegean-type storage jars (*dolia*). These jars and the introduction of olive cultivation suggest the presence of a redistributive economy or at least a centralized storage economy. The central

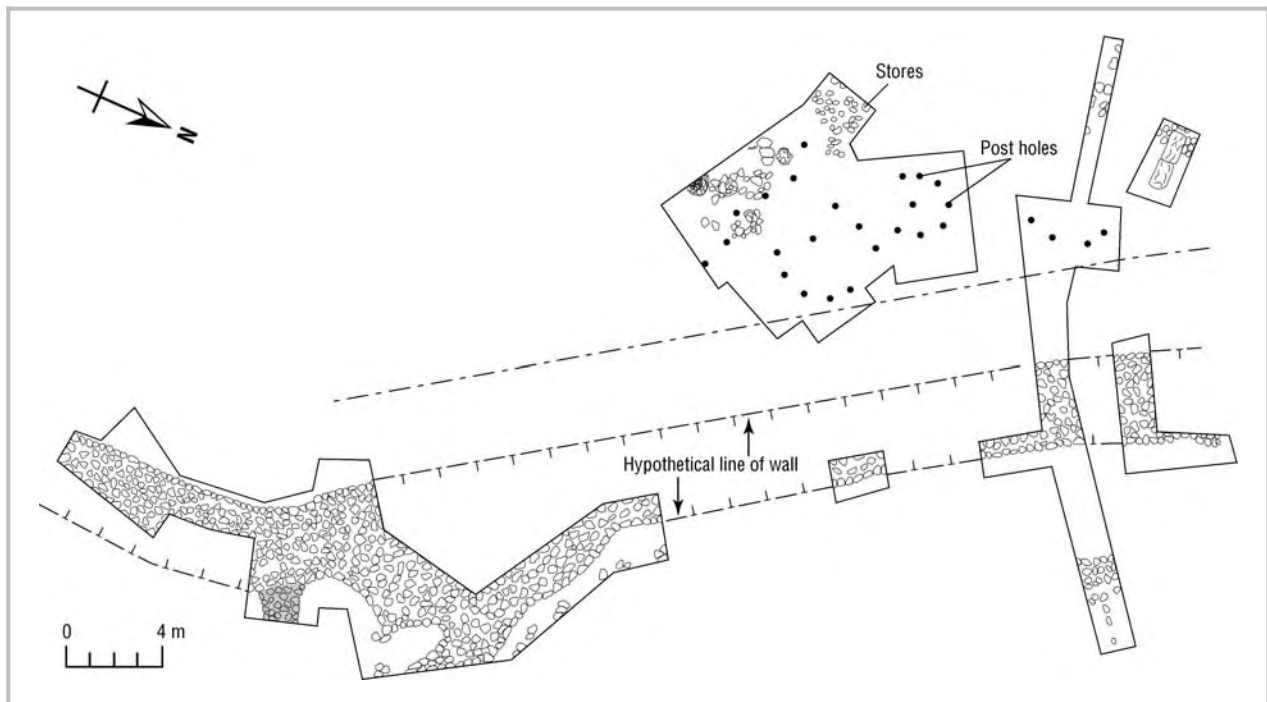


Fig. 1. Plan of the Late Bronze Age levels of the settlement at Porto Perone. ADAPTED FROM PERONI 1989.

hut at the site had Late Helladic IIIB and IIIC wares and local, wheel-made gray ware.

In 1973 Anna Maria Bietti Sestieri argued that the development of a local bronze industry in the Recent Bronze Age of southern Italy was a consequence of trade with the Aegean. Although this external stimulus may not be the full explanation, the period certainly sees an increase in bronze goods. There is also direct evidence for local production in the form of molds found at Scoglio del Tonno, Grotta Manaccora, and other sites.

In Sicily there is very little evidence for Recent Bronze Age coastal settlement, with the exception of the late phases of the Thapsos sites and some communities on the north coast. The north coast sites are characterized by the Ausonian culture, which is also known on the Lipari Islands. The tendency was for relatively few, large sites to be located inland. One example is Pantalica, situated in the upper reaches of the River Anapo. Although the stone-built “palace,” or *anaktoron*, which has evidence for metalworking, may not date to this period, the site is surrounded by a large cemetery of rock-cut tombs, some individual burials, others with multiple occupancy. Upland defended settle-

ments include the stone-wall site at Monte Desucri.

The Ausonian culture of the Lipari Islands seems to follow directly after the destruction of the Milazzese villages, particularly at the Lipari acropolis (see fig. 2). Two phases are recognized, the first corresponding to the Recent Bronze Age. Occupation during that period is marked by Aegean Late Helladic IIIB and C material.

FINAL BRONZE AGE

The Final Bronze Age (1150–950 B.C.) sees the beginning of a new cultural cycle. Much of peninsular Italy is united by the Protovillanovan culture, which is best known from urnfields of central European character.

The central Po Plain seems to be largely abandoned during this period, though a number of *terremare* in the Grandi Valli Veronesi, north of the river, continue into the early phases of the period. These include Fondo Paviani (16 hectares), Fabbri-ca dei Soci (6 hectares), and Castello del Tartaro (11 hectares). In these settlements, Late Helladic IIIC middle potsherds indicate contacts with the eastern Mediterranean, which have been confirmed



Fig. 2. Plan of the later Middle Bronze Age settlement at Milazzese, Panarea (Lipari Islands).
ADAPTED FROM PERONI 1989.

by chemical analysis. Bronze, glass, bone, and antler working take place on-site.

The 20-hectare site of Frattesina, on a branch of the Po, was occupied from the twelfth to the ninth centuries B.C. and shows impressive evidence of craft production in glass, glazed pottery, bone, antler, elephant ivory, bronze, iron, and amber. The settlement seems to have played an active role in the Mediterranean trade system, importing raw materials, such as amber, ivory, and ostrich eggs, and exporting finished goods. Like the similar site of Montagnana on the Adige, it has Late Helladic IIIC late potsherds, probably of southern Italian manufacture. Montagnana appears to be the predecessor of the Iron Age site of Este, and indeed, the first millennium B.C. Protovenetic Este culture shows conti-

nunity from the Final Bronze Age of the Veneto. Cemetery evidence for groups of tombs gives very little support for the identification of ranking, though it is likely that sword burials at Frattesina mark out elite graves.

To the north, in the southern Alps, there is a massive expansion of copper production documented by smelting sites that are associated with the Luco–Laugen A culture group, which seems ancestral to the Iron Age Raeti. Both the southern Alps and Tuscany in central Italy supplied copper to Frattesina and, through that center, the east and central Mediterranean.

The western Po Plain sees a drop in settlement density, with a concentration of sites around Lake Como and Lake Maggiore. In this area, the origins

of the Golasecca polities, which would continue into the Early Iron Age, are evident. Sword burials and other types of rich burials suggest a ranked society.

In central Italy, too, the emerging pattern of the Final Bronze Age has clear links with the succeeding phase of state formation. Most of the places that would become major centers of the Iron Age were occupied during the Final Bronze Age. There is a marked abandonment of lowland sites and a preference for locations with natural defenses, often on tufa outcrops. One such site is Sorgenti della Nova, which is set on a 5-hectare hilltop. Nuccia Negroni Catacchio, who excavated the site, has argued that a separate area at the top of the hill was occupied by the elite.

Most Protovillanovan cemeteries in central Italy are relatively small, with little evidence for social differentiation. An exception to this is the cemetery of Pianello di Genga, which had more than five hundred burials. It remained in use for two centuries and probably served a number of different communities.

There is a major change in metal production, with an increase in the range and quantity of metal artifacts produced. Many of these types show a distribution that suggests the exploitation of the copper ores of Tuscany. The nature of the economy at this time is very controversial, with a dispute between those who prefer to see a formal economy in place and those, more primitivist, who prefer a substantivist model. Certainly it should be noted that the period sees a major increase in hoard deposition, often associated with what seems to be ritual destruction, as in the Rimessone hoard.

In southern Italy, hoards of bronze, generally consisting of axes, become more common. There is also an increased presence of metalwork in graves, which signals an emerging warrior elite. In southern Italy and Sicily, there is evidence for early ironworking at Broglio di Trebisacce that is associated with the Final Bronze Age phase of the site. This settlement was defended by a wall and a ditch. An iron spearhead is known from the inhumation cemetery of Castellace, Oppido Mamertina, where a group of elite burials, male warriors and females, were perhaps grouped under a tumulus, an arrangement also found in Albania, to the east. Two iron knives were

also found at the cemetery of Madonna del Piano, Molino della Badia, in eastern Sicily.

The emergence of a settlement hierarchy in the Plain of Sybaris, perhaps associated with competing warrior groups, is attested at Broglio di Trebisacce, where the total number of settlements diminishes. Indeed, the Castellace cemetery seems to represent the burial place of such a group. The period is certainly one of change. Some of the principal settlements of the southeast, like Porto Perone and later Scoglio del Tonno, were abandoned, while others, such as Toppo Daguzzo, were completely rebuilt.

In contrast to the earlier ritual use of caves, which Ruth Whitehouse has called “underground religion,” there is a move to more open and visible forms of cult, such as the anthropomorphic statue-stelae of northern Apulia, representing both males and females, as at Castelluccio dei Sauri. Likewise, the rock-cut Sicilian tombs, as at Pantalica, which have architectural features and are visible from a distance, indicate a growing emphasis on the individual in burial rituals.

The settlement of Sabucina, overlooking the River Salso in central Sicily, consists of fifteen or so circular huts. Cannatello, on the south coast, which has both Aegean (Late Helladic IIIA and IIIB) and Cypriot pottery, is probably a trading settlement on the route passing to the south of the island. It consists of 6 huts arranged around a central open area with a diameter of about 60 meters. Five of the dwellings are circular, while the sixth is square. There is also evidence for a roughly paved road.

Luigi Bernabò Brea has argued that the Ausonian culture of the Lipari Islands is linked to groups from peninsular Italy who were eager to secure these important staging posts for trade. In the later phase, documented also in north and central Sicily, the form of huts changes from circular to much larger oval shapes. Construction is still by drystone walls but with upright posts inserted into the walls to give height to the structure.

THE AEGEAN CONNECTION

It has been argued that there were Mycenaean potters in Apulia and Lucania, and it has even been suggested that Broglio di Trebisacce might represent Mycenaean colonists, but it should be emphasized that the presence of Aegean (Late Helladic) sherds

in Italy and the islands does not necessarily indicate the presence of Mycenaeans, even if this is likely. Certainly, the Italian-type winged-axe mold from the House of the Oil Merchant at Mycenae attests to very close relations between the Italian Peninsula and Bronze Age Greece. It should be noticed that in the Final Bronze Age, after the collapse of the palace societies of the eastern Mediterranean, these contacts continue. Indeed, the exceptional site of Frattesina dates from this very period.

The distribution of Aegean and Aegean-type pottery in Italy and the islands varies through time. In the sixteenth and fifteenth centuries B.C. (the Early Middle Bronze Age–Late Helladic I and II), it occurs in the Lipari Islands, on the coasts of Apulia and Calabria (facing northern Greece and Albania) and at Vivara in the Bay of Naples. In the fourteenth and thirteenth century B.C. (later Middle and Late Bronze Age–Late Helladic IIIA and B), there is an increase in the number of locations where the pottery has been found. Material is known from the Bay of Naples, Tuscany, and Latium but particularly from Southeast Italy and Southeast Sicily (where the Mycenaean influence on the Thapsos culture has been noted), Sardinia, and the Lipari Islands. Twelfth-century B.C. material (Final Bronze Age–Late Helladic IIIC) shows a differing pattern. The Ionian Sea seems to have become a key area, and the decrease in finds in the Lipari Islands and Sicily may suggest a new route to Sardinia passing south of Sicily. The presence of five finds in the Po Plain in northern Italy is the major novelty of the Final Bronze Age.

CONCLUSIONS

The Italian Bronze Age saw a cycle of development, from the Early to the Recent Bronze Age, and then, in the Final Bronze Age, the beginning of a new cycle that led to the complex urban societies of the Iron Age. Although the evidence for social differentiation is patchy, it is clear that, for example, the *terremare* and lake-village societies of central northern Italy reached high levels of complexity in the Recent Bronze Age. Indeed, the sword-bearing warriors who appeared about this time represented the visible signs of the elite groups who became increasingly important as the Bronze Age drew to a close.

See also *Bell Beakers from West to East* (vol. 1, part 4);
The Early and Middle Bronze Ages in Central

Europe (vol. 2, part 5); **Poggiomarino** (vol. 2, part 5); **Late Bronze Age Urnfields of Central Europe** (vol. 2, part 5); **Mycenaean Greece** (vol. 2, part 5); **Etruscan Italy** (vol. 2, part 6).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Barfield, Lawrence. *Northern Italy before Rome*. Ancient Peoples and Places 76. New York: Praeger, 1972.
- Barker, Graeme. *Landscape and Society: Prehistoric Central Italy*. London and New York: Academic Press, 1981.
- Bernabò Brea, Maria, Andrea Cardarelli, and Mauro Cremaschi, eds. *Le Terramare: La più antica civiltà padana*. Exhibition catalog. Milan: Electa, 1997.
- Bietti Sestieri, Anna Maria. *Protostoria: Teoria e pratica*. Studi Superiori NIS 301. Rome: La Nuova Italia Scientifica, 1996.
- Cocchi Genick, Daniela, ed. *L'antica età del bronzo: Atti del Congresso di Viareggio, 9–12 Gennaio 1995*. Florence, Italy: OCTAVO, Franco Cardini Editore, 1996.
- Guidi, Alessandro, and Marcello Piperno, eds. *Italia preistorica*. Rome and Bari: Laterza, 1992. (Contains three useful essays: Andrea Cardarelli, “Le età dei metalli nell’Italia settentrionale,” pp. 366–419; Alessandro Guidi, “Le età dei metalli nell’Italia centrale e in Sardegna,” pp. 420–470; and Enrico Pellegrini, “Le età dei metalli nell’Italia meridionale e in Sicilia,” pp. 471–516.)
- Harari, Maurizio, and Mark Pearce. *Il protovillanoviano al di qua e al di là dell’Appennino: Atti della giornata di studio: Pavia, Collegio Ghislieri, 17 giugno 1995*. Biblioteca di “Athenaeum” 38. Como, Italy: Edizioni New Press, 2000.
- Leighton, Robert. *Sicily before History: An Archaeological Survey from the Palaeolithic to the Iron Age*. Ithaca, N.Y.: Cornell University Press; London: Duckworth, 1999.
- “L’età del bronzo in Italia nei secoli dal XVI al XIV a.C. Viareggio 26–30 ottobre 1989.” *Rassegna di Archeologia* (1991–1992): 10. (Conference proceedings on the Middle Bronze Age in Italy published as a single volume of the journal.)
- Mathers, Clay, and Simon Stoddart, eds. *Development and Decline in the Mediterranean Bronze Age*. Sheffield Archaeological Monographs, no. 8. Sheffield, U.K.: J. R. Collis, 1994. (Contains three useful essays: Lawrence Barfield, “The Bronze Age of Northern Italy: Recent Work and Social Interpretation,” pp. 129–144; Graeme Barker and Simon Stoddart, “The Bronze Age of Central Italy: c. 2000–900 B.C.,” pp. 145–165; and Caroline Malone, Simon Stoddart, and Ruth Whitehouse, “The Bronze Age of Southern Italy, Sicily, and Malta c. 2000–800 B.C.,” pp. 167–194.)
- Pearce, Mark. “New Research on the *Terremare* of Northern Italy.” *Antiquity* 72 (1998): 743–746.



Fig. 1. One of the various excavated islets of Poggiomarino, Italy. SOPRINTENDENZA ARCHEOLOGICA DI POMPEI. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

Peroni, Renato. *L'Italia alle soglie della storia*. Rome and Bari: Laterza, 1996. (A good chrono-typological outline of the key sites and assemblages.)

———. *Protostoria dell'Italia continentale: La penisola italiana nelle età del Bronzo e del ferro*. Popoli e Civiltà dell'Italia Antica vol. 9. Rome: Biblioteca di Storia Patria, 1989.

Ridgway, David, and Francesca R. Ridgway, eds. *Italy before the Romans: The Iron Age, Orientalizing, and Etruscan Periods*. London and New York: Academic, 1979. (Contains some important, if a little dated, papers on the Bronze-Iron transition.)

Skeates, Robin, and Ruth Whitehouse, eds. *Radiocarbon Dating and Italian Prehistory*. Archaeological Monographs of the British School at Rome vol. 8; Accordia Specialist Studies on Italy vol. 3. London: British School at Rome and Accordia Research Centre, 1994. (The date lists are regularly updated in the journal *Accordia Research Papers*.)

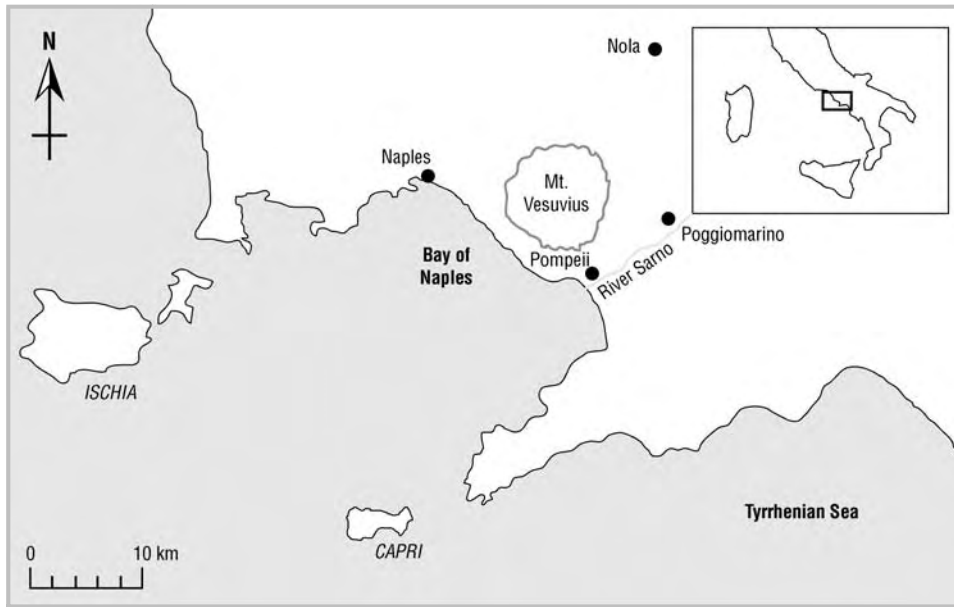
Tusa, Sebastiano. *La Sicilia nella preistoria*. Palermo, Italy: Sellerio, 1983.

MARK PEARCE

POGGIOMARINO

The remarkable discovery of the Bronze Age wetland site of Poggiomarino is rewriting the history of southern Italy's Bronze Age. The peculiarity of this riverine settlement consists of its location and the way in which it was constructed. In fact the village was built on a multitude of little artificially created islands linked by a navigable network of canals, hence its nickname the "Bronze Age Venice."

The fortunate discovery of this prehistoric village was made during the construction of a water-purification system for the Sarno River in October 2000. The settlement is situated near the Sarno River in a place called Longola-Poggiomarino (Naples), about 10 kilometers northeast of Pompeii. It is believed that the site covers an area of about 7 hectares, of which only 4,800 square meters are being investigated. The prehistoric settlement, believed to have been one of the major Bronze Age industrial centers in southern central Italy, was occu-



Poggiomarino, Italy, and environs.

ped continuously from around the sixteenth to the sixth century B.C., when environmental factors forced the Poggiomarino community to abandon the area. According to Renato Peroni, archaeological evidence supports the theory that the same people moved westward toward the coast and started to build the city of Pompeii.

By 2003 the Soprintendenza Archeologica di Pompei in conjunction with the Centre National de la Recherche Scientifique in Paris had excavated no more than 1,600 square meters of the village. There are seven main trenches (five measuring 20 by 40 meters and two measuring 20 by 20 meters) plus a series of small test pits. On average, the anthropogenic strata lie 2.8–7 meters below the modern terrain surface, but in some areas they can be even deeper. The settlement, a fairly large area, consists mainly of an agglomerate of small, artificially built islands set in a network of manually dug waterways. Eight circular islands had been discovered, ranging in size between 120 and 240 square meters.

Each island contained a hut and a modest landing stage for small watercraft and probably was connected to the rest of the settlement by either permanent bridges or drawbridges. The engineering was quite sophisticated. The banks along the canals were raised using a multitude of trunks of oak trees and wooden panels as bulwark, creating structures of is-

lets, which subsequently were filled in and reinforced in order to build habitations on them (fig. 1). In the majority of cases, the surfaces of these islands were paved with pebbles and slabs of volcanic rock quarried in the area. Finally, the water level was maintained at a constant level by a series of drainage trenches and sluices built around the settlement.

Poggiomarino has yielded an enormous quantity of artifacts, which range from wooden construction material to the finest metal products. The large amount of well-preserved wood (mostly oak) was found in the form of posts, flat planks, worked and semiworked beams, wooden tools, and a few dug-out canoes used to navigate the canal network.

The richness of the material culture is astonishing. More than 500,000 fragments of pottery and 100,000 animal bones (mainly wild boar, deer, and bear) and antlers have been found, along with more than 600 coarse and fine artifacts made of bronze, lead, iron, glass, amber, bone, and antler. Important finds in the archaeological assemblage are unworked chunks of amber, a furnace for smelting copper, and a few mold casts for bronze objects. They suggest that Poggiomarino was an important industrial center, where large quantities of various goods were produced for trade all over southern Italy and the central Mediterranean. Another vital characteristic of the archaeological material is the presence of a

significant quantity of botanical and faunal remains, which will allow archaeologists to reconstruct the climate and vegetation of the site.

Despite the large quantity of wood found on the site, absolute dates based on dendrochronology are not yet available. A research team from Cornell University led by Peter Kuniholm has begun analysis of a selection of 122 posts of long-lived oak from the islands to place them within the Mediterranean dendrochronological sequence. Chronology still relies on relative dates obtained from pottery typological analyses, which place the settlement between the sixteenth and sixth centuries B.C.

In conclusion, Poggiomarino promises to revolutionize the chronology of later southern Italian prehistory and protohistory and, as the largest Bronze Age and Iron Age wetland site found in the Mediterranean, shed light on the occupational patterns and chronology of later prehistoric wetland settlements in Europe. Surprisingly there are quite a few gaps in the southern Italian chronologies that precede the Pompeii period. The long occupation of Poggiomarino along with Nola, an Early Bronze Age settlement situated only 25 kilometers north of Poggiomarino and destroyed by the eruption of Mount Vesuvius in the eighteenth century B.C., will help fill in the gaps and clarify cultural aspects of local populations that occupied the area well before Pompeii was built. The settlement also will shed light on important aspects of local and long-distance trade and social interaction in later prehistoric Europe. In fact, having been a large and important industrial center, it might well have been connected to the long-distance trade route (in the Aegean area of the Baltic Sea) through southern Italy and the Alpine region. Finally, Poggiomarino might play an important role in solving the mystery of the disappearance of the Alpine wetland settlements at the beginning of the Iron Age. The majority of European Iron Age wetland populations decided to become more “terrestrial,” and for some reason that does not seem to be fully environmen-

tal, this trend started around the Alpine lakes and subsequently spread over Europe.

See also *The Italian Bronze Age* (vol. 2, part 5).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Carancini, Gian Luigi, and Renato Peroni. *L'eta' del bronzo in Italia: Per una cronologia della produzione metallurgica*. Perugia, Italy: Alieno, 1999.

Kuniholm, Peter Ian. “Aegean Dendrochronology Project December 2002 Progress Report.” <http://www.arts.cornell.edu/dendro/2002news/2002adp.html>.

Manning, Sturt W., Bernd Kromer, Peter Ian Kuniholm, and Maryanne W. Newton. “Confirmation of Near-Absolute Dating of East Mediterranean Bronze-Iron Dendrochronology.” *Antiquity* 77, no. 295 (2003). <http://antiquity.ac.uk/ProjGall/Manning/manning.html>.

Menotti, Francesco. “Climatic Change, Flooding, and Occupational Hiatus in the Lake-Dwelling Central European Bronze Age.” In *Natural Disasters and Cultural Change*. Edited by Robin Torrence and John Grattan, pp. 235–249. London: Routledge, 2002.

———. *The “Missing Period”: Middle Bronze Age Lake-Dwellings in the Alps*. BAR International Series, no. 968. Oxford: Archeopress, 2001.

———. “The Abandonment of the ZH-Mozartstrasse Early Bronze Age Lake-Settlement: GIS Computer Simulations of the Lake-Level Fluctuation Hypothesis.” *Oxford Journal of Archaeology* 18, no. 2 (1999): 143–155.

Peroni, Renato. *L'Italia alle soglie della storia*. Rome: Editori Laterza, 1996.

Pruneti, P. “Palafitte a Poggiomarino sul Sarno: Protostoria ai piedi del Vesuvio.” *Archeologia Viva* 94 (July–August 2002): 72–76.

Schlichtherle, Helmut. *Pfahlbauten rund um die Alpen*. Stuttgart, Germany: Konrad Theiss Verlag, 1997.

Sherratt, A. G. “The Human Geography of Europe: A Prehistoric Perspective.” In *An Historical Geography of Europe*. Edited by Robin A. Butlin and Robert A. Dodgshon, pp. 1–25. Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1998.

FRANCESCO MENOTTI



EL ARGAR AND RELATED BRONZE AGE CULTURES OF THE IBERIAN PENINSULA

FOLLOWED BY FEATURE ESSAY ON:

Sardinia's Bronze Age Towers 50

The Bronze Age of the southeastern quadrant of the Iberian Peninsula constitutes an archaeologically well-documented example of the barbarian social formations of later prehistoric Europe. The rich body of mortuary evidence first developed in the late nineteenth century by the Belgian mining engineers Henri Siret and Louis Siret has been supplemented by a number of settlement excavations that have taken place since the 1970s. As a result, one can reconstruct the major lines of the economic and social organization of southeastern Iberia in the late third millennium and early second millennium B.C. Radiocarbon dates for the classic Bronze Age cultures of southeastern Iberia generally fall between about 2200 to 1500 B.C. There are three regional variants: the El Argar culture of eastern Andalusia and Murcia, the Bronze Valenciano of the Spanish Levant and southern Aragon, and the Mancha Bronze Age of the southern Meseta. Of these, the Argaric is the best known.

EL ARGAR

The bulk of the evidence for the El Argar complex comes from coastal lowlands of the provinces of Almería and Murcia. The Siret brothers' mining operations were based in this region, and the most important modern excavations, at Gatas and Fuente

Álamo, have been carried out at sites first excavated by the Sirets. The coastal zone of southeastern Spain lies in the rain shadow of the Betic mountain systems (the Sierra Nevada, the Sierra de Segura, and so forth). In the present, this is the most arid region of Europe, with mean annual rainfall of less than 400 millimeters, so that irrigation is a prerequisite for stable agriculture. The El Argar culture area extends westward into the uplands of eastern Andalusia, windward of the mountain systems, where higher precipitation permits reliably productive dry farming. The available paleoenvironmental evidence indicates that the climate during the Bronze Age was similar to that of the present. The modern environmental contrasts within the area are caused by the mountainous geography and would have been diminished during the Bronze Age only by changes in atmospheric circulation patterns greater than can be plausibly postulated for the Holocene period.

Settlement. The Bronze Age archaeology of southeastern Iberia is an archaeology of settlements. Hundreds of Argaric villages are documented: in areas that have been surveyed systematically they are found every 2 or 3 kilometers along the watercourses. The villages typically consist of tight clus-



Selected sites in southeast Iberia.

ters of rectangular houses packed on the crests of steep hills and terraced on the upper slopes of the hillsides. Almost all of these sites are small (a fraction of a hectare), limited in size by their emplacements, but they are often deeply stratified, reflecting long occupations that cover much of the seven hundred-year span of the Argaric Bronze Age. A few sites, Cerro de la Virgen, for example, were occupied in the preceding Copper Age, but most were newly established in the Bronze Age. Argaric settlement strategies were apparently governed by defensive considerations of unprecedented severity.

Production. The long-term occupations characteristic of the Argaric were based on stably productive mixed farming. The staple grains were wheat and barley, supplemented by legumes, such as peas, broad beans, and lentils. Animal species included (in descending order of frequency) sheep and goats, cattle, pigs, and horses. A variety of intensifications of agricultural production had been initiated in the preceding Copper Age, and these were maintained in the Argaric. The evidence indicates the exploitation of sheep, goats, cattle, and horses for their secondary products (wool, milk, traction). There may have been some cultivation of olives. It also seems likely that there was some development of hydraulic agriculture: throughout the Argaric culture area, sites are oriented toward land that could be irrigat-

ed, and in the arid sector the cultivation of crops, such as flax and broad beans, would have required irrigation.

Argaric households engaged in a complete suite of production activities, none of them exhibiting a significant degree of craft specialization. The ceramic industry generally exhibits a low degree of artisan investment. Vessels were coil-made and generally coarsely tempered pottery that was fired at low temperatures under reducing conditions. Ceramic decoration is generally rare except for digitations (finger impressions) on the rims and appliqué buttons. The range of forms (carinated vases, bowls, baggy storage jars of various sizes) is monotonous and repetitive but not apparently standardized. The fragments of linen and woolen textiles that have been recovered are homespun, and loom weights are found in most domestic spaces. Esparto grass was used to make baskets and cords. The chipped-stone tool industry consists mainly of unmodified blades and flakes, the main distinctive tool type being backed and denticulated sickle teeth. Typologically nondescript milling stones and groundstone axes were also produced. Even metallurgy appears to be a household industry. Arsenical copper ores were smelted in small ceramic crucibles found in otherwise ordinary-seeming domestic contexts; the overall number of artifacts produced was very small (par-

ticularly in comparison to other regions of Europe at the same time), and the trace-element signatures of slags and finished artifacts varied from site to site (suggesting that the circulation and recasting of metal was minimal). Metallurgical production was devoted primarily to making arms (daggers, halberds, swords, projectile points) and ornaments (such as bracelets) to be interred with the dead. Tools such as chisels were produced in smaller quantities.

Social and Political Organization. The Argarics buried their dead under the floors of their houses in natural cavities, stone cists, or large jars. These were individual interments, but in some cases there were double (male and female) burials. Radiocarbon dates on the skeletons of a series of five of these double burials indicate that in all cases the female skeleton was a century or more older than the male, suggesting a matrilineal residence pattern. Argaric grave goods consist of the personal finery of the dead, such as ceramic drinking vessels and bronze weapons and ornaments, and they show considerable differences in wealth. These wealth differentials are more marked at sites in the arid sector of the Argaric culture area and have generally been interpreted as evidence of hereditary stratification, but analyses of the skeletal evidence provide no clear evidence that individuals with wealthier grave goods grew taller or were healthier in childhood.

Systematic, extensive excavations of Argaric villages are still few, but the results from the most completely published sites—El Picacho, Gatas, Peñalosa, and Fuente Álamo—do not suggest marked internal differentiation in residential facilities. Some houses are bigger than others to be sure, but there is no *prima facie* evidence for chiefly residences. It is of particular interest, for example, that no claims have been made for the association of wealthier burials with larger residences. Likewise, there is little monumentality in public architecture. Large public spaces or plazas are not evident (if only because the packing of the houses onto hilltops would have made these difficult to establish). The only buildings interpretable as public or official buildings—the freestanding rectangular structures H and O, built during phases III and IV of the Fuente Álamo occupation—are both relatively modest in size (about 50 meters squared and 80 meters squared, respectively).



Fig. 1. Grave contents of Fuente Álamo grave 9. PHOTOGRAPH COURTESY OF HARVARD COLLEGE LIBRARY.

Argaric settlements show some differentiation in size. Robert Chapman interprets this as evidence of a two-tier settlement hierarchy, which in turn would suggest a chiefdom level of social organization. Roberto Risch suggests that at Fuente Álamo large-scale grain milling was out of proportion to the agricultural resources found in the immediate vicinity and infers from this that its residents must have received grain from lower-ranking communities elsewhere. Similar claims have been made on the basis of as yet incompletely published survey projects. The difficulty with such claims is the limited scale of differentiation involved. The range of site sizes is from villages of at most 6 or 7 hectares (not necessarily occupied simultaneously) to hamlets of a fraction of a hectare. This is not what one would expect of a society with a well-established social hierarchy.

The general consensus of students of the Argaric has been that it was a culture that showed signs

of “emerging complexity” (this term serves as the title for Chapman’s study). Most scholars feel that it was certainly a chiefdom and even perhaps a state. The evidence accumulated by the functionalist archaeology of the past generation to test this view suggests a more “tribal” form of social organization, however. Households were self-sufficient and undifferentiated in their production. The multiplicity of small settlements found throughout the Argaric zone suggests that small groups of households enjoyed the freedom to establish themselves in new communities. Considerable wealth differentials may have arisen in the context of the competition over the resources, including herds and irrigated plots. These differentials might have become more pronounced in the course of agricultural intensification. They appear to be larger in the arid zone (where environmental constraints would have sharpened such competition), but there is little to suggest that commoners were caged by powerful aristocrats.

Ideology. The burial of the dead under the houses of the living strongly suggests the existence of clan ideologies that legitimated household property claims in terms of ancestry. Apart from the mortuary record, Argaric archaeology is conspicuously lacking in direct evidence of systems of beliefs. There is no art; there are no figurines or other nonfunctional objects interpretable as fetishes; there are no evident cult spaces, apart from a possible altar from the site of El Oficio. This is in sharp contrast to the abundant evidence of religious practice that characterized the communal institutions of the preceding Copper Age and the civic ones of the succeeding Iron Age.

THE BRONCE VALENCIANO AND THE MANCHA BRONZE AGE

The Bronze Valenciano and the Mancha Bronze Age cultures are broadly contemporaneous to the Argaric and grade into it seamlessly along their “frontier” in northern Jaén and Murcia Provinces. They are differentiated from the Argaric (and from each other) more to facilitate didactic archaeological classification than because of differences in their principal features. The main substantive contrast, in fact, is the scarcity of burials inside the settlements.

The Bronze Valenciano is distributed in the mountainous zone and coastal areas of eastern Spain

between the Rivers Ebro and Segura, an area whose climate and resources are broadly similar to the less-arid portions of the Argaric domain. The Mancha Bronze Age is found in the southeastern Meseta north of the Sierra Morena and Betic mountain systems. This region has a more arid and Continental climate than the Spanish Levant, but conditions are in no way as unfavorable to agriculture as in the coastal Argaric zone.

Settlement. Both the Bronze Valenciano and the Mancha Bronze Age are characterized by their large numbers of small settlements, usually placed on hill-tops, promontories, or other defensible positions. In the Alto Palancia district (within the Bronze Valenciano area), for example, 50 open settlements (open-air settlements, as opposed to caves or rock shelters) are documented in an area of a little over 1,000 square kilometers. A survey of 10,000 square kilometers in northern Albacete Province (in the Mancha Bronze Age area) documented the existence of some 250 Bronze Age settlements. Site densities of a similar order of magnitude are found wherever archaeologists have worked systematically. The Mancha Bronze Age is distinguished by the construction of fortified settlements built on a circular plan in areas where the natural relief affords insufficient protection (El Azuer and El Acequión are the best-known examples).

Production. The lack of published, functionally oriented excavations means less is known about the organization of productive activities for the Bronze Valenciano and Mancha Bronze Age than for the Argaric, but the available evidence suggests that subsistence patterns were broadly similar. The same range of domesticates were husbanded, the pattern being one of mixed farming with intensifications, such as the use of the plow and other exploitations of animals for their secondary products. In terms of artifact technology, what mainly distinguishes the Bronze Valenciano and Mancha Bronze Age from the Argaric is the absence of some of the more distinctive Argaric productions, such as ceramic chalices and bronze swords and halberds. In the Argaric, these are only found in burials, and burials are scarce in the Bronze Valenciano and Mancha Bronze Age areas.

Social and Political Organization. The scarcity of mortuary evidence from the Bronze Valenciano

and Mancha Bronze Age areas deprives archaeologists of one of the principal avenues for assessing social distinctions. Cerro de la Encantada, in the Mancha Bronze Age area, contains burials, but it is often considered an Argaric outlier because it has as many as twenty burials, which falls far short of the more than one thousand found at El Argar itself. The evidence elsewhere is too sparse to permit assessment of its central tendencies. The Mancha Bronze Age circular fortified settlements are sometimes interpreted as being occupied by elites, and some of them have yielded items that are suggestive of an elite presence (such as the 107-gram ivory button from El Acequión). But systematic testing of this hypothesis would require comparison of the contents of habitational spaces found at these large sites with their counterparts at smaller sites. Our most reliable avenue for assessing social differentiation is restricted to the settlement-pattern evidence obtained in systematic surveys. The multiplicity of small sites and the small size of the larger ones (Cola Caballo, the largest site documented in the area surveyed by Antonio Gilman, Manuel Fernández-Miranda, María Dolores Fernández-Posse, and Concepción Martín, measures 1.4 hectares) argues strongly for a segmentary social organization.

Ideology. José Sánchez Meseguer's interpretation of one of the constructional spaces at Cerro de la Encantada as a cult space, even if accepted, would be an isolated exception to the general absence of overt ideological manifestations in the Bronze Valenciano and Mancha Bronze Age cultures. The overall pattern of absence of overt "superstructural" activities is similar to what is found in the Argaric.

COMMENTARY

The rich archaeological record available for the El Argar culture permits one to sketch out its principal features. The makers of that record were largely self-sufficient households of socially segmentary mixed farmers engaged in intense competition over land and other factors of production. In the course of that competition, they developed incipient social ranking. The evidence for the Bronze Valenciano and Mancha Bronze Age cultures is less complete, but it is clearly indicative of social groups operating along similar lines. This reconstruction is very different, however, from those that can be obtained for societies that are historically documented. One can-

not tell, for example, what language (or languages) the Bronze Age people of southeastern Iberia spoke. (One might speculate that they spoke an ancestral version of the non-Indo-European Iberian spoken in the same area of the peninsula fifteen hundred years later, but the changes in the artifactual inventory from the Bronze to the Iron Age is so pervasive that tracing a direct archaeological filiation is impossible.) This, in turn, makes any ethnic interpretation of the Iberian Bronze Age a dubious proposition: the archaeological record does not document an ancient society but rather an ancient way of life that may have been shared by groups that would have considered themselves (and would have been considered by contemporary observers) to be quite different. It is important to realize, therefore, that this deep prehistoric case is in some important respects not comparable to ones documented ethnohistorically.

See also Late Neolithic/Copper Age Iberia (vol. 1, part 4); Iberia in the Iron Age (vol. 2, part 6); Early Medieval Iberia (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Buikstra, Jane, et al. "Approaches to Class Inequalities in the Later Prehistory of South-East Iberia: The Gatas Project." In *The Origins of Complex Societies in Late Prehistoric Iberia*. Edited by Katina T. Lillios, pp. 153–168. Ann Arbor, Mich.: International Monographs in Prehistory, 1995.
- Chapman, Robert. *Emerging Complexity: The Later Prehistory of South-East Spain, Iberia, and the West Mediterranean*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1990.
- Contreras Cortés, Francisco, and Juan Antonio Cámara Serano. *La jerarquización social en la del Bronce del alto Guadalquivir (España): El poblado de Peñaloso (Baños de la Encina, Jaén)*. BAR International Series, vol. 1025. Oxford: John and Erica Hedges, 2002.
- Gilman, Antonio. "Assessing Political Development in Copper and Bronze Age Southeast Spain." In *From Leaders to Rulers*. Edited by Jonathan Haas, pp. 59–81. New York: Kluwer Academic/Plenum, 2001.
- Gilman, Antonio, and John B. Thornes. *Land-Use and Prehistory in South-East Spain*. London: Allen and Unwin, 1985.
- Gilman, Antonio, Manuel Fernández-Miranda, María Dolores Fernández-Posse, and Concepción Martín. "Preliminary Report on a Survey Program of the Bronze Age of Northern Albacete Province, Spain." In *Encounters and Transformations: The Archaeology of Iberia in Transition*. Edited by Miriam S. Balmuth, Antonio Gil-

- man, and Lourdes Prados-Torreira, pp. 33–50. Monographs in Mediterranean Archaeology, vol. 7. Sheffield, U.K.: Sheffield Academic, 1997.
- Harrison, R. J. “The ‘Policultivo Ganadero’: or, the Secondary Products Revolution in Spanish Agriculture, 5000–1000 B.C.” *Proceedings of the Prehistoric Society* 51 (1985): 75–102.
- Lull, Vicente. “Argaric Society: Death at Home.” *Antiquity* 74 (2000): 581–590.
- Martín, Concepción, Manuel Fernández-Miranda, María Dolores Fernández-Posse, and Antonio Gilman. “The Bronze Age of La Mancha.” *Antiquity* 67 (1993): 23–45.
- Mathers, Clay. “Goodbye to All That? Contrasting Patterns of Change in the South-East Iberian Bronze Age c. 24/2200–600 B.C.” In *Development and Decline in the Mediterranean Bronze Age*. Edited by Clay Mathers and Simon Stoddart, pp. 21–71. Sheffield Archaeological Monographs, no. 8. Sheffield, U.K.: J. R. Collis Publications, 1994.
- Montero Ruiz, Ignacio. “Bronze Age Metallurgy in South-east Spain.” *Antiquity* 67 (1993): 46–57.
- Risch, Roberto. “Análisis paleoeconómico y medios de producción líticos: El caso de Fuente Alamo.” In *Minerales y metales en la prehistoria reciente: Algunos testimonios de su explotación y laboreo en la Península Ibérica*. Edited by Germán Delibes de Castro, pp. 105–154. Studia Archaeologica, no. 88. Valladolid, Spain: Secretariado de Publicaciones e Intercambio Científico, Universidad de Valladolid, Fundación Duques de Soria, 1998.
- Ruiz, Matilde, et al. “Environmental Exploitation and Social Structure in Prehistoric Southeast Spain.” *Journal of Mediterranean Archaeology* 5 (1992): 3–38.
- Sánchez Meseguer, José. “El altar de cuernos de La Encantada y sus paralelos orientales.” *Oretum* 1 (1985): 125–174.

ANTONIO GILMAN

SARDINIA’S BRONZE AGE TOWERS

During the Bronze Age and the Early Iron Age, from 2000 to 600 B.C., the western Mediterranean island of Sardinia, now part of Italy, was home to a remarkable people, the Nuragic culture. For much of their history the Nuragic people lived in scattered farmsteads, practiced intensive small-scale farming and stock raising, and communicated without writing. In these respects they resembled many of their

contemporaries in the western Mediterranean and Europe. However, the Nuragic people distinguished themselves from their mainland neighbors by channeling their creative energies into their architecture: the dramatic conical stone towers, known as *nuraghi* (singular, *nuraghe*), that give their name to the culture. To modern time these towers, some seven thousand of them, dot the island’s landscape. Even after some four thousand years of wear and tear, they remain impressive and beautiful monuments. The neighboring islands of Corsica, the Balearic Islands, and Pantelleria all have monumental towers akin to the *nuraghi*. But their numbers are fewer, and they appear slightly later in history, so they are thought to be copies of the Sardinian towers. The Sardinian examples, then, justly have received the most study. Twentieth-century investigations of the towers greatly expanded understanding of the origins, construction, and development of the *nuraghi* and their social significance.

CONSTRUCTION AND DISTRIBUTION

The *nuraghi* are composed of large stone blocks constructed without benefit of mortar or any other binding agent. Construction styles vary: the blocks may be well dressed or only roughly hewn, and they may be arranged in horizontal courses of walling or stacked with progressively smaller stones used as the wall gets higher. The towers average 12 meters in external diameter and reached an estimated 15 to 20 meters in height when they were complete (most have lost the upper portions). Inside the towers typically consist of a windowless central circular chamber on the ground floor, with two or three shallow niches off it. The ceiling took the form of a corbeled vault. To the side of the entrance is a small niche, commonly called a “guard’s chamber,” though its function remains obscure. Often these towers had an upper story, and in the case of the largest ones two upper stories, reached by a staircase built inside the double walls. The builders used local stone: basalt and granite were preferred, but in some cases limestone was used. Although the *nuraghi*’s ground plans are quite homogeneous, there is enormous variety in their appearance. The variation in size and building techniques suggests that these towers were not built under the direction of an islandwide authority but instead were the result of local decision making.

The *nuraghi* are found all over the island though in greatest densities in the hilly central region. Their distribution is dispersed, positioned no less than half a kilometer apart. Stone tombs known as “giants’ tombs,” consisting of an elongated chamber of large stone slabs and fronted by a semi-circular forecourt, are found near many *nuraghi* and were the sites of communal burials.

QUESTIONS OF FUNCTION

Theories abound to explain the function of the *nuraghi*. For several hundred years scholars have proposed that they were temples, tombs, farms, storehouses, and forts. But finds from excavations over the twentieth century suggest fairly conclusively that the towers were habitations. Remains of vessels for cooking, serving, and storing food; animal bones and seeds; traces of hearths; stone tools; and implements for weaving and spinning all point to domestic activities in the towers. Given their rural setting, the towers seem to have been farmsteads, each, in all likelihood, occupied by a family who grew crops or herded sheep and goats on the surrounding land. However, this does not explain their monumental size. The towers’ height, their location in prominent places such as hilltops, and the fact that many towers seem positioned to be in sight of each other all suggest that they functioned as watch-towers. Their solidity points to self-defense. In the absence of any evidence of external threats, many scholars think of them as fortresses for a society prone to chronic feuding between families, interspersed with moments of cooperation. Clearly such cooperation was needed from neighbors in order to construct these towers: a single family could not have done this alone. The towers took an estimated 3,600 person-days to build. However, this theory remains somewhat tentative as there is little evidence of warfare apart from the towers themselves, and it is perplexing why neighbors would help to build structures that would then be used as defense against them.

ORIGINS AND CHRONOLOGY

Until the late twentieth century the *nuraghi* were thought to be Greek in origin: their vaulted ceilings and conical shapes resemble the *tholoi*, or “beehive” tombs, of Mycenae. However, subsequent work has laid this theory to rest. New dating has shown that the *nuraghi* are earlier than the Mycenaean struc-

tures, which date from the Late Bronze Age or fifteenth century B.C., and the construction techniques of the two types of monuments are different. It is widely accepted that the *nuraghi* emerged independently on the island rather than copied from somewhere else.

Dating the *nuraghi* themselves is difficult, and so the chronology for the emergence of the *nuraghi* is still hotly debated. There is no method for dating the construction itself, so the ages of the *nuraghi* are determined by carbon-14 dates from associated organic deposits and from the chronologies of the artifacts found in the towers. Unfortunately linking the artifacts or organic deposits to the moment of construction of the towers is problematic because of their long period of occupation. Still scholars have reached some consensus on the chronology and nature of the towers’ development. The classic conical *nuraghe* is the product of a gradual architectural evolution. This evolution is evident from the remains of older structures labeled “proto-*nuraghi*” that are composed of monumental stone blocks but lack the interior vault and conical form. Most scholars favor a date for the appearance of the conical towers around 2000 B.C., though the ranges given vary from as early as 2300 B.C. to as late as 1700 B.C.

The *nuraghi* continued to be occupied for around a thousand years, and likewise Nuragic culture carried on, though with some changes to the social structure that are reflected in the architecture. After 1300 B.C. some of the simple single towers were expanded: new features included surrounding bastions, walls, and additional towers. In some cases these complexes were built from scratch, without having an older tower as a base. Though clearly belonging to the same architectural family as the simple *nuraghi*, these new multitowered *nuraghi*, numbering around two thousand, greatly exceed them in scale and grandeur. While the earlier homogeneous single towers were strong evidence that Nuragic society was egalitarian, these new complex towers suggest the emergence of a social hierarchy, with the elites residing in the grand *nuraghi*. These large complexes would have required considerable numbers of people to build them, far more than the cooperative neighboring families envisaged for the single towers’ construction. Around the *nuraghi*, both the complex and the simpler ones, circular huts appear in the second half of the second millen-



Fig. 1. Nuraghe Su Nuraxi, Barumini. © GIANNI DAGLI ORTI/CORBIS. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

nium B.C., suggesting a general population growth. The relationship between these modest huts and the complex *nuraghi* was perhaps akin to that between a medieval village and its castle. The clearest account of the progressive development of these towers is given at Nuraghe Su Nuraxi di Barumini, a site excavated in the 1950s. As the excavation showed, the complex began as a simple single tower and gradually expanded out to become an urban settlement (fig. 1).

In conjunction with these architectural and settlement changes, Nuragic life was changing in other respects in the late second century B.C., and the stimulus was perhaps due to greater contacts with the rest of the Mediterranean world through trade. There is evidence of increasing metallurgical activity at Nuragic sites: a variety of weapons, tools, and fig-

urines in copper and bronze as well as some iron and some lead have been found. By 1300 B.C. the Nuragic people were clearly participating in the vast Mediterranean trading network, as evidenced by the pottery from Mycenaean Greece and Cypriot copper ingots found at Nuragic sites on Sardinia. In turn, Sardinian ceramics have been found in Greece as well as on the island of Lipari off the north coast of Sicily and in two Etruscan burials in central Italy. Phoenician colonies were established along Sardinia's western and southern coasts in the eighth century B.C., further influencing the island culture.

At this time, in the Late Bronze Age and the Early Iron Age, from 1100 to 900 B.C., a new type of building appears that points to a change in ritual practices: a water cult practiced at newly constructed well temples. This period is also characterized by

the introduction of ashlar masonry techniques and new pottery forms and decoration. No new *nuraghi* seem to have been built, and some were destroyed and abandoned at this time. The Nuragic period was on the wane, ending historically when the Carthaginians conquered the island in the late sixth century B.C. Since then the island's inhabitants have been under the rule of various foreign groups. However, the towers live on as extraordinary and enduring testaments to the creative vitality of this insular society.

See also El Argar and Related Bronze Age Cultures of the Iberian Peninsula (vol. 2, part 5).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Balmuth, Miriam S. "The Nuraghi of Sardinia: An Introduction." In *Studies in Sardinian Archaeology*. Edited by Miriam S. Balmuth and R. J. Rowland, pp. 23–52. Ann Arbor: University of Michigan Press, 1984.
- Lilliu, Giovanni. *La civiltà dei Sardi: Dal Paleolitico all'età dei nuraghi*. Turin, Italy: Nuova ERI, 1988.
- Trump, David. *Nuraghe Noeddos and the Bonu Ighinu Valley: Excavation and Survey in Sardinia*. Oxford: Oxbow, 1990.
- Tykot, Robert H., and Tamsey K. Andrews, eds. *Sardinia in the Mediterranean: A Footprint in the Sea*. Sheffield, U.K.: Sheffield Academic Press, 1992.
- Webster, Gary S. *A Prehistory of Sardinia 2300–500 B.C.* Sheffield, U.K.: Sheffield Academic Press, 1996.
- Whitehouse, Ruth. "Megaliths of the Central Mediterranean." In *The Megalithic Monuments of Western Europe*. Edited by Colin Renfrew, pp. 42–63. London: Thames and Hudson, 1983.

EMMA BLAKE



BRONZE AGE BRITAIN AND IRELAND

FOLLOWED BY FEATURE ESSAYS ON:

<i>Stonehenge</i>	61
<i>Flag Fen</i>	67
<i>Irish Bronze Age Goldwork</i>	69

In Britain and Ireland the beginning of the Bronze Age is marked by the appearance of metalworking, new burial practices, and an increase in trade and exchange. What is significant about these developments is their social impact: they facilitated the emergence of hierarchical societies in which social difference was marked out through the ownership and display of bronze artifacts and other exotic objects.

MINING AND METALWORKING

The earliest evidence for metalworking in the British Isles can be dated to c. 2500 B.C. This technology was introduced from the Continent, possibly via contacts with the Low Countries. At first, unalloyed copper was used to create a limited range of simple tools, weapons, and ornaments. These included such items as flat axes, knives, halberds, and rings. Unalloyed copper is a relatively soft metal, however, and tools and weapons made from this material will blunt quickly. By c. 2200 B.C., metalworkers had learned to alleviate this problem by mixing tin with copper to create bronze. Bronze is a harder metal consisting of approximately 90–95 percent copper and 5–10 percent tin.

Sources of both copper and tin were known and used in the British Isles in the Bronze Age. Copper is found in southwest Ireland, Wales, and the northwest of Scotland, and major sources of tin are located in southwest England. During the Bronze Age it is likely that tin was panned from river gravels, a process that does not leave traces in the archaeological record; our evidence for the exploitation of tin during this period is scanty. Copper, however, was mined, and several Bronze Age copper mines have been identified. In southwest Ireland the copper mines at Ross Island and Mount Gabriel have produced evidence for activity spanning much of the Early Bronze Age (c. 2200–1650 B.C.).

A series of short shafts following veins of mineralized rock into the hillside have been identified at these sites. Stone mauls, wooden picks, and wooden shovels were recovered from the mines at Mount Gabriel, providing evidence for the kinds of tools that would have been used. Once the ore had been won from the rock face and brought to the surface, it was crushed and sorted, allowing the most visibly mineralized pieces to be separated from waste material. The ore was then smelted. No evidence for kilns has been identified at either Mount Gabriel or Ross Island, however, and it is likely that simple bowl fur-

naces (shallow scoops in the ground lined with clay) were employed for this purpose. Mining does not seem to have been carried out on an industrial scale. Calculations indicate that the mines at Mount Gabriel would have produced little more than 15–20 kilograms of copper per year. It seems likely that mining was seasonal work carried out by small groups of people, perhaps at quiet times in the agricultural cycle.

Evidence for the casting of bronze objects is provided by molds, crucibles, and bronze waste. High-status settlements, such as Runnymede in Surrey, have produced particular concentrations of metalworking debris, suggesting that elite groups might have controlled the production of bronze. Stone, ceramic, and metal molds have all been identified. The earliest molds are of one piece, although two-piece molds were introduced by c. 1700 B.C. These molds facilitated the production of more complex and varied forms of bronze objects, including socketed implements. Over time, innovations in bronzeworking facilitated the production of an array of new types of artifact. Such tools as chisels, hammers, gouges, punches, and sickles became common during the Middle Bronze Age (1650–1200 B.C.). Developments in weaponry include spearheads, which appeared at the end of the Early Bronze Age, and swords, which were introduced by c. 1200 B.C. By the Late Bronze Age (1200–700 B.C.), the presence of highly complex and finely crafted items of sheet metal, such as cauldrons, horns, and shields, may indicate the existence of full-time specialist bronzesmiths.

TRADE AND EXCHANGE

Because of the localized distribution of sources of copper and tin, most communities were reliant on trade to acquire metal. The importance of bronze to the Bronze Age economy resulted in a marked increase in the scale of trading activities during this period. Lead isotope analysis of metal objects shows that Ross Island was the main source of copper used throughout the British Isles during much of the Early Bronze Age, although in later centuries communities in southern Britain became more dependent on imported scrap metal from the Continent. Other materials that have been traced to particular sources include amber from the Baltic and jet from east Yorkshire; both materials were used widely for

the production of ornaments in Britain and Ireland. Finished items also were exchanged over long distances. For example, a Middle Bronze Age axe from Bohemia was found at Horridge Common in Devon, and a hoard of bronzes from Dieskau in eastern Germany included an Irish axe of Early Bronze Age date. During the Late Bronze Age evidence for the production of salt at sites near the coast, such as Mucking North Ring in Essex, indicates that staples were exchanged alongside prestige goods. Ideas also traveled. Similarities in the pottery styles used in different areas suggest significant interregional contacts. For example, bowl food vessels from Ireland, southwest Scotland, the Isle of Man, and southwest Wales are extremely similar stylistically, although petrographic analysis argues that they were manufactured from local clays in each region.

There is good evidence for the movement of goods and people by both land and sea. Significant deforestation occurred during the Bronze Age, so that travel by land perhaps became easier than it had been during the preceding Neolithic period. Wooden trackways were constructed to facilitate passage across marshy or boggy land. Some of these were light structures, built purely for small-scale traffic on foot. Others were more substantial and would have been able to accommodate wheeled transport. It is during the Late Bronze Age that the first evidence for wheeled vehicles is found in Britain and Ireland, for example, the block wheel from Doogarymore, County Roscommon. Knowledge of horse riding also spread into these islands at this time, although this activity may have been restricted to high-status people. For example, antler cheekpieces (parts of horse bridles) tend to be found at wealthy settlement sites, such as Runnymede in Surrey.

Over longer distances waterborne transport was a vital means of communication. Dugout canoes fashioned from single oak trunks provided a suitable mode of transport in estuarine and riverine contexts. Seagoing plank-built boats also are known, for instance, from North Ferriby, North Humber-side (fig. 1). Occasionally, shipwrecks give vivid insight into the cargo of such vessels. At Langdon Bay near Dover a cluster of more than three hundred bronze objects was found some 500 meters offshore, although the ship itself had not survived. Many of the items recovered were French, provid-



Fig. 1. Excavation of the Dover boat. The boat was abandoned in a creek near a river over 3,000 years ago. CANTERBURY ARCHAEOLOGICAL TRUST. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

ing evidence for the importation of goods into Britain from abroad.

Although the Langdon Bay shipwreck hints at large-scale and highly organized trading ventures, commercial exchange as we know it today is unlikely to have existed during the Bronze Age. There is little evidence for the presence of a specialist merchant class, for dedicated marketplaces, or for early forms of currency. Instead, most goods would have changed hands as gifts between neighbors, kinsfolk, or chiefly elites—perhaps to forge new friendships or to cement long-standing alliances.

BURIAL PRACTICES

During the Early Bronze Age, the communal mortuary monuments of the Neolithic were replaced by traditions of individual burial with grave goods. Although single burials of Late Neolithic date are known, it was during the Early Bronze Age that this form of mortuary rite became widespread across

much of Britain and Ireland. Funerary practices at this time seem to have been greatly influenced by developments abroad. In many parts of continental western Europe, the so-called Beaker burial rite had become the dominant mortuary tradition by the middle of the third millennium B.C. This rite appears to have been introduced into the British Isles, probably via the Low Countries, around 2500 B.C.

Beaker burials are so called because the dead were accompanied by a pottery beaker, or drinking-vessel, of a distinctive S-shaped profile. Other characteristic grave goods include copper knives and daggers; archer's equipment, such as stone wrist guards and barbed-and-tanged arrowheads made of flint; stone battle-axes; antler "spatulas" (probably used to produce flint tools); and buttons of jet or shale. Usually, the dead were inhumed, their bodies laid on their sides with their legs and arms drawn up, as if asleep. The precise positioning of the body in the grave evidently was important. In northeast Scotland, for example, men were placed on their left

sides, with their heads pointing to the east. Women, however, were laid on their right sides, with their heads oriented to the west. In some cases wooden mortuary houses were erected over the graves.

Beaker burials have produced some of the earliest metal items known from these islands. In the past archaeologists believed that these burials indicated the immigration or invasion of a large group of Beaker folk from abroad, who brought with them the new metalworking technology. Current theories, however, stress that although there is likely to have been small-scale movement of people during this period, knowledge of Beaker mortuary rites probably was acquired through preexisting networks of trade and exchange. For elite groups in the British Isles individual burial with exotic artifacts, such as copper knives, represented an appealing new way of expressing personal status.

Once the practice of individual burial with grave goods had been introduced, local variants of this form of mortuary rite were quick to emerge. In Ireland, for example, very few Beaker burials are known. Instead, single burials were accompanied by indigenous forms of pottery, such as food vessels. Toward the end of the Early Bronze Age, inhumation was replaced by cremation as the dominant mortuary practice. The cremated remains of the dead were collected from the pyre and placed in a ceramic vessel, such as a collared urn or cordoned urn.

Both inhumation and cremation burials were accompanied by grave goods indicative of the social status of the deceased person. The wealthiest Early Bronze Age burials included not only copper or bronze objects, such as daggers and awls, but also ornaments, decorative fittings, and small items of exotic materials, such as amber, jet, faience, and gold. These rich burials have been termed “Wessex burials,” after a region of southern England in which there is a particular concentration. Rich graves are found elsewhere, too. For example, the cremation burial from Little Cressingham, Norfolk, produced two bronze daggers, an amber necklace, a rectangular gold plate with incised decoration, and four other small decorative fittings of gold, including a possible pommel mount for one of the daggers. Such wealthy burials may indicate the presence of a chiefly class whose status depended at least

in part on their ability to acquire prestige goods through exchange.

Round barrows and round cairns were the dominant form of mortuary monument during the Early Bronze Age. Although the mounds raised over Beaker burials usually were small, by the later part of the Early Bronze Age, large and elaborate barrows were being constructed. These barrows could be up to 40 meters in diameter and often were built in several phases. Some have lengthy histories of construction and appear to have been enlarged over successive generations. In many parts of Britain barrows cluster together into cemeteries. Linear arrangements of barrows in such areas as the Dorset Ridgeway hint at the importance of genealogical succession in Early Bronze Age society; the relative positioning of different barrows within a barrow cemetery may have been a means of expressing kinship relationships.

Not all burials were provided with such a marker, however. Some were left unmarked by any form of monument, whereas others were inserted into preexisting mounds. Within individual barrows or cairns archaeologists often distinguish between “primary” and “secondary” burials, that is, between the interment over which the mound originally was raised (the primary burial) and burials that were inserted into the mound at a later point (secondary burials). It has been suggested that people interred in secondary positions within a monument were not of sufficient importance to have a barrow or cairn constructed for them alone. Alternatively, such people may have wished to underscore their links with significant ancestors buried in preexisting monuments.

During the Middle Bronze Age cremation was the dominant mode of treatment of the dead. In some cases burials were grouped together into small, flat cemeteries. Elsewhere, they were inserted into earlier barrows or had their own small, simple mound raised over them. Grave goods accompanied few burials during this period. Some archaeologists see this change in funerary rites as indicating the collapse of Early Bronze Age chiefdoms. It is more likely, however, that status was simply expressed in a different way outside the mortuary arena. During the Late Bronze Age burial rites become archaeologically invisible, and we do not know how the bodies of the dead were disposed of. The discovery of

unburned, disarticulated, and fragmentary human bone on settlement sites, however, may hint that exposure to the elements became the normal mode of mortuary treatment during this period.

SETTLEMENTS

Bronze Age settlements in Britain and Ireland generally were small in scale. There is no evidence for the construction of hamlets or villages. Instead, the settlement pattern is predominantly one of scattered farmsteads, each providing a home for a single nuclear or small extended family group. In most areas the dominant house form was the roundhouse, circular in shape and usually some 6–12 meters in diameter. A central ring of stout timber posts gave support to a thatched roof. The walls were constructed of wattle and daub, although in many upland areas, stone was used. The doorway usually faced east or southeast and often was protected by a porch structure (fig. 2). Hut 3 at Black Patch in Sussex provides interesting evidence for the internal spatial arrangement of activities. A hearth located toward the front of the building was the focus for a range of craft activities. At the back of the house were a number of storage pits as well as a line of loom weights, which may indicate the original location of an upright weaving loom.

Most Bronze Age settlements comprise several roundhouses set within an enclosure formed by lengths of bank, ditch, and palisade. Analysis of the distribution of finds indicates that settlements included a main residential structure along with one or more ancillary structures. The latter provided specialized working areas for a variety of tasks, as well as storage facilities and housing for animals.

The settlement at Black Patch is a good example. At this site five roundhouses were set within small yards defined by lines of fencing. The main residential structure was hut 3, which contains evidence for such activities as the serving and consumption of food, storage of grain, leatherworking, and cloth production. A large number of cooking vessels, along with quern stones and animal bone, were recovered from hut 1, suggesting that this was an area dedicated to food preparation. Both hut 3 and hut 1 had their own water sources, in the form of a small pond. Hut 4 produced evidence for a combination of the activities carried out in huts 3 and 1, but this structure did not have its own pond,

hinting that it may have been the home of a dependent relative of the household head, perhaps a younger sibling or elderly parent. Huts 2 and 5 produced few artifacts and may have been used as shelters for animals. The excavator, Peter Drewett, suggested that there may have been a gendered aspect to the use of space at this site. A razor was found in hut 3, the main residential structure, and two finger rings were recovered from hut 1, the cooking hut. Drewett argues that these finds indicate a male head of household whose wife had her own hut.

During the Late Bronze Age, there is increasing evidence for the development of settlement hierarchies. Hillforts began to be constructed during this period, hinting at the large-scale mobilization of labor for certain projects. Some of these sites appear to have had high-status inhabitants. The hillfort known as Haughey's Fort, in County Armagh, Ireland, was occupied between c. 1100 and 900 B.C. Three concentric ditches enclosed an area of about 340 by 310 meters, inside of which were located several very substantial timber structures. The site produced several small decorative articles of gold, among them, a stud, pieces of wire, and fragments of sheet gold, as well as glass beads and bracelets of bronze and lignite.

In southern England, a category of very rich midden sites can be identified during this period. At Potterne in Wiltshire, a 2-meter-thick deposit of refuse covering approximately 3.5 hectares hints at large gatherings of people at certain times of the year. Much of this midden consisted of cattle dung, barn waste, and domestic refuse, although the site also produced 186 bronze objects, along with decorative items of antler, jet, shale, amber, gold, and glass. Analysis of the animal bones and ceramics recovered attest that feasting activities were carried out on a large scale at Potterne. The accumulation of such large middens may in itself have been an indicator of social status, providing physical evidence for the keeping of large herds of animals, feasting, and craft production.

In eastern England a lower level in the settlement hierarchy may be indicated by a class of sites known as ringworks, or ringforts. These are small, defended settlements enclosed by a circular bank and ditch. They have produced copious evidence for craft-working activities, such as the production of bronze objects; salt; and cloth, although "exotic"

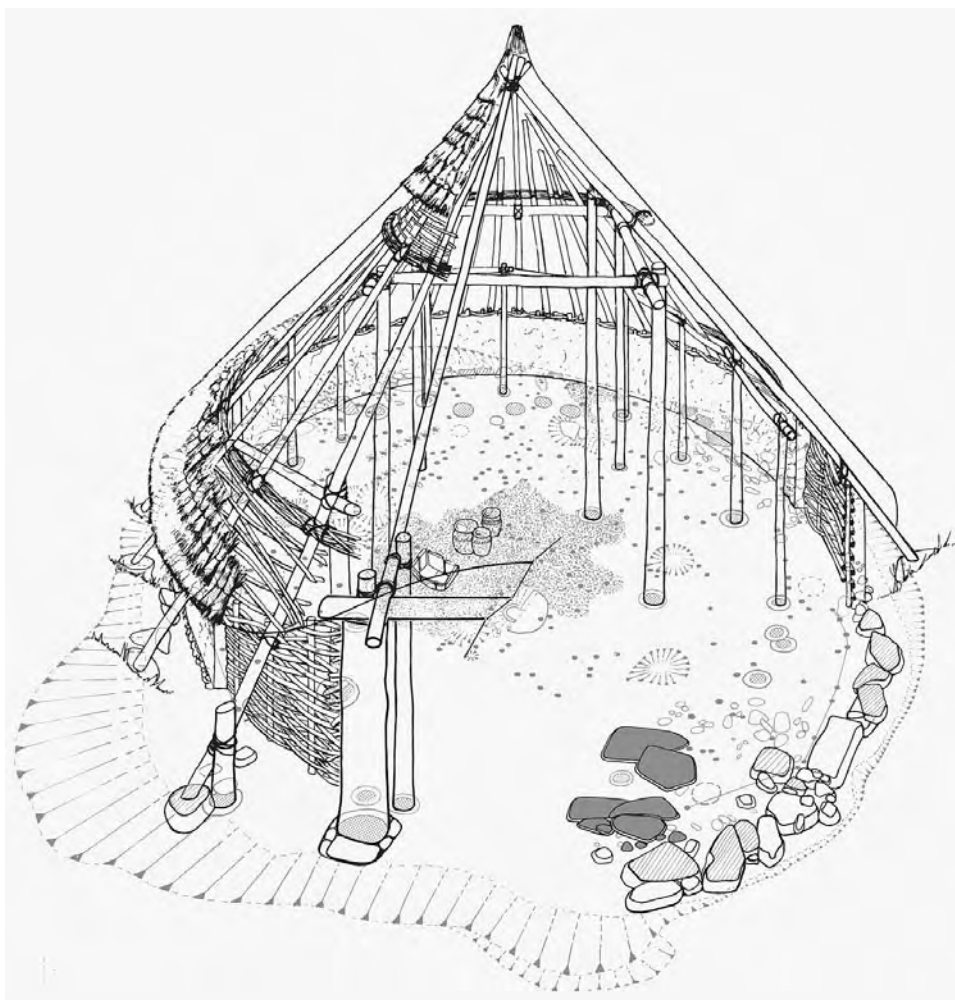


Fig. 2. Artist's reconstruction of house 2222 at Trethellan Farm, Cornwall, showing the different structural elements of the building. COPYRIGHT ROSEMARY ROBERTSON. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

materials, such as amber, gold, or glass, generally are not found on these sites.

THE ECONOMY

Bronze Age farmers practiced mixed agriculture. Cattle and sheep or goats were the most important domestic animals, although pigs also were kept. At some sites horses were present, but usually in very small numbers. Over time there was an increase in the relative proportion of sheep to cattle. The recovery of large numbers of spindle whorls and loom weights from Middle and Late Bronze Age settlements suggests that sheep generally were kept for their wool rather than their meat. Wheat and barley were the main cereals grown, and peas, beans, and lentils also were cultivated. During the Middle and Late Bronze Ages, several new crops were intro-

duced, including spelt wheat, rye, and flax; the latter was a source of fiber and oil. Agricultural implements, such as digging sticks, hoes, and ards, probably were manufactured from wood and therefore rarely survive, although during the Middle and Late Bronze Ages, bronze sickles became relatively common. Ard marks are known from several sites, most famously, Gwithian in Cornwall.

Bronze Age field systems have been identified in several regions. On Dartmoor in Devon a series of field systems covering thousands of hectares of land were constructed around the fringes of the moor. These systems appear to have been carefully laid out during a single planned phase of expansion into the uplands around 1700 B.C. The boundaries themselves were built of earth and stone and enclose

rectilinear fields of varying sizes. Individual boundaries can be up to several kilometers in length. Within each field system, roundhouses, droveways, cairns, and other features can be identified. The roundhouses were not distributed evenly among the various parcels of land, however, but were clustered together into “neighborhood groups,” suggesting a communal pattern of landholding. The large-scale, organized, and cohesive nature of land division on Dartmoor has suggested to some researchers that a centralized political authority must have been responsible for the planning and construction of the boundaries, although the possibility of intercommunity cooperation also has been raised.

In other parts in Britain and Ireland rather different forms of land enclosure can be identified. On the East Moors of the Peak District, for example, small field systems 1–25 hectares in area have been identified. These systems comprise groups of irregular fields of broadly curvilinear form. In contrast to the situation on Dartmoor, such individual field systems were not laid out during a single phase of construction but seem to have grown and developed over time, with new plots enclosed as the need arose. Their scale suggests that they probably represent the landholdings of individual families or household groups. As on Dartmoor, however, the development of new forms of land management may indicate the intensification of agricultural production.

HOARDS

Although settlements and burials sometimes produce bronze objects, the vast majority of Bronze Age metalwork has been recovered either as single finds—unassociated with any other artifacts—or as part of a larger collection (a hoard) of metalwork buried in the ground or deposited in a river, lake, or bog. Metalwork deposited in wetland contexts would not have been easily recoverable, and such finds can be interpreted as a form of sacrifice to gods, spirits, or ancestors. Votive offerings of this type often include particularly fine metalwork. For example, in the Dowris hoard from County Offaly there were bronze buckets, cauldrons, horns, and swords along with many other items, all found in an area of reclaimed bog in the 1820s. More than two hundred items were recovered. It seems unlikely that all of these items were deposited as part of a sin-

gle event. Rather, they may be the material remains of periodic ceremonies at a location that was visited repeatedly over a long period of time. Richard Bradley has made the point that the act of throwing fine metalwork into a river, lake, or bog would have been highly ostentatious and would have enhanced the status of those persons who could afford to sacrifice such valuable items.

In comparison, items buried or hidden in dryland contexts would have been easier to recover. These finds usually are explained in utilitarian terms. Collections of worn, broken, or miscast bronzes often are interpreted as “smiths’ hoards”—scrap metal accumulated for recycling into new artifacts. This type of hoard can include ingots, waste metal, and fragments of crucibles and molds. At Petters Sports Field in Surrey, seventy-eight bronze objects, among them, numerous broken items and other scrap metal, were buried in two small pits cut into the upper silts of a Late Bronze Age ditch. This material had been sorted carefully: the size and composition of the scrap metal from each of these deposits was different, suggesting that the two collections had been intended for recycling into different types of object.

Some dryland hoards have produced several identical items, perhaps cast from the same mold, along with objects that do not appear to have been used. Such hoards often have been interpreted as “merchant’s hoards”—the stock of a trader who, for one reason or another, was unable to recover this material from its hiding place. Other hoards consist of a single set of tools or ornaments probably belonging to one person. For example, the Mount-rivers hoard from County Cork comprised two socketed axes, a bronze penannular bracelet, a string of amber beads, and two gold dress fasteners. The owners of such “personal hoards” may have hidden them for safekeeping in times of unrest.

SOCIETY AND POLITICS

Many archaeologists have argued that the appearance of rich individual burials during the Early Bronze Age indicates an increase in social stratification. Burials accompanied by items of gold, amber, faience, and the like may signify the emergence of a chiefly class. Undoubtedly, the development of metalworking and the associated increase in trade and exchange played a significant role. Metal, an

eye-catching and adaptable material, provided novel ways of displaying personal status. Control over the distribution of prestige goods and the materials from which they were produced would have facilitated the accumulation of wealth by particular people.

Rich burials had disappeared by the end of the Early Bronze Age. This does not indicate a return to a more egalitarian political order, however. High-quality metalwork continued to be produced. During the Middle and Late Bronze Ages, it was deposited into rivers, lakes, and bogs as part of the conspicuous consumption of wealth by high-status persons. The Late Bronze Age saw the development of a distinct settlement hierarchy. High-status settlements, such as Runnymede in Surrey, furnish copious evidence for metalworking and other craft activities, as well as exotic items imported from distant parts of Britain and beyond, indicating that control over production and exchange continued to be important.

See also **Trackways and Boats** (vol. 1, part 4);
Stonehenge (vol. 2, part 5).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Barnatt, J. "Bronze Age Settlement on the East Moors of the Peak District of Derbyshire and South Yorkshire." *Proceedings of the Prehistoric Society* 53 (1987): 393–418.
- Barrett, John C. "Mortuary Archaeology." In *Landscape, Monuments and Society: The Prehistory of Cranborne Chase*. Edited by John C. Barrett, Richard Bradley, and Martin Green, pp. 120–128. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1991.
- Bradley, Richard. *The Passage of Arms: An Archaeological Analysis of Prehistoric Hoards and Votive Deposits*. Oxford: Oxbow Books, 1999.
- . *The Social Foundations of Prehistoric Britain: Themes and Variations in the Archaeology of Power*. London: Longman, 1984.
- Clarke, David V., Trevor G. Cowie, and Andrew Foxon. *Symbols of Power at the Time of Stonehenge*. Edinburgh: National Museum of Antiquities of Scotland, 1985.
- Cooney, Gabriel, and Eoin Grogan. *Irish Prehistory: A Social Perspective*. Dublin: Wordwell, 1994.
- Darvill, Timothy. *Prehistoric Britain*. London: Batsford, 1987.
- Drewett, P. "Later Bronze Age Downland Economy and Excavations at Black Patch, East Sussex." *Proceedings of the Prehistoric Society* 48 (1982): 321–400.
- Fleming, Andrew. *The Dartmoor Reaves: Investigating Prehistoric Land Divisions*. London: Batsford, 1988.
- Lawson, Andrew. *Potterne 1982–5: Animal Husbandry in Later Prehistoric Wiltshire*. Salisbury, U.K.: Trust for Wessex Archaeology, 2000.
- Mallory, J. P. "Haughey's Fort and the Navan Complex in the Late Bronze Age." In *Ireland in the Bronze Age*. Edited by John Waddell and Elizabeth Shee-Twohig, pp. 73–86. Dublin: Stationery Office, 1995.
- Muckleroy, K. "Two Bronze Age Cargoes in British Waters." *Antiquity* 54 (1980): 100–109.
- Needham, S. "The Structure of Settlement and Ritual in the Late Bronze Age of South-East Britain." In *L'habitat et l'occupation du sol à l'Âge du Bronze en Europe*. Edited by C. Mordant and A. Richard, pp. 49–69. Paris: Éditions du Comité des Travaux Historiques et Scientifiques, 1993.
- Needham, Stuart, and Tony Spence. *Runnymede Bridge Research Excavations. Vol. 2, Refuse and Disposal at Area 16 East Runnymede*. London: British Museum Press, 1996.
- Northover, J. P., W. O'Brien, and S. Stos. "Lead Isotopes and Metal Circulation in Beaker/Early Bronze Age Ireland." *Journal of Irish Archaeology* 10 (2001): 25–47.
- O'Brien, William. *Bronze Age Copper Mining in Britain and Ireland*. Princes Risborough, U.K.: Shire Archaeology, 1996.
- Parker Pearson, Michael. *English Heritage Book of Bronze Age Britain*. London: Batsford/English Heritage, 1993.
- Waddell, John. *The Prehistoric Archaeology of Ireland*. Galway, Ireland: Galway University Press, 1998.
- Wright, Edward. *The Ferriby Boats: Seacraft of the Bronze Age*. London: Routledge, 1990.

JOANNA BRÜCK

STONEHENGE

Stonehenge in Wiltshire, England, is a unique Neolithic monument that combines several episodes of construction with various monument classes. The final monument, as seen in the early twenty-first century, represents an extraordinary level of sophistication in design, material, construction, and function rarely found at other prehistoric sites in Europe. Stonehenge evolved slowly over a millennium or longer and was embellished and rebuilt according to changing styles, social aspirations, and beliefs in tandem with the local political landscape of Wiltshire. The various stages, which archaeology identi-

fies in three main phases and at least eight constructional episodes, link closely with monument building and developments seen elsewhere in Britain and Europe (fig. 1).

Stonehenge began its development in the early third millennium B.C., a period of transition between the earlier Neolithic, with its monuments of collective long barrows and communal causewayed enclosures, and the later Neolithic world of henges, avenues, ceremonial enclosures, circles, and megalithic monuments. Across Britain and western Europe, this period signaled the closure of many of the megalithic tombs and seems to indicate changes in society, from small-scale, apparently egalitarian farming groups to more hierarchical and territorially aware societies. Burial especially reflected these changes, with the abandonment of collective rites and the emergence over the third millennium B.C. of individual burials furnished with personal ornaments, weapons, and tools. Landscape also showed changes, including more open landscapes cleared of trees, growing numbers of settlements, and an apparent preoccupation with the creation of ceremonial and monumental areas incorporating numerous sites within what is described as “sacred geography,” or monuments arranged intentionally to take advantage of other sites and views, creating an arena for ceremonial activities.

Toward the end of the third millennium B.C., the later Neolithic and Bell Beaker periods evidenced increasing numbers of individual burials and ritual deposits and the growing use of megalithic stones and building of henges. Early metal objects, first of copper and then of bronze and gold, appeared in burials, and these items have close parallels with material developments in western Europe and across the British Isles. The quest for metals, with a related rise in interaction between groups, is reflected in rapidly changing fashions in metalwork, ornaments, and ritual practices. Wessex and its so-called Wessex culture lay at the junction between the metal-rich west of Britain and consumers in central eastern Britain and Europe. Through political, ritual, and economic control, these communities acquired materials and fine objects for use and burial in the tombs of elites on Salisbury Plain and the chalk lands of southern Britain.

The main building phases of Stonehenge reveal the growing importance of the Stonehenge area as

a focus for burial and ritual. Earlier sites either were abandoned or, as in the case of Stonehenge, were massively embellished and rebuilt; many other very large and prominent monuments were located within easy sight of Stonehenge. Geographic Information Systems studies suggest the Stonehenge was visible to all its contemporary neighbors and thus strategically located at the center of a monumental landscape. The significance of its location may stem from Stonehenge’s special function as an observatory for the study of lunar and solar movements. Without doubt, the later phases of Stonehenge’s construction focused on the orientation of the structures, which aligned with observations of the solstices and equinoxes, especially the rising of the midsummer and midwinter sun. Few other prehistoric sites appear to have had comparable structures, although several were observatories, such as the passage graves at Maes Howe on Orkney, Newgrange (rising midwinter sun) and Knowth in County Meath, Ireland, and many of the stone circles across Britain and Ireland.

CONSTRUCTION SEQUENCE AND CHRONOLOGY

Stonehenge was constructed over some fifteen hundred years, with long periods between building episodes. The first stage, c. 2950–2900 B.C., included a small causewayed enclosure ditch with an inner and outer surrounding bank, which had three entrances (one aligned roughly northeast, close to the present one). At this time, the construction of the fifty-six Aubrey Holes probably took place; these manmade holes filled with rubble may have supported a line of timber posts. Deposits and bones were placed at the ends of the ditch, signifying ritual activity. At the same time, the Greater and Lesser Cursus monuments, termed “cursus” after their long, linear form, suggestive of a racetrack, were constructed to the north of the Stonehenge enclosure. Some 4 kilometers north, the causewayed enclosure of Robin Hood’s Ball probably was still in use. The surrounding landscape was becoming increasingly clear of tree cover, as farming communities continued to expand across the area. Survey has identified many potential settlement sites.

The second phase of building took place over the next five hundred years, until 2400 B.C., and represented a complex series of timber settings

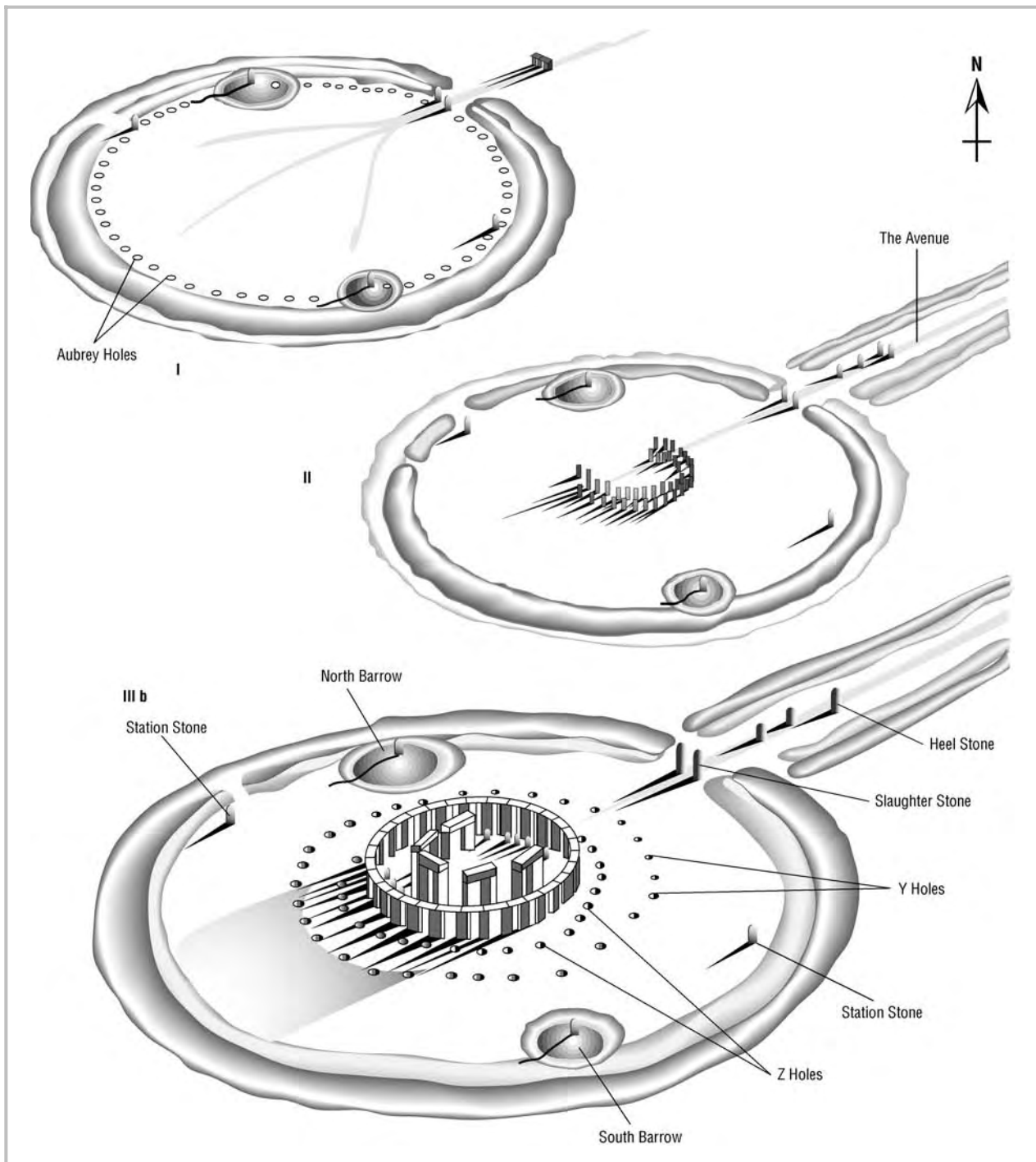


Fig. 1. Phases in the construction of Stonehenge. REDRAWN FROM [HTTP://ZEBU.UOREGON.EDU/~JS/AST122/IMAGES/STONEHENGE_MAP.JPG](http://zebu.uoregon.edu/~js/AST122/IMAGES/STONEHENGE_MAP.JPG).

within and around the ditched enclosure. Subsequent building has obscured the plan, but the northeastern entrance comprised a series of post-built corridors that allowed observation of the sun and blocked access to the circle. The interior includ-

ed a central structure—perhaps a building—and a southern entrance with a post corridor and barriers. Cremations were inserted into the Aubrey Holes and ditch, along with distinctive bone pins. During this phase a palisade was erected between Stone-

henge and the Cursus monuments to the north, dividing the landscape into northern and southern sections. To the east, 3 kilometers distant, the immense Durrington Walls Henge and the small Woodhenge site beside it, incorporating large circular buildings, seem to have represented the major ceremonial focus during this period.

The third and major phase of building lasted from 2550–2450 to about 1600 B.C., with several intermittent bursts of construction and modification. The earth avenue was completed, leading northeastward from what was by then a single northeastern entrance. Sight lines focused on two stones in the entrance area (the surviving Heel Stone and another now lost) that aligned on the Slaughter Stone and provided a direct alignment to the center of the circle. Four station stones were set up against the inner ditch on small mounds, forming a quadrangular arrangement around the main circle.

The first stone phase (stage 3i) was initiated with the erection of bluestones in a crude circle (at least twenty-five stones) at the center of the henge, but lack of evidence and the subsequent removal of the stones leave the form of the possibly unfinished structure unclear. It was followed (stage 3ii), c. 2300 B.C., by the erection of some 30 huge (4 meters high) sarsen stones, capped and held together by a continuous ring of lintels, in a circle enclosing a horseshoe-shaped inner setting of 10 stones 7 meters high. These were “dressed,” or shaped, in situ with stone mauls (hammers).

This arrangement was further modified with the insertion of bluestone within the sarsen circle (stage 3iii), but it was dismantled and rearranged by c. 2000 B.C. (stage 3iv), and more than twenty of the original stones probably were dressed and set in an oval around the inner sarsen horseshoe. Another ring of rougher bluestones was assembled between this and the outer sarsen circle, and an altar stone of Welsh sandstone was set at the center. Between 1900 and 1800 B.C. there was further rearrangement (stage 3v) of the bluestone, and stones in the northern section were removed. A final stage (stage 3vi) saw the excavation of two rings of pits around the main sarsen circle—the so-called Y and Z Holes, which may have been intended for additional settings. Material at the bases dates to c. 1600 B.C., and several contained deliberate deposits of antler. In

parallel with these final phases of rebuilding, Stonehenge became the main focus of burial for the area, with about five hundred Bronze Age round barrows, some of which contain prestigious grave goods.

RAW MATERIALS AND DEBATES

The raw materials that comprise Stonehenge were selected deliberately and transported over great distances, which suggests that the materials themselves were symbolically important. The sarsen stone that forms the main massive trilithons and circle derived from areas north and east of Salisbury Plain, some 20 to 30 kilometers distant. Sarsen is a very hard Tertiary sandstone, formed as a capping over the Wiltshire chalk and dispersed as shattered blocks over the Marlborough Downs and in the valleys. The shaping of this extremely hard material at Stonehenge represents a remarkable and very unusual exercise for British prehistory, when stones generally were selected in their natural form and utilized without further work. The bluestones have long been the focus of discussion, since they derive only from the Preseli Mountains of Southwest Wales, located 240 kilometers from Salisbury Plain. Collectively, the stones are various forms of dolerite and rhyolite, occurring in large outcrops. Many theories have been proposed, and in the 1950s Richard Atkinson demonstrated the ease by which these quite small stones could be transported by raft to the Stonehenge area. Later geological study suggested that glacial ice probably transported considerable quantities of bluestone in a southeasterly direction and deposited it in central southern Britain.

The debate continues, but the carefully selected shape and size of the bluestones at Stonehenge seem to indicate that it would have been difficult to find so many similar stones deposited by natural agencies in Wiltshire. One theory suggests that the original bluestones were taken wholesale from an existing circle and removed to Stonehenge, perhaps as tribute or a gift. Other materials also have been found at Stonehenge, including the green sandstone altar stone, which may derive from the Cosheston Beds in southern Wales. Other local sites, such as West Kennet Long Barrow, include stone selected some distance away, such as Calne (Wiltshire) limestone. The interesting and complex dispersal of exotic stone axes and flint from early in

the Neolithic further supports the idea that exotic materials were highly prized and had special symbolic properties.

SURROUNDING LANDSCAPE AND SITES

The landscape surrounding Stonehenge is a dry, rolling chalk plateau, with the broad Avon Valley and its floodplain to the east. The valley areas were attractive to early settlement, but perhaps because of its bleakness and lack of water, the area immediately surrounding Stonehenge was little settled. The special ritual status afforded the location also may have deterred settlement over much of prehistory. Initially (4000–3000 B.C.), the landscape at the beginning of the Neolithic was heavily wooded, and clearances made by early farmers were the main open spaces. By the transition from the earlier to the later Neolithic, c. 2900 B.C., it seems that well over half the landscape was open, and monuments such as the *Cursus* were widely visible. Over the next millennium, increasing clearance reduced tree cover to belts of woodland around the edge of the Avon Valley and sparse scrub, allowing Stonehenge and the surrounding monuments to be visible one from another and to gain prominence in a largely manmade landscape.

Late Mesolithic activity has been identified in the parking area of Stonehenge, where four large postholes were located. They may have demarcated an early shrine, but a relationship to activity more than four thousand years later seems remote. The two-ditched causewayed enclosure of Robin Hood's Ball represents the earliest major site in the Stonehenge landscape in the early fourth millennium B.C., alongside some ten or more long barrows in the immediate area. Such a concentration is typical of these ceremonial foci and is repeated around other causewayed enclosures. Other sites developed over the late fourth and third millennia B.C., including an enclosure on Normanton Down, which may have been a mortuary site. Contemporary with the building of the enclosure in Stonehenge phase I is the Coneybury Henge located to the southeast. It was small and oval-shaped and contained settings of some seven hundred wooden posts arranged around the inner edge and in radiating lines around a central point. Its ditches contained grooved-ware pottery, and, significantly, among the animal bone de-

posits was a white-tailed sea eagle, a rare bird never found inland, so its placement would appear to be intentional and ritual.

To the west of Stonehenge lies another very small henge, only about 7 meters in diameter—the Fargo Plantation, which surrounded inhumation and cremation burials. Such concerns also were reflected at Woodhenge, located 3 kilometers north-east of Stonehenge, where the central focus is on the burial of a child with Bell Beaker grave goods, who might have been killed in a ritual sacrifice. The site formed the ditched enclosure of a large structure—probably a circular building supported on six concentric rings of posts. Immediately north lies Durrington Walls, the second largest of all the henges of Britain, with a maximum diameter of 525 meters and covering some 12 hectares within an immense ditch and bank. Only a small linear area of this site had been investigated before road building took place, but this study revealed two more large, wooden, circular buildings. A great quantity of grooved-ware pottery was found together with animal remains and fine flint, suggesting offerings had been placed in the ditch and at the base of the timber posts. The henge sites all seem to have been occupied until the end of the third millennium. The Early Bronze Age saw an increasing emphasis on burial landscapes and the construction of monuments.

Over the course of only half a millennium, the five hundred or so round barrows were constructed in groups at prominent places in the Stonehenge landscape. Dramatic locales, such as the King Barrow Ridge, were chosen for linear cemeteries of as many as twenty large, round barrows. Another example, Winterbourne Stoke, west of Stonehenge, was the site of an earlier long barrow. To the south of Stonehenge, the Normanton Down cemetery, with more than twenty-five barrows, included very rich burials, such as Bush Barrow. Excavations at many sites in the nineteenth century emptied the tombs and destroyed much of the evidence; nevertheless, much artifactual information was gathered. This information formed the basis of studies by Stuart Piggott and others that helped define the Wessex culture of the Early Bronze Age, which lasted from c. 1900 to 1550 B.C. Corpses were inhumed in burial pits accompanied by collared urns, a variety of small vessels used for offerings and incense, and per-

sonal ornaments, which sometimes were made of valuable amber, shale, copper, gold, and jet. Many of the finest objects were fashioned from exotic materials, some of which have electrostatic properties (materials that can take an electrical charge and spark, such as amber and coal shale). Bronze weapons and tools, including daggers and axes, were buried with the dead and provide a means of relative dating and sequencing. The goldwork of the Wessex tombs is especially distinctive, with linear geometric patterns incised into sheets of hammered gold. Particularly rich burials are known from Bush Barrow and Upton Lovell as well as farther afield.

As the Bronze Age developed, the focus on Stonehenge waned, and by the middle of the second millennium B.C. both the monument and its surrounding cemeteries were abandoned. Cremation cemeteries took the place of barrow cemeteries, and fields and settlements replaced earthwork monuments. These changes have not been fully explained, but it seems that the availability of metal tools and weapons through increased interaction across wide areas of Britain and Europe, together with growing populations and more productive agriculture, reduced the significance of ritual in megalithic sites and their calendar observations.

OTHER HENGES AND STANDING STONE MONUMENTS

Stonehenge is a comparatively small henge site and, with its curious inner bank and outer ditch, one of a small, rare group within the eight different henge forms that have been identified. Most henges have outer banks and inner ditches, crossed by one to four causewayed entrances. With the largest henges spanning 500 meters in diameter, Stonehenge measures only 110 meters; clearly, its size is not a significant factor. Stonehenge's ceremonial complex of sites is repeated as a distinctive "module" elsewhere in Neolithic Britain. At Avebury, Dorchester, Cranborne Chase, the Thames area, and the Fenland, similar associations of successive enclosures, barrows, monuments, and henges have been documented. In the uplands, tor (high granite outcrop) enclosures seem to represent comparable ceremonial foci, and elsewhere in Britain and Ireland, pit enclosures, palisade sites, and cursus and other structures similarly cluster around concentrations of early burials and megalithic tombs. Research shows that

the distribution of these complexes is related closely to the parent rock and draws on local traditions. Eastern Britain tended toward monuments built of ditches and pits, earth, wood, and gravel, whereas the rockier north and west invariably made use of local stone, with fewer attempts to excavate deep ditches. Common to all areas was construction of manmade landscapes of ritual significance, focused on a series of ceremonial sites.

The use of megalithic stones in monument building was adopted from the beginning of tomb building in the west and north of Britain, soon after 3900–3800 B.C. Megalithic cemeteries, such as Carrowmore and Carrowkeel in County Sligo, Ireland, employed large boulders and stones in early passage graves. The use of large stones in other types of ceremonial monuments is difficult to date, as the complex succession of Stonehenge demonstrates, but it seems likely that standing stones became common as ceremonial markers and components of structures during the first half of the third millennium B.C. For example, the stone circles at Avebury in Wiltshire, Stanton Drew in Somerset, Arbor Low in Derbyshire, the Ring of Brodgar on Orkney, Calanais on Lewis, or the Grange circle in Limerick, Ireland, seem to have been constructed in the second half of the third millennium B.C., in the Late Neolithic, with additions in the Bronze Age. Beaker burials inserted at the base of some standing stones show that these structures were erected before the end of the third millennium B.C. Many of the stone circles of the west of Britain, Ireland, Wales, and Scotland—such as Machrie Moor on Arran (an island off the west coast of Scotland)—and the recumbent stone circles of northeastern Scotland—such as Easter Aquhorthies—date from the earlier Bronze age, contemporary with the final stages of Stonehenge. Although local practices clearly continued in remote areas, the use and construction of stone-built circles, rows, alignments, and individual menhirs seem to have faded in the mid-second millennium B.C.

The range of megalithic structures across the British Isles is varied and often regional in distribution. In Scotland complexes of stone rows, often in elaborate fanlike arrangements, as at Lybster in Caithness, appear to have had observational functions. Similarly, the concentrations of stone rows in southwestern England and Wales represent align-

ments on major focal points, such as barrows and ceremonial sites. The equivalent structures in the lowlands and in eastern Britain are represented by earth avenues and post alignments, both of which are found at Stonehenge and many other sites that have been identified through aerial photography.

The interpretation of Stonehenge and thus, by association, many of the other stone-and-earth ceremonial complexes across Britain suggests that these monuments were focused on mortuary, death, ancestral, and funerary concerns. Barrows, deposits, stone and timber structures, and ritual activity indicate dimensions of a spiritual and symbolic worldview. Analysis has indicated that the use of stone was itself symbolic of the dead, whereas the living were represented by wood and earth.

See also **The Origins and Growth of European Prehistory** (vol. 1, part 1); **Ritual and Ideology** (vol. 1, part 1); **The Megalithic World** (vol. 1, part 4); **Avebury** (vol. 1, part 4).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Chippindale, Christopher. *Stonehenge Complete*. London: Thames and Hudson, 1983.
- Cleal, Rosamund M. J., K. E. Walker, and R. Montague. *Stonehenge in Its Landscape: Twentieth-Century Excavations*. London: English Heritage, 1995.
- Cunliffe, Barry, and Colin Renfrew. *Science and Stonehenge*. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1997.
- Malone, Caroline. *Neolithic Britain and Ireland*. Stroud, U.K.: Tempus, 2001.
- Piggott, Stuart. "The Early Bronze Age in Wessex." *Proceedings of the Prehistoric Society* 4 (1935): 52–106.
- Richards, Julian. *The English Heritage Book of Stonehenge*. London: Batsford, 1991.
- . *The Stonehenge Environs Project*. London: Historic Buildings and Monuments Commission for England, 1990.
- Souden, David. *Stonehenge: Mysteries of the Stones and Landscape*. London: Collins and Brown, 1987.
- Woodward, Ann. *British Barrows: A Matter of Life and Death*. Stroud, U.K.: Tempus, 2000.

CAROLINE MALONE

FLAG FEN

The site at Flag Fen sits in a basin of low-lying land on the western margins of the Fens of eastern En-

gland, at the outskirts of the city of Peterborough. Before their drainage in the seventeenth century the Fens were England's largest area of natural wetland, comprising about a million acres, to the south and west of the Wash. The Fen margins immediately east of Peterborough have been the subject of nearly continuous archaeological research since about 1900. In 1967 the central government designated Peterborough a New Town, which resulted in additional government funding and rapid commercial development. Most of the archaeological research described here took place as a response to new building projects in the last three decades of the twentieth century.

A ditched field system in use from 2500–900 B.C. is situated on the dry land to the west of the Flag Fen basin (an area known as Fengate). A similar field system has been revealed at Northey, on the eastern side of the basin. The fields of Northey and Fengate were defined by ditches and banks, on which hedges were probably planted. The fields were grouped into larger holdings by parallel-ditched droveways (specialized farm tracks along which animals were driven), which led down to the wetland edge. It is widely accepted that the fields at Fengate and Northey were laid out for the control and management of large numbers of livestock, principally sheep and cattle. Animals grazed on the rich wetland pastures of Flag Fen during the drier months of the year and returned to flood-free grazing around the fen edge to overwinter.

The center of the Fengate Bronze Age field system was laid out in a complex pattern of droveways, yards, and paddocks. This area, centered on a major droveway, is interpreted as a communal "marketplace" for the exchange of livestock and for regular social gatherings. The droveway through these communal stockyards continued east until it encountered the edge of the regularly flooded land. Here the line of the drove was continued by five parallel rows of posts, which ran across the gradually encroaching wetland of Flag Fen to Northey, some 1,200 meters to the east.

The five rows of posts are collectively termed the "post alignment." The post alignment was primarily a causeway constructed from timbers laid on the surface of the peat within and around the posts. These horizontal timbers were pegged into position, and their surfaces were dusted with coarse sand



Fig. 1. Timbers of the Flag Fen post alignment (a ceremonial causeway), 1300–900 B.C. COURTESY OF FRANCIS PRYOR. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

and fine gravel to make them less slippery. The up-standing posts, which may have projected more than 3 meters above the causeway surface, would have marked out and drawn attention to the route of the causeway, especially when water levels were very high. Dendrochronology shows the post alignment to have been in use for some 400 years, between approximately 1300 and 900 B.C. About 200 meters west of the Northey landfall, the post alignment crossed a large artificial platform also constructed of timber; both platform and post alignment were contemporary and part of the same integral construction. The nature, use, and development of the platform is as yet poorly understood, but it undoubtedly was linked closely both physically and functionally to the post alignment.

Conditions of preservation were excellent in the wetter parts of Flag Fen, and it was possible to study woodworking in some detail. The earliest timbers were generally of alder and other wet-loving species, but in later phases oak was used too. Wood chips

and other debris suggest that most of the woodworking was of large timbers, and there was little processing of coppice (trees or shrubs that periodically were cut off at ground level), except in the lower levels of the timber construction of the platform. Examination of tool marks indicates that socketed axes were used almost exclusively. There were numerous wooden artifacts and reused pieces, including part of a tripartite wheel, an axle, and a scoop.

Study of the animal bones and pottery showed two distinct assemblages at the edge of Flag Fen (at a site on which a power station subsequently was constructed) and within the wetland proper. One was dominated by domestic material that may have derived from settlement(s) on the fen edge nearby. There was also a significant ritual component at both sites, but principally at Flag Fen; ritual finds included complete ceramic vessels and the remains of several dogs. Some 275 “offerings” of metal objects clearly demonstrated the importance of ritual at

Flag Fen. The bronze and tin objects included weaponry, ornaments, and several Continental imports (mainly from France and central Europe). There was evidence that many of the items had been smashed or broken deliberately, before being placed in the water. A significant proportion of the assemblage could be dated to the Iron Age and must have been placed in the waters around the post alignment long after the structure itself had been abandoned.

The posts of the alignment were interwoven with five levels of horizontal wood, which served as reinforcement, as foundation, and, in places, as a path with associated narrow tracks. The posts, too, served many purposes: as a guide for travelers along the tracks, as a near-solid wall, and as a palisade. There also was evidence of transverse timber and wattle partitions, which may have divided the alignment into segments 5 to 6 meters in length. It is suggested that these segments had an important ritual role. The partitions were emphasized further by the placing of “offerings” or boundary deposits of valuable items, such as weaponry or unused quern stones [hand mills]. It has been suggested that the segments may have been used to structure rituals in some way—perhaps by providing different kin groups with distinctive foci for family-based ceremonies. It has also been suggested that the private or kin group rites at Flag Fen took place at times of the year when the main community stockyards at the western end of the post alignment were the scene of much larger social gatherings.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Chippindale, C., and F. M. M. Pryor, eds. “Special Section: Current Research at Flag Fen, Peterborough.” *Antiquity* 66 (1992): 439–531.
- Pryor, F. M. M. *The Flag Fen Basin: Archaeology and Environment of a Fenland Landscape*. English Heritage Archaeological Report. London: English Heritage, 2001.
- . *Farmers in Prehistoric Britain*. Stroud, U.K.: Tempus Publications, 1998.
- . “Sheep, Stockyards, and Field Systems: Bronze Age Livestock Populations in the Fenlands of Eastern England.” *Antiquity* 70 (1996): 313–324.
- . “Look What We’ve Found: A Case-Study in Public Archaeology.” *Antiquity* 63 (1989): 51–61.
- Pryor, F. M. M., C. A. I. French, and M. Taylor. “Flag Fen, Fengate, Peterborough. I. Discovery, Reconnaissance,

and Initial Excavation.” *Proceedings of the Prehistoric Society* 52 (1986): 1–24.

FRANCIS PRYOR

IRISH BRONZE AGE GOLDWORK

In Europe the earliest evidence for goldworking dates to the fifth millennium B.C. By the end of the third millennium goldworking had become well established in Ireland and Britain, together with a highly productive copper- and bronzeworking industry. While it is not known precisely how the Late Neolithic people of Ireland became familiar with the use of metal, it is clear that it was introduced as a fully developed process. Essential metalworking skills must have been introduced by people already experienced at all levels of production, from identification and recovery of ores through every stage of the manufacturing process.

During the Early Bronze Age, between 2200 and 1700 B.C., goldsmiths produced a limited range of ornaments. The principal products were sun discs, usually found in pairs, such as those from Te-davnet, County Monaghan; plain and decorated bands; and especially the crescent gold collars called *lunulae* (singular *lunula*, “little moon”). These objects were all made from sheet gold—a technique that is particularly well represented by the *lunulae*, many of which are beaten extremely thin. A *lunula* such as the one from Rossmore Park, County Monaghan exemplifies the high level of control and skill achieved by the earliest goldsmiths. During this early period decoration consisted mainly of geometric motifs, such as triangles, lozenges, and groups of lines arranged in patterns. Incision using a sharp tool and repoussé (working from behind to produce a raised pattern) were the principal techniques employed. Sheet-gold objects continued to be produced up to about 1400 B.C.

By about 1200 B.C. there was a remarkable change in the types of ornaments made in the workshops. New goldworking methods were developed, and new styles began to appear. Twisting of bars or strips of gold became the most commonly used technique, and a great variety of twists can be seen. By altering the form of the bar or strip of gold and



Fig. 1. Gold collar from Gleninsheen, County Clare, Ireland. NATIONAL MUSEUM OF IRELAND. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

by controlling the degree of torsion, a wide range of styles could be produced. Torcs (torques) might be as small as earrings or as large as the exceptionally grand pair from Tara, County Meath, which are 37.3 centimeters and 43.0 centimeters in diameter and weigh 385 grams and 852 grams respectively. Many of these ornaments necessitated very large amounts of gold, suggesting that a new source for gold had been discovered. Between 1000 and 850 B.C. there seems to have been a lull in goldworking, as few gold objects can be dated to that time. It may be that this apparent gap is caused by changes in deposition practices, which have made it difficult to identify objects of this period.

The succeeding phase was extremely productive, however, and is noted for the great variety and quality of both goldwork and bronzework. Goldsmiths had developed to a very high degree all the skills necessary to make a range of ornaments that differed in form and technique. The same care and attention to detail were applied to objects large and small, irrespective of whether they required the expenditure of vast quantities of gold or only a few grams.

The goldwork of this period can be divided into two main types. Solid objects, cast or made from bars and ingots, such as bracelets, dress fasteners, and split-ring ornaments (incomplete circular objects for use in the ears, nose, hair, and so forth), contrast dramatically with delicate collars (fig. 1) and ear spoons made of sheet gold. Gold wire also was used in numerous ways but especially to produce the ornaments called lock rings (elaborate, biconical ornaments made from wire probably used as hair ornaments). Thin gold foil, sometimes highly decorated, was used to cover objects made from other metals, such as copper, bronze, or lead. The best example of this technique is the bulla from the Bog of Allen, a heart-shaped lead core covered by a highly decorated fine gold foil. The purpose of this and other similar objects is not fully understood, but they may have been used as amulets or charms.

Decoration is an important feature of Late Bronze Age goldwork. Many different motifs were used to achieve the complicated patterns that often cover the entire surface of the object, consisting of geometric shapes, concentric circles, raised bosses (domed or conical), and rope and herringbone designs. The goldsmiths produced these motifs through combinations of repoussé and chasing, stamping with specially made punches, as well as incising the surface of the gold.

Knowledge of Bronze Age goldwork from Ireland is largely dependent on the discovery of groups of objects in hoards. At least 160 hoards of the Late Bronze Age have been recorded from Ireland. Several different types of hoards have been found, including founders' hoards consisting of scrap metal, merchants' hoards containing objects for trade, and ritual or votive hoards deliberately deposited with no intention and, in many cases, no possibility of recovery. Hoards can contain tools, weapons, and personal ornaments using bronze, gold, and amber. Where tools and weapons occur together with ornaments or jewelry, it may be that they represent the personal regalia of an individual. In Ireland there is little or no evidence from burials to show how or by whom certain ornaments were worn.

The number of spectacular discoveries from bogs suggests that the people of the Bronze Age, particularly during its later phases, regarded them as special places. In the eighteenth century a remarkable series of discoveries was made in the Bog of

Cullen in County Tipperary. Very many bronze and gold objects were found during turf cutting over a period of about seventy years. Only one gold object can be positively identified from the Bog of Cullen. It is a decorated terminal, the only surviving fragment of a once magnificent dress fastener. This is one of a series of exceptionally large objects weighing up to 1 kilogram apiece.

A large hoard of gold ornaments found in 1854 in marshy ground close to a lake at Mooghaun North, County Clare, contained more than two hundred objects, most of which were melted down. The hoard consisted mainly of bracelets but also included at least six gold collars and two neck rings. It is difficult to explain the reason for the deposition of such a huge wealth of gold. Its discovery close to a lake suggests that it was a ritual deposit.

During the Bronze Age, Irish goldsmiths did not function as an isolated group of specialist craftspeople on the western shores of Europe. While they maintained links with Britain and Europe, drawing some of their inspiration from trends that were cur-

rent abroad, they always imparted a characteristically Irish style to each product. At the same time they likewise expressed their individuality and creativity by producing gold ornaments that are unparalleled elsewhere.

See also **Bronze Age Britain and Ireland** (vol. 2, part 5); **Jewelry** (vol. 2, part 7); **Early Christian Ireland** (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Armstrong, Edmund Clarence Richard. *Catalogue of Irish Gold Ornaments in the Collection of the Royal Irish Academy*. Dublin: National Museum of Science and Art, 1933.
- Cahill, Mary. "Before the Celts—Treasures in Gold and Bronze." In *Treasures of the National Museum of Ireland: Irish Antiquities*. Edited by Patrick F. Wallace and Raghall Ó Floinn, pp. 86–124. Dublin: Gill and Macmillan, 2002.
- Eogan, George. *The Accomplished Art: Gold and Gold Working in Britain and Ireland during the Bronze Age*. Oxford: Oxbow Books, 1994.

MARY CAHILL



BRONZE AGE SCANDINAVIA

FOLLOWED BY FEATURE ESSAYS ON:

<i>Bronze Age Coffin Burials</i>	80
<i>Bronze Age Cairns</i>	82

The Bronze Age was first acknowledged as a separate period, and thus as an object of study in 1836, when Christian Jürgensen Thomsen published his famous Three Age System. In this system, the Bronze Age was sandwiched between the Stone Age and the Iron Age. The latter periods built on indigenous materials of stone and iron. The Bronze Age, by contrast, was founded on an artificial, and thus truly innovative, alloy of copper and tin, metals that were traded into metal-poor Scandinavia from metal-rich regions of central Europe. Thomsen's system evidenced an evolutionary logic that was virtually Darwinian, and it became the foundation of all later research, which has progressed mostly in leaps.

The investigation, during the later nineteenth and early twentieth centuries, of numerous extremely well-preserved bodies of persons buried in oak coffins below earthen mounds is of special significance. The thousands of mounds in the cultural landscape thus became linked to the Bronze Age and gave rise to the notion of "the Mound People." Likewise, a growing awareness of the past among peasants and the bourgeoisie, in conjunction with nationalistic trends and more effective agricultural and industrial production, brought increasing numbers of bronze artifacts to museums. Then, in 1885,

Oscar Montelius was able to establish subdivisions of the Bronze Age into periods I–III for the Older Bronze Age and periods IV–VI for the Late Bronze Age. Later scholars have regulated the content of this system, which nonetheless still stands, surprisingly intact. Current research endeavors to improve our understanding of Bronze Age society. These interests have been prompted by improvements in theoretical tools, in absolute chronology, and in methods of data recording and analysis. Scandinavia in the Bronze Age stands as one of the most bronze-rich areas in Europe, despite the fact that every bit had to be imported.

GEOGRAPHICAL FRAMEWORK

The core region of the classic Nordic Bronze Age is southern Scandinavia, consisting of Denmark, Schleswig, and Scania. The adjoining northern European lowland in present-day Germany, as well as southern Norway and south-central Sweden, can be considered to be closely associated. Within this region cultural coherence was mediated through particular practices in the domains of metalwork style and personal appearance, sacrificial and funerary rituals, cosmology, economy, and social conduct and organization. The Bronze Age to us nevertheless is very much the culture of a social elite.

Northern Scandinavia is culturally distinct, if not unaffected by the general Bronze Age idea. The border is fluid and changeable, however. With increasing distance northward, cairns for burial replaced mounds, bronzework becomes rare, and eastern patterns of communication toward Russia, Finland, and the eastern Baltic region become prevalent. Moreover, the focus of pictures carved on rock changes from food production to hunting and fishing, hence also reflecting differences in subsistence economy, ideology, social organization, and probably ethnicity.

CHRONOLOGICAL FRAMEWORK

Among more recent research advances, count the “revolutions” of carbon-14 dating and dendrochronology, which have been applied to Bronze Age materials with astonishingly precise results. The small group of oak-coffin graves, notably, could be dated to a brief period between 1396 and 1260 B.C. The Bronze Age proper commenced c. 1700 B.C. and concluded c. 500 B.C., but metals became socially integrated by about 2000 B.C., during the Late Neolithic period—already a bronze age in all but name. Approximate dates in calendar years are as follows: Late Neolithic I, 2350–1950 B.C.; Late Neolithic II, 1950–1700 B.C.; period I, 1700–1500 B.C.; period II, 1500–1300 B.C.; period III, 1300–1100 B.C.; period IV, 1100–900 B.C.; period V, 900–700 B.C.; and period VI, 700–500 B.C.

Metal was brought in from metal-controlling societies in central Europe. Comparative chronology therefore is the foundation for assessments of social networks and dependencies across Europe. The Late Neolithic period and the earliest Bronze Age (period IA) are contemporaneous with the Danubian and Únětice Early Bronze Age cultures in central Europe (c. 2300–1600 B.C.). Periods IB–II correspond to the Middle Bronze Age Tumulus culture (1600–1300 B.C.). Periods III–V are parallel to the Late Bronze Age Urnfield culture (1300–700 B.C.). The final Bronze Age, period VI, corresponds to the Early Iron Age Hallstatt culture (700–500 B.C.).

THE BEGINNING

The first copper objects appeared in southern Scandinavia in the fourth millennium B.C., along with the consolidation of food production. They presumably were accompanied by experiments with

metallurgy, but the knowledge was not maintained. At the end of the third millennium B.C. metallurgy was reintroduced, together with the northward dispersal of Bell Beaker material cultures; this time, production and use of metals were integrated permanently into culture and society.

The period around 2000 B.C. is an important turning point in the social history of early Europe, with, for instance, innovations in tin-bronze technology and consolidation of social hierarchies. In southern Scandinavia there was a veritable boom in metal use, which was connected to a powerful metal-producing center in the Únětice culture across the Baltic Sea on the river plains of the Elbe-Saale area of Germany. Overt presentation of salient individuals was avoided, perhaps because social practices were rooted in principles of communality. This view finds support in the continued emphasis on sacrificial practices in sacred wetlands; at least, this is where some of most prominent finds of early metalwork have been discovered, notably, the hoards of Gallelose and Skeldal in Jutland and Pile in Scania. There are small signs of an elite group, which appears to have interacted closely with neighboring elites.

It was not until about 1600 B.C. that social structure and the material world shifted manifestly toward patterns that came to characterize the Nordic Bronze Age. Precisely at this time large earthen mounds began to be built, and identities of wealth, rank, age, and gender began to be presented overtly. One probably must understand these presentations as forming part of an aristocratic and highly competitive lifestyle among a social elite and not necessarily in terms of rigid positions of rank within this elite.

Copper as raw material prevailed for a while, but from c. 2000 B.C. objects were more consistently made of bronze, which by 1700 B.C. had become absolutely dominant. Flint and stone, accordingly, were valued less. The local production of metalwork initially was very one-sided: flat axe heads were favorites from the onset and were put to traditional social and practical uses. In about 1600 B.C., however, a much more varied repertoire of bronzework was produced, circulated, and consumed in a variety of new or altered contexts. This variance coincided with the first overt elite manifestations and with the

spread of new social habits, ideas, and fashions—part of the so-called Tumulus culture.

METALS AND SOCIAL INEQUALITY

It has been claimed that in early Europe it was not money that made the world go around, but metals. It is certainly true that when the technique was first discovered and became part of the fabric of social life, European societies were altered in the process. Social hierarchy can exist easily without metals, but it is harder to find profoundly metal-using societies that maintain an egalitarian way of life. The reasons for this are not straightforward, but one can speculate on such factors as differential access to and control of key resources and of exchange networks. Copper ore, in fact, is unevenly distributed geographically, with a few major concentrations, hence providing a natural barrier against uniform circulation of raw copper and finished objects in Europe. Tin is distributed even more narrowly, with only one major source in central Europe, located in the mountains between Saxo-Thuringia and Bohemia.

Craft specialization is another important factor, because it creates divisions in society beyond those of gender and age. Producing items of copper is a difficult and prolonged process, demanding divisions of labor and specialist knowledge and thus an institutionalized system of apprenticeship. The fantastic transformation of raw copper into finished objects is difficult to comprehend and may well have been surrounded by secrecy and mythical imaginations, again a possible medium for gaining control. In a sense, metallurgy is the exercise of power over material and human resources. Social hierarchy and elitism thus walk hand in hand with metallurgical production in metal-poor as well as metal-rich regions of Europe. Most important, however, the metal objects themselves—owing to their inherent attraction and ascribed functions and meanings—actively built social identity. Metal objects soon assumed important roles in creating and maintaining individual identities relating to gender, status, and rank, hence accentuated social distinctions of various kinds.

ORGANIZATION OF METALWORK PRODUCTION

The basic technique employed by the Scandinavian metalworker was casting. Hammering the bronze

rarely was used as a primary technique. This is unlike the situation in central Europe, where, for instance, vessels and shields were beaten into shape rather than cast. Cold and hot hammering nevertheless was not unknown in Scandinavia, indispensable as these techniques are to harden, for instance, the cutting edge of an axe or a sword. Remains of melting and fragments of tuyeres and crucibles of baked clay are known from some settlements, especially from the Late Bronze Age. Composite stone molds of Bronze Age date exist, but their rarity suggests that they usually were made of more perishable clay and sand. This is consistent with details on the bronze objects implying that they often were cast using the lost-wax method (*cire perdue*). In addition, so-called *Überfangsguss* or over-casting was used, for example, when the hilt of a dagger or sword needed to be attached securely to the blade or when repairing broken objects. Skills in metalworking were considerable, and the objects created in bronze were far more complex than earlier objects in copper.

Manufacturing objects of bronze is specialist work and therefore, as mentioned earlier, required divisions of labor within society. The quality of Scandinavian metalwork and remains from the production process suggest that further specialization soon came about: from c. 1600 B.C. there was a division into ordinary metalworkers producing for kin and community and specialist metalworkers retained by the social elite. A patron-supported craft production is suggested by findings in the large period II longhouse at Store Tyrrestrup (Vendsyssel, Denmark). There, unfinished axes had been deposited, together with casting residues, under the floor, close to the fireplace. The smith is a curiously anonymous person throughout the Bronze Age, and this may sustain the interpretation of a patron relationship. In fact, only one burial of a bronzesmith is known, at Galgehøj (Hesselager, Denmark).

THE DEAD AND THE LIVING

Funerary practices are embedded in society as a statement of the way things are or should be. They are performed by the living in memory of the dead and as a mixture of habitual ritual action and social strategy; quite often one aspect dominates the other. Inhumation in stone cists or oak trunks was the dominant burial custom in the Older Bronze

Age, whereas cremation in urns took over in the Late Bronze, with period III as transitional. These two major funerary customs of the Bronze Age broadly reflect the situation in Europe, first in the Tumulus Bronze Age and, from about 1300 B.C., the Urnfield culture. Both probably must be understood as the rapid spread over geographic space of particular social and religious practices among an “international” elite.

In the Older Bronze Age mounds of turf or cairns of stone were erected to cover the inhumed remains of the deceased, who was placed in the coffin wholly dressed and with various accessories, regulated by such parameters as age, gender, profession, and rank. Borum Eshøj near Århus and Hohøj at Mariager Fjord in Denmark and the Bredarör cairn at Kivik in Sweden are examples of large tumuli. The tumulus-covered burials from the Older Bronze Age can have represented only a segment of the population, no doubt chosen among the elite. The new custom of tumulus burial was first used to commemorate certain heroes of war and only later came to incorporate other social identities.

In the Late Bronze Age fewer tumuli were built, but existent ones continued in use as the family burial place, celebrating the recent dead and the ancestors. Small houses sometimes were built at the mound periphery, probably indicating that the corpse lay in state before the cremation ceremony took place. The cremated bones usually were placed in a pottery urn together with a few personal items of bronze. The conspicuous display of the previous period is mostly absent. A large number of urns typically were placed in the side of a tumulus or near it, and it is likely that more people than in previous years received a proper burial. The cremation custom contributed to making people more equal in death, but still the level of wealth varied quite a lot. It therefore is likely that the cremation custom concealed a reality of considerable social inequality. This view is supported by the existence of chieftains’ burials below giant tumuli, notably Lusehøj in the central region of southwestern Fyn and the mound of Håga near present-day Uppsala in central Sweden.

PERSONAL APPEARANCE AND SOCIAL IDENTITY

Material culture, and, in fact, all sorts of cultural consumption, is predisposed to fulfil a social func-

tion: namely, that of legitimating social differences. In the Bronze Age elite identity was signified outwardly through forms of personal appearance that included particular types of dress and personal equipment. Objects of bronze and gold formed an integral part of an aristocratic outfit, which varied according to status, gender, and probably also age. The inhumations of the older Bronze Age reflect ideal social structure within the privileged group of people who received a mound burial. Skeletons, unfortunately, have been preserved only rarely, but the small group of well-preserved oak coffins provides valuable information not least on gender distinctions. In the Late Bronze Age the custom of cremation made it difficult to assess personal appearance and thus the social identities the deceased had maintained in life. Principles of dress and accessories appear to have remained the same throughout the Bronze Age, whereas the style of metalwork changed systematically from period to period, notably with spirals in period IB–II and wavy bands in period V.

The first rich mound burials appeared in period IB, c. 1600 B.C. They commemorated certain persons with a warrior identity, presumably males, as, for instance, at Buddinge (Copenhagen, Denmark) and Strandtved (Svendborg, Denmark). Notably, it was not until period II that females became visible as persons of rank. Early elite warriors carried a sword or dagger, a weapon axe, and sometimes a spearhead or a long pointed weapon for stabbing (fig. 1). Dress accessories of bronze included a dress pin and belt hook and sometimes a frontlet of gold sheet, as well as such personal items as tweezers, palstave (an axe-like implement), or chisel for work and a fishhook. Running spirals quite often adorned the weaponry of period IB, but the real breakthrough of this ornamental style did not occur until period II, when it became especially associated with female trinkets and worship of the sun.

Several hundred burials testify to personal appearances in periods II and III. The small group of oak coffins from the peninsula of Jutland in Denmark is particularly valuable as a source for Bronze Age social life, because they preserve organic materials, such as wood, wool, and antler. These burials contained such personalities as the Egtved Girl, the Skrydstrup Woman, the Mulbjerg Man, the

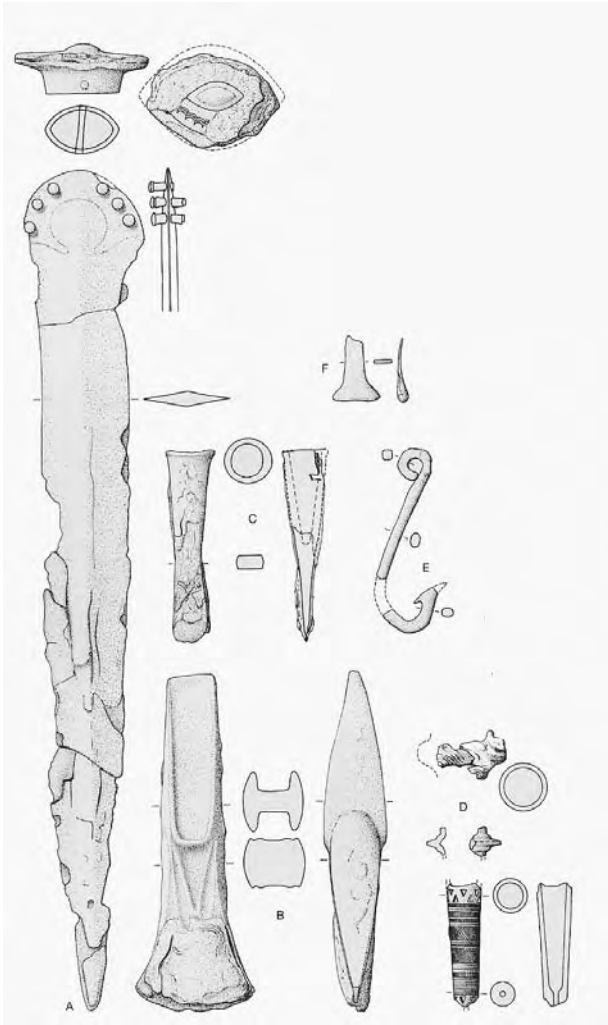


Fig. 1. Warrior's equipment of sword, axe, chisel, pointed weapon, tweezers, and fish hook from mound burial dating to the earliest Bronze Age, c. 1600 B.C., at Strandtved near Svendborg in Denmark. THE NATIONAL MUSEUM OF DENMARK. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

Trindhøj and Borum Eshøj bodies, and the Guldhøj Man.

High-ranking women and men wore woolen dresses of superior quality, including shoes and headdress. Over a belted kiltlike coat the males wore a mantle and, on the head, a round-crowned hat. One or more additional objects of bronze and sometimes of gold accompanied the deceased or completed the dress, among them, arm ring, belt hook, dress pin, fibula (a clasp resembling a safety pin), double buttons, tweezers, razor, dagger, and hafted axe for work or for war. Bronze swords in a finely cut wooden sheath symbolized high male

rank in addition to adulthood and warrior status. The sword was suspended at the waist or arranged diagonally across the chest. Buckets of birch bark, wooden bowls with or without tin nail ornamentation, folding stools of wood with otter skin seats, antler spoons, and blankets of wool and oxhide add to this picture of social superiority.

The female dress seems to have varied according to position within an age cycle, with a major division at the transition to womanhood. The miniskirt of strings worn by the sixteen-year-old girl from Egtved may have shown that she was unmarried. The long skirts worn by the eighteen- to twenty-year-old young woman from Skrydstrup and the middle-aged woman from Borum Eshøj may have signaled their status as married women. Similarly, elaborate hairstyles stabilized by a hairnet or a cap might well be associated mainly with married women. A short blouse with long sleeves, by contrast, appears to have been worn by women of all ages. A spiral-decorated belt plate of bronze—later a belt box—fastened to the stomach with a belt of wool or leather also was nearly a standard dress accessory. Smaller, button-like plates (*tutuli*), fibulae, neck collars, and various rings of gold and bronze for the ears, arms, legs, neck, or hair completed the female dress. Small personal items, such as antler combs and bronze awls and strange objects perhaps carrying magical meanings, sometimes were added to the outfit, contained in a small purse or box or suspended at the belt.

SETTLEMENT AND LANDSCAPE

The sources for subsistence economy notably consist of pollen diagrams, preserved fields, plow furrows, wooden plows, bones of livestock, charred remains of domesticated plants, and tools of stone and metal. Sources for settlement organization include the remains of wooden longhouses, four-post structures, and storage pits in addition to many other fragments of human activities in the cultural landscape. It was only within the last decades of the twentieth century that Bronze Age settlements began to emerge in the archaeological record. Important fieldwork has been undertaken, notably in Thy, on Djursland; in Sønderjylland and southwestern Fyn in Denmark; and in the regions of Malmö and Ystad in Scania. Important sites are Fosie IV near Malmö and Apalle near Stockholm in Sweden.

In addition, there are Højgård in southern Jutland, Bjerre and Legård in Thy, Grøntoft and Spjald in western Jutland, and Hemmed on Djursland, all in western Denmark.

The Bronze Age falls within the Subboreal period, which was on the whole warm and dry. In the settled regions, especially near the coast, the landscape was open, with mounds prominently occupying the top of the low hills. The forested inlands, far from the coast, were only thinly settled. The economy was agrarian, based on the cultivation of cereals in small oval fields close to the settlements and on herds of livestock grazing in nearby pastures. Cow dung probably was collected as manure for the fields. Domestic animals, such as cattle, sheep, and horses, contributed immensely to keeping the land open, as did felling of trees with metal axes for the building of houses, ships, wagons, and burial coffins. The coast rarely was far removed from settlements in the Bronze Age, and fishing is known to have contributed to the basic economy.

The farm usually consisted merely of one wooden longhouse, which in the beginning of period II developed from having two aisles to having three aisles (divided by posts). Longhouses were of a variety of sizes, the largest covering 400 square meters and the smallest about 50 square meters, with a range of intermediate sizes. In analogy with royal buildings of the Late Iron Age, the largest longhouses have been designated “halls” and interpreted as residences of chiefly families, for instance, at Brødrene Gram, Spjald, and Skrydstrup in Jutland (Denmark). Some houses were so well preserved that internal divisions could be observed into a living area with hearth and a barn area with small compartments for the stalling of cattle or horses.

The basic settlement unit was the single farm, consisting of a longhouse and typically also a small, four-posted building, perhaps used for the storage of hay (figs. 2 and 3). The last decades of excavations have demonstrated a predominantly rather dispersed settlement organization, with farmsteads each occupying a micro-territory of a few square kilometers within a larger social and economic macro-territory. Sometimes the family cemetery of mounds is located on the manor; in other cases, the mounds are placed in particular community cemeteries. Macro-territories were separated from each other by

bogs, lakes, streams, and rivers, which were considered liminal places inhabited by spirits and gods.

Excavations often reveal several houses in the same area, but this pattern does not necessarily indicate the existence of a village, as all these houses hardly stood at the same time. Old houses were left to decay when new houses were built. Single farms seem to be a dominant feature, and villages in the form known from the Early Iron Age, with fenced-in clusters of buildings, have so far not been ascertained in the Bronze Age. Still, however, the people occupying the single farmsteads could well have shared some of the routines of daily life and work.

In the Late Bronze Age a settlement hierarchy, with a large central farmstead surrounded by smaller farmsteads, is apparent in one well-examined and very wealthy region in southwest Fyn, with the site of Kirkebjerg as a nodal point. The giant mound of Lusehøj, with its two rich cremation burials from period V, is located nearby, among a group of larger and smaller mounds. A settlement hierarchy may well have existed in the Older Bronze Age, especially in regions with large concentrations of burial mounds. Future research will show whether the hierarchical model is generally applicable to the organization of social space in the Bronze Age.

RITUALS AND COSMOLOGY

The Bronze Age is rich in pictures, relics, and fragments of practices with a ritual character. Together they deliver certain clues to a complex world of myth, cult, and religion, which was entangled with the social world of the elite. One motive, in particular, dominated the cosmology, that is, the journey of the sun across the sky, day and night, throughout the year. This motif formed part of the pictures carved on metalwork and on rock, for instance, in Bohuslän in Sweden. The famous sun chariot from Trundholm Mose in northwest Zealand (Denmark) must be understood as a cult object. The sun disk, with its day-golden and night-dark sides, is pulled by a horse, but the sun horse is placed upon a six-wheeled wagon. The Trundholm chariot probably played a role in religious ceremonies and processions. Through depictions on rock carvings and on bronze razors the sun horse is related to other sacred signs, mainly ships.

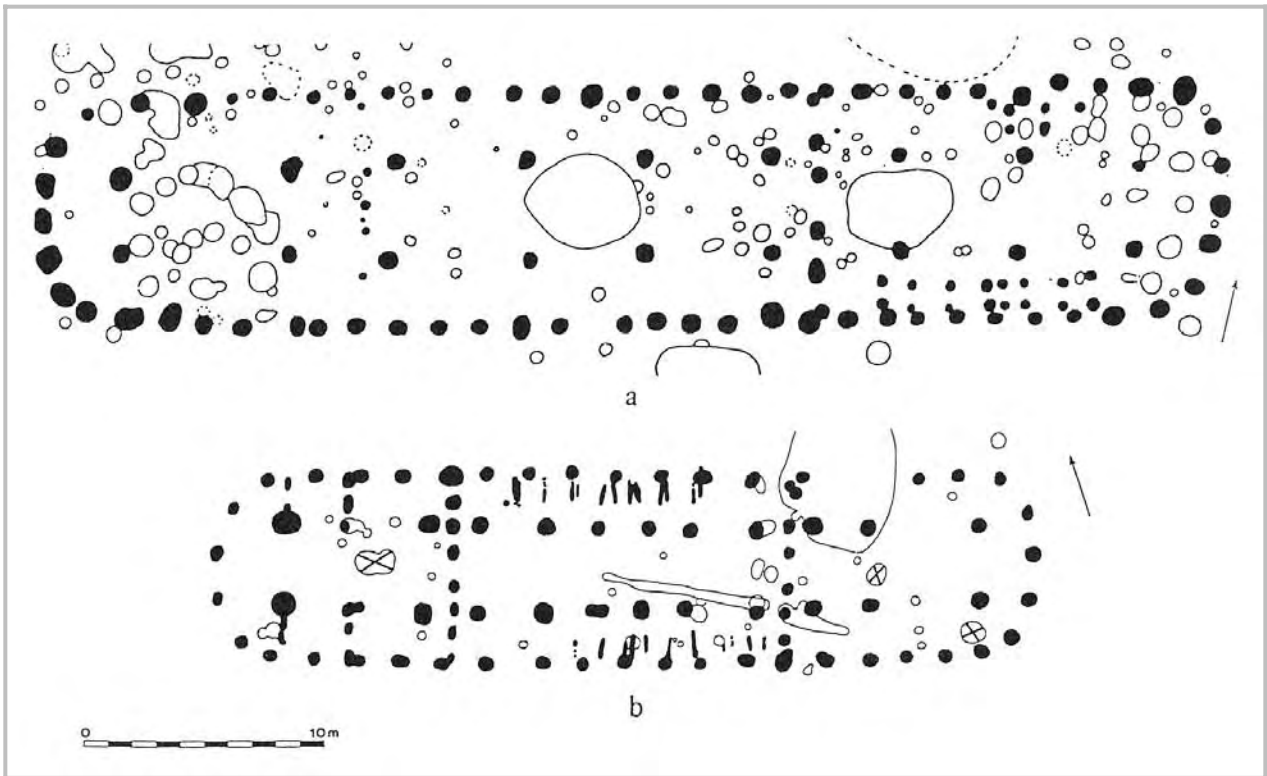


Fig. 2. Plans of three-aisled longhouses from the Danish Period II localities of Brødrene Gram in southern Jutland (upper) and Legård in northwestern Jutland (lower). The Gram house measures 50 × 10 meters with living quarters in the western part and byre in the eastern part. The Legård house is 33 meters long and seems to have accommodated two households, one at each end separated by a barn for stalling of livestock in the center. THE NATIONAL MUSEUM OF DENMARK. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

Feasts with cultic activities, sport games, and processions seem to have taken place regularly, in spring and autumn and at the solstices of winter and summer. They probably also occurred on other occasions, such as when important people died or when war victories were celebrated. The end point of these activities frequently was marked by the deposition in watery places of valuables of bronze and gold as gifts to the gods. The latter often are located at the boundary between settled territories, thus hinting at the communal intention of these sacred depositions. Instead of bronze valuables, ritual killing and sacrifice of humans took place on rare occasions in sacred liminal places thought to be inhabited by spirits and gods. Other offerings of valuables were connected to the settlements; in particular, it was customary to deposit small hoards in a posthole when building a new house. Still other cult activities were carried out in specific houses—cult houses or temples—known from the sites of Sandagergård in Denmark and Kivik and Håga in Sweden.

SOCIAL NETWORKS AND THE END OF AN ERA

Bronze Age elites all over Europe strove to acquire wealth in metals and to possess the newest fashions in dress and metalwork in order to emphasize aristocratic appearances and manners. Much material culture in the Bronze Age can be understood broadly as the international language of an elite, who used it in strategies to maintain and extend authority inside society and to sustain alliances with neighboring elites. Ingots of copper and tin are rare, and this suggests that bronze reached Scandinavia as finished objects that were recycled continuously.

Metals moved across Europe as trade in commodities and exchange of gifts. The means of transport were wagons across land and ships on the great rivers of Europe and onward across the Baltic Sea to Scandinavia. Trackways of stones or wood have been excavated, mostly connecting territories across swampy areas, but linear distributions of tumuli across the landscape indicate the existence of major



Fig. 3. Three-aisled Bronze Age longhouse. Modern reconstruction at Hollufgard in Odense, Denmark. KARSTEN KJER MICHAELSEN, ODENSE CITY MUSEUMS. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

lines of communication, in all likelihood earthen roads. Large ships, horses, and chariots are depicted on rock carvings, supplemented by finds of horse bones in settlements and a few boats and wooden wagons from bogs. Horses' bits and bronze fittings for chariots or wagons occur occasionally in burials and sacrificial hoards.

Some people probably made the great journey to faraway places and, as a result, were able to enhance personal power and prestige on their return. The Bronze Age, however, was not characterized simply by peaceful exchanges of ideas and material goods. Hostile encounters also took place—always with serious implications for combatants and non-combatants alike. The huge number of weapons, some cases of skeletal trauma, and pictorial representations of armor and fighting all suggest recurring warfare.

The end of the Bronze Age in Scandinavia can be explained mainly with reference to the social and

economic situation in central Europe, where there was a crisis in the supply of metal in the ninth and eighth centuries B.C. Before the end of the eighth century in central Europe iron had taken the place of bronze as a common medium of exchange and measure of value, but in Scandinavia this did not happen until a couple of centuries later, even if iron objects began to appear. The rich Nordic Bronze Age slowly faded and came to an end around 500 B.C. Bronze was increasingly short in supply and the “international” elitist network, which depended on bronze for its existence, simply ceased to exist. From 750 to 700 B.C. new political alliances and social networks were in the making, primarily between the dynastic semi-urban Hallstatt kingdoms and Mediterranean city-states. Scandinavia had become a marginalized region outside the mainstream of events.

See also **Bell Beakers from West to East** (vol. 1, part 4); **Bronze Age Coffin Burials** (vol. 2, part 5); **Bronze Age Cairns** (vol. 2, part 5).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Hvass, Steen, and Birger Storgaard, eds. *Digging into the Past: 25 Years of Archaeology in Denmark*. Translated by John Hines and Joan F. Davidson. Copenhagen, Denmark: Royal Society of Northern Antiquaries, 1993.
- Jensen, Jørgen. *Danmarks Oldtid*. Vol. 2, *Bronzealder: 2000–500 f.Kr.* Copenhagen, Denmark: Gyldendal, 2002.
- Kaul, Flemming. *Ships on Bronzes: A Study in Bronze Age Religion and Iconography*. Studies in Archaeology and History 3. Copenhagen, Denmark: National Museum of Denmark, 1998.
- Kristiansen, Kristian. *Europe before History*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1998.
- Larsson, Thomas B. *The Bronze Age Metalwork in Southern Sweden: Aspects of Social and Spatial Organization, 1800–500 BC*. Archaeology and Environment 6. Umeå, Sweden: University of Umeå, 1986.
- Thrane, H. “Bronze Age Settlement in South Scandinavia: Territoriality and Organisation.” In *Experiment and Design: Archaeological Studies in Honour of John Coles*. Edited by A. F. Harding. Oxford: Oxbow Books, 1999.
- Vandkilde, Helle. *From Stone to Bronze: The Metalwork of the Late Neolithic and Earliest Bronze Age in Denmark*. Århus, Denmark: Jutland Archaeological Society and Århus University Press, 1996.

HELLE VANDKILDE

BRONZE AGE COFFIN BURIALS

A small group of Danish oak-coffin burials in earthen mounds contain excellently preserved bodies of men and women, who lived 3,500 years ago. These finds offer an unexpectedly clear glimpse into the life of a Bronze Age social elite. Information exists concerning 85,000 burial mounds in Denmark, and most of them probably date to the Older Bronze Age (1600–1100 B.C.). Of these burials, a mere eighteen thousand mounds have been preserved in the present landscape, and the number, sadly, is decreasing owing to an inadequate modern heritage law. Several hundred burials have been investigated archaeologically, but processes of decomposition usually mean that organic materials, such as textiles, antler, and wood, do not survive the passing of centuries. On this background the survival of some twenty oak-coffin burials with personalities like the Egtved Girl, the Mulbjerg Man, the Skrydstrup

Woman, the Guldhøj Man, and the Trindhøj and Borum Eshøj bodies constitute a veritable miracle. They are on permanent exhibition at the National Museum of Denmark in Copenhagen.

The phenomenon of oak-coffin burials has been known sporadically in Denmark since the early historical period. When archaeology was scientifically consolidated around the middle of the nineteenth century, the true worth of these occurrences was recognized, and professionals began to supervise excavations. Several finds of oak coffins even then were severely damaged, and sometimes lost to the world, as the result of unprofessional undertakings. Up through the twentieth century, insight and knowledge have increased steadily with respect to technical details, the buried persons, and the society of which they once formed a part. All finds of preserved oak coffins are from the peninsula of Jutland, especially its southern and western parts. The same burial custom, however, with interments in large, hollowed-out oak trunks, occur all over southern Scandinavia, including the adjoining parts of Germany.

In relative chronological terms the oak coffins belong to Nordic Bronze Age period II; a few belong to early period III. Apart from having pinpointed each burial to a specific year, dendrochronology has provided the surprising result that these burials took place within a short time span between 1396 and 1260 B.C. Most of them, notably, date to the span 1389–1330 B.C., which means that these persons must have known each other. Some of the burials were looted in the Bronze Age, suggesting that less fortunate people sought the buried riches or that enemies wished to demolish the social identity and status of the deceased.

The generally well-preserved state of the Jutish coffins and their contents can be explained with reference to chemical processes, which may have been broadly recognized and thus intentionally activated. All mounds in question have the same bipartite construction, with a waterlogged bluish and clayey core containing the coffin and a dry outer mantle of turf. A thin, hard layer of iron pan always separated the two parts, sealing the coffin on all sides and thus hindering decay. It is evident that the sealing took place immediately and could have been instigated by watering the clay core prior to building the turf mantle. This may have been the yearning for an

eternal afterlife not unlike what the Egyptians sought to create through the embalming of dead bodies. Holes in the bottom of each coffin point in the same direction, presumably aimed at leading water away from the buried person.

In the year 1370 B.C. a girl about sixteen years old was interred in the hollow of a 3-meter-long oak trunk at Egtved in south-central Jutland. The fully dressed body was placed extended on the back, looking toward the rising sun and wrapped in a large oxhide. When the coffin was opened in 1921, the skeleton had deteriorated because of acidic conditions; however, the skin, nails, and hair were preserved. So was her high-quality woolen dress, consisting of a short blouse with long sleeves and a miniskirt of strings. Her blonde hair was styled in a short-cut fashion, and her body length was estimated to be 1.60 meters. Pieces of cloth were wrapped around the feet. A large bronze belt plate with spiral decoration ornamented her stomach. This plate had been tied to her waist with a belt string, which also held an antler comb. There were bronze arm rings around her wrists, and she also wore an earring. Near her face a small bark box contained personal belongings. At her feet stood a small bucket of birch bark. Upon further investigation, a dried-out substance at the bottom of the bucket turned out to be a kind of honey-sweetened beer. Also at her feet, a small bundle of cloth contained the cremated bone fragments of a five- to six-year-old child, who could not have been her own child. Finally, a blanket of wool covered the body. A flowering milfoil showed that the burial had taken place in the summer. The mound, Storehøj, measured about 4 meters in height and 22 meters in diameter.

At 7 meters in height and 40 meters in diameter, the Eshøj mound stood out from a group of mounds at Borum in eastern Jutland. It had been built over three oak coffins containing a man and a woman, both of middle age, and a young man about twenty to twenty-two years old (probably their son). All of them had been wrapped in oxhides and interred in their finest woolen clothes and with paraphernalia of bronze and wood. Two of these coffins have been dendrochronologically dated to c. 1351 B.C. and 1345 B.C., respectively. The equipment of the woman was similar to that of the Egtved burial, only richer; among the personal belongings were a dagger, a fibula, rings for the neck, fingers,



Fig. 1. Costume of young Danish Bronze Age woman, from Egtved. COURTESY OF THE NATIONAL MUSEUM OF DENMARK. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

and arms, a belt plate, and buttons (so-called *tutuli*), all of bronze. The two men wore loincloths and large kidney-shaped mantles. The older man wore a rounded cap, was clean-shaven, and had manicured hands and nails. The young man carried a wooden sword sheath, which held only a bronze dagger, perhaps because he had not yet earned the right to carry a real sword.

The monumentality and high visibility of the mounds, in addition to the high quality of dress and equipment, leave little doubt that they were reserved for people of high rank. Personal appearance and material culture clearly were very important in building social identities in the domains of gender, age, and rank. The elite built mounds to commemorate their ancestors and to maintain authority in a society with some degree of social mobility. The graded variation in wealth suggests as much. There must have been considerable rivalry within the elite

for the control of power sources, such as bronze. The hectic activities in mound construction are one facet of this rivalry; another is the display of warriorhood among males.

See also **Bronze Age Scandinavia** (vol. 2, part 5).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Alexandersen, V., P. Benneke, L. Hvass, and K. H. Stærmosen Nielsen. "Egtvedpiggen: nye undersøgelser" [The Egtved girl: New investigations]. In *Aarbøger for nordisk oldkyndighed og historie* (1981): 17–47.
- Aner, Ekkehard, and Karl Kerten. *Die Funde der älteren Bronzezeit des nordischen Kreises in Dänemark, Schleswig-Holstein, und Niedersachsen*. Copenhagen, Denmark: Verlag Nationalmuseum, 1973–.
- Boye, Vilhelm. *Fund af Egekister fra Bronzealderen i Danmark*. Copenhagen, Denmark: 1896; reprint, Århus, Denmark: Wormianum, 1986.
- Breuning-Madsen, Henrik, and Mads K. Holst. "Genesis of Iron Pans in Bronze Age Mounds in Denmark." *Journal of Danish Archaeology* 11, nos. 1992–1993 (1995): 80–86.
- Glob, P. V. *The Mound People: Danish Bronze-Age Man Preserved*. 2d ed. Translated by Joan Bulman. London: Paladin, 1983.
- Hvass, Steen, and Birger Storgaard, eds. *Digging into the Past: 25 Years of Archaeology in Denmark*. Translated by John Hines and Joan F. Davidson. Copenhagen, Denmark: Royal Society of Northern Antiquaries, 1993.
- Jensen, Jørgen. *Manden i kisten: Hvad bronzealderens gravhøje gemte* [The man in the coffin: What the Bronze Age mounds concealed]. Copenhagen, Denmark: Gyldendal, 1998.
- Sørensen, M. L. S. "Reading Dress: The Construction of Social Categories and Identities in Bronze Age Europe." *Journal of European Archaeology* 5, no. 1 (1995): 93–114.
- Thomsen, Thomas. *Egekistefundet fra Egtved fra den ældre bronzealder* [The oak coffin find from Egtved from the Older Bronze Age]. *Nordiske Fortidsminder* 2. Copenhagen, Denmark, 1929.
- Vandkilde H., U. Rahbek, and K. L. Rasmussen. "Radiocarbon Dating and the Chronology of Bronze Age Southern Scandinavia." In *Absolute Chronology: Archaeological Europe 2500–500 BC*. Edited by K. Randsborg. Copenhagen, Denmark: Munksgaard, 1996.

HELLE VANDKILDE

BRONZE AGE CAIRNS

Large tumuli for burials, consisting of stones or turf, are widely characteristic of the Scandinavian Bronze Age, c. 1700–500 B.C. Bronze Age tumuli still form a meaningful part of modern cultural landscapes in many regions of Scandinavia, even if the number has decreased drastically since the Bronze Age. A cairn is a tumulus built of rubble stones collected in the vicinity of the burial. A mound, by comparison, is a tumulus built of earth and turf, which has been cut from adjacent grassland. In general, tumuli hardly ever represent an entire population but were burial places for the privileged few.

Mounds and cairns are parallel phenomena with similar functions and meanings. Owing to natural conditions, stone cairns occur primarily in the rocky north of Scandinavia, whereas turf mounds characterize the agricultural lowlands of southern Scandinavia. Zones of overlap exist, however—for example, in the central Swedish lake district. Moreover, mixtures of cairns and mounds occur: it is not altogether unusual to find a cairn with a thin external layer of turf or a mound with a massive inner core of fieldstones. Likewise, there are cases where a monumental cairn stands solitary in a typical mound region and vice versa.

Such entanglements are rooted not directly in nature but rather in culture and social practice: clearly, the deviating visual effects of turf and rubble were brought to bear in the creation of social identity. More generally, both types of burial relate in different ways to the surrounding landscape, materially and symbolically. According to pollen analyses, the bulk of southern Scandinavian mounds, for example, were built in a period in which there was a predominance of open pastures created by grazing cattle and sheep. Quite possibly, the building of turf mounds mediated and celebrated social power, which was connected to land and livestock. In a similar fashion, cairns may have symbolized domestication of the stony wilderness outside the settlement.

TIME FRAME, CONSTRUCTION, AND ORGANIZATION

The majority of tumuli were erected during the earlier Bronze Age, in the periods IB–III (1700–1100 B.C.). For Denmark it has been calculated that the



Fig. 1. A cluster of prominent Bronze Age burial mounds in the present-day cultural landscape, Skyum Bjerge in northwestern Jutland, Denmark. PHOTOGRAPH BY JENS-HENRIK BECH. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

original number may have been as many as one hundred thousand mounds, most of which were constructed within a fairly short period of about two hundred to three hundred years. In the Late Bronze Age, that is, in periods IV–VI (1100–500 B.C.), existent mounds typically were reused as burial places, but new tumuli to some extent were still constructed. Cairns of the north tend to be slightly later constructions than the mounds of the south.

Tumuli normally were built to cover inhumation burials in oak coffins or stone cists, but they continued in use when the burial custom began to change toward cremation c. 1300 B.C. Apart from the primary, centrally placed burial, a tumulus thus usually includes several graves—inhumations as well as cremations. When new burials were added, the tumulus often was enlarged in height and width, exhibiting several building phases with old and new barrows. The inner structure often is complex, perhaps incorporating a core of stone or clay and frequently one or more circular ring walls of field-

stones at the foot of the tumulus; even dry masonry and wooden posts occur. Tumuli thus embody complicated life histories in addition to the shifting connotations of meaning applied to them by people through the ages.

The shape of most tumuli compares to a cupola or a bowler, but flattened forms also are known. The size of these monuments varies considerably, from about 10 meters to almost 80 meters in width and from about 1 meter to 12 meters in height. A diameter of 15–20 meters and a height of 3–4 meters are most common. The largest ones represent an enormous investment of work, such as: the Bredarör cairn at Kivik in Scania; the Uggårda Röjr on the island of Gotland; the Linkulla cairn on the peninsula of Bjäre in northwest Scania; the Hohøj mound at Mariager Fjord in northeast Jutland; and the Tårup mound and Borum Eshøj in eastern Jutland.

Tumuli typically occur in groups or in rows, occupying the ridge of hills to increase visibility. In

this way they dominate the landscape and its inhabitants. Small clusters of tumuli appear to form the cemetery of a single farmstead or a hamlet controlling a larger territory. Such a scattered settlement pattern prevails in the earlier Bronze Age (1700–1100 B.C.), but there also are larger clusters of tumuli. The latter might have been central places of cult and communication and may perhaps have related to a larger, cooperative settlement comparable to what we call a village.

THE BREDARÖR CAIRN AT KIVIK

The Bredarör cairn at Kivik in southeastern Scania in Sweden is a monumental cairn situated in a region otherwise predominated by mounds. This position underscores the exclusiveness of the cairn, its builders, and the person(s) who were buried in the inner grave chamber of rock-carved stone slabs. Otherwise, the location of the cairn in the landscape is strangely inconspicuous, and the Kivik region is marginal in a larger Bronze Age perspective. Our understanding of this extraordinary monument is severely hampered by its unhappy destiny with successive plundering and early excavations. Cult houses, later cemeteries, and other remains of ritual activities surrounding the cairn suggest that the place was attributed central functions.

The cairn has a considerable diameter of 75 meters. It seems to have been flat on top, but the original height can no longer be estimated. Masses of stone covered a cist of about 4 meters in length. The inside of the cist was carved with pictures referring to the life of its first inhabitant(s), funerary games, and a wider Bronze Age cosmology found on rock carvings and on bronze work. The original order of the slabs has been disturbed, and some of them are damaged or have disappeared. Likewise, the burial chamber has been plundered, probably in the Bronze Age as well as in the recent past. A few fragmented remains suggest that in period II of the Bronze Age, c. 1400 B.C., a man was put to rest in the chamber. The size and form of the cist, however, recall a wider tradition of communal gallery graves originating in the Late Neolithic period. This might suggest that the cist at Kivik was intended for a family or leading clan members, rather than one person, and that it was built before period II of the Bronze Age. If not unique, Kivik is at least distinctly removed from the ordinary.

SOCIAL COMMEMORATION

In all likelihood tumuli were constructed for and by a social elite, but this identity should not be understood in an absolutist or static way. The graded content of the burials, among other things, suggests ongoing rivalries internal to the elite and also hints that the border between the elite and non-elite might have been fairly negotiable. Men, women, and children received burials, but the two latter groups are somewhat underrepresented. Males typically were depicted as warriors with swords and other paraphernalia, whereas the personal appearance of females was more peaceful. The social commemoration of certain persons in death—and the overt presentation of certain people in life—evidently were the foremost idea behind the building of tumuli and the material wealth invested in the burials.

The tradition of building tumuli, along with conspicuous consumption in metalwork and other valuables, connects to a larger European trend in material culture and social conduct, which began around 1600 B.C., with the so-called Tumulus culture. Similar material styles and ideologies were emulated effectively across geographical space, indicating the existence of an “international” elite network.

See also *Bronze Age Britain and Ireland* (vol. 2, part 5); *Bronze Age Scandinavia* (vol. 2, part 5).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Aner, Ekkehard, and Karl Kerten. *Die Funde der älteren Bronzezeit des nordischen Kreises in Dänemark, Schleswig-Holstein, und Niedersachsen*. Copenhagen, Denmark: Verlag Nationalmuseum, 1973–.
- Hyenstrand, Åke. *Arkeologisk regionindelning av Sverige* [Archaeological division of Sweden into regions]. Rev. ed. Stockholm, Sweden: Riksantikvarieämbetet, 1984.
- . “Dolda kallmurar” [Hidden cold walls]. In *Nord-svensk Forntid: Kungliga skytteanska samfundets handlingar*, Umeå 6 (1969), 99–110.
- Jensen, Jørgen. *Danmarks Oldtid*. Vol. 2, *Bronzealder 2.000–500 f. Kr.* [The prehistory of Denmark: The Bronze Age]. Copenhagen, Denmark: Gyldendal, 2002.
- Kristiansen, Kristian. *Europe before History*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1998.
- Larsson, L., ed. *Bronsålderns gravhöggar: Rapport från ett symposium i Lund 15.XI-16.XI 1991*. Report series 48. Lund, Sweden: University of Lund, Institute of Archaeology, 1993.

Randsborg, K. "Kivik: Archaeology and Iconography." *Acta Archaeologica* 64, no. 1 (1993).

Vandkilde, Helle. "Social Distinction and Ethnic Reconstruction in the Earliest Danish Bronze Age." In *Eliten in der Bronzezeit: Ergebnisse zweier Kolloquien in Mainz und Athen*. Edited by C. Clausen and M. Egg, Vol. 1, pp. 245–276. Monographien des Römisch-

Germanischen Zentralmuseums 43. Mainz, Germany: Verlag des Römisch-Germanischen Zentralmuseums, 1999.

Widholm, Dag. *Rösen, Ristningar och riter*. Acta Archaeologica Lundensia 23. Stockholm, Sweden: Almqvist and Wiksell, 1998.

HELLE VANDKILDE



LATE BRONZE AGE URNFIELDS OF CENTRAL EUROPE

Around 1300 B.C. the prevailing burial rite in much of Europe shifted from skeletal burial under small mounds (called tumuli) and in flat cemeteries to cremation and subsequent burial of the ashes in an urn. In central and parts of southern Europe, such urn burials were grouped together in clusters of dozens, even thousands, of graves. Since they subsequently came to be discovered under agricultural fields, the term “urnfield” came to be applied to such cemeteries, although there is no reason to assume that these places were completely clear of vegetation when they were in use. This burial rite is a defining characteristic of the Late Bronze Age in many parts of continental Europe.

The existence of the urnfields was recognized by nineteenth-century prehistorians, and the East Prussian scholar Otto Tischler (1843–1891) was the first to attribute them to the Bronze Age. Their existence had been signaled centuries earlier, when medieval chroniclers spoke of pots that spontaneously emerged from the soil. We now know that their appearance was the result of the erosion of soil from above the shallow cremation graves. The forms of the metal artifacts found in the burials allowed the German prehistorian Paul Reinecke (1872–1958) to establish the basic chronological position of the urnfields within the Bronze Age and the essential continuity between the Late Bronze Age and the Early Iron Age in central Europe.

NOMENCLATURE

Urnfields represent an unusual phenomenon in European prehistory, since they simply represent a

widespread common burial rite shared by peoples with very different artifact types and settlement forms. Despite the fact that German archaeologists often speak of an “*Urnenfelder kultur*,” the urnfields do not constitute an archaeological culture in the traditional sense. Instead, the shared burial rite links a number of regional cultural entities, and thus it is more proper to speak of an “Urnfield complex.”

Within the Urnfield complex are a number of distinctive cultural entities. One such group is the Lusatian, or Lausitz, culture, which is widespread over much of Poland and eastern Germany, while another is the Knovíz culture of Bohemia and adjacent parts of Germany. Elsewhere, smaller regional groups have been identified. In general, however, the term “Late Bronze Age” is always a safe characterization that avoids taxonomic nomenclature and its controversies.

CHRONOLOGY

Between 1902 and 1911, Reinecke worked out the basic chronology for the Bronze Age and Early Iron Age of central Europe. He distinguished between a “Bronze Age” and a “Hallstatt Age,” the latter named after the immense mountain cemetery south of Salzburg excavated by Johann Georg Ramsauer (1797–1876) in the nineteenth century. Both ages were divided into four stages, labeled A through D, based on grave associations and hoards. These continue to provide a basic yardstick for the relative chronology of central Europe of the second and early first millennia B.C. In general, Reinecke’s Bronze D and Hallstatt A and B can be equated

with the Late Bronze Age and the associated Urnfield complex.

In calendar years, this corresponds to approximately 1300–750 B.C. It must be noted that the end of the Bronze Age is a very vague and imprecise boundary. Most of the trends in artifact style, settlement form, and burial rite continue straight onward into Hallstatt C of the Early Iron Age. For the purposes of this discussion, these chronological units are primarily of academic interest, although for archaeologists they continue to define an elaborate chronological matrix to which new finds can be connected.

DISTRIBUTION

Urnfields are often considered to be a central European phenomenon, and it is true that they are found throughout Germany, Austria, Slovenia, the Czech Republic, Slovakia, Hungary, and Poland. But they also extend well to the west in France and south into Spain and Italy. In Scandinavia and the British Isles, there was also a transition to cremation burial during the Late Bronze Age, but these areas lack the vast cemeteries with dozens of burials that mark the classic Urnfield expression in central and western continental Europe.

Chronologically, it appears that the switch from inhumation burial under barrows to cremation burial in cemeteries as the dominant mortuary rite occurred first in east-central Europe. From there it spread west and north into Germany and Poland and south into Italy. Finally, in the first decades of the last millennium B.C., it is found in France and northern Spain.

BURIALS

The Urnfield complex, as might be expected, is known primarily through its burials, a trait it shares with many other periods of the Bronze Age in Europe. Unlike the rich skeletal burials of the Early Bronze Age, in which the dead are accompanied by all sorts of trappings of rank and status, most Urnfield cremations are somewhat less impressive by comparison. Each grave contains one or more ceramic vessels containing the ashes of the deceased individual and ash from the funeral pyre. The only artifacts likely to be found in the urn itself are those worn as body ornament, generally bronze pins and jewelry and glass and amber beads. The small pits

into which the urns were placed often contain wood ash from the pyre, suggesting that the cremation occurred close to the place of burial. Often, the pits contain supplemental vessels with traces of food offerings, as well as other metal artifacts. At Poing, in Bavaria, parts of a four-wheeled wagon were found in one of the graves, and bronze wagon models have been found in Urnfield burials across Europe.

Although cremation became the dominant burial rite, inhumation continued to be practiced. At Przewyżce in southern Poland, 132 of the 874 burials were cremations, and the rest were inhumations. At Udenheim in Germany, two children were buried uncremated under sturdy wooden mortuary structures in stone-lined pits, accompanied by many vessels and bronze artifacts.

Some Urnfield cemeteries are enormous. The one at Kietrz in the Silesia region of southern Poland has yielded more than 3,000 burials over many years of excavations. A cemetery at Zuchering-Ost in Bavaria is estimated to have contained close to 1,000 originally, while Moravičany in Moravia has yielded 1,260 cremations. Others are smaller, such as the 262 graves at Vollmarshausen in central Germany. Still more have yielded a several dozen or fewer burials. Hundreds of Urnfield cemeteries have been excavated, and probably many more have been destroyed by cultivation and development.

Within some of the Urnfield cemeteries there is evidence that some of the graves were differentiated through the use of mounds or wooden mortuary structures. For example, at Zirc-Alsómajer in Hungary, more than eighty mounds were built over cremation burials, some of which were in small cists made from limestone slabs. At Kietrz, graves were occasionally situated among postholes that suggested the construction of a small roofed timber structure over the pit that contained the urn and grave goods. One of the most monumental Urnfield graves is found at Očkov in Slovakia, where an individual had been cremated on an immense pyre along with many bronze and gold objects whose molten traces were found among the ashes. Vessels that had contained liquids, perhaps associated with feasting, were among the grave goods. A mound about 6 meters high was built over the buried ashes, and a stone wall was built around the mound.

Some of the most unusual Urnfield burials are the so-called “keyhole” enclosures of northwestern

Germany and the Netherlands. At these sites, a central cremation burial is surrounded by a small ditch about 3 to 4 meters in diameter that is extended on one side to enclose an elongated area. At Telgte in northwestern Germany, thirty-five such keyhole ditches (because from above they resemble a large keyhole) were excavated, along with other cremation burials that were surrounded with round and oval ditches.

The adoption of cremation as the dominant burial rite suggests a fundamental change in attitude toward the body's role in the afterlife. When an intact corpse is buried, presumably this is done with the belief that the body plays an important part in the realm the deceased will encounter, whereas cremation suggests that the external form and appearance of the body is not relevant to this spiritual concept. The rapid adoption of cremation as the most common form of burial rite suggests that this change in attitude was quickly and widely accepted across much of Europe.

SETTLEMENTS

Because the Urnfield complex is defined in terms of its burial rite, it is somewhat surprising that a relatively large number of settlements are known. Thus, archaeologists know something about the lives of the people whose ashes are in the urns. Late Bronze Age people in central Europe lived in various types of settlements, some fortified, others not. Many were large open settlements covering many hectares, while some are compact strongholds on naturally defensible locations such as peninsulas and islands in lakes.

At Unterhaching, near Munich, a large, open Late Bronze Age settlement yielded the traces of about eighty houses over an area of about 15 hectares. The houses were rectangular post structures with four main corner posts and several posts along the walls. A settlement of similar extent was found at Zedau in eastern Germany, where seventy-eight small rectangular houses were scattered across the site. Some were small square houses with just four posts, while others had two parallel rows of three posts. At Eching in Bavaria, two small Urnfield settlements of about sixteen houses each were found about a kilometer apart.

A major Urnfield settlement is known from Lovčičky in Moravia. Many of the forty-eight rec-

tangular timber houses had large posts set widely apart, some with a central row of posts for supporting a pitched roof. In a relatively open area at the center of the site is a larger structure with very closely spaced posts that may have served as a communal hall. It measures 21 meters in length, with an interior area of 144 square meters. The village gives the overall impression of having greater structure than sites such as Zedau, which tend to have a scattered layout.

A somewhat different sort of settlement was found at Riesburg-Pflaumloch, in Baden-Württemberg, where the seventeen structures were built during several phases. As at Lovčičky, the posts of the longer houses were spaced widely apart, while smaller structures are interpreted as granaries. Unraveling the stratification of the houses and the sequence of their construction led to the identification of several building clusters, which have been interpreted as loosely connected farmsteads with a main house and several outbuildings.

Among the best-known Urnfield settlements are the fortified villages set on islands and peninsulas in lakes. The Wasserburg at Bad Buchau, on an island in the Federsee in southern Germany, was excavated in the 1920s and 1930s, revealing two successive Urnfield settlements. The first one was founded in the twelfth century B.C., with thirty-eight small, one-roomed houses, most about 4 meters by 5 meters in area. It was enclosed by a palisade with thousands of posts. After a period of abandonment due to rising water levels, a smaller palisaded settlement was rebuilt around 1000 B.C. with nine large, multiroom houses (fig. 1). This second settlement was destroyed by fire early in the first millennium B.C. Many of the houses of the Wasserburg at Bad Buchau were built in a log-cabin style, with timbers laid horizontally on one another. The population of the site during both construction phases is estimated at about two hundred people.

Fortified settlements were also built on higher terrain, on hilltops and plateaus. In many cases, the fortifications were quite elaborate, with their ramparts reinforced using timber structures, stone facing, and sloping banks. Relatively little is known about the settlements in the interior of these fortifications, since archaeologists have typically focused their attention on the ramparts themselves. At the Burgberg, near Burkheim in southwestern Germa-



Fig. 1. The "Wasserburg" at Bad Buchau, southern Germany. Reconstruction as envisioned by the excavator of the site, Hans Reinerth. WÜRTTEMBERGISCHES LANDESMUSEUM STUTTGART. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

ny, excavations have revealed hundreds of round pits, interpreted as storage pits or house cellars. Many of the Urnfield fortified settlements of central Europe were destroyed after a very short period of occupation.

SUBSISTENCE

An increase in cemeteries and settlements over the duration of the Urnfield complex suggests that populations grew during this period in many parts of central Europe. It appears, therefore, that settlement was extended into new areas characterized by poorer soils that had not previously been intensively exploited. In order to make use of these soils, new crops were introduced, with millet and rye becoming common alongside the wheats and barleys that had been in use for centuries. Oats were raised for feeding horses. A legume, the horsebean, expanded in use in order to fix nitrogen during crop rotation, besides being easy to grow and nutritious. Generally speaking, Urnfield peoples used many different sorts of field crops depending on what soil conditions occurred in the vicinity of their settlements, and the actual mix of plants varied from site to site.

The Urnfield animal economy was dominated by cattle in temperate Europe and most often by sheep and goats in the Mediterranean basin. These species provided meat and milk, and wool was sheared from the sheep. Oxen and horses were used to pull and carry loads. The so-called Secondary Products Revolution of the fourth millennium B.C. had long been established as integral to the prehistoric economy. Pigs complement cattle at many of the sites in temperate Europe. In general, the animal economy of the Urnfield complex is a continuation of overall trends that began during the Neolithic, with local adjustments to availability of pasture and grazing.

METAL ARTIFACTS

The increasing sophistication in bronze metallurgy that characterizes the second millennium B.C. led to the emergence of many new forms of bronze ornaments, tools, and weapons among the Urnfield communities. Several new techniques appeared. One is the ability to make composite artifacts by casting many small parts that could then be assembled into a whole object. Extensive use was made of



Fig. 2. Antenna-hilt sword from the bog near Bad Schussenried. Swords of this type are primarily found as offerings in bogs, lake, and rivers. WÜRTTEMBERGISCHES LANDESMUSEUM STUTTGART. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

the technique of lost-wax casting, in which a wax model with a clay core was made of the desired object, then covered in clay and fired. The wax melted and ran out, leaving a cavity into which molten bronze was poured. When the outer clay was bro-

ken away, a bronze cast of the original wax form remained. Since the wax could easily be inscribed, it was possible to cast objects with fine surface details. Another new technique was the manufacture of sheet bronze, which could be shaped into complex hollow forms held together with rivets.

Although the range and variety of Urnfield metal artifacts is astonishing, one of its most striking aspects is the expansion in the range and variety of weapons and armor. These have been found primarily in deposits and hoards. Swords were introduced earlier in the Bronze Age, but in Urnfield times they are found with many different lengths and shapes of blades and a wide variety of hilts (fig. 2). Body armor occurs in the form of cuirasses (vests that protect the torso), shin guards, shields, and helmets. The sheet bronze used in this armor was too thin to be of much defense against a sword or spear, so it is assumed that it was largely worn ceremonially as a badge of rank.

Among the most interesting Urnfield metal artifacts are small models of wagons and carts, found largely in southern Germany, Austria, and adjacent areas. Their rolling wheels have four spokes, and on their frame they are often carrying a vessel or cauldron. A particularly distinctive feature is their decoration with stylized birds, apparently waterfowl, which appear to have played a major role in Urnfield symbolism.

SOCIAL ORGANIZATION

Many archaeologists have argued that the Late Bronze Age saw the emergence of a warrior aristocracy, men whose prestige was maintained through success in combat. The principal evidence for this is the elaboration of weaponry and armor and its appearance in elite burials, as well as the widespread occurrence of fortified sites. Some have painted a picture of a society permeated by fear and anxiety, dominated by an armed aristocracy.

Yet most people continued to live in small farmsteads and hamlets much as they had for centuries, and it is difficult to characterize their relationship to the presumed warrior elite and its conflicts. It is possible that they were largely unaffected by them. The variation among graves in the Urnfield cemeteries suggests clear differences in status and wealth, and we can presume a continuation or even elaboration of the differentiation between elites and commoners

inferred from the evidence of the Early and Middle Bronze Ages.

CONCLUSION

The Urnfield complex of the Late Bronze Age represents the adoption of a new set of shared values across much of continental Europe, especially a new attitude toward death and the role of the body. It was also a time of technological advances, particularly in the mastery of bronze metallurgy, and of social transformation, quite possibly including the appearance of a class of elite warriors. The Urnfield complex very much set the stage for subsequent developments of the first millennium B.C. The Early Iron Age (also known as Hallstatt C and D) that began around 750 B.C. saw the continuation of the practices of cremation burial and settlement fortification.

See also Warfare and Conquest (vol. 1, part 1); Hallstatt (vol. 2, part 6); Biskupin (vol. 2, part 6).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Harding, A. F. *European Societies in the Bronze Age*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 2000.
- Kristiansen, Kristian. *Europe before History*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1998.
- Milisauskas, Sarunas. "The Bronze Age." In *European Prehistory: A Survey*. New York: Kluwer Academic/Plenum Publishers, 2002.
- Mohen, Jean-Pierre, and Christian Eluère. *The Bronze Age in Europe*. New York: Harry N. Abrams, 1999.
- Probst, Ernst. *Deutschland in der Bronzezeit*. Munich: C. Bertelsmann, 1996.

PETER BOGUCKI



BRONZE AGE HERDERS OF THE EURASIAN STEPPES

The Eurasian steppe is a sea of varied grasslands extending from Mongolia to the mouth of the Danube, an east-west distance of about 7,000 kilometers. No surviving inscriptions describe the Bronze Age cultures of the steppe—they are entirely prehistoric. For that reason, they are much less well known than their descendants of the Iron Age, such as the Scythians. Unfortunately, the Bronze Age cultures tend to be seen through the lens of these later horse nomads and their historical cousins—Mongols, Turks, Huns, and others. In fact, horse nomadism of the classic Eurasian steppe type appeared after about 1000 B.C. Before 1000 B.C. the steppe was occupied by quite different kinds of cultures, not at all like the Scythians. It was in the Bronze Age that people first really domesticated the steppe—learned to profit from it. Wagons, wool sheep, and perhaps horseback riding appeared in the steppe at the beginning of the Bronze Age. Chariots and large-scale copper mining arose in the Late Bronze Age. These innovations revolutionized steppe economies, which led to the extension of a single, broadly similar steppe civilization from eastern Europe to the borders of China. Indo-European languages might well have spread through this new community of steppe cultures.

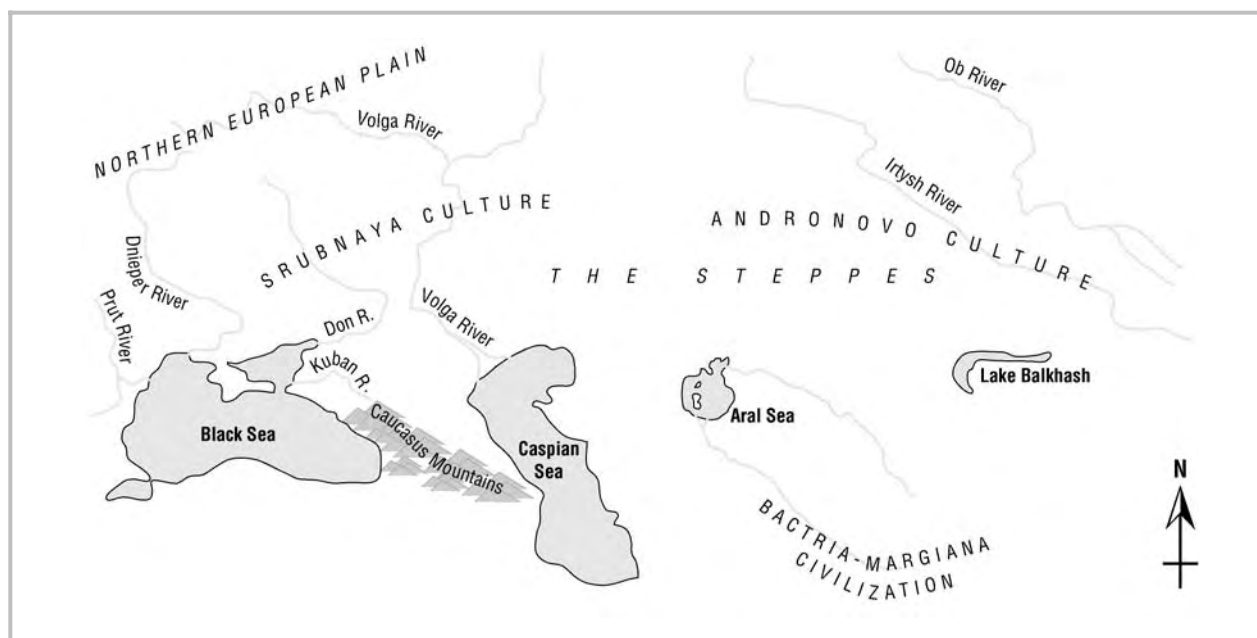
CHRONOLOGY

The steppe Bronze Age was defined by Soviet archaeologists, who did not look to western Europe for guidance. Instead, they matched the chronological phases of the Russian and Ukrainian steppes with those of the Caucasus Mountains—part of both the Czarist Russian empire and the Soviet

Union. The Bronze Age chronology of the Caucasus, in turn, is linked to that of Anatolia, in modern Turkey. As a result, the steppe regions of the former Soviet Union have a Bronze Age chronology that is entirely different from that just to the west in Poland or southeastern Europe, where the western European chronological system defined by Paul Reinecke was used.

The Early Bronze Age of the steppes began about 3300 B.C., perhaps a thousand years earlier than the Early Bronze Age of Poland and southeastern Europe but about the same time as the Early Bronze Age of Anatolia. This might seem a trivial matter, but it has hindered communication between western and Russian-Ukrainian archaeologists who study the Bronze Age. In addition, some influential Soviet and post-Soviet archaeologists were slow to accept the validity of radiocarbon dating, so competing radiocarbon-based and typology-based chronologies have confused outsiders.

Finally, the Bronze Age of the steppe covers such an enormous area that it is impossible to define one chronology that applies to the entire region. In fact, there was a significant cultural frontier in the Volga-Ural region that separated the western steppes, west of the Ural Mountains, from the eastern, or Asian, steppes until the end of the Middle Bronze Age, as defined in the western sequence. In the steppes of northern Kazakhstan, just east of this Ural frontier, the sequence jumps from a local Eneolithic to a brief and poorly defined Early Bronze Age (strongly influenced by the western Middle Bronze Age), followed by the Late Bronze



Eurasia about 2000 B.C. showing general location of selected cultures.

Age. It is only in the Late Bronze Age that the eastern and western steppes share the same broad chronological periods.

The sequence of Bronze Age cultures in the western steppes was established in 1901–1907, when Vasily A. Gorodtsov excavated 107 burial mounds, or *kurgans*, containing 299 graves in the Izyum region of the northern Donets River Valley, near Kharkov in the Ukrainian steppes. In 1907 he published an account in which he observed that three basic types of graves were found repeatedly, stratified one above the other: the oldest graves in the *kurgans* were of a type he called pit graves, followed by catacomb graves and then by timber graves. These grave types are now recognized as the backbone of the Bronze Age chronology for the western steppes. The absolute dates given to them here are maximal dates, the earliest and latest expressions. The Pit Grave, or Yamnaya, culture, for example, began in 3300 B.C. and persisted in the steppes northwest of the Black Sea until about 2300 B.C.. (Early Bronze Age). It was replaced by the Catacomb culture in the steppes east of the Dnieper Valley hundreds of years earlier, around 2700 or even 2800 B.C. Catacomb sites lasted until 1900 B.C. (Middle Bronze Age). The Timber Grave, or

Srubnaya, culture came to prominence about 1900 B.C. and ended about 1200 B.C. (Late Bronze Age).

THE ROOTS OF THE STEPPE BRONZE AGE

The period 4000–3500 B.C. witnessed the appearance of new kinds of wealth in the steppes north of the Black Sea (the North Pontic region) and, simultaneously, the fragmentation of societies in the Danube Valley and eastern Carpathians (the Tripolye culture) that had been the region's centers of population and economic productivity. Rich graves (the Karanovo VI culture) appeared in the steppe grasslands from the mouth of the Danube (as at Suvorovo, north of the Danube delta in Romania) to the Azov steppes (as at Novodanilovka, north of Mariupol in Ukraine). These exceptional graves contained flint blades up to 20 centimeters long, polished flint axes, lanceolate flint points, copper and shell beads, copper spiral rings and bracelets, a few small gold ornaments, and (at Suvorovo) a polished stone mace-head shaped like a horse's head. The percentage of horse bones doubled in steppe settlements of this period, about 4000–3000 B.C., at Dereivka and Sredny Stog II.

It is possible that horseback riding began at about this time. Early in this period, perhaps setting

in motion economic and military innovations that threatened the economic basis of agricultural villages. Most Tripolye B1–B2 towns, dated about 4000–3800 B.C., were fortified. In the Lower Danube Valley, previously a densely settled and materially rich region, six hundred tell settlements were abandoned, and a simpler material culture (typified by the sites Cernavoda and Renie) became widespread in the smaller, dispersed communities that followed. Copper mining and metallurgy declined sharply in the Balkans. Later, in the Southern Bug Valley, the easternmost Tripolye people concentrated into a few very large towns, such as Maidanets'ke, arguably for defensive reasons. The largest were 300–400 hectares in area, with fifteen hundred buildings arranged in concentric circles around a large central plaza or green.

These enormous towns were occupied from about 3800 to 3500 B.C., during the Tripolye C1 period, and then were abandoned. Most of the eastern Tripolye population dispersed into smaller, more mobile residential units. Only a few clusters of towns in the Dniester Valley retained the old Tripolye customs of large houses, fine painted pottery, and female figurines after 3500 B.C. This sequence of events, still very poorly understood, spelled the end of the rich Copper Age cultures of Ukraine, Romania, and Bulgaria, termed “Old Europe” by Marija Gimbutas. The steppe cultures of the western North Pontic region became richer, but it is difficult to say whether they raided the Danube Valley and Tripolye towns or just observed and profited from an internal crisis brought on by soil degradation and climate change. In either case, by 3500 B.C. the cultures of the North Pontic steppes no longer had access to Balkan copper and other prestige commodities that once had been traded into the steppes from “Old Europe.”

After about 3500 B.C. the North Pontic steppe cultures were drawn into a new set of relationships with truly royal figures who appeared in the northern Caucasus. Such villages as Svobodnoe had existed since about 4300 B.C. in the northern Caucasian piedmont uplands, supported by pig and cattle herding and small-scale agriculture. About 3500–3300 B.C. the people of the Kuban forest-steppe region began to erect a series of spectacularly rich *kurgan* graves. Huge *kurgans* were built over stone-lined grave chambers containing fabulous gifts.

Among the items were huge cauldrons (up to 70 liters) made of arsenical bronze, vases of sheet gold and silver decorated with scenes of animal processions and a goat mounting a tree of life, silver rods with cast silver and gold bull figurines, arsenical bronze axes and daggers, and hundreds of ornaments of gold, turquoise, and carnelian.

The *kurgan* built over the chieftain's grave at the type site of the Maikop culture was 11 meters high; it and the stone grave chamber would have taken five hundred men almost six weeks to build. Maikop settlements, such as Meshoko and Galugai, remained small and quite ordinary, without metal finds, public buildings, or storehouses, so we do not know where the new chiefs kept their wealth during life. The ceramic inventory, however, is similar in the rich graves and the settlements—pots from the Maikop chieftain's grave look like those from Meshoko.

Some early stage Maikop metal tools have analogies at Sialk III in northwestern Iran, and others resemble those from Arslantepe VI in southeastern Anatolia, sites of the same period. A minority of Maikop metal artifacts were made with a high-nickel-content arsenical bronze, like the formula used in Anatolia and Mesopotamia and unlike the normal Caucasian metal type of this era. Certain early Maikop ceramic vessels were wheel-thrown, a technology known in Anatolia and Iran but previously unknown in the northern Caucasus. The inspiration for the sheet-silver vessel decorated with a goat mounting a tree of life must have been in late-stage Uruk Mesopotamia, where the first cities in the world were at that time consuming trade commodities and sending out merchants and ambassadors. The appearance of a very rich elite in the northern Caucasus probably was an indirect result of this stimulation of interregional trade emanating from Mesopotamia.

Wool sheep had been bred first in Mesopotamia in about 4000 B.C. The earliest woolen textiles known north of the Caucasus were found in a rich Maikop grave at Novosvobodnaya, dating perhaps to 2800 B.C. Wool could shed rainwater and take dyes much better than any plant-fiber textile. Portable felt tents and felt boots, standard pieces of nomad gear in later centuries, became possible at this time. Wagons also might have been invented in Mesopotamia. Wagons with solid wooden wheels

began to appear at scattered sites across southeastern Europe after the Maikop culture emerged in the northern Caucasus. The evidence for the adoption of wagons can be seen at about 3300 B.C. in southern Poland (as evidenced by an incised image of a four-wheeled wagon on a pot of the Funnel Beaker culture), 3300–3000 B.C. in Hungary (seen in small clay wagon models in Baden culture graves with ox teams), and 3000 B.C. in the North Pontic steppes (as indicated by actual burials of disassembled wagons with solid wheels in or above human graves). We do not know with certainty that wool sheep and wagons both came into the steppes through the Maikop culture, but other southern influences certainly are apparent at Maikop, and the timing is right. Numerous Maikop-type graves under *kurgans* have been found in the steppes north of the northern Caucasian piedmont, and isolated Maikop-type artifacts have been discovered in scattered local graves across the North Pontic region.

THE EARLY BRONZE AGE: WOOL, WHEELS, AND COPPER

The Yamnaya culture arose in the North Pontic steppes about when the earliest Maikop mounds were built—3300 B.C., more or less. According to the classic 1979 study of Nikolai Merpert, the Yamnaya began in the steppes of the lower Volga, northwest of the Caspian Sea, and the funeral customs that define the Yamnaya phenomenon then spread westward to the Danube. Merpert also divided Yamnaya into nine regional variants, however, and the relationships between them have become increasingly unclear since 1979. The oldest Yamnaya pottery types defined by Merpert, egg-shaped shell-tempered pots with cord and comb-impressed decoration, clearly evolved from the late-stage Khvalynsk and Repin ceramic types found in the Volga and Don steppes in the earlier fourth millennium B.C. Pots such as these also are found in some Yamnaya graves farther west in Ukraine. Most Yamnaya graves in Ukraine, however, contained a variety of local pottery types, and some of them could be older than those on the Volga. Yamnaya was not really a single culture with a single origin—Merpert used the phrase “economic-historical community” to describe it.

The essential defining trait of the Yamnaya horizon, as we should call it, was a strongly pastoral

economy and a mobile residential pattern, combined with the creation of very visible cemeteries of raised *kurgans*. *Kurgan* cemeteries sprang up across the steppes from the Danube to the Ural River. Settlements disappeared in many areas, particularly in the east, the Don-Volga-Ural steppes. This was a broad economic shift, not the spread of a single culture. A change to a drier, colder climate might have accelerated the shift—climatologists date the Atlantic/Subboreal transition to about 3300–3000 B.C.

A more mobile residence pattern would have been encouraged by the appearance of wagons, felt tents, and woolen clothes. Wool made it easier to live in the open steppe, away from the protected river valleys. Wagons were a critically important innovation, because they permitted a herder to carry enough food, shelter, and water to remain with his herd far from the sheltered river valleys. Herds could be dispersed over much larger areas, which meant that larger herds could be owned and real wealth could be accumulated in livestock. It is no accident that metallurgy picked up at about the same time—herders now had something to trade.

Wagons acquired such importance that they were disassembled and buried with certain individuals; about two hundred wagon graves are known in the North Pontic steppes for the Early Bronze Age and Middle Bronze Age combined. The wagons, the oldest preserved anywhere in the world, were narrow-bodied and heavy, with solid wheels that turned on a fixed axle. Pulled laboriously by oxen, they were not racing vehicles. Yamnaya herders probably rode horses; characteristic wear made by a bit has been found on the premolars of horse teeth from this period in a neighboring culture in Kazakhstan (the Botai culture), where there are settlements with large numbers of horse bones. Horseback riding greatly increased the efficiency of herding, particularly cattle herding.

A few western Yamnaya settlements are known in Ukraine. At one of them, Mikhailovka level II, 60 percent of the animal bones were from cattle. A study of animal sacrifices in the eastern Yamnaya region (the Don-Volga-Ural steppes), however, found that among fifty-three graves with such animal bones, sheep occurred in 65 percent, cattle in only 15 percent, and horses in 7.5 percent of the graves. The seeds of wheat and millet have been found in the clay of some Yamnaya pots in the lower

Dnieper steppes (Belyaevka *kurgan* 1 and Glubokoe *kurgan* 2), so some agriculture might have been practiced in the steppe river valleys of Ukraine.

Local sandstone copper ores were exploited in two apparent centers of metallurgic activity: the lower Dnieper and the middle Volga. Some exceptionally rich graves are located near the city of Samara on the Volga, at the northern edge of the steppe zone. One, the Yamnaya grave at Kutuluk, contained a sword-length pure copper club or mace weighing 1.5 kilograms, and another, a Yamnaya-Poltavka grave nearby at Utyevka, contained a copper dagger, a shaft-hole axe, a flat axe, an L-headed pin, and two gold rings with granulated decoration. Dozens of tanged daggers are known from Yamnaya graves. A few objects made of iron are present in later Yamnaya graves (knife blades and the head of a copper pin at Utyevka), perhaps the earliest iron artifacts anywhere.

The basic funeral ritual of burial in a sub-rectangular pit under a *kurgan*, usually on the back with the knees raised (or on the side in Ukraine) and the head pointed east-northeast, was adopted widely, but only a few persons were recognized in this way. We do not know where or how most ordinary people were handled after death. In the Ukraine, carved stone stelae have been found in about three hundred Yamnaya *kurgans*. It is thought that they were carved and used for some other ritual originally, perhaps an earlier phase in the funeral, and then were reused as covering stones over grave pits.

Beginning in about 3000 B.C. rich cultures emerged in the coastal steppes of the Crimea (the Kemi Oba culture) and the Dniester estuary northwest of the Black Sea (the Usatovo culture). They might have participated in seaborne trade along the Black Sea coast—artifact exchanges show that Usatovo, Kemi Oba, and late stages of the Maikop cultures were contemporary. Perhaps their trade goods even reached Troy I. A stone stela much like a Yamnaya marker was built into a wall at Troy I, and the Troy I ceramics were very much like those of the Baden and Ezero cultures in southeastern Europe.

The Early Bronze Age settlement and cemetery at Usatovo, on a shallow coastal bay near the mouth of the Dniester, is the defining site for the Usatovo culture. Two separate groups of large *kurgans* were surrounded by standing stone curbs and stelae, oc-

asionally carved with images of horses. In the central graves of *kurgan* cemetery 1 adult men were buried with riveted arsenical copper daggers and beautifully painted pots of the final-stage Tripolye C2 type, probably made for Usatovo chiefs in the last Tripolye towns on the upper Dniester. A few glass beads have been uncovered in Usatovo graves, and some Usatovo riveted daggers look like Aegean or Anatolian daggers of the same period; these objects suggest contacts with the south.

Between about 3000 and 2700 B.C., Yamnaya groups moved through the coastal steppes and migrated into the Lower Danube Valley (especially into northern Bulgaria) and eastern Hungary, where hundreds of Yamnaya *kurgans* are known. This migration carried steppe populations into the Balkans and the eastern Hungarian Plain, where they interacted with the Cotsofeni and late Baden cultures. The graves that testify to the movement were clearly Yamnaya and represented an intrusive new custom in southeastern Europe—some in Bulgaria even contained stelae, and one had a wagon burial, just as in the steppe Yamnaya graves—but the pottery in the graves was always local.

Because the Yamnaya tradition was not identified with a distinct pottery type, it is difficult to say how the Yamnaya immigrants were integrated into Balkan cultures. After the Yamnaya grave type was abandoned, which happened in Hungary before 2500 B.C., the archaeologically visible aspect of Yamnaya material culture disappeared. Nevertheless, some archaeologists see this Yamnaya migration as a social movement that carried Indo-European languages into southeastern Europe.

THE MIDDLE BRONZE AGE: WIDER HORIZONS

The Middle Bronze Age began at different times in different places. The earliest graves assigned to the Catacomb culture date to perhaps 2800–2700 B.C. and are located in the steppes north of the northern Caucasus, among societies of the Novotitorovskaya type that were in close contact with late Maikop culture, and in the Don Valley to the north. Along the Volga, graves containing Poltavka pottery appeared by 2800–2700 B.C. as well; Poltavka was very much like the earlier eastern Yamnaya culture, but with larger, more elaborately decorated, flat-based pots. By about 2600–2500 B.C. Catacomb traditions

spread westward over the entire North Pontic region as far as the mouth of the Danube. Poltavka persisted through the Middle Bronze Age in the Volga-Ural region.

The Catacomb culture made sophisticated arsenical bronze weapons, tools, and ornaments, probably using Caucasian alloying recipes. Northward, on the Volga, the Poltavka culture continued to use its local “pure” copper sources, rather than the arsenical bronzes of the south. T-shaped pins of bone and copper, perhaps hairpins, were a common late Yamnaya-Catacomb type. Many metal shaft-hole axes and daggers were deposited in graves. The same kinds of ornate bronze pins and medallions are evident in the Middle Bronze Age royal *kurgans* of the northern Caucasus (Sachkere, Bedeni, and Tsnori) and the settlements of the Caspian Gate (Velikent) on the one hand and the Middle Bronze Age sites of the steppes on the other. These finds imply an active north-south system of Middle Bronze Age trade and intercommunication between the steppes and the Caucasus. Evgeni N. Chernykh, a specialist in metals and metallurgy, has speculated that up to half of the output of the Caucasian copper industry might have been consumed in the steppes to the north. Wagon burials continued in the Catacomb region for exceptional people. In the Ingul valley, west of the Dnieper, as well as in the steppes north of the Caucasus, some Catacomb graves contained skeletons with clay death masks applied to the skull.

Although the Middle Bronze Age remained a period of extreme mobility and few settlements, the number of settlement sites increased. A few small Middle Bronze Age occupation sites are known even on the Volga, a region devoid of Early Bronze Age settlements. A Catacomb culture wagon grave in the Azov steppes contained a charred pile of cultivated wheat grains, so some cultivation probably took place. The emphasis in the economy seems to have remained on pastoralism, however. Near Tsatsa in the Kalmyk steppes north of the North Caucasus, the skulls of forty horses were found sacrificed at the edge of one a man’s grave (Tsatsa *kurgan* 1, grave 5, of the Catacomb culture). This find is exceptional—a single horse or a ram’s head is more common—but it demonstrates the continuing ritual importance of herded animals.

THE NEW WAVE: SINTASHTA-ARKAIM

At the end of the Middle Bronze Age, about 2200–2000 B.C., the innovations that would define the Late Bronze Age began to evolve in the northern steppes around the southern Urals. Perhaps increasing interaction between northern steppe herders and southern forest societies brought about this surge of creativity and wealth. Domesticated cattle and horses had begun to appear with some regularity at sites in the forest zone by about 2500–2300 B.C., with the appearance and spread of the Fatyanovo culture, a Russian forest-zone eastern extension of the Corded Ware horizon. Fatyanovo-related bronzeworking was adopted in the forest zone west of the Urals at about the same time. In the forest-steppe region, at the ecological boundary, the Abashevo culture emerged on the upper Don and middle Volga. The Abashevo culture displayed great skill in bronzework and was in contact with the late Poltavka peoples in the nearby steppes.

During the Middle Bronze Age some late Poltavka people from the Volga-Ural steppes drifted into the steppes east of the Ural Mountains, crossing the Ural frontier into what had been forager territory. About 2100–2200 B.C., these Poltavka groups began to mix with or emulate late Abashevo peoples, who had appeared in the southern Ural forest steppe. The mixture of Abashevo and Poltavka customs in the grassy hills west of the upper Tobol River created the visible traits of the Sintashta-Arkaim culture. It is more difficult to explain the explosion of extravagant ritual sacrifices and sudden building of large fortified settlements.

Sintashta-Arkaim sites are found in a compact region at the northern edge of the steppe, where the stony, gently rising hills are rich in copper ores. All of the streams in the Sintashta-Arkaim region flow into the upper Tobol on its west side. The known settlements of this culture were strongly fortified, with deep ditches dug outside high earth-and-timber walls; houses stood close together with their narrower ends against the wall. Before it was half destroyed by river erosion, Sintashta, probably contained the remains of sixty houses; Arkaim had about the same. Smelting copper from ore and other kinds of metallurgy occurred in every house in every excavated settlement.

Outside the settlements were *kurgan* cemeteries containing extraordinarily rich graves, accompanied by socketed spears, axes, daggers, flint points, whole horses, entire dogs, and the heads of cattle and sheep. Chariots were found on the floors of sixteen graves of the Sintashta-Arkaim culture, continuing the ritual of vehicle burial that had been practiced in the western steppes, but with a new kind of vehicle. Three chariot burials at Krivoe Ozero and Sintashta are directly dated. They were buried between about 2100 and 1900 B.C., which makes them the oldest chariots known anywhere in the world. There is some technical debate about whether these were *true* chariots: Were they too small, with a car just big enough for one person? Were the wheels too close together—1.1–1.5 meters across the axle—to keep the vehicle upright on a fast turn? Were the hubs too small to maintain the wheels in a vertical position?

These interesting questions should not obscure the importance of the technical advance in high-speed transport represented by the Sintashta-Arkaim chariots. They were light vehicles, framed with small-diameter wood but probably floored in leather or some other perishable material that left a dark stain, with two wheels of ten to twelve wooden spokes set in slots in the grave floor. They were pulled by a pair of horses controlled by a new, more severe kind of bit cheekpiece and driven by a man with weapons (axe, dagger, and spear).

The new chariot-driving cheekpiece design, an ovoid antler plate with interior spikes that pressed into the sides of the horses' lips, was invented in the steppes south of the Urals. It spread from there across Ukraine (through the Mnogovalikovaya culture, which evolved from late Catacomb culture) into southeastern Europe (the Glina III/Monteoru culture) and later into the Near East (graves at Gaza and Hazor). It is possible that chariotry diffused in the same way, from an origin in the steppes. Alternatively, perhaps chariots were invented in the Near East, as many researchers believe. The exact origin is unimportant. What is certain is that chariots spread very quickly, appearing in Anatolia at Karum Kanesh by about 1950–1850 B.C., so close in time to the Sintashta culture chariots that it is impossible to say for certain which region had chariots first.

The Sintashta-Arkaim culture was not alone. Between about 2100 and 1800 B.C., Sintashta-

Arkaim was the easternmost link in a chain of three northern steppe cultures that shared many funeral rituals, bronze weapon types, tool types, pottery styles, and cheekpiece designs. The middle one, with perhaps the oldest radiocarbon dates, was on the middle Volga—the Potapovka group. The western link was on the upper Don—the Filatovka group. The Don and Volga groups had no fortified settlements; they continued the mobile lifestyle of the earlier Poltavka era. This small cluster of metal-rich late Middle Bronze Age cultures in the steppes around the southern Urals, between the Don and the Tobol, had a tremendous influence on the later customs and styles of the Eurasian Late Bronze Age from China to the Carpathians.

The Late Bronze Age Srubnaya horizon grew out of the Potapovka-Filatovka west of the Urals; east of the Urals, the Late Bronze Age Petrovka-Alakul horizon grew out of Sintashta-Arkaim. Many archaeologists have suggested that Sintashta-Arkaim might represent the speakers of Indo-Iranian, the parent language from which Sanskrit and Avestan Iranian evolved. The excavator of Arkaim, Gennady Zdanovich, has speculated that the prophet Zoroaster was born there. Political extremists, Slavic nationalists, and religious cultists have made the site a sort of shrine. These late Middle Bronze Age Don-Tobol cultures need no such exaggeration. As the apparent source of many of the traits that define the Late Bronze Age of the Eurasian steppes, they are interesting enough.

THE LATE BRONZE AGE: THE OPENING OF THE EURASIAN STEPPES

At the beginning of the Late Bronze Age, about 1850–1700 B.C., people across the northern steppes began to lead much more sedentary, localized lives. Permanent timber buildings were erected at settlements where tents or wagons had been used before, and people stayed in those buildings long enough to deposit thick middens of garbage outside and around them. These sites are so much easier to find that settlement sites spring into archaeological visibility at the start of the Late Bronze Age as if a veil had been lifted; they cover a strip of northern steppe extending from Ukraine to northern Kazakhstan. A few Middle Bronze Age potsherds usually are found among the thousands of Late Bronze Age potsherds at Srubnaya sites in the western steppes, suggesting

that the same places were being used but in new and quite different ways. We are not sure what that difference was—the nature of the Late Bronze Age economy is fiercely debated.

In the eastern steppes, east of the Urals, the Late Bronze Age witnessed the spread of the Andronovo horizon (1800–1200 B.C.) from Petrovka-Alakul origins. Most Andronovo culture settlements were in new places, which had not been occupied during the preceding Eneolithic, but then the Andronovo horizon represented the first introduction of herding economies in many places east of the Urals. Srubnaya and Andronovo shared a general resemblance in their settlement forms, funeral rituals, ceramics, and metal tools and weapons. We should not exaggerate these resemblances—as in the Early Bronze Age Yamnaya phenomenon, this was a horizon or a related pair of horizons, not a single culture. Still, it was the first time in human history that such a chain of related cultures extended from the Carpathians to the Pamirs, right across the heart of the Eurasian steppes.

Almost immediately, people using Andronovo-style pots and metal weapons made contact with the irrigation-based urban civilizations at the northern edge of the Mesopotamian-Iranian world, in northern Afghanistan and southern Turkmenistan—the Bactria-Margiana civilization—and also with the western fringes of the emerging Chinese world, in Xinjiang and Gansu. These contacts might have started at the end of the Middle Bronze Age, about 2000 B.C., before the Andronovo culture proper began, but they continued through the early Andronovo stages. Once the chain of Late Bronze Age steppe cultures grappled with these civilizations to the east and south, Eurasia began to be, tentatively, a single interacting world.

We have much to learn about exactly how the Srubnaya and Andronovo economies worked. Some western Srubnaya settlements in Ukraine have yielded cultivated cereals, but the role of agriculture farther east is debated. One study of an early Srubnaya settlement in the Samara River valley, east of the Volga, yielded evidence that the site was occupied year-round, or at least cattle were butchered during all seasons of the year. Intensive botanical study recovered not a single cultivated grain, however, and the caries-free teeth of the Srubnaya people buried in a nearby *kurgan* testify to a low-carbohydrate

diet. Waterlogged sediments from the bottom of a well at this site, Krasno Samarskoe, yielded thousands of charred seeds of *Chenopodium*, or goose-foot, a wild plant. At least in some areas, then, permanent year-round settlements might have been supported by a herding-and-gathering economy, with little or no agriculture.

During the Late Bronze Age copper was mined on an almost industrial scale across the steppes. Particularly large mining complexes were located in the southern Urals, at Kargaly near Orenburg, and in central Kazakhstan, near Karaganda. The raw copper ore, the rock itself, seems to have been exported from the mines. Smelting and metalworking were widely dispersed activities; traces are found in many Srubnaya and Andronovo settlements. Andronovo tin mines have been excavated in the Zeravshan valley near Samarkand. True tin bronzes predominated in the east, at many Andronovo sites, while arsenical bronzes continued to be more common in the west, at Srubnaya sites.

The combined Srubnaya and Andronovo horizons might well have been the social network through which Indo-Iranian languages—the kind of languages spoken by the Scythians and Saka a thousand years later—first spread across the steppes. This does not imply that Srubnaya or Andronovo was a single ethnolinguistic group; the new language could have been disseminated through various populations with the widespread adoption of a new ritual and political system. The diffusion of Srubnaya and Andronovo funeral rituals, with their public sacrifices of horses, sheep, and cattle, involved the public performance of a ritual drama shaped very much by political and economic contests for power.

Humans gave a portion of their herds and well-crafted verses of praise to the gods, and the gods, in return, provided protection from misfortune and the blessings of power and prosperity. “Let this racehorse bring us good cattle and good horses, male children, and all-nourishing wealth,” pleaded a Sanskrit prayer in book 1, hymn 162, of the *Rig Veda*. It goes on, “Let the horse with our offerings achieve sovereign power for us.” This relationship was mirrored in the mortal world when wealthy patrons sponsored public funeral feasts in return for the approval and loyalty of their clients. The Indic and Iranian poetry of the *Rig Veda* and *Avesta* of-

fers direct testimony of this kind of system. The people received spectacle with their meat—they witnessed an elaborately scripted sacrifice punctuated by poems full of drama, rich in emotion, occasionally bawdy and earthy, and filled with clever metaphors and triple and double meanings. The best of these verbal displays were memorized, repeated, and shared, and they became part of the collective medium through which a variety of different peoples ended up speaking Indo-Iranian languages across most of the Eurasian steppes.

“Let us speak great words as men of power in the sacrificial gathering,” said the standard closing line attached to several different hymns in book 2, one of the oldest parts of the *Rig Veda*, probably composed about 1500 B.C. This line expresses very well the connections among language, public ritual, verbal artistry, and the projection of secular power. A tradition that had begun in the western steppes thousands of years earlier, with simpler animal sacrifices, developed by the Late Bronze Age into a vehicle for the spread of a new kind of culture across the Eurasian steppes.

See also **Domestication of the Horse** (vol. 1, part 4).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Anthony, David W. “Horse, Wagon, and Chariot: Indo-European Languages and Archaeology.” *Antiquity* (1995): 554–565.
- . “The ‘Kurgan Culture,’ Indo-European Origins, and the Domestication of the Horse: A Reconsideration.” *Current Anthropology* 27, no. 4 (1986): 291–313.
- Chernykh, E. N. *Ancient Metallurgy in the USSR: The Early Metal Age*. Translated by Sarah Wright. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1992.
- Kuzmina, Elena E. “Stages of Development of Stockbreeding Husbandry and Ecology of the Steppes in the Light of Archaeological and Paleocological Data.” In *The Archaeology of the Steppes: Methods and Strategies*. Edited by Bruno Genito, pp. 31–71. Napoli, Italy: Istituto Universitario Orientale, 1994.
- . “Horses, Chariots and the Indo-Iranians: An Archaeological Spark in the Historical Dark.” *South Asian Archaeology* 1 (1993): 403–412.
- Lamberg-Karlovsky, C. C. “Archaeology and Language: The Indo-Iranians.” *Current Anthropology* 43, no. 1 (2002): 75–76.
- Mair, Victor H., ed. *The Bronze Age and Early Iron Age Peoples of Eastern Central Asia*. Washington, D.C.: Institute for the Study of Man, 1998.
- Mallory, James P., and Victor H. Mair. *The Tarim Mummies: Ancient China and the Mystery of the Earliest Peoples from the West*. New York: Thames and Hudson, 2000.
- Shishlina, Natalia, ed. *Seasonality Studies of the Bronze Age Northwest Caspian Steppe*. Papers of the State Historical Museum, vol. 120. Moscow: Gosudarstvennyi istoricheskii muzei, 2000. (Distributed outside Russia by University Museum Publications, University of Pennsylvania Museum, Philadelphia.)
- Rassamakin, Yuri. “The Eneolithic of the Black Sea Steppe: Dynamics of Cultural and Economic Development 4500–2300 B.C.” In *Late Prehistoric Exploitation of the Eurasian Steppe*. Edited by Marsha Levine, Yuri Rassamakin, Aleksandr Kislenko, and Nataliya Tatarintseva, pp. 59–182. Cambridge, U.K.: McDonald Institute for Archaeological Research, 1999.
- Telegin, Dimitri Y., and James P. Mallory. *The Anthropomorphic Stelae of the Ukraine: The Early Iconography of the Indo-Europeans*. Journal of Indo-European Studies Monograph, no. 11. Washington, D.C.: Institute for the Study of Man, 1994.

DAVID W. ANTHONY



BRONZE AGE TRANSCAUCASIA

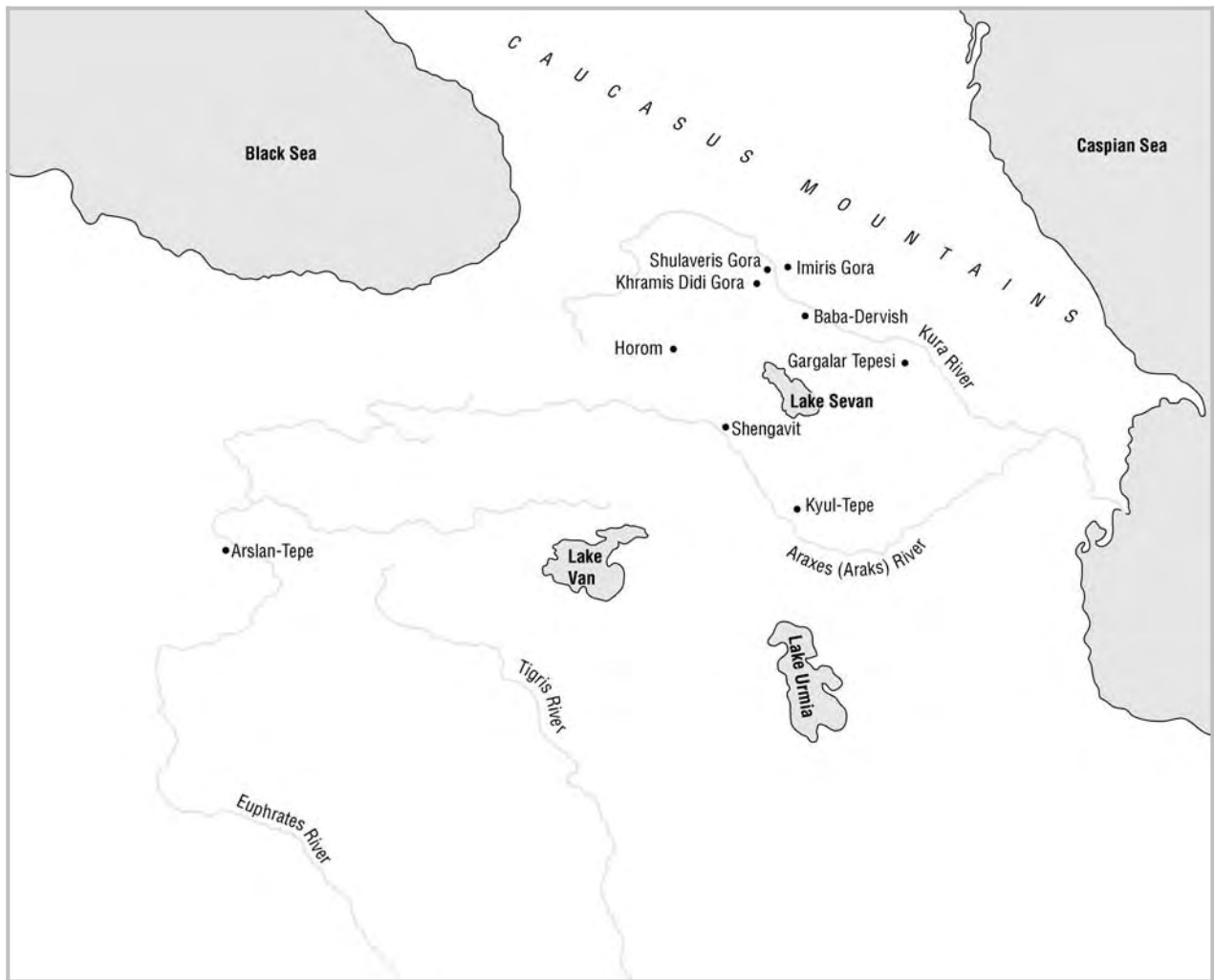
Transcaucasia is the territory south of the great Caucasus mountain range that spans the region from the isthmus between the Black Sea and the Sea of Azov in the west to the Caspian Sea in the east. The modern political boundaries of Transcaucasia include the republics of Georgia, Armenia, Azerbaijan, and the area of eastern Turkey and northwestern Iran. Emphasis here is placed on the cultural developments of the area encompassed by Georgia and Armenia, but the archaeological record of the entire region is discussed in the context of overall archaeological trends.

Although Transcaucasia is a region with a unique archaeological history, the material record also reflects some of the shared influences of contact with surrounding territories to the north in the great Caucasus and to the south in the Near East. The span of the Bronze Age (from c. 3500–3300 to 1200 B.C.), in particular, is a period of significant interregional contact, change, and development in nearly all aspects of the way the early Transcaucasian inhabitants lived. Some of these important developments include the invention of transformative technologies, such as metallurgy and wheeled transportation, and changes in the manner in which people built homes, settled, and used the land upon which they lived and established interconnections with surrounding territories. The archaeological history of the entire Bronze Age is of importance for understanding long-term cultural trends and changes, but this article focuses on developments particular to the Early Bronze Age (up to 2200 B.C.). It was during this period that some of the most significant cul-

tural transformations have been recorded and the underpinnings for subsequent cultural, technological, and economic changes were established.

Transcaucasia is a region of vast climatic and ecological diversity, and this diversity had an impact on prehistoric settlement and the emergence of complex society during the Bronze Age. The region is largely mountainous, interspersed with fertile valleys and upland plateaus. Along its western border at the Black Sea there is a lush, subtropical depression in the Colchis region of Georgia. In the east are desertlike, dry steppes bordering the river lowlands in eastern Azerbaijan, and along the shore of the Caspian Sea spreads a broad coastal plain. There are a few seasonally passable routes linking the steppe and the northern, or Greater, Caucasus with the southern Caucasus. To the south in Armenia the terrain is characterized by windswept highland plateaus that connect the area almost without interruption with Anatolia (modern Turkey) and northwest Iran. Transecting the region are two major rivers, the Kura (ancient Cyrus) and the Araks (ancient Araxes) (1,364 and 915 kilometers long, respectively). These rivers, giving name to the Early Bronze Age Kura-Araxes culture, flow from west to east and are joined intermittently by highland-draining tributaries. They link course in Azerbaijan before flowing into the Caspian Sea. The headwaters for both the Kura and Araks Rivers lie in eastern Turkey.

The presence of the rivers and their tributaries is significant for supporting some of the ecological riches of the region, in that they afforded the availability of water necessary for supporting agriculture



Bronze Age Transcaucasia. ADAPTED FROM KUSHNAREVA 1997.

and for the establishment of permanent settlements along the river courses. As well as being rich in fertile land for practicing agriculture and pasturing animals, Transcaucasia also is rich in other natural resources, such as obsidian (volcanic glass), semiprecious stones, and the very important resource copper.

BACKGROUND ON ARCHAEOLOGICAL RESEARCH

Some explanation of the history of archaeological research in the region is relevant for understanding how archaeologists have come to reconstruct society during the Bronze Age. During the nineteenth century, antiquarians began to investigate the prehistoric riches of the region with the discovery of massive earthen burials called *kurgans*. *Kurgans* are

large circular or square semi-subterranean pits, sometimes constructed in wood and lined with stones, within which were often placed numerous bodies, wagons, animals, jewelry, bronze artifacts, and pottery. The artifacts uncovered in *kurgans* provide the earliest glimpses into the rich archaeological prehistory of the region. During the first half of the twentieth century more systematic excavations in Transcaucasia were implemented, and a fuller picture of the region's archaeological history began to emerge. These investigations were conducted by Russian and Caucasian (Georgian, Armenian, and Azerbaijani) archaeologists.

While the significance of these excavations was recognized and published within the region, these reports often did not circulate among western

scholars with interest in European and Near Eastern prehistory. Among the reasons that western scholars did not have access to the archaeological reports from Transcaucasia is that during the Soviet era (1917–1992) members of the scientific community of the Soviet Union remained largely isolated from their European and American colleagues. In addition, the reports of these excavations were published in Russian or in the language of the country where the excavations were conducted. These language barriers further hindered access to what was being recorded of the rich archaeological past. Since the collapse of the Soviet Union, collaborations among western and former Soviet scholars have opened exchanges of archaeological findings, which has afforded a greater understanding of the overall archaeological picture in Transcaucasia. The archaeological history of this region now can be compared more effectively with contemporary prehistoric developments in surrounding regions, such as Europe and the Near East.

CHARACTERIZING THE EARLY BRONZE AGE IN TRANSCAUCASIA

The nature of the development and emergence of the Early Bronze Age Kura-Araxes culture in Transcaucasia is not very well understood, but the archaeological record shows an explosion in the number of settlements across the region. Hundreds of new sites were established in ecologically diverse zones. While excavations at several Early Bronze Age sites, such as Kultepe and Baba Dervish (both in Azerbaijan), Imiris-Gora and Shulaveris-Gora (both in Georgia), Shengavit (Armenia), and Sös Höyük (Turkey) have revealed uninterrupted occupation from the preceding Aneolithic period, the vast majority of these sites represent newfound settlements where none previously existed. In addition to the six sites named, dozens of other sites have been thoroughly excavated, and from these excavations archaeologists are able to interpret much about the culture and economy of the region. Cemeteries have been discovered in association with a few Kura-Araxes settlements, such as Horom in Armenia and Kvatskelebi in Georgia, and the material remains recovered from graves provide an enriched account of the customs of burial as well as a more thorough documentation of Kura-Araxes material culture.

Before the Early Bronze Age, the Aneolithic period (5500–3500 B.C.), which corresponds to the

“Copper Age” in southern and southeastern Europe, is characterized by relatively few sites, typically no larger than a hectare in size. The structures built during the Aneolithic Shulaveri-Shomu Tepe and Sioni cultures were constructed from mud brick or wattle and daub, and they typically were rounded, single-room dwellings, sometimes with benches built along the interior walls. The pottery was hand-made from coarse clay, and the vessel shapes generally were simple bowls and jars. Stone tools made from obsidian and flint during the Aneolithic are abundant and reflect a sophisticated technology, as do tools made from antler and bone. A limited number of radiocarbon dates of the fossilized remains of plants and animals reveals that as early as the sixth millennium B.C. people inhabiting the region practiced some agriculture and kept livestock, such as cattle, sheep, goats and pigs. They also supplemented their diets by gathering wild cereals and hunting wild game.

Archaeologists typically use the appearance of a more complex copper-based metallurgical technology to mark the chronological and technological distinction between the Aneolithic and Early Bronze Age. There are other significant cultural and economic attributes, such as the increase in the number of sites, intensified agriculture and pastoralism, and changes in ceramic technology, that distinguish these periods. While about a dozen copper artifacts, such as awls and beads, have been excavated from Aneolithic levels at such sites as Khramis Didi Gora and Gargalar Tepesi in the central Transcaucasia, these objects are not typical of the period. It is not until about 3200 B.C. that a more developed copper-alloy metallurgical technology was established in Transcaucasia. The origins of metallurgy in the region are not well known, but the Caucasus Mountains are rich in polymetallic ores necessary for producing metal objects, especially bronze. It is likely that metallurgical technology was adopted from regions outside Transcaucasia, such as northern Mesopotamia or, more likely, the Balkans and areas along the Black Sea, where earlier archaeological evidence of metal production appears. During the early stages of the Bronze Age, metal objects were typically manufactured from a combination of copper and arsenic. The deliberate addition of small amounts of arsenic to copper can make the final object, such as a dagger or a bracelet, stronger than if it were made from copper alone.

While the adoption of metallurgy had a profound effect on the regional economy of Transcaucasia at the beginning of the Bronze Age, there are other significant economic and technological changes evident in the archaeological record as well. The practice of agriculture and pastoralism was intensified during this period. At least six varieties of wild wheat are known to be indigenous to Transcaucasia, although it is likely that the practice of agriculture was introduced from territories to the west and south in Anatolia. Rain-fed agriculture could have been practiced on the central and southern Caucasus plains, where tributary-fed valleys would have been fertile enough to support an agricultural economy. Irrigation would have been required in the eastern region of Azerbaijan, where more desertlike conditions are prevalent; conversely, drainage would have posed a problem in the semitropical Colchis region of Georgia along the Black Sea.

Because of Transcaucasia's ecological diversity, however, it is impossible to define a single economic base that characterizes the entire region during the Early Bronze Age. Pastoralism, whether seasonal or classic nomadism, was certainly a significant component of the economy. Archaeologists have yet to decipher just how prevalent the practice of pastoralism was during the Early Bronze Age and in what manner this way of life coalesced with agriculturally oriented Kura-Araxes people. Still, archaeological evidence in the form of settlement patterns, where sites reveal only single-occupation levels, faunal remains, and portable hearth stands, supports the concept that pastoralism was practiced to some degree.

The earliest Kura-Araxes settlements may indicate a semi-nomadic lifestyle because many of the sites have only single levels of occupation. This suggests that sites were used for a period of time and then abandoned; they do not appear to have been occupied for long periods, which would have necessitated rebuilding of houses and storage facilities. This evidence may reflect seasonal or short-term occupation. Some of the material culture, such as elaborate, yet portable hearth stands, also may be an indication of impermanence (fig. 1).

These conditions are not universal for all Kura-Araxes sites, however. There are many sites, such as Karnut and Shengavit in Armenia, where the houses are constructed from tuff, a local volcanic stone. The investment required to build a home from

stone (rather than principally from mud) indicates that the inhabitants may have intended to reside for longer periods of time in a single location. Nonetheless, there is evidence to suggest that the settlements with more deeply stratified layers, reflecting longer periods of occupation, are found mainly in the areas that may have been better suited for agricultural and year-round occupation. Those Kura-Araxes settlements with shallow deposits that appear to reflect seasonal or short-term occupation generally are located instead in areas where the land was better suited for pasturing animals on a seasonal basis. The relationship between the relative degree of permanence among Kura-Araxes settlements in Transcaucasia and zones of ecological diversity in the region remains to be fully investigated.

What clearly appears to be a hallmark of the Early Bronze Age in Transcaucasia, however, is the establishment of many settlements where none previously existed. Rectilinear annexes on the circular dwellings become more common after the first stage of the Early Bronze Age (up to 2800 B.C.). The subsequent addition of rectangular structures has been interpreted, using ethnographic parallels, to suggest a general shift in the economy from one based on nomadism to one that is possibly more sedentary and probably more agriculturally based.

Archaeologists frequently rely on the presence or absence of different types of ceramics at archaeological sites to characterize archaeological cultures, interaction among cultures, and the relative chronological periodization of sites. Kura-Araxes ceramics are unique and very distinctive among contemporary pottery types found in Europe and the Near East. The Early Bronze Age pottery of Transcaucasia is handmade, highly burnished, and red-black or brown-black in color. Vessel forms range in size and shape, but typical forms include carinated bowls and jars with cylindrical necks and flared rims. The Kura-Araxes ceramics from the first two phases of the Early Bronze Age (up to 2500 B.C.) occasionally are decorated with incised lines. Ceramics of the later phase of the Early Bronze Age (2500–2200 B.C.) are more consistently brown-black or red-black in color, extremely highly burnished so as to resemble a metal surface, and occasionally decorated in relief on the exterior surface, with coils of applied clay in the shape of spirals and geometric designs.



Fig. 1. Two Early Bronze Age portable hearth stands excavated from Sös Höyük in eastern Turkey. Hearth stands such as these examples are characteristic artifacts of early Transcaucasian culture and sometimes also occur in anthropomorphic or zoomorphic forms. COURTESY OF ANTONIO SAGONA. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

Kura-Araxes ceramics have been found across a broad region extending beyond the traditional borders of Transcaucasia well into Iran, northern Mesopotamia, and as far south as Syria and in Palestine, where it is called Khirbet Kerak ware. The expansive presence of this distinctive Kura-Araxes ceramics type across the greater Near East is indicative of the region's contacts with surrounding territories. The economic forces driving the interregional contacts are not well understood, but they may have been connected to numerous complex factors, such as the seasonal migrations of small populations of nomadic pastoralists, the development of metallurgical technology, and an increasing demand for bronze artifacts and expertise in metal technology.

While archaeologists have yet to interpret fully the social and economic relationships between Transcaucasia and its surrounding territories, the discovery of a "royal" tomb at Arslantepe in the Malatya plain of eastern Anatolia reveals a far more complex picture than was recognized previously. Arslantepe was a major urban settlement of the region during the fourth and third millennia B.C., and finds from this site show significant connections with southern and northern Mesopotamia (modern

Iraq) as well as Transcaucasia. Discovered in 1996 by a team of Italian archaeologists, the remarkable finds excavated within the "royal" tomb, which dates to 3000–2800 B.C., show a notable influence by bearers of both early Transcaucasia Kura-Araxes and Mesopotamian cultures.

Within the tomb, constructed in a cist form characteristic of some Early Bronze Age Transcaucasian burials, were found numerous Kura-Araxes vessels as well as ceramic types typical of the local tradition. In addition, four juveniles, believed to have been sacrificed, were discovered in the upper portion of the burial, and a single male interred with an extremely rich assortment of metal objects was found within the tomb's central chamber. The metal objects (sixty-four in number) offer the most telling evidence of Transcaucasian influence during this period. These artifacts (jewelry such as a diadem, or headband; spiral rings; and armbands made from silver and silver-copper) are typologically very similar to objects found in Georgia. In addition, many weapons in the tomb, such as bronze spearheads with silver inlay, show clear connections in their metallurgical composition and typology with contemporary Transcaucasian examples.

The finds from the Arslantepe “royal” tomb and the widespread appearance of red-black, burnished Kura-Araxes ceramics suggest that the bearers of the Kura-Araxes culture had far-reaching influence across a wide region during the Early Bronze Age. The command of metallurgical technology as well as the abundance of ores that existed in the Caucasus Mountains, along with the movements of nomadic animal herders from Transcaucasia, may have influenced the economic, political, and social developments in highly significant ways across the Near East.

THE END OF THE EARLY BRONZE AGE

At the end of the Early Bronze Age in Transcaucasia, around 2200 B.C., there was a pronounced change in the archaeological record. Most of the Kura-Araxes sites appear to have been abandoned, and the Middle Bronze Age is known primarily through rich and elaborately constructed *kurgan* burials, of the same type that inspired antiquarians in the early twentieth century to investigate the prehistory of the region. Transportation bears a previously unseen significance at the end of the Early Bronze Age. The domestication of the horse, which probably was introduced from the Russian grassland steppe, had a profound impact on the mobility of Middle Bronze Age peoples, and two-wheeled wagons appeared for the first time in Middle Bronze Age *kurgans*. No simple archaeological interpretation exists to explain the drastic shift of settlement patterns from the end of the Early Bronze into the Middle Bronze Age. A variety of explanations seems possible.

One possibility is that the environment may have become unsuitable to support agriculture, thus forcing or merely encouraging a more nomadic or pastoral-based economy. Another possibility is that dramatic social and political changes in surrounding territories, such as Anatolia and the northern Caucasus, possibly driven by competition for resources and the emergence of incipient state-level political organizations, may have forced changes in how people made a living, settled, stored wealth, and buried their dead. Based on the present evidence, however, such a determination is not made simply, and the result of such a shift is dramatically and swiftly apparent in the material record throughout the Caucasus at the end of the Early Bronze Age.

Ongoing excavations in Transcaucasia continue to provide evidence to further archaeologists’ understanding of the prehistory of the region. The finds at Arslantepe as well as the increasing collaboration among Georgian, Armenian, Azerbaijani, and western archaeologists are changing how archaeologists understand the Early Bronze Age of Transcaucasia. The archaeological picture is far more complex than previously was understood. The explosion in the number of settlements, the development of metallurgical technology, the growing reliance on economies of pastoralism and agriculture, and interregional interaction are all component factors in the development of increasingly complex social and political structures during the Early Bronze Age.

See also *Early Metallurgy in Southeastern Europe* (vol. 1, part 4); *Iron Age Caucasus* (vol. 2, part 6).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Chernykh, E. N. *Ancient Metallurgy in the USSR*. Translated by Sarah Wright. New Studies in Archaeology. Cambridge, U.K., and New York: Cambridge University Press, 1992.
- Frangipane, M. “The Late Chalcolithic/EB I Sequence at Arslantepe: Chronological and Cultural Remarks from a Frontier Site.” In *Chronologies des pays du Caucase et de l’Euphrate aux IVe–IIIe millénaires*. Edited by Catherine Marro and Harald Hauptmann, pp. 439–471. Paris: Institut Français d’Étude Anatoliennes d’Istanbul, 2000.
- Frangipane, M., et al. “New Symbols of a New Power in a ‘Royal’ Tomb from 3000 BC Arslantepe, Malatya (Turkey).” *Paléorient* 27, no. 2 (2001): 105–139.
- Kavtaradze, Georgi Leon. “The Importance of Metallurgical Data for the Formation of a Central Transcaucasian Chronology.” In *The Beginnings of Metallurgy*. Edited by Andreas Hauptmann, Ernst Pernicka, Thilo Rehren, and Ünsal Yalçın, pp. 67–101. Bochum, Germany: Deutsches Bergbau-Museum, 1999.
- Kiguradze, Tamaz. “The Chalcolithic–Early Bronze Age Transition in the Eastern Caucasus.” In *Chronologies des pays du Caucase et de l’Euphrate aux IVe–IIIe millénaires*. Edited by Catherine Marro and Harald Hauptmann, pp. 321–328. Paris: Institut Français Étude Anatoliennes d’Istanbul, 2000.
- . *Neolithische Siedlungen von Kvemo-Kartli, Georgien*. Munich, Germany: C. H. Beck Verlag, 1986.
- Kohl, P. L. “Nationalism, Politics, and the Practice of Archaeology in Transcaucasia.” *Journal of European Archaeology* 2 (1993): 179–186.

- . “The Transcaucasian ‘Periphery’ in the Bronze Age: A Preliminary Formulation.” In *Resources, Power, and Interregional Interaction*. Edited by Edward Schortman and Patricia A. Urban, pp. 117–137. New York: Plenum Press, 1992.
- Kushnareva, Kariné K. *The Southern Caucasus in Prehistory: Stages of Cultural and Socioeconomic Development from the Eighth to the Second Millennium B.C.* Translated by H. N. Michael. Philadelphia: University of Pennsylvania, University Museum, 1997.
- Kushnareva, Kariné K., and T. N. Chubinishvili. *Drevnie kultury yuzhnogo Kavkaza* [Ancient cultures of the southern Caucasus]. Leningrad, Russia: n.p., 1970.
- Rothman, Mitchell S. “Ripples in the Stream: Transcaucasia-Anatolian Interaction in the Murat/Euphrates Basin at the Beginning of the Third Millennium B.C.” In *Archaeology in the Borderlands: Investigations in Caucasia and Beyond*. Edited by Adam T. Smith and Karen Rubinson. Los Angeles: Cotsen Institute of Archaeology Publications, 2003.
- Sagona, Antonio. “Settlement and Society in Late Prehistoric Trans-Caucasus.” In *Between the Rivers and Over the Mountains*. Edited by Alba Palmieri and M. Frangipane, pp. 453–474. Rome: Università di Rome “La Sapienza,” 1993.

Laura A. Tedesco



BRONZE AGE CYPRUS

By the beginning of the Bronze Age, about 3000 B.C., most Mediterranean islands, large or small, had been settled. People were producing their own food and living in the same community year-round. About the same time, Mediterranean societies were becoming increasingly complex, which is evident from such factors as population growth, the production of food surpluses, the use of storage facilities, involvement in long-distance trade relationships, and the establishment of territorial boundaries. These developments occurred because special-interest groups, or possibly even a single local leader, came to control access to various items increasingly in widespread demand on the Mediterranean islands and in the surrounding countries: raw materials (copper, gold, silver, tin), precious goods (ivory, alabaster, faience, lapis lazuli, and other precious or semiprecious stones), and a range of more perishable goods lost to the archaeological record. Intricate and interconnected economic systems also came into operation at this time: from the Levantine coast in the east; through Cyprus and western Anatolia to the Aegean, Italy, and Sardinia; and as far west as Spain. By the end of the third millennium B.C., the trade in metals had become a key factor in promoting social change, and copper from Cyprus was an important component of this Mediterranean interaction sphere.

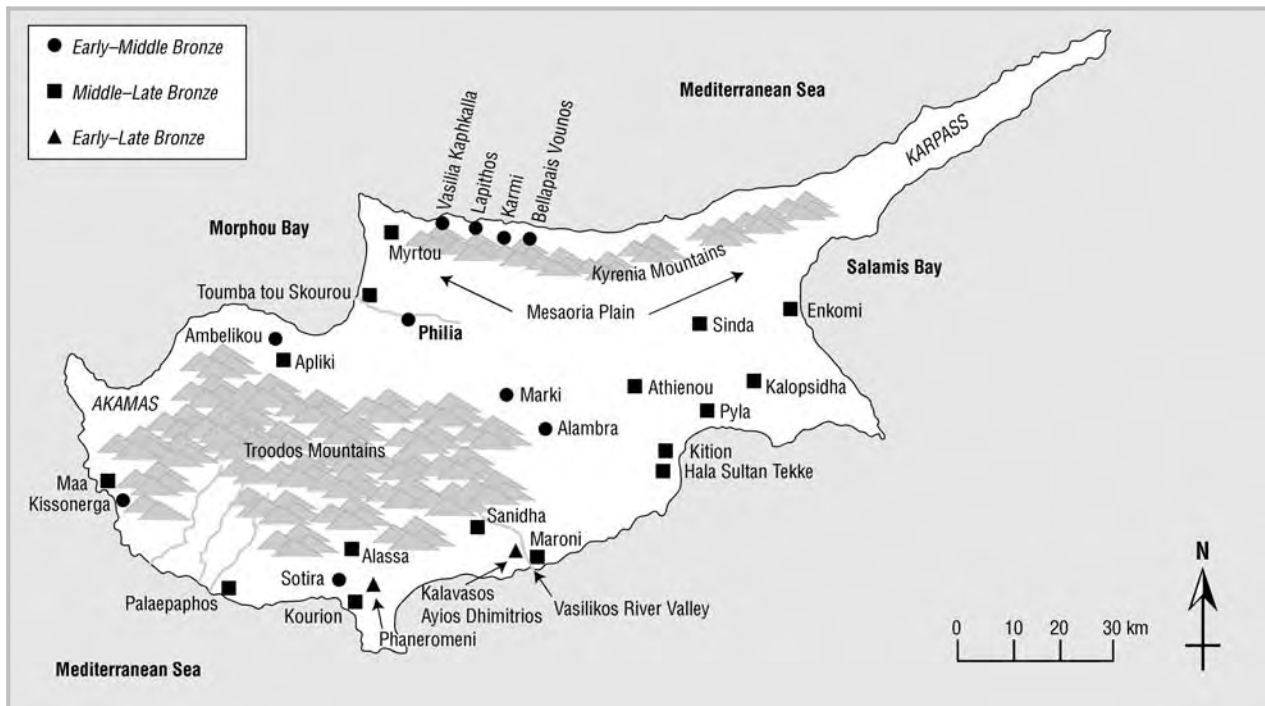
Cyprus, the third largest island in the Mediterranean (9,251 square kilometers), lies in its northeast corner. The mainland of Syria is approximately 100 kilometers east of Cyprus, that of Turkey about 70 kilometers north, while Egypt lies about 400 ki-

lometers south. The boundary of the Aegean world, at the island of Rhodes, is situated about 500 kilometers west. Archaeological evidence demonstrates that Cyprus increasingly developed trade links and other social contacts with these areas during the course of the Bronze Age. Several important Late Bronze Age (c. 1600–1200 B.C.) Cypriot sites with imported goods—Enkomi, Hala Sultan Tekke, Maroni, and Kition (fig. 1)—had inner harbors situated on large bays or at river mouths, all of which are now silted in or dried up. The material culture of Bronze Age Cyprus—from pottery to seals, from ornate buildings to burial chambers, from copper awls to bronze cauldrons—is among the best known and widely published of any island culture in the Mediterranean.

CYPRUS: THE CULTURAL SEQUENCE

C. 2500–1700 B.C.

Toward the end of the fourth millennium B.C., certain innovations such as the cart and the plow, a variety of domesticated animals and their “secondary products” (e.g., wool, leather, and milk), and evidence for the widespread herding of these animals (pastoralism) had appeared in parts of Europe and the Mediterranean. By adopting all or even some of these technological and cultural innovations, people were able to maximize agricultural production and thus ensure a reliable subsistence base. These new technologies represent a phenomenon known as the “Secondary Products Revolution.” Along with the emergence of regional trade systems, this revolution brought about changes in the way that people thought about things, and also brought an in-



Selected sites in Bronze Age Cyprus. ADAPTED FROM KNAPP 1994.

creased capacity for societies to process and transfer information, ideas, and material goods.

Although such innovations had been adopted in the Levant and the Aegean during the third millennium B.C., initially they seem to have bypassed Cyprus, perhaps as a result of its insularity. Toward the end of the Chalcolithic period (about 2800–2500 B.C. on Cyprus), however, the introduction of the plow and the reappearance of cattle in large numbers demonstrate that the island also had been touched by this Secondary Products Revolution. Excavations at several sites on Cyprus since the 1980s have provided important new evidence for this major economic transformation, evidence that also has helped archaeologists to understand better the transition to the Bronze Age.

The Cypriot archaeological record of this early stage in the Bronze Age also reveals an increased number of ground stone tools used in agricultural production and a growing dependence on domesticated animals at the expense of hunted animals such as deer. This expansion in the agricultural and pastoral sectors of the economy, in turn, served to underpin a key industrial development: the mining and production of copper from Cyprus's abundant ore

deposits. Although the use of copper becomes evident at several sites on Cyprus during the third and especially the early second millennium B.C., expertise in metallurgical technology is best demonstrated by the quality and quantity of metal products found in several tomb deposits along or near the north coast (e.g., Lapithos, Bellapais Vounos, Vasilika Kaphkalla). Almost all foreign imports into Cyprus—pottery, metal implements, stone vessels, and faience goods from the Levant, Egypt, and the Aegean—also were recovered from these north coast sites. Together, the native metalwork and the imports suggest something far beyond local production for local consumption: external demand for Cypriot copper also must have been increasing at this time. Indeed, nineteenth century B.C. cuneiform records from Mari on the Euphrates River in Syria make the earliest reference to copper from “Alashiya,” a place-name that virtually all archaeologists and ancient historians now accept as the Bronze Age equivalent of “Cyprus.”

Despite the limited evidence for Cypriot overseas contacts during the period between about 3000–2000 B.C., various states and kingdoms in the eastern Mediterranean maintained a high level of demand for imports such as the cedars of Lebanon



Fig. 1. An aerial overview of the excavations at the Late Bronze Age harbor site of Kition, Cyprus. DEPARTMENT OF ANTIQUITIES, CYPRUS. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

or the copper of Cyprus. Because tin was the metal of choice to alloy with copper in order to manufacture bronze, long-distance trade was stimulated even further. Silver produced in the Cycladic islands of the Aegean also became an important commodity, and the products of early Aegean metallurgists helped to expand trade rapidly throughout the eastern Mediterranean. Other goods traded at this time

in the Aegean and eastern Mediterranean included wine, olive oil, precious metals, and pottery. Technological innovations of the third millennium B.C., such as the longboat and sail, facilitated the bulk transport of raw materials or manufactured goods on an unprecedented scale. A multitude of harbors and the diversity of trading routes further promoted a budding sense of internationalism.

On Cyprus, the increased size, number, and spread of settlements throughout the centuries between about 2500–1700 B.C. indicate a successful adaptation to environmental constraints imposed by an island ecosystem. The limited evidence for external contacts up to about 1700 B.C. suggests that subsistence needs were met and social networks maintained within the island system. Perhaps because innovations associated with the Secondary Products Revolution reduced the amount of time that had to be devoted to subsistence needs, some people began to specialize in producing goods such as woolens and textiles, stone figurines, shell beads, gaming stones, and a variety of metal tools and implements. Although a large part of the published archaeological data from this period comes from burials, excavations at sites such as Kissonerga-Mosphilia, Sotira-Kaminoudhia, Marki-Alonia, and Alambra-Mouttes are changing that picture dramatically. As a result we are better able to understand issues of chronology, cultural continuity and discontinuity, foreign contacts, and all the developing signs of a more complex social system.

To summarize the earliest phases of the Bronze Age on Cyprus, the Secondary Products Revolution enabled people to utilize their animals more fully and effectively. One result was that more land became available, and some people were able to exploit these economic developments, eventually to establish themselves in positions of social if not political power. The increase in the number and size of sites during the third millennium B.C. indicates population increase; at the same time, some settlements began to show marked differentiation from others. In turn, these developments were linked directly to the increased production of metals and the emergence and expansion of long-distance trade, which was closely associated with the acquisition of imported luxury or prestige goods. Although Cyprus never developed the type of palaces and palatial economies that came to typify Levantine city-states or Aegean citadels, somebody on the island must have managed the increasingly specialized levels of production and overseen the subsistence needs of those specialists who were producing surplus goods and metals for trade. During the third and early second millennia B.C., major social changes took place on Cyprus, when trade and contact with external groups helped to overcome a deep-seated resistance

to social and economic stratification. At the same time, this was a transitional era, when indigenous elites seized the opportunity to formalize, legitimize, and integrate the copper industry that would become so critical in all of the social, politico-economic, and urban developments of the later Middle and Late Bronze Ages.

CYPRUS: THE CULTURAL SEQUENCE C. 1700–1100 B.C.

Throughout the course of the second millennium B.C., states and kingdoms in the Levant and the Aegean, as well as on Cyprus, became entangled in the production, trade, and consumption of utilitarian and luxury goods as well as a range of organic items (e.g., olive oil, wine, honey, spices). Port cities and palatial centers took part in this lucrative international trade and found their political positions enhanced as a result. Some of the best-known trading centers involved were Ugarit (Syria), Enkomi and Hala Sultan Tekke (Cyprus), Tell el-'Ajjul and Tel Nami (Israel), Troy (Anatolia), Kommos (Crete), and Mycenae and Pylos (mainland Greece). Cypriot and Aegean pottery has been recovered everywhere from the southern Levant and Egypt to Sicily and Sardinia; Aegean (Mycenaean) pottery has even been found in Spain. Copper oxhide ingots, which most likely served as a medium for exchange during the Late Bronze Age (c. 1600–1200 B.C.), have been recovered in contexts stretching from the Black Sea and Babylonia to Sardinia.

Since the early 1990s, a number of remarkable finds have helped to extend and refine our understanding of Mediterranean trading systems. Two deserve special mention: The first is the rich and diverse cargo—including Cypriot, Aegean, Egyptian, and Levantine goods—of a Late Bronze Age shipwreck found at Uluburun on the southern coast of Turkey. The second is the fragmentary wall paintings from a Middle Bronze Age palace in Israel (Tel Kabri) and from a Middle to Late Bronze Age palace in the eastern Nile Delta (Tell ed Dab'a), both of which reveal iconographic and design elements common throughout the eastern Mediterranean world. All these goods demonstrate the mobilization of workers and the deployment of craft specialists in a wide-reaching communication system that linked traded goods, ideology, iconography, and sociopolitical status.

To understand how and why Mediterranean peoples became involved in these production and trade systems, it is necessary to realize that trade is a form of social communication, and social resources are as important as natural ones. All goods of lasting value, including prestige or luxury items, are important not only in amassing wealth but also in building social status and creating social or economic alliances. An exceptionally diverse and abundant archaeological record shows clearly that seaborne trade throughout the Late Bronze Age Aegean and eastern Mediterranean had many dimensions: complex in nature and diverse in structure, it encompassed both state-dominated and entrepreneurial aspects. Within the Bronze Age Mediterranean, there were so many different kinds of resources and unique types of goods available, and so many different ways to transport them, that no single overarching system ever prevailed.

On Cyprus itself, several striking changes appear in the archaeological record of the late Middle to Late Bronze Ages (c. 1700–1100 B.C.): (1) urban centers with public and ceremonial architecture (“temples”) appear throughout the island; (2) burial practices reveal clear distinctions in social status (e.g., three females found in Tomb 11 at Ayios Dhimitrios were interred with various gold items totaling nearly one pound in weight); (3) writing (“Cypro-Minoan”), on clay tablets, first appears; (4) copper production and export intensified as extensive regional and long-distance trade developed; (5) newly built fortifications and a relative increase in the number of weapons found indicate other kinds of change in Cypriot society. This dramatic trajectory of development and change reveals the island’s transformation from a somewhat isolated, village-oriented culture into an international, urban-centered, and highly complex society. The successful exploitation of mineral resources and production of agricultural surpluses meant that political authority, at least initially, had to be centralized. Eventually, the intensified production and trade of copper catapulted Cyprus into the role of the most important purveyor of this metal in the Mediterranean region, a situation that continued at least until the fall of the Roman Empire, some two thousand years later. The name Cyprus, after all, is directly related to the Latin word for copper—*cuprum*.

Newly built port cities (e.g., Hala Sultan Tekke, Maroni, Kition) specialized in trade and prospered as their populations grew. Cuneiform letters sent from “Alashiya” (Cyprus) to the Egyptian pharaoh show that the king of Cyprus wielded considerable authority over copper production and trade. Two cuneiform documents from Ugarit in Syria demonstrate that high-level, diplomatic trade between Cyprus and the Levant continued into the late thirteenth century B.C. Like the dynasts of contemporary western Asia, the Cypriot ruler used state agents to conduct foreign trade. All these documentary records reveal the organizational efficiency, shipping capacity and product diversity that characterized this highly specialized, well-coordinated political and economic system. One of the letters from Ugarit, for example, which states that copper was sent from Cyprus to Ugarit as a “greeting gift,” exemplifies a royal correspondence deeply concerned with trade emissaries, the exchange of various goods, and the commercial regulations that kept the entire system functioning.

In tandem with these specialized developments in urbanization, metallurgical production, and international trade, Cyprus’s mixed farming economy also underwent some changes. There is evidence, for example, of extensive centralized storage facilities at the site of Ayios Dhimitrios: some fifty massive *pitthoi*, or terra cotta storage jars, would have held up to 50,000 kilos of olive oil. The faunal record is less dramatic, but it seems clear that animal exploitation centered on sheep and goats, although cattle remains have been recovered from several sites. This configuration may reflect the dietary preferences of social elites. Overall, this economic system had to be adequately flexible to feed and support the specialists who made up such a key component of the urban economy. One of the more interesting results of the excavation of the Uluburun shipwreck is the appearance of organic goods—coriander, caper, safflower, fig, and pomegranate seeds; olive pits; cereal grains; almond shells; terebinth resin—part of a usually invisible component of trade in resins, oils, fibers, wine, and other foodstuffs. Demand for such goods certainly would have stimulated Cyprus’s subsistence economy.

During the three centuries between about 1500–1200 B.C., the archaeological record of Cyprus and the eastern Mediterranean reveals a quan-

tum leap in the production and trade of goods such as Cypriot and Aegean pottery; copper oxhide ingots and metal artifacts; glass products; prestige goods such as ivory, gold, amber, and faience; and various organic goods. Trade goods fluctuated as new opportunities or distinctive products became available. Not only did the burgeoning international system of exchange bring prestige goods to ruling elites, it also brought raw materials to craftspeople and food supplies and basic products to rural peasants and producers. Even if powerful elites controlled local economies, the dynamics of production, distribution, and consumption freed up resources for individual activities within a more structured political economy.

Involvement in trade thus had the capacity to transform social groups, change economic motivations, or inspire individual actions. What had begun as a limited trade in high-value, low-bulk luxury goods (e.g., precious metals in the form of jewelry, semiprecious stones, ivory handicrafts) expanded over time to incorporate the bulk exchange of “nonconvertible” commodities (storage jars, textiles, glass) that were locally produced for export on an interregional scale. The real determinants of economic power and political status, however, were convertible goods, especially metals and the copper oxhide ingots; these were subject to tight control by powerful rulers and may have been traded exclusively through formal gift exchange. Another significant incentive in Middle to Late Bronze Age Mediterranean trade was the desire by elites, especially newly formed elites, to acquire exotic goods from a distance. One of the ways that elites and rulers legitimized their position and consolidated their power was to import luxury goods that could only have been acquired through the production of other goods—whether raw materials (e.g., metal, wood, ivory, ebony) or finished products (e.g., bronzes, textiles, jewelry, decorated chests).

THE END OF THE BRONZE AGE: CYPRUS AND BEYOND

The century between about 1250–1150 B.C. was characterized by a bewildering array of site destructions and demographic movements (involving in part diverse Mediterranean peoples collectively known as the “Sea Peoples”) that ended the cooperative and lucrative international relations of the

Middle to Late Bronze Ages in the Mediterranean. The “Sea Peoples,” and others like them, were more a symptom than a cause of the widespread decline. Behind the widespread movement of peoples—described on Egyptian monumental records and alluded to in the texts of cuneiform clay tablets—was a proliferation of human displacement and ethnic intermixing that spelled the end of an international era. In each country, stable groups like farmers and minor craftspeople remained in place, with their horizons narrowed but subsistence systems still intact.

On Cyprus, if expanding trade relations had once helped to promote social fusion, the natural circumscription of the island and the growing scarcity of land and raw materials (the result of extensive plow agriculture and copper exploitation) eventually may have led to social division and intra-island competition among various factions. The overall political and economic system nonetheless proved to be so stable that the widespread collapse of other states and trading networks in the Mediterranean seem to have had limited effects on Cyprus. Some of the most important developments in early iron technology took place on Cyprus at this very time. While some agricultural and mining or pottery-producing villages were disrupted or abandoned, the major coastal sites of Enkomi, Kition, and Palaeophos survived the destruction and displacement that occurred elsewhere; they perhaps became new centers of authority, displacing smaller regional centers and managing new Cypriot contacts that were emerging overseas. New maritime trading routes opened to Crete in the Aegean and Sardinia in the central Mediterranean, in the quest for alternative metal supplies or for other resources in demand. As incoming Aegean and Levantine peoples—the latest “colonists” of the island—became acculturated to the Cypriot population, copper production and commercial enterprise seem to have been revitalized, at least in the short term. By 1100 B.C., however, the settlement patterns and political organization that had characterized the Late Bronze Age disappeared, as new social and economic structures dictated the establishment of new population and power centers on Iron Age Cyprus. These new political configurations heralded the rise of Cyprus’s early historical kingdoms and the island’s tactical and commercial adjustments to the new Age of Iron.

See also **Copper Age Cyprus** (vol. 1, part 4).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Bietak, Manfred. *Avaris: The Capital of the Hyksos. Recent Excavations at Tell el'Dab'a*. London: British Museum Press, 1996.
- Broodbank, Cyprian. *An Island Archaeology of the Early Cyclades*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 2000.
- Gale, Noël H., ed. *Bronze Age Trade in the Mediterranean*. Studies in Mediterranean Archaeology, no. 90. Göteborg, Sweden: P. Åströms Förlag, 1991.
- Haldane, Cheryl. "Direct Evidence for Organic Cargoes in the Late Bronze Age." *World Archaeology* 24, no. 3 (1993): 348–360.
- Karageorghis, Vassos. *Cyprus: From the Stone Age to the Romans*. London: Thames and Hudson, 1982. (This volume is now quite out of date, yet it still provides the only comprehensive, well-illustrated overview of the archaeology of Cyprus.)
- Knapp, A. Bernard. "Archaeology, Science-Based Archaeology, and the Mediterranean Bronze Age Metals Trade." *European Journal of Archaeology* 3, no. 1 (2000): 31–56.
- . "Reading the Sites: Prehistoric Bronze Age Settlements on Cyprus." *Bulletin of the American Schools of Oriental Research* 313 (February 1999): 75–86. (A review article that provides a broad overview of two Early-Middle Bronze Age settlement excavations.)
- (with Steve O. Held and Sturt W. Manning). "The Prehistory of Cyprus: Problems and Prospects." *Journal of World Prehistory* 8, no. 4 (1994): 377–452.
- . "Spice, Drugs, Grain, and Grog: Organic Goods in Bronze Age Eastern Mediterranean Trade." In *Bronze Age Trade in the Mediterranean*. Edited by Noël H. Gale, pp. 21–68. Studies in Mediterranean Archaeology, no. 90. Göteborg, Sweden: P. Åströms Förlag, 1991.
- . "Entrepreneurship, Ethnicity, Exchange: Mediterranean Inter-Island Relations in the Late Bronze Age." *Annual of the British School at Athens* 85 (1990): 115–153.
- . "Production, Location, and Integration in Bronze Age Cyprus." *Current Anthropology* 31, no. 2 (1990): 147–176.
- , ed. *Near Eastern and Aegean Texts from the Third to the First Millennia B.C.* Sources for the History of Cyprus, no. 2. Altamont, N.Y.: Greece and Cyprus Research Center, 1996.
- Knapp, A. Bernard, and John F. Cherry. *Provenance Studies and Bronze Age Cyprus: Production, Exchange, and Politico-Economic Change*. Monographs in World Archaeology, no. 21. Madison, Wis.: Prehistory Press, 1994. (This scientifically based study provides the most comprehensive overview available on "provenance" [origins] on Cypriot pottery, metals, and oxhide ingots, together with a lengthy discussion of Bronze Age trade.)
- Manning, Sturt W. "Prestige, Distinction, and Competition: The Anatomy of Socio Economic Complexity in Fourth to Second Millennium B.C.E. Cyprus." *Bulletin of American Schools of Oriental Research* (1993) 292: 35–58.
- Muhly, James D. "The Nature of Trade in the Late Bronze Age Eastern Mediterranean: The Organization of the Metals Trade and the Role of Cyprus." In *Early Metallurgy in Cyprus, 4000–500 B.C.* Edited by James D. Muhly, Robert Maddin, and Vassos Karageorghis, pp. 251–266. Nicosia: Pierides Foundation, 1982.
- Niemeier Wolf-Dietrich, and Barbara Niemeier. "Minoan Frescoes in the Eastern Mediterranean." In *The Aegean and the Orient in the Second Millennium*. Edited by Eric H. Cline and Diane Harris-Cline, pp. 281–289. Aegaeum 18. Liège, Belgium: Université de Liège, 1998.
- Peltenburg, Edgar J. *Lemba Archaeological Project*. Vol. 2.1A, *Excavations at Kissonerga-Mosphilia, 1979–1992*. Studies in Mediterranean Archaeology 70, no. 2. Göteborg, Sweden: P. Åströms Förlag, 1998.
- Pulak, Çemal. "The Uluburun Shipwreck: An Overview." *International Journal of Nautical Archaeology* 27, no. 3 (1998): 188–224. (A specialist report on the results of the world's most famous prehistoric shipwreck.)
- Sanders, Nancy K. *The Sea Peoples: Warriors of the Ancient Mediterranean 1250–1150 B.C.* Rev. ed. London: Thames and Hudson, 1985. (This comprehensive study of the multiple reasons behind, and the many different peoples involved in, the "collapse" of states and economies at the end of the Bronze Age, while somewhat out of date, is for both the general reader and the specialist.)
- Sherratt, Andrew G. "Plough and Pastoralism: Aspects of the Secondary Products Revolution." In *Pattern of the Past: Studies in Honour of David Clarke*. Edited by Ian Hodder, Glynn Isaac, and Norman Hammond, pp. 261–305. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1981. (One of the earliest studies on the Secondary Products Revolution, this specialized article has had a major, far-reaching impact on the study of European and Mediterranean prehistory.)
- Sherratt, Andrew G., and E. Susan Sherratt. "From Luxuries to Commodities: The Nature of Mediterranean Bronze Age Trading Systems." In *Bronze Age Trade in the Mediterranean*. Edited by Noël H. Gale, pp. 351–386. Studies in Mediterranean Archaeology, no. 90. Jönköping, Sweden: P. Åströms Förlag, 1991. (A highly specialized study, one of the best and most comprehensive ever written on Bronze Age trade in the Mediterranean.)

Swiny, Stuart. "From Round House to Duplex: A Reassessment of Prehistoric Bronze Age Cypriot Society." In *Early Society in Cyprus*. Edited by Edgar J. Peltenburg, pp. 14–31. Edinburgh: Edinburgh University Press, 1989.

Swiny, Stuart, George Rapp, and Ellen Herscher, eds. *Sotira Kamminoudhia: An Early Bronze Age Site in Cyprus*. Archaeological Reports, no. 8. Boston: American Schools of Oriental Research, 2002.

A. BERNARD KNAPP



THE MINOAN WORLD

FOLLOWED BY FEATURE ESSAY ON:

Knossos 121

In the middle of the second millennium B.C. the island of Crete supported the most complex civilization in Europe. With elaborate palaces and well-developed towns, the Minoan civilization was the equal of many in the Near East and North Africa. With the collapse of this culture in the later part of the millennium, the world was left with faint glimpses of their achievements, limited to a few lines in certain Greek histories, such as that of Thucydides, and the references to Knossos and King Minos in such myths as that of Theseus and the Minotaur.

Modern knowledge of the Minoan people did not develop until the later part of the nineteenth century. Spurred on by the discoveries of Mycenae and Troy made by the German-American excavator Heinrich Schliemann, the British excavator Sir Arthur Evans began his remarkable excavation of the palace of Minos at Knossos. Archaeological work has continued on Crete until the present day, with excavations of palaces, villas, and towns and important archaeological surveys of much of the island. The portrait of this civilization that we can piece together is at the same time impressive and frustrating.

We now understand quite a bit about the architecture, diet, ceramic traditions, and so on of these people. It is not known, however, whether the Mi-

noan world was a single culture with variations (similar to the ethnic distinctions that we observe today) or several cultures throughout the island of Crete, sharing in a common elite tradition. Our understanding of the process of cultural development and change is equally uncertain, mainly the product of conflicting arguments over chronology. Dated primarily through ceramic style, Minoan civilization presents problems when we note that some ceramic styles appear to be the result more of locational than of temporal differences. There is controversy concerning the correlation of the Minoan temporal stages to the eruption of the volcano on the ancient island of Thera (now Santorini) in the later seventeenth century B.C. Our dating could well be incorrect by at least a century. Rather than relying on the ceramic identification of Minoan time periods, it is better to refer to a chronology that focuses on large social developments:

Pre-palatial period: c. 3100/3000 to 1925/1900 B.C.

Proto-palatial period: c. 1925/1900 to 1750/1720 B.C.

Neo-palatial period: c. 1750/1720 to 1490/1470 B.C.

Post-palatial period: c. 1490/1470 to 1075/1050 B.C.



Minoan Crete and selected sites. ADAPTED FROM PREZIOSI AND HITCHCOCK 1999.

FEATURES OF MINOAN SOCIAL DEVELOPMENT

The Neo-palatial period is most commonly considered the zenith of Minoan civilization. At this time there were four large palace centers—Knossos, Malia, Phaistos, and Kato Zakros—as well as large developed towns, such as Gournia, and numerous examples of small isolated farmsteads. Their economic base was a developed agricultural system that utilized wheat, barley, olives, grapes, sheep, goats, and cattle. But just how Minoan complexity fit into this agricultural background is only partially understood.

What we can determine of Minoan social structure derives basically from analysis of the palatial centers. Significant sections of the structure of all the palaces, with the exception of Kato Zakros, were devoted to the storage of large amounts of agricultural supplies. Knossos was by far the largest of the palaces and had the greatest storerooms. Within these rooms were stored massive amounts of olive oil, olives, wheat, and other agricultural items. The presence of these large storerooms gives a glimpse into the probable structure of the Minoan social hierarchy.

The storage and redistribution of agricultural goods are best paralleled in what anthropologists have identified as a social and economic construction in modern societies, the chiefdom. While a direct comparison between these modern social configurations and the ancient Minoans would be

misleading, an analysis of just how cultures might use food storage in the development of their social and political structures gives insight into the possible basis for the Minoan political and social order.

Social storage of food often is a measure taken by cultures to moderate the risk of agricultural uncertainty. At times, this storage has been manipulated to afford the armature upon which social and political hierarchy first develops. Such was probably the case with the Minoans. The island is composed of a multitude of microenvironments, rather small isolated areas, that are locked in by topographical features, such as mountains. An important feature of these microenvironments in those times was that each had its own particular reaction to normal inter-annual fluctuations in rainfall. The result was that Crete often resembled a patchwork of distinct microenvironments with quite different agricultural yields every year throughout the island. Simply put, one microenvironment could have had a bumper crop of wheat while its near neighbors could have been experiencing a serious shortfall in that grain during the same summer.

Social and political hierarchy can develop when a person or a group begins to control agricultural storage within and between these different microenvironments. Often this is seen in the gathering of a certain percentage of the agricultural surplus and ensuring that some of it is redistributed to those people who live in areas with low productivity in a

particular year. As one might surmise, therein lies the basis of social indebtedness and the platform for constructing social hierarchy.

The palace of Minos at Knossos best illustrates this economic system. The entire western basement was dedicated to food storage. The rulers of Knossos could either return some food to areas in need or, as can be seen from the plan of the palace, use much of it to support craft specialists, who occupied up to a fourth of the palace, in the production of luxury items for use by the ruling family. This system of centralized redistribution was probably in place throughout the island. Only the palace at Kato Zakros lacks such a distinctive storage capacity.

PRE-PALATIAL DEVELOPMENTS

We know too little about the development of this economic and political system. Our knowledge of Cretan culture before the rise of the palaces is scant, with much of our understanding limited to a few small villages. The most elaborate is Myrtos (c. 2600–2170 B.C.) on the southern coast of Crete. A small village, with up to sixty preserved rooms, Myrtos appears to have been settled by five or six family units, with no identifiable hierarchical relationship. The site was agriculturally based and displayed a range of artifacts, from storage jars to serving dishes. Within each family unit, we have been able to identify different types of workrooms, such as kitchens. One unit apparently held a small pottery workshop.

Several common pottery types, most notably, a long-necked, almost bird-shaped teapot, were shared among these Pre-palatial communities, indicating a commonality of design and perhaps function. Regional differences, however, can be seen in distinct variations in tomb types. In the north they were burying the dead in “house tombs,” rectangular structures subdivided into different spaces for burial. In the south, specifically the Messara, the common form of burial was the *tholos*, or circular tomb, which presumably was roofed. In general, it appears that both of these tomb types were collective burials, with the family unit or even a larger corporate group using individual tombs. Certain tombs appear to have been used for a millennium, highlighting their importance in the social construction of early Minoan civilization. With the ever increasing complexity of the later early Minoan and middle Minoan periods came an elaboration of tombs, with

an emphasis on ancestry in the struggle to obtain and maintain social hierarchy.

Toward the end of the early Minoan period we see noticeable changes in Minoan culture. In addition to the emphasis on the importance of ancestry, there was a dramatic change in pottery types. The introduction of “Kamare ware,” a new light-on-dark style of pottery, as well as the barbotine pottery style took place at this point of transition, marking social change, with a possible emphasis on the new social contexts—both political and religious—where these new pottery types were being used.

PROTO-PALATIAL AND NEO-PALATIAL PERIODS

The Proto-palatial and Neo-palatial periods combine to make the era of the construction of the major palaces of Minoan Crete. Knossos (the largest), Malia, and Phaistos were built shortly after the beginning of the second millennium, in the Proto-palatial period. These sites were to be rebuilt about three hundred years later, in the Neo-palatial period, along with the new construction of the easternmost major palace at Kato Zakros. These locales were the residences of Minoan elites or rulers, but other sites, such as the villa at Hagia Triadha, must equally have been homes to the leading families of Minoan Crete. During this period large towns, such as Gournia, developed around major elite residences. Sanctuaries on mountain peaks also make their appearance at this time.

The period was truly a high point in Minoan architecture. The palaces were often several stories high; that at Knossos, for example, probably was four stories in its domestic quarter. Minoan architects and craftsmen showed an attention to fine architectural detail in wall construction and a keen sense of overall design in layout and technical construction. Light wells were used with confidence to open up the interiors of several palaces. Monumentality was added by the use of grand staircases and imposing walls. Large courts were integrated into the rhythm of palatial construction. Minoans even had plumbing in the palaces and other elite residences.

Among the palaces there is a striking similarity in design and construction, which must have mirrored the similar lifestyles of most of the Minoan aristocracy. The likenesses are remarkable and, except

for some differences at Kato Zakros, which was the latest of the palaces, are common features at all the sites. Perhaps the most impressive feature of all the palaces is the central court, a large, rectangular plaza, around which the other sections of the palaces were arranged. The east side of the central court appears to have had a religious character, as evidenced by cult rooms and pillar crypts (sacred rooms with recessed floors and a central post) at Knossos and Malia and the famous throne room—actually a religious installation—at Knossos. As mentioned, agricultural storage was important to the Minoan ruling power, and all the palaces, except Kato Zakros (which might have had storage structures in the form of outlying buildings), had large storage rooms. At Knossos, Malia, and Phaistos these storerooms lie on the ground floor in the wing just to the west of the central court. On the floor above these rooms were the public rooms, or *piano nobile*. These were large reception rooms, perhaps used for public ceremonies.

Each of the four palaces also had a large banquet hall, located on the upper floor, probably to take in a breeze. The hall was not necessarily attached to the public rooms and might have been meant for a more private gathering of elites for entertaining and meals. Residential quarters have been clearly identified at Knossos, Malia, and Phaistos. As we might expect in the layout of private quarters, there is a correspondence in the features of these rooms among similar groups in the same culture. The residential arrangement can be found in a large number of elaborate houses, not just the palaces. That at Knossos is the most elaborate, but it shows the overall regularity of design. Residential space there was composed of a long, triple-divided hall, consisting of a light well, an anteroom, and a back chamber. Running off this hall was access to a religious room, the lustral basin, and to toilet facilities. Within the triple-divided hall, folding doors and upper windows in the wall between the anteroom and the back chamber regulated the light and air coming from the light well.

The palaces themselves were decorated throughout with elaborate frescoes. Favorite themes in the wall paintings were scenes from nature, religious gatherings, palace or community events, and mythological landscapes. The most intricate pottery was used, and possibly manufac-

tured, in the palaces. Several important examples show serving cups, amphorae (large standing containers for oils and water), stirrup jars for perfumed oil, and *pitthoi* (storage vessels), decorated with detailed floral designs, geometric patterns, and marine creatures. In addition to this pottery, the palaces also used carved stone bowls, ritual drinking cups (*rhyta*) of carved stone and gold, and cut rock crystal ornaments.

An interesting point in relation to the palaces is the obvious lack of fortifications. We know that the Minoans were not without a military force, as seen in the military themes of their works of art and the chieftain's cup. But we are at a loss to explain why there was no need to fortify the different settlements. It may well have been that Knossos, the largest of the palaces, exercised control of the military, but reference to societies with such political centrality shows that even the subordinate settlements had fortifications. It may well have been that military campaigns on Crete were limited to raiding, which often took place without elaborate fortifications.

Little is known concerning how the common Minoan lived. Perhaps the best-preserved site is that of Gournia. There a relatively large community surrounded what was an elite residence, with its identifiable central court. The town itself was composed of two- or three-room houses, some with upper floors, laid out on compact, paved streets. Unfortunately, the excavation data from Gournia was lost before it could be published.

It was during these palatial periods that the first writing in Europe arose. There is some evidence for a pictographic script, but by far the strongest evidence is for a script dubbed "Linear A," which was discovered in the Proto-palatial period at Phaistos. Large collections of this script, written on clay tablets, have been found at Hagia Triadha and Chania, on the northwest coast. Although it is recognized as a syllabary, attempts to decipher this form of writing have so far proved futile.

We know somewhat more about Minoan religion of this period. A great deal of the religious focus was centered in the palaces, with examples such as the tripartite shrine, the throne room complex, which had a religious function at Knossos. At this time there was a flowering of rituals on hilltops and in caves. The hilltop shrines, known as "peak

sanctuaries,” number at least fifty and appear along with the development of the first palaces, indicating the strong political function of these sanctuaries as well. Gournia supplies an example of a small town shrine. Figurines, found throughout the palaces, depict women who could have been goddesses or priestesses. One example of the most important figurines, the snake goddesses from the palace at Knossos, depicts women with snakes twirled around their arms and sacred animals, such as owls, on their heads. Male worshippers also seem to be featured, and there are ubiquitous representations of bulls, which have a long history of sacred male identification in the Mediterranean. These figures also appear in stylized form in Minoan culture, as horns of consecration.

Other artifacts indicate that the Minoans regarded trees and the double axe as sacred. We are fortunate to have a sarcophagus from Hagia Triadha, which, on its four sides, depicts events that took place during a funeral. We see worshipers, possible priestesses, and an offering table with a trussed bull waiting to be sacrificed. On a darker note, there is evidence from Knossos and elsewhere that the Minoans also practiced human sacrifice.

During the palatial period, Minoan culture had its greatest contacts with other contemporaneous civilizations in the eastern Mediterranean. The evidence indicates that the most contact Crete had outside its shores was with the Cyclades and Peloponnesian Greece. Finds of Minoan pottery, domestic architecture using the Minoan pier and door hall system, and traces of Linear A script indicate a strong Minoan presence in the Cyclades. Signs of Minoan influence in Greece are directed largely toward the Peloponnese, with a concentration in the Argolid area. The famous grave circles of the elites at Mycenae show numerous works of art, such as sword scabbards and the famous Vapheio cups, that can arguably be attributed to Minoan artists in the employ of foreign elites.

The evidence for Minoan contacts in the rest of the Mediterranean is not as rich. Some Minoan pottery has been found at contemporary sites in western Asia Minor. Small amounts of Minoan goods have turned up in Near Eastern contexts, and tomb paintings from contemporary Egypt depict what appear to be Minoans, the Keftiu, presenting gifts. But we lack a full understanding of the structure of these

contacts. While it could have been that Minoans were colonizing parts of the Aegean islands, as well as the Peloponnese, the evidence could just as well indicate that we are witnessing a strong Minoan cultural ascendancy, which foreign elites were copying.

POST-PALATIAL PERIOD

Exact dates may never be known, but sometime near the turn of the second millennium there was an abrupt collapse of a large section of Minoan culture. All the palaces, with the exception of Knossos, ceased to be occupied. Theories to explain this change vary from the devastating effect of the explosion of the volcano on the island of Thera around 1625 B.C. to the possibility of an invasion from overseas. Whatever the cause, most Minoan occupation on Crete was affected by some sort of catastrophe.

Alone of the palaces, Knossos remained occupied. But there is much to suggest that this survival was not Minoan in character. Evidence from burials around Knossos and from the palace itself points strongly to a foreign, Mycenaean presence on Crete. A rise in militarism, represented in artworks, is distinctly non-Minoan but closely parallels that of the Mycenaeans on the Greek mainland. Of great importance is the finding of Linear B writing tablets at Knossos. Linear B is a distinctively Greek script, which also has been found in the archives of Mycenaean palaces, such as Pylos and Mycenae.

While we are almost secure in seeing Mycenaeans in control of parts of Crete at this point, the structure of this control is only vaguely understood. Decipherment of the Linear B tablets at Knossos shows that, economically at least, the palace at Knossos was operating within a structure very similar to that seen at the mainland Mycenaean palace of Pylos. Analysis of the Linear B tablets hints at a condition where Knossos controlled the major part of the island during this period, however.

In the early fourteenth century B.C., Knossos was subject to major destruction, and any Mycenaean presence at the palace disappeared. However, there is some evidence from other sites, such as the port of Kommos and Hagia Triadha, that occupation continued on Crete. Archaeological evidence indicates that at this period Crete was becoming more fragmented in terms of regional art styles as well as social and economic structures.

See also **Knossos** (vol. 2, part 5); **Mycenaean Greece** (vol. 2, part 5).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Bennet, John. "‘Outside in the Distance’: Problems in Understanding the Economic Geography of Mycenaean Palatial Territories." In *Texts, Tablets and Scribes: Epigraphy and Economy*. Edited by J. P. Olivier and T. G. Palaima, pp. 19–41. Minos Supplement, no. 10. Salamanca, Spain: University of Salamanca, 1988.
- Betancourt, Philip P. *The History of Minoan Pottery*. Princeton, N.J.: Princeton University Press, 1985.
- Cadogan, Gerald. *The Palaces of Minoan Crete*. London: Barrie and Jenkins, 1976.
- Cherry, John F. "Politics and Palaces: Some Problems in Minoan State Formation." In *Peer Polity Interaction and Sociopolitical Change*. Edited by Colin Renfrew and John F. Cherry, pp. 19–45. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1986.
- Dickinson, Oliver T. P. K. *The Aegean Bronze Age*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1994.
- Gesell, Geraldine Cornelia. *Town, Palace, and House Cult in Minoan Crete*. Studies in Minoan Archaeology, no. 67. Göteborg, Sweden: Åströms, 1985.
- Graham, James Walter. *The Palaces of Crete*. 2d ed. Princeton, N.J.: Princeton University Press, 1987.
- Halstead, P. "On Redistribution and the Origin of Minoan-Mycenaean Palatial Economies." In *Problems in Greek Prehistory*. Edited by E. B. French and K. A. Wardle, pp. 519–530. Bristol, U.K.: Bristol Classical Press, 1988.
- Manning, Sturt. "The Bronze Age Eruption of Thera: Absolute Dating, Aegean Chronology, and Mediterranean Cultural Interrelations." *Journal of Mediterranean Archaeology* (1988): 17–82.
- Peatfield, A. A. D. "Minoan Peak Sanctuaries; History and Society." *Opuscula Atheniensia* 18 (1990): 117–131.
- Preziosi, Donald. *Minoan Architectural Design: Formation and Signification*. Berlin: Mouton, 1983.
- Preziosi, Donald, and Louise Hitchcock. *Aegean Art and Architecture*. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1999.
- Warren, Peter Michael. *Minoan Stone Vases*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1969.
- Whitelaw, T. M. "The Settlement at Fournou Korifi, Myrtos, and Aspects of Early Minoan Social Organization." In *Minoan Society*. Edited by O. Krzyszkowska and L. Nixon, pp. 323–345. Bristol, U.K.: Bristol Classical Press, 1983.

DAVID SMALL

KNOSSOS

The site of Knossos is located some 5 kilometers to the southeast of Herakleion, in the Kairatos Valley on the Greek island of Crete. The earliest Neolithic settlement and the Bronze Age palace are situated on a low hill known locally as the Kephala hill, and the Roman settlement is located to the west, on the lower slopes of the Acropolis hill. The first excavations at Knossos were by Minos Kalokairinos in 1878, on the western side of the mound of Kephala, but the main excavations were undertaken by Sir Arthur Evans between 1900 and 1931.

Knossos is the longest-inhabited settlement on Crete and was preeminent—culturally, politically, and economically—as the largest settlement on the island until the end of the Bronze Age. The Neolithic settlement at Knossos was established on the Kephala hill during the late eighth millennium B.C. or early seventh millennium B.C. by a migrant population probably from Anatolia, and it represents the earliest human occupation attested on the island. Arthur Evans first recognized the existence of a Neolithic settlement beneath the Central Court of the Bronze Age palace in 1923. This he divided into four main phases, based on changing pottery styles. Subsequent excavations by John Evans refined the sequence, with ten strata dating from the Aceramic Neolithic (so-called because of the absence of pottery containers in the material assemblage) through the Early, Middle, Late, and Final Neolithic.

Knossos was an obvious location for settlement, being a naturally protected inland site on a low hill, with a perennial spring and fertile arable land. The settlers brought with them a fully developed Neolithic economy. They reared sheep, goats, pigs, and cattle and grew wheat, barley, and lentils. Stone tools included obsidian from the volcanic island of Melos in the Cyclades as well as flint and chert. During the course of the Early Neolithic, mace-heads became a typical component of the material assemblage. The Neolithic population lived in rectilinear houses built of mud brick or *pisé* (rammed earth) on a stone foundation. Pottery is attested from Stratum IX (Early Neolithic): initially with incised and dot-impressed (*pointillé*) decoration filled with white paste and later with ripple burnished decoration. Equipment associated with textile production (spin-

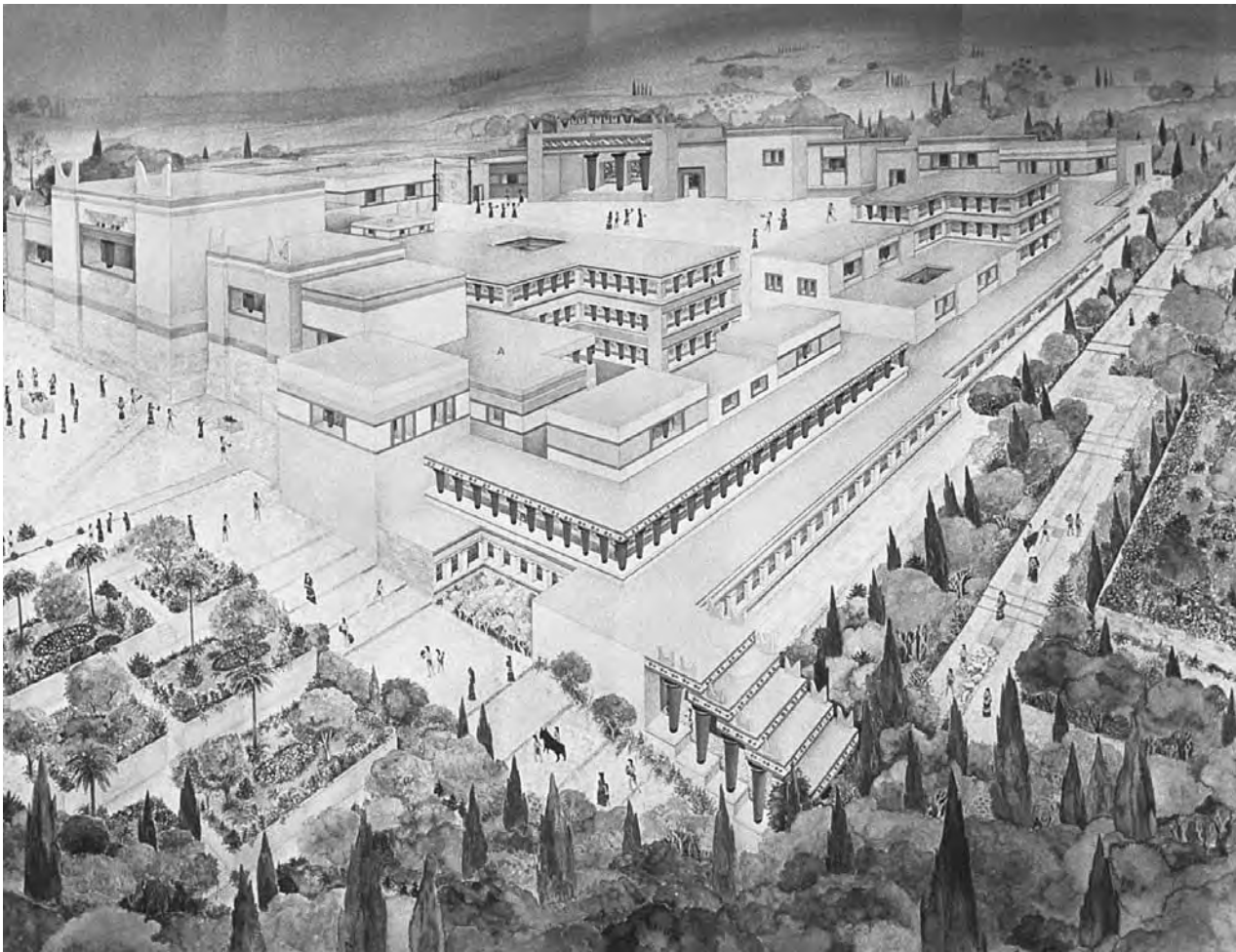


Fig. 1. Artist's reconstruction of the palace of Knossos, built c. 1900 B.C., Kriti, Crete. © GIANNI DAGLI ORTI/CORBIS. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

dle whorls and loom weights) was also introduced in the Early Neolithic period. The symbolic life and religious beliefs of the earliest inhabitants of Knossos remain elusive. Although no adult burials have been found, there are infant and child burials in pits under the house floors in various strata. Figurines are attested from the earliest occupation levels, with a concentration of human and animal terra-cottas in the Early Neolithic II levels.

The Early Bronze Age (Early Minoan or Pre-Palatial) occupation of Knossos is poorly known, being largely obscured by the later construction of the palace, but it has been identified in a number of soundings throughout the site. The remains of the Early Minoan II settlement indicate that it was large

and prosperous. It has been suggested that a partially excavated building beneath the West Court of the palace was the residence of an important inhabitant, possibly the ruler of Knossos. This structure was destroyed by fire and might have been superseded by a large building beneath the northwest corner of the palace in Early Minoan III. The so-called Hypogeum, at the southern limits of the later palace, likewise probably dates to Early Minoan III. It has been suggested that this was an underground, corbel-vaulted granary. Occasional imports from the Cyclades and southern Greece and even stone vases from as far away as Egypt have been found at Knossos, indicating initial trading ventures beyond the island. Internal exchange is illustrated by the presence of significant quantities of luxury pottery imported

from the Mesara region of southern Crete and by the Vasilike ware from eastern Crete.

Knossos is perhaps best known for the palace remains on the Kephala hill. Two main phases have been identified: (1) the Old Palace (Proto-Palatial) period, which comprises the Middle Minoan IB, IIA, and IIIA strata, and (2) the New Palace (Neo-Palatial) period, comprising Middle Minoan III through Late Minoan IB. The Old Palace period has traditionally been dated to c. 1900–1700 B.C. and the New Palace period to c. 1700–1425 B.C. New chronometric dates derived from radiocarbon dates from Akrotiri, a site on the nearby island of Thera (modern Santorini) destroyed in a massive eruption in Late Minoan IA, suggest that the duration of the New Palace period should be revised to c. 1690–1500 B.C. The palace at Knossos is one of several palaces identified within the Minoan landscape of Crete: the other principal palaces are at Mallia, Phaistos, and Zakros. Other possible palace structures have been identified at a number of sites in Crete. Although all the Minoan palaces conform to general underlying architectural principles and probably shared similar functions, there are distinct differences most evident in the internal configuration of space.

THE OLD PALACE PERIOD

The origins and function of the Old Palace at Knossos are elusive. Its architectural remains are poorly preserved, whereas those of the immediately preceding phase had been leveled. Certainly the construction of the Old Palace represents the introduction of a new social and architectural concept: a large central building and the use of repeated architectural elements to create ceremonial space. Although the exact plan of the palace is unknown, two phases of construction have been identified. In the earlier phase the palace was laid out around the Central Court (on a north-south alignment). Sir Arthur Evans believed that the palace was laid out in separate blocks of buildings, but it is now accepted that the first palace was envisaged as a single architectural complex. Components of the Old Palace include the initial construction of the Throne Room, several of the shrines along the west side of the Central Court, and the storerooms on the east and west wings of the palace. In the later phase the West Court was laid out with three large circular pits

(*kouloures*), possibly serving as grain silos. Also dating to this phase are the Theatral Area, to the north of the palace, and the Royal Road leading west from the palace.

The Old Palace is generally viewed as an elite residence and a religious or ceremonial center. The use of monumental architecture, in particular cut-stone (ashlar) masonry, was designed to impress the local populace and visiting dignitaries and also illustrates large-scale mobilization of labor. Moreover the palace appears to have played an important economic role, with control over production and redistribution of agricultural staples. In addition to the storage magazines and *kouloures*, the so-called Keep was possibly used to store agricultural produce. By Middle Minoan II there is evidence for the development of a sophisticated bureaucracy, in the form of clay sealings (used to seal shut containers) and “hieroglyphic” clay tablets. It is also suggested that the palace controlled the production of prestige goods. Even so there is only limited evidence for craft production, although some four hundred loom weights were found in the eastern wing of the palace, representing substantial evidence for textile production. Certainly by the New Palace period textile production is central to the Minoan economy, and New Kingdom tomb paintings indicate that woolen cloth was one of the primary Minoan exports to Egypt. Many of these activities are extrapolated from the functions of the New Palaces.

THE NEW PALACE PERIOD

The Old Palace was destroyed at the end of Middle Minoan II, and its reconstruction in Middle Minoan III marks the zenith of Minoan palatial society. The New Palace at Knossos is the largest of the Minoan palaces, covering a surface area of around 13,000 square meters. Much of the extant remains date to Late Minoan IA. The focal point of the palace was the Central Court, a paved open area (54 by 27 meters) on a north-south alignment. The function of the Central Court is unclear, but it probably served as the focus of ceremonial activities, possibly associated with the cult rooms opening onto the west side of the court. These include the so-called Throne Room (possibly the principal shrine), the Tripartite Shrine, and the Temple Repository, the latter where three faience figures of possible snake goddesses were found together with

a rich assortment of faience plaques (animals, dragonflies, and richly decorated female costumes).

The ground floor of the palace was devoted to economic activities, namely craft production and storage of agricultural produce. The storerooms (a row of eighteen long, narrow storage magazines containing large ceramic storage jars, or *pitthoi*) are restricted to the area of the ground floor immediately behind the west facade of the palace. The walls of the storerooms are blackened by the massive fire that destroyed the palace. The storage area was accessed either via the long corridor from the north or through the Throne Room—the latter approach indicating the extent to which the Minoan economy was embedded within the ceremonial or religious aspect. This symbolic control of the agricultural wealth is reiterated by the presence of pyramidal stands for totemic double axes at the entrance to the storage magazines. To facilitate the redistribution economy, there was a flourishing bureaucracy. Economic transactions were recorded on clay tablets in the Linear A script. Workshops associated with high-status craft production are located at the northeast side of the Central Court.

The suite of rooms located to the southeast of the Central Court, at the foot of the Grand Staircase, has become known as the residential quarters of the Knossian palace elite. These quarters comprise a series of Minoan halls: each hall consists of two adjoining rooms separated by a pier-and-door partition (a *polythyron*) with a light well (a shaft to admit light) at one end. Most notable are the Hall of the Double Axes and the so-called Queen's Hall. The domestic quarters also include a toilet. Indeed Minoan domestic architecture is noteworthy for the development of a sophisticated sanitation system, perhaps best illustrated by the drains at Knossos. A typical feature of the palace is its lavish decoration, namely wall paintings located in both the ceremonial rooms and the private chambers. Themes include processional scenes, bull sports, and richly dressed women.

The main approach to the palace was from the west, and the western facade of the palace was grandly built with ashlar masonry and a line of gypsum orthostats. Large stone “horns of consecration” (a potent Minoan religious symbol, apparently representing stylized bulls' horns) were displayed in places of prominence in the West Court. Raised

walkways led across the West Court to the ceremonial southwest entrance. The southwest entrance led into the narrow Corridor of the Procession Fresco (decorated with life-size figures carrying luxurious offerings) toward the Propylaeum and a staircase to the grand reception rooms on the upper stories of the palace and also to the Central Court. A second entrance to the palace was located on the northwest. This entrance was approached via the Royal Road (leading west to the town house known as the Little Palace) and the Theatral Area.

The palace was at the center of a large town, which reached its greatest extent in the New Palace period, possibly covering an area of around 75 hectares. The population has been estimated to have been around 12,000. Several grand town houses have been excavated, such as the South House, the Little Palace, the Unexplored Mansion, and the Royal Villa. Workshops and kilns indicate that the palace did not exclusively control craft production at Knossos. Moreover several of the large houses were decorated with wall paintings, and high-status prestige objects were also found in these buildings. Most notable is the steatite bull's-head vase found in the Little Palace.

The size and grandeur of the town and palace at Knossos indicate the preeminence of the site in Neo-Palatial Crete. The lack of city defenses and the unprotected villas and palace argue for the so-called Pax Minoica, a seemingly peaceful arrangement of political unification and centralization of Minoan Crete ruled from Knossos. In the absence of documents that can be read, this is difficult to substantiate; however, Knossos certainly played a preeminent cultural role on the island. The town was destroyed in a massive conflagration in Late Minoan IB (contemporary with the destruction of the other palace centers around Crete). An unusual discovery in the town to the west of the palace suggests ritual cannibalism of children, possibly to stave off disaster. Yet the palace at Knossos was seemingly unaffected and continued to function into Late Minoan IIIA (the fourteenth century B.C.).

THE END OF THE PALACE PERIOD

The collapse of the Minoan palace centers in Late Minoan IB is usually attributed to an invasion from the Greek mainland and the establishment of a Mycenaean ruling elite. Knossos continued to be an

important center in Late Minoan II and III, alongside Khania in western Crete. Parts of the palace were rebuilt and redecorated, and the characteristic griffin decoration of the Throne Room dates to this period. Knossos appears to have been an important religious center, and the Linear B archives (written in an early form of Greek) illustrate the importance of the wool industry at the site. These texts also give the name of Knossos as *ko-no-so*. There is a horizon of wealthy warrior graves in the Knossian hinterland at Zapher Papoura, Ayios Ioannis, and Sellopoulo. Characteristic features include Mycenaean chamber tombs, single inhumation, and distinctive Mycenaeanizing grave goods: a preference for bronze weapons (daggers and swords) and boar's-tusk helmets, hoards of bronze vessels, and large quantities of Mycenaean-style jewelry. The date of the final destruction of the palace at Knossos is unclear due to the vagaries of Sir Arthur Evans's early excavation at the site and in particular the context of the Linear B archives.

The location of the Iron Age settlement at Knossos is unknown, but several important cemeteries have been excavated, such as Fortetsa and Teke. The site continued to be wealthy, receiving imports from Athens and Phoenicia. Most notable is a reused Minoan *tholos* (stone-built circular) tomb, lavishly furnished with gold jewelry. This was used in the ninth century B.C., probably by a migrant Phoenician goldsmith. A sanctuary to Demeter was established in the eighth to seventh centuries B.C. to the south of the palace, and a Hellenistic shrine dedicated to the local hero Glaukos has been found in the western part of Knossos. In 67 B.C. Knossos became a Roman colony (Colonia Julia Nobilis Cnossus), and a large Roman city was established on the lower slopes of the Acropolis hill. Most notable among the Roman remains is the imposing second-century A.D. Villa Dionysos.

See also **The Minoan World** (vol. 2, part 5); **Mycenaean Greece** (vol. 2, part 5).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Broodbank, Cyprian. "The Neolithic Labyrinth: Social Change at Knossos before the Bronze Age." *Journal of Mediterranean Archaeology* 5 (1992): 39–75.
- Cadogan, Gerald. "Knossos." In *The Aerial Atlas of Ancient Crete*. Edited by J. W. Myers, E. E. Myers, and G. Cadogan, pp. 124–147. Berkeley and Los Angeles: University of California Press, 1992.
- Cherry, John. "Politics and Palaces: Some Problems in Minoan State Formation." In *Peer Polity Interaction and Socio-Political Change*. Edited by Colin Renfrew and John F. Cherry, pp. 19–45. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1986.
- Evans, Arthur L. *The Palace of Minos at Knossos*. 4 vols. London: Macmillan, 1921–1936.
- Evans, John. "Neolithic Knossos: The Growth of a Settlement." *Proceedings of the Prehistoric Society* 37, no. 2 (1971): 95–117.
- . "Excavations in the Neolithic Settlement of Knossos, 1957–1960. Part I." *Annual of the British School at Athens* 59 (1964): 132–240.
- Evely, Don, Helen Hughes-Brock, and Nicoletta Momigliano, eds. *Knossos: A Labyrinth of History*. Oxford: Oxbow Books and British School at Athens, 1994.
- Hägg, Robin, and Nanno Marinatos, eds. *The Function of Minoan Palaces*. Stockholm: Swedish School at Athens, 1987.
- Hood, Sinclair, and David Smyth. *Archaeological Survey of the Knossos Area*. Supplement of the British School at Athens, no. 14. 2d ed. London: British School at Athens, 1981.
- Hood, Sinclair, and William Taylor. *The Bronze Age Palace at Knossos: Plans and Sections*. Supplement of the British School at Athens, no. 13. London: British School at Athens, 1981.
- Manning, Sturt W. *A Test of Time: The Volcano of Thera and the Chronology and History of the Aegean and East Mediterranean in the Mid Second Millennium B.C.* Oxford: Oxbow Books, 1999.
- Niemeier, Wolf-Dietrich. "The Character of the Knossian Palace Society in the Second Half of the Fifteenth Century B.C.: Mycenaean or Minoan?" In *Minoan Society: Proceedings of the Cambridge Colloquium*. Edited by O. Krzyszkowska and L. Nixon, pp. 217–236. Bristol, U.K.: Bristol Classical Press, 1983.
- . "Mycenaean Knossos and the Age of Linear B." *Studi Micenei ed Egeo-Anatolici* 23 (1982): 219–287.
- Popham, M. R. *The Minoan Unexplored Mansion at Knossos*. Supplement of the British School at Athens, no. 17. London: British School at Athens, 1984.
- Ventris, Michael, and John Chadwick. *Documents in Mycenaean Greek: Three Hundred Selected Tablets*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1973.

LOUISE STEEL



MYCENAEAN GREECE

Evidence for the hunter-gatherer population of Greece has been scanty, but intensive research in Epirus (northwestern Greece) and Argolid (Peloponnese, southern Greece) suggests that long-lived successful adaptations probably were widespread on the mainland by the end of the last Ice Age and in the first few millennia of the current warm era (the Holocene, after 8500 B.C.). Nonetheless, the spread of farming and the associated appearance of domestic animals, such as sheep, goats, cattle, and pigs, around 7000 B.C. are understood as marking the colonization of the Balkans, including Greece, by early farming groups migrating out of the zones where these innovations were invented, in southwestern Asia.

These first European farming settlements are best known from their closely packed artificial settlement mounds, or “tells,” which mark the great plains of central and northern mainland Greece (notably, Thessaly). In contrast, the equivalent villages or farms on the southern mainland and the Aegean Islands more often are widely scattered and less substantial. Such a distribution encourages the view that this early settled farming era in Greece (the Neolithic) was a time when the centers of population and socioeconomic development lay well north of those regions of Greece that would become the focus of the succeeding Bronze Age and classical civilizations. This view, very much influenced by the comparative ease with which the prominent tells have been identified by archaeologists from early in the twentieth century, may need to be altered slightly as a result of the recent intensive study of

the southern Greek landscape, where greater densities of “flat” sites are being recognized.

It may be that tell villages were more stable communities, lasting in one place for hundreds and even thousands of years, while the typical settlement in southern Greece and the islands was smaller and shifted position every few generations. Until late in the Neolithic era (c. 7000–3500 B.C.), however, both types of Greek agropastoral societies sought out well-watered light soils for their hoe- and hand-based farming. In Late Neolithic times, the diffusion—once more from the Near East—of simple plows and animal traction allowed an explosion of settlement across the expanses of fertile hill and plain country of Greece. Here, rainfall was the essential source for plant growth, rather than the lakes, streams, and springs of the preceding era. Since the areas with high water tables are concentrated in the plains of central and northern Greece, it may be that the earlier Neolithic did indeed see a greater population density. Later Neolithic technological changes might have encouraged the south and larger islands to catch up, since their potential for dry farming is much more on a par with that farther north.

Despite claims that the more elaborate village plans on tells in Thessaly suggest the presence of distinct sectors where an elite might have resided, it is not evident that Neolithic society had progressed beyond a social organization of kin groups, clans, and temporary leading families (sometimes called a “Big Man” society), into a more hierarchical stage of chiefdoms dominating one or more vil-

ages. Yet finds from a few settlements suggest that populations were well over the two hundred considered by some anthropologists as the maximum feasible for community cohesion, based on a relatively egalitarian type of (face-to-face) organization. In these cases, either some village subdivisions based on real or fictitious kinship (horizontal segmentation) or a power structure grounded in one or more leading families (vertical segmentation) must be suspected. One of the rare settlements that expanded well beyond this threshold population was the great Neolithic village that underlies the later Bronze Age palace at Knossos in Crete. Many researchers have argued that during the three millennia before the inception of the Bronze Age, Knossos grew from a small and simple hamlet of farming colonists into a precociously socially stratified small town.

As for economic development during the course of the Neolithic, there is evidence for a growing range of cultigens and more effective use of domestic animal products. In contrast, the exchange of exotic raw materials or finished artifacts generally tended to become less wide ranging, largely owing to the increasing use of regional rather than imported products.

THE EARLY BRONZE AGE

The main phases and dates for the Aegean region are as follows.

Neolithic: c. 7000–3500 B.C.

Early Bronze Age: c. 3500–2100 B.C.

Middle Bronze Age: c. 2100–1700 B.C.

Late Bronze Age: c. 1700–1050 B.C.

The Bronze Age periods are given regional names for the Greek Mainland (Early, Middle, and Late Helladic), the Cyclades Islands (Early Cycladic, etc.), and the island of Crete (Early Minoan, etc.). These regional phases are very broadly contemporary.

With the inception of the Early Bronze Age, there are further indications of population growth and more intense colonization of the Greek landscape and clearer, if still localized, signs that in some areas a socially stratified society had begun to take shape. To the continuing impact of plow agriculture in stimulating denser population growth can be added evidence for the cultivation of the olive and

the vine. There is some debate as to how firm the limited data are for such cultivation at this time, however. Much clearer evidence for large-scale reliance on these cultigens for food, drink, and storable trade items derives from the Late Bronze Age two millennia later.

Seafaring boats become more sophisticated, which probably reflects the supplementation of coastal diets with marine food as much as it does the growth of regional and interregional trade. The diffusion of copper and bronze metallurgy into the Aegean, as well as trade in its raw materials and products, added to existing commercial and gift exchange in agricultural surpluses and stone for tools and mills, to create an early “*koine*,” or interaction zone, on the southern mainland and the islands. There is, however, no indication of any political aspect to this exchange. Notably, there is much less evidence for complementary zones of economic and cultural exchange to be found in other parts of mainland Greece, such as the northeast and northwest; however, the eastern Aegean islands and the adjacent town of Troy (northwestern Turkey) did develop a significant alternative interaction sphere.

By the third millennium B.C. on the southern mainland, a series of relatively elaborate structures, standing isolated or amid less pretentious houses, have been taken as a group to mark the creation of an elite-focused district power structure. The class was first recognized at Lerna with the House of the Tiles, where associated seal-impressions for stored containers suggest the levying of some kind of tax and its redistribution by a district authority based at the small, walled center. By the latter part of the same millennium, on the Cycladic islands in the south and on some northern islands of the Aegean, there also arose large villages or small towns with well-planned internal layouts and defensive walls, seeming to indicate the central management of local populations by emergent elite groups. Some of these centers, for example, Phylakopi on Melos, seem to be large enough to represent a class of proto-urban community that we can define as the “village-state.” Here, largely endogamous marriage created a “corporate community,” but one whose size would have required elaborate political management.

On the other hand, throughout this first part of the Bronze Age most of Greece retained a settle-

ment pattern little changed from later Neolithic times. There were two interpenetrating lifestyles: more permanent villages (that is, tells or extensive flat settlements) and short-lived farms and hamlets, without any clear evidence for political stratification. The expansion of trade and population and the limited number of complex communities nonetheless give the impression that in southern Greece and the northeastern Aegean the social and economic bases had been laid for the rise of the first Aegean civilization at the start of the Middle Bronze Age, in about 2000 B.C.

MINOAN CIVILIZATION

That first civilization arose on the island of Crete, and it is typically referred to as the Minoan civilization, after Minos—the mythical king of Knossos, where the most spectacular center of this new culture was located. On the Greek mainland the promising high culture of the Early Bronze Age suffered a severe decline associated with violent destruction at many key sites. Some researchers take the signs of destruction to mark invasion; others link it to a climatic fluctuation, which is seen on a wider front in the eastern Mediterranean. On the islands, however, the small defended townships continued into the new era. It is perhaps less important to explain the delay in reaching civilization on the mainland than to account for why civilization on Crete emerged at all at this time.

First, let us describe the Minoan civilization in its initial phase of florescence—the age of the First Palaces, c. 2000–1800 B.C. The most striking feature is a series of palatial centers of regional administration, the apex of a settlement hierarchy that extended through small towns (which may have had mini-palatial foci) to villages and dispersed hamlets or farms. Few parts of Crete seemed to lie outside the putative control of one of the palaces, but it remains unclear whether the latter formed autonomous princedoms within a unitary culture or were subordinate to the largest and most central example at Knossos in northern Crete. Great similarities in palace design, the use of a common script (Linear A) for recording the economic production of Crete, and vigorous exchange of products clearly indicate that all the palaces were in close and presumably peaceful interaction (fortifications are rare), probably reflecting political alliances sealed by elite intermarriage.

The palaces themselves appear to have been the residences of ruling elites as well as foci for communal celebration and ritual (in the paved courts on their outer faces and the great court at their centers). Major expanses of storage would have served the needs of this elite (consumption, trading capital) and its retinue and servants; and its reserves of oil, wine, grain, and textiles would have been kept full from the tax income of the peasantry. The palaces also acted as manufacturing centers, largely for the upper class (luxury products for rituals, prestigious feasts, and so on). Around most centers, there seem to have developed extensive towns populated by a wealthy middle class (perhaps merchants, administrators, and estate owners) and a farming or servant lower class.

This First Palace period came to a violent end with a catastrophic earthquake c. 1800 B.C. The palaces and lesser centers were rebuilt almost immediately in a very similar or even more elaborate form during the Second Palace period, which lasted until another series of cataclysms c. 1400 B.C., probably caused by invading Mycenaeans (see below). One notable change in this period was the appearance of rural elite residences (perhaps also acting as dispersed administrative centers) in the form of villas across the Cretan landscape.

Although legend tells of a marine empire, or “thalassocracy,” associated with Minoan Crete, the available evidence downscopes this political structure to a series of zones of decreasing influence radiating out from the island. Islands nearest Crete were transformed into highly “Minoanized” townships, with one or two perhaps receiving actual colonists. Farther away, in the southern Aegean islands and on the adjacent mainlands of Greece and Turkey, Minoan influence is less pervasive, with pottery imports and imitations and the adoption of other cultural features into a predominantly local culture. More distant regions of the Aegean and some parts of the eastern Mediterranean and Italy evidence limited mutual trade with Minoan Crete. Only at the recently excavated Nile Delta palace of Tell el-Dab’a is a stronger form of Minoan influence present, in the shape of frescoes of a highly Minoan character, interpreted as perhaps the result of dynastic intermarriage between Crete and Egypt.

Only for the innermost of the three radii of Minoan influence is political control abroad a possibili-

ty. The Minoans required both everyday and precious metals from outside Crete and other materials for elite prestige items. It is difficult, however, to envisage Minoan Crete as a major merchant power rather than as an island flourishing primarily on the income and redistribution of regional production in foodstuffs and textiles. Nonetheless, there are mentions of the Minoans in contemporary state archives in the eastern Mediterranean, suggesting both minor flows of trade and political alliances. Even though the Minoan palaces incorporate elements of traditional Cretan architecture, their design also surely reflects firsthand acquaintance with the very similar, but older, tradition of royal palaces of the city-states of the Levant and parts of Turkey.

Although the clay palace archive tablets are written in Linear A, a hitherto untranslated language, there are close parallels in their form and accounting conventions to the derivative Linear B tablets used by later Mycenaean palaces (which are in readable archaic Greek). Comparison suggests that their content largely focused on monitoring the regional production and distribution of foodstuffs, raw materials, and finished artisan products, as well as equipment for the palace's officials and armed forces. This has reinforced the general view that Minoan (as Mycenaean) palace-focused polities arose and functioned primarily through controlling the people and products of their own territory. Caution is required in this interpretation, because Minoan records remain essentially unread, while the Mycenaean archives almost certainly represent regional management records. We have yet to recover the foreign correspondence that contemporary Near Eastern states of similar scale lead us to expect once existed.

Although the Aegean Islands, especially the Cyclades, were strongly influenced by the Minoans and experienced similarly varying degrees of core-periphery interaction with the following civilization—that of the mainland Mycenaean civilization—they continued to show signs of a vigorous regional culture. This is evident in the typical nuclear island townships that lasted from the later Early Bronze Age into and beyond the Middle Bronze Age. Some would elevate this culture to a distinct Cycladic civilization, even if statehood was confined to small island polities of a thousand or so people at most.

THE RISE OF MYCENAEAN CIVILIZATION

During the peak of the Minoan First Palace civilization in the centuries around 2000 B.C., mainland Greece showed little evidence of complexity above the level of village life in what is termed the Middle Helladic period (regional Middle Bronze Age). As the Minoan Second Palace period developed during the first third of the second millennium B.C., however, there were striking signs of the renewal of regional power structures across the southern mainland. In the western Peloponnese there arose across the landscape, in connection with villages and groups of small settlements, monumental earth burial tumuli with stone “beehive” chambers (*tholoi*), amalgamating older Cretan communal burial traditions with those of the western Balkans, to mark the emergence of district chiefdoms. In the eastern Peloponnese an alternative elite burial mode, using deep shafts, appeared. This is most notable at the site of Mycenae, where the successive shaft grave circles A and B contain fabulously rich gifts for what can be considered a powerful warrior elite. In the following centuries their descendants developed the associated settlement into a massively fortified palatial center. More subtle changes revealed by settlement archaeology also occurred across this important transformational Middle Helladic era, with the decline across mainland southern Greece of dispersed, short-lived rural sites and a focus on nuclear village and town sites associated with the crystallization of district and regional dynastic elites.

In the following era, the Late Helladic (mainland Late Bronze Age), out of this large network of greater and lesser chiefdoms arose a series of major kingdoms, covering most of southern mainland Greece and centered on palaces with surrounding towns. This relatively uniform civilization (fig. 1) is named Mycenaean after the state center with the highest status in later Greek legends, which are believed to have originated in this period. Still, Mycenae does not have the same archaeological claim to preeminence as Knossos for the Minoan civilization, being neither the largest nor the most magnificent palatial center. On the other hand, Greek myths, such as the siege of Troy, portray the king of Mycenae as merely “first among equals” amid the warrior princes representing the several states of Bronze Age Greece. This view agrees with the archaeologi-

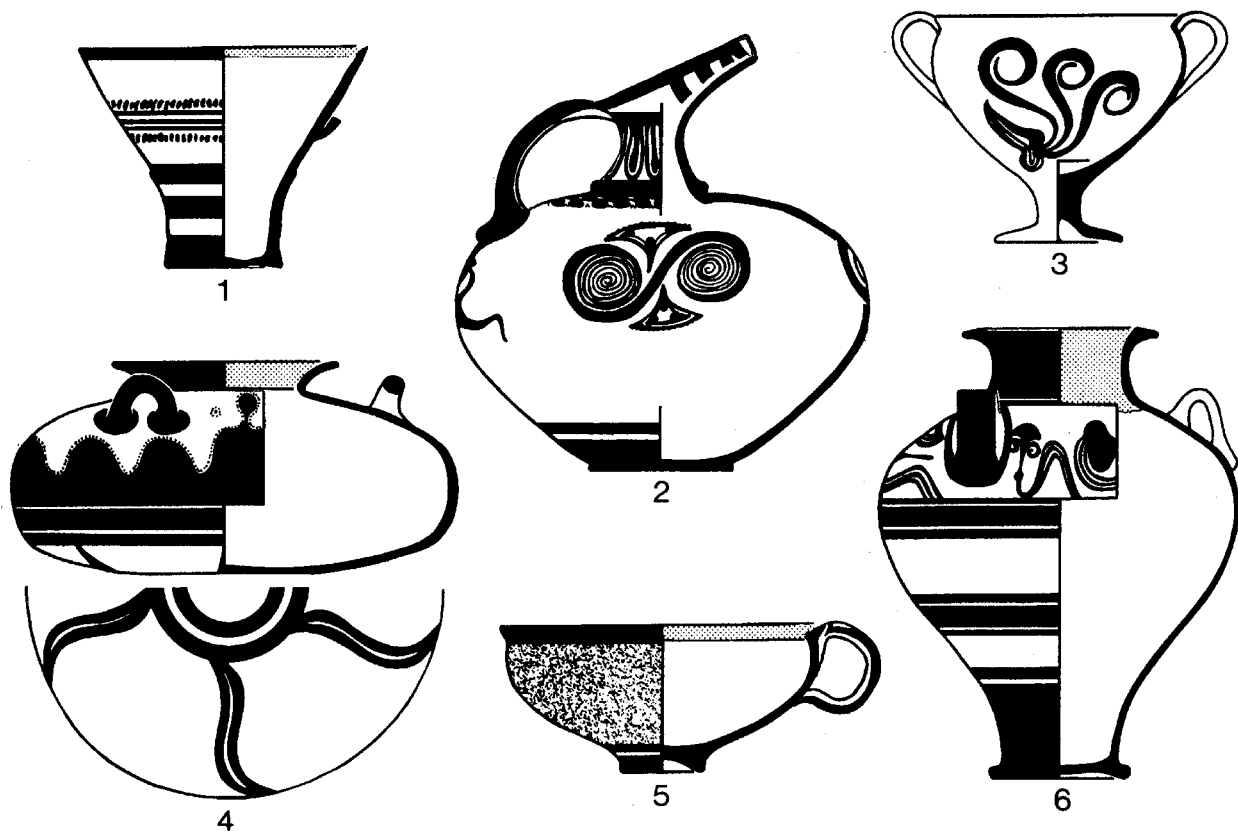


Fig. 1. Characteristic pottery types for Mycenaean Bronze Age civilization on Mainland Greece. FROM DICKINSON 1994. REPRINTED WITH THE PERMISSION OF CAMBRIDGE UNIVERSITY PRESS AND OLIVER DICKINSON. ADAPTED FROM *MYCENAEAN DECORATED POTTERY*, BY P. A. MOUNTJOY.

cal picture for other major centers, such as Thebes, Pylos, and Tiryns.

Several centuries elapsed (c. 1700–1350 B.C.) between the proliferation of chiefly burials in the later Middle Helladic and the construction of the first regional palatial centers, during which we can envisage the emergence of paramount chiefs or kings from competitive networks of district elites. Elite mansions may have appeared first, followed by full-scale palaces with close parallels to obvious older models on Minoan Crete (fig. 2). Distinctive features of the mature Mycenaean major and minor centers were the provision of stone fortifications and a general preference for defensive locations. This militaristic facet was matched by a taste for scenes of warfare in Mycenaean art, which, significantly, was not seen in the more social and ritual art of the Minoans; although it seems too romantic to follow Sir Arthur Evans in imagining a Minoan society lacking internal or external violence. It is reasonable

to see the small number of Mycenaean mainland states as developing in an atmosphere of endemic warfare. To judge by the increasing number and expanding scale of fortifications over time, the threat or practice of major conflicts remained until the end of this civilization, when all the key sites experienced violent destruction (c. 1250–1200 B.C.). During this period of swift decline to disappearance of Mycenaean civilization in the later thirteenth and twelfth centuries B.C., all signs of state-level authority, complex craft skills, and literacy faded away across Greece. This eclipse has led archaeologists to term the following era, up to the beginnings of historic classical Greek civilization in the eighth century B.C., a “dark age.”

Despite this emphasis on militarism, which accords with later Greek legends of internal and external conflict, the climax of Mycenaean civilization c. 1450–1250 B.C. vies with the greatest period of the preceding Minoan civilization, which is certainly no



Fig. 2. Reconstruction of the throne room at the Mycenaean palace of Pylos, mainland Greece.
© GIANNI DAGLI ORTI/CORBIS. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

coincidence. It has been argued that Mycenaean art, architecture, and settlement organization, as well as political and economic systems, were critically stimulated through increasing contacts with its Cretan predecessor at its height. This contact came mainly through trade but presumably was accompanied by political and perhaps matrimonial alliances. The spectacular prestige objects found in the final Middle Bronze Age and the early Late Bronze Age chieftains' burials of the emergent Mycenaean culture show strong Minoan inspiration, perhaps the employment of Minoan craftsmen, and the likely obtaining of exotic materials via widespread Minoan exchange systems.

Like other core-periphery systems studied globally, the undeveloped margin grew, in turn, into a core in its own right. With many parallels, the process of role inversion may well have been a violent one. The precise historical scenario has been the subject of debate since the early twentieth century. Among the controversies have been the Mycenaean takeover at Knossos, the dating and impact of the

volcanic eruption on the island of Thera (Santorini), and the date of the final destruction of the Knossos palace.

At present it seems that the Thera eruption may have occurred in the mid-seventeenth century B.C., destroying a flourishing island township that was a major player in eastern Mediterranean trade with the Aegean world. Probably it did not affect either the emerging mainland Mycenaean chiefdoms or the Second Palace states of Minoan Crete. Not long afterward, however, Mycenaean warriors invaded Crete and destroyed most of its palaces. They assumed control of the island from Knossos and several other former centers, such as Khania, adopting Minoan modes of surplus extraction and adapting Linear A into a script for their own Greek tongue, Linear B. It is probable that these rump Cretan palace centers later were burned down at the same time as the mainland Mycenaean palaces, during the thirteenth century B.C. It is unclear, however, if by then it was Mycenaean or a resurgent Minoan elite who were in control of Crete.

Thus, through peaceful and forceful means, out of numerous petty chiefdoms arose some half dozen major Mycenaean kingdoms (mainland and Cretan), in the period 2000–1400 B.C., centered on palace towns with a corps of scribes, specialist workers in fine arts, and large, well-equipped armed forces. Mycenaean trade clearly developed beyond that of Minoan and Cycladic trade, both in scale and geographic scope. Existing exchanges with the eastern Mediterranean deepened, and there were stronger links to Italy and sporadic trade with the western Mediterranean islands and Iberia. The needs of the Aegean for working metal (copper and tin) and, equally important, the elite's appetite for raw materials and finished artifacts for prestigious display seem to have been the major stimuli. The Mycenaean palatial economy, like the Minoan, however, appeared to focus primarily on extraction of surplus foodstuffs, perishable and imperishable products (such as textiles), ceramic and metal artifacts, and labor from dependent populations within state boundaries. This allowed elite families and their retainers in major and minor centers to live in luxury and obtain limited imports.

EXPLANATIONS FOR THE ORIGINS OF AEGEAN BRONZE AGE CIVILIZATIONS

The origins of the Minoan and Mycenaean civilizations have been sought in varied factors. Perhaps proximity to older civilizations, such as Egypt, Mesopotamia, and the world of the city-states of the Levant and Anatolia, provided political and economic stimulus and organizational models lacking in more remote areas, such as the central and western Mediterranean and other parts of continental Europe. The undeniable contacts in terms of trade and political interactions offer some support for this “secondary civilization” model for the Aegean. On the other hand, the scale of economic and political exchanges appears to many scholars to be too limited to provide an adequate basis for the complexity of Minoan-Mycenaean society.

An alternative reading emphasizes the head start given to the Aegean through early colonization in the seventh millennium B.C. by incoming village farmers from the Near East. Yet this might lead to the prediction that similar civilizations would arise at appropriately spaced intervals of time farther west and north. In Spain and Portugal this model might

be justified, since widespread village farming was delayed until c. 5000 B.C., and complex cultures of a distinctive local character appeared two to three thousand years later. Moreover, on Malta, the famous Temple societies developed idiosyncratically after some two thousand years of settled farming. With regions of intense farming in the south by the fifth millennium B.C., Italy did not have more than well-planned villages until the final stages of the Bronze Age in the early first millennium B.C. All these examples are complex state societies, whereas this form of complex civilization was achieved early in the course of Minoan civilization.

The concept of “environmental circumscription” might shed additional light. The idea here is that certain cultures are encouraged to adapt into more elaborate social and economic forms through being confined within geographical boundaries or struggling under constraining ecological conditions. Early Iberian complex society and the Malta Temple culture, for example, arose in the context of surprisingly stressful farming ecologies. There is a parallel in the Aegean when we consider that northern and central Greek tell societies failed to achieve state formation (where climatic and soil conditions were generally good), while southern Greece saw the evolution of the Cretan Minoan and the mainland Mycenaean and related Cycladic island civilizations (in environments with a stressful climate and low-resilience soils).

Many scholars tend to combine these elements into a complex interplay of causation: proximity to the Near East gave rise to precocious settled village farming and, later, economic and political stimulation to the development of a stratified and urban society in the Aegean. The concepts of “core-periphery” and “world system” help us model how mobilization of exchange goods, related to political alliances and the flow of prestige goods between elites, could have created, or perhaps enhanced, tendencies in the Aegean toward the elaboration of class societies and administrative central places. A more stressful environment in the southern Aegean and greater access to the Near East would differentiate its path from other regions of the Aegean, with the exception of some northern Aegean islands and the city-state of Troy on the northwest coast of Turkey. Colin Renfrew argued in the early 1970s that olive cultivation, which could have flourished in the

south but not over most of the northern Aegean, was a potent element in economic growth in the Bronze Age. Although the scale and timing of large-scale olive cultivation still are disputed, such cultivation seems to have played a major role in sustaining the Mycenaean civilization of the Late Bronze Age. When better paleobotanical evidence becomes available, it may turn out that this factor acted as a significant new force in the rise of small centers of power in the southern Aegean Early Bronze Age and the emergence of the Minoan civilization of the Middle Bronze Age.

What held the Aegean Bronze Age civilizations together as regional state societies? Diverse elements can be suggested. For Cycladic island towns the village-state model may be critical—a centripetal social force (that is, one that turns a community's life intensely in upon itself), which might have been behind numerous cross-cultural small-scale polities of the city-state variety. On Minoan Crete a special emphasis on religious ritual has been offered as a kind of unifying ideology binding different classes together, although one can be somewhat skeptical of a utopian reading for such a highly stratified society. In contrast, the relatively short life and militaristic flavor of Mycenaean society encourage the view that later Homeric descriptions of unstable, aggressive, and competitive warrior elites at the head of

these states may reflect actual historical memories. This variety in itself reminds us that history and prehistory are the result of interactions between partially predictable possibilities and unpredictable contingency.

See also **The Minoan World** (vol. 2, part 5); **Dark Age Greece** (vol. 2, part 6).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Bintliff, John L. "Settlement and Territory." In *Companion Encyclopedia of Archaeology*. Edited by Graeme Barker, Vol. 1, pp. 505–545. London: Routledge, 1999.
- Chadwick, John. *The Mycenaean World*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1976.
- Cullen, Tracey, ed. *Aegean Prehistory: A Review*. Boston: Archaeological Institute of America, 2001.
- Dickinson, Oliver. *The Aegean Bronze Age*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1994.
- Preziosi, Donald, and Louise Hitchcock Preziosi. *Aegean Art and Architecture*. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1999.
- Renfrew, Colin. *The Emergence of Civilisation. The Cyclades and the Aegean in the Third Millennium B.C.* London: Methuen, 1972.
- Wardle, K. A., and Diana Wardle. *Cities of Legend: The Mycenaean World*. London: Bristol Classical Press/Duckworth 1997.

JOHN BINTLIFF



THE EUROPEAN IRON AGE,
C. 800 B.C.—A.D. 400



INTRODUCTION

As citizens living in industrialized societies, it is hard for us to imagine a world without iron. Iron is a part of our everyday lives, from plumbing fixtures to automobiles. The village blacksmith is an almost mythical figure in American folklore, and the iron plow opened the American West to agriculture. Railroad engines were often nicknamed “iron horses.” Modern readers may be surprised to learn that iron technology was completely unknown to the builders of the pyramids in ancient Egypt, to the Sumerians of Mesopotamia, and to the Harappans of the Indus Valley. The metals used by these ancient civilizations were entirely based on copper and copper alloys such as bronze.

The beginnings of ironworking represented a fundamental technological revolution for ancient Europe. While sources of copper and tin (which form bronze when alloyed together) were rare in prehistoric Europe, iron ores were ubiquitous. The development of technologies for the smelting and forging of iron led to the greater use of metals for everyday tools such as agricultural implements by Late Iron Age times. In addition, the development of iron technology laid the foundations for the modern industrial world.

CHRONOLOGY

When the Danish scholar Christian Jürgensen (C. J.) Thomsen developed the initial chronological framework for European prehistory, he defined the Iron Age as a period in which iron replaced bronze for tools and weapons. This definition continues to be used by archaeologists and historians. While the

Iron Age in central Europe conventionally is dated between 800 and 1 B.C., the beginning and the end of the Iron Age varied from region to region. Archaeological research has shown that iron was in widespread use in the eastern Mediterranean by 1200 B.C. and that iron technology was established in Greece by 1000 B.C. Ironworking became widespread in central Europe around 800 B.C., but the Iron Age does not begin in Scandinavia until about 500 B.C.

Dating the end of the European Iron Age is equally problematic. Since the Iron Age initially was defined as a chronological period in prehistoric Europe, the term Iron Age usually is not applied to the ancient literate civilizations of Greece and Rome. In the European Mediterranean world, the Iron Age ends with the beginning of Greek literature in the Archaic period (eighth century B.C.) and the beginning of Latin literature in the third century B.C. The term “Iron Age” sometimes is applied to the Etruscans, who were literate but whose writings cannot be deciphered by modern scholars. For most of central and western Europe, the Iron Age ends with the Roman conquest during the last two centuries B.C. and the first century A.D. For example, Gaul, including modern France and Belgium, was conquered by Julius Caesar in the middle of the first century B.C., while southern Britain was incorporated into the Roman Empire in the first century A.D. However, many parts of northern and eastern Europe never came under Roman political domination. In Ireland, the Iron Age ends with the introduction of Christianity and literacy by Saint Patrick in the fifth

century A.D. In northeastern Europe, the Iron Age continues through the first half of the first millennium A.D. Although these regions were never part of the Roman Empire, they were not immune from Roman influence. In regions such as Germany, Poland, and southern Scandinavia, Roman trade goods appear in archaeological assemblages dating from the first to the fifth centuries A.D. In addition, many non-Roman barbarians served in the Roman army and were exposed to Roman material culture and the Roman way of life. In northeastern Europe, the period from about A.D. 1–400 is termed the Roman Iron Age.

Since the late nineteenth century, the central European Iron Age has been divided into two sequential periods named after important archaeological sites. The earlier period (c. 800–480 B.C.) is known as the Hallstatt period. The later period (c. 480–1 B.C.) is known as the La Tène period and is characterized by a very distinctive style of decoration on metalwork. During the La Tène period, both archaeological and historical information can be used to reconstruct the Late Iron Age ways of life. Archaeological data provide valuable evidence for settlement patterns, subsistence practices, and technological innovations. Late Iron Age peoples also appear in Greek and Roman texts such as historical and geographical works. While the classical authors must be read with caution, these ancient texts do provide some information on social and political organization. The availability of both historical and archaeological information has allowed archaeologists to develop a very rich and detailed picture of Late Iron Age life in Europe.

SOCIETY, POLITICS, AND ECONOMICS

While the traditional definition of the European Iron Age focuses on the adoption of iron technology, the Iron Age was also a period of significant social, economic, and political changes throughout the European continent. During the Iron Age, the Mediterranean region and the temperate European region embarked on different, although interrelated, paths. During the first millennium B.C., urban, literate civilizations developed first in Greece and somewhat later in Italy. With the development of cities, writing, and complex political institutions, the civilizations of ancient Greece and Rome cannot

be considered part of the barbarian world. Thus, they are not explicitly covered in this encyclopedia.

Archaeological and historical sources indicate that the barbarian societies of temperate Europe also experienced significant social, political, and economic changes during the first millennium B.C., and many of these developments are chronicled in this section of the encyclopedia. Moreover, such sources also document a long and complex relationship between the civilizations of the Mediterranean and the barbarian societies of temperate Europe. For example, Greek trading colonies were established in the western Mediterranean by 600 B.C. During the latter part of the Hallstatt period (c. 600–480 B.C.), a wide range of Mediterranean luxury items appear in rich burials in west-central Europe. These include Greek tableware, amphorae (designed to hold and transport wine), and Etruscan bronze vessels. Another example of technology moving between the Mediterranean and temperate Europe can be seen in the fortification walls of the Late Hallstatt town of the Heuneburg, in Germany. They were rebuilt in mud brick with stone foundations. This technique was otherwise unknown in temperate Europe during the middle of the first millennium B.C. but was widespread in the Mediterranean regions. At a later date, Roman pottery and glassware were traded widely outside the empire. However, the nature of Roman and Greek contact with the barbarian world differed in one fundamental way: while the Greek colonies that were established in the western Mediterranean and along the Black Sea were primarily trading colonies, the Romans were more interested in territorial conquest. It is the Roman conquest that marks the end of the Iron Age in much of central and western Europe.

While the historical and archaeological records document extensive contact between the classical and the barbarian worlds, the degree of urbanism is one of the characteristics that distinguishes the Greeks and Romans from the barbarian Iron Age societies of temperate Europe. Urbanism was a central feature of the classical civilizations of the Mediterranean world. Greek political organization was based on the city-state. At ancient Rome's height, it may have been home to a half-million people or more. In contrast, the European Iron Age was overwhelmingly rural. The only exceptions were a small number of commercial towns that developed in

west-central Europe in the Late Hallstatt period and the *oppida*—large, fortified settlements of the Late La Tène period. Many archaeologists have argued that the *oppida* represent temperate Europe’s first cities. Nonetheless, the vast majority of people in temperate Europe during the Iron Age lived in villages or single farmsteads.

The archaeological record indicates that social and economic inequality was widespread throughout Europe by the Bronze Age. Continuing this trend, the Iron Age societies of temperate Europe and the classical civilizations of the Mediterranean world were non-egalitarian societies characterized by marked differences in social status, political power, and material wealth. In addition, these societies were internally differentiated. While many people may have been engaged in subsistence activities such as farming and raising livestock, craft activities such as metalworking were carried out by full- or part-time specialists. Archaeologists often use the term “complex societies” to describe these stratified and differentiated societies.

Although both the classical and the barbarian worlds can be seen as socially complex, their political organization was quite different. The Romans are a classic example of a state-level society. States have permanent institutions of government that outlast any individual rulers, and they are able to exert military control over a large, well-defined territory. Most anthropologists describe the barbarian societies of temperate Europe as chiefdoms. Chiefdoms are generally smaller than states and have fewer governmental institutions. Their leaders rely more on personal qualities than on an institutionalized bureaucracy. Some archaeologists, however, have suggested that certain Iron Age polities in Gaul may have begun to develop state-level political institutions on the eve of the Roman conquest. Entries in this section and the following one will explore the nature of social and political organization in Europe during the first millennium B.C. and the first millennium A.D.

PAM J. CRABTREE



CELTS

Celts were a people who inhabited western and central Europe during the pre-Roman Iron Age (first millennium B.C.). Nineteenth-century European archaeologists divided Celtic cultural material into two periods: Hallstatt (800–500 B.C.) and La Tène (480–15 B.C.). This division was named for two sites containing objects that display distinctive decorative motifs identified with Celtic artisans. It is also based on the replacement of bronze by iron as the predominant metal for weapons and other tools. Evidence of Celtic culture has been found from the British Isles to western Romania and from the Northern European Plain, south to the Po Valley in northern Italy and into Spain. Investigations of Celtic lifeways and language, as well as their origin and demise, have been undertaken by historians, geographers, archaeologists, and linguists since as early as 500 B.C.

Debate exists as to whether “Celtic” is even a valid referent, as there is no evidence to suggest that populations that have been identified as Celtic considered themselves members of a coherent group. Classical sources referred to the occupants of southern France as Gauls; they, along with the Galatae (Galatians) who invaded Macedonia and Greece, are presumed to be Celts. Julius Caesar recognized similarities between Celts of the British Isles and Gauls, though other sources, including Pytheas of Massalia who sailed the Celtic Atlantic in the second half of the fourth century B.C., failed to make an association between the two groups. Material culture between the insular Celts of Britain and Continental Celts shows a distinct connection, however, with in-

sular Celtic craft producers rapidly adopting Continental styles and then adapting them to their own tastes.

There is a consensus among scholars that the origins of Celtic culture may be found within the Urnfield cultural tradition (also known as the Hallstatt Bronze Age), as early as 1300 B.C. Changes observable both in material culture and settlement distribution took place during the twelfth and thirteenth centuries B.C. at the time of the collapse of the Hittite Empire and the end of the Mycenaean civilization. Movements of large numbers of people along established trade routes are associated with this period, and they may account for the arrival of new skills and ideas, along with archaeologically observable increases in population density, evident from artifacts found in villages that were established at that time.

While proto-Celtic Urnfield populations exhibited a variety of local traditions, subsequent Hallstatt and later La Tène material culture became increasingly homogeneous. Artifacts provide evidence for broadly defined regional traditions such as those seen in Champagne, the West Hallstatt chiefdoms of Baden-Württemberg, the middle Rhineland, the salt mining districts of Hallstatt and Hallein-Dürrenberg, and northern Italy, to name a few. Across western and south-central Europe, burials contained weapon sets adorned with similar patterns, and wealth objects indicate gift exchange relationships with Mediterranean civilizations. At about 500 B.C. a transformation of stylistic elements used to decorate metal and ceramic objects swept across

south-central and western Europe. This increasingly uniform cultural material is associated with the beginning of the Late Iron Age and has been identified with “Celtic art.”

HISTORICAL DEPICTIONS

The earliest written reference to Celts is from about 500 B.C., when *Keltoi* are introduced in the work of Hecataeus of Miletus, a geographer writing in Greek. In one of his few surviving passages, he indicated that the people living beyond the land of the Ligurians, in whose territory the port colony of Massalia (present-day Marseille) had been established, were Celts. Fifth-century sources such as Hecataeus and Herodotus did not provide ethnographic information about the Celts, though their work makes it apparent that Celts were known to inhabit the periphery of the Greek world. Sources from the fourth century B.C., including Ephorus, Plato, Aristotle, Theopompus, and Ptolemy, characterize Celts in ways that accentuated their fighting and drinking prowess. These descriptions of warrior Celts eager for combat were written during a period of displacement and social upheaval that coincided with Celtic migrations. Rome was sacked by Gauls around 390 B.C., and around 279 B.C. Delphi became the target of Galatian invaders who looted the sanctuary. These attacks immortalized Celts as barbarian aggressors in the psyche of Roman and Greek citizens. At various times throughout the fourth and third centuries B.C. Celts served as mercenaries in Carthaginian, Etruscan, Greek, and Roman armies.

Early historic depictions of Celtic culture indicate that theirs was an oral tradition, carefully managed by priests (druids), bards, and poets. Linguistic studies of Celtic languages began in the eighteenth century A.D. and concentrated on surviving insular Celtic (spoken Celtic languages of the British Isles and Brittany). Celtic languages on the Continent disappeared in antiquity and are only known from inscriptions. Celts were mostly preliterate and adopted Greek and Latin alphabets for writing, beginning in the Late Iron Age. Third- and second-century B.C. inscriptions on pottery and coinage bear Celtic names using Greek and Latin letters. Exceptions to this adapted use of a foreign language for writing exist in several places, however: in Spain, in the form of Celtiberic; in southern France, where the language is Gaulish; and across northwestern

Italy, where Lepontic inscriptions predate Roman influence. Modern linguists speculate that these were languages of Celtic origin that continued to be used as a means of resisting cultural assimilation.

ECONOMY AND SOCIAL ORGANIZATION

Archaeological evidence indicates that the Celtic economy was based primarily on agriculture and maintenance of domesticated stock, though raiding and trading also figured prominently. Wheat and other cereal grains were subsistence staples and were supplemented with legumes, fruits, and berries, both wild and cultivated. Cows, pigs, sheep, and goats constitute the bulk of animal remains at Celtic settlement sites both large and small, but the predominant species vary within different regions. Horses and dogs appear to have had a special place among the Celts and are frequently found in burials with and without human occupants, although occasionally it appears that dogs were butchered for consumption.

Celtic social organization was largely defined by a division of labor between agriculturalists and a warrior elite, although the general population also included specialized craft producers and professionals within the priestly tradition. Some types of specialization are difficult to identify because of the Celtic belief in the ubiquitous nature of magic, which was thought to be present in all kinds of substances, including iron and coral, but could also be invoked by spells, oaths, and incantations. Skills such as the ability to heal were shared by a number of otherwise seemingly unrelated specialists. For example, metalsmiths were presumed to have curative powers, as were druids. Similarly, druids, bards (Latin *vatis*), and poets were all shamans of a sort, though their skills and abilities were assumed to have differed. Often this was expressed as a difference in degree rather than in kind.

A warrior was a type of full-time specialist in the service of a paramount chief. Burials of the warrior aristocracy provide evidence for wealth and the long distance movement of prestige goods. Not least among the remarkable aspects of princely burials (*Fürstengräber*) of the Hallstatt Iron Age is the scale of labor that was mobilized for the construction and furnishing of the graves. In the latter part of the La Tène Iron Age, this practice was replaced by the

monumental construction of defensive fortifications surrounding proto-urban settlements called *oppida*.

CELTIC SETTLEMENTS

Iron Age settlement patterns across Celtic Europe vary but reveal several prominent trends. Settlements during the earlier Hallstatt period included enclosed hillforts such as Mont Lassois, the Heuneburg, Ipf, and Hohenasperg in the west, and Závist in Bohemia. Alternatively, ditched and palisaded farmsteads (*Herrenhöfe*) were the dominant Hallstatt form along the Danube in Bavaria and in other locations removed from hillforts. Individual houses on the Continent were square, whereas in Britain they were round. Following the general collapse of the so-called princely seats (*Fürstensitze*) by 450 B.C., centralized settlement disbursed, and most of the elevated hillforts were abandoned. Throughout the beginning of the La Tène period, valley and river terraces provided the location for small villages. Several hundred years elapsed before populations once again aggregated to establish the prominently located and fortified centers that Caesar identified as *oppida*. Like earlier hillfort settlements, *oppida* were ideally situated for defense, trade, and industry.

Production of iron implements—weapons, farm tools, construction tools, and medical instruments—transformed many aspects of society, especially warfare and agricultural practices. Unlike the components of the alloy bronze, iron is plentiful across Europe. Production of iron tools intensified from the Hallstatt to the La Tène, and development of the plowshare and coulter contributed to the movement of farms and villages from the uplands, where light loess sediments had been tilled for millennia, to the heavier but more productive soils of valley bottoms. Enhanced yields provided surpluses that were bartered for items made by the increasingly specialized craft producers. Production and market centers that attracted artisans, traders, and farmers were similar to later emporia. Some even included merchant's stalls, storage facilities, and meeting places, along with residences.

Contact with Mediterranean traders waxed and waned during the centuries of Celtic European domination. The apparent replacement of gift exchange, involving prestige items and luxury goods, by importation of bulk commodities and high-

quality goods that were more widely distributed among the population, attests to the strength of a trade infrastructure. Increases in minting and transfer of coinage were promoted by returning mercenaries who had been exposed to civilizations around the Mediterranean, where coins were circulated in true market economies.

ROMANIZATION AND RESISTANCE

Roman conquest of the Celts began in Gaul in the early second century B.C. with the founding of Aquilea in 181 B.C., followed by the annexation of the rest of Gallia Cisalpina (Cisalpine Gaul). The establishment of the province Gallia Narbonensis (Narbonne) in southern France in 118 B.C. was part of the expanding acquisition of territory westward to Spain. Over the next one hundred years Roman provincial governors (proconsuls), including Gaius Marius and Julius Caesar, engaged in a series of battles and skirmishes aimed at gaining and holding territories as far north as present day Holland and east to the Rhine. Further conquest acquired Germany south of the Danube in 15 B.C. and southern Britain in A.D. 43. Continental Celts who had survived the battles for territorial dominion were largely assimilated into the Roman Empire over the next three hundred years as their culture was completely reorganized by Roman occupation. The Roman strategy that utilized preexisting social hierarchies and invested authority in cooperative local leaders served to absorb influential Celts into the new economy and system of government.

Archaeological evidence indicates that resistance to Romanization was present among Celts living on the margins of the empire, or even within it, in areas under weak Roman control. These included remote areas such as the East Anglian fenlands and wetland environments where dwellings on crannogs (artificial islands) made Roman administration nearly impossible. Such enclaves preserved traditional Celtic lifeways into the era of Christianization (in the sixth and seventh centuries A.D.) and beyond. A late form of Celtic writing found mostly on funerary monuments, the so-called Ogham script, was used in the post-Roman fifth to ninth centuries A.D. Ste-lae bearing this type of inscription have been found in Ireland, Scotland, Wales, the Isle of Man, and in Cornwall. The insular Celts who remained outside the Roman Empire retained their languages, oral

histories, and artistic styles into the medieval period. This facilitated a migration of Celtic cultural attributes from Ireland and Britain back to areas under Roman and later Germanic influence, including areas where Celtic cultural practices had nearly been extinguished. The Brythonic linguistic survival on the Breton peninsula resulted from a migration in the fifth century A.D. of Celtic speakers from Cornwall to the Continent. Throughout the spread of Christianity, the monastic tradition preserved Celtic linguistic and artistic expression and disseminated Celtic influenced early Christian ideology across southern Britain and, on the Continent, into northern Italy. Surviving Celtic languages, including Scottish Gaelic and Irish in the Goidelic group, and Welsh and Breton in the Brythonic group, are all descended from insular Celtic culture.

See also **Late Bronze Age Urnfields of Central Europe** (vol. 2, part 5); **Hallstatt** (vol. 2, part 6); **La Tène**

(vol. 2, part 6); **Celtic Migrations** (vol. 2, part 6); **Oppida** (vol. 2, part 6); **Hillforts** (vol. 2, part 6); **La Tène Art** (vol. 2, part 6).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Audouze, Françoise, and Olivier Büchsenschütz. *Towns, Villages, and Countryside of Celtic Europe: From the Beginning of the Second Millennium to the End of the First Century B.C.* Translated by Henry Cleere. Bloomington: Indiana University Press, 1992.
- Collis, John. *The European Iron Age*. New York: Schocken Books, 1984.
- Cunliffe, Barry. *The Ancient Celts*. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1997.
- Dannheimer, Hermann, and Rupert Gebhard, eds. *Das keltische Jahrtausend*. Mainz am Rhein, Germany: Philipp von Zabern, 1993.
- Green, Miranda J., ed. *The Celtic World*. London: Routledge, 1995.
- Moscato, Sabatino, et al., eds. *The Celts*. New York: Rizzoli, 1991.

SUSAN MALIN-BOYCE



HALLSTATT AND LA TÈNE

Hallstatt is both a cultural tradition, beginning in the Bronze Age around 1200 B.C. and terminating in the Early Iron Age between 500 and 450 B.C., and a type site for which the tradition is named. La Tène (c. 480–15 B.C.) denotes the second period of the central and western European Iron Age, corresponding with marked changes in material culture and mortuary practice that distinguish it from the preceding Hallstatt. It is named for a type site discovered in 1857 along the northwestern shore of Lake Neuchâtel, in the Swiss Alpine lakes region.

HALLSTATT

The site Hallstatt is a large cemetery near the entrance to a salt mine located in the Salzberg, a narrow Alpine valley in Upper Austria, in the region of the Salzkammergut. At an elevation of approximately 860 meters above sea level, the Hallstatt cemetery is situated high over a lake and town of the same name. Mining at Hallstatt began at the start of the final millennium B.C., but the majority of the burials in the prehistoric cemetery are dated between 800 and 450 B.C. For this reason, an association between Hallstatt material culture and the beginning of the Iron Age has been made.

The discovery of the cemetery is attributed to Johann Georg Ramsauer, who, in the course of his duties as manager of the Hallstatt mine, was investi-

gating a potential source of gravel in 1846 and uncovered seven burials. Ramsauer reported his find and was referred to Baron von Sacken, the custodian of the Imperial Cabinet of Coins and Antiquities in Vienna. Von Sacken provided financial and tactical support for Ramsauer to excavate at the Hallstatt cemetery annually from 1847 through 1863. Under his direction, some 980 graves were opened, and six thousand objects were recovered for the museum.

Nearly two thousand burials have been excavated at Hallstatt in intermittent investigations that began with Ramsauer in 1846 and ended in 1963. Of those burials for which documentation and provenance information exist, just over half (55 percent) were flat inhumations, mostly oriented east-west, with the body placed on its back. The remaining burials were cremations, ashes and burnt bone heaped into a pile with grave goods, including weapons and objects of personal adornment. In burials containing cremations, personal items and weapons frequently were placed on top of the ashes, surrounded by pottery and other offerings. Weapons at Hallstatt are of bronze and iron and include long and short swords (also identified as daggers) that are associated with both male and female burials.

One-fourth of the buried individuals appear to be males, with a full complement of weapons; these burials have been interpreted as warrior graves. The burial population includes children of all ages, indicating that mining and its attendant activities probably were familially organized. Additionally, there are a few graves that seem to belong to traders or to

persons from outside the community who died during their stay at Hallstatt and subsequently were buried there.

Stylistic changes in grave goods associated with the Hallstatt burials led to the conclusion that the two burial rites, inhumation and cremation, were contemporaneous and that the cemetery was used

over the period in which iron replaced bronze as the dominant metal. This information contributed to the relative chronology developed during the latter half of the nineteenth century; and, at the International Congress of Anthropology and Archaeology held in Stockholm in 1874, a two-division Iron Age, consisting of Hallstatt and La Tène, was accepted.

Imported objects and raw materials emphasize the economic importance of salt mining and reveal a distribution network of cultural material that extended from eastern France across southern Germany, Switzerland, Alpine Italy, Austria, Bohemia, Slovenia, and into western Hungary. Baltic amber, African ivory, Slovenian glass, Hungarian battle-axes, Venetian knives and brooches, and Etruscan drinking paraphernalia are all present at Hallstatt. The site itself is positioned between the broadly defined eastern and western Hallstatt traditions.

Distance from the site influences the density of materials as well as the intensity of stylistic markers associated with the tradition. This factor has contributed to variability between regional chronologies that include Hallstatt as a temporal indicator. The chronological divide within the Bronze Age for French and German archaeologists is due, in part, to distinctions made by Joseph Déchelette, who identified the Urnfield culture period as separate and followed by the Hallstatt, and Paul Reinecke, for whom the Urnfield period in southern Germany was synonymous with Hallstatt A and B (Ha A, 1200–1000 B.C.; Ha B, 1000–800 B.C.). Thereafter, Hallstatt C and D (Ha C, 800–600 B.C.; Ha D, 600–500 B.C.) belong to the Early Iron Age.

Following the terminology developed by Reinecke and modified by Hermann Müller-Karpe, the archaeological evidence for Ha A and Ha B suggests the existence of several cultures subsumed within a generally homogeneous Hallstatt sphere of influence. Regional differences in material culture occur, with widespread individual behavioral expressions regarding funerary rite and settlement. The dominant burial practice during Ha A and Ha B was cremation, in which ashes and calcined bone were placed, with small vessels and personal items, into large biconical urns before burial in occasionally vast Urnfield cemeteries. The cemetery at Kelheim in Bavaria, where Müller-Karpe refined his chronological schema for the period, contained more than 268 burials.

Settlements comprised post-built structures within stockaded and fortified compounds. Earthen fortifications and wooden palisades were utilized to an increasing degree, and in some areas hillforts were established. Both the eastern German Lausitz and the southern Bohemian Knovíz cultures established fortified upland settlements as early as Ha A.

On the whole, however, there are few indicators supporting political organization of the scale that emerges in the Early Iron Age.

The Hallstatt Iron Age (Ha C and Ha D) is a period of extraordinary cultural florescence for every part of continental Celtic Europe, with elaborate and richly furnished burials often called chiefly or princely graves and hillfort settlements. Tombs, such as the Hochdorf mound or the burial of Vix, and enclosed fortified hilltops, including the Heuneburg and Hohenasperg (in Baden-Württemberg) and Mont Lassois (in Côte-d'Or), characterize the period and signal the transformation of social organization to a political economy that controlled the movement of luxury goods. A survey of the distribution of imported goods, such as those used for the service of wine as well as the Massiliot amphorae that contained wine shipped into Transalpine Europe, shows that the western and eastern Hallstatt were included in Mediterranean trading and gift exchange.

See also Hochdorf (vol. 1, part 1); La Tène (vol. 2, part 6); Vix (vol. 2, part 6); Kelheim (vol. 2, part 6); The Heuneburg (vol. 2, part 6).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Bibby, Geoffrey. *The Testimony of the Spade*. New York: Knopf, 1956.
- Coles, John M., and Anthony F. Harding. *The European Bronze Age*. London: Methuen, 1979.
- Kromer, Karl. *Das Gräberfeld von Hallstatt*. Florence, Italy: Sansoni, 1959.
- Wells, Peter S. *The Emergence of an Iron Age Economy, The Mecklenburg Grave Groups from Hallstatt and Sticna*. Cambridge, Mass.: Harvard University Press, 1981.

SUSAN MALIN-BOYCE

LA TÈNE

The material recovered at La Tène appears to have had little to do with domestic life, and though there are numerous fibulae (brooches), few objects of adornment are of the type belonging to women. For these and other reasons, the site has been variously interpreted as a military garrison or arsenal, trading center, or votive site. An incomplete inventory of

the material from La Tène includes 166 swords and 269 spearheads. The exceptional quantity of artifacts recovered from the lake (especially weaponry) ensured the interest of antiquarians and archaeologists before the end of the nineteenth century, and in 1874 the name La Tène was used to designate the latter Iron Age.

The Swiss Lakes region played an important role in the development of a chronological framework for prehistoric Europe, beginning in 1854 with the first reported discovery of Neolithic Swiss Lake villages. Sites along lakeshores had been dredged for land reclamation during times when water levels were low, and objects well preserved in the fine silts and mud showed that prehistoric communities had constructed entire villages on piles set along the margins of lakeshores. Colonel Friedrich Schwab originally supposed that the material recovered from La Tène on Neuchâtel belonged to this earlier period until he began an inventory of the iron swords and scabbards. In all of the collections of antiquities Schwab assembled before the discovery at La Tène, bronze had been the dominant metal. The piles at La Tène were supports for piers and a double bridge and have been dated using dendrochronology. Dates for piers 3 and 2 of the Cornaux bridge provide evidence for construction or maintenance at 224 B.C. and 120–116 B.C., respectively.

As a term, “La Tène” describes and defines both a time period and a style and has been associated with “Celtic” since its appearance in archaeological parlance. Classical sources describing Celtic territories along the Danube and Celtic migration at approximately 400 B.C. were well known to European antiquarians and archaeologists. Consequently, the Early La Tène also has been called the “early Celtic.” This terminology has been particularly popular with art historians, who associated La Tène stylistic elements with Celtic-produced artifacts or “art objects.” Materials recovered from La Tène were so well preserved that it was possible to identify and disseminate imagery of the patterns that decorated scabbards and swords. It soon was determined that the “vegetal style” of intertwined plants and elongated animals was a widely distributed motif that occurred from the British Isles across France and southern central Europe, including northern Italy, to the Balkans.

Central Europe has had a usable chronological framework for the La Tène beginning in 1885 with the work of Otto Tischler, who subdivided the period into early, middle, and late periods. When Paul Reinecke constructed his analysis of fibula types at the beginning of the twentieth century, he differentiated the chronological subdivisions for southern Germany from those of western Switzerland and France. His distinctions were based on what appeared to be continuity in the tumulus burial tradition for the earliest part of the La Tène. His solution was to distinguish this phase as La Tène A, followed by B, C, and D, corresponding roughly to the early (B), middle (C), and late (D) horizons used elsewhere in Europe. While this relative temporal sequence has been modified in light of updated research, the La Tène for southern central Europe still is divided into four horizons (A through D).

The European Iron Age typically is divided into early and late periods, corresponding with Hallstatt and La Tène, respectively. The transition from Hallstatt D to La Tène usually is associated with changes in burial rite, from large tumuli to flat inhumation graves. Aspects of the tumulus burial tradition continued, however, in parts of southern Germany, Switzerland, and Austria after its abandonment in other areas. La Tène A originally was intended to cover this anomalous first horizon and was assumed to begin sometime around 450 B.C. Later research placed its beginning at approximately 480/475 B.C., coincident with dating for the Golasecca material culture in northern Italy. A hallmark of the onset of the La Tène is the “early style,” with its Etruscan influences. The compass became a design tool, particularly for bronze vessels and ornamental metal disks but also for the occasional ceramic vessel.

The changes evident in material culture and ideology, as expressed in burial treatment, were part of a major transition that is equally evident at the scale of regional settlement. Most of the elevated and fortified settlements, such as the Heuneburg and Mont Lassois, that had controlled the distribution of luxury goods during the preceding Hallstatt period were abandoned, as these apparent centers of power collapsed. Richly furnished burials continued, although the focal area shifted northward to the Hunsrück-Eifel region along the Moselle River. Settlements and burials generally were smaller than

Hallstatt period sites, suggesting more dispersed populations and decentralized social and political power.

La Tène B has a less certain starting date (c. 400 B.C.) associated with the beginning of a major movement among Celtic peoples. This migration, or expansion, depending on the source, corresponded with reduced populations in the Marne, Champagne, Bohemia, and possibly Bavaria. Depopulation is indicated by a decrease in warrior graves and adult male burials in general. Additionally, fewer weapons were deposited in the remaining graves, and the ceramic burial assemblage changed. It was during this period that a considerably less-labor-intensive interment, that of flat inhumation without grave markers, becomes the dominant rite.

La Tène C sometimes is associated with the beginning of the Middle La Tène (280–125 B.C.), because it is when the *oppida* were established. The appearance of these proto-urban settlements signaled a consolidation of power and reorganization of the social and economic structure of Celtic society. Throughout the Middle La Tène, migration and expansion, disruption and resettlement, contributed to an archaeological record that is difficult to unravel. During La Tène C, inhumation burials disappeared altogether as cremation replaced inhumation, even for the social and political elite. This further transition in mortuary practice occurred in conjunction with the formation of nucleated settlements across Europe, and it has been suggested that the total shift to cremation may have been the behavioral expression of the impact of agglomerated settlement on disposal of the dead.

Exposure to Graeco-Italic representation during this period was expressed in the “vegetal style,”

or continuous plant style. Originally named the “Waldalgesheim style” after the burial from Hunsrück, off the Rhine, the vegetal form can be seen in the decorative repertoire by 320 B.C. This change in motif included stylized palmettes and lotus patterns that garlanded bowls, helmets, and scabbards. These so-called oriental patterns appeared on weapons found at La Tène, which enabled scholars to date the site before dendrochronological confirmation was available.

The Late La Tène (125–15 B.C.) is associated with the rise of Roman colonial interests and their impact on neighboring populations and began with La Tène D1 (125–80 B.C.). La Tène D1 ended with the abandonment of the *oppida* sometime between 80 and 40 B.C. throughout France and Germany, although in Bohemia *oppida* were inhabited until sometime in La Tène D2. Relative chronologies dependent on settlement material, in the absence of burials for this period, are concluded by the disruption of the *oppida* culture. La Tène D3 (50/30–15 B.C.) coincided with the incursion of Germanic populations before the Roman conquest of the region in 15 B.C., which marks the end of the period.

See also Neolithic Lake Dwellings in the Alpine Region (vol. 1, part 4); *Oppida* (vol. 2, part 6); *La Tène Art* (vol. 2, part 6); *The Heuneburg* (vol. 2, part 6).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Bibby, Geoffrey. *The Testimony of the Spade*. New York: Knopf, 1956.
- De Navarro, J. M. *The Finds from the Site of La Tène*. Vol. 1, *Scabbards and the Swords Found in Them*. London: Oxford University Press, 1972.
- Moscatti, Sabatino, et al., eds. *The Celts*. New York: Rizzoli, 1991.

SUSAN MALIN-BOYCE



CELTIC MIGRATIONS

Celtic migration refers to the Late Iron Age expansion and resettlement of people affiliated with various Celtic tribes. Historic sources establish the start of this period of upheaval at about 400 B.C. This date is supported by archaeological evidence that indicates an intensive and rapid southward spread of Celtic cultural material and practices. However, archaeological investigations also suggest that 400 B.C. was not the beginning of movement for Celtic peoples and indicate that such migrations were not an isolated phenomenon.

Economic disruption and social transformation were experienced across south-central and eastern Europe throughout the latter half of the final millennium B.C. By the fifth century B.C. population pressure had compelled the Greeks and Phoenicians to establish colonies at coastal Mediterranean sites, such as Massalia (Marseille), Emporion (Ampurias), and Carthage. The fourth and third centuries B.C. were a time of national redefinition and included the consolidation of Greece and Macedonia under Philip II of Macedon, followed by the conquest of Persia and Egypt by his son Alexander III (Alexander the Great). Roman territorial expansion contributed to regional destabilization and population movement throughout Etruria and parts of Iberia, setting the stage for the Punic Wars. Celtic warriors participated in most of these conflicts as mercenaries.

The first wave of historically documented migration is archaeologically evident both at its point of origin (the Champagne region of France) and in the area that was invaded (the Po Valley of northern

Italy). Reduced population in Champagne is indicated by the abandonment of settlements and by a decrease in graves, especially those belonging to young adult males. Chariot burials, in particular, practically disappear. Throughout the Cisalpine region (which now forms part of northern Italy), foreign burial practices attest to the arrival of Celts, who established themselves across the plain of the Po River. In Bologna grave markers from the era depict combatants armed with weapons of northern (Transalpine) design. Also burial sites have yielded grave goods that were carried south by the deceased or their acquaintances. Bologna itself was renamed from Etruscan “Felsina” to Celtic “Bononia.” Body adornment in the form of bow-shaped brooches (fibulae) of a Transalpine La Tène style are distributed from Champagne and Burgundy across Europe to the Carpathian Basin and south of the Alps throughout Italy.

Not all of the invaders were satisfied to remain in northern Italy. Around 390 B.C. a Celtic invasion force sacked and looted Rome. According to the Roman historian Livy, writing in the first century B.C., the event was witnessed by residents who had taken refuge in the citadel. The city was later ransomed, and the barbarians packed their plunder and left. The effect of the devastation was profound and influenced Roman military commanders in their interactions with Celtic warlords for centuries. Julius Caesar, for example, rushed to meet the Helvetii in 58 B.C. to prevent them from turning south into the Po Valley. Following the battle, he turned the survivors around and provisioned them to make certain

that they would continue on their eastward journey back to Switzerland.

The path of migration appears to have first traversed the Alps along the western side of the Italian Peninsula but was soon expanded to include routes south from Bohemia. A delegation of Galatian Celts met Alexander the Great on the banks of the Danube during his campaign in the Balkans in 335 B.C. The source is Ptolemy I, later the ruler of Egypt, who was present on the occasion. Celtic incursion into Thrace, Macedonia, and Greece in about 280 B.C. was the culmination of frequent movements of war parties that had begun nearly a century earlier. Delphi was attacked around 279 B.C. by Brennos, who led his warriors to the temple of the Oracle, which they burned. There is no evidence for Celtic resettlement in Greece, and artifacts associated with the assault on Delphi are few.

Classical sources settled upon various accounts to explain why Celts left their homeland and journeyed south through Alpine passes to establish communities in Italy and Asia Minor. A report by Livy states, “There is a tradition that it was the lure of Italian fruits and especially of wine, a pleasure then new to them, that drew the Gauls to cross the Alps and settle in regions previously cultivated by the Etruscans.” The Greek scholar Dionysius of Halicarnassus elaborates on this sequence of events, saying that the Gauls were enticed to Italy with wine, olive oil, and figs and were told that the place was occupied by men who fought like women and would offer no real resistance. According to these two authors, the quality of life available on the Italian Peninsula attracted Celtic immigrants. In another version, the Greek geographer Strabo reports that tribes joined forces in pursuit of plunder. A further account says that population stress prompted consultation with the gods who directed one brother to take his followers to the Hercynian uplands in southern Germany while the other was told to take the more pleasant road into Italy. Scholarly analysis suggests that population growth was a contributing factor, along with a deteriorating climatic phase. These conditions, combined with the disruptions in the traffic of Mediterranean imports that followed the establishment of Roman colonies competing

with the Greek trading post at Massalia, may indeed have been sufficient cause.

It is probable that the migration that began in the Champagne region was motivated by a desire to acquire luxury goods and wine and that it was carried out by young adult males of the warrior aristocracy, as the archaeological evidence indicates. However, movements such as that of the Helvetii included men, women, and children, and they were most likely motivated by other factors that included hardship.

Migration contributed greatly to restructuring Celtic society. Large numbers of Celts were introduced to different lifestyles in the various Mediterranean civilizations. When they returned to their homes north of the Alps (and many of them did) they brought back coinage and an appreciation of its use. They also transported ideas, technologies, and objects that they acquired, along with contacts that enabled them to enter into new trade relationships. Further, the process of migration itself had temporarily reorganized tribal units. During migration, loose coalitions of otherwise distinct groups formed under the leadership of single individuals. Post-migration Celtic Europe during the proto-urban *oppida* phase (150–50 B.C.) reflects these economic and social transformations.

See also *Celts* (vol. 2, part 6); *La Tène* (vol. 2, part 6); *La Tène Art* (vol. 2, part 6).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Arnold, Bettina, and D. Blair Gibson, eds. *Celtic Chieftdom, Celtic State: The Evolution of Complex Social Systems in Prehistoric Europe*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1995.
- Cunliffe, Barry. *Greeks, Romans, and Barbarians: Spheres of Interaction*. New York: Methuen, 1988.
- Kristiansen, Kristian. *Europe before History*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1998.
- Livy. *The Early History of Rome: Books I–V of the History of Rome from Its Foundation*. Translated by Aubrey de Selincourt. Baltimore, Md.: Penguin, 1965.
- Moscatti, Sabatino, et al., eds. *The Celts*. New York: Rizzoli, 1991.
- Wells, Peter S. *The Barbarians Speak*. Princeton, N.J.: Princeton University Press, 1999.

SUSAN MALIN-BOYCE



GERMANS

The question of the identity of the peoples who were first called Germans is immensely complex. Three main approaches to the subject are historical, archaeological, and linguistic.

HISTORICAL

The earliest description of peoples called Germans is in Julius Caesar's commentary about his military campaigns in Gaul between 58 and 51 B.C. Caesar's remarks formed the basis for later Roman use of the name and thus for subsequent medieval and modern applications. Any discussion of the identity of the early Germans must begin with Caesar. The Greek writer Posidonius (135–51 B.C.) may have mentioned peoples he called Germans, but his works do not survive.

Two assertions by Caesar are of particular importance. One is that the peoples east of the Rhine were Germans, whereas those west of the river were Gauls (whom ancient Greek writers called Celts). The other is that the Germans had a less complex society than did the Gauls. Unlike the Gauls, the Germans had no towns, little agriculture, and less-developed religious rituals, and they spent much of their time hunting and fighting. From Caesar onward, Roman writers called the peoples east of the Rhine and north of the Upper Danube Germans. It is not known what these groups called themselves. It is very unlikely that they thought of themselves as any kind of single people, at least before many of them united to face the threat of Roman conquest.

In his work known as the *Germania*, published in A.D. 98, the Roman historian Tacitus described

in greater detail the peoples whom Caesar had called Germans. From the second half of the sixteenth century, when the manuscript of his writing was rediscovered and translated, the account of Tacitus formed the basis for many studies of the early Germans. Much of his description was applied even to groups who lived many centuries after the peoples he called Germans. Well into modern times, scholars interpreted his work as if it were an ethnographic account of peoples in northern Europe beyond the Roman frontier.

Approaches to the writings of Caesar and Tacitus have become more critical. Many historians believe that Caesar's assertions that the peoples east of the Rhine were Germans was politically motivated, to portray the Rhine as a border between Gauls and Germans and thus a cultural frontier at the eastern edge of peoples whom he was fighting to conquer. Much of Caesar's description of the Germans as a simpler people than the Gauls may have been based on long-held Roman ideas about the geography and the peoples of northern Europe. Caesar had little direct contact with groups east of the Rhine, and his remarks about them were made in the context of his primary concern, which was the conquest of Gaul.

A century of critical study of Tacitus has led to the conclusion that his *Germania* should be approached primarily as a literary work, rather than an ethnographic one. Many believe that his descriptions of the Germans tell more about Roman attitudes and values than about the peoples of northern Europe. Whereas Roman writers, following Caesar and Tacitus, regarded Germans and Gauls as dis-

tinct peoples, Greek authors, such as Strabo and Cassius Dio, considered them part of the larger group of peoples whom they called Celts. Later Roman and medieval writers built upon the traditions of their predecessors, classifying many peoples identified in later centuries—such as Burgundians, Franks, Goths, and Langobards—as Germans.

ARCHAEOLOGICAL

The archaeological evidence shows a much more complex situation than Caesar and Tacitus describe. When Caesar was writing, between 58 and 51 B.C., the peoples east of the upper and middle Rhine were very much like those west of the Rhine against whom Caesar was fighting. Large fortified towns known as *oppida* dominated the landscape. As at the *oppida* in Gaul, the archaeology shows complex economic and political organization, with mass production of pottery and iron tools, minting of coins, and long-distance trade with much of Europe, including Roman Italy. East of the lower Rhine, however, the archaeology indicates a different kind of society, without the large *oppida* and with smaller-scale manufacturing and commerce. In this region Caesar's assertion about lack of towns corresponds to the archaeological evidence, but his statements about undeveloped agriculture and the major role of hunting are proved wrong by the archaeology. Intensive farming and livestock husbandry had been practiced in the region for some four thousand years before Caesar's time.

The style of material culture, especially metal ornaments and pottery, in much of the region east of the lower Rhine is known as Jastorf, and it contrasts with the La Tène style characteristic to the south and west. Earlier archaeologists have linked La Tène style with Celts (Gauls) and Jastorf style with Germans, but studies show that such direct connections between styles and peoples named by Roman and Greek writers are unwarranted.

Throughout the Roman period (50 B.C. to A.D. 450), the archaeology shows regular interactions—some peaceful, some violent—between the Roman provinces west of the Rhine and the unconquered lands to the east. Many graves east of the Rhine contain fine products of Roman manufacturing, such as pottery, bronze vessels, ornaments, and even weapons. Such settlements as Feddersen Wierde in Lower Saxony show that trade with the Roman

world brought both wealth and social change to communities in these regions.

LINGUISTIC

The category “Germanic” as it applies to language is difficult to investigate before the time of the Roman conquests because the Iron Age peoples did not leave writings. Roman and Greek observers did not use language as a criterion in distinguishing the peoples of northern Europe, probably because they did not know enough about the native languages. When runes were developed in northern parts of the continent (by people familiar with Latin), probably in the first or second century A.D., they indicate the presence of a well-developed language that linguists classify as Germanic.

In the Rhineland, where many inscriptions survive from after the Roman conquest, some names can be linked with Germanic and others with Celtic languages. Certain names even combine elements of the two linguistic traditions. Probably in much of temperate Europe at the time of Caesar and Tacitus, many people spoke languages that could not be classified easily as either Germanic or Celtic today but that included elements associated with both of those categories.

See also **Oppida** (vol. 2, part 6); **Manching** (vol. 2, part 6); **Gergovia** (vol. 2, part 6); **Kelheim** (vol. 2, part 6); **Langobards** (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Bazelmans, Jos. “Conceptualising Early Germanic Political Structure.” In *Images of the Past: Studies on Ancient Societies in Northwestern Europe*. Edited by N. Roymans and F. Theuvs, pp. 91–129. Amsterdam: University of Amsterdam, 1991.
- Beck, Heinrich, ed. *Germanenprobleme in heutiger Sicht*. Berlin: Walter de Gruyter, 1999.
- Beck, Heinrich, Heiko Steuer, and Dieter Timpe, eds. *Germanen, Germania, Germanische Altertumskunde*. Berlin: Walter de Gruyter, 1998.
- Lund, Allan A. *Die ersten Germanen: Ethnizität und Ethnogenese*. Heidelberg: Universitätsverlag C. Winter, 1998.
- Pohl, Walter. *Die Germanen*. Munich: R. Oldenbourg, 2000.
- Todd, Malcolm. *The Early Germans*. Oxford: Blackwell, 1992.

Wells, Peter S. *Beyond Celts, Germans, and Scythians: Archaeology and Identity in Iron Age Europe*. London: Duckworth, 2001.

PETER S. WELLS



OPPIDA

FOLLOWED BY FEATURE ESSAY ON:

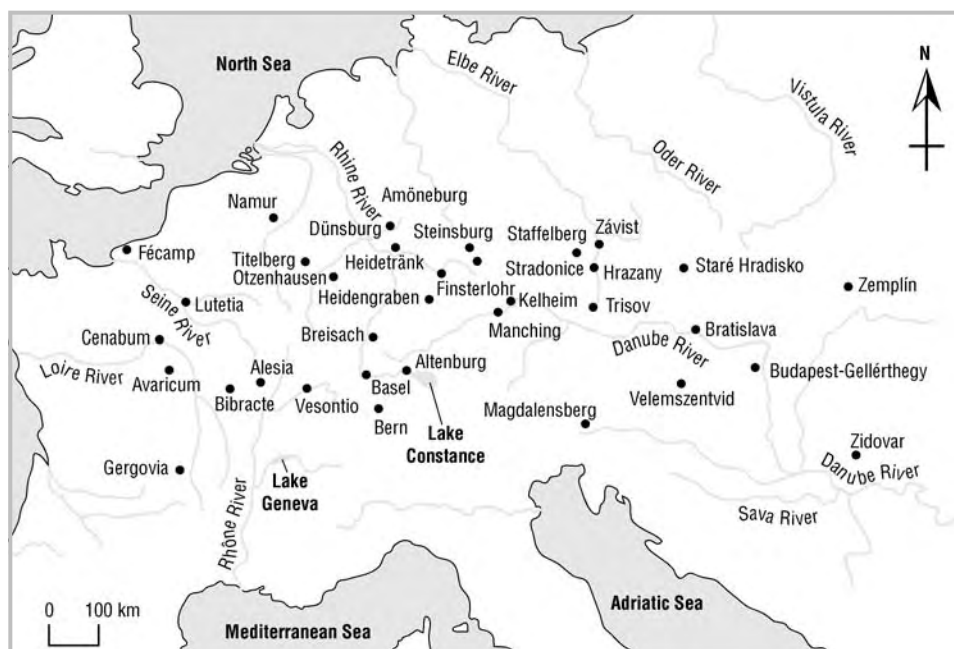
Manching 158

Oppidum is the Latin word for a defended site, often with urban characteristics, and so, by extension, simply a “town.” The modern archaeological usage is based on Julius Caesar’s *De bello Gallico*, in which he terms the native urban settlements, such as Genava (Geneva), Vesontio (Besançon), Lutetia (Paris), Bibracte (Mont Beuvray), and Gergovia (Gergovie), *oppida*, although he occasionally calls them *urbs* (city). German and British nomenclature thus uses this word for archaeological sites similar to these historical towns—defended Late Iron Age sites of the second to first centuries B.C. of at least 25–30 hectares, which are found from the Hungarian plain to western France as well as in central Spain. Caesar and other Latin authors also use the term to describe hillforts and small defended urban sites of 5–10 hectares; French nomenclature follows this usage for the towns of southern France, such as Entremont and Ensérune, and the sixth-century Hallstatt hillforts, such as Mont Lassois and the Heuneburg. In Britain the term is used mainly for very large lowland settlements of the first centuries B.C. and A.D., such as Camulodunum (Colchester), which can be as large as 2,000 hectares, defined by linear dikes. In this discussion the British and German nomenclature is used. This essay will discuss *oppida* in Gaul, central Europe, and Britain.

OPPIDA IN GAUL AND CENTRAL EUROPE

Because of their large size and no doubt large populations, the *oppida* must belong to a very different sort of political entity from that of the Mediterranean city-states, or what might be termed tribal states. They bear the name of a tribe rather than of a major town (e.g., the Aedui and the Arverni, compared with the Romans and Athenians). Where the territorial size of the state is known, they tend to be much larger than the city-states. Mont Beuvray near Autun in Burgundy is a good type site. First, Caesar names it as the ancient Bibracte, chief town of the Aedui, who were legal allies of the Romans from at least the second century B.C. Caesar, who spent the winter of 52–51 B.C. in the town writing *De bello Gallico*, tells a little about the state’s oligarchic constitution. He mentions the annual election of the chief magistrate (the *vergobret*), the existence of an assembly (*senatus*), and the sources of the state’s income (e.g., the annual auctioning of the right to collect tolls from traders).

Mont Beuvray lies in a good defensive position on a hilltop that dominates the Morvan mountain range, and it is visible from a considerable distance in all directions. Although the immediate area is agriculturally poor, there are raw resources, such as iron ore, and the *oppidum* controlled one of the



Some of the principal *oppida* in Europe. ADAPTED FROM WELLS 1999.

major routes from the Mediterranean to the Atlantic, from the valley of the Saône into the Paris Basin via the River Yonne. Dendrochronological evidence shows that the *oppidum* was founded about 120 B.C. and initially was surrounded by a rampart low on the hill, enclosing some 200 hectares. This was a *murus Gallicus*, as described by Caesar, a wall revetted front and back by stone walls and with an internal timber lacing joined with iron spikes where the balks cross. In a *murus Gallicus* the space between the walls is filled with earth and stones, and there is an earthen ramp behind and a ditch (or, in the case of Mont Beuvray, a terrace) in front. Somewhat later the site was reduced in size to 135 hectares with a new *murus Gallicus* rampart, which was repaired regularly, and, finally, in the later first century B.C. by a *Fécamp* rampart—a massive bank of earth with a sloping glacis front (named by Mortimer Wheeler who dug the *oppidum* overlooking the modern-day town of Fécamp). The reason for this series of alterations may have been to make the ramparts more visible from a distance. Certainly, defense is not the only purpose of the “defenses”—the main gate, the *Porte de Rebout*, is much wider than would be needed for defense, and there is no elaborate gatehouse such as those known from many other sites.

The site was a major center for consumption—the annual influx of wine amphorae from western Italy must be numbered in the thousands, but the pre-conquest deposits at Mont Beuvray are poorly known, as they are overlain by masonry buildings of the Augustan period. The site saw a massive investment in public and private buildings in the two generations following the conquest, before the population moved to a less-exposed site 20 kilometers away at Augustodunum (Autun) c. 10 B.C. to A.D. 10.

Several major excavations of *oppida* reveal their internal organization and the range of buildings—Villeneuve-St. Germain near Soissons and Condé-sur-Stuippe/Variscourt in France; Staré Hradisko, Hrazany, and Závist in the Czech Republic; and Manching on the Danube in Germany. All of them have produced large palisaded enclosures, which have the appearance of farmsteads, usually with a large timber house and ancillary barns, stables, granaries, workshops, and wells. The largest enclosures are up to 4,000 square meters, but more typically they are about 1,000 to 2,000 square meters. They seem to be elite residences, the equivalent of the courtyard house in the Mediterranean world. They also commonly have evidence of industrial activities,

such as bronze casting, ironsmithing, and coin manufacture.

The lower classes lived in smaller timber buildings, typically with a single room, constructed on artificial terraces on hill slopes, or, in the case of Mont Beuvray and Manching, lined along the main thoroughfares. Many people of this class were engaged in manufacturing. Some were bronzesmiths, making such mass-produced items as safety-pin brooches and belt fittings. Others were ironworkers, producing such weapons as swords, iron scabbards, spears, and shield bosses; a wide range of tools for carpentry (drills, hammers, chisels, knives, axes); agricultural equipment (plowshares, sickles, scythes, pruning hooks); house fittings (latch lifters, keys, locks, cauldron hangers), or vehicle fittings for chariots and wagons. Glass was worked to produce multicolored beads, pendants, and bracelets or red glass as an overlay on decorative studs. Wool was spun and woven into textiles, and leather was worked, although little survives of the products themselves. A great range of pottery was made, from basic cooking pots and eating vessels to elaborate painted vessels with geometric and zoomorphic (based on animal forms) decorations. Individual pots, such as specialist cooking pots made of clay containing graphite, could be traded over several hundred kilometers. Thus, *oppida* were important centers of manufacture, linked together by extensive trade networks that saw trade not only in finished goods but also in raw materials, such as metals, salt (Hallstatt, Bad Nauheim), amber, or shale for bracelets and vessels. In some cases, such as Kelheim in Germany and Titelberg in Luxembourg, the *oppidum* encloses or sits on the raw material (in both these cases, iron ores).

Oppida were deliberate foundations, formed at a specific moment in time when the decision was made to found a town and for the population to move in. It implies preexisting knowledge of what a town is like and the necessary economic, social, and political superstructure to support it. Manching is a unique example of a settlement that gradually increased in size until it achieved urban proportions and was given defenses. Lezoux in central France presents the more normal sequence: an open settlement of about 8 hectares in the plain, which was abandoned at the end of the second century B.C. for a defended *oppidum* on a nearby hill. This site, in

turn, was abandoned in the late first century B.C. for a Roman town at the foot of the hill.

There are considerable regional variations, however. Sometimes a series of *oppida* replace one another—Villeneuve–St. Germain and Pommiers at Soissons or Corent, Gondole, and Gergovie at Clermont-Ferrand. In many cases, no preceding major settlement is known, and the urban site may represent some sort of synoicism, or joining together into one community, of numerous small settlements. At Roanne and Feurs the early open settlements decreased in size when the nearby *oppida* of Jœvres, Crêt-Châtelard, and Palais d’Essalois were established, but neither site was abandoned and, unlike the local *oppida*, developed into flourishing Roman towns. In some areas, such as Clermont-Ferrand, virtually all the preceding settlements disappeared. In others, such as Champagne, there were many small farms and hamlets in the countryside; indeed, the distribution of rich burials suggests that in northern France this was where many of the elite resided. In still other areas, especially in southeastern France, *oppida* are rare or unknown, and open settlements, such as Saumeray, in the territory of the Carnutes could continue unaffected by the foundation of *oppida* not far away. *Oppida* also could be founded but never attract any permanent occupation.

In Gaul the main period for the foundation of the *oppida* (on the evidence of dendrochronology) is about 120 B.C. This was around the time of the Roman takeover of southern France (125–123 B.C.) and the defeat in 123 B.C. of the Arverni, who, according to the Greek ethnographer Posidonius, had controlled an area from the Atlantic to the Rhine. In central Europe (e.g., the Czech Republic) such sites as Hrazany, Závist, and Staré Hradisko go back a couple of generations earlier, to the early second century B.C., but there is no historical context for their foundation.

The *oppida* played a major role in the events of Caesar’s conquest of Gaul, of which the sieges of Avaricum (Bourges), Gergovia, Alesia (Alise–Ste. Reine), and Uxellodunum (Puy-d’Issolud) are the most spectacular. In contrast, when the Romans reached the Danube in 15–14 B.C. many sites, such as Manching, seem to have been abandoned. The gates of Hrazany and Závist, outside the area conquered by the Romans, were hastily blocked just be-

fore they were burned down. This event traditionally has been associated with the rise of the Germanic chieftain Maroboduus and the Marcomanni c. 10 B.C., but the archaeological dating now suggests an earlier date for their destruction. In contrast, many of the sites in Gaul, even in areas hostile to Rome, continued in occupation for at least a couple of generations (Gergovie, Mont Beuvray), if not throughout the Roman period (Alise–Ste. Reine). Indeed, many sites can claim continuity of occupation to the present day, among them Besançon (Vesontio), Reims (Durocortorum), Paris, Chartres (Aulicium), and Orléans (Aurelianum Cenabum).

The sites in central Spain are less well known and studied; they contrast with the generally smaller Iberian towns of the east and south and the hillforts of the western and northern Iberian Peninsula. Their histories are longer than those of temperate Europe, with sites such as Las Cogotas and La Mesa de Miranda (Ávila) starting as early as the fifth century B.C. A small number of sites figure in the Carthaginian and Roman conflicts: Salamanca (Salamantica) was captured by the Carthaginian general Hannibal in 220 B.C., and Numantia near Soria was the scene of a siege by the Roman general Scipio Africanus in 133 B.C. Typically, these sites consist of two or three defended enclosures with elaborate entrances and large enclosure areas (e.g., La Mesa de Miranda, at 30 hectares; Las Cogotas, at 14.5 hectares; and Ulaca, at 80 hectares). The latter site contains many small stone and double houses, usually with a single room but occasionally with three or four rooms, but there are also ceremonial and religious structures. The associated cemeteries contain some rich burials with weapons and fine bronze jewelry, but the very rich aristocratic burials found in northern Gaul generally are absent, suggesting a less hierarchical society.

OPPIDA IN BRITAIN

The *oppida* of Britain date to the late first century B.C. and early first century A.D. and are confined to the south and east of the country. Generally, they are in low-lying areas enclosing valleys or low ridges between rivers, suggesting that their role was not primarily defensive. In fact, their huge size (300 to 2,000 hectares or more) would have been impossible to man. The linear earthworks, or dikes, even avoid commanding strategic positions, and al-

though they are often massive, with sometimes double or triple lines of ramparts, their function seems rather to impress. They may mark royal properties, and only parts of them were occupied. The richest Late Iron Age burials are associated with them—Lexden at Colchester and Folly Lane at St. Albans. Historical sources and coinage allow researchers to identify up to three generations of dynastic kings, whose names appear on the coins along with the names of the cities, Camulodunum (Colchester), Verulamium (St. Albans), and Calleva Atrebatum (Silchester). Classical sources call Colchester the “capital” of Cunobelin (Cunobelinus, or Cymbeline), “king of the Britons.” All the sites produce evidence of extensive trade with the Roman world, with wine and fish paste (*garum*) from Italy and Spain and fine pottery from Gaul and northern Italy. Several developed into major Roman towns.

See also **Germans** (vol. 2, part 6); **Manching** (vol. 2, part 6); **Hillforts** (vol. 2, part 6); **Gergovia** (vol. 2, part 6); **Kelheim** (vol. 2, part 6); **The Heuneburg** (vol. 2, part 6); **Agriculture** (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Collis, John R. *Oppida: Earliest Towns North of the Alps*. Sheffield, U.K.: University of Sheffield, 1984.
- Cunliffe, Barry W. *Iron Age Communities in Britain: An Account of England, Scotland, and Wales from the Seventh Century BC until the Roman Conquest*. 3d ed. London: Routledge and Kegan Paul, 1991.
- Cunliffe, Barry W., and Simon Keay. *Social Complexity and the Development of Towns in Iberia, from the Copper Age to the Second Century AD*. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1995.
- Fichtl, S. *La ville celtique: Les oppida de 150 av. J.-C. à 15 ap. J.-C.* Paris: Éditions Errance, 2000.
- Hodges, Richard. *Dark Age Economics: The Origins of Towns and Trade A.D. 600–1000*. 2d ed. London: Duckworth, 1989.
- Guichard, Vincent, and Franck Perrin, eds. *L'aristocratie celte à la fin de l'Âge du Fer*. Bibracte 4. Glux-en-Glenne, France: Centre archéologique européenne du Mont Beuvray, 2001.
- Guichard, Vincent, S. Sievers, and O. H. Urban, eds. *Les processus d'urbanisation à l'âge du Fer: Eisenzeitliche Urbanisationsprozesse*. Bibracte 5. Glux-en-Glenne, France: Centre archéologique européenne du Mont Beuvray, 2000.
- Wells, Peter S. *The Barbarians Speak*. Princeton, N.J.: Princeton University Press, 1999.

JOHN COLLIS

MANCHING

Manching is a La Tène period *oppidum* site in Bavaria, Germany, dated from about 250 to 80 B.C., after which time it gradually was abandoned. It is one of a handful of sites of its type that have been investigated systematically, although because of its enormity, only about 3 percent of the settlement has been excavated. It has yielded both cultural material and physical settlement data that inform prehistorians about the organization and function of an *oppidum*. *Oppidum* (plural, *oppida*) is the term that Julius Caesar used to describe large, fortified towns that may have served as administrative centers for the Gallic tribes he had come north to conquer between 58 and 50 B.C.

The role of *oppida* is debated in the archaeological literature mainly because of the structural variability among these settlements, which differ from one another primarily in internal organization. Criteria for identification are based on settlement size, presence of fortification, industrial activities, geographic position, and period of occupation. Generally, the sites are large (hundreds of hectares) and defensively enclosed by earth and timber walls that use ditch and rampart technology. Such sites were located on naturally defended or elevated landscape features that intersected trade routes. They included areas for intensive production of iron implements and pottery. *Oppida* were established and abandoned during the final two centuries B.C., and their distribution across Europe coincides with the occupation of territories by Celtic populations from western France to the Czech Republic.

Manching is exceptional both for the scale of archaeological investigation that has focused on the site and for the wealth and diversity of material evidence collected there. Just south of Ingolstadt in the county of Pfaffenhofen, this 380-hectare site once was situated on a river terrace along the Danube. The unusual setting (most *oppida* are elevated) was compensated for by its encroachment on a swamp along its northeast side. The supplemental fortification constructed around the exposed portion of the settlement is a 7.2-kilometer-long rampart wall of the *murus Gallicus* type. *Muri Gallici*—timber-laced ramparts fronted by ditches—generally are not seen as far east as Manching. The

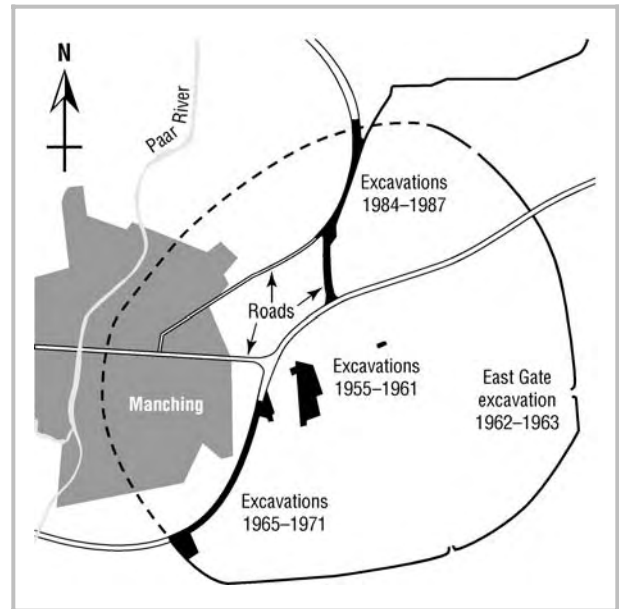


Fig. 1. Site plan showing excavation areas (dark regions) at modern-day Manching, Bavaria. Dark segments of modern roadways show excavation areas necessitated by roadway construction. ADAPTED FROM MOSCATI ET AL. 1991.

Kelheim-type rampart, with its exterior face constructed of vertical timbers and drystone wall (there is no interior walling or timber lacing through the earthen ramp), is more common throughout this area. The site was known from the remains of the wall from the early nineteenth century but was mistaken for a construction of Roman origin and identified only tentatively as Celtic in 1888 by a Romanist familiar with Caesar's *De bello Gallico*. In 1903 Paul Reinecke, working on an inventory of monuments and historic places, recognized artifacts from Manching that were similar to finds from *oppida* in France and Bohemia.

Excavations at Manching have been necessitated by construction projects that started with a military airfield between 1936 and 1938. A central portion of the settlement was destroyed when mechanical equipment was used to strip the area and tear away part of the wall. Efforts to recover artifacts were restricted by the exigencies of impending war, and only those materials that could be rescued from the spoil piles were saved. Subsequently, the airfield was bombed. In 1955 Allied forces decided to rebuild the airfield and, following negotiations with archaeologists, contributed an unprecedented sum of money for investigation of the

settlement and of the area that would be affected by renewed construction. Excavation began that year and continued until 1974 under the direction of Werner Krämer. A subsequent excavation was organized in 1984, following a ten-year hiatus, through the Bayerisches Landesamt für Denkmalpflege (the Bavarian department that oversees protection of cultural sites and monuments). This investigation responded to the planned construction of an exit ramp on the secondary roadway that passes through the site (Landstrasse B16) and focused on a previously unexplored tract in the northern part of the settlement. Approximately 1 kilometer long by 35–60 meters wide, a strip running from the center of the roughly circular enclosed area to the wall was examined. A further 6-hectare excavation was begun in 1996. Materials in all these campaigns are consistent with La Tène C1 (280–220 B.C.) through D1 (120–80 B.C.) dates.

Evidence for development of the site shows a multiphase sequence of settlement beginning as early as the third century B.C., making Manching one of the older *oppida*. The earliest settlement is concentrated toward the center of the enclosed area and predates the construction of the wall. A track oriented east-west runs through the old center and provided the foundation for a later main street linking the east and west gates of the *muris Gallicus*.

It is likely that the initial construction of the wall (second half of the second century B.C.) was an expression of prestige that established Manching as a focal point for activities centered on production and exchange. These activities encompassed not only collection of raw materials and manufacture of goods but also feasting and the functions associated with market towns and fairs. The wall itself was rebuilt during the occupation of Manching, as is evidenced by a dendrochronological date for a structure in front of the eastern gate that coincides with its renovation in 105 B.C. It is likely that the function of the wall changed through time from display to defense because a third stage of construction reinforces the entire 7.2-kilometer length of the enclosure. Furthermore, burials of individuals who died of battle injuries attest to an attack on the settlement.

The interior of the settlement seems to have been organized to facilitate trade. Structures include rows of stalls, homes, and even warehouses for the agricultural produce that made up the bulk of exchanged goods. Raw materials used in the production of glass, pottery, iron, and bronze indicate that Manching was a thriving center for craft producers. Coins were recovered from the settlement, as were strikes used to mint coinage. Forty-eight imported amphorae that contained Mediterranean wine during transportation are among the items that were traded. Published volumes covering the analysis of the Manching materials feature bronze finds, tools, fibulae, glass, faunal material, graphite pottery, imported pottery and coarse wares, smooth wheel-thrown pottery and painted pottery, and human burials associated with the settlement.

See also *La Tène* (vol. 2, part 6); *Oppida* (vol. 2, part 6); *Hillforts* (vol. 2, part 6).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Bott, R. D., G. Grosse, F. E. Wagner, U. Wagner, R. Gebhard, and J. Riederer. "The Oppidum of Manching: A Center of Celtic Culture in Early Europe." *Naturwissenschaften* 81, no. 12 (1994): 560–562.
- Collis, John. *Oppida: Earliest Towns North of the Alps*. Chalesworth, U.K.: H. Huddersfield, 1984.
- Dannheimer, Hermann, and Rupert Gebhard, eds. *Das keltische Jahrtausend*. Mainz, Germany: Philipp von Zabern, 1993.
- Gebhard, Rupert. "The Celtic Oppidum of Manching and Its Exchange System." In *Different Iron Ages: Studies on the Iron Age in Temperate Europe*. Edited by J. D. Hill and C. G. Cumberpatch, pp. 111–120. BAR International Series, no. 602. Oxford: British Archaeological Reports, 1995.
- Green, Miranda J., ed. *The Celtic World*. London: Routledge, 1995.
- Krämer, Werner. "The Oppidum at Manching." *Antiquity* 34 (1960): 191–200.
- Moscati, Sabatino, et al., eds. *The Celts*. New York: Rizzoli, 1991.
- Wells, Peter S. *Farms, Villages, and Cities: Commerce and Urban Origins in Late Prehistoric Europe*. Ithaca, N.Y.: Cornell University Press, 1984.

SUSAN MALIN-BOYCE



HILLFORTS

Sites of physical eminence in the landscape have been important throughout prehistory. Hilltops may well have been liminal places where the world of the living met the world of the supernatural, where the dead were laid to rest in a sacred space. They could have been locations for religious gatherings, perhaps at specific times of the year.

Hilltops also could have offered a measure of short-term protection in uncertain times, but a longer-term threat would have called for defensive building. Initially, wooden palisades might have been sufficient, but soon more substantial structures of earth or stone would have to have been built. Many of these sites were never more than places of temporary refuge. There is no doubt that in all areas of Europe such defended enclosures were sites of permanent occupation that often were associated with industrial, commercial, and probably also administrative and ritual activity. Security and defense must be seen as the dominant function of hillforts, but these frequently impressive constructions must have served other, less material purposes. The great sites—Maiden Castle in Dorset, England, as a prime example—possess massive ramparts that appear far larger and more elaborate than was dictated by the needs of military defense. With these sites, considerations of prestige and ostentation may be assumed. Dominating the physical horizon, such great hillforts were tangible statements of tribal power.

It is not completely clear when hillforts in the truest sense first were constructed in continental Europe. As early as the late fifth and early fourth millennia B.C., simple palisaded enclosures were

elaborated by the erection of earthworks, often of impressive dimensions, in ostensibly defensive situations. At least a few of them were for protection. In Britain hilltop settlements of the Neolithic, such as Carn Brea in Cornwall and Hambledon Hill in Dorset, suggest a similar function.

Early Bronze Age Europe saw continued, sporadic use of hilltop sites, especially in parts of Germany and farther east, though these were a response to local needs rather than a widespread development. The evolution of hillfort construction on a significant scale across Europe, however, commenced in the later Bronze Age, perhaps at the beginning of the last pre-Christian millennium. There has been considerable discussion concerning the impetus for this trend: population pressure, climatic deterioration, changing politics, security uncertainties, and novel methods of warfare all have been proposed. It is likely that all these factors played a part in this trend to a greater or lesser extent, but significant resources, in both materials and manpower, clearly were involved in their creation.

Within the fortified area at this time, houses frequently were situated along the ramparts or filling much of the internal area in regular, parallel rows. The Wittnauer Horn in Switzerland, a promontory site defended by a massive, timber-framed rampart with an external ditch, is one of the best examples. It originally was proposed that there were two rows of houses, about seventy in all, but research leaves room to doubt this figure and even the contemporaneity of the structures. Differing in internal layout is the contemporary Altes Schloss, near Potsdam in

eastern Germany. There, within a roughly pear-shaped enclosure about 100 meters in greatest width, some thirty houses occurred in at least five rows, along with storage pits and a well. Such sites indicate the emergence of agglomerated settlements of considerable size.

Apart from the large-scale excavations of the proto-urban sites of the Late La Tène period, such as Manching in Bavaria and Mont Beuvray in France, emphasis in hillfort excavations over the last half of the twentieth century has concentrated to a large extent on the nature of defensive construction. There was great variety in the details, of course, but, in broad terms, during the Bronze and into the Iron Age there were two essential styles: those with vertical faces and those that originally presented a sloping surface to the exterior. Without excavation, however, it generally is impossible to distinguish between the two.

Among the many forms of timber-laced defenses are those of the so-called *Kastenbau* type, involving boxlike compartments of longitudinal and transverse beams filled with stones and rubble. They were built without the vertical timbers at front or back that are features of the widespread box rampart. These ramparts, of necessity, possessed transverse beams through the body of the rampart to prevent the outward pressure and collapse of the uprights. A variant of this is the *Altkönig-Preist* type (named after two typical examples in Germany), which is characterized by the additional presence of stone walls at the front and the particularly heavy use of internal timbers. Other, less elaborate forms of construction are known, including those where the uprights were secured in position by the transverse lane alone and those with verticals on the front only, the supporting transverses being held in place solely by the weight of the bank. The culmination of timber-laced construction was the massive *murus Gallicus* of the Late La Tène period, which possessed ramparts of nailed box construction with an outer masonry facing and, on occasion, a substantial internal earthen support. Such ramparts enclosed settlements that often were of considerable size, with houses arranged along streets and possessing most of the specialist activities of the true town, including the minting of coins. In Gaul, in the last century before Christ, the Roman general Julius

Caesar had no hesitation in using the term *oppidum* to describe them.

Defenses of dump construction consisted of wide, sloping ramparts of piled earth lacking the support of timber elements. More economical to build than were the timber-laced ramparts, a potential weakness was that the outer face, without support, of necessity sloped to the interior. Its height thus was critical, and associated ditches of substantial depth were common, especially in England. In northern France a variant, the so-called *Fécamp* type, possessed shallower but considerably broader ditches. Some British hillforts were constructed with the sloping outer face of the rampart continued by the inner face of the ditch, thus maximizing the defensive potential. Massive ramparts constructed solely of rubble, such as the huge German site of Otzenhausen, also occur. Its prodigious dimensions alone were deemed sufficient for effective defense, but, as elsewhere, the scale of the protective ramparts may well have been intended for more than merely defensive use.

Entrances, potentially the weakest point in the defensive circuit, included angled approaches, overlapping ramparts, mazelike arrangements of strategically placed ramparts, and various timber constructions, including footbridges or towers. Associated especially with the Late La Tène *oppida*, inturned entrances were constructed to create long, narrow passages along which attackers had to progress. Massive timber gateways, sometimes doubled or even trebled, also were present.

The varying types of rampart construction cannot in any way be seen as regular developments over time. It seems more likely that from a number of self-evident structural variables, individual building teams chose specific construction methods that were deemed suitable in the context of the available workforce and for the immediate needs. The Late La Tène *oppida* stand apart, however, as does the spectacular mud-brick wall of the Late Hallstatt Heuneburg hillfort in southwest Germany. The latter, an obvious imitation of a Mediterranean town wall, emphasizes once again that functional considerations alone were not always paramount concerns in defensive construction.

The trend toward hillfort building that gathered momentum across Europe from the later

Bronze Age onward can be mirrored in Britain and in Ireland. In the former area, Rams Hills, Berkshire, and the Breidden, Powys, represent early examples. In Ireland, too, modern investigations show with increasing clarity that the centuries c. 1000 B.C. witnessed a significant explosion in hillfort construction. Rathgall, County Wicklow; Mooghaun, County Clare; and Haughey's Fort, County Armagh, all now yielding radiocarbon dates between 1000 and 900 B.C., are but three examples of this early development. In all cases occupation of some permanence has been recognized.

Britain, with more than three thousand structures of notionally hillfort character, presents acute problems of definition. The classic examples, numbering several hundred, occur in south-central England in a broad band that runs from the southern coast to northern Wales. Construction, as noted, commenced early in the millennium, but the major sites belong to the period from the mid-millennium onward. Timber-laced ramparts of types comparable to those found on the European mainland have been identified (with the notable absence of the *murus Gallicus*) and, of course, massive defenses of earth alone, often in multiple form, are widespread. Entrances of varied complexity occur, including those of inturned form. The latter resemble the inturned entrances in Europe, but it must be stressed that the British forts are not a product of invading groups, as was once believed. They are entirely indigenous developments.

Large-scale excavation at selected sites, including Danebury, Hampshire; Maiden Castle, Dorset; Croft Ambrey, Hertfordshire; and elsewhere, has provided extensive information on the nature of hillforts in late prehistoric Britain. Danebury, a triple-ramparted hillfort of 5 hectares, was subjected to research excavation over twenty seasons, which ultimately exposed 57 percent of the interior. This site has provided us with the most detailed and comprehensive insights into the nature of the late prehistoric hillfort in Britain.

Three main phases of activity, reflected in the three ramparts, were recognized, and dating evidence indicates that the site was in use from about 550 B.C. to the beginning of the Christian era. The innermost, primary rampart is a massive earthen construction with a deep, V-sectioned ditch: from ditch base to the crest of the bank was a distance of

16.1 meters, dimensions surpassed only by the corresponding inner defense at Maiden Castle, which totaled an astonishing 25.2 meters. Initially, there were two entrances and later just one, and they were developed to a level of exceptional defensive complexity, providing complex, mazelike approaches to the interior. Large, strategically placed caches of sling stones underlined the military aspect of the construction.

Within the enclosure, houses, both rectangular and circular, were aligned along streets extending more or less east to west across the interior. Well over one hundred houses were identified, but not all of them were contemporary. Numerous small square or rectangular structures, which may have been grain silos, also were revealed. Most spectacular were the 2,400-odd pits densely concentrated in all excavated zones, superficially resembling the surface of Gruyère cheese. These pits, carefully dug and as deep as 3 meters, generally are seen as having functioned for the storage of grain. In the center were four small rectangular structures, which might have been temples. Extensive evidence for a wide range of secular activities also was brought to light.

The most remarkable feature of Danebury was the evidence for grain storage on what must have been a prodigious scale. The enormous storage capacity implied seems far in excess of the needs of the occupants of Danebury, a number estimated to have been between 200 and 350 at any one time. It has been suggested that the primary function of Danebury was to act as a central place for the storage and protection of grain for the peoples of the surrounding landscape.

Danebury is the classic British hillfort, but it is scarcely typical for the whole island. In Scotland, for example, structures of other types occur, including those with various forms of timber lacing. Most notable, however, are the curious vitrified forts, so called because of the intense burning to which the stones of the ramparts have been subjected. These sites have engendered considerable discussion—accidental burning, hostile action, or even deliberate burning by the inhabitants of the forts have been suggested to explain the vitrification. Hostile action perhaps is most likely, but in any event such ramparts originally must have been laced with timber.

The great southern English hillforts mirror the trend toward centralization, if not urbanization, that had already begun on the European mainland in the latter part of the second century B.C. Belgic influences in southern England advanced this trend a step further, but, as was the case on the mainland, it was halted by Roman occupation, soon to be reborn in another guise under the Pax Romana, or age of Roman peace (37 B.C.–A.D. 180).

See also Maiden Castle *vol. 1, part 1*); **Hambledon Hill** (*vol. 1, part 3*); **Hallstatt** (*vol. 2, part 6*); **Oppida**

(*vol. 2, part 6*); **Manching** (*vol. 2, part 6*); **Danebury** (*vol. 2, part 6*); **The Heuneburg** (*vol. 2, part 6*).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Avery, Michael. *Hillfort Defences of Southern Britain*. Oxford: Tempus Reparatum, 1993.
- Collis, John. R. *Oppida: Earliest Towns North of the Alps*. Sheffield, U.K.: University of Sheffield, 1984.
- Harding, D. W., ed. *Hillforts: Later Prehistoric Earthworks in Britain and Ireland*. London and New York: Academic, 1976.

BARRY RAFTERY



ORIGINS OF IRON PRODUCTION

FOLLOWED BY FEATURE ESSAY ON:

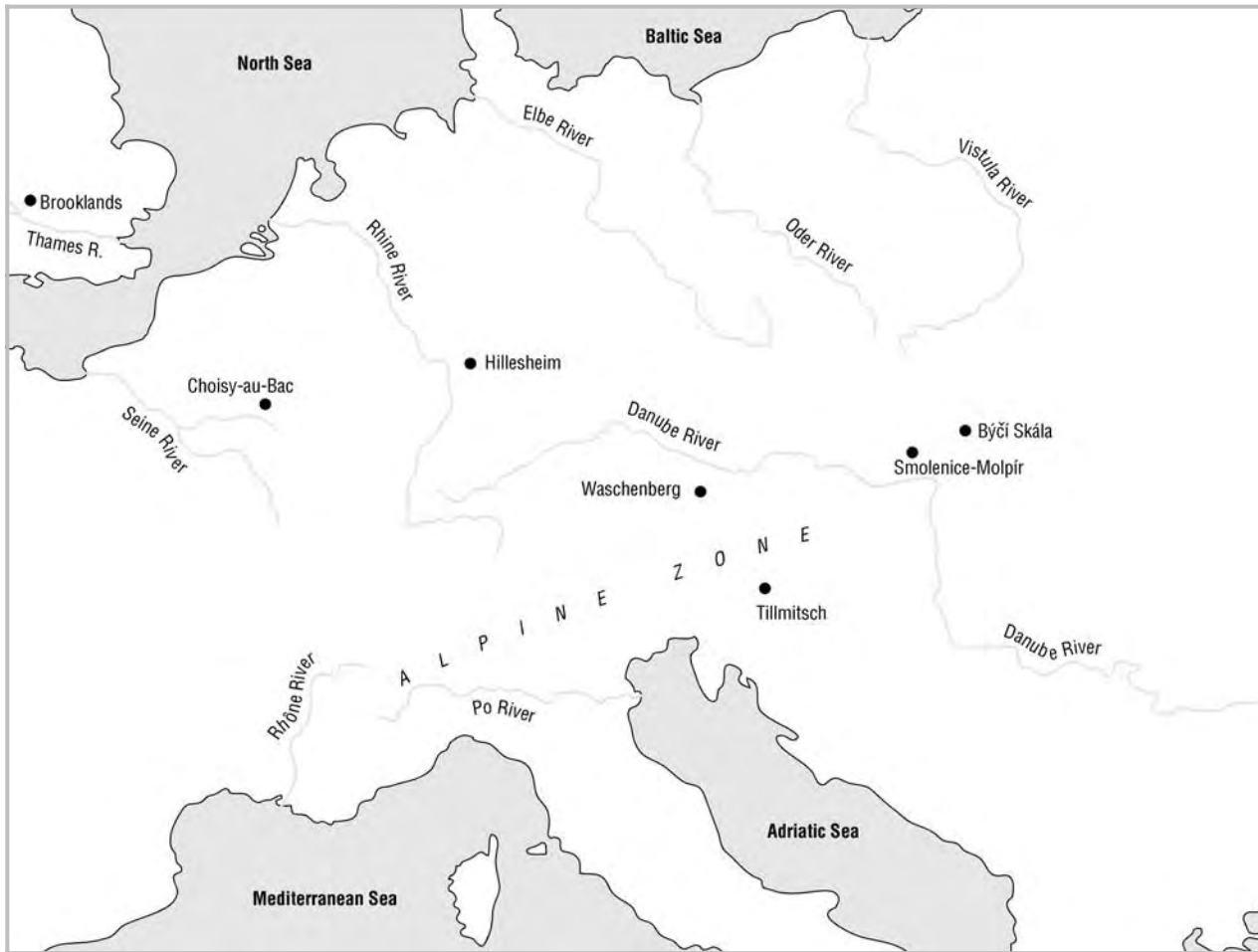
Ironworking 167

Iron is potentially superior to bronze and is much more common than copper and tin, bronze's constituents. Iron's workable ores are widespread in Europe and particularly abundant in the Alpine region. The advantage of iron's abundance was offset because ancient technology could not take full advantage of its properties. Furnace temperatures could not reach iron's relatively high melting point. During the Bronze Age, small bits of iron occasionally must have been produced during copper smelting, but metalworkers could not melt it as they could other metals. When iron ore was intentionally smelted in ancient times, the iron was reduced to metal in the solid state, leaving a spongy mass with slag still trapped in pores. Unlike bronze, which could be cast, iron had to be worked in the solid state to turn it into useful shapes. A smith reheated it in a forge to soften the metal to liquefy any trapped slag and then repeatedly hammered it to force out as much slag as possible while shaping the iron into ingots or finished forms. Reheating and hammering were used in working bronze—they improve the metal. Because iron could not be melted, it could not be enhanced by mixing with other metals, and pure iron does not respond favorably to hammering and reheating, as bronze does. Techniques for dealing consistently with molten iron

were not developed in Europe until postmedieval times.

Iron in the solid state takes up carbon and forms a product called steel, but this process requires special smelting conditions that did not occur often in ancient furnaces. There is another chance to introduce carbon into iron during forging, but this so-called case hardening is extremely difficult to achieve. Once steel can be produced on a consistent basis, it does have many advantages over bronze. It is almost as hard as bronze and can be further quench-hardened—reheated and dunked into water. The subsequent extremely hard but brittle steel can be reheated again, and a balance can be achieved between hardness and toughness that is vastly superior to bronze. Steel production is, however, a labor-intensive process requiring specialized skill.

Archaeological evidence for iron production takes four forms: production sites (furnaces and forges), by-products (slag and unused ore), tools, and finished objects. Slag has been excavated at numerous Early Iron Age sites, often in fill, but production areas have been identified definitively at fewer than ten sites. Fortunately, these sites span almost the full time and space of Early Iron Age Europe: the earliest is Tillmitsch in the southeastern



Iron production sites from 800 to 400 B.C.

Alps in Austria, dated to 800 B.C., and the latest is Brooklands in southern England, well outside of the Alpine region and dated to 400 B.C. The map shows these two sites and the five more best-known sites that fall between them chronologically, all within the Alpine zone. In general, these sites were hill-forts involved in long-distance trade with the Mediterranean world. They bear evidence of other craft production, suggesting that they were regional centers with at least part-time artisans trading finished goods to a hinterland. The raw materials they received in return enabled them to support themselves and also to tap into the long-distance trade.

Smelting and smithing took place at the same locations, and smelting was carried out in simple furnaces where the charge was allowed to cool in place. Forges were of uncomplicated open design

not conducive to case hardening. Several dozen slags have been analyzed from some of these sites and from other less well-defined provenances dated to the Early Iron Age. These slags uniformly suggest smelting temperatures of 1,100–1,200°C (2,000–2,200°F), consistent with the type of simple furnace excavated.

Tools—hammers, tongs, and anvils themselves made of iron—are quite rare from Early Iron Age Europe and generally have been found in graves. They, too, reflect a simple technology. On the other hand, by definition, thousands upon thousands of iron objects are known from the Early Iron Age, and by now hundreds of these artifacts have been analyzed. Most of these objects come from graves, a few from settlements, and a handful from the production sites. The earliest iron objects in barbarian Europe are parts of jewelry, sometimes covered with

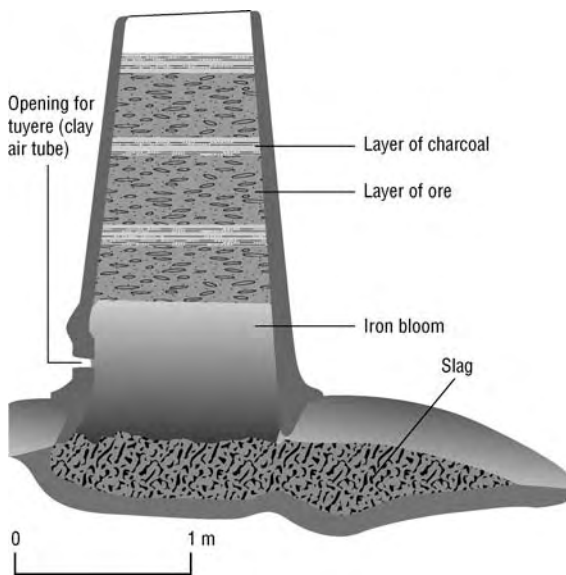


Fig. 1. Schematic diagram of a typical shaft furnace of the Iron Age. In this case the slag has been tapped off. In some shaft furnaces and in simple bowl furnaces, the slag is allowed to solidify in place, above the iron bloom. ADAPTED FROM [HTTP://MEMBERS.AON.AT/DBUNDSCHI/LATENE.HTM](http://members.aon.at/dbundschi/latene.htm).

bronze. Weapons are found a bit later, primarily in graves. Agricultural tools date only to the Late Iron Age.

Analysis has shown that the earliest objects, even the weapons, were almost all made of plain iron. They were not intentionally improved during the forging process, although a few were of steel produced accidentally in the smelting process. The few objects exhibiting case hardening or quench hardening were apparently southern imports. Throughout the Early Iron Age, techniques for improving iron developed slowly, and the most sophisticated techniques do not appear until the end of the Iron Age.

During the transition from the Bronze Age to the Iron Age, the barbarians of temperate Europe were in indirect but steady contact with Mediterranean peoples. Iron production was pioneered in the Alpine region c. 800 B.C., at regional centers that already had advanced methods for working in bronze and were in contact with the south. The Greeks had sophisticated steel metallurgy, and objects of trade entered the barbarian world. The northern bronzesmiths would have recognized iron as an occasional by-product of copper smelting that they had not found particularly useful. The presence

of a small amount of Mediterranean iron of superior quality might have spurred barbarian investigations into the new metal, or local conditions brought on by trade and other factors might have led them to experiment with a variety of pyrotechnologies. In any event, there is no evidence that they learned iron production from the south, and sophisticated techniques were developed slowly over a long period of time out of local bronzesmithing traditions. The earliest iron was inferior to bronze and not suitable for many applications, so there was no major technological advantage to adopting it. Iron was at first a decorative material and then came to be used to replace bronze in a few very specific applications, notably in certain types of funerary goods.

Nevertheless, the practice of ironworking spread north and west by a combination of trade and technology transfer. Although in most cases the development continued to be indigenous, in some cases actual migration may have been involved. Ironworking rapidly reached Poland, Germany, and France; it reached northern and western Europe somewhat later. Each local area seems to have developed ironworking according to its own trajectory. Although the use of iron must have had feedback on other aspects of society, it was the other social forces that led to iron production rather than vice versa. The barbarians developed indigenous technology that was to underpin their society from the Late Iron Age until almost modern times.

See also **Early Metallurgy in Southeastern Europe** (vol. 1, part 4); **Ironworking** (vol. 2, part 6).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Ehrenreich, Robert M. *Trade, Technology, and the Ironworking Community in the Iron Age of Southern Britain*. BAR British Series, no. 144. Oxford: British Archaeological Reports, 1985.
- Geselowitz, Michael N. "The Role of Iron Production in the Formation of an 'Iron Age Economy' in Central Europe." *Research in Economic Anthropology* 10 (1988): 225–255.
- Pleiner, Radomír. "Early Iron Metallurgy in Europe." In *The Coming of the Age of Iron*. Edited by Theodore A. Wertime and James D. Muhly, pp. 375–415. New Haven, Conn.: Yale University Press, 1980.
- Raymond, Robert. *Out of the Fiery Furnace: The Impact of Metals on the History of Mankind*. Philadelphia: University of Pennsylvania Press, 2000. (Recent general history of metallurgy written for the general public.)

- Rostoker, William, and Bennet Bronson. *Pre-Industrial Iron: Its Technology and Ethnology*. Archaeomaterials Monograph, no. 1. Philadelphia: University of Pennsylvania, 1990. (Survey of prehistoric iron production; much material covers Europe but is somewhat technical.)
- Scott, Brian G. *Early Irish Ironworking*. Belfast: Ulster Museum, 1990.
- Tylecote, Ronald F. *A History of Metallurgy*. 2d ed. London: Institute of Materials, 1992. (General, if somewhat technical, history of metallurgy, including iron and focusing on Europe.)
- Wertime, Theodore A., and James D. Muhly. *The Coming of the Age of Iron*. New Haven, Conn.: Yale University Press, 1980. (Collection of regional syntheses about the origins of iron production worldwide plus background essays on method and theory.)

MICHAEL N. GESELOWITZ

IRONWORKING

By about 300 B.C., iron production was common throughout Europe. The abundance of iron ore, however, was offset by the limitations of the bloomery process through which iron was produced. Furnace temperatures could not reach iron's relatively high melting point. When iron ore was smelted, the iron was reduced to metal in the solid state, leaving a spongy mass (called the sponge or bloom) with slag still trapped in pores. A smith reheated the bloom in a forge to soften the metal and liquefy any trapped slag and then hammered it repeatedly to force out as much slag as possible while shaping the iron into ingots or finished forms. The wrought iron so produced was relatively pure and therefore not very hard. The smiths learned that they could harden the iron by placing it in the forge in contact with organic materials. It is now known that this technique, called case hardening, works by introducing carbon into the surface of the iron, converting it to steel. The process was labor-intensive and difficult to control. Furthermore, a great deal of fuel—charcoal, produced from wood—was needed for both smelting and forging. Although wood was readily available in barbarian Europe, procuring the wood represented another labor-intensive step in production.

Ironworking in this early era was carried out in many settlements of various sizes. The level of pro-

duction was small-scale, the political economy had to support a full-time specialist, and the quality of the product could not always be assured. As a result, iron was used primarily for weapons, funerary goods, and other items with a strong political and social component and only to a very limited extent for agricultural tools.

The nature of iron production began to change with the rise of urbanism in Late Iron Age Europe. After about 200 B.C., large, complex settlements began to emerge in specific areas of Europe. These *oppida* were based in part on long-distance trade with the Roman world as well as control of local political, social, and economic networks. Evidence of large-scale iron production occurs on most of these sites, and some even appear to have specialized in iron production. Several well-excavated *oppida* in Bavaria, such as Manching and Kelheim, have provided evidence of every facet of ironworking, from mining through forging, and the analysis of the finds from these sites confirms the view of site specialization and of trade with Rome. The Roman need for iron may have led at least in part to this urban phenomenon. In any event, the formation of large centers with higher population densities and greater social differentiation and specialization certainly allowed and encouraged the support of large-scale iron production, which in turn made iron more important to the economy. Not only do a wider variety of tools and weapons of iron appear, but evidence also includes the appearance of iron bars that seem to have been used as a kind of currency. The use of the iron plowshare almost certainly had a major impact on the rest of the economy. Ironworking also continued to be carried out on the smaller settlements, although their economic relationship to the centers is not clear.

In addition to the changes in the quantity of iron, there were qualitative changes as well. First, the simple shaft furnaces were replaced by slightly more-advanced domed furnaces, which did not create much greater temperatures but were more consistent and had larger capacity. Archaeometallurgical analyses from many parts of Europe have shown that the smiths learned that steel could be reheated and quenched to produce an even harder substance and that the resulting quench-hardened steel could be reheated to achieve a balance between hardness and toughness. This technique was not

known in the Early Iron Age and would not have been obvious to early metalworkers because it does not work on other metals such as bronze. The smiths also learned how to weld a steel edge onto a soft iron back without accidentally decarburizing—removing the carbon from—the steel, a difficult process that leads to a superior tool or weapon. Various finds of smiths' tools also attest to the range of techniques available to them. They did not, however, learn to “pile” steel by alternating thin layers of iron and steel, as was done in the Classical world.

There is some debate as to what extent the smiths of the barbarian world developed these techniques independently owing to their long experience with iron and to what extent the technology diffused from the classical world. On the one hand, at the time of the Celtic invasions of Italy in the third century B.C., classical sources make reference to the inferior nature of the barbarians' swords. On the other hand, by the second century B.C., the sources speak of the outstanding quality of the steel from Celtic Iberia. After the Roman conquest of central and western Europe, Noricum—now the province of Carinthia in the Austrian Alps—became the major steel supplier for the empire.

The situation of barbarian iron production outside the Roman *limes* after the Roman conquest until the fall of the empire was a mixed one. Some areas, such as the Holy Cross Mountains in Poland, continued to specialize in and produce large quantities of iron for local consumption and trade with Rome. Other areas underwent a decentralization and technical regression. Still others, such as Ireland and Scandinavia, which had originally been outside the zone of increased and improved iron production, gradually developed their own industries, probably under the influence of their trading and raiding relationships with Roman territories. It is

safe to say that, after the fall of the Roman Empire, the barbarian world was everywhere an iron-based economy but one that depended on relatively basic techniques and somewhat decentralized production.

See also **Oppida** (vol. 2, part 6); **Origins of Iron Production** (vol. 2, part 6).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Ehrenreich, Robert M. *Trade, Technology, and the Ironworking Community in the Iron Age of Southern Britain*. BAR British Series, no. 144. Oxford: British Archaeological Reports, 1985.
- Pleiner, Radomír. “Early Iron Metallurgy in Europe.” In *The Coming of the Age of Iron*. Edited by Theodore A. Wertime and James D. Muhly, pp. 375–415. New Haven, Conn.: Yale University Press, 1980.
- Raymond, Robert. *Out of the Fiery Furnace: The Impact of Metals on the History of Mankind*. University Park, Pa.: Pennsylvania State University Press, 1986.
- Rostoker, William, and Bennet Bronson. *Pre-Industrial Iron: Its Technology and Ethnology*. Archaeomaterials Monograph, no. 1. Philadelphia: University of Pennsylvania, 1990.
- Scott, Brian G. *Early Irish Ironworking*. Belfast: Ulster Museum, 1990.
- Tylecote, Ronald F. *A History of Metallurgy*. 2d ed. London: Institute of Materials, 1992.
- Wells, Peter S. *Settlement, Economy, and Cultural Change at the End of the European Iron Age: Excavations at Kelheim in Bavaria, 1987–1991*. Archaeology Series, no. 6. Ann Arbor, Mich.: International Monographs in Prehistory, 1993. (Includes general discussion of the *oppida* and ironworking, including data from other sites, such as Manching, plus specialist reports on the ironworking finds from Kelheim.)
- Wertime, Theodore A., and James D. Muhly. *The Coming of the Age of Iron*. New Haven, Conn.: Yale University Press, 1980.

MICHAEL N. GESELOWITZ



COINAGE OF IRON AGE EUROPE

Coinage was an invention of the Greek inhabitants of Asia Minor in the seventh century B.C. Over the next three centuries, the concept spread through the rest of the Mediterranean world, including the Greek colonies of southern France and northeastern Spain, such as Emporion (Ampurias) and Massalia (Marseille), although it was not until c. 300 B.C. that the Romans adopted a regular coinage. At about this time the idea also began to penetrate northward into barbarian Europe. By the second century B.C. some form of coinage was in use over much of the Continent, from the Black Sea and the Danube basin to the Atlantic coast of France and Spain and as far north as Bohemia and central Germany. The inhabitants of southeastern Britain were among the last to adopt coinage and continued to produce it in the first century A.D., after the other coin-using regions had been absorbed into the Roman Empire. Most of the barbarian groups who adopted coinage were Celtic speaking but also included Germans, Iberians, Illyrians, Ligurians, and Thracians.

At the outset Iron Age coinage was either of gold or of silver and derived from Greek models. Precious metal issues in the name of the powerful Macedonian rulers of the late fourth century B.C., Philip II and his son Alexander the Great, were by far the most influential prototypes, but the coins of various Greek colonies also were imitated. Over time distinctive local and regional coinage traditions began to emerge as indigenous moneyers added features and designs of their own. None of the earliest Iron Age coinages is meaningfully inscribed, but

from the second century B.C. onward many issuers began to put their names—and sometimes such details as a title or mint name—on their coins. Most legends are in Greek or Latin letters or a mixture of the two, although Iberian, Illyrian, and Italiote scripts were all used in certain areas. As Rome became the dominant Mediterranean power, its coinage also began to be imitated by Iron Age groups. Bronze coinage was a relatively late innovation and essentially was confined to western Europe. Tri-metallic coinages are found only in a few parts of southeastern Britain and northern France, whose rulers were effectively already under Roman domination.

Two main and essentially discrete zones of Iron Age coinage can be discerned based on different Greek models. Over a vast area of southern Europe, extending from the Balkans and the Danube basin through the Po Basin in Italy and to the Rhône and Garonne basins of southern France, almost all Iron Age coinages were in silver. Farther to the north, however, in Bohemia, southern Germany, northern France, and eventually Britain they were initially of gold. A third, smaller zone existed in Spain and Mediterranean France west of the Rhône, where from the late third to the early first centuries B.C. numerous groups struck bronze (and occasionally silver) coinages, mostly modeled on the contemporary bronze issues of Roman Spain. None of the peoples inhabiting the north European plain or Scandinavia adopted coinage at this stage, possibly because it did not fit with their dominant ideology or value system.

Region	Bronze	Potin	Silver	Gold
Balkans-Danube Basin	(y)		X	
Alps-North Italy			X	y
Southern France	y		X	
Spain	X		y	
Southern Germany-Czech Republic			y	X
Northern France-Belgium-Luxembourg	X	X	y	X
Southeast Britain	y	y	X	X

X=primary coinage metal(s); y=subsidiary coinage metal(s).
In northwest France, many of the later "gold" coin types were in fact struck from a silver and copper alloy known as billon.

Principal coinages in the different regions of Iron Age Europe.

THE "SILVER" ZONE

The earliest Iron Age coinages began during the late fourth century B.C. in the modern Balkans and were faithful imitations of posthumous silver tetradrachms of Philip II of Macedon, with a bearded head on one side and a horseman on the other. They were not so much a local coinage as substitutes for the real thing. The first unmistakably native coinages emerged in the early third century B.C. They were all based on the same model, except in the regions closest to the Black Sea, where the silver tetradrachms of Alexander the Great or his successor, Philip III Arrhidaeus, provided the preferred model; these portray a seated figure instead of the horseman. A few Greek gold types also were copied in this area, but this production quickly ceased.

Over the next century silver coinage spread through eastern Europe, sometimes employing other Greek models. The overall volume increased markedly, and distinctive regional traditions developed, stylistically much further removed from their prototypes, such as the initially dumpy and later broader *scyphate* (dished) coinages found in the southeastern Carpathians or the facing and double-headed issues found in Moesia. Eventually, in the first century B.C., many groups first abandoned Hellenistic models in exchange for Roman types and added legends; they then stopped striking coinage altogether. Silver fractional units or bimetallic coinages in gold and silver, such as the Biatec series of Bohemia and southern Slovakia, also occur, but bronze coins are seen only in Pannonia.

Elsewhere in the silver zone the initial models were provided mainly by the coinages of various Greek colonies. The Celtic inhabitants of northern Italy adopted silver types imitated from the drachms

of Massalia, to which legends in Italiote characters later were added; the Massalia drachms also influenced the weight standard of the first silver coinages of the Rhône Valley. In southwestern France several peoples issued coinages with a distinctive cross-shaped emblem on one side, copied from the Greek colony of Rhode (Rosas) in northeastern Spain. This series probably started in the third century B.C. and lasted to the early first century B.C. The peoples of west-central France opted instead to copy coins issued by the neighboring colony at Emporion; subsequently this coinage provided the model for the first small-scale silver coinages in Britain and northern France.

THE "GOLD" ZONE

In western Europe the earliest Iron Age coinages were gold staters or, more rarely, divisions copied from pieces struck by Philip II of Macedon and his successors from c. 340 B.C. onward, with a head on one side and a two-horse chariot on the other. These imitations even faithfully reproduce the symbols used by particular Greek mints, allowing different groups of primary copies to be identified, dispersed over an area extending from southwestern Germany through northern Switzerland and eastern and central France as far as the Atlantic coast. As in eastern Europe, distinctive regional traditions gradually developed, as, for example, in Picardy, where the designs also were influenced by the Greek coinage of southern Italy, or in Brittany, where debased alloys of silver and bronze replaced gold.

In central Europe developments followed a more diverse pattern. The earliest Iron Age coins in Moravia and Bohemia copy a gold stater of Alexander the Great with Victory standing on one side;

these coins were in their turn copied in other areas, such as the Upper Danube. In the late third century B.C. the Alexander copies were supplanted by Biatec superficially similar types, influenced by both Greek and Roman coinage. These “Alkis” types themselves had various derivatives, including virtually formless coins shaped somewhat like mussels (including ultimately the series mentioned earlier). The influence of late-third-century B.C. Roman coinage also is apparent on a series of tiny gold coins (about $\frac{1}{24}$ of a stater) from southern Germany bearing a double head, soon supplanted by concave coins with affinities to the “mussels” tradition, known as “rainbow cups.” The rainbow cup coinage in due course spread into the middle Rhineland and eventually surfaced—in very debased form—in the Netherlands.

The minting of Greek-style gold coinage in western and central Europe apparently began shortly after the initial copying of silver in eastern Europe, suggesting that broadly similar processes were at work. One possibility is that barbarians serving as mercenaries for various Hellenistic rulers in the wars following the death of Alexander the Great in 323 B.C. became accustomed to being paid off in precious metal coins and introduced the concept to their home territories, whence the practice gradually spread. The extensive migrations of Celtic-speaking peoples around the same time may be another relevant factor. Neither idea explains why the peoples over such large regions systematically opted for particular models—although, in more general terms, it is easy to see why motifs such as severed heads, mounted warriors, and chariots on the relevant prototypes must have appealed to them.

LATER DEVELOPMENTS IN WESTERN EUROPE

In the early to middle second century B.C. various peoples in east-central and northern France and the extreme southeast of Britain began to make cast bronze coinage, known as potin after its high tin content. These started as close copies of the bronze coinage of Massalia, but various regional traditions, often with purely native designs, soon emerged. Slightly later several groups in the Rhône Valley and east-central France began striking inscribed silver coinages on a weight standard close to half the Roman denarius (which weighed about 4 grams),



Fig. 1. Silver coin of Biatec, Czech Republic. © COPYRIGHT THE BRITISH MUSEUM. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

many of them clearly directly inspired by Roman types. These so-called quinarius coinages soon spread into other areas, such as the Rhineland, or as in central and western France, stimulated comparable silver coinages on a slightly different weight standard. By the early first century B.C. these new silver coinages had all but ousted gold, apart from in regions north of the Seine (including Britain), where gold remained the preferred metal.

The Roman conquest of France in the middle of the first century B.C. brought further changes.



Fig. 2. Potin coin of the Remi, northern France. © COPYRIGHT THE BRITISH MUSEUM. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

Across central France quinarius types proliferated and in places even expanded in volume, while everywhere potin was replaced by struck bronze coinage, which until then had been confined to a few areas, such as western Picardy. Unlike potin, which often circulated over very large areas, many of the new struck bronze issues were quite localized, and some show strong Roman influence. At this stage a few northern rulers, who were probably Roman client

kings (the title commonly given to barbarian rulers who had entered into treaties of friendship with Rome), issued trimetallic sets of gold, silver, and bronze coinage.

With the organization of conquered peoples and Roman allies alike into full Roman provinces, native minting rapidly declined. By the beginning of the first century A.D. most Iron Age peoples inside and beyond the boundaries of the empire had stopped issuing coinage altogether or had turned to producing versions of official Roman bronze types. The sole exception was Britain, where in the regions closest to the Continent, Roman client kings issued coinages with Romanized designs and legends, although the other regional coinages retained their traditional types up until the Roman conquest of the island. Under Roman influence, the kingdoms around the Thames estuary seem to have evolved a more complex system of denominations, with numerous base metal types struck in copper or brass as well as in bronze or at different weights; elsewhere in Britain, however, only gold and silver units and divisions were minted.

THE ROLE OF IRON AGE COINAGE

The function of Iron Age coinage is the subject of controversy. The distribution of different types of coins and the kinds of archaeological sites at which they occur provide the best sources of evidence, but the resultant picture is biased toward the location where the coins finally were abandoned, which is not necessarily where they were used. From studying the contexts of discovery, it is clear that most Iron Age gold and silver finds, and many base metal coins as well, were not casual losses but were deposited intentionally by their users, whether for votive reasons or for security. This applies even to settlement finds. Another problem is that in the earlier period only a tiny proportion of coinage was ever deposited—most of it presumably was recycled—further limiting what can be said about the likely uses.

Because coins were predominantly precious metal and thus presumably of high value, the principal reason for issuing Iron Age coinages cannot have been to facilitate exchange, either local or interregional. Like Greek and Roman coinage, Iron Age coinage is far more likely to have been minted to enable its issuers to make various types of pay-

ment as well as providing a convenient store of wealth. While the context in which coinage was adopted suggests that securing or rewarding military services was one of its main functions, the nature of the finds leaves little doubt that gold and silver soon were used in many other forms of social and political transactions between members of the elite, often over long distances, and also as religious offerings to their gods.

Although potin coinages were of base metal, their silvery appearance and widespread distributions imply that they, too, were intended primarily for discharging social and perhaps religious obligations. Most struck bronze coinages, on the other hand, are found close to their places of origin and are associated in particular with the leading centers and settlements. This suggests that they were used in a more limited range of payments than other types of Iron Age coinage and only in places where their face values were guaranteed by the issuers.

See also Coinage of the Early Middle Ages (vol. 2, part 7); Agriculture (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Allen, Derek F. *The Coins of the Ancient Celts*. Edinburgh: Edinburgh University Press, 1980.
- Clogg, P. W., and Colin C. Haselgrove. "The Composition of Iron Age Struck 'Bronze' Coinage in Eastern England." *Oxford Journal of Archaeology* 14, no. 1 (1995): 41–62.
- Creighton, John. *Coins and Power in Late Iron Age Britain*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 2000.
- Fischer, Brigitte. "Les différents monétaires des premières imitations du statère de Philippe II de Macédoine." *Études celtiques* 28 (1991): 137–156.
- Haselgrove, Colin C. "The Incidence of Iron Age Coinage on Archaeological Sites in Belgic Gaul." In *Die Kelten und Rom: Neue numismatische Forschungen*. Edited by J. Metzler and D. Wigg. Studien zu Fundmünzen der Antike. Mainz: Academy of Science and Literature (Akademie der Wissenschaften und der Literature), forthcoming.
- . "The Development of Iron Age Coinage in Belgic Gaul." *Numismatic Chronicle* 159 (1999): 111–168.
- . *Iron Age Coinage in South-East England: The Archaeological Context*. BAR British Series, no. 174. Oxford: British Archaeological Reports, 1987.
- Nash, Daphne. *Coinage in the Celtic World*. London: Seaby, 1987.
- . *Settlement and Coinage in Central Gaul c. 200–50 B.C.* BAR Supplementary Series, no. 39. Oxford: British Archaeological Reports, 1978.
- Roymans, N. "Man, Cattle, and the Supernatural in the Northwest European Plain." In *Settlement and Landscape: Proceedings of a Conference in Århus, Denmark, May 4–7, 1998*. Edited by Charlotte Fabech and Jytte Ringtved, pp. 291–300. Højbjerg, Denmark: Jutland Archaeological Society, 1999.

COLIN HASELGROVE



RITUAL SITES: VIERECKSCHANZEN

Viereckschanzen is a German word (*Viereckschanze* in its singular form) that may be translated as “rectilinear enclosures.” The term refers to enigmatic Late Iron Age “ditch-and-berm” constructions and associated archaeological deposits that are still visible in central and western European landscapes.

CULTURAL AFFILIATION, DATE, AND DISTRIBUTION

The *Viereckschanzen* are associated with pre-Roman Celtic populations living at the end of the Iron Age who produced a material culture known as the Late La Tène culture. Precise dendrochronological (tree-ring dating) measurements of oak timbers preserved in wells at four *Viereckschanzen* in southern Germany (Riedlingen, Fellbach-Schmidlen, Plattling-Pankofen, and Pocking-Hartkirchen) range across a 130-year period, from 181 to 51 B.C. These dates correspond to the La Tène C2 and D1 horizons of the central European Iron Age chronology and indicate that the *Viereckschanzen* were contemporaries of the large, defended settlements known as *oppida*.

Southern Germany, including the states of Bavaria and Baden-Württemberg, is the main focus of the distribution of *Viereckschanzen*, where approximately five hundred enclosures have been identified. Significantly smaller numbers of sites are present in the Czech Republic and Moravia (to the east) and in northern Switzerland (to the south). Rectilinear enclosures, known in the French as *enceinte quadrilatérale* or *enceinte carrées*, also exist in eastern and northern France, but these terms are used

to describe a variety of sites dating to the final millennium B.C. The classic southern German *Viereckschanze* can be differentiated from Belgic sanctuaries of northeastern Gaul, such as Gournay-sur-Aronde, by the *Viereckschanze*'s larger size and lack of structured deposits of weaponry and animal remains.

DESCRIPTION

The classic *Viereckschanze* is identifiable by its standardized form and construction (fig. 1). A typical enclosure was created by excavation of a steep-sided, V-shaped ditch in a square, rectangular, or slightly trapezoidal form. The excavated soil was placed on the inside edge of the ditch, forming a simple earthen berm or rampart. Ditches were maintained through periodic re-excavation. There is some evidence that a wooden palisade or other superstructure was placed along the top of the rampart to increase the height of the walls. Although the ditch was continuous, a single opening was left in the rampart. This opening was usually in the eastern or southern side of the enclosure, but never to the north. Access to the interior required construction of a wooden causeway over the ditch, which led to a small timbered gatehouse erected within the opening of the rampart. Dimensions of the enclosures range from less than 50 meters to more than 100 meters on a side, but most sites are between 80 and 100 meters across and enclose about 1 hectare. At some sites, a rectilinear palisade predated the ditched enclosure. About 5 percent of all enclosures have one or more internal divisions or external annexes, such as at Plattling-Pankofen in Bavaria and Mšecké Žehrovice in Bohemia (Czech Republic).

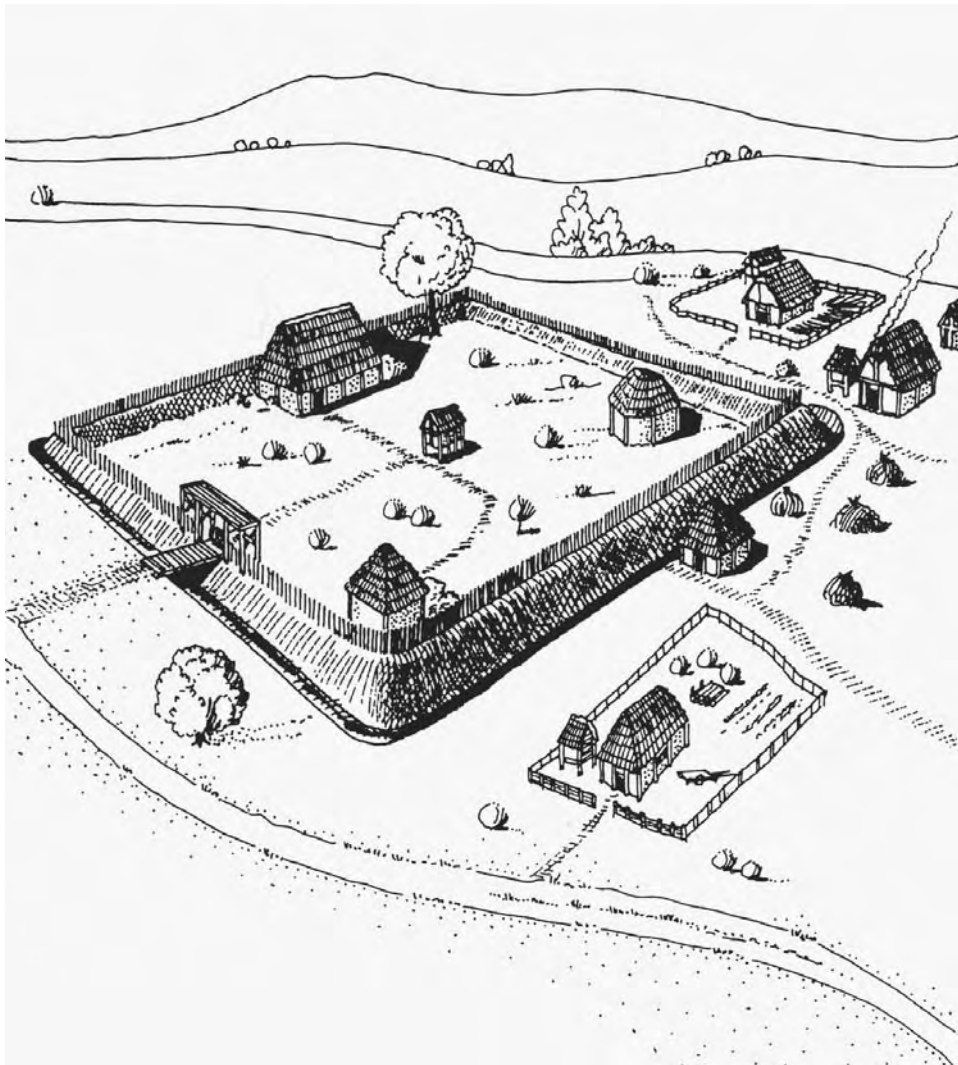


Fig. 1. An artist's interpretation of the *Viereckschanze* at Winden ("Vinida") in southeastern Germany based on aerial photographs and the results of excavations at other enclosures in Germany. The Winden enclosure measures about 80 × 80 meters. The drawing illustrates the characteristic shape and construction of a *Viereckschanze* with an uninterrupted rectilinear ditch, inner walls and gatehouse, and scattered interior buildings aligned with the enclosure's walls. The artist has placed the *Viereckschanze* within a larger settlement following the current interpretation of excavated sites such as Bopfingen-Flochberg. © RUDOLF MÜNCH. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

Viereckschanzen exhibit considerable diversity in the quantity, character, and arrangement of features in their interiors, such as post-built structures, wells, pits, and hearths. Sites such as Holzhausen, Arnstorf-Wiedmais, and Fellbach-Schmidlen had few preserved features within their excavated interiors, perhaps an indication of short-term or intermittent occupation. Other sites, such as Bopfingen-Flochberg and Plattling-Pankofen, contained evidence of more intensive, long-term activities and

greater accumulation of cultural debris. Well shafts (often wood lined) and distinctive buildings with wraparound porches or ambulatories are known from a number of excavated sites, but they are not found in all enclosures.

PHYSICAL SETTING

Viereckschanzen are found in a variety of landscape settings, including stream terraces, broad loess plains, and upland slopes and ridge crests. A signifi-

cant number of sites in upland settings were established near natural springs, suggesting that the provisioning of water was an important consideration in site location. Sites in poorly watered locations often had wells placed in their interiors. Most enclosures that remain intact are sited in forested uplands on terrain unsuited to modern agriculture. Since the early 1980s, intensive aerial reconnaissance and large-scale excavations of cultivated portions of southern Germany have led to the discovery of many *Viereckschanzen* that had been leveled by plowing.

The ditch and wall suggest that defense was an important function of a *Viereckschanze*; however, the topographic placement of many enclosures shows that they were not effective fortifications. In southwestern Germany, approximately 40 percent of known enclosures are located on low-lying or sloped terrain, where their interiors would have been vulnerable to attack by ranged weapons (such as javelin, arrow, and slingshot). *Viereckschanzen* generally do not take advantage of the most strategically valuable terrain, so it is likely that defense was not a primary motive for their construction.

The location of *Viereckschanzen* in the cultural landscape provides clues to the nature of the enclosures. Earlier investigators used the distribution of preserved enclosures in the forests of southern Germany to suggest that the sites were placed in remote locations separate from settlement areas. The distribution of known sites extends into the most fertile agricultural regions. Walter Irlinger has pointed out the close geographic relationship between *Viereckschanzen* and undefended rural settlements. These types of site are either found near to one another or are mutually visible and connected through lines of sight. Some enclosures are even located within large settlement complexes, such as at Bopfingen-Flochberg and Plattling-Pankofen.

Viereckschanzen were also placed in apparent reference to older monuments, such as tumulus cemeteries from the Middle Bronze and Early Iron Ages. The situation at the Hohmichele (Heiligkreutztal-Speckhau) in Baden-Württemberg, one of the largest Early Iron Age burial mounds in western Europe, is the most dramatic example of this correspondence between a *Viereckschanze* and earlier burial monuments.

MATERIAL CULTURE

The material culture of excavated *Viereckschanzen* includes common categories, such as pottery, metalwork (bronze and iron), glass, coins, and animal bone. Excavators often lament the lack of finds from *Viereckschanzen*, but excavations of enclosures within larger settlement complexes have yielded more extensive and diverse artifact assemblages. Few detailed analyses of the material culture or even comprehensive excavation catalogs from *Viereckschanzen* have been published, so it is very difficult to assess in what ways the enclosures may be similar to, or different from, other kinds of Late Iron Age sites.

Artifacts from Mšecké Žehrovice apparently reflect a prosperous rural habitation in Bohemia. In contrast, the composition of published ceramic assemblages from some enclosures in southern Germany is different from other settlements of the period. Metalwork, such as tools, weaponry, and jewelry, that is common at larger settlements is rare in *Viereckschanzen*, although small hoards of iron implements have been found in a few enclosures. The faunal assemblages generally reflect normal proportions of animal species (such as pig and cattle) present at contemporary settlements, but there is an unusually large proportion of horse in the small assemblage from the newly excavated enclosure at Plattling-Pankofen. No *Viereckschanzen* have yielded deposits of animal parts that compare to patterns of ritual consumption and sacrifice at Belgic sanctuaries like Gournay-sur-Aronde. Human remains within *Viereckschanzen* are infrequent, although they are relatively common at the larger settlements, such as *oppida*. Celebrated finds of three-dimensional artwork, such as the stone head from outside the Mšecké Žehrovice enclosure and wooden carvings within the well at Fellbach-Schmidlen, have generated much interest, but these discoveries are unique and provide little insight into the nature of other *Viereckschanzen*.

HISTORY OF INVESTIGATION AND INTERPRETATION

In the late nineteenth century and early twentieth century, German scholars developed a lively but speculative debate about the date and nature of the *Viereckschanzen*. They were originally interpreted as Roman storehouses or forts and eventually as indigenous Celtic stockyards, farms, cultic places, or fortifications constructed during the Roman conquest.

From 1957 to 1963, Klaus Schwarz conducted the first large-scale excavation of a well-preserved *Viereckschanze* at Holzhausen. Although there were few features and artifacts in the excavated portion of the interior, Schwarz uncovered three shafts (7 to 35 meters deep), a large post-built structure with a wraparound porch or ambulatory, and several hearths and burned areas. Schwarz believed that the *Viereckschanze* represented a Celtic sanctuary, or *temenos*, copied from Mediterranean examples and characterized by a cultic triad consisting of a temple with ambulatory (*Umgangstempel*), a ritual shaft, and devotional offerings or sacrifice. Schwarz's enthusiastic arguments for *Viereckschanzen* as Celtic religious sanctuaries colored their interpretation for the next three decades.

From the late 1950s to the 1980s, substantial portions of several *Viereckschanzen* were excavated in southern Germany. Although interpretations of the sites adhered faithfully to Schwarz's cult model, excavations showed that the interiors were characterized by considerable variability. Investigators discovered shafts similar to those at Holzhausen in a few enclosures (that is, Dornstadt-Tomerdingen, Fellbach-Schmidlen, and Arnstorf-Wiedmais) but not in others (such as Ehningen). The discovery of a wooden bucket and well-house timbers in the base of the Fellbach-Schmidlen shaft indicated that it was originally a well. Some sites had numerous buildings and associated features, while others were sparsely built or contained no identifiable structures. Buildings with ambulatories were reported at about half of the sites. All *Viereckschanzen* yielded relatively few artifacts compared to other Late Iron Age sites.

In the early 1990s, large-scale excavations in southern Germany (that is, Bopfingen-Flochberg, Plattling-Pankofen, and Nordheim) yielded evidence of *Viereckschanzen* embedded in larger settlement areas, and investigators began to question the assumed cultic nature of the *Viereckschanze*. Also, the cultic triad originally proposed by Schwarz for Holzhausen could not be consistently identified at an increasing number of excavated *Viereckschanzen*. Reflecting on the excavation of Bopfingen-Flochberg, Günther Wieland suggested that *Viereckschanzen* were focal points for groupings of associated farming communities. These "rural centers" embodied a multiplicity of functions: habitation, storage, sanctuary, refuge, communal

ceremonies, and the protection of water sources, such as wells and springs. The model of *Viereckschanze* as rural center must be tested against fine-scale chronological studies of feature components at complex sites like Bopfingen-Flochberg. Since the traditional "relative" chronology for the Late La Tène horizon based on artifact typologies ranges across several generations (100 to 150 years), it is possible that individual settlement units and the *Viereckschanze* were actually occupied at different times. Evidence that some enclosures were used as habitations also comes from the eastern limit of the distribution of *Viereckschanzen*, where Natalie Venclová and her colleagues interpret the enclosure at Mšecké Žehrovice in Bohemia as an elite rural-industrial residence.

When pottery assemblages from *Viereckschanzen* are compared to those from other settlements of the time, certain differences between the assemblages may indicate that *Viereckschanzen* were used for communal rituals, such as feasting, which could explain their central role in some Late Iron Age settlement complexes. However, Venclová has criticized the suggestion that pottery from *Viereckschanzen* is distinguishable from domestic assemblages.

The *Viereckschanzen* were prominent elements of the Late Iron Age landscape in southern Germany and adjacent regions, and they probably served multiple functions. They were integrated into contemporary settlement systems and were also placed to take advantage of preexisting funerary monuments. Although there is a range of complexity in interior layout and material culture, all *Viereckschanzen* shared a similar conception, which was the act of enclosing space through construction of a ditch and rampart into which access was restricted. This act of enclosing was based on a tightly controlled construction template that had no uniform defensive purpose but instead created a systematically delineated and enduring place in the landscape.

See also **Dating and Chronology** (vol. 1, part 1); **Oppida** (vol. 2, part 6).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Bittel, Kurt, Siegwald Schiek, and Dieter Müller. *Die keltischen Viereckschanzen*. Stuttgart, Germany: Kommissionsverlag K. Theiss, 1990. (A comprehensive catalog

- of all known *Viereckschanzen* in Baden-Württemberg in southwestern Germany. Includes many informative essays about the construction, layout, setting and topography, artifact assemblages, and chronology.)
- Irlinger, Walter. “Viereckschanze und Siedlung—Überlegungen zu einem forschungsgeschichtlichen Problem anhand ausgewählter südbayerischer Fundorte.” In *Festschrift für Otto-Herman Frey zum 65. Geburtstag*. Edited by Claus Dobiak and Dirk Vorlauf, pp. 285–304. Marburg, Germany: Hitzeroth, 1994.
- Murray, Matthew L. “Viereckschanzen and Feasting: Socio-Political Ritual in Iron-Age Central Europe.” *Journal of European Archaeology* 3, no. 2 (1995): 125–151. (The only English-language summary of *Viereckschanzen* research; includes an original analysis of ceramic assemblages that suggests *Viereckschanzen* were feasting places.)
- Rieckhoff-Pauli, Sabine, and Jörg Biel. *Die Kelten in Deutschland*. Stuttgart, Germany: Theiss, 2001. (A summary of the Iron Age archaeological record in Germany. Provides important background context to the *Viereckschanzen*.)
- Schwarz, Klaus. “Die geschichte eines keltischen temenos im nördlichen Alpenvorland.” *Ausgrabungen in Deutschland*. Vol. 1. Mainz, Germany: Römisch-Germanisches Zentralmuseums, 1975. (A summary of excavations at the important site of Holzhausen, which was the basis for the persistent interpretation of *Viereckschanzen* as religious sanctuaries until the early 1990s, an idea disputed by Günther Wieland in his 1999 book.)
- Venclová, Natalie. *Mšecké Žehrovice in Bohemia: Archaeological Background to a Celtic Hero, 3rd–2nd Cent. B.C.* Sceaux, France: Kronos Editions, 1998. (A comprehensive English-language report of excavations conducted at a multiple enclosure in the Czech Republic; presents the author’s belief that the site is an elite rural-industrial household.)
- . “On Enclosures, Pots, and Trees in the Forest.” *Journal of European Archaeology* 5, no. 1 (1997): 131–150. (A critique of Matthew L. Murray’s idea that feasting can be identified in the ceramic assemblages of *Viereckschanzen* in southern Germany. Argues that the assemblages from *Viereckschanzen* cannot be distinguished from settlement remains.)
- Wieland, Günther, ed. *Keltische Viereckschanzen: Einem Rätsel auf der Spur*. Stuttgart, Germany: Theiss, 1999. (Presents the argument that *Viereckschanzen* were central foci within associated rural communities. Provides useful summaries of many of the most important *Viereckschanzen*, including all sites mentioned in this entry.)

MATTHEW L. MURRAY



IRON AGE FEASTING

Communal drinking and feasting, particularly the regulated distribution of alcoholic beverages, were central to establishing and maintaining social relationships in Iron Age Europe and the British Isles. The symbolic concepts and the material culture associated with the distribution of alcohol as a social lubricant characterize intergroup and intragroup competition from the Neolithic until at least the ninth century A.D. on the Continent and into the fifteenth century in Britain and Ireland. There are three primary sources of information on this subject: First there is archaeological evidence in the form of drinking and feasting equipment from burials and, to a lesser extent, from settlements and ritual sites and in the form of iconographic representations of feasts and drinking equipment. Second are Greek and Roman accounts of the drinking habits of the “barbarian” peoples with whom they had increasing contact after the sixth century B.C. And, last, there are the epics, law texts, and other written sources produced by the Celtic- and Germanic-speaking societies in the early Christian period. Scholars have focused their attention on the identification of the alcoholic beverages available, the material culture associated with the production and consumption of those beverages, and their distribution and function in society, including the social conventions and behavioral norms accompanying drinking and feasting. The focus of study includes attitudes toward drinking and alcohol abuse, the ideological significance of the production of alcoholic beverages, the equipment used to dispense and consume it, and the physiological response to alcohol itself.

ALE, MEAD, AND WINE

The alcoholic beverages available to northern and central European peoples before contact with the wine-growing Mediterranean cultures were of two types: honey mead and beer or, more accurately, ale, a fermented barley beverage brewed without hops, an addition to the brewing process that does not appear until historic times. Mead was primarily an elite drink because it was produced from honey taken from the hives of wild bees, the only form of sweetener available to prehistoric European peoples and therefore a valuable commodity. Ale has a very short shelf life in the absence of refrigeration, and without the addition of hops, which acts as a preservative as well as a flavoring agent, this seasonally available beverage was consumed relatively soon after being produced. Wine was a luxury import before the introduction by the Romans of viticulture, the growing of the wine vine, to France and Germany. The different beverages available account in part for the northern European “binge drinking” pattern compared with customs in the Mediterranean, where wine was consumed with meals on a daily basis and moderate consumption patterns tended to be the norm.

CLASSICAL SOURCES

Greek and Roman writers are virtually unanimous in their condemnation of Celtic and Germanic drinking practices. They derogatorily claimed that “barbarians” drank beer by choice; took their wine neat rather than mixed with water, according to the Mediterranean custom; imbibed to excess and engaged in boasting and brawling while under the in-

fluence; and were sufficiently addicted to alcohol to be willing to pay exorbitant prices to obtain it. In the fourth century B.C., Plato's *Laws* included the Celts in a list of "six barbarian, warlike peoples who are given to drunkenness, as opposed to Spartan restraint." And according to the Roman historian Ammianus Marcellinus in *Rerum gestarum libri*, calling a fellow Roman a "sabaianus," or "beer-swiller," was considered an insult. In the first century A.D., Pliny the Elder, another Roman writer, describes the nations of the west as consuming an intoxicant made from grain soaked in water. In *Historia naturalis* he writes that "there are many ways of making it in Gaul and Spain, and under different names, though the principle is the same." The Greek historian Diodorus Siculus, in the first century B.C., describes the Celts in his *Bibliotheca historica* as "exceedingly fond of wine," sating themselves "with the unmixed wine imported by merchants; their desire makes them drink it greedily, and when they become drunk they fall into a stupor or into a maniacal disposition." The historical value of these texts is difficult to determine, partly because so many classical authors borrowed from one another without attribution, particularly in the absence of firsthand knowledge of the peoples they were describing. There is also the obvious propaganda value of denigrating cultures and peoples who were in the process of being conquered or assimilated.

ARCHAEOLOGICAL EVIDENCE

Feasting and the consumption of alcohol are essential components of several European cultural traditions: elite marriage and inauguration rituals, sovereignty and patron-client rituals, death and funerary rituals, and sacrifice and offering rituals. In its sociopolitical manifestation alcohol functioned as a vehicle for maintaining elite prerogatives through feasting and the distribution of liquor to warrior retainers and other clients as an incentive and a reward for service. Sharing food and drink simultaneously communicates messages of membership and exclusion, particularly in Celtic and Germanic societies, where communal feasting served to rank individuals in relation to one another. The structured consumption of alcoholic beverages accompanied most rites of passage, with those of elite groups being most visible in the material culture and the documentary record.

Archaeologically, the elite drinking complex is particularly clearly defined in mortuary contexts. Significantly, when drinking and feasting equipment is not associated with elite mortuary ritual, it appears in the form of votive deposits in rivers, bogs, and springs, an example of the conspicuous destruction of wealth that marks competitive elite signaling behavior in prehistoric Europe. When the energy of a community was invested in elaborate deposition of the dead, however, elite individuals were buried with a standard set of recurring elements that distinguish such graves from the majority of burials.

One of the earliest archaeological examples is a beaker containing mead from a Bronze Age burial at Ashgrove in Fife, Scotland, dated to 1000 B.C. Evidence for fermented ale was found in a vessel of roughly the same date from North Mains in Perthshire, Scotland. Beeswax residue was present in an even earlier ceramic vessel of Neolithic date from Runnymede Bridge in Berkshire, England, suggesting that it originally held mead. One of the latest examples is the Kavanagh Charter Horn, a brass-decorated ivory horn that was the basis of the Kavanagh family's claim to direct descent from the royal house of Leinster as late as the fifteenth century A.D. The geographic range of the sociopolitically significant drinking and feasting complex appears to have Indo-European roots, surviving as a fundamental aspect of cultural identity in northern Europe for much longer than in those areas where it is presumed to have originated.

DRINKING VESSELS

Initially, elite drinking vessels were made of pottery and, more rarely, of exotic materials such as amber or gold, followed by a gradual increase in sheet-metal vessels, with the addition of silver and glass in the Roman and early medieval periods. Occasionally, under ideal preservation conditions, wooden drinking equipment has been documented in archaeological contexts, from finely turned cups and flagons to enormous tuns (casks) or barrels made of wooden staves bound with organic materials or metal. From Neolithic times on, however, there is a pervasive association between drinking and feasting equipment and high rank or status, even though the number and combination of vessel types vary.

The drinking horn is a category of elite symbolism associated with ideologically constituted alco-

hol consumption that appears consistently from the Bronze Age through the early Christian period; in fact, it is the only item of drinking equipment that is associated with almost every period of later European prehistory. Most drinking horns were made of actual animal horn, the largest coming from the now extinct aurochs, but horns of pottery, bronze, iron, glass, and ivory are known. Genuine horn vessels were in use throughout prehistory and into early medieval times, whereas glass horns made a relatively late appearance, mainly in Roman and early Germanic contexts.

Numerous examples of metal-decorated horns are known, particularly from the Iron Age; most are embellished with sheet gold or bronze. In addition to the nine horns from the Hochdorf burial of the sixth century B.C., near Stuttgart, horns were found in the Early La Tène (fourth century B.C.) Kleinaspergle burial, also near Stuttgart, and a group of five Early La Tène burials from the Rhineland: Reinheim, Bescheid, Schwarzenbach, Hoppstädten-Weiersbach, and Weiskirchen A.D. Saar. Bronze Age examples include the gold-decorated horn from Wismar in Mecklenburg-Vorpommern and a silver-mounted drinking horn, together with other drinking equipment, from the Lübsow burial in northern Germany, of the first century A.D. Adorned pottery drinking horns are documented in the Lausitz culture (Late Bronze Age and Early Iron Age) of northeastern Germany and Poland, with roughly sixty known examples. In Britain silver-gilt-decorated drinking horns are known from two Anglo-Saxon burials of the sixth century A.D., at Sutton Hoo and at Taplow Court.

Drinking horns are found in archaeological contexts throughout eastern Europe, including the Ukraine, Lithuania, Poland, Russia, Hungary, Croatia, and other parts of the former Yugoslavia, as well as in northern Germany and Scandinavia. A drinking horn is depicted in an important seventeenth-century painting from Frisia, in which it acts as a symbol of dynastic succession. Clearly, the symbolic “load” of this particular element of the drinking complex was geographically and temporally resilient. Other indigenous vessel categories were cups, beakers, cauldrons, and various kinds of flagons, including the La Tène *Schnabelkanne*, an Etruscan form that was copied as well as imported by Celtic elites.

DRINKING, FEASTING, AND RITUAL

The alcoholic beverages consumed by European elites were imbued with ritual significance, owing to the pyrotechnic (involving fire) production process, the psychoactive (mood-altering) nature of alcohol, and the relative rarity of some of the raw materials required for production, which could (as in the case of honey or grapes) themselves have symbolic significance. Saint Patrick, for example, is said to have refused to touch honey even when he was suffering from severe privation, because of its pagan ritual significance, and in Ireland both beer and mead are found as elements in personal names. Beer has fairly prosaic associations for today, compared, for example, with wine, which appears as a ritually redolent alcoholic beverage in post-Roman, early Christian Europe at least in part as a result of syncretistic associations between wine, blood, and sacrifice.

In secular as well as religious contexts in Merovingian Gaul, for instance, symbolic exchanges of weaponry, precious objects, and food were a critical component of the creation and maintenance of friendship (*amicitia*) and elite power. The link between drinking equipment and mortuary ritual is present in these early Christian societies until at least the sixth century A.D., both in terms of objects placed in the graves and with respect to the funerary feasts conducted at the grave site. The monasteries took over from Celtic and Germanic leaders as producers and distributors of alcoholic beverages, with feasting continuing as the most important form of gift exchange and patronage. The symbolic link between elites and spectacular drinking vessels of precious metals also was retained, and ritualized presentations of such tableware continued in the Carolingian and Merovingian courts. If given on behalf of the poor, they represented appropriate gifts by laymen or clerics to the church.

In the Celtic as well as the Germanic literary tradition (from the *Mabinogion* to *Beowulf*), drinking vessels sometimes were given names, a phenomenon also associated with weapons, especially swords, underscoring the ritual significance of the equipment used in drinking alcoholic beverages. In early Christian contexts, gifts of feasting and, especially, drinking vessels were thought to retain something of the identity of the person who had bestowed them; it is possible that a similar anthropomorphiza-



Fig. 1. Detail of the silver Gundestrup cauldron, showing a woman's face. THE ART ARCHIVE/
NATIONALMUSEET COPENHAGEN DENMARK/DAGLI ORTI. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

tion of drinking equipment existed in prehistoric Europe.

The iconographic evidence for the ritual significance of drinking vessels, particularly those of metal, consists of a number of so-called cult vessels and other representations of drinking equipment, ranging from the ninth and eighth centuries B.C. to at least the first century B.C. These include vessels that formed part of the feasting and drinking equipment of early monasteries and church leaders. Recurring elements in these “cult” vessels are wheeled vehicles, horses, horned beasts, female figures, and drinking vessels. The silver Gundestrup cauldron found in a Danish bog in 1891 represents a continuation of this tradition; it is dated to the late second century B.C. and may be of Thracian origin, despite its obviously Celtic iconographic elements (fig. 1).

INSULAR WRITTEN SOURCES

In the insular literary tradition, drinking vessels represent the obligation of the ruler to be generous and to provide for his or her people, a constant theme

in northern Europe, as it is in most so-called heroic societies. Horns and cauldrons often are “testing” vessels, in the sense that only a true king can drink them dry. The largest of the nine horns in the Hochdorf grave is evocative of such a tradition: at 5.5 liters (ten pints), it had five times the capacity of the remaining eight horns found in the burial. The huge iron horn with its gold decorations hung directly over the “prince’s” couch, suggesting that the ability to drink as well as dispense large quantities of alcohol was one of the defining characteristics of a ruler. In one of the best known of the Irish epic tales, *Táin Bó Cúalnge*, also called the “Cattle Raid of Cooley,” the king spends a third of the day *oc ól chorma*, that is, “drinking *cuirn*,” or beer. This is quite a lot of swigs from the royal drinking horn, calculated on an hourly basis! By drinking from magical horns unharmed, the protagonists in the numerous Irish, Welsh, and Scottish tales that deal with “drinking the feast” of sovereignty confirm their title to the kingship; the horns and other drinking equipment become the symbol of their right to rule.

The symbolic significance of the communal consumption of alcohol as a marker of elite social obligations and prerogatives is a constant element in pre-industrial northern Europe. The composition and meaning of elite drinking equipment appear to have gone through shifts from one structural option to another within the same transformational set, reproducing the basic structure in a novel cultural form. Even though the beverages and vessels may have changed through time—from a stoup of unhopped ale or spiced mead to imported Greek or Roman wine to distilled liquor in a glass cup—the material culture and its ideopolitical significance appear consistently in recognizable form.

See also **Hochdorf** (vol. 1, part 1); **Sutton Hoo** (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Arnold, Bettina. "Power Drinking in Iron Age Europe." *British Archaeology* 57 (February 2001): 12–19.
- . "'Drinking the Feast': Alcohol and the Legitimation of Power in Celtic Europe." *Cambridge Archaeological Journal* 9, no. 1 (1999): 71–93.
- Barclay, Gordon J. "Sites of the Third Millennium B.C. to the First Millennium A.D. at North Mains, Strathallon, Perthshire." *Proceedings of the Society of Antiquaries of Scotland* 113 (1983): 122–281.
- Biel, Jörg. *Der Keltenfürst von Hochdorf: Methoden und Ergebnisse der Landesarchäologie*. Stuttgart, Germany: Konrad Theiss Verlag, 1985.
- Dickson, J. H. "Bronze Age Mead." *Antiquity* 52 (1978): 108–113.
- Dietler, Michael. "Driven by Drink: The Role of Drinking in the Political Economy and the Case of Early Iron Age France." *Journal of Anthropological Archaeology* 9 (1990): 352–406.
- Dietler, Michael, and Brian Hayden, eds. *Feasts: Archaeological and Ethnographic Perspectives on Food, Politics, and Power*. Washington, D.C.: Smithsonian Institution, 2001.
- Effros, Bonnie. *Creating Community with Food and Drink in Merovingian Gaul*. New York: Palgrave/Macmillan, 2002.
- Enright, Michael. *Lady with a Mead Cup: Ritual, Prophecy, and Lordship in the European Warband from La Tène to the Viking Age*. Dublin: Four Courts Press, 1996.
- Flandrin, Jean Louis, and Massimo Montanari, eds. *Food: A Culinary History from Antiquity to the Present*. New York: Columbia University Press, 1999.
- Kaul, Flemming. "The Gundestrup Cauldron Reconsidered." *Acta Archaeologica* 66 (1995): 1–38.
- Kaul, Flemming, and J. Martens. "Southeast European Influences in the Early Iron Age of Southern Scandinavia: Gundestrup and the Cimbri." *Acta Archaeologica* 66 (1995): 111–161.
- Kendall, Calvin B., and Peter S. Wells, eds. *Voyage to the Other World: The Legacy of Sutton Hoo*. Minneapolis: University of Minnesota Press, 1992.
- Nebelsick, Louis Daniel. "Trunk und Transzendenz: Trinkgeschirr im Grab zwischen der frühen Urnenfelder- und späten Hallstattzeit im Karpatenbecken." In *Chronos: Beiträge zur prähistorischen Archäologie zwischen Nord- und Südosteuropa: Festschrift für Bernhard Hänsel*. Edited by C. Becker, M.-L. Dunkelmann, C. Metzner-Nebelsick, H. Peter-Röcher, M. Roeder, and B. Terzan, pp. 373–387. Espelkamp, Germany: Verlag Marie Leidorf, 1997.
- Neumann de Vegvar, Carol. "Drinking Horns in Ireland and Wales: Documentary Sources." In *From the Isles of the North: Early Medieval Art in Ireland and Britain*. Edited by Cormac Bourke, pp. 81–87. Proceedings of the Third International Conference on Insular Art, Ulster Museum, Belfast, April 7–11, 1994. Belfast, Northern Ireland: HMSO, 1995.
- Sherratt, Andrew. *Economy and Society in Prehistoric Europe: Changing Perspectives*. Princeton, N.J.: Princeton University Press, 1997.
- Unwin, Tim. *Wine and the Vine: An Historical Geography of Viticulture and the Wine Trade*. London: Routledge, 1991.

BETTINA ARNOLD



LA TÈNE ART

The European Iron Age, termed the Hallstatt culture after a major Austrian site, began in the latter part of the eighth century B.C. At this early stage the embellishment of items of metal and pottery (and also, though less often preserved, of such organic materials as textiles) was largely geometric, although animals and birds, especially waterbirds, and occasionally humans also were depicted. With respect to humans, there was little attempt at naturalistic representation.

Thus, in the Hallstatt period, abstract decoration, whatever the medium, was just that: decoration and certainly not art. It was not until about the middle of the fifth century B.C., with the blossoming of the second phase of Iron Age culture in Europe (the La Tène culture, named after a site in Switzerland) that a type of decoration developed that, in its beauty, its technical virtuosity, and at times the almost overwhelming power of its personality, may be regarded as art in the truest sense. This rightly has been seen as the first great art of Europe outside the classical world.

ORIGINS

It has been said that La Tène art had no genesis; it came into the world in fully developed form, with a distinctive personality. It is evident, however, that Ionian Greek colonizers in the south of France and Etruscans in northern Italy supplied the models that ignited the creative skills of Celtic craftsmen. The wine trade from these areas acted as the catalyst, introducing, besides the liquid itself—in great quantity—the goblets, flacons, cauldrons, mixing bowls,

and all the appropriate equipment for its proper consumption.

The ruling elite of the Late Hallstatt period was eager to display its wealth and power through its links with the cultured world to the south. Such wealth is evident in the rich graves containing imported Mediterranean produce and is illustrated dramatically by an extraordinary bronze couch, probably of northern Italian manufacture, found in a warrior burial at Hochdorf in southwestern Germany. A mud-brick wall at the Heuneburg hillfort imitates in close detail the defensive construction of the Mediterranean. This was a powerful statement of prestige and wealth.

By 500 B.C. the craftsmen of the Late Hallstatt world had been exposed for more than a century to the best of Mediterranean craftsmanship and art. Nonetheless, for a generation or two this seems scarcely to have impinged on the conservatism of their own artistic repertoire. With the breakup of the old order, however (probably in the second quarter of that century), change and transformation, dramatic in their suddenness, ensued. The old centers of Hallstatt power declined (there is debate as to the reasons for this), and new centers emerged farther north, especially in the Marne region of France and the middle Rhine in Germany. There followed rapid expansion across Europe, sometimes involving entire tribal groupings, into Italy, Greece, and the Balkans and along the Danube as far as Romania. The centuries between 400 B.C. and 200 B.C. have been described as the age of migration, and the Roman commentator, seeing land and plunder as

the motivating force, cannot have been far from the truth. Archaeology and the written sources present a consistent picture of expansion and settlement across the European mainland.

The art of these people thus is clearly rooted in the Mediterranean. Elements of earlier Hallstatt geometric ornament survive, of course, but generally as minor background fillers to the larger ornamental compositions. It also has been suggested that elements of eastern inspiration can be detected. Attention has been focused on nomadic horsemen from the eastern steppes, the Scythians, who developed a lively and imaginative animal art. Hints of this art form, such as dragons on a pair of wine flagons of the fourth century B.C. from Basse-Yutz in the Lorraine region of France (fig. 1), have been put forward, but no objects of definitely Scythian manufacture have been found in Celtic areas. Thus, the phrase “orientalizing” is preferred, suggesting that seemingly eastern elements were transmitted not directly but via the southeastern Hallstatt or the northern Italian zones. Chinese silk fragments from several Late Hallstatt tombs are, at any rate, indications of long-distance trading; in this regard the tooth of a mule—a pack animal—from one such burial is interesting. Astonishing, however, are the hen bones that somehow reached the Heuneburg fortress in southern Germany from as far away as India.

LA TÈNE ART

No consideration of La Tène art can commence without reference to Paul Jacobsthal’s two-volume 1944 work, *Early Celtic Art*. In the years since it was written it has, not surprisingly, been overtaken in many ways by new discoveries and fresh ideas, but it remains a seminal text. His four divisions of early Celtic art are still the starting point for modern discussion.

In essence, the art form of the La Tène Celts is a curvilinear style growing from the palmettes, lotus blossoms, vine scrolls, and myriad other motifs from the classical world but rendered in uniquely original variations of great imagination and at times bewildering complexity. The compass commonly was used in the early stages, but from the beginning there was a flamboyant exuberance that transcended such mechanical aids. The art of the Celts is unique and essentially different from that of the Mediterra-



Fig. 1. Flagons from Basse-Yutze, France. © ERICH LESSING/ART RESOURCE, NY. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

nean. The Celtic craftsmen were embarked on their own artistic journey, with the designs of the Mediterranean acting as the catalyst, but no more. It is small wonder that Jacobsthal was moved to remark, “Celtic art has no genesis.”

The style is one of light and shade, of twisting shapes, and of meanings that change in the eye of the observer. La Tène art puzzles and tantalizes. Curves combine in birdlike forms, and human faces appear embedded in the seemingly abstract scrolls. There are eyes or pseudo-eyes, at times cartoon-like and at other times glowering in latent menace. Nonetheless, in such apparent ambiguity there is doubt. How intentional are the embedded shapes, to what extent are they no more than forms created by the mere accidental juxtaposition of curving lines? The point is illustrated by the engraved ornament on the bronze covering of an iron sword scabbard from Filottrano in northern Italy, probably of the fourth century B.C., which bears a series of writhing S figures along its length. Where each pair of S figures meets, the line of the S ends in the arc

of a circle linked by an elongated loop. Here the willing observer can see faces. Is this a deliberate creation, or is it only the eye of the beholder that creates this image? It is quite impossible to decide.

A small sheet-gold fragment from Bad Dürkheim in Germany is unambiguous. A double face, rendered with extraordinary skill, is evident. Viewed from one side there is a mournful, bearded elder. From the other angle, the old man dissolves, to be replaced by an anxious youth. Seamlessly, the beard of the elder has become the elegant coiffeur of the young man.

Our knowledge of contemporary technology rests, to a considerable extent, on the finished objects. These items, of course, are the culmination of complex processes involving the acquisition of the necessary metals and the presence of an organized workshop with furnace, charcoal, and bellows for raising heat to the required level. There must have been apprentices who carried out the basic tasks, learning from the master the many skills necessary for successful work. Artisans needed crucibles of varying sizes and tongs for holding them when they were filled with molten metal. Designs were produced by hammering, casting, or engraving, and many specialist tools were necessary, including hammers, chisels, implements for cutting and chasing, anvils, drills, measuring devices, spatulas for shaping the wax, and much else. In the earlier phases, coral, probably from the Mediterranean, was used; later, red enamel/glass was substituted. Little of this material survives, but an important deposit at Gussage All Saints in southwestern England has yielded the remains of moulds for the manufacture of perhaps fifty matched sets of chariot and horse fittings.

Doubtless, rituals and incantations were needed to ensure success in the work, but most important were the inherited skills of generations, even centuries, of fine metalworking. This was the preserve of an elite, working under the patronage of a powerful ruling class and creating at their behest objects of the highest technical and artistic quality for display and ostentation, for ceremonial occasions, and some, perhaps, for the field of battle. Ultimately, however, the finest material was destined for the Otherworld, through deposition in graves, in water, or in other abodes of goddesses and gods.

Jacobsthal's "early" style, today more commonly termed the "strict" style, is closest to the Mediter-

anean. Spectacularly rich burials in parts of Germany, France, and Switzerland have yielded the finest objects, one outstanding piece now in the museum of Besançon in France (probably taken from a plundered burial). This Etruscan bronze flagon was transformed by a master artisan through the addition of a web of finely engraved ornament—including palmettes, S scrolls, comma leaves, even the yin-yang symbol—around its sides and on the base. The ornament, delicately traced, washes across the surface in sensuous waves, transmuted the staid container into a Celtic masterpiece. This was an object fit to grace a royal feast.

Abstraction was the essence of this early phase, and the same artistic ethos applied to figural representation. This style was relatively common at this early stage. Safety-pin brooches, the standard Celtic dress fastener (probably deriving its inspiration from northern Italy), combined animals, birds, human faces, and creatures of fantasy, sometimes in combinations of at times bewildering complexity. Belt hooks, often with paired, griffin-like creatures, also belong to this early trend, and these creatures, enclosing smaller human figures, must have had meaning, but a meaning forever denied us. There is much more in metal. In stone, too, there are carved pillars, such as a four-sided example from Pfalzfeld in Germany, combining fleshy S scrolls with a stylized human face on each side. On each there is a so-called leaf crown, resembling a pair of bloated commas. This is a widespread Celtic motif, probably a symbol of divine status. Stones with wholly abstract ornament also are known, especially in northwestern France and, three or four centuries later, Ireland.

The human form, especially the head, is a popular motif, but in true Celtic art the anatomical naturalism of the Mediterranean is never found. There are striking examples. Among the most spectacular is an almost life-size bearded warrior of stone that was found lying beside a rich burial mound of this early phase at the Glauberg in Germany. Although the rendering of form and physique is far from nature, the detailed reproduction of weapons, armor, and a neck ornament is a startlingly faithful copy of known originals. The symbolic leaf crown surmounts this carving, too.

Human representations on a fifth century B.C. sword scabbard from grave 994 at Hallstatt in Aus-

tria also are striking. Engraved along its length are variously occupied figures, including both infantry and cavalry, and, in one instance, a prone figure, speared and crushed by one of the mounted warriors. Here, differing cultural traditions are evident, not only Celtic but also some deriving from the elaborately embossed buckets (*situlae*) of a people known as the Veneti of the northern Adriatic.

As Celtic peoples expanded across Europe in the fourth and third centuries B.C., their art developed further along its individual path. The strict style gave way to what Jacobsthal called the Waldalgesheim style, after an exceptionally rich female burial in Germany, which contained native pieces as well as a bucket from southern Italy. Today there is a tendency to use the more neutral term “vegetal style” to describe the new artistic trends, especially in view of the current emphasis on northern Italy as critical in the genesis of the style.

Although Mediterranean elements persisted in this phase of La Tène ornamentation (which may be seen as beginning around the middle of the fourth century B.C.), the art typically was dominated by continuously moving tendrils of varying types, twisting and turning in restless motion across the surface. This is well illustrated on golden torcs from the Waldalgesheim grave, and there are many other examples across Europe that showcase the widespread popularity of the new style. The writhing shapes on a series of bronze mounts said to be from Commachio in northern Italy are similarly fine examples of this stylistic development south of the Alps.

Iron helmets, sometimes with a decorative gold-foil cover, became widespread at this time, from northern Spain as far east as Romania. These items, clearly derived from the Mediterranean, frequently bear decoration of the highest quality and probably were for parade rather than for the field of battle. One fine example, a gold-plated iron specimen from Amfreville in France, features applied sheet gold decorated with a chased ornament of running, interlinked triskele designs. A spectacular and wholly unique helmet came from a burial of the third century B.C. at Ciumești in Romania. A winged bird with hinged, flapping wings—an eagle or raven—mounts the top. This magnificent object, worn by a warrior on horseback wearing chain mail (for such also came from the burial) must have been

an object of admiration and awe on ceremonial occasions.

From the third century B.C. onward Celtic art gave way to two stylistic variants, Jacobsthal’s plastic and sword styles, terms that remain in current use. The first style is confined largely to personal ornaments, with decoration in high relief. The latter, far more widespread, is found most commonly, though by no means exclusively, on scabbards. The artists of the sword style operated in discrete schools of craftsmanship in different areas of Europe, and individual styles can be recognized. Especially important centers were present in Switzerland and Hungary, but there were others, certainly in parts of France, and there also were insular schools.

There is considerable variety in the art of the scabbards, which is concentrated most frequently at the mouth. Typical of the Hungarian variant are fleshy tendrils that may overlap in their twisting and turning; they occur with lyres of various types and, at times, with tiny spirals. An especially fine example of a scabbard, found at Cernon-sur-Cooles in France but certainly Hungarian in inspiration, features a crested bird’s head, its beak ending in a tightly coiled spiral. In the Swiss variants of the style, birds’ heads are of various types, and there are numerous S figures and tendrils of diverse forms. A distinctive characteristic of the Swiss scabbards is overall stippling, or ring punching (*chagrinage*), which is absent on scabbards of the other groups.

A specific scabbard type, characterized by an opposing pair of so-called dragons or stylized variants of dragons at the mouth, has been a subject of considerable discussion. There are differing versions of this motif—which must have had meaning for the scabbard engravers, as for the owners. Their wide dispersal across the Celtic world, even as far as the River Thames in southeastern England, prompted one commentator to regard this motif as “common Celtic currency.”

There is much that could be said about European Celtic art. The diverse iconography, developing from the mid-fourth century B.C., of the extensive coinage of the period merits a chapter of its own. At any rate, by the first century B.C. the momentum of Celtic expansion had run its course, and the burgeoning of Imperial Rome rapidly subsumed the exuberance and individuality of Celtic art. The curvi-



Fig. 2. Detail of a bronze shield from Witham, northern England. © ERIC LESSING/ART RESOURCE, NY. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

linear art style continued, at times still to a high standard of artistic excellence, but soon decline set in. The rich inhumation burials were a thing of the past, and cremation burials, very often with the simplest of grave goods, increasingly became the norm. On mainland Europe the glory days of La Tène art were numbered.

THE INSULAR WORLD

This spectacular early development of Celtic art on the European mainland is scarcely present on the islands to the west. In Ireland there is certainly nothing dating earlier than about 300 B.C., whereas in Britain there are only occasional items that could be dated earlier. There are, for example, a few scattered trinkets, and it has been claimed that an openwork mount from a hillfort at Danebury in Hampshire, England, dates to the fifth or fourth century B.C. A fragmentary bronze vessel lid (or lids) from Cerrig-y-Drudion in Wales has engraved decora-

tion, predominantly palmettes and lotus blossoms, with a stippled and hatched background resembling early Continental designs. There are, nonetheless, hints of insular manufacture.

The widespread appearance of the new art style in Britain and Ireland once was seen as indicating population intrusion. Apart from accepting the late settlement of southeastern England by Belgic peoples, however, modern scholarship places heavy emphasis on indigenous development. Insular art in the last centuries B.C. thus can be seen as almost entirely a product of local workshops. As on the European mainland, the finest art, notably, is lavished on high-status items, such as weapons, shields, and horse trappings, which clearly reflect considerations of display and ostentation.

There are very few likely imports from this period. One is a gold torc from a bog at Knock, in County Roscommon, Ireland, as is the earlier noted dragon-pair scabbard from the Thames. The latter stands apart from a series of ornate bronze scabbards in Britain and Ireland that have engraved ornament along their lengths, a feature of predominantly insular character. Their decoration, for the most part consisting of wave tendrils, S scrolls, and variants with a bewildering array of minor filling designs (especially in Ireland), is distinct from art on the Continental scabbards. These two insular groups, each characterized by unique and differing forms of chape (the fitting attached at their ends) probably reflect parallel streams of influence from the European mainland. This theory, of course, does not preclude subsequent cross-fertilization between the two islands.

A series of unique bronze shields from Britain (with a single exception, they are shield covers) represents a set of objects of the highest technical craftsmanship and artistic quality. Significantly, almost all are from rivers. Votive deposition thus is a likely scenario—such extraordinary objects probably would not have been used on the field of battle. Exact miniature bronze copies of such shields, including twenty-two from a hoard at Salisbury that was found by illegal metal detecting and then secretly dispersed to collectors worldwide, support the notion that such objects were not primarily for practical use.

The decoration on these shields is as varied as it is magnificent. One of the earliest specimens, a

bronze shield boss of spindle form, was found a century ago in the River Trent at Ratcliffe-on-Saor. It features complex designs of Continental sword style derivation, comprising writhing scrolls that undulate across each other in ceaseless motion. On the boss, strange, contorted, stylized quadrupeds lurk in the undergrowth of an otherwise abstract, curvilinear jungle.

There are other fine shields, including three from the Thames and one from the River Witham (fig. 2), each unique and each a product of masterly craftsmanship. There is also a horned fitting of bronze from Torrs in southwestern Scotland, probably a pony cap, with holes for the animal's ears and relief-hammered ornament. The ornamentation includes a variety of interconnecting elements, such as *peltae*, spirals, leaf designs, and pointed-oval motifs, which bend across the bronze in carefully balanced symmetry. A curved pair of horns, possibly the ends of drinking horns, was added to the cap in the nineteenth century. The ornament on these horns is engraved rather than hammered and has much in common with the engraved ornament of the insular scabbards, but the tiny face peering out from the curvilinear undergrowth is unique in an insular context.

Hammered ornament on a bronze disk decorating the mouth of a large, curving, superbly crafted sheet-bronze horn from Loughnashade, County Armagh, Ireland, also is related stylistically to the designs on the Torrs piece, indicating the close relationships between craft centers on the two islands.

Gold is rare in the insular Iron Age, in striking contrast to the extraordinary proliferation of this metal in the preceding Bronze Age. There are, however, several important gold finds, all, apart from the Knock torc discussed earlier, dating to about the last century B.C. In Ireland the most notable finds are the seven gold artifacts discovered together at Broighter in County Derry. Several neck ornaments, a small bowl, a model gold boat, and a beautifully decorated buffer torc were among the items. The torc is adorned with an elegant series of relief trumpet curves and snail-shell spirals, clearly laid out by means of a compass and set against a background web of overlapping arcs, also compass-drawn.

Contemporary with this group, though of entirely local manufacture, is an extraordinary series of



Fig. 3. Engraved bronze reverse side of a mirror from Desborough, Northamptonshire, England. © ERICH LESSING/ART RESOURCE, NY. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

torcs—of gold, silver, electrum, and bronze—found in a series of pits placed randomly together in a field at Snettisham in Norfolk, England. The torcs were both complete and fragmentary, some obviously scrap and others carefully deposited in a tiered arrangement. Ingots and cakes of gold and silver also were found. In all, about 11 kilograms (24 pounds) of gold and 16 kilograms (35 pounds) of silver have been brought to light. The torcs vary in form, some resembling the one from Broighter; the finest are penannular creations of twisted gold strands, some massive and many with ring ends decorated with raised curvilinear ornament of insular type.

As the art of the Continental Celts declined under Roman domination, insular developments continued, especially in Ireland, where Roman legions never trod. Around the time of the birth of Christ, the compass, so important in Early La Tène artistic composition, once more became a dominant element in insular art, which grew increasingly distant from its Continental origins. In Britain at this time a distinctive series of elaborately decorated bronze mirrors occurs, characterized by varied and

at times complex combinations of compass-drawn curves, most often filled with incised basketry. Not all are of the highest technical quality, but the best of them, such as that from Desborough in Northamptonshire (fig. 3), are products of exceptional craftsmanship. There are other insular innovations—on both islands—such as bronze horse bits, often with elaborate cast decoration; finely made spun-bronze vessels; and the late, specifically British developments in scabbard decoration. An important artistic creation of this period is a magnificent horned helmet of bronze, also from the Thames, which has enameled ornament and raised curvilinear designs reminiscent of those on some of the Snettisham torcs.

The Roman occupation of much of Britain during the middle of the first century A.D. precipitated a decline in Celtic artistic traditions. In Ireland, however, these traditions continued, eventually receiving new life and vigor through the work of the monastic craftsmen who devoted much of their skill to the glory of God. Metalworking reached new heights of technical and artistic perfection, and the

same outstanding skills are displayed in the great illuminated manuscripts and the finely carved high crosses. New motifs were introduced, especially interlacing decoration and animals of many forms, entirely alien to the original Celtic artificer. There were many new mediums, such as millefiori glass and polychrome enamel. By the eighth century Irish craftsmanship had risen to astonishing heights of technical skill and artistic sophistication never again to be achieved.

See also Hochdorf (*vol. 1, part 1*); **Irish Bronze Age Goldwork** (*vol. 2, part 5*); **Celts** (*vol. 2, part 6*); **Hallstatt** (*vol. 2, part 6*); **La Tène** (*vol. 2, part 6*); **The Heuneburg** (*vol. 2, part 6*).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Megaw, M. Ruth, and J. V. S. Megaw. *Celtic Art: From Its Beginnings to the Book of Kells*. Rev. ed. New York: Thames and Hudson, 2001.
- Moscato, Sabatino, et al., eds. *The Celts*. New York: Rizzoli, 1991.
- Raftery, Barry, ed. (with Paul-Marie Durval et al.) *Celtic Art*. Paris: UNESCO, Flammarion, 1990.

BARRY RAFTERY



IRON AGE SOCIAL ORGANIZATION

The Iron Age in temperate Europe, inland from the Mediterranean basin, lasted for some eight hundred years. Its start is marked by the local adoption of iron to manufacture edge tools, such as axes and swords; there may have been contemporary social changes related to the near collapse of exchange patterns provoked by the declining importance of tin and copper. It ended over much of the Continent with the expansion of the late Roman Republic and, subsequently, the early Roman Empire during the last two centuries B.C. and the first century A.D. In more northerly areas, for instance, Ireland, the influence of Rome was very muted, if never entirely absent. There, many characteristics of the Iron Age either continued into or reasserted themselves during the first millennium A.D. In a real sense, in such areas the Iron Age effectively lasted for several more centuries. Elsewhere, as in southern Germany, the last century B.C. is marked by the arrival of another new population, the Germans, whose appearance broadly coincided with marked changes in the Iron Age archaeological record.

For the period between c. 800 B.C. and the beginning of A.D. 1, the evidence provided by archaeology is complemented by information drawn from other sources. Of very great importance are surviving texts from the classical world. The earliest of them contain scant, almost tantalizing information about conditions in the middle of the first millennium B.C.; written sources thereafter became more numerous, especially from the first century B.C. These texts outline some of the customs and conduct of the peoples with whom the Greek

and Latin authors, or their sources, came into contact. Given that they represent more or less contemporary accounts of the Iron Age communities, these accounts have great value, but they cannot be considered dispassionate, unbiased perspectives. On the one hand, they are outsiders' views—descriptions of what anthropologists sometimes term “the Other”—on occasion composed by authors with a vested interest in political affairs within the societies they are describing. The accounts thus display a tendency to focus on characteristics their original readership would have found puzzling, if not unacceptable, thus justifying Roman intervention.

Julius Caesar's description of his conquest of Gaul (corresponding in extent more or less to present-day francophone Europe) is one of the fullest such accounts. Some historians have considered his *De bello Gallico* the unembellished narrative of a straightforward military man, recounting his actual experiences; others argue that it is a consciously literary work that in some respects is simply propaganda. The dominant view sits between these two extremes but would not envisage Caesar's text as “value free.” Furthermore, these texts were composed according to the intellectual conventions of their day. Unacknowledged copying of earlier authors was an acceptable practice, allowing for the possibility that descriptions of native societies may have been out of date by the time they were repeated. Far from being attempts at objective ethnography or history, texts were framed within contemporary philosophical perspectives.

A noteworthy example is *Agricola*, the history of Agricola, the governor of Britain, written by his son-in-law, the Roman historian Tacitus. Tacitus recounts the lead-in to his father-in-law's crushing defeat of the Caledonii in Scotland, using simply the auxiliary forces at his command, in the late first century A.D. The speech Tacitus puts into the mouth of the native war leader is not a dispatch from the battlefield but rather an Italian intellectual author's view of what the native leader Calgacus ought to have said: in effect the perspective of an imagined "noble savage." By contrast, the Roman historian Livy's account in *The History of Rome* of the arrival of the Celts in Italy is prefaced by the story of a king in central France, Ambigatus, who instructs his nephew to lead the people southward. Is this an indication of fosterage—the often forcible taking in of the children of people of dependent status—among the elite, a practice later recorded in early historic Ireland? Or is it the pattern of succession? One cannot be sure, for nothing more is known of Ambigatus's family circumstances. As the key individuals in this story are a king and his two nephews (the other being told to lead a portion of the tribe into central Europe) rather than members of a nuclear family, speculations on the relationship between the two generations are possible.

Although literacy made a late appearance in the Iron Age of temperate Europe (which is known, for example, from the evidence of graffiti scratched on ceramics and legends on coins), no contemporary documents from the late pre-Roman barbarian societies of temperate Europe north of the Alps or Pyrenees survive. The archaeological record thus is protohistoric in the sense that it is "text aided" uniquely through external, classical accounts. Because the Roman takeover of temperate Europe was not complete, it has been suggested that more modern literature, eventually written down in early Christian Ireland in the late first millennium A.D., includes elements transmitted orally from much earlier times, in effect providing a window on the Iron Age. Later commentators note, however, that detailed study indicates that this view gives rise to problems, as conscious changes typically are introduced during the transmission process. For this reason, scholars are increasingly cautious about using the Irish evidence to illuminate circumstances—including social conditions—within pre-Roman Iron Age continental Europe and Britain.

Another strand of evidence consists of language, as contained essentially in place, tribal, personal, and similar names as well as in brief inscriptions. This evidence is recorded in Greek or Latin scripts or in local variants of these scripts, as, for example, in the Iberian area of Mediterranean Spain. Many of these western and central European sources indicate languages conventionally ascribed to the Celtic family, beginning with Lepontic in northern Italy and stretching west to Celtiberian in Spain. In the later centuries B.C., such records, once very rare, became more common.

PEOPLES: CELTS AND OTHERS

It has been conventional practice to label the best-fit evidence of material culture with the same name as the language group and, where it is known, the classical term for the people in that area. In this way, the material culture of the Iron Age in west-central Europe attributable to the end of the first Iron Age (or Hallstatt period) and its second Iron Age successor (La Tène culture, from the middle of the fifth century B.C.) have been termed "Celtic." The art of that period, much of it produced for elite patrons and some of it magico-religious in character, is labeled "early Celtic art."

Another, more questionable practice has been to use the classical, or the later Irish, historical sources or the two in combination to provide descriptions of Celtic society as a complement to the evidence furnished by field archaeology. Such social generalizations are idealized: they disregard the real differences through time and from region to region visible in the archaeological record during the several centuries of the Iron Age, and thus they carry inherent dangers. The correlation of a set of material culture with an assumed linguistic affiliation—and beyond that automatically to an ethnic label—often is insecure. To say this is not, however, to deny that there were groups within temperate Europe that their neighbors called Celts or Gauls as well as Iberians, Scythians, and Germans. It is equally unreliable to assume that groups so named also automatically subscribed to a particular ethnically defined form of society, unchanging through the several centuries of the Iron Age.

CHANGES THROUGH TIME AND THEIR SIGNIFICANCE

By the end of the Iron Age (La Tène D, from the later second century B.C.), the various sources combine to indicate the presence of socially and politically elaborate societies, witnessed, in particular, by the appearance of settlement sites of a scale and complexity not previously encountered. Termed *oppida*, these sites have a strong claim to having been the first indigenous temperate European towns. It would be incorrect, however, to envisage the Iron Age as a straightforward evolutionary sequence from simpler toward increasingly complex societies, numbers of which had crossed or were close to the threshold for definition as a state by the time of the Roman conquest. Most later models of Iron Age evolution suggest that periods and regions marked by increasing complexity were offset by local or regional collapses or reversions. In other areas—parts of northern Britain are a case in point—there is distinctly less evidence for social hierarchies in the available evidence for the later first millennium B.C. than can be gleaned for other areas, such as central France or southwestern Germany. Generally, the rhythm and periodicity of apparent changes and their general scale are matters of debate, as are the mechanisms—internal to temperate European societies or external to them—that lay behind these oscillations.

In most explanations, the nature and scale of contacts between the heartland of the Continent and the civilizations colonizing the Mediterranean (and Black Sea) littorals offer a key driving force underpinning assumed social, political, and economic changes during the Iron Age. Archaeological finds suggest economic contacts, which then can be used to account for social and political developments perceived in that record or in contemporary historical sources. Seaborne colonization by the Greeks, contemporary with the establishment of their leading western colony at Massalia (on the site of present-day Marseilles in southern France) in 600 B.C., is a case in point. Their equivalent establishment of settlements along the northern fringe of the Black Sea and in the Crimea is another example. Also important is Phoenician and subsequent Carthaginian activity, especially in Iberia, which resulted not only in contact with native societies in that area but also in the blocking of Greek access to Iberian metal ores from Galicia and elsewhere. In due course, Roman

conflict with the Carthaginians drew them into military activity in Iberia in late Republican times and set in train their northward expansion from the Mediterranean basin. Another important current was Etruscan colonization of the Po Valley of northern Italy and the head of the Adriatic Sea, which brought them to the ends of the Alpine passes leading from the Continental heartland.

Commodities manufactured in the Mediterranean civilizations appear in autochthonous contexts, including richly accompanied burials that are redolent of high status, for example, in southwestern Germany. It seems excessive, however, to attribute exclusively to these southern contacts the motor for social change in the Continental heartland. Such a perspective implicitly assumes that the constitution of a society necessarily realigns itself on that of an expansive neighbor perceived to be culturally more developed—thus that Hellenization (emulation of Greek traits), like Romanization in subsequent centuries, effectively would be irresistible. The anthropological literature contains many cases that show that in such circumstances the adoption of traits and influences can be highly selective, if they are not entirely rejected.

A refinement of this perspective envisages later prehistoric temperate Europe as a periphery strongly influenced by, if not dependent on, a core area in the Mediterranean civilizations. This application of world systems theory effectively transfers back into the ancient world characteristic patterns that have been recognized in modern times since the great period of European expansion across the world. Given the very different socioeconomic conditions of ancient times, let alone the much more rudimentary nature of transport networks, it is a moot point whether or not such a perspective is realistic for the middle of the first millennium B.C. In any case, a problem of the world systems approach is that it reduces elite decision makers on the assumed periphery to the status of bit actors, puppets on strings pulled from the south, and thus too readily eliminates them as knowing agents in establishing their own destinies.

If this type of approach has any validity, it is most likely to be for the last two centuries B.C., when the archaeological evidence, in particular, indicates that for some regions the scale and frequency of southern contacts were much greater than they

were previously. In sum, the change is from exchange dominated by the infrequent arrival of individual high-status items manufactured in the cities of Etruria or in the Greek colonies (a pattern characteristic of the centuries in the middle of the first millennium B.C.) to the arrival of mass-produced goods of distinctly less-elevated status during the century or so before Caesar's campaigns in the 50s B.C.

WINE, FEASTING, AND HORSES AS INDICATORS OF SOCIAL CHANGE

This change is best seen in the accoutrements of alcohol consumption, in particular, the drinking of wine. For much of the temperate European Iron Age (things began to change from about the second century B.C.), wine was essentially an Italian product and the strongest—and probably the most readily storable—drink available. In Late Hallstatt and Early La Tène contexts, in both high-status burials and settlements, fine vessels associated with the consumption of wine occur in small numbers. Direct evidence of the wine itself, in the form of transport amphorae, is rare in areas away from the immediate hinterland of the Mediterranean. By contrast, from the second century B.C. (in La Tène C and D periods), the dominant finds in the archaeological record from some sites and areas of temperate Europe are Italic (made in Italy but not by Italians) wine amphorae. The quantities of discarded examples (each would have held some 25 liters of wine) suggest a level of commercial interaction not previously seen, as well as the much wider role of this exotic commodity in lubricating social and political relationships in inland Europe.

In some cases, the numbers of amphorae, the manner of their discarding, or their association with prolific quantities of animal bones strongly suggest large-scale feasting, a significant activity in cementing social and political obligations in the Iron Age world. There clearly was a major change in the quantities of wine that were accessible and in the social ways this commodity was employed. As ever, the nuances of such differences need to be recognized: both archaeological finds and historical accounts make it plain that southern merchants bringing wine freely traded in certain regions (e.g., marginal to present-day Belgium) while other regions received modest to plentiful quantities.

Other factors profoundly influenced the nature of Iron Age social organization on a wider scale.

Since the Neolithic, the products of agricultural systems had underpinned all communities. In the Iron Age, there is evidence from numerous regions of considerable agricultural diversification as well as the storage of agricultural surpluses, using several different technologies and to an extent not previously encountered in temperate Europe. Such evidence underscores the likelihood of rising populations and of larger aggregations of people resident on some settlement sites than had previously been the case, again with implications concerning the form and operation of society.

In the case of livestock, particular attention needs to be paid to the horse. Westward of the European steppes, evidence for horses is much more widespread in the Iron Age record than in earlier times. One piece of evidence is horse equipment, notably a wide range of horse bits, suggesting subtle control over the ridden horse. There are also bones of the animals themselves and iconographic representations of horses, for example, on high-status decorated metalwork, including appliqué panels and small axes, from certain graves in the cemetery at Hallstatt (in the Salzkammergut, Austria). Both four- and two-wheeled vehicles also are present, as inclusions in elite graves and in more prosaic settings. The ridden horse, horse-drawn chariots and carts, and subsequently, the development of cavalry provided opportunities for a rapidity of overland movement not previously available, and they facilitated the ready exercise of direct political and social control over more extensive territories. Folk migration was an accessible method for social and political change and one to which the classical sources testify, even if some archaeologists believe it was rarely undertaken. Equally, evidence from some areas indicates the emergence of hunting from horseback as an elite sport, unconnected with satisfying subsistence needs.

THE FORM OF SOCIETY—ELITES

There are plentiful indications that European Iron Age societies were hierarchical, although the depth of elaboration of that hierarchy seems to have varied across time and space. For much of the period, the social and political elite groups conformed to what would be anticipated in complex chiefdoms, with succession to important office being determined by real or imagined kinship links. Archaeological evi-

dence suggests that such societies used several methods, including redistribution and gift exchange, to formulate and maintain wider linkages. By the La Tène D period (from the later second century B.C.), in some areas substantial changes had occurred. For certain of the Continental tribal areas (usually known by their Latin descriptor as *civitates*), political command, and by extension, social leadership had shifted from the king and his retinue to an elected magistracy. (The chief of this magistracy was termed a *vergobretus*, a Celtic loanword that appears in Caesar's text.) The magistracy was selected annually from among the oligarchical group that constituted the elite. Place of residence was beginning to oust kinship links, assumed or real, in defining group membership. Caesar's text strongly suggests that both these systems continued during this period, for his account includes plenty of individuals accorded the Latin title *rex*, perhaps a fair reflection of the fluidity of Iron Age political and social relations at this time in the face of powerful external military aggression.

Magistrates appear to have been solely male, whereas women could emerge as the leaders in more conventionally organized societies, as was certainly the case in southern Britain during the first century A.D. That females could hold high rank also is suggested in numerous contexts by the funerary record, where variations in the quality and number of grave goods equally points to subtle gradings within sociopolitical ranks, perhaps akin to what literary texts indicate more particularly for Ireland in the first millennium A.D.

Elite female graves are recognizable from Hallstatt C onward (the eighth century B.C.); they generally are marked by ranges of grave goods in which jewelry (and sometimes mirrors) form a significant component, with weaponry rare or absent. Normally, wealthy female graves are attributed to the sociopolitical elite, as in the rich female grave from Reinheim in Germany. In other instances, it is possible that the wealth in the grave is indicative of a spiritual rather than a political leader. Christopher Knüsel has suggested, for example, that the grave at Vix in Burgundy, dating to the fifth century B.C. (Hallstatt D), held the slightly deformed body of a middle-aged woman whose local importance may have been religious. She is accompanied by a dismantled wagon, a high-quality gold necklet or torc (a rigid

penannular collar or neck ring), and a spectacular imported bronze wine krater, or large vase—the biggest surviving vase from the Greek world. In other instances, grave goods suggest that brides may have been exchanged over considerable distances in continental Europe. Female graves from northeastern France (dating to the third century B.C.) with paired anklets may well contain girls originally from the heartland of central Europe, where this particular fashion was widespread.

The presence of grave goods in some of the relatively rare children's graves suggests that status in the societies to which they belonged was ascribed rather than attained. In some instances, children are accompanied by smaller examples of adult grave goods (e.g., bracelets), and in others their positions within cemeteries or under barrows intimate their significance within their community. As in many ancient societies, infants and young children are underrepresented in the funerary record, but this may be a reflection either of their status or of the use of burial practices less susceptible to archaeological detection. More generally, both inhumation and cremation are encountered, sometimes in the same cemetery (as at Hallstatt), and the change from one to the other need not have any straightforward social significance.

The literary sources provide details of the significance of religious and educational specialists within society, notably the druids. They make it clear, too, that the activities of such elites could extend beyond the polities in which they were based. From numerous areas, archaeological evidence makes plain the fact that many activities had a ritual dimension (including such prosaic acts as the discarding of rubbish in disused underground storage pits within settlements). On some sites—notably, the so-called Picardy sanctuaries of northeastern France—ritualized acts seem to have been key, to judge from the clear patterns in the archaeological finds recovered from them. Deliberately damaged equipment and weaponry, animal bones, and human remains showing a range of postmortem manipulations bear witness to practices involving such religious practitioners that can be gleaned only indirectly. The most famous such locale is a small enclosure within a settlement at Gournay-sur-Aronde, in the valley of a tributary of the River Oise, to the north of Paris.

OTHER GROUPS: WARRIORS, SPECIALISTS, ARTISANS, AND FARMERS

Among other groups prominent within society that can be recognized from the written sources and from the archaeological record are specialists of varying degrees of skill. These people include musicians and poets, craftspeople, and warriors. The accompaniments in male graves indicate that warriors constituted a significant proportion of male adults in some areas. The grave goods that typically identify them are swords (of iron, sometimes encased in elaborate decorated bronze sheaths) and spearheads. Defensive equipment, which is rarer, is dominated by metal shield fittings (usually for shields made of organic materials that have rotted away) and helmets, the latter including ornate examples displaying the status of the wearer rather than simple protective military gear.

It is noteworthy that some of the most elaborate examples of such equipment (for men and sometimes their horses) come from the apparent margins of the Celtic domain, if not beyond. Such places include southern Italy, western France, Romania, and northern Britain, perhaps suggesting that the insignia were of special importance in these peripheral settings. Military protection appears to have been a significant element in the glue that held Celtic societies together, if indications from both earlier Continental written sources and later insular ones are considered. There are hints in the texts of the importance of clientship—the formalization of patron-client relations through the development of mutual obligations. The provision of military protection seems to have been a key component of such arrangements.

There also are signs of profound changes in the nature of the social and political relationships that lay behind the establishment of military forces during the last half-millennium B.C. For the Early Iron Age, it is easy to envisage military service as arising through real or assumed kinship links, clientship obligations, indebtedness, and similar causes and as being both temporary and intermittent in character. By the end of this period, however, there were significant changes. In some instances, armies still had to be called together at moments of crisis by holding a hosting (assembling an irregular army from diverse groups with the express purpose of battle), as

Caesar recounts. In other cases, standing armies were associated with particular *civitates* (or perhaps their constituent parts, the *pagi*), which could be paid in coin, a practice initially learned in mercenary service to the Hellenistic kings around the Aegean. Unsurprisingly, military leadership seems to have been a high-status responsibility and was maintained in Gaul, for example, after its defeat by Rome. Cavalry units, in particular, kept their native commanders and simply transferred their allegiance to their new masters as auxiliary troops.

Specialists also seem to have had considerable, but perhaps variable, status in society. Some are recognizable in death from the equipment placed in their graves, as, for example, the medical doctor of the La Tène C period identified from his instruments at Obermenzing near Munich in Bavaria, Germany. In other cases, tools have been found in workshops or elsewhere on settlement sites. The Late Iron Age toolkit found at Celles in central France is appropriate to marquetry or similar decorative work on furniture, and some of the finest items of early Celtic art, such as the helmet from Agris in western France and a few of the vehicles, imply collaborations among several artisans skilled in different materials or in different trades.

Localized distributions of certain artifacts, such as certain varieties of Late Hallstatt brooches, suggest that they may have been made directly for elite patrons on particular sites. Other types of objects (most particularly in La Tène D) are much more standardized over wide areas of the Continent and may betoken the work of independent craft workers. At some sites, artisans engaged in the same craft are clustered in limited sectors, as in the case of enamel workers found inside the main gate at the La Tène D *oppidum* of Mont Beuvray in Le Morvan, France. Such groupings may be considered socially significant. Overall, however, skilled specialists as well as the general run of artisans must have constituted the dependent classes of later Iron Age societies, as described by Caesar: they probably would have been substantially outnumbered by agricultural laborers, peasants, and small farmers.

SLAVERY

Was slavery a component of Iron Age societies in temperate Europe? For most areas and periods, the evidence is either ambiguous or nonexistent, but

there are exceptions. Toward the end of the Iron Age, in western continental Europe and southern Britain, chains and similar accoutrements of slavery become more common in the record and probably are indicative of long-distance movements of slave labor. It often is suggested that captives taken in war were traded down the line across the Continent to the slave-based societies of the Mediterranean even in earlier times. Such captives were exchanged for the luxury products recovered from, for example, rich Hallstatt graves, although the earlier classical sources suggest that servile labor was obtained nearer to hand.

Less certain is the extent to which later Iron Age societies in temperate Europe were themselves slave owning as opposed to exporters of prisoners. Analogy with later Ireland might indicate that slaveholding already was established, and it also is possible that the development of large-scale extractive industries might have relied to some extent on slave labor. Shoe sizes have been pointed to as evidence that children were put to work extracting rock salt at Dürrnberg in Austria, and the open-air gold mines of Limousin in France might have been worked by slave laborers. Overall, we can conclude that in the Iron Age, as in later times, social structures and rates of social change in barbarian Europe probably varied and did not conform closely to a pan-Continental norm.

See also **Celts** (vol. 2, part 6); **Hallstatt** (vol. 2, part 6); **La Tène** (vol. 2, part 6); **Germans** (vol. 2, part 6); **Oppida** (vol. 2, part 6); **Iron Age Feasting** (vol. 2, part 6); **La Tène Art** (vol. 2, part 6); **Greek Colonies in the West** (vol. 2, part 6); **Etruscan Italy** (vol. 2, part 6).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Arnold, Bettina, and D. Blair Gibson, eds. *Celtic Chieftdom, Celtic State: The Evolution of Complex Social Systems in Prehistoric Europe*. New Directions in Archaeology. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1995.
- Audouze, Françoise, and Olivier Buchsenschtütz. *Towns, Villages, and Countryside of Celtic Europe: From the Beginning of the Second Millennium to the End of the First Century B.C.* Translated by Henry Cleere. Bloomington, Ind.: Batsford, 1991.
- Bintliff, John. "Iron Age Europe in the Context of Social Evolution from the Bronze Age through to Historic Times." In *European Social Evolution: Archaeological Perspectives*. Edited by John Bintliff, pp. 157–225. Bradford, U.K.: Bradford University, 1984.
- Collis, John R. *The European Iron Age*. London: Routledge, 1995.
- Cunliffe, Barry W. *The Ancient Celts*. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1997.
- . *Greeks, Romans, and Barbarians: Spheres of Interaction*. London: Batsford, 1988.
- Dietler, Michael. "Feasts and Commensal Politics in the Political Economy: Food, Power, and Status in Prehistoric Europe." In *Food and the Status Quest: An Interdisciplinary Perspective*. Edited by Pauline Wilson Wiessner and Wulf Schiefenhövel, pp. 87–125. Oxford: Bergahn Books, 1996.
- Fitzpatrick, Andrew. "'Celtic' Iron Age Europe: The Theoretical Basis." In *Cultural Identity and Archaeology: The Construction of European Communities*. Edited by Paul Graves-Brown, Siân Jones, and Clive Gamble, pp. 238–255. London: Routledge, 1996.
- Gibson, D. Blair, and Michael N. Geselowitz, eds. *Tribe and Polity in Late Prehistoric Europe: Demography, Production, and Exchange in the Evolution of Complex Social Systems*. New York: Plenum, 1988. (Includes Bettina Arnold's essay on slavery.)
- Green, Miranda J. *Exploring the World of the Druids*. London: Thames and Hudson, 1997.
- Green, Miranda J., ed. *The Celtic World*. London: Routledge, 1995.
- James, Simon. *Exploring the World of the Celts*. London: Thames and Hudson, 1993.
- Knüsel, Christopher. "More Circe Than Cassandra: The Princess of Vix in Ritualised Social Context." *European Journal of Archaeology* 5, no. 3 (2002): 275–308. (The status of the most important Hallstatt princess re-evaluated.)
- Kristiansen, Kristian. *Europe before History*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1998.
- Kruta, Venceslas. *Les Celtes: Histoire et dictionnaire des origines à la romanisation et au christianisme*. Paris: Robert Laffont, 2000. (Long introductory essay and useful gazetteer.)
- Megaw, M. Ruth, and J. Vincent S. Megaw. *Celtic Art: From Its Beginnings to the Book of Kells*. Rev. ed. New York: Thames and Hudson, 2001.
- Moscato, Sabatino, ed. *The Celts*. New York: Rizzoli, 1999.
- Sims-Williams, Patrick. "Genetics, Linguistics, and Prehistory: Thinking Big and Thinking Straight." *Antiquity* 72 (1998): 505–527.
- Wells, Peter S. *Beyond Celts, Germans, and Scythians: Archaeology and Identity in Iron Age Europe*. London: Duckworth Academic, 2001.

IAN RALSTON



GREEK COLONIES IN THE WEST

FOLLOWED BY FEATURE ESSAY ON:

Vix 205

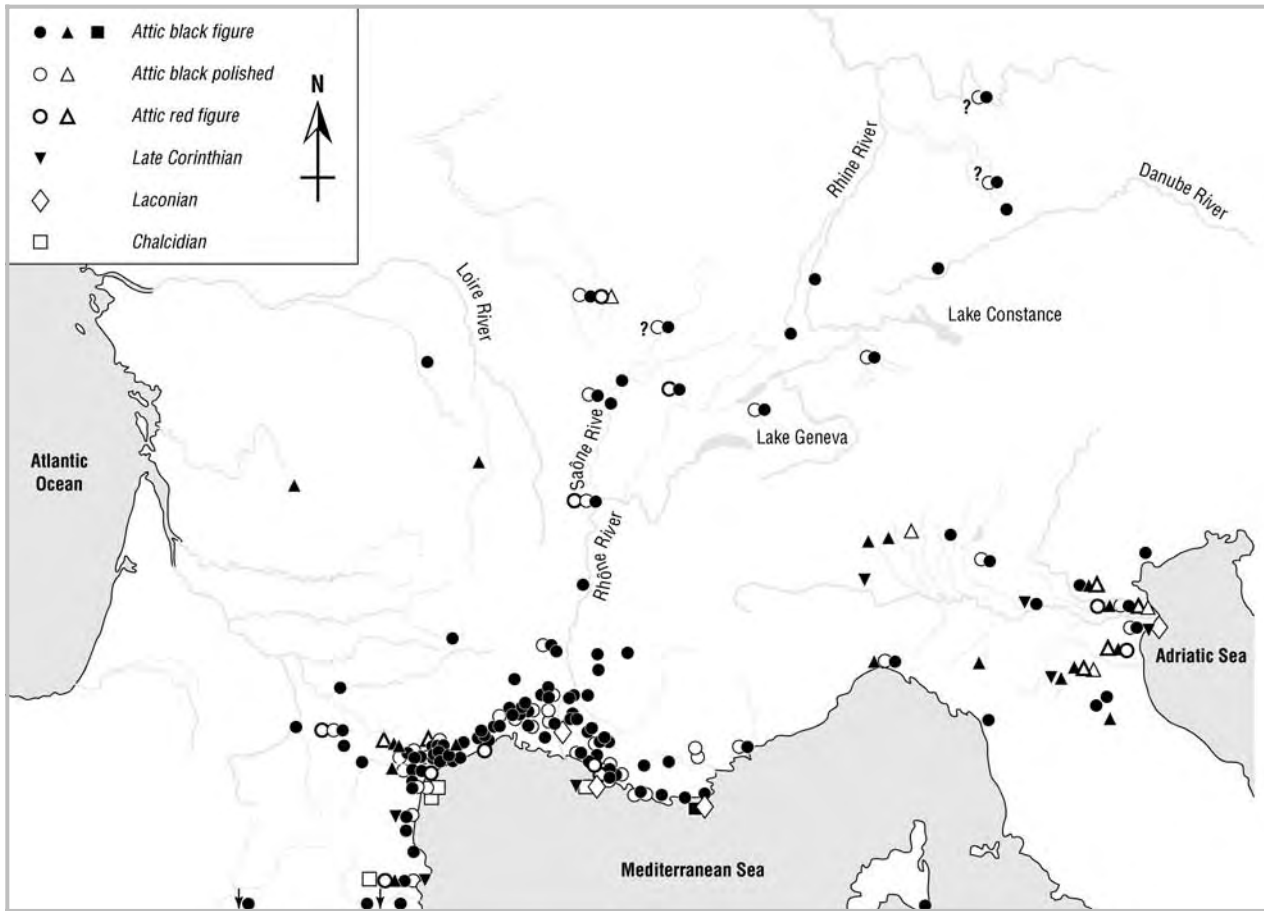
Between 750 and 550 B.C. a number of Greek cities, both in modern Greece and on the west coast of modern Turkey, established daughter cities along the shores of the Mediterranean, Adriatic, and Black Seas. This process has become known as “Greek colonization.” In contrast to colonizing actions of modern nation-states, however, this expansion of individual Greek city-states was not centrally directed, and there was no single purpose. Among the reasons for the establishment of particular towns were overpopulation in the mother cities, need for larger supplies of grain than were available in Greece, and improvement of trade relations with different peoples on and beyond the shores of the Mediterranean Sea. Both Greek historical sources and archaeological investigation provide information about the founding and growth of the new towns and about relations between them and other peoples.

MASSALIA

The most important Greek town established in the western Mediterranean was Massalia, on the site of modern-day Marseille, France’s second-largest city. Archaeological evidence from the lands around the mouth of the Rhône River show that, during the second half of the seventh century B.C., merchants from abroad were trading with the indigenous peo-

ples. Pottery, ceramic amphorae that had carried wine, and bronze vessels from Greek and Etruscan workshops appear on settlements and in burials after about 630 B.C., indicating that this region was being opened to seaborne trade by the Mediterranean urban civilizations. It is not known precisely who these early merchants were—probably the peoples called Etruscans and Greeks. They traveled in relatively small ships along the Mediterranean coasts, trading in wine, ceramics, and other luxury goods. Numerous shipwrecks in the shallow waters of the Mediterranean coasts provide underwater archaeologists with rich information about boat technology and about the character of their cargoes.

Around 600 B.C. Greeks from the city of Phocaea, a community in Ionian Greece, now located on the west coast of Turkey, founded Massalia, the first permanent Greek settlement known in the region. The settlers were attracted by the excellent natural harbor, with its entrance protected from Mediterranean storms; the hill to the north that provided ideal settlement land; and the proximity to the mouth of the Rhône River, the principal waterway that linked interior regions of Europe with the western Mediterranean. The site was close enough to the river’s mouth to provide easy access and allow control of the river but far enough away to avoid the



Distribution of Greek pottery of the fourth quarter of the sixth century B.C. (not including east Greek pottery). ADAPTED FROM KIMMIG 2000.

problem of its harbor silting up with riverborne sediments.

Excavations in modern Marseille have yielded abundant evidence of the Greek town, though archaeologists are limited in their investigations by the modern city that overlies the ancient Greek one. For well over a century archaeologists have noted large quantities of ancient architectural remains, pottery from Athens and elsewhere in the Greek world, coins, and other materials from the early settlement. Since the 1960s archaeologists have been able to carry out systematic excavations in parts of the harbor and in places under construction within the ancient town itself. In the harbor they have discovered at least nine ships from the first century of the port's existence as well as warehouses and docks that formed parts of the harbor's infrastructure. Study of archaeological remains within the city of Marseille indicates that this Greek town of the sixth

century B.C. covered some 40 hectares of the hilly land around the harbor and that the town was protected on its northern edge by a massive stone and brick wall.

MASSALIA'S REGION AND DAUGHTER TOWNS

Massalia grew in size and influence and became the principal center along the southern coast of France, from Barcelona to Nice. It dominated an extensive landscape on both sides of the lower Rhône and had an important impact far inland, north and east of the headwaters of the Rhône in the interior of the Continent. French archaeologists have investigated many settlement and cemetery sites in the lower Rhône region northwest of Marseille and found extensive evidence of interaction with the Greek town. Particularly abundant are sherds of ceramic amphorae that had been used to transport wine. Some

of the vessels had been manufactured at Massalia; others were imported from elsewhere in the Mediterranean basin. Fine pottery, some made at Massalia and some from as far away as Athens, also circulated from the trade center to communities throughout the lower Rhône Valley. Especially common among the fine ceramics are pitchers, small bowls, and cups—all vessels used in the consumption of wine. The lands around the town of Massalia produced wine, and wine was imported from other regions of the Mediterranean. According to the Greek geographer Strabo, the rocky soils around Massalia would allow the successful cultivation of wine grapes and olives but not grain.

Shortly after they established Massalia around 600 B.C., Phocaean Greeks also founded a new town called Emporion, located on the northeastern coast of Spain, where modern Ampurias is situated. Emporion did not grow as large as Massalia, but around that town, too, is abundant archaeological evidence for interaction with indigenous peoples. Within a century of its establishment, Massalia began founding other daughter towns in the south of France.

MASSALIA AND WEST-CENTRAL EUROPE

In addition to their activities in and around Massalia and along the northern coasts of the western Mediterranean, the merchants based at the Greek port engaged in significant interactions with peoples of interior regions of continental Europe, especially in the region known as west-central Europe, which now is made up of eastern France, southwestern Germany, and northern and western Switzerland. The significance of these interactions between the prehistoric, Early Iron Age peoples of temperate Europe and merchants from the literate civilization of the Greek Mediterranean has been much discussed, and they certainly were of fundamental importance to cultural development within Europe. They also were significant to the Greek world, especially with respect to the trade products that Massalia and its commercial partners acquired through the interactions and in regard to the forming of Greek attitudes toward the non-Greek peoples who lived in the interior of the Continent. The principal concern here is with the effects of these interactions on the peoples of west-central Europe.

Archaeological Evidence for Interactions. The archaeological evidence for interactions between communities in west-central Europe and the Greek establishment at and around Massalia consists largely of objects manufactured in the Greek world that are recovered by archaeologists on settlements and in graves in west-central Europe. The most studied imports are pottery from Athens, pottery from Massalia and from workshops in its region, transport amphorae (some manufactured at Massalia and others brought in from abroad), and bronze vessels (some from Greek workshops and some from Etruscan Italy). Other objects, discussed later, also have significance. All of the imported objects are luxury goods, and all were consumed by the elite groups of Early Iron Age west-central Europe. The great majority of the objects are associated directly with the transportation, serving, and consumption of wine.

The most thoroughly investigated assemblage of Greek imports is from the Heuneburg on the Upper Danube River in the German state of Baden-Württemberg. At Mont Lassois on the upper Seine River in eastern France, even larger quantities of Greek pottery have been identified, and the Vix grave just below the fortified hilltop settlement contained numerous important objects. Between the Heuneburg and Mont Lassois, in the valleys of the Upper Rhine, the Doubs, and the upper Rhône Rivers, Greek imports have been recovered at many other settlements and graves. The Heuneburg and Mont Lassois stand out in being especially well studied and in providing important evidence for both settlement and burial contexts.

A number of different categories of imported Greek pottery have been identified at the Heuneburg, Mont Lassois, and the other sites, including pottery made in and around Massalia, pottery from eastern Greek workshops, and pottery from the center of Attica, Athens. Small numbers of Greek imports are apparent before the middle of the sixth century B.C., but the quantities increased greatly during the second half of that century. The imported Attic pottery has attracted special attention, because it can be dated very precisely and because archaeologists know a great deal about how it was produced and used in its land of origin. To date fifty-eight sherds of Attic pottery have been identified from the materials excavated at the Heuneburg



Fig. 1. Greek *kylix*, or drinking cup, made in Athens and found in the rich burial at Vix. THE ART ARCHIVE/ARCHAEOLOGICAL MUSEUM CHÂTILLON-SUR-SEINE/DAGLI ORTI. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

and more than three hundred at Mont Lassois. The vessel forms represented are part of the Greek wine-serving set—kraters for mixing wine and water (standard Greek practice), jugs for serving wine, and cups for drinking it (fig. 1). Most Attic pottery at these sites dates to the second half of the sixth century B.C., especially to the final quarter (525–500 B.C.). Amphorae used to transport wine from the Mediterranean coast into temperate Europe also are well represented, with fifty-five sherds from thirty-seven amphorae recorded from the Heuneburg, the majority of them dating to the same period as the Attic pottery. Early in the fifth century B.C. the quantities of Greek imports that were arriving into west-central Europe declined, for reasons that are not well understood. The cause of the decline may have lain principally in political and economic circumstances in west-central Europe or in the economic fortunes of Massalia or in a combination of factors.

Bronze vessels are an important category of Greek imports in west-central Europe, but they are much less abundant than fine pottery and am-

phorae. While the imported pottery and amphorae are represented mainly by sherds on settlement sites (though a few complete vessels do appear in graves, such as the two wine cups in the Vix burial), the bronze vessels are found principally in graves. The most spectacular is the Vix krater. Others include the cauldron in the Hochdorf burial; fragmentary sets of tripods and cauldrons from Sainte-Colombe near Vix in France and from Grafenbühl near Hochdorf in Germany; a *hydria* (water jug) from Grächwil in Switzerland; and relatively plain jugs from Ihringen, Kappel, and Vilsingen in the Upper Rhine Valley region.

Other imported luxury items from the Greek world that probably arrived by way of the port of Massalia are small ornaments and lavishly decorated furniture. In the Grafenbühl grave (looted in antiquity) were a small sphinx figure carved from bone and with an amber face. In the same grave and in a grave nearby at Römerhügel were carved amber, bone, and ivory pieces from furniture, perhaps couches. Coral from the Mediterranean Sea was imported in quantity for use as inlay in bronze jewelry.

At the Heuneburg a partly worked coral branch indicates that the material was processed in a workshop on the site. Dyes for coloring textiles, evident at Hochdorf, were imported from the Mediterranean region. Even new foods were introduced to the Early Iron Age centers from the Mediterranean world at this time, including chickens and figs.

Nature of the Interactions. Much debate surrounds the nature of the interactions that brought the imports from the Greek world of the Mediterranean to the communities in west-central Europe. Most often the interactions are referred to simply as “trade,” but that term oversimplifies the situation and may not be accurate, if in using that word one thinks of modern trade.

An important factor in attempts to understand why and how Greek luxury imports reached west-central Europe is the concentration of such imports at a few major centers dating to the latter part of the Early Iron Age (550–480 B.C.). The Heuneburg, Mont Lassois, the Hohenasperg (north of Stuttgart in Southwest Germany), Bragny-sur-Saône in eastern France, Châtillon-sur-Glâne in Switzerland, and other sites include hilltop settlements enclosed by fortification walls. Below them are unusually large burial mounds that cover elaborate wooden burial chambers housing rich graves containing Greek imports, gold ornaments, wagons, feasting equipment, and in the case of men’s graves, weapons. Thus there is a clear association between high status in Early Iron Age society and the Greek imports. Greek fine pottery, wine amphorae, and bronze vessels are rarely found on typical agricultural settlements or in modestly outfitted graves.

Written Greek sources tell of slightly later times that Greek cities sought to obtain a variety of raw materials through trade. These materials included grain to feed their urban populations, meat and fish, metals (iron for tools and weapons; copper and tin to make bronze for ornaments, statuary, and vessels; and gold and silver for ornaments), timber for building ships and other purposes, salt, pitch and tar, honey, leather, hides and fur, textiles, and perhaps slaves. In some other regions of the greater Mediterranean basin, such as on the north coasts of the Black Sea, appear patterns similar to those at Massalia and west-central Europe, with the establishment of Greek ports and the transmission of

Greek pottery and other goods inland to special fortified settlements. One set of interpretations views the Greek imports in west-central Europe as representative of one side of trade relations between elites at the Early Iron Age centers and merchant groups at Massalia. Centers such as the Heuneburg and Mont Lassois can be thought of as collection sites for the accumulation of materials sought by Greek merchants—raw materials, such as honey and furs from the forests, and partly made goods, such as wool textiles from the farming communities. The situation of all of the Early Iron Age centers on major rivers would support this model of economic trade in commodities from west-central Europe in exchange for finished luxury goods from the Greek world. According to this view, the elites at the centers controlled the trade, and thus they acquired and consumed the great majority of the luxury imports. They distributed some imports to the smaller communities that supplied the trade goods; coral inlay on bronze jewelry is well represented not only at the major centers but at many smaller communities as well.

This model is too simplistic, however, and anachronistic. It assumes that trade in the sixth century B.C. operated through exchange principles similar to those of more modern times. Some archaeologists have advocated a prestige-goods model for the exchange. In this view, rather than a barter trade of raw materials for Greek luxury goods, overseen and controlled by local elites, the key factor is the circulation of particular objects that bore high status and prestige in society—the Greek luxuries in Early Iron Age communities. According to this interpretation, the key element was the circulation and display of prestige goods. This model downplays the relationships between the elites at the centers and the smaller communities that produced goods for trade and emphasizes instead the interactions between groups of elites in their competition for status and power at the centers.

Several objects provide important information about the nature of the interrelations between the centers of west-central Europe and the Greek world. The Vix krater has been interpreted as a diplomatic gift from a Greek community to a potentate on the upper Seine, presented in order to seal a treaty or to create a useful relationship. That unique object is much more precious than any other Greek

imports in Europe, and it requires a different explanation from the fine pottery, the wine amphorae, and the other bronze vessels. The Greek historian Herodotus, writing around the middle of the fifth century B.C., described a similar vessel that was made to present to a king of a non-Greek people in Asia Minor (modern Turkey). It seems likely that the Vix krater also was made and presented for a particular purpose that went far beyond what would be considered “economic” trade and lay rather in the realm of diplomatic and political relationships.

The clay-brick wall at the Heuneburg similarly provides unique information. The fortification wall surrounding the hilltop settlement at the Heuneburg was built in several phases. In all but one of the phases, the wall consisted of a typical central European earth-and-timber structure. For one phase of construction, however, the wall was built of clay bricks, set on a foundation of cut stone—a technology that was foreign to west-central Europe but at home in the Greek world of the Mediterranean. This wall was about 3 meters thick, and it included 10 rectangular towers on the north side of the site, creating what must have been an impressive view for the inhabitants of the settlement below. The dimensions of the bricks in the Heuneburg wall even match those in contemporaneous walls at Greek cities.

While objects such as Attic pottery and even the Vix krater could have been transmitted to the west-central European centers by indirect trade, without individuals from Massalia and the Early Iron Age centers ever coming directly into contact with one another, the building of the clay-brick wall demonstrates the direct transmission of technical knowledge between individuals of the two societies. Either an architect from the Mediterranean world must have overseen the construction of the wall at the Heuneburg, or someone from west-central Europe must have learned the technique during a visit to a Greek city. Either way, direct interpersonal technology transfer is required to explain the wall.

Transmission of specific technical information from the Mediterranean world to west-central Europe also is indicated by the statue from Hirschlanden, a burial mound near the Hohenasperg hillfort. This life-size statue of a male warrior is sculpted of local sandstone. The modeling of the back and the legs shows familiarity with sculptural traditions cur-

rent during the sixth century B.C. in the Mediterranean world among Greek and Etruscan sculptors but otherwise absent in west-central Europe at this time. Since objects represented on the statue—hat, dagger, and belt—are of local character and the object is made of local sandstone, its local origin is not in question. As in the case of the Heuneburg brick wall, however, the Hirschlanden figure displays technical knowledge brought one way or another from the Mediterranean world.

EFFECT OF THE INTERACTIONS

The role that the interactions between west-central European communities and the Greek world at and around Massalia played in Iron Age Europe also is a greatly debated issue. The principal matter of contention is whether the interactions represented by the Greek luxury goods were an important factor in the emergence of elites in Early Iron Age west-central Europe or whether the emergence of the elites happened as a result of processes internal to European society. Put into simple terms, did the commerce with Massalia “cause” the greater social differentiation that is apparent in the rich graves at the Heuneburg, Mont Lassois, the Hohenasperg, and the other centers? Or did the elites emerge through locally based social changes and participate in trade with the Greeks in order to acquire attractive luxuries?

These questions are difficult to answer. The Greek luxury imports clearly are associated with the elites—the individuals buried in the richest and most elaborate burials. The Early Iron Age centers of west-central Europe rose to importance only during the sixth century B.C., after Massalia had been established and at the time that the first of the imports were arriving. Economic activity flourished at the centers in the final decades of the sixth century B.C., at the same time that the larger numbers of imports were arriving and the rich graves were most lavishly outfitted. Thus it is clear that there was a close connection between the social and political changes in Early Iron Age west-central Europe and the interactions with Greek Massalia. But it is not yet possible to explain exactly how these changes happened.

Some archaeologists argue that these interrelationships can best be understood in terms of core-periphery relations, in which the Greek Mediterra-

nean is viewed as the core and west-central Europe as the periphery. In support of this approach, the archaeological evidence shows similar patterns of importation of Greek pottery, bronze vessels, and other luxury goods at other locations in the greater Mediterranean world, such as Iberia, the east coast of the Adriatic Sea, and the lands north of the Black Sea. These other regions also contain evidence for the same kinds of changes in local societies that are evident in west-central Europe—the appearance of new fortified hilltop settlements, on which Greek imported pottery is found, and increase in differentiation reflected in burial equipment. Thus from the broader perspective of Greek-native interaction all along the north coasts of the Mediterranean and Black Seas, the evidence seems to indicate that similar social changes were stimulated (not to say caused) by the establishment of Greek commercial towns eager to acquire commodities in the interior regions of Europe.

Those that argue in favor of local changes rather than external commerce as the critical factors point out that the total numbers of Greek imports in west-central Europe are small. The fifty-eight sherds of Attic pottery recovered so far at the Heuneburg, for example, represent only about thirteen vessels. Only thirty-seven wine amphorae have been identified from the sherds at the site. Viewed over some fifty or more years of interaction, these numbers of vessels do not indicate a substantial trade. Other investigators counter that in archaeology researchers always work with fragmentary evidence. Perhaps much or most of the importation of Greek luxury goods was in perishable materials, such as the fine textiles in the grave at Hochdorf and the silk from the Hohmichele burial mound at the Heuneburg. If this was the case, then the Attic pottery, wine amphorae, bronze vessels, and other objects are only the most visible signs of interactions, and archaeologists must reckon with much larger quantities of goods that are not as readily recognizable.

These debates are still flourishing. To an extent, new data from excavated settlements and graves will help provide support for one perspective or the other. Much of the debate depends upon how one thinks economic and social systems in the past operated, and thus agreement may never be achieved. In any case, it is clear that the contacts with the Greek world and the emergence of the economic and so-

cial centers with their elites were closely interconnected.

Perhaps the most important effects of the interactions were the more subtle ones involving the sharing and exchange of information, ideas, and practices. With any kind of trade or political interaction between groups, information and ideas are passed, resulting in changes in attitudes, beliefs, and values of all parties concerned. One clear example in the case of west-central Europe and the Greek world is the apparent adoption of the Greek practice of the symposium. This was a ritual wine-drinking party in which particular types of vessels were used for specific purposes, and the event served to express social distinctions between members of the elite groups. The sets of feasting vessels that were placed in rich burials such as Hochdorf and Vix provide all of the functions required for the performance of a feast structured like the Greek symposium—large mixing vessels, jugs, and drinking cups. Some of these vessels were Greek and Etruscan imports, and others, such as the horns in the Hochdorf tomb, were local versions. In Greece at the time revelers reclined on couches; perhaps the Hochdorf couch and those represented by ornaments at Grafenbühl and Römerhügel indicate a local use of this item of furniture. It is on this level of practice and performance, with elements from the Greek world and from Early Iron Age west-central Europe integrated into meaningful practices, that much important and exciting research will be done in the near future.

See also **Status and Wealth** (vol. 1, part 1); **Hochdorf** (vol. 1, part 1); **Iron Age Feasting** (vol. 2, part 6); **Vix** (vol. 2, part 6); **The Heuneburg** (vol. 2, part 6).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Arnold, Bettina. “‘Drinking the Feast’: Alcohol and the Legitimation of Power in Celtic Europe.” *Cambridge Archaeological Journal* 9, no. 1 (1999): 71–93.
- Boardman, John. *The Greeks Overseas: Their Early Colonies and Trade*. 4th ed. New York: Thames and Hudson, 1999.
- Brun, Patrice, and Bruno Chaume, eds. *Vix et les éphémères principautés celtiques: Les VIe–Ve siècles avant J.-C. en Europe centre-occidentale*. Paris: Éditions Errance, 1997.
- Diepeveen-Jansen, Marian. *People, Ideas, and Goods: New Perspectives on “Celtic Barbarians” in Western and Central Europe (500–250 B.C.)*. Translated by Christine Jéferis. Amsterdam: Amsterdam University Press, 2001.

Dietler, Michael. "The Iron Age in Mediterranean France: Colonial Encounters, Entanglements, and Transformations." *Journal of World Prehistory* 11, no. 3 (1997): 269–358.

———. "Early 'Celtic' Socio-Political Relations: Ideological Representation and Social Competition in Dynamic Comparative Perspective." In *Celtic Chieftdom, Celtic State: The Evolution of Complex Social Systems in Prehistoric Europe*. Edited by Bettina Arnold and D. Blair Gibson, pp. 64–71. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1995.

Kimmig, Wolfgang, ed. *Importe und mediterrane Einflüsse auf der Heuneburg*. Mainz, Germany: Philipp von Zabern, 2000.

Kristiansen, Kristian. *Europe before History*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1998.

Moscatti, Sabatino, ed. *The Celts*. New York: Rizzoli, 1991.

Pare, Christopher. "La dimension européenne du commerce grec à la fin de la période archaïque et pendant le début de la période classique." In *Vix et les éphémères principautés celtiques: Les VIe–Ve siècles avant J.-C. en Europe centre-occidentale*. Edited by Patrice Brun and Bruno Chaume, pp. 261–286. Paris: Éditions Errance, 1997.

Les Princes celtes et la Méditerranée. Paris: La Documentation Française, 1988.

Shefton, Brian. "On the Material in Its Northern Setting." In *Importe und mediterrane Einflüsse auf der Heuneburg*. Edited by Wolfgang Kimmig, pp. 27–41. Mainz, Germany: Philipp von Zabern, 2000.

Wells, Peter S. *Culture Contact and Culture Change: Early Iron Age Central Europe and the Mediterranean World*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1980.

PETER S. WELLS

VIX

At the small settlement of Vix near Châtillon on the upper Seine River in eastern France, an unusually richly outfitted grave was excavated in 1952 and 1953. Numerous burial mounds are still visible around the fortified hilltop site of Mont Lassois, but the mound above the Vix grave had eroded and was no longer apparent on the surface. Excavations revealed the remains of a mound 42 meters in diameter and probably about 5 meters high, within which was a wooden chamber 3.1 by 2.75 meters in size, covered by a layer of stones. Inside was an undisturbed burial that included the skeletal remains of a woman about thirty-five years of age, buried c. 480 B.C., at the end of the Early Iron Age.



Fig. 1. The Vix krater. THE ART ARCHIVE/ARCHAEOLOGICAL MUSEUM CHÂTILLON-SUR-SEINE/DAGLI ORTI. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

The grave contained goods that characterize rich women's burials of the Early Iron Age, but also unique objects. The woman's body was laid on the box of a wagon in the center of the grave, with her head toward the north. The wagon's detached four wheels had been arranged along the east wall of the chamber. On the western side was an extraordinary assemblage of ceramic, bronze, and silver vessels. Around her neck the woman wore a uniquely ornamented gold ring of exceptionally fine workmanship, weighing 480 grams. At the two terminals were lion paws, tiny winged horses, and intricately incised ornamentation. Gold neck rings are characteristic of richly outfitted Early Iron Age burials in temperate Europe, but the Vix ring is different from all others. The style of ornament suggests connections with Greek and Scythian decorative traditions, but specialists have not agreed on the probable place of manufacture.

Her other personal ornaments are of types common to well-equipped women's graves, but she was

buried with more of them, and many are unusually richly decorated. On each wrist she wore three bracelets of schist and one of thin bronze. A necklace was made of amber, diorite, and serpentine beads. On each ankle was a hollow bronze ring. With her were eight fibulae, ornamental brooches, which worked on the principle of the modern safety pin, that were used to fasten garments and for decoration. Two were of iron, the other six of bronze, and some were ornamented with gold, amber, and coral. Amber and coral were both exotic luxuries—amber came from the coast of the Baltic Sea to the northeast and coral from the Mediterranean to the south.

The feasting equipment in the grave consisted of eight vessels, at least six of them imports from the Greek and Etruscan worlds. Two wine cups were products of the luxury ceramic industry in Athens. One was painted in the black-figure style about 525 B.C., and the other was a plain black cup made about 515 B.C. A bronze jug and three basins all may have come from Etruscan workshops in Italy. A silver bowl with a central omphalos, or knob, of sheet gold was 23 centimeters in diameter. The most unusual object in the grave was an enormous bronze krater, a kind of vessel used in the Greek world for mixing wine and water at feasts, made by Greek bronzesmiths.

The Vix krater is 1.64 meters tall and weighs 208 kilograms—the largest metal krater known. It would have held about 1,100 liters, but there is some question as to whether it could, in fact, have been used. It is possible that the weight of so much liquid would have burst the thin bronze. While the body of the krater is hammered sheet bronze, the base, handles, rim, and figures around the neck are all cast. The handles represent figures of gorgons, and the cast bronze figures on the neck are Greek warriors, their horses, and chariots. With the krater was a bronze lid 1.02 meters in diameter, in the center of which stood a figure of a woman 19 centimeters tall.

Based on stylistic analysis, art historians believe that the krater was made in a Greek workshop in southern Italy about 530 B.C. This unusually large and finely made object may have been transported in pieces across the Tyrrhenian Sea, up the Rhône Valley, and overland to the headwaters of the Seine and then to Vix. Each of the small bronze figures

has a Greek letter on the reverse side and is attached to a spot on the neck with a corresponding letter, as if assembly was required. The most interesting questions are, Why was this very unusual and costly object brought to this place far from the centers of power and wealth of the Mediterranean civilizations? And who was the woman with whom this extraordinary vessel was buried? Most scholarly opinion is that it was a political gift—a present from a powerful Greek group to a potentate in Early Iron Age Europe, perhaps to establish favorable relations for the trade system that is represented so well by Greek and Etruscan luxury goods in this grave and at other sites of the period. At some stage between manufacture and burial, someone removed all of the spears held in the hands of the warriors figured on the neck of the krater. Who might have done this and why?

Archaeological excavations in 1991–1993 uncovered a square enclosure 23 meters on a side, bounded by a ditch, 200 meters southwest of the Vix burial. An opening in the ditch 1.2 meters wide at the center of one side faces the fortified hilltop settlement on Mont Lassois. Animal bones and remains of ceramic bowls in the ditch suggest that rituals associated with funeral rites were conducted in the enclosure. In the ditch just east of the opening were two almost life-size limestone sculptures of seated humans, one of a woman wearing a neck ring resembling that in the rich grave and the other of a man wearing a sword and holding a shield. Apparently these figures were placed at either side of the entrance into the enclosure. The Vix burial and associated enclosure provide unusually rich information about wealth and status, contact with Mediterranean societies, the role of feasting and display in social and political systems, and the character of funerary ritual in Early Iron Age Europe.

See also Hochdorf (vol. 1, part 1); Greek Colonies in the West (vol. 2, part 6).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Chaume, Bruno. "Vix, le Mont Lassois: État de nos connaissances sur le site princier et son environnement." In *Vix et les éphémères principautés celtiques: Les VI^e and Ve siècles avant J.-C. en Europe centre-occidentale*. Edited by P. Brun and B. Chaume, pp. 185–200. Paris: Éditions Errance, 1997.

Joffroy, René. *Le trésor de Vix*. Paris: Fayard, 1962.

———. *La tombe de Vix (Côte-d'Or)*. Vol. 48, fascicle 1. Paris: Monuments et Mémoires (Fondation Eugène Piot), 1954.

Moscatti, Sabatino, Otto-Herman Frey, Vencelas Kruta, Barry Raftery, and Miklós Szabó, eds. *The Celts*. New York: Rizzoli, 1991.

Wells, Peter S. *Beyond Celts, Germans and Scythians: Archaeology and Identity in Iron Age Europe*. London: Duckworth, 2001.

PETER S. WELLS



GREEK COLONIES IN THE EAST

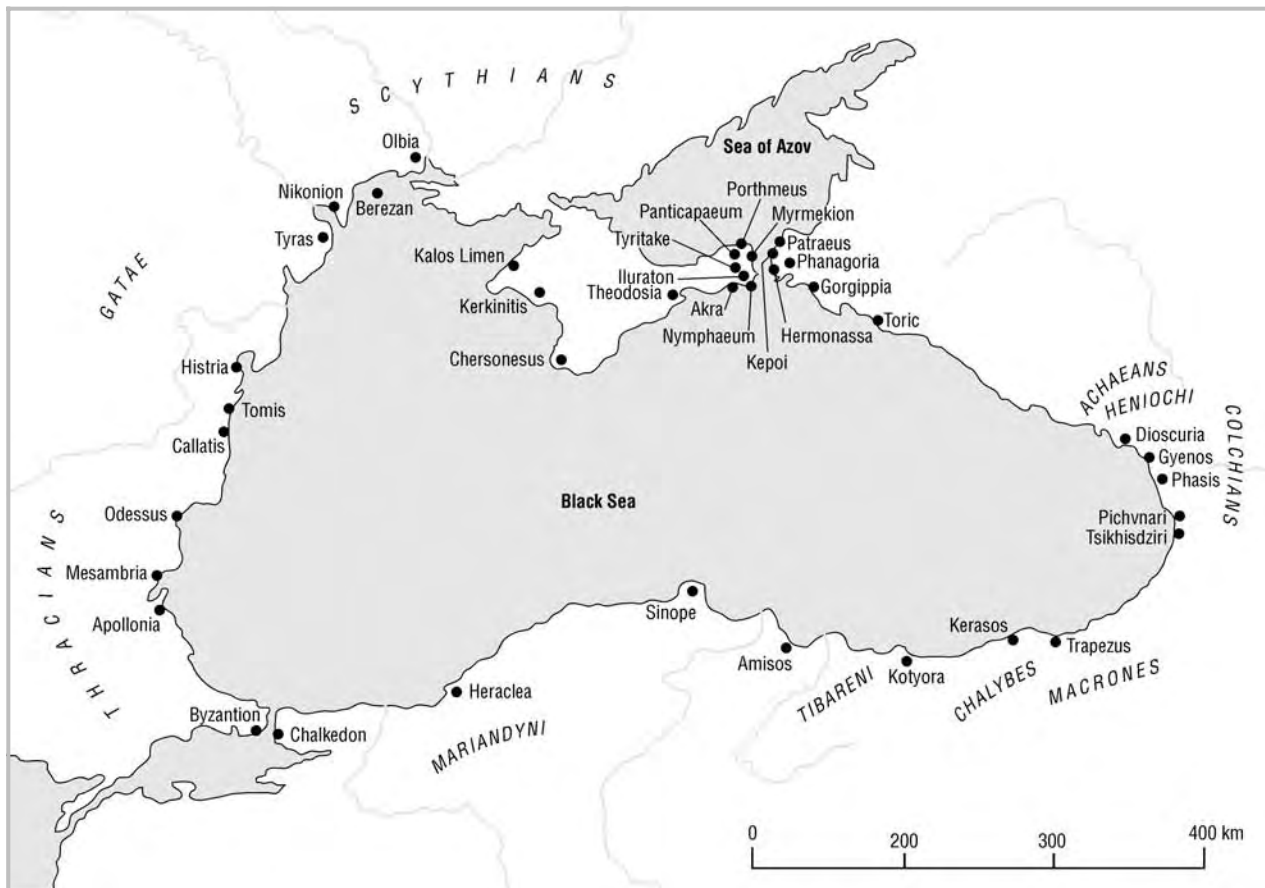
The Black Sea littoral, initially called by the Greeks “inhospitable,” was colonized intensively by them. Ancient written sources number these colonies between seventy-five and ninety. According to the ancient Greek geographer Strabo, Miletus, the most prosperous city of Ionia (ancient East Greece, the western part of modern-day Turkey), was known to many. Its fame was due mainly to the large number of its colonies, since the whole of Pontus Euxinus (the Black Sea), Propontis (Sea of Marmora), and many other places had been settled by Milesians.

The reasons for Ionian colonization have been argued for many decades as one aspect of the general debate about why the Greeks established so many colonies. Nowadays, most scholars agree that colonization was enforced migration. Ionian cities were situated in favorable geographical locations and possessed large tracts of fertile land. Miletus, called “the pearl of Ionia,” was in the Archaic period the center of Greek culture. At the end of the eighth century, Ionians began advancing deeply into the hinterland: Miletus, for example, pushed its frontiers twenty to thirty miles up the river valley. This expansion led to conflict between Lydians and Ionians, with Lydian kings seeking to push the Ionians back toward the coast. The principal outcome was to diminish the amount of cultivable land available to the Ionians. This was the chief reason why from the mid-seventh century, Miletus, which had never undertaken colonization, became the last Greek city to do so.

The struggles between Lydia and Ionia came to an end at the beginning of the sixth century, when

Miletus was obliged to accept a treaty reducing its territorial possessions. This, in turn, provoked an internal crisis in Miletus, whose resolution prompted large-scale migration and the establishment of new colonies on the Black Sea. New and hitherto unparalleled difficulties arose in the middle of the sixth century as the expanding Persian empire conquered Ionian cities. Ancient written sources state directly that the Ionians faced a stark choice: death and enslavement or flight. In these circumstances migration was the obvious course, leading to the foundation of more new colonies. This did not mark the end of forced migration: in 499 B.C. an Ionian uprising against Persian rule was crushed, and in 494 Miletus was sacked and burned. In consequence, a final wave of Ionian colonies was established on the Black Sea at the beginning of the fifth century.

Archaeology provides the principal evidence for Greek colonies on the Black Sea. There are a few written sources on the establishment of Pontic Greek cities, but they are contradictory, giving different dates of foundation and mixing myths with other explanations of the colonization process. The first colonies appeared in the last third of the seventh century, and by the end of it Berezan, Histria, Sinope, possibly Amisus and Trapezus, Apollonia Pontica, and the Taganrog settlement on the Sea of Azov had been founded. All were very small, situated on peninsulas. The next wave of colonization dates to the beginning of the sixth century and witnessed the establishment of Olbia, Panticapaeum, Nymphaeum, Theodosia, Myrmekion, Kepoi, Patraeus, Tomis, and others. Hermonassa, on the



The Black Sea region with major Greek colonies and local peoples. ADAPTED FROM TSETSKHLADZE 1998.

Taman Peninsula (South Russia), was a joint foundation of Miletus and Mytilene in the second quarter of the sixth century.

From the middle of the sixth century, other Ionian Greek cities were in the business of establishing colonies: Teos founded Phanagoria (Taman Peninsula), and the (non-Ionian) Megarians and Boeotians founded Heraclea, on the southern shores of the Pontus c. 556 B.C. The latter colony developed as a major trading center for the whole Pontus and in turn established its own colonies: Chersonesus in the Crimea was founded in the last quarter of the fifth century (where a small Ionian settlement had existed from the end of the sixth century) and, later, Callatis on the western coast. The mid-sixth century also was the period when Miletus established three colonies on the eastern Black Sea (in the ancient country of Colchis)—Phasis, Gyenos, and Dioscurias. The final Ionian colonizers arrived at the end of the sixth/beginning of the fifth century

B.C., establishing new colonies (Mesambria, Kerkinitis, and others) and settling in existing ones. In newly established colonies, Apollo was the major deity, as he was in Miletus.

For their first sixty to eighty years of existence, the colonies looked quite “un-Greek.” There was virtually no stone architecture; instead there were pit houses. Nor was there regular town planning. The only colony with fortification walls was Histria. A complete change of appearance took place at the end of the sixth/first half of the fifth century. Pit houses gave way to typical Greek stone dwellings. It is possible to identify clearly standard features of Greek urbanization, such as the agora, *temenos*, acropolis, and craftsmen’s quarter, among others. Temples were built in the Ionic and Doric orders. As the result of a change in the local political situation, cities began to construct stone fortification walls. The exception is the region of the eastern Black Sea, where, thanks to natural conditions (wet-

lands and marshes, for example), temples and fortification walls as well as dwellings were constructed of wood.

Every Greek city became a center of craft production. In Histria and Nymphaeum pottery kilns were found dating from the mid-sixth century B.C.; in Panticapaeum from the end of the century; and in Chersonesus, Gorgippia, Histria, Phanagoria, and Sinope from the fifth to the second centuries. They produced such things as terra-cotta figurines, lamps, loom weights, and tableware; in Heraclea, Sinope, and Chersonesus, amphorae were made as well. Through the migration of Sinopean potters, the Greek cities of Colchis began to produce their own amphorae from the second half of the fourth century B.C. From the fourth century, tiles and architectural terra-cotta were manufactured in Apollonia Pontica, Chersonesus, Olbia, Tyras, and the Bosporan cities (on the Kerch and Taman Peninsulas). The Bosporan cities and Histria produced simple painted pottery, which imitated the shapes of East Greek and Attic pottery.

Nearly every Greek city has left traces of metalworking. In Panticapaeum, for example, workshops were found in two areas. The workshops, which produced iron, bronze, and lead objects (including weapons), contained numerous moulds, iron ore, and slags in the remains of furnaces. In Phanagoria, pottery and metal workshops were situated at the edge of the city. One produced life-size bronze statues. Metalworking in the Pontic Greek cities was based mainly on the use of ingots specially produced for them, for example, in wooden-steppe Scythia for the northern Black Sea cities. The same situation most probably obtained in the other parts of the Black Sea.

Agriculture was the main economic activity. Greek cities established their agricultural territories, called *chorai*, almost immediately. Their size varied over time; initially they were small but grew larger with the appearance of new colonists and the expansion of the cities. In the fourth century B.C. the *chorai* of Olbia and Chersonesus and of the cities of the Bosporan Kingdom each covered an area of about 150,000 hectares and contained several hundred settlements. These rural settlements were sources of agricultural produce for the inhabitants of the cities. There were several settlements specializing entirely in craft production. The wonderfully

preserved *chora* of Chersonesus in the Crimea is unique, as is Metapontum in Italy. Chersonesus was situated in the Heraclean Peninsula, approximately 11,000 hectares of which was divided c. 350 B.C. into four hundred lots, each with six subdivisions, to make 2,400 small allotments. They were used mainly for viticulture and growing fruit trees. About 4,000 hectares along the north coast were the basis of the earliest allotments. There was a second *chora* of Chersonesus in the northwestern Crimea, entirely for grain production.

Trade was one of the principal economic activities of Greek cities. The main sources for the study of trade relations are pottery and amphorae. In the seventh and early sixth centuries B.C. pottery from southern Ionia was common throughout the Pontic region; later it was displaced by pottery from northern Ionia. Goods transported in amphorae came from Chios, Lesbos, and Clazomenae. The small quantities of Corinthian and Naucratic goods probably were brought by Ionian merchants, who also were responsible, with Aeginetans, for the appearance of the first Archaic Athenian pottery in the region. In the Classical period Athenian pottery predominates, on evidence from excavation of the Pontic Greek cities. This pottery probably reflects direct links between them and Athens.

Trade between the Pontic Greek cities and the local peoples is an extremely important but complex question. All discussion is based on the finds of Greek pottery made in local settlements, some as far as 500–600 kilometers inland from the Black Sea. Overall, about 10 percent of known and excavated local sites, especially for the Classical period, yield examples, but usually they are few in number (as is the case, for example, in both the Thracian and Colchian hinterlands). At the same time, local elite tombs each provide several examples of Athenian painted pottery. Thus, a simple explanation of the very close trade relationship between Greeks and locals is no longer tenable.

There are other ways in which pottery could have reached local settlements, and the small quantity cannot support the argument that the more examples, the closer and more intense the links. Painted pottery from elite tombs cannot be viewed only from the perspective of trade relationships: it is not known how the locals interpreted the scenes depicted on the painted pottery, which could have been

a gift from the Greeks and not traded. Furthermore, the tombs contained jewelry and metal vessels, on which the local elite was much keener, in far greater quantities than pottery.

Over time the composition of imports and exports changed. The best account is found in the *Histories* of the Greek historian Polybius (book 4):

As regards necessities, it is an undisputed fact that the most plentiful supplies and best qualities of cattle and slaves reach us from the countries lying around the Pontus, while among luxuries, the same countries furnish us with an abundance of honey, wax and preserved fish; from the surplus of our countries they take olive-oil and every kind of wine. As for grain, there is give and take—with them sometimes supplying us when we require it and sometimes importing it from us.

From the start, the history of the colonies is inseparable from that of the local population. Many ethnic groups lived around the Black Sea, among whom the most prominent were the Thracians, Getae, Scythians, Tauri, Maeotians, Colchians, Mariandyni, and Chalybes. From the earliest days of the colonies, locals formed part of their population. For the Archaic period not much is known about the relationship between Greeks and local peoples, although it was most probably peaceful until the end of the sixth century/beginning of the fifth century B.C. Thereafter, local kingdoms grew up, such as the Thracian (Odrysian), Colchian, and Scythian. Relations between these kingdoms and the Greek colonies were at times peaceful and at others hostile. In about 480 B.C. a phenomenon unique for the whole

Greek world in the Classical period took place: the Greek cities situated on the Kerch and Taman Peninsulas united, to withstand Scythian pressure, in a single state, known as the Bosporean Kingdom (whose capital was Panticapaeum). The rulers of this state were tyrants. Its final consolidation was completed by the middle of the fourth century B.C. In character it was akin to the kingdoms that mushroomed in the Hellenistic period.

See also Scythians (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Gorman, Vanessa B. *Miletos, the Ornament of Ionia: A History of the City to 400 B.C.E.* Ann Arbor: University of Michigan Press, 2001.
- Greaves, Alan M. *Miletos: A History.* London: Routledge, 2002.
- Tsetskhladze, Gocha R. "Greek Penetration of the Black Sea." In *The Archaeology of Greek Colonisation: Essays Dedicated to Sir John Boardman.* Edited by G. R. Tsetskhladze and F. De Angelis, pp. 111–136. Oxford: Oxbow Books, 1994.
- , ed. *The Greek Colonisation of the Black Sea Area: Historical Interpretation of Archaeology.* Historia Einzelschriften 121. Stuttgart, Germany: Steiner, 1998.
- Tsetskhladze, Gocha R., and J. G. de Boer, eds. *The Black Sea Region in the Greek, Roman, and Byzantine Periods.* *Talanta* 32/33. Amsterdam: Dutch Archaeological and Historical Society, 2002.
- Tsetskhladze, Gocha R., and A. M. Snodgrass, eds. *Greek Settlements in the Eastern Mediterranean and the Black Sea.* BAR International Series, no. 1062. Oxford: Archaeopress, 2002.

GOCHA R. TSETSKHLADZE



IRON AGE FRANCE

FOLLOWED BY FEATURE ESSAY ON:

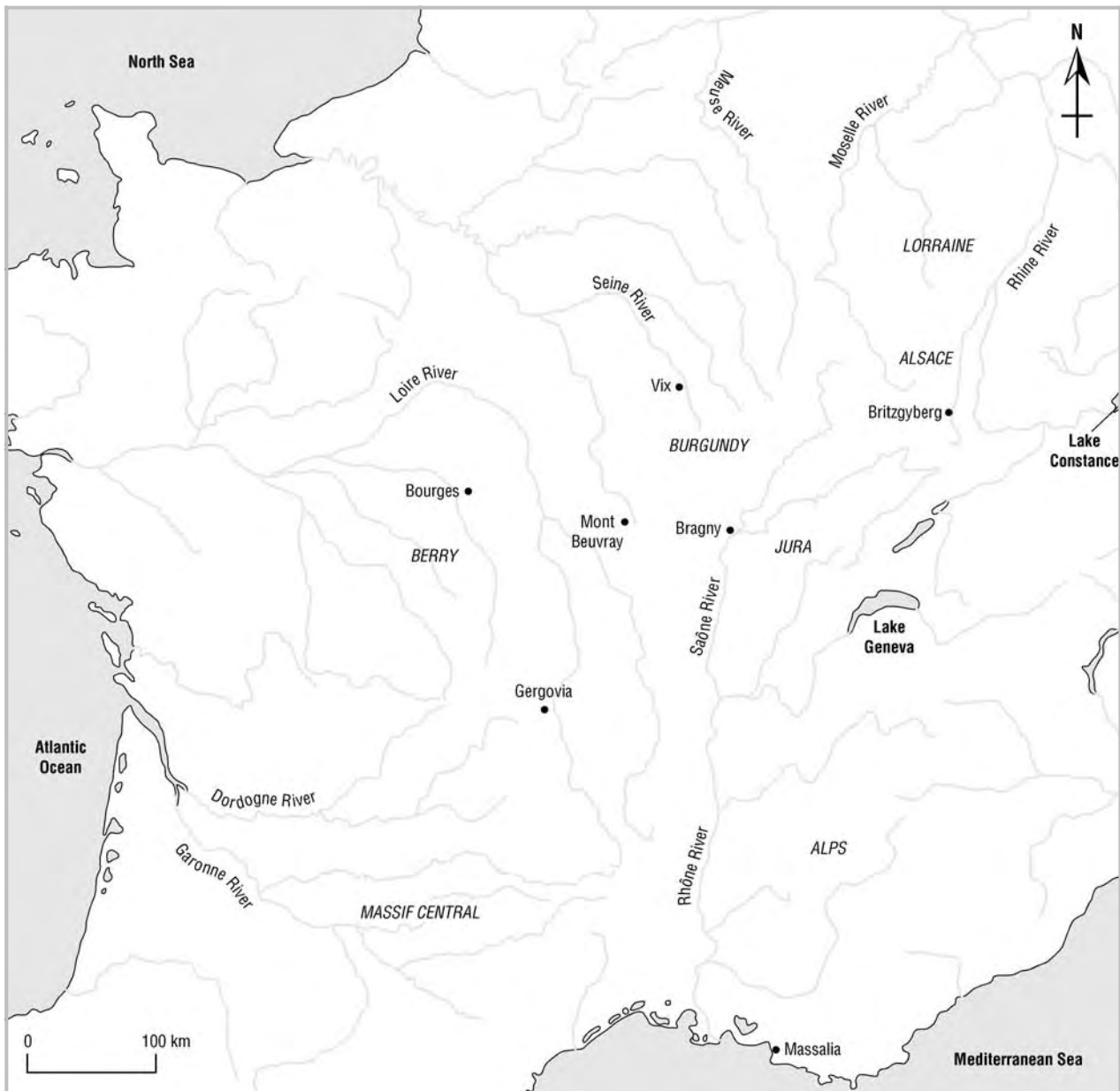
Gergovia 219

Modern France formed part of ancient Gaul, inhabited by Celts, Aquitani, Iberians, Ligurians, Belgae, and Germani. By the time of the Roman conquest most of these peoples spoke Celtic languages, except the non-Indo-European Iberians and probably the Aquitani and Germani. Although Julius Caesar and other historians give firm boundaries between these groups, one should assume neither that they were static nor that ancient authors were knowledgeable. On the south coast historical sources place the boundary between the Ligurians and the Iberians on the Rhône, whereas linguistic evidence from inscriptions suggests that it was the Hérault.

Two “grand narratives” have dominated syntheses of Iron Age Gaul. The first has been the incorporation of Gaul into a Mediterranean world system, with artistic, political, and economic innovations; social hierarchization and urbanization stimulated by trade and Greek colonization; and eventually, the Roman conquest. The second narrative is cultural-historical, the definition of the origin and expansion of the Celts; this viewpoint has come under heavy attack. For instance, the definition of “Celts” as speakers of Celtic languages is a modern one that cannot be imposed on the ancient world; other ethnic groups, such as Ligurians, also may have spoken a Celtic language. Prehistorians also talk of the “Celticization” of western and southern

France during the Iron Age, though what they mean is *laténization*, that is, the adoption of La Tène art styles, ornamentation, and so on. This view often ignores the extremely varied nature of the archaeological record in the different regions, especially the processes of deposition and discovery. The correlation between the Celts and a La Tène culture is no longer sustainable: Iberians in Languedoc and Germans in Jutland were making La Tène artifacts with typical decoration.

Central and western France are largely devoid of burials for the Iron Age. Documentary evidence warns against making simplistic correlations between the occurrence of rich burials and wealth. The king of the Arverni, Luernios, lived in an area where there are no rich burials until after the Roman conquest, and in the fifth century the Bituriges do not have exceptionally rich burials despite the supposed importance of their king Ambigatus. This bias in archaeology has been overcome in part with an increased emphasis on settlement archaeology, stimulated by rescue excavation on major projects for motorways and railways. Where settlement archaeology had taken place, it had concentrated on the defended nucleated hillforts of the south or the urban *oppida* of the Late La Tène, but rescue excavation is revealing many small farming settlements and hamlets. Nonetheless, there are still major voids



Selected sites in Iron Age France.

in the records, for instance, settlement evidence in the Massif Central.

In France two main patterns can be identified. In the south, on the littoral plains, settlement and political development followed a common Mediterranean pattern with the appearance of numerous small, nucleated settlements, perhaps best described as “city-states,” with, initially at least, fairly limited territories. In contrast, the rest of France by the time of the conquest was occupied by “tribal

states,” much larger territorial entities that only at a late stage in their development acquired urban settlements (*oppida*). The boundary between the two regions lay in the southern foothills of the Massif Central, which, with the Alps and the Pyrenees, formed a major barrier between the Mediterranean and the temperate zones of France but was pierced by two major routes. There was the Rhône Valley in the east and the Carcassonne Gap in the west, though a more central route northward up the Hérault also was used during the Iron Age.

This overview follows the acculturation model while underlining the regional variations and gaps in the evidence and the importance of regional variation. It follows chronological sequence, using the terminology of central Europe. An Early Hallstatt and a later La Tène Iron Age are recognized, though the divisions do not always fit local French developments particularly well.

THE LATE BRONZE AGE (C. 1000–750 B.C.)

The Late Bronze Age in France, as elsewhere in central and western Europe, presents two disparate images. On the one hand, the settlement evidence often is ephemeral. In the south of France the wooden houses are small, presumably for nuclear family units, and settlements are limited and short-lived, suggesting a shifting pattern based mainly on hunting and pastoralism, with an agricultural component. Over most of France, especially the west and center, burials are virtually unknown, but where they do occur, the so-called Urnfields consist of cremation burials that are poor in grave goods—two or three pots and little else.

In contrast, later research in northern France in the major river valleys has shown evidence that landscapes were highly organized, with linear boundaries formed by alignments of pits. In Britain the Middle and Late Bronze Ages are characterized by enclosed settlements, linear boundaries, and large-scale field systems. This pattern probably holds true for areas of France as well, but unlike Britain, much of the evidence was destroyed in the land hunger of the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries, which saw agriculture spreading to even marginal areas of poor soils and steep slopes. The Late Bronze Age also saw an increase in hillforts such as Fort-Harrouard (Eure-et-Loire), with evidence of dense occupation and industrial activity. Some sites also are known in the Mediterranean littoral, such as the 19-hectare Carsac site or the 5.6-hectare site of Cayla de Mailhac, both lying on the Carcassonne Gap. Although the hillfort of Cayla occasionally was abandoned, its importance is shown in the continuous sequence of burials around the site, reminiscent of the early phases of the cities of central and northern Italy or Greece. As elsewhere, the early burials at Mailhac have no special signs of wealth. Hoards, in contrast, can contain bronze armor and other prestige items.

There are no clearly defined trade routes at this period, except the Atlantic coastal route, where similarities of bronze types, such as carps-tongue swords, show close links between western Iberia, Brittany, and southeastern Britain. All areas are characterized by extensive burial of hoards and the deposition of objects in “watery places,” all indicative of deliberate ritual and ceremonial deposition. The affiliations of central and eastern France are more with central Europe, and at this time there is evidence of cross-Alpine trade in prestige goods, such as decorated bronze vessels.

HALLSTATT C (C. 750–600 B.C.)

The Iron Age in France formally starts with the appearance of usable weapons and tools made of iron. Bronze was not vanquished immediately, however. Of the two typical sword types of Hallstatt C, the Gündlingen type is known only in bronze, whereas the Mindelheim type occurs in both bronze and iron. The manufacture of long iron swords implies the mastery of carburization and piling. For France, the Mindelheim swords imply a central European route for the introduction of the new technology. For the south of France, central Italy is a more likely source; one of the early finds, from Grand Bassin I at Mailhac, includes a short “stabbing” dagger, more in the gladius tradition of the central and western Mediterranean, which contrasts with the long “slashing” swords of central Europe.

The Grand Bassin burial also includes an iron horse harness, indicating a major ideological shift away from deliberate destruction of wealth in hoards to a burial context. In these societies it seems that rich objects were deliberately destroyed or buried as a demonstration of social power. In Hallstatt C there is a shift from deposition in rivers or in hoards on dry land to burials of objects to accompany the dead. Thus the Grand Bassin burial also includes an iron horse harness as a symbol of status. During Hallstatt C, burials in France do not compare in wealth with the contemporaneous wagon burials in central Europe or Italy, but the construction of ostentatious burial mounds contrasts with previous Urnfield practice, as does the wider range of grave goods, such as bronze vessels, personal ornaments, and horse harnesses. Most of these burials are extended inhumations, with marked concentrations across the southern parts of the Massif Central

and adjacent parts of the Alpine foothills and Jura, in the Berry, Burgundy, Lorraine, and Alsace. In eastern France there are female burials with bronze ornaments (brooches and bracelets), but in central France contemporary female graves are unknown.

Another feature of these tumulus burials is the presence of imported Etruscan bronze vessels. Some, like the bronze cup and incense burner from Appenwihr in Alsace, came over the Alps via northern Italy, but the south of France also was in direct contact with central Italy by sea. Several of the Hallstatt tumuli in the southern Massif Central and the Alpine foothills contain Etruscan bronze bowls or jugs. The main recipients of Etruscan goods, however, were the occupants of the coastal plain, who, from about 630 B.C., were receiving wine amphorae, ceramic tableware (*bucchero*), and, occasionally, Greek vessels. The trade was concentrated around the Rhône delta. There are no obvious port sites, and Etruscan coastal trading is the most likely mechanism for contact. Phoenician trade had mainly bypassed southern France, but some goods, such as Punic wine amphorae, came up the coast of eastern Spain as far north as the Rhône delta, reaching Languedoc in quantity.

The settlement pattern over much of central and western Europe changed during Hallstatt C, with the abandonment of hillforts. Even southern France was affected, with long-lived sites such as Cayla de Mailhac and Carsac showing a hiatus of settlement, though in the case of Mailhac the associated burial sequence is unbroken. The reasons for this shift are unclear, and presumably the majority of the population at that time lived in small farming settlements.

Hallstatt C thus was a period of considerable change with the adoption of ironworking, though initially its impact was more in warfare and prestige items than in the production of tools, such as axes. The occurrence in burials in eastern France of bronze vessels and fine pottery vessels with elaborate painted, stamped, and incised decoration implies a continued interest in feasting. Despite all these changes, there is no need to postulate a change in social structure, though the relationship between the social elites of the Late Bronze Age and Hallstatt C is unclear; they may simply manifest themselves in different ways (deposition in burials rather than hoards). Nonetheless, there are many

blank areas, such as parts of western and northern France, where traditions were different and burials do not occur.

HALLSTATT D (C. 600–475 B.C.)

The major event in sixth-century B.C. France was the founding of Massalia (Marseille) by Greek colonists from Phocaea in Asia Minor. Its impact was not immediate, but until the end of the millennium it played a dominant role, controlling the Rhône route into central Europe. Secondary colonies secured the coast, with Agatha (present-day Agde) at the mouth of the Hérault and Emporion (modern-day Ampurias) commanding the major harbor just south of the Pyrenees. There may have been an early Etruscan enclave at Lattes at the mouth of the Hérault. The sixth century represents continuity, with Etruscan and Punic imports dominating in the south but with Greek ceramics, especially Attic black figure ware, becoming more common. In eastern France rich interments continued to be made but with a shift from the long sword to the dagger. The exception is central France, in the Berry and the Massif Central, where male burials disappear and the early phases of Hallstatt D (D1 and D2) are characterized by female burials with rich sets of bronze ornaments.

The major changes occurred in the last quarter of the century, with the rising importance of Marseille. Along the coast many settlements that were to become major urban centers had been established: Saint-Blaise near Marseille, Béziers, and Montlaurès, the predecessor of Narbonne, all produced black figure ware. Wine production was sufficiently well established for it to be exported in distinctive southern French amphorae. The amphorae are clear indicators of the trade routes into the interior, reaching as far as the Heuneburg on the Upper Danube.

The sixth century was the greatest period of hillfort construction from central Europe to Britain, though the function of the sites varied considerably, from major centers of trade, production, and political power, such as the Heuneburg, to sites briefly occupied in times of danger. Inland this period was the height of development of the *Fürstensitze*, hillforts that acted as magnets for foreign trade and around which rich burials are clustered. The process started in Hallstatt D1 in southern Germany, with

the Heuneburg, Asperg, and the Magdalensberg—too early for Marseille to be the cause. Developments in France were later, from about 525 B.C., with three identifiable centers: Bourges in the Berry, Vix at the headwaters of the Seine, and the Britzgyberg controlling the Belfort Gap, where the Rhône/Doubs route meets the Rhine.

Only Vix, with its defended hillfort on Mont Lassois, fits the *Fürstensitz* model closely. The Britzgyberg is a defended site with much imported pottery but no associated rich burials, and Bourges will be discussed in the next section. There were, however, other patterns. The lower Saône has produced rich burials, but they are not clustered at any particular point. They may well have been serviced by the site of Bragny-sur-Saône, an open settlement at the confluence of the Doubs and Saône that not only was in contact with Marseille but also was importing goods across the Alps from northern Italy. It was engaged in iron production and seems to have been a trading emporium rather than a political center.

LA TÈNE A (475–380 B.C.)

For the south, the fifth century represents the culmination of the processes already under way, and by 400 B.C. most of the characteristics of culture up to and beyond the Roman conquest were in place. In the sixth century, settlements such as Tamaris, 40 kilometers west of Marseille, were defended with stone ramparts, with houses built of stone or adobe on stone foundations. No longer were houses individually constructed, but whole settlements were laid out with terraced single-story and usually single-room houses. Most sites are small, between 0.5 and 5 hectares, and may lack features that are associated with urbanism, such as public buildings or industrial areas. Some, such as Nîmes, were to develop into major Roman cities.

Trade was a major activity, and quite commonly 20 to 30 percent of the pottery was imported, especially from Athens, Corinth, and Asia Minor. Rows of subterranean silos for grain are regular features of native sites. Marseille started striking its own coins at the end of the sixth century, and by the fifth century some of the native sites were producing their own. In contrast, the local metalwork was similar to that of inland Gaul—La Tène brooches, belt fittings, swords, and other items—even on Iberian set-

tlements, such as Ensérune. Although the houses give the impression of a relatively egalitarian society, some individuals were distinguished in death by richer grave goods, like the man buried on the ramparts of the Cayla de Mailhac. Many of the cremations at Ensérune are accompanied by La Tène swords and Greek and Etruscan vessels.

The immediate zone of impact of the south seems limited. In the west there are extensive finds up the Aude as far as Carcassonne but not into the upper Garenne; there are no imports in the small hilltop settlements or burials of the Gironde or the foothills of the Pyrenees. Up the Hérault route, pottery reached as far as Sévérac-le-Château, but there is no clear evidence that the gold and silver deposits of the southern Massif Central were yet being exploited. Only along the Rhône was penetration deep, and major settlements developed at Vienne and Lyon, the latter having buildings with painted plaster. Finds are absent from the upper Loire, however, and in the Auvergne only a couple of hilltop sites, Lijay and Bègue, have produced scraps of Attic pottery. Even the routes up the Doubs and the Saône seem to have collapsed in the fifth century, and most of the *Fürstensitze* were abandoned. Only Asperg continued to receive imports, probably over the Alps, as did Bourges, in the Berry.

Bourges lies at the confluence of the Auron and the Yèvre, providing a navigable route from central France to the Atlantic via the Loire. Excavations under the modern town have produced deposits of Hallstatt D3 and La Tène A, including one building with painted plaster. There are areas of intensive occupation, with several workshops engaged in industrial activity, including the production of bronze pins with inlays of amber or coral and exceptionally small, fragile brooches suitable only for the finest cloth. There is also black figure ware as well as Massaliot amphorae, and Bourges has produced more red figure ware than the rest of central and western Europe outside the Mediterranean zone. Associated burials are not rich, though people may have been buried under ostentatious mounds and the cremation placed in Etruscan *stamnoi*, two-handled vases, or flagons. Generally, gold is absent, though one recently excavated grave had a gold pin.

The wealthiest burials of La Tène A are found in western Germany along the Moselle (the Hunsrück-Eifel culture), in Champagne, and in the Ar-

dennes. In Champagne, in Late Hallstatt D, a large percentage of the population adopted inhumation, the women with their bronze jewelry (torcs, bracelets, and brooches) and some men with weapons—in Hallstatt D3 a dagger and in La Tène A spears and a long sword. Some men and women were buried with vehicles, normally four-wheeled in Hallstatt D and two-wheeled in La Tène A, the latter often with elaborate harnesses decorated in the new La Tène art style. There is no focus around individual high-status sites, the majority of the population living on small farming settlements. The Champagne burials lack the rich goldwork of the Hunsrück and have comparatively few imported Mediterranean goods (Etruscan flagons and red figure ware bowls as at Somme-Bionne). These objects probably arrived via the inhabitants of the Hunsrück, who in turn acquired them from northern Italy via routes over the Alps.

Champagne and Southwest Germany are seen as the origin of the La Tène (“Celtic”) art style and of the La Tène culture, which from the fifth and fourth centuries spread out in all directions, from Ireland to Romania. It usually is associated with the origin and spread of the Celts, and many maps of the origin of the Gauls who invaded northern Italy show them coming from this area. This, however, is based on a disputed reading of the classical sources. The Roman historian Livy lists the tribes that took part in the invasions, almost all of them located in central France. In his story, Ambigatus, king of the Bituriges, played a key role, and the archaeological record, with the preeminence of Bourges, seems to support this theory. The problem is that Livy places these events around 600 B.C., whereas the Greek historian Polybius and archaeology suggest a date of about 400 B.C.

LA TÈNE B–C (380–150 B.C.)

Within this time span there are thought to have been two important events. First, by the second century B.C., two Celtic tribal entities had appeared in southern France, the Volcae Tectosages and the Volcae Arecomici. Their presence is not detectable in archaeological finds, and there is no evidence of cultural or linguistic change; though La Tène-style metal objects were used and manufactured at sites such as Lattes, this was nothing new. The general trend in both Languedoc and Provence was a gener-

al abandonment of lowland sites in favor of small, defended hilltops.

The second event was the territorial expansion of Massalia. Because of increasing conflict with its neighbors, the city entered into an alliance with Rome, which needed a land route across the south of France. Some sites, such as Saint-Blaise, acquired Greek-style defenses, and Greek products almost drove out native products in parts of Provence. The Ligurians had distinctive religious practices, evidenced, for instance, in the stone sculptures of decapitated heads at Entremont. These sculptures probably date to the third century, as does the ritual site at Roquepertuse, with its portico surmounted by a bird of prey and with niches for skulls and seated warriors, possibly “heroes.”

In non-Mediterranean Gaul, the areas with rich burials of La Tène A are almost devoid of any burials in La Tène B. Imported Mediterranean goods virtually disappeared; goldwork also largely vanished. In northern France, burials of this period were mainly peripheral to Champagne, in the Paris Basin and northwestern France, and they included a few vehicle burials. The most exotic finds also tended to be peripheral to previous distributions, such as the gold-plated helmets from the river Seine at Amfreville (Eure) and from the cave at Agris in the Charente, both ritual depositions.

In the archaeological record, two new phenomena hint at some sort of state organization. First, from the third century, ritual sites start appearing, especially in Northwest France, such as at Gournay-sur-Aronde and Ribemont-sur-Ancre. Both had square-ditched enclosures containing religious structures, such as wooden buildings. Gournay produced large numbers of mutilated weapons, especially swords. So did Ribemont, though in lesser numbers; here there are buildings in which decapitated bodies were displayed, along with heaps of human femurs. Cult structures also appear on village sites, such as at Acy-Romance in Champagne, which included squatting male burials, probably human sacrifices. Many Roman temples in central and northern France are producing evidence of Middle and Late La Tène activity.

The second phenomenon was the appearance of large, open settlements of proto-urban character. In France the best documented are Levroux in the

Berry and Roanne on the upper Loire, sites of 30 hectares and 10 hectares, respectively, which start during the early second century B.C. (La Tène C1–2). In the fourth century, trade with the Mediterranean virtually faded away, but with the foundation of these sites, contact resumes, as evidenced by the appearance of Massaliot coins and fine Campanian tablewares and wine amphorae from central Italy. Coinage was adopted, initially high-value gold staters imitating those of Philip II of Macedon but later mass-produced cast potin coins, which may have allowed the development of a monetized market economy.

At Aulnat, near Clermont-Ferrand, in the territory of the Arverni, a complex of sites covering 2 to 3 square kilometers appeared in the late third century B.C. The complex includes cult areas, cemeteries (though no rich burials), and a high-status area with goldworking and silver working; coin production; and iron, glass, and other industries. There was also massive deposition of Italian wine amphorae. From the Greek philosopher and historian Posidonius one hears of Luernios, “the richest man of all Gaul,” who, in the mid-second century B.C., became king of the Arverni because of his largesse to his followers, “scattering gold and silver” and organizing a feast of food and wine. Posidonius also records that the Arverni controlled an area from the Rhône to the Atlantic, and Aulnat seemed to be the center of their power.

LA TÈNE D (150–30 B.C.)

In 125 B.C. Massalia asked for Rome’s aid. By 121 B.C. most of southern France had been conquered, and an expeditionary force under Bituitos, king of the Arverni, had been defeated on the River Isère. Roman power was extended to the headwaters of the Garenne, and a huge treasure at a sanctuary at Toulouse was seized; the Rhône route also was secured as far as Lyon and Geneva. Central and western Gaul was opened up to Italian trade, and the market was flooded with goods. It has been calculated that, in the 140 years it was occupied, the contents of a million amphorae were consumed on the *oppidum* of Mont Beuvray, some 150 a week.

The defeat of the Arverni may have destabilized Gaul—by the time Caesar attacked in 58 B.C., the Aedui and the Sequani were vying for supreme power in central Gaul, though the Arverni, under

their leader Vercingetorix, were to play the leading role in the final revolt in 52 B.C. The years around 120 B.C., however, saw a major change in the settlement patterns in Gaul and even east of the Rhine, with the establishment of defended *oppida* often directly replacing the open settlements, though in many areas no urban predecessor can be identified. By this time in central and probably northern France the normal political entity was the tribal state, usually an oligarchic government of a “senate” and annual magistrates, but like their Mediterranean counterparts, these states seem to have been unstable and prone to monarchical takeover.

In Provence and across northern France, burial evidence became more visible, including rich ones with increasing quantities of grave goods from the second century. By the end of the first century B.C., the richest graves included Italian ceramics (black Campanian wares and, later, red Arretine Samian ware); Italian wine amphorae and bronze vessels; local ceramics; weapons, such as swords and spurs; hearth furniture (especially iron firedogs); and highly decorated, bronze-bound wooden buckets, among other items. These burials were associated mainly with smaller settlements, and though it is known that the elite were resident on the *oppida*, the related cemeteries at, for instance, Mont Beuvray and the Titelberg in Luxembourg do not contain the richest burials.

In southern France after the Roman conquest, house structures started becoming more complex. In contrast, from their very foundation, the *oppida* included large, farmlike palisade enclosures, and at Mont Beuvray after 50 B.C. these structures evolved into palatial stone-built Mediterranean style houses, with open courtyards, mosaic pavements, hypocausts, and running water. The smaller houses in the artisan areas also were built independently from one another and were more substantial than their southern counterparts.

The elite were investing in their urban properties but preferred to be buried on their country estates. Both the burial and the settlement evidence document increasing disparities of wealth, similar to what was happening in republican Italy. In Gaul the major change was the way in which wealth was displayed. The huge consumption of wine (and so, presumably, feasting) continued into the Augustan period and then fell off as more money was spent on

private luxury, such as houses, or in the public arena on public buildings, such as temples and baths in the towns. In central and northern Gaul, the tribal states became the Roman unit of administration, whereas in southern Gaul, the apparently self-governing towns were too small, and under the reforms of Augustus, towns such as Nîmes became the centers of larger groupings similar to those of the north. Thus, after centuries of contrasting development, under Rome the whole of Gaul began evolving toward a common model.

See also **Hallstatt** (vol. 2, part 6); **La Tène** (vol. 2, part 6); **Oppida** (vol. 2, part 6); **Iron Age Feasting** (vol. 2, part 6).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Brunaux, J.-L. *The Celtic Gauls: Gods, Rites, and Sanctuaries*. London: Seaby, 1988.
- , ed. *Les sanctuaires celtiques et leurs rapports avec le monde méditerranéen*. Dossiers de Protohistoire 3. Paris: Éditions Errance, 1991.
- Chausserie-Laprée, Jean, ed. *Les temps des Gaulois en Provence*. Toulouse, France: Musée Saint-Raymond, 2002.
- Collis, J. R. *The Celts: Origins, Myths, and Inventions*. London: Tempus, 2003.
- Cunliffe, Barry W. *The Ancient Celts*. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1997.
- Diepeveen-Jansen, Marian. *People, Ideas, and Goods: New Perspectives on the "Celtic Barbarians" in Western and Central Europe (500–250 BC)*. Translated by Christine Jefferis. Amsterdam Archaeological Studies 7. Amsterdam: Amsterdam University Press, 2001.
- Gailledrat, Éric. *Les Ibères de l'Èbre à l'Hérault, VIe–IVe s. avant J.-C.* Monographies d'Archéologie Méditerranéenne 1. Lattes, France: Association pour la Recherche Archéologique en Languedoc Oriental, 1997.
- Goudineau, Christian. *Regard sur la Gaule*. Paris: Éditions Errance, 1998.
- Guichard, Vincent, and Franck Perrin, eds. *L'aristocratie celte à la fin de l'Âge du Fer*. Bibracte 5. Glux-en-Glenne, France: Centre Archéologique Européenne du Mont Beuvray, 2002.
- Guichard, Vincent, S. Sievers, and O. H. Urban, eds. *Les processus d'urbanisation à l'Âge du Fer. Eisenzeitliche Urbanisationsprozesse*. Bibracte 4. Glux-en-Glenne, France: Centre Archéologique Européenne du Mont Beuvray, 2000.
- Hermay, A., A. Hesnard, and H. Tréziny, eds. *Marseille grecque: La cité phocéenne (600–49 av. J.C.)*. Paris: Éditions Errance, 1999.
- Py, Michel. *Les Gaulois du Midi: De la fin de l'Âge de Bronze à la conquête romaine*. Paris: Hachette, 1993.

Roymans, N. *Tribal Societies in Northern Gaul: An Anthropological Perspective*. Cingula 12. Amsterdam: University of Amsterdam, 1990.

JOHN COLLIS

GERGOVIA

Between 58 and 53 B.C. Julius Caesar's conquest of Gaul had dealt successively with the east, north, and west of Gaul, but the center had remained virtually unscathed, especially the Massif Central, the homeland of the Arverni, the most powerful tribe in Gaul in the second century B.C. and still a major force in the first century. Among the Arverni, the leader of the anti-Roman group was a young noble, Vercingetorix, who attempted a coup d'état during the winter of 53–52 B.C. but was expelled from the main town, Gergovia. The setback was short-lived; Gergovia was quickly back in Vercingetorix's hands, and he started building a coalition with the neighboring tribal states to oppose Rome.

Caesar was in northern Italy, but he moved swiftly to combat any attack on the Roman province of Transalpine Gaul. He raised an army and, despite the fact that it was winter, crossed the Cevennes into the Auvergne. He moved on to gather his legions, which were in winter quarters around Agedincum (Sens). With these forces he was able to take the offensive, capturing the *oppida* (defended towns) of Vellaunodunum (Château-Landon), Cenabum (Orléans), and Avaricum (Bourges). Sending four legions north under Labienus against the Parisii, Caesar returned with the remaining six to attack Gergovia. Vercingetorix had arrived before him and had installed his troops in and around the *oppidum*.

Caesar describes the town as lying on a high, steep-sided hill, easily accessible only by a col (narrow neck of land joining two pieces of high ground) on the western side. The town was surrounded by a wall, with a second stone wall 2 meters high half-way up the slope; the Gallic forces were camped on the slopes, with garrisons on the neighboring hills. Caesar captured a poorly defended hill at the foot of the town and constructed his "large camp"; he subsequently captured a second hill "facing" the

town, on which he built the “small camp,” linked with the large one by a double ditch, or “duplex” (Caesar’s use of the word “duplex” has been interpreted by some scholars to mean two parallel ditches separated by a pathway, and by other scholars as two ditches on the side facing the enemy protecting the route). Rather than attempt a siege, Caesar launched an attack; though his troops overran the outer wall, attacked the gates, and even mounted the town wall, they were forced to retreat, the only defeat Caesar suffered in the field. It led to a general revolt among the Gauls, and but for a tactical mistake by Vercingetorix, leading to the siege at Alesia, the Romans might well have been forced to retreat from Gaul. The battle of Gergovia had almost changed the course of the history of the Western world.

As early as the sixteenth century the Italian cartographer Gabriele Simeoni located Gergovia on the Plateau de Merdogne just south of Clermont-Ferrand. On the summit there are traces of a rampart enclosing the 75-hectare plateau, with traces of stone buildings, pottery, and Gallic coins. In the 1860s, as part of Napoleon III’s research project to identify the sites in Caesar’s *De bello Gallico*, Colonel Eugène Stoffel carried out excavations to locate Caesar’s siege works. He claimed to have found Caesar’s large camp on the Serre d’Orcet and the small camp on a hill overlooking the village of La Roche Blanche, as well as lengths of the double ditch. The plan prepared by Napoleon III for his *Histoire de Jules César* (1865–1866), based on Stoffel’s excavations, has illustrated almost every edition of Caesar’s *De bello Gallico* since. At a visit by Napoleon III, the village of Merdogne officially changed its name to Gergovie. Unfortunately, the finds from the excavations have been mixed inextricably with those from Alise-Ste-Reine, and no details of Stoffel’s excavations were published. The ditches of the large camp were confirmed by excavations in the 1930s conducted by M.-M. Gorce, but his report is fairly schematic and produced no datable finds.

Scientific excavations on the plateau itself between 1932 and 1949 showed that it had been densely occupied in the second half of the first century B.C. and abandoned about 10 B.C. for the new town of Augustonemeton beneath modern Clermont-Ferrand. Only a double stone temple of Gallo-Roman type continued in later use. The exca-

vations located a sequence of small industrial stone buildings on the southern side of the *oppidum*, where the gateway attacked by the Romans probably lay. A second gate of mortared masonry was found in the southwest corner of the site. The ramparts, still visible on the southern and western flanks of the *oppidum*, consist of a dry-stone wall, to whose rear stone buttresses have been added; in front there is a terrace 12.5 meters wide, producing a vertical face some 3 meters high. Nothing, however, dated to the period of the Caesar’s attack in 52 B.C.

Several other sites have been suggested, most notably the site of the Côtes-de-Clermont, a volcanic plateau to the north of Clermont-Ferrand with Iron Age occupation as well as a Roman temple and settlement. Several books, including a detailed analysis of Caesar’s text, have been published, promoting this alternative site. Excavations by Vincent Guichard from 1992 show that the Iron Age occupation is too early for the period of Caesar, and the claimed “defenses” are part of post-medieval field terracing. The supposed Roman structures on Chanturgue (the “small fort”) also are more recent field boundaries, and the layout of the town of Montferrand (the “large camp”) relate to the medieval planned town, not a Roman fort.

Changes in the dating of Late Iron Age finds also mean that some from the traditional site can be dated to the middle of the first century. Excavations elsewhere, however, show that there was a succession of sites predating the foundation of Gergovie: an open settlement at Aulnat (second century B.C.), followed by the *oppida* of Corent (c. 120–80 B.C.) and Gondole (c. 80–70 B.C.). Thus, the Greek writer Strabo’s statement that Vercingetorix was born at Gergovia is unsupported. Ongoing excavations show that the history of the rampart on Gergovie is more complex than was assumed, with a Late Bronze Age or Early Iron Age rampart preceding the stone wall; the buttresses represent an Augustan reconstruction. Guichard’s excavations on the “forts” excavated by Stoffel have confirmed the ditches, with finds typical of the middle of the first century B.C. as well as Roman military equipment (stone ballista balls, iron catapult points). The Lac de Sarliève, which Caesar’s large camp overlooks, has been shown by recent excavations to be a post-Roman phenomenon, which accounts for Caesar’s

not mentioning it. The traditional site thus can be accepted as Gergovia.

See also **Warfare and Conquest** (vol. 1, part 1); **Oppida** (vol. 2, part 6).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Brogan, Olwen, and Émile Desforges. "Gergovia." *Archaeological Journal* 97 (1940): 1–36.
- Chatelet, P., and H. Chatelet. "Eugène Georges Céleste Stoffel, 1821–1907." *Association site de Gergovie* 14 (1997): 5–20.
- Deberge, Yann, and Vincent Guichard. "Nouvelles recherches sur les travaux Césariens devant Gergovie (1995–1999)." *Revue archéologique du centre de la France* 39 (2000): 83–112.
- Eychart, Paul. *La bataille de Gergovie (Printemps 52 av. J.C.): Les faits archéologiques, le sites, le faux historique*. Nonette, France: Editions Créer, 1987.
- Gorce, M.-M. *César devant Gergovie*. Tunis, Paris: Editions Le Minaret, 1942.
- Holmes, Thomas Rice Edward. *Caesar's Conquest of Gaul*. London: Macmillan, 1899.
- Napoléon III. *Histoire de Jules César*. 3 vols. Paris: Plon, 1865–1866.
- Provost, Michel, and Christine Mennessier-Jouannet. *Le Puy-de-Dôme*, pp. 33–44, 266–291. Carte archéologique de la Gaule Series 63/2. Paris: Fondation Maison des Sciences de l'Homme, 1994.
- Texier, Yves. *La question de Gergovie: Essai sur un problème de localisation*. Vol. 251. Brussels: Collection Latomus, 1999.

JOHN COLLIS



IRON AGE BRITAIN

FOLLOWED BY FEATURE ESSAY ON:

Danebury 229

Iron Age Britain is conventionally defined as the period from the first use of iron, c. 750 B.C., to the Roman conquest, which began in southeastern England in A.D. 43. It is known almost entirely through archaeological evidence. Though the existence of Britain was known to the Classical world, it was on the very margin of its knowledge, and most of the classical authors provide little detailed evidence. They regarded the inhabitants of Britain as a separate people from those of Gaul, though they recognized cultural similarities. Julius Caesar was an eyewitness during his invasions of 55 and 54 B.C., and his account is valuable for the parts of southeastern England he visited. The archaeological record is dominated by evidence of domestic settlements, of which several thousand are known, but there is little evidence for burials or ceremonial monuments.

The Iron Age is divided into Early (c. 750 to 300 B.C.), Middle (c. 300 to 100 B.C.), and Late (c. 100 B.C. to the Roman conquest) phases. This scheme is best suited to southeastern England, and elsewhere a simpler division into Earlier (to 300 B.C.) and Later (after 300 B.C.) is more appropriate.

AGRICULTURE AND SUBSISTENCE

Most people in Iron Age Britain were engaged in agriculture, and agriculture was the main source of

food. Some coastal sites exploited fish and other marine resources, but wild animals were elsewhere a minimal part of the diet, though some wild plant resources may have been more widely exploited. The landscape of Iron Age Britain, however, had been subjected to more than three thousand years of farming and human over-exploitation had begun to take its toll. Added to this was a long-term climatic deterioration: the warmer and drier conditions of the Bronze Age gave way to a cooler and wetter climate. The combination of human activity and climatic change made some marginal environments, especially upland and moorland areas, increasingly hostile to agriculture. Thus, more emphasis was placed on the lower and more sustainable regions.

Iron Age agriculture involved an increasingly complex strategy for the management of plant and animal resources. The annual cycle of the seasons dominated the rhythms of everyday life, and the critical episodes of sowing and harvesting posed a demand for the maximum labor force. Important changes in the agricultural economy had begun in the Bronze Age and continued throughout the Iron Age. The landscape was increasingly organized and divided, with field systems and other boundaries becoming more common; this organization may have had a functional role in managing crops and ani-

mals, but it also may have marked the beginning of more strictly defined rights to the use of land. New crops were introduced; emmer wheat was replaced by spelt, and naked barley by hulled barley. By the end of the Iron Age, bread wheat was also common, probably associated with an expansion of farming into areas of heavier soils. As well as wheat and barley, other crops included peas, beans, and flax.

There were fewer changes in animal-rearing strategies, and most sites have produced evidence for the three main domesticates: cattle, sheep, and pigs. Dogs, horses, and domestic fowl were also kept. Pigs were kept for meat and were killed when they had achieved maximum body weight. Sheep provided meat and milk, but many were kept for longer periods as a source of wool and manure. In the case of cattle, the costs of keeping and feeding them beyond the point where they produced the best meat had to be balanced against their value as a source of milk, leather, and motive power for traction. Actual strategies varied regionally: in southern England, sheep were valued for their manure to support cereal production, while in other regions pigs were more suited to the local environment.

Most agricultural production was for local consumption. Storage of food, as well as seed for the next year, was important, and many sites show evidence of storage in pits or aboveground structures. Salt production became increasingly important, from both seawater and inland mineral sources. It played a major part in the preservation and storage of food, which may have permitted trade in food-stuffs.

Much less is known about how such agricultural produce was transformed into food for consumption. Cereal crops were carefully processed, and the grain ground with querns (grinding stones); a significant technological advance was marked by the introduction of rotary querns in the middle of the Iron Age. Initially, the only method of cooking was over an open hearth, but the development of the closed clay oven in the Middle Iron Age offered a wider range of possibilities. There is little evidence for a change of diet throughout the Iron Age, but by the end of the period some sites showed a dominance of pig similar to the pattern found in continental Europe. At the same time, Mediterranean commodities, including wine and olive oil, were being imported.

SETTLEMENT AND DOMESTIC SPACE

Evidence for settlements is plentiful, but quite varied regionally. One common theme is the presence of roundhouses, up to 15 meters in diameter, though not all such structures may have been used as domestic residences (fig. 1). The houses had a single entrance, orientated toward the east or south-east, for ideological or cosmological reasons rather than for functional purposes. They were mostly built of timber, with wattle-and-daub walls and thatched roofs, though where good building stone was available, this was used for the walls. Regional variations occurred, especially in the later Iron Age: in Cornwall, courtyard houses were grouped around a central open space, and in northern and western Scotland the basic roundhouse plan was elaborated into a stone tower, or broch.

The typical settlement may have contained ancillary structures such as pits and barns in addition to the roundhouses. The sites were sometimes open but often enclosed with a wall or bank and ditch. Isolated settlements of a single household were common, but they could be clustered into larger groups. In eastern England in the Middle and Late Iron Age, larger nucleated clusters of houses were common. In parts of northern Scotland, brochs were surrounded by smaller houses to make villages. The reasons for these complex variations in settlement type remain unexplained. Though settlements were mostly stable and permanently occupied, other sites may have been seasonally occupied for fairs, the extraction and processing of raw materials, or for seasonal grazing.

The most prominent of Iron Age settlements were the hillforts, often very large and elaborately defended enclosures. They were built in different parts of Britain at different periods, and in some regions they are rare or even nonexistent. The earliest were built in the Late Bronze Age, while in south-eastern England they all belong to the Late Iron Age. Hillforts certainly had many different functions: some were densely occupied, while others show little evidence of permanent or large-scale occupation and may have been for other purposes such as ceremonial gatherings or temporary refuges.

Much attention has been paid to the hillforts of southern central England, especially Danebury in Hampshire and Maiden Castle in Dorset. Many hillforts were built in this region in the sixth and fifth



Fig. 1. Demonstration area at Butser Ancient Farm in the wintertime. © BUTSER ANCIENT FARM. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

centuries B.C. and show evidence of dense and organized occupation. From the fourth century, however, many were abandoned, while others continued, often enlarged or provided with more elaborate and impressive defenses. These developed hillforts are interpreted as a sign of increasing centralization of political and economic control, but the sequence in this region is not typical of Britain as a whole.

In the Late Iron Age, a new type of site appeared in southeastern England. These are called *oppida* (*oppidum*—the singular form—is the Latin term for town, used by Caesar to refer to similar sites in France). They are large sites, often enclosed with complex earthworks; many were in river-valley locations, and some, such as Verulamium (later St. Albans) and Camulodunum (Colchester), were succeeded by Roman towns. The Iron Age sites contained areas for settlement, craft production, ritual activity, and burial. In some cases, especially at Colchester, the evidence suggests the residence and burial site of a royal elite.

TECHNOLOGY AND PRODUCTION

The production and distribution of manufactured goods became more complex and more specialized during the Iron Age, though with considerable regional variation. There is little evidence of workshops or other places of manufacture, and most of the evidence comes from the finished items themselves or the tools used to make them. New technologies were developed: as well as iron, the manufacture and working of glass for beads, bracelets, and enamel inlays was perfected by the end of the period. New uses were also found for existing technologies: rotary motion was adapted for use in wood lathes, pottery wheels, and rotary querns for grinding grain. Pyrotechnology was also improved: furnaces for smelting iron and ovens for cooking are well documented, and it is possible that pottery kilns were also used by the end of the Iron Age.

Though flint was still used expediently for small tools, and bronze for sheet-metal items and cast ornaments, iron largely replaced them as the basic material for tools and weapons. Iron ores suitable for

smelting with the available technology were widespread throughout Britain, which was a major factor in its adoption. Until the Late Middle Ages in Europe, furnaces were unable to produce a temperature high enough to melt iron for casting, so all iron objects were wrought by hammering. There is little evidence for knowledge of techniques such as quenching or tempering, but different ores were recognized as having different properties and selected for different purposes. Tool types suited to ironworking were developed, and by the end of the Iron Age, tools such as axes, hammers, knives, chisels, and reaping hooks were produced in a form that changed little for the next two thousand years. Iron was rare in the early period, though complex objects such as swords and wheel tires were produced, but from the third century B.C. onward it became more common. At the same time, production was increasingly concentrated in the areas with better ores, and their products were distributed over long distances as ingots in standard shapes and sizes. The final manufacture and repair of iron objects was much less specialized, and most sites have produced some evidence of ironworking.

Bronze continued to be used for sheet-metal vessels such as cauldrons and bowls, as well as for a variety of cast objects, including brooches. The copper, tin, and lead used in its production came mainly from western Britain, but in the Late Iron Age brass (an alloy of copper and zinc) was imported from the Roman world. There is no evidence of gold until the introduction of gold coinage in the second century B.C. It is possible, however, that gold may have been more common, but it was recycled rather than deposited. In the Late Iron Age gold and silver coins were produced in much of southern and eastern England, and gold was also used to manufacture torcs (neck rings of twisted metal, see fig. 2).

Stone was quarried to make querns and whetstones. In the Early Iron Age many local sources were exploited, but later production was centered on a restricted number of locations whose products were traded over sometimes very long distances. Salt, whether from marine or terrestrial sources, was also derived from a limited number of locations and exchanged over similar distances.

One of the most common finds on archaeological sites, especially in southern and eastern England and western Scotland, is pottery; elsewhere, howev-

er, it is rare or even nonexistent, and its place was presumably taken by containers of organic materials such as wood or leather. Pottery was hand thrown for most of the Iron Age, but in the last century before the Roman conquest wheel-turned vessels were produced. The range of pottery forms varied greatly from region to region and changed through time but included versions of jars and bowls. From about 20 B.C. Roman fine wares were imported and copied, and these included new forms of plates, beakers and cups.

Technologies using organic materials have left little trace apart from their specialist tools. Textile production is indicated by spindle whorls and loom weights, while little survives of leather and basketry. Some of the most complex artifacts would have been made of wood, such as houses, vehicles, and boats, but little evidence survives. Most production would have been for domestic or local use, but there are increasing signs of specialized production and distribution through the Iron Age. The increasingly localized production of iron, stone, and salt has been noted already, and other technologies such as gold, bronze, and glass were probably also dominated by specialists. The growing standardization of pottery forms suggests similar specialist production, while petrological analysis shows that, especially in western Britain, production was largely restricted to a limited number of locations whose wares were widely exchanged.

Some of the finest products of the Iron Age were made for people of high status by highly skilled craft workers. Decorated metalwork such as mirrors, shields, helmets, and sword scabbards, as well as personal ornaments such as torcs and brooches, show an extraordinarily high level of skill; other items such as chariots and coins were also the work of skilled specialists.

RITUAL, RELIGION, AND THE DEAD

For most of the Iron Age throughout Britain there is no evidence of formal burial as a means of disposing of the dead. This does not imply that the dead were not treated with respect, merely that, whatever the rites adopted, they have left no regularly recoverable evidence. Many sites have produced small fragments of human bone, and it is possible that the normal rite in most regions was exposure and ex-carnation—the body would have been left to de-



Fig. 2. Gold torc from Snettisham, Norfolk. © ERICH LESSING/ART RESOURCE, NY. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

compose and fragment naturally. There is, however, growing evidence for regional traditions of formal burial.

The best documented is that of East Yorkshire, where from the fourth to the first century B.C. inhumation burials were placed under small square-ditched barrows. Many of the dead were simply accompanied by a pot or personal ornaments, but a few graves were much richer. In these the dead were buried with a chariot and other rich items. This style of burial is similar to that practiced in western Europe, and it was once thought that this indicated an actual migration from the Continent. The burial rite is not identical, however, and other features of the East Yorkshire people, such as houses and pottery, are entirely indigenous. It is now thought that a local group adopted Continental practices. Similar burials are known in smaller numbers elsewhere in eastern Britain, and such imitation of Continental culture may have been more widespread.

Other regional groups of inhumations are known. One in Cornwall is marked by the use of stone cists. Elsewhere, radiocarbon dating is beginning to identify groups of unaccompanied inhumations as belonging to the Iron Age. A small group of burials of males with weapons is also known; such warrior burials are not regional but widely scattered.

From about 100 B.C., cremation burial was adopted in southern and southeastern England. Many of the burials were poorly furnished but a small number contained much richer grave goods, including imported pottery, bronze and silver vessels, and amphorae (wine containers). This burial tradition is very similar to that of western Europe; again, as with the East Yorkshire burials, these were once attributed to immigrants but are now seen as part of a much more complex pattern of social change in the final centuries of the Iron Age.

For most of the Iron Age there are no formal sites of ritual activity separate from the domestic sphere, but domestic life was highly ritualized. Many of the finds from pits, ditches, and houses on settlement sites are not casually discarded rubbish, but carefully selected and deposited items. Human remains are found in storage pits, but so too are placed deposits of animal skeletons, pottery, and querns. Some are the remains of feasting, others may be deliberate deposits as part of ritual practices designed to ensure the continuity of everyday life.

Other deposits away from settlement sites, especially of metalwork, are also best interpreted as deliberate offerings. Many were in rivers or other watery places. At Flag Fen, Peterborough, a long tradition of depositing metal objects, begun in the Bronze Age, continued through most of the Iron

Age. Many of the Iron Age swords and much of the finest metalwork, such as shields and helmets, have come from rivers in eastern England such as the Thames. A Late Iron Age cluster of deposits at Snettisham, Norfolk, was also a votive deposit, though here on dry land. Many gold torcs have been found there.

It is not until the first century B.C. that formal shrines and temples appear, though only in southern England. Some, as at Danebury, are buildings of an unusual rectangular shape within settlements and are thought to have a non-domestic function. Others, such as Hayling Island, Hampshire, are more clearly copied from the Continental style of Roman-Celtic temple. Some of these temples are accompanied by many deposits of coins, metalwork, and other items.

SOCIAL ORGANIZATION

Despite the plentiful evidence regarding everyday domestic, agricultural, and craft activities, it is difficult to define the nature of Iron Age society and social organization. This is partly due to the almost total absence of burials, which elsewhere are an important source of evidence for individual and group identities. As it is, very little is known about how concepts of age, gender, and the family were constructed in the Iron Age. The fact that one of the rich chariot burials in East Yorkshire was that of a female suggests that positions of high status were not exclusively male.

Although not all round structures were necessarily used as domestic residences, the ubiquitous presence of the roundhouse implies a standard residential group, probably a single family. The limited human skeletal evidence shows that survival beyond the age of thirty-five was rare, and so families would seldom have comprised three living generations, though larger groups could have been constructed genealogically.

Two critical questions concern the degree of social differentiation in terms of individuals' status, and the nature and degree of political centralization and regional groups. Where there is burial evidence, as in East Yorkshire or southeastern England in the Late Iron Age, the presence of occasionally much richer graves suggests the existence of some form of social differentiation. Where this evidence is not available, the picture is more difficult to interpret.

The rich metalwork deposited in the rivers of eastern England suggests the presence of an elite, but that is not matched by the settlement record. There is very little differentiation in the size or contents of individual roundhouses, and for most of the Iron Age the archaeological record shows no sign of deposited wealth. Although by the end of the Iron Age it is clear that, at least in the southeast, there were political groupings ruled by kings, it would be wrong to project that type of organization back into the earlier periods. Discerning the extent and nature of any elite remains problematic for much of the period.

Social groupings and social organization above the level of the family are very difficult to determine, and the dominant picture is one of regional variability. Settlements vary from isolated houses to large nucleated villages. Most nucleated sites show little difference between houses, but the broch villages found in parts of northwestern Scotland may have been socially differentiated. A wide variety of community relations may have existed at the local level.

The ability of some Iron Age groups to construct elaborate hillforts, and the presence of the hillforts themselves, have been interpreted as a sign of a hierarchical and politically centralized society. It is not known, however, how the labor for such projects was organized, and the hillforts show little, apart from the defenses, to distinguish them from ordinary sites in terms of architecture or material culture. Even if they are taken as a symbol of political organization, the hillforts were a very regional phenomenon, and societies without hillforts may have been very differently organized.

The archaeological record is characterized by a pattern of regional variation in such themes as settlement type, architecture, burial rites, and pottery styles, but the meaning of such variation is unclear. This variability occurs at different scales: in some cases it may be a response to the availability of environmental resources, or the product of specialist rather than domestic production. Whether any of these patterns of cultural variation should be seen as the material expression of a regional social identity remains to be clarified.

Whatever type of social group existed in the Iron Age, relations between them were not always peaceful. The presence of sling stones, sometimes

stockpiled, on many sites indicates warfare, and the available skeletal remains show much evidence of violence.

LATE IRON AGE CHANGES

From c. 150 B.C. many important changes are visible in the archaeological record for Iron Age Britain. The underlying social and cultural changes primarily affected southern and eastern England, but their impact may have been felt much farther afield. The changes affected settlement patterns, material culture, technology, burial, and ritual and political organization. Many of the key elements of these changes have already been noted.

Coinage of gold and cast bronze began to circulate in southeastern England c. 150 B.C. The earliest coins were imported from France, but they were soon imitated locally. By the end of the Iron Age, gold and silver coins were in use over most of southern and eastern England, and in the extreme southeast, bronze coinage was in circulation, too. The gold, silver, and early bronze coins were all of high value and were used for political purposes rather than for commercial transactions; the smaller bronze coins are found mainly on the Late Iron Age nucleated sites and may represent a move toward a money-based exchange system.

Roman amphorae containing wine were imported from c. 100 B.C., first in southern England and then in the southeast. During the first century B.C. other Continental practices were adopted in Britain: cremation burial, wheel-turned pottery, and temples. In other fields, such as the design of swords and brooches, Britain continued to follow prevailing Continental fashions. Roman bronze vessels for serving wine and for washing were imported, and from c. 20 B.C. fine tableware was imported and imitated. Other innovations included the introduction of sets of bronze implements for toilet and cosmetic purposes, suggesting a new concern for the body and cleanliness.

In settlement terms, the most obvious change is the emergence of the nucleated sites, or *oppida*, in the southeast. These represented a strikingly new element in the landscape and a new focus for political and ritual activity.

The explanation of these changes in the archaeology of southern and eastern England has been a

major point of debate. Older interpretations tried to account for them as the result of immigration from the Continent, either before or after Julius Caesar's conquest of Gaul in the 50s B.C., but neither the nature nor the chronology of these changes fits well with such an idea. More recent explanations have referred to the political and economic impact of the expanding Roman Empire on regions beyond the military frontier. Critics of these ideas have in turn questioned the quantity of Roman imports and their significance, as well as the rather passive role assigned to Britain in such accounts. They have instead emphasized the developments in indigenous social organization that allowed these emerging contacts with the Roman world to be exploited so successfully.

The problem is undoubtedly complex, involving both indigenous development and interaction with the rapidly changing political structure of western Europe as Rome expanded its empire in the late second and first centuries B.C. It is important to recognize that these changes took place over a long period. Indigenous Iron Age society had been changing through the Middle Iron Age, not least by increased specialization of production, agricultural expansion, and changes in settlement pattern; the sheer quantity of manufactured artifacts increased enormously at that time. The importation and imitation of Roman goods was also a long process, not a single event. It is equally important not to project the post-conquest conditions back to an earlier period: the fact that the site of Iron Age Verulamium (St. Albans) became the site of a Roman town does not imply that it functioned as a town in the pre-conquest period. There is also a question whether the changes in the archaeological record reflect real changes in Iron Age social and economic organization, or in their cultural practices. Politically, the rich burials, the coins, and evidence of the classical authors suggest the emergence of a hierarchical and tribal society ruled by kings. It is possible, however, that changes in practices for the disposal of the dead and the deposition of wealth simply make this pattern of social organization more visible than it had been previously. Perhaps more far-reaching may have been cultural changes such as the adoption of Roman eating habits, including wine, foodstuffs, and tablewares, as well as a concern for bodily hygiene and cosmetics.

When Julius Caesar invaded Britain in 55 and 54 B.C., it had already been undergoing major political and economic changes for a century, at least partly due to contact with the Continent. Caesar's invasions drew Britain, or at least southeastern England, still further into contact with the Roman Empire, with significant effects on indigenous culture. When the final Roman conquest began in A.D. 43, southeastern England fell very rapidly, but resistance was much stronger in the north and west. It took several decades to subdue England and Wales; the northern frontier fluctuated through time, but although much of Scotland was at one time under Roman rule, the whole of Iron Age Britain was never conquered.

See also **Maiden Castle** (vol. 1, part 1); **Flag Fen** (vol. 2, part 5); **Oppida** (vol. 2, part 6); **Hillforts** (vol. 2, part 6); **Ironworking** (vol. 2, part 6); **Coinage of Iron Age Europe** (vol. 2, part 6); **Iron Age Social Organization** (vol. 2, part 6); **Danebury** (vol. 2, part 6); **Agriculture** (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Champion, T. C., and J. R. Collis, eds. *The Iron Age in Britain and Ireland: Recent Trends*. Sheffield, U.K.: J. R. Collis, 1996.
- Creighton, J. *Coinage and Power in Late Iron Age Britain*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 2000.
- Cunliffe, Barry W. *Iron Age Communities in Britain: An Account of England, Scotland, and Wales from the Seventh Century B.C. until the Roman Conquest*. 3d ed. London: Routledge, 1991.
- . *Danebury: Anatomy of an Iron Age Hillfort*. London: Batsford, 1983.
- Gwilt, Adam, and Colin Haselgrove, eds. *Reconstructing Iron Age Societies: New Approaches to the British Iron Age*. Oxford: Oxbow, 1997.
- Hambleton, Ellen. *Animal Husbandry Regimes in Iron Age Britain: A Comparative Study of Faunal Assemblages from British Iron Age Sites*. BAR British Series, no. 282. Oxford: Archaeopress, 1999.
- Haselgrove, Colin. "The Iron Age." In *The Archaeology of Britain: An Introduction from the Upper Palaeolithic to the Industrial Revolution*. Edited by John Hunter and Ian Ralston, pp. 113–134. London: Routledge, 1999.
- Hill, J. D. *Ritual and Rubbish in the Iron Age of Wessex: A Study on the Formation of a Specific Archaeological Record*. BAR British Series, no. 242. Oxford: Tempus Reparatum, 1995.
- James, Simon, and Valery Rigby. *Britain and the Celtic Iron Age*. London: British Museum Press, 1997.
- Morris, Elaine L. "Production and Distribution of Pottery and Salt in Iron Age Britain: A Review." *Proceedings of the Prehistoric Society* 60 (1994): 371–393.
- Piggott, Stuart. *The Druids*. New York: Thames and Hudson, 1985.
- Sharples, Niall M. *English Heritage Book of Maiden Castle*. London: Batsford, 1991.
- Stead, I. M. *Celtic Art: In Britain before the Roman Conquest*. 2d ed. Cambridge, Mass.: Harvard University Press, 1996.
- . "The Snettisham Treasure: Excavations in 1990." *Antiquity* 65 (1991): 447–465.
- Whimster, Rowan. *Burial Practices in Iron Age Britain: A Discussion and Gazetteer of the Evidence c. 700 B.C.–A.D. 43*. BAR British Series, no. 90. Oxford: British Archaeological Reports, 1981.

TIMOTHY CHAMPION

DANE BURY

The Iron Age hillfort of Danebury dominates the chalk lowland of western Hampshire. Although the hill is not particularly high—only 465 feet above sea level—it can be seen from miles around, and from the hilltop a vast panorama of lowland opens up with distant views of several other contemporary hillforts.

The earthwork fortifications of Danebury occupy the end of an east–west ridge and are very well preserved. Three distinct circuits can be traced. The inner earthwork, which was the main defensive circuit throughout, encloses a roughly circular area of some 12 acres (almost 5 hectares). As originally built the fortification had two entrances on opposite sides of the enclosure, but during the life of the fort one entrance was blocked, whereas the other, on the east side of the fort, was strengthened with forward-projecting hornworks that still dominate the approach. The middle earthwork ran between the two gates and was constructed to create an annex, possibly for corralling animals, sometime during the life of the fort. The outer earthwork is comparatively slight. Unlike the other two earthworks, which comprise a rampart and a ditch, the outer earthwork is really only a ditch with the spoil thrown up in low mounds on both sides. The outer earthwork is the earliest of the enclosures on Danebury Hill and

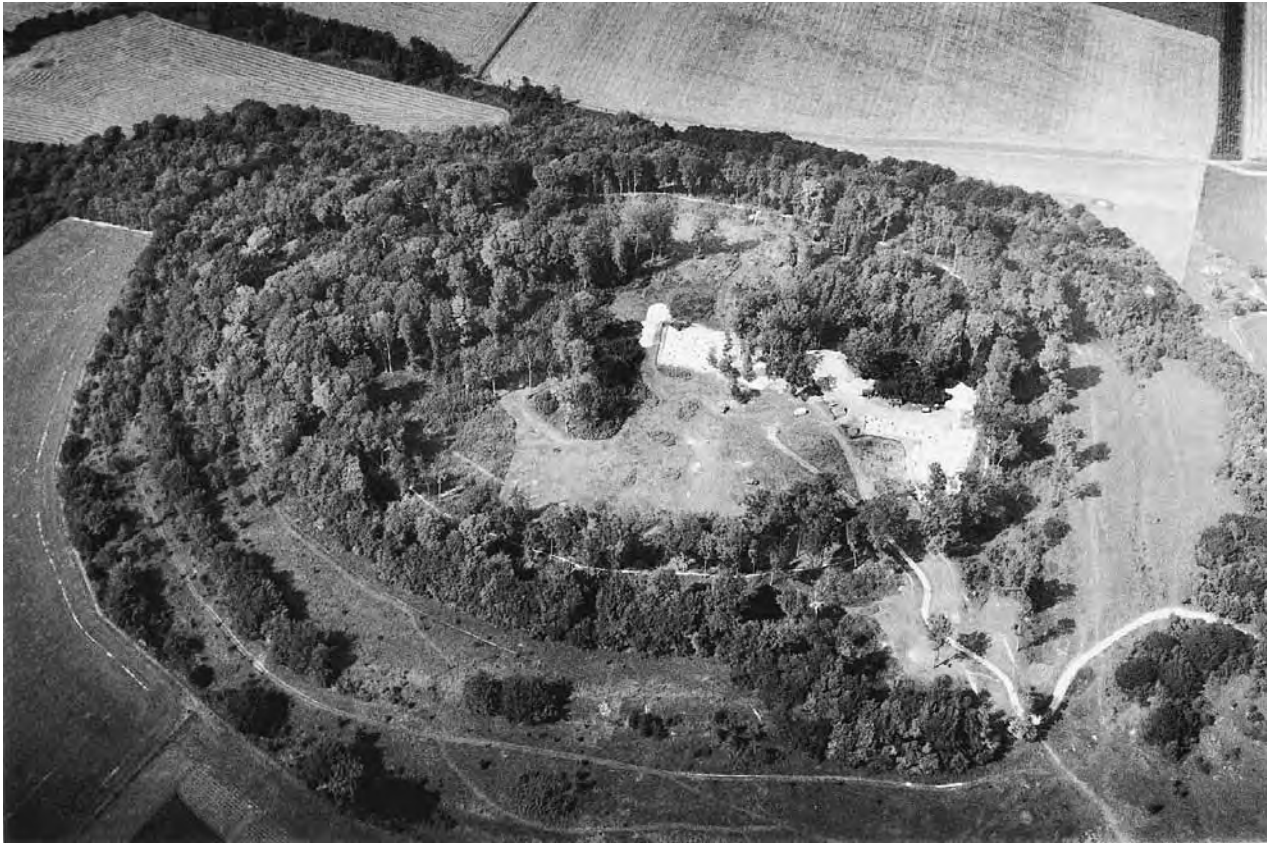


Fig. 1. Aerial of Danebury showing the 1978 excavations in progress. PHOTOGRAPH BY BARRY CUNLIFFE. COURTESY OF THE DANEbury TRUST. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

dates to the Late Bronze Age (c. 1000–700 B.C.); it is joined by a linear earthwork boundary that has been traced eastward for several miles toward the valley of the River Itchen.

Excavations at Danebury began in 1969 and continued annually until 1988. During the twenty seasons of work the entrances were examined, the earthwork circuits were sectioned, and 57 percent of the interior of the main fortified area was totally excavated. This work established that within the Late Bronze Age enclosure, defined by the outer earthwork, the first defense, probably a palisaded enclosure, was erected in the sixth century B.C. This first enclosure was replaced a century or so later by the inner earthwork, built originally as a massive timber-faced rampart fronted by a deep ditch. At this stage there were two gates. The earthworks and gates underwent various phases of modification, the most significant coming around 300 B.C., when the rampart was heightened and reconstructed to have a steeply sloping outer face fronted by a deep V-

sectioned ditch. From the bottom of the ditch to the top of the rampart measured about 6 meters (20 feet). At this stage the southwest entrance was blocked, and the east entrance began to be massively extended. In this later stage of its life the hillfort was intensively occupied. The end came some time in the first half of the first century B.C., when the gate was destroyed by fire, and there is some evidence to suggest the slaughter of the inhabitants. After this the enclosure continued to be used for another fifty years or so, but activity was at a low level and may have been linked to the continued use of a temple complex in the center of the old settlement.

Throughout its life from c. 500 to c. 50 B.C. the hillfort was occupied. From an early stage a system of roads was established with a main axial street running between the two gates. Even after the southwest gate was blocked the street remained the main axis. Other streets branched out from just inside the main entrance and ran roughly concentrically

around the crest of the hill. Amid the streets were arranged circular houses, rectangular post-built storage buildings, and a large number of storage pits. Toward the center of the site, occupying a prominent position directly visible from the entrance, was a cluster of rectangular buildings that were probably the main shrines of the settlement.

There is, throughout the occupation, a sense of order in the layout of the various buildings and activities. In the early stage, when both gates were in use, the main occupation zone lay to the south of the main street, whereas the area to the north was used mainly for storage. After the southwest gate was blocked the order was reversed, suggesting that a major conceptual change had taken place.

In the last two centuries or so of the settlement's life a rigorous order seems to have been imposed. The rows of four- and six-post storage buildings arranged along the streets were rebuilt many times over on the same plots, whereas immediately behind the ramparts—where the stratigraphical evidence is particularly well preserved and the circular houses cluster—it is possible to distinguish six major phases of rebuilding. In this area individual building plots can be distinguished. Although each had a different structural history, their discrete spatial identities were maintained, suggesting continuity of ownership over a long period of time. Arrangements of this kind indicate a high level of centralized control.

The most frequently occurring structures within the fort were storage pits, of which more than one thousand have been examined. For the most part they were probably used for the storage of seed grain in the period between harvest and the next sowing. Experiments have shown that, so long as the pits were properly sealed and airtight, the seed remained fresh and fertile. Evidence from many of the pits indicates that propitiatory offerings were made once the grain was removed, presumably to thank the chthonic (earth) deities for protecting the

seed and in anticipation of a fruitful harvest. The offerings vary but include sets of tools, pots, animals complete or in part, and human remains.

Activities carried out within the fort included ironsmithing, bronze casting, carpentry, wattle work and basketry, the weaving and spinning of wool, and the milling of grain. Additional evidence points to the existence of complex exchange systems involving the importation and redistribution of goods, including salt from the seacoast, iron ingots, and shale bracelets. The presence of a large number of carefully made stone weights is clear evidence that a system of careful measurement was in operation. In all probability the hillfort, in its developed state, was a place where the central functions of redistribution were carried out to serve people living in a much wider territory.

The excavation of a number of Iron Age settlements in the landscape around Danebury showed that, although a number of farms existed during the early phase of the fort's existence, after the major reconstruction c. 300 B.C. farmsteads for some distance around were abandoned. This coincides with an increase in the density and intensity of occupation within the fort, the implication being that the rural population coalesced within the defenses. Although this may have been a response to a period of unrest, it could equally be explained as a feature of socioeconomic change resulting in a greater degree of centralization.

See also **Hillforts** (vol. 2, part 6).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Cunliffe, Barry. *Danebury Hillfort*. Stroud, U.K.: Tempus, 2003.

———. *Danebury: An Iron Age Hillfort in Hampshire*. Vol. 6, *A Hillfort Community in Perspective*. Council for British Archaeology Research Report 102. London: Council for British Archaeology Research, 1995.

BARRY CUNLIFFE



IRON AGE IRELAND

FOLLOWED BY FEATURE ESSAY ON:

Irish Royal Sites 239

Iron Age Ireland suffers from a paucity of sites and serious dating problems, which makes it difficult to construct a coherent framework within which to attempt interpretation. Thus, the Iron Age lingers in the long shadow of medieval Ireland; the abundant and varied medieval literature and the rich and prolific material culture of the medieval period have strongly affected the interpretation of Iron Age archaeology. Increasingly, however, Iron Age archaeological research is being generated by archaeologists, formulated in archaeological terms, and conducted using an array of archaeological methods, including aerial photography, geophysical survey, and underwater and wetland (i.e., peat bog) exploration. These research agendas do not ignore medieval textual and archaeological evidence; rather, they reflect increasing confidence that a coherent framework for Iron Age archaeology can be constructed.

CHRONOLOGY

To begin with a note about terminology, “medieval” is used here to distinguish the period from the fifth century to c. 1500. In Irish writing, archaeologists normally employ the terms “early Christian” for the fifth century A.D. to A.D. 800, “Hiberno-Norse” or “Viking” for A.D. 800–1169, and “medieval” starting with the Anglo-Norman invasions of

A.D. 1169–1172. For our purposes, we can think of the Iron Age in terms of three periods bounded by the Late Bronze Age, which ended c. 700 B.C., and the early Christian period. There is almost no available data for the Early Iron Age, which spanned c. 700–300 B.C. The Middle Iron Age, or La Tène Iron Age, lasted from 300 B.C. into the first century A.D. It was a time that saw major construction at many sites and the appearance and development of La Tène art, which flourished into the early Christian period. In the Late Iron Age, or Roman Iron Age, contacts with the Roman world, especially with Britain, began, as indicated by imports of various goods. The earliest evidence of writing dates to this time. The period ends with the first recorded Christian missions, about A.D. 431/432.

Archaeologists still depend heavily on conventional dating by stylistic analyses and comparisons, so this discussion will start there. The closing phase of the Late Bronze Age, the Dowris phase, ended c. 700 B.C. The first subsequent datable object is an imported gold torc (neck ring) from Knock, County Roscommon, decorated in La Tène style and with close parallels in the Rhineland from c. 300 B.C. A hoard from Brougher, County Derry, includes a gold torc with spectacular La Tène decoration, which is dated approximately by another item in the same collection, a gold necklace of Mediterranean



Selected sites in Iron Age Ireland.

origin from the first century B.C. or the first century A.D. As the Roman Empire expanded into Gaul (in the mid-first century B.C.) and Britain (in mid-first century A.D.), increasing contact with the Roman world resulted in the appearance in Ireland of well-dated Roman goods, such as coins and pottery. Coins are not plentiful, though, and most come from isolated hoards, unrelated to sites, while Roman pottery is rare.

Radiocarbon dating has been applied to the Iron Age, of course, but for much of the period the tree-ring samples used for calibration show little difference in amounts of residual radiocarbon over several centuries. In consequence, dates are corre-

spondingly imprecise. Fortunately, however, the dendrochronological sequence for Irish oak makes it possible to date the felling of a tree accurately, often to the exact year. The waterlogged conditions necessary for the survival of wood, which are common in this region, make this technique applicable to many Irish archaeological sites. The contrast in precision between radiocarbon dating and dendrochronology is well illustrated at Navan, County Armagh, where the base of a phase 4 central post has survived. The radiocarbon date for this post is 380–100 B.C., a range of 280 years. Dendrochronology provided a felling date for this post of 95 B.C. (or possibly early 94 B.C.).

SITE IDENTIFICATION

There are two major reasons why so few Iron Age sites are known. The first, paradoxically, is the sheer number of sites. The issue of ringforts, or raths, is particularly important here, for there is hot debate as to whether these enclosed farmsteads are all of early medieval date or whether some may be of the Iron Age. Of those that have been excavated and that can be dated (many cannot), almost all are indeed early medieval. There are, however, some thirty thousand ringforts, of which only about 1 percent have been excavated—hardly a statistically adequate sample. Moreover, there are other types of circular sites of the same general size (e.g., henges, ring barrows, and small monasteries) that are easily confused with ringforts unless closely inspected.

The second reason is that field-walking survey cannot be employed in this context. This method is put to effective use in many parts of the world and simply involves walking over plowed land, looking for scatters of artifacts, typically, potsherds. In Ireland, however, a high percentage of farmland is under pasture, and other large areas are covered by blanket bog. Moreover, the Iron Age is virtually aceramic, which means that there is virtually no chance of finding diagnostic ceramics and little likelihood of finding diagnostic metal artifacts.

EARLY IRON AGE (C. 700–300 B.C.)

Hardly any artifacts can be attributed to this period, and only two sites merit discussion. The first is the crannog of Rathtinaun, County Sligo, where excavation showed a two-phase occupation. Phase 1 contained only Late Bronze Age Dowris-type artifacts, but phase 2 held both Dowris-type artifacts and a few iron objects. Rathtinaun, then, appears to bridge the Bronze Age and Iron Age and should date to the eighth to seventh centuries B.C. Radiocarbon dates, however, indicate that the site was occupied no earlier than the fifth through second centuries B.C.

Second, there is site B at Navan. As at Rathtinaun, phase 3 artifacts were from the Dowris phase, with only a few small iron objects. Phase 3 radiocarbon dates, however, range from the fourth century B.C. into early A.D. times; since the end of phase 3 was followed immediately by phase 4, dated precisely to 95 B.C. (from dendrochronology), it is virtually certain that phase 3 lasted until about 100

B.C. The problems posed by these two sites cannot be resolved at present and so, by the same token, the Early Iron Age remains singularly elusive.

MIDDLE IRON AGE (C. 300 B.C. TO C. A.D. 100)

The date of c. 300 B.C. for the start of this period is based, as noted, on the first appearance of the La Tène art style. Nearly all the Iron Age La Tène decorated objects in Ireland are found on the northern half of the island. The development of La Tène art in this area owes much to close contacts with Wales and northern Britain, just across the Irish Sea. Irish craft workers, however, were not mere imitators, for they produced their own variations of British types as well as some artifact styles unique to Ireland, such as Y-shaped objects, Monasterevin disks, Petrie and Cork crowns, and the so-called lachets. As elsewhere in Europe, La Tène art was displayed mainly on high-status personal metalwork. There are also numerous bronze horse bits, several in pairs, suggesting that the two-horse chariots so well known from Iron Age Britain and the Continent were used in Ireland as well. Some of the enigmatic Y-shaped pieces also occur in pairs and may be components of chariot harnessing. Iron spearheads are known, as are fine bronze spear butts.

To judge by several beautifully decorated bronze scabbards, however, swords were the warriors' pride. Stylistically, they derive from Continental swords of the third through second centuries B.C. The Irish ones are much shorter—the blades ranging from 37 to 46 centimeters; one wonders how they could be used, except as long daggers. Of all the scabbards and swords, only one sword comes from a securely dated context—the excavation at Knockaulin, probably from the first century B.C. or first century A.D.

Although most of La Tène art finds expression on metal items of personal equipment or adornment, there are five La Tène decorated stones; the one at Turoe, County Galway (fig. 1), is embellished most adeptly. There are also numerous querns (grindstones) with La Tène decoration. Many carved stone heads are attributed to the Iron Age, but they bear only the vaguest stylistic resemblance to Iron Age human representations elsewhere.

Almost all decorated metalwork has been discovered accidentally, much of it taken from bogs and lakes. The practice of votive deposits also is known in Britain and on the Continent. In those places, decorated metalwork also appears in burials, however, providing good associations and dating evidence. In Ireland few burials contain such artifacts, and they are virtually absent from the few excavated sites, which makes it doubly difficult to date them or to relate them to other aspects of Iron Age life (and death).

The major sites of the Middle Iron Age are the so-called royal sites. Their commanding locations and large sizes imply that they were the most important sites of the Middle Iron Age, dominating ritual and ceremonial life over considerable areas. Despite their prominence, they have yielded no deposits of high-status valuables. Such items seem to have been reserved for watery places. Significantly, four bronze trumpets with La Tène decoration (and, reportedly, human skulls) were found in the nineteenth century in Loughnashade, a small lake just below Navan. One remarkable exotic import was discovered in a late phase 3 context at Navan (site B), however. This was the skull of a Barbary ape (with a radiocarbon date of 390–20 B.C.), which certainly had traveled a very long way from its homeland in north-western Africa.

The Dorsey, County Armagh, is a very large, irregular enclosure about 30 kilometers south of Navan. Parts of it run across bog, which preserved timbers from its construction. Dendrochronological dates from these timbers show two phases of building, the first between 159 and 126 B.C. and the second between 104 and 86 B.C. The Dorsey lies close to a section of the Black Pig's Dyke, a series of linear earthworks running east to west across Ireland. This set of earthworks may have marked the southern boundary of Iron Age Ulster, for one section of the dyke is dated by radiocarbon to 390–70 B.C. Other linear earthworks in Ireland may be of the Iron Age also, but none are dated. Trackways constructed across bogland have been dated to the Iron Age by dendrochronology. The best known of these is Corlea, County Longford, where excavation uncovered two stretches of road over 2 kilometers long, with dates of 156 ± 9 B.C. and 148 B.C. Construction required two hundred to three hundred mature oak trees, besides other species.



Fig. 1. Turoe Stone, County Galway, Ireland. A superb example of La Tène art on a granite boulder. COURTESY OF BERNARD WAILES. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

Hillforts are a prominent feature of Iron Age landscapes over much of western Europe, so the sixty to eighty hillforts in Ireland conventionally have been assigned to this period. Of the few excavated so far, however, most appear to be Late Bronze Age rather than Iron Age. Moreover, they are very diverse in size and form. Some are so compact that they could be seen as substantial ringforts or cashels on hilltops, some are large and rambling in plan, and some have ramparts so small (as little as 1 meter high) that probably they were not forts at all. Whether there are really Iron Age hillforts in Ireland is moot. Of the estimated 250 known coastal promontory forts, a few have been excavated, but only Dunbeg, County Kerry, has any dating evidence—a radiocarbon date from the first few centuries A.D., probably Late Iron Age or even early medieval, rather than Middle Iron Age.

Residential sites are very scanty indeed. One site under a ringfort at Feerwore, County Galway, produced a few artifacts for which dating to the second to first century B.C. has been suggested. Two coastal shell-midden sites have radiocarbon dates placing them in the Middle Iron Age, as do two crannogs at Lough Gara, County Sligo. There is one small ringfort known for the period, at Lislackagh, County Mayo, where internal circular structures were radiocarbon dated to 200 B.C. to A.D. 140. A handful of other sites have dates overlapping both the Middle and Late Iron Ages. Despite the limited evidence for daily life in the Middle Iron Age, it is clear that major constructions were undertaken, which implies the mobilization of substantial groups of skilled labor. Particularly noteworthy is the practically simultaneous construction of phase 4 at Navan (95 B.C.) and the later phase of building at the Dorsey (104–86 B.C.). The proximity of these two sites suggests that one authority might have directed construction at both.

LATE IRON AGE (C. A.D. 100 TO C. 550 A.D.)

There is no obvious demarcation between the Middle and Late Iron Ages. Roman material began to appear during the first century A.D., possibly as early as the first century B.C. It is not until the late first century A.D., however, that evidence appears of close (though not necessarily intense) contact with the Roman world, so an arbitrary date of c. A.D. 100 seems suitable. The main issue for consideration is the extent to which interaction with the Roman world promoted changes in Irish society.

J. Donal Bateson has reviewed Roman materials in Ireland in detail, and the total is surprisingly small, considering Ireland's proximity to Roman Britain and Gaul. Clearly, Roman goods were not reaching Ireland in anything like the quantities that reached, say, Germany and the southern Baltic during the same period. Roman imports into Ireland fall into two chronological groups, the first through second centuries and the fourth through fifth centuries. There is very little third-century Roman material, perhaps reflecting the widespread economic contraction of the period, demonstrated, for example, by the contraction of trade from the Continent to Britain. The material in the earlier category consists mainly of coins and fibulae (brooches) and very

small amounts of Gaulish Samian (*terra sigillata*) pottery. The objects in this group and their contexts are reasonably consistent with trade and small-scale contacts. The later group, of the fourth through fifth centuries, also includes coins but has significant quantities of silver in the form of ingots and hack-silver (silver artifacts cut into pieces). These items look suspiciously like the result of successful raiding, and we know from Roman sources of this period that the Irish (or Scotti) participated in the frequent barbarian raids on Roman Britain.

There are a very few burials in Roman style. A cremation in a glass container at Stonyford, County Kilkenny, from the first or early second century A.D., and an inhumation cemetery at Bray, County Wicklow, from the second century A.D. both show familiarity with Roman burial practices of the time. Presumably, these are the burials of either Roman immigrants or emigrants returned from the Roman world. Grave goods from the small inhumation cemetery on Lambay Island, County Dublin, show close affinities with items from northern Britain in the late first century A.D., and the people may have been British refugees from the Roman conquest. Inhumation burial with the body extended appears to have become increasingly common through the Late Iron Age, and some such burials are in long cists (graves lined with stone slabs). Because extended inhumation burial began to replace cremation from about the second century A.D. in the Roman Empire, the same shift in Ireland may reflect Roman practice. Dating Irish burials is seriously hampered by the general lack of grave goods, however.

Two other disparate examples of Roman contact come from Golden, County Tipperary, and Lough Lene, County Westmeath. At Golden there was a small Roman oculist's stamp of slate, inscribed along one edge, and at Lough Lene part of a flat-bottomed boat of Mediterranean construction was found. It is assumed to be of Roman date, although its radiocarbon date is 300–100 B.C. (This, of course, dates the growth of the wood and not necessarily the boat's construction.)

There are few remains of residential sites from the Late Iron Age. Traces of occupation from beneath two ringforts have been radiocarbon dated to the third through seventh centuries A.D., whereas dates from several structures on Mount Knocknarea, County Sligo, range from the first century

B.C. to the seventh century A.D. A sherd of Gaulish *terra sigillata* pottery of the first century A.D. was plowed up at the large coastal promontory fort of Drumanagh, County Dublin. This find has fueled suggestions that this site may have been a trading station, and the proximity of Lambay Island, with its cemetery of possible British refugees, lends credence to the theory.

At Tara, County Meath, the Rath of the Synods has yielded intriguing evidence. The finds suggest that the site had four phases of occupation: the first and third were small cemeteries, while the second and fourth were probably residential. Artifacts included some items of Gaulish *terra sigillata* of the first to second centuries A.D., a lead seal, glass beads, and iron padlocks. All the datable objects fall within the first to fifth centuries A.D. It is striking that although several objects certainly or probably are imports from the Roman world, none are definitely of Irish manufacture. This, then, is the most “Roman” site known in Ireland, but it assuredly does not conform to any type of actual Roman site. The location of the Rath of the Synods at a royal site must surely be significant, but how this site should be interpreted is unclear.

Toward the end of the Late Iron Age, perhaps in the fourth century A.D., the first indications of native Irish literacy appear in the form of ogham inscriptions, in which letters of the alphabet are denoted by different combinations of vertical or oblique strokes. The model for an alphabetic script presumably was Roman, and its employment on memorial stones also echoes Roman usage. There is no space here to debate the vexed issue of when the Irish language first entered Ireland, but these ogham inscriptions are the earliest written evidence for the language. The script also demonstrates the presence of Irish settlers in western Britain, where ogham inscriptions (many duplicated in Latin) date to the fifth and sixth centuries, particularly in Wales and southwestern Britain.

DISCUSSION

The picture of Iron Age Ireland sketched here is one dominated by a welter of unassociated objects from chance discoveries, which can be organized into a somewhat murky picture only with difficulty. It is striking that the only really coherent archaeological evidence of Iron Age Ireland comes from larger-

scale excavations, such as those of wetland areas and royal sites. Even so, it is still virtually unknown where and how people lived. It is no wonder that the abundant historical and archaeological evidence of early medieval Ireland, highly visible and largely comprehensible, still casts such a long interpretative shadow over the Iron Age.

The traditional or “nativist” view sees Iron Age Ireland essentially as a pagan version of Christianized early medieval Ireland. Thus, the society depicted in the medieval law tracts, for example, provides a template for Iron Age society: the higher ranks, supported by clients and slaves, lived in ring-forts, crannogs, and cashels and spent most of their time planning cattle raids. This view is epitomized by Kenneth Jackson’s *Oldest Irish Tradition: A Window on the Iron Age*, an analysis of the *Táin Bó Cúailnge* (“Cattle Raid of Cooley,” the central tale of the Ulster Cycle of stories). The *Táin* is an account of the raid, organized by Queen Medb (Maev) of Connacht, to capture the famous brown bull of Cooley in Ulster. In this epic, war chariots, druids, single combat between champions, and cattle raiding are prominent. Jackson argued that these elements of the tale identified a genuine Iron Age oral epic, eventually written down in the eleventh century A.D. Moreover, Medb and her counterpart, the king of Ulster, lived at identifiable sites—respectively, Cruachain (Croghan) and Emain Macha (Navan)—which seems to add authenticity.

The nativist position has come under revisionist fire from both historians and archaeologists. Further textual analysis of the Ulster Cycle shows that it was largely a medieval composition by writers familiar with Latin literature, Greek epics, the Scriptures, and writings of the early church fathers. Similarly, increasingly fine-grained analyses of the aforementioned law tracts show that they were almost certainly composed by monks with a Christian agenda, rather than by secular scholars perpetuating traditional pre-Christian law. The excavation of two of the royal sites since Jackson’s work was published shows that there are no satisfactory grounds for regarding them as the royal residences portrayed in the *Táin*. More specifically, Mallory has pointed out that the swords described in the *Táin* were long, resembling medieval swords not the very short swords of Iron Age Ireland.

The revisionists contend that the country underwent a major transformation through the centuries of contact with Rome, culminating in conversion to Christianity and the consequent introduction of literacy. In this scenario the Iron Age is seen as a depressed period when agricultural and pasture lands contracted, as shown by an increase of tree pollen in several pollen diagrams from different parts of Ireland. This contraction began in about the seventh century B.C., perhaps intensified around 200 B.C., and continued until about the third century A.D., when woodland clearance recommenced. This renewed clearance has been attributed to the introduction of the plow with iron share and coulter and of dairying, through contact with Roman Britain. It is thought that productivity of both tillage and livestock thus improved considerably, which increased the wealth of the upper classes and enabled them to invest in clients and to buy slaves. In this way, so the hypothesis has it, the rural economy and society that were so well documented in the early medieval period were triggered by innovations from the Roman world.

We have no satisfactory dating for the appearance of the iron share and coulter, however, and the introduction of dairying is the subject of controversy. Pam Crabtree has argued that the mortality pattern of cattle bones from Knockaulin, probably dating to the first century B.C. or the first century A.D., is consistent with dairying. Finbar McCormick disputed this analysis and went on to propose the hypothesis that dairying was introduced through Roman contacts (i.e., later than the Knockaulin assemblage). In addition, he argued that ringforts—those typical enclosed homesteads of the earlier medieval period—were developed specifically to provide protection for valuable dairy cattle. Milk residues have been identified, however, in British prehistoric pottery. Since this pottery is as old as the Neolithic (fourth through third millennia B.C.), it is plausible to propose that dairying was introduced to nearby Ireland in prehistoric times. Clearly, this debate will continue.

The nativist and revisionist positions are not completely incompatible: the former does not deny that the conversion to Christianity promoted substantial changes in Irish society, nor does the latter deny some continuity from Iron Age to early Christian Ireland (e.g., La Tène art). As archaeological

evidence gradually accrues, and textual analysis is pursued, interpretations will improve.

See also Milk, Wool, and Traction: Secondary Animal Products (vol. 1, part 4); *Trackways and Dugouts* (vol. 1, part 4); *Bronze Age Britain and Ireland* (vol. 2, part 5); *Irish Bronze Age Goldwork* (vol. 2, part 5); *La Tène Art* (vol. 2, part 6); *Irish Royal Sites* (vol. 2, part 6); *Early Christian Ireland* (vol. 2, part 7); *Raths, Crannogs, and Cashels* (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Bateson, J. Donal. "Further Finds of Roman Material from Ireland." Colloquium on Hiberno-Roman Relations and Material Remains. *Proceedings of the Royal Irish Academy* 76C (1976): 171–180.
- . "Roman Material from Ireland: A Reconsideration." *Proceedings of the Royal Irish Academy* 73C (1973): 21–97.
- Copley, M. S., R. Berstan, S. N. Dudd et al. "Direct Chemical Evidence for Widespread Dairying in Prehistoric Britain." *Proceedings of the National Academy of Science* 100, no. 4 (February 18, 2003): 1524–1529.
- Crabtree, Pam. "Subsistence and Ritual: The Faunal Remains from Dún Ailinne, Co. Kildare, Ireland." *Emania* 7 (1990): 22–25.
- Fredengren, Christina. "Iron Age Crannogs in Lough Gara." *Archaeology Ireland* 14, no. 2 (2000): 26–28.
- Jackson, Kenneth H. *The Oldest Irish Tradition: A Window on the Iron Age*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1964.
- Kelly, Fergus. *A Guide to Early Irish Law*. Early Irish Law Series, no. 3. Dublin, Ireland: Dublin Institute for Advanced Studies, 1988.
- McCone, Kim. *Pagan Past and Christian Present in Early Irish Literature*. Maynooth Monographs, no. 3. Maynooth, Ireland: An Sagart, 1990.
- McCormick, Finbar. "Cows, Ringforts, and the Origins of Early Christian Ireland." *Emania* 13 (1995): 33–37.
- . "Evidence of Dairying at Dún Ailinne?" *Emania* 8 (1991): 57–59.
- McManus, Damian. *A Guide to Ogam*. Maynooth Monographs, no. 4. Maynooth, Ireland: An Sagart, 1991.
- Mallory, James P. "The World of Cú Chulainn: The Archaeology of *Táin Bó Cúailgne*." In *Aspects of the Táin*. Edited by James P. Mallory, pp. 103–159. Belfast, Northern Ireland: December Publications, 1992.
- . "The Sword of the Ulster Cycle." In *Studies on Early Ireland: Essays in Honour of M. V. Duignan*. Edited by Brian G. Scott, pp. 99–114. Dublin, Ireland: Association of Young Irish Archaeologists, 1981.

- Megaw, M. Ruth, and J. V. S. Megaw. *Celtic Art: From Its Beginnings to the Book of Kells*. Rev. ed. New York: Thames and Hudson, 2001.
- Mitchell, Frank, and Michael Ryan. *Reading the Irish Landscape*. 3d ed. Dublin, Ireland: Town House, 1997.
- Raftery, Barry. *Pagan Celtic Ireland: The Enigma of the Irish Iron Age*. London: Thames and Hudson, 1994.
- Thomas, Charles. *Celtic Britain*. London: Thames and Hudson, 1986.
- Waddell, John. *The Prehistoric Archaeology of Ireland*. Galway, Ireland: Galway University Press, 1998.

BERNARD WAILES

IRISH ROYAL SITES

The Irish “royal sites” are so called because medieval Irish scholars believed them to have been the capitals of pre-Christian high kings of four of the five ancient provinces of Ireland. Croghan (Cruachain) was the royal site of Connacht, Navan (Emain Macha) of Ulster, Tara (Temair) of Meath, and Knockaulin (Ailenn, Dún Ailinne) of Leinster. No early source identifies a royal site for Munster. Various medieval texts refer to the royal sites as former royal residences and burial grounds; venues for major assemblies, including the inauguration of kings; and centers of pagan ritual. Although these sites were invoked as symbols of kingship in medieval Ireland, there is no evidence that they actually were used during the Middle Ages, and the retrospective nature of medieval references to these sites demands caution in assessing their original functions or significance. Archaeology can provide a firmer understanding, and Knockaulin, one of the two extensively excavated sites (with Navan), can serve as an exemplar.

At Knockaulin an oval earthwork encloses c. 13 hectares, with the entrance on the east side of the site. Despite the hilltop location, it was not a defensive site, for the bank is outside the ditch. Geophysical survey showed substantial anomalies only around the center of the site, where subsequent excavation produced the following (simplified) sequence:

Flame (latest): Low mound of burned material, including many animal bones, which suggests periodic feasting

- Dun: Central tower and circle of posts dismantled; stone slabs and earth laid over the restricted area of Emerald-phase burning
- Emerald: Perimeter wall of Mauve phase dismantled, but central tower and inner circle of posts left standing, despite intense localized burning
- Mauve: Double-walled, circular timber structure, c. 42 meters in diameter, enclosing a circle, 25 meters in diameter, of freestanding posts and, at the center, a heavily built timber structure, c. 6 meters in diameter and with buttresses, that may have been a wooden tower
- Rose: Figure-eight, triple-walled timber structure with a larger circle, c. 35 meters in diameter, and an elaborate, funnel-shaped entranceway; structure dismantled to make way for Mauve structures
- White: Circular, single-walled timber structure, c. 22 meters in diameter; dismantled to make way for Rose structures
- Tan (earliest): Neolithic trench and artifacts (fourth millennium through third millennium B.C.)

None of the Iron Age structures (White through Mauve) show evidence of residential or funerary use and must be interpreted as ritual or ceremonial in nature. The White, Rose, and Mauve entrances are oriented toward sunrise around 1 May, the festival of Beltane, the beginning of summer. Radiocarbon dates (Rose through Flame) cluster between the third century B.C. and fourth century A.D., while stylistic parallels for metalwork are mainly of the first century B.C. to the first century A.D. An 8-meter-wide roadway runs through the site entrance toward the timber structures at the center of the site. A radiocarbon sample from sod buried beneath one of the banks at the site entrance suggests that bank construction took place in the fifth century B.C.

The other royal sites share several characteristics with Knockaulin. First, all are on prominent elevated locations with commanding views. Second, all have large enclosures. Those at Navan (c. 5 hectares) and the Ráith na Ríg (Rath of the Kings; c. 6 hectares) at Tara both have internal ditches and external banks. Geophysical survey at Croghan shows a circular anomaly enclosing nearly 11 hectares,

probably a silted-up ditch or the foundation for a wooden palisade. Third, the enclosures at Navan, Tara, and Croghan all have mounds. At Navan the mound (site B) has been excavated. Within the Ráith na Ríg at Tara there are two conjoined mounds, while at Croghan the circular anomaly encloses Rathcroghan, a large flat-topped mound. The postulated central timber tower of Mauve phase at Knockauliin might have been equivalent to a mound. Fourth, the roadway through the site entrance at Knockaulin, the roadways at Croghan, and the banqueting hall at Tara may have some equivalence.

Excavation produced further similarities. Navan, like Knockaulin, has a scatter of Neolithic materials, while the Mound of the Hostages at Tara proved to be a Neolithic passage grave. Excavation of site B at Navan has shown that this mound covered a complex sequence of structures. Immediately below the mound was an undoubtedly ceremonial wooden structure of concentric post circles, some 40 meters in diameter (phase 4). At an earlier stage, there had been a series of figure-eight timber structures (phase 3ii) similar to Rose phase structures at Knockaulin, although the Navan structures were smaller and might have been residential rather than ceremonial.

The suggestion that construction of all the enclosure banks and ditches dates to the Iron Age rests on the discovery, in a test trench, of ironworking debris under the bank of the Ráith na Ríg at Tara and the fifth century B.C. date from the site entrance at Knockaulin. The internal structures excavated at Knockaulin and Navan (site B), however, are far more securely dated. At Knockaulin, White through Flame phases are of the Iron Age. At Navan (site B), phase 4 is certainly of the Iron Age, for the central post has been dated by dendrochronology to 95 or 94 B.C. On stratigraphic grounds, the covering mound was not built much later. The preceding phase 3ii probably dates to the Iron Age as well. The Rath of the Synods at Tara has yielded artifacts of the first three to four centuries A.D. No dating evidence is available for Croghan.

The henge monuments of Neolithic Britain and Ireland (fourth millennium through third millennium B.C.) are approximately circular earthworks with

external banks and internal ditches. Some enclose circular wooden structures and others stone circles. The similarity of the royal sites to henges can hardly be coincidental, and it seems likely that the royal sites were a revival of henges. This implies that memory of the ritual and ceremonial nature of Neolithic henges survived to the Iron Age. Finally, it is unlikely that the royal sites discussed here were unique in Iron Age Ireland. There are numerous other sites of henge form in Ireland. Many may be Neolithic, but some enclose mounds, and some have roadways, both of which suggest comparison to the Iron Age royal sites. The excavation of Raffin, County Meath, revealed what appears to be a small-scale royal site in use during the third through fifth centuries A.D.

See also *The Megalithic World* (vol. 1, part 4); *Iron Age Ireland* (vol. 2, part 6).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Aitchison, Nicholas B. *Armagh and the Royal Centres in Early Medieval Ireland: Monuments, Cosmology, and the Past*. Woodbridge, U.K.: Boydell and Brewer for Cruithne Press, 1994.
- Condit, Tom. "Discovering New Perceptions of Tara." *Archaeology Ireland* 12, no. 2 (1998): 33.
- Fenwick, Joe, Yvonne Brennan, Kevin Barton, and John Waddell. "The Magnetic Presence of Queen Medb (Magnetic Gradiometry at Rathcroghan, Co. Roscommon)." *Archaeology Ireland* 13, no. 1 (1999): 8–11.
- Newman, Conor. "Reflections on the Making of a 'Royal Site' in Early Ireland." *World Archaeology* 30, no. 1 (1998): 127–141.
- . *Tara: An Archaeological Survey*. Dublin, Ireland: Royal Irish Academy for the Discovery Programme, 1997.
- Raftery, Barry. *Pagan Celtic Ireland: The Enigma of the Irish Iron Age*. London: Thames and Hudson, 1994.
- Waddell, John. *The Prehistoric Archaeology of Ireland*. Galway, Ireland: Galway University Press, 1998.
- Wailes, Bernard. "Dún Ailinne: A Summary Excavation Report." *Emania* 7 (1990): 10–21.
- . "The Irish 'Royal Sites' in History and Archaeology." *Cambridge Medieval Celtic Studies* 3 (1982): 1–29.
- Waterman, Dudley M. *Excavations at Navan Fort*. Completed and edited by Christopher J. Lynn. Belfast, Northern Ireland: Stationery Office, 1997.

BERNARD WAILES



IRON AGE GERMANY

FOLLOWED BY FEATURE ESSAYS ON:

<i>Kelheim</i>	247
<i>The Heuneburg</i>	249

The nation-state known today as “Germany” is a modern political construction whose boundaries correspond little, if at all, to those of prehistoric populations, including those of the Iron Age. Religious, economic, and linguistic differences subdivide the country, a disunity manifested in a north-east-southwest cultural and religious split that has dominated German history since at least the Early Iron Age c. 800–450 B.C. This essay focuses on developments in the west-central and southwest parts of the modern nation, where contact with the Mediterranean world affected the appearance of proto-urban centers during the Late Hallstatt period (c. 650–450 B.C.) and of large, fortified settlements, termed *oppida* by Julius Caesar, during the Late La Tène period (150 B.C.—the Roman period). The north and northeastern parts of the country are not considered, because their cultural trajectories were quite different, related more closely to developments in Scandinavia and northeastern Europe.

THE EARLY IRON AGE: CHANGE AND CONTINUITY

The transition between the Late Bronze Age (the so-called Urnfield period, which also is designated Hallstatt A and B) and the Early Iron Age (Hallstatt

C and D, after the type site Hallstatt in Austria) at first was marked mainly by the appearance of the new metal. The introduction of an ore that was more widely available than copper or tin, and produced more effective weapons and tools than bronze, had led in some areas of Germany to changes in burial ritual and social organization. In place of the large, communal settlements of the Bronze Age, increasing numbers of *Einzelhöfe* or *Herrenhöfe*—large, isolated, fortified farmsteads—suggest that individual families were beginning to profit at the expense of their neighbors in ways not seen during the Late Bronze Age. This emphasis on individual status and social differentiation also is reflected in mortuary ritual. Inhumation gradually replaced the Late Bronze Age cremation rite, with its rows of anonymous urn burials; elaborate wooden burial chambers were constructed to house the dead, who were buried with all their finery and other objects commensurate with their rank and status. In the Early Iron Age, swords appeared in burials as male status markers, rather than being deposited as offerings in bodies of water, in the Bronze Age tradition of communal metal votive deposits. Despite the differences between the Late Bronze and Early Iron Ages, the impression is one of cultural continuity.

Dates B.C.	1300	1200	1100	1000	900	800	650	550	525	475	375	325	275	200	150	80	25/15
Archaeological chronology	Bz D		Ha A		Ha B		Ha C	Ha D			Lt A	Lt B		Lt C		Lt D	
								D 1	D 2	D 3		B 1	B 2	C 1	C 2	D 1	D 2
Archeological epochs and cultures	Late Bronze Age						Early Iron Age				Late Iron Age						
	Urnfield Culture						Early	Late	Early	Middle	Late						

Chronology of Iron Age Germany. ADAPTED FROM SIEVERS IN RIECKHOFF AND BIEL 2001.

THE MEDITERRANEAN CONNECTION

These changes were due to local interactions as well as increased contact with the Mediterranean societies of classical Greece and Etruria. An elite class emerged during the Hallstatt period, driven in part by competition for status symbols, including exotic imports from Greece and Etruria. A suite of high-status markers appeared in burials, including gold neck rings; four-wheeled wagons; imported bronze, gold, or, more rarely, silver drinking vessels; and imported pottery. These graves are found in an area referred to as the West Hallstatt zone: southwest Germany, eastern France, and Switzerland north of the Alps. The East Hallstatt zone, comprising Austria, western Hungary, Slovenia, and Croatia, differed mainly in terms of the weapons buried with male members of the elite: helmets, shields, defensive armor, and axes in the east and swords (Hallstatt C) and daggers (Hallstatt D) in the west. Elite funerary traditions in both zones emphasized the horse and horse trappings as well as four-wheeled wagons and metal drinking and feasting equipment.

There was no hard line between these two regions—the archaeological record of the Early Iron Age in Bavaria and Bohemia, for example, represents a blending of the two cultural traditions, as does the type site of Hallstatt itself. Nonetheless, some geographical barriers seem to have acted as an obstacle to information flow. There was no uniformity between microregions within the West Hallstatt zone, where local variations ranged from different object styles to different depositional

patterns. Over time the “zones” become more distinctly different, among other reasons, because of their differing interactions with the Mediterranean world.

IRON AGE ECONOMICS

The Etruscans began explorations beyond the Alps as early as the ninth century B.C., which intensified in the course of the first half of the seventh century. Two primary trade networks linked these regions. The older of the two crossed the eastern Alps or skirted them to the east, to reach the valleys of the Elbe, Oder, and Vistula Rivers that led to the amber sources in the north. The second route crossed the western Alps between Lake Geneva and Lake Constance via several mountain passes, aiming for the Rhine Valley, the English Channel, and ultimately the rich metal (especially tin) sources of the Atlantic coast and the British Isles. The Alpine crossing could be bypassed by the longer but less arduous water route from Etruria via the Greek colony founded at Massalia (modern-day Marseille) in 600 B.C. by Phocaeen Greeks and then up the Rhône-Saône corridor to the Danube or the Rhine.

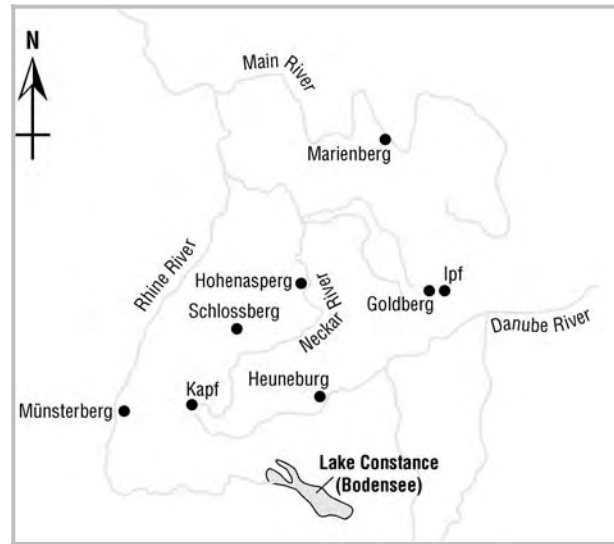
Imports from northern Italy and local imitations of weapons, including swords and helmets, fibulae (safety pin-like clothing fasteners used by the Etruscans as well as the central European Celtic peoples in lieu of buttons during this time), and drinking vessels of metal and pottery testify to this contact. The Celtic-speaking peoples of southern France, with whom first the Etruscans and later the Greeks traded, offered a range of raw materials in

exchange for wine, drinking equipment, and other exotica. Burnished black Etruscan *bucchero* ware and Greek black figure and later red figure ceramic drinking vessels were exchanged for the grain, salted meat, copper, gold, silver, lead, tin, graphite, red ochre, and forest products, such as beeswax and timber, to which the central European Iron Age peoples had access.

Initially, this Etruscan trade was intermittent and conducted on a small scale. By Hallstatt C times the peoples inhabiting the southern German part of the West Hallstatt zone undoubtedly were aware of the existence of a new alcoholic beverage and the elaborately decorated and finely made pottery used to consume it. Viticulture, the growing of grapes for making wine, which today is economically important for both France and Germany, was not introduced until the Roman occupation of those countries; during most of the Iron Age, the only alcoholic beverages available were mead and beer.

Information as well as goods traveled in both directions along the tin routes during this period, as evidenced by the distinctive southern German Hallstatt swords in France and copied or imported Etruscan weapons concentrated along the river systems. The oldest known imported Etruscan burial assemblage found in Germany is Frankfurt-Stadtwald grave 12 (dating to the late eighth or early seventh century B.C.), with a bronze *situla* (a bucket-shaped wine-serving vessel), a ribbed metal drinking bowl, and two bronze bowls, probably used to serve food.

Some of the impetus for intensified contact came from the central European Iron Age elites and probably took the form of “down the line” or “stage” trade, in which each link in the chain passes the goods to the next. The Etruscans appear to have dominated the early phase of this interaction, as the archaeological evidence from Massalia indicates. Between 575 and 550 B.C., 27 percent of the pottery in settlement strata were Massaliote wares, 16 percent were Greek, and 57 percent were Etruscan. Only a few dozen Etruscan imports dating to the period between 625 and 540 B.C. are known, however, in the Celtic heartland to the north and east. Some scholars use the term “diplomatic gift exchange” to explain imports found in settlements along the main exchange routes, where local elite satisfaction would have been important in maintain-



Selected hillforts in the West Hallstatt Zone in southwest Germany. ADAPTED FROM SIEVERS IN RIECKHOFF AND BIEL 2001.

ing a constant flow of valuable goods, such as tin and other ores. This explanation does not fit the case for Etruscan imports in southern Germany, located between the two main trade routes bringing tin and amber to Etruria and initially of little interest to the Etruscan or Greek traders.

SOUTHWEST GERMAN IRON AGE ELITES

This region appears to have developed a nascent elite and an increasingly stratified society mainly on the basis of trade in iron ore, in which this region was especially rich. The wealth concentrated in the hands of a few individuals as a result of this iron industry provided the means to acquire selected and initially rare Mediterranean imports, via the so-called Danube Road linking the two main trade routes already described. An extensive interregional network maintained in part through intermarriage among elites resulted in a cultural and ideological *koine* (a Greek term for a standard language area), reflected in the uniformity of elite material culture across the West Hallstatt area during this time.

Seventeen hillforts, including the Heuneburg in Swabia, have been identified in the West Hallstatt zone, eight of them in Germany. Their identification as *Fürstensitze*, a contested German term for “princely seat,” is based on partial excavation or, more commonly, on the basis of stray finds. The

Hohenasperg near Stuttgart, topped by a fortress converted into a minimum-security prison, and the Marienberg in Würzburg, with a massive castle on its summit, are examples of the latter category. The Münsterberg in Breisach, the Kapf near Villingen, the Goldberg and the Ipf near Riesbürg, and the Schlossberg in Nagold also acted as central places during this time and have produced some evidence for imports or elite burials.

Most *Fürstensitze* are located at or near strategic river confluences, natural fords, or areas where rivers become navigable, and all of them appear to have been chosen at least in part for their imposing positions in the landscape. The burial mounds that surround these central places contain wealthy graves as well as graves outfitted quite poorly. This difference apparently reflects a society that was organized into at least three, and possibly four, social strata, variously described as “primary or governing elites,” “secondary or nongoverning elites,” “nonelites or common folk,” and “non-persons.” The last category may have included war captives and slaves and is represented most poorly in the archaeological record.

Elite burials containing a mix of imports and items of local manufacture characterize the Late Hallstatt period, exemplified by the interment in 550 B.C. of a local leader at the site of Eberdingen-Hochdorf near Stuttgart and the Vix burial in Burgundy, France, two central burials of the Early Iron Age that escaped the endemic looting in prehistory and in more recent times. These two graves together with a number of partially or mostly looted central burials like those surrounding the Hohenasperg near Stuttgart provide some insight into the Early Iron Age elite subculture. Imported goods, especially drinking and feasting equipment, are a constant feature in these burials, together with the presence of gold personal ornament and a four-wheeled wagon. During the Late Iron Age these ostentatious elite burials disappear, cremation replaces inhumation in many areas, and burial evidence becomes both less abundant and more regionally variable.

GREEKS BEARING GIFTS

Interaction with the Greek world via the trade colony at Massalia began around 540 B.C., a watershed year for Mediterranean sea trade, and lasted until

about 450 B.C. The Carthaginian monopoly on the metal-rich Iberian Peninsula following the Battle of Alalia seems to have triggered more extensive exploration by Greek traders of the Celtic hinterland in the last two centuries B.C. Greek amphora fragments and fine pottery wares (first black figure and, later, red figure vessels produced by skilled crafts workers in Athens) are distributed in quantities that diminish with distance from the port at Marseille.

The sudden appearance of Massaliote wine amphorae and Attic black figure pottery in the second half of the sixth century B.C. at distribution centers in Lyon (at the confluence of the Rhône and Saône) and in Burgundy at the hillfort of Mont Lassois (a transport transfer point on the Seine) testifies to the maintenance of this valuable trade route. Supporting evidence is the establishment of an unfortified central place at Bragny in Burgundy (at the confluence of the Saône and Doubs Rivers) around 520–500 B.C., at the peak of the wine export trade. Every liter of wine that was consumed by the southwest German Celtic elites had to pass through Bragny, which has yielded 1,367 amphora fragments to date, twenty-five times the number uncovered at the Heuneburg.

It is doubtful whether anything resembling a regular commercial flow existed. Statistically, based on the number of amphora and drinking vessel sherds found thus far on the Heuneburg, only a third of which has been excavated, no more than two amphorae (roughly 31.5 liters of wine) and two Greek drinking vessels made it as far as the hillfort on the Upper Danube. In other words, Mediterranean contact may have intensified but did not cause the centralization of power and increasing social stratification in the West Hallstatt societies.

SHIFTING CENTERS

By 500 B.C. a group of influential elite lineages had established itself in the central Rhineland, home of the older Hunsrück-Eifel culture. Their presence was manifested in fortified settlements, elaborate mortuary ritual, and impressive weaponry. The Etruscans, who in the meantime had established themselves in the Po Valley and were utilizing centers such as Spina and Felsina (modern-day Bologna) to reach the tin trade routes via the Alpine passes, were quick to recognize a new market for their exotic trade goods. They made use of the so-

called Golasecca Celts of the Ticino region as middlemen, who produced many of the bronze *situlae* found in burials in the central Rhineland at the end of the sixth century B.C. Numerous West Hallstatt fibulae dating to this period have been found south of the Alps, testifying to the increased mobility of goods and possibly people from north to south during the La Tène period.

Around 475 B.C. the West Hallstatt zone underwent significant changes as many hillfort centers, including the Heuneburg, were abandoned, probably as the result of internal conflicts and rivalries. New sites were established, and the appearance of a new art style marks changes in ideology during this transitional phase linking the Late Hallstatt and Early La Tène periods. The central Rhineland contact with the Etruscans is evident in the elite graves rich in gold and imported drinking equipment found in this region, while elite burials vanish from the archaeological record in those regions where Late Hallstatt *Fürstengräber* had flourished so recently.

Schnabelkannen, bronze-beaked flagons for serving wine, one of the hallmarks of this time period in the central Rhineland, first appeared at the end of the sixth century B.C. The majority of these vessels are Etruscan imports from the manufacturing center of Vulci, and their distribution indicates that Massalia played no role in the acquisition of these wares. The river system of Moselle, Saar, and Nahe encompasses the elite burials of the younger Hunsrück-Eifel culture (475–350 B.C.).

WOMEN OF SUBSTANCE

Outstanding examples of these mainly female burials, in contrast to the elite graves of the Late Hallstatt period, include Schwarzenbach, Weiskirchen, Hochscheid, Bescheid, Waldalgesheim, and Reinheim. The wealth that appears in elite burials in this region was based partly on river gold and iron ore, possibly even on trade in slaves. The tin trade was its mainstay, however, with elites in the central Rhineland acting as intermediaries between Etruscans and the inhabitants of the region between the Aisne and Marne Rivers (present-day Champagne). The metalworking center of Vulci, as a major consumer of tin, would have been the primary market for the ores that traveled through this region.

The elements of Late Hallstatt paramount elite groups are still present in the Early La Tène female burial of Reinheim (400 B.C.). The body was placed in a large wooden chamber, with an elaborately decorated gold neck ring, a single gold bracelet on the right wrist, three bracelets of gold, slate, and glass, respectively, on the left, and two gold rings on the right hand. Three elaborate fibulae, two of gold with coral inlays, a bronze mirror, and numerous beads of amber and glass also were found. The feasting equipment included two simple bronze plates, probably Etruscan imports, and two gold openwork drinking-horn mounts as well as a gilded-bronze flagon. Reinheim is only one of about half a dozen elaborately outfitted female burials dating to the late fifth and early fourth centuries B.C., also a time of major emigration of men in search of booty and, later, whole tribes in search of new territory.

The Early La Tène elite female burial phenomenon appears to have been partly due to a power vacuum caused by the exodus of large numbers of the elite male population in search of mercenary profits in the south. Some of them would not have returned, either dying abroad or perhaps choosing to marry and remain there. This seems to have provided a brief opportunity for elite women to expand their own spheres of influence, but by Late La Tène B (300–275 B.C.) inhumation graves generally began to disappear, replaced by another mortuary ritual that has left few archaeological traces.

CELTS ON THE MOVE

There are no nuclear places in the Early La Tène central Rhineland comparable to the Heuneburg or the other Late Hallstatt *Fürstensitze*. On the contrary, by 400 B.C. there is evidence for decentralization of the settlement pattern, motivated at least in part by deterioration in the climate that may have led to the Celtic migrations documented in classical sources. Archaeological evidence for depopulation at the beginning of the fourth century B.C. is found in the Champagne region, in Bohemia, and in Bavaria. By the late fourth century and early third century B.C. it also had occurred in eastern France, Baden-Württemberg, and (to a lesser degree) the region between Moselle and Nahe, as cemeteries like the one at Wederath-Belgium attest.

Beginning around this time the Mediterranean world was subjected to what must have seemed a

frightening reversal of the traditional interaction with central Europe. The Insubres invaded and occupied Melpum (modern-day Milan) in northern Italy, the Boii took Felsina and renamed it Bononia (present-day Bologna), and the Senoni invaded Picenum as far as Ancona. In the case of the Romans at least, the memory of Celtic marauders on the Palatinate was part of the reason for the military build-up and preemptory territorial expansion that marked their civilization in the centuries after the sack and seven-month-long occupation of their capital by Celtic raiders in 390, 387, or 386 B.C. (Opinions are divided as to the exact year.)

The instability of the Celtic regions during the Early La Tène period resulted in a sociopolitical regression that would last for some two hundred years, when the earlier tendencies toward urbanization finally were realized in the form of the *oppida*. By that time the Romans had conquered the territory taken by the Celts in northern Italy. After crossing the Alps in the first century B.C., they were threatening the Celtic peoples in their home territories, something the Greeks and Etruscans, who were out for economic gain rather than territorial conquest, had never done.

LATE LA TÈNE TRANSFORMATIONS

During the second century B.C. the *oppida* were characterized by large populations as well as craft specialization and a complex economic system made possible by the adoption of coinage (first documented in the first half of the third century B.C.) and writing. There are twenty-three Late Iron Age *oppida* (fortified settlements larger than 15 hectares) in Germany. One of the largest and best documented is the *oppidum* of Manching, near Ingolstadt in Bavaria.

The site flourished mainly because of its strategic location, rich in iron ore, on the Danube at the juncture of several trade routes linking this region to the Black Forest and the river Inn. Along this route, the community transported wine amphorae from Gaul as well as exotic goods from northern Italy. Sometime at the end of the second century B.C. a 7.2-kilometer-long fortification system in the *murus Gallicus* style (Caesar's term for the wood, stone, and earth construction technique he initially encountered in Gaul) was built at the previously unfortified site. It enclosed 380 hectares and held a

peak population of five thousand to ten thousand people between 120 and 50 B.C.

Unlike most of the *oppida* of this period—including the German sites Alkimoenes/Kelheim, the Heidetränk-Oppidum, the Dünsberg, and Creglingen-Finsterlohr—Manching was not located on a promontory or mountain spur, and its walls did not encircle several inhabited peaks. It also seems to have been inhabited by a larger population than other German *oppida*, some of which perhaps operated more as places of refuge for people and their herds during periods of danger. The large population at Manching must have been supported by a sizable hinterland composed of hundreds of small farmsteads and hamlets, judging by the huge quantities of animal bones. Roughly twelve hundred horses, twelve thousand cattle, twelve thousand pigs, and thirteen thousand sheep and goats have been recovered from the 15 hectares excavated since 1955, less than 1 percent of the site.

Another phenomenon associated with the Late La Tène period is the enigmatic and still hotly debated *Viereckschanzen*, rectangular enclosures of varying size that dominated the landscape of southern Germany during this period, clustering especially along the Danube and its tributaries during the second and first centuries B.C. These enclosures consisted of wall and ditch systems 80 meters on a side, on average, and with ditches 4 meters wide and 2 meters deep. Entrances typically were quite narrow, as though to restrict access. No particular direction was favored, but north-facing entrances are not found.

Until the 1950s most *Viereckschanzen* were identified solely on the basis of aerial photographs. In 1957 excavations at the site of Holzhausen uncovered several shafts up to 35 meters deep, and the consensus was that these sites had served a ritual function. Twenty years later excavations at the site of Fellbach-Schmidlen, with its wooden carvings of horned animals and a seated human figure, seemed to support this interpretation. At the same time, chemical analysis of one of the deep shafts at the site proved that it had been a well filled in or poisoned with large quantities of manure. Later research has favored the view that these sites, in fact, were fortified small farmsteads, or *Herrenhöfe*, and some may very well have served that function. The possibility of reuse, or multiple uses, of such sites cannot be

ruled out. No single theory adequately explains all of the morphologically similar but unexcavated sites that have been placed in the *Viereckschanzen* category.

ROMANS AND BARBARIANS

Most of the *oppida* appeared before the Roman occupation. In the course of the Late La Tène period, however, they undoubtedly were a source of protection against not only Roman military incursions but also the growing Germanic threat from the north. West of the Rhine, Celtic elites in Gaul and Germany responded in a variety of ways to the presence of the Roman occupiers. Political capital could be derived from an external military threat, but at the same time there were benefits to becoming allies of Rome, and Roman citizenship together with Roman customs gradually led to changes in social organization and religious traditions. The heavy yoke of Roman taxation led to intermittent revolts throughout the empire, including in Germany, where one of the most famous uprisings in A.D. 9 eradicated three legions in the Teutoburg Forest under the command of the hapless Publius Quintilius Varus. The abrupt erasure of a major portion of the Roman military forces led the Emperor Augustus to withdraw his troops to the Rhine, ending his expansionist campaign north and east.

Clearly, Augustus had learned what the Celtic groups in the place that the Romans called Free Germany—Germany on the east of the Rhine—already had experienced at first hand: that the Germanic-speaking peoples constituted a seemingly limitless outpouring, pushing south and west in search of land. Beginning with the invasions between 113 and 101 B.C. of the Cimbri, who ultimately terrorized Celtic Gaul at the head of a tribal confederacy intent on territory and plunder, the Celtic-speaking societies in Germany were increasingly caught between several fires. The outcome is indicated by the fact that a Germanic rather than a Celtic language is spoken in Germany today, and the Celtic prehistory of the country is documented only in the archaeological record, presumably to some extent in the gene pool, and by a handful of place names.

See also *Oppida* (vol. 2, part 6); *Manching* (vol. 2, part 6); *Hillforts* (vol. 2, part 6); *Ritual Sites: Viereckschanzen* (vol. 2, part 6); *The Heuneburg* (vol. 2, part 6).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Arnold, Bettina, and D. Blair Gibson, eds. *Celtic Chieftdom, Celtic State: The Evolution of Complex Social Systems in Prehistoric Europe*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1995.
- Biel, Jörg. *Der Keltenfürst von Hochdorf: Methoden und Ergebnisse der Landesarchäologie*. Stuttgart, Germany: Konrad Theiss Verlag, 1985.
- Bittel, Kurt, Wolfgang Kimmig, and Siegwalt Schiek, eds. *Die Kelten in Baden-Württemberg*. Stuttgart, Germany: Konrad Theiss Verlag, 1981.
- Collis, John. *The European Iron Age*. London: Batsford, 1984.
- Cunliffe, Barry. *The Ancient Celts*. New York: Penguin, 2000.
- Green, Miranda J., ed. *The Celtic World*. London: Routledge, 1995.
- Krämer, Werner, and Ferdinand Maier, eds. *Die Ausgrabungen in Manching*. 15 vols. Wiesbaden, Germany: Franz Steiner Verlag, 1970–1992.
- Rieckhoff, Sabine, and Jörg Biel. *Die Kelten in Deutschland*. Stuttgart, Germany: Konrad Theiss Verlag, 2001.
- Schwarz, Klaus. “Die Geschichte eines keltischen Temenos im nördlichen Alpenvorland.” In *Ausgrabungen in Deutschland*. Vol. 1, pp. 324–358. Mainz, Germany: Verlag des Römisch-Germanisches Zentralmuseums, 1975.
- Sievers, Susanne. “Vorbericht über die Ausgrabungen 1998–1999 im Oppidum von Manching.” *Germania* 78, no. 2 (2000): 355–394.
- Spindler, Konrad. *Die Frühen Kelten*. Stuttgart, Germany: Reclam, 1983.
- Wells, Peter S. *The Barbarians Speak: How the Conquered People Shaped Roman Europe*. Princeton, N.J.: Princeton University Press, 1999.
- . *Culture Contact and Culture Change: Early Iron Age Central Europe and the Mediterranean World*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1980.
- Wieland, Günther. *Keltische Viereckschanzen: Einem Rätsel auf der Spur*. Stuttgart, Germany: Konrad Theiss Verlag, 1999.

BETTINA ARNOLD

KELHEIM

Kelheim, a city with a population of about fifteen thousand, is situated at the confluence of the Altmühl River into the Danube in Lower Bavaria, Ger-

many. In and around Kelheim are an unusual number of archaeological sites from the Palaeolithic to the modern day. Particularly important remains date from the Late Bronze Age (a large cemetery of cremation burials) and the Late Iron Age. From about the middle of the second century until the middle of the first century B.C., Kelheim was the site of an *oppidum*, a large, walled settlement of the final period of the prehistoric Iron Age, before the Roman conquest of much of temperate Europe. Just west of the medieval and modern town center is the site of the Late Iron Age complex, set on a triangular piece of land bounded by the Altmühl River on the north, the Danube in the southeast, and a wall 3.28 kilometers long along its western edge, cutting the promontory off from the land to the west. The area enclosed by this wall and the two rivers is about 600 hectares, 90 percent of which is on top of the limestone plateau known as the Michelsberg and 10 percent of which lies in the valley of the Altmühl, between the steep slope of the Michelsberg and the southern bank of the river. Some investigators believe that the settlement that occupied this site was one referred to as “Alkimoennis” by the Greek geographer Ptolemy.

Numerous archaeological excavations have been carried out on sections of the walls, on iron-mining pits on the Michelsberg, and on limited portions of the enclosed land. The western wall, an inner wall 930 meters in length, and a wall along the south bank of the Danube that is 3.3 kilometers in length were constructed in similar ways. Tree trunks about 60 centimeters in diameter were sunk into the ground at intervals of 2 meters or less, and between the trunks the wall front was constructed of limestone slabs to a height of 5 to 6 meters. An earth ramp behind the wall held the stone facing in place and provided access to the top for defenders. Estimates suggest that more than eight thousand trees were felled, some twenty-five thousand cubic meters of limestone were quarried and cut for the wall front, and four hundred thousand cubic meters of earth were piled up for the embankment, representing a substantial amount of labor as well as a significant environmental impact on the surrounding forest.

On the Michelsberg plateau, both within the enclosed area and beyond the western wall, some six thousand pits have been identified from their par-

tially filled remains visible on the surface. Excavations of a few reveal that they are mining pits, cut into the limestone to reach layers of limonite iron ore. Some are of Late Iron Age date and are associated with the *oppidum* occupation; others are medieval. Remains of smelting furnaces near some of the pits have been studied. The principal evidence for the settlement has been found below the Michelsberg plateau, between it and the Altmühl on a part of the site known as the Mitterfeld. Limited excavations on top of the Michelsberg have failed to uncover any extensive settlement remains, but on the Mitterfeld are abundant materials from the Late Iron Age occupation. They are densest in the eastern part of the Mitterfeld and thin out toward the west. Postholes, storage pits, wells, and chunks of wall plaster indicate a typical settlement of the Late La Tène culture, comparable to the site of Manching 36 kilometers up the Danube.

Pieces of ore, slag, and furnace bottoms occur over much of the settlement, attesting to the importance of iron production. Iron tools and ornaments were manufactured on the site, bronze was cast, and glass ornaments made. Tools recovered include axes, anvils, chisels, awls, nails, clamps, hooks, needles, pins, and keys. Vessels, brooches, and spearheads also were made of iron. Bronze ornaments include brooches, rings, pendants, pins, and several figural ornaments, including a small, finely crafted head of a vulture.

The pottery assemblage is typical of the major *oppidum* settlements. Most of the pots were made on a potter's wheel, and they include fine painted wares, well-made tableware, thick-walled cooking pots of a graphite-clay mix, and large, coarse-walled storage vessels. Spindle whorls attest to textile production by the community. Lumps of unshaped glass indicate local manufacture of beads and bracelets. A number of bronze and silver coins have been recovered, along with a mold in which blanks were cast. All of this production of iron and manufacture of goods was based on a solid subsistence economy of agriculture and livestock husbandry. Barley, spelt wheat, millet, and peas were among the principal crops, and pigs and cattle were the main livestock.

Like all of the major *oppida*, the community at Kelheim was actively involved in the commercial systems of Late Iron Age Europe. The quantities of iron produced by the mines and the abundant



Fig. 1. Bronze head of a vulture, from Kelheim. Vultures and other birds of prey became important symbols at the end of the Iron Age. COURTESY OF PETER S. WELLS. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

smelting and forging debris indicate specialized production for trade. The site's situation at the confluence of two major rivers was ideal for commerce. The copper and tin that composed bronze had to be brought in, as did the raw glass and the graphite-clay used for cooking pots. Imports from the Roman world include a bronze wine jug, a fragmentary sieve, and an attachment in the form of a dolphin.

As at most of the *oppida* in Late Iron Age Europe, few graves have been found at Kelheim. Without burial evidence, population estimates are difficult to make, but an educated guess might put the size of Late Iron Age Kelheim at between five hundred and two thousand people. Landscape survey shows that when the *oppidum* at Kelheim was established during the second century B.C., people living on farms and in small villages in the vicinity abandoned their settlements and moved into the growing center, perhaps to take advantage of the defense system and for mutual protection. Around the middle of the first century B.C., the *oppidum* was abandoned, like many others east of the Rhine, for reasons and under conditions that are not yet well

understood but are subjects of intensive ongoing research.

See also *Oppida* (vol. 2, part 6).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Engelhardt, Bernd. *Ausgrabungen am Main-Donau-Kanal*. Buch am Erlbach, Germany: Verlag Maria Leidorf, 1987.
- Pauli, Jutta. *Die latènezeitliche Besiedlung des Kelheimer Beckens*. Kallmünz, Germany: Verlag Michael Lassleben, 1993.
- Rieckhoff, Sabine, and Jörg Biel. *Die Kelten in Deutschland*. Stuttgart, Germany: Konrad Theiss, 2001.
- Rind, Michael M. *Geschichte ans Licht gebracht: Archäologie im Landkreis Kelheim*. Büchenbach, Germany: Verlag Dr. Faustus, 2000.
- Wells, Peter S., ed. *Settlement, Economy, and Cultural Change at the End of the European Iron Age: Excavations at Kelheim in Bavaria, 1987–1991*. Ann Arbor, Mich.: International Monographs in Prehistory, 1993.

PETER S. WELLS

THE HEUNEBURG

The Early Iron Age (600–450 B.C.) Heuneburg hillfort in the southwest German state of Baden-Württemberg is one of the most intensively studied Hallstatt period (Early Iron Age) settlement complexes in Europe. It occupies a roughly triangular natural spur about 60 meters above the Upper Danube River some 600 meters above sea level. The 3.3-hectare fortified promontory settlement was associated with a much larger outer settlement, or suburbium, whose precise boundaries are still unknown. The site came to the attention of the international scholarly community when the Württemberg state conservator Eduard Paulus excavated several burial mounds close to the hillfort in 1877, uncovering gold neckrings, metal drinking vessels, and other evidence of elite material culture. Paulus coined the term *Fürstengräber*, “princely burials,” to describe these interments, a reference to the wealthy burials excavated by Heinrich Schliemann at Mycenae the year before. All four of the mounds in this group were partially or completely excavated by various researchers between 1954 and 1989. A looted and leveled fifth mound was discovered dur-

ing excavations to the southwest of the hillfort in 1999.

Unsystematic explorations of mounds within 5 kilometers of the hillfort are recorded as early as the sixteenth century, peaking in the nineteenth century following Paulus's excavations. Looting combined with the gradual destruction by plowing of mounds on arable land has taken its toll on the Early Iron Age burial monuments in this area. Roughly 130 burial mounds, also referred to as tumuli, were known in the Heuneburg area by the end of the 1990s. This probably represents only 10 percent of the original total.

The first exploratory trenching of the hillfort took place in 1921, establishing the contemporaneity of the settlement and the tumuli roughly 400 meters north-northwest of the promontory fort investigated by Paulus. Beginning in 1950, twenty-nine years of systematic fieldwork on the acropolis, led by Wolfgang Kimmig and Egon Gersbach, uncovered a fortification system of air-dried, white-washed mud bricks on a limestone foundation. This arid-climate construction technique is not found on any other temperate European Iron Age site. Far from being especially vulnerable to the wet climate of the region, it actually survived longer than the homegrown wood-and-earth fortification systems that came before and after it. Though relatively fire-resistant, the mud-brick wall was ultimately leveled following a major fire around 540 B.C. that destroyed a significant portion of the hillfort and outer settlement. Additional evidence for contact with the Mediterranean world of the sixth century B.C. was recovered in the form of distinctive Greek imported pottery known as black figure ware, as well as trade amphorae that were probably used to transport wine and olive oil. These imports, combined with the ostentatious wealth of the burial mounds near the hillfort, are the hallmarks of a so-called *Fürstensitz*, or “princely seat.” The Heuneburg is one of a small number of such sites in the so-called West Hallstatt Zone (southwest Germany, eastern France, Switzerland north of the Alps).

By 1979, when excavation yielded to analysis and publication of features and finds, just over a third of the plateau had been explored. The site was occupied from the Late Neolithic (fourth and third millennia B.C.) until the medieval period (eleventh and twelfth centuries). Altogether twenty-three

separate building phases were identified. The earliest fortification of the plateau dates to the end of the Early Bronze Age to the beginning of the Middle Bronze Age (seventeenth century B.C.). Throughout the thirteenth and twelfth centuries B.C. the site seems to have controlled the economic, social, and religious life of a local microregion. Beginning in 1999, the discovery by Siegfried Kurz of several small settlements in the Heuneburg hinterland dating to this period support this hypothesis of a two-tiered settlement hierarchy for the Bronze Age Heuneburg region.

Population estimates for the Early Iron Age site complex (plateau, outer settlement, associated burial mounds) are complicated by the fact that the outer settlement, which in 2003 was still being explored, and the plateau itself have not been completely excavated. However, the site appears to have housed several thousand people at its peak during the Late Hallstatt–Early La Tène period (seventh to fifth centuries B.C.). Based on the known size of the settlement complex, the evidence for long-distance exchange and the wealth of the surrounding burial mounds, the Heuneburg during its Early Iron Age heyday is interpreted as a central place controlling a large region characterized by a multitiered settlement hierarchy composed of at least three settlement-size categories. The hillfort's strategic position on the Danube, its proximity to iron ore resources, the evidence for various kinds of production activity (especially metalworking and textile production) on a scale consistent with an export trade system, and the size of some of the multi-roomed structures at the site all testify to the socio-political and economic importance of the Heuneburg during this period.

The Iron Age burial mounds associated with the Heuneburg echo the social complexity and economic dominance suggested by the settlement record. Following Paulus's excavations in the mounds near the hillfort, no systematic explorations were conducted until Gustav Riek's partial excavation in 1937–1938 of the Hohmichele—at 13.5 meters high and with a diameter of 85 meters, the second-largest known Early Iron Age burial mound in Europe (fig. 1). Although the central chamber had been looted, seven inhumations (body burials) were recovered, including an intact chamber grave (Grave VI) containing the inhumations of a man



Fig. 1. The Heuneburg situated on a hill in the Upper Danube Valley. © ERIC LESSING/ART RESOURCE, NY. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

and a woman buried with a four-wheeled wagon, bronze drinking vessels, personal ornaments (for both individuals), and weapons (a dagger, a quiver full of iron-tipped arrows, and a bow with the male individual).

Beginning in 1999, excavations by the author and colleagues in two smaller mounds (Tumulus 17 and Tumulus 18) 200 meters from the Hohmichele produced twenty-three new burials. Tumulus 17 Grave 1 contained a bronze cauldron, an iron short sword, two iron spear points, an iron belt hook, and a helmet plume clamp, whereas Tumulus 18, excavated in 2002, produced two burials with bronze neckrings, a costume element that was a marker of elite status in Iron Age Europe until well into the Christian period in Ireland and Scotland. The ongoing search for supporting, smaller settlements in the Heuneburg hinterland (by Siegfried Kurz), the efforts to delineate the boundaries of the outer settlement (by Hartmann Reim), and the systematic ex-

cavation of additional burial mounds (by Bettina Arnold and colleagues) are beginning to fill in the picture scholars have constructed of this dynamic Early Iron Age center.

See also Hillforts (vol. 2, part 6); Greek Colonies in the West (vol. 2, part 6); Iron Age Germany (vol. 2, part 6).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Arnold, Bettina. "The Material Culture of Social Structure: Rank and Status In Early Iron Age Europe." In *Celtic Chieftdom, Celtic State: The Evolution of Complex Social Systems in Prehistoric Europe*. Edited by Bettina Arnold and D. Blair Gibson, pp. 43–52. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1995.
- Arnold, Bettina, and Matthew L. Murray. "A Landscape of Ancestors in Southwest Germany." *Antiquity* 76, no. 292 (2002): 321–322. (Additional information is available from the website "A Landscape of Ancestors: The Heuneburg Archaeological Project" at <http://www.uwm.edu/~barnold/arch/>.)

Bittel, Kurt, Wolfgang Kimmig, and Siegwalt Schiek. *Die Kelten in Baden-Württemberg*. Stuttgart, Germany: Theiss, 1981.

Kimmig, Wolfgang. *Die Heuneburg an der oberen Donau*. Führer zu archäologischen Denkmälern in Baden-Württemberg 1. Stuttgart, Germany: Theiss, 1983.

Kurz, Siegfried. "Siedlungsforschungen bei der Heuneburg, Gde. Herbertingen-Hundersingen, Kreis Sigmaringen—Zum Stand des DFG-Projektes." In *Archäolog-*

ische Ausgrabungen in Baden-Württemberg 2001, pp. 61–63. Stuttgart, Germany: Theiss, 2002.

Reim, Hartmann. "Siedlungsgrabungen im Vorfeld der Heuneburg bei Hundersingen, Gde. Herbertingen, Kreis Sigmaringen." In *Archäologische Ausgrabungen in Baden-Württemberg 1999*, pp. 53–57. Stuttgart, Germany: Theiss, 2000.

Rieckhoff, Sabine, and Jörg Biel. *Die Kelten in Deutschland*. Stuttgart, Germany: Theiss, 2001.

BETTINA ARNOLD



IBERIA IN THE IRON AGE

As in other areas of the Mediterranean, the classic European division of the Iron Age into the Hallstatt and La Tène phases is not applicable to the Iberian Peninsula. During the first millennium B.C. this area underwent intense change in which different cultures interacted. The local traditions of the Bronze Age came to an end, and new populations became established. Some of them were of Continental origin, for example, those of the Urnfield culture, the last traces of which are seen in the seventh century B.C. Of greater impact, however, were those of the Mediterranean, beginning with the Phoenicians, who founded their first colonies along the southern coast at the end of the ninth century B.C. The cultural characteristics of the Iberian Peninsula, with its Atlantic, Mediterranean, and Continental influences as well as its local traditions, made the Iron Age a time of complex change that showed little chronological homogeneity. The general features that developed over the long term included the definitive settlement of populations, the marking of political territories, the intensification of agriculture through the introduction of iron tools, the progressive development of social hierarchy, and accompanying ideological changes.

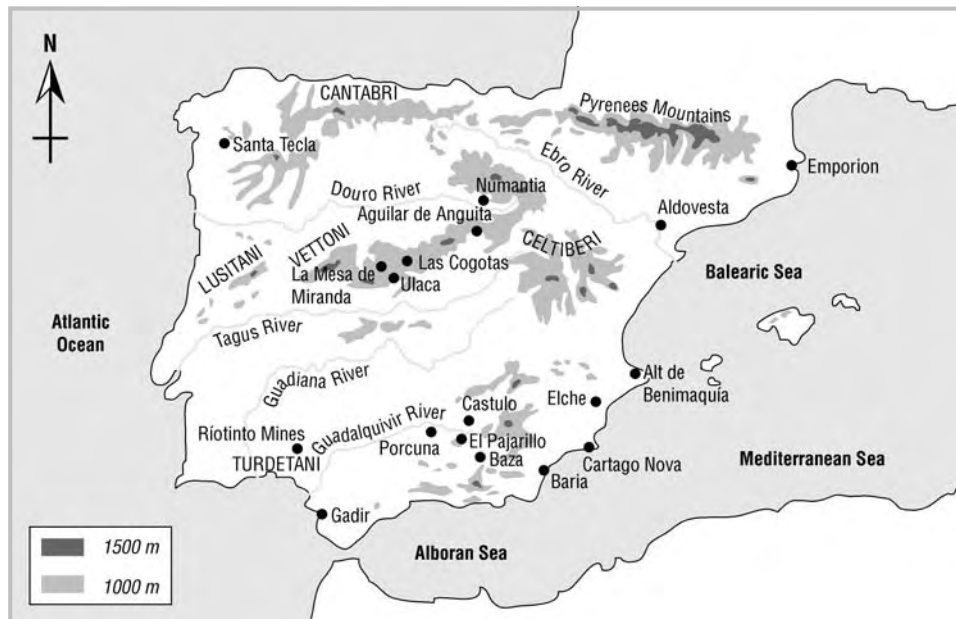
THE ORIGINS OF IRON AGE IBERIA

The arrival of the Phoenicians and the founding of several coastal colonies and trading ports were among the factors that marked the beginning of the Iron Age on the Iberian Peninsula. Important transformations occurred in the economics of the area, accompanied by changes in the political, religious, and social spheres. The Phoenician colonies, among

which Gadir (now Cádiz) stands out, assured their subsistence by marking out large catchment areas as well as developing fishing and fish-salting industries. Specialized crafts were developed that introduced new techniques to goldsmithing, the forging of iron, and the making of wheel-turned pottery. In addition to introducing such exotic objects as ivory, alabaster jars, and ostrich eggs, these colonies are attributed with introducing new domestic fauna, such as asses and chickens; expanding wine consumption; and generally incorporating much of the peninsula into the political and commercial dynamics of the Mediterranean.

The economic factors of the Phoenician cities in the Near East were important in the election of the Iberian territories for colonization. The Ríotinto mines in the southwest (Huelva) were considered fundamental to the supply of silver to Tyrus (modern-day Tyre) and Sidon. They would allow commercial strength to be maintained while meeting the increasing tax demands of Assyria. The richness of these mining areas, which were developed in an open-cast fashion, must have been evident to Phoenician metallurgists, because the Huelva mines produced some 2,000 grams per ton of silver and 70 grams per ton of gold.

The mines of the southeast, located around what eventually would become the Carthaginian cities of Baria (present-day Viaricos) and Cartago Nova (present-day Cartagena), also were exploited. The lead ingots obtained in this way were transported by small boats that hugged the coast until they reached the main ports. The seventh-century wreck



Selected sites and selected populi of Iron Age Iberia.

of one Phoenician vessel at Mazarrón, which has been preserved in excellent condition, was carrying 2,000 kilograms of lead oxide when it sank. The intense mining activity, which reached its peak in the seventh century B.C., caused notable deforestation and the release of important contaminants, as revealed by ice layers in Greenland that correspond to this time.

All this activity implied great change for the indigenous population, which not only saw how part of its territory was progressively occupied but also must have supplied the greater part of the workforce for the mines. The southwest of the peninsula, the hinterland of this colonial world, experienced the upsurge of the “Tartessian culture,” which became a mythical reference among the legends of the extreme western Mediterranean. The people of the interior, even those far from the coast, became suppliers of the raw materials required by the Phoenicians as well as a market for the products that the colonists manufactured. Enclaves on the estuaries and along the courses of the main rivers show that Phoenician trade sought out these inland areas. Those on the Sado and Mondego Rivers in western Portugal and on the Aldovesta in the northeast of the peninsula reveal how Phoenician commerce tried to make use of the infrastructure and penetration routes controlled by native populations.

This entire process had a strong ideological impact, which is detectable through the religious changes that took place on the southern and eastern parts of the Iberian Peninsula. Phoenician sanctuaries, such as that of Melkart in Gadir, also were built at the former mouth of the Guadalquivir (Roman Baetis), near Seville. There a sanctuary dedicated to Astarte (Spanish Ashtarte), goddess of fertility and sexual love, was erected, from which a beautiful bronze statuette with a dedication has been recovered. Many other Phoenician divinities were adapted to the religious beliefs of the indigenous populations of the Tartessian area, as evidenced by the palace sanctuary of Cancho Roano in Extremadura. The iconography of the goddess Astarte was absorbed as a representation of the mother goddess venerated over a large part of Iberia. This is palpable proof of the profound political and economic transformations ushered in by the Phoenicians.

The first Greek explorations also made contact with the Tartessian world of the far west. Herodotus (book I of the *Inquiries*) indicates that the mythical Tartessian king Arganthonius established good relations with the Phocaeans, to the point that Tartessian silver was used to finance the building of a strong stone wall to protect Phocaea. These contacts have led some authors to establish Tartessus as

the site of one of the twelve tasks of Hercules: his fight with the monster Geryon and his dog Orthros, both of whom were killed by the hero, who took from them the herd of red cows he later delivered to Greece.

BIRTH AND DEVELOPMENT OF THE IBERIAN CULTURE

When Phoenician commercial dominance went into crisis at the start of the sixth century B.C., Carthage gained control of the colonial southern peninsula, and some relevant places, such as Gadir, developed as totally independent centers. This same point in time also saw the appearance of certain culturally identifiable groups, such as the Iberians, whose territories extended from southeastern France down to the old Tartessian kingdom (which at this time was given the name Turdetania). The Iberian populations were divided into different political units (the Ilergetes, Lacetani, Edetani, Contestani, Bastetani, and Oretani, among others), in whose territories some very large settlements existed. Stone walls reinforced with towers fortified their towns, and houses of one or two floors lined their stone streets. In eastern Andalusia a system of concentrating the population seems to have existed in the catchment area dominated by the *oppida*. In other locations, such as Valencia, rural settlements abounded next to worked fields. Economic territories revolved around river valleys, religious centers playing an important role in their symbolic definition. This appears to be a case very similar to that described by François de Polignac, the Greek scholar, for the Greek world, as can be appreciated in the iconography of the Iberian sanctuary of El Pajarillo de Huelma and in the large group of sculptures at Porcuna, both in the province of Jaén.

The cultural substratum of the Iberians was influenced strongly by local and Phoenician traditions, but their commercial contacts were with the Greek colonies of the western Mediterranean. Emporion, a Phocaeen foundation linked to Massalia as well as to other towns, such as Alonis or Akra Leuke (which have not been located but are cited in texts), was a point at which goods were loaded and Greek pottery, wine, and oil (products highly valued on the Iberian Peninsula) were unloaded. Some trading treaties, such as that of Ampurias, belonging to the second half of the sixth century B.C., were in-

scribed on lead. This particular treaty accords the shipment of goods from the port of Sagunto. The relationship between Greeks and Iberians was very close, as is seen in the southeast of the peninsula, where a Greco-Iberian language developed, which expressed the local tongue in Ionian characters.

An important economic as well as cultural transformation was the production and consumption of wine. Amphorae of varying Mediterranean provenances have been recovered at the Iberian settlements, but there are signs of developed local production at least from the sixth century B.C. onward. At the fortified settlement of Alt de Benimaquía (Valencia), several pools were dedicated to the treading of grapes, and the wine obtained was stored in amphorae of Phoenician typology. Much of the Greek pottery found on settlements and cemeteries from the fifth century on were linked precisely with the consumption of wine.

After the end of the fifth century B.C., iron tools began to be used in agriculture. This had the effect of intensifying production, which was linked to an increase in the population and in commerce. Calculations of the capacity of the numerous cereal storage pits documented for the area of Emporion in the northeast of Catalonia show it to have greatly exceeded the needs of the local people. Therefore a large part of the stored grain probably was destined for export. In addition the Castulo silver mines in Oretani territory assured the profit of commercial activities. Findings of Attic pottery along the old routes connecting the ports with this city are witness to the intensity of these economic relations.

The social organization of the Iberian peoples has been investigated through the study of their villages and corresponding necropolises. These sites reveal the existence of a warrior aristocracy that always cremated its dead before burying them in tombs. Some of these groups constructed towers or stelae with sculptural decoration playing an important role. Real animals (lions, bulls, and horses) and mythical creatures (sphinxes and griffins) were preferred by Iberian sculptors for the protection of the tombs of important people. Greek and oriental influences can be seen in these decorations.

Among the funerary equipment that accompanied the urns holding the cremated bones, Greek

ceramics (kraterae [jars for mixing wine and water], *kylix* [wine cups], and *skiphoi* [cups]) stand out. These items were highly valued for their quality, their shiny varnish, and their iconography and sometimes were imitated by local craftspeople. Iberian ceramics, with their orange hues and red-painted geometric decorations, also were the products of specialized craftspeople. In some areas of the east and southeast figurative themes were developed, with scenes of human activity as well as animal and plant motifs. Iron weapons were important as well, especially the *falcata*, an original curved sword the shape of which has been likened to the Greek *machaira* and which demonstrated mastery of a refined technology.

Iberian religion was of the Mediterranean type. Among the major systems was the veneration of a certain goddess, protector of life and death. She was represented through outstanding sculptures, such as the well-known *Dama de Elche* or the *Dama de Baza*, a large stone statue representing a veiled woman sitting on a winged throne, within which were ashes and cremated bones. These pieces are testimony to the rich clothing worn by Iberian women and the numerous articles of jewelry used on special occasions. Nevertheless those objects typically were not deposited within the grave, suggesting the existence of hereditary transmission systems. The members of these societies are represented in the thousands of stone and bronze votive offerings that have been found in sanctuaries both in rural settings and at the entrance to settlements. Caves in mountainous areas of difficult access were special places of devotion, which suggests a relationship to initiation rites.

THE CENTRAL AND WESTERN AREAS OF THE IBERIAN PENINSULA DURING THE IRON AGE

Other peoples with different roots, normally grouped together as Celts owing to their characteristics and languages of Indo-European origins, occupied the central and western parts of the peninsula. Outstanding among them are the Celtiberi, Vaccei, and Vettoni and farther west the Lusitani. The Iron Age brought about important changes in the economic models characteristic of the western peninsula. At the end of the Bronze Age economic power was based on the control of livestock and trading routes, but during the Iron Age there was

a trend toward the intensification and dominance of agricultural production. The transition toward this model was linked to the adoption of definitive sedentary settlements. Warrior groups used their new iron weapons to gain better land.

The introduction of the plow usually is considered a step indicative of the passage from a model of community property to one of privately owned land. The existence of plots dividing up cultivatable land as well as separating such land from pasture has been proposed. Crude zoomorphic sculptures from the Vettonian area, representing pigs and bulls (known as *verracos*), are thought to have signaled the claims of particular groups to stock-raising resources, such as winter pastures. Control of the land for agriculture, as a complement to stock raising, led to changes in the relationship between society and its environment, to unequal access to resources, and to progressive social differentiation.

Vettonian settlements were of two basic types, larger ones acting as central hubs and smaller ones basically concerned with agricultural production. Among the former, Ulaca (60 hectares), Las Cogotas (14.5 hectares), and La Mesa de Miranda (30 hectares in maximum extent) stand out, all *oppida*. Vettonian settlements had strong fortifications and dispersed domestic units. The interior of these enormous settlements included not only houses but also centers of worship and sacrificial altars, livestock pens, marketplaces, neighborhoods of artisans with their kilns and metallurgical furnaces, and even quarries. They were so big and their activities so diverse that part of the population might never have needed to leave them in their daily lives. Population-density calculations, based on the number of tombs recovered from the necropolises associated with these settlements, show low values.

At Las Cogotas there are four differentiated areas of graves and nearly 1,500 cremation burials, but because the cemetery was used for a long period of time, not more than 250 people are thought to have lived in this large hillfort at any given time. The existence of separate funerary areas seems to reflect a system of lineal descent in kinship groups whose economy was based on control of different resources, without a remarkable potential of accumulation. Only 15 percent of the burials showed evidence of grave goods, among which 18 percent included such weapons as spears, shields, knives,

and swords decorated with silver as well as horse trappings. Most of the dead are accompanied only by pottery vessels, while women might wear spindle whorls, finger rings, and brooches.

Smaller centers show clear differences with the *oppida*. They were open sites placed on the lower parts of the valleys and seem to be small villages or hamlets involved in agriculture, with limited craft production at a familiar level. These farming units complemented stock raising, which was concentrated on the highlands and mountains.

Farther west the Lusitani (to the north of the Tagus River), the Celtici (in the Alentejo), and the Conii (in the Algarve) occupied most of Portugal. A tribal organization dominated the interior areas, the Atlantic coast developing an urban organization more rapidly. Greek products arrived via this route, as witnessed by the necropolis at Alcacer do Sal, although this site also contains clearly western artifacts, such as antenna-hilt swords and printed pottery. Stone walls encircle the settlements, and domestic buildings have circular plans, built with a stone basement and a wooden roof, the floors being thinly paved. No evidence of ironworking is present here until the second half of the first millennium B.C.

The northeast of the Spanish *meseta* was occupied by Celtiberians, who were known, among other things, for their language, which was undoubtedly of Celtic origin. Both their settlements and necropolises suggest that they formed a variety of communities, from small hamlets of five or six houses to villages of twenty-five to thirty domestic units. More exceptional were large settlements with a necropolis like that of Aguilar de Anguita, which had a population of some 400 or perhaps even 600 people. Their characteristic settlement was the hillfort, a permanent village protected by a wall and sometimes by moats and *chevaux-de-frise* (irregular barriers about 50 to 80 centimeters high made up of stones that surround the easiest access to the villages), reflecting Celtic influence. In the interior lived a few families who survived on what the surroundings produced. These self-sufficient units occupied more and more land by a system of segmentation, the “overspill” of the population of one hillfort founding another of the same type in a neighboring area. By the end of the first millennium B.C. the growth of some centers outweighed others

to become “capitals” occupying large extensions of terrain, such as Numantia, which was of extraordinary political importance during the clash with Roman forces.

Celtiberian houses used the defensive wall as their own back wall, and their homogeneity speaks of a society with few social differences. The social model in most of Celtic Hispania was that of warlike tribes, authority resting with the heads of lineages and families. This structure generally prevented any process leading to marked inequality, as witnessed by their housing and the egalitarian nature of most of their burial grounds. The presence of the Romans, however, changed both their political and economic points of reference, with the larger centers starting to become specialized in certain types of work. For the rural hillforts, which became the suppliers of these emerging urban nuclei, this generated a situation of inequality.

Economically the Celtiberians possessed only a limited agriculture, which took advantage of fertile valley bottoms. The main crops were cereals, although the remains found in their villages show that they consumed large quantities of forest products, especially acorns. Their main activity was stock raising, especially goats and sheep, and they must have practiced transhumance to take advantage of better pastures at different times of the year. It has been suggested that these groups performed the same tasks for neighboring populations, such as the Iberians of the east.

Compared with the Mediterranean area, the west of the peninsula appears to have maintained religious beliefs very similar to those of the Indo-European world, worshipping such divinities as Endovellicus, god of health and sometimes of the night, and Ataecina, goddess of agrarian fertility, death, and resurrection. The greater part of these religious forces resided in elements of nature, such as woods, rocks, springs, or rivers. Altars, where animal sacrifices, especially of bulls, pigs, and sheep, were made and where young warriors underwent complex initiation ceremonies, have been preserved both inside and outside settlements.

THE GALICIAN NORTHWEST AND THE CANTABRIAN COAST

The northwest, which includes the north of Portugal and the present Spanish region of Galicia, is

separated from the *meseta* and is of difficult and mountainous access. During the Iron Age its development enjoyed a great deal of autonomy. Walled settlements, known as “Galician *castra*,” are its most characteristic element. Small in size (0.5–3 hectares), they were situated where they dominated valley areas, their interest being the control of agricultural regions. Unlike anything in the rest of the peninsula, the dwellings they contained were round. Hardly any signs of urban organization can be found beyond the siting of buildings to favor the movement of people and the evacuation of the abundant rain that falls in this area.

These *castra* of the pre-Roman era concentrated families with their own systems of subsistence. No superstructure broke this organization of associated units in which sex and age were the main factors ordering social behavior. The construction and contents of these domestic units show practically no specialization; all incorporate the same basic functional elements. The independence of each family group was limited by the *castra* boundary—the only thing that joined together these poorly united family-autonomous communities.

Roman interests accelerated a substantial change of this simple model. In contrast to the arrangement described earlier, at the end of the Iron Age there was a clear tendency toward intensification and product specialization, which terminated the autarchy of traditional systems. Agriculture and sheep raising, and in many areas the creation of new *castra* linked to mining activities aimed at the Roman market, were factors that provoked notable transformations. Very often the land was redistributed according to Roman interests. Some types of land exploitation, such as gold mines, attained industrial levels of activity. This change opened the way for hitherto unknown social differentiation.

Ideological and functional changes accompanied this new situation. Large nuclei of up to 20 hectares appeared, such as that of Santa Tecla (Pontevedra), leading to a considerable concentration of the population. Their dwellings were more complex, incorporating entrance halls and vestibules as well as sets of rooms arranged around a central patio. Decorative elements appeared in an architecture whose complexity grew—and not simply with respect to housing. The system of defensive walls became a symbol defining both the inside and out-

side of these *castra*. Finally, the first cemeteries appeared, with graves using stelae of Roman formula. This movement toward complexity and social inequality that had visited other areas of the peninsula in earlier times reached Galicia only now, bringing it into line, if still incipiently, with the general model followed throughout Iberia (although this model did show variations).

Along the rest of the Cantabrian strip the center and west had settlements similar to those of the *meseta* region and Galicia, respectively, with their *castra* and associated farming areas. Archaeological evidence from the Basque country is very limited. Some of the most characteristic structures are enclosures bound by stones, whose value began to be appreciated for the hierarchical control of geographical and productive areas linked to rivers or streams. The difficult mountainous terrain of these lands and their scant economic potential favored a certain isolation, appreciable even in the twenty-first century in the area’s pre-Indo-European language.

Although this was still an eminently pastoral society, agriculture continued to gain importance in this period, helped by the manufacture and use of iron tools. It was less noticeable than in other areas, but again it illustrates the changes that led to a reorganization of productive forces, developments undoubtedly accompanied by social adjustment.

THE END OF THE IBERIAN IRON AGE

The Iberian Peninsula was the setting of the Second Punic War between Rome and Carthage (218–202 B.C.). Nearly all the peninsula had come under Punic control after the second treaty between the two powers in 348 B.C. The foundation of New Carthage by the Carthaginian general Hasdrubal was the start of a new policy of territorial domination that looked to local aristocracies for support. Both Hasdrubal and his brother Hannibal married Iberian princesses and were recognized as leaders by the local populations. The growing power of Carthage threatened Roman supremacy. Many of the confrontations between the two powers took place on the peninsula, complicated by fighting, which surely occurred with indigenous groups.

The activity of these two great armies led to the payment of soldiers with coinage, making the domination of mining areas vital. From the point of view

of the Iberian peoples, this situation provoked a militarization of human resources and a return of warrior chiefdoms. Men of the Iberian and Celtic areas were used to form part of Mediterranean armies. By the end of the sixth century B.C. they already had served as mercenaries of Carthage, and on other occasions during the fifth and sixth centuries B.C. they served with both Carthaginian and Greek troops at Syracuse. At the end of the Iron Age many of these populations were active as troops in the Carthaginian or the Roman armies, and they also could fight as independent forces when their territory was threatened.

After defeating Carthage in the third century B.C., Rome installed itself first in the Iberian and Turdetanian areas before conquering the rest of the territory. Local resistance was fierce where the existing social structures were incompatible with the Roman state model. A little later, however, the entire peninsula entered a new phase as part of the Roman administration, drawing the Iron Age to a close.

See also **The Mesolithic of Iberia** (vol. 1, part 2); **Late Neolithic/Copper Age Iberia** (vol. 1, part 4); **El Argar and Related Bronze Age Cultures of the**

Iberian Peninsula (vol. 2, part 5); **Early Medieval Iberia** (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Almagro Gorbea, M., and G. Ruiz Zapatero, eds. *Paleoetnología de la Península Ibérica*. Complutum 2–3. Madrid: Universidad Complutense, 1992.
- Aubet, María Eugenia. *The Phoenicians and the West: Politics, Colonies, and Trade*. Translated by Mary Turton. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1993.
- Belén Deamos, M., and T. Chapa Brunet. *La Edad del Hierro*. Madrid: Editorial Síntesis, 1997.
- Cabrera Bonet, Paloma, and Carmen Sánchez, eds. *Los Griegos en España: Tras las huellas de Heracles*. Madrid: Ministerio de Educación y Cultura, 2000.
- Cunliffe, Barry, and Simon Keay, eds. *Social Complexity and the Development of Towns in Iberia: From the Copper Age to the Second Century AD*. Proceedings of the British Academy, no. 86. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1995.
- Dominguez Monedero, Adolfo J. *Los Griegos en la Península Ibérica*. Madrid: Arco Libros, 1996.
- Ruiz, Arturo, and Manuel Molinos. *The Archaeology of the Iberians*. Translated by Mary Turton. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1998.

TERESA CHAPA



ETRUSCAN ITALY

The Etruscans originated in central Italy around 900 B.C. and were absorbed into the Roman Empire in the 80s B.C. During the first millennium B.C., they developed the earliest complex society in Italy. In common with other Mediterranean civilizations of their time, the Etruscans lived in city-states, had a specialized agricultural and craft economy, and exchanged goods and ideas with their neighbors. Distinctive to the Etruscans was their religion, social and political structure, and language. There is a wealth of archaeological evidence for Etruscan settlements, economy, society, and culture, including the remains of cities, towns, cemeteries, and everyday objects.

IRON AGE

The traditional Etruscan territory in central Italy is delineated by the Tyrrhenian Sea in the west, the Apennines in the east, and the Arno and Tiber Rivers to the north and south. The Etruscan civilization arose out of the culture and society that developed in this area during the Late Bronze Age (1300–900 B.C.) and Iron Age (900–700 B.C.). During the Iron Age, the roots of Etruscan cities, economy, religion, and language were established.

Settlements. Most of the great Etruscan cities of later times originated as villages in the Iron Age. In southern Etruria, Iron Age villages usually were situated on volcanic tufa plateaus (Veio, Cerveteri, Tarquinia, Vulci, and Orvieto). In central and northern Etruria, villages more often were built on isolated hilltops dominating the sea or inland waterways—Populonium (modern-day Populania), Ve-

tulonia, Volterra, Chiusi, Cortona, and Arezzo. Small farms and hamlets surrounded Iron Age villages. Excavations at Volterra, in northern Etruria, provide archaeological evidence for early settlement patterns in one Etruscan city. During the Iron Age many small villages coexisted on the Volterranean hilltop, placed wherever there was relatively flat land and a spring to provide water. Roadways leading into the countryside radiated out from the hilltop in every direction. Along these routes several burial areas developed.

Excavations at Tarquinia, in southern Etruria, have recovered evidence for Iron Age dwellings. Two kinds of huts were found in the Iron Age village: larger oval or rectangular huts, approximately 13 by 7 meters, that could have housed an extended family and smaller huts, approximately 5 by 4 meters, that could have housed a nuclear family. The area between the huts may have been used for growing small cottage gardens and keeping animals and poultry. Drainage channels carried rainwater away from the dwellings and into a central cistern.

Iron Age huts were built on foundation trenches cut into soil or rock. Exterior timber posts were set into holes in the foundation, to support the thatched roof. Walls were made of wattle screens woven from reeds and branches and covered with daub (clay). The door usually was placed at the short end of the structure and sometimes was protected by a small porch. Inside the hut was a central hearth, circular in shape. The interior may have been divided by a screen into a front and a back room.

Cemeteries. Iron Age cemeteries were located outside villages, usually on surrounding hillsides. During the ninth century B.C., most individuals were cremated and their ashes placed into decorated pottery urns. The urns were buried, along with modest grave goods, in tombs cut into soil or rock. Toward the end of the Iron Age new burial customs emerged in central Italy, interpreted as evidence of the development of an aristocracy. By the eighth century B.C., a few rich burials appear among many more common ones, distinguished by their more numerous and expensive grave goods, especially fine metalwork.

Language and Religion. During the Iron Age a common culture developed among the residents of Etruria. The Etruscan language and religion were among the most significant elements in the culture. Etruscan is not an Indo-European language and is not related to the languages of neighboring Italic peoples. The Etruscans learned the alphabet from Greeks who settled in southern Italy and used it to write down their own language. The first texts written in Etruscan date to the end of the Iron Age, around 700 B.C.

The Etruscan religion, as we know it from the historical period, incorporated early cult practices from the Iron Age. The Etruscans believed that divinities determined the course of events in the human world. Etruscan worship took place in sacred groves, caves, and springs, where divinities were thought to reside. The role of Etruscan priests was to learn the will of the gods and then to follow the appropriate rituals and sacrifices. Individual worshippers asked for divine favor by sacrificing animals for the gods, offering them food or drink, or giving them other gifts. A spring at Banditella, near Vulci, was a sanctuary as early as the Middle Bronze Age (seventeenth century B.C.) into Etruscan times, indicating the continuity of religious practices from prehistory into the historic era.

Economy. The Iron Age economy was largely self-sufficient: each Etruscan village produced everything it needed. Agriculture was the foundation of the economy. Farmers grew cereals, legumes, fruits, nuts, and vegetables and raised sheep, goats, and pigs. Villagers also hunted, fished, and gathered in nearby woods and waters. Most tools, utensils, clothing, and other goods were made by each

household for its own use. Certain specialized and luxury items were produced in Etruria and distributed throughout central Italy, the Mediterranean, and north of the Alps. By the Iron Age, a specialized metal industry already existed in Etruria. Metals were mined from the Colline Metallifere, or “metal-bearing hills,” and fashioned into metal objects in nearby Populonium and Vetulonia. In exchange, luxury objects were imported from Greece, Phoenicia, and Sardinia.

Society. By the end of the Iron Age Etruscan society probably included several classes, linked through patron-client ties. Farmers met their own needs and also produced goods and labor for petty chiefs. In exchange, the petty chiefs provided their clients with protection, communal works, and foodstuffs. The petty chiefs, in turn, were clients of paramount chiefs, who redistributed foodstuffs and prestige goods regionally.

ORIENTALIZING PERIOD

The Etruscan period begins around 700 B.C., when the first surviving historic documents were written in the Etruscan language. Etruscan society evolved directly from the prehistoric Iron Age. Many of the most characteristic features of Etruscan society—settlement in towns, distinctive cultural customs, production of goods for regional and long-distance trade and exchange—were present in incipient form during the Iron Age. Early Etruscans also were influenced by the Greeks, Phoenicians, and other contemporary Mediterranean societies.

The Orientalizing period (700–575 B.C.) is named for the imported goods and foreign styles adopted by the Etruscans during this time. The early Etruscans’ economic power was based on mineral and agricultural resources, which they transformed into goods for exchange. They cut a dashing figure across the Mediterranean, renowned for their seafaring skills as traders and pirates. As reflected in their art, monuments, and historical documents, Etruscans of the Orientalizing period were prosperous and cultured.

Settlements. The Orientalizing period saw the transition from village to town life in Etruria. Excavations in Etruscan towns of this period have revealed signs of urban planning and public works, such as streets, drainage channels, reservoirs, retain-



Fig. 1. Etruscan city gate, Volterra, late fourth to early third century B.C. © COPYRIGHT ALINARI/ART RESOURCE, NY. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

ing walls, fortifications, and sanctuaries. Volterra, in northern Etruria, became a small, fortified settlement at this time. In the seventh century B.C., the numerous villages on the Volterran hilltop agglomerated into a single town. In the sixth century a circuit of walls was built to enclose the town, and sanctuaries were demarcated throughout the city (fig. 1). Differences among dwelling and burial types were accentuated, indicating that an aristocracy of prominent families had formed. A similar type of urban development occurred in many other cities in Etruria and Latium (modern-day Lazio), including Roselle, Veio, Vetulonia, and Tarquinia.

Across Etruria there was a significant change in domestic architecture during the Orientalizing period. Stone houses, presumably elite residences, ap-

peared among the thatched huts. Excavations at Poggio Civitate, near Murlo, have uncovered the remains of a princely residence built during the seventh century B.C. The complex at Poggio Civitate was built of rubble foundations, earthen walls coated with lime plaster, and beaten-earth floors. The roof was tiled and decorated with terra-cotta sculpture. The buildings were placed in a U shape around a central courtyard. Two wings of the complex were residential, while the third served as a workshop for crafts made of metal, glass, pottery, wool, and other materials.

A fire destroyed the Orientalizing period residence, and a second complex was built at Poggio Civitate in the early sixth century B.C., or the beginning of the Archaic period of Etruscan history

(575–470 B.C.). The early Archaic building surrounded a central courtyard, with colonnaded porches on three sides. At least twenty-three statues stood on the peak of the roof, including the famous seated “cowboy” figure, with his distinctive hat. Watchtowers were located at two corners of the complex.

Cemeteries. Cemeteries surrounded Etruscan towns. Early cemeteries were placed next to hilltop settlements; as town populations grew during the Orientalizing period, burial areas spread down the hill. The rock-cut Tomb of the Five Chairs at Cerveteri, dating to the second half of the seventh century B.C., provides some insight into burial rites of the time. The main chamber of the tomb held two bodies, while a side chamber provided space for mourners to worship an ancestor cult. Five chairs were carved from rock to hold terra-cotta statues representing ancestors, two women and three men. The ancestor statues sat before rock-carved tables laden with food offerings. A nearby altar held their drinks. Two empty chairs allowed the buried couple to join their ancestors at the feast.

By the seventh century, burials show clear evidence of status differentiation according to gender, socioeconomic status, and region. While existing burial traditions continued, during the Orientalizing period the elite classes began building elaborate chamber tombs covered with tumuli (mounds). Chamber tombs were carved out from soft volcanic rock faces or built from stone slabs or blocks. Their mounds could be as large as 30–40 meters in diameter and 12–15 meters high. A particularly grand example is the Tomb of the Chariots, Populonium, from the middle of the Orientalizing period (mid-seventh to early sixth century B.C.). Under a tumulus 28 meters in diameter, the tomb contained funerary beds for four occupants. At least one woman, with gold jewelry, was buried in the tomb. She was accompanied by men, who were provided with a chariot and two-wheeled carriage.

Religion. Traditional Etruscan worship in open-air sanctuaries continued during the Orientalizing period, but new religious practices also arose. Influenced by Greek ideas, Etruscans began using enclosed structures for worship and representing gods in human form. The earliest known temple in Etruria, built around 600 B.C., was excavated at Veio. It

took the form of a large house; a distinctive architectural form would not be developed for Etruscan temples until the Archaic period.

Economy. By the Orientalizing period the Etruscan agricultural system was specialized and intensified, allowing farmers to support the growing town population. Drainage and irrigation techniques improved poor land, and new farming technologies, such as ironclad wooden plowshares, allowed farmers to work more efficiently. Farmers exchanged their surplus subsistence and luxury foodstuffs for craft goods.

Craft production became increasingly specialized and intensified during the Orientalizing period. Etruscans were adept at numerous arts and crafts, including pottery, metalworking, and sculpture. Technological improvements, learned from the Greeks, transformed Etruscan pottery production. Potters purified clay, built vessels on the fast wheel, and fired them at high temperatures in closed kilns. As production became more specialized and intensified during this period, pottery forms were increasingly standardized and distributed in a wide area. *Bucchero*, a kind of tableware with a distinctive gray core, glossy black surface, and stamped or molded decoration, was a famous Etruscan pottery product of the Orientalizing period. Other fine pottery wares included black figure vase painting, produced locally after eastern Greek models.

Metalworking remained an important industry at this time. Bronze was worked into vessels, utensils, armor, furniture, chariots, and carriages. Metalwork ornamentation was inspired by eastern styles, incorporating floral patterns, animals, humans, and divine figures. Etruscan bronze products were exported widely, throughout the Mediterranean and beyond the Alps. Etruria also was famous for jewelry production, particularly ornaments decorated with gold granulation (using fine beads of gold) and filigree (using fine spiral gold and silver wire). Etruscans probably learned these techniques from the Syrians or the Phoenicians.

Trade grew steadily. Beginning in the eighth century, Etruscans had extensive trade contact with eastern Mediterranean cultures, notably Greece and Phoenicia. Recovered shipwrecks were loaded with Etruscan trade goods: pottery and other crafts and

amphorae filled with agricultural products, such as pine nuts, wine, and olives. In exchange, the Etruscans imported the eastern luxury goods found in such abundance in aristocratic graves. Etruscan trade was not administered centrally. Instead, many small political units, controlled by the elite, competed on more or less equal terms. The Greeks also established trade towns on the coast of southern Etruria, and Greek craft producers settled permanently to work in Etruria.

ARCHAIC AND CLASSICAL PERIODS

The Etruscan civilization reached its greatest political and economic significance during the Archaic and Classical periods (575–470 B.C. and 470–300 B.C., respectively). During the sixth and fifth centuries B.C., the powerful Etruscan city-states developed and allied themselves in the League of Twelve Cities. The most important Etruscan cities were Cerveteri, Tarquinia, Vulci, Roselle, Vetulonia, Populonium, Veio, Bolsena, Chiusi, Perugia, Cortona, Arezzo, Fiesole, Volterra, and Pisa. (The number of cities in the league varied through time.) Etruscan city-states were autonomous and had their own sociocultural institutions, spheres of influence, and political and economic institutions. Etruscan political organization was generally oligarchic, with important families controlling the territory of individual city-states. A patron-client system linked families within cities and between cities and the countryside.

During the Archaic period the Etruscans expanded beyond their traditional boundaries, in order to establish new commercial bases. They colonized land as far south as Campania, as far north as the Po valley, and east to the Adriatic coast of Italy. Roman annalists report that the Tarquin dynasty of Etruscan kings was established in Rome throughout much of the Archaic period, from 616 to 509 B.C. Many of these colonized lands were lost during the Classical period.

Settlements. During the Archaic and Classical periods, Etruscan towns developed into city-states—urban centers surrounded by regional territories. In Volterra the process of urbanization is visible in increasing settlement density and in the expansion and reorganization of urban space, including the development of public works, places, and cults. A

great wall circuit was begun during the Classical period, with a perimeter of 7 kilometers enclosing an area of 116 hectares. Traces of the wall are still visible at numerous points, including the city gates of Porta all’Arco and Porta Diana. A network of roads connected the foothills and valley bottom to the city.

Excavations at Acquarossa, in southern Etruria, provide evidence for domestic architecture during the Archaic period. Houses were rectangular, built on stone-block foundations. The walls usually were built of sun-dried mud bricks, supported by a wooden framework, covered with plaster, and painted. Roofs were made of terra-cotta tiles and decorated with statues and other terra-cotta ornaments. The floor plan often included a larger central room in front and two or three smaller rooms in the back. Sometimes a porch protected the doorway. The house interior was used for sleeping, protection from bad weather, and storage of tools and foodstuffs. The adjacent outdoor courtyard was where most daily activities took place. Storage spaces and shelters for cattle were carved into rock outcrops next to the houses. Archaic Acquarossa also included one monumental residential building complex constructed after the mid-sixth century: two buildings laid out in an L-shaped plan, with a large courtyard. The complex boasted a portico in front and revetment plaques on the facade, with scenes of banquets, dancing, warfare, and mythical events.

Marzabotto, an Etruscan colony established in northern Italy at the beginning of the fifth century, was laid out on a regular plan—similar to that of Greek colonial towns and quite different from the plans of settlements that developed through time, such as Volterra and Acquarossa. Four main streets, each 15 meters wide, defined the habitation area of Marzabotto. One north-west street ran the length of the town, and three east-west streets crossed it. Minor streets, each 5 meters wide, ran parallel to the main north-south axis, creating rectangular blocks. Marzabotto’s city blocks were filled with mud-brick houses and workshops. Craft workshops—including pottery and tile kilns, iron smithies, bronze foundries, and smelting furnaces—faced the street. Living quarters were located in interior courtyards, reached through narrow passageways. Each courtyard had a cistern to collect rainwater running off the tiled roofs.

Cemeteries. Archaic period cemeteries reflect the development of new “middle” classes. Whereas cemeteries of the previous period comprised many humble tombs and a few dominating tumuli, Archaic period cemeteries consisted of many simple, uniform tombs laid on streets. Examples of Archaic cemeteries include the Banditaccia at Cerveteri and Crocefisso del Tufo at Orvieto, both from the sixth century B.C. The streets of Crocefisso del Tufo were laid out in a grid during the later sixth century, and the cemetery was used throughout the fifth century B.C. The small, rectangular tombs were constructed from tufa stone blocks. Their chambers usually have two stone benches for deposition of the dead. The roofs are made of stone slabs and covered with a modest mound and small stone markers (*cippi*). A view down one of the streets gives a sense of how a residential neighborhood in an Etruscan town might have looked.

A Classical period house interior is re-created in the Tomb of the Reliefs, from the Banditaccia necropolis at Cerveteri, built at the end of the fourth century B.C. The underground tomb was carved from tufa stone; then a stucco surface was applied to the walls and painted. The original owners, a married couple, were represented lying side by side in bed. They are surrounded by relief stucco representations of everything they might need to keep house: utensils, tools, vessels, and even a gaming board. The power of the husband, a magistrate, is indicated by his ivory folding chair, trumpet, and weaponry.

Religion and Temples. During the Archaic period Etruscans continued their own distinctive religious practices, although Etruscan divinities were assimilated with the Greek Olympian gods. Again influenced by the Greeks, Etruscans also began building monumental temples. The Temple of Minerva at Portonaccio, Veio, was constructed in the mid-sixth century B.C. and rebuilt at the end of the century. The Tuscan-style temple is oriented to the east, facing a paved piazza. It has a square plan, each side approximately 18.5 meters. The temple was built on a low podium. Steps at the front of the temple led to a deep porch, or *pronaos*. The *pronaos* had two columns with Tuscan capitals; beyond it was placed the sacrificial altar and a sacred pit where libations to the underworld divinity were poured. At the back

of the temples were three *cellae*, or rooms, side by side.

The foundation, walls, and columns of the Temple of Minerva were built of tufa stone blocks. The wooden roof was decorated with terra-cotta sculpture, a famous product of Veio. The revetments were graced with floral ornamentation; the antefixes included heads of nymphs and masks of the Gorgons, the snake-haired sisters of Greek myth. Painted terra-cotta statues, larger than life size, were placed on the roof ridge. The famous statue of Apollo (now in the Etruscan Museum of Villa Giulia, Rome) probably aimed his bow at Heracles, representing the Greek myth of their conflict over the golden-horned hind of Ceryneia.

Sculpture. Etruscan monumental sculpture typically was executed in terra-cotta or bronze. The Etruscan city of Cerveteri was famous for its terra-cotta sculpture during the Archaic period. One well-known example is a sarcophagus depicting a married couple reclining on a bed, placed in a chamber tomb beneath a tumulus in the Banditaccia necropolis around 525 B.C. (now in the Villa Giulia museum, see fig. 2). The husband lies behind his wife, placing his hand on her shoulder. She pours scented oil onto his palm, a rite for the deceased.

The statue of the Chimera (now in the Archaeological Museum, Florence), is a fine example of Etruscan bronze sculpture. The Chimera was a mythological fire-breathing creature with the body of a lion and heads of a lion, goat, and snake. In this representation, the creature is wounded, suggesting that the statue may have been part of a group that included the hero Bellerophon and his winged horse Pegasus. The statue (or group) probably was created as a votive offering in the late fifth century or early fourth century B.C.

Painting. Tarquinia was the main center of tomb painting during the Archaic period. The rock-cut tombs from the Monterozzi necropolis are small, rectangular chambers with shallow ridge roofs. After about 530 B.C. brightly colored paintings covered entire walls of the chambers. The paintings showed mythological scenes, funerary games and ceremonies, banqueting and entertainment, sports, and scenes of the underworld. The Tomb of the Leopards, from the early fifth century B.C., is a vibrant example.



Fig. 2. Sarcophagus of a married couple, Cerveteri, 530–520 B.C. © ARALDO DE LUCA/CORBIS. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

Economy. The Etruscan economy became increasingly specialized and intensified during the Archaic period. New socioeconomic classes emerged, based in the great city-states and trading towns: manufacturers, crafts producers, and merchants. Internal trade throughout Etruria was effected via coastal waters, rivers, and roads. Long-distance trade was completed in emporia, or trade towns, along the Etruscan coastline. Bronze ingots dating to the early Archaic period probably were used as currency in long-distance trade.

Pottery and metalworking remained important Etruscan industries during the Archaic and Classical periods. Early in the Archaic period the Etruscans created their own versions of red figure pottery, modeled after the famous Greek products. Beginning in the fourth century B.C. a distinctive Etruscan product dominated the pottery industry: tableware coated with a glossy black slip, and decorated with stamped and modeled (relief) motifs. Workshops at Vulci and other Etruscan cities worked bronze into chariots, weapons, armor, vessels, and other utensils. Precious metals, such as gold, were made into jewelry.

Society. Etruscan society changed greatly during the Archaic period. Cities and trade towns supported the growth of new socioeconomic classes—merchants, manufacturers, foreigners—that were not bound by traditional patron-client relationships. These new groups shared common political and economic interests that were at odds with the interests of the established Etruscan aristocracy. Their growing influence and power contributed to the dissolution of the traditional Etruscan social system.

CLASSICAL AND HELLENISTIC PERIODS

During the Classical and Hellenistic periods (470–300 B.C. and 300–31 B.C., respectively), the Etruscans' economic power, political autonomy, and distinctive cultural identity gradually eroded, until the Etruscans no longer existed as a separate people. During the Classical period the Etruscan cities engaged in a series of conflicts over sea and land, which ultimately weakened their economic and political significance in Italy.

At the end of the Classical period, the Roman Republic emerged as the preeminent threat to the

autonomy of the Etruscan city-states. In 396 B.C. the first Etruscan city, Veio, fell to the Romans after a brutal ten-year siege. With the Battle of Sentinum in 295 B.C., between Rome and the *Quattuor Gentes* (an alliance of Samnites, Gauls, Umbrians, and certain Etruscans), Rome gained supremacy over the entire Italian peninsula. After 270 B.C. relations were largely peaceful between the Etruscans and Romans. Rome began to colonize southern Etruria in the third century B.C. During the second century B.C. the Romans built the via Aurelia, via Clodia, and via Cassia, roads that provided them with communication and control over all of Etruria. By the first century B.C. Etruria was no longer a separate entity, politically or culturally; instead, it was part of the growing Roman state. In 89 B.C. all residents of Etruria were given Roman citizenship and registered in Roman tribes for bureaucratic and voting purposes. By the end of the first century B.C. Etruria for the most part was Latin speaking and assimilated into Roman culture.

Settlements and Cemeteries. The conflicts of the Classical and Hellenistic periods (the fifth to first centuries B.C.) affected the Etruscan city-states differently. Whereas many Etruscan cities in the south were hurt by the maritime and territorial wars, other cities in the north continued to thrive. Volterra was minimally affected by the upheaval during late Etruscan times. The Hellenistic period was, in fact, a time of great urban development and renovation. Public works—including roads, agricultural terraces, city walls, and religious and civic structures—allowed settlement in the Volterra on a far greater scale than before. The city walls, begun during the late Classical period, were completed during the Hellenistic period. The city also was provided with terracing walls, a sewer, and a drainage and canal system. Hellenistic period Volterrans created lavish tombs for their dead in the cemeteries surrounding the city. The Inghirami Tomb from the Ulmeto necropolis, in use from the early second century to the mid-first century B.C., includes several elaborately carved alabaster ash urns, a local artisanal product. The tomb is reproduced in the garden of the Archaeological Museum in Florence.

Etruscan Legacy. Although the Etruscans ceased to exist as a distinct culture in the first century B.C., their people and ideas remained essential to life in

central Italy. Etruscans—now Roman citizens—were integrated into the politics, economics, culture, and society of Rome. A few specifically Etruscan contributions to Roman institutions remind us of their presence in later times. The symbols of Roman office—the *fascēs* (bundled and tied rods with a projecting axe) and the *curule* (a folding chair)—are derived from Etruscan examples. The Romans adopted rituals of military triumph from the Etruscans. The Roman toga originated as the Etruscan mantle. And many of the most famous architectural and engineering feats of the Romans—houses, temples, tombs, roads, bridges, and sewers—were first achieved in Italy by the Etruscans.

See also **The Italian Bronze Age** (vol. 2, part 5); **Iron Age Germany** (vol. 2, part 6).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Banti, Luisa. *Etruscan Cities and Their Culture*. Translated by Erika Bizzarri. Berkeley: University of California Press, 1973.
- Barker, Graeme, and Tom Rasmussen. *The Etruscans*. Oxford: Blackwell, 1998.
- Boëthius, Axel. *Etruscan and Roman Architecture*. Harmondsworth, U.K.: Penguin, 1970.
- Bonfante, Giuliano, and Larissa Bonfante. *The Etruscan Language: An Introduction*. 2d ed. Manchester, U.K.: Manchester University Press, 2002.
- Bonfante, Larissa, ed. *Etruscan Life and Afterlife: A Handbook of Etruscan Studies*. Detroit, Mich.: Wayne State University Press, 1986.
- Brendel, Otto J. *Etruscan Art*. New Haven, Conn.: Yale University Press, 1995.
- Carratelli, Giovanni Pugliese, ed. *Rasenna: Storia e civiltà degli etruschi*. Milan: Libri Scheiwiller, 1986.
- Cornell, T. J. *The Beginnings of Rome: Italy and Rome from the Bronze Age to the Punic Wars, c. 1000–263 BC*. London: Routledge, 1995.
- Haynes, Sybille. *Etruscan Civilization: A Cultural History*. Los Angeles: J. Paul Getty Museum, 2000.
- Lawrence, D. H. *Etruscan Places*. London: Secker, 1932.
- Macnamara, Ellen. *The Etruscans*. Cambridge, Mass.: Harvard University Press, 1991.
- Pallottino, Massimo. *The Etruscans*. Translated by J. Cremona and edited by David Ridgway. Harmondsworth, U.K.: Penguin, 1975.
- Ridgway, David, and Francesca R. Ridgway, eds. *Italy before the Romans: The Iron Age, Orientalizing, and Etruscan Periods*. London: Academic Press, 1979.
- Spivey, Nigel J. *Etruscan Art*. New York: Thames and Hudson, 1997.

Spivey, Nigel, and Simon Stoddard. *Etruscan Italy: An Archaeological History*. London: B. T. Batsford, 1990.

Sprengr, Maja, and Gilda Bartoloni. *The Etruscans: Their History, Art, and Architecture*. Translated by Robert Erich Wolf. New York: H. N. Abrams, 1983.

Torelli, Mario, ed. *The Etruscans*. New York: Rizzoli, 2001.

RAE OSTMAN



PRE-ROMAN IRON AGE SCANDINAVIA

The Iron Age in Scandinavia lasted for about fifteen hundred years and archaeologists have divided it into a number of distinct chronological phases. The Early Iron Age, also called the pre-Roman Iron Age or the Celtic Iron Age, spans the first five hundred years of the period, from 500 B.C. to 1 B.C. It was during this time that a technological revolution took place that brought the Bronze Age to an end. Bronze was replaced by iron in most tools and weapons. Like the use of bronze, the use of iron was introduced from central Europe; but iron, unlike bronze, did not need to be imported. Known as bog-ore or lake-ore, it precipitated in small clumps below the peat in marshy pools and was a readily accessible raw material. Plentiful resources existed in southern Norway, Sweden, and Denmark. The ore contained many impurities and was not of very high quality, but the Scandinavians developed efficient techniques for extracting serviceable iron by smelting it in simple furnaces. As the skill developed over the centuries, so did the complexity of the tools and weapons, until they were comparable to many others made elsewhere in Europe.

NECK RINGS

During the pre-Roman Iron Age, society was organized by rank. Neck rings were a marker of elite status. Large bronze neck rings, especially the so-called crown neck rings and individual rings with transverse molded bands, are a characteristic element of the set of finds dating to the pre-Roman Iron Age. Altogether, there are forty-seven such rings from Denmark with clear provenances. There are also three Celtic rings. The majority of the bronze neck

rings are bog finds; a few are dry-land finds, but none is a grave find. All are individual finds, that is, they are found without any associated goods. Some arm rings and simple neck rings have also been found. They are also bog finds and occasionally appear in cremation burials. The looped ring, another traditional object of this period, was made either of bronze or iron. The majority of the recovered objects that have been fashioned in this way are made of iron. Large iron looped rings are known only as grave finds; such rings would presumably have rusted away in bogs. Looped rings, with a few exceptions, are known only from Jutland. Small and large looped rings are contemporary to each other, and can be seen in the large ring hoards.

BOG OFFERINGS

When land was drained for modern farming, a number of bog burial grounds were found. Bog offerings are archaeologically recorded as early as Neolithic times and into the pre-Viking period. These votive offerings or sacrifices included weapons and even warships as well as human bodies, animals, and assorted artifacts. It is postulated, based on the variety and type of offerings, that they were of a ceremonial nature, part of a fertility ritual or a ritual to ensure success in battle. The earliest bog offerings in the Neolithic period consisted primarily of stone and flint weapons. In the Bronze Age, there were more elaborate sacrifices. Collections of personal items and household objects, such as cauldrons, were recovered as well. Weapons—swords in particular—have also been found. Very often the blades of these swords have been bent back or otherwise

damaged, and some argue that this was done to represent a ritual “killing” of an enemy. Animals, particularly horses, were also slaughtered as part of the ritual.

HUMAN SACRIFICE

Human sacrifice seems to have become widespread in the first century B.C. Most of the evidence comes from Danish bog areas, where the bodies of the men and women who were killed have been preserved in the acid soils of peat bogs under anaerobic conditions. The skin, hair, and, in some cases, stomach contents of these bodies have been preserved by the tannins in the peat soils. This extraordinary state of preservation has allowed archaeologists to learn details about the clothing, hairstyles, and diet of these people. Tollund man, a body discovered at Tollund, Denmark, in 1950, is one of the best-preserved bog bodies. He was unclothed except for a leather girdle and a leather cap that was laced across his chin. His last meal was gruel. Around his neck was a hide rope with which he had been strangled before being submerged in the bog. Tollund man is now on display in the Silkeborg Museum in Denmark.

Another example is Grauballe man, also from Silkeborg, who was found to have eaten a final meal of porridge containing chiefly barley, oats, and emmer wheat, along with some weed seeds, shortly before he had his throat cut. He was killed sometime in the first century B.C.

CAULDRONS, WAGONS, AND WEAPONS

The Roman Iron Age and the Migration period saw a return to sacrificial offerings consisting predominantly of weapons. From the later part of the pre-Roman Iron Age, between nineteen and twenty-one cauldrons have been recovered from bogs or in graves. Few were located on dry land. The cauldrons found in bogs and those found on dry land are all individual finds. Cauldrons from graves frequently contain a rich set of associated finds with a full set of weapons (sword, shield, and javelin/lance) and gold finger rings.

The find material of this period becomes markedly variegated, and various imported luxurious items enter the archaeological record. Particularly striking are the two large Celtic display wagons from the Dejbjerg bog in Denmark. The remains of

comparable wagons are also known from two cremation burials, one from Langå on Fyn, and one from Kraghede in north Jutland. Imported swords are also found in both bogs and graves.

Swords tend to be solitary finds. Two major weapon deposits of this period are located at Hjortspring bog and Krogsbølle bog. The great majority of the recoverable archaeological wealth was deposited in hoards during two periods: the early pre-Roman Iron Age and the early Germanic Iron Age. The finds of rings from the early pre-Roman Iron Age are usually interpreted as votive deposits. In the Smederup bog in eastern Jutland, a plank-built well was found not far from the place where great quantities of rings were dug up. It is regarded as a votive well and may therefore emphasize the sacred character of the bog. Artifact studies have shown that artifact types deposited in the bogs of one area are not deposited in graves of the same area.

Two artifacts of great importance have Celtic origins. One is the Gundestrup cauldron, a silver bowl with highly realistic embellishments in relief, including a representation of a human sacrifice; it has been suggested that it was used for catching a victim’s blood. Another interesting find is the Hjortspring boat, a war canoe that was unearthed on the island of Als off southeastern Jutland. This canoe carried between twenty-two and twenty-four paddlers and is the oldest surviving example of a boat in Scandinavia. It contained deliberately damaged war equipment, including some single-edged iron swords, which were evidently ceremonial offerings. Studies have concluded that this was a religious deposition of the hoards.

A DECLINE IN POPULATION

One surprising aspect of this period is that it has yielded relatively few archaeological remains. Earlier archaeologists, who worked primarily with grave finds, viewed the pre-Roman Iron Age as a regression period and, in some areas, such as Trøndelag, Norway, it would appear there was virtually no use of iron. This suggests that the population had declined. Although these early centuries remain comparatively obscure, since very few settlements are known from this period, in the 1990s and 2000s, thanks to a change of focus from grave goods to habitation sites, modern archaeological research has been able to contribute tremendously to our under-

standing of the pre-Roman Iron Age, providing a new picture of society, especially in southern Scandinavia. In fact, settlement development from the Bronze Age to the Early Roman Iron Age now appears to have been continuous. Certainly the climate, which for about two thousand years had been drier than it is now, became both wetter and colder, so that, toward the north, deciduous trees began to disappear and the glaciers began to re-form on the high ground. Investigations of Danish raised bogs have shown that the climate has fluctuated over the past 5,500 years and that these fluctuations lasted for about 260 years. The climatic changes in the final phase of prehistory can be located with great accuracy. A trend toward increased precipitation and lower summer temperatures set in about 600 B.C., just before the transition to the pre-Roman Iron Age. The next fluctuation took place about 300 B.C., and yet another very close to A.D. 0. This climatic deterioration probably affected the efficiency of farming.

LAND-USE PATTERNS

In southern Scandinavia, the late pre-Roman Iron Age was characterized by woodlands that expanded at the expense of open land (pastures, arable land). This may have been caused by a concentration of settlement in permanent farms and villages. This means that the late pre-Roman Iron Age landscape, broadly speaking, was similar to the Late Bronze Age landscape. On a smaller scale, however, it differed in the organization and land-use pattern of its permanent villages: infields with arable fields and meadows around the farms, and outland with pastures and coppiced woods. In general, the transition to the pre-Roman Iron Age in Sweden did not bring about any sudden restructuring of agriculture. The farms were still isolated, with longhouses the same size as they had been during the Late Bronze Age, with room for one extended family.

This was different from Jutland. There, longhouses became much smaller in the pre-Roman Iron Age, with room for only one family household, but with many houses clustered together like villages. In Scania there were no villages prior to about A.D. 500, unlike in other parts of "Denmark." Before that, in the Bronze Age and pre-Roman Iron Age, there were single farms with Celtic fields, probably under shifting cultivation, which slightly

later developed into double or triple farms that seem to have belonged to kin-groups rather than constituting true villages. Nucleated villages were first founded between A.D. 500 and 700. Single farms were not established again with any regularity until the Early Middle Ages.

In Sweden, the excavations of the Skrea project in Halland have unearthed a number of large-scale settlements ranging from the Late Bronze Age to the Early Iron Age. While damage from modern agricultural activities has compromised the preservation of some of the sites, there is still a large quantity of information identifying the settlements as large agrarian units. These settlements are located at dry ridges, often composed of glaciofluvial deposits or other self-draining soil types. Those dry areas were used for living and farming. Vast grounds consisting of heavier soil types suitable for grazing and for hay crops surrounded them. In all archaeological work thus far there has been a clear correlation of site type to soil type. These settlements were inhabited for fifteen hundred to two thousand years, some even longer.

A second type of settlement is smaller and more sporadic. It tends to correlate with different landscape zones, however. Some are on small ridges in otherwise wet areas or in areas with relatively small-scale landscapes. The relationship between the two scales of settlements remains unclear.

Another key site for looking at architecture and settlement is located on the tofts of Lilla Köpinge village. It is in southeastern Scania, near the medieval town of Ystad. It was the subject of intensive investigations, along with Stora Köpinge, which is one of the emporium-like market sites founded in the 800s. Each farm appears to have had its own fixed site, on which several layers of longhouses can be found. The longhouses are relatively large: 17 by 26 by 5.6 meters. Their overall area is not much larger than that of longhouses in the Late Bronze Age, but the greater length of the buildings made it possible to house a greater number of livestock. The farms also had some smaller buildings, including sunken-floor huts, which were used primarily for weaving. In Denmark, the first sunken-floor huts do not appear before the late Roman Iron Age. In the Köpinge area, by contrast, there is concrete evidence dating them to the pre-Roman Iron Age.

MOBILE SETTLEMENTS

One of the observations made for this period is that the settlement was mobile and that villages moved from time to time. Over the long term, they may have come to remain in the same place for longer periods. The greater or lesser mobility of the village communities of this period was first revealed with the extensive excavations at Grøntoft. Grøntoft is a rural settlement in western Jutland dating from about A.D. 200, and it provides invaluable information on these Early Iron Age farmers. The settlers must have lived in buildings very similar to those of their Bronze Age predecessors, grouped in villages surrounded by fences. The excavations reveal a single “wandering village” in the same resource territory for a period of about three hundred years. Grøntoft probably housed about fifty people and about sixty cattle, but it is difficult to know how representative this site is of the period. The houses are of three-aisled construction, which is found at all the Danish Iron Age settlements. This construction dates as far back as the middle of the second millennium B.C. In about 500 B.C., it evolved into a rectangular house shape unvaryingly oriented east-west, with a roof supported by two parallel rows of interior posts. Entrances were found in both long sides of the house. The walls of the houses were sometimes made of massive or light timber and with wattle and daub. There were sometimes also massive earthen and turf walls. The houses were often divided into two sections: the east end sheltered cattle while the west end with the hearth was for human dwelling. The dwelling section often had a clay floor while the barn may have had a stone-paved gutter and stall partitions. At all stages, the village economy strongly emphasized animal husbandry. Houses without stalls did exist, however. When an individual house went out of use, it was torn down and moved to another site within the village territory. The old site was plowed over and the soil was again tilled. The constant moving shifted the original field boundaries marked by balks. The balks (forming the so-called Celtic fields), which were visible at the excavations and thus stem from many phases of cultivation, may have been separated by land left fallow for a period of time. There is evidence of fences dating to roughly 300 B.C.; these were probably used to protect the village and the houses from the cattle.

There are other signs that rural settlements were increasing in number and size toward the end of the Early Iron Age. Many of the Danish settlement sites were excavated in the early 1990s. However, while Grøntoft has the most extensive chronology and has been thoroughly studied, more sites dating closer to the centuries around A.D. 1 provide further information on mobile village communities.

HODDE

Excavations at Hodde, Jutland, began in the 1970s. Hodde is typical of first-century B.C. rural settlement and has many traits that are present in Danish villages up to the beginning of the Viking Age. At its greatest extent, Hodde consisted of twenty-seven farmsteads. Each was composed of a long-house with dwelling and cattle barn under the same roof, and a few smaller subsidiary buildings, perhaps barns or workshops. A fence surrounded each building complex, and a common fence, pierced by gateways affording direct access from each farmstead to its field, enclosed the entire village. There was an open area in the center of the settlement. One of the farmsteads, larger than the rest, may have been the residence of a chieftain. While some evidence of blacksmithing, pottery making, weaving, and spinning does exist, the primary economic activities were cattle breeding and crop raising, in keeping with the traditions of the Bronze Age but on a much larger scale. Other sites in Jutland show that, alongside such villages, there were also smaller agricultural settlements with only two or three farms, but we do not know why there were such great variations in the scale of settlement in the Danish countryside.

OTHER SETTLEMENTS

The evidence of house construction that is apparent in the Danish material cannot be detected in Köpinge, Scania (Sweden). Instead there are small, gradual changes. Continuity in settlement development in the Köpinge area—as in Denmark—from the pre-Roman Iron Age to the Early Roman Iron Age is apparent, in that many sites date to both periods. No stall partitions have been documented, unlike the case in Denmark. Nor does the relatively regular placement of the pairs of roof-bearing posts give us any guidance about the existence of stalls. Conversely, the length of the houses and the location of the hearths seem to indicate that one end

was used as a barn, and that more animals were housed there than was the case in the Late Bronze Age. As with the structure of settlement, the archaeological material clearly demonstrates that these were isolated farmsteads. Only toward the end of the period do we find evidence of agglomerated settlements of two or more farms.

Information about the mobility of the Iron Age village society can also be gleaned elsewhere in Denmark, for example, in the low marsh regions by the North Sea in the south of Jutland, where the large migrating villages are characteristic of the period. At Drenghsted, a very small area was found to contain a series of settlements, some with cemeteries dating from the first century B.C. to the fifth century A.D. At Dankirke in southwestern Jutland, a small area was found to contain several settlements, with their cemeteries dating from the same time period. In Grøntoft, Hodde, Drenghsted, and Dankirke, the patterns seem to be identical. Over the centuries, mobile village communities centered around large herds of cattle moved around within narrowly defined resource territories.

REGIONAL VARIATIONS

The period of 200 B.C. to A.D. 200 is characterized by a warm, dry climate favorable for cereal cultivation. Descriptions of the cultural landscape and of land use in the Early Iron Age have long borne the stamp of the archaeological material from Jutland and areas preserving a fossilized cultivation landscape, such as Gotland and Östergötland. It is usually thought that most regions in southern Scandinavia underwent the same development at roughly the same time, not just of the cultural landscape but also in social and political terms; it is only as a result of differences in the form of the natural landscape in different regions that this development can be studied today, and then only in certain regions. In recent years large regional and local variations have become more evident, not just between areas with a fossilized cultivation landscape and those without, but also within each category. In Köpinge, it is impossible to know whether the farms in the area cooperated in any form of joint fencing, or what type of cultivation system was used. Analyses of carbonized plant material from the habitation sites show, however, that hulled barley had become the main crop and that weeds like *Chenopodium* had become

more common, which indicates the presence of manured fields. The meadow plants in the material can be interpreted as hay waste and evidence of the stalling of animals. Traces of the production and working of iron have been documented. Iron extraction may also have led to the establishment of special habitation sites, as in the Krageholm area. Manuring and cultivation switch are also seen in the Bjaresjö area of Sweden.

CAIRN FIELDS AND CULTIVATION STYLES

In Norway in the early 1980s, there were systematic investigations of some cairn fields that had previously been interpreted as grave fields. Cairns are formed from clearing a field in preparation for plowing. They are simply rock piles. The typical clearance cairn field is characterized by a dense pattern of small cairns. These may belong to an extensive or to an intensive strategy of cultivation. The two strategies can coexist. Clearance cairn fields are characterized by a lack of internal boundaries, the usual evidence of a permanent arable field. The spatial organization of the cairn fields has no relation to the territorial division of farms from historical times. Phosphate analysis has located several settlements within the same cairn field. There are indications that the settlements had been abandoned and then used as arable fields. In some cases several phases of this cycle can be documented. This phenomenon is similar to what was occurring in the same period in the Danish village of Grøntoft.

Most prehistoric houses are found in Jaeren and Lista in Norway and belonged to the Roman Iron Age and the Migration period. They are three-aisled longhouses with stone walls. It was assumed that these house remains represented the first farms in Norway, which were the result of the climatic change in the pre-Roman Iron Age. That change forced people to house their cattle indoors and to collect winter fodder. Research in the 1990s and early 2000s indicates that the settlement change in southwestern Norway was caused by a shift to a more intensive type of cultivation. No one has found the houses from the first millennium B.C. because the farming system was based on bush fallow and shifting cultivation. In southwestern Norway, it was assumed that the clearance cairn field areas were evidence of extensive cultivation in the Bronze Age

and the pre-Roman Iron Age. For a long time, however, settlement history in eastern Norway was written primarily on the basis of place names, graves, and archaeological artifacts. Extensive archaeological investigations in eastern Norway in the 1990s and early 2000s have located an increasing number of Bronze and Iron Age houses. More than twenty different settlement sites have been investigated, partly as research excavations, and partly in conjunction with rescue excavations (e.g., for the new Oslo airport at Gardermoen). These are found primarily in the presently cultivated lands—under the tilth. This means a large material culture is now available, consisting of buildings from the Bronze and Iron Ages.

The study of the principal house types that resulted from these excavations suggests that one principal type dominated from the Bronze Age to the Migration period. The three-aisled buildings were 15 meters long or more. As in contemporary cases from Denmark and Scania, there are indications of separate dwelling and cattle compartments. Each farmstead had two or three houses. This evidence dates the beginning of the “historical farm” to the Bronze Age. The cattle compartments show that cattle were stalled indoors and that winter fodder may have been collected. Within this system it must have been possible to collect manure and spread it on the fields. Therefore there is the possibility that an intensive type of cultivation was associated with the cairns.

The results of these investigations are consistent with the results from the cairns. Many house structures are contemporary with the field clearance cairns. The spatial organization of the cairn fields has no relation to the territorial division of the farms from historical times. At the site of Einang in Valdres, Norway, situated on the outlying lands of three different historical farm territories, the cairn field is located on the hillside, in an area which, in recent times, has been used chiefly as a pasture. The recent farmsteads, by contrast, are located along the valley bottom. They have prehistoric names and, in the graves associated with them, artifacts from the Late Iron Age have been found. In the clearance cairn, conversely, the graves contained artifacts from the Roman period. A pollen analysis shows that this area was cultivated continuously from the Late Bronze Age to the Migration period. The evi-

dence from this locality points to a radical change in the structure of the landscape in the middle of the first millennium.

Sites from northern Norway show mixed economies of farming and fishing and individual farms rather than settlement complexes. Archaeological information coming from sites such as Bleik and Toften in Andøya point to a heavy exploitation of local marine resources and the beginnings of production of cured fish.

See also Tollund Man (vol. 1, part 1); Hjortspring (vol. 1, part 1); Emporia (vol. 2, part 7); Pre-Viking and Viking Age Norway (vol. 2, part 7); Pre-Viking and Viking Age Sweden (vol. 2, part 7); Pre-Viking and Viking Age Denmark (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Batey, Colleen E., and James Graham-Cambell, eds. *Cultural Atlas of the Viking World*. London: BCA, 1994.
- Becker, C. J. “Früheisenzeitliche Dörfer bei Grøntoft. Westjütland. 3. Vorbericht: Die Ausgrabungen 1967–68.” *Acta Archaeologica* 42 (1971): 79–110.
- Berglund, Björn E., ed. *The Cultural Landscape during 6000 Years in Southern Sweden: The Ystad Project*. Ecological Bulletins, no. 41. Copenhagen, Denmark: Munksgaard International, 1991.
- Callmer, J. “The Process of Village Formation.” In *The Cultural Landscape during 6000 Years in Southern Sweden: The Ystad Project*. Edited by Björn E. Berglund, pp. 337–349. Ecological Bulletins, no. 41. Copenhagen, Denmark: Munksgaard International, 1991.
- Derry, T. K. *A History of Scandinavia: Norway, Sweden, Denmark, Finland, and Iceland*. Minneapolis: University of Minnesota Press, 1979.
- Fabech, Charlotte, and Jytte Ringtved, eds. *Settlement and Landscape: Proceedings of a Conference in Århus, Denmark, May 4–7, 1998*. Moesgård, Højbjerg, Denmark: Jutland Archaeological Society, 1999.
- Hedeager, Lotte. *Iron-Age Societies: From Tribe to State in Northern Europe, 500 B.C. to A.D. 700*. Cambridge, Mass.: Blackwell, 1992.
- Helliksen, Wenche. *Gård og utmark på Romerike 1100 f.Kr.–1400 e.Kr.: Gardermoprojektet* [Farm and periphery in Romerike from 1100 B.C.–A.D. 1400: The Gardermoen project]. *Varia*, no. 45. Oslo, Norway: Universitets Oldsaksamling, 1997.
- Hvass, Steen Hodde. *Et vestjysk landsbysamfund fra ældre jernalder* [A western rural society from the Older Iron Age]. *Arkæologiske studier*, vol. 7. Copenhagen, Denmark: Akademisk forlag, 1985.
- Jensen, Jørgen. *The Prehistory of Denmark*. New York: Methuen, 1982.

Myhre, Bjørn. "Agrarian Development, Settlement History, and Social Organization in Southwest Norway in the Iron Age." In *New Directions in Scandinavian Archaeology*. Edited by Kristian Kristiansen and Carsten Paludan-Müller, pp. 224–271. Copenhagen: National Museum of Denmark, 1979.

Näsman, Ulf. "Hus, landsby, bebyggelse [House, rural settlement, and structures]." In *Danmarks længste udgravning: Arkæologi på naturgassens vej 1979–86* [Denmark's longest excavation], pp. 69–86. Copenhagen, Denmark: n.p., 1987.

SOPHIA PERDIKARIS



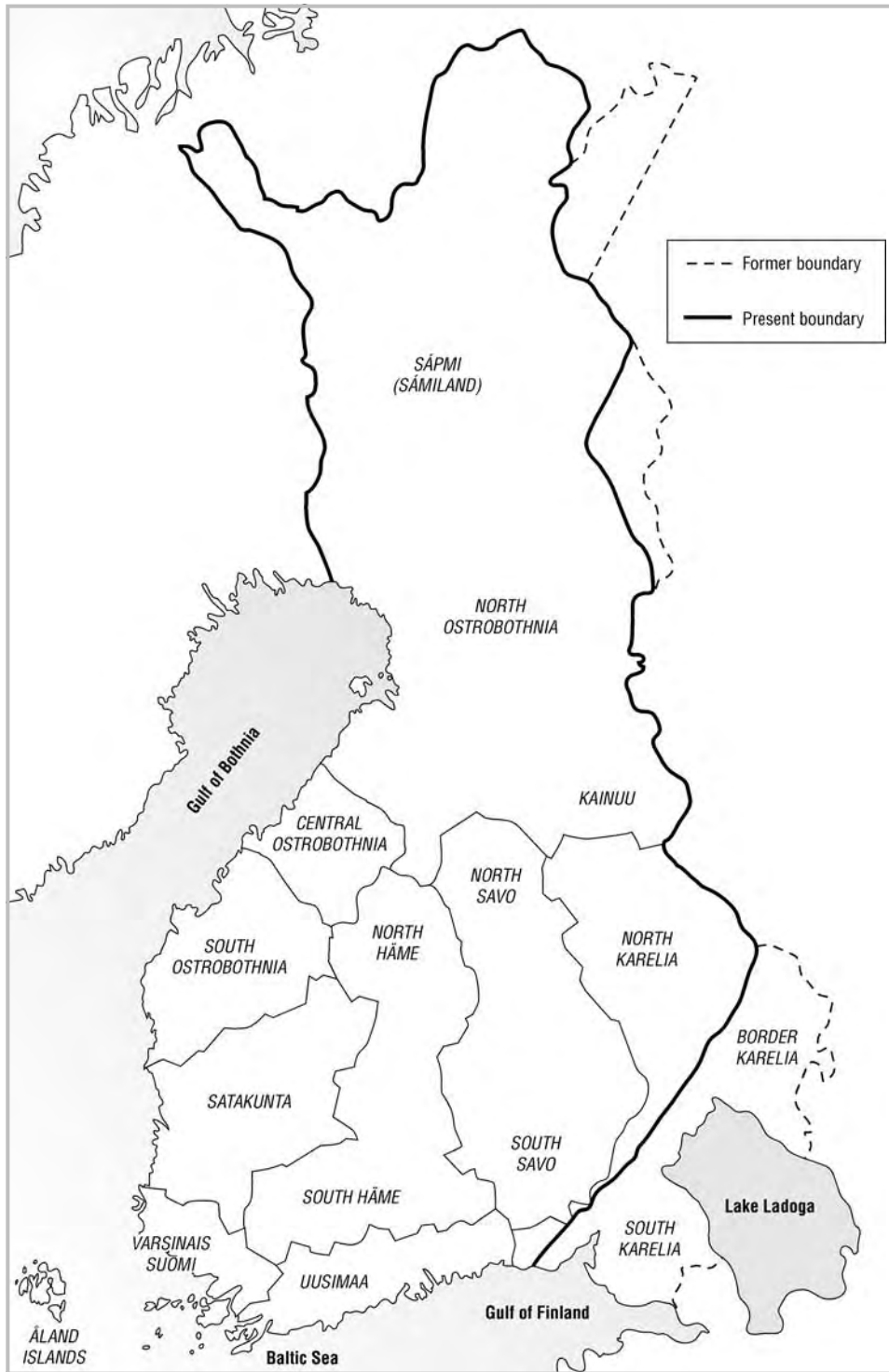
IRON AGE FINLAND

The topography, natural vegetation, and soil environments of Finland vary substantially. In the southwest region, encompassing the Åland Islands and Varsinais Suomi, a warmer climate marked by the greatest occurrence of deciduous tree growth in Finland led to earlier agricultural development. Safe natural harbors promoted the use of resources from the sea and trade with foreign ships. The west coast of Ostrobothnia had good water access and useful connections with Sweden. The south coast of Uusimaa, on the other hand, was unprotected and forbidding to access by ship. The heavy clay soils found there were unsuitable for cultivation unaided by a plow. Finnish farmers preferred to plant in small forest clearings and to use rotational slash-and-burn methods for preparing the soil. Thus, lighter, fine-grained soils found north of Uusimaa were favored. The interior of Finland, characterized by birch and pine forests and a complex system of lakes and rivers formed amid glacial moraines, was in many places not settled by farmers until the Late Iron Age and medieval times, but its rich hunting and fishing resources were utilized by Finns throughout the Iron Age. The soils of the interior are mostly highly acidic with only a very thin humus layer and are packed in most locations with many surface stones. These soils would rarely be adaptable to intensive plowed-field techniques of cultivation. The waterways were well-used routes of communication, especially during winter months when surfaces were frozen. Finns frequently moved through these water systems while on hunting, fishing, or trading expeditions.

CHRONOLOGY

The five-hundred-year period starting 500 B.C. in Finland is called the pre-Roman Iron Age. For a thousand years prior, the Bronze Age Finns had maintained lively contacts with their Baltic neighbors, including the Scandinavians. Immigrants from Sweden had settled along some of the coastal areas. But in the period after 500 B.C., more Germanic contacts and influences arrived, including a number of loan words and a greater dependence on agriculture. Southern Finns now became more aware of the proto-Saami peoples who lived in the interior. In the Early Iron Age, the Saami lived, herded, and hunted farther south than several centuries later. Their present situation is now far to the north. Other Finnish connections with Finno-Ugric tribes to the east promoted trade of bronze or iron goods.

Some scholars have seen in the archaeological record evidence that the beginning of the Iron Age in Finland is marked by a decline in settlement and a general impoverishment of the population, although the reasons for this having occurred have never been clear. By the late twentieth century, most archaeologists argued for a continuation of population and settlement in Finland. Changing living and burial habits may account for the lessening of some aspects of cultural visibility in the archaeological record. In particular, fewer metal objects have been found from graves of the Early Iron Age, but when archaeologists have focused their search, they have sometimes found dwelling sites easier to



Provinces and traditional cultural regions of Finland. ADAPTED FROM TALVE 1997.

locate than the corresponding burial sites. This experience is the opposite of what Late Iron Age archaeologists have found. Later Iron Age burial sites have been more readily located.

Iron came to Finland c. 500 B.C., and by the Roman period (A.D. 1–400), local iron production is clearly in evidence. Iron tools and weapons were still rare in finds (meaning, for the most part, from



Fig. 1. Provincial Roman glass drinking horn decorated in blue and opaque white, reconstructed from pieces found in fourth-century grave at Varsinais Suomi. NATIONAL BOARD OF ANTIQUITIES FINLAND/HARALD MALMGREN 1966. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

graves), but by the end of the first millennium A.D., all parts of Finland had some iron. It is this lack of metal finds (either of bronze or iron) from the Early Iron Age that has created the impression, perhaps the illusion, that the period was more impoverished than what had come before or what came after. The situation changed within a few centuries, however. Already in the Roman period, material culture, as evidenced by the abundance of artifacts recovered, shows visible prosperity returning to the country.

REGIONS OF FINLAND

During the first millennium A.D., Finnish tribes in the east were moving westward, and new immigrants expanded the existing population of Finland. Other Finns from nearby Baltic lands also moved into Finland. To the west, the population of the Åland Islands and Varsinais Suomi was growing through an influx of Germanic settlers. A 1990s research project conducted around Paimio in Varsinais Suomi included the excavation of a burial ground and dwelling sites near Spurila and a variety of botanical, pollen core, and phosphorus studies that reveal signs of human activity. The burial ground was in use from the first century A.D. into the eighth century. Datable artifacts, mainly brooches, span the period from c. A.D. 100 to 600.

Artifact types indicate connections both with the southern Baltic shore and southern Scandinavia. One dwelling site was dated c. A.D. 400. Pollen cores show intermittent slash-and-burn activity during the early period under consideration here, although the earliest cultivation seems to date from the pre-Roman period. Palaeoethnobotanical studies of plant remains recovered from early soil layers demonstrate that the settlers of Paimio grew mainly emmer wheat and flax. The occurrence of common cultivation weeds also indicates the presence of human agriculture.

Settlement in south Ostrobothnia was limited. At Trofastbacken, Korsnäs, a pre-Roman Iron Age house with hearth, pottery remains, and a wide stone foundation supporting turf walls has been interpreted as a base structure for seasonal activity. Occupied probably only in the spring, this house provided shelter for hunters who came to this locality to hunt seal from the ice surface. Iron Age peoples occupied the coast of northern Ostrobothnia as well. Small settlements dating from the first six centuries A.D. show close Scandinavian ties across the Gulf of Bothnia. A system of barter trade was conducted at numerous points along the shores. One impetus for this trade was the presence of the early proto-market town of Helgö, precursor to Birka in the Lake Mälaren region of eastern Sweden. Helgö, which began as early as the fourth century A.D., has been described as a production and trading center supported by chieftains in the area. Ostrobothnians may have been particularly interested in trading with the Swedes for bronze ingots and ornaments. In return they could have offered fur pelts. The Finnish word *raha* has come to mean “money,” but originally it meant “fur pelt.” Barter trade with pelts could have become so ubiquitous in the region that the pelt itself became a kind of currency.

A similar trade situation developed in the eastern Baltic, across the Gulf of Finland, between Finns and Estonians. Fisherman of individual households or extended families developed and maintained pre-arranged trade relations with household counterparts on the opposite coast by bartering Baltic herring for grain and other cultivated foodstuffs difficult to grow in the coastal soils of southern Finland. This kind of household economy and arrangement for trade relations was typical of the Finns, for whom the extended family or kin group was the

most important social and economic unit. Such households might sometimes consist of thirty or more people pooling their labor and production skills.

In what is now known as Russian Karelia, at the eastern side of present-day Finland, pollen and charcoal analysis of lake sediments reveals that there was some human impact in this area during the pre-Roman Iron Age (500 B.C.–A.D. 1), but no significant land clearance occurred until much later, during the Late Iron Age.

THE SAAMI

In A.D. 98, Tacitus, the Roman historian, wrote in his book *Germania* that a tribe he called the Fenni lived at the northern fringes of the Roman Empire. He described the Fenni as wild and very poor, having no weapons, horses, or houses. If his information were to be presumed at all correct, he could not have been talking about the southern Finns, although this description might fit the proto-Saami of northern Finland. Terms such as “Fenni,” “Finni,” and “Phinnoi” were used by classical writers in the first several centuries A.D. primarily to describe the nomadic people of northern Scandinavia. Since these people were so far away from the writers and their audiences, some of the descriptions are completely fantastical.

The Saami are the indigenous people of Scandinavia. They were a hunting and nomadic herding culture living in symbiosis with the large reindeer herds of the region. Until they were pushed to the northern territories in postmedieval times, the Saami lived as far south as the central interior of Finland. Their skill at hunting the arctic animals whose rich fur pelts were prized as luxury items by Europeans and others farther south forced the Saami into trade relations with both Scandinavians and Finno-Ugric tribes during the Viking and medieval periods.

THE PICTURE FROM ARCHAEOLOGY

Most Iron Age archaeological remains from Finland come from burials. Finnish burials of the period are often found in large stone cairns situated overlooking the sea or a lake. Many of the early cemeteries, from the first century A.D., are found near the mouths of rivers. Some of the largest cemeteries resemble the *tarand* type known from Estonia. This

type is characterized by rectangular enclosures outlined on the ground with stones. The cemeteries grew as new rectangles were added. The appearance of *tarand* cemeteries in Finland marks closer contacts with, and also immigration of, Estonian farmers. Various other styles of burial, including inhumations and cremation burials in urns, are known from this time. Over time stone cairns become on average smaller, and various forms of cremation pit cemeteries appear. Archaeologists caution that not all stone cairns of this period contain burials, and some may have nothing to do with human burial.

Not only do certain types of graves characterize the early part of the Iron Age, but grave contents are important as well. During the Early Roman Iron Age, we see for the first time graves including weapons in Finland. These weapon graves occur, for the most part, in coastal areas from the first century A.D. Two distinct groups can be observed among the graves: individuals buried with a spearhead only and others buried with a bigger assemblage consisting often of a sword and shield plus spear. Most of these graves are from southwest Finland and southern Ostrobothnia. Archaeologists sometimes attribute the appearance of weapon graves to the rise of a social class of warriors or special class of persons in authority. However, spears can also be used as hunting weapons and are easier to obtain since they require less skill and labor to be made. The social class of males buried with spears alone is therefore ambiguous. Normally archaeologists assume that individuals buried with weapons are male. Where skeletal remains are adequate, it is usually possible to confirm this by a visual assessment of the bones. With the advent of DNA testing of archaeological remains, however, some surprising gender-role contradictions appeared in Iron Age remains from Europe. Although these exceptions are quite rare, they only serve to emphasize that the bearing of weapons can be a mark of social status and not merely an indicator of occupation.

IRON AGE SOCIETY

The Finnish worldview during the Iron Age was cyclical in type, meaning that all things were seen to progress in cycles. The seasons revolved; life germinated, flourished, and died; and human beings lived to be reincarnated from the kin-based groups of ancestral spirits. Ancestor worship and shamanic com-

munication with the spirit world were major elements of this religion. Carvings on rock, called rock art, may depict the activities of Finnish shamans seeking favors from spirits, such as requests for hunting luck. Shamans would also intervene in order to try to cure illnesses afflicting humans or domestic animals.

The kin group, which was so important socially and economically, also played a religious role. Folklore evidence strongly indicates that pre-Christian Finns did not so much worship generalized ancestors but rather venerated and appealed for help from the ancestors of their own kin group. There was a close and intense relationship between the living community and the family cemetery. This was made closer by the belief that babies born into the family brought back to life in a new identity the spirits of those who had lived before. It was a complex worldview that suited the Finns' annual struggle with the not always kind forces of nature and provided them with a great deal of psychological support. Existence in rural Finland could easily become marginal with one bad harvest, and extended periods of rural famine have been well documented in historic times.

See also **Saami** (vol. 2, part 7); **Finland** (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Hautala, Jouko. "Survivals of the Cult of Sacrifice Stones in Finland." *Temenos* 1 (1965): 65–86.
- Hiltunen, Esa, Jukka Luoto. "The Development of the Cultural Landscape in the Paimio River Valley as an Historical and Archaeological Problem." In *Proceedings of the Third Nordic Conference on the Application of Scientific Methods in Archaeology*. Edited by Torsten Edgren and Högne Jungner, pp. 443–450. Helsinki: Suomen Muinaismuistoyhdistys, 1985. (Several other articles in this volume describe various facets of the Paimio Project.)
- Huurte, Matti. *9000 Vuotta Suomen Esihistoriaa* (9,000 years of Finnish prehistory). Helsinki: Otava, 1995. (In Finnish.)
- Huttunen, Pertti. "Early Land Use, Especially the Slash-and-Burn Cultivation in the Commune of Lammi, Southern Finland, Interpreted Mainly Using Pollen and Charcoal Analyses." *Acta Botanica Fennica* 113 (1980): 1–47.
- Kivikoski, Ella. *Die Eisenzeit Finnlands. Bildwerk und Text*. Helsinki: Finnische Altertumsgesellschaft, 1973.
- . *Finland*. Translated by Alan Binns. London: Thames and Hudson, 1967.
- Pentikäinen, Juha. *Kalevala Mythology*. Translated and edited by Ritva Poom. Bloomington: Indiana University Press, 1989.
- Rausing, Gad. "Hunters and Agriculture." *Fornvännen* 86 (1991): 255–258.
- Sarmela, Matti. "Swidden Cultivation in Finland as a Cultural System." *Suomen Antropologi* 4 (1987): 241–262.
- Schauman-Lönnqvist, Marianne, Anna-Liisa Hirviluoto, Elvi Linturi, and Pirjo Uino. *Iron Age Studies in Salo 1–2*. Suomen muinaismuistoyhdistyksen aikakauskirja. Helsinki: Finnish Antiquarian Society, 1986.
- Taavitsainen, Jussi-Pekka. "Wide-Range Hunting and Swidden Cultivation as Prerequisites of Iron Age Colonization in Finland." *Suomen Antropologi* 4 (1987): 213–233.
- Talve, Ilmar. *Finnish Folk Culture*. Helsinki: Finnish Literature Society, 1997.
- Tolonen, Kimmo, Ari Siiriäinen, and Anna-Liisa Hirviluoto. "Iron Age Cultivation in South-West Finland." *Finskt Museum* 83 (1976): 5–66.
- Vuorela, Irmeli. "Pollen Analysis as a Means of Tracing Settlement History in SW Finland." *Acta Botanica Fennica* 104 (1975): 1–48.
- Zvelebil, Marek. "Iron Age Transformations in Northern Russia and the Northeast Baltic" In *Beyond Domestication in Prehistoric Europe: Investigations in Subsistence Archaeology and Social Complexity*. Edited by Graeme Barker and Clive Gamble, pp. 147–180. London: Academic Press, 1985.

DEBORAH J. SHEPHERD



IRON AGE POLAND

FOLLOWED BY FEATURE ESSAY ON:

Biskupin 286

As in many other areas of Europe, in Poland there are no archaeological indications for a radical transformation of Late Bronze Age societies entering the new epoch, or Iron Age. Thus, the traditional name “Iron Age,” inherited from nineteenth-century archaeology, stresses a symbolical threshold—the introduction of a new raw material that had no immediate impact on cultural development. In fact, in Iron Age Poland, one observes a continuation of the mainstream Late Bronze Age traditions represented by the Lusatian culture, a culture that survived for several more centuries. It blossomed during the Hallstatt period, stimulated by new influences, but did not show evidence of substantial economic or social changes. A more immediate impact on local societies during the Iron Age was exerted by the climatic changes that marked the time, when cooling and higher humidity shortened the growing season, diminished crop yields, and eventually led to the growing role of rye and barley in the diet, at the expense of wheat. One also might stress the part played by the incursions of aggressive Scythians, who started a long sequence of nomadic invasions that penetrated areas north of the Carpathian mountain belt. Still, in the traditional chronological scheme, the introduction of iron defines the major change from the Bronze to the Iron Ages in Poland.

HALLSTATT

The oldest iron objects (decorative pins, axes, swords, and elements of horse harness) arrived in Polish lands during the Hallstatt C period (750–600 B.C.). The presence of these items was the result of lively contacts with the south, which developed through a growing interest in Baltic amber, sought after in the Hallstatt civilization zone. Discoveries of amber “stores” indicate effective organization of trade connections. Apart from scarce iron items that formed the most luxurious group of imports, many bronzes appeared north of the Sudetic and Carpathian Mountains together with new cultural patterns. Contacts with the sub-Alpine region, however, were not equally important for all parts of contemporary Poland during the Early Iron Age. The Lusatian culture that almost completely dominated the area had interesting subdivisions that previewed future regional developments.

In the western part of the country (Silesia, Great Poland, and Kujavia), some dead bodies were placed in richly equipped wooden-chamber graves. In western Silesia skeleton burials reappeared after a 250-year absence. Following new trends, exploitation of salt (in Kujavia) and zinc-lead ores (in Upper Silesia) began. Hallstatt handicraft models were eagerly copied, which is most evident in new forms of

jewelry and elegant painted pottery. This was not the case in the areas east of the Vistula River, where imports, however numerous, did not stimulate local producers. Still different was the situation in the north (Pomerania), where contacts with southern Scandinavia and northern Germany prevailed and where the tradition of raised grave mounds survived. There is no evidence that iron-smelting technology was known in Poland during that period.

One interesting aspect of the Early Iron Age was the tendency to build fortified settlements, observed in traces dating to as early as the ninth century B.C. These constructions spread over the western regions of the Lusatian culture and, less densely, in Pomerania. They were of various sizes (0.5–20 hectares) and typically located in positions with natural defenses, such as hills, islands, and peninsulas. Some had a rather irregular inner layout, whereas others were built according to very rigid plans. The famous Lusatian lake stronghold in Biskupin, built during the winter of 738/737 B.C. and discovered in 1933, best represents the latter type. Its defensive function now has been questioned, but the partially reconstructed settlement offers insight into the sophisticated organizational abilities of Early Iron Age societies. More than a hundred large houses (each comprising 72–86 square meters) once stood along eleven broad (wider than 2.5 meters) wood-laid streets. Some 1,000–1,200 inhabitants lived in an area of about 1.3 hectares surrounded by a circular wood-and-earth wall cut by the gate, which opened to a bridge leading to the mainland. Despite attempts to view these settlements as the earliest Polish “proto-urban” structures, the strict egalitarianism evident in the equal quality of all the houses suggests instead that the inhabitants were agriculturalists seeking refuge during uncertain times.

The real threat came with the nomadic Scythians, who, in the late sixth and early fifth centuries B.C., directed their looting raids at southern and central Poland. Burned Lusatian strongholds mark several waves of their deadly raids; characteristic triangular arrowheads are typical finds. The same arrowheads sometimes are found in graves containing the probable victims of Scythian warriors. An outstanding piece of evidence of their presence is the golden treasure from Witaszkowo in southwestern Poland. Such a clear ethnic identification of these

finds is supported by parallels from the steppe zone and by Greek written sources.

This favorable situation offered a new avenue of research for archaeologists, who eagerly started seeking indicators of ethnicity in the material culture left by other societies. Thus, many later archaeological cultures were given univocal identity corroborated by historical sources. The Celts, Balts, Germans, and Slavs successively became front-stage actors in the processes described by archaeologists studying the following phases of the Iron Age. This tendency can go too far, as when even the traces of small and mysterious tribes are looked for among the archaeological materials. Another effect of this attitude is the frequent application of a very simplified model of culture processes to explain every change effected by migrations.

Pomerania (north Poland), free from the Scythian threat but subject to influences from the Nordic culture of the western Baltic region (southern Scandinavia and northeast Germany), was the first to observe the fall of the Lusatian culture, which was replaced by the Pomeranian culture during the seventh century B.C. This transformation was marked by the appearance of new burial rites. Grave mounds and extensive urnfield cemeteries were replaced by small family grave sites, where rectangular box cairns made of stone slabs housed up to thirty cremation urns. The early phase of this culture showed mysterious affinities with Etruscan traditions, visible in house-shaped and face urns. The latter have ornaments resembling jewelry (e.g., neck rings and pins) affixed to them, or even original personal items—mostly earrings. Expansion of this new culture toward the southeast during the Hallstatt D period (600–450 B.C.) is connected with the disappearance of collective graves and the introduction of another new burial type—the so-called cloche graves, where cinerary urns are covered with larger upside-down pots.

During the same period, northeastern Poland was “invaded” by a West Baltic Barrow culture, associated with the Proto-Balts, who kept this area for almost two thousand years while avoiding adoption of new ideas from their neighbors. These herders lived in small settlements or in little lake dwellings built on artificial islands made of several layers of wooden logs attached by stakes. Their metals were

imported, and their dead were cremated and put in urns covered by small mounds.

The fifth century B.C. marked the visible decline of the mighty Lusatian culture. Large defensive agglomerations disappeared, as did specialized pottery making. There is also evidence of regression in metallurgy and impoverishment of grave goods. The aforementioned Scythian attacks and climatic changes are considered the main reasons for the demographic decline and the disintegration of large social structures. This crisis opened the way for the Pomeranian culture to expand over most of the lands between the Baltic Sea and the mountain belt. It promoted broad use of iron in eastern Poland, which had been somewhat underdeveloped earlier. Production of bronze items achieved a very high level of expertise. Pomeranian societies lived in small, nondefensive settlements, where sunken huts were typical dwellings.

PRE-ROMAN IRON AGE

In the south, “Pomeranians” met Celtic newcomers, who had settled in Silesia in the fourth century B.C. About a hundred years later the next wave of the La Tène culture bearers settled in Little Poland. Farther north a small Celtic colony existed in Kujavia. This dispersed northeastern avant-garde of the great European civilization introduced new technological and cultural achievements—very fine wheel-turned pottery, a double-chambered oven for firing pots, production of glass, fine smith techniques, large-scale iron smelting, new decoration motifs, coinage, new arms (long swords and helmets), and the organization of regional cult centers (e.g., the Ślęza Mountain in Silesia, known for numerous stone sculptures). Important progress in agriculture was made possible by improved plowing tools, manuring of fields, and rotational querns. These “Celtic” settlements were rather small, and their inhabitants lived in relative isolation from their autochthonous neighbors, who seemed to ignore the new technological offerings. Typical flat cemeteries with skeleton burials oriented north to south have been found to contain rich goods.

The Pre-Roman Age (earlier called “La Tène period,” lasting from 400 B.C. to the turn of the millennium) saw important culture changes elsewhere in Polish lands. During the third century B.C. the last enclaves of the Lusatian culture and the main-

stream Pomeranian culture disappeared, even though its regional survivors lasted until the mid-second century B.C. Those changes were caused by new cultural influences in the west. Along the Oder River, as early as the early third century B.C., Pomeranian societies were replaced by two groups of the Proto-Germanic Jastorf culture, expanding from its cradle in Jutland and northern Germany. It probably was this new influence that prompted further development, resulting in the formation of two new cultures.

Of these two, the Przeworsk culture was the more successful in its territorial expansion and the more durable (lasting more than six centuries). It originated somewhere in central Poland in the second half of the third century B.C. During its early phases it developed under the strong influence of Celtic traditions. In Tyniec, near Kraków, there lived a mixed Celto-Przeworsk society that introduced oats into Polish lands. During this early period cemeteries were flat, with simple pit graves that usually lacked urns. Even stronger was the Jastorfian impact in the north, where the Oksywie culture formed in the lower Vistula region. It is known only from its cemeteries, where women and men were buried according to distinctively different rites. Cremated female bones were put in simple pits, while the males were buried in urns. Stone covers or standing stelae are characteristic of these graves. This culture later gave birth to the Wielbark culture, identified with the Goths. Both Przeworsk and Oksywie cultures sometimes are listed under the common name “Pit Grave culture.”

ROMAN AGE

Around the turn of the millennium the great Celtic civilization faded away on continental Europe as a consequence of the strikes made by the aggressively expanding Roman Empire. This resulted in shifts of cultural influence that stimulated development in Polish lands. Thus, the Pre-Roman Age, dominated by the La Tène culture, ended, and Roman Age began, with its promotion of Hellenic-Roman traditions. A Celtic remnant legacy is evident in the technology used by the organizers of intensive iron production centers and in the sustaining of regular trade contacts along the route called the Amber Road. Earlier Etruscan demand for amber was replaced by the still larger demand for this “gold of

the north,” encouraged by Roman markets always greedy for exotic products. The scope of this import can be inferred from the sizes of amber “stores” discovered along the track, for example, 2,750 kilograms of amber found in Wrocław-Partynice. During the reign of the emperor Nero (A.D. 54–68), a special envoy was sent from Rome all the way to the Baltic coast to study the origin of amber. It was brought back to Rome in such vast amounts that the entire Colosseum was decorated with pieces of this precious material. Thanks to such contacts, in the second century the Greek geographer Ptolemy recorded the name “Calisia,” which is believed to represent the predecessor of the contemporary town Kalisz in central Poland.

The decline of the continental Celts allowed for the vigorous expansion of Germanic peoples. Germanic ethnicity is ascribed to two archaeologically distinct cultures that dominated Polish lands during the early Roman Age (A.D. 1–150). The Przeworsk culture expanded east and south, where it replaced societies attached to the Celtic traditions. Its bearers lived in small, semipermanent settlements that consisted of sunken houses. Some of the cemeteries were in use for several centuries. Most burials were simple pit graves, but often richly equipped with pots, tools, weapons, and adornments. Differences in the amount of invested labor and the quality of deposited goods indicate substantial social stratification, with dominant elite members of society buried in “princely” graves equipped with imported status items, among them high-quality Roman glass, silver, and bronze products. These outstanding persons were buried uncremated and separated from the common cemeteries.

Intensive connections with Roman markets that were sending north large amounts of handicrafts and quickly changing local fashions made possible the construction of a very precise chronology for the Roman Age. It is based on detailed classification of metal and glass vessels, *terra sigillata* pottery, fibulae (a type of brooch), belt mountings, and various elements of arms. Similarly to objects discovered at well-dated sites (e.g., Pompeii or briefly occupied army camps), they can be dated precisely within a window of just twenty-five years. This makes the archaeology of the Roman Age an object of envy to those researchers engaged in the study of earlier and

later periods and a research field with great explanation potential that has not yet been fully explored.

This chronological clarity also pertains to studies of the northern neighbor of the Przeworsk culture, the Wielbark culture. This culture represents societies that gave birth to the famous tribes of Goths and Gepids, who migrated southeast in the second half of the second century A.D. Unresolved questions concerning these peoples include their origins (southern Scandinavia or northeastern Poland), the reasons for their departure (economic, climatic, or political), and further development of the region by the lower Vistula (demographic replacement or steady transformation). Expansion and migration of the Wielbark culture enlarged the territory occupied by the West Baltic Barrow culture that moved toward the lower Vistula.

During the younger phase of the early Roman Age (c. A.D. 80–150), the new Luboszyce culture emerged in the region of the middle Oder River. It showed strong affiliations with both the Przeworsk and the Wielbark cultures. Retreat of the latter group toward the southeast opened the way for a stronger influence emanating from the Elbian region in eastern Germany, which led to the formation in western and central Pomerania of the Dębczyno group, known for its late Roman “princely” burials. The late material culture of this area shows Scandinavian connections. Farther east along the Baltic coast the West Baltic Barrow culture established subdivisions that sometimes are identified with the tribes distinguished in written sources as Aestii, Galindai, and Sudinoi.

In A.D. 178 victorious Roman legions of the emperor Marcus Aurelius, fighting the mighty Marcomanni, established bases in Slovakia, thus coming very close to southern Poland. This direct presence lasted only three years and did not interfere with development of the Przeworsk culture. Long and lively contacts with Roman civilization, however, had visible effects in the adoption (since the late second century) of some technical achievements, for example, log-frame construction of houses, advanced goldsmithing techniques, and rotational quern stones. The potter’s wheel and effective chamber ovens permitted organization of large centers producing standardized vessels. Ards with iron coulters made possible the plowing of heavier and more fertile soils, and idling of fields resulted in stability and

a departure from the slash-and-burn strategy of farming. The really outstanding aspect of the Przeworsk culture was its huge centers of iron smelting. An estimated 400,000–800,000 furnaces concentrated on the northeastern edge of the Holy Cross Mountains, in Mazovia and other smaller centers, must have furnished several million kilos of iron that surely was exported. This “industry” was based mostly on exploitation of surface bog ores, but there also were mines penetrating deeper sources, with shafts dug as far down as 20 meters.

MIGRATION PERIOD

The end of the glorious Roman Age and the beginning of the turbulent Migration period came with the sudden arrival of Asiatic Huns. In 375 they attacked the Ostrogoths, who had settled north of the Black Sea, and triggered massive movements of various peoples that led, in A.D. 406/407, to the fall of the Western Roman Empire and gave way to the establishment of a series of unstable Germanic “kingdoms.” The nomads themselves established their center in the steppe zone of Hungarian Pannonia, from where they ruled a multiethnic “empire.” Before they were defeated in 454, some of the Huns penetrated Polish lands, which is established by finds of their golden jewelry and characteristic large bronze vessels. Uncertain numbers of inhabitants of Poland took part in those turbulent events of the Migration period, which resulted in demographic declines and visible impoverishment of the area between the Baltic Sea and the Carpathians.

This crisis did not much affect northeastern Poland, settled by the West Baltic Barrow culture peoples, who were stubborn in their attachment to their own traditions. Especially interesting is the Olsztyn group that formed in the Mazurian lake district during the late fifth century A.D. and survived more than two hundred years. Characteristic urns with rectangular “windows”; horses buried under male graves; far-reaching contacts with both western Europe and Scandinavia, as well as with the Danube region and the Black Sea zone; and the interregional character of personal adornments make it one of the outstanding cultures of the Barbaricum around the mid-first millennium A.D.

The end of the Migration period traditionally is set at 568 A.D. with the arrival of the Avars, a new wave of Asiatic nomads who also chose Pannonia as

their homeland. The establishment of their new “empire” halted the very promising sociocultural development of earlier times and marked the beginning of the flourishing over vast parts of central and eastern Europe of the Slavs and their culture.

See also **Late Bronze Age Urnfields of Central Europe** (vol. 2, part 5); **Biskupin** (vol. 2, part 6); **Iron Age Ukraine and European Russia** (vol. 2, part 6); **Goths between the Baltic and Black Seas** (vol. 2, part 7); **Slavs and the Early Slav Culture** (vol. 2, part 7); **Poland** (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Bielenin, Kazimierz. *Starożytne górnictwo i hutnictwo żelaza w Górach Świętokrzyskich* [Ancient mining and smelting of iron in the Holy Cross Mountains]. Kielce, Poland: Kieleckie Towarzystwo Naukowe, 1992.
- Bukowski, Zbigniew. *The Scythian Influence in the Area of Lusatian Culture*. Wrocław, Poland: Ossolineum, 1977.
- Gedl, Marek. *Die Hallstatteinflüsse auf den polnischen Gebieten in der Frühbronzezeit*. Kraków, Poland: Nakładem Uniwersytetu Jagiellońskiego, 1991.
- Godłowski, Kazimierz. *Przemiany kulturowe i osadnicze w południowej i środkowej Polsce w młodszym okresie przedrzymskim i w okresie rzymskim* [Settlement and culture changes in southern and central Poland during the younger Pre-Roman Age and the Roman Age]. Wrocław, Poland: Ossolineum, 1985.
- . *The Chronology of the Late Roman and Early Migration Periods in Central Europe*. Kraków, Poland: Nakładem Uniwersytetu Jagiellońskiego, 1970.
- Kolendo, Jerzy. *A la recherche de l'ambre baltique: L'expédition d'un chevalier romain sous Neron*. Warsaw, Poland: Uniwersytet Warszawski, 1981.
- Mierzwiński, Andrzej. “Zagadnienie obronności osiedli typu biskupińskiego: O potrzebie alternatywnej interpretacji” [The problem of defensiveness of the Biskupin-type settlements: On the need for an alternative interpretation]. *Przegląd Archeologiczny* 48 (2000): 141–151.
- Nowakowski, Wojciech, and Claus von Carnap-Bornheim. *Das Samland in der römischen Kaiserzeit und sein Verbindungen mit dem römischen Reich und der barbarischen Welt*. Warsaw, Poland: Druk; Marburg, Germany: Verlag, N.G. Elwert, 1996.
- Wielowiejski, Jerzy. *Główny szlak bursztynowy w czasach Cesarstwa Rzymskiego* [The main Amber Road during the times of the Roman Empire]. Wrocław, Poland: Ossolineum, 1980.
- Woźniak, Zenon. *Osadnictwo celtyckie w Polsce* [Celtic settlement in Poland]. Wrocław, Poland: Ossolineum, 1970.

PRZEMYSŁAW URBAŃCZYK



Fig. 1. Photo of the reconstructed gateway at Biskupin. COURTESY OF ANTHONY F. HARDING. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

BISKUPIN

Biskupin is the site of a fortified stockade lying in west-central Poland in the lake area (Pałuki) near the town of Żnin. It belongs to a late phase of the Lausitz culture (the main cultural group that covers eastern Germany and western Poland from the Middle Bronze Age onward) and dates to the beginning of the Iron Age.

The site was discovered in 1933 by Walenty Szwejcer (Schweitzer), the local schoolmaster, who saw timbers protruding from the water. Excavation, which began in 1934 and continued until the outbreak of World War II, resumed in 1946 under Józef Kostrzewski and Zdzisław Rajewski of Poznań University; environmental and other small-scale work continued at the site into the 1990s. Because of its waterlogged state, the wood was well-preserved; this led to the recovery of an exceptional quantity and quality of information but also led to

many problems of preservation, primarily of the structural timbers. Most of the excavation was subsequently filled in to protect the remains, and a set of reconstructions (houses, gateway, palisaded rampart) was erected at the site. Biskupin has become a major visitor attraction, and it is also a center for experimental reconstructions in ancient technology.

The site lies on a peninsula in Biskupin Lake. The peninsula was probably originally an island about 200 by 160 meters in extent. This area was enclosed by a palisade of rows of stakes driven into the ground at an angle, which served also as a breakwater. Within the palisade was a box-framed rampart of wood filled with earth and sand. A single entrance lay in the southwestern sector and was protected by a gate tower with twin gates. A wooden road ran around the inside of the rampart, enclosing a street system of eleven streets, made of logs laid side by side corduroy style. Along the streets lay houses, more than one hundred altogether; they were typically 9 by 8 meters in extent, built

of walls of horizontal logs keyed into uprights, which were then reinforced by pegs. The floor was made of bundles of small branches. Each house had an anteroom and a main room with hearth; a loft ran over part of the main room and was reached by ladder. Smaller animals were probably housed underneath the loft, and a couple of cattle could have been accommodated in the anteroom.

This densely packed village plan has suggested to several scholars that Biskupin represented the beginnings of urbanism on the north European plain. Certainly the settlement must have had a population of many hundreds (possibly even more than one thousand), and the site offers some evidence of craft specialization. Archaeologists have found no indications of buildings for administration, at least in the excavated area, which amounts to about two-thirds of the whole. Nonetheless, the proximity of houses and streets, packed together on a small island in a lake, would have necessitated some form of communal organization, though such proximity would also have brought about many stresses in the village dynamic.

According to the published reports, Biskupin appears to have had two main phases of occupation. In the first phase almost all the structural timber was oak, but in the second phase mainly pine was used, presumably because of a shortage of oak near the site. Since there were more than 35,000 stakes in the palisade alone, and 8,000 cubic meters of timber in each phase of the site, clearly the construction represented a major drain on local woodland and a major effort in terms of labor input and organization.

The material from the site represents a standard domestic assemblage of the late Lausitz culture. In addition to large quantities of pottery, numerous bone and stone tools, clay weights, wooden tools (including a wheel, hoes, plowshares, and paddles), and other organic materials, such as bundles of flax, were found. Metal objects were not so numerous, but both bronze and iron are represented, and bronze was worked on site. Particular houses and areas were designated for particular tasks; thus metalworking debris, weaving equipment, and other craft tools appear in some houses or open spaces but not others.

In terms of artifact affinities, Biskupin has been variously dated to Hallstatt C, Hallstatt D, or a

combination of the two. Increasingly, however, opinion favors Ha D. Róża Mikłaszewska-Balcer's (1991) discussion of the pottery from the site, in particular the so-called pseudo-corded ornament, makes the case that the site perhaps began life in Ha C and came to an end at the start of Ha D: this ornament, supposedly typical of Ha D, is relatively rare as a Biskupin artifact, as are examples of encrusted ware that also belong to that phase. Attempts at absolute dating by independent scientific methods have been only partially successful. Radiocarbon dates obtained on samples from a small excavation in 1981 give an apparently clear picture for the early phase (between 850 and 800 B.C. at the 2 σ level and 95 percent of the probability distribution), but the dates fall in a wide spread for the later horizon, where the calibration curve is flat (780–470 B.C. at 2 σ and 95 percent of probability distribution). Dendrochronological work in the early 1990s on a set of 71 oaks (that is, first phase), comprising 166 rings including bark, spanned the period 747–722 B.C. but with a concentration of timbers felled in 738–737 B.C. The picture presented by published plans and accounts indicates that the separation into an early oak and a later pine phase is not clear-cut, and especially for the second phase it is uncertain how much construction work actually took place. A main construction date in the later eighth century B.C. fits well with the artifactual evidence.

The site's destruction, which seems to have been through abandonment rather than other causes such as fire, may reflect environmental change (rising lake levels), but economic and social pressures arising from the cramped conditions and overexploitation of critical resources may also have played an important part.

See also Dating and Chronology (vol. 1, part 1);

Hallstatt (vol. 2, part 6).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Kostrzewski, Józef, ed. *III Sprawozdanie z prac wykopaliskowych w grodzie kultury łużyckiej w Biskupinie w powiecie żnińskim za lata 1938–1939 i 1946–1948* [Third report of excavations at the stronghold of the Lusatian culture at Biskupin in Znin district for the years 1938–1939 and 1946–1948]. Poznań, Poland: Nakład Polskiego Towarzystwa Prehistorycznego, 1950.

Mikłaszewska-Balcer, Róża. "Datowanie osiedla obronnego kultury łużyckiej w Biskupinie" [Dating the fortified settlement of the Lusatian culture in Biskupin]. In

Prabhistoryczny gród w Biskupinie: Problematyka osiedli obronnych na początku epoki żelaza [Prehistoric stronghold at Biskupin: Problems of fortified settlements at the beginning of the Iron Age]. Edited by Jan Jaskanis et al., pp. 107–113. Warsaw: Wydawnictwo Naukowe PWN, 1991.

Piotrowski, Wojciech. “50 lat badań w Biskupinie” [50 years of research at Biskupin]. In *Prabhistoryczny gród w Biskupinie: Problematyka osiedli obronnych na początku epoki żelaza* [Prehistoric stronghold at Biskupin: Problems of fortified settlements at the beginning of the Iron Age].

Edited by Jan Jaskanis et al., pp. 81–105. Warsaw: Wydawnictwo Naukowe PWN, 1991.

Rajewski, Zdzisław. *Biskupin: A Fortified Settlement Dating from 500 B.C.: A Guide*. Rev. ed. Poznań, Poland: Wydawnictwo Poznańskie, 1980.

Ważny, Tomasz. “Dendrochronology of Biskupin: Absolute Dating of the Early Iron Age Settlement.” *Bulletin of the Polish Academy of Sciences: Biological Science* 42, no. 3 (1994): 283–289.

A. F. HARDING



IRON AGE UKRAINE AND EUROPEAN RUSSIA

The period between about 1000 and 0 B.C. was of crucial importance in the history of the tribes living in the steppe and forest-steppe zones of southeastern Europe (present-day Ukraine and European Russia). It was a difficult period for the people of the region. There were constant movements of population, the appearance of new ethnic groups, Greek colonization, and Roman penetration. Constant movement and migration led new peoples and cultures to appear and others to vanish. Cultures influenced one another, resulting in the creation of new, unique visual art in styles such as Greco-Barbarian, a mixture of Greek and local (non-Hellenic) elements.

This huge region forms the most westerly part of the Great Steppe Zone of Eurasia. In the south, the shores of the Sea of Azov (known in ancient times as Lake Maeotis) and the Black Sea provide a natural boundary. The northern boundary is ill defined, linked to the spread of the chernozem (black earth) that is characteristic of the forest-steppe. The Danube sets the western limit to the region, and, conventionally, the lower Don River is the eastern boundary. Overall the steppes are some 1,000 kilometers east to west, and 500 kilometers north to south: an area that includes the Dnieper basin and the Black Sea lowlands. In times past, this territory was covered in natural, grassy vegetation and forests, encompassing floodplains, terraces, and sandy areas and was watered by the Dnieper, Dniester, southern Bug, Ingul, Ingulets, and many lesser waterways. To the north of the true steppe lies the forest-steppe zone, containing the uplands and middle

reaches of the Dnieper and the southern Bug, and extending to the middle Don. North of the forest-steppe was an area of mixed forest. A characteristic of the forest-steppe is the mixture of large tracts of forest with woodless tracts of meadowland.

The Iron Age in Eastern Europe dates to the early first millennium B.C. Throughout the steppe areas of Eurasia, including those of the northern Black Sea hinterland, it corresponded with the transition from sedentary, pastoral agriculture to the nomadism of animal-rearing tribes. The numerous steppe settlements of the Bronze Age population, surface and dugout, had disappeared by the ninth century B.C.; from then until the late fifth century B.C., tribes moved their herds constantly from one area of pasturage to another. But then the nomads began to settle down. In contrast, the neighboring forest-steppe zone was populated, just as in the Bronze Age, by a sedentary population, albeit one subject to invasion and incursion by marauding nomadic hordes who left their mark on many features of the life and culture of the settled population. The local peoples who inhabited this territory had no writing and have left no written evidence of themselves. We know the names of some groups thanks to authors from the ancient Greco-Roman world and the Near East.

THE CIMMERIANS

The first to be mentioned in such writings are the Cimmerians, to whom the earliest reference is in Homer's *Odyssey*, where they are described as a tribe living in a mythical land of fog and darkness on the

fringes of the inhabitable world. Other Greek accounts also mention the Cimmerians, as do some Near Eastern sources. Both tend to concentrate on those aspects of Cimmerian history of direct relevance to other well-known peoples and civilizations, such as Assyria and Phrygia. In general, little is known about the Cimmerians, and for modern scholars they are still enveloped in fog and darkness. A summary of the written accounts is useful, however.

The first Assyrian references to the Cimmerians date from the period between 722 and 713 B.C. During the reign of the Assyrian king Sennacherib (705–681 B.C.), the Cimmerians attacked Asia Minor and destroyed the Phrygian Empire: Phrygia's King Midas committed suicide. This presumably happened in 696–695 B.C., although a date twenty years later is possible. A group of Cimmerians probably settled for some time near Sinope (modern Sinop). The military leader of the Cimmerians in their 679–678 B.C. campaign is called Tuspā in Assyrian records. Another group of Cimmerians probably entered Anatolia from Thrace. This is suggested by the ancient Greek geographer Strabo, writing in the late first century B.C. and early first century A.D. He speaks about an alliance between the Cimmerians and the Thracian Treres and Edoni tribes who later lived in central Bulgaria and in Chalcidice, respectively. The Lydian king Gyges even sought aid against them from the Assyrian king Assurbanapal. An attack on Lydia in 652 B.C. was successful. The Lydian capital Sardis was sacked and Gyges was killed.

Most Cimmerians had left their lands in the Black Sea steppe because of the arrival of the Scythians (see below) from the east, who were in turn under pressure from the Massagetae. This took place before 713 B.C., when both the Cimmerians and, following them, the Scythians reached the region of Urartu. Herodotus, the fifth century B.C. Greek geographer, explicitly mentions the Tyras River (the Dniester) as the place where the Cimmerian kings fought a fratricidal battle and were buried, and from where the common people left their homes. He also describes the Cimmerian's subsequent escape along the Black Sea west of the Caucasus to the area of Sinope. Some Cimmerians, however, remained on the shores of Lake Maeotis (the Sea of Azov). The Cimmerian Bosphorus (also

known as the Kerch Strait), Cimmerian Walls, and Cimmerian Peninsula are all in this same area (the Crimea and its surrounds), much farther east than Tyras/Dniester, and equally distant from the River Araxes (now known as the Araks), the original eastern boundary of the Cimmerians. The fratricidal battle of the Cimmerian leaders on the Dniester seems to have marked the last stage of the Cimmerian retreat.

These movements in the Near East are all that we know of the Cimmerians from written sources. It is most probable that the Cimmerians were not a single tribe and that this was a collective name for a large number of tribes living in the steppes of the Ukraine and European Russia. This is a very important point when examining Cimmerian culture and the archaeological evidence for it. The archaeological material does not permit us to single out one culture to which the label "Cimmerian" can firmly be attached. Several generations of archaeologists have sought to provide archaeological evidence of the Cimmerians and their culture but without any positive results. The search for the Cimmerians is based on the proposition that, because the Cimmerians were expelled by the Scythians, any pre-Scythian culture throughout the huge territory mentioned above must be Cimmerian.

Another difficulty is that all these so-called Cimmerian cultures have Scythian features, and their objects executed in Animal Style are extremely close to the Scythian and Near Eastern variants of this type. It is practically impossible with current knowledge to distinguish a Cimmerian culture in archaeological terms. It is so close to Scythian that modern scholars have taken refuge in the labels "pre-Scythian" or "Early Scythian" to describe the cultures of the ninth and eighth centuries B.C.

THE SCYTHIANS

As noted above, the arrival of the Scythians resulted in the expulsion of the so-called Cimmerians. The main sources for knowledge of the Scythians are archaeology and book 4 of *The Histories* by Herodotus. Like the Cimmerians, the Scythians spoke an Iranian-related language, and the term "Scythians" represents a general name for many different tribes, whose individual names Herodotus lists as Royal Scythians, Agricultural Scythians, Callipadae, Alazones, and others. The Scythians came from north-

ern Siberia at the end of the eighth and the first half of the seventh centuries B.C. Initially, they lived in the steppes of the northern Caucasus, not far from the Kuban River. The crucial point in the creation of Scythian culture was the middle seventh century, when a part of their population migrated to the Near East, remaining there, according to Herodotus, for twenty-eight years. Their presence was disastrous for the Near Eastern empires such as the Assyrian. They destroyed Urartu and they raided as far as Egypt. For the Scythians themselves this period was important in the formation of their culture, upon which Near Eastern civilizations had a very strong influence. When the Scythians returned to the Caucasian steppes at the end of the seventh and beginning of the sixth centuries, they possessed a strongly formed culture in which Anatolian/Near Eastern Animal Style had taken root. Scythian tombs dating to the period after their return from the Near East have been discovered in the northern Caucasus. They show how Scythian rulers now imitated those of Assyria, Media, and Urartu, and employed Near Eastern craftsmen to this end.

During the sixth century B.C., thanks to close interaction between the Scythians and the local population of the Kuban region (including the Maeotians), Scythian culture showed increasing signs of Greek influence, but it continued to contain Near Eastern features. The failure of the Persian king Darius I to conquer them in 514–513 B.C. enhanced Scythian self-confidence. At the end of the sixth and beginning of the fifth centuries B.C., they formed their own political entities: one based in the Crimean steppes, not far from the future Bosporean kingdom; the other on the lower Dnieper, not far from Olbia. Classical Scythian culture, which dates from the end of the fifth and beginning of the fourth centuries B.C., when most of the Scythians were becoming a settled agricultural population, is indeed the result of close artistic links between the Scythian and Greek worlds. Nevertheless, it is not particularly difficult to identify Near Eastern traditions within it.

The most characteristic feature of Scythian culture is the tumulus, or *kurgan*. Many of the graves belong to the elite. Altogether, about 3,000 tumuli are known. Over time the incidence of the burial mounds varies. The vast majority, some 2,000, date from the Classical period of Scythian culture, espe-

cially the fourth century B.C., and are concentrated on both banks of the lower Dnieper. This is where Herodotus located Gerrhi, the burial place of the Scythian kings, in the vicinity of the Sea of Azov and the Crimea. In some cases, Bronze Age tumuli were reused, but most were built specially for burying the elite and were constructed in several stages. The main feature of these tombs is the earth mound, the usual height of which varied between 3 and 21 meters and the diameter between 30 and 350 meters. Another characteristic feature is the stone chamber and the *dromos* leading to it; antechambers were rare. Usually, the chamber was rectangular and had a step-vaulted stone roof. The chambers were very large and their height varied between 4 and 14 meters. Some tombs have several chambers. Most tumuli were robbed in antiquity, but the richest to survive untouched contained several dozen gold and silver objects (jewelry, vessels), amphorae, and luxurious Greek pottery. Sometimes horses and slaves were buried with their owners.

GREEK COLONIZATION

The Scythians were the principal local people encountered by the Greek colonists who established settlements on the northern shore of the Black Sea. The relationship between the two groups shaped the history of the Greek cities of the region for several centuries.

The first Eastern Greek settlements in the area, mainly Ionian, appeared in the second half of the seventh century B.C. Not much is known about Archaic colonies, including their layouts; however, the first colonies were quite small. In the sixth century B.C. the area of Panticapaeum (which occupied the site of modern Kerch) was about 7.5 hectares, with a population of about 2,000–3,000. The territory of Olbia in the first half of the same century was 6 hectares; in the second half it was 16.5 hectares. In the middle sixth century, Phanagoria was built on a hill; it covered an area of 20 to 22.5 hectares. It was the only early colony to show evidence of settlement planning and regular streets. The thoroughfares had a width of between 1.5 and 3 meters, and houses were constructed next to each other along both sides of the streets. There is (so far) no evidence of the formation of an agora (marketplace) or *temenos* (sacral place) as a distinct part of any of the towns until the last quarter of the sixth century. Shrines,

such as that of Demeter in Nymphaeum, had quite primitive architecture and were not distinguished from dwelling houses. Recent investigation in Berezan has yielded a small temple of the Late Archaic period. Domestic architecture built between the very end of the seventh century and the last quarter of the sixth century B.C. has very distinctive features. So far no aboveground stone dwelling houses are known; instead, so-called dugouts or semi-dugouts predominate. Entire quarters of these pits were found in many Greek cities: in Olbia, for example, there is a street with pit dwellings laid out regularly down one side, and with a few on the opposite side.

The relationship between the first colonists and the local population was quite peaceful. A large amount of handmade pottery has been found in the Greek settlements, representing 12 to 23 percent of the total pottery finds. Because such pottery was mainly a product of the local population, this high concentration seems to indicate that local people lived in the settlements alongside the colonists. Such an arrangement might be evidence of a pacific relationship. Speaking generally, the seventh and sixth centuries B.C. saw no complications in the relations between Greeks and locals. This is indicated by the absence of fortification systems in the northern Black Sea colonies until the Classical period.

In the last twenty-five years of the sixth century B.C., a completely new period in the history of the Greek settlements started. Previously the colonies had not looked very Greek with their pit houses and simple construction, but from the Late Archaic period they exhibited the same characteristic features known in mainland Greece and other areas of Greek colonization. Major cities had designated areas such as an agora and a *temenos*. All houses were built of stone and mud brick. From the end of the sixth century B.C. all houses were aboveground, roofed with tiles, had cellars or semi-cellars, and were rectangular in plan. Some were of two stories; all followed the rules of Greek domestic architecture. Most rich houses were built using the architectural orders and covered up to 550 square meters; some were stucco-clad. The typical small house covered an area of between 80 and 200 square meters; a large one covered from 200 up to 600 square meters. The number of rooms ranged between three and fourteen.

Streets were paved with stones, pebbles and pieces of pottery. By the fourth century B.C. a com-

prehensive street pattern had formed. Main streets in the various cities were 6 to 11 meters wide; side streets between 4 and 5 meters wide; alleys and passageways between 1 and 1.5 meters across. The terraces on which Olbia and Panticapaeum were constructed were linked by flights of paved steps. Beneath the streets were stone drains and sewers. There were stone-lined wells and water fountains. In Olbia, clay pipes or small stone channels carried water into individual houses from the main channel that brought drinking water into the city. In major cities, stone temples were built in the *temenos*, usually rich in architectural decoration. In Olbia, the agora and *temenos* adjoined. The former extended to 2,000 square meters and was paved with pieces of ceramic, stones, and pebbles. Along the northern coast of the Black Sea the first fortification systems appeared at the beginning of the fifth century B.C., and they were destroyed and rebuilt in various cities between the fourth and second centuries B.C.

THE BOSPORAN KINGDOM

As mentioned above, after the failure of Darius I's Scythian campaign, the Scythians established two political entities—one not far from the Bosporan kingdom and the other near Olbia. It was also during this period that the Odrysian kingdom was created in what is now Bulgaria. War soon broke out between Scythians and the Odrysians but ended quickly in a truce, freeing the Scythians to direct their attentions toward the Greek cities, including Olbia and settlements on the Kerch and Taman peninsulas. The Scythians soon established a protectorate over Olbia.

It was at this time that the Greek cities of the two peninsulas unified into a single state, the Bosporan kingdom, with its capital at Panticapaeum. Although the reason for the unification remains a matter of debate, many scholars link it to the need to combat increasing Scythian pressure on the cities. From this period onward, relations between the Greek cities and the Scythians were characterized by the payment of tribute and the giving of gifts. Strabo, for example, tells us that land for settlement and agriculture was given by local tribal chiefs—that is, the Scythians—either by special agreement or in exchange for a moderate tribute. Furthermore, one inscription of the late fifth century, from Kerkitis in western Crimea, mentions the payment of tribute to the Scythians.

From the cultural point of view, the political difficulties between the Scythians and Greek cities resulted in the creation of a unique phenomenon: Greco-barbarian art. The Greeks produced many highly artistic objects for the local royal family and elite. From the fifth century B.C., these local upper classes were hellenized—a process that went further in the fourth century. Greek craftsmen were active at the courts of local rulers, who employed them, as in Anatolia, to produce objects in the Greek style but adapted to the tastes of the local elite. Herodotus tells an interesting story about the Scythian king Scyles who had been taught by his Greek mother from Histria to know Greek religion and the Greek way of life. He had a house and a Greek wife in Olbia and regularly stayed there.

The Bosporan kingdom, a unique political entity, was, from its establishment in about 480 B.C., similar in all respects to the Hellenistic kingdoms. It was surrounded by local agrarian population—the Maeotae, Sindians, Dandarii, and others near the Taman Peninsula—and the Nomadic Scythians in the Crimea. From the formation of this state, the relationship between Bosporan Greeks and the local peoples around the Taman Peninsula and the Kuban basin remained peaceful, and by the middle of the fourth century B.C. all of these populations were incorporated into the kingdom. Relations between the Bosporan kingdom and the Nomadic Scythians are not very clear, but they were probably quite hostile, in view of the various earthen fortifications found in the Kerch Peninsula. Another people inhabiting the Crimea were the Taurians. After the establishment of Dorian Chersonesus in eastern Crimea c. 422 B.C., they were pushed back by the colonists into the mountains.

GREEK PENETRATION INTO THE HINTERLAND

In ancient times the northern Black Sea steppes (present-day Ukraine and the south of European Russia) were not just a multiethnic territory but an active contact zone in which interaction between local peoples and between locals and Greek colonists can be studied. The evidence demonstrates not just a trade relationship between Greeks and locals but also how Greeks penetrated deep into the hinterland, even residing in the settlements that formed the political and production centers of local tribes.

The most interesting example of this is the Belsk settlement, situated not far from Poltava in the Ukraine (about 500 kilometers inland from the Black Sea). Some believe it to be the city of Gelonus inhabited by the Budini and the Geloni (one of the Scythian tribes). The site has yielded about ten thousand pieces of Greek pottery dating from the Archaic and Classical periods. To understand what kind of settlement this was, let us turn to book 4 of *The Histories* by Herodotus:

The Budini, a numerous and powerful nation, all have markedly blue-grey eyes and red hair; there is a town in their territory called Gelonus, all built of wood, both dwelling-houses and temples, with a high wooden wall round it, thirty furlongs each way. There are temples here in honour of Greek gods, adorned after the Greek manner with statues, altars, and shrines—though all constructed of wood; a triennial festival, with the appropriate revelry, is held in honour of Dionysus. This is to be accounted for by the fact that the Geloni were originally Greeks, who, driven out of the seaports along the coast, settled amongst the Budini. Their language is still half Scythian, half Greek. The language of the Budini is quite different, as, indeed, is their culture generally.

The excavator of this site, Boris Andreevich (B. A.) Shramko, indeed believes that he has found a small sanctuary of the sixth through fourth centuries B.C. built with wooden columns. Inside is an altar, and not far away is a pit containing cult offerings. This could indicate a Greek population of merchants and artisans, probably small, from the Archaic period.

From the fourth century and in the Hellenistic period, there is much stronger evidence to demonstrate that Greeks lived permanently in local settlements, establishing their own quarters there. Elizavetovskoe is a settlement on the Don River, at a point where three cultural zones meet—Scythian, Maeotian, and Sarmatian. It dates from the end of the sixth century or the beginning of the fifth century B.C. The important feature at Elizavetovskoe is the presence of a quarter populated by Bosporan Greeks. The quarter dates from the second half of the fourth century B.C., when the acropolis was strengthened with stone towers and walls. Detailed investigation has shown that the Greek quarter was the settlement's trading area and was inhabited by Greeks from the Bosporan kingdom. It ceased to exist at some point at the very beginning of the third

century B.C., replaced by a new settlement, a so-called Bosporan trading center (*emporion*), which existed until about 275–270 B.C. The houses of the *emporion* were built of stone in the Greek manner, and the settlement was fortified against the rest of the city, where the local population lived.

Kamenskoe, a Scythian settlement on the Dnieper, far into the hinterland, is another important site. It was the political and economic center of this part of Scythia, covering some 1,200 hectares. There is very strong evidence that Greeks lived in the acropolis from the fourth century B.C.: it had a stone fortification system constructed using Greek techniques, Greek-type stone dwellings, and stone-paved streets. Not far from the acropolis there was a harbor.

Further examples come from the Semibratnoe and Raevskoe settlements, not far from the Taman Peninsula. Unfortunately, neither has been studied very well, and the archaeological investigations that have taken place have not been published in detail. Semibratnoe, situated not far from Gorgippia, yielded very impressive Greek-type stone architecture and a fortification system. An inscription from it demonstrates that it was the residence of the Bosporan governor/prince within the lands of the local population. Raevskoe dates mainly from the Hellenistic period and has Greek-type domestic and public architecture.

Bosporan Greeks in the Hellenistic period were most active in trying to penetrate the hinterland and establish settlements within the territories of the local population. One of the best studied of such settlements is Tanais, not far where the Don flows into the Sea of Azov. Strabo gives a very clear idea of its character:

On the river and the lake is an inhabited city bearing the same name, Tanais; it was founded by the Greeks who held the Bosphorus. . . . It was a common emporium, partly of the Asiatic and the European nomads, and partly of those who navigated the lake from the Bosphorus, the former bringing slaves, hides, and such other things as nomads possess, and the latter giving in exchange clothing, wine, and the other things that belong to civilised life.

Archaeological excavation has demonstrated that this settlement was established in the first half of the third century B.C. It had fortification walls and an internal wall dividing the Greek and local sectors.

LATE SCYTHIANS AND THE PONTIC KINGDOM

The period from the late fourth century through the third century B.C. brought massive change. Semi-nomadic Sarmatian tribes moved in from the Volga area, expelling the Scythians and taking over their territory. Some Scythians were assimilated and others were killed; most fled to central Crimea, establishing a new kingdom. The kingdom's capital was Scythian Neapolis (at the site of modern Simferopol), which lasted until the third century A.D. In the literature these Scythians are called "Late Scythians." The rulers and elite of this new kingdom were heavily hellenized. Scythian Neapolis had Greek-type fortifications, public buildings, and sculptural decorations. Soon these Scythians became hostile to the Chersonesus state and its agricultural territories, leading to a war that lasted from the second quarter of the second century to the middle of the first century B.C. The Scythians captured the Chersonesite agricultural territory in northwestern Crimea and surrounded Chersonesus itself. In response, Chersonesus sought the help of Mithridates VI Eupator, ruler of the Pontic kingdom. In about 110 B.C., he sent his general Diophantus to Chersonesus at the head of a Pontic army. Diophantus undertook a number of campaigns against the Scythians, liberating Kerkinitis, Kalos Limen, and other Chersonesite settlements in the northwestern Crimea and capturing various Scythian fortresses in the hinterland. As a result, the Bosphorus kingdom, Chersonesus, and, apparently, the Late Scythian kingdom itself, all became part of Mithridates's Pontic domain. Olbia and other cities of the northwestern Black Sea area had probably been incorporated into the Pontic kingdom by the end of the second century B.C.

The Greek cities of the northern shore of the Black Sea played an important role during the wars between Mithridates and Rome. They were Mithridates' principal suppliers of provisions, people, and ships, to which end Mithridates maintained very close contacts with the local barbarian leaders. Mithridates, after being defeated by the Romans and betrayed by his own son, killed himself in Panticapaeum in 63 B.C. The ensuing political chaos witnessed frequent changes of rulers in the major Greek cities of the northern Black Sea, often at the initiative or with the active connivance of Rome. Gradually, Roman appetite and influence grew, but it was not until the beginning of the second century

A.D. that the whole area became fully integrated into the Roman Empire.

See also **Greek Colonies in the East** (vol. 2, part 6); **Scythians** (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Bouzek, Jan. *Greece, Anatolia and Europe: Cultural Interrelations during the Early Iron Age*. Studies in Mediterranean Archaeology, vol. 122. Jonsered, Sweden: Paul Åströms Förlag, 1997.
- Davis-Kimball, Jeannine, Vladimir A. Bashilov, and Leonid T. Yablonsky, eds. *Nomads of the Eurasian Steppes in the Early Iron Age*. Berkeley, Calif.: Zinat Press, 1995.
- Herodotus. *The Histories*. Translated by Aubrey de Séincourt. Revised by A. R. Burn. London: Penguin, 1972.
- Hind, J. G. F. "Archaeology of the Greeks and Barbarian Peoples around the Black Sea (1982–1992)." *Archaeological Reports* 39 (1992–1993): 82–112.
- Reeder, Ellen D., ed. *Scythian Gold: Treasures from Ancient Ukraine*. New York: Harry N. Abrams in association with the Walters Art Gallery and the San Antonio Museum of Art, 1999.
- Rolle, Renate. *The World of the Scythians*. Translated by Gayna Walls. London: Batsford, 1989.
- Sauter, Hermann. *Studien zum Kimmerierproblem*. Saarbrücker Beiträge zur Altertumskunde 72. Bonn, Germany: R. Habelt, 2000.
- Strabo. *The Geography of Strabo*. Translated by Horace Leonard Jones. 8 Vols. London: William Heinemann, 1917.
- Treister, Michail J., and Yuri G. Vinogradov. "Archaeology on the Northern Coast of the Black Sea." *American Journal of Archaeology* 97, no. 3 (1993): 521–563.
- Tsetsckhladze, Gocha R. "Who Built the Scythian and Thracian Royal and Elite Tombs?" *Oxford Journal of Archaeology* 17, no. 1 (1998): 55–92.
- , ed. *North Pontic Archaeology: Recent Discoveries and Studies*. Colloquia Pontica, vol. 6. Leiden, The Netherlands, and Boston: Brill, 2001.
- , ed. *Ancient Greeks West and East*. Mnemosyne Bibliotheca Classica Batava Supplementum 196. Leiden, The Netherlands, and Boston: Brill, 1999.
- , ed. *The Greek Colonisation of the Black Sea Area. Historical Interpretation of Archaeology*. Historia Einzelschriften 121. Stuttgart, Germany: Steiner, 1998.
- Tsetsckhladze, Gocha R., and A. M. Snodgrass, eds. *Greek Settlements in the Eastern Mediterranean and the Black Sea*. BAR International Series, no. 1062. Oxford: Archaeopress, 2002.

GOCHA R. TSETSKHLADZE



IRON AGE EAST-CENTRAL EUROPE

During the second half of the nineteenth century, when archaeologists developed the outlines of the current system of chronology for prehistoric Europe, they defined the Iron Age as the time when iron came into use as the principal material for making tools. Since iron technology was adopted gradually, defining the beginning of the Iron Age is somewhat arbitrary. There is no break, either in technology or in other aspects of human culture, between the Late Bronze Age and the Early Iron Age. Small iron tools occur on settlements in parts of east-central Europe from 1000 B.C. on, but larger implements do not appear until after 800 B.C. By generally agreed definition, the Iron Age in east-central Europe began about 800 B.C. For the purposes of this discussion, three periods are distinguished: an Early Iron Age, 800–450 B.C.; a Middle Iron Age, 450–200 B.C.; and a Late Iron Age, 200 B.C. to the Roman conquest.

The region of east-central Europe defined here—the Czech Republic, Slovakia, Hungary, and the lands of the former Yugoslavia—includes a variety of different landscapes and was home to distinct cultural traditions during the Iron Age. Except for the Great Hungarian Plain, most of the land is hilly and mountainous. The entire region is dominated by the Danube River valley, and important smaller rivers, such as the Elbe, the Tisza, and the Sava, also played important roles in communities' selection of places to settle and in trade systems. This short review emphasizes patterns that are characteristic of large portions of east-central Europe, while at the same time noting significant variability.

EARLY IRON AGE (800–450 B.C.)

The basic settlement, subsistence, craft-working, and trade systems at the start of the Iron Age were similar to those of the preceding Late Bronze Age. Beginning as early as the ninth century B.C., however, objects associated with horseback riding, such as bits and harness ornaments, indicating links with regions to the east, appeared in graves and in hoard deposits over much of east-central Europe, including the Great Hungarian Plain, western Slovakia, and Croatia. Debate surrounds the question of whether these objects indicate primarily migration of peoples from north of the Black Sea or new contacts made between peoples in these different regions. In the succeeding centuries, horse-riding material of bronze, iron, and bone played an important role in burial ritual and attests to the significance of horseback riding among Early Iron Age elites. In some regions burial practice included the placing of four-wheeled wagons in the richest graves, as in the Bylany culture graves at Hradenín in Bohemia.

In much of Europe, burial practice during the Late Bronze Age was commonly by cremation in flat graves, and in the Early Iron Age inhumation and burying the dead under mounds became widespread. In some places, mounds were erected over individual graves; in others, such as Slovenia, great communal mounds became the rule, with as many as two hundred graves in a mound. These were highly visible structures, meant to be seen by the living. The change to mound burial indicates a new concern with permanent display of status among many of the peoples of east-central Europe.

Hilltop Centers. During the Early Iron Age, the rise to prominence of major centers of political power and of economic activity constituted a change from Bronze Age circumstances. This change is particularly evident in Slovenia, where major fortified hilltop settlements were created at numerous locations during the eighth century B.C. Among the best studied are Magdalenska gora, Most na Soči, Stična, and Vače. Each of these settlements is accompanied by large cemeteries of communal burial mounds. Stična is the most fully investigated. There, the fortified area measures about 800 by 400 meters, and investigators have counted about 150 mounds in the low land around the settlement. One excavated mound at Stična contained nearly two hundred graves, suggesting how large the cemetery, and thus the population, may have been.

Stična and other settlements in Slovenia were centers of iron production, and the graves indicate substantial manufacture of spearheads, axes, horse bits, and other implements from the eighth century B.C. on. Bronze working also was a highly developed craft, with large-scale manufacture of personal ornaments, ornate bronze vessels, and armor, such as helmets and cuirasses. Glass production was a significant industry as well. Hundreds of multicolored beads occur in many graves, and glass beads from this region reached communities all over Europe. Commerce brought amber from the shores of the Baltic Sea, Etruscan pottery and bronze objects, and even ornate feasting equipment from the Near East.

Similar centers emerged in other parts of the region. At Závist in Bohemia, a fortified settlement was established on a hilltop during the sixth century B.C. Workshop evidence shows that a range of goods was manufactured. The community imported amber from the Baltic region and glass beads from centers in Slovenia. The excavators of the site believe that a major ritual complex at the top of the hill, defined by a rectangular enclosure 28 meters on a side surrounded by a ditch dug into the bedrock, was established at Závist. In western Slovakia, a fortified hilltop settlement dating to the seventh and sixth centuries B.C. has been excavated at Smolenice-Molpír. Like other hilltop sites, this one attests to both a central role in production and the presence of high-status individuals buried in nearby cemeteries. Other fortified hilltop centers of this pe-

riod include sites at Sopron and Velemszentvid in Hungary.

Figural Art. Among the Early Iron Age peoples of temperate Europe, figural art was a special development in parts of east-central Europe. This artwork includes figurines placed in graves or in deposits, particularly in Slovenia and Hungary. Figures incised on pottery are representative of cemeteries at Sopron in Hungary and at Nové Košariská in Slovakia. The most complex of the figural art, the Situla art of Slovenia and regions to the west, is a specific characteristic of the major centers there, such as Magdalenska gora, Stična, and Vače (fig. 1). Of particular interest for studies of the Early Iron Age are scenes that show people engaged in various activities.

Among the figures incised on pottery, common themes include persons with their arms raised as if in honor of a deity, individuals riding on horseback and driving wagons, and people playing musical instruments, especially lyres. Important scenes figured on pottery from the graves at Sopron include those

showing persons spinning and weaving textiles. In the Situla art of Slovenia and regions to the west, a variety of complex activities are represented, among them, scenes that show feasting, hunting, processions, athletic contests, and well-armed troops marching in formation.

Interpretations of these complex representations fall into two main groups. One set views the scenes as pictures of the festive lives of the elites at the centers. The objects shown in the banqueting scenes, in the illustrations of athletic contests, and in the depictions of marching soldiers (such as vessels, helmets, axes, spears, and shields) match objects found in the graves. This provides a clear link between the representations and the local communities at which the scenes were created by craft workers and found by archaeologists. The spindle whorls and looms portrayed in the incised scenes of textile working on the pots at Sopron correspond to implements found in women's burials there and elsewhere.

The other group of interpretations regards these scenes as mythological or religious in nature, not depicting real people but rather telling stories of mythical significance. Specialists have argued that the weaving scenes represent the passage of time or fate and that figures around the weavers can be interpreted in terms of religious ritual. Scenes of feasts, processions, hunting, athletic contests, and marching troops have been understood to exemplify ideas about community solidarity, fertility, death, and rebirth.

Ritual. In the hilly and mountainous regions of east-central Europe, many sites have been discovered at which ritual deposits were made during the Early Iron Age. The practice of placing, dropping, and throwing valued objects into special natural places—springs, ponds, rivers, caves, clefts in cliff faces—as offerings to deities has been done from Upper Palaeolithic times to the modern day. Particular kinds of locations and specific types of objects are favored in different contexts. Many hilltops in east-central Europe apparently were used as places for ritual practice, such as the site of Burkovak, near Písek in Bohemia, where figurines of animals and humans, wheel-shaped clay objects, and pottery have been found in pits. The hilltop at Závist may be another ritual place.

Caves often were used for ritual practice. Bronze jewelry items were particularly common as ritual deposits in caves. Other objects recovered in such contexts comprise tools and weapons, pottery, and human and animal remains. In some caves, evidence of human sacrifice has been identified. Among the best-known sites is the cave at Býčí skála in Moravia, where quantities of materials of varied character were deposited at the end of the Early Iron Age. Personal ornaments of types worn by both men and women were abundant. Weapons were well represented, including daggers, axes, lances, helmets, cuirasses, and arrows. Blacksmiths' tools and fittings from horse harnesses also were present. Fragments of wagons were recovered as well. Bones of cattle, pigs, sheep, and horses were found, as were skeletal remains of men, women, and children, representing at least thirty-seven individuals. Pottery vessels and large bronze containers associated with feasting were part of the assemblage. Among the materials recovered were knives, spindle whorls, harvesting tools, and cereal grains. The assemblage from Býčí skála was removed from the cave in the nineteenth century, and we lack good information about the arrangement of the objects when they were discovered. The different categories of objects found in the cave, however, match those from later, well-documented sites that have ritual associations.

MIDDLE IRON AGE (450–200 B.C.)

The style of ornament known as La Tène, developed in the Rhineland in the early part of the fifth century B.C., appeared in east-central Europe in about the middle of that century. Among the earliest expressions of this new style in the region are fibulae—brooches that work mechanically like modern safety pins—ornamented with human, bird, and mammal heads, a form particularly well represented in Bohemia. From the end of the fifth century B.C. onward, La Tène style, with its curvilinear ornament and stylized animal and human figures, also is seen engraved and incised on weapons, pottery, and other objects. The new style most often is seen on objects associated with elites, in wealthy burials. In some regions, such as Bohemia, there were groups of unusually rich graves, such as those excavated at Chlum, Hradiště, Písek, and Prague-Modrany. At Chlum a dead man was buried within a chamber built of stone, covered by a burial mound. Grave

goods included an imported Etruscan bronze jug, two Greek wine cups, a sword, an axe, a knife, and personal ornaments of gold, silver, and bronze.

New Burial Practices. During the late fifth and fourth centuries B.C., burial practice changed in most parts of east-central Europe, from mound burial to inhumation in flat graves. In many cemeteries, graves generally are well outfitted. Often about half of the men's graves contain sets of iron weapons, including sword, lance, and shield (wood with iron rim). Women's graves characteristically contain bronze and iron jewelry—often complete sets with neck ring, two bracelets, sometimes two leg rings, and several fibulae. Ceramic and, more rarely, bronze vessels occasionally accompany the other grave goods. Burial practices varied somewhat in different regions, but in broad outline the similarities are striking. Among well-documented cemeteries of this period are Bučany in western Slovakia, Jászberény-Cseróhalom in Hungary, Brežice in Slovenia, Karaburma near Belgrade in Serbia, and Jenišův Űjezd in Bohemia. One study of several cemeteries in Bohemia found that in those communities, life expectancy for men was forty-two years, and for women it was thirty-eight. Communities were small—individual farmsteads or very small villages, rarely with more than fifty people per settlement. The spread of La Tène style and the adoption of these common burial practices often have been attributed to migrations of Celts from the Rhineland. Modern understanding of the nature of group identity and of the meaning of the name “Celts,” however, makes this mechanism of dispersion unlikely. More probably, the new stylistic fashion and burial practice spread because they filled specific social and cultural needs of communities throughout much of Europe.

At the same time that the burial practice changed from tumulus burial to flat grave inhumation, the great majority of the fortified hilltop settlements were abandoned. People who had resided in them moved down into the lower lands. A dispersed settlement pattern characterized the cultural landscape, in contrast to the centralized system based on the hillforts that had dominated many regions during the Early Iron Age. The lavish gold ornaments and ornate bronze vessels from the Mediterranean world were no longer buried with elite individuals, yet differences in burial wealth continued to be sig-

nificant. In the great flat-grave cemeteries, wealth differences between rich and poor graves are subtler than in those from the Early Iron Age, but they are nonetheless evident. Special status is apparent in some men's graves that contain sets of weapons, with swords and scabbards sometimes bearing special ornament. Such ornamentation is especially common in the Carpathian Basin, where opposed pairs of dragons incised on the upper part of scabbards was a special symbol of the warrior elite. Scabbard decoration known as the “Hungarian sword style” appears throughout much of temperate Europe, from England to Romania.

Settlement. Settlements of this period typically were farms and small villages, such as one excavated at Radovesice in Bohemia. Agriculture and crafts were practiced to satisfy the needs of the resident community, with little apparent surplus production for trade. Major centers, such as those of the Early Iron Age, have not been identified for this period, but some specialized production places focused on the extraction of specific resources. At Msec in Bohemia a center of large-scale iron production has been identified, and at Lovosice there is a center for the quarrying of porphyry for making grindstones.

Ritual. During the middle part of the Iron Age, deposits of valuable objects in water best represented ritual practice. At Duchcov in northwest Bohemia, a bronze cauldron was found in a spring with a large number of bronze ornaments in it. They included some 850 fibulae, 650 bracelets, and 100 finger rings. Estimates place the original total number of objects at about 2,500. The site was discovered in 1882 during construction work, and many of the objects were dispersed without record. A complex interpreted as a ritual enclosure has been identified at Libenice, also in Bohemia. A ditch enclosed a long, thin rectangle of land; in the middle of it was a single burial, with a large stone set into the ground nearby.

LATE IRON AGE (200 B.C. TO THE ROMAN CONQUEST)

In the final centuries of the Iron Age, communities larger and more complex than any earlier ones developed throughout much of temperate Europe.

Oppida. The final phase of the prehistoric Iron Age in east-central Europe and as far west as France is

characterized by the development of the *oppida*. These were large fortified settlements, usually on hilltops, that had populations substantially larger than any earlier settlements in the region and show evidence of larger-scale manufacturing and trade. Research has shown that the development of these towns was a long and gradual process. Among the principal *oppida* in east-central Europe are Stradonice, Hrazany, Třisov, and Závist in Bohemia; Staré Hradisko in Moravia; Bratislava and Zemplín in Slovakia; Sopron, Veleszentvid, and Budapest-Gellérthegy in Hungary; and Židovar in Serbia.

The reasons that *oppida* developed during the second century B.C. are much debated. Some archaeologists favor a primarily defensive explanation. The second century B.C. was a time of increased violence and migration, and communities banded together, built large fortified settlements, and moved inside to protect themselves against attackers. Others argue for a mainly economic basis. During this time, commerce was expanding rapidly. Roman imports were more common, both at the *oppidum* settlements and elsewhere, and trade with all parts of Europe is evident. Coinage developed late in the third century B.C., and at many of the *oppida*, such as Stradonice, a money-based economy was created. Another explanation is primarily political. Society in temperate Europe was becoming more complicated. The need for both defense against outside aggressors and management of the complex economies gave an advantage to the organization of larger political units. We know that in Gaul during the final century B.C. the *oppida* were the political capitals of the groups that the Romans recognized as tribes. Thus, the *oppida* throughout Europe came into being perhaps in part to serve as centers of political units that were forming at the time.

At excavated *oppida* evidence for extensive iron-working is prevalent. In most cases, iron ores were available on or close to the surface near the settlements. There are abundant remains of smelting slag and furnaces and of tools and debris from the process of forging wrought iron into a wide variety of tools, weapons, building elements, and ornament. In this period, smiths were producing much more iron than in earlier times, and they were fashioning tools that made many tasks more efficient. Iron plowshares made the plowing of fields, including those on rich, heavy loam, much less difficult and

time-consuming. Scythes made harvesting of hay easier than it had been with earlier tools. Nails first appeared in quantities at this time, improving the construction of houses, wagons, boats, and other wooden structures.

While the phenomenon of these large and often commercially and politically central communities suggests similar processes of economic and political change throughout much of temperate Europe, individual *oppida* varied in character. Stradonice was one of the most densely occupied and commercially active centers in Late Iron Age Europe. Unfortunately, the site was extensively excavated under unscientific conditions during the nineteenth century, and good maps or plans do not exist of the settlement or of locations of important finds. The mass of objects recovered on the site, however, indicates the range of manufacturing and commercial activities in which the community was engaged. Iron-working is well represented, and numerous hammers, knives, axes, and other implements were found. Locks and keys suggest an important change in the need for personal security at these large centers.

Potters produced a variety of ceramics, ranging from large, coarse-textured storage vessels to thin-walled, ornately painted vessels thrown on the fast-turning potter's wheel. Fibulae, of which some thirteen hundred specimens are known from Stradonice, were made most often of bronze and iron but sometimes of silver and gold. Certain glass beads and bracelets may have been imported and others made onsite. Communities at some of the *oppida* started minting coins in about the middle of the second century B.C., and at Stradonice bronze, silver, and gold coins are represented. Engagement in commerce with the Roman world is evident in imported ceramic amphorae which probably once contained wine, bronze vessels, and fragments of writing tablets, exemplifying a new technology introduced through trade between the *oppida* and merchants in the Mediterranean Basin.

At the Late Iron Age settlement at Závist, the fortification walls enclose 170 hectares, making this the largest of the *oppida* in Bohemia. Excavations have revealed a site less densely occupied than Stradonice, however, and with fewer archaeological materials. Excavations at Staré Hradisko in Moravia yielded finds similar to those at Stradonice but from

a settlement apparently not as densely inhabited. The detailed plans produced by archaeologists show that the settlement was divided into individual units—similar to small agricultural settlements—rather than being designed on a centralized scheme. At Zemplín in Slovakia, the area enclosed by the defensive system is smaller than that at many of the sites to the west, and a substantial settlement lies outside the fortifications. At Židovar in Serbia, excavations have uncovered a fortified hilltop settlement with well-built houses with packed clay floors and, in some cases, stone foundations. Thus, considerable variation in size and character is apparent among these complex Late Iron Age settlements.

In the past, the *oppida* have attracted a great deal of research attention. Later archaeologists have explored the typical small farming communities that are evident throughout east-central Europe, as in other parts of the Continent. Important investigations at the settlements of Strachotín and Boritov in Moravia show that even small communities manufactured pottery and iron tools, and they were connected closely to the large economic and political centers at the *oppida*.

Ritual. At the time that the *oppida* were established in the second and first centuries B.C., rectangular enclosures, usually known by the German term *Viereckschanzen*, became common throughout the same regions. Typically, they are bounded by an external ditch and a wall on the inside; the enclosed area is roughly 90 by 90 meters, though sizes vary. Archaeologists have debated the purpose of these sites. Among the interpretations are enclosed farmsteads, animal pens, small fortresses, and ritual places. Deposits recovered in deep pits on certain sites and in the ditches on others have lent support to the ritual theory. Intensive investigation of many of these enclosures in different part of central Europe, however, has suggested a more complex picture. While many sites yield evidence that strongly supports ritual activity, others include typical domestic settlement debris, such as pottery fragments, animal bones, and scraps from manufacturing processes, very much like the material found on typical habitation sites. Archaeologists are beginning to realize that settlement and ritual places do not need to be viewed as separate. Perhaps in the Late Iron Age, in particular, people often engaged in ritual activity within their settlements.



Fig. 2. Stone head from Mšecké Žehrovice, Bohemia, associated with a pair of rectangular enclosures, first century B.C. COURTESY OF THE NÁRODNÍ MUZEUM, PRAGUE. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

At Mšecké Žehrovice in Bohemia a pair of such enclosures has been excavated. Wooden buildings inside them differ from typical houses of the period and have been interpreted as ritual in purpose. A roughly life-size stylized human head sculpted of stone, with classic La Tène-style scrolled eyebrows and mustache, and wearing a neck ring was found in association with one enclosure (fig. 2). This archetypal example of “Celtic art” supports the interpretation of the Mšecké Žehrovice complex as partly, but not necessarily completely, ritual in purpose.

In this final phase of the prehistoric Iron Age, it became common practice in much of Europe to deposit iron tools in pits in the ground. While the argument can be made for precious metals, such as gold and silver coins, and even for bronze that such hoarding may have been intended to protect valuable materials from theft, in the case of iron this ar-

gument is less persuasive. By the final phase of the Iron Age, iron had little value, because it was being produced in such vast quantities. Moreover, unlike gold, silver, and bronze, iron objects rusted quickly in the damp soils of temperate Europe. Iron hoards more likely were ritual in nature.

A cache found at Kolín in Bohemia contained sixty-eight objects, among them implements for use in the hearth, such as vessels; a suspension chain for hanging a cauldron over a fire; and a hearth shovel. Other tools were for ironworking and carpentry. Agricultural tools were present as well—plowshares, hoes, a scythe, and a sickle. Keys, parts of weapons, and attachments from a wagon and from horse harnesses also were present. Comparing the contents of this assemblage with hoards from other sites points up particular themes represented by the objects—hearth and home, nutrition, and transformation (smithing tools to change ore into iron). Not far away, at Stary Kolín, was found a deposit of more than three hundred gold coins, similar to many other coin hoards of this period in temperate Europe.

Writing. At Zenjak in Slovenia was found a deposit of twenty-four bronze helmets, one with writing incised on the brim. The helmet type is common in Slovenia; it is known as a Negau helmet, after the German name for the site. Linguistic analysis of the characters has identified them as part of an alphabet known to have been used in northern Italy at that time, and the inscription is the earliest known in a Germanic language. The meaning of the inscription has been much debated. Some believe it calls upon a god for assistance, whereas others think it designates ownership of the helmet. The fact that the earliest known inscription in a Germanic language should be found far away from the region in which Romans of this period identified Germans adds to

the complication of interpreting the significance of this object.

See also **Germans** (vol. 2, part 6); **Oppida** (vol. 2, part 6); **Ritual Sites: Viereckschanzen** (vol. 2, part 6); **La Tène Art** (vol. 2, part 6).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Bouzek, Jan. *Greece, Anatolia, and Europe: Cultural Interrelations during the Early Iron Age*. Studies in Mediterranean Archaeology 122. Jonsered, Sweden: Paul Åströms Förlag, 1997.
- Collis, John. *Oppida: Earliest Towns North of the Alps*. Sheffield, U.K.: Department of Prehistory and Archaeology, University of Sheffield, 1984.
- Guštin, Mitja. “Die Kelten in Jugoslawien: Übersicht über das archäologische Fundgut.” *Jahrbuch des Römisch-Germanischen Zentralmuseums Mainz* 31 (1983): 305–363.
- Kristiansen, Kristian. *Europe before History*. New York: Cambridge University Press, 1998.
- Križ, Borut. *The Celts in Novo Mesto/Kelti v Novem mestu*. Novo mesto, Slovenia: Dolenjski muzej, 2001.
- Kruta, Venceslas. *Les Celtes: Histoire et dictionnaire, des origines à la romanisation et au christianisme*. Paris: Éditions Robert Laffont, 2000.
- Moscatti, Sabatino, ed. *The Celts*. New York: Rizzoli, 1991.
- Palavestra, Aleksandar. “Prehistoric Trade and a Cultural Model for Princely Tombs in the Central Balkans.” In *Europe in the First Millennium B.C.* Edited by K. Kristiansen and J. Jensen, pp. 45–56. Sheffield, U.K.: J. R. Collis Publications, 1994.
- Parzinger, Hermann, Jindra Nekvasil, and Fritz Eckart Barth. *Die Bycí skála-Höhle: Ein hallstattzeitlicher Höhlenopferplatz in Mähren*. Mainz, Germany: Verlag Philipp von Zabern, 1995.
- Venclová, Natalie. *Mšecké Želčovice in Bohemia: Archaeological Background to a Celtic Hero, 3rd–2nd Century B.C.* Sceaux, France: Kronos, 1998.
- Wells, Peter S. “The Iron Age.” In *European Prehistory: A Survey*. Edited by S. Milisauskas, pp. 335–383. New York: Kluwer Academic/Plenum Publishers, 2002.

PETER S. WELLS



IRON AGE CAUCASIA

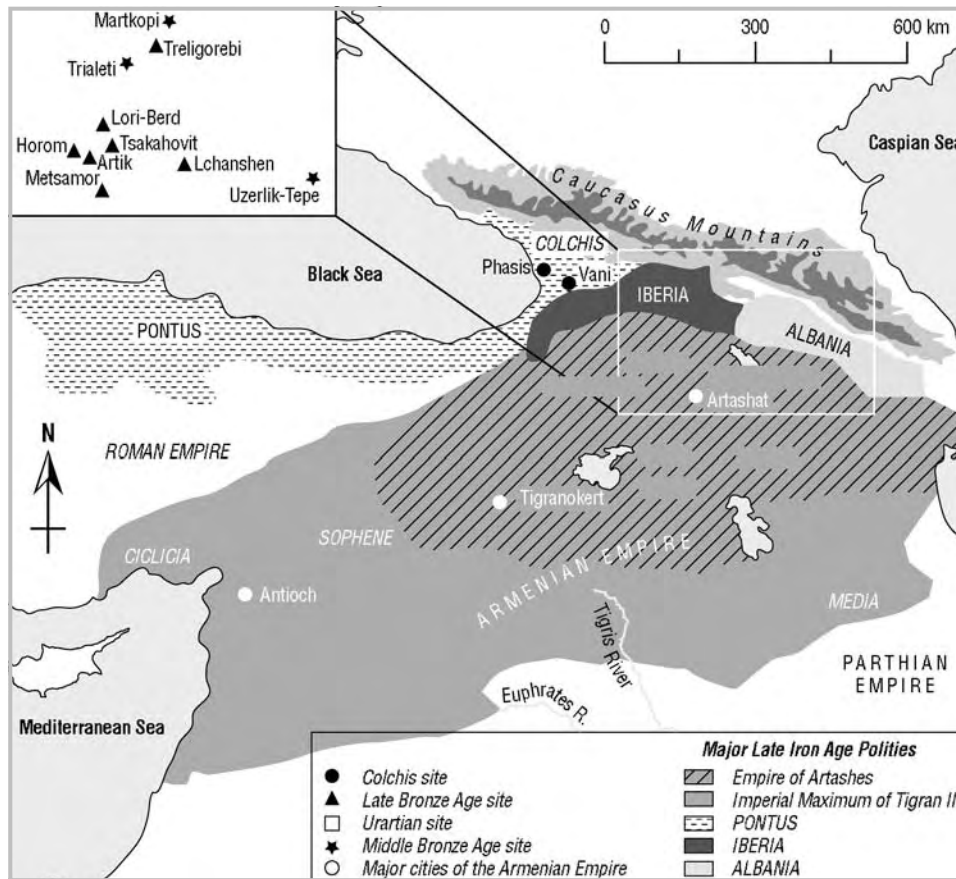
The Iron Age (defined broadly as an archaeological period from c. 1200 to 300 B.C.) in Caucasia witnessed a series of remarkable transformations in the social, cultural, and political traditions of the region that have left indelible marks upon the region's cultural landscape and contemporary geopolitics. During this era, small, hierarchical, centralized polities emerged as the dominant features of the region's social order. In some areas, particularly southern Caucasia, these archaic sociopolitical formations subsequently fused into large empires; in other regions, traditions of local control persisted even as contacts with an expanding ecumene—driven by both Greek colonialism and Achaemenid imperialism—brought new social forces and cultural influences into the region. This brief overview provides an orientation to the region's primary sociopolitical transformations. Because the beginning of the Iron Age closely followed traditions established in the Bronze Age, this account begins in the early second millennium B.C. and concludes with a brief historical discussion of post-Iron Age Caucasia from the conquests of Alexander the Great through the Roman defeat of both the Pontic kingdom (66 B.C.) and Tigran II's Armenian empire (65 B.C.).

GEOGRAPHIC ORIENTATION

The Caucasus range traverses more than 1,100 kilometers, from the Black Sea to the Caspian Sea along the northern end of the isthmus that separates the Eurasian steppes from Southwest Asia. Caucasia continues to be shaped by the tectonic action of the Arabian and Eurasian plates, a collision that has thrown up the Caucasus Mountains, folding the un-

derlying bedrock and erecting high volcanic peaks. The volcanic activity that raised peaks, such as Mount Elbrus, Mount Ararat, and Mount Aragats, to name only a few, covered the region with a sea of lava, leaving behind vast deposits of basalt, tuff, and obsidian. Caucasia is an ecologically diverse region with provinces ranging from the subtropical Colchian depression in the west, to the well-watered high mountains in the south, to the arid steppes in the east. Climate is similarly variable, with average annual rainfall varying from about 2,500 millimeters on the Black Sea coast near the modern Georgian city of Batumi to less than 200 millimeters on the Apsheron Peninsula of eastern Azerbaijan. Throughout much of Caucasia, the period of heaviest precipitation is between March and mid-May, but whereas summers are dry, heavy snows can fall in the highlands during the winter.

Distinct geographic provinces within Caucasia are most readily defined in reference to elevation and the Kura and Araxes River drainages. Southern Caucasia is most readily defined as the highland middle Araxes River and its drainages: a region of rugged upland mountains and high plateaus. Average elevation is between 1,200 and 1,800 meters above sea level, dipping below 1,000 meters only in the fertile Ararat Plain. The highlands of northern Caucasia are defined by the upper and middle Kura River and its drainages. North Caucasia should not be confused with the North Caucasus region, which encompasses the northern slopes of the Great Caucasus. Western Caucasia (the Colchian depression, drained by the westward-flowing Rioni and Inguri



Selected sites and major polities in Bronze Age and Iron Age Caucasia. DRAWN BY ADAM SMITH.

Rivers) and eastern Caucasia (the steppes of Azerbaijan, crossed by the lower Araxes and Kura as they sprint to the Caspian) are both low-lying areas characterized by broad open terrain.

FROM THE MIDDLE BRONZE AGE TO THE EARLY IRON AGE

The end of the Early and beginning of the Middle Bronze Age, across most of Caucasia, was marked by the disappearance of the Kura-Araxes archaeological horizon (defined most readily by distinctive black burnished ceramic complexes) and the large-scale abandonment of settled village communities. Except for the late-third-millennium B.C. layers from the Bedeni sites in southern Georgia, there is little evidence for continuity in Early and Middle Bronze Age occupations, and indeed comparatively few Middle Bronze Age settlements have been documented in Caucasia. As a result, the vast majority of the archaeological record for the Middle Bronze Age comes from mortuary sites. The tombs and

kurgans of Shengavit, Trialeti (old group, a distinctive group of burials within the Trialeti complex), and Martkopi indicate profound social, cultural, and political transformations were under way during the third quarter of the third millennium B.C.

This shift in settlement patterns across Caucasia during the Early to Middle Bronze transition is traditionally interpreted as evidence of the advent of increasingly nomadic social groups predicated upon pastoral subsistence production. The appearance of ox and horse sacrifices in numerous Middle Bronze I and II burials attests to the increased prominence of pastoral production and equestrian mobility within these communities. The shifting subsistence economy was also accompanied by fundamental transformations in the social milieu, changes that centered on emerging radical inequality between a martial elite and the remainder of the social body. The rich inventories of Middle Bronze Age *kurgans* signify a profound departure in social relations from those indicated by the burials of the Kura-Araxes

phase. Even more dramatic expressions of this inequality are visible in the following Middle Bronze II period, when a great part of highland Caucasia was enveloped in the Trialeti-Vanadzor horizon, which was most prominently marked by large burial complexes of unprecedented wealth. The monumental construction and rich mortuary goods of tombs from Trialeti, Vanadzor, Karashamb, and Lori Berd as well as the iconography of elite privilege portrayed on the metal vessels from Karashamb (fig. 1) and Korukh Tash testify to profound changes in the social orders of Caucasia and provide the initial indications of emergent sociopolitical inequality in the region.

During the Middle Bronze III period, Caucasia appears to have fragmented into several distinct material culture horizons. If the earlier Trialeti-Vanadzor sites present a relatively homogeneous horizon style for the Middle Bronze II phase, transformations in burial construction and the forms and styles of painted and black ornamented pottery during the succeeding period indicate the differentiation of the region into at least three contemporary, overlapping ceramic horizons: Karmir-Berd, Sevan-Uzerlik, and Karmir-Vank. Karmir-Berd materials largely prevail in the highlands of central-southern and northern Caucasia. The Sevan-Uzerlik horizon tends to predominate in the western steppe of Azerbaijan, the Nagorno-Karabakh highlands, and the Sevan and Syunik regions of Armenia. The Karmir-Vank horizon is best known from the Nakhichevan region of Azerbaijan and the site of Haftavan Tepe in northwestern Iran. These general regional divisions cannot be taken as rigid geographic mosaics. Sevan basin sites have also yielded evidence of Karmir-Vank and Karmir-Berd painted pottery; Ararat Plain sites have included both Karmir-Berd and Sevan-Uzerlik materials; and Sevan sites contain both Karmir-Berd and Sevan-Uzerlik ceramics. In Georgia, the Trialeti-Vanadzor horizon persists into the Middle Bronze III phase at sites such as Treli, Tsavgli, Natakhtari, and Pevrebi; however, it is also possible to detect the influence of Sevan-Uzerlik complexes as well, represented by black pottery with dotted lines.

During the Middle Bronze III phase, the wealth of the burial inventories seen in the preceding phase begins to diminish such that, in the complexes represented by Karmir-Berd or Karmir-



Fig. 1. A Middle Bronze Age goblet from Karashamb. COURTESY OF THE INSTITUTE OF ARCHAEOLOGY AND ETHNOGRAPHY, YEREVAN, ARMENIA. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

Berd/Sevan Uzerlik pottery, relatively few bronze artifacts have been recorded. Furthermore, in the complexes that signify the end of Middle Bronze Age, the distinctive painted pottery becomes increasingly rare, yielding to the incised gray and blackware ceramics that came to predominate under the Lchashen-Metsamor horizon of the Late Bronze Age.

The first clear evidence for sociopolitical complexity in southern Caucasia appears in the Late Bronze Age. The Late Bronze Age is marked most conspicuously by the reappearance of numerous permanent settlements in the form of variably sized stone-masonry fortresses built atop hills and outcrops. These fortified settlements are often associated with large cemeteries, such as Treligorebi located on the outskirts of modern Tbilisi, Georgia. The transition between the Middle and Late Bronze Age is also marked by the gradual introduction of new ceramic forms and decorative styles—most notably the disappearance of painted pottery and punctate designs in favor of suites of black, gray, and buff

wares with incised decorations—as well as new approaches to metallurgical production.

Examinations of Late Bronze and Early Iron Age sites in Caucasia began in the late nineteenth century and early twentieth century, when archaeologists and architectural historians embarked on a series of nonsystematic surveys to document the settlement history of the region. To date only a handful of Late Bronze or Early Iron Age settlements, including Metsamor in the Ararat Plain and Tsakahovit on the northern slope of Mount Aragats, have hosted intensive archaeological investigations. Evidence of unfortified settlements remains scarce, even in regions, such as the Tsakahovit Plain, that have hosted intensive systematic archaeological surveys. Archaeological investigations have focused more resolutely on late-second- to early-first-millennia B.C. cemeteries. Large mortuary complexes at Lchashen (on the northwestern coast of Lake Sevan), Lori-Berd (in the Lori-Pambakh region of northern Armenia), and Artik and Horom (both on the lower western slope of Mount Aragats) have provided the most extensive orientation to the material culture of the era as well as the primary bases for periodization.

With the dawn of the Late Bronze Age, the social inequalities visible in the *kurgans* of the early second millennium appear to have been formalized into a tightly integrated sociopolitical apparatus where critical controls over resources—economic, social, sacred—were concentrated within the cyclopean stone masonry walls of powerful new centers. These political centers projected authority well into the hinterlands. Large-scale irrigation facilities first appear in the region in association with Late Bronze Age fortress complexes, suggesting significant centralized control over the agricultural productivity of the region. In addition, vast cemeteries appear coincident with the emergence of Late Bronze Age polities.

In the Tsakahovit region, an archaeological survey conducted in 1998 and 2000 recorded a very high density of Late Bronze Age cemeteries (4.6 per square kilometer) in the mountain highlands immediately surrounding a series of adjacent fortresses. Given the lack of nonfortified settlements in the region, it is quite likely that non-elite populations may have continued the highly mobile ways of life that arose in the Middle Bronze Age, even as elites set-

tled within fortified complexes. It is possible that the explosion in tombs and cemeteries in the Late Bronze Age was part of an effort by emergent sociopolitical authorities to increase the commitments of their subjects to a specific place (through ties between ancestral and descendant families and groups) and thus make them a more stable foundation for the demands of the extractive political economy.

Many of the material culture forms and styles developed in the Late Bronze Age continued into and through the Early Iron Age. Pottery from Early Iron Age levels is typologically distinct from Late Bronze III wares but is quite clearly continuous with Late Bronze Age formal and decorative traditions. The same holds true for fortress architecture, which, while distinct in several morphological features, remains within the building traditions established in the Late Bronze Age. Thus the Early Iron Age is marked archaeologically by the emergence and expansion of iron implements but appears to have been socioculturally continuous with the preceding era. Examinations of materials recovered from mortuary contexts suggest that the Early Iron Age can be divided into two distinct phases: a transitional Early Iron I, dated conventionally to the late twelfth century and eleventh century B.C., and an Early Iron II phase during the tenth and ninth centuries B.C.

THE MIDDLE IRON AGE: URARTU

The florescence of local polities during the Late Bronze and Early Iron Ages was brought to an end in southern Caucasia by Urartian imperial expansion in the early eighth century B.C., providing a rather emphatic terminus for the period visible in the destruction levels at several sites, including Metsamor. The state of Biainili, known to the Assyrians (and hence modern scholarship) as Urartu, appears to have emerged in eastern Anatolia from a group of local polities during the late second millennium and early first millennium B.C. Between the mid-ninth century and the late eighth century B.C., the Urartian kings embarked on a program of imperial expansion, conquering rivals from the headwaters of the Euphrates to the south shore of Lake Urmia. Although a Urartian presence had existed north of the Araxes since the reign of King Ishpuini in the late ninth century B.C., the Urartian occupation of

southern Caucasia did not begin until the second decade of the eighth century B.C., when King Argishti I formalized his military conquests through an extensive program of fortress construction in the Ararat Plain.

Although direct Urartian rule in the region was focused in southern Caucasia, the expansion of the empire had profound implications for Caucasia as a whole. The military campaigns of Urartian kings ranged far more broadly than their ambition to govern, and the demands of tribute in the form of goods, livestock, and human captives that they made upon the vanquished must have had considerable implications for local economies of the region. Furthermore, the rise of Urartu profoundly altered trade patterns in the region, as the empire was strategically positioned to regulate north-south exchanges between Caucasia and northern Mesopotamia as well as east-west trade between central Anatolia and northern Persia.

Urartu's imperial era was brought to a close by a series of military defeats in the late eighth century B.C. Urartian military and diplomatic incursions into the southern Urmia basin provoked Sargon II to reassert an Assyrian presence in the region. His campaign climaxed in the defeat of the Urartian army led by King Rusa I. Assyrian intelligence reports indicate that Urartu was also attacked at this time by Cimmerians crossing the Caucasus and destabilized by an insurrection within the Urartian ruling elite that threatened the royal dynasty. Rusa I succeeded in deflecting the Cimmerians and quelling the rebellion, thus preserving the dynasty, but Urartu's era of expansion came to an end, its imperial designs checked by Assyria in the south and Cimmerians moving into Caucasia from the north.

The historical record for Urartu's reconstruction period during the seventh century B.C. is not as rich as that of the preceding imperial phase. But the archaeological record is substantial, indicating a reconsolidation of much of Urartu's territory, a resurgence of Urartian resolve to challenge Assyrian pretensions in the highlands, and a reinvigoration of the power of Urartian central authorities. The reign of Rusa II was the apogee of the reconstruction period. Thanks to foundation inscriptions, five major fortresses, accomplished on a massive scale, are directly attributable to him, including Teishebai URU (modern Karmir-Blur) on the Ararat Plain

near Yerevan (fig. 2). Several additional fortresses in southern Caucasia that lack foundation inscriptions can also be dated to the reconstruction period based upon architectural parallels and ceramic assemblages. Dynastic succession following Rusa II is unclear, leaving some confusion over the last rulers of the empire and the dating of collapse. The fate of Urartu and its possessions in southern Caucasia during the late seventh century B.C. is not well understood. Boris Piotrovskii dated the final collapse of Urartu to 590 or 585 B.C. based largely upon a biblical reference, but this chronology is generally thought to be too long. An inscription of Ashurbanipal, dated to 643 B.C., records the submission of the Urartian king "Ishtar-duri" (Sarduri III or IV) to the Assyrians. Although this event does not provide an adequate date for Urartu's collapse, the empire was never again a significant force in the geopolitics of Southwest Asia.

LATE IRON AGE SOUTHERN CAUCASIA

Investigations of Late Iron Age Caucasia have been accomplished at a number of key sites, including Armavir-Argishtihinili, Erebuni, and Artashat in the Ararat Plain; Horom and Benjamin in the Shirak Plain; Sari-Tepe in western Azerbaijan; and small soundings at Astghi Blur, Jujevan, and Norashen in northeastern Armenia. These sites together provide an orientation to the architecture and archaeological materials of an era during which the rapid decline of Urartu was followed by the emergence of local rulers (including the Yervandid, or Orontid, kings of Armenia) who were subsequently incorporated as satraps of the Achaemenid empire.

During the Late Iron Age, local ceramic traditions from the Middle Iron Age continue, in part, in most sites. In southern Caucasia, preceding Urartian constructions were reoccupied and renovated, often following episodes of destruction that attended the Urartian collapse (e.g., at Armavir-Argishtihinili). The collapse of Urartu appears to have initiated a transformation in settlement patterns, as populations shifted away from the handful of large fortresses that dominated life under the Urartian regime and toward a larger number of small dispersed towns. Throughout the Urartian period, local ceramics in Caucasian regions peripheral to the major centers continued traditions of the

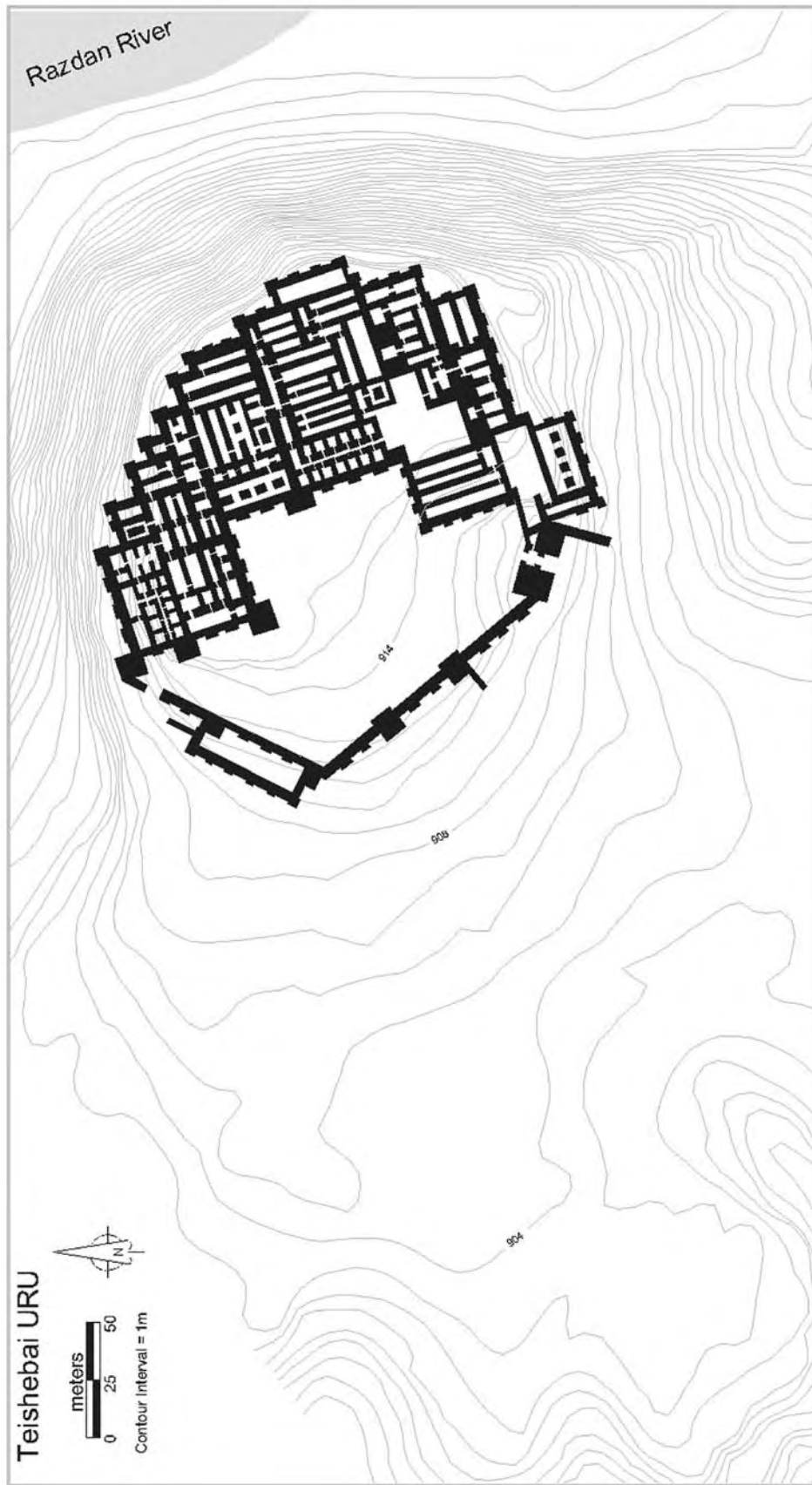


Fig. 2. Site plan of the fortress of Teishebai URU on the Ararat Plain near Yerevan. COURTESY OF ADAM T. SMITH. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

preceding Early Iron Age horizons. Following the collapse of Urartu, these pre-Urartian ceramic traditions were partly reenergized, as local wares developed as syntheses of both pre-Urartian and Urartian traditions.

LATE IRON AGE WESTERN CAUCASIA: COLCHIS

Colchis, the easternmost archaic Greek colony, has penetrated the Western imagination largely as a place of myth: home of Medea and destination of the Argonauts. Ancient Colchis was located on the fertile lowlands of the Rioni River drainage of western Caucasia. The region appears to have developed along similar lines as the rest of Caucasia during the Early Iron Age, with the regularization of an entrenched elite, the rise of increasingly large settlements, and the development of a robust metallurgical industry with major centers in Abkhazia to the north and Adzhar to the south. However, the arrival of Greek colonists during the sixth century B.C. brought unique sociocultural and political forces to bear upon the region in the Middle and Late Iron Ages. It has been suggested that it was the prominence of Colchian metallurgy and metalworking that lured not only the Greeks to Caucasia's Black Sea shores—an argument found in the *Geographia* (1.2.39) of the Greek scholar Strabo (c. 63 B.C.–c. A.D. 21)—but also encouraged the northern campaigns of Urartian kings, who referred to the region as “Kulha” or “Qulha.” Sarduri II, for example, boasted in his “annals” inscribed on the rock face at Van Kale of having destroyed twenty-two cities in Qulha. Furthermore, the incredible scale of bronze and, later, iron production within the Colchis archaeological horizon has suggested the possibility of close economic and social ties to the prolific metallurgical traditions of the Koban region of the central north Caucasus (North Ossetia).

Despite extensive archaeological and epigraphic research, however, it is not as yet entirely clear as to what kind of sociocultural entity Colchis was. Greek myths suggest a highly centralized kingdom dating back into the late second millennium B.C.; however, Urartian inscriptions indicate a more fragmented political landscape with a number of kings ruling discrete portions of the territory from large fortified settlements (similar to what they encountered in southern Caucasia). Nevertheless, broad similarities

in major material culture classes, including metal and ceramic styles, suggest a degree of sociocultural integration in western Caucasia even if the case for political unification remains unsubstantiated (although substantial disparities in mortuary customs—for example, shaft graves such as those at Dvani in contrast to the dolmens found to the north in Abkhazia—suggests that variation within the Colchis archaeological horizon has been understated).

The dating of the arrival of the Greeks is also a matter of some debate. While the earliest appearance of Greek pottery in the region has been dated to the end of the seventh century B.C., it is not until the mid-sixth century that Colchian sites begin to boast a substantial corpus of Greek wares. Greek settlement in the region was limited to the seacoast and river estuaries. Information about this initial era of colonization comes largely from archaeological sources and a few fragments of mythohistorical sources. However, both do seem to indicate that the vanguard of initial Greek intrusion came to Phasis, at the mouth of the Rioni, from Miletus, on the southwestern coast of Asia Minor. Burials around Vani, the most extensively excavated aboriginal Colchian site, suggest a further intensification of inequality and elite privilege in the era of early Greek colonialism, with extensive and rich burial inventories, including gold jewelry, silver and bronze personal ornaments, and local and imported pottery. The site of Vani itself appears to have been dominated by a local aristocracy that sat at the apex of a stratified social hierarchy. The dramatic expansion in the size and number of large storage jars (*pitthoi*) during this period has suggested to some scholars a concomitant increase in the scale of surplus production, increasing demands upon the productive economy from redistributive institutions, or both.

The arrival of Achaemenid imperial forces in Caucasia established Yervandid Armenia as a formal satrap and also reconstituted Colchis geopolitically from a distant periphery to a remarkably cosmopolitan borderland, assimilating and reinventing traditions and practices from Greece, Persia, and the Eurasian steppe as well as the diverse array of social worlds within Iron Age Caucasia. The *Histories* of Herodotus (3.97), from the fifth century B.C., describes the relationship between an autonomous Colchis and the Achaemenid regime as based not on

forced tribute but rather regular “presents” of one hundred young men and one hundred young women given to the Persian court. And Colchian soldiers were also listed among the expeditionary force that followed the Persian king Xerxes into Greece. But even at this time, perhaps Colchis’s most prosperous era, it appears that the region continued to be ruled by a dispersed aristocracy rather than a single king capable of unifying the region into a single polity.

AFTER THE IRON AGE

The arrival of Alexander the Great’s forces in Southwest Asia and the subsequent collapse of Achaemenid power brought about important transformations in Caucasia, including the slow erosion (despite the tenacity of Aramaic in major inscriptions) of Persian cultural influence under the spread of Hellenism; however, it is important not to overstate the significance of the event. Alexander never found his way into Caucasia or the Armenian Highlands of eastern Anatolia, and even if he had, Greek cultural influence was already permeating the region via the long-standing colonies in Colchis. Moreover, Alexander’s conquests do not seem to have profoundly reordered the political landscape of Caucasia. By 316 B.C. Armenia was reconstituted as a satrap of Macedonian power, ruled by a king named Orontes, who appears to have been part of the Yervandid dynasty already ensconced in the region during the Achaemenid era. Occasionally the Yervandid kings formally recognized Seleucid suzerainty, but there is little to suggest that the titular overlordship of the Macedonian conquerors made a profound practical difference in Caucasia’s socio-political order.

In 188 B.C. Artaxias (also known as Artashes) succeeded to the throne of the Armenian kingdom, initiating a new Artaxian dynasty and consolidating much of Caucasia and the Armenian Highlands under his authority. Despite efforts by the weakened Seleucids to reassert their authority over a reinvigorated local dynast, Artaxias was successful in creating an empire that established unified control over a broad swath of Caucasia and eastern Anatolia. Until the first century B.C., the expansion of the Armenian empire under the Artaxian kings was largely unchecked as Seleucid power diminished; however, the emergence of the Parthian dynasty of the Arsa-

cids in Iran and the increasing ambitions of Rome in Southwest Asia signaled trouble not only for the Armenian empire but also for Caucasia’s other regimes in Pontic Colchis, Iberia, and Albania. Artaxias’s grandson, Tigran II (r. 95–55 B.C.), presided over the largest consolidated polity in Caucasia’s history, ruling a territory larger than Urartu that extended from the Caspian in the east, to the Kura Valley in the north, and to the Mediterranean in the west. One result of Tigran II’s campaigns in the west was the further Hellenization of the royal court, which had long held to Achaemenid traditions of the early Yervandid era. Tigran was particularly successful in campaigns against Parthia (88–85 B.C.), which brought his armies on the eastern front as far south as Hamadān in Media (northwestern Iran), while to the west his forces reached Syria and the city of Antioch. For thirteen years, a Pax Armenia covered an immense multicultural and multinational empire ruled from the major cities of the empire, such as Artashat, on the northern bank of the Araxes, and Tigranakert, east of modern Diyarbakır. Artashat, occupying twelve hills (approximately 100 hectares), hosted extensive archaeological excavations during the 1970s and 1980s that explored many of the major constructions of the Artaxian period and provided the primary artifactual sources for the period.

Rome, preoccupied in Anatolia by a protracted war with Mithradates of Pontus did not interfere while Tigran’s expansionary ambitions were directed against the Parthians and Seleucids. However, by 71 B.C. the imperialists in the Roman Senate sought a more encompassing solution to their problems in the east. A legate of the Roman general Lucullus delivered an ultimatum to Tigran at Antioch to hand over the recently defeated King Mithradates VI of Pontus, who had taken refuge in Armenia. Tigran refused to surrender him. Two years later, in 69 B.C., Lucullus marched on Tigranakert and, after a short siege, succeeded in defeating the main body of the Armenian army and sacking the city. The defeat of Tigranakert prompted the rapid unraveling of Tigran’s dynasty, and soon, assailed by both Rome and Parthia, Artaxias’s grandson sued for peace (66 B.C.) under terms that left him only the Caucasian and east Anatolian heartland. While Tigran’s son Artawazd II (r. 55–34 B.C.) succeeded him on the throne, Armenia was reduced to a buffer

state between Rome and Parthia. Artawazd's participation in raids along the Roman border led to a severe response, as the forces of Marc Antony succeeded in occupying Artashat and carrying Artawazd as a captive into Egypt, where he was eventually executed.

See also Bronze Age Transcaucasia (vol. 2, part 5); Greek Colonies in the East (vol. 2, part 6).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Braund, David. *Georgia in Antiquity: A History of Colchis and Transcaucasian Iberia, 550 B.C.–A.D. 562*. Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1994.
- Burney, Charles, and David M. Lang. *The People of the Hills: Ancient Ararat and Caucasus*. New York: Praeger, 1972.
- Garsoian, Nina. "The Emergence of Armenia." In *The Armenian People from Ancient to Modern Times*. Vol. 1. Edited by Richard G. Hovannisian. New York: St. Martin's, 1997.
- Hewsen, Robert H. *Armenia: A Historical Atlas*. Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 2001.
- Khalilov, Dzh A. *Material'naiia Kul'tura Kavkazskoi Albanii: I v V. Do N.E.–Iii V. N.E.* Baku, Azerbaijan: Elm, 1985.
- Khalilov, Dzh A., K. O. Koshkarly, and R. B. Arazova. *Arheologicheskie Pamiatniki Severo-Vostochnogo Azerbaidzhana*. Baku, Azerbaijan: Elm, 1991.
- Khazadian, Emma V., K. A. Mkrtchian, and Elma S. Parsamian. *Metsamor*. Yerevan, Armenia: Akademiya Nauk Armianskoe SSR, 1973.
- Koshelenko, Gennadij A., ed. *Drevneishie gosudarstva Kavkaza i Srednei Azii*. Moscow: Nauka, 1985.
- Kushnareva, Karine Khristoforovna. *The Southern Caucasus in Prehistory*. Philadelphia: University of Pennsylvania Museum, 1997.
- Lordkipanidze, O. *Drevnaya Kolkhida*. Tbilisi, Georgia: Sabchota Sakartvelo, 1979.
- Martirosian, A. A. *Armenia v Epokhu Bronzi i Rannego Zheleza*. Yerevan, Armenia: Akademiya Nauk Armyanskoi SSR, 1964.
- Piotrovskii, Boris B. *The Ancient Civilization of Urartu*. Translated by James Hogarth. New York: Cowles, 1969.
- Pitskhelauri, K. N. *Vostochnaia Gruzia V Kontse Bronzovogo Veka*. Tbilisi, Georgia: Metsniereba, 1979.
- Smith, Adam T. "The Making of an Urartian Landscape in Southern Transcaucasia: A Study of Political Architectonics." *American Journal of Archaeology* 103, no. 1 (1999): 45–71.
- Smith, Adam T., and Karen S. Rubinson, eds. *Archaeology in the Borderlands: Investigations in Caucasia and Beyond*. Los Angeles: Cotsen Institute of Archaeology at UCLA, 2003.
- Tsetskhladze, Gocha R., ed. *The Greek Colonisation of the Black Sea Area: Historical Interpretation of Archaeology*. Stuttgart, Germany: F. Steiner, 1998.
- Zimansky, Paul E. *Ancient Ararat: A Handbook of Urartian Studies*. Anatolian and Caucasian Studies. Delmar, N.Y.: Caravan, 1998.
- . *Ecology and Empire: The Structure of the Urartian State*. Studies in Ancient Oriental Civilization 41. Chicago: Oriental Institute, 1985.

ADAM T. SMITH



DARK AGE GREECE

In the late thirteenth and early twelfth centuries B.C. the Bronze Age palace civilization of Aegean Greece went down in flames. Strongly fortified though they were, the urban centers of a series of small Mycenaean states in southern mainland Greece, together with associated regional centers on Crete and lesser Aegean islands, suffered violent destruction, putting an end to their power and unraveling complex political and economic structures. Although the precise origin of the attackers is unknown and other factors may have played a role, at least locally, in some cases (e.g., earthquakes and climatic downturns), it is significant that the fall of Late Bronze Age civilization in the Aegean occurred during a time of equal unrest throughout the eastern Mediterranean. The Hittite civilization in Anatolia suffered a similar fate, and in the Levant and Egypt armies of seaborne raiders and colonists of apparently diverse backgrounds (the “Sea Peoples”) sacked towns and threatened the great power of Pharaonic Egypt, leaving a more permanent mark as founders of Philistine city-states in coastal Palestine.

Scholarship nonetheless is inclined, less at present than in the past, to envisage waves of invaders penetrating Greece from outside the Aegean to perpetrate the assassination of the Mycenaean palace kingdoms. However, alternative scenarios of internal civil wars between individual states, or a peasants’ uprising, remain mere hypotheses, with only later Greek legend to suggest internal wars. The succeeding archaeological assemblages of the penultimate Bronze Age and Early Iron Age (fig. 1) seem firmly rooted in Mycenaean and, on Crete,

Minoan Bronze Age traditions; so if invaders were a critical element, they must have moved on or been absorbed rapidly into local cultures. In any case, the disruption associated with the violent end to the Mycenaean world was awesome enough to plunge the Aegean into a Dark Age that was to last from c. 1200 to 800 B.C.

Although this Dark Age was perhaps more a half-light than utter blackness, no one would dispute that history leaves us with the extinction of literacy throughout these four centuries. As Anthony Snodgrass pointed out a generation ago, many other striking signs of “de-skilling” characterize this period: the disappearance of elaborate architectural complexes; highly impoverished assemblages of metal; the virtual absence of human representations; a dramatic decline in the number of dated occupation sites; very reduced evidence for foreign exchange compared with the preceding period; and no sign of political centers of regional control. Whatever the reason(s) for the end of the palace states, the reduction in social, economic, and artistic complexity was severe and persisted for many generations.

It seems reasonable to ask why recovery took so long and to link this question to a striking feature of the Dark Age, the evidence for large-scale population movements around the Aegean. Although evidence mainly has been reconstructed from the study of the different ancient Greek dialects, later legends, and a little recorded history, along with certain archaeological support, it appears that during this long, disturbed era few parts of the former

Bronze Age Aegean world did not become involved in folk movements on a significant scale. Some scholars, such as the British historian Robin Osborne, have suggested a link between these migrations and the much better historically attested colonization movements by Aegean Greeks throughout the Mediterranean and Black Sea in the centuries immediately after the Dark Age and in the Archaic and early Classical centuries (the Archaic era is c. 700–500 B.C.; the Classical era is c. 500–323 B.C.; the early Classical era is the fifth century B.C.). The latter generally occurred, however, in times of denser homeland populations and elaborate state organization, so that it seems more appropriate to try to account for the Dark Age migrations in their own unique period context.

Why would whole communities abandon their homelands and risk all to settle far away, especially in an era when organized political authority had collapsed in great violence and insecurity must have been endemic? Violence may indeed have been a central reason. It is true even today that one of the main precipitating factors around the world for the displacement of entire communities, after food starvation and drought, is to escape the arbitrary violence associated with the breakdown of law and order. Generally, this is in the context of civil war or the absence of any centralized control over the use of force. Although there have been attempts to argue that the palace societies were struck by famine or drought, and there is some related evidence from Egypt that could introduce this as one element behind the crisis, no convincing case for prolonged climatic disaster can be found for the Aegean. Other factors must have been critical, even if this is allowed as a potentially secondary contributor. Summarizing a plausible scenario on what remains circumstantial evidence, one might suggest that violent attacks on the Mycenaean state centers by internal forces—with or without assistance from maritime armies of raiders such as the Sea Peoples—caused their definitive removal. This state of affairs ushered in a long period of insecurity that effectively blocked the reconstitution of regional states and the rule of law for centuries to follow.

SHEDDING LIGHT ON THE DARK AGES

One of the seemingly curious aspects of accounts by later, Classical Greek historians of events between



Fig. 1. Protogeometric pot, 975–950 B.C. © COPYRIGHT THE BRITISH MUSEUM. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

the Age of the Heroes (a legendary era essentially rooted in memories of the Minoan-Mycenaean Bronze Age) and their own historic era is that they did not envisage this Dark Age at all. The world of the legendary leaders, associated with major palace centers, such as Thebes or Mycenae, certainly is portrayed in its final phase as riven by warfare, assassination, and internal migrations. It also is conceived as directly giving rise to the elite-dominated world of early historic Greece, from c. 700 B.C. (the Archaic era), with its kings or aristocrats (*basileis*) claiming heroic progenitors for their dynasties. This connection is difficult to accommodate with the archaeological picture just described, with three to five hundred years of an apparent reversion of political and economic organization to a thin scatter of short-lived rural hamlets with narrow horizons and little evidence for any sort of specialization or social stratification. Snodgrass's use of the statistics of Dark

Age cemeteries—their number and size—seemed convincing hard data to argue for tiny, dispersed communities appropriate to such limited achievements.

The first sign that the Dark Ages were merely “dim” came with the spectacular discovery on a small peninsula called Lefkandi jutting out on the mainland-facing shore of the island of Euboea, not far from Athens in southern Greece, of a cemetery that had grown up around a monumental funerary mound. Under the mound an impressive apsidal building was found in 1980 (fig. 2), with a male and female elite burial together with horse graves. The burial has been dated surprisingly early, to about 1000 B.C.—the supposed nadir of Greek culture. Current opinion holds that the great house represents the dwelling of a chieftain’s family, namely the elite male and his partner. The gifts and finds from the later community cemetery that grew up beside it indicate exchange with the more advanced Early Iron Age city-states of the eastern Mediterranean, perhaps brought by Phoenician traders to the Aegean. (Their presence is known also at the port of Kommos on the southern coast of Crete at this time.) Nonetheless, Snodgrass had calculated from the size and date range of the Lefkandi cemetery that the population at any one time was only that of a small hamlet—difficult to see as a viable basis for a regional chiefdom.

The key to these accumulating discrepancies would be discovered in the late 1980s by one of Snodgrass’s brightest students, Ian Morris. In a book that rewrote at a stroke our understanding of the Dark Age, *Burial and Ancient Society*, Morris showed that the key evidence from cemeteries (settlements being rarely excavated or studied in detail) was, in fact, completely misleading. Through analysis of the structure of the cemeteries and their age, sex, and wealth patterning, he argued that the transitional time between the Mycenaean era and the Dark Age proper—that of the sub-Mycenaean period—saw everyone in a community buried together in cemeteries. With the inception of the full Dark Age or Early Iron Age (proto-Geometric period, c. 1050–900 B.C.), however, formal cemetery burial became reserved exclusively for a social elite. This privileging remained in force in the subsequent Early to Middle Geometric period, but then, in a critical transformational century leading into the

first historic era—the Late Geometric (eighth century B.C.)—there was a dramatic return to social inclusiveness in cemeteries.

The obvious effect of this cycle is to mimic an apparent collapse of populations for the central main era of the Dark Age, bracketed by much higher populations. If one now reconstitutes a significant “invisible” population, this reduces the previous image of extraordinary depopulation. Moreover, and equally important, the evidence of such elite power over burial privileges is predicated on the survival of at least a district elite society throughout the whole Dark Age period. Here the Lefkandi house and subsequent discoveries of similar structures in other parts of Greece fall exactly into place. The Lefkandi chief would have been associated with a much larger support population than the communal cemetery indicates, and one can see the impressive type of residence from which the community was kept under elite sway. One further hint fits well into this new scenario: the term used in our first historic sources from about 700 B.C. for the controlling elite is the *basileis*—princes or lords. The word is used to mean a “minor official” in the preceding Mycenaean state archives. It might be reasonable to suggest that during the catastrophic collapse of palace civilizations around 1200 B.C., regional kingship disappeared, and power fragmented into myriad district chiefdoms. The Lefkandi-type residence would suit this picture very well, as does the survival of the term *basileis* into the earliest historic period.

One other feature of several of the well-studied Dark Age settlements deserves highlighting—their relative impermanence. Important sites, such as Lefkandi or Zagora on the island of Andros, were abandoned by the end of the period. It is important to point out that Morris’s corrections to Dark Age population estimates fall well short of bringing them up to Mycenaean or Archaic era levels. Even when one boosts observable cemetery populations by a factor of two, their size and number remain modest and rare across the Greek landscape. The restrictions on architectural complexity and artistic production or trade remain in place, and one must still see a countryside with generally low population numbers and vast empty and uncultivated spaces, later to be filled and exploited to crisis proportions in the historic centuries of Archaic, through Classical, and into Early Hellenistic times (c. 700–300

B.C.; the Hellenistic era is 323 B.C. to 31 B.C. in Greece). In such a landscape, land would not have been of great value, and aspiring chieftains drew their power from controlling a more valuable scarce resource—manpower. In ways still not entirely clear, the Dark Age elite families attached the peasantry to their households. As chiefly power fluctuated from family to family across the landscape or a new elite generation chose to displace the seat of dynastic power from its ancestors, so elite and peasants migrated around the relatively thinly settled countryside. The power clearly was generalized and binding enough to suppress formal burial rights for the lesser folk.

Various theories can be raised to account for the nature of this grip on the working peasantry. A popular model for such a comparatively undeveloped and fragmented society, not far from expanding commercial powers such as the contemporary Phoenicians, would be a core-periphery system. Such a system emphasizes the inflow of eastern Mediterranean prestige goods for the local Greek elite in return for trading out raw materials and surplus foodstuffs that would have been channeled into the local chieftain's trading capital, as a kind of tax from the peasants. As often with this kind of application, the model fails to account for the ways in which elite-peasant dependency arises and is kept from being severed. The brilliant analysis by Hans van Wees of changing fashions in clothing, as portrayed in figured vases from Late Geometric to earliest Classical times (c. 800–480 B.C.), gets much closer to the answer.

A WARRIOR SOCIETY AND ITS LIFESTYLE

Although the main part of the Dark Age shows almost no hint of the representation of people on ceramics, the situation changes dramatically in the critical renaissance of the eighth century B.C. In almost all aspects of life there were major positive changes toward a more populous, politically complex society in most parts of Greece, artistically and architecturally experimental and ambitious. A striking series of large vases of this Late Geometric period give us scenes of everyday life, with a gloss of extra and anachronistic details that come from the popular legendary tales of Troy and the Bronze Age heroic world, clearly underlining claims to heroic

ancestry for the living elite. It is notable that these scenes portray the elite and their male retinue as heavily armed at all times. In the first part of the following period, the Archaic (seventh century B.C.), this remains the typical dress for the elite household. In the final Archaic century (sixth century B.C.), however, the sword and spear and open dress, allowing rapid deployment of these weapons, yield to a tight-fitting male dress copied from the Near East and the disappearance of the sword. By the end of that century, the spear is replaced by a walking stick, still potentially available to fend off vagrants but no longer a serious weapon. At the same time, scenes of the elite dining in Archaic times with series of armor and weapons suspended above them shift by early Classical times to representations of the elite and middle class with a single set of military equipment. This symbolizes the economic and political status of the head of the family as a member of the middle or upper citizen class (the hoplite, who had sufficient income to own the heavy equipment required of the citizen foot soldier in a typical Greek city-state).

What do these transformations in dress reveal about the organization of Dark Age society? Almost certainly, it was one where force was law; mere claim to preeminence was inadequate. Just as the chief and the retinue he sustained always were armed so as to be ready to take on rival families or intruders from neighboring districts, a similar threat of instant violence may have kept the dependent peasantry in their place. They were, after all, the essential foundation for the daily rations, banquets, gifts, and supply of metal that the elite superstructure required for its maintenance. The clashing clans of Romeo and Juliet's Verona come to mind, but closer to this time the return of Odysseus in Homer's epic is a vivid illustration of the period's ethos. In Odysseus's absence during the Trojan War and then on his wanderings around the Mediterranean, a group of other nobles insolently encamp in his palace, hoping to marry the abandoned wife, perhaps already a widow, and squandering Odysseus's resources. Upon their return, Odysseus and his son first remove all the weaponry and armor hanging in the dining-hall—doubtless originally placed there for his own followers—and then massacre the defenseless suitors, rounding that off by hanging the servant girls who had fraternized with the unwelcome guests.

The claims of Dark Age elites to have descended from the royal families of the Mycenaean Late Bronze Age are probably, with some exceptions, as unlikely as they were strongly emphasized by these local chiefly families. With much mobility around the landscape and the limited scope of district warrior-leaders, continuity of actual power and bloodlines is implausible. The aristocrats, who were rather more reliant on a gang of armed followers and their own aggressiveness to claim power over a dependent peasantry, nonetheless were keen to bolster supposed ties to legendary Mycenaean heroes. Hence the later Classical Greek conception that there was no Dark Age was born. This myth allowed Theseus to be both an early Mycenaean Athenian prince who destroyed the Cretan Minotaur (plausibly a memory of the Mycenaean takeover of the Minoan palace at Knossos) and the founder of a unified Attic state focused on Athens in the middle era of the Dark Age, some five hundred years later.

One way to convince people that one's family was in direct descent from Bronze Age heroes would be to identify an elite burial of that era and commence to make offerings to one's supposed ancestors in its precincts. Thus one sees the widespread emergence of hero cults at Mycenaean *tholos* tombs (a massive stone chamber built like a cone-shaped beehive) during the later Dark Age. Another way was to surround oneself with tales and images of the heroic age with which one wanted to be identified. This has two observable facets. First, when in Late Geometric times figural art reappears on a significant scale, with scenes of elite funerals and warfare, the mode of burial and some of the painted accoutrements either deliberately revive customs hitherto kept alive from the Bronze Age only in oral poetry or are pure illustrations to the tales of the *Iliad* and *Odyssey* and related epics and did not actually exist in contemporary society (e.g., giant body shields). Second, when the elite held their regular banquets to entertain and impress their neighbors and reward their retinue, oral poetry would be performed and doubtless continually modified to emphasize the claimed links of the audience to particular heroic figures from their own areas of Greece. By the time Homer wrote down a particular version of the two great cycles linked to the Trojan War (c. 700 B.C., at the emergence of written history), many generations of accretions and deletions are known to have occurred.

The feasting that is so central to Homeric elite gatherings seems to have been equally important to the warrior elite society of the Dark Age. One can suppose that large buildings, such as the Early Dark Age Lefkandi house (or its original, since some scholars suggest that the structure was not necessarily the actual chief's house but a replica built to be destroyed with the chief), were the focus of elite banqueting. These buildings also were repositories of prestigious items obtained by the elite through trade, gift exchange, or dowry as a way to emphasize their relative wealth and status to the impoverished dependent peasants who were their clients. The cult activity of the community almost certainly also was based in the chief's house and under his supervision—a further source of power to reinforce armed might and stores of food and valuables.

The multifunctional community focus represented by the chief's house—symbolic monument, ritual core, storehouse of wealth—and its physical plan are of far more than period interest. In its roles and design elements, this house is directly ancestral to the Archaic and Classical Greek temple. (One common version of the earliest Greek temple plans of the eighth through seventh centuries B.C. is in place at Lefkandi, c. 1000 B.C.—an elongated rectangle to which an apse is added at one end, with internal divisions denoting separate functions.) When the community focus of worship developed apart from the elite dwelling, something seen in several cases in the critical transformational Late Geometric eighth century B.C., it retained the traditional form of a rectangular subdivided building, often with the innermost part ending in an apse. Three key elements can be traced back to the Dark Age elite house—an entry porch, a main room with a focus (originally a hearth and later the cult statue), and an innermost chamber serving as private apartment and treasury.

One other element that is more specific to the Dark Ages and becomes less significant in Archaic to Classical times, as a more democratic society emerges, is the popularity of prestigious feasting vessels, or tripods. For much of the Dark Age, however, the general low level of bronze in society makes large containers too expensive. It is mainly in the final Late Geometric era that growing access to trade and a rising population can be associated with elite investment in great display pieces to show off

at the traditional banquets in their households. The tripods, often showpieces at museums today, were large cooking and warming cauldrons for communal eating, highly ornamented and sometimes decorated with appropriate symbols of the warrior elite (e.g., a hero with raised spear, a gesture that is the most common one associated with Homeric warriors). Tripods were suitable gifts between elites and later became a common reward for victors in competitions at the international festivals in pan-Hellenic sanctuaries, such as Olympia.

THE RISE OF THE GREEK CITY-STATE

Classical Greece was divided politically between those regions mostly in the north, where power remained with an elite or even a king, and those largely in the south, where power was vested in the middle or “hoplite” class, only rarely and discontinuously reaching down to the poorest free citizens. Very broadly, the northern regions were dominated by a kind of tribal organization, the *ethnos*, with the south and its more democratic constitutions associated with the city-state, or polis kind of organization. The transformation in Greece, so pregnant for European and later global history, from a common kind of elite politics, found cross-culturally around the world, to a unique experimentation with moderate democracy took place essentially within the Archaic era, but it began in later Dark Age times.

First, the tight control exercised over their peasant clients by the warrior elite seems to have loosened in Late Geometric times with the relaxation of the ban on formal burial. In the following Early Archaic period, military reform occurred widely in Greece: the cavalry and chariots of the rich became subordinated on the battlefield to massed ranks of heavily armed foot soldiers drawn mostly from the wealthier or “yeoman” peasantry. Although Morris, in his pioneering cemetery analysis, suggested that the excluded poor of the Dark Age first won formal burial and soon after became the mainstay of military force in the rising states of Greece, his own statistics tell a different story. He estimated that roughly half the population suffered burial exclusion in the Dark Age, but in the Classical army about half the free population was made up of the aristocrats and middle (hoplite) class, and the other

half were lightly armed poorer folk. Effectively, this indicates that the Dark Age elite was a large upper class in a very broad sense, later to form the upper and middle class of Classical times. The Dark Age serf class, even in Classical city-states, normally remained a less privileged class (Athens excepted, and that for a relatively limited part of the general Classical era). This seems to argue that the rise of more democratic institutions in Archaic to Classical times reflects a shift in power from the dominant elite families to lesser, originally dependent elite families, rather than the rise of a hitherto entirely suppressed serf class.

This article has portrayed typical Dark Age landscapes as thinly settled and has concentrated on often rather short-lived chieftain-focused villages. Equally significant is a smaller class of Dark Age settlements of a very different character, usually retaining their uniqueness into the subsequent early historic era. Many key Mycenaean centers shrank to small towns or villages and never recovered greater status or even remained unoccupied (Mycenae and Pylos). A few, however, appear not only to have remained occupied through the Dark Ages and into Classical times but also to have been large clusters of closely spaced hamlets forming a discontinuous town. Athens, Argos, Thebes, and Knossos are four striking examples. This “town in patches” appearance that is seen in the mapped archaeology of Dark Age settlement and cemetery traces at such sites was identified by the Classical historian Thucydides as the “traditional archaic” type of town. It was preserved to his time in the curious amalgamation of close villages that constituted the plan of Classical Sparta. The most likely explanation for this multifocality is that a number of chiefs, with their retainers and serfs, settled in one another’s vicinity yet kept a perceptible distance and their own cemetery zones.

In landscapes with mostly smaller communities, the existence of such towns at all times must have exerted a gravitational attraction in their immediate region, with trade opportunities and social possibilities unobtainable elsewhere. Moreover, a warlike elite society sees a virtue in aggression and feuding to enhance status and control over land and people, so that an imbalance of military capability in their favor would have tended to stimulate these larger polities to undertake territorial expansion over less-

er polities in their vicinity. Certainly, Athens is remarkable in its feat of taking control of the large region of Attica well before recorded history begins c. 700 B.C., perhaps as early as 900 B.C., and Thebes, Argos, and Knossos all rose to become the most powerful city-states in their regions, though at later dates.

See also **The Minoan World** (vol. 2, part 5); **Mycenaean Greece** (vol. 2, part 5).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Bintliff, J. L. "Territorial Behaviour and the Natural History of the Greek Polis." In *Stuttgarter Kolloquium zur Historischen Geographie des Altertums*. Vol. 4. Edited by E. Olshausen and H. Sonnabend, pp. 207–249. Amsterdam: Hakkert Verlag, 1994.
- Morris, Ian. "The Early Polis as City and State." In *City and Country in the Ancient World*. Edited by John Rich and Andrew Wallace-Hadrill, pp. 24–57. London: Routledge, 1991.
- . *Burial and Ancient Society*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1987.
- Snodgrass, A. M. *Archaic Greece: The Age of Experiment*. Dent: London: Dent, 1980.
- . *Archaeology and the Rise of the Greek State*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1977.
- Van Wees, Hans. "Greeks Bearing Arms." In *Archaic Greece: New Approaches and New Evidence*. Edited by N. Fisher and H. van Wees, pp. 333–378. London: Duckworth Press, 1998.
- Whitley, J. *The Archaeology of Ancient Greece*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 2001.

JOHN BINTLIFF



EARLY MIDDLE AGES/
MIGRATION PERIOD



INTRODUCTION

Most standard prehistories of Europe end with the Roman conquest of central and western Europe in the last two centuries B.C. and the first century A.D. We have decided to extend our coverage of prehistoric and early historic Europe to approximately A.D. 1000 for several reasons. First, the Romans conquered only a part of temperate Europe. While the Romans controlled southern Britain, Gaul, Iberia, the Mediterranean, and parts of east-central Europe, Roman political and military domination never extended to Ireland, Scandinavia, Free Germany (those areas of Germany outside the borders of the Roman Empire), and all of northeastern Europe. Regions such as Ireland and the portions of Germany that bordered the Roman Empire certainly were affected directly by Roman trade, religion, and military activities. However, there were substantial continuities between the Early (or pre-Roman) Iron Age and the Roman Iron Age in many regions of northern and eastern Europe.

Second, the Roman political, military, and economic domination of many parts of western Europe lasted for only about four hundred years. Archaeologically, Britain is the most studied of all the Roman provinces in western Europe. Major programs of excavation in York, Winchester, and London have shown that Roman towns and cities experienced severe depopulation in the fifth century A.D. and that large-scale production of commercial goods such as pottery had ceased by about the year 400. The Roman military withdrew from the province of Britain in the early fifth century, and the resi-

dents were forced to see to their own defenses. Similar patterns of political, urban, and industrial decline have been documented throughout the Western Roman Empire in the fifth century. Long before the final Western Roman emperor was deposed in A.D. 476, many of the hallmarks of Roman civilization—military control over a well-defined territory, urbanism, industrial production and exchange, coinage, and literacy—had effectively disappeared in many of the western provinces.

Third, by the sixth century A.D., a series of small successor kingdoms had been established within the boundaries of the former Western Roman Empire. These new rulers modeled themselves on the former Roman emperors. Many, including the Frankish King Clovis, adopted Christianity, and some had served as mercenaries in the Roman army. However, the rulers themselves were drawn from barbarian tribes whose homelands lay outside the boundaries of the former Roman Empire. Moreover, the polities they ruled—Merovingian France, Anglo-Saxon England, Visigothic Spain—were substantially different from the Roman provinces that had existed in these regions a century or two earlier. These Dark Age societies were rural rather than urban. They have much more in common with the barbarian societies of Iron Age Europe than with the Roman societies that immediately preceded them. Since literary evidence and written records are limited, nearly all our information about daily life in these successor kingdoms has been discovered through archaeological research.

CHRONOLOGY

This volume covers only a portion of the European Middle Ages. Traditionally, the medieval period begins with the collapse of the Western Roman Empire in the fifth century A.D. and ends with the European voyages of discovery in the fifteenth and sixteenth centuries. While we begin our coverage of the Early Middle Ages in the early fifth century, we have chosen to end our coverage of medieval archaeology at about A.D. 1000. Archaeological and historical records provide clear evidence for the formation of states in Scandinavia and Poland around this time. With the establishment of institutionalized governments organized on territorial principles, many of the societies of northern Europe no longer can be considered barbarian. In addition, at about this time Christianity was adopted and literacy became widespread in several regions of northeastern Europe, including Poland and Scandinavia. As a result, written records are far more common. The archaeology of the High Middle Ages (c. A.D. 1000–1500) is truly a form of historical archaeology, where documents and material evidence have equally important roles to play.

MIGRATION

Migration or population movement is a well-documented feature of ancient Europe. At the end of the Ice Age (eleven thousand years ago), hunters and gatherers moved into areas of Europe that had been glaciated during the Pleistocene. Both archaeological and skeletal evidence indicates that migration played a role in the establishment of the first farming communities in central Europe. Archaeological, place-name, and literary evidence shows substantial population movements in central Europe during the later Iron Age.

Population movements are also well documented throughout the Early Middle Ages, and the period from A.D. 400–600 often is referred to as the Migration period. In the fifth and sixth centuries A.D., barbarians from outside the Roman Empire—Visigoths, Angles, Saxons, Franks, and others—moved into many regions of western Europe. The nature of these migrations has been debated by both archaeologists and historians for decades. Do they represent large-scale population movements, or are they small migrations of a military and political elite who dominated the local sub-Roman (early

post-Roman, non-Saxon) populations and initiated changes in material culture and ideology? Today, many archaeologists would favor the latter explanation. This chapter profiles many of the Migration period peoples who are known to us through the archaeological record and through historical sources.

Perhaps the best known of the early medieval migrations is the Viking expansion (c. A.D. 750–1050). Eastern Vikings from Sweden established colonies in Russia and the Baltic and conducted trade in distant eastern lands such as Mesopotamia. Western Vikings, from Norway and Denmark, established colonies in Britain, Ireland, Orkney, and Shetland. In addition, Viking colonists settled Iceland in the ninth century and Greenland in about 985. These settlements represent the frontiers of European colonization in the Early Middle Ages. Archaeologists have made extensive studies of the colonial settlements established by both the eastern and western Vikings.

THE REBIRTH OF TOWNS AND TRADE

In A.D. 600 Europe was primarily a rural society. Although many former Roman towns continued to serve as political and ecclesiastical centers, their populations were substantially reduced, and the towns no longer served as major centers of manufacturing and trade. Recent archaeological research in the Mediterranean regions of Europe and North Africa indicates that long-distance trade had declined well before the Islamic conquests of North Africa and Spain in the seventh century A.D.

Beginning in the seventh century A.D. a number of emporia—centers of both long-distance and regional trade—were established along the North Sea and Baltic Coasts from Hamwic (Anglo-Saxon Southampton) in England to Staraya Ladoga in Russia. Major programs of archaeological research have been carried out at these emporia. For example, the Origins of Ipswich project traced the development of this emporium from its establishment in the early seventh century. Ipswich produced pottery, known as Ipswich ware, that was formed on a slow wheel and kiln-fired. This pottery was traded throughout East Anglia, and it also appears at royal and ecclesiastical centers in other parts of England. The trade networks that were established in the Early Middle Ages are entirely different from those

that existed during the Roman period. Many Roman trade networks centered on the Mediterranean; early Medieval networks centered on the Baltic and North Sea. Some archaeologists have argued that the establishment of these emporia may be closely related to state formation and the emergence of complex societies in several regions of northern Europe, including England, France, and Scandinavia.

CONCLUSION

Between A.D. 400 and 1000, the European continent was transformed politically, socially, and eco-

nomically. The breakup of the Western Roman Empire created a power vacuum that was filled by a series of barbarian successor kingdoms. In a period of only six centuries urbanism was established in Europe, both within and outside the former Roman Empire; new patterns of long-distance and regional trade developed centering on the Baltic and the North Sea; and states formed in many regions of Europe. These transformations laid the foundation for the later medieval and modern European worlds.

PAM J. CRABTREE



EMPORIA

FOLLOWED BY FEATURE ESSAYS ON:

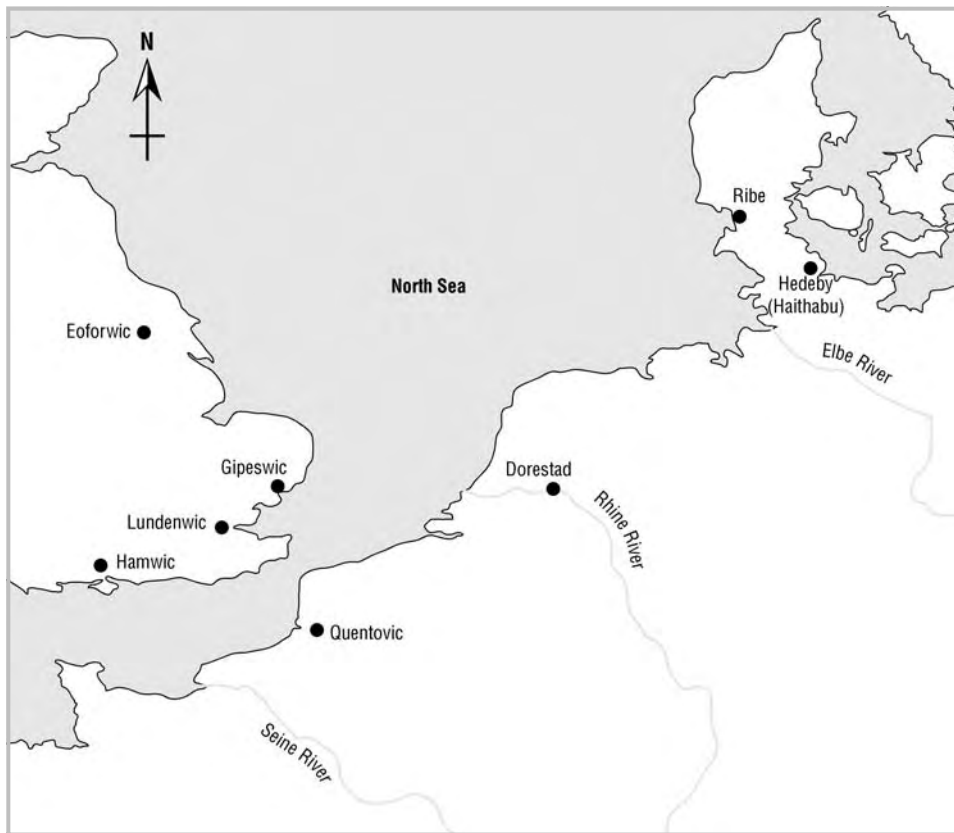
<i>Ipswich</i>	331
<i>Viking Harbors and Trading Sites</i>	334

The use of the term “emporium” to refer to the specialized trading (and crafting) sites of the late seventh century to the ninth century owes much to Richard Hodges and especially his *Dark Age Economics* (1982). Influenced by anthropologists and economic historians, Hodges saw these emporia as centers created on the frontiers of early medieval kingdoms (but largely divorced from their surrounding hinterland) through which kings funneled and controlled long-distance trade in prestige goods. However, it is important to be aware that contemporaries would not have applied the term “emporium” to all the sites Hodges considers. Eighth- and ninth-century sources do refer to Lundenwic (London, England), Dorestad (Holland), and Quentovic (France) as “emporium,” but Hamwic (the best-studied and most-famous of Hodges’s emporia) is only ever referred to as a *mercimonium*. Deriving from *merx*, the Latin for goods, merchandise, or wares, this term also relates to trade and exchange but presumably on a different scale or in different goods. As scholars have come to appreciate the comparative rarity of “emporium” in early medieval Europe, so they have gradually come to use the Old English word *wic* to refer to the whole class of such settlements. Contemporaries were more discriminating.

LAYOUT

Hodges used the presence (or absence) of particular classes of archaeological evidence to divide his “emporium” into three types. Type A emporia were characterized by the presence of exotic material culture and an absence of evidence for permanent structures. Sites such as Dalkey Island (Ireland) were thought to resemble the seasonal fairs referred to in, for example, the Icelandic sagas. However, like other archaeologists, he has devoted most of his attention to so-called type B emporia.

These were permanent, strategically located, and in early medieval terms, substantial settlements. Dorestad (Holland) ran for about 3,000 meters along the old course of the Kromme Rijn at the point where it intersected with the Lower Rhine, and the Lek Ribbe (Denmark) was situated where a north-south route crossed a ford in the River Ribbe, the latter itself connecting the settlement to the North Sea. Similarly Eoforwic (York, England) lay at the confluence of the Rivers Ouse and Foss, close to a natural crossing point of the Ouse and on the line of a Roman road. Hamwic (Southampton, England) covered some 45 hectares of the west bank of the River Itchen, at the point where it flowed into Southampton Water and ultimately the English Channel.



Main emporia (*wics*) of northwest Europe.

Hamwic may have had a population of between 2,000 and 3,000 and, like many other emporia or *wics*, seems to have been planned. Two north-south roads, connected by a series running east-west, formed a gridlike pattern within a defining (not defensive) enclosure. The roads were lined with buildings, and although these did not differ much from those found on contemporary rural sites, a visitor might have been impressed by the number concentrated in one place. Dorestad is characterized by a series of landing piers (about 8 meters wide) stretching into what would have been the River Rhine. They appear to have been lengthened as the river shifted to the east and were major structuring elements in the layout of the settlement—it was divided into 20-meter-wide parcels, each containing two piers, which ran from the riverside, through the harbor area, and into the *vicus* (trading zone) to the west. At Ribe a series of parallel ditches divided the settlement into forty or fifty plots, but here the evidence for permanent buildings is less secure. Most archaeologists argue that planning implies the in-

volvement of a central authority (usually the king) in the establishment and running of the emporia; for example, King Ine of Wessex (688–726) at Hamwic and King Angantyr at Ribe. These (and other emporia) have therefore been seen primarily as royal settlements.

IMPORTS

Type B emporia are also characterized by the presence of significant quantities of exotic material culture. A cowrie shell (from the Red Sea or the Indian Ocean) and the hypoplastron (shell fragment) of a North African green turtle from Hamwic, a bronze statuette of Buddha from eighth-century contexts at Helgö (Sweden), and pieces of carnelian, garnets, and rock crystal at Ribe illumine connections with points far to the south and east (fig. 1). The sharpening stones, soapstone vessels, and whalebone from Ribe, on the other hand, are indicative of connections with the North. They also stand for the furs that flowed from the northern lands, through emporia like Ribe and Birka (Sweden), to satisfy

elite demand in the heartlands of Europe. The bone assemblage from Birka reveals that skins of mountain hare, squirrel, beaver, fox, ermine, pine marten, badger, wolverine, and otter were processed at the emporium. At Eoforwic there is similar evidence for the working of beaver and pine marten skins. The value of these furs should not be underestimated. In the ninth century a Norwegian merchant called Óttar grew wealthy on the tribute he exacted from the Saami, and that tribute included the skins of marten, reindeer, otter, bear, and seal. A large ring-headed pin and part of a fitting for an Irish brooch provide evidence for Hamwic's hitherto neglected westerly connections, while Pictish brooches provide the closest parallels for a gilded, penannular brooch terminal from Eoforwic.

The bulk of the evidence for imports from the major *wics*, however, consists of pottery, mostly from sources in the Rhineland and in northern

France and the Low Countries. Kilns discovered near Rouen produced much of the material imported (perhaps via the French site of Quentovic) into Hamwic, although there was also some pottery from Belgium or Holland (or both) as well as Badorf and Mayen wares from the Rhineland. Similarly black and gray burnished wares from northern France or the Low Countries (or both) dominate the imported assemblages from Eoforwic and Lundenwic.

By contrast, the imported pottery from Gipeswic (Ipswich, England) is dominated by the products of the Vorgebirge and Mayen kilns in the Rhineland and thus more closely resembles the assemblages from Ribe and Dorestad. Much of the other "exotic" material culture on these sites can be sourced to the Rhineland—for example, glass vessels, lava quern stones (for grinding grain), and wine barrels (reused to line wells at Dorestad and Ribe). This mention of wine should serve as a reminder that the merchants (and consumers) of early medieval Northwest Europe were probably more interested in the contents than in the vessels (both wooden and ceramic). Analysis of one sherd from Hamwic revealed that the vessel had contained a mixture of meat and olive oil, showing that wine was not the only exotic consumable traded across northwestern Europe.

Although Rhenish quern stones and glass vessels are also found at, for example, Eoforwic and Hamwic, an analysis of the distribution of imported pottery encouraged Hodges to propose the existence of mutually exclusive trading zones—a Rhenish one in the north (including Dorestad, Gipeswic, and Ribe), and a Frankish one in the south (including Hamwic, Quentovic, and now Lundenwic). He believed that the *wics* or emporia were the linchpins of both networks and that they were consciously established by kings in an attempt to exert greater control over an expansion of prestige goods exchange that threatened their position—if they did not control this trade (and the traders), it is argued, then their social inferiors would have had access to the symbols of power. Their position as chief "ring givers," as the sole arbiters of the social hierarchy, would have been undermined. A letter written by Charlemagne, the Carolingian emperor, to Offa, king of Mercia, in 796 reveals some fascinating insights into the nature of

this exchange as well as new perspectives on the objects involved.

In this letter Charlemagne refers to Offa's earlier request for some "black stones" of a certain "length" and tells him to send a messenger with details of "what kind you have in mind and we will willingly order them to be given, wherever they are to be found, and will help with their transport." Charlemagne then informs Offa about his requirement for cloaks of a certain size and asked that they "be such as used to come to us in former times." This all reads like a record of one moment in a well-established, routine, and regular system of exchange. The fact that Charlemagne and Offa got involved in discussions about the exchange of items as (apparently) mundane as "cloaks," and the generally accepted argument that the "black stones" were tephrite quern stones from sources in the Eifel mountains (near Mayen in the Rhineland), reinforces the argument that long-distance exchange in the eighth and ninth centuries was directed and controlled by kings (and emperors).

Research since the 1980s, however, while confirming royal interest in long-distance trade, has somewhat modified the impression that this involvement extended beyond prestige goods to utilitarian objects. Thus David Peacock has presented a convincing case that Charlemagne's black stones, rather than being humble lava querns, were in fact antique black porphyry columns from Rome and Ravenna. As such they were laden with the symbolism of empire and antiquity; they were objects of immense political and social value—the "stuff of emperors." In this light it also seems inherently unlikely that the "cloaks" were simple, utilitarian items. They, too, were probably luxury products—perhaps like the late-eighth-century or ninth-century Anglo-Saxon embroideries preserved at Maaseik (Belgium).

Clearly the exchange of prestige gifts did play a significant part in the political strategies of early medieval kings and emperors. However, it now seems that they did not necessarily involve themselves in the trading of quern stones—although the archaeological evidence for them on sites across northwestern Europe is proof that such trading did take place. The question of the "controlling hand" behind that trade, if not always that of the king, is one to which this discussion will return. However, at this point it

should be emphasized that the *wics* were essentially transshipment points. They were places where goods from afar entered the country before, according to the Hodges model, being forwarded to the king for redistribution. One would not expect to find large quantities of prestige goods at these sites—and this is, by and large, the case. The textual references to columns, embroideries (if that is what they are), and slaves (see the Venerable Bede's reference in *Ecclesiastical History of the English People* book 4, chapter 22, to the sale, at Lundenwic, of a Northumbrian slave to a Frisian merchant) thus provide useful illustrations of the kind of trade items that might have passed through the emporia.

PRODUCTION

In his original formulation of the characteristics of type B emporia (in *Dark Age Economics*), Hodges argued that they would have housed a native work force whose role was to produce for "the mercantile community." The "subsidiary" role attributed to these artisans was a product both of the limited amount of evidence (in 1982) for craft production on the *wics* and of the attention devoted to overseas exotica. The idea that these sites were primarily concerned with facilitating the exchange of exotica between elites reinforced the impression that they were largely divorced from the region within which they were situated.

However, as excavation and publication progressed in the years since 1982, and the evidence for craft production on the *wics* accumulated, so it has become clear that scholars have underestimated the significance of production in the Anglo-Saxon economy in general—and on the *wics* in particular. Hamwic (as in so many other respects) provides the best evidence for the range and scale of artisanal activity; this can be used as the framework for a more general consideration of craft production in the main Northwest European emporia. Since 1982 new insights have accumulated into the role of emporia and *wics* in the regional economies of the Early Middle Ages.

At Hamwic, as elsewhere (good evidence comes from Ribe), artisanal activities were carried out in and around the buildings that lined the roads, and all forms of craft working were carried out right across the site, with no clear sign of the zoning of particular "industries." The scale of production

within each of the properties differed little from that on contemporary rural settlements, but the possibilities offered by the coexistence in close proximity of many different kinds of craft production probably more than offset this “limitation.”

One of the most ubiquitous traces of craft production at Hamwic is the debris from ironworking. This usually takes the form of smithing slag found in association with ore, charcoal, furnaces, and raw iron (the same is true at Gipeswic, Lundenwic, and Eoforwic). As at Dorestad, iron was smelted elsewhere (perhaps at Romsey, 14 kilometers to the northeast) and was transported to Hamwic for the production of a wide variety of objects, including chisels, axes, shears, nails, rivets, needles, keys, bells, and knives (at Eoforwic evidence exists for the plating of some of these objects with tin, tin-lead, and copper). The iron ingots worked at Dorestad probably originated on production sites in the Veluwe region, about 40 kilometers to the northeast. By and large the objects made were similar to those produced at Hamwic, but Frankish swords with inlaid blades (among the most prestigious artifacts of the period) might also have been made here.

The working of copper alloys was the most prevalent of the nonferrous metallurgical crafts on all the Northwest European *wics*. Crucibles, cupels, and molds provide the bulk of the evidence for the production of what seem, for the most part, to have been rather mundane objects—for instance, pins, strap ends, buckle fittings, finger rings, and brooches. There is, however, evidence (usually in the form of molds) for the production of some more decorative (quality) items at Hamwic and Gipeswic; a bone mold for the production of a disk brooch was found at Lundenwic. The bronze workers at Ribe seem to have made jewelry of distinctively Scandinavian type, as if catering for the regional as opposed to the “long-distance” market. Given the rather mundane quality of many of the objects produced on this and other *wics*, one can probably argue that most production of these sites was destined for regional level exchange. This has significant implications for how scholars understand the emporia (see below).

Precious metals were worked on the *wics*. Gold and silver were present in cupels and crucibles from Hamwic, and some evidence exists for gilding. Silver objects are rare (as this would have been transshipment site), but they do seem to have been pro-

duced from the earliest phase of the settlement. Fragments of gold and silver wire and plate from the excavations at Fishergate in York demonstrate that “prestige” objects were being made at Eoforwic, as does an emerald and two fragments of garnet. It seems certain that sceattas (small eighth-century silver coins) were minted at Ribe, Gipeswic, and Hamwic. Glass was worked (rather than made) at Eoforwic, Ribe, and Dorestad, while the latter two have evidence for the production of amber objects.

Despite the fact that, in most cases, little direct evidence exists for the production of pottery at *wics* (see below for the exception), there can be little doubt that it should be added to the range of crafts practiced on them. No kilns have been found at Hamwic, but here, as elsewhere, the vast majority of the pottery was produced from local clays, and small, ephemeral kilns would have sufficed to make it. The facts that some of the Hamwic pottery derived from sources about 20 kilometers away and that the sand- and shell-tempered wares from Eoforwic belonged to widespread ceramic traditions suggest that the *wics* were integrated into regional systems of production and distribution. The production and distribution of Ipswich ware leads to the same conclusion.

Fired in kilns and produced on a slow wheel, Ipswich ware was (mass-)produced in the northeastern part of Gipeswic from the early part of the eighth century. Not only did its manufacture represent a technological advance on any other kind of ceramic production then taking place in England, it was also made in a wider range of forms and achieved a much wider distribution. It is almost ubiquitous on settlements within the kingdom of East Anglia, suggesting that it was made and traded within a regional system focused on the *wic*. Outside the kingdom of the East Angles (it is found as far north as York and as far south as Kent), it is normally found on elite sites and usually in the form of storage vessels. Although, again, the contents may have been more valuable than the vessel, the production and distribution of the latter does suggest that traditional models may have underestimated the significance of trade within and across the kingdoms of England and the role of the *wics* in articulating this “economic” activity. A consideration of the bone objects from the emporia leads to the same conclusion.

At Hamwic cattle bone was the preferred material for the production of combs, spindle whorls, needles, awls, and thread pickers (red deer antler was increasingly used in the ninth century). Although there are some variations (the production of playing counters, amulets, and skates at Dorestad; the latter were also made at Eoforwic), the bone workers on the other *wics* seem to have made a very similar range of products. This implies, again, that production was designed for local or regional consumption—why export a (rather utilitarian) product to a community that also manufactures it? (Combs produced in Hamwic have now been identified in its hinterland—at Abbots Worthy, near Winchester.) The similarity in products created at various *wics* also points to one of the “benefits” of the concentration of different kinds of artisanal activity. There are some signs of the emergence of an integrated system of production in that many of the bone (and other) tools manufactured there were used in other productive processes.

Textile production would seem to have been one of the most important of these. Weaving pits have been identified in the Six Dials area of Hamwic, while more than five hundred loom weights were found on the site of an extension to the Royal Opera House in Lundenwic. Loom weights were also found at Dorestad, while one of the products of this craft (a fragment of a coarse wool textile) was recovered from an early-eighth-century context at Eoforwic. There is evidence for leatherworking at Hamwic and Gipeswic, and shoes were made on the East Anglian *wic*. As already noted, furs were processed at Eoforwic and Birka. In fact these animal “secondary products” provide crucial insight into the function (and rationale) of the emporia; the products were made with tools and materials deriving from animals that were supplied from the surrounding region to the craft workers in the *wic*. These artisans then created objects of varying value. Certain of these, such as the furs and some of the textiles and bone work (an early-eighth-century bone knife handle from Eoforwic was beautifully decorated with scenes of animals in procession) as well as the objects of gold and silver, might have been destined for the elite consumption, prestige goods exchange, or both; the rest (and probably the majority) would have been consumed at the regional level.

RATIONALE AND DEMISE

Classic accounts of the emporia saw them as royally controlled foreign enclaves, situated within, yet separate from, the various kingdoms of northwestern Europe. They were seen as nodes in a pan-European exchange system, operated by elites for the benefit of elites—the driving forces of early European history. Some of the gifts exchanged between the kings of northwestern Europe may have passed through the *wics*; some may even have been made there. However, if the character of the archaeological assemblage in any way reflects the importance of past human activities, it is now clear that artisanal production dominated the lives of most of the residents of early medieval emporia. This production connected them, on a daily basis, with the inhabitants of the surrounding region. It seems likely that the latter “consumed” many of the goods made on the *wics*, although (given the generic nature of these products) this will remain difficult to prove. What is unquestionable, however, is that the artisans (and possibly traders) on the *wic* were provisioned, both in terms of food and raw materials, with resources produced in its hinterland.

The remains of rather elderly cattle, sheep, and pigs dominate the faunal assemblage from Hamwic. These animals had evidently served a useful life elsewhere before being dispatched to the *wic*. The assemblage is noteworthy for the absence of young animals, which would have supplied the better cuts of meat, and for a lack of wild species. It appears that the inhabitants of Hamwic were not able to exercise much choice over the food with which they were supplied, and this is generally taken to support the idea that the *wic* was created, controlled, and provisioned by the king from his other estates in the kingdom of Wessex.

The evidence from other emporia, however, suggests that Hamwic might, to some extent, be exceptional. There is evidence for farms on the edge of Dorestad and Lundenwic, although the faunal evidence from Eoforwic reveals that at least some of its residents had access to fine cuts of meat (although here too they singularly failed to exploit wild resources). All this might imply a greater diversity of supply to these *wics* and less than complete royal control over the activities of its residents. Contemporary texts that refer to ecclesiastical landholding in, and trading from, Lundenwic and the sug-

gestion (based on numismatics) that the bishop of York may have exercised some authority over “economic” activities in Eoforwic open up the possibility that nonroyal elites may have played a greater part than previously expected in the functioning of the emporia.

The discovery that some elite settlements (both secular and ecclesiastical) in England show evidence for intensified production from the end of the seventh century (that is, perhaps just before the emergence of the emporia as a phenomenon) raises the intriguing possibility that their development owed at least as much to the expansion of regional systems of production and exchange as to the king’s desire for overseas exotica. Similarly work since the 1980s on the continental European economy has emphasized that, although emporia like Dorestad were important and may have linked regional-level production and distribution to the acquisition of goods from overseas, regional networks were structurally more significant to the development of the Carolingian empire and the Carolingian Renaissance. These networks were frequently focused on old Roman cities and *castella* (forts).

Archaeologists have therefore begun to reassess the significance of the emporia in the economic and political development of the polities that made up early medieval Europe. They were once seen as the “economic” dynamos of early medieval Europe and were thought to be central to the reproduction of kingdoms—they were the places through which kings controlled the importation of the prestige goods that secured and maintained alliances and dependents. As the research accumulates, however, they have come to be viewed as locales articulating overseas trade with the networks of intensified production and exchange being developed around the (usually nonroyal) elites of northwestern Europe. To consider how this new insight affects an understanding of the demise of the emporia, one must return to Hodges’s typology.

In fact it can be argued that his type C emporia are not really emporia at all since they are predicated on the demise of long-distance trade. In this event Hodges argues in his *Dark Age Economics* that “the emporium could either be abandoned or it could continue to function within a regional economy.” The former (abandonment) was the fate of most of the “classic” emporia, and this generally took place

in the mid- to late ninth century. The Vikings have been blamed for this, as they have been blamed for pretty much anything else that went wrong at this time. They certainly had an effect. Dorestad was regularly sacked from the 830s and was destroyed in 863. Lundenwic was attacked in 842 and 851 and was occupied by a Viking army in 871–872; a deep ditch dug there in the ninth century might be a product of these attacks. Viking disruption of long-distance trade networks may, in fact, have robbed the emporia of their role in linking regional and international “economic” systems. However, one might also argue, as Adriaan Verhulst does in *The Carolingian Economy*, that the emporia’s sudden extinction and the continuity of “old *civitates* like Rouen, Amiens, Maastricht . . . Tournai . . . [and] younger towns along the rivers (*portus*) in the interior” demonstrate how ephemeral *wics* had always been. Whatever one’s perspective, emporia and *wics* remain among the defining characteristics of their age, and *Dark Age Economics* (despite twenty years of critique) still lies at the heart of archaeologists’ attempts to understand them.

See also Ipswich (vol. 2, part 7); Viking Harbors and Trading Sites (vol. 2, part 7); Trade and Exchange (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Bourdillon, Jennifer. “The Animal Resources from Southampton.” In *Anglo-Saxon Settlements*. Edited by Della Hooke, pp. 177–195. Oxford: Blackwell, 1988. (One of the first and best discussions of the importance of the hinterlands of *wics*, based primarily on the faunal evidence from Hamwic.)
- Es, W. A. van. “Dorestad Centred.” In *Medieval Archaeology in the Netherlands*. Edited by J. C. Besteman, J. M. Bos, and H. Heidinga, pp. 151–182. Assen, Netherlands: van Gorcum, 1990.
- Hill, D., and R. Cowie, eds. *Wics: The Early Medieval Trading Centres of Northern Europe*. Sheffield, U.K.: Sheffield Academic Press, 2001. (Updated proceedings of a conference held in York in 1991.)
- Hodges, Richard. *Towns and Trade in the Age of Charlemagne*. London: Duckworth, 2000. (See especially chap. 3.)
- . *The Anglo-Saxon Achievement. Archaeology and the Beginnings of English Society*. London: Duckworth, 1989. (See especially chap. 4. A slightly different perspective on the emporia, with more on artisanal production, but trade and exchange is still central.)

- . *Dark Age Economics: The Origins of Towns and Trade A.D. 600–1000*. London: Duckworth, 1982. (The seminal account of early medieval trade and exchange.)
- Jensen, Stig. *The Vikings of Ribe*. Ribe, Denmark: Den antikvariske Samling i Ribe, 1991. (Much of this short, well-illustrated book is about the pre-Viking emporium [or *wic*] site and the kinds of activities that took place on these sites.)
- Maddicott, John. “Prosperity and Power in the Age of Bede and Beowulf.” *Proceedings of the British Academy* 117 (2002): 49–71. (This overview argues for a relatively prosperous English countryside and emphasizes the significance of the production and exchange of cloth in the eighth century.)
- Moreland, John. “The Significance of Production in Eighth-Century England.” In *The Long Eighth Century: Production Distribution and Demand*. Edited by Inge Hansen and Chris Wickham, pp. 69–104. Leiden, Netherlands: Brill, 2000. (Moves away from exchange-focused perspectives on emporia, arguing that they were fully integrated into regional economies and may even have been a product of an intensification of agricultural production.)
- Morton, Alan. “Hamwic in Its Context.” In *Anglo-Saxon Trading Centres: Beyond the Emporia*. Edited by Mike Anderton, pp. 48–62. Glasgow: Cruithne Press, 1999. (One of a number of excellent papers from a Sheffield conference that focused on the hinterlands of emporia.)
- Peacock, David. “Charlemagne’s Black Stones: The Re-Use of Roman Columns in Early Medieval Europe.” *Antiquity* 71 (1997): 709–715. (Makes a convincing case that Charlemagne’s “black stones” were in fact porphyry columns rather than lava quern stones.)
- Verhulst, Adriaan. *The Carolingian Economy*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 2002. (An accessible discussion of the economy of continental Europe in the eighth and ninth centuries that stresses the importance of regional economic networks and sees the emporia as rather “ephemeral.”)

JOHN MORELAND

IPSWICH

Ipswich lies at the tidal reach of the Orwell estuary, in southeastern Suffolk, on the shortest crossing of the North Sea to the mouth of the Rhine. Extensive archaeological excavations between 1974 and 1990 have shown that the town is one of the four major craft production and trading settlements of seventh- to ninth-century England (the so-called *wics*, or em-

poria). The earliest settlement, dating to the seventh century, appears to have covered up to 15 hectares on the north bank of the Orwell, centered on the crossing point of the river that later became Stoke Bridge. Excavations in 1986, west of St. Peter’s Street, revealed the first structures and rubbish pits of this date, associated with local handmade pottery and Merovingian (Frankish) black wares, indicating a trading function. Other sites of likely seventh-century occupation have produced few features of this date, but handmade pottery has been retrieved from later contexts, and a hollowed-out tree trunk well discovered at Turret Lane, at the northern limit of the area, gave a dendrochronological date (tree ring date) of A.D. 670 (plus or minus ninety years).

Other elements of this early settlement also have been found. Field boundaries containing cereal remains were excavated at Fore Street, about 200 meters east of the settlement, indicating an agricultural aspect of the local economy. To the north of the settlement is an extensive cemetery. Burials of seventh-century date were excavated at Elm Street in 1975 and at Foundation Street in 1985. The largest group of burials, however, was excavated in 1988 on the Butter Market site immediately north of the early settlement. Here seventy-seven graves were found, despite considerable damage from later occupation. No limits to the cemetery were discovered, and it was clearly larger than the 5,000 square meters excavated. Radiocarbon dates indicate that burial was restricted to the seventh century. Although bone preservation was poor, remains of more than fifty people were recovered, of which it is known that thirty-nine were adults and four were juveniles. Of the adults, research has ascertained that eight were male or probably male and four were female or probably female. All the burials were inhumations, buried with or without coffins in simple graves, in chamber graves, or under small mounds surrounded by ring ditches. Objects accompany nearly half the burials, but the majority of graves were poorly furnished, often with only a knife. Of the more lavishly furnished burials, three dating to the period A.D. 610–670 were accompanied by Continental grave assemblages. The richest was a male buried in a coffin with a sword, shield, two spears, and two glass palm cups.

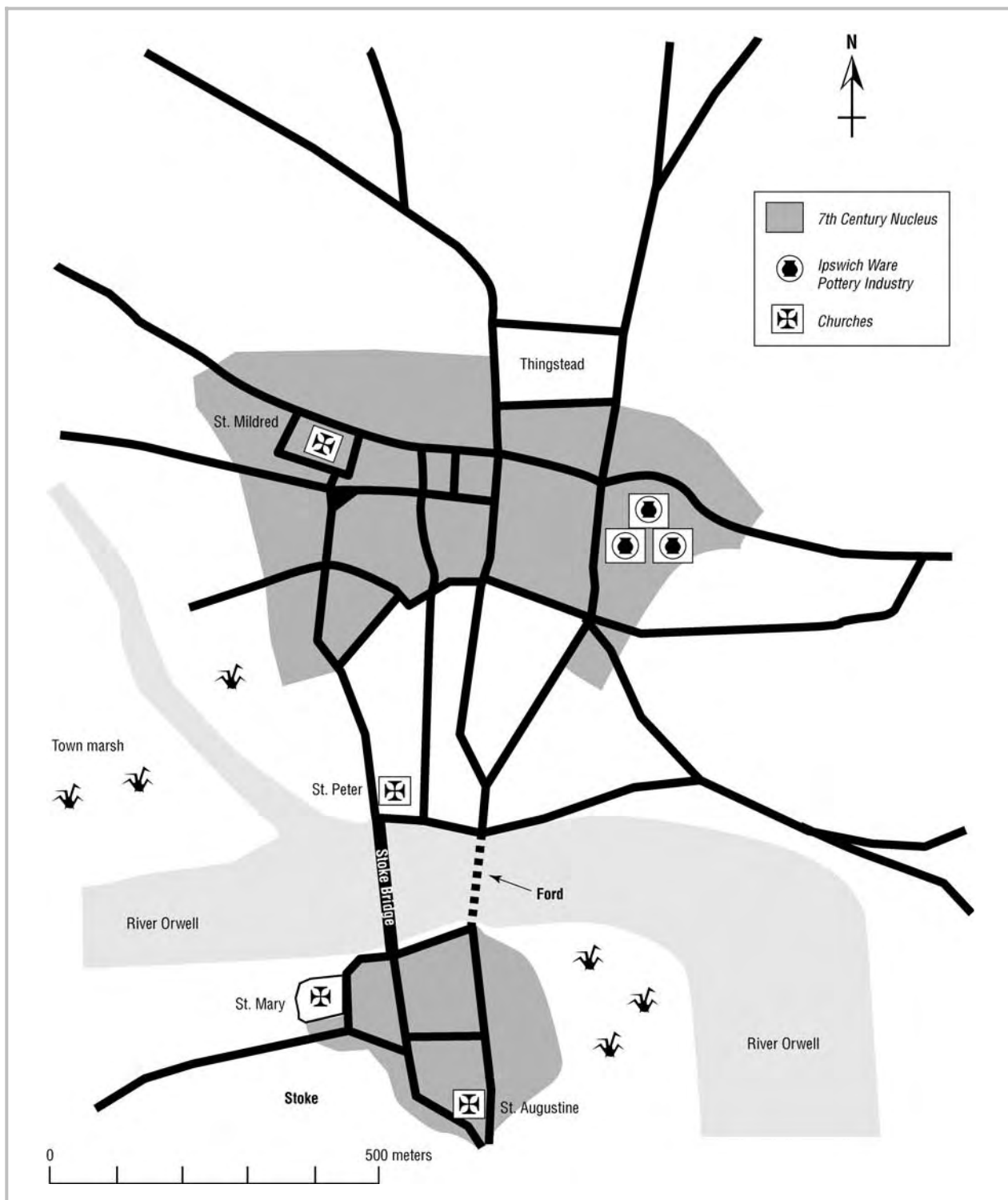


Fig. 1. The Middle Saxon emporium of Ipswich. COURTESY SUFFOLK COUNTY COUNCIL.

In the early eighth century Ipswich was expanded to a massive 50 hectares by the creation of a virtual new town, to the north of the original settlement, and by expansion south of the river, into Stoke. New streets were laid out on a gridiron pattern, and buildings were constructed on their frontages. Craft activities, including spinning and weaving, antler and bone working, and metalworking, occur on most sites but not in great quantities. Leatherworking, too, must have been common but is represented only on the waterlogged riverfront site at Bridge Street, where a substantial quantity of cobblers' waste was recovered. Other industries, such as shipbuilding and fishing, also may have been important, but direct evidence is lacking. There can be little doubt, however, that the major industry of the town in both the eighth and ninth centuries was pottery production. Evidence of pottery production stretches for about 200 meters on the south side of Carr Street. Ipswich ware was the only wheel-made and kiln-fired pottery produced in England between the seventh and ninth centuries. The industry supplied the entire East Anglian Kingdom with pottery, and it was exported to aristocratic and ecclesiastical sites as far away as Yorkshire and Kent. On the margins of settlement, environmental evidence indicates agricultural activities, including the keeping of livestock and cereal cleaning, but overall the animal bone evidence suggests that meat was imported into the town from the rural hinterland and that Ipswich was a consumer, rather than a producer, of food.

Little is known about any public buildings that may have served the Middle Saxon town. The first Christian churches appear to be associated with the "new town" of the early eighth century. On the basis of their dedications, the churches of St. Peter, St. Augustine, and St. Mildred probably are the earliest. Excavations also have revealed the sequence of waterfront development. The seventh-century harbor looked very different from the present one, being shallow and tidal, as it is farther down the Orwell estuary in the twenty-first century. Since the eighth century there has been continuous land reclamation, as new waterfronts were constructed nearer the center of the river and the land behind them was filled, raised, and developed. The Anglo-Saxon waterfronts were simple timber revetments, no more than 1 meter high, providing protection to the river bank and hard standing for unloading boats.

International trade was important to the Ipswich economy throughout the eighth and ninth centuries. Imported Norwegian hone stones, Rhenish lava millstones, and Frankish pottery are found on all sites throughout the 50 hectares of occupation and in quantities far in excess of finds from rural sites. The dominant trade link is, not surprisingly, with the Rhine and Dorestad, but there are also links with Belgium and northern France. It is assumed that wool or cloth was exported in return. Rhenish imports undoubtedly included wine for consumption by the local aristocracy and early church. The wine itself was transported in wooden barrels, examples of which have been found reused as lining for well shafts. One such barrel from the excavations in Lower Brook Street in 1975 has been dated by dendrochronology to shortly after A.D. 871 and matches the tree ring pattern of the Mainz area of Germany.

By the eighth century a handful of towns had developed around the North Sea and Baltic coast, each with an economy based on commodity production and international trade. In England there is one such place per Anglo-Saxon Kingdom. Gipeswic (Ipswich) served East Anglia and certainly was founded by the East Anglian royal house, the Wuffingas, whose burial ground at Sutton Hoo and palace at Rendlesham lie less than 10 miles northeast of Ipswich, on the east bank of the River Deben. During the ninth century other towns were founded in the region (among them Norwich, Thetford, and Bury St. Edmunds), and Ipswich gradually lost its role as the East Anglian capital. Although it remained a significant international port, its economy otherwise became that of a market town serving southeastern Suffolk.

See also **Emporia** (vol. 2, part 7); **Trade and Exchange** (vol. 2, part 7); **Anglo-Saxon England** (vol. 2, part 7); **Sutton Hoo** (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Hodges, Richard. *Dark Age Economics: The Origins of Towns and Trade A.D. 600–1000*. London: Duckworth, 1989.
- Wade, Keith. "Gipeswic—East Anglia's First Economic Capital 600–1066." In *Ipswich from the First to the Third Millennium*, pp. 1–6. Ipswich, U.K.: Ipswich Society, 2001.
- . "The Urbanisation of East Anglia: The Ipswich Perspective." In *Flatlands and Wetlands: Current Themes*

in *East Anglian Archaeology*. Edited by Julie Gardiner, pp. 144–151. East Anglian Archaeology, no. 50. Dereham, U.K.: Norfolk Archaeological Unit, 1993.

———. “Ipswich.” In *The Rebirth of Towns in the West, A.D. 700–1050*. Edited by Richard Hodges and Brian Hobbey, pp. 93–100. Council for British Archaeology Research Report, no. 68. London: Council for British Archaeology, 1988.

KEITH WADE

VIKING HARBORS AND TRADING SITES

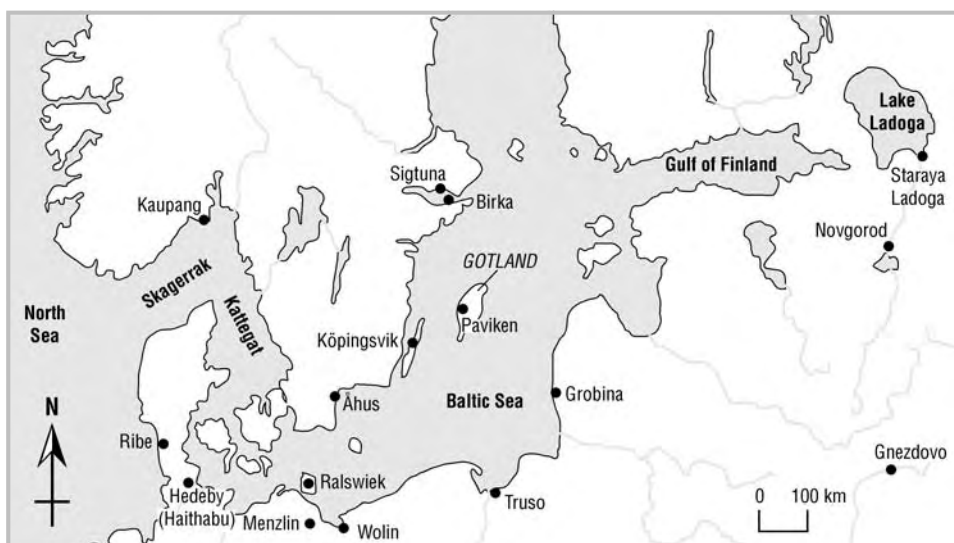
Our understanding of the harbors and centers of trade dating to the Viking Age is limited, as is information concerning the level and scope of trade and its organization. The difficulty of acquiring and assessing such information stems from the fact that most trading points are known only from scant written records—none of which are from the Viking homelands themselves. A map of the known Viking harbors and towns in the Baltic area shows very few places, sparsely situated. The best examples of early trading centers in the Baltic Sea are Birka (Sweden), Hedeby or Haithabu (Germany), Grobin (Latvia), Wolin (Poland), and Novgorod (Russia). These centers, known from written documents or discovered by chance, give a much too simple picture of the true state of affairs.

Indeed, along the Baltic coast there must have been a vast number and variety of harbors and trading sites of all sizes, from small fishing camps to permanently occupied cities. Surprisingly, there are no confirmed harbors and trading centers, for example, along the eastern coast of Sweden, despite the fact that this region is one of the largest, oldest, and most important cultivated areas in all of Sweden. This situation is more or less mirrored along the eastern Baltic shore as well as along the Norwegian coast. The challenge, then, is to identify the spots not mentioned in written sources, with archaeological fieldwork as our best guide.

The island of Gotland provides good examples of previously unknown harbors. Situated in the middle of the Baltic Sea, it was a true center in the Viking world. Nowhere have so many Viking silver hoards been found as on this tiny island. In all, more

then seven hundred separate caches of silver and gold give clear evidence of the island’s widespread trade connections. Despite the even distribution of this treasure (mostly Arabic coins) over the island, only one known harbor on Gotland dated to the Viking Age—Paviken, on the west coast. It is unlikely that all the hoards could have been distributed over the island from just one harbor. There must have been many more.

Excavation of this site took place at the end of the 1950s and the beginning of the 1960s. Starting in the last decade of the twentieth century an extensive project was carried out on Gotland, with the aim of analyzing and describing the numbers of harbors and trading sites and their structure, development, and spatial organization during the period of approximately A.D. 600–1000. The research was conducted using a combination of methods, both notes and maps in museum archives and field studies. Three main criteria have been used as evidence to locate possible harbors: prehistoric graves



Some Viking harbors and towns in the Baltic Sea region.

or grave fields close to the coast, a shore protected from strong winds, and a situation in the cultural landscape diverging from the normal—for instance, a point where cadastral maps show that several roads converged.

The next step in the project involved phosphate mapping of suspected locations. This mapping identified about sixty places along the Gotlandic coast that showed signs of major or minor activities during the Viking Age. Evaluation of these finds indicated many places that can be interpreted as larger harbors or trading sites, distinguishable from the others in their rich and varied number of artifacts. Boge, Bandlunde, Fröjel, Paviken-Västergarn, and Visby belong to this category. Other, smaller places seem to be fishing harbors for the farmers on the island.

The most extensive investigations of one of these previously unknown Viking trading and manufacturing sites were conducted between 1998 and 2002 at Fröjel, along the west coast of Gotland. At this spot there is an area of 60,000 square meters with many traces of buildings and several grave fields. The archaeological excavations have revealed a harbor and trading center that was active from the late sixth century to approximately A.D. 1180. The harbor's activities peaked during the eleventh century and into the beginning of the twelfth century.

Here is ample documentation of intensive trade and manufacturing—a harbor with connections

both west and east. Coins from Arabia, England, Germany, and Denmark, and jewelry from places as far-flung as the North Atlantic (walrus ivory), the Black Sea (rock crystal), and the area of Kiev in modern-day Ukraine (a resurrection egg) give evidence of distant trade.

The example of Gotland shows clearly that the system of harbors and trading centers in the Viking Age was far more complicated and intricate than one is led to believe from written sources. Jens Ulriksen did the same type of investigation in Denmark in 1997, with more or less the same conclusions. The picture derived solely from written sources is thus far from complete. To understand fully trade and travel patterns in the Viking Age, one must combine the written sources with extensive archaeological fieldwork.

See also *Trade and Exchange* (vol. 2, part 7); *Viking Ships* (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Carlsson, Dan. "Ridanäs"—*Vikingahamnen i Fröjel* ["Ridanäs—the Viking Age harbor in Fröjel]. Visby, Sweden: ArkeoDok, 1999.
- Clark, Helen, and Björn Ambrosiani. *Towns in the Viking Age*. Rev. ed. Leicester, U.K.: Leicester University Press, 1995.

"Fröjel Discovery Programme." Gotland University College. <http://frojel.hgo.se>.

Graham-Campbell, James, Colleen Batey, Helen Clarke, R. I. Page, and Neil S. Price. *Cultural Atlas of the Viking World*. New York: Facts on File, 1994.

Hodges, Richard. *Dark Age Economics: The Origins of Towns and Trade AD 600–1000*. 2d ed. New York: St. Martin's, 1982.

Ulriksen, Jens. *Anløbspladser: Besejling og bebyggelse i Danmark mellem 200 og 1100 e.Kr.* [Seafaring, landing sites, and settlements in Denmark from A.D. 200 to 1100]. Roskilde, Denmark: Vikingeskibshallen i Roskilde, 1997.

DAN CARLSSON



DARK AGES, MIGRATION PERIOD, EARLY MIDDLE AGES

The Middle Ages are sandwiched between the era of classical antiquity and the modern world. The beginning of the Middle Ages is traditionally marked by the fall of the Western Roman Empire in A.D. 476, while Columbus's voyages of discovery mark the start of the modern period. Therefore, most scholars consider the interval between the fifth and the fifteenth centuries A.D. as the Middle Ages or the medieval period.

Most historians, art historians, and archaeologists subdivide the Middle Ages into an earlier and a later period. The Late or High Middle Ages begin in the 11th century A.D. By this time, the Vikings had colonized Iceland and Greenland, and Christianity had been adopted throughout most of central and northern Europe. The High Middle Ages are marked by the growth of urbanism across Europe, the expansion of long distance trade networks, the construction of the great cathedrals, and the establishment of nation-states. Historical records provide valuable information on later medieval life. These European societies of the High Middle Ages have many features in common with the ancient Egyptians, the Maya, and other groups known as civilizations or complex societies. Therefore, the archaeology of the High Middle Ages is not included in this encyclopedia.

The earlier parts of the Middle Ages, on the other hand, have much more in common with the barbarian societies of later prehistoric Europe. These societies were primarily rural and agricultural, and their documentary records are limited or nonexistent. As a result, much of what scholars have

learned about day-to-day life in the earlier Middle Ages in Europe comes from archaeological surveys and excavations.

Three terms—the Early Middle Ages, the Migration period, and the Dark Ages—have been used to describe the earlier parts of the medieval period. Each term has a slightly different meaning, and the terms can be used differently in different parts of Europe.

EARLY MIDDLE AGES

The Early Middle Ages is a term that commonly is used by art historians and others to describe the period beginning with the collapse of the Western Roman Empire in the fifth century and ending with the rise of the Romanesque style of architecture in the eleventh century. While the term might appear as a straightforward chronological marker, it is most useful in describing regions that were formerly part of the Western Roman Empire. In regions such as Britain, France, and Spain, the replacement of Roman military, political, and economic authority by the barbarian successor kingdoms led to significant social, economic, and political changes. Outside the Roman Empire, however, in regions such as northern Germany and Scandinavia, the first part of this period represents a continuation of the Iron Age way of life. In much of northern Europe, the first four centuries A.D. are referred to as the Roman Iron Age, while the period c. A.D. 400–800 is often termed the Late or Germanic Iron Age. In many parts of northern Europe, the term “medieval” is used only when referring to the period after A.D.

1000, an era that is outside the scope of this encyclopedia.

DARK AGES

The term “dark age” generally is used to indicate a period of time when historical records are limited or nonexistent. For example, the Greek Dark Age begins with the collapse of the Mycenaean kingdoms around 1200 B.C. and ends with reappearance of writing in the eighth century B.C. Historians in the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries A.D. used the term Dark Ages to refer to almost all of the European Middle Ages, from the fifth through the twelfth centuries A.D., and they used the term in a pejorative sense. For these historians, the earlier medieval period was not just a time of limited literacy and few documentary sources; it was a period of intellectual stagnation; the accomplishments of medieval people were deemed far less impressive than those of classical antiquity and the Renaissance. Although there is no question that few contemporary historical sources survive from early post-Roman western Europe, the use of the term Dark Ages is still problematic for two reasons. First, most of northeastern Europe remained nonliterate, essentially prehistoric, throughout almost the entire first millennium A.D. The Baltic regions were well outside the boundaries of the Roman Empire, and these lands were mentioned only peripherally in Greek and Roman sources from the first half of the first millennium A.D. Literacy was introduced to the Baltic regions along with Christianity around the year 1000. Second, the term Dark Age is particularly inappropriate for Ireland between the fifth and the eighth centuries A.D. Christianity and literacy were introduced to Ireland in the 400s. Over the next three centuries the Irish developed the oldest indigenous literary tradition in Europe outside Greece and Rome. Some writers would even suggest that the Irish monks who copied classical manuscripts in their scriptoria actually saved Western Civilization. Irish archaeologists generally refer to the fifth through eighth centuries in Ireland as the Early Christian Period.

Many archaeologists today avoid the use of the term Dark Ages because of its former pejorative connotations. When the term is used, it usually describes post-Roman societies whose social, political, and economic organization differ significantly from

the classical world; and it often refers only to the initial part of the Early Middle Ages, usually the fifth to the eighth centuries A.D. Since few historical sources are available to study the economics and politics of the early post-Roman period, archaeology has a crucial role to play in the study of this era.

MIGRATION PERIOD

The Early Middle Ages are sometimes described as the Migration period. In many ways, the first half of the European Middle Ages can be seen as one extended interval of migration. The period begins with the movement of barbarian tribes, such as the Huns, into the territory of the Roman Empire during the fifth century A.D. After the fall of the Western Roman Empire, a series of barbarian successor kingdoms were established in the former imperial territory. These include the kingdoms of the Franks in France, the Visigoths in Spain, the Langobards (Lombards) in Italy, and the Angles and Saxons in southern and eastern Britain. The homelands of these barbarian tribes were located outside the empire, in northern and eastern Europe. Migrations, however, did not cease with the establishment of these successor kingdoms. The Magyars entered the Carpathian Basin in the eighth century, and the Early Slavs expanded into much of east-central Europe in the sixth and seventh centuries A.D.

Perhaps the best known of all the migrating peoples are the Vikings. Beginning in the late eighth century A.D., Vikings from western Scandinavia began to raid, trade, and colonize many regions of the North Atlantic. Norse settlements are well documented in both Britain and Ireland. The Vikings had colonized Iceland by the late ninth century, and about a century later they established two colonies in southwestern Greenland, the westernmost outpost of the medieval European world. Other Vikings migrated eastward, settling in Russia and trading with locations as far away as Constantinople (Istanbul) and Mesopotamia.

Although migration is a fundamental feature of European society between A.D. 400–1000, the Migration period, in the strictest sense of the term, refers to the period between 400–600, when a series of Germanic kingdoms were established in the territory of the former Western Roman Empire. Unlike the term Dark Ages, Migration period does not carry with it a pejorative connotation. For that rea-

son, many scholars prefer it to Dark Ages when discussing the early centuries of the Middle Ages.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Cahill, Thomas. *How the Irish Saved Civilization: The Untold Story of Ireland's Heroic Role from the Fall of Rome to the Rise of Medieval Europe*. New York: Nan A. Talese, Doubleday, 1995.

Hodges, Richard. *Dark Age Economics: The Origins of Towns and Trade A.D. 600–1000*. 2d ed. London: Duckworth, 1989.

Musset, Lucien. *The Germanic Invasions: The Making of Europe, A.D. 400–600*. Translated by Edward James and Columba James. University Park: Pennsylvania State University Press, 1975.

PAM J. CRABTREE



HISTORY AND ARCHAEOLOGY

The distinction between the fields of history and archaeology is widely recognized to be a result of the scholarly boundaries that place historians and archaeologists in separate academic departments. The hindrance of intellectual exchange between the disciplines has resulted in the development of misunderstandings about philosophical underpinnings, standards of practice, and current inquiry. Moreover, this division between history and archaeology naturalizes modern distinctions between the pasts of literate and nonliterate people. Indeed, a thorough assessment of the relationship between history and archaeology requires an appraisal of the nature of historical and archaeological inquiry, as scholars in each field exhibit fundamental misconceptions about the other discipline.

LITERACY IN EARLY MEDIEVAL EUROPE

Traditionally, the division between “prehistoric” and “historic” archaeology, with its evolutionary implications, has been based on the presence of writing. In modern studies of the early medieval period, however, this distinction often is obscured, because literate groups, such as the members of the Latinized Christian church, may provide the names and histories by which we know either contemporaneous nonliterate peoples or groups whose symbolic expression remains undeciphered by modern scholars. The archaeology of these peoples has been termed by some scholars “protohistory.” The distinction between peoples who produced written records and those who did not underlies the privileged position ascribed to literacy as defining an

evolving “civilization” and nonliteracy as representative of an ahistorical “barbarism.”

In a society with limited literacy, such as early medieval Europe, writers generally were drawn from and read by only a small, usually elite, segment of society. Literacy was restricted geographically to religious and urban centers. It is important to acknowledge that documentation is in itself an agent of cultural transformation, as records play a role in the material discourse of power. During the early medieval period, an apparent association with the supernatural afforded an otherworldly authority to the documents created in religious scriptoria.

Documents often were created to maintain and further the economic and administrative interests of certain constituencies. For example, the *Ecclesiastical History of the English People* (*Historia ecclesiastica gentis Anglorum*), written in the first third of the eighth century by the Northumbrian cleric the Venerable Bede, and the sixth-century *History of the Franks* (*Historia Francorum*), by the bishop Gregory of Tours, consciously or unconsciously legitimized the nation-building endeavors of their respective kings, Edwin and Clovis, within the emerging English and Frankish states. These histories presented a spurious political unity that implied, for the benefit of their readers, that these nascent states manifested a cultural homogeneity. Archaeologists seeking a corresponding agreement in material culture patterning must be aware that the documents that direct their interpretations can be misleading. Attempts to relate the tribal groupings recorded in early medieval historical records perpet-

uate mythic notions of ethnic identity that sometimes find their realization in modern European nationalities. Despite early medieval references to cultural groupings, such as Burgundians, Goths, and Saxons, no evidence exists that these peoples shared a common biological descent. Indeed, ethnicity appears to have been a situational construct that was important within relationships of power and politics. The elite and their interests were most likely to have been the subjects, benefactors, and consumers of the written works in which ethnic labels were recorded.

Because of the centrality of the documentary records in the ongoing activities of church and state, it is impossible to consider any aspect of the early medieval period without acknowledging the power of the written word in our current appreciation of these institutions. Without such awareness, the social, economic, and political organization of the past becomes evidence of evolutionary developments extending from the early medieval period to the modern day. This deterministic presentation of “progress” legitimizes the authority of those powers whose past is recorded and affords modern interests an opportunity to incorporate the legitimacy of a mythic past in the pursuit of their own objectives. The historiography of the early medieval period cannot be separated from Europe’s own self-conception, as current political concerns have unconsciously guided interpretations of the past. For example, beginning in the nineteenth century, archaeology presented Europe as the cultural product of conquest and colonization, mirroring the European imperialist experience in Africa, Asia, and the Americas. By the 1960s, this association with militaristic expansionism was superseded by complex processual models. Today, in an environment of individualism and nation building, interpretations emphasizing human agency and cultural identity are evoked.

THE NATURE OF HISTORICAL AND ARCHAEOLOGICAL EVIDENCE

In comparison with texts of later historical periods, those dating to early medieval times (c. A.D. 400–1000) are neither as common nor as specific and typically lack any substantive presentations of individuals. Textual sources during this period include heroic literature, annals, histories and chronicles,

saint’s lives, charters, wills, pedigrees and genealogies, and laws. Discontinuous in their creation and episodic in their narrative of time and space, documents traditionally have been considered permanent records intended for present and future audiences. In contrast, archaeological information, characterized as cumulative and continuously created, informs on relations and situations in the past. Categories of archaeological data include the excavated remains of settlements, burials, and earthworks, field surveys, and supporting data from specialist analyses (e.g., metallurgical, petrographic, chronometric, and zooarchaeological studies).

Underscoring the importance of the written link between the documentary and archaeological records are inscribed objects. These textual artifacts, such as coins carrying the name and place of the authority under whom they were minted and personal items inscribed with the name of the individual who made, commissioned, or owned the object, occasionally are encountered in contexts associated with nonliterate peoples. It cannot be assumed that the content of the inscription necessarily was understood by those using these objects. The symbolic authority of the written word, however, must have been generally appreciated, as meaningless characters sometimes appear on objects, such as precious metal bracteates, fabricated by nonliterate people. Moreover, the prestige vested in the written word is emphasized by the fact that the members of the elite would have been most likely to have had the resources and relationships necessary to acquire and distribute these valuable goods.

Critical theory has led scholars to understand that the past is a cultural construction and that historians and archaeologists, as well as their source materials, are constrained by biases. The historical records were not created to address the questions that modern scholars pose. Intentional and unintentional biases arise between the situations in which documents were originally created and have been subsequently interpreted. At a fundamental level are errors of translation, as the lack of equivalency in one language can lead to misrepresentation in another. Moreover, the written records often were drafted many years after the events that they describe or, in the case of oral traditions, after the original work was composed. As a consequence, these written works may reflect the political geogra-

phy and relationships of the time of transcription rather than the period of creation. Not all records from a particular time and place have been preserved, so the picture presented from a reading of the available documents can never be considered complete or even representative. Indeed, early medieval authors were selective in their choice of subjects, often omitting entire categories of people, such as the young, the impoverished, or the disabled, from meaningful mention. The resulting historical narrative often lacks any structure beyond that of chronology, as the events described occur at irregular intervals and are of unknown relative significance.

Without mediation between these two sources of information, our understanding of the archaeological or textual evidence is constrained. For example, the *Beowulf* poem, written down in the eighth century or later, has been used by archaeologists to identify and interpret objects, such as the helmet and standard found in the elite seventh-century ship burial at Sutton Hoo (Suffolk, England). Although the poem and the burial generally are thought to be separated chronologically by at least one century, scholars often treat them as contemporaneous. Moreover, similarities between the literary and archaeological material have been employed to derive the date of the heroic *Beowulf* poem and to guide its translation toward language and concepts framed by the finds at Sutton Hoo. By viewing the Anglo-Saxon epic *Beowulf* and the Sutton Hoo burial as mirrors of each other, we limit our understanding of each in its own right.

RELATIONSHIPS BETWEEN HISTORY AND ARCHAEOLOGY

Archaeology has been famously belittled as the “handmaiden to history” and “an expensive way of telling us what we already know.” Indeed, some archaeologists have viewed archaeology during historic periods as most useful as a laboratory in which theories, particularly those developed by prehistorians, can be tested. At the same time, early medieval archaeologists ignore the epistemological implication of this cultural connection across centuries: Is it appropriate—and, if so, under what conditions—to assume a cultural connection from historically documented times into the prehistoric past? Often, little rigor is exercised in assessing the appropriate-

ness of the analogy drawn. This procedure, called by North American archaeologists the “direct historical approach,” effectively decontextualizes the past, thereby subjecting it to anachronistic interpretation and obscuring its specific social meaning.

The discipline of history or archaeology is seen by some practitioners in the other field as a fertile source of comparative material to illustrate or interpret research concerns within their own discipline. In the most intellectually arid conception of the relationship between written and artifactual evidence, historians simply have grafted archaeological facts onto a historical framework, and archaeologists have substantiated their findings by drawing facts from the documentary record. Throughout study of the early medieval period, archaeology has been used to illuminate areas of research largely ignored by the written texts, such as technology and economy.

The intellectual conversation between the two disciplines has been characterized as a monologue, as some historians consider archaeology to be irrelevant or overly theoretical. Scholars in both fields complain that in making use of the historian’s toolkit, archaeologists demonstrate a limited understanding of the nature of historical inquiry and are unable to keep pace with philosophical and theoretical changes in the historical discipline. Anthropologically related historical approaches that mirror work done by post-processual archaeologists in other parts of the world, such as historical analyses that focus on the cultural construction of language and on the ways in which culture creates, fosters, and challenges inequalities, are largely ignored by those working in the early medieval period.

Using history to frame archaeological questions risks the production of tautologies, or circular arguments. For example, burials found in an area and at a time known from documents to have been inhabited by a certain tribal group generally are deemed to represent the population group. In early medieval England, this unreflective ethnic ascription of cemeteries as Anglo-Saxon has raised critical questions about how Celtic and Germanic ethnic identity was conceived, if at all, by those living in the fourth to seventh centuries and what the cemetery evidence indicates about the fate of the indigenous British population during this time.

PAST APPROACHES, FUTURE DIRECTIONS

During the twentieth century the relationship between archaeology and history reflected wider developments in each field. During the first half of the twentieth century, Anglo-Saxon archaeologists, such as J. N. L. Myres and E. T. Leeds, fashioned an early medieval archaeology that privileged the historical record. Archaeological finds were organized within chronological and typological schema, which were related, in turn, to events, such as battles, and accounts of great men detailed in historical documents.

Into the 1970s and 1980s, archaeological data were viewed as more objective and reliable than historical sources, because it was argued that archaeology produced deposits that were unconsciously created and lacked intentionally communicated messages. Artifacts were seen as the tools by which humans maintain stability within the natural and social environment. Following the positivistic philosophy prevailing in the “New Archaeology” movement at that time, archaeology was positioned as a natural science against which subjective historical facts could be tested.

In the 1980s, however, archaeologists began to complain that historical interests framed the agenda, modes of analysis, and language of archaeological inquiry. As a consequence, it was argued, archaeological research should be guided by its own theoretical premises and executed independently of the historical sources. Rather than chronicling past events of traditional narrative history, with its focus on the elite, the “new medieval archaeology” sought to explicate the social processes affecting the daily lives of the wider population.

The “new medieval archaeology” was itself criticized, however, for conceptualizing change as an adaptive response to external systemic stimuli, thereby denying individual agency and ignoring the discursive relationship between human actions and the structures that they produce. Instead, it was argued that artifacts must be assessed in context, both as the products of actions and as the active agents by which social relations are identified, subverted, and transformed. Particularly in the United Kingdom and Scandinavia, this reassessment of the relationship between history and archaeology revitalized medieval studies. Inspired by anthropologically

oriented historians, such as those engaged in the French *Annales* school, which examined the long-term structures of social and economic history, and by the theoretical agendas of anthropologically trained North American archaeologists, new research cut across traditional disciplinary boundaries and sources to investigate thematic concerns, such as gender, power relations, and cultural identity.

The work of historical archaeologists in the United States was invoked further to demonstrate that the distinction between artifacts and texts is cultural rather than natural. Some archaeologists emphasized that in the same way that historians approach documents, artifacts can be “read,” because both sources are components of material culture formed by the imposition of human action on nature. This position considers texts and artifacts equally as the products of thoughtful human action that contain social meaning and are the means by which social relations are articulated and negotiated. Rather than playing a passive role, as labels or markers, artifacts and documents were utilized in the past as expressive media. Written texts, therefore, are fundamentally artifacts and, as such, are not privileged over other forms of material culture in the interpretation of the past. As a consequence, only through examining the specific social contexts of artifacts and documents can we understand their social meaning.

The analytical framework must be derived from a social theory independent of historical or archaeological methodologies. It has been suggested that social reproduction—the renewal and transformation of the social system and its cognitive structure—or the structuring dynamic of power provide organizing principles by which texts and artifacts can be methodologically joined. For example, through reading the changing proportions of different Pictish symbols carved on monumental stones between the sixth and tenth centuries, it is possible to identify a discourse of power. According to this interpretation, changes in the ideological content of these symbols articulate the expansion of dynastic elites in early medieval Scotland and the religious authorities put to their service.

This approach holds more broadly that the processes that produce the archaeological and historical records are often the same, even if their creators or circumstances of origin differ. Thus, the ideological

anxieties articulated by the paganism of the seventh-century Sutton Hoo burials also are expressed, at a later time and in a different medium, by the political tension pervading the *Beowulf* poem, thereby uniting these works through a common metaphor or mindset. Indeed, following the writings of post-modern philosophers, the fact that a document shapes reality, thereby transforming it into a monument, is echoed by archaeologists who consider monuments, such as burial mounds, to be documents not only in a metaphorical sense but also as statements of ancestral authority and land tenure.

Rather than ignoring the documentary record or considering it to be all of a piece with the archaeological record, other archaeologists have argued that archaeology and history provide different sets of data that can be related dialectically to expose contradictions. This view holds that because different processes produce them, written and material pieces of evidence are fundamentally independent. In this approach, the interests of the dominant groups, as portrayed in the texts, can be used to investigate the ideological promotion of power and control and the resistance, through the distribution of material culture, among the textually disenfranchised. For example, this type of analysis exposes the contradictions between contrasting religious, political, and social interests vying for supremacy during the sixth and seventh centuries in the emerging East Anglian kingdom. Along with the documented attempts by Frankish and Italian churchmen to bring Christianity to England came a political and ideological alignment with these Continental kingdoms. Despite Continental Christianizing efforts, however, the burials at the East Anglian cemetery at Sutton Hoo exhibit a defiant paganism in their preference for cremation, grave furnishings, and ship burial. The dialectic between the missionary activities of the Christian church, as described in Bede's *Ecclesiastical History of the English People*, and the pagan burial practices has been interpreted as the East Anglian kingdom's resistance to an ideological conquest by Continental powers.

In conclusion, there is no agreement as to whether archaeological and historical inquiries have different source materials, methodologies, or goals. While some archaeologists have sought to validate and integrate the interests of the fields of history and archaeology by identifying commonalities, oth-

ers consider the disciplines to be complementary, and still others argue that archaeology must be released from its historical shackles. Rather than evidence of an inadequate theoretical and epistemological foundation, the lack of a universalizing system within which history and archaeology can be unified has been considered essential for the development of a contextual and pluralistic approach to the early medieval past.

See also *The Nature of Archaeological Data* (vol. 1, part 3); *Sutton Hoo* (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Andersson, Hans, Peter Carelli, and Lars Ersgård, eds. *Visions of the Past: Trends and Traditions in Swedish Medieval Archaeology*. Stockholm, Sweden: Central Board of National Antiquities, 1997.
- Andrén, Anders. *Between Artifacts and Texts: Historical Archaeology in Global Perspective*. Translated by Alan Crozier. New York: Plenum Press, 1998.
- Austin, David, and Leslie Alcock, eds. *From the Baltic to the Black Sea: Studies in Medieval Archaeology*. London: Unwin Hyman, 1990.
- Braudel, Fernand. *On History*. Translated by Sarah Mathews. Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1980.
- Carver, Martin. "Marriages of True Minds: Archaeology with Texts." In *Archaeology: The Widening Debate*. Edited by Barry Cunliffe, Wendy Davies, and Colin Renfrew, pp. 465–496. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2002.
- Driscoll, Stephen T. "Discourse on the Frontiers of History: Material Culture and Social Reproduction in Early Scotland." *Historical Archaeology* 26, no. 3 (1992): 12–25.
- . "The Relationship between History and Archaeology: Artefacts, Documents and Power." In *Power and Politics in Early Medieval Britain and Ireland*. Edited by Stephen T. Driscoll and Margaret R. Nieke, pp. 162–187. Edinburgh: Edinburgh University Press, 1988.
- Funari, Pedro Paulo A., Martin Hall, and Siân Jones, eds. *Historical Archaeology: Back from the Edge*. London: Routledge, 1999.
- Hodges, R. "New Approaches to Medieval Archaeology, Part 2." In *Twenty-Five Years of Medieval Archaeology*. Edited by David Hinton, pp. 24–32. Sheffield, U.K.: University of Sheffield, 1983.
- Knapp, A. Bernard, ed. *Archaeology, Annales, and Ethnohistory*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1992.
- Moreland, John F. *Archaeology and Text*. London: Duckworth, 2001.

- . “Method and Theory in Medieval Archaeology in the 1990’s.” *Archeologia Medievale* 18 (1991): 7–42.
- Rahtz, Phillip. “New Approaches to Medieval Archaeology, Part 1.” In *Twenty-Five Years of Medieval Archaeology*. Edited by David Hinton, pp. 12–23. Sheffield, U.K.: University of Sheffield, 1983.
- Ravn, Mads, and Rupert Britton, eds. “History and Archaeology.” Special Issue of *Archaeological Review from Cambridge* 14, no. 1 (1997): 129–135.
- Sawyer, Peter. “English Archaeology before the Conquest: A Historian’s View.” In *Twenty-Five Years of Medieval Archaeology*. Edited by David Hinton, pp. 44–47. Sheffield, U.K.: University of Sheffield, 1983.
- Tabaczynski, Stanislaw. “The Relationship between History and Archaeology: Elements of the Present Debate.” *Medieval Archaeology* 37 (1993): 1–14.

GENEVIEVE FISHER



STATE FORMATION

To understand the classic archaeological problem of state formation as it was played out in Europe, it is necessary to place it within its wider context. While the terms “state” and “state formation” are still in use, archaeologists today are more likely to discuss states and their immediate predecessors in terms of increasing political complexity, since the line between a so-called chiefdom and a state can become blurred by the context of their development, and it is not always useful to try to pigeonhole such varied political forms.

WHAT IS A STATE?

It turns out to be quite difficult to define a state. In the mid-twentieth century, V. Gordon Childe composed his classic list of state “attributes,” which include cities, specialized labor, writing, monuments, and other “markers”; these have proved to be highly problematic, however, since some entities that are clearly states had no writing or cities, while Stone Age farmers built monuments of tremendous size; similarly, many nonstate societies have specialists in various tasks and crafts. However, despite the problems of Childe’s original list, it should be noted that many of the characteristics he identified are still recognized as important *variables* in the *study* of states. It is probably safe to say that states are complex political structures in which several administrative or bureaucratic layers are necessary for effective rule, and that they encompass numerous internal groups and stratified social classes over which leaders exercise integrative power in combination with institutionalized coercion.

In addition, while kinship between rulers and other elites is important in many states, the rulers of states rely for the most part on political ties with followers to hold the state together and to perpetuate their power, rather than relying mainly on the support of their own large kin-groups. States are also usually more or less integrated—that is, their “parts” work together relatively smoothly and are more or less controlled by whomever rules. These parts would include, among many other things, the political structure (the chain of command leading from ruler to various bureaucratic specialists), the political economy (taxes, tribute), jurisprudence (lawmaking and lawgiving), communications (roads, bridges, messengers), warfare (commanders, troops, supply lines), and the social and religious institutions partly or completely controlled by the state. When operations are *not* running smoothly, archaeologists can gain useful clues into the process of state formation and development itself, just as a modern economist might interpret a budget deficit as an indication of fiscal problems within a nation. Thus, archaeologists can trace the emergence of a state by monitoring the initial appearance of these institutions and by watching carefully to see who controls them—regional elites or a centralized figure. Often, there are periods during state formation when control of institutions by central authorities is incomplete. This phase may be followed by a consolidation of power or by the collapse of the state.

While today’s world is dominated by state political structures, they are in fact a very recent “inven-

tion,” having emerged from pre-state complex societies in the Near East no earlier than 3600 B.C. They are also a rare occurrence: the archaeological social sequences that have *not* resulted in states far outnumber those that have. Many people believe that state societies are “stable”; in fact, they are one of the least stable forms of government and are highly susceptible to upheaval and collapse. There have been many theories on state formation, and many of the earlier concepts have been characterized as “prime mover” theories because they postulate a single trigger for the rise of all states, such as water control, warfare, trade, the need for record keeping, or demographic pressure. While such theories were popular for a time due to their plausibility and simplicity, archaeological field investigations have shown that one state rarely develops for the same reason as another; even within a single political entity, the causes of state development are complex and multivariate. Today, most archaeologists note the highly contingent nature of states, stressing local conditions and specific “historical” trajectories (even when the states are prehistoric), while at the same time using some generalizations and comparisons across cultures to evaluate how certain factors may influence developing political complexity in similar ways.

HOW ARCHAEOLOGISTS STUDY THE STATE

At the most general level, states can be categorized as either primary or secondary. The first developed where no state had previously existed, as an innovation in sociopolitical evolution; the second, through interaction and association with already-extant states. Those of Europe are secondary states. Why do extant states trigger new state development at their peripheries? One theory is that the presence of a powerful and organized neighbor creates a need in a less complex region to produce “equal” leaders and institutions to cope with and take advantage of nearby states. Another view is that local emerging elites, who already have power in their own societies, achieve greater control by limiting all access to the coveted goods and new ideologies brought by the neighboring state. In addition, if the nearby state presents a threat, leaders grow more efficient and organized to meet the danger. Yet another idea is that a system develops in which the original state stimulates development at its periphery to exploit its

raw materials and resources, yet at the same time tries to limit that development to take advantage of its superior position. Once the process begins, however, it often moves outside the control of the first polity.

Since it is not always easy to identify the process of state formation, or even the existence of a state, on the basis of activities at a single site, the archaeological study of states often takes a regional approach. The reason is clear if one considers the questions important for studying state formation. For example, who controls the economy in a society? Is it individuals, a kin-group, or the political apparatus of a state? To find an answer, one must look at many sites with economic activity and determine whether they are under centralized or individual control. Similar patterns are to be sought for political activity, religious organization, and other institutions likely to be controlled by a ruler or ruling class. In addition, geographers have demonstrated that a bureaucratic hierarchy is often reflected in “size classes” of sites—large centers, small centers, large villages, small villages—even though the officials themselves may not live in these communities, since in some societies elites value spatial separation from commoners as well as economic and political separation. In historically observed chiefly societies, there are centers and satellites, but usually only three classes of sites: primary centers, smaller centers, and small villages or scattered farms. States, however, display at least four types of communities. Thus, if archaeologists observe a change in the organization of settlements over a landscape: for example from many villages, all roughly the same size, to a pattern with various size centers and outlying sites, *and* this is concomitant with apparent increases in stratification, centrally coordinated defense or economic activities, this is often inferred as marking a transition in political organization.

EUROPE’S EARLIEST STATELIKE SOCIETIES

Although Italy and Greece are part of the European sphere today, in ancient times they belonged to a world system centered around Turkey, the Levant, and Asia; hence their earliest phases do not relate strongly to the archaeological record of the western, northern, and central European world-system. Nevertheless, the earliest state formation sequences in

Europe can be said to be linked to Italy and Greece. The development of Rome itself was secondary in nature, in response to interaction with the Greek and eastern Mediterranean worlds. Rome then developed into an empire—a state that subsumes other civilizations and cultures—and from that position triggered state formation in many other parts of Europe.

Important developments for early European states can be found in the Celtic Iron Age, which began in about 800 B.C. and constituted an ethnolinguistic-political complex encompassing parts of France, Switzerland, southern Germany, the Czech Republic, and other regions. Already, in the Hallstatt period (800–480 B.C.), complex pre-state societies were coalescing as a result of the internal development of a Celtic political elite and interactions with Greek traders in the western Mediterranean who established Massalia (Marseille) at the mouth of the Rhône. During the La Tène period (500–50 B.C.), in the second century B.C., Rome began to expand beyond the Italian peninsula, and, in response, sites called *oppida* emerged north of the Alps throughout much of western and central Europe, spreading to eastern Hungary, Slovakia, Germany, Belgium, and southwestern France. These were fortified central places with nucleated proto-urban populations, often housing a number of industries and the residences of rulers. Clues to their development lie in their defensive locations and walls, their close proximity to mineral-rich areas and good agricultural soils, and their position on trade routes.

The nature of these settlements has been debated: were they city-states, like the small polities of classic period Greece, or were they chiefly societies? *Oppida* such as the well-investigated Kelheim site, with walls that required more than a million person-hours to construct, had populations in the thousands, representing several social classes engaged in many specialized industries, and they appear to have been economic and administrative centers. Evidence at smaller sites indicates that elites may have lived outside the *oppida* as well as in them. This is not at all unusual: in fact, in some states, few elites live in towns. Many archaeologists now classify the *oppida* as archaic or emergent states that were developing independently before Rome's intervention. Their full flowering was cut off in the mid-first century B.C. by the expansion of the Romans through

conquest, and the eventual removal of local rulers and their replacement with Roman officials. Until the collapse of Rome's empire, these regions were provinces within a larger state entity.

Similar developments occurred in Britain, as illustrated by Maiden Castle, a fortified hilltop that was home to as many as four thousand people. The Romans defeated its occupants and their leaders in A.D. 43, an event to which the huge stockpile of weapons found inside and the Roman projectiles found outside bear archaeological witness.

The Celtic culture was not the only one in Europe to have witnessed state formation in the Iron Age. Northern Europe, inhabited primarily by Germanic groups, was never conquered by Rome; and yet, beginning in the first century A.D., interaction with Roman traders and ambassadors seeking wealth and political advantage brought political change to what the Romans called Free Germania, which included much of present-day Germany, all of Denmark, and other Nordic regions. Although the empire planned to conquer this area, it was unable to do so. Thus, unlike the Celtic groups closer to Rome, the peoples of this region retained their independence and built a more politically complex society during the last centuries of the Roman Empire.

POST-ROMAN STATES IN EUROPE

The fall of Rome, like the collapse of any large, integrative political system, had a huge impact not only within its own borders but outside them as well. The post-Roman world consisted of former imperial areas and areas that had never been conquered, and the course of subsequent state formation was different in the two zones because of the preexisting conditions specific to each one. In northern Europe, post-Roman Scandinavians were left in disarray after the imperial collapse, but responded by forming their own, more centralized structures to provide the power and prestige that local leaders had previously acquired from their Roman connections. In the period from A.D. 500 to 1000, they slowly acquired increasingly statelike qualities. Between the eighth and tenth centuries, a settlement system, which included cities, towns, villages, and hamlets, emerged; in addition, a "state" style of runic monuments spread from the epicenter of the state to new regions under its control, and rulers began to mint

coins, collect taxes, and mobilize large labor forces for public works projects. Although large labor-intensive projects are possible in many types of societies, the building of the Danevirke, an earthwork many kilometers in length, by the Danes beginning in A.D. 737, and the founding of several marketplaces and towns that show signs of large defensive works, attest to the emergence of a stronger central authority.

Nearby Slavic peoples, such as the Wends living in the Baltic plain, also began to display more political complexity; administrative centers, markets, and other integrative features arose, often in connection with the coercive power of local rulers, who were linked by marriage to the earliest Danish and Swedish royal lines.

A different series of conditions was found in the Romanized regions after the fall of the empire. Many Germanic and some Slavic peoples flowed onto the Romano-Celtic continent at this time, and, from these old and new societies, new states emerged, often called the “successor states,” since they succeeded, or at least followed, the imperial apparatus. The “starting points” of these new polities varied a great deal: in some areas, barbarian Visigoths, Ostrogoths, Vandals, Langobards, Burgunds, and others took up residence and rulership in what is now France, Germany, Spain, Italy, and other nations. Elsewhere, collapsed provinces re-emerged as states. For example, the Merovingian and then Carolingian dynasties of the Franks, though Germanic in origin, came from the Romanized side of the Rhine, while the Visigoth kingdom was created when the Roman government ceded taxes and administration in one area to a Germanic warlord in A.D. 413. As imperial institutions fell apart, a system developed that fused Germanic, Slavic, Romano-Celtic, and Roman elements.

England, a category in itself, was both a former Roman province and a somewhat “de-Romanized” area, since it had been subject to many destabilizing Saxon attacks in the fourth century. It had also lost its Roman connection early. Constantine III, a Roman soldier who became the ruler of the British province, began a campaign in 407 to seize the imperial throne. To back his bid for imperial power, he took the last remaining Romano-British troops with him as he crossed the Channel in his march toward Rome. As a result, the hapless Britons were sudden-

ly forced to organize their own government and military. Archaeological evidence from the terminal Roman sequence shows that the urban centers declined and the many rural villas faded away. Roman artifacts and coins are largely absent from strata more recent than about A.D. 400. By the time the rest of the empire began to collapse in the 450s, Britain had far fewer remnants of Roman structures, such as the imperial church organization, landownership systems, and legal practices. Thus, when their new states emerged during the post-Roman period, they had a unique flavor.

The collapse of the Roman Empire in Europe was felt long after the fifth century, as various powers competed for supremacy or at least for a foothold. To take just one example, at least two states, Normandy and Flanders, formed within what would become the kingdom of France in the ninth and tenth centuries. This occurred well before the king of France in the Paris Basin had his own state, which eventually conquered the others. Additional states were formed around very small territories, counties, towns, or even the area immediately around the seats of local nobles. Many archaeologists have found it difficult to classify these areas as they existed in post-Roman times, since they did not display “typical” state features, such as urbanism, yet they were also not “chiefdoms” in the anthropological sense. During the mid- to late twentieth century, archaeologists working with paradigms according to which states were expected to conform to a narrow set of characteristics sometimes called them “post-state societies.” However, now that our concept of what a state is and how diversely it can form has been modified, such polities can often be classified as “differently organized” states. For example, structurally, Charlemagne’s eighth-century Frankish kingdom was essentially nonurban, and was similar to what is termed a “paramount chiefdom,” with the king keeping the allegiance of his vassals with opulent gifts and feasts, yet it was territorially larger than most modern states and had a number of the classic expression of variables usually associated with states. As the Holy Roman Empire expanded and gained new lands confiscated from the conquered, kings began to give land to their vassals instead. This increased the vassals’ power in relation to the king’s, thus destabilizing the empire and facilitating its further fragmentation.

State formation in Europe may seem at first to be a tangled web of societies that rise, spread, shrink, and fall in a nearly incomprehensible manner. Most people, comparing it to their own experience as citizens of a modern state, would find it highly confusing. In fact, however, this is a short-term perspective. Controlled chaos is the nature of the state, and is more clearly visible to archaeologists, since they have a long-term perspective over many thousands of years with which to make their analysis. Many regions, when viewed from a long-term perspective, have periods of fragmentation into numerous, often warring groups, followed by consolidation into larger entities under unified rule. When Europe and its state formation sequences are viewed in this light, it is clear that, out of many Celtic proto-states, a period of unification emerged, during which they were provinces under Rome. Upon its collapse, these provinces fell back into various polities, which again underwent a fragmented warring era, and then slowly merged back into larger and larger aggregates under the Holy Roman Empire, only to fall back into a series of small states. In northern Europe, the chiefly societies of Scandinavia and northern Germany aggregated into Viking Age states, then were joined together under the Hansa and Kalmar unions, and later divided again. This cycle is seen across the globe, and is just as evident in the Valley of Mexico and the Andes as

it is in Europe. Thus, while Europe's various regions have their own unique historical trajectories, whose differences and contingencies are studied by archaeologists, Europe's states can also be compared broadly not only to one another but to cultures as distant as the Aztec and Inca.

See also **Maiden Castle** (vol. 1, part 1); **Oppida** (vol. 2, part 6); **Kelheim** (vol. 2, part 6).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Arnold, Bettina, and D. Blair Gibson, eds. *Celtic Chieftdom, Celtic State*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1995.
- Ehrenreich, Robert M., Carole L. Crumley, and Janet E. Levy, eds. *Heterarchy and the Analysis of Complex Societies*. Arlington, Va.: American Anthropological Association, 1995.
- Hedeager, Lotte. *Iron-Age Societies: From Tribe to State in Northern Europe 500 BC to AD 700*. Oxford: Blackwell, 1992.
- Hodges, Richard. *Towns and Trade in the Age of Charlemagne*. London: Duckworth, 2000.
- Randsborg, Klaus. *The First Millennium A.D. in Europe and the Mediterranean*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1991.
- Wells, Peter S. *The Barbarians Speak: How the Conquered Peoples Shaped Roman Europe*. Princeton, N.J.: Princeton University Press, 1999.

TINA L. THURSTON



TRADE AND EXCHANGE

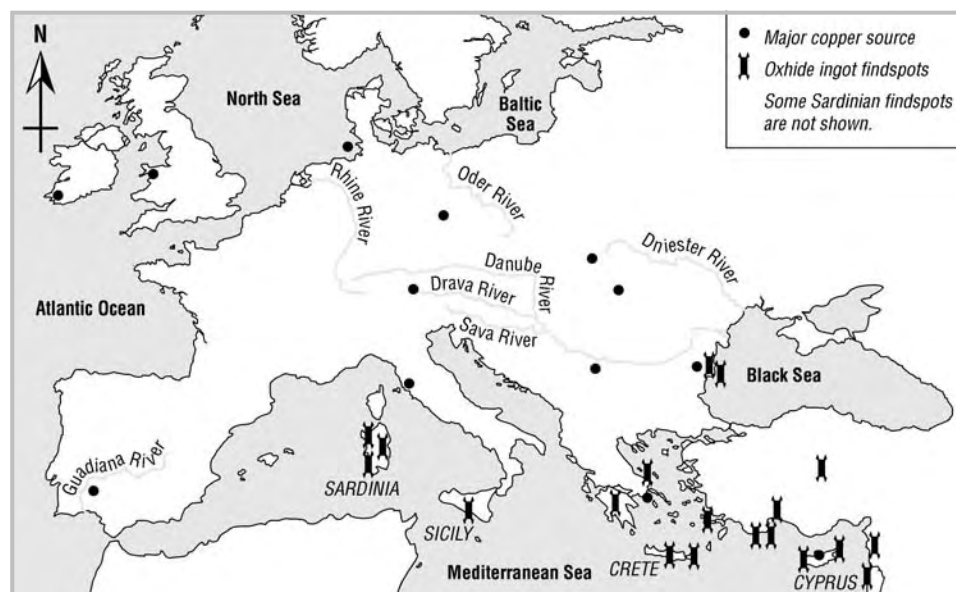
The changing European economy between A.D. 400 and 1000 lies at the nexus of several trajectories of cultural transformation. The major transition from the Roman world to the medieval world is echoed by the geographically ever diminishing economy, from a large-scale interregional trade network to smaller spheres of exchange. In addition, the context of trade within what once had been Roman provinces differed from areas that had been inside the Roman sphere of interaction but outside the Roman purview. Changing connections, changing trade routes, changes in the social, economic, and political context of the marketplace are important considerations. Although historical records give selectively (or arbitrarily) preserved glimpses into these problems, only archaeology can reveal the whole picture, from crafts workshops to marketplace organization, from trade routes to the patterns of interaction between the public, artisans, merchants, and elites of the successor states.

ORIGINS AND CONTEXT OF EARLY MEDIEVAL TRADE

Local trade in early medieval Europe is a continuation of a long tradition of exchange stretching back into prehistoric times, but one of the distinguishing attributes of trade in the Iron Age, Roman era, and Early Middle Ages was the increased mobility of people and goods. Exchange of some type over relatively long distances dates to the Paleolithic, and while recent isotopic analysis of Neolithic skeletons suggests that early farmers were more mobile than previously thought, their travel from upland to lowland and along river valleys was aimed at settling in

new places. In the Bronze Age most trade was local, but rare substances, such as bronze and amber, clearly were moved over long distances. Outside the Mediterranean, where trade was organized professionally, goods probably were traded hand to hand by many intervening individuals.

The Iron Age saw a transition to trade as a regular, major part of the subsistence and political economies of European polities. This was due in part to heightened political interactions and improved transport technology, especially in shipping. As in earlier times, Iron Age elites probably controlled importation of luxuries that helped maintain their community status. Later, while still controlling production and trade of the most valuable items, they lost their monopoly over the creation and dissemination of other goods, and the continuing trend from generalist farmers toward economic specialization in various trades and occupations created an artisan class and a market for their output. In the Celtic Iron Age, populous proto-urban *oppida* settlements of continental Europe continued to be the destination for exotic goods. Attached craft specialists created indigenous prestige objects of outstanding beauty for their elite masters, even as others produced less spectacular goods for local exchange and consumption: ceramic vessels, metal tools, and items of clothing and adornment. Eventually, the urban societies of the Iron Age Mediterranean culminated in the market economy of the Roman Empire, where each year professional merchants transported hundreds of thousands of tons of goods in large cargo ships. A vast trading system with com-



Major copper sources and oxhide ingot findspots.

plex rules and regulations crisscrossed the empire before its decline.

Thus, a combination of earlier trade and exchange traditions combined with the legacy of the Romans influenced the development of early medieval markets. Post-Roman trade varied regionally, depending on whether an area had been part of the former Romanized core, a less Romanized province, such as England or Germania, or a region, such as Scandinavia or the Slavic lands, that was outside the empire but regularly interacted with Rome.

The Roman Empire stretched from Syria to Scotland, but daily governance was conducted at a local level. A Roman *civitas* and its hinterland made up a highly autonomous administrative unit, organized loosely under a provincial governor with a military contingent. When the greater Roman entity became unstable, provinces grew even more autonomous, eventually breaking into regions and then subregions. The post-Roman era is known for its migrations and incursions, as non-Roman outsiders, customarily called barbarians, invaded and seized these fragments of the empire. Many Europeans outside the Roman sphere were content to stay at home, but even so their local economies were affected deeply by the decline of the imperial system. Thus, the question of continuity between the late Roman and early medieval economies during this

period of unimaginable change is an important issue.

THEORIES ON TRADE AND EXCHANGE

The debate has long simmered over urbanism, trade, and markets in post-Roman Europe. Early-twentieth-century historians, most notably Henri Pirenne, combined the documentary record with deductive impressions about the origins of feudalism to formulate several plausible hypotheses about urbanization, markets, and long-distance trade in the post-Roman world. Pirenne's influential thesis proposed that the Roman organization of Europe was never dismantled but persisted far into the medieval period. Only as European trade with the Mediterranean was cut off by Muslim expansion in the seventh century did Germanic rulers of the Dark Ages, such as Charlemagne and his contemporaries, slowly expand their regions' agricultural economies.

The refutation of this theory and a new understanding of markets, money, and manufacturing during the barbarian age have come about largely as the result of the revelations of modern archaeology. The twentieth century saw dramatic changes in urban and marketplace excavation methods. Early civic projects in European towns were conducted by workmen clearing arbitrary layers, keeping sketchy records of the curiosities they unearthed. After

World War II, archaeologists working in bomb-damaged cities primarily used trenches for investigation. As they looked at small bits of deep strata, they could detect a long and complex history at a particular site, and could even date the strata, but they were unable to observe the “big picture.” Only in the last decades of the twentieth century, when horizontal excavation became dominant, could large-scale exposure of former surface areas uncover many contemporary structures, features, artifact scatters, and boundaries as well as their patterning and context. By the 1980s archaeologists began to challenge earlier ideas about the complex economics of the early Middle Ages.

ARCHAEOLOGICAL EVIDENCE FOR TRADE AND EXCHANGE IN FORMER IMPERIAL EUROPE

The provinces of Rome had a busy market economy based on import, export, and manufacturing. Trade between provinces was facilitated by shared traditions, rules, and regulations within a single political economy. As the empire’s troubles deepened through the course of the fifth century, could producers and consumers maintain the convenience of customary trade, or were they forced or encouraged by changing conditions to find new economic solutions? Archaeological investigations around the Mediterranean and Europe have shown that in contrast to Pirenne’s idea of post-Roman continuity, by the late fifth century the Roman world was in decline, leaving a vacuum in which the provinces became disconnected and transformed into regional and subregional systems and in which markets largely lost their character as interregional and long-distance trade centers.

While post-Roman primary documents exist, perhaps the socioeconomic crises are best seen through archaeological evidence. During the imperial era, Rome’s Campus Martius was a beautifully planned and maintained monumental landscape. In addition to parade grounds, it held temples, porticoes, baths, the stadium, circus, and several theaters for public enjoyment. By the late fifth century it was despoiled: squatters and craftspeople were camped out in shantytowns within the ruins. One excavation found a glassmaker’s stall of the fifth or sixth century supplanted in the seventh or eighth century by a workshop manufacturing religious objects for the clergy and local markets. The extremely local and

limited nature of trade, compared with earlier times, is illustrated by the fact that imported items came from no farther than Sicily. Another indicator of economic decline is coinage. Between the seventh and eighth centuries alone, gold coins dropped from 90 percent to 10 percent content and silver from 70 percent to less than 30 percent, and bronze coins were as thin as paper.

At sites elsewhere in Italy dating to the fifth to seventh centuries, commercial harbors were abandoned, and there is a strong decline in import-trade amphora from Africa and the eastern Mediterranean, indicating that interregional trade had collapsed. On the Adriatic at fifth-century Butrint, fortifications were built against barbarian invaders, palaces were left unfinished, and squatters moved in. Merchants occupied the ruined forums of other towns across Roman Europe, creating makeshift workshops in the rubble of former citadels. While Rome and a few other southern cities maintained a modicum of urban character, western European towns and markets were largely abandoned. Long-distance commercial exchange and the interregional market system had ceased operation.

TRADE, EXCHANGE AND MARKETS OUTSIDE THE FORMER EMPIRE

Archaeological evidence shows regular, active trade between Romans and non-Romans before A.D. 400. In return for elite goods—swords, adornments, wine and serving vessels—non-Roman peoples exported utilitarian wares, such as leather, hide, food-stuffs, and slaves. Modern excavations at elite-controlled ports, such as Gudme-Lundeborg in Denmark, usually show a chieftain’s compound with a complement of craftspeople and a harbor during the Roman era.

Rulers in barbarian regions thus became highly dependent on Roman goods for maintaining their social status. After Rome’s troubles began and the imperial system began to totter, Roman goods disappeared from these sites, as long-distance trade was curtailed. Despite the cutoff of Roman items, local rulers still needed to impress their peers and overawe their subjects, so the trade in elite goods could not be allowed to end. Instead, smaller, less ambitious trade networks were formed between the upper classes in Britain, the Low Countries, Scandinavia, and Germanic and Slavic regions. Trade con-

tinued at some Roman-era places; more important, however, between A.D. 700 and 1000 a series of new, specialized sites combining crafts production with a trading center appeared. Among them were Ipswich and Hamwic in Britain; Birka, Ribe, Kaupang, and Hedeby in Scandinavia; Quentovic in northern France; Dorestad on the Dutch Rhine; Staraya Ladoga in Russia; and Wolin in Poland. Similar sequences are found in the Czech Republic and northern Germany.

These markets, commonly referred to as emporia, were not the spontaneous efforts of merchants and manufacturers. Local rulers' involvement is apparent in elite-built and maintained fortifications, indicating royal administration and protection, at emporia such as Hedeby, Ipswich, and Hamwic. Ribe and Löddeköpinge in Denmark and Sweden, respectively, had nondefensive boundary markers that probably delimited the area of regulated trade. At Mikulčice in the Czech Republic and at Hamburg, Lübeck, and Brandenburg, Germany, excavations show that local chieftains established fortress-like residences with attached craftspeople in the eighth century, after which non-elite settlements developed around them, leading to urban marketplaces.

Eventually, less luxurious local items were made and traded at these sites, probably because the taxes that kings could collect in a regulated royal market became as important as acquiring their own sumptuary goods. Anglo-Saxon texts confirm that between A.D. 700 and 1000 there was a steady rise in tolls and tariffs on trade. While such documentation is found only in England, scholars believe this was paralleled throughout the emerging successor states, providing a substantial royal income. As these states became important trading powers, new trade routes sprang up, including the Roman-era Rhine-Rhône river route between north and south, which served new trading places, such as Frisian Dorestad on the Rhine, and Roman-Baltic connections via the Oder (Viadna), Dnieper, Dniester, and Prut, the Elbe, Weser (Visurgis), and Eider grew active, serving Hedeby, Hamburg-Bremen, Lübeck, and Wolin. Sea routes continued to connect Atlantic Europe with Britain, and new sea-lanes linked Dorestad, Ribe, and Hedeby with emporia in Sweden and Norway.

NEEDFUL THINGS AND OBJECTS OF DESIRE

Despite the importance of trade to people in the Middle Ages, textual references to early medieval trade remain fairly sparse. Thus, the archaeological examination of ships, wharves, workshops, warehouses, and market organization sometimes is the best option for studying the manufacturers, merchants, and middlemen whose activities were transforming Europe. Through many extensive excavations, archaeologists have discovered what goods were coveted by both rulers and commoners. Precious metals and gems were reserved primarily for the royal and upper classes, as were fine imports of ceramic and glass, wine, textiles, and weapons. Locally produced adornments were skillfully made and available to a larger group of well-off citizens. Production of non-luxury items used by the broader populace is evident, and each trade had its unique artifact assemblage. Weaving tools and loom parts are common, as is the debris from workshops manufacturing combs and pins, in the form of sawed-off bone and horn fragments and partially finished products. Metal casting leaves fragments of crucibles and molds, brooches, and fasteners. Iron yields large amounts of slag, iron bars and rods, tool preforms (blank, pre-formed and unfinished tools), and, in some cases, the tongs and hammers of smiths. Advanced glass industries are evidenced by molten glass wasters and deposits of malformed glass beads; in one case, at the Danish trading site of Dankirke, archaeologists discovered a warehouse of glass drinking horns that had been destroyed by fire. Some sites yield butchered animal and fish bones from purveyors of foodstuffs, and thick dung layers indicate trade in live cattle. Coins, scales, weights, and moneybox keys sometimes are present.

Marketplaces often are ephemeral, with structures resembling fairground stalls and booths. Collections of sunken floored huts often are evident, and at Löddeköpinge, Sweden, the seasonal nature of the marketplace is seen in alternating occupational layers and sterile sand in the floors of these pit houses. On the other hand, many markets were permanent, with continuous occupations by specific workshops and industries. At Ribe and Hedeby, workshop boundaries and property divisions were maintained without change for many generations, reflecting long-term regulation, while the channel-

ing of streams and the gridlike layout of streets and blocks show central planning at Hedeby.

By the end of the first millennium, long-distance and local trade in luxury and non-luxury goods was vital to the economies of medieval states. Taxes and regulations remained, but the specially constructed and maintained royal trading emporia disappeared. They were either supplanted by or transformed into urban markets within the cities of later medieval Europe.

See also **Emporia** (vol. 2, part 7); **Ipswich** (vol. 2, part 7); **Staraya Ladoga** (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Callmer, Johan. *Production Site and Market Area: Some Notes on Field Work in Progress, 1981–2*. Lund, Sweden: Meddelanden från Lunds Universitets Historiska Museum (1983): 135–165.
- Clarke, H., and B. Ambrosiani. *Towns in the Viking Age*. Leicester: Leicester University Press, 1991.
- Fehring, Günter P. *The Archaeology of Medieval Germany: An Introduction*. Translated by Ross Samson. London: Routledge, 1991.
- Frandsen, L., and S. Jensen. “Pre-Viking and Early Viking Age Ribe.” *Journal of Danish Archaeology* 6 (1988): 175–189.
- Hedeager, Lotte. *Iron Age Societies: From Tribe to State in Northern Europe, 500 BC to AD 700*. Translated by John Hines. Oxford: Blackwell, 1992.
- Hodges, Richard. *Towns and Trade in the Age of Charlemagne*. London: Duckworth, 2000.
- . “Emporia, Monasteries, and the Economic Foundation of Medieval Europe.” In *Medieval Archaeology: Papers of the Seventeenth Annual Conference of the Center for Medieval and Early Renaissance Studies*. Edited by Charles L. Redman. Binghamton, N.Y.: State University of New York, 1989.
- . *Dark Age Economics: The Origins of Towns and Trade AD 600–1000*. London: Duckworth, 1982.
- Randsborg, Klavs. *The First Millennium AD in Europe and the Mediterranean*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1991.
- Sawyer, P. “Early Fairs and Markets in England and Scandinavia.” In *The Market in History*. Edited by B. L. Latham and A. J. H. Anderson, pp. 59–77. London and Dover, N.H.: Croom–Helm, 1986.
- Schietzel, K. “Haithabu: A Study on the Development of Early Urban Settlement in Northern Europe.” In *Comparative History of Urban Development in Non-Roman Europe: Ireland, Wales, Denmark, Germany, Poland, and Russia from the Ninth to the Thirteenth Century*. Edited by H. B. Clark and A. Simms. BAR International Series, no. 255. Oxford: British Archaeological Reports, 1985.
- Wells, Peter S. “The Iron Age.” In *European Prehistory: A Survey*. Edited by Sarunas Milisauskas, pp. 335–383. New York: Kluwer Academic/Plenum Publishers, 2002.

TINA L. THURSTON



COINAGE OF THE EARLY MIDDLE AGES

In the early centuries of the first millennium A.D. the borders of the Roman Empire divided Europe into two monetary zones: (1) a southern and western zone, in which coins were minted and circulated more or less regularly as an intrinsic part of the economy, and (2) a northern and eastern zone, which made no coins of its own and imported coins sporadically as a result of various interactions, economic and otherwise. This same monetary division of Europe, following approximately the valleys of the Rhine and Danube Rivers, survived the political dissolution of the Roman Empire and was maintained almost until the end of the millennium. It was only in the ninth century and especially the tenth century that lands beyond the Roman imperial frontiers began to produce their own coins to supply a monetized economy.

ROMAN COINAGE IN EUROPE

Coinage was unified throughout the western Roman Empire, with mints scattered across Europe producing coins of various denominations of gold, silver, and copper. Minting, like many other aspects of the Roman state, went through a period of disarray in the third century, to be revived and regularized by the reforms of the Roman emperors Diocletian and Constantine I around A.D. 300. The regular mints of Europe for the next two centuries included Lyons and Arles in Gaul; Trier in Rhineland Germany; Rome, Milan, Ravenna, and Aquileia in Italy; Siscia (modern-day Sisak) in Pannonia; and Thessalonica (now Salonika) in Greece. Spain, which had been an important source of bullion in the earlier empire, lacked a mint in the later

period, as did England after the closing of the mint of London in A.D. 325.

The standard coin of the late empire was the gold solidus, which was of pure alloy and an unchanging weight of 24 karats, or $\frac{1}{72}$ of the Roman pound (4.5 modern grams), from its introduction in A.D. 309 well into the tenth century, by which time it was called a *nomisma*. Fractions of the solidus also were minted; in the west the third, or tremissis, was most common (fig. 1). The silver denarius had been the basis of the Roman monetary system during the republic and early empire, but in the fourth and fifth centuries silver coinage was rare. Copper coinage was relatively common, of varying weights and denominations. By the fifth century as many as 7,200 copper *nummi* were needed to buy a gold solidus, with no intermediate denominations available. The obverse of late Roman coins generally bore the image of the reigning emperor, with his name and honorific titles making up the surrounding legend. On the reverse pagan deities gradually gave way to generalized symbolic representations of Roman virtues and scenes of the emperor in military contexts; explicitly Christian imagery was rare.

Beyond the frontiers delimited by the *limes*, or boundaries, along the Rhine and Danube Rivers, Roman coinage was a familiar phenomenon, especially to those in direct contact with the empire. The frontier regions themselves constituted a heavily monetized zone, with coins exchanged to provide for the needs of the soldiers garrisoned there and to pay for commodities imported across the border. Military payments also fueled the export of Roman

coinage beyond the frontiers in the form of salaries to individual barbarian soldiers who returned home after service in the Roman army and as payments to federated bands of warriors from outside the empire who were enlisted into its campaigns. Coins also were exported as tribute to barbarian leaders and were carried back home among the booty gained on cross-border raids.

The export of Roman coins to barbarian Europe is attested to by archaeological finds throughout the north and east of the Continent. For the most part copper coins are found nearest to the frontiers, chiefly as stray losses on excavated habitation sites. Gold coins are encountered farther afield, usually buried in hoards varying from a few coins to thousands. Some of these hoards, chiefly in the area north of the Danube, have been identified as salary payments to individual soldiers and as blocks of tribute to such groups as the Huns. Solidi found in Scandinavia constitute a less-clear class of exports; these coins cluster in the period A.D. 454 to 488 and have been interpreted variously as the result of a trade in furs and slaves or sums sent north by federates and invaders.

THE COINAGES OF THE EARLY GERMANIC STATES

The coins produced by the Germanic rulers who succeeded the Roman emperors in Europe followed the form of the earlier Roman examples, if not necessarily retaining their content or function. Again gold coinage dominated, especially the denomination of the tremissis, one-third of the solidus. Silver and copper issues were rare and intermittent. Although the earliest coins were of pure gold, like their Roman predecessors, by A.D. 600 debasements effected by alloying silver with the gold can be noted in many of the issues. The weight of the coinage also underwent reduction; by A.D. 600 the standard of the solidus in Gaul had dropped from 24 karats of weight to 21 karats.

The first issues of the Germanic rulers also followed the imperial example by placing the name and image of the reigning emperor, by that time in Constantinople (modern-day Istanbul), on the obverse of their gold coins. The rarer issues of silver and copper coins sometimes had the name or monogram of the issuing king. Shortly before the middle of the sixth century the Frankish king



Fig. 1. Frisian gold tremissis of Dorestad. THE AMERICAN NUMISMATIC SOCIETY, NEW YORK. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

Theodebert put his own name on his gold issues, thereby provoking an angry response from the Byzantine writer and historian Procopius, who asserted that only emperors had the right to put their images on gold coins. By the end of the century kings of the Suevi and the Visigoths also had replaced the imperial name with their own on their gold coins. Frisian and Anglo-Saxon gold tremisses were modeled on those of Francia; the name of an English king first appears on a coin in the first half of the seventh century. The pseudo-imperial coinage lasted longer in Italy, where the Ostrogothic issues were replaced by those of the Byzantine reconquerors and finally by the Langobards, who put their king's name on the coinage only at the end of the seventh century. Most of these issues followed the Roman and Byzantine imagery of a portrait obverse and a symbolic reverse, with the cross becoming the most common reverse image.

It is evident that a coinage comprising only gold pieces, as was characteristic of most of Europe in the fifth through seventh centuries, was ill suited to a retail economy and would have been outside the daily experience of most people. A great proliferation of mints, especially in the Merovingian and Visigothic kingdoms, implies a change in the circumstances of minting from centralized to local, paralleling changes in the bases of tax collection. This phenom-



Fig. 2. Silver sceatta. THE AMERICAN NUMISMATIC SOCIETY, NEW YORK. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

enon is most apparent in the coinage of seventh-century Francia, where the names of hundreds of mint towns appear on the coins, along with names of thousands of people identified as “moneyers.”

Finds of Byzantine gold coins and southern Frankish ones in Frisia (a northern province in modern-day Netherlands) and England suggest a trade route for goods imported from the north to the Mediterranean. Finds of coins of the sixth and seventh centuries are extremely rare beyond the boundaries of the former Roman Empire, however; the few tremisses found in western Jutland seem to tie into the Frisian economic network rather than to a Scandinavian or Baltic sphere.

THE AGE OF SILVER

In the course of the seventh century the gold coinages of Merovingian Francia, of Frisia, and of Anglo-Saxon England gave way to silver issues, and silver remained virtually the only coin metal in Transalpine Europe for the rest of the millennium. In Spain the Visigoths continued to produce debased gold tremisses until Muslim invaders eliminated their kingdom in A.D. 711. The Langobard kings maintained their gold coinages in Italy until Charlemagne’s conquest at the end of the eighth century, and the semi-independent Beneventan dukes continued minting gold into the ninth century.

In Francia silver coins moved gradually away from the seventh-century type of portrait and cross with the names of moneyer and mint. By the end of

the Merovingian dynasty in the mid–eighth century most denarii were small chunks of silver with simple geometric designs on both faces and few legible inscriptions. The silver coins of Frisia and England in the period, known as sceattas, also were small, thick, and lacking in legends; their imagery in some cases appears to have derived from local artistic traditions (fig. 2). A brief issue of sceattas minted at Ribe on the west coast of Jutland c. A.D. 720 can lay claim to being the earliest European coinage minted beyond the ancient Roman borders.

In the second half of the eighth century silver coinages underwent modifications in appearance and weight standards that resulted in the coin known as the penny (called the denarius in Latin, the denier in French, and the pfenning in German). These innovations appear to have been the initiatives of Carolingian kings, with Pepin the Short, the first of the “mayors of the palace” to take the title of king, standardizing the coinage shortly after becoming king of Francia in A.D. 751 and his son Charlemagne creating a new, heavier penny for his enlarged realm in about A.D. 793 (fig. 3). The coins of the kingdoms that made up Anglo-Saxon England followed a similar pattern of reform and standardization.

By A.D. 800 the silver penny was a broad, well-struck coin weighing between 1.5 and 2.0 modern grams. In England the coins usually featured a royal portrait on the obverse, whereas the Carolingians favored geometric types, especially the monogram of the ruler’s name. Anglo-Saxon and Carolingian



Fig. 3. Silver penny of Charlemagne. THE AMERICAN NUMISMATIC SOCIETY, NEW YORK. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

coins bear the names of a substantial number of mints throughout their respective realms, generally coinciding with the main commercial and ecclesiastical centers. No such mints were located north or west of the Roman boundaries of England or beyond the Rhine-Danube frontiers on the Continent.

The standardized silver pennies of the Carolingian empire and of England provided a sound basis for retail and long-distance commerce and facilitated the development of a monetized segment of the economy to supplement the heavily subsistence and manorial agricultural base. The uniformity of the Carolingian coinage broke down with the dissolution of the centralized power of the empire. Counts and dukes and even bishops and abbots took over minting throughout the empire, although they often retained a royal or imperial Carolingian name on their coins. In the course of the tenth century minting began east of the Rhine and north of the Danube, chiefly at mints in Saxony exploiting the newly discovered silver deposits there.

Almost no English or Carolingian coins of the ninth century are found in Scandinavia that would correspond to the well-documented booty seized by Viking raiders and tributes exacted by them; if such wealth reached the Baltic region in the form of coins, these must have been melted rather than buried. A series of coins imitating those of Charlemagne was minted in Jutland, probably at Hedeby (Haithabu in German), in the early ninth century,

but local minting then ceased until about the year 1000.

Large Viking Age hoards are found in the lands bordering the Volga basin, on the eastern shores of the Baltic, and in Scandinavia, especially on the island of Gotland. These comprise Islamic silver dirhams, chiefly of the tenth century; Byzantine silver coins from the same period; and German and English pennies of the late tenth century and the eleventh century. As in the case of the earlier hoards of Roman and Byzantine solidi, these silver finds of the end of the millennium have been interpreted variously as the results of trade, booty, tribute, and the pay of mercenary soldiers. The extent of the use and recirculation of these coins in a local northern economic sphere is difficult to ascertain.

By the end of the first millennium A.D. coinage had spread throughout Europe. The silver penny was struck by royal authority in England and by more localized rulers in France, Germany, and Italy. Minting was initiated in Bohemia in the A.D. 960s, in Kiev in about A.D. 990, and in Hungary and Poland shortly after 1000. In Scandinavia the Hedeby coinage was revived after A.D. 950, and by the year 1000 Danish, Swedish, and Norwegian kings had initiated royal coinages. Not all of these initiatives resulted in continuous minting, and it would not be until the commercial revolution of the twelfth century that Europe could be said to have a fully monetized economy.

See also Coinage of Iron Age Europe (vol. 2, part 6).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Bellinger, Alfred R., and Philip Grierson. *Catalogue of the Byzantine Coins in the Dumbarton Oaks Collection and in the Whittemore Collection*. 5 vols. Washington, D.C.: Dumbarton Oaks Research Library and Collection, 1966–1973. (The standard reference work for Byzantine coins. Three volumes pertain to the early Middle Ages: Vol. 1, *Anastasius I to Maurice, A.D. 491–602*; Vol. 2, *Phocas to Theodosius, A.D. 602–717*; Vol. 3, *Leo III to Nicephorus III, A.D. 717–1081*.)
- Blackburn, Mark, and D. M. Metcalf, eds. *Viking-Age Coinage in the Northern Lands*. 2 vols. BAR International Series, no. 122. Oxford: British Archaeological Reports, 1981. (A collection of articles surveying the importation of coinage into the Scandinavian and Baltic world at the end of the first millennium.)
- Grierson, Philip, and Mark Blackburn. *Medieval European Coinage*. Vol. 1, *The Early Middle Ages (5th–10th Centuries)*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1986. (The definitive study of all coinages minted in Europe in the period, with discussion and bibliography summarizing all the important literature to its date of publication.)
- Grierson, Philip, and Melinda Mays. *Catalogue of Late Roman Coins in the Dumbarton Oaks Collection and the Whittemore Collection*. Washington, D.C.: Dumbarton Oaks Research Library and Collection, 1992.
- Hendy, Michael. “From Public to Private: The Western Barbarian Coinages as a Mirror of the Disintegration of Late Roman State Structures.” *Viator* 19 (1988): 29–78.
- McCormick, Michael. *Origins of the European Economy: Communications and Commerce, AD 300–900*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 2002. (Uses the evidence of the importation of Byzantine and Islamic coins into Europe to argue for the importance of commerce in the Carolingian economy.)
- Metcalf, D. M. “Viking-Age Numismatics.” *Numismatic Chronicle* 155 (1995): 413–441; 156 (1996): 399–428; 157 (1997): 295–335; 158 (1998): 345–371; 159 (1999): 395–430. (A series of articles examining coinage in the North Sea and the Baltic region from late Roman times to the end of the first millennium.)
- Spufford, Peter. *Money and Its Use in Medieval Europe*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1988. (A thorough discussion of the role of coinage in the European economy from the end of the Roman period through the later Middle Ages.)

ALAN M. STAHL



GENDER IN EARLY MEDIEVAL EUROPE

Gender is an underlying structure of everyday life. Anthropological and archaeological studies of gender emerged in the 1960s and 1970s as a result of issues raised by the feminist movement. Sociocultural anthropologists came to realize that women had been either subsumed in the study of “man” or simply ignored altogether. Thus, these new studies emphasized the presence of women in current and past cultures in order to correct for androcentric biases and the previous neglect of women. In the 1980s, with the understanding that women could not be the exclusive focus of research, the field of inquiry turned to gendered studies, dealing not only with women’s roles and women’s issues but also with the interaction of women and men in society. At the same time, an increasing trend toward alternative issues, such as queer studies, performance studies, and embodiment (particularly its focus on the corporeal aspects of the body), brought about more diverse viewpoints in the fields of archaeology and anthropology.

Archaeological research was somewhat slower than research in anthropology to get on the bandwagon, and early medieval research was slower still, although historical research on women and gender flourished for the later medieval periods, which had plentiful documentary evidence. The seminal publication of Margaret Conkey and Janet Spector’s 1984 work on gender and archaeology was followed by a number of studies focused on trying to find women in the archaeological record, often through differentiation of labor. Spurred by the development of new theoretical perspectives within the

framework of post-processual archaeology, the 1990s saw an increased focus on gender rather than women, but a truly unbiased outlook has been difficult to come by. Masculinist as well as feminist perspectives are needed to produce a holistic interpretation of past lives because women cannot be investigated to the exclusion of men. There are also many archaeologists who believe that gender is not something that must be dealt with in a research design. This attitude seems a bit odd, given that in Western society, and indeed any known society, differentiation between sexes and genders are critical components of social, political, and economic activity and of culture and knowledge.

Although it is agreed that gender is culturally constructed and sex is biologically determined, some scholars consider that the concept of a biological distinction between male and female also has a cultural component that guides the outward expression of biological sex. For the purposes of this discussion, however, sex will refer to the biological aspects of the body, whereas gender will refer to the expression of the individual culturally. Biological sex is determined by two chromosomes, X and Y. Normally, a female has two X chromosomes and a male has an X and a Y chromosome. In rare instances, biological sex may not fall within a standard XX or XY chromosomal pattern, or the phenotypic (outward) appearance may not match the genetic designation. There may be a chromosomal designation, such as XXX or XXY, or a situation where an XX fetus is exposed to male hormones in the womb, which can result in the individual having male geni-

talia. In such a case, the biological sex of an individual does not fit within the norm and may not correspond with the expected gender.

In addition, work in anthropology has demonstrated that most gender systems are not dualistic; that is, there may be a category of individuals in a society who take on a cultural role that differs from the expected role. So while the typical masculine and feminine genders are in the majority, there may be instances where those who do not fit within the expected social identity create other genders, or other identities are created for them. Although it may be difficult to accept that there is, and has been in the past, a multiplicity of genders, it seems likely that gender identities lie on a spectrum of existence rather than existing as discrete categories. Given that biological sex does not always fall into distinct and identifiable categories, it is logical to assume that genders would be just as variable, if not more so.

SOCIAL IDENTITY IN BURIAL CONTEXTS

Gender cannot be analyzed to the exclusion of other aspects of identity or its role in determining societal structures. Gender is inextricably linked with age, status, and power. The complexity of a society may also affect the way in which gender is expressed. The more complex and hierarchical a society is, the more positions within the society are more rigidly defined, and so men's and women's roles may be highly circumscribed.

Status. Understanding the gender structure of past societies seems to be easiest to analyze in a burial context. Burials contain not only bodies, which can give information about health, but often material culture in the form of grave goods. In addition, the landscape of a cemetery (such as where burials are in relation to others and the location of a cemetery within the local topography) may give important clues to a community's view of social identity. It is possible that the spatial relationships of burials to other burials and to the landscape reinforces social hierarchies and social differences within a community. Post-processual and social theory approaches have led to the realization that the social identity of an individual (including gender, status, and power) is not directly reflected through the burial because the individual's representation in death is formed

through others in the society who perform the preparation for burial and administer the burial. However, the social structure of a society may be echoed in some form through the representation of its members in death, and so it provides us with many clues that can help to reconstruct it.

Gender in early medieval society has only since the 1990s been approached using archaeological methods and almost exclusively in a burial context. Most information specifically regarding the role and position of women during this period has come through textual information, such as laws, although these often have more to do with women possessing a certain amount of wealth or status. Documentary evidence, such as wills, reveals that medieval women could hold and distribute property, but it is not known if this was common through all social classes. The laws of Aethelbert of Kent, from the seventh century, indicate that women had a number of rights. According to these laws, prospective husbands had to pay a dowry (*morgengifu*), but it went to the bride herself, not her family. This money or property was then hers to do with as she wished. The seventh-century laws of Wihtred of Kent said that a woman was not financially responsible for her husband's crimes if she had no knowledge of them. However, if she participated in any crimes herself, she would have to give up her money and property. Sixth-century Frankish laws only sometimes mention women; they do so in reference to marriage and to criminal activities by women and against women.

Where documentary evidence is scarce or non-existent, trying to determine such rights through archaeological means can be difficult. The analysis of grave contents shows that the things buried with men and women varied between and among them. Women were often buried with as much wealth as men were, but whether or not the items in a woman's grave were hers during her lifetime or were bestowed upon her in death cannot be known. The same can be held true for men, however.

Other issues with the archaeological analysis of burials stem from assessing the sex and gender of the buried individuals. Traditional thinking, particularly in Continental and British archaeology, has held that weapons found in a grave indicate a male, and jewelry indicates a female. When osteological analysis of a skeleton has disagreed with the material culture found in the grave, the osteological sexing

has generally been held to have been wrong. However, there is increasing evidence for occasional aberrations from the normal patterns of mortuary goods. Nevertheless, if a female skeleton has an accompanying weapon, it does not necessarily indicate that the woman actually fought with it. Indeed, Heinrich Härke believes that, even in male graves, the presence of weapons is more likely an indicator of status, power, ethnicity, or all of these. A woman might have been buried with a weapon (most likely a spear) as a mark of her own status in the community, or perhaps the weapon indicates her associated status as the wife or mother of a local chief.

Age. Age, too, might factor heavily in the gender specificity of certain items. Age is closely linked with gender identity. In some cultures, gender has a certain amount of fluidity through the life cycle. There is some evidence for the elderly no longer having such a rigid gender dichotomy in terms of mortuary material culture. Guy Halsall's study of sixth-century Merovingian cemeteries showed that older people tended to have non-gender-specific artifacts, as did children for the most part. A similar practice may be found at early Anglo-Saxon cemeteries, where older male skeletons appear to be buried with very specific female-type artifacts (annular brooches) at certain cemeteries.

Few archaeological assessments of gender include childhood as a focus of interest, mainly because it is difficult to sex juvenile skeletons and hard to find gendered material culture associated with children. DNA analysis has been used to sex children in an Early Anglo-Saxon cemetery, but no gendered patterning in their grave goods was seen. There appear to be no items that are exclusive to children's graves in Anglo-Saxon cemeteries. In addition, it is often difficult to delineate the period of childhood within a culture, particularly if no evidence of a rite of passage to adulthood can be ascertained. In a burial context, children are often identified as male or female if their grave goods fall within the standard typology of weapons or jewelry. Most often, however, children are buried with very little, although there are numerous examples of very lavish children's graves in Anglo-Saxon England. Knives, which are one of the most common items in both adult's and children's graves, do not follow any gendered pattern.

OTHER SOURCES OF EVIDENCE

Osteological analysis, although sometimes unreliable in sexing poorly preserved skeletons, can give other indicators, such as general health, disease, or trauma suffered during an individual's lifetime. In some cultures these may differ among men and women. Wear indicators on bones have been used to identify possible occupations. Dental anomalies (enamel hypoplasia) caused by poor nutrition can demonstrate differences in access to food. Research in pre-Inca and Inca period Peru using stable carbon and nitrogen isotope analysis of male and female skeletons has shown that women and men had similar and then differential access to foods in those periods. Lead and oxygen isotope analysis is being used to try to differentiate the geographical origins of Early Anglo-Saxon settlers in Britain and possibly determine whether or not males and females had different patterns of emigration.

When skeletons are poorly preserved, making osteological sexing difficult, DNA analysis can be used to determine biological sex. This technique has been used to look at issues of gender within the social structure of an Early Anglo-Saxon society at West Heslerton, North Yorkshire, where a fifth- to seventh-century settlement and cemetery were excavated by Dominic Powlesland and Christine Haughton. DNA analysis was done to learn the biological sex of forty-two individuals, and the results were then compared with the gender suggested by the grave goods of each individual. In addition, age, status, and particulars of the burial, such as the position of the body in the grave, were observed in order to produce a representation of the social identity of that person. The majority of skeletons that were determined to be biologically female were buried with jewelry, and the majority of biological males had weapons or no gender-specific goods. Because females tended to be buried with more types of gender-specific items, such as brooches and beads, it was perhaps easier to "see" them, but aside from weapons, which are not common, there were few other male-type goods. However, there were exceptions to the normal pattern. Of the twenty-four individuals buried with at least a spear, three were identified as female through DNA analysis. Another individual, of about eighteen, was found with amulets and jewelry and could not be osteologically sexed. DNA analysis identified him as male, although the grave goods indicate a female; it is pos-

sible that he was a spiritual figure within the community. With limited knowledge of the way religious beliefs played out in society before Christianity set in, archaeologists can only surmise the nature of shamanlike roles within communities. Burials found with amulets and other potentially symbolic goods may have signaled that the person buried there played a role as a healer or priest. Tania Dickinson labeled a woman found in one such early Saxon burial as a “cunning woman,” a practitioner of magic, healing, and divination.

It has been difficult to obtain evidence of gender structures from the archaeological analysis of settlements. Some cultures tend to have distinct segregation of work areas by men and women, and some do not. Some of the easiest gendered artifacts to see from the early medieval period are items having to do with textile production, such as needles and spindle whorls, which are doughnut-shaped objects used as weights when weaving. These are found in graves but are also found in domestic areas. In early medieval Ireland, the presence of these items in household areas indicates that a woman’s area of work was directly involved with the home and that this may have been the place where women developed their own social networks. Evidence for gendering food production or food preparation is scarce, both textually and archaeologically. Later Anglo-Saxon texts indicate that lower-status women would have participated in such tasks. In rural farming villages, women would certainly have had to perform these duties, and whetstones are sometimes found in female graves.

Gender is critical to understanding the social structures of past societies. The place of women relative to men in early medieval society has been gleaned mainly from textual sources. These sources have many limitations, but these may now be remedied through archaeological and molecular approaches of study. A critical archaeological analysis of the ways in which gender structured early medieval societies needs to be taken up by researchers. Although there cannot be conclusions that cut across all cultures, at least in some societies women appear to have had a number of rights, many equal to those of men. Yet the ways in which power and status were visibly demonstrated varied between men and women, so one must recognize what these differences mean. One also sees evidence for indi-

viduals who did not fit within a conventional gender role. There is still much to be done with regard to understanding how these people negotiated their positions in society, but the first step is acknowledging the complexities of social identity in the past.

See also *Gender* (vol. 1, part 1).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Bitel, Lisa M. “*Tír inna mBan*: Domestic Space and the Frontiers of Gender in Early Medieval Ireland.” In *Shifting Frontiers in Late Antiquity*. Edited by Ralph W. Mathisen and Hagith S. Sivan, pp. 242–255. Aldershot, Hampshire, U.K.: Variorum, 1996.
- Conkey, Margaret W., and Janet D. Spector. “Archaeology and the Study of Gender.” In *Advances in Archaeological Method and Theory*. Vol. 7. Edited by Michael B. Schiffer, pp. 1–38. New York: Academic Press, 1984.
- Crawford, Sally. *Childhood in Anglo-Saxon England*. Stroud, U.K.: Sutton, 1999.
- Dickinson, Tania M. “An Anglo-Saxon ‘Cunning Woman’ from Bidford-on-Avon.” In *The Archaeology of Anglo-Saxon England*. Edited by Catherine E. Karkov, pp. 359–373. New York: Garland, 1999.
- Fell, Christine. *Women in Anglo-Saxon England*. London: British Museum Publications, 1984.
- Flaherty, Christine. “Sex, Gender, and Identity in Early Anglo-Saxon England: A DNA and Archaeological Analysis at West Heslerton.” Ph.D. diss., Columbia University, forthcoming.
- Gilchrist, Roberta. *Gender and Archaeology: Contesting the Past*. London: Routledge, 1999.
- Halsall, Guy. *Settlement and Social Organization: The Merovingian Region of Metz*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1995.
- Härke, Heinrich. “Early Anglo-Saxon Social Structure.” In *The Anglo-Saxons from the Migration Period to the Eighth Century: An Ethnographic Perspective*. Edited by John Hines, pp. 125–170. Woodbridge, Suffolk, U.K.: Boydell Press, 1997.
- Hastorf, Christine. “Gender, Space, and Food in Prehistory.” In *Engendering Archaeology: Women and Prehistory*. Edited by Joan M. Gero and Margaret W. Conkey, pp. 132–159. Oxford: Basil Blackwell, 1991.
- Houghton, Christine, and Dominic Powlesland. *West Heslerton: The Anglian Cemetery*. Yedingham, Malton, U.K.: Landscape Research Centre, 1999.
- Knapp, A. Bernard. “Who’s Come a Long Way, Baby? Masculinist Approaches to a Gendered Archaeology.” *Archaeological Dialogues* 5, no. 2 (1998): 91–125.
- Lucy, Sam. *The Anglo-Saxon Way of Death: Burial Rites in Early England*. Stroud, U.K.: Sutton, 2000.

———. “Housewives, Warriors, and Slaves? Sex and Gender in Anglo-Saxon Burials.” In *Invisible People and Processes: Writing Gender and Childhood into European Archaeology*. Edited by Jenny Moore and Eleanor Scott, pp. 150–168. London: Leicester University Press, 1997.

Stoodley, Nick. *The Spindle and the Spear: A Critical Enquiry into the Construction and Meaning of Gender in the Early Anglo-Saxon Burial Rite*. BAR British Series, no. 288. Oxford: British Archaeological Reports, 1999.

CHRISTINE E. FLAHERTY



ANIMAL HUSBANDRY

Animal husbandry was well established by the European Iron Age. Two major cultural influences in the barbarian world merged with classical Mediterranean tradition in the Carpathian basin. Areas west of the Danube had close ties with the rest of Europe, most directly with the Hallstatt culture (type site: Austria), extending to Britain between the ninth and fifth centuries B.C. Celtic tribes expanded from their homeland in northern France and southern Germany toward southern Europe and Asia Minor as well as the British Isles between the eighth and third centuries B.C. Meanwhile, the Great Hungarian Plain east of the Danube fell under the influence of pre-Scythian and Scythian cultures from the northern Pontic (Black Sea) region during the Early Iron Age (late seventh century B.C.). From the first century A.D. waves of additional migrations lashed the eastern frontiers of Europe.

Celtic influences met Scythian tradition in the barbarian world of central Europe. Classicism, represented by ancient Greek, Hellenistic, and Roman cultures, flanked these geopolitical developments from the south. Records on animal husbandry originate from the latter, Mediterranean/Pontic, region. Beginning with the description by the Greek historian Herodotus (in the fifth century B.C.) of ferocious “Scythian nomads” of the steppe, classical stereotypes of mobile pastoralists were recycled and homogenized throughout antiquity. Meanwhile, advanced Roman animal breeding is reflected in seminal works by Marcus Terentius Varro, Pliny the Elder, and Columella (first century B.C. to the first century A.D.)

Most differences between the Celtic, Mediterranean, and steppe types of animal husbandry were rooted in their respective geographical environments. Prehistoric agriculture had reached north-central and western Europe millennia earlier across the Balkans. Natural habitats in Mediterranean Europe favored the early establishment of cereal cultivation, viticulture, and the keeping of cattle as well as sheep and goats. People in the Celtic homeland (similarly to northern Germanic tribes inhabiting neighboring areas) had long relied on hunting and pigs, ubiquitous in cool and humid forest regions. Steppe peoples adapted to vast, continental plains by developing mobile pastoralism, with little reliance on cultivation and an emphasis on sheep and goat keeping. Their horses also were used for a great variety of purposes.

Animal keeping, however, should not be viewed with rigid environmental determinism. As empires expanded and reached various areas and people moved around, their traditions blended and interacted, so that by the Iron Age all the important domestic animals were kept in these three cultural regions.

CELTS, GERMANS, AND CLASSICAL TRADITION

Owing to the Celts’ sedentary, often urbanized way of life, their animal keeping did not differ markedly from that of the Greeks and Romans. One of the few distinguishing features are the many pig bones at such sites as the Celtic *oppidum* (fortified urban settlement) of Manching in Bavaria and many small-



Fig. 1. Bronze statuette of a pig, Báta, Celtic. Pigs played an important role in Celtic economy and symbolism alike. PHOTO BY ANDRÁS DABASI. HUNGARIAN NATIONAL MUSEUM. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

ler sites across Europe. Although beef and mutton also were eaten, pork and boar were of special importance. Pig bones commonly occur in Celtic burials. Pork also played a mythical role in divine feasting in the hall of dead warriors (Bruiden in Irish Celtic and Valhalla in Norse mythology). Wild boar, one of the most dangerous game animals in Europe, accompanies Arduinna, continental Celtic goddess of the moon and hunting, often equated with Diana in Roman mythology. Boars are depicted frequently both as decorative motifs and symbols (fig. 1). In such provinces as Pannonia, boars are shown on the tombstones of Romanized Celts.

The small, unimproved Celtic domesticates that have been reconstructed from bone finds (such as those kept by Germans and other peoples in the Barbaricum) often are contrasted with advanced Roman “breeds.” This term should be used cautiously when evidence for conscious selection is absent, but the large size and great variation of animal

bones from Roman sites illustrate advanced animal husbandry, as described by classical authors. Representations such as Trajan’s Column, from A.D. 113, show livestock whose body conformations appear modern, even by today’s standards.

Size differences between the bones from barbarian and classical domesticates are stark. Another sign of developed animal husbandry, a greater diversity in size and shape, is especially striking in dog remains from Roman provincial settlements in present-day Germany and Hungary—lapdogs, greyhounds, and giant forms, exceeding the size of modern-day Alsatians, are represented equally. Such extremes are rare among coeval Celtic dogs in these areas.

“NOMADIC” TRADITION

Peoples from the steppe usually are referred to with the catchall term “nomadic,” disregarding the complexity of pastoral societies. While pasturing is cen-

tral to such communities, their seasonal patterns of herding and degrees of sedentariness vary broadly. Theoretically, the entire community of “pure” nomads covered long distances meridionally in a never-ending search for seasonal graze, with no land cultivation. Pastoralism in this extreme form is a highly specialized, precarious way of life. Its stability depends on mobility between different natural habitats, determined by the quality and size of pastures in combination with the speed of movements. Sarmatians, Kalmyks, and some groups of Kazakhs lived this way. The majority of steppe communities, however, included contingents of sedentary agriculturalists as well as major power centers. They could be called, at best, seminomadic. Mobile pastoralism, central to their economy, is a common denominator for past communities. Its technical homogeneity has led to functional similarities between the material and spiritual cultures of many peoples in the vast Eurasian steppe, where perpetual motion greatly intensified contacts and exchange between various groups at all levels.

MOBILE PASTORALISM AND CLASSICAL TRADITION

Scythian tribes included both equestrian nomads and sedentary agriculturalists who inhabited the Eurasian steppe north of the Black Sea. Characteristic of their culture were *kurgans* (burial mounds), many of them in the Dnieper River region, in which Scythian leaders were interred with grave goods of legendary richness, including dozens of horses. Treasures recovered from these graves are decorated with animal motifs showing Greek and Persian influences. Mythical creatures and hunting scenes dominate this artwork, although the evidence for hunting is scarce among the mundane archaeological finds.

Scythian settlements between the Dnieper and the Volga region had an overwhelming dominance of domesticates. Sometimes animal husbandry also is represented on precious metal objects. Most famous are the horse-catching scenes on the fourth century B.C. gilded silver amphora from Chertomlyk (near the Dnieper River in the Ukraine) and animals on the gold pectoral from Tolstaya Mogila (some 10 kilometers from Chertomlyk). The latter piece weighs more than a kilogram and has a diameter of more than 30 centimeters. Composed of three ex-

centric circles (joined with the clasp in the back), the outer band of the pectoral is decorated with mythical and wild creatures from griffins to locusts. Separated by a band of floral ornaments, the third, inner band documents the domestic sphere of life. Two Scythians in the center sew a piece of sheepskin, while another milks a ewe (fig. 2). Stylistically, it is likely that a Greek goldsmith in a colonial town in the northern Pontic region made this piece sometime in the fourth century B.C. The figures look Scythian, but it is difficult to tell whether the wild/domestic dichotomy reflects western or eastern traditions.

In a less spectacular form, artifacts decorated in animal style also are known from areas occupied by Scythians in eastern Hungary. Their animal husbandry in the Carpathian Basin can be reconstructed from bone finds at a few rural settlements. In addition to remains of small-bodied cattle, a relatively large number of horse bones (including those of very young foals) occur among the food refuse. The bony cores of large goat horns also point to the eastern pastoral tradition of these communities. A chariot grave with two horses, found at Szentes-Vekerzug on the Great Hungarian Plain, reflects the importance of these animals in all spheres of life.

Having defeated the Scythians in the Pontic region, Iranian-speaking Sarmatian pastoralists reached the Carpathian Basin during the first century A.D., approximately at the time the Romans conquered Celtic areas in its western half, establishing the province of Pannonia. With their westward expansion blocked, Sarmatians and other barbarian tribes spent four centuries in the shadow of the Roman Empire, often in shifting, short-term alliances. This probably strengthened their ethnocultural identity, preserving their eastern pastoral tradition. Small relative frequencies of bones from pig and poultry illustrate this conservative tendency. Although in environmental terms the Great Hungarian Plain represents the westernmost section of the Eurasian steppe, it is far too small for long-distance, nomadic herding. To many steppe peoples who ended up there, it represented a dead end in terms of long-range, annual migrations. Mobility of livestock became less of a priority.

Various written references to the importance of Sarmatian cavalry are in agreement with the high ratio of horse remains in the food refuse at Sarm-



Fig. 2. Highly developed Scythian mobile art often depicted scenes of sophisticated animal husbandry. THE ART ARCHIVE/HERMITAGE MUSEUM SAINT PETERSBURG/DAGLI ORTI. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

tian rural sites. (Among these references are those to the mastering by Germanic Quadi of Sarmatian cavalry tactics, a notation of eight thousand Sarmatian horsemen demanded by the Roman Empire following a defeat in A.D. 175, and the delivery of two thousand mounted warriors to the Romans by the defeated alliance of Sarmatians and Germanic Vandals/Suebians in A.D. 270.) Steppe rituals associated with horses are evidenced by intact horse skulls found at various settlements.

It seems that in peacetime Sarmatians traded livestock and animal products with Roman provinces, in exchange for high-quality Roman craft products (e.g., stamped ware and glass). Sarmatian cattle bones look small and nondistinct. Giant horn cores of rams, however, are indicative of impressive individuals in the sheep flocks. It is difficult to tell whether these animals originated from steppe stocks or represent improved Roman “breeds,” adopted by these skillful pastoralists.

POST-ROMAN DEVELOPMENTS

As hordes of Germanic and Asiatic barbarians brought down the Roman Empire in the fifth century A.D., warhorses again best represented barbarian animal husbandry. Mounted warriors literally

spearheaded these migrations, in keeping with the tactical necessities of migration through hostile areas. Flavius Vegetius Renatus, in his veterinary handbook on horses, wrote that Hun horses “have large heads . . . with no fat at all on the rump. . . . The leanness of the horses is striking. . . . Their ugly appearance . . . is set off by their fine qualities: sober nature, cleverness and their ability to endure any injury.” Note the striking difference between this description, and the coeval, idealized picture of a royal mount from the steppe region.

Between A.D. 567 and 804 Asiatic Avars occupied the Carpathian Basin, creating an ethnically heterogeneous empire, including the ruins of Roman Pannonia. The custom of burying warriors with their horses has preserved hundreds of complete horse skeletons for study. Most were stallions or geldings, more lightly built than modern ponies, on average 135 centimeters tall at the withers. They probably represent animals selected by the practical necessities of light cavalry. Avar warriors introduced stirrups to Europe, which, together with saddles with high pommels, helped mounted archers rise and fire their short reflex bows in almost any direction.

The composition of food refuse from early Avar settlements often resembles that of the Sarmatians, but the growing contribution of pig and poultry over time in grave goods may indicate an increasingly sedentary lifestyle. In comparison with Slavic settlements, Avar period animal bone assemblages look definitely more nomadic. A summary of animal bone percentages from numerous sites of the seventh to ninth centuries, representing various cultures, shows that the significance of horsemeat decreased in an eastward direction across the steppe. Pork was hardly eaten in the east but was important in sedentary Slavic cultures. Beef and mutton show a less consistent pattern.

The next migrants from the steppe, the Magyars, conquered the Carpathian Basin in about A.D. 895. They waged ruthless equestrian raids, rooted in their mobile pastoralist tradition, into much of civilized Europe for more than fifty years. The horse heads and feet buried in some of their graves probably come from skinned animals. Magyar horses therefore are more difficult to reconstruct than their Avar counterparts, to which they are similar in appearance. This does not mean that the two stocks were related, but they probably were shaped by similar military needs.

Early Magyar meat consumption focused on beef and mutton, with an unusually high average proportion of horsemeat. Pope Gregory III banned hippophagy (horse-eating) in Europe in the eighth century, as Germanic tribes were converted to Christianity. As Magyars established a Christian kingdom in Hungary (A.D. 1000), horse eating gradually declined. Pork also started contributing more to the diet, as it had with the Sarmatians and Avars.

Because Magyars (i.e., Hungarians) survived in the Carpathian Basin, there is much speculation about the genetic continuity of their modern domesticates. A mythical animal of the conquering Magyars was, supposedly, a breed of longhorn cattle, which is today called the Hungarian gray. It is reminiscent of the Marreman breed in Italy, which is said to have been introduced by the Huns. This historical confusion is exacerbated by skull finds showing that all peoples of steppe origin (Sarma-

tians, Avars, and Magyars) kept small, short-horned cattle. Archaeological evidence for long-horned animals comes centuries later in the wake of the Middle Ages. Many pastoral communities kept large guard dogs. The striking similarity between a skull from the period of the Magyar conquest (ninth century) and a modern Hungarian *Kuvasz*, however, is rooted more in function than genetic continuity. Owing to their high reproductive rates, dog breeds can change especially rapidly.

See also **Hallstatt** (vol. 2, part 6); **Oppida** (vol. 2, part 6); **Huns** (vol. 2, part 7); **Hungary** (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Bartosiewicz, László. "A Millennium of Migrations: Protohistoric Mobile Pastoralism in Hungary." In *Zooarchaeology: Papers to Honor Elizabeth S. Wing*. Edited by F. Wayne King and Charlotte M. Porter. *Bulletin of the Florida Museum of Natural History* 44, no. 1 (2003): 101–130.
- . "The Hungarian Grey Cattle: A Traditional European Breed." *Animal Genetic Resources Information* 21 (1997): 49–60.
- . "Early Medieval Archaeozoology in Eastern Europe." In *Bioarchäologie und Frühgeschichtsforschung*. Edited by H. Friesinger, F. Daim, E. Kanelutti, and O. Cichocki, pp. 123–132. Vienna: Institut für Ur- und Frühgeschichte der Universität Wien, 1993.
- Bökönyi, Sándor. "Über die Entwicklung der Sekundärnutzung." In *Beiträge zur Archäozoologie und Prähistorischen Anthropologie*. Edited by M. Kokabi and J. Wahl. Stuttgart, Germany: Landesdenkmalamt Baden-Württemberg, Konrad Theiss Verlag, 1994.
- . *Animal Husbandry and Hunting in Túc-Gorsium: The Vertebrate Fauna of a Roman Town in Pannonia*. Budapest, Hungary: Akadémiai Kiadó, 1984.
- . *History of Domestic Mammals in Central and Eastern Europe*. Budapest, Hungary: Akadémiai Kiadó, 1974.
- Khazanov, Anatoly M. *Nomads and the Outside World*. 2d ed. Translated by Julia Crookenden. Madison: University of Wisconsin Press, 1994.
- Laszlovszky, József, ed. *Tender Meat under the Saddle: Customs of Eating, Drinking, and Hospitality among Conquering Hungarians and Nomadic Peoples*. Krems, Austria: Medium Aevum Quotidianum, 1998.
- Matolcsi, János. *Állattartás őseink korában* [Animal keeping in the time of our ancestors]. Budapest, Hungary: Gondolat Kiadó, 1982.

LÁSZLÓ BARTOSIEWICZ



AGRICULTURE

FOLLOWED BY FEATURE ESSAY ON:

Mills and Milling Technology 376

By 1000 B.C. farming, which had originated in Southwest Asia, had been established throughout Europe for millennia. In parts of southeastern Europe agricultural communities existed from 7000 B.C. or earlier, and even in Norway cereal farming was present beginning at least around 2000 B.C. Agricultural changes from around 1000 B.C. to A.D. 1000 therefore represent developments from a long-established tradition. Agricultural systems over this period had two main sets of influences.

BACKGROUND

One set of influences was economic and political. The border between “barbarian” and “civilized” Europe was fluctuating and permeable. In parts of western Europe, for example, agricultural systems that were both more intensive and more extensive developed in the first millennium B.C. to meet indigenous requirements, and subsequently changes were imposed to satisfy the demands of the Roman Empire for larger-scale cereal production. Following the collapse of the imperial economic system in the fifth century, agriculture reverted to subsistence production in some areas. Eventually agricultural systems capable of producing a surplus to support the newly established polities of early medieval Europe were developed. At any given location therefore the economic context of agriculture could vary

markedly through time. Trade in plant products and crops and exchange of knowledge also transpired across the fluctuating cultural contact between civilization and “barbarity” and within the two.

The other major set of influences on early farming systems was environmental. Farmers are pragmatic. They are well aware of the potential productivity of their local environment—its geology, soils, topography, and climate. Although from the beginnings of agriculture cropping systems were almost certainly developed with local adaptations to enhance productivity, it is only in this period that we can unequivocally demonstrate such adaptations in Europe. The effects of climate change over this period are difficult to evaluate. The data currently available are not so regionally precise as to permit discrimination between the effects on agriculture of climatic or cultural change.

DATA SOURCES

Information on early agriculture comes from various sources:

- *Field systems.* These are known both from relict systems in areas which, as a result of climate change, are now too marginal for arable production and from ancient systems now subsumed into modern patterns of field boundaries.

- *Implements.* The artifactual technology of agriculture is known from finds of plows (initially *ards*, which could score only a thin furrow in the soil; later true moldboard plows capable of turning and inverting sod), hand-digging implements (such as spades), and harvesting tools.
- *Crop-processing installations.* These include corn driers.
- *Storage facilities.* In some parts of Europe cereals were stored in belowground silos—during the Iron Age, typically large cylindrical pits—but it is thought that aboveground storage may also have been accomplished in structures marked at many settlement sites by settings of four or nine postholes. Granaries, often with ceramic, basketry, or barrel containers, have been reported from the post-Roman period.
- *Historical sources.*
- *Biological remains.* Most directly these comprise remains of crop plants (macrofossils) preserved by charring (carbonization), as impressions on ceramics, by mineral replacement, and in waterlogged anoxic or oxygen-deficient deposits. Data from palynology (analysis of pollen, spores, and other microscopic entities), entomology (e.g., the presence of scarabaeoid dung beetles or grain pests), and soil science are also very informative. Dating Iron Age deposits by radiocarbon presents difficulties because of a plateau in the calibration curve, therefore palynological analyses of sediment sequences must be linked rigorously to a scientific dating program that permits enhanced precision of calibration by mathematical modeling, as Alex Bayliss has shown. Where this has been done, a detailed picture of land use and agricultural change during the Iron Age can be proposed (as, e.g., at Scole, England, which has been described by Patricia Wiltshire and Peter Murphy).

This article is concerned principally with plant macrofossils, the study of which is known as archaeobotany or palaeoethnobotany, although data from other sources will be mentioned. Cereals and pulses (the edible seeds of legumes) are the domesticated descendants of wild plants native to Southwest Asia. Once they were transplanted to entirely new habitats in Europe, a process of adaptation and

intentional human selection began. The full economic potential of the crops available took millennia to realize. Some of the earliest direct evidence for cropping patterns that are closely attuned to local conditions of soil and climate dates from the first millennium B.C.

CROPS, PROCESSING, AND TRADE

Palaeoethnobotanical studies indicate that a wide range of crop species was cultivated during the two millennia under consideration. These included field crops: wheats (einkorn, emmer, durum wheat, rivet wheat, spelt, bread wheat), barley, rye, oats, millets, pulses (peas, horsebeans, vetches, lentils, chickpeas), and fiber and oil crops, such as hemp, flax, and gold of pleasure. The latter is an oilseed no longer grown commercially but well represented, for example, by threshing remains from Iron Age sites in the Assendelver Polders, Netherlands. Some plants that in modern times are generally regarded as weeds may also have been cultivated. In Denmark seeds of *Chenopodium album* L. (a garden weed commonly known as lamb's-quarter or fat hen) have been reported from the gut contents of Iron Age human bodies preserved in peat bogs, and large caches of the seed have been found at settlement sites. Experiments by Paul Stokes and Peter Rowley-Conwy have demonstrated that seed yields comparable to those of cereals may be obtained by cultivating this prolific goosefoot green. Early cultivation of fruits and nuts (including olives, grapes, figs, plums, cherries, walnuts) is evident in regions bordering the Mediterranean, but in the north and west only native wild fruits and nuts have so far been identified from Iron Age sites. Orchard crops and other plants, including culinary herbs (e.g., coriander, dill), spread with the expansion of the Roman Empire. Results from later sites indicate a cessation of fruit and nut cultivation in many areas formerly under Roman control and then reestablishment of production once new trade contacts were established. Orchard crops represented a long-term investment very vulnerable to destruction during conflict, so their apparent absence in these areas in the immediate post-Roman period is unsurprising.

Factors determining the relative economic importance of field and orchard crops were in part environmental, in part economic. The northern and western limits of cultivation for some crops (e.g., ol-



Fig. 1. Late Iron Age British gold coins. These coins of the British king Cunobelin (CVNO) depict cereal ears alongside an attribution to his capital Camulodunum (CAMV). COLCHESTER MUSEUMS. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

ives, lentils) were climatically determined. Rye seems to have reached Europe as a weed in other cereals. By the Iron Age it was being cultivated in some areas, and it spread farther as a result of post-Roman population movements. Its capacity to produce adequate yields on nutrient-deficient upland and sandy soil, by virtue of its extensive root system, made it of great economic importance in parts of North and West Europe. Other marginal soil types occurred in the coastal marshes of Germany and the Netherlands, where there was large-scale occupation from the Iron Age to the Early Middle Ages, eventually associated with mounded settlements known as *terpen* or *wurten*. Archaeobotanical evidence from sites such as the Wurt Elisenhof and the Feddersen Wierde indicates a farming system based on salt marsh grazing and arable production. Barley, a salt-tolerant crop, was the main cereal associated with an early form of broad bean, oats, flax, and where conditions permitted, other crops. Early 1990s excavations at Anglo-Saxon sites dating from around the eighth century A.D. in the fens of eastern England indicate development of comparable farming systems, perhaps independently. Economic change, and in particular a shift to more extensive

forms of production, was associated in parts of Northeast England (and perhaps in the lower Rhineland) with a replacement of emmer wheat by spelt, a hardier crop more tolerant of marginal soils.

Plant macrofossils can also provide information on the economic function and status of sites. It is assumed that the types of plant wastes discarded at a farm (where cereals were being threshed, winnowed, and sieved on a large scale) would differ from those at a higher-status “consumer” site (which might receive only cleaned grain). The relative proportions of grain, chaff, and weed seeds in samples from a site can therefore be informative in terms of the types of activities undertaken there. In fact interpretation is not simple due to the complex range of processes leading to incorporation of macrofossils into archaeological deposits (taphonomic processes). Archaeobotanical results have to be considered alongside other archaeological data and may also draw on ethnographic information from studies of modern peasant agriculture. Martin Jones (1984) has proposed a model for economic interrelationships between Iron Age sites in the hinterland of the hillfort at Danebury, southern En-



Fig. 2. Castle Mall, Norwich. Evidence for Late Saxon malting, using barley and oats. Pictured here are germinated grains of barley (*Hordeum* sp.). Scale: 20 mm. COURTESY OF PETER MURPHY. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

gland, based on sample composition. He proposes that partially processed crops were brought to the hillfort for communal processing and storage. A similar study of plant material from a hilltop settlement dating from the sixth to the ninth centuries in the Biferno Valley, Molise, Italy, produced samples composed mainly of grain with few chaff fragments or weed seeds. This may indicate that the site was not a peasant farming village but a higher-status settlement supplied with largely cleaned cereals by farms in its hinterland.

Evidence also indicates long-distance exchange of crop products. For example, the Roman writer Strabo records grain as one of the exports of Late Iron Age Britain, and the depiction of cereal ears on gold coins issued in the early first century A.D. by the British king Cunobelin could well be seen as a statement of the economic basis of his power (fig. 1). Archaeobotanical evidence for trade in plant foodstuffs is tantalizingly sparse throughout the period under consideration, although exotic cornfield weed seeds in charred grain samples from early me-

dieval Dorestad, Netherlands, suggest importation of cereals from areas farther up the Rhine. It is possible that new techniques, including analysis of DNA and stable isotopes, will enhance understanding of early trade in crops. A few macrofossils of imported Mediterranean foods (e.g., dried figs) have been reported from tenth-century deposits at Cologne, Germany, and York, England, but indications of imported foods are otherwise very rare in North and West Europe before the twelfth century. The highest-status commodity traded appears to have been wine. Remains of Italian amphorae have been reported from Late Iron Age burials in Southeast England (see the report by Rosalind Niblett), and barrels of silver fir originating in the upper Rhine have been found in eighth-to-tenth-century-A.D. deposits at the southern Baltic trading settlement of Hedeby and at Dorestad. As an expression of conspicuous consumption, wine drinking seems to have been the preserve of the warrior and proto-urban elite throughout North and West Europe.

While wine was the drink of civilization (and of those who aspired to it), beer or ale was the com-

mon drink of much of Europe. Production of beer from cereal grain involves several stages, the first of which is a controlled germination to allow conversion of starch to sugar that can subsequently be fermented (malting). Finds of charred germinated grains can be evidence for the process (fig. 2). The earliest material reasonably interpretable as malt comprised charred germinated barley grains in pots from a burned first-century-A.D. house at Østerbølle, Denmark. During the Roman period malt was generally produced from wheat, but evidence from cellars of early medieval buildings destroyed by fire at Ipswich, England, indicates that oats and barley were used. Flavorings were commonly added, including hops and bog myrtle. Hops also contain polyphenolic preservative compounds. Large deposits of hop fruits have been reported from ninth- and tenth-century-A.D. contexts at Haithabu, Germany, and in England from a tenth-century boat at Graveney and from contemporary deposits at Ipswich.

Other plant products include medicinal drugs. Seeds of opium poppy have been found in Bronze Age and later deposits throughout much of Europe, whereas *Cannabis* is known from Iron Age contexts in Romania and Hungary and from Roman and later deposits in the north and west. Native wild plants would also have provided a pharmacopoeia, but direct evidence for this is sparse. Patricia Wiltshire found abundant *Artemisia* pollen within corrosion products in the spout of a bronze infusing vessel, which was found in a first-century-A.D. grave of non-Roman native type at Stanway, Essex, in association with a complete set of medical instruments. The *Artemisia* genus of plants includes species that produce antimalarial and vermifuge compounds.

Dyes, too, were produced. Tenth- and eleventh-century Anglo-Scandinavian deposits at York, England, have produced remains of dye plants (madder, dyer's greenweed, woad, and a club moss probably of Scandinavian origin). Colors produced would have varied depending on the mordant, but red, blue, and yellow were certainly available.

Limitations of space preclude discussion of the exploitation and management of natural and semi-natural habitats—particularly woodlands, heathlands and grasslands—but suffice to say that these, too, provided fuel, wild plant foods, drugs, dyes,

tanning agents, and grazing and hay for domestic animals.

See also **Crops of the Early Farmers** (vol. 1, part 3); **Danebury** (vol. 2, part 6); **Ipswich** (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Bayley, Justine, ed. *Science in Archaeology: An Agenda for the Future*. London: English Heritage, 1998.
- Bayliss, Alex. "Some Thoughts on Using Scientific Dating in English Archaeology and Buildings Analysis for the Next Decade." In *Science in Archaeology: An Agenda for the Future*. Edited by Justine Bayley, pp. 95–109. London: English Heritage, 1998.
- Behre, Karl-Ernst. "The History of Rye Cultivation in Europe." *Vegetation History and Archaeobotany* 1, no. 3 (1992): 141–156.
- Behre, Karl-Ernst, and S. Jacomet. "The Ecological Interpretation of Archaeobotanical Data." In *Progress in Old World Palaeoethnobotany*. Edited by Willem Van Zeist, Krystyna Wasylkova, and Karl-Ernst Behre, pp. 81–108. Rotterdam and Brookfield, Vt.: Balkema, 1991.
- Crowson, A., T. Lane, and J. Reeve. *Fenland Management Project Excavations 1991–1995*. Lincolnshire Archaeology and Reports Series no. 3. Heckington, U.K.: Fenland Management Project, 2000.
- Jones, Martin. "The Plant Remains." In *Danebury: An Iron Age Hillfort in Hampshire*. Vol. 2, *The Excavations, 1969–1978: The Finds*. Edited by Barry Cunliffe, pp. 483–495. Council for British Archaeology Research Report 52. London: Council for British Archaeology, 1984.
- Kenward, H. K., and A. R. Hall. "Biological Evidence from Anglo-Scandinavian Deposits at 16–22 Coppergate." *Archaeology of York* 14, no. 7 (1995): 435–797.
- Niblett, Rosalind. *The Excavation of a Ceremonial Site at Folly Lane, Verulamium*. Britannia Monograph Series 14. London: Society for the Promotion of Roman Studies, 1999.
- Renfrew, Jane M. *New Light on Early Farming: Recent Developments in Palaeoethnobotany*. Edinburgh: Edinburgh University Press, 1991.
- Stokes, Paul, and Peter Rowley-Conwy. "Iron Age Culti-gen? Experimental Return Rates for Fat Hen (*Chenopodium album* L.)." *Environmental Archaeology* 7 (October 2002): 95–100.
- Van der Veen, Marijke. "An Early Medieval Hilltop Settlement in Molise: The Plant Remains from D85." *Papers of the British School at Rome* 53 (1985): 211–224.
- Van der Veen, Marijke, and T. O'Connor. "The Expansion of Agricultural Production in Late Iron Age and Roman Britain." In *Science in Archaeology: An Agenda for the Future*. Edited by Justine Bayley, pp. 127–144. London: English Heritage, 1998.

Van Zeist, Willem, Krystyna Wasylikowa, and Karl-Ernst Behre, eds. *Progress in Old World Palaeoethnobotany*. Rotterdam and Brookfield, Vt.: Balkema, 1991. (A comprehensive review of European paleoethnobotany in the 1970s and 1980s.)

Van Zeist, Willem, and W. A. Casparie, eds. *Plants and Ancient Man: Studies in Palaeoethnobotany*. Rotterdam and Boston: Balkema, 1984.

Wiltshire, Patricia E. J., and Peter L. Murphy. "Current Knowledge of the Iron Age Environment and Agrarian Economy of Norfolk and Adjacent Areas." In *The Land of the Iceni: The Iron Age in Northern East Anglia*. Edited by John Davies and Tom Williamson, pp. 132–161. Norwich, U.K.: University of East Anglia, 1999.

PETER MURPHY

MILLS AND MILLING TECHNOLOGY

In the Roman world, water-powered mills that reduced cereal grains to either flour or meal came into use in locations as diverse as Dacia (modern day Romania), North Africa, and the province of Britannia. This relatively widespread distribution has been confirmed by recent archaeological discoveries in the territories that once formed part of the Roman Empire. Both documentary and archaeological evidence attests to their continued use in the various Barbarian kingdoms established after the empire's demise. Several early Latin *vitae*, or saints' lives, for example, composed in the post-Roman period, refer to the use of such mills: the lives of Orientius (c. A.D. 380–426); Romanus (c. A.D. 450); Remigius (A.D. 486–511), and Ursus (A.D. 484–507). Bishop Gregory of Tours also provides an interesting description of the construction of a monastic water mill at Loches (Indre-et-Loire) c. A.D. 500 and mentions the contemporary water mills at Dijon. In documentary sources dating from the sixth to seventh centuries A.D., many of which correspond to the orbit of the Frankish empire, there are, in total, at least sixteen references to water mills in central Europe. The law codes of the Germanic peoples provide further early documentation of the use of water-powered mills in the Barbarian world, and, not surprisingly perhaps, only the tribes that had settled within the frontiers of the Roman Empire made provisions for water mills in their law codes.

These include the *Pactus Alamannorum* (early seventh century), the *Lex Alamannorum* (A.D. 717–719), and the *Lex Baiuvariorum* (A.D. 725–728).

The development of monastic estates was perhaps the single most important factor in the spread of water-powered grain mills throughout the barbarian kingdoms prior to the tenth century. Indeed, the growth of the larger religious establishments of the Carolingian period, such as Saint-Germain-des-Prés and Lorsh, where large areas of land were brought under Benedictine control (and from which the order derived substantial profits), effectively increased the demand for mills. The Carolingian countryside, for example, had a particularly high density of mills, and the polyptych of Saint-Germain-des-Prés alone lists a staggering eighty-four mills, most of them situated on smaller streams. The increased use of water-powered mills in this period may also indicate two important developments: a growing need to ensure regular supplies of grain for a rapidly increasing rural population, and its corollary, an expansion in the cultivation of cereal crops.

Two basic types of water-powered mill were used in the barbarian kingdoms, as elsewhere in early medieval Europe, and as they still are used in the contemporary Islamic world. The first of these mills employed a horizontal waterwheel set on a vertical axle, in which one revolution of the waterwheel produced a corresponding revolution of the upper millstone (fig. 1). In the second type of water mill, the motion of a waterwheel set on a horizontal axle was communicated to a pair of millstones via wooden gearwheels set at right angles to each other (fig. 2). A large number of early medieval horizontal-wheeled mill sites have come to light in Ireland, many of which have been dated by dendrochronology to the seventh to eleventh centuries A.D. The huge corpus of Irish mill components includes almost complete mill buildings; the earliest-known examples of horizontal waterwheels; the wooden water-feeder chutes, or penstocks, associated with them; and tenting beams for adjusting the millstones. In England a well-preserved Saxon site, dated by dendrochronology to the ninth century, has been excavated at Tamworth, Staffordshire, while at Earl's Bu in the Orkney Islands the remains of a Viking Age example have come to light. In Denmark wooden structures at Omgard (c. A.D.

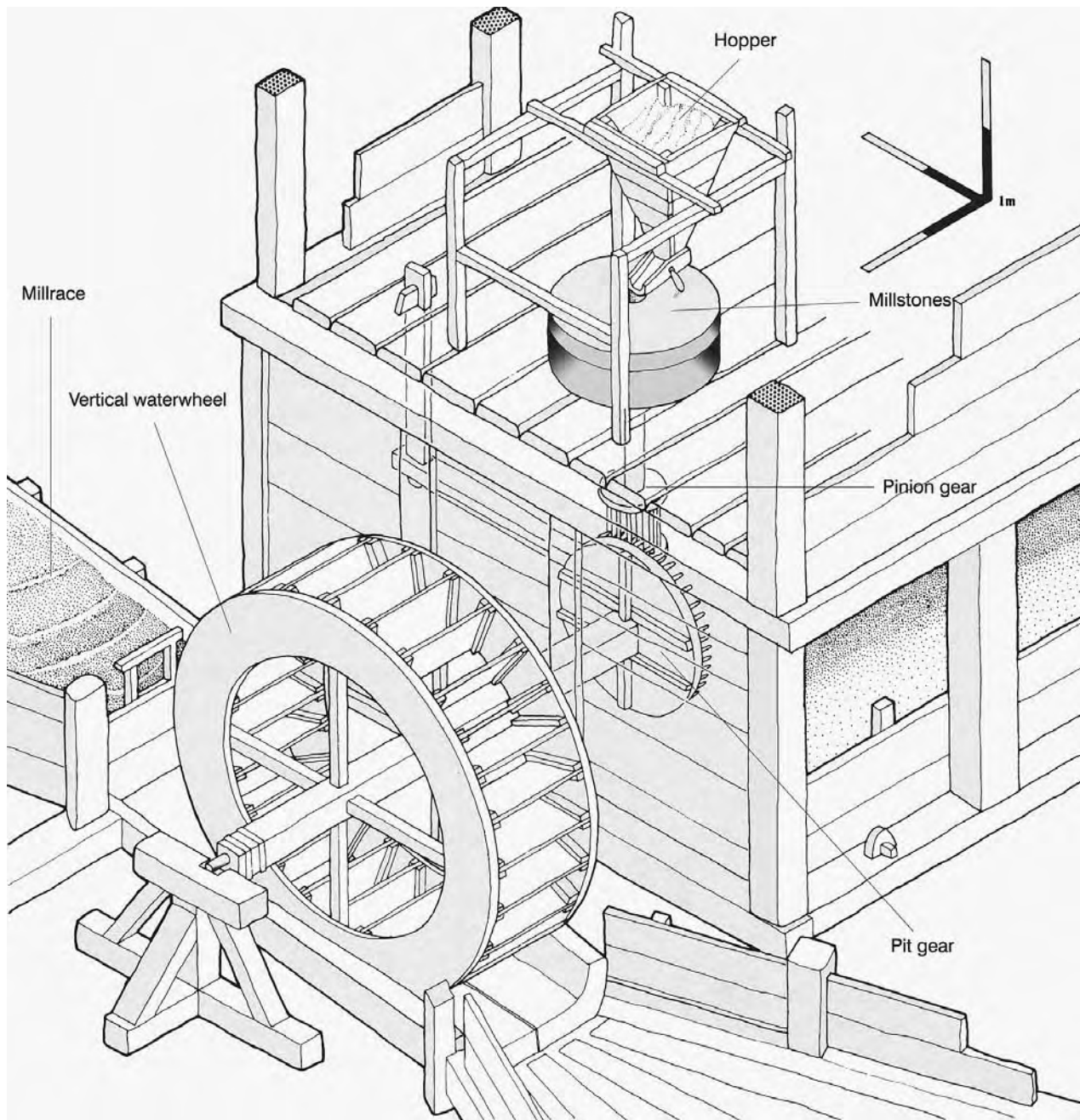


Fig. 1. Reconstruction of seventh-century vertical-wheeled mill at Little Island, County Cork, Ireland. COURTESY OF COLIN RYNNÉ. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

800) and Ljorring (c. A.D. 960) have been interpreted as the remains of horizontal-wheeled mills.

Vertical-wheeled mills dating to the seventh century have been investigated at Little Island, County Cork, Ireland, and at Old Windsor in Berkshire, England. At Little Island, a double horizon-

tal-wheeled mill and a vertical-wheeled mill (fig. 2) operated side by side, the earliest-known close association of the two types of mill in medieval Europe. As in the case of the majority of the excavated horizontal-wheeled mills, most of the medieval vertical-wheeled mills that have come to light in Europe had

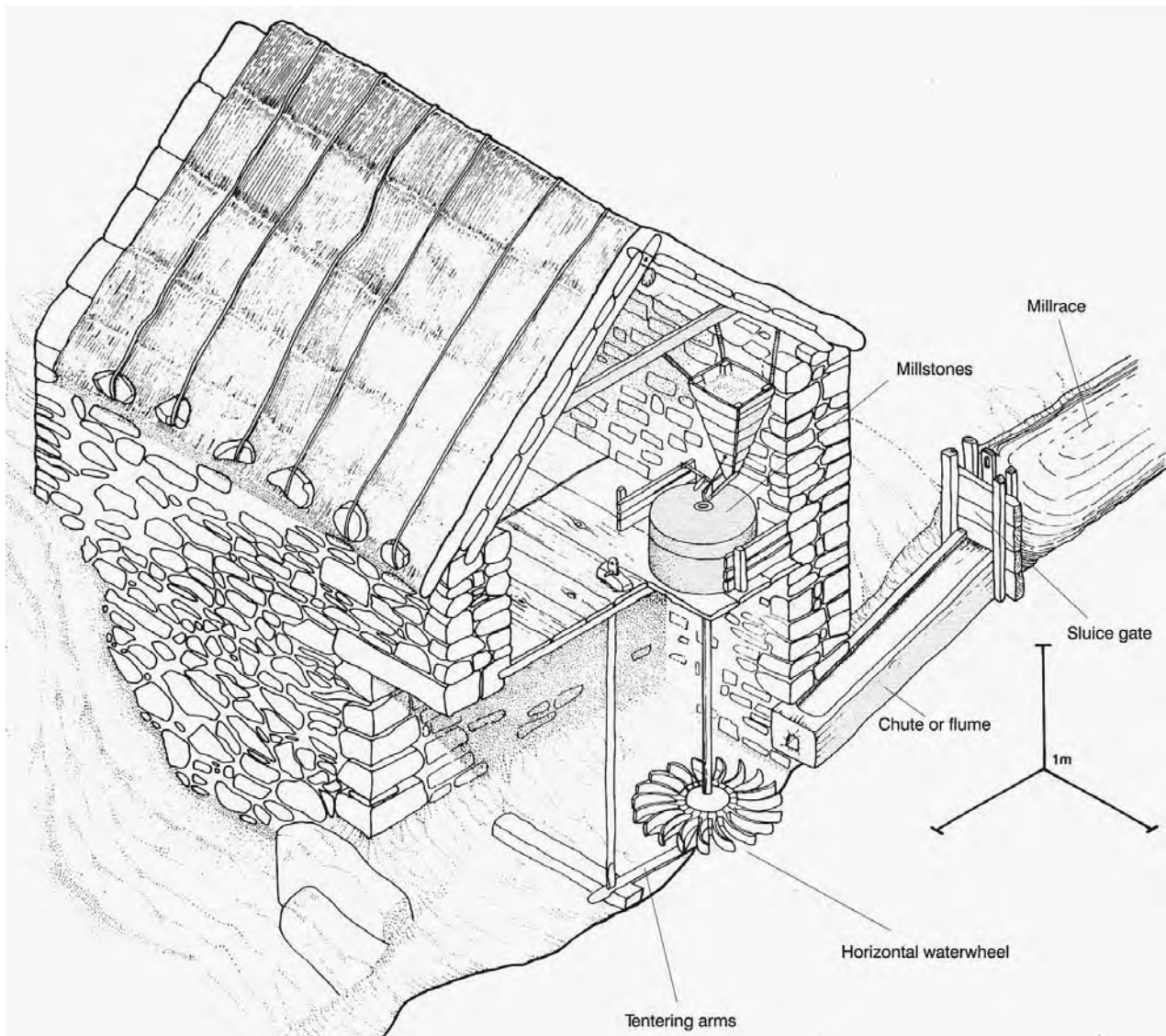


Fig. 2. Reconstruction of ninth-century horizontal-wheeled mill on High Island, County Galway, Ireland. COURTESY OF COLIN RYNNÉ. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

substantial wooden foundations. Fragments of early medieval vertical waterwheels have also been found at Ardclloyne, County Cork, Ireland (c. A.D. 787) and at Belle-Église (c. A.D. 930–980) in France. Another French site, at Audin-le-Tiche in northeastern France (c. A.D. 840–960), produced physical evidence for a vertical waterwheel with an original diameter of some 1.4 meters.

One should not forget, however, that throughout early medieval Europe simple rotary querns (from O.E. *cweorn*, O.H.G. *quirn*), which consisted of two small-diameter disk-shaped stones with a central pivot and a wooden crank handle, would still

have been used in many peasant households. Indeed, querns of imported lava from the Mayern-Niedermendig area of Germany are relatively common on Middle to Late Saxon sites in England, while two lava quern blanks were recovered from the Saxon Graveney boat (Kent). During the medieval period, the simple rotary quern underwent an important technical change that made it easier to regulate the distance between the rotating upper and the stationary lower stone. The axle was extended through the base of the lower stone and allowed to pivot on an adjustable beam, which made it possible to exert greater control over the distance be-

tween the stones (a process called *tentering*), a factor that directly affected the coarseness of the flour or meal.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Benoit, P., and Joséphine Rouillard. "Medieval Hydraulics in France." In *Working with Water in Medieval Europe: Technology and Resource Use*. Edited by Paolo Squatriti, pp. 161–215. Leiden-Boston: Brill, 2000.
- Holt, Richard. "Medieval England's Water-related Technologies." In *Working with Water in Medieval Europe: Technology and Resource Use*. Edited by Paolo Squatriti, pp. 51–100. Leiden-Boston: Brill, 2000.
- . *The Mills of Medieval England*. Oxford: Basil Blackwell, 1988.
- Rahtz, Philip A., and Robert Meeson. *An Anglo-Saxon Watermill at Tamworth*. London: Council for British Archaeology, 1992.
- Reynolds, Terry S. *Stronger than a Hundred Men: A History of the Vertical Waterwheel*. Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1983.
- Rynne, Colin. "Water-power in Medieval Ireland." In *Working with Water in Medieval Europe: Technology and Resource Use*. Edited by Paolo Squatriti, pp. 1–50. Leiden and Boston: Brill, 2000.
- . "The Introduction of the Vertical Watermill into Ireland: Some Recent Archaeological Evidence." *Medieval Archaeology* 33 (1989): 21–31.
- Watts, Martin. *The Archaeology of Mills and Milling*. Stroud, U.K.: Tempus Publishing, 2002.
- Wikander, O. "Archaeological Evidence for Early Watermills: An Interim Report." *History of Technology* 10 (1985): 151–179.

COLIN RYNNE



MIGRATION PERIOD PEOPLES

INCLUDING FEATURE ESSAYS ON:

<i>Angles, Saxons, and Jutes</i>	381
<i>Baiuvarii</i>	384
<i>Dál Riata</i>	386
<i>Goths between the Baltic and Black Seas</i>	388
<i>Huns</i>	391
<i>Langobards</i>	393
<i>Merovingian Franks</i>	396
<i>Ostrogoths</i>	402
<i>Picts</i>	403
<i>Rus</i>	406
<i>Saami</i>	408
<i>Scythians</i>	411
<i>Slavs and the Early Slav Culture</i>	414
<i>Vikings</i>	417
<i>Visigoths</i>	419

Migration or population movement is a well-documented feature of ancient Europe. At the end of the Ice Age (11,000 years ago), hunters and gatherers moved into areas of Europe that had been glaciated during the Pleistocene. Both archaeological and skeletal evidence indicate that migration played a role in the establishment of the first farming communities in central Europe. Archaeological, place-name, and literary evidence document substantial population movements in central Europe during the later Iron Age.

Population movements are also well documented throughout the Early Middle Ages, and the period from A.D. 400 to 600 is often referred to as the

Migration period. In the fifth and sixth centuries A.D. barbarians from outside the Roman Empire—Visigoths, Angles, Saxons, Franks, and others—moved into many regions of western Europe. The nature of these migrations has been debated by both archaeologists and historians for decades. Do they represent large-scale population movements, or are they small migrations of a military and political elite who dominated the local sub-Roman populations and initiated changes in material culture and ideology? Today, many archaeologists would favor the latter explanation. This chapter profiles many of the Migration period peoples—including the Saami, of likely ancient, not migratory, origin—who

are known through the archaeological record and through historical sources. The Scythians are also included in this section even though they disappear from the historical record at the very beginning of the Migration period, c. A.D. 375.

ANGLES, SAXONS, AND JUTES

In book 1 of his *Ecclesiastical History of the English People* (*Historia ecclesiastica gentis Anglorum*), completed in A.D. 731, the Northumbrian cleric Bede reported that the Germanic settlers of Anglo-Saxon England came from “three very powerful Germanic tribes, the Saxons, the Angles and the Jutes.” From the coastal region of northern Germany, now Lower Saxony, came the East Saxons, South Saxons, and West Saxons. The East Angles, Middle Angles, Mercians, Northumbrians, and other Anglian peoples were descended from the people of Angeln, probably in the eastern part of Schleswig-Holstein. The Jutes, who settled Kent, the Isle of Wight, and the area of the West Saxon mainland facing Wight, came from the peninsula of Jutland (in present-day Denmark).

Writing in the middle of the second century A.D., the Roman geographer Ptolemy placed the Saxons at the neck of the Cimbric peninsula, which comprises Jutland in the north and Schleswig-Holstein (present-day Germany) in the south. Fourth- and fifth-century historical sources do not distinguish consistently between the Saxons and Franks, however, by the eighth century these groups had distinct political systems. From the mid-sixth century, the Continental Saxons expanded their territory until its incorporation into the Carolingian empire after the wars of A.D. 772–799.

In Lower Saxony longhouse settlements located on man-made mounds in coastal marshes, such as Feddersen Wierde (figs. 1 and 2) and Flögeln, were in use until the fifth century. A range of building types, including farmhouses, granaries, barns, and outbuildings, were excavated at the Carolingian settlement of Warendorf in Westphalia. In Lower Saxony and extending toward the Rhine, a unique native metalwork style, as demonstrated by supporting-arm and equal-arm brooches decorated with

chip-carved surfaces, incorporated Roman influences. The sites at Westerwanna, Issendorf, and Liebenau, dating to the fourth and early fifth centuries, exemplify large Continental cremation cemeteries, which originally appeared in the first century. Inhumation, which emerged in the fourth century, had replaced cremation by the ninth century.

Early Anglo-Saxon cemeteries in England have produced ceramics identical to those found in the Saxon homeland identified by Bede. Fifth-century pottery vessels with “standing arch” designs or bosses from eastern and southern England parallel contemporary ceramics from the traditional homeland of the Saxons. Indeed, the similarity between face masks appearing on vessels from Wehden (Niedersachsen) and Markshall (Norfolk) has led to the suggestion that they were created by the same potter.

Procopius, a sixth-century Byzantine writer, claimed that the Frisians, people living along the coast of Lower Saxony, and Angles settled Britain. In chapter 40 of his account *Germania*, written in the late first century A.D., the Roman historian Tacitus cited the Anglii among the Germanic tribes. From the fourth century, cruciform and small-long brooches characterized a distinctive material culture extending beyond the bounds of modern Angeln. Cremation was the predominant burial practice during the fourth and fifth centuries. According to book 2 of Bede’s *Ecclesiastical History*, migration across the channel had depopulated Angeln, a claim that has found some archaeological support. Archaeological evidence indicates that by the sixth century, the large Continental cremation cemeteries were no longer in use, and settlement activity disappeared between the fifth and eighth centuries. A few sixth- and seventh-century hoards, stray finds, and burials, however, argue against Bede’s claim of total abandonment. Significant language replacement indicates repopulation in Angeln after the eighth century.

Design motifs on ceramics from the Continental Anglian cremation cemeteries appear on vessels found in southern and eastern England. Pots with horizontal grooves or corrugations around the neck, vertical grooves or bosses ringing the shoulder, and a wider, shallower profile than those from the Elbe-Weser region are found both on the Continent at Hammoor (Germany) and Sørup

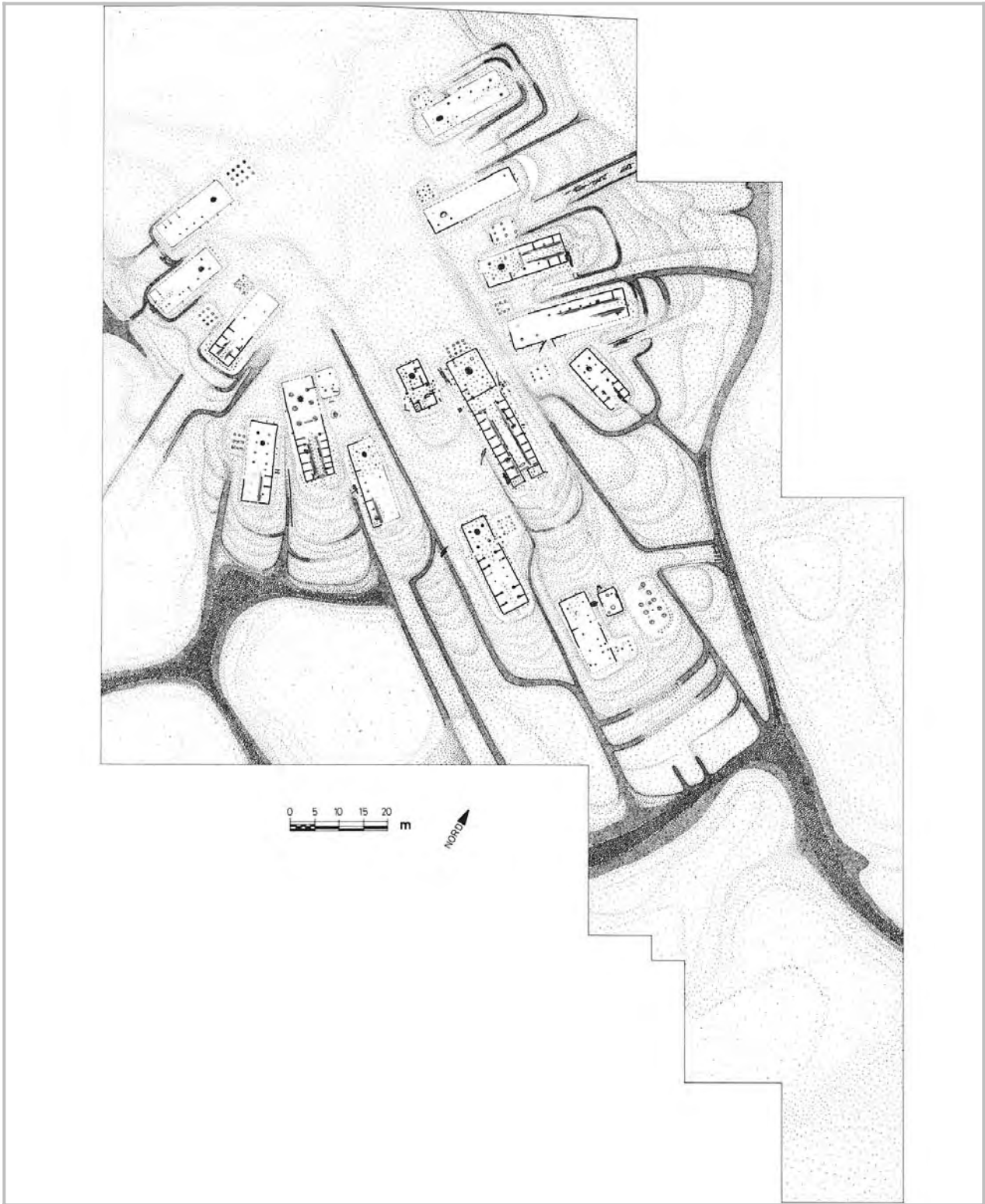


Fig. 1. Site plan of the settlement at Feddersen Wierde. NIEDERSÄCHSISCHES INSTITUT FÜR HISTORISCHE KÜSTENFORSCHUNG. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.



Fig. 2. The Roman Iron Age site of Feddersen Wierde. NIEDERSÄCHSISCHES INSTITUT FÜR HISTORISCHE KÜSTENFORSCHUNG. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

(Denmark) and in England at Caistor-by-Norwich (Norfolk). Cross-headed small-long brooches with spatulate feet and cruciform brooches provide a connection between Angeln and England. Moreover, similarities in the range of artifacts and their proportional occurrence noted between the large cemeteries at Spong Hill (Norfolk) and Bordesholm and Süderbrarup in Schleswig-Holstein have been explained tentatively as the result of migration from the Continent.

Eastern Kent and western Jutland are similarly linked through ceramic and metalwork types. Unlike the areas of England traditionally ascribed to the Angles and Saxons, however, Jutish Kent lacks early burials representative of the earliest settlers. Indeed, burials dating to the fifth and sixth century in Jutland generally are unfurnished. Consequently, little evidence exists for the direct import into Kent of Jutish types of ceramics, bracteates (thin metal plates), and cruciform brooches.

The artifactual diversity of the contact-period Anglo-Saxon cemeteries nonetheless indicates that the Germanic migrants were not culturally homogeneous. Although fifth-century archaeological parallels between England and the Continent are evident

in ceramics and metalwork, it is from the late fifth and sixth centuries in England that ethnic redefinition, manifested by women's dress styles, approximated the Anglian, Saxon, and Jutish groupings described by Bede. Anglian women's primary garment was a tunic dress (*peplos*) secured at both shoulders by small, generally similar brooches. Although the classic *peplos* was sleeveless, the presence of wrist clasps indicates that, in England, Anglian women wore either a long-sleeved version of this dress or a sleeved underdress beneath the sleeveless variant. A third, often larger brooch at the neck, shoulder, or chest either fastened the undergarment to the tunic or closed a heavier outer cloak. In early Anglo-Saxon England, annular, small-long, and cruciform brooches traditionally are associated with women living in the area attributed by Bede to the Angles.

In the Saxon area of England, women's Germanic-type costume incorporated supporting-arm brooches, equal-arm brooches, and saucer brooches similar to those of their Continental homelands, as well as disk brooches. In Kent and the Isle of Wight, the regions traditionally connected with Jutish settlement, women followed a distinctive Continental-influenced dress style that featured a centrally closing garment secured by inlaid brooches. The con-

tinuation of these Continental associations into the sixth century is indicated by the importation into Kent of brooches decorated with a southern Scandinavian art style and bracteate pendants. In the late sixth and seventh centuries, access to the wealth of the Frankish kingdom enabled elite women in Kent and the Isle of Wight to adopt other Continental fashions, such as crystal ball amulets and gold-braid headbands (*vittae*).

Today, it is recognized that Bede was describing not the political landscape of the Anglo-Saxon migration, as he claimed, but that of his own time. The Germanic origin myths that legitimized these cultural identities were remembered and exploited into the eighth century.

See also **Anglo-Saxon England** (vol. 2, part 7); **Spong Hill** (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Colgrave, Bertram, and R. A. B. Mynors, trans. and eds. *Bede's Ecclesiastical History of the English People*. Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1969.
- Hills, Catherine. "Did the People of Spong Hill Come from Schleswig-Holstein?" *Studien zur Sachsenforschung* 13 (1998): 145–154.
- Hines, John. "Culture Groups and Ethnic Groups in Northern Germany in and around the Migration Period." *Studien zur Sachsenforschung* 13 (1999): 219–232.
- Pohl, Walter. "Ethnic Names and Identities in the British Isles: A Comparative Perspective." In *The Anglo-Saxons from the Migration Period to the Eighth Century: An Ethnographic Perspective*. Edited by J. Hines, pp. 7–40. Woodbridge, U.K.: Boydell Press, 1997.
- Pohl, Walter, and Helmut Reimitz, eds. *Strategies of Distinction: The Construction of Ethnic Communities, 300–800*. Leiden, The Netherlands, and Boston: Brill, 1988.
- Welch, Martin. *English Heritage Book of Anglo-Saxon England*. London: B.T. Batsford/English Heritage, 1992.
- Wood, Ian. "Before and after the Migration to Britain." In *The Anglo-Saxons from the Migration Period to the Eighth Century: An Ethnographic Perspective*. Edited by J. Hines, pp. 41–54. Woodbridge, U.K.: Boydell Press, 1997.

GENEVIEVE FISHER

BAIUVARII

The Baiuvarii represent the most recent Germanic tribe of the Migration period that played an impor-

tant part in the development of present-day Germany. The first historical record comes from Roman authors of the early sixth century A.D.: Jordanes mentions the tribe in his history of the Goths (551), perhaps reflecting an earlier reference (520) in Cassiodorus. Later the tribe is mentioned by the Gallic Latin poet Venantius Fortunatus (565). The main settlement area of the Baiuvarii included parts of the old Roman provinces of Raetia and Noricum, a territory whose modern appellation, Bavaria, derives from their name. The name "Baiuvarii" probably means "men from the land of Baia," or Bohemia, the old Boiohaemum of the ancient geographers. Identifying the date when these Baiuvarii arrived and the inhabitants they encountered in the Roman territories of Raetia and Noricum was long a subject of constant debate; however, developments in archaeological research in the late twentieth century have yielded new insights, and the understanding of the ethnogenesis of the Baiuvarii has changed radically over the years.

By the 1960s a majority of researchers had observed a distinct gap between late antiquity and the Early Middle Ages. They assumed that the Alpine foothills remained largely unoccupied after the Romans withdrew in 400 until the Baiuvarii, as a fully developed tribe, migrated from Bohemia into the area in the early sixth century. Indeed, for a long time, the archaeological sources remained almost completely silent regarding the fifth century. Since the 1960s, however, archaeological finds have confirmed the account of the Latin scholar Eusebius, who records in his sixth-century *Vita Sancti Severini* that in Raetia, too, Roman rule and border defense ended only around 476 as a direct result of the end of the Western Roman Empire.

Baiuvarian cemeteries have now been discovered that were used as early as the second half of the fifth century and remained in use around 700; examples include the graveyards at Barbing–Irlmauth (Regensburg), Klettham–Altenerding (Erding), Bittenbrunn (in the Neuburg–Schrobenhausen district), Straubing–Bajuwarenstrasse (near Regensburg), and Munich Aubing. Two cases, namely the late Roman forts at Neuburg and Straubing and the early Baiuvarian cemeteries of Bittenbrunn and Straubing–Bajuwarenstrasse, reveal a direct connection between the Germanic allies, who abandoned the forts around 476 and the core of the new settlers

who founded the oldest Baiuvarian farming villages. These early cemeteries have one thing in common—the grave goods do not indicate a uniform “early Baiuvarian” culture that would also show close links to Bohemia. The burial offerings rather contain a wide variety of antique objects of Roman, Bohemian, Ostrogothic, Alemannic, and Langobardic origin that strongly suggest that Baiuvarian ethnogenesis is polyethnic in character.

The eponymic core of this process is evident in the archaeologically defined Friedenrain-Prestovice group, which goes back to the Teutons in southern Bohemia. In the fifth century A.D. this group migrated by way of the valley between Cham and Fürth through the Bavarian Forest and into the eastern Bavarian approaches to the Roman *limes* between Neuburg and Passau. They soon provided the majority of the Roman frontier troops, a situation that lasted until the end of Roman rule around the middle of the fifth century. Historically, this group is to be identified as the “Baiuvarii,” the “men from Bohemia,” who lent their name to this polyethnic tribal structure and represented the nucleus of Bavarian ethnogenesis.

Only in the late sixth century do the grave goods begin to suggest a uniform Baiuvarian cemetery culture, which because of strong Frankish-Lombard influence cannot be distinguished in all respects from neighboring tribes, such as the Alemanni. A difference in the settlement of the land is evident between the north and the south. In the Danube area settlement was continuous from the time of the Romans; in contrast, the Alpine foothills to the south were resettled somewhat later, except for the Roman settlement region around Salzburg.

From the meager historical sources and the insights offered by archaeological research as of the early 2000s, the following model emerges for the Bavarian tribal genesis: when Roman rule came to an end on the Danube around the middle of the fifth century, a polyethnic tribe comprising Roman and immigrant Germanic groups (including Alemanni, Ostrogoths, Langobards, and Thuringians) formed at the turn of the fifth to the sixth century A.D. around Germanic allies who had migrated into the area from Bohemia (the “Baiuvarii”). Particularly important is the fact that the massive and therefore practically indestructible fortress of Regensburg remained in the possession of the allies of

Bohemian origin. Based on written records starting in the Early Middle Ages, this was the royal capital of the early medieval stem duchy of the Agilolfing dynasty.

This Baiuvarian ethnogenesis should not be imagined in a power vacuum or seen as a conscious decision of those involved. It is more likely to have occurred as a result of external influences, namely through the intervention of the Ostrogoths. Under their king Theoderic, the Ostrogoths had conquered Italy from Eastern Rome in 493. The territory they acquired included Raetia up to the Danube, an area that formed part of the diocese of Italy. Ostrogothic rule over the region between the Alps and the Danube ended only in 536. In that year, the Ostrogothic king, Witigis, who was forced to defend Italy against the troops of the Eastern Roman emperor, Justinian, ceded the region north of the Alps to the Franks under their king Theudebert from the Merovingian dynasty. The tribe of the Baiuvarii between the Lech, the Danube, the Enns, and the Alps continued to enjoy substantial independence under the rule of the Agilolfingian dukes, who had many connections with the Langobard dynasty. In the sixth and seventh centuries, settlement expanded rapidly and in northern Bavaria eventually spread across the Danube towards the north. In addition to archaeological finds, historical place-names increasingly testify to these settlement processes in the seventh century. Toward the end of its independence, the stem duchy of Bavaria included the region up to the Enns River and the Bavarian Forest in the east but failed to reach the Main River in the north. The western boundary was formed by a line extending from the Rednitz and Lech Rivers to the upper Inn Valley. In the region of the Alps, the southern area included the upper Etsch Valley and the upper Pustertal Valley.

Regensburg is mentioned as the capital (metropolis) of the stem duchy of Bavaria for the first time in 770. Many ducal palaces and large ducal estates are known to have existed in the eighth century. The earliest known diocesan towns are Eichstätt, Regensburg, Freising, Passau, Salzburg, and Säben. Many monasteries and cloisters, including Mondsee, Mattsee, Chiemsee, and Benediktbeuern, date back to the Agilolfingians. Under Charlemagne a split occurred with the last Agilolfing, Tassilo III,

who was deposed in 788. After that, Frankish officeholders ruled in Bavaria.

See also **Ostrogoths** (vol. 2, part 7); **Southern Germany** (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Czysz, Wolfgang, Karlheinz Dietz, Thomas Fischer, and Hans-Jörg Kellner, eds. *Die Römer in Bayern*. Stuttgart, Germany: Theiss, 1995.
- Dannheimer, Hermann, and Heinz Dopsch, eds. *Die Bajuwaren: Von Severin bis Tassilo 488–788*. Munich and Salzburg: Amt der Salzburger Landesregierung, 1988.
- Dietz, Karlheinz, and Thomas Fischer. *Die Römer in Regensburg*. Regensburg, Germany: Pustet, 1996.
- Fischer, Thomas. *Das bajuwarische Reihengräberfeld von Staubing: Studien zur Frühgeschichte im bayerischen Donauraum*. Kallmuenz, Germany: Michael Lassleben, 1993.
- . *Noricum*. Mainz, Germany: Zabern, 1992.
- Friesinger, H., and F. Daim, eds. *Typen der Ethnogenese unter besonderer Berücksichtigung der Bayern*. Vienna: Verlag der Österreichischen Akademie der Wissenschaften, 1990.
- Geisler, Hans. “Das frühbairische Gräberfeld Straubing-Bajuwarenstraße.” *Internationale Archäologie* 30 (1998): 339–342.
- Menghin, Wilfried. *Frühgeschichte Bayerns: Römer und Germanen, Baiern und Schwaben, Franken und Slawen*. Stuttgart, Germany: Theiss, 1990.
- Reindel, Kurt. “Grundlegung: Das Zeitalter der Agilolfinger (bis 788).” In *Handbuch der bayerischen Geschichte*. Vol. 1. Edited by Max Spindler. Munich: Beck, 1981.
- Werner, Joachim. “Die Herkunft der Bajuwaren und der ‘östlich-merowingische’ Reihengräberkreis.” In *Aus Bayerns Frühzeit: Friedrich Wagner zum 75. Geburtstag*. Edited by Joachim Werner, pp. 229–250. Munich: Commission for Bavarian National History, Beck, 1962.
- Wolfram, Herwig, and Andreas Schwarcz, eds. “Die Bayern und ihre Nachbarn: Berichte des Symposiums der Kommission für Frühmittelalterforschung 25–28 Oktober 1982.” *Denkschrift der Österreichischen Akademie der Wissenschaften* 179–180 (1985).

THOMAS FISCHER

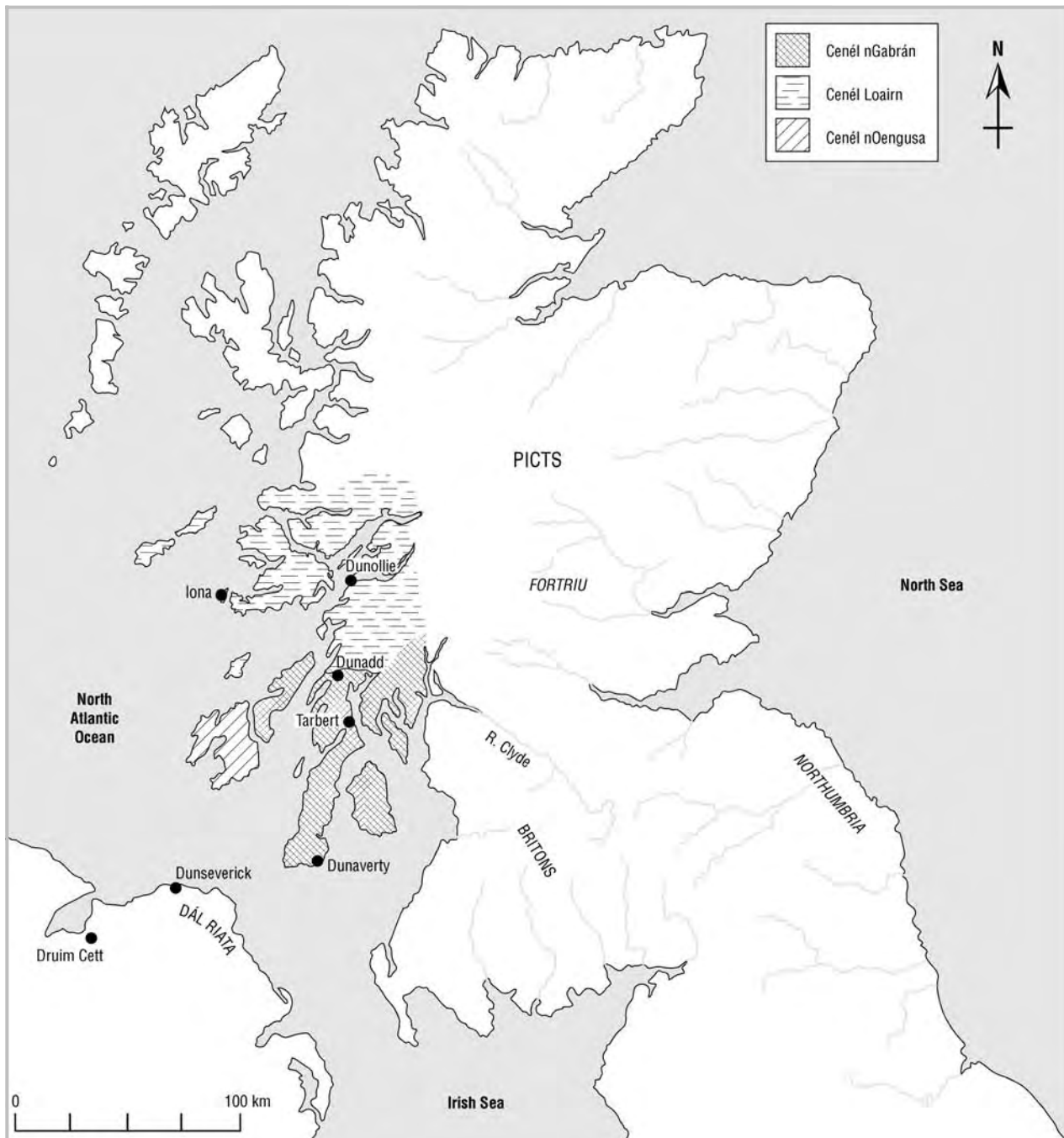
(TRANSLATED BY GINA BRODERICK)

DÁL RIATA

One of the peoples of early medieval Scotland, the Dál Riata (or Dalriada) were Gaelic speakers whose territorial base was in Argyll on the West Highland coast. They have provided some of the earliest indigenous historical sources for Scotland, and they participated in the development of the multicultural Insular art style. Their kings are credited with the creation of the greater kingdom of “Scot-land” during the mid-ninth century A.D.

The Dál Riata originated in northern Ireland. Their origin legends claim that Fergus Mór came to Argyll c. A.D. 500. In A.D. 575, at the Convention of Druim Cett, the king of the Scottish Dál Riata surrendered his rights to military service on land from the Irish Dál Riata but retained the rights to their tribute and ship service. Despite this historical evidence, there is debate about exactly how many Dál Riata came to Argyll and under what circumstances. They did speak a Goidelic, or Q-Celtic, language, the ancestor of modern Scots Gaelic, whereas their neighbors the Picts and Britons spoke Brittonic, or P-Celtic, languages related more closely to modern Welsh, which might argue for significant population movement. There is no archaeological evidence, however, to support the theory of a large-scale migration. The archaeological record in Argyll shows considerable continuity with the earlier Iron Age. Nonetheless, it should be kept in mind that there is evidence from early in prehistory for close contact between Argyll and northern Ireland, which are, after all, separated by a mere 19 kilometers (12 miles) of water. In the early twenty-first century most scholars support the idea of a move by the ruling dynasty of the Dál Riata, perhaps under pressure from the powerful Uí Néill, or Ulaid, from their Irish homeland to an area with which they had close connections, perhaps including marriage alliances—very much as some late medieval MacDonnalds became the MacDonnells of Antrim.

The Scottish Dál Riata had three, later four, major *cenéla*, or kindreds: Cenél nGabráin, Cenél Loairn, Cenél nOengusa, and Cenél Comgaill, the last of which split from Cenél nGabráin by the eighth century A.D. The names of these groups, some description of their territories, and a census of their military forces are found in the *Senchus fer*



Key sites and kindred territories of early Dál Riata. ADAPTED FROM LANE AND CAMPBELL 2000.

nAlban (History of the men of Scotland), a tenth-century document substantially based on a seventh-century original. The *Senchus* is part king list and royal genealogy, part naval muster: the basic unit of military service was the ship, with two seven-benched ships due from every twenty houses. In the rugged landscape of Argyll, travel by water was easi-

er than by land until well into the twentieth century, and so it is natural that the Dál Riata, with lands in both Ireland and Scotland, should see their navy as more important than their army. The military history of Dál Riata, by land and sea, is found in the entries of various Irish annals, such as the Annals of Tigernach; however, it is widely believed that many

of these detailed Scottish entries initially came from an annal compiled at the monastery of Iona in Argyll.

Iona, the birthplace of the Columban tradition of Christianity, no doubt was responsible for first putting so much of Dalriadic history onto parchment. The monastery was founded by Columba (A.D. 521–597) of the northern Uí Neíll, who left Ireland (perhaps expediently) in A.D. 563 and associated himself with the politically dominant Cenél nGabráin, consecrating Aedán mac Gabráin (r. A.D. 574–608) king of the Dál Riata at Iona. After Columba, Iona's most famous abbot was Adomnán (abbot A.D. 679–704), who wrote the *Life of St. Columba* about a century after the saint's death.

Iona was a center not only of learning but also of art, with a wide network of international connections that fostered the development of what is known as Insular, or Hiberno-Saxon, art. Although it is commonly called “Celtic,” this interlace-rich style is actually a fusion of artistic elements from Celtic, Germanic, and Mediterranean sources. The relative importance of the different elements and the date and location where this hybrid style first appeared are hotly debated, but numerous scholars believe that the Book of Durrow and the Book of Kells, important early Insular manuscripts, may have been produced at Iona during the seventh and eighth centuries A.D. The importance of the Dál Riata in the development of Insular art is supported further by the large number of seventh-century brooch molds and other craft-working materials excavated at the site of Dunadd, the capital of Dalriadic Argyll. In the early medieval period the royalty and nobility of different kingdoms interacted not only in the battles recorded in the annals but also through marriage and other forms of alliance. For instance, Oswald (king of Anglian Northumbria, r. A.D. 634–642) was in exile in Dál Riata earlier in the seventh century and became a Christian while there, and it is from precisely such cross-cultural contacts that the Insular style may have been born.

Politically and militarily the Dál Riata were one of the major powers of North Britain, although there was a period in the mid-seventh century when they may have been under Northumbrian overlordship. Their relations with the Picts, their neighbors to the east, are highly debatable, particularly during the late eighth century and early ninth century:

some scholars believe that the Picts were the overlords of the Dál Riata, whereas others think that a Dalriadic dynasty ruled the Picts. This is the period when the Dál Riata were coming under attack from the sea: the first recorded Viking raid in Scotland hit Iona in A.D. 794. As the Norse gained control of the island fringe of Argyll and the Pictish north, the Dál Riata and Picts amalgamated into a single kingdom, whose first recognized king was Cinead mac Ailpín (more familiarly known as Kenneth mac Alpin, r. A.D. 843–858) of the Dál Riata. Although it is unclear whether this was the result of conquest or assimilation, by the mid-tenth century texts spoke of the destruction of the Picts, and the name of the kingdom itself, Alba, was Gaelic.

See also *Dark Age/Early Medieval Scotland* (vol. 2, part 7).

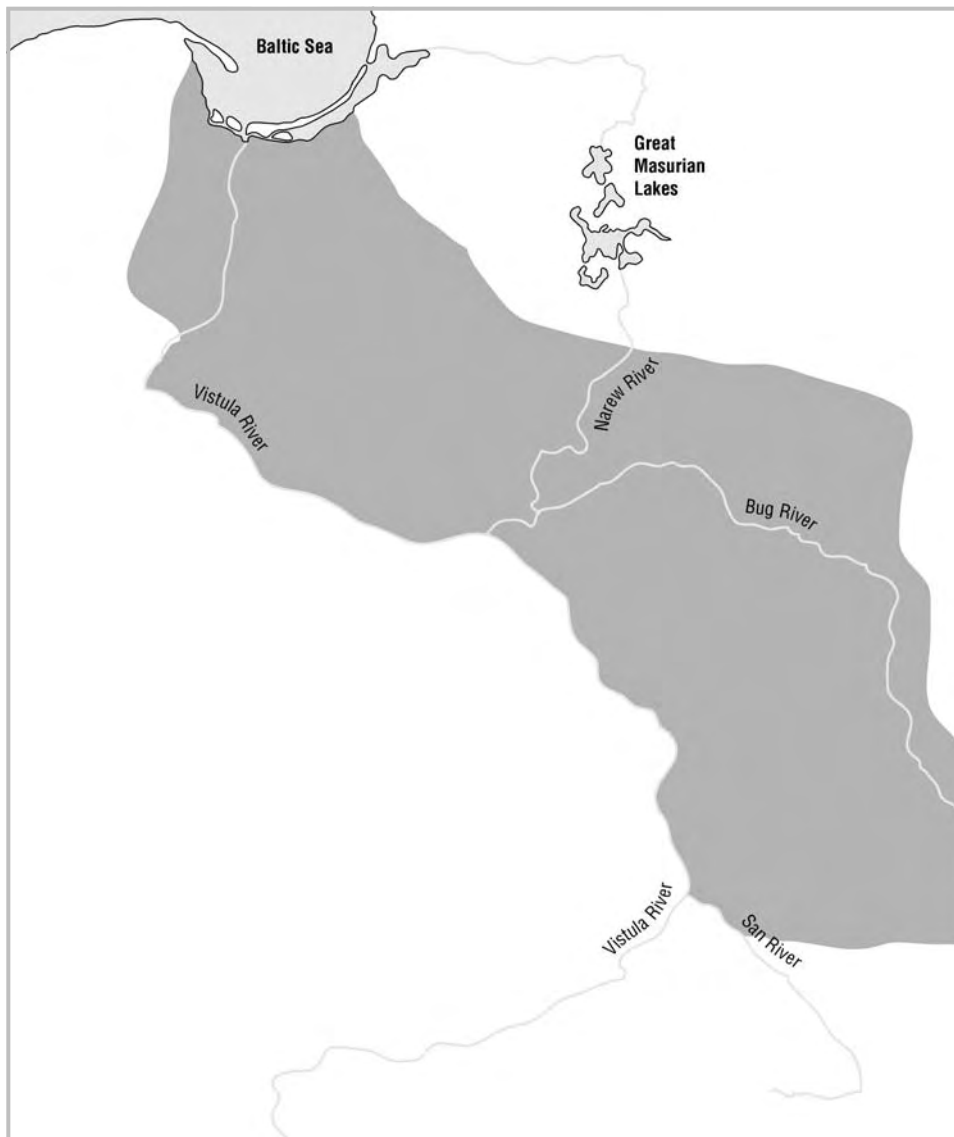
BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Bannerman, John. *Studies in the History of Dalriada*. Edinburgh: Scottish Academic Press, 1974.
- Campbell, Ewan. *Saints and Sea-kings: The First Kingdom of the Scots*. Edinburgh: Canongate Books—Historic Scotland, 1999.
- Foster, Sally M. *Picts, Gaels, and Scots: Early Historic Scotland*. London: B. T. Batsford—Historic Scotland, 1996.
- Lane, Alan, and Ewan Campbell. *Dunadd: An Early Dalriadic Capital*. Oxford: Oxbow Books, 2000.

ELIZABETH A. RAGAN

GOTHS BETWEEN THE BALTIC AND BLACK SEAS

In the middle of the sixth century A.D. the monk Jordanes recorded in his *Getica* the detailed history of the Goths. The story describes their crossing the Baltic Sea under the lead of King Berig, a period of time spent on its southern coast, and their later departure (during King Filimer's reign) to the Black Sea, where the Gothic kingdoms subsequently were destroyed by the Huns c. A.D. 375. The Roman historian Tacitus (in *Germania*) confirmed the presence of the Goths in the north, and the astronomer and geographer Ptolemy (in *Geographica*) located them by the lower Vistula River in the late first and the second centuries A.D. Archaeologists supported



Extent of the Wielbark culture (shaded region) during the third century A.D. and second half of the fourth century A.D.

these written accounts by ascribing to the early Goths the so-called Wielbark culture in Poland (earlier known as the Gotho-Gepidic culture), with its specific cemeteries and characteristic artifacts. The Cherniakhov culture, identified between the Danube and Dnieper Rivers, came to represent later Gothic settlement.

This clear picture has come into question thanks to critical analyses of the historical evidence and precise chronological dating of archaeological finds. Historians have questioned the reliability of Jordanes and concluded that the alleged Scandina-

vian origin of the Goths probably was just a literary motif—a topos introduced in the tribal tradition to give people a feeling of ancient heroic unity. Moreover, an earlier chronology of typical “Gothic” finds in northern Poland, rather than in Sweden, put in doubt the sudden arrival of the Goths in the middle of the first century A.D. Thus, there are no historical or archaeological data to sustain the Scandinavian origin of the Goths as sudden mass invaders of the lower Vistula area.

It should be accepted, then, that Gothic ethnogenesis took place not in Scandinavia but south of

the Baltic in the context of the advantageous circumstances of trade contacts with the Roman Empire. Control over the lucrative amber export was both a source of income and a reason for fierce competition among local elite groups, and symbolic expression of group identity played an important role in the formation of the Gothic sense of identity. It was a transformation of local populations of the older Oksywie culture into a new entity that became archaeologically visible as the Wielbark culture around the middle of the first century A.D. Various elements, including Roman traditions, were used to form a specific material culture distinctively different from traditions that prevailed in the Germanic Barbaricum: rich female adornments and handmade pottery and characteristic burial rituals (stelae, pavements and rings of stones—mostly in the early Roman period, the coexistence of cremation and inhumation burials, and poor male graves with no weapons or iron).

Jordanes's description suggests that the early Goths did not differ from other "barbarian" peoples. Like, for example, Langobards, Herulians, or Vandals, they were an opportunistic agglomeration unified by the successes of their military leaders, who legitimized their domination by creating myths of the heroic common past. Some archaeologists also suggest a polyethnic composition of the Wielbark culture. Migration of a political-military center did not mean migration of all inhabitants of a territory controlled by a chief-king. Archaeology does not support Jordanes's report of the well-organized resettlement of the Baltic Goths to the Black Sea in the first half of the third century A.D. It is thought that it was instead a gradual infiltration that began in the late second century A.D., while a substantial part of the population stayed in the north.

After some time there emerged a new elite that also decided to migrate to the south in search of better opportunities. They are identified by Jordanes as the Gepids, which meant "Late Comers." Researchers cannot discern any "Gothic" or "Gepidic" finds in Poland, which means that at the level of the material culture, symbolism, these two ethnic groups did not yet differ there. Thus, the ethnicity of the Gepids must have formed as a result of the decision taken by the second generation of Wielbark leaders to resettle in the late third century and found their new homeland around the Black

Sea. That dramatic decision was taken during a deterioration of the climate in Europe and the economic crisis of the Roman Empire during the period A.D. 235–284. Elites that called themselves "Goths" and "Gepids" decided to leave their Baltic homeland in search of better circumstances to sustain their power status. The warlike mobilization of the migrating population had the effect of uniting people around their leaders, who took responsibility for the prosperity of their followers. Success in subordinating fertile lands lying close to the rich Roman markets reinforced these leaders' power and led to the formation of ruling dynasties.

The region of the lower Vistula still was not emptied, however; indeed, some of the Wielbark cemeteries were used until the fourth century or even into the early fifth century A.D. Continuity has been established by the technological tradition in pottery making that may be traced from the Wielbark culture to the West Baltic culture that expanded toward the lower Vistula at the end of the fifth century. Some studies even suggest that elements of the Wielbark tradition survived until the sixth century.

Thus, the alleged quick resettlement of the Baltic Goths toward the Black Sea as a result of an organized migration led by King Filimer in A.D. 150 must be considered a myth. Instead, archaeologists suggest a slow southern expansion of cultural patterns promoted by Wielbark-Gothic elites. Contacts between the Baltic and Black Sea zones never broke down, however, which resulted in the formation of a huge area inhabited by populations with cultural similarities—biritual cemeteries, male graves with no weapons, and female jewelry.

It seems that the later history of the Goths, who escaped to the west pushed by invading Huns, should be changed or at least supplemented. German archaeologist Eduard Šturms already had suggested in 1950 that some of the Black Sea Goths returned to the north to join those "Goths" who had never left the Baltic zone. There are no written sources to support this claim, but inflow of Byzantine golden coins (dated to A.D. 455–518) to the region of the lower Vistula may indicate such a remigration in the circumstance of the sudden disintegration of the Hun "empire" after A.D. 455.

Thus, modern archaeological knowledge undermines the long-held traditional view of the

Goths as coming from Scandinavia, an already organized “people,” to subordinate the region of the lower Vistula, only to migrate later toward the Black Sea and then to the west. Instead, one can envisage a story of a long development and gradual changes with no clear beginning and no end, a story that should not be equated with the heroic history of Gothic kings as described by ancient authors.

See also **Ostrogoths** (vol. 2, part 7); **Visigoths** (vol. 2, part 7); **Germany and the Low Countries** (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Bierbrauer, Volker. “Goten. II. Archäologisches.” In *Reallexikon der Germanischen Altertumskunde* 12: 407–427. Berlin: Walter de Gruyter, 1998.
- . “Archäologie und Geschichte der Goten vom 1–7 Jahrhundert. Versuch einer Bilanz.” *Fruhmittelalterlichen Studien* 28 (1994): 51–171.
- Godłowski, Kazimierz. *The Chronology of the Late Roman and Early Migration Periods in Central Europe*. Kraków, Poland: Uniwersytet Jagielloński, 1970.
- Heather, Peter. *The Goths*. Oxford: Blackwell, 1996.
- Kmiecinski, Jerzy. “Problem of the So-called Gotho-Gepiden Culture in the Light of Recent Research.” *Archaeologia Polona* 4 (1962): 270–285.
- Kokowski, Andrzej. *Grupa masłomęcka: Z badań przemiany kultury Gotów w młodszym okresie rzymskim* [The Masłomęcz Group: From studies of changes in the culture of the Goths during the Early Roman Age]. Lublin, Poland: Uniwersytet Marii Curie-Skłodowskiej, 1995.
- Okulicz-Kozaryn, Jerzy. “Próba identyfikacji archeologicznej ludów bałtyjskich w połowie pierwszego tysiąclecia naszej ery” [Attempt at archaeological identification of Baltic peoples in the mid-first millennium A.D.]. *Barbaricum* 1 (1989): 64–100.
- Wolfram, Herwig. “*Origo et religio*: Ethnic Traditions and Literature in Early Medieval Texts.” *Early Medieval Europe* 3, no. 1 (1994): 19–38.
- . *Geschichte der Goten: Von den Anfängen bis zur Mitte des sechsten Jahrhunderts. Entwurf einer historischen Ethnographie*. Munich: C.H. Beck, 1979.
- Wołagiewicz, Ryszard. *Ceramika kultury wielbarskiej między Bałtykiem a Morzem Czarnym* [Pottery of the Wielbark culture between the Baltic and Black Seas]. Szczecin, Poland: Muzeum Narodowe w Szczecinie, 1993.
- . “Kultura wielbarska—problemy interpretacji etnicznej” [The Wielbark culture—problems of ethnic identification]. *Problemy kultury wielbarskiej*. Słupsk: Wyższa Szkoła Pedagogiczna (1981): 79–106.

PRZEMYSŁAW URBAŃCZYK

HUNS

The Huns included Asiatic peoples speaking Mongolic or Turkic languages who dominated the Eurasian steppe from before 300 B.C. In the third century A.D. the Great Wall of China, 2,400 kilometers long, was built to fend off “western barbarians.” The reverse impact of attacks set off a domino effect of westward migrations. Just after A.D. 370 the Huns crossed the Volga River and conquered the Alans, who had dominated the steppe north of the Caucasus Mountains for millennia. The Huns destroyed the Ostrogothic empire in the Dnieper–Don interfluvium in A.D. 375 and defeated the Visigoths at the Dniester River the next year. In his work *Getica* the sixth-century historian Jordanes described a century of Hun subjugation, with Latin translations of passages from eyewitness accounts by the Byzantine Rhetor Priscus. Copies of this compilation biased medieval historiography. Records by a Roman officer, Ammianus Marcellinus, from the late fourth century A.D. form another collection of topics (beginning with the Greek historian Herodotus in the fifth century B.C.) that still may be found in the curricula of many European schools.

Roman infighting in A.D. 395 permitted the Huns to conquer the Roman Balkan provinces and then invade present-day southern Poland. In 406 fleeing German peoples broke into the western Roman Empire at the Rhine. The Huns exploited this situation by offering lucrative mercenary services to the Romans against the intruders. After attacking the Balkans, the Huns moved the seat of their empire into the southern Great Hungarian Plain in about 425. Several late Sarmatian settlements in this area show evidence of violent destruction. The Romans paid Hun mercenaries in money and war booty and provided them access to Roman areas ravaged by Germanic migrations, including Pannonia (A.D. 434). The Huns’ expansion is marked by finds in more than 150 archaeological sites across the Carpathian Basin. The finds include large metal cauldrons in Hungary (fig. 1), which are also depicted in rock art in the Altai Mountains in Siberia and southern Russia and western Mongolia.

The empire of the Huns filled a geopolitical vacuum between the two Roman Empires and even acted as a power broker. Huns conducted ambitious



Fig. 1. Several such large “sacrificial” metal cauldrons have been recovered in the Carpathian Basin as well as in Hun territories across Eurasia. PHOTOGRAPH BY ANDRÁS DABASI. HUNGARIAN NATIONAL MUSEUM. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

military campaigns in both directions. They raided Byzantine territories (A.D. 408, 441–443, and 447–449), occupying a series of cities and approaching Constantinople. In 442 the Huns extorted 6,000 pounds of “war compensation” plus 2,100 pounds of gold annually from Byzantium. This was the heyday of their empire. In 445 Attila, the new king of the Huns, attacked the western Roman Empire. He turned back before Ravenna, however, after an earthquake in 447 destroyed the Theodosian Wall in Constantinople (present-day Istanbul), built against the Huns in 408. Damage to the wall left the city vulnerable. The allied Gepid and Ostrogothic infantries slowed Attila’s move on Constantinople, allowing months for the reconstruction of the wall. The siege was canceled, but the Huns conducted prolonged peace negotiations with Byzantium. It was then that Rhetor Priscus, who documented the last decades of the Hun empire (434–455), visited Attila’s court in 449 with a Byzantine delegation.

Possibly under Byzantine inspiration, Attila moved west in 451, until the Romans and Visigoths and their allies stopped him at Orléans. His army united Gepids, Ostrogoths, Skirs, Alans, and Sarmatians, who faced fellow barbarians in the battle of Catalaunum. Fighting to a draw, the Huns retreated to the Great Hungarian Plain. Early in A.D. 452, Attila raided northern Italy, advancing beyond Mediolanum (modern-day Milan). In the summer, however, he was forced back by heat, epidemics, and the news that Byzantine forces had crossed the Danube River into Hun territory. Early the next year, amid preparations against Byzantine intrusion, Attila died unexpectedly. Subsequent infighting weakened the empire, and even his victorious son could not quell vassals, who defeated the Huns under Gepid leadership (A.D. 455). The Huns fled toward the Pontic steppe. Barbarians emerging after Hun rule finished off both Roman Empires, although written sources attribute much of this destruction to the Huns.

Although western chroniclers of the fifth through seventh centuries detailed Attila’s plundering of Gaul and Italy (451–452), the exploits of the Huns in Byzantium remained underrepresented in the historical record. Medieval Catholic propaganda also profited from an unauthenticated encounter between Pope Leo I and Attila. The bishop of Rome became the savior confronting “*flagellum dei*” (scourge of God), Saint Augustine’s term for Gothic King Alaric transposed to Attila in medieval Italy. Attila’s popular descriptive, “the Dog-Headed,” is a reminder of artificial skull deformation, a custom evidenced in fifth-century burials in the Hun confederacy. Attila’s life spans nearly a hundred and twenty-four years in documents, of which he spent forty-four as king. In reality, he ruled for eight years before dying at about the age of forty-five.

In German tradition Attila’s image varied between bloodthirsty despot and generous monarch. Christian Hungarians started considering Hun ancestry when the *Nibelungenlied*, a High German epic, was written in about 1200. Although the Turkic name Onugarian had been used haphazardly in western sources to denote Magyars (Ungar, Hungar, and Vengr) and other warlike equestrian barbarians, it was not linked specifically with Huns (Hsiung-nu) until the Middle Ages. In about 1283

Simon Kézai, “a loyal priest,” crafted an influential legend comparable to the *Nibelungenlied* with a heavy Hungarian emphasis. It was dedicated to King László IV of eastern Cumanian extraction, who was involved in a power struggle with his noblemen and the church. An apocryphal relation to Attila possibly attained paradigmatic significance when steppic tradition had to be reconciled with Christianity.

Despite differences in ethnohistory, language, and physical makeup, the images of Huns and conquering Hungarians hopelessly converged. Coincidentally, both Huns and Magyars launched ruthless raids on their neighbors and beyond from the Carpathian Basin, but with a five-hundred-year time gap between them (Huns in 425–452 and Hungarians in 899–955). Their renowned light cavalry tactics also were similar. By the sixteenth century the Hungarian nobility were considered the glorious descendants of Huns who had *re-conquered* Attila’s empire. In the nineteenth century the theory of Hun ancestry spread without social content in the public education system in Hungary, and the myth has become “historical knowledge,” periodically resuscitated even today.

In contrast to this passionate historical interest, the Huns have been studied archaeologically in Hungary only since 1932. The three tumultuous decades of their empire left a rich but scattered archaeological heritage in Hungary. (Even in central Asia only a very few Hun finds predate the fourth century A.D.) Stylistically, Alans and Germanic tribes shared many predominantly “Hun” elements in their attire. “Cicada” brooches represent one of the characteristic artifact types. The archaeological traces of the Huns include not only grave goods and hoards but also destruction layers at Antique settlements. Crude architectural structures over such strata often are linked to Hun occupation.

See also **Animal Husbandry** (vol. 2, part 7); **Hungary** (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Bóna, István, *A hunok és nagykirályaik* [The Huns and their great kings]. Budapest, Hungary: Corvina, 1993.
- Daim, Falko, ed. *Reitervölker aus dem Osten: Hunnen+Awaren*. Schloss Halbtorn, Austria: Burgenländische Landesausstellung, 1996.
- Kovács, Tibor, and Éva Garam, eds. *A Magyar Nemzeti Múzeum régészeti kiállításának vezetője* (Kr. e.

400,000–Kr. u. 804) [Guide to the archaeological exhibit of the Hungarian National Museum]. Budapest, Hungary: Magyar Nemzeti Múzeum, 2002.

Lengyel, A., and G. T. B. Radan, eds. *The Archaeology of Roman Pannonia*. Lexington: University Press of Kentucky, and Budapest, Hungary: Akadémiai Kiadó, 1980.

LÁSZLÓ BARTOSIEWICZ

LANGOBARDS

The Langobards, “Long-beards,” also known in modern literature as Lombards or Longobards, were not among the many large tribal and confederate groupings who assailed the Roman Empire in its last centuries in the West. Although Langobards are recorded by the Roman historian Tacitus in his first-century ethnographic survey, *Germania* (chap. 40), and noted as “famous because they are so few,” later Roman sources pass minimal comment on them, as the Langobards did not force the Rhine or Danube as the Alemanni or Goths achieved in the third and fourth centuries A.D. Although much is written now on ethnogenesis (the creation and formulation of new powers such as the Franks) in these crucial centuries, the Langobards stand out for their antiquity and resilience: Indeed, Tacitus describes how they were a tribe “hemmed in . . . by many mighty peoples, finding safety not in submission but in facing the risks of battle”—this helping them to persist as a name into the Early Middle Ages unlike other tribes listed by Tacitus, as, for example, the Reudingi and Eudoses. Archaeologically, the Langobardic presence in the early Roman imperial period is somewhat uncertain, although urnfields (cremation cemeteries) along the lower Elbe and in Lower Saxony, featuring weaponry as well as Roman imports, are attributed to the tribe. It is disputed how far the archaeological data inform on territory and ethnicity, but indications of change and demographic loss are suggested for the third century. Later textual sources argue for a southeastwardly migration of the Langobards toward Bohemia and thence the Middle Danube. It is doubtful that this movement can be easily tracked through a distinctive cultural residue, such as burial goods, yet any “migration” will have involved much more than the movement and

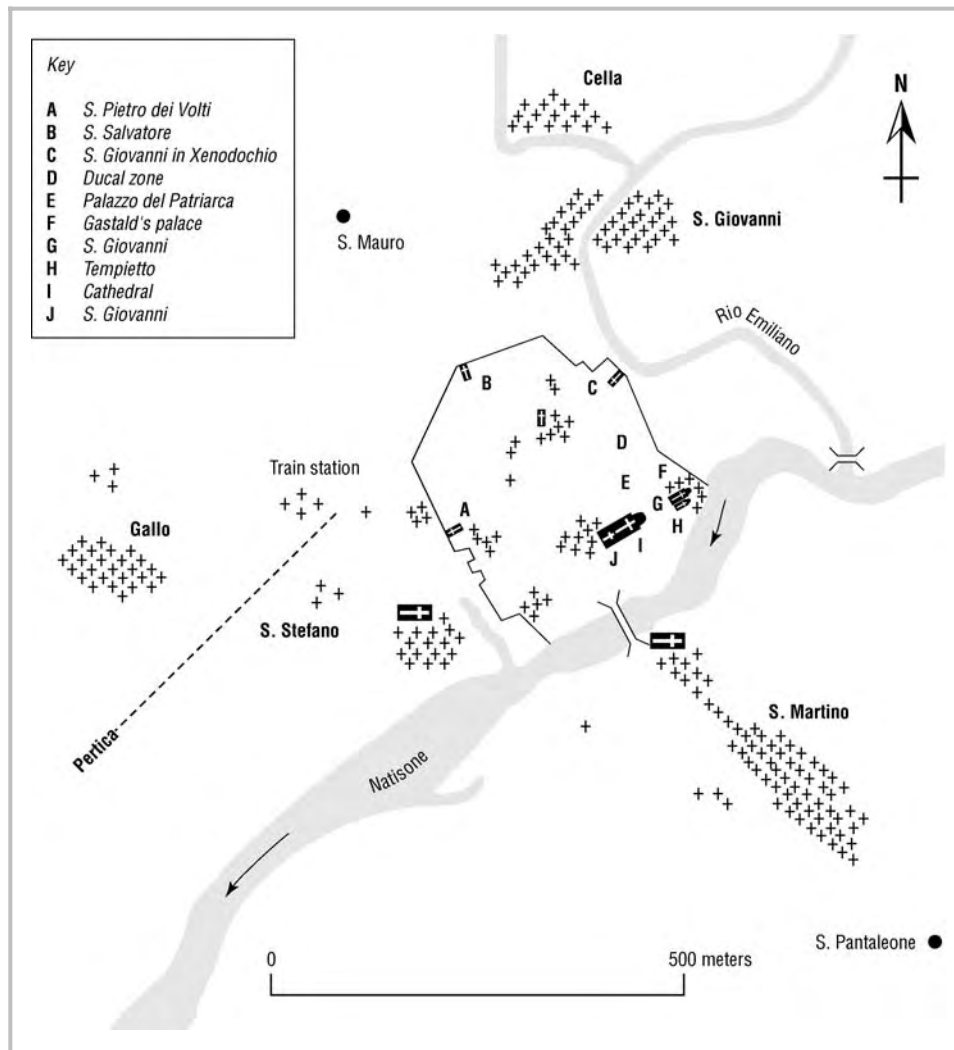


Fig. 1. Site plan showing Cividale and the distribution of cemeteries. ADAPTED FROM BROZZI 1981.

carrying of a name: ancestral bonds and badges of identity and belonging to the Langobardic name should have been preserved through language, titles, artifacts, and ritual, even if these also evolved with time.

Although knowledge of the earliest phases of Langobardic development and history-making remains somewhat insecure, a sixth-century prominence is well attested through both text and archaeology. A contemporary source, the Greek historian Procopius, records alliances forged in the 530s–550s A.D. between the Byzantine emperor Justinian and the Langobards in the context of the Byzantine-Gothic War in Italy (A.D. 534–555). The Langobards in the second quarter of the sixth century occupied the northern portions of former Roman

Pannonia (western Hungary); southern Pannonia was largely ceded, along with much tribute, by Justinian to secure the landward passage of imperial troops to Italy. Langobardic soldiers also fought in the Byzantine armies in Italy, and various chiefs became imperial officers, serving in the Balkans and even in Persia. Procopius records the Langobards as Christian and Catholic allies in the 540s, although Arianism and paganism remain evident into the seventh century.

The late-eighth-century Langobardic historian and poet Paulus Diaconus, writing chiefly for the court of Charlemagne, provides much of the documentation for the subsequent Langobardic occupation of large parts of Italy in opposition to the Byzantines. The Byzantines, who had only defeated

the Ostrogoths in the peninsula after a disastrously long and drawn-out conflict, appear little able to counter the Langobardic migration of A.D. 568, despite calling on Frankish support and using gold to buy off Langobardic dukes. Numbers involved in the migration are disputed, but a military component (that is, adult males) is estimated at about forty thousand. By c. A.D. 610 the Langobards held the bulk of northern Italy except for the coastal zones of Venetia and Liguria, and they had limited the imperial forces to a central Italian land corridor linking Rome and Ravenna; the king was based first in Verona, then Milan, and finally settled in Pavia. Territories were divided up chiefly among dukes based in towns and fortresses. Further territorial gains were made in the mid-seventh and mid-eighth centuries when the Byzantine capital Ravenna was occupied. With the ejection of Byzantine rule in central and northern Italy, papal Rome successfully appealed to the Carolingian Frankish court, culminating in Charlemagne's conquest of the *regnum Langobardorum* in A.D. 774. Powerful Langobardic principalities nonetheless endured in central southern Italy, notably focused on Benevento.

Ninth-century Benevento marked a significant Langobardic cultural flourish: in addition to the Langobard's major palace and religious foundations in the city itself, Langobardic princes and elites contributed strongly to monastic seats, notably San Vincenzo al Volturno, which had been founded c. A.D. 703 by three Langobardic brothers and monks. The ninth century witnessed substantial remodeling and aggrandizement of the abbey through Langobardic and Frankish patronage. In particular, excavations have revealed the extensive use of elaborate wall paintings; San Vincenzo also featured a major scriptorium producing high-quality manuscripts, some still extant. In northern and central Italy, eighth-century Langobardic churches and monasteries are attested by text, art, architecture, and archaeology, such as in the royal or ducal cities of Pavia and Verona. Exquisitely ornamented monasteries such as the Tempietto at Cividale and San Salvatore at Brescia survive to reveal not just religious fervor by the Langobardic elites but also a major cultural renaissance, prominent before direct Carolingian influence.

Although walled towns are attested as seats of power (for kings, dukes, lieutenants, and counts),

related settlement archaeology remains extremely limited: houses are known in Brescia and Verona, for example, and traces of palaces are claimed for Brescia, Cividale, and Spoleto, but in terms of rural sites, specific Langobardic-period housing is barely known (with the picture even more scarce for Langobardic Pannonia). This deficiency, however, extends also to non-Langobardic sites, including Rome and Ravenna, where sixth-to-eighth-century secular structures remain to be fully identified archaeologically. Excavations at Brescia in particular have shown how towns were severely depleted c. A.D. 600, with open spaces, timber and rubble buildings, robbed classical structures, and burials intruding into the urban confines. Nonetheless, the identification of towns as seats of authority suggests continuity of population, with the bulk of these inhabitants being Italian/Roman and non-Langobardic.

This continuity of population has implications for the chief source of archaeological information for the sixth and seventh centuries, namely burials. Major excavated necropolises include Nocera Umbra and Castel Trosino in central and eastern Italy and Testona (near Turin) and Cividale in the north; a key aristocratic group lies at Trezzo sull'Adda near Milan. Although weapon burials are prominent (and with elite presenting quality "parade" items—gilded or silvered spurs, decorative shields—into the mid-seventh century), attention has increasingly been given to other artifacts, notably dress fittings, can help identify patterns of integration or acculturation between Langobards and natives. The discovery of workshops in Rome that were the source of manufacture for items used in Langobardic territories particularly demonstrates exchange networks in the seventh-century peninsula. These data complement texts such as the Langobardic law codes to provide an ever fuller and more complex image of Langobardic and Langobard-period society and culture.

See also Coinage of the Early Middle Ages (vol. 2, part 7); Hungary (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Bona, Istvan. *The Dawn of the Dark Ages. The Gepids and the Lombards in the Carpathian Basin*. Budapest: Corvina Press, 1976.
- Broggiolo, Gian Pietro. *Brescia altomedievale: Urbanistica ed edilizia dal IV al IX secolo*. Mantua, Italy: Padus, 1993.

- (Synthesis of the major excavations and archive data for late antique and early medieval [Langobardic] Brescia.)
- Brogiolo, Gian Pietro, Nancy Gauthier, and Neil Christie, eds. *Towns and Their Territories: Between Late Antiquity and the Early Middle Ages*. Transformation of the Roman World, vol. 9. Leiden: Brill, 2000. (Includes articles on the Lombards, their settlement and defense in Pannonia and Italy, and their eighth-century artistic culture.)
- Brogiolo, Gian Pietro, and Sauro Gelichi. *Nuove ricerche sui castelli altomedievali in Italia settentrionale*. Florence: All'Insegna del Giglio, 1996. (Detailed discussion of sequences of fortifications, identifying Langobardic contribution.)
- Brozzi, Mario. *Il ducato longobardo del Friuli*. Udine: Grafiche Fulvio, 1981. (Useful survey of sources and archaeology for one north Italian region.)
- Christie, Neil. *The Lombards: The Ancient Longobards*. Oxford: Blackwell, 1995.
- Harrison, Dick. *The Early State and the Towns: Forms of Integration in Lombard Italy, A.D. 568–774*. Lund, Sweden: Lund University Press, 1993.
- Hodges, Richard. *Light in the Dark Ages: The Rise and Fall of San Vincenzo al Volturno*. London: Duckworth, 1997.
- McKitterick, Rosamond, ed. *The New Cambridge Medieval History*. Vol. 2, c. 700–c. 900. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1995. (Contains key summary historical papers on eighth- and ninth-century Langobardic and Carolingian Italian society, government, and religion.)
- Paroli, Lidia, ed. *La necropoli altomedievale di Castel Trovino: Bizantini e Longobardi nelle Marche*. Cinisello Balsamo, Italy: Silvana, 1995. (A series of papers with full illustrative support linked to reevaluating the finds and population as well as wider context of the well-known Langobardic cemetery of Castel Trovino.)
- Roffia, Elisabetta, ed. *La necropoli longobarda di Trezzo sull'Adda*, Ricerche di archeologia altomedievale e medievale 12/13. Florence, Italy: All'Insegna del Giglio, 1986.
- Wickham, Chris. *Early Medieval Italy: Central Power and Local Society, 400–1000*. London: Macmillan, 1981.

NEIL CHRISTIE

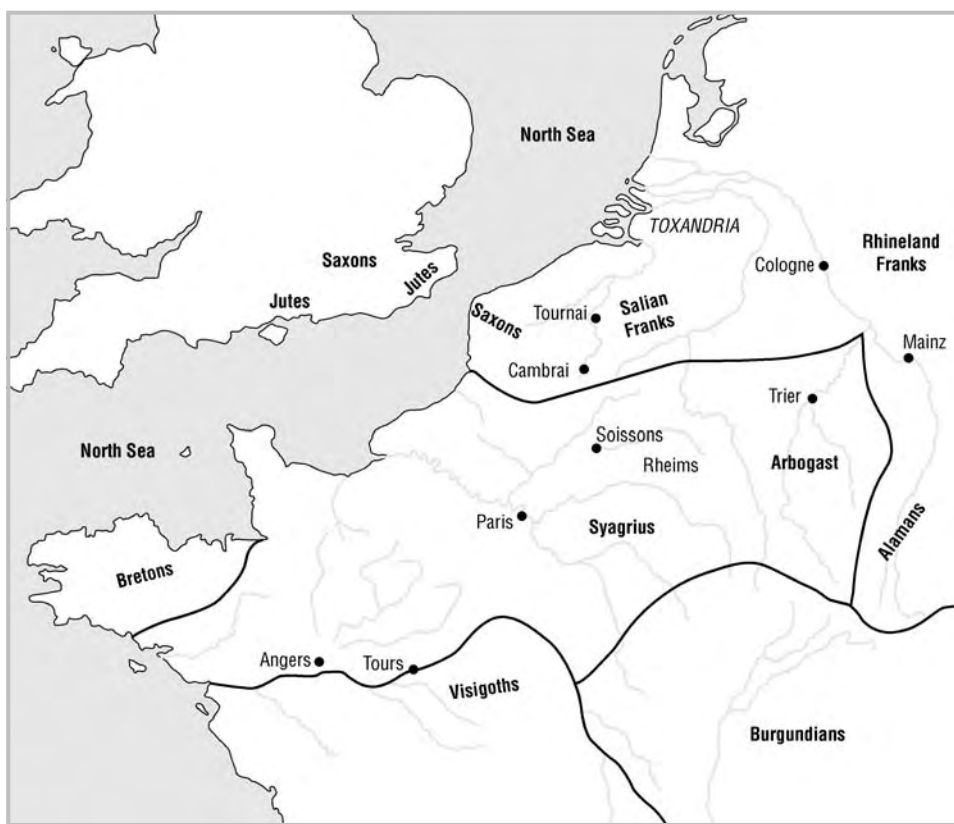
MEROVINGIAN FRANKS

The Franks were one of the Germanic peoples who conquered parts of the Roman Empire during the

Migration period (fifth century A.D.) and were united into a powerful kingdom covering most of Gaul under King Clovis (A.D. 481/82–511). “Merovingian” is the name of the dynasty he founded (taken from the name of his perhaps legendary ancestor Merovech), which reigned until A.D. 751 and traditionally has been regarded as the first dynasty of the kings of France. (The name France derives from this people.) Who were the Franks, and where did they come from?

The sixth-century bishop Gregory of Tours, the principal narrative source, thought they came from Pannonia (modern-day Hungary and parts of the former Yugoslavia). In the next century a theory emerged that they were descended from the Trojans. The following centuries saw many extravagant developments of these myths of national origin (including notions that the Franks came from Phrygia or from Scandinavia). In 1714 a scholar named Fréret advanced what Patrick Périn has called the “first really scientific theory” of their origin, that they were born of a league of Germanic peoples whose ancestors had fought Julius Caesar. The development of Merovingian archaeology coupled with criticism of the written sources since his day has made this the consensus view.

Julius Caesar, writing in the 50s B.C., and Roman writers of the first century A.D., such as Pliny and Tacitus, describe a number of Germanic peoples and discuss their customs; they make no reference to the Franks. The Franks seem to have emerged as a coalition of smaller peoples mentioned by these authors, such as the Chamavi, the Chattuari, and the Bructeri, living along the Lower Rhine and galvanized to join forces to attack the third-century Roman Empire, weakened by civil war. The new name, which comes from a root meaning “the bold,” is cited in connection with a barbarian force defeated near Mainz by the future emperor Aurelian (r. A.D. 270–275), and Franks were exhibited in his triumph. Franks also are mentioned as dangerous pirates, whose depredations, like those of the Saxons named with them, led to the creation of a new system of military defenses along the English Channel. Still others appear at this early date as Roman allies, among them, King Genobaudes, who concluded a pact (*foedus*) with Rome in A.D. 287–288. By the time the emperors Diocletian (r. A.D. 284–305) and Constantine I (r. A.D.



The traditional view of Syagrius's kingdom, stretching across most of northern Gaul. ADAPTED FROM JAMES 1988.

306–337) had restored the frontiers and the empire as a highly centralized and militarized state, the Franks were referred to often in their lower Rhenan homeland, divided into groups of varied and shifting allegiances.

Archaeologists have separated the early pre-Migration Germans into three geographic groupings, primarily on the basis of ceramic types: (1) a northern one, around the northern seacoasts; (2) an eastern one, extending from the Elbe into Bohemia; and (3) a western one, the “Rhine-Weser group.” This seems to accord with the traditional division by linguists of northern, eastern, and western dialects of Old Germanic, although the evidence is based on post-Migration sources. The material culture does not itself suggest great differences in lifestyle among these groups. They tended to live in small villages with an economy that combined cereal agriculture with animal husbandry (as Tacitus noted, wealth was measured in cows).

A typical form of Germanic building to the north, well known from such excavations as Bielefeld-Sieker in Westphalia, was a long, rectangular, timber-frame, thatched-roof building shared by people and cattle. Various other timber-post constructions, including rectangular two-room houses and small buildings with dug-out areas underneath (causing them to be misleadingly labeled “sunken huts”), which were used as workshops and for storage, also are well documented. Much of the pottery was handmade; it was often plain but might be decorated with incised linear ornament or crude stamps. Women did the weaving, spinning, and textile production and, along with the slaves, were responsible for the agricultural work, according to Tacitus. Examples of textiles have been found on the “bog bodies,” bodies thrown into the swamps or marshes so soft tissue, clothing, and so on have been preserved in this anaerobic environment. The men were responsible for ironworking, a craft of great prestige and technical complexity, largely car-

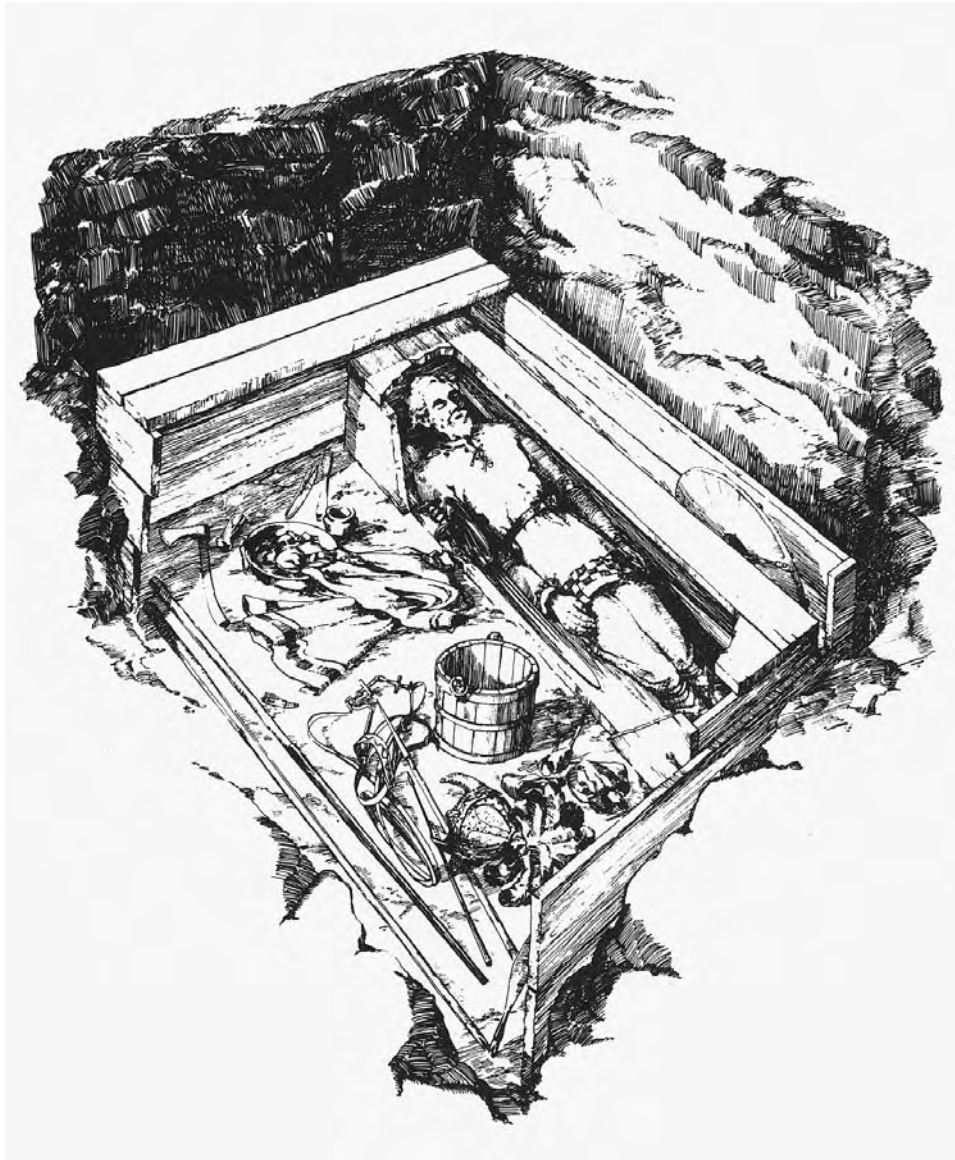


Fig. 1. Morken: a magistrate burial c. A.D. 600. FROM *DAS GRAB EINES FRÄNKISCHEN HERREN AUS MORKEN IM RHEINLAND* (1959). REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION OF BOHLAU VERLAG GMBH & CIE.

ried out by local smiths working with small quantities of ore in small ovens. Their supreme product, a sword with a hard cutting edge and a core of softer steel for greater flexibility, proved its worth in battle with the Romans.

Tacitus emphasizes the warrior values of early Germanic society, which was patriarchal in character, based on clan groupings (called *Sippe*), and socially divided into nobles, free warriors, and slaves. His evocation of tribal assemblies, where the free warriors clashed their weapons to voice assent to decisions, misled nineteenth-century scholars eager to

find in them the roots of democratic institutions. Research emphasizes the emergence of war kingship and war bands as a dynamizing force at the time when the Frangi and other new, aggressive confederations (Alemanni) appear in the written sources. As Patrick Geary points out, the pre-Migration Germanic tribes were unstable groupings whose sense of unity was forged by myths of common ancestry and hence of pure blood. The *thiudans*, a man of noble lineage linked to divine ancestors, was a kind of religious king and a guarantor of law, social order, fertility, and peace. The figure Tacitus called

a *dux* (general), chosen to lead the tribe in war and chief of his own band of eager young warriors (a *comitatus*), had become by the third century the forger of a new kind of kingship (suggested by the Celtic loanword *reiks*) and a new kind of cultural identity.

The archaeological signatures of this new identity are the warrior graves and, in particular, what have been called “chieftains’ graves.” The usual form of burial in the Rhine-Weser culture, and among the Germanic groups in general, had been of cremated remains, often placed in an urn, with few or no grave goods. In the late third century inhumation burials with a rich variety of grave goods begin to appear. In one of the earliest, from Leuna near the Saale River, a man was laid in a carefully constructed wooden chamber with a collection of fine Roman pottery, glassware and metalware, and three silver arrowheads. He also wore spurs; in a nearby pit was found the skull and lower-leg bones of a horse.

In the following century, graves deriving from and often embellishing upon this new funerary model spread through the Germanic regions within and without the Roman frontier along the Rhine, with many of them found in the Frankish territories. Its basic elements are inhumation; burial wearing everyday dress, as indicated by such items as belt buckles; and a funerary deposit consisting of pottery and perhaps glassware and metalware of Roman manufacture, distinctive brooches, and sometimes other personal ornaments in female graves and weapons in many male graves. These weapons might consist of a single spear or axe, but the richest graves might include a panoply (a group of weapons), including a sword and a shield. In about A.D. 350 such graves appear in significant numbers at Roman military sites, such as Krefeld-Gellep and Rhenen on the Rhine frontier, but they also turn up in a variety of funerary contexts across northern Gaul, far from places of Germanic settlement.

Hörst-Wolfgang Böhme, Périn, and other researchers have argued that these new funerary customs reflect the militarization of the late Roman Empire, a process that drew heavily upon barbarian, and particularly German, manpower. Sometimes this “conscription” was done by force: Constantine settled defeated Frankish groups as a kind of half-free militia (*laeti*) on lands they could farm in return

for hereditary military service. Other Franks freely enlisted; Frankish units are known in the Notitia Dignitatum, a muster roll of Roman forces from c. A.D. 400. By that time some Franks, such as Silvanus and Arbogast, held the highest commands: they have been called “imperial Germans.” This military service surely encouraged a sense of complex identity: a funerary inscription in Pannonia proudly identifies its author as both a Frank and Roman soldier.

Valor in war always had been the supreme German virtue; the late Roman world provided many more opportunities to make it the route to high status and success. The grave of a military leader buried outside the town of Vermand, in northern Gaul, with his helmet, his display of weapons, and his fine tableware, vividly reflects the material success of one such soldier. It also hints at a double allegiance: to the Roman world he served and to the new military elite, Germanic by the choice of this funerary tradition, to which he belonged. Small cemeteries of barbarian graves from the Namur region (Haillot) to the Somme (Vron) reflect the settling of these Germanic groups within the empire and their defending it.

The complicated events of the fifth century, which led to the breakup of the Roman Empire in the west, served to consolidate this new sense of Frankish identity. Unlike such barbarian peoples as the Huns, sweeping in from the Asian steppes, or the Visigoths, fleeing and fighting and plundering over forty years from the Danube to Italy to end in southwest Gaul in A.D. 418, the Franks had no vast migration to make. Already well established in their homeland, straddling the Lower Rhine frontier and divided into competing groups, their leaders might have expanded their power opportunistically as circumstances permitted or might have had it fall into their hands. The small garrison occupying the fort of Vireux-Moulin, overlooking the Meuse, between about A.D. 370 and 450 is a symbol of this relative stability in a changing world. It is significant that they maintained the furnished burial traditions when these customs already had disappeared in the more Romanized regions south and west.

In 451 some Frankish forces helped Aetius halt the Hunnic invasion of Gaul; it is at about this time that the lineage of Childeric became established in the fortified town of Tournai (Belgium). After his death, his son Clovis defeated the last Roman com-

mander in northern Gaul (A.D. 486), thus launching a career of successful aggression that would leave him, at his death in 511, master of three-fourths of Gaul, from the Pyrenees to the Rhine. Having wiped out the competing Frankish *reiks* lineages, he had become the founder of the Merovingian dynasty. Clovis took two other highly significant steps in the shaping of the Frankish identity. He converted to the Catholic faith, thus opening the way to an enduring alliance between the king and the Gallic church. He also made his capital in Paris, deep in the heart of Romanized Gaul and far from the original Frankish homelands.

Perhaps the most striking archaeological reflection of the reign of Clovis is the revival of the weapons- and ornament-furnished burial traditions and their spread into new regions. Only in the core Frankish regions between the Somme and Rhine did weapons burial continue in the fifth century, an indication that among the Franks it had taken hold as a marker of cultural identity. After the middle of the fifth century, it derived new life from “Danubian influences,” such as the colorful gold-and-garnet jewelry style that appears in Pouan and Airan in Gaul. Childeric’s grave, whose discovery in 1653 marks the beginning of Merovingian archaeology, was a spectacular restatement of the elite furnished burial.

The many chieftains’ graves of the “Flonheim-Gültlingen” type of the late fifth century and early sixth century reflect a greater standardization of the elite burial model. This is particularly notable in the case of the weapons panoply: a long sword, a kind of harpoon called an *angon*, one or more lances, arrows, a shield, a curved throwing axe, and a short one-edged stabbing sword called a *scramasax*. The axe was given the name *francisca* and was described by the mid-sixth century Byzantine writer Agathias as a typical Frankish weapon. Bright polychrome gold cloisonné ornament, which might decorate sword hilts or scabbards, belt buckles or brooches, also are typical of this elite model. Such graves appear as the focal point of new burial groups in established cemeteries, such as Krefeld-Gellep and Rhenen along the Lower Rhine, or as the starting point of new cemeteries, such as Charleville-Mézières or Lavoye, which reflect expanding Merovingian power under Clovis and his sons.

The originality of this “Frankish funerary facies” is underlined by its spread throughout the sixth century. Early archaeologists, among them Édouard Salin, thought that funerary customs were inherited from the distant tribal past and assumed that the other barbarian peoples in Gaul, the Burgundians and the Visigoths, would have their own distinct rites and artifacts. Neither of these groups, however, developed an archaeologically recognizable set of funerary customs, at least before they had been absorbed into the Merovingian kingdom. Cemeteries such as Herpes and Biron in Aquitaine or Brèves and Charnay in Burgundy now are identified either with Frankish groups who had come to hold territory in the conquered areas or with local groups eager to adopt the customs of the victors.

The former case has been argued at Bâle-Bernerring, in Switzerland, where the leading figures were buried in elaborate funerary chambers under mounds, as it is now known that Childeric had been in Tournai. The latter interpretation has been proposed at Frénouville, in lower Normandy, a site that was excavated by the Centre de Recherches d’Archéologie Médiévale of the University of Caen in the 1960s and 1970s. There were distinct late Roman and Merovingian zones in this cemetery, marked by different grave orientations and funerary practices. Still a comprehensive anthropological analysis of the skeletal material, the most thorough and rigorous yet to be completed for any French site, indicates that it is the same population. This suggests that this sixth-century community in the remote Gallic northwest was adopting the vocabulary of new funerary custom to say, in a distorted echo of the Pannonian inscription cited earlier, we are Gallo-Romans and Merovingians, too.

The reign of Clovis also saw the rise of the so-called Salic Law, which, like the codes of the Burgundians and the Visigoths and the parallel codes of the latter groups for their Roman subjects, marks the crystallization of ethnic consciousness. Even after these areas, the Burgundian and Visigothic Kingdoms, roughly modern southeastern and southwestern France, were conquered by the Franks (Aquitaine in A.D. 507 and Burgundian kingdom [Burgondie] in A.D. 536) the principle of the “personality of law” was long maintained; indeed in the seventh century a new law code was promulgated for the Rhenish Franks around Cologne. Gregory of

Tours, writing in the A.D. 570s and 580s, reflects a world where ethnic distinctions, though sometimes mentioned, matter little compared with social striving, political allegiance, and of course, religion.

The conversion of the Frankish elites, at least in a perfunctory sense, advanced rapidly, although this was not understood by archaeologists such as Salin, who tended to interpret furnished burial as a “pagan” rite. The spectacular grave goods that accompanied a woman and a young boy, doubtless of royal rank, who were buried within a funerary chapel in front of Cologne cathedral c. A.D. 530/40 prove the contrary. This is not to deny that some rural magnates might have resisted the new religion for a time; it is plausible that the sixth-century cremation burial under a small tumulus at Hordain, near Douai, represents one such. As Michael Müller-Wille points out, however, the royal example, no doubt enhanced by the prestige of holy men and of ranking churchmen (the two need not coincide), of martyr graves and *ad sanctos* burial (next to or near a martyr or a saint-confessor) encouraged the emerging magnate class to shift to more Christian burial styles. Thus one finds numerous richly furnished elite burials in family chapels: one was built near the older tumulus at Hordain. The ornament might include clearly Christian motifs, such as the cross on the silver locket worn by a girl buried around A.D. 600 in a chapel in Arlon (Luxembourg).

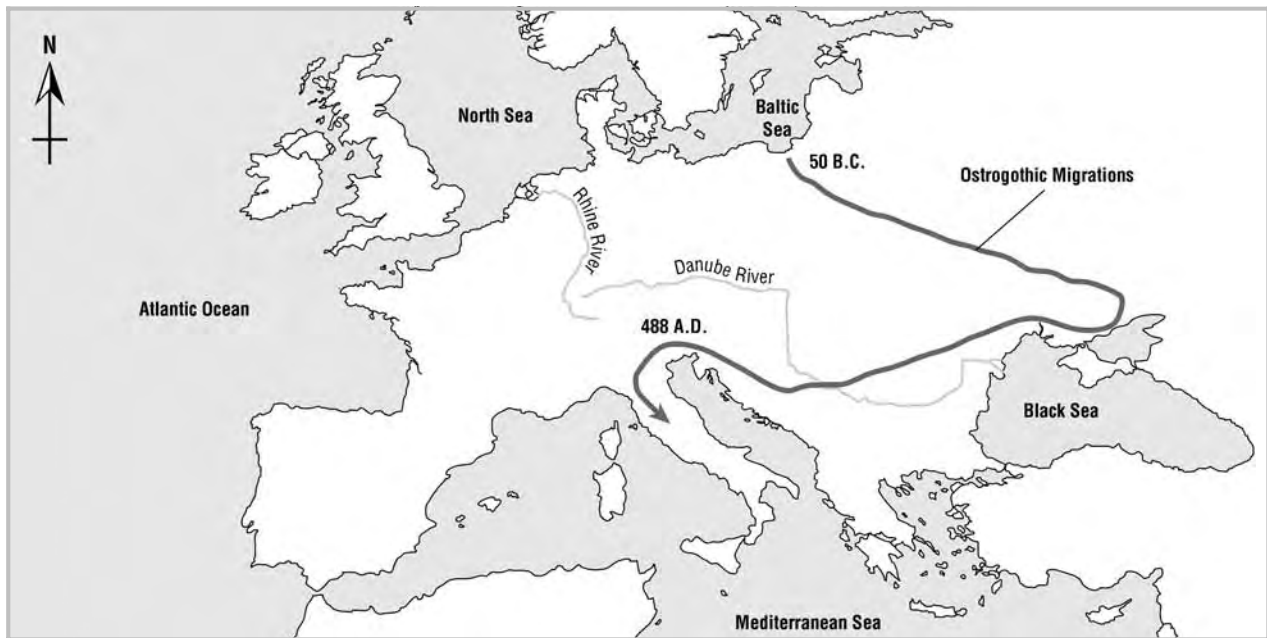
By this time “Frank” referred to those subject to Frankish law, and the connotation of the term had shifted from “the bold” to “the free,” that is, free of the tax obligations that the kings tried to impose on their “Roman” subjects. Even as writers, such as Pseudo-Fredegair in the seventh century, were developing myths of Frankish origins, real ethnic distinctions blurred: Roman names appeared in Frankish families and vice versa, and funerary custom was more likely to reflect social distinctions or regional identity or the new association of burial with piety. In practice, Franks had come to signify the elite and free families of the Merovingian kingdoms, particularly of Neustria and Austrasia.

See also *Merovingian France* (vol. 2, part 7); *Tomb of Childeric* (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Böhme, Hörst-Wolfgang. *Germanische Grabfunde des 4. Bis 5. Jahrhunderts zwischen unterer Elbe und Loire*. 2 vols. Munich: Müncher Beiträge zur Vor- und Frühgeschichte, 1974.
- Die Franken: Wegbereiter Europas*. 2 vols. Mainz, Germany: Verlag Philipp von Zabern, 1996. (Catalog from the Reiss-Museum, Mannheim, of the largest exhibition of Frankish archaeology, with many fundamental articles by leading scholars.)
- Geary, Patrick J. *Before France and Germany: The Creation and Transformation of the Merovingian World*. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1988.
- Gregory of Tours. *The History of the Franks*. Translated with an introduction by Lewis Thorpe. Harmondsworth, U.K.: Penguin Books, 1974. (The principal narrative source, written by a Gallo-Roman bishop of Tours during the late sixth century.)
- Heinzelmann, Martin. *Gregory of Tours: History and Society in the Sixth Century*. Translated by Christopher Carroll. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 2001. (Authoritative study of the principal historian of the Franks.)
- James, Edward. *The Franks*. Oxford: Blackwell, 1988.
- Müller-Wille, Michael. “Königtum und Adel im Spiegel der Grabkunde.” In *Die Franken: Wegbereiter Europas*. Vol. 1, pp. 206–221. Mainz, Germany: Verlag Philipp von Zabern, 1996.
- Musset, Lucien. *The Germanic Invasions: The Making of Europe, A.D. 400–600*. Translated by Edward James and Columba James. University Park: Pennsylvania State University Press, 1975. (A still-pertinent overview of the period, with an excellent bibliography to 1975.)
- Périn, Patrick, and Laure-Charlotte Feffer. *Les Francs*. Vol. 1, *A la conquête de la Gaule*. Vol. 2, *A l’origine de la France*. Paris: Armand Colin, 1997. (Well-illustrated, accessible overview with archaeological emphasis.)
- Reichmann, Christoph. “Frühe Franken in Germanien.” In *Die Franken: Wegbereiter Europas*. Vol. 1, pp. 55–65. Mainz, Germany: Verlag Philipp von Zabern, 1996.
- Riché, Pierre, and Patrick Périn. *Dictionnaire des Francs: Les temps Mérovingiens*. Paris: Bartillat, 1996.
- Salin, Édouard. *La civilisation mérovingienne d’après les sépultures, les textes et le laboratoire*. 4 vols. Paris: Picard, 1950–1959. (Although dated and much criticized, this is still a fundamental work by the pioneer of twentieth-century Merovingian archaeology in France.)
- Todd, Malcolm. *The Early Germans*. Oxford: Blackwell, 1992. (Archaeological background.)
- Zöllner, Erich. *Geschichte der Franken bis zur Mittel des sechsten Jahrhunderts*. Munich: Beck, 1970.

BAILEY K. YOUNG



Extent of Ostrogothic migrations. DRAWN BY KAREN CARR.

OSTROGOTHS

The Ostrogoths, like the Visigoths, were an Indo-European group that first appears in the archaeological record in Poland in the first century B.C. From Poland the ancestors of the Ostrogoths seem to have migrated southeast rather than due south, as did the ancestors of the Visigoths, and this is why they are known as the Ostrogoths, or East Goths. They finally settled down to farm in the Ukraine, on the northern shores of the Black Sea. At that time they probably were not unified as a group and did not have a king.

In the course of the fourth century A.D., however, the Huns, leaving eastern Siberia, migrated in a group across northern Asia to the Ukraine, where they pushed the Ostrogoths out of their traditional homeland, forcing them to move to central Europe (modern-day Austria). Even after moving to central Europe, however, the Ostrogoths still suffered from Hunnic harassment, and soon they were taken over entirely by the Huns.

In A.D. 453 Attila, the king of the Huns, died, and his empire collapsed amid squabbling among his weaker sons. The Ostrogoths were able to take advantage of this disunity to break free of Hunnic

control and reestablish their independence. According to tradition, they chose as their leaders three brothers, one of whom was Theudemir. By the mid-fifth century A.D., the Ostrogoths increasingly were involved with Roman politics. As a pledge for one of the Ostrogothic arrangements with the Romans, the Ostrogothic king Theudemir sent his own son, Theodoric (Dietrich in German), to live at the Roman court in Constantinople (modern-day Istanbul). Theodoric was eight years old at the time, and he therefore grew up culturally as Roman as he was Ostrogothic. When Theodoric was eighteen, in A.D. 475, his father died, and Theodoric returned home to rule his people.

In A.D. 476 the last of the Roman emperors in the west, Romulus Augustulus, was deposed by Odoacer the Hun, who declared himself king of Italy. The Roman emperor Zeno in Constantinople, to the east, objected to this usurpation and tried to put in his own candidate, Julius Nepos. Zeno, however, lacked the military manpower to send troops to assert his authority in Italy. In 488 he therefore invited the former hostage Theodoric, the young king of the Ostrogoths, to invade Italy at the head of his Ostrogothic army, on Zeno's behalf. Theodoric agreed, and his prompt invasion of Italy was entirely successful. Odoacer was killed, and Theodoric

became the leader of Italy as well as the king of the Ostrogoths.

Theodoric was an able and ambitious man, and although he always maintained his allegiance to the Roman emperor in Constantinople, he did very well for himself in the west during his long reign. He married a sister of Clovis, king of the Franks. Theodoric sent one of his own daughters to be married to the Visigothic king Alaric II, and when Alaric was killed in the battle of Vouillé in A.D. 507, he established himself as regent for his young grandson Amalaric. In this way Theodoric was able to rule both Italy and Spain for much of his life, with varying degrees of influence over southern France as well.

Under the rule of Theodoric, Italy seems to have prospered as well. The archaeological evidence suggests that people were still farming and the city of Rome still functioning at this time, although Rome certainly was losing population. Italy also was part of a great Mediterranean world. Despite the takeover of North Africa by the Vandals in A.D. 429, African red slip pottery continued to be imported to Italy throughout the period of Ostrogothic rule.

When Theodoric died in A.D. 526, he left no sons. His grandson Amalaric (a cousin of the child Amalaric above) succeeded him, with Theodoric's daughter Amalasantha acting as regent for the ten-year-old boy. Under Amalasantha's guidance, Amalaric was educated in the Roman fashion and learned to read and write. Soon Amalasantha's influence was shunted aside in favor of less Romanized advisers, and Amalaric was diverted to more military and traditional Ostrogothic pursuits, including heavy drinking. On the death of Amalaric in A.D. 534, Amalasantha became queen in her own right. She took on her cousin Theodahad as her partner in power, but Theodahad soon had Amalasantha imprisoned and then, in 535, murdered.

By this time, the Byzantine emperor Justinian I in Constantinople had noticed the weakness and instability of Ostrogothic rule now that Theodoric was dead, and he was preparing to invade. Justinian's army, under the able general Belisarius, conquered North Africa in 533 and then, in quick succession, Sicily and Italy in 536. When Belisarius landed at Naples, the Ostrogoths at first were defeated soundly. Justinian was suspicious of Belisari-

us' loyalty, however, and recalled him to Italy; the Ostrogoths seized the opportunity to revolt. The war that ensued spanned twenty years and devastated Italy. In the end the Byzantine army prevailed, and the last Ostrogothic king, Totila, was killed in battle in A.D. 552.

See also **Goths between the Baltic and Black Seas** (vol. 2, part 7); **Huns** (vol. 2, part 7); **Merovingian Franks** (vol. 2, part 7); **Visigoths** (vol. 2, part 7); **Poland** (vol. 2, part 7).

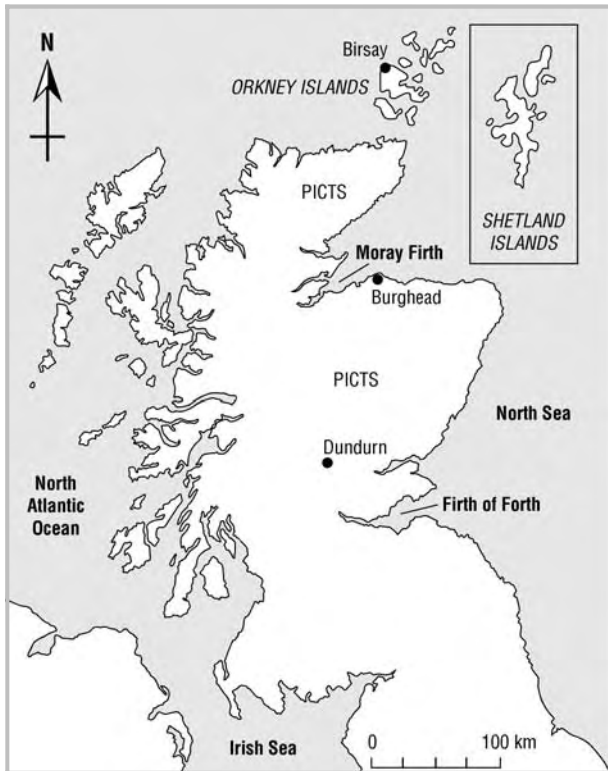
BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Heather, Peter. *The Goths*. Oxford: Blackwell, 1996.
- Moorhead, John. *Theoderic in Italy*. Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1992.
- Wickham, Chris. *Early Medieval Italy: Central Power and Local Society, 400–1000*. London: Macmillan, 1981; rev. ed., Ann Arbor: University of Michigan Press, 1989.
- Wolfram, Herwig. *History of the Goths*. Translated by Thomas J. Dunlap. Berkeley: University of California Press, 1988.

KAREN CARR

PICTS

A combination of enigmatic carved stones and a written language (ogham script) that long defied interpretation has ensured the mysterious aura of the Picts. They were first named "Picti" in a Roman panegyric written by Eumenius in A.D. 297, but in terms of their distinctive material culture, the evidence is clearest from the sixth to the ninth centuries. The twelfth-century source *Historia Norvegia* describes the Picts as pygmies who lived underground. The area of Pictish settlement is defined by the distribution of placenames including for example the element "pit" (as in Pitlochry, Pittenweem), as well as by the widespread distribution of the Picts' distinctive symbol stones. The Picts are most strongly associated with the eastern parts of Scotland, such as the regions of Fife and Angus in the south, as well as the northern areas of Scotland including the Sutherland and Caithness regions, and the island groups of Orkney and Shetland. The Roman term may well have been taken from the Picts' name for themselves, the Painted Ones, perhaps due to their distinctive tattoos, but the term is



General extent of Pictland.

a general one, encompassing the confederacy of tribes in the north and east of Scotland (e.g., the Caledones and Vacomagii).

THE HOUSES

Writing in 1955, Frederick T. Wainwright described in *The Problem of the Picts*, the lack of evidence concerning settlements and graves that seemed to compound issues of place-names, mysterious symbol stones, and the simple—but seemingly impenetrable—incised line script called “ogham.” In Wainwright’s era, there were indeed more questions than answers about the Picts. The picture changed beyond recognition, however, with several excavations in the 1970s identifying not only distinctive dwellings but also unique burial sites. In the early 1970s, excavation of a multiphase site at Buckquoy, Birsay, in Orkney revealed the first identified Pictish dwellings, beginning as a simple three-cell stone building and being replaced at a subsequent phase of Pictish activity by more complex multicellular structures of a more anthropomorphic form (suggestive of a human form with a smaller head than body, or of a figure eight in which the upper

circle is smaller than the lower). A few years later excavation added to this group a simple figure-eight structure. All these buildings were located on the mainland at Birsay in the northwest corner of mainland Orkney and opposite the major Pictish and Norse center of the Brough of Birsay. The Brough, a small tidal island, had been investigated from the 1930s onward and provided details of extensive metalworking activity in the Pictish period; it produced brooches comparable to those found in the largest and most significant Pictish silver hoard in Scotland—St. Ninian’s Isle, Shetland, in 1958. One of the most famous icons of Pictish art was unearthed on the Brough of Birsay during excavations in the 1930s: a shattered grave marker with three warriors and Pictish symbols enigmatically presented on one face.

The identification of trefoil-shaped cellular dwellings (possessing three main cells or rooms off a central larger area with a hearth) as Pictish ensured a reexamination of earlier excavations; many Iron Age broch towers (defensive structures) that had extramural settlement of cellular form (cellular structures built around the tower that post-dated the building and occupation of the tower), such as the broch of Gurness in Orkney, later excavations at the Howe in Orkney, or recent excavations at Scatness in Shetland clearly demonstrate structural sequence and have greatly increased the Pictish corpus. Excavations at Pitcarmick in Perthshire also have been significant because they revealed a rectangular Pictish structure, indicating that not all Pictish buildings are cellular in form. Defended hilltops and promontories were occupied by the Picts as well, and sites such as Craig Phadraig near Inverness, Dundurn in Perthshire, and Burghead on the south side of the Moray Firth, all in mainland Scotland, indicate a need for protection from enemies, both Pictish as well as other neighbors.

THE BURIALS

Mainland Birsay in Orkney also has evidence of the distinctive burial tradition used by the Picts, which had not commonly been identified before work in the late 1970s at Birsay and Sandwick in Shetland in the north and at Garbeg and Lundin Links among others on the Scottish mainland. The body was laid in a simple cist, or stone box, often made of a number of flat stones, without grave goods.

The cist was covered over completely by sand or earth and then a cairn, or mound of stones, was built on top of that, delimited by a squared or rounded curb or sometimes a ditch. In rare instances there is evidence for the presence of a symbol stone on top of the grave (for example at Watenan in Caithness); perhaps more commonly the grave was topped by a cairn made of small white quartz pebbles. Old excavations failed to find the burial beneath the layer of sterile soil or sand beneath the cairn, as in the case of Ackergill in Caithness, excavated in the 1920s.

SYMBOL STONES, OGHAM SCRIPT, AND PORTABLE OBJECTS

The iconic emblem of the Picts is the symbol stone. There are three main types of stone monument: Class 1 is the earliest (dating to about A.D. 400–700) and identified as minimally shaped with incised symbols of naturalistic form—for instance, animals or crescents and V-rods (two rods set at right angles to each other). Class 2 (dating to about A.D. 700–800s) combines careful shaping of the stone with elaborate and naturalistic elements including human figures and animals, as well as elaborate cross motifs related to the Christian missions to Pictland in c. A.D. 710 of Nechtan (in his attempts to change the Pictish church from Columban to Roman observance). Class 3 (dating to about A.D. 750 onward) is identified by Christian carvings including elaborate crosses and by a complete absence of symbols.

These stones have been studied extensively by many scholars, but there has been no resolution as to their specific function, although tribal boundary stones or naming stones are among the more plausible of suggestions. However, the distinctive symbols associated with the stones, clearly of Pictish origin, can also be found on smaller items of a more portable nature; examples include symbols incised on the terminal of large silver chains such as those found at Gaulcross or Whitecleugh or those engraved on a silver plaque (or earring) from Norrie's Law, all in mainland Scotland.

Other categories of artifact that have been distinguished as specifically Pictish include short composite bone combs, hipped pins (with a slight swelling at mid-point of the shank that prevented slippage during wear) of bone and copper alloy,

penannular brooches as found at St. Ninian's Isle, and simple painted pebbles. A stone spindle whorl, excavated from Buckquoy in 2003, bears an ogham inscription—one of thirty-six such inscriptions identified in Pictland. The ogham script used by the Picts is believed to have originated in Ireland during the first centuries A.D. and is based on single or small groups of strokes that cross a single straight line. Ongoing research seems to suggest that the script originated from a Celtic language.

See also *Dál Riata* (vol. 2, part 7); *Viking Settlements in Orkney and Shetland* (vol. 2, part 7); *Dark Age/Early Medieval Scotland* (vol. 2, part 7); *Tarbat* (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Ballin-Smith, Beverly, ed. *Howe: Four Millennia of Orkney Prehistory*. Monograph Series, no. 9. Edinburgh: Society of Antiquaries of Scotland, 1994.
- Carver, Martin. *Surviving in Symbols: A Visit to the Pictish Nation*. Edinburgh: Canongate, 1999. (An excellent up-to-date summary.)
- Dockrill, Steve, Val Turner, and Julie M. Bond. "Old Scatness/Jarlshof Environs Project." In *Discovery and Excavation in Scotland 2002*. Edited by Robin Turner, pp. 105–107. Edinburgh: Council for Scottish Archaeology, 2003.
- Forsyth, Katherine. "Language in Pictland, Spoken and Written." In *A Pictish Panorama*. Edited by Eric Nicoll. Forfar, Angus, U.K.: Pinkfoot Press, 1995.
- Foster, Sally. *Picts, Gaels, and Scots*. London: B. T. Batsford/Historic Scotland, 1996. (A excellent scholarly summary.)
- Friell, Gerry, and Graham Watson, eds. *Pictish Studies: Settlement, Burial, and Art in Dark Age Northern Britain*. British Archaeological Reports, no. 125. Oxford: Tempus Reparatum, 1984.
- Hedges, John W. *Bu, Gurness, and the Brochs of Orkney*. Part 2, *Gurness*. British Archaeological Reports British Series, no. 164. Oxford: British Archaeological Reports, 1987.
- Morris, Christopher D. *The Birsay Bay Project*. Vol. 1, *Brough Road Excavations 1976–1982*. Department of Archaeology Monograph Series, no. 1. Durham, U.K.: University of Durham, 1989.
- Ritchie, Anna. "Orkney in the Pictish Kingdom." In *The Prehistory of Orkney B.C. 4000–1000 A.D.* Edited by Colin Renfrew, pp. 183–204. Edinburgh: Edinburgh University Press, 1985. (A full survey of evidence available to 1985.)
- . "Excavation of Pictish and Viking Age Farmsteads at Buckquoy, Orkney." *Proceedings of the Society of Antiquaries of Scotland* 108 (1976–1977): 174–227.

Small, Alan, Charles Thomas, and David M. Wilson. *St Nini-an's Isle and Its Treasure*. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1973.

Wainwright, Frederick T., ed. *The Problem of the Picts*. Edinburgh: Nelson, 1955.

COLLEEN E. BATEY

RUS

The Rus are a people described in historical documents as traders and chiefs who were instrumental in the formation of the ancient Russian state between A.D. 750 and 1000. Historians and archaeologists have studied the Rus and their role in the development of early Russian towns and the Russian state.

HISTORICAL AND LINGUISTIC EVIDENCE

The term “Rus” first appeared around A.D. 830 or 840 in western and eastern historical sources as a designation for traders. Linguistic studies indicate that the word is derived from the Finnish *Ruotsi*, meaning “Swedes.” *Ruotsi*, in turn, is loaned from the word that seafaring Swedes used to describe themselves during the pre-Viking period. The sailors used the Old Scandinavian *rodr*, characterizing themselves as a “crew of oarsmen.”

From the beginning, then, Rus had both an ethnic and a social (or professional) meaning—indicating both “Scandinavian” and “seafarer.” In eighth- and ninth-century historical documents, the ethnic significance of Rus appeared predominant. For example, an entry by Prudentius, bishop of Troyes, for the year 839 in the *Annales Bertiniani* records a diplomatic mission from Theophilus of Byzantium to Louis the Pious of Ingelheim, explaining that men who called themselves “Rhos” were “Swedes by origin.” Similarly, Liutprand, Bishop of Cremona, after a visit to Constantinople in 968, mentioned in his *Antapodosis* the “Rus, whom we call by another name: Northmen.”

By the mid-tenth century, the term “Rus” had changed in meaning to refer to the ruling class who were instrumental in the establishment of the Russian state in Kiev. Scandinavians were present

among the retainers of the early Russian state, but Rus now could be used to refer to all individuals belonging to this elite warrior group, Scandinavian or not. An example of the new social meaning of Rus is found in the Byzantine document *De administrando imperio* from around 950, which describes the Rus in terms of their trade routes and the peoples who owed them tribute. Once Rus lost its ethnic significance, a new term, *Varangian*, was used to specify Scandinavians. The Russian Primary Chronicle, compiled about A.D. 1110, identifies Rurik, the first ruler of Russia, as a Varangian, or Swede.

On the basis of historical sources, eighteenth- and nineteenth-century scholars concluded that elite Scandinavians founded the Russian state, held high rank and status in Russian society, and served as mercenaries in Russia and Byzantium. Later scholars, both historians and archaeologists, have taken a more moderate view, arguing that Scandinavians had a significant role in early Russia but that Slavic, Finno-Ugric, and Baltic peoples who settled in the region also participated in the creation of the early Russian state.

ARCHAEOLOGICAL EVIDENCE

Excavations of early Russian towns provide evidence of the social, political, and economic development of the early Russian state, contributing significantly to our knowledge of the Rus and their activities in eighth- to eleventh-century Russia. The archaeological evidence does not prove the claims of the Russian Primary Chronicle that Swedes founded Staraya Ladoga, Novgorod, and other early Russian towns, but it does suggest that Scandinavians may have had a significant role in their early development. Like the historical data, the archaeological data show a gradual assimilation of the Rus into the multiethnic society of the emerging Russian state.

Archaeological evidence indicates that early Russian towns, such as Rurik Gorodishche and Staraya Ladoga, had multiethnic populations, who participated in an economy focused on long-distance trade and craft production. During the ninth and tenth centuries Rurik Gorodishche, for example, imported goods from the Mediterranean, the Baltic Sea, and Scandinavia. Scales and weights indicate trade, and tools, production debris, and raw materials suggest craft production. Early Rus-



Fig. 1. Traders at a portage point along a Russian river. The boat holds trade goods such as weapons. FROM OLAUS MAGNUS, *HISTORIA DE GENTIBUS SEPTENTRIONALIBUS*, PUBLISHED BY THE HAKLUYT SOCIETY. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

sian towns had a function and nature similar to those of other contemporary Baltic trade towns, including Hedeby and Ribe in Jutland, Birka in central Sweden, and Wolin in modern-day Poland.

Archaeologists have devoted much effort to investigating the ethnic identity of the traders and crafts producers who lived and worked in early Russian towns. Their research shows that Slavic, Scandinavian, Baltic, and Finno-Ugric residents lived side by side and engaged in similar activities, including agriculture, craft production, trade, and military service. Excavated burial sites associated with early Russian towns imply significant cultural contact among the various ethnic groups in ancient Russia. This is seen in the mixture of Baltic, Finno-Ugric, Scandinavian, and Slavic material in cemeteries of the eighth to eleventh centuries—and even within individual graves.

Because of the linguistic and historical evidence suggesting that the Rus were Swedish, careful attention has been paid to the timing and nature of the Scandinavian presence in early Russian towns. Scandinavian artifacts are found in the earliest layers of Staraya Ladoga and Rurik Gorodishche and com-

prise items that probably came to the town as personal possessions, not trade goods. Examples of such finds include humble objects inscribed with runes and characteristically Scandinavian ornaments, combs, footwear, and gaming pieces. One of the most interesting features excavated at Staraya Ladoga is a late eighth- or early ninth-century smithy, containing tools and a bronze figurine of Scandinavian style, hinting that the smith may have been a resident Scandinavian.

Scandinavian graves have been reliably identified in many early towns, among them, Staraya Ladoga and Novgorod on the Volga trade route and Gnezdovo/Smolensk and Kiev on the Dnieper trade route. Based on their burials, the majority of Scandinavians who were active in ancient Russia appear to have been traders and warriors. A limited number of graves include both men and women, intimating that at least some Scandinavians were settled in Russia, living a stable, domestic life. Comparisons of the Scandinavian finds with other graves in Russia and Sweden give the impression that Scandinavians were among the wealthier residents of Russia (but not as wealthy as the elite class of Scandinavia).

THE RUS IN EARLY RUSSIA

Altogether, the historical and archaeological evidence suggests that the Rus were traders and crafts producers, who were important to the economic and political development of early Russian towns. The cultural, social, and political processes of early state development in Russia are reflected both in the changing meaning of “Rus” through time and the increasing homogenization of the material culture. Originally referring to Scandinavian traders, the name “Rus” soon came to mean any member of the urban ruling class, who collected tribute from the peoples settled in early Russia. Both the early Rus traders and the later Rus chieftains were active in and associated with towns. Archaeological finds from burials and towns indicate that these traders and chieftains included Scandinavians, together with other ethnic groups. Both the historical and archaeological evidence show that the legacy of the Rus—the development of towns and a specialized, urban economy—were critical to the formation of the early Russian state, unified under Kiev c. A.D. 1000.

See also *Russia/Ukraine* (vol. 2, part 7); *Staraya Ladoga* (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Melnikova, Elena A., and Vladimir J. Petrukhin. “The Origin and Evolution of the Name *Rus*: The Scandinavians in Eastern-Europe Ethno-political Process before the Eleventh Century.” *Tor* 23 (1990–1991): 203–234.
- Rahbeck-Schmidt, K., ed. *Varangian Problems*. Scando-slavica supplement 1. Copenhagen, Denmark: Munksgaard, 1970.
- Vernadsky, George, ed. *A Sourcebook for Russian History from Early Times to 1917*. New Haven, Conn.: Yale University, 1972.

RAE OSTMAN

SAAMI

The Saami are an ethnic minority living in the arctic and subarctic regions comprising contemporary Norway, Sweden, and Finland as well as Russia’s Kola Peninsula. Formerly their settlement area extended farther south to include the western White Sea area of Russia and larger parts of Finland as well

as the interior of central and southern parts of Norway and Sweden. Saami language belongs to the Finno-Ugric branch of the Uralic family, most closely (although still distantly) related to Finnish in the Baltic-Finnish language group. According to historical linguists, Saami or Proto-Saami originated due to a linguistic differentiation of a Proto-Finnish language during the Bronze Age or even earlier.

Until the sixteenth century the Saami were predominantly hunters with a subsistence economy based on terrestrial and maritime hunting as well as fishing. The largest sociopolitical unit was the *siida*, the local hunting band composed of five to ten nuclear families. Each *siida* occupied a clearly defined territory where families lived dispersed at various seasonal camps most of the year, aggregating for a longer period only at the common winter site. Exogamy was practiced, forming affinal ties between contiguous groups. Kinship was recognized bilaterally, as by most other circumpolar peoples. During the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries the hunting economy was gradually replaced or supplemented by reindeer pastoralism, commercial fishing, and small-scale cattle husbandry. According to some scholars, however, the transition to reindeer pastoralism had already taken place among the western Saami during the Viking period.

“Saami” (Scandinavian *samer*) is the term properly used to denote the people who have been referred to popularly in the English-speaking West as “Lapps” or “Laplanders.” It is a derivative of the self-designating terms *sámit*, *sáme*, or *saemieh*, reflecting an etymological root that probably means “land.” In historical records, however, a number of ethnonyms have been applied to the Saami by outsiders. In Norse sources from the Viking Age and the medieval period, “Finns” (*finner*) is the common term, whereas “Lapps” prevails in Swedish, Finnish (*lappalaiset*), and Russian (*lop’*) sources. It is commonly held that the first written sources mentioning the Saami are descriptions by Tacitus (A.D. 98) and Ptolemy (A.D. c. 100–170) of the “Finns” (Latin *fenni* and Greek Φιννοί/*finnoi*). According to Tacitus the *fenni* live in “astonishing barbarism and disgusting misery” without arms, horses, or houses—their only shelter against wild beasts and rain being a few intertwined branches. For want of iron they tipped their arrows with sharp bone. Even more astonishing to these authors is that the women

took part in the hunt on equal footing with men. It is uncertain, however, if these early descriptions of “Finns” actually refer specifically to the Saami or more generally to Finno-Ugric speaking hunters of northeasternmost Europe. A more certain ascription is established by sixth-century Greek and Roman writers adding the term *scrithi* or *scere/cre* to the term *fenni/finnoi*, most notably in the writings of Procopius (*scrithiphinoi*) and Jordanes (*scerefennae*, *crefennae*, *rerefennae*). The first term must have been adopted from Norse language, where *skriða* means “to ski”—that is, the combined term means the “skiing Finns.” In the Norse culture *skriðfinner* was a common term to designate the mobile Saami hunters due to their skiing skills. This stereotypical ascription is reflected in the Old Norse oath that the enemy shall have peace as long as “falcon flies, pine grows, rivers flow to the sea, and Saami are skiing.”

The ethnic origin of the Saami has long puzzled Nordic and European scholars and opinions have changed considerably. Until the mid-nineteenth century it was commonly believed that the Saami were the descendants of the aboriginal Stone Age populations of Scandinavia (and even larger parts of northern Europe). However, as political and scientific currents turned the “noble savage” into the “ignoble,” different readings of the archaeological and historical record soon emerged. By the early twentieth century the Saami were almost univocally depicted as an “alien” people who had migrated to Scandinavia from Russia or Siberia during the Iron Age or even as late as the fourteenth or fifteenth century. This doctrine of the Saami as an “eastern other” prevailed in Nordic research well into the post-World War II era.

Most historians and archaeologists have since rejected the migration hypothesis in favor of models claiming local origin. According to the most influential, the formation of Saami ethnicity (and even the introduction of “Germanic” and Norse identity in the north) was related to processes of social and economic differentiation among the hunting societies in northern Fennoscandia during the first millennium B.C., processes concurring with increased interaction with the outside world. Regional differences in cultural interfaces and exchange networks promoted different cultural trajectories. The coastal societies along the northwestern coast

of Norway and parts of the Gulf of Bothnia, relating to the South Scandinavian Bronze Age culture, adopted farming and developed chieftain-like systems with a redistributive socioeconomy. Subsequent processes of “Germanization” in the Roman period have been interpreted as a conscious (although imperative) choice among these societies to obtain access to European exchange networks and social alliances. The hunting population in the interior and the far north, however, became involved in exchange networks extending eastward to metal-producing societies in Karelia and central Russia. Relating to these long-distance networks, supplying bronze and iron, as well as to the new socioeconomic and cultural interface caused by the “transformed” coastal groups, ethnic boundaries and symbolic systems of categorization emerged based on a conscious distinction between “hunters” versus “farmers.” Thus, according to this model, Saami ethnicity emerged as a social process of identity formation among the “remaining” hunters of the north.

Different suggestions about Saami origin are provided by studies of genetic patterns in modern Saami populations. Based on analysis of mitochondrial DNA it is claimed (although not uncontested) that the Saami hold a unique position in the genetic landscape of Europe. If so, the question remains as to whether this uniqueness is due to their ancient origin (and consequently isolation) or to a foreign origin (and consequently migration)—or if the distinctive Saami genetic makeup even relates to modern social processes of kinship formation.

The Saami’s persistence as an ethnic group over time can hardly be ascribed to their isolation. To the contrary, for more than two millennia they have been involved in close interaction with structurally different neighboring societies. During the Iron Age and the medieval period the Saami provided highly valued hunting products such as exotic furs, seal oil, walrus tusks, and probably falcons in return for iron, textiles, and farming products. The character of this early interaction is, however, disputed. According to the “standard view” long held, the Saami were the subject of exploitation and suppression from Norse chieftains and kings: the militarily superior Norse gained access to Saami products through taxation and fierce plundering raids. More recent studies, however, claim that the Saami for the

most part interacted in a peaceful and mutually beneficial way with their neighboring societies until the medieval period. Indicative of this is the frequent accounts in the Norse sagas of cooperation and close relations. The sagas emphasize the Saami as good hunters, as helpers, and as skilled boatbuilders, as well as healers, fortune-tellers, and teachers of magic and *seid* (shamanistic practices). Many scholars argue that ample evidence suggests that the Saami and their Germanic or Norse neighbors shared fundamental religious conceptions and values (based in a common shamanistic worldview), which may well have promoted tolerance and smoothed coexistence. As bonds of interethnic dependencies developed during the Iron Age the Saami achieved considerable economic and ideological power. Saami hunting products were crucial to the Norse chieftains' ability to participate in the European prestige-goods economy, and their "magical" knowledge and ritual skills were desired and respected. Studies have argued that during the Viking period these bonds of dependencies were reinforced by ritual gift exchange and interethnic marriages.

Such strategies for strengthening inter-ethnic bonds may partly be seen as a response to the new cultural and socioeconomic conditions that emerged from the tenth century onward. The Saami, who during the Iron Age related more or less exclusively to the redistributive system of neighboring chieftains, now encountered the power politics of surrounding state societies competing for control over their resources. The emergence of the city-state of Novgorod in the east involved the Saami in extensive networks of fur trade. In Norway the northern chieftains were defeated by the emerging all-Norwegian kingdom that simultaneously converted the Norse to Christianity.

The economic, social, and religious changes both in the west and the east had a deep impact on interethnic relations and exposed the Saami to new economical and cultural pressures. The fur trade enforced increased production and pressure on resources while political and religious changes in the Norse society caused severe changes in their long-term social and ideologically embedded relations with the Saami. The archaeological record from the Viking Age and the early medieval period provides some indication of how this "stress" was negotiated within Saami societies. Most notable is the rapid in-

tensification and spread of certain ritual practices, such as burial customs (including bear burials) and metal sacrifices. The formalization and unification of material expressions is also exemplified in dwelling design and spatial arrangements of settlements. This ritual and symbolic mobilization may be read as an attempt to overcome or neutralize the threats from outside. However, archaeological and historical data clearly indicate that Saami societies did change during this phase, and at least in some areas the changes led to more complex social configurations.

See also Iron Age Finland (vol. 2, part 6); Pre-Viking and Viking Age Norway (vol. 2, part 7); Pre-Viking and Viking Age Sweden (vol. 2, part 7); Finland (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Hansen, Lars Ivar. "Interaction between Northern European Sub-arctic Societies during the Middle Ages: Indigenous Peoples, Peasants, and State Builders." In *Two Studies on the Middle Ages*. Edited by Magnus Rindal, pp. 31–95. KULTs skriftserie 66. Oslo, Norway: KULT, 1996.
- Hansen, Lars Ivar, and Bjørnar Olsen. *Samenes historie* [History of the Saami]. Oslo, Norway: Cappelen, 2003.
- Mundal, Else. "The Perception of the Saamis and Their Religion in Old Norse Sources." In *Shamanism and Northern Ecology*. Edited by Juha Pentikäinen. Religion and Society 36. New York: Mouton de Gruyter, 1996.
- Price, Neil. *The Viking Way: Religion and War in Late Iron Age Scandinavia*. Uppsala, Sweden: Uppsala University, 2002.
- Olsen, Bjørnar. "Belligerent Chieftains and Oppressed Hunters? Changing Conceptions of Inter-Ethnic Relationships in Northern Norway during the Iron Age and Early Medieval Period." In *Contacts, Continuity, and Collapse: The Norse Colonization of the North Atlantic*. Edited by James Barrett. York Studies in the Early Middle Ages 5. Turnhout, Belgium: Brepols, 2003.
- Storli, Inger. "A Review of Archaeological Research on Sami Prehistory." *Acta Borealia* 3, no. 1 (1986): 43–63.
- Zachrisson, I. "A Review of Archaeological Research on Saami Prehistory in Sweden." *Current Swedish Archaeology* 1 (1993): 171–182.

LARS IVAR HANSEN, BJØRNAR OLSEN

SCYTHIANS

The Scythians (Assyrian: “Ašguzai” or “Išguzai”; Hebrew: “Askenaz”; Greek: “Scythioi”) were a nomadic people belonging to the North Iranian language group. Their earliest mention, by Assyrian sources, comes from the first half of the seventh century B.C., during the reign of Esarhaddon (681–669 B.C.). The Scythians then appeared in northern Media, in the Lake Urmia region of Mannea (in modern-day Iran). They were involved in the Median-Assyrian conflicts. As Assyrian allies, in 673 B.C. they helped to suppress a Median uprising under the leadership of Kaštaritu. They played a still more important role in 653 B.C., saving the Assyrian capital of Nineveh, besieged by Kaštaritu’s army.

At that time the Scythians were a significant military power. Their raiding parties ventured as far as the borders of Egypt in Syria, even forcing the pharaoh Psamtik I (r. 663–609 B.C.) to pay them ransom. In about 637 B.C., during the reign of Ashurbanipal (669–631? B.C.), they played an important role in defeating the Cimmerians, dreaded invaders that wreaked havoc across Asia Minor. Earlier still, the Scythians forced the Cimmerians out from the lands north of the Caucasus and the Black Sea. It was Cyaxares (r. 625–585 B.C.), the ruler of Medes, who finally managed to drive the Scythians out of the Near East.

ORIGIN OF THE SCYTHIANS

The most important accounts on the origins of the Scythians can be found in the *Histories* of Herodotus (book 4) relating to “the Scythian-Cimmerian conflict.” According to this Greek historian, the Scythians, as a migrating people, invaded and conquered the lands north of the Black Sea, forcing out the indigenous Cimmerians. Herodotus locates their original dwelling sites somewhere in Asia. He writes: “The Scythians were a nomadic people living in Asia. Oppressed by the warlike Massagetae [another nomadic central Asian people], they crossed the Araxes River [the Volga] and penetrated into the land of the Cimmerians [who were the original inhabitants of today’s Scythian lands].”

In the absence of historical data, archaeology has played the main role in determining the Scythians’ original “Asian” settlements. During the last

quarter of the twentieth century, exploration showed that the origins of Scythian culture should be sought mainly in central Asia, in the upper Yenissei River basin, the Altai hills, and the steppes of eastern Kazakhstan. As early as the ninth century B.C. the Scythians’ nomadic ancestors began to migrate westward from those territories, along a stretch of the Great Steppe, seeking ecological niches to suit their herding economy. This process also was stimulated by ecological changes, resulting from the cold, dry climate prevalent since about the thirteenth century B.C. As a consequence, the steppe pastures degraded. The westward migration gained impact in the second half of the eighth century B.C., and the mass influx of the Scythian tribes eventually led to the occupation of the steppes at the foot of the Caucasus. It was from these regions that the Išguzai launched their Asian invasions.

Beginning in the first half of the seventh century B.C. the Scythians gradually conquered the middle regions of the Dnieper River (which had been penetrated earlier), on the northern edge of the steppe in the forest-steppe zone. Despite living in strongly fortified settlements, the native, settled farming communities had to yield to the military might of the invading nomads. Around that time, Scythian expansion also reached into the Transylvania territories, located still farther to the west, in the Carpathian valley. With time, especially after withdrawing from the Near East, the Scythians increasingly focused their attention on the steppe regions. This was in part due to climate change and improvement in the ecological conditions in the steppes north of the Black Sea. The climate became more humid and mild, which in Europe manifested itself as the so-called Subatlantic fluctuation.

Beginning in the mid-seventh century B.C., the Black Sea region also became more “attractive” as the result of the founding of Greek colonies on the north shores of the Black Sea. The oldest among them, Borysthenes (also the ancient name for the river Dnieper), on the island of Berezan at the mouth of the Boh River, dates from about 646 B.C. Numerous other colonies, for example, Olbia and Panticapaeum, soon developed into great economic (production and trade) centers and played an enormous role in the economic and cultural development of the Scythian tribes.

After having been driven out from the Near East in the late seventh century B.C., the Scythians shifted their political center to the Black Sea region. This was not a peaceful process. Its echoes are found in a legend reported by Herodotus (book 4). The legend tells of the “old” Scythians returning from the Near East and fighting with the “young” Scythians, who were the sons of the slaves and wives of the “old” Scythians “left behind in the old country.” In the late seventh and early sixth centuries B.C. the military activity of the Scythians was spread over vast territories, reaching west into the Great Hungarian Plain and into what is today southwestern Poland. Gradually, as the result of these processes, Scythian tribes living in the Black Sea region between the Don River and the Lower Danube organized themselves into a proto-state, called “Scythia” by Herodotus. There is no doubt that it consisted of the affluent ethnic Scythians as well as the conquered local peoples, in particular, the settled forest-steppe peoples, who were politically and culturally dominated by the Scythians.

The organization was a sort of a tribal federation. The power was in the hands of the Scythian “kings,” local rulers who probably accepted the authority of the leader of the politically strongest tribe. This complex sociopolitical structure of Scythia probably is what Herodotus meant when he talked about the “Royal Scythians” who “consider other Scythians to be their slaves” and about the “Scythian Nomads,” the “Scythian Farmers,” and the “Scythian Ploughmen” living in the various regions of Scythia. Scythia’s political center and, at the same time, a mythical land, Gerrhus, where the Scythian kings were buried, was situated in the lower Dnieper River basin.

SCYTHIAN ECONOMY

Scythian economy was based on nomadic or semi-nomadic animal breeding and herding (horses, cattle, and sheep). Wealth, especially in the case of the Scythian aristocracy, was acquired in wars and pillaging raids and through the slave trade with the Greeks from around the Black Sea. The Scythians also controlled the trade of grain, which the Greeks imported from forest-steppe farming regions. From the Greek colonies the Scythians brought in vast amounts of wine, transported in amphorae. To the great astonishment of the Greeks, the Scythians

drank it without water. Also highly valued were Greek pottery, metal libation vessels sometimes made from precious metals, rich ornaments, and jewelry—often true masterpieces of Greek craftsmanship.

SCYTHIAN CULTURE

Between nomadic “barbarian” civilization and the north Black Sea variant of Greek civilization, certain syncretic cultural phenomena confirm the close co-existence of the two elements. This is evidenced in a specific Greco-Scythian decoration style of metallic objects, vessels, ornaments, and weaponry items produced for the Scythians in Greek workshops. This style combines zoomorphic features characteristic of the Scythian world of cult and magic with mythological scenes and narration describing the life of common mortals, presented in typical situations and settings. Many of the masterpieces, for example, a famous cup from the Kul’-Oba *kurgan*, or a gold pectoral found in Tovsta Mohyla, and a gold comb from the Solokha *kurgan*, are excellent iconographic sources that shed light on Scythian ways, behavior, and appearance.

The unity of the Scythian cultural tradition is symbolized by a characteristic “triad,” consisting of a common decoration style dominated by zoomorphic motifs; the manner of restraining horses, reflected in a homogenous bridle set, and, above all, original weaponry—predominantly bows and arrows. The Scythians’ use of a hard composite (reflex) bow with a long range and tremendous piercing power, their excellence on horseback, and their ability to shoot from any position—at full gallop without a saddle or stirrups—made the Scythians fearsome warriors. (This also was the case with other Great Steppe nomads.) The Scythians employed distinctive fighting tactics, with warriors arranged in highly mobile groups, skilled in the use of stratagems that exhausted the enemy and that allowed the Scythians to avoid direct confrontation in unfavorable circumstances. The Scythians were formidable enemies, posing a serious threat even to the contemporary world powers. The Assyrians, the Medes, the Urartes, and later the Perses all had firsthand knowledge of the might of the Scythians.

Unquestionably, the Scythians gained their greatest military and political success defeating the powerful Persian army led by Darius I Hystaspis (r.

521–486 B.C.). Faced with this powerful foe, the Scythians applied guerrilla tactics, drawing the enemy far inside the steppe, wiping out smaller regiments, and severing supply lines. Finally, the humiliated Darius was forced to withdraw with the devastated remains of his army across the Danube River into southern Thrace, which was by then a Persian province. As a result of this victory, the Scythians were referred to in the ancient tradition as “invincible.” Some time later, in 496 B.C., Scythian warriors followed the same route, reaching the Thracian Chersonesus (or “the Chersonese”) in a military expedition.

This direction of Scythian politics continued through the fifth century B.C., when Scythia entered into a closer relationship (both peaceful and belligerent) with the Thracian state of the Odrisses. It was centered in present-day southeastern Bulgaria. This relationship was especially strong (and confirmed by dynastic colligations) around the mid-fifth century, during the reign of Sitalkes, who brought the Odrisses to the peak of their power. Political and economical stabilization in the Black Sea region in the fifth and most of the fourth centuries B.C. favored Scythian economic polarization. The wealthiest “royal” *kurgans* of the Scythian aristocracy date from that period. They are the real “steppe pyramids”—burial sanctuaries of Scythian leaders and rulers. The rulers were buried amid a wealth of funerary offerings and in the company of servants sacrificed especially for the burial. Stone stelae representing armed men, placed on top of the *kurgans*, were the specific apotheosis of a stereotype of a king-warrior and at the same time of a mythical ancestor.

THE FALL OF SCYTHIA

In the second half of the fourth century B.C., however, several factors precipitated a crisis. The development of a dry and warm climate, together with overexploitation of the steppe grazing lands by the great herds, again triggered migration. As a result of these changes, from the second half of the fourth century B.C., the Sauromates and the Sarmates, tribes from central Eurasian steppes, began to venture across the Don River and threaten Scythian territories. Simultaneously, a powerful force arose in southern Europe that eventually changed the world’s political order—Macedonia. This period

also witnessed the reign of one of the greatest Scythian rulers, King Ateas (d. 339), an excellent warrior and experienced leader who supposedly ruled over all of Scythia. He fought Philip II (r. 359–336), the king who gave rise to Macedonian power, in a battle in the Lower Danube in which the Scythians suffered a shattering defeat and the aged king (apparently more than ninety years old) was killed in battle.

More defeats followed, such as the one suffered in 313 B.C. at the hands of one of the Diadoches, the Thracian ruler Lizymachos. The Sarmates moving in from the east also were an increasing threat. As a result, during the third century B.C., Scythian territories shrank to the area of the Crimea steppes, where a new political organization appeared with their capital in the so-called Neapolis Scythica. During the second century B.C., it still played a certain political role, fighting for survival with Chersonesus, with the Sarmates, and at the end with the Pontic kingdom of Mithridates VI Eupator (r. 120–63 B.C.). Finally, the influx of Sarmatian nomads into the Crimean region led to the intermixing of both elements. Remnants of the Scythians survived here until the third to fourth centuries A.D., when the Germanic Goths appeared on the scene. In the aftermath of the Hun invasion in 375 A.D. the Scythians disappeared from history.

See also **Iron Age Ukraine and European Russia** (vol. 2, part 6); **Huns** (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Artamonov, Mikhail I. *The Splendor of Scythian Art: Treasures from Scythian Tombs*. Translated from Russian by V. R. Kupilyanova. New York: Praeger, 1969.
- Davis-Kimball, Jeannine, V. A. Bashilov, and L. T. Yablonsky, eds. *Nomads of the Eurasian Steppes in the Early Iron Age*. Berkeley: Zinat Press, 1995.
- Ghirshman, R. *Tombe princière de Zimiyé et le début de l'art animalier*. Paris: Scythe, 1979.
- Grjaznov, Michail P. *Der Großkurgan von Arzan in Tuva, Südsibirien*. Munich: C. H. Beck, 1984.
- Jakobson, Esther. *The Art of the Scythians: The Interpenetration of Cultures at the Edge of the Hellenic World*. New York: E. J. Brill, 1995.
- Jettmar, Karl. *Art of the Steppes*. New York: Crown, 1967.
- L'or des Scythes: Trésors de l'Ermitage*. Leningrad: Bruxelles, 1991.
- Reeder, Ellen D., ed. *Scythian Gold: Treasures from Ancient Ukraine*. New York: Harry N. Abrams, 1999.

Rolle, Renate, Michael Müller-Wille, and Kurt Schitzel, eds.
Gold der Steppe: Archäologie der Ukraine. Neumünster,
 Germany: K. Wachholtz, 1991.

JAN CHOCHOROWSKI

SLAVS AND THE EARLY SLAV CULTURE

The first certain information about the Slavs dates to the sixth century A.D. The question of the location, time, and course of ethnogenetic processes that shaped the “earliest” branch of Indo-Europeans remains one of the most fiercely discussed issues in central and eastern European historiography. A modest set of primary written sources from that period and a larger but more controversial set of linguistic arguments form the basis of what is known concerning the beginnings of Slavic history. It is mostly thanks to archaeological findings that the understanding of early Slavic culture has broadened in the last fifty years. Authoritative archaeological evidence entered into the discussion on the origins of the Slavs only in the 1960s, when archaeologists began to recognize and analyze assemblages of artifacts from the fifth through the sixth centuries throughout the area between the Elbe and Don Rivers.

According to the “western” thesis, which has not been analyzed properly with respect to the Polish territory, the Slavs’ homeland was either in the basin of the Oder and Vistula (perhaps only the Vistula) or between the Oder and the Dnieper. At present, the evidence supporting this hypothesis is weak. Thorough analysis of the findings from the second through the fifth centuries from the area of central Europe, carried out by Kazimierz Godłowski, confirmed the nonindigenous character of Slavic culture on the Oder and Vistula. The fact that the cultural models of two consecutive palaeo-ethnological phenomena were identical—the archaeological findings from the second through fifth centuries in the central and upper Dnieper region and those of the later Slavic structures from fifth to sixth centuries—was also noted by Godłowski. The reliability of the “eastern” concept has been constantly growing, as archaeological source-based research has progressed in eastern and central Europe. The ar-

chaeologists’ arguments have been confronted with the contents of historical records.

The Byzantines were the first to notice the Slavs—raids from a new wave of barbarians from the north endangered their empire’s Danube border. In the first half of the sixth century, Jordanes, in his history of the Goths, pinpointed Slavic settlements in the region surrounded by the upper Vistula, the Lower Danube, and the Dnieper. There, according to Jordanes, along the Carpathian range, “from the sources of the Vistula over immeasurable area, settled a numerous people of Veneti.” The Veneti were divided into Sclavenes and Antes—both groups commonly regarded as Slavs. The Sclavenes lived in the area from the Vistula to the Lower Danube, and the Antes inhabited the area to the east of the Dniester, up to the Dnieper. The Byzantine writer Procopius of Caesarea, a contemporary of Jordanes, records in his *Gothic War* (*De bello Gothico*) that “uncountable tribes of the Antes” settled even farther to the east. He recorded that in about A.D. 512 there was “a considerable area of empty land” to the west of Sclavenian settlements (perhaps in Silesia?). It is hard to overestimate the importance of Procopius’s words that Sclavenes and Antes spoke “the same language” and that they had long had one common name.

The records of these authors seem to correspond to the area of archaeological phenomena that is identified with the remnants of the Slavs at the beginning of their great expansion. The southern and eastern frontier of Slavdom described in the first half of the sixth century from the Byzantine perspective matches the border of a specific and exceptionally homogeneous cultural province, which can be interpreted only as Slavic. All available excavation materials confirm the division of this province, between the mid-fifth and mid-seventh centuries, into at least three tightly interrelated branches. The historical records allow for the identification of the western group (the Prague culture) with the Sclavenes and of the southeastern group (the Penkovka culture) with the Antes. The name of the third group (the Kolochin culture) is unknown but was perhaps the “Veneti.”

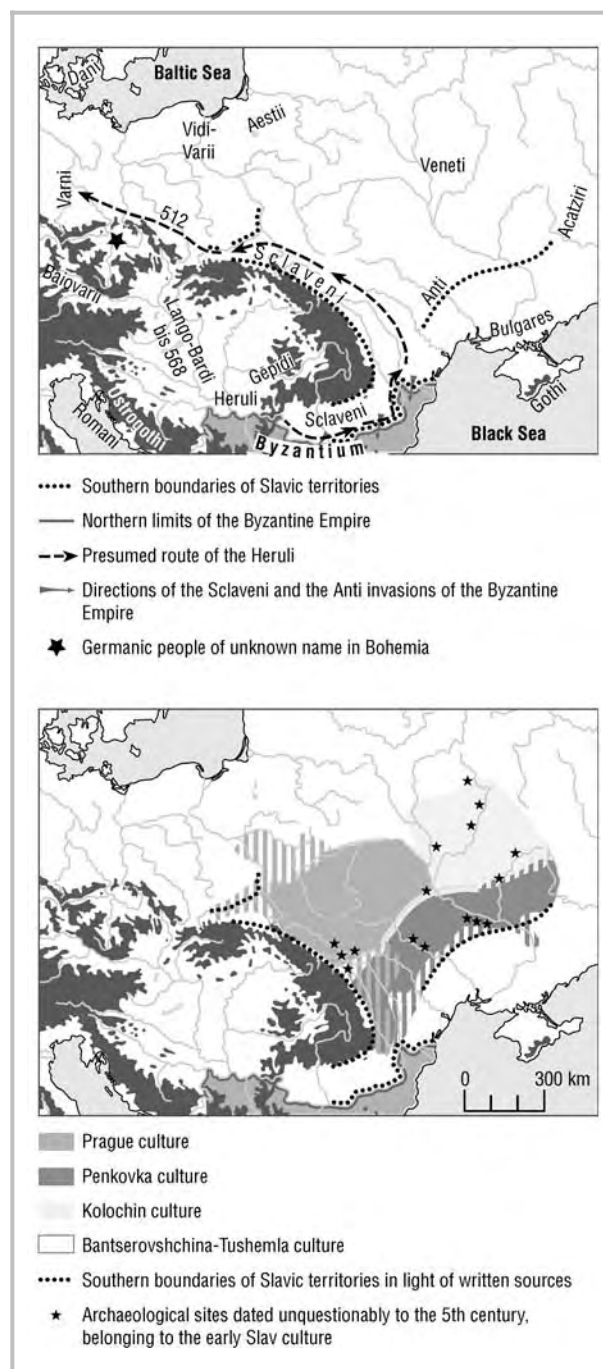
These groups represent an identical cultural model. The differentiation of the discussed archaeological units is so slight that it is practically based on a secondary criterion, that is, the differences among

the characteristic forms of pottery, which is the only mass finding. The early development stage of all three cultures (the turn of the sixth century) is characterized by a large majority of simple handmade pots without ornamentation.

The boundaries of these cultures were transformed considerably in the late sixth century and into the seventh century. Although the areas occupied by the Kolochin and Penkovka cultures remained the same, the Prague culture spread widely to the west: it encompassed the basin of the Middle Danube and the upper and middle Elbe. At the same time a new phenomenon arose in the basin of the Oder and on the southern coast of the Baltic Sea: the Sukow culture, most likely the younger stage of the Prague culture. Unfortunately, the disappointing state of research on the areas south of the Danube makes it impossible to obtain a clear picture of archaeological structures in the Balkans.

The ethnographic characteristics of early Slavic society captured by historians and archaeologists allow researchers to describe settlement forms; economic structure; the method of artifact manufacture and its stylistic features; some elements of the social system, customs, and beliefs; the funeral rite; warfare; foreign influences; standards of living; and the general level of civilization development. Early Slavic settlements hardly ever were found in the mountains: their traces are rarely seen more than 300 meters above sea level. The areas of fertile soil close to rivers and woods most often were selected. Nondefensive settlements were built along the edges of river valleys. Typical houses were sunken-floored huts on a square plan, with sides from 2.5 to 4.5 meters long. The wooden walls were erected in the form of a log cabin (“blockhouse”) or were of pile (“Pfostenbaum”) construction. A stone or clay oven typically stood in one corner, although some huts had hearths in the center. According to Procopius, the Slavs “live in pitiable huts, few and far between.” The so-called Pseudo-Maurikios, a Byzantine historian writing at the end of the sixth and the beginning of the seventh centuries, says, “They live in the woods, among rivers, swamps and marshes.”

Natural forms of environmental exploitation pervaded the economy, which was based mainly on agriculture. The main crops were millet and wheat; breeding cattle was at the forefront of husbandry too. As a result, the inhabitants of rural settlements



Location of Slavs in the beginning of sixth century A.D. in light of written sources (top) and of archaeological data (bottom). ADAPTED FROM PARCZEWSKI 1993.

were totally self-sufficient, although their lives were of low standard, a fact noted by the Byzantines. According to Pseudo-Maurikios, the Slavs were numerous and persistent; they easily endured heat,

chill, and bad weather as well as scarcity of clothes and livelihood.

No form of well-developed handicraft existed, apart from a rudimentary form of ironworking. The models for molten metal ornaments were borrowed from other cultures, as was the handicraft method of pottery production with a potter's wheel (from the sixth and seventh centuries). There are no clear traces of widespread trade. Records exist on the chiefs and tribal elders, who were usually leaders of small tribes. The funeral rite demanded cremation. The remains of human bones, with a few rare poor gifts for the dead, were put in shallow pits, either in a vessel (an urn) or directly in the soil.

The territory of the later—that is, pre-late fifth century—Slavic society is unclear. The ethnogenetic connection between the remains of Slavic settlements from the sixth and seventh centuries and earlier structures can be observed only in the east. The most reliable archaeological guidelines lead to the area of the upper and middle basin of the Dnieper, where a large group of people, whose remains are defined as “the Kiev culture,” lived from the second or third century until the beginning of the fifth century. This is, as it were, the matrix of the three early Slavic cultures: the Kolochin culture (taking up almost the same area as the Kiev culture earlier); the Penkovka culture; and, to a large extent, the Prague culture. In the steppe and forest-steppe zones of the Ukraine are concentrated the earliest archaeological assemblages (dated undoubtedly to the fifth century) belonging to these three Slavic groups.

The eastern origin of the Slavs is confirmed directly by one written source. The so-called Cosmograph of Ravenna, writing in the seventh or eighth century, mentions the motherland of the Scythians, the place from where generations of Slavens originated. The specific location is unknown but he mentions the vast area of eastern Europe. The land inhabited by the Slavs at the beginning of the sixth century, reconstructed on the basis of archaeological findings, was approximately three times bigger than the area occupied by the Kiev culture in the first decades of the fifth century. New territories were taken over in the south and west—up to the Carpathians, the Lower Danube, and the Upper and Middle Vistula. The second stage of Slavic territorial expansion took place in the course of the sixth and seventh centuries. The population masses con-

centrated in the Lower Danube moved to the Balkans and occupied land as far as Peloponnese. A steppe people of the Avars, who settled in the Carpathian Basin in about A.D. 568, played a significant role in these events. At the same time other currents of expansion were moving to the west, reaching the eastern Alps and the Baltic Sea and occupying the Elbe basin.

Between the Baltic, the Elbe, and the Danube the newcomers probably encountered largely empty territories. In the Balkans, however, they first devastated the area and suppressed the locals and then, from the end of the sixth century onward, populated the land inhabited by the Greeks, by the remains of the Thracians and Germans, and, in the west of the peninsula, by groups of Romans. One of the mechanisms of the Slavs' demographic success—mass abduction of natives to captivity—is documented clearly in written records. In time, massive territorial growth together with the adoption of diversified ethnic substrates created the conditions for a deepening of the divisions in culture (and undoubtedly language as well) within what had so far been a unified Slavic world.

See also **Scythians** (vol. 2, part 7); **Poland** (vol. 2, part 7); **Hungary** (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Baran, V. D., ed. *Etnokul'turnaia karta territorii Ukrainoskoi SSR v I tys. n.e.* Kiev, Ukraine: Naukova Dumka, 1985.

Barford, Paul M. *The Early Slavs: Culture and Society in Early Medieval Eastern Europe*. London: British Museum Press, 2001.

Curta, Florin. *The Making of the Slavs: History and Archaeology of the Lower Danube Region, c. 500–700*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 2001.

(Note: The opinions of some authors about the localization of Slavs' homeland are in fact widely divergent from the opinions presented in the books of P. M. Barford and F. Curta.)

Godłowski, Kazimierz. *Pierwotne siedziby Słowian*. Edited by M. Parczewski. Kraków, Poland: Instytut Archeologii Uniwersytetu Jagiellońskiego, 2000.

———. “Zur Frage der Slawensitze vor der grossen Slawenwanderung im 6. Jahrhundert.” In *Gli Slavi occidentali e meridionali nell'alto medioevo*, pp. 257–284. Settimane di Studio del Centro Italiano di Studi Sull'alto Medioevo 30. Spoleto, Italy: Centro Italiano di Studi Sull'alto Medioevo, 1983.

———. *The Chronology of the Late Roman and Early Migration Periods in Central Europe*. Prace Archeologiczne 11. Kraków, Poland: Uniwersytet Jagielloński, 1970.

Parczewski, Michał. *Die Anfänge der frühslawischen Kultur in Polen*. Edited by F. Daim. Veröffentlichungen der Österreichischen Gesellschaft für Ur- und Frühgeschichte 17. Vienna: Österreichischen Gesellschaft für Ur- und Frühgeschichte, 1993.

———. “Origins of Early Slav Culture in Poland.” *Antiquity* 65 (1991): 676–683.

Popowska-Taborska, Hanna. *Wczesne dzieje Słowian w świetle ich języka*. Wrocław, Poland: Ossolineum, 1991.

Sedov, Valentin V. *Vostochnye slaviane v VI-XIII vv.* Moscow: Nauka, 1982.

MICHAŁ PARCZEWSKI

VIKINGS

The precise origin of the word “Viking” remains a mystery. The terms “Viking” and “Viking Age” are associated with a period of almost three hundred years, from the late eighth century to the eleventh century, the last period of the Scandinavian Iron Age. Although we use the term “Viking” to describe the land and people of Scandinavia during that time period, the Northmen or Norse never used that word to describe themselves, and neither did neighboring countries. Some scholars think that the word “Viking” derives from the word *vik*, the Scandinavian word for “inlet” or “creek,” but this interpretation is not universally accepted. Whatever its origin, the word “Viking” signifies the Scandinavian fishing-and-farming people who also undertook predatory expeditions to fuel their chiefly economy as well as expand their settlement into new lands. According to Peter Sawyer in his *Kings and Vikings*, “The age of the Vikings began when Scandinavians first attacked western Europe and it ended when those attacks ceased.”

RAIDS AND EXPANSION

The Vikings conducted raids to exact tribute. During the Dark Ages, it was commonplace within Scandinavia as well as western Europe and Russia to plunder neighbors, to exact a tribute from them, and to secure their submission—to a large extent interchangeable notions. However, it was a new expe-



Fig. 1. Rune stone from the Viking period. PHOTOGRAPH BY BENGT A. LUNDBERG. NATIONAL HERITAGE BOARD OF SWEDEN. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

rience, and to many a shocking one, when the Scandinavians began to extend their sphere of activity so far beyond their own borders. The superior skills in boat making and navigation made this expansion possible. The topography of the Scandinavian countries prohibited travel by land; therefore, the waterways were their highways. This aided in the development of a seafaring culture with extremely accomplished sailors whose nautical expertise was their greatest asset in exploiting new lands. The Vikings settled the previously uninhabited island of Iceland; they developed two settlements in Greenland, which survived for three hundred years before mysteriously disappearing; and they arrived in the New World before Columbus, as seen by archaeological evidence of their presence in the site of L’Anse aux Meadows in Newfoundland, Canada. They helped found many cities in Russia, such as

Novgorod, Kiev, and Staraya Ladoga, and artifactual evidence points to trading with a plethora of places as diverse as Ireland and Byzantium. Their voyages were diverse in nature; the need for productive farmland along with the quest for wealth made the Vikings a mosaic of settlers composed of fighters, traders, and raiders.

DAILY LIFE

The reputation of these Nordic people as fierce warriors and raiders has obscured the more complex aspects of their everyday life for centuries. The Vikings in their homelands adapted uniquely to an arctic culture and exploited an extensive array of available resources. They were fisher-farmers because the warming effects of the Gulf Stream enabled farming much farther north than recorded previously. They fished the rich waters of the North Atlantic for the fish of the cod family, halibut, and wolfish, as well as the local lakes and rivers for freshwater fish such as salmon, trout, and char. They harvested bird colonies for meat (puffins, guillemots, and ptarmigan), eggs (duck, seagull, and cormorant), and eider duck down. They also hunted and scavenged large marine mammals, such as whales (for meat and oil, and for bone to use for structural material and for the creation of gaming pieces, fish net needles, and other implements), and walrus (primarily for their ivory). Their success as traders gave rise to a number of trading towns, such as: Gotland and Birka in Sweden, Hedeby in Schleswig-Holstein, and Kaupang in Norway. These towns became the foci of intense commercial activity and industry, and the goods traded were as diverse as the people who visited. The artifactual evidence (coins, tools, and ornaments) from excavations in these locations point to connections with Russia, Europe and North Africa, and shed light on the transition of Viking life from the farm to the town, and the beginnings of urbanization and city formation.

Archaeology has contributed greatly to the understanding of Viking lifeways. Viking houses were built with timber, stone, and turf. In this class-stratified society, large chiefly estates with good pastureland and large boathouses were the homes for local earls. Inside the houses were central fireplaces for warmth and cooking. Remains of cauldrons and steatite vessels, together with other artifacts such as

whetstones for sharpening knives and loom weights from the upstanding looms that women used to weave fine woolen clothing, offer glimpses of domestic life. Implements for farming, hunting, and fishing along with animal bones from middens provide information on activities involving subsistence as well as those involving economy and trade. Charcoal pits, molds, slag, and recovered implements point to highly skilled craftsmanship in metalwork while the Viking ships and their surviving wood ornaments are a stellar example of woodworking. At Oseberg and Gokstad in southeastern Norway, excavations of sunken Viking ships undertaken in the late nineteenth and early twentieth century revealed beautifully crafted sledges and wagons. Fine gold jewelry and inlaid silverwork from finds throughout the Viking world also show a high degree of craftsmanship. Chess games, horse fights, and wrestling were all part of Viking daily life, and finds such as the Lewis chessmen—beautifully carved figurines of walrus ivory—show the Vikings applying their talent as artisans to their entertainment as well as their livelihood.

Military settlements such as Trelleborg in Zealand, Nonnebakken at Odense in Funen, Fyrkat near Hobro, and Agersborg near Limfjorden were all situated to command important waterways that served as lines of communication. The layouts of these camps reflect influences of symmetry and precision of the Roman *castra*. The Vikings were organized in bands called *lii*, a kind of military household familiar in western Europe. A chieftain might go abroad with just his own men in a couple of ships, but more commonly he would join forces with greater chieftains. These were often members of royal or noble families, styling themselves as kings or earls, and they frequently seem to have been exiles—for example, unsuccessful rivals for the throne—who were forced to seek their fortune abroad. Such men were often willing to stay abroad to serve Frankish or Byzantine rulers as mercenaries, to accept fiefs from them, and to become their vassals. They thereby became a factor in European politics. Vikings were frequently employed by one European prince against another or against other Vikings.

A voting assembly of freemen called *thing* was a governing institution widely used by the ancient Germanic peoples—it served as a forum to settle conflict and to cast decisions on questions relating

to fencing, construction of bridges, clearance, pasture rights, worship, and even defense. At the beginning of the Viking Age, there were many *thing* assemblies throughout Scandinavia, and Norse settlers frequently established *things* abroad. The Icelandic *Althing* was unusual, however, in that it united all regions of an entire country under a common legal and judicial system, without depending upon the executive power of a monarch or regional rulers. The *Althing* was established around A.D. 930. Little is known about its specific organization during the earliest decades, because the only description of this exists in writing in Grágás and the sagas. These were not contemporary sources but were compiled by Christian scholars three hundred years after the end of the Viking Age and therefore generally portray the assembly as it was after the constitutional reforms of the mid-960s.

The social stratification of early Viking communities was based on wealth and property. Earls, peasants, and thralls supported the socioeconomic ladder. Women quite often achieved higher status, as evidenced through burial mounds in many parts of Norway. Vikings were intolerant of weakness and it is postulated from later literature that the elderly and infirm were regarded as a burden.

The Vikings, who were probably inspired through their contact with Europe and exposure to the Latin writing system, developed their own alphabet called *futhark* or otherwise known as a runic alphabet. Runes were carved primarily on stone but some have been found in wood and bone. The runes carried a multitude of meanings from the mystical to the mundane. The earliest written sources that provide information about the Vikings (sagas and eddas), were created by Icelandic scribes three centuries after the end of the Viking Age. These sources, along with direct data from environmental and archaeological investigations, help to elucidate the complex and often misrepresented Nordic people.

See also Viking Harbors and Trading Sites; Viking Ships; Viking Settlements in Iceland and Greenland; Hofstaðir; Viking Settlements in Orkney and Shetland; Viking Dublin; Viking York; Pre-Viking and Viking Age Norway; Pre-Viking and Viking Age Sweden; Pre-Viking and Viking Age Denmark (all vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

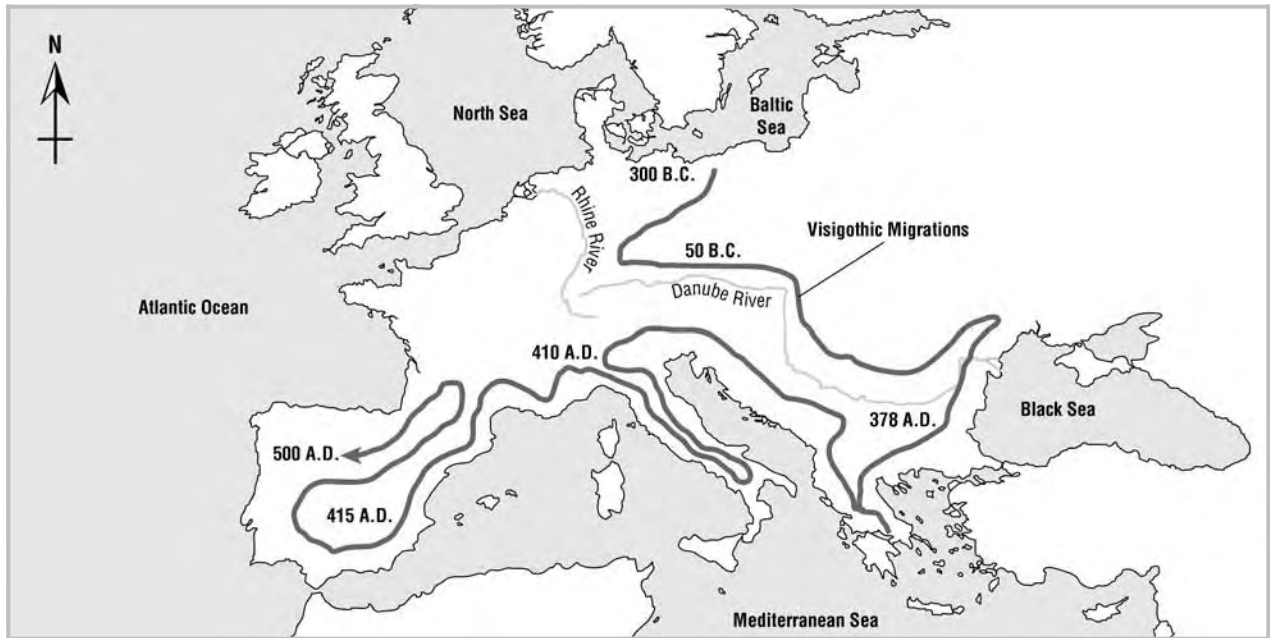
- Almgren, Bertil, et al., eds. *The Viking*. Gothenburg, Sweden: A. B. Nordbok, 1975.
- Batey, Colleen E., Judith Jesch, and Christopher D. Morris, eds. *The Viking Age in Caithness, Orkney, and the North Atlantic*. Edinburgh: Edinburgh University Press, 1995.
- Morris, Chris. "Viking Orkney: A Survey." In *The Prehistory of Orkney*. Edited by Colin Renfrew. Edinburgh: Edinburgh University Press, 1985.
- Myhre, Bjorn. "The Royal Cemetery at Borre, Vestfold: A Norwegian Centre in a European Periphery." In *The Age of Sutton Hoo: The Seventh Century in North-Western Europe*. Edited by Martin Carver, pp. 301–313. Woodbridge, U.K.: Boydell, 1992.
- . "Chieftains' Graves and Chieftom Territories in South Norway in the Migration Period." *Studien zur Sachsenforschung* 6 (1987): 169–187.
- Nordisk Ministerråd og forfatterne. *Viking og Hvidekrist: Norden og Europa 800–1200*. Copenhagen: Nordisk Ministerråd, 1992.
- Sawyer, Peter. *The Oxford Illustrated History of the Vikings*. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1997.
- . *Kings and Vikings: Scandinavia and Europe, A.D. 700–1100*. London: Methuen, 1982.

SOPHIA PERDIKARIS

VISIGOTHS

The Visigoths (Good Goths) were located in central Germany when they first came into contact with Roman traders and soldiers in the first century B.C. They were an Indo-European people who seemed to have originated in Poland and not in Scandinavia, as some ancient historians believed. Around 300 B.C. some of these people left Poland for unknown reasons and began migrating south through the Balkans. When they reached the borders of the Roman Empire, the ancestors of the Visigoths found it easier to settle down than to continue south by fighting the Romans, and there they stayed, along the Danube River on the borders of the Roman Empire. They were small farmers, growing mostly wheat and barley.

Throughout the Roman Imperial period, the ancestors of the Visigoths constantly traded with the Romans and intermittently fought with them.



Extent of Visigothic migrations. DRAWN BY KAREN CARR.

Both sides benefited from this exchange of goods and information. It was through this contact that the Visigoths encountered new technologies and products, such as blown drinking glasses and bottles, writing, and poured concrete. In about A.D. 300 the Visigoths converted to Christianity through the missionary work of Roman Arians. The Visigoths also taught the Romans their own military techniques, and in the fourth century A.D. many Roman soldiers on the Rhine and Danube were buried carrying Gothic weapons and wearing Gothic clothing and jewelry.

Starting in about A.D. 200, however, the situation of the Visigoths became untenable. The Huns, leaving their homeland in eastern Siberia, had migrated across Asia and were sweeping down through Europe, pushing refugees ahead of them. The Visigoths, attacked by the Huns, tried desperately to move across the Danube into the safety of the Roman Empire but found themselves trapped between two powerful opponents. Perhaps as a result, they began to develop a more formal identity and leadership. In A.D. 378 the Visigoths took advantage of Roman military mistakes to kill the Roman emperor Valens at the battle of Adrianople, cross the Danube, and take over a piece of the Balkans within the empire. The Romans were unable

to push the Visigoths out but refused to provide the refugees with food, seeds, or tools so that they could reestablish themselves as farmers.

A generation later, the Visigoths were still in the Balkans, struggling as refugees and growing increasingly angry. Their leader, Alaric, demanded food and supplies from the Roman emperor Honorius in Ravenna, but Honorius did nothing. In response, Alaric took his entire people and began moving toward Rome. Meeting no serious opposition, Alaric's army sacked the city of Rome in A.D. 410. The Visigoths stayed only three days, because Honorius immediately cut off food supplies to Rome. When they left, the Visigoths headed south down the Italian coast, apparently hoping to cross the Mediterranean Sea to Africa. Most of Italy's food came from Africa, and the Visigoths thought of it as a promised land. In the toe of Italy, however, a bad storm destroyed the boats they were planning to use, and the Visigoths hesitated, having no experience with seafaring and frightened by the storm. Unexpectedly, Alaric died. Alaric's brother-in-law Ataulf (Ataulphus or Adolf) took over and led the Visigoths back up north and past the Alps into southern France.

In A.D. 409, however, the Vandals, Alans, and Sueves had invaded Spain. Honorius now invited the Visigoths to counterattack and get rid of these

people in exchange for the right to settle in southern France. Ataulf accepted the contract, and the Visigoths wiped out the Alans and some of the Vandals. At this point, in A.D. 415, Honorius belatedly realized the danger that the Visigoths would cross from Spain to invade Africa; fearing that the Visigoths would cut off the food supply of Rome, and he hastily recalled them to France, leaving the remaining Vandals and Sueves in place in Spain.

The Visigoths were happy to settle down in southern France, establishing their capital at Toulouse. It seems that they received tax revenues from the whole area, although it is unclear by what mechanism. By the death of King Theoderid in 451, they had established a kingdom essentially independent of Rome and even proposed their own candidate for emperor in the 450s. The Visigoths fought alongside Roman generals against Attila and the Huns in the 460s. Under King Euric (r. 466–484), they established their own laws, with separate codes for the Goths and for their Roman subjects.

After the Vandals abandoned Spain for Africa in A.D. 429, however, the Visigoths gradually expanded into the power vacuum in Spain. At the same time, the Frankish king Clovis was pushing southward from his base in northern France. In A.D. 507 Clovis defeated the Visigoths at the battle of Vouillé and killed the Visigothic king Alaric II. The Visigoths ceded southern France to Clovis and took over Spain instead, establishing their new capital at Toledo in central Spain.

With the death of Alaric, the Visigoths were left with a child king, Amalaric. Amalaric's grandfather was the powerful Theodoric the Ostrogoth, ruler of Italy. Theodoric announced that he would act as regent for his grandson, and in this way the Ostrogoths dominated Spain and the Visigoths for the rest of Theodoric's long life, until A.D. 526. Even after Theodoric died, Amalaric soon was assassinated in favor of another Ostrogothic ruler, Theudis (r. 531–548).

A civil war starting in 549 resulted in an invitation from the Visigoth Athanagild, who had usurped the kingship, to the Byzantine emperor Justinian I to send soldiers to his assistance. Athanagild won his war, but the Romans took over Cartagena and a good deal of southern Spain and could not be dislodged. Starting in the 570s



Fig. 1. Gothic gold eagle fibula with garnet and cloisonné inlays. GERMANISCHES NATIONALMUSEUM. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

Athanagild's brother Leovigild compensated for this loss by conquering the kingdom of the Sueves (roughly modern Portugal) and annexing it, and by repeated campaigns against the Basque separatists. Leovigild's son, Reccared, converted from Arianism to Catholicism, which did much to wear down the old distinctions between Hispano-Roman and Visigoth. This newfound unity found expression in increasingly severe persecution of outsiders, especially the Jews.

After Reccared's death, the seventh century saw many civil wars between factions of the aristocracy. Despite good records left by contemporary bishops,

such as Isidore and Leander of Seville, it becomes increasingly difficult to distinguish Goths from Romans, as the two became inextricably intertwined. Despite these civil wars, by A.D. 625 the Visigoths had succeeded in expelling the Romans from Spain and had established a foothold at the port of Ceuta in Africa.

In the late 600s, however, the great Islamic conquest of the Mediterranean coast was in full swing. The Moors, recently converted to Islam, seized the port of Ceuta, attacking unexpectedly on Easter Sunday in 711. Then, in a reprise of the events of the late 500s, one of the Visigothic parties to a civil war invited the Moors to help him, and the Moors invaded Spain. They found no army that could mount any serious opposition, and by 712 Spain was firmly under Moorish control. The Visigoths, by then entirely assimilated with the Romans, retreated to the Pyrenees, from where they began the long, slow process of reconquest.

See also **Huns** (vol. 2, part 7); **Ostrogoths** (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Carr, Karen Eva. *Vandals to Visigoths: Rural Settlement Patterns in Early Medieval Spain*. Ann Arbor: University of Michigan Press, 2002.
- Collins, Roger. *Early Medieval Spain: Unity in Diversity, 400–1000*. 2d ed. New Studies in Medieval History. Basingstoke, U.K.: Macmillan, 1995.
- Heather, Peter. *The Goths*. Oxford: Blackwell, 1996.
- Stocking, Rachel L. *Bishops, Councils and Consensus in the Visigothic Kingdom 589–633*. Ann Arbor: University of Michigan Press, 2000.
- Wolf, Kenneth Baxter, trans. and ed. *Conquerors and Chroniclers of Early Medieval Spain*. 2d ed. Liverpool, U.K.: Liverpool University Press, 1999.
- Wolfram, Herwig. *History of the Goths*. Translated by Thomas J. Dunlap. Berkeley: University of California Press, 1988.

KAREN CARR



VIKING SHIPS

The region settled by the Vikings during the ninth to eleventh centuries consisted of the Scandinavian Peninsula and Jutland, the Danish archipelago, and islands in the Baltic and the North Atlantic as well as areas along the coasts and larger rivers of Britain, Ireland, northern France, and Russia. There were no overland routes connecting these areas, and consequently all communication relied on the ships and boats that rightfully became a trademark for Viking expansion as recorded in contemporaneous sources and in the archaeological record.

Several ships of the Viking period have been found in graves and as wrecks, and reused ships' parts have been excavated in Viking towns, giving a detailed insight into the boat- and shipbuilding traditions of the period. There are few remains found of Nordic ships from the fifth to eighth centuries, the crucial period during which ship design in this area changed from large rowing vessels of the Migration period to the ships of the early Viking Age, combining propulsion by oars and sail. In contrast, wrecks of the medieval period and later provide evidence for the study of the region's shipbuilding heritage and traditions from the Viking era to the twenty-first century.

All Viking ships were built by the clinker technique—that is, starting from a central keel, with identical stems fore and aft and with the overlapping edges of the planking riveted together. After shaping the lower planks to give the desired shape of the bottom, the floor timbers were inserted and fastened to the planking, with lashings in the early phase and later using treenails. The sides were sup-

ported by side timbers and by knees positioned on the deck beams (*biti*) over each of the floor timbers. A light, strong, and resilient hull was evidently the goal of Viking shipbuilders when constructing vessels for various purposes. Oak and pine were the primary materials for the hulls, with ropes of linden bast and sails of sheep's wool. The ships were steered with a side rudder to starboard and propelled primarily by a single square sail stepped amidships in a keelson, a longitudinal timber with the step for the mast. The sail was set from a horizontal yard and adjusted by means of several ropes to bring the ship forward with the wind from astern, abeam, or up to 60 degrees to the wind in tacking. Viking ships had no cabins or weather decks, and all water coming inboard had to be bailed out.

The ships from the large burial mounds in southeastern Norway at Oseberg (c. A.D. 820, excavated in 1904) and Gokstad (c. A.D. 895, excavated in 1880), now exhibited in Oslo, represent the early Viking Age multifunctional ship type. With a length of 21.6 to 24.2 meters, a beam of 5.1 meters, and sides 1.6 to 2.1 meters high amidships, these vessels were propelled equally well by their square-sail of about 90 to 110 square meters or by their 30 to 32 oarsmen. The Oseberg ship is considered the personal vessel for the high-ranking woman buried in it with her elaborately decorated belongings. The Gokstad ship has higher sides and is slightly more robust, making it fit for deep-sea navigation with its crew and a moderate cargo of trade goods or booty.

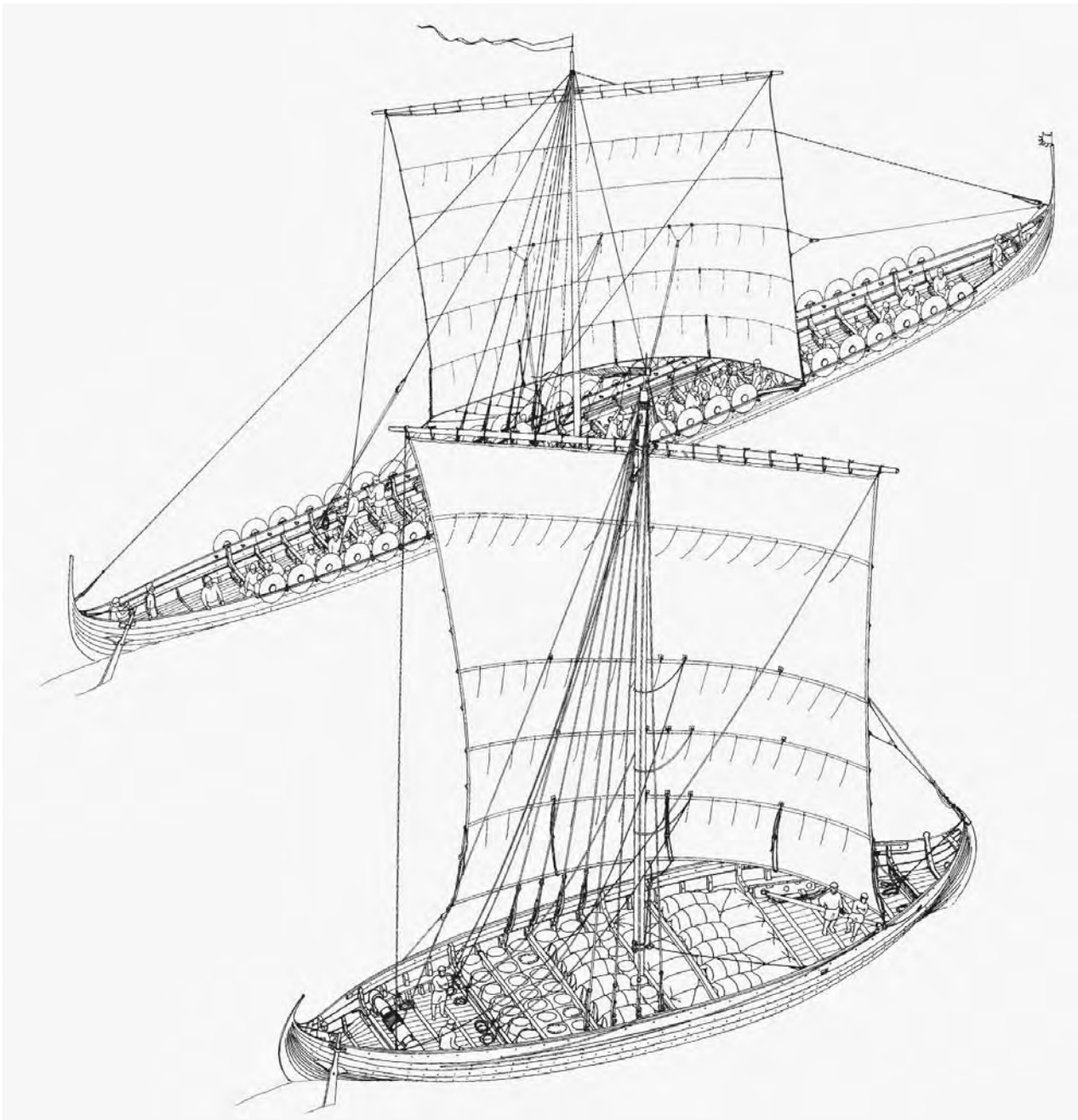


Fig. 1. The Hedeby 1 and Hedeby 3 Viking ships. DRAWN BY SUNE VILLUM-NIELSEN. © THE VIKING SHIP MUSEUM, DENMARK. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

Viking ships of the tenth and eleventh centuries have been found at several sites, the most important ones being Ladby (burial, c. A.D. 925), Hedeby (two wrecks, c. A.D. 985–1025), and Skuldelev (five ships in a barrier, c. A.D. 1030–1050). The Ladby ship imprint in the ground, excavated 1935, is preserved in the Kerteminde

region of Denmark, whereas the Hedeby ships, excavated 1979–1980, and the Skuldelev ships, excavated 1962, are exhibited in the Schleswig region of Germany and at Roskilde, Denmark, respectively. Additional evidence comes from excavations in the Viking towns of Hedeby and Dublin.

These ships display the range of types and sizes of vessels that had been developed for different purposes in that period. The primary division was between the relatively long and low “personnel carriers,” built primarily to satisfy the requirements for fast propulsion by rowing (demanded by longships used as troop transporters and by boats used for communication and fishing), and the broader and higher “cargo carriers” that required a proper cargo capacity, relying mainly or fully on sail propulsion. This specialization is not found in vessels dating before the tenth century.

The longships that served in the Danish waters, the North Sea, and the Irish Sea are represented by the Irish-built Skuldelev 2 ship and the Hedeby 1 ship (fig. 1) built locally, both about 30 meters in length but only 3.8 meters and 2.7 meters wide respectively and manning about 60 oars each. Skuldelev 5 was a small 26-oared longship for local defense. These three warships represent different levels of craftsmanship, from the royal standard of Hedeby 1 to the “discount version” Skuldelev 5. In the longships, the oars were worked through holes in the ships’ sides, and shields could be mounted along the rail. Figureheads were carried on prominent longships, and others had gilt weather vanes, but most longships probably had no decorative flourishes other than their stemposts ending elegantly at a point.

Smaller, boat-sized vessels had their oars mounted along the rails. They could be used as ships’ boats, for communication, for general transportation, and for harvesting the sea, such as the Norwegian-built Skuldelev 6.

The cargo-carrying vessels range in sizes from the small Danish-built 14-meter-long general-purpose vessel Skuldelev 3 with a cargo capacity of 4 to 5 tons, to the 16-meter-long Baltic trader Skuldelev 1 (from western Norway) with a capacity of 20 to 25 tons, to the Hedeby 3 ship (fig. 1) with an estimated capacity of about 60 tons. The largest cargo-carrying ships were entirely dependent on sail propulsion, and their hulls were more solidly built

than the longships. This type of ship was further developed in size during the eleventh and twelfth centuries to match the needs of trade in this period of urbanization around the Baltic and the North Sea.

The seaworthiness of the Gokstad ship was demonstrated as early as 1893 when a full-scale reconstruction of this ship crossed the Atlantic under sail. Since then several of the ships mentioned here, including all five Skuldelev ships, have been reconstructed at full scale and tested in order to study their potentials for the many needs of the maritime-oriented society of the Vikings.

See also Viking Harbors and Trading Sites (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Bill, Jan. “Ships and Seamanship.” In *The Oxford Illustrated History of the Vikings*. Edited by Peter Sawyer, pp. 182–201. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1997.
- Brøgger, Anton Wilhelm, and Haakan Shetelig. *The Viking Ships: Their Ancestry and Evolution*. Oslo, Norway: Dreyers, 1951.
- Crumlin-Pedersen, Ole. “Splendour versus Duty: Eleventh-Century Warships in the Light of History and Archaeology.” In *Maritime Warfare in Northern Europe*. Edited by A. N. Jørgensen et al., pp. 257–270. Studies in Archaeology and History 6. Copenhagen: National Museum of Denmark, 2002.
- . “Ships as Indicators of Trade in Northern Europe, 600–1200.” In *Maritime Topography and the Medieval Town*. Edited by Jan Bill and Birthe Clausen, pp. 11–20. Studies in Archaeology and History 4. Copenhagen: National Museum of Denmark, 1999.
- . *Viking-Age Ships and Shipbuilding in Hedeby/Haithabu and Schleswig*. Ships and Boats of the North, vol. 2. Schleswig, Germany: Provincial Museum of Archaeology; Roskilde, Denmark: Viking Ship Museum, 1997.
- Crumlin-Pedersen, Ole, and Olaf Olsen, eds. *The Skuldelev Ships I*. Ships and Boats of the North, vol. 4.1. Roskilde, Denmark: Viking Ship Museum, 2002.

OLE CRUMLIN-PEDERSEN



JEWELRY

Almost universally, individuals adorn themselves with jewelry that may indicate rank, gender, age, marital status, ethnicity, and religious beliefs—and barbarian Europe was no exception. Jewelry gives an important view into how peoples of the early medieval period from A.D. 400 to 1000 identified themselves and their groups. In the absence of stone architecture and sculpture, jewelry making was a primary art and sometimes is the only medium that has survived from these cultures. Though much of barbarian jewelry comes from loose or undocumented finds, whether accidentally lost or deliberately hidden, examples found in inhumation graves allow archaeologists to re-create details of costumes, since jewelry was used to fasten clothes together as well as to adorn the elite. Some jewelry, such as buckles and brooches, was functional, regardless of the degree of decoration, whereas other types, such as pendants and earrings, were more ornamental and symbolic, distinguishing individuals from each other.

Knowledge of various groups, such as Anglo-Saxons, Burgundians, Franks, Goths, Langobards, Ostrogoths, Vandals, Vikings, and Visigoths, has sometimes been based on spatial distributions of jewelry styles, since these “tribes” had diverse clothing fashions that required distinctive jewelry types to fasten and adorn them. Thus it has sometimes been assumed that peoples can be identified from jewelry found in graves; however, it is difficult to distinguish groups based on artifacts dating to this proto-historic age. As Helmut Roth points out in *From Attila to Charlemagne* (edited by Katharine

Brown, Dafydd Kidd, and Charles T. Little), it is often difficult to establish that an object was produced by, for instance, a Frank, just because it was found in an area later associated with the Franks. Issues of “ethnic” identification are also discussed by Herbert Schutz in the introduction to his *Tools, Weapons, and Ornaments* (2001). Finally, extra caution is necessary when making assertions about ethnicity based on classifications of jewelry without documented provenance.

JEWELRY TYPES

Common jewelry types included hair ornaments and headdresses, straight pins to hold veils and hair ornaments, necklaces of beads and pendants, earrings, brooches, belt buckles, strap ends, bracelets, wrist clasps (cuff fastenings), finger rings, and thin metal plaques sewn to clothing. In particular, brooches (or pins) have been studied and classified according to their myriad forms, including annular (ring), penannular (broken ring), quoit (flattened ring), disk, saucer, bow, cruciform, square-headed, equal-armed, oval, trefoil, bird, and animal types. Several brooch types derive from the Roman fibula, whose name recalls its formal resemblance to the human leg bone. Its function is based on the principle of the modern safety pin; it uses a wire spiral to provide flexibility for opening and shutting and usually has ornamentation on the enlarged head and foot plates that conceal the coiled spring and the catch plate for the pin. Certain types of jewelry were appropriate for particular clothing styles, and as fashions changed, so too did jewelry.



Fig. 1. Pair of Viking cast oval brooches of gilt bronze with silver details and beads of carnelian and glass—some with silver and gold foil, from Birka, Sweden, c. A.D. 900. © TED SPIEGEL/CORBIS. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

RAW MATERIALS

Late Roman styles influenced the types of jewelry that were made, and the gold used in much early jewelry originated from melted down Roman coins. In the Viking Age, silver became more common than gold, as the supply of late Roman coins had long since died out and the source of metal by this time was Arabic silver coins. Copper, bronze, and iron were also used, particularly for functional jewelry. Bone and walrus ivory were carved for pins and rings. Glass, amber, and semiprecious stones (particularly quartz, rock crystal, jet, and garnet) were made into beads and also inserted into metal jewelry. Glass was produced in provincial Roman workshops in the Rhineland, and garnets came to Europe through Roman trade.

CONSTRUCTION TECHNIQUES

The techniques used to produce barbarian jewelry also derive from Roman methods and changed very little throughout the early medieval period, except for the introduction of the draw plate to produce wire (discussed below). The best source of information about production methods often is an examination of the artifacts, though some conclusions can be based on archaeological discoveries of tools and workshop debris. Important early medieval jewelry

workshops have been discovered in Scandinavia at Helgö, Birka, Ribe, and Hedeby.

The most common method of jewelry construction was fabrication, which entails mechanical manipulation and joining of sheets of metal by hammering, folding, and soldering. Inscriptions, patterns, and images can be made on sheet metal by chasing or engraving, that is, using a pointed tool to displace or gouge out metal. The sheet can also be impressed with a stamp or die having a relief design, worked in repoussé by having designs hammered from the reverse, or embellished with small hammered punches. The central designs on Scandinavian Migration period (A.D. 450–600) gold pendants called bracteates were stamped with a die, but punches were used around the perimeter of these objects.

Casting was the other major method of jewelry construction. During the early medieval period, a two-piece mold was used rather than the ancient “lost-wax” technique. In casting, metal is melted in a crucible and then poured into the mold; used crucibles with residue as well as broken molds were found at workshop sites such as Birka in Sweden. After casting, rough edges must be filed away and polished; after this cleanup, the piece of jewelry might receive additional embellishment. Often jew-

elry cast in bronze or silver would be coated with silver or gold respectively to give an impression of a more valuable material.

DECORATIVE TECHNIQUES

Jewelry made by either casting or fabrication may be further adorned by surface decoration, including granulation, filigree, and inlays of stones or glass. Filigree, also known as wire work, consists of patterns of plain or decorative beaded wires soldered to the surface of a piece of jewelry. In the fifth and sixth centuries, wire was made by techniques called strip twisting and block twisting, in which a strip of metal is twisted, rolled, and hammered until it is approximately circular in section like a drinking straw. Drawn wire, manufactured by pulling a thin metal strip through a series of successively smaller round-sectioned holes in a draw plate, gradually replaced strip- or block-twisted wire from the seventh through the ninth centuries in northern Europe.

A decorative technique called granulation consists of soldering small spheres of gold or silver onto the jewelry surface. Granules are simple to produce by heating small pieces of metal until they roll up due to surface tension, but they are difficult to solder into place accurately. They were often used in large quantity and in combination with filigree, so individual mistakes are difficult to see without a microscope while the overall effect is impressive. Both filigree and granulation created glittering effects that are impressive by firelight.

Enameling and inlay of colored stones and cut glass were also used to enhance the surface appearance of jewelry with color, or polychrome, effects. Cloisonné, a technique in which materials are set into small cells (*cloisons*) fabricated by soldering upright strips of metal onto the surface of the jewelry, was often used in the early medieval period. Garnet cloisonné was used extensively on Merovingian jewelry. Well-known Early Anglo-Saxon examples are the shoulder clasps from Sutton Hoo, in which cut garnets as well as millefiori glass, composed of colored glass rods fused together and sliced into thin sections, are placed in cell work. Enameling during the early medieval period was achieved by placing broken or powdered glass within cells, which were then heated, and the glass was allowed to melt and fuse with the metal jewelry surface. Finally, glass was

also used to make colorful, patterned beads, as evidenced from workshops at Ribe in Denmark.

See also *La Tène Art* (vol. 2, part 6); *Sutton Hoo* (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Arrhenius, Birgit. *Merovingian Garnet Jewellery: Emergence and Social Implications*. Stockholm, Sweden: Almqvist and Wiksell, 1985.
- Axboe, Morten. "The Scandinavian Gold Bracteates: Studies on Their Manufacture and Regional Variations." *Acta Archaeologica* 52 (1981): 1–100.
- Bayley, Justine. "Anglo-Saxon Non-Ferrous Metalworking: A Survey." *World Archaeology* 23, no. 1 (1991): 115–130.
- Brown, Katharine Reynolds, Dafydd Kidd, and Charles T. Little, eds. *From Attila to Charlemagne: Arts of the Early Medieval Period in the Metropolitan Museum of Art*. New Haven, Conn.: Yale University Press, 2000.
- Cherry, John. *Goldsmiths*. Medieval Craftsmen Series. Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 1992.
- Coatsworth, Elizabeth, and Michael Pinder. *The Art of the Anglo-Saxon Goldsmith*. Woodbridge, Suffolk, U.K.: Boydell Press, 2002.
- Duczko, Wladyslaw. *Birka V: The Filigree and Granulation Work of the Viking Period: An Analysis of the Material from Björkö*. Stockholm, Sweden: Almqvist and Wiksell, 1985.
- Hines, John. *A New Corpus of Anglo-Saxon Great Square-Headed Brooches*. Woodbridge, Suffolk, U.K.: Boydell and Brewer, 1997.
- . *Clasps, Hektespenner, Agraffen: Anglo-Scandinavian Clasps of Classes A–C of the Third to Sixth Centuries A.D.: Typology, Diffusion, and Function*. Stockholm, Sweden: Kungliga Vitterhets Historie och Antikvitets Akademien, 1993.
- Hougen, Bjørn. *The Migration Style of Ornament in Norway*. 2d ed. Oslo, Norway: Universitetets Oldsaksamling, 1967.
- Jensen, Stig. *The Vikings of Ribe*. Ribe, Denmark: Den antikvariske Samling, 1991.
- Jessup, Ronald. *Anglo-Saxon Jewellery*. Aylesbury, Buckinghamshire, U.K.: Shire Archaeology, 1974.
- László, Gyula. *The Art of the Migration Period*. Coral Gables, Fla.: University of Miami Press, 1974.
- Ogden, Jack. "The Technology of Medieval Jewelry." In *Ancient and Historic Metals: Conservation and Scientific Research*. Edited by David A. Scott, Jerry Podany, and Brian B. Considine, pp. 153–182. Marina del Rey, Calif.: Getty Conservation Institute, 1994.
- Ryan, Michael. *Studies in Medieval Irish Metalwork*. London: Pindar Press, 2002.

- Schutz, Herbert. *Tools, Weapons, and Ornaments: Germanic Material Culture in Pre-Carolingian Central Europe, 400–750*. Leiden, The Netherlands: Brill, 2001.
- Suzuki, Seiichi. *The Quoit Brooch Style and Anglo-Saxon Settlement*. Woodbridge, Suffolk, U.K.: Boydell Press, 2000.
- Vida, Tivadar. “Veil Pin or Dress Pin: Data to the Question of Avar Period Pin-Wearing.” In *Pannonia and Beyond*. Edited by Andrea Vaday, pp. 563–573, 811–815. Budapest, Hungary: Archaeological Institute of the Hungarian Academy of Sciences, 1999.
- Whitfield, Niamh. “Round Wire in the Early Middle Ages.” *Jewellery Studies* 4 (1990): 13–28.
- Wicker, Nancy L. “On the Trail of the Elusive Goldsmith: Tracing Individual Style and Workshop Characteristics in Migration Period Metalwork.” *Gesta* 33, no. 1 (1994): 65–70.
- Youngs, Susan, ed. *“The Work of Angels”: Masterpieces of Celtic Metalwork, Sixth–Ninth Centuries A.D.* Austin: University of Texas Press, 1990.

NANCY L. WICKER



BOATS AND BOATBUILDING

Archaeologists recovered a great deal of information during the last half of the twentieth century concerning the variety of boats used in central and northern Europe c. A.D. 400–1000. Detailed practical studies also have been carried out regarding the methods, tools, and materials used to build boats and ships at this time. The level of study of the material and its geographic spread is very uneven, however; the larger planked craft of southern Scandinavia are fairly well known, but the important shipbuilding traditions to the south, east, and west are far less well known or studied. This essay deals mainly with small boats and boatbuilding but also draws attention to the lesser known larger ships of the Angles, Saxons, Frisians, Slavs, Celts, and others.

Dugout boats, between 2.5 and 7 meters long, were the most common small boats in early medieval central and northern Europe, and many survive in museums across the Continent. Indeed, it is clear that in countries where systematic surveys have been conducted, such as the British Isles, most dated dugout boat finds belong to this early medieval period. The variety of early medieval dugout vessels built in Britain and central Europe was considerable, reflecting local peasant boatbuilding traditions, the function of the craft, and the locally available trees. Most vessels were built from large whole or halved oak trunks between about 0.6 and 1.0 meters in diameter. By the end of the early medieval period in the tenth and eleventh centuries, it is clear that the very highest quality large oak trees were out of reach to small dugout boatbuilders in some in-

tensively settled regions, such as England and Denmark. The best trees were reserved for building the large, high-status planked ships, such as the ninth-century long ship from Hedeby, Jutland. The low status of dugout vessels also is indicated by the lack of historical and pictorial sources for them. On the western fringes of Europe, in parts of Britain and Ireland, it is thought that skin-covered boats (“coracles” and more elongated “currachs”) were used, but the archaeological evidence for them is slight. It also is very likely that rafts were used on some inland waterways where light pines, firs, and spruces grew, in montane central Europe and northern areas.

Detailed experimental work has been done in England in the field of building small early medieval dugout boats (fig. 1), following detailed analysis of evidence, such as surviving tool marks and the trees used. It is clear that such craft were built with axes, adzes, and splitting techniques to remove the waste wood, rather than by fire hollowing. It has been discovered that fire was used in building some dugout vessels, as a means of softening the timber of thin hulls to expand them, as is still done in some parts of the world today. The wider shape, with uplifted ends, produced by this extraordinary process provided a more seaworthy, capacious shape than can be carved from a single log, and it often was extended upward with the use of overlapping planking. It is clear that this method was employed throughout the early medieval period in some areas, such as northwestern Germany, Denmark, England, and the Netherlands and probably elsewhere. An early

example of an expanded dugout boat with one added plank on each side is the Vaaler Moor boat from northwestern Germany.

Use of replica craft and desk-based studies have shown that these often humble boats had a key role in developing the early medieval economy in lands with poor roads. They must have been used for expected purposes, such as ferrying, local travel of small numbers of people, fishing, fowling, and hunting, but many also were capable of carrying the equivalent of cart or packhorse loads of local produce or traded goods. For example, the 3.75-meter-long, Clapton boat, dating to the tenth century A.D. and found in London, could carry a crew and as much as 110 kilograms of cargo.

Larger cargo craft based on dugout hulls expanded by fire, extended by planks, and fitted with frames also were used in the Low Countries and around the southern North Sea region. These craft appear to have been known as “hulcs”; tenth-century fragments of such a seagoing trading vessel from the Low Countries were found in London. The most complete inland version of this type of vessel can be seen in Utrecht in the Netherlands. The overlapping planks of the upper hulls were waterproofed in a distinctive manner, with moss held in place by battens secured with small iron staples (*sintels*).

Most large trading, fishing, and war vessels that were built in early medieval northern Europe, however, were made in the clinker-planked “keel” style (“lapstrake”). In this case, a shell of partially overlapping planks was fastened to a central beam (also a “keel”) and end posts to form a hull pointed at both ends. The planks were split out of large trees rather than sawn, as in Roman vessels. The use of clinker planks with light frames certainly also was employed late in this period for some quite small boats, such as the 4-meter-long, tenth-century Arby boat from central Sweden.

In the Slav and Baltic lands to the east of Scandinavia and in England to the west, local styles of clinker shipbuilding developed both before and after contact with the Vikings. In both regions the use of wooden pegs (“treenails”) to fasten the overlapping boards commonly is found alongside rather heavier frame timbers than were used in the Scandinavian craft. Perhaps the most thoroughly investi-



Fig. 1. Replica of the Clapton tenth-century Anglo-Saxon dugout boat being hollowed out by an axe as dictated by the toolmarks found on the original. COURTESY OF D. M. GOODBURN. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

gated non-Scandinavian-built planked vessel of this period is the Graveney boat, dating to the tenth or eleventh century, which was a small trading vessel. This craft was found in northern Kent in southeastern England in 1970 and had a fairly flat, but rounded bottom with a straight, sloping stern post and an original length of some 14 to 15 meters. Fragments of craft built in the same broad style have been found in London, reused in riverside construction during the tenth century.

Other traditions of planked vessel construction will undoubtedly emerge in the coming years with increasingly systematic archaeological work being carried out on land, sea, and the intertidal zone. One of these new finds being studied in detail is the Port-Berteau II wreck from the Charente River in southwestern France. In this vessel the planking was

laid edge to edge, in the manner of carvel-built ships from later medieval times. The boat may even have been built frame first, rather than with framing added to a planked shell, as was typical farther north—even though it initially was dated well before A.D. 1000.

See also **Trackways and Boats** (*vol. 1, part 4*); **Viking Ships** (*vol. 2, part 7*).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Arnold, Bettina. *Pirogues monoxyles d'Europe centrale: Construction, typologie, évolution*. Vol. 2. Archaeologie neuchateloise, no. 21. Neuchatel, France: Musée Cantonal d'Archeologie, 1996.
- . *Pirogues monoxyles d'Europe centrale: Construction, typologie, évolution*. Vol. 1. Archaeologie neuchateloise, no. 20. Neuchatel, France: Musée Cantonal d'Archeologie, 1995.
- Greenhill, Basil. *The Archaeology of the Boat: A New Introductory Study*. London: Adam and Charles Black, 1976.
- Litwin, Jerzy, ed. *Down the River to the Sea*. Proceedings of the Eighth International Symposium on Boat and Ship Archaeology, Gdańsk, 1997. Gdańsk, Poland: Polish National Maritime Museum, 2000.
- Marsden, P., ed. "A Late-Saxon Logboat from Clapton, London Borough of Hackney." *International Journal of Nautical Archaeology* 18, no. 2 (1989): 89–111.
- McGrail, Seán. *Ancient Boats in North-west Europe*. Rev. ed. London: Longman, 1998.

D. M. GOODBURN



CLOTHING AND TEXTILES

Textile and clothing production was an essential domestic industry in preindustrial times. Entire garments are rarely preserved in the archaeological record, but fragments of textiles, textile production tools, written records, and visual representations allow archaeologists to reconstruct how textiles and clothing were produced and worn between A.D. 800 and 1000, that is, the Early Middle Ages in continental Europe and the Viking Age in Scandinavia.

PRODUCTION

Textile production was primarily a domestic industry in early medieval Europe and Viking Age Scandinavia. Archaeological finds, literary and visual representations, and ethnographic analogies to living cultures all suggest that textiles were produced in the household by women. In Europe a few professional centers of production may have existed and may have exported cloth widely. Cloth was also professionally produced in the Middle East, the Near East, and the eastern Mediterranean during this period and was traded with Europe and Scandinavia. In the latter regions, flax fibers were used to create linen cloth and wool to create woolen cloth. Clothing was also made of silk and cotton, but these fabrics were imported from other regions, not produced locally.

In preparation for spinning, wool fibers were combed with wooden combs possessing long iron teeth. Combing aligned the fibers and separated the short fibers from the long. Soft flax fibers were first removed from their tough stem, then combed. Once the fibers were combed, they were ready to be

spun into yarn. A distaff held the length of loose combed fibers, and a spindle weighted with a whorl was used to twist the yarn. The spinner held the distaff in one hand, spinning and dropping the spindle to pull and twist the fibers downward into yarn. She or he then gathered the spun yarn into balls or skeins.

Between A.D. 800 and 1000, warp-weighted looms were used to weave fabric throughout most of Europe and Scandinavia. Warp-weighted looms were made of two uprights about 2 meters tall that leaned against a wall or rafter. A crotch at the top of each upright supported a horizontal beam of variable length. The beam had a series of holes to which the warp, or lengthwise, strands of yarn were attached. Loom weights made of stone or baked clay held the warp strands taut. The fabric was woven top to bottom, with the weaver walking back and forth, inserting the weft (crosswise strands) through the warp and beating it upward toward the beam. The weaver wrapped the woven cloth around the beam as she or he worked, so that it would be out of the way.

CLOTHING

Information on early medieval and Viking Age clothing is available through the archaeological remains of textiles, through written sources, and through visual representations. Scandinavian archaeologists have developed a particularly detailed understanding of Viking Age clothing.

A typical female costume in Viking Age Scandinavia consisted of several layers. The first layer was

a linen shift, smooth or pleated, with long sleeves and a long skirt. Over this a Viking woman would have worn a tunic made of imported silk or some other fabric held in place with a pair of tortoiseshell brooches. She might have worn a shirt or caftan over the tunic, fastened with a trefoil brooch, an equal-armed brooch, or a large round fibula. In cold weather she would have added a cape or coat closed in front with a fibula. Finally, her costume would have included leather booties and perhaps a cap or other headgear.

A typical male costume in Viking Age Scandinavia included leggings or wide, knee-length breeches. Along with these, a man would have worn a woolen jacket with overlapping front or a sleeved coat with bronze buttons, similar to a riding caftan. To complete the outfit, he would have had a leather belt, boots, and perhaps a hat or cap.

Both men's and women's clothing was adorned with trimmings and ornamentation made from luxury materials, like silk, precious metals, and furs.

Trimmings included woven bands, braid work, and embroidery.

TEXTILES FROM EARLY MEDIEVAL EUROPE AND VIKING AGE SCANDINAVIA

Several European and Scandinavian archaeological sites are notable for their finds related to early medieval and Viking Age textiles. Oseberg in Norway and York in England have yielded evidence related to textile production, while finds from Birka in Sweden illustrate the richness of clothing between A.D. 800 and 1000.

The Oseberg burial mound in southeastern Norway contained the grave of a wealthy woman buried with a companion in A.D. 834. Among her grave furnishings were textile production tools, including a set of weaving tablets with an unfinished braid still attached.

York was an early medieval urban center, first for the Anglian kingdom of Northumbria (seventh

and eighth centuries A.D.) and later for the Scandinavian-controlled Danelaw (ninth to eleventh centuries A.D.). Excavations there have produced evidence of textile production, including raw wool and flax, dye plants, spinning and weaving equipment, and textile fragments (fig. 1.)

Many textile fragments, both local and imported, have been preserved at the Viking Age site of Birka (occupied A.D. 750–970), located on an island 30 kilometers west of Stockholm on the eastern coast of Sweden. Numerous types of linen and woolen fabrics have been recovered, varying in their fiber, fiber preparation, weave technique, and threads per inch and in secondary production techniques, such as dyeing. Silk fabrics also have been recovered at Birka, nearly all of them imported from Byzantium.

PRESERVATION

Textiles are fragile, organic artifacts that often suffer from physical and chemical deterioration. Textiles can be preserved archaeologically if agents of decay are absent or if agents of preservation are present to counteract decay.

Agents of decay include water, which acts as a catalyst for many chemical reactions; oxygen, which also acts a catalyst; pH levels, which affect various textile materials differently; bacteria; salts; temperature; overburden; and organisms. Preserving conditions for archaeological textiles include an absence of oxygen (often due to a waterlogged environ-

ment); an absence of water (in dry environments); and the presence of salts and other residues, which can preserve nearby fabrics by acting as biocides or by impregnating or replacing adjacent textile fibers.

In wet climates, such as in Europe and Scandinavia, textiles are primarily preserved in two environments: in waterlogged sites, where the lack of oxygen prohibits the decay of the fibers by microorganisms; and in close contact with metal objects, where the decay of the metals preserves the textile fibers. At York early medieval textiles survived under waterlogged conditions, while at Birka metallic salts preserved Viking Age textiles.

See also Emporia (vol. 2, part 7); Jewelry (vol. 2, part 7); Anglo-Saxon England (vol. 2, part 7); Viking York (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Cronyn, J. M. *The Elements of Archaeological Conservation*. London: Routledge, 1990.
- Geijer, Agnes. *A History of Textile Art*. London: Pasold Research Fund, 1979.
- Harte, N. B., and K. G. Ponting, eds. *Cloth and Clothing in Medieval Europe*. London: Heinemann Educational, 1983.
- Hoffman, Marta. *The Warp-Weighted Loom: Studies in the History and Technology of an Ancient Implement*. Oslo, Norway: Universitetsforlaget, 1964.
- Walton, Penelope, and J. P. Wild, eds. *Textiles in Northern Archaeology. NESAT III: Textile Symposium in York, 6–9 May 1987*. London: Archetype Publications, 1990.

RAE OSTMAN



VIKING SETTLEMENTS IN ICELAND AND GREENLAND

FOLLOWED BY FEATURE ESSAY ON:

Hofstaðir 442

Near the close of the eighth century A.D., Nordic pirates, traders, and settlers began the expansion from their Scandinavian homelands that gave the Viking Age its name and permanently changed the development and history of Europe. In the North Atlantic, Viking Age settlers colonized the islands of the eastern North Atlantic (Faeroes, Shetland, Orkney, Hebrides, Man, Ireland) by c. A.D. 800. Iceland was traditionally settled c. 874, Greenland c. 985, and the short-lived Vinland colony survived a few years around A.D. 1000 in the Newfoundland–Gulf of St. Lawrence region. Around A.D. 1000 a common language and culture stretched from Bergen to the St. Lawrence, and colonists drawn from both Scandinavia and the British Isles were attempting the dangerous business of *landnám* (land taking, or first settlement) over a diverse range of island ecosystems.

In some of these island groups (Ireland, Shetland, Orkney, Hebrides, Man) the Nordic voyagers found well-established Iron Age maritime communities similar in many ways to their own, with enough cultural and linguistic overlap to allow widespread intermarriage and political alliance as well as feuding and mutual raiding. In other island groups (Faeroes, Iceland) humanity was either entirely absent or represented by a few (soon departing) hermetical monks, and the Viking Age settlers encountered an essentially virgin landscape. In

Greenland and Vinland, contact was with indigenous maritime hunter-gatherers rather than agriculturalists. The Vinland contact rapidly resulted in victory for the local population—hostility of the local *Skraeling* is the only negative factor reported about Vinland in the later saga literature, but it was clearly enough to abort the European *landnám* of continental North America for another half millennium. In Greenland, a still poorly understood contact between Norse settlers and Dorset Paleo-Eskimo hunters resulted in a distribution of Norse farming settlements along the southwest coast and Dorset settlements far to the north in the Thule district. As they had in Iceland and the Faeroes, in Greenland the Norse again took over ecosystems unexploited by large-scale farming and again set up a new cultural and economic landscape.

After the demise of the Vinland settlement shortly after A.D. 1000, Iceland and Greenland were the westernmost outposts of Scandinavian culture in the North Atlantic. As Viking Scandinavia became integrated into European Christendom in the later eleventh century, many new options opened for would-be chieftains and ambitious younger sons in Normandy, England, and even Sicily, and the wind went out of the sails of the Viking Age Atlantic voyages. Greenland survived for another five hundred years before becoming extinct. Iceland, by

contrast, remains today a very lively modern descendant of the age of settlement.

DOCUMENTARY SOURCES

Prior to the 1970s most scholars of the Viking period in the North Atlantic were philologists, medieval archaeologists, and documentary historians, and the uneven written record for Viking depredations in Europe and the colorful and diverse saga literature of Iceland tended to dominate discussion of the period (see Adolf Friðriksson, 1994). All of the saga literature of Iceland postdates the events of the *landnám* period in Iceland and Greenland by several hundred years. The rich documentary sources do not begin to become contemporary with the events they describe until the mid-twelfth century, and accounts of earlier times may very well have been heavily shaped by later political and dynastic agendas. Greenland certainly had its own set of sagas, annals, and written historical records, but these were all lost when the settlements became extinct and only a few tantalizing fragments remain. The surviving medieval documentary sources are thus rich and by no means completely analyzed, but it is unlikely that more will be discovered and they are thus essentially a closed body of data.

Since the mid-1970s research focus has shifted, as multiple field projects combining archaeology, paleoecology, and history have been carried out all across the region, producing new troves of data of different kinds not wholly dependent upon later documentary sources. The North Atlantic has become a very active center for field and laboratory research, so that every year new finds are made and new analyses carried out that change and enrich our picture of society of the settlement age and the historical ecology of *landnám*. Rapid expansion of both radiocarbon dating and the use of tephra (ash) from Icelandic volcanoes is providing an increasingly detailed chronology for early settlement in both Greenland and Iceland, and several long-term field projects are concentrating their efforts on early settlement. Thus although archaeology and paleoenvironmental studies increasingly are coming to dominate new research into the essentially prehistoric period of first *landnám*, the written accounts can be reinterpreted in light of fresh evidence to make a renewed contribution.

Both later documentary references and modern genetic studies indicate that many of the participants in each successive westward movement were drawn from previously settled islands—modern Icelanders have a strong British Isles genetic heritage and saga accounts suggest considerable ethnic diversity aboard the *landnám* vessels. Long open-water voyages were always dangerous, and of the twenty-four ships that set out from Iceland to colonize Greenland, only fourteen apparently completed the journey. First settlers had their pick of the best land, but in Iceland and Greenland they also faced a true wilderness without established farms, fields, roads, bridges, or local farming expertise. Domestic animals and human labor would both be desperately scarce in the early years, and saga accounts mention failed *landnám* attempts in Iceland.

EVIDENCE FROM EXCAVATIONS

In Iceland, archaeological evidence for early settlement has appeared in many areas, both along the south coast and in the northern coast and interior. The recent excavations of a nearly complete ninth-century longhouse on Aðalstraedi in the center of modern Reykjavík by Howell Roberts and Mjoll Snaesdóttir and what may be the tenth-century farmstead of Erik the Red himself serve to illustrate the rich evidence for Viking Age settlement in comparatively warm southern Iceland. More surprising has been the discovery of multiple early sites in the more arctic northern interior around Lake Mývatn by a long-term project directed by Orri Vésteinsson and Adolf Friðriksson. These inland high-altitude sites appear to form part of a whole landscape of settlement involving extensive boundary walls, charcoal-burning sites, pagan burials, and what has been identified (somewhat controversially) as a pagan temple at Hofstaðir. It would appear that expansion from the initial settlements along the coast was rapid and that high inland sites were occupied in the first generation of *landnám* in Iceland. Barley growing (for beer as much as bread) was initially practiced in many areas but was later largely discontinued due to both climate change and soil nutrient depletion, and most Icelanders depended on milk, meat, fish, bird's eggs, and a few gathered plants for their basic diet.

By A.D. 930 the Icelanders had set up a self-governing system of local and national *things* (as-

sembly places) intended to regulate competition among chieftains and adjudicate disputes among farmers. The assemblies voted to adopt Christianity as the official religion (although allowing some pagan practice) in 1000, and Icelandic churchmen soon began to contest vigorously with secular chieftains for power, land, and followers. In the thirteenth century competition between great magnate families led to civil war and the loss of independence; in A.D. 1264 Icelanders submitted to rule under the king of Norway. After 1250 fishing played an increasing role in both subsistence economy and overseas trade, and a few fishing towns began in the eighteenth century. The Icelandic population fluctuated around fifty thousand throughout most of the Middle Ages and early modern periods, surviving epidemic disease, volcanic eruption, climate cooling, and repeated famine to regain political independence and prosperity based on commercial fishing in the twentieth century.

In Greenland, settlement took place a century after the Icelandic *landnám*, and settlers following Erik colonized two pockets of rich pasture at the heads of the great fjord systems of the southwest coast. The settlement was divided into a large eastern settlement in the south and the much smaller western settlement farther north in modern Nuuk district. Radiocarbon dates from both settlement areas suggest that, as in Iceland, the landscape filled rapidly, with the eastern settlement probably being settled a generation before the western settlement. Although Greenland is far larger than Iceland, the area holding plant communities rich enough to sustain European domestic stock is far smaller, and the colony seems to have stabilized at a much smaller population level, with estimates ranging from six thousand to around three thousand inhabitants. The Greenlanders were able to set up a chiefly society with assemblies as in Iceland, and they also adopted Christianity around A.D. 1000.

The Greenlandic economy was based partly on domestic stock, but with considerable supplement from hunted caribou and seals. Fishing seems to have played a minor role in Greenland, with walrus hide and ivory, polar bear and fox skins providing the key export products. In 1127 the Greenlandic chieftains traded a live polar bear to the king of Norway to get their own bishop, who appears to have rapidly taken the best land in the eastern settlement

for his manor. By the fourteenth century, Greenland boasted a monastery and nunnery as well as some of the largest stone churches in the North Atlantic. Archaeological evidence also suggests a sharply stratified medieval society, with the bishop's manor providing housing for more than one hundred cattle, whereas most farms had room for only two or three head.

Around A.D. 1200 the Norse and surviving Dorset Paleo-Eskimo were contacted by the Thule Inuit people. Ancestors of the modern Inuit of Canada and Greenland, these newcomers had migrated from Alaska and employed a highly sophisticated arctic hunting technology that allowed them to take baleen whales as well as seals. The dynamics of the Norse-Thule contact is still not understood, but it seems to have been a mixture of friendly and hostile encounters that resulted in a steady migration of the Thule people into the Norse settlement areas in the southwest coast. Around A.D. 1350 the smaller Norse western settlement became extinct, and by around 1450 the larger eastern settlement followed suit. Climate change, Thule contact, and declining connections to Europe all played a role in this sad end, but it also appears that settlement decisions and environmental impacts dating back to the initial *landnám* period created serious vulnerabilities in later Norse Greenland.

FACTORS IN COLONIZATION

Although the perils and opportunities of culture contact, the struggle to set up households and domestic economies, and the politics of land taking probably dominated the minds of the first settlers, environmental factors were also at work in the Norse colonization of the Western North Atlantic. As Norse settlers moved from the long coast of Norway to Iceland and Greenland they cut diagonally across the great arm of the Gulf Stream, the North Atlantic Drift, which brings warm water across the Atlantic to wash the coast of northwest Europe, making grain growing possible above the arctic circle in Norway. As they moved into Iceland and Greenland, the colonists began to leave the main channel of the North Atlantic Drift and enter environments critically different from their homelands. The south coast of Iceland is affected by the North Atlantic drift and is wet and comparatively warm in winter, but the north coast is low arctic, experienc-

ing deep snow and occasional drifting sea ice. West Greenland is affected by a side stream of the North Atlantic drift, but is also fundamentally arctic in climate; for example, it is afflicted by summer drift ice.

Thus it was entirely possible for a Norse colonist to journey hundreds of kilometers southward from an ancestral home in arctic Troms district to reach Iceland or west Greenland and still travel to a colder and more arctic local environment. The environmental differences may have been concealed initially by climate and biogeography. As Paul Buckland has pointed out, the flora of the North Atlantic islands is essentially like that of northwestern Europe, with the biogeographical break occurring between Greenland and Canada. Nordic and northern British settlers in Iceland and Greenland would have encountered fjords, valleys, and mountains covered with the same sort of dwarf willow, birch, grasses, sedges, and flowers so familiar from home. These plant communities formed the basis for northwest European Iron Age agriculture, providing grazing for domestic animals, construction material, fuel for heating and cooking, charcoal for iron smelting, important dietary supplements, and folk remedies for illness and injury. What was less evident to Viking Age settlers was that these familiar plants were all much closer to their biological limits in subarctic Iceland and low-arctic Greenland than they were in north temperate Britain or boreal northern Norway.

Farming practices sustainable for thousands of years in the homelands were to prove unsustainably destructive within a few generations in northern Iceland and Greenland. The deceptive similarity of the western North Atlantic islands was probably enhanced for the Viking Age settlers by the comparatively warm climate of the late ninth and early tenth centuries. Although climatologists no longer believe in a centuries-long, uniformly warm “medieval warm period,” high-resolution proxy climate data from both ice and deep-sea cores do suggest that the period of initial *landnám* was warmer and probably more stable than the average for the region, and significantly warmer than the colder periods of the later Middle Ages. In the North Atlantic, a few degrees difference in annual temperature can have a massive impact on the viability of imported crops like barley and on the resilience of local pasture plant communities in the face of grazing pressure.

The western North Atlantic thus may have looked deceptively friendly to Norse settlement in the Viking Age and what was to prove an anomalously warm climate phase contributed to some initial errors in settlement and subsistence choices. In Iceland, rapid deforestation followed first settlement, and pollen studies suggest that 90 percent of the dwarf birch and willow forests present at *landnám* were removed in the first century of settlement. In some areas, rapid soil erosion took place soon after, and many settlement-age sites in Iceland are now located in heavily eroded landscapes. In Greenland, soils are generally less prone to wind erosion, but several studies have indicated a parallel pattern of deforestation and locally significant soil erosion following shortly after *landnám*. Something went wrong when the northwest European Iron Age economy was transplanted to Iceland and Greenland.

ANIMAL EVIDENCE

Zooarchaeology provides good proxy evidence for past economy, and a growing number of large well-excavated animal bone collections from the Viking Age North Atlantic give an impression of the changing economy of the *landnám* period. Domestic animals imported from Europe clearly were both a cultural and an economic necessity. Farm location in both Iceland and Greenland was determined by concentrations of pasture vegetation, and social status seems to have been linked to cattle keeping. There was a relative abundance of domestic animal bones (cattle, horse, dog, pig and “caprine”—that is, both sheep and goats) on sites from Norway, Iceland, and Greenland. The chieftain’s farm on the site of Åker in southern Norway probably represents a sort of cultural ideal for aspiring farmers, and it is characterized by a large number of cattle and pig bones and a relatively small number of sheep and goat bones. Late-ninth- to early-tenth-century collections from both northern and southern Iceland show varied success in imitating the Norwegian model, but all show considerable numbers of cattle and pigs.

The later tenth-century collections are all from northern Iceland, and these show a range of different strategies employing different mixes of cattle, pigs, sheep, and goats. By the eleventh and twelfth centuries these northern Icelandic collections began

to take on the sheep-dominated character of the later Middle Ages and early modern periods: cattle bones drop in numbers, and pig and goat bones become extremely rare. This shift in farming strategy may in fact be a response to the rapid deforestation and unexpected soil erosion of the first centuries of *landnám*. It is possible that pigs and goats were most responsible for the rapid loss of tree cover in ninth- and tenth-century Iceland and that the loss of woodlands in turn made the keeping of these species uneconomic.

Thus the zooarchaeological record indicates that by the time Erik the Red and his followers were contemplating the *landnám* of Greenland, significant economic change had already taken place on many Icelandic farmsteads. However, the zooarchaeological record from early settlement period phases of Greenlandic sites indicates that the “ideal farm” of the Nordic homelands still exercised a strong hold on the first settlers. Especially at the chieftain’s farm at W 51, early layers are rich in cattle and pig bones, and the overall pattern is more similar to that of *landnám* Iceland in the ninth century than to contemporary eleventh-century Iceland. Pigs prospered even more poorly in later Greenland than in Iceland, and the later domestic mammal samples show few or no pig bones and a general reduction in cattle. Imported domestic animals were only a part of the complete subsistence economy, and especially in the early days of *landnám* wild birds, fish, and mammals were critical supplements.

The well-established Norwegian chieftain’s farm at Áker may have provided a model for domestic stock raising for the early colonists of southern Iceland at Tjarnargata 4 and Herjólfsdalur, but wild sea birds (including a few of the now-extinct great auk) underwrote the initial survival of these early settlements. The *landnám* settlers in the greater Reykjavík area also apparently made use of now-vanished local walrus colonies, as a few bones of immature walrus have been found at Tjarnargata 4 and an impressive set of tusks were recently recovered from the early longhouse at Aðalstraeði nearby. In northern Iceland, freshwater fish, preserved marine fish, birds, and bird eggs seem to have provided a major supplement on many sites. In Iceland the early reliance upon easily depleted bird and walrus colonies soon shifted toward more extensive use of marine fish, especially cod and haddock, laying the

basis for the large-scale commercial fishing of the later Middle Ages. In Greenland, fish bones are rare finds, but all sites (both early and later) show a massive amount of seal and some caribou bone. Smaller sites in Greenland (like W 48) show an increasing percentage of seal bones through time, a pattern probably mirrored in the 1999 results of isotopic investigation of human bones from Greenland by teams led by Jette Arneborg of the Danish National Museum showing a steady increase in the amount of marine foods consumed in the later Middle Ages.

SETTLEMENT STRATEGIES

Advances in zooarchaeology and understanding of settlement pattern and chronology have prompted some reexamination of the documentary record, and especially of retrospective passages in some of the sagas describing settlement times “long ago.” An often-cited passage from *Egil’s Saga* (translated in *The Complete Sagas of Icelanders*) describes the establishment of the settlement of the chieftain Skallagrim in Borgarfjörður in southeastern Iceland (emphasis has been added):

Skallagrim was an industrious man. He always kept *many men with him* and gathered all the resources that were available for subsistence, since at first they had *little in the way of livestock* to support such a *large number of people*. Such livestock as there was *grazed free in the woodland all year round*. . . . There was no lack of driftwood west of Myrar. He had a farmstead built on Alftanes and ran another farm there, and rowed out from it to *catch fish* and *cull seals* and *gather eggs*, all of which were there in *great abundance*. There was plenty of *driftwood* to take back to his farm. *Whales beached* there, too, in great numbers, and there was wildlife there for the taking at this hunting post: the animals were *not used to man* and would never flee. He owned a third farm by the sea on the western part of Myrar . . . and he planted crops there and named it Akrrar (Fields). . . . Skallagrim also sent his men upriver to catch salmon. He put Odd the hermit by Glju-fura to take care of the *salmon fishery* there . . . When Skallagrim’s livestock grew in number, it was allowed to roam mountain pastures for the whole summer. Noticing how much better and fatter the animals were that ranged on the heath, and also that the sheep which could not be brought down for winter survived in the mountain valleys, he had a *farmstead built up on the mountain*, and ran a farm there where his sheep were kept. . . . In this way, Skallagrim put his livelihood *on many footings*.

The use of marine mammals, freshwater fish, and bird colonies “not used to man,” exploitation

of upland pastures, and the ecologically sound strategy of diversified resource use (“putting his livelihood on many footings”) attributed to Skallagrim are also now clearly reflected in the archaeological record of *landnám*. Equally intriguing are the hints of a centralized settlement strategy involving both initially wide holdings by a single chieftain and careful arrangement of tenant farms to validate and effectively exploit the first comer’s claim. The area said in the thirteenth-century saga to have been claimed in the ninth century by the industrious Skallagrim would contain the residences of four major chieftains in the thirteenth century as well as up to three hundred smaller farmsteads. The “Skallagrim strategy” would have the effect of establishing a wide scatter of settlements over a large area (intentionally including many environmental zones). It would also account for some of the unexpectedly early dates for settlements at higher elevations or less-desirable locations documented by archaeology in the late twentieth century and after, suggesting a rapid widespread population dispersal into all potentially habitable sites rather than a more gradual expansion outward from favored coastal locations. The residue of planned settlement expansion may be visible in later patterns of farm settlement in both Greenland and Iceland, which show considerable regularity in farm spacing and may reflect *landnám*-age allotments.

It seems likely that the politics of *landnám* involved the competitive interaction of a range of different strategies by chieftains, middle-ranking farmers, and the lower-ranking servants and slaves whose unsung labor was so vital to the success of the first settlements. Although the process of *landnám* in Iceland and Greenland is only beginning to be understood, research in many interrelated fields is making clear that the first century of settlement saw rapid change and transformation of both nature and human society that was to have profound and lasting impact on the history of the whole region.

See also **Animal Husbandry** (vol. 2, part 7); **Viking Settlements in Orkney and Shetland** (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Amorosi, Thomas, Paul Buckland, Andrew Dugmore, Jon H. Ingimundarson, and Thomas H. McGovern. “Raiding the Landscape: Human Impact in the Scandinavian

North Atlantic.” *Human Ecology* 25, no. 3 (1997): 491–518.

Arneborg, Jette. “The Norse Settlement in Greenland: The Initial Period in Written Sources and Archaeology.” In *Approaches to Vinland*. Edited by Andrew Wawn and Thórunn Sigurðardóttir, pp. 122–133. Reykjavik, Iceland: Nordahl Institute, 2001.

Arneborg, Jette, Jan Heinemeier, Niels Lynnerup, Henrik L. Nielsen, Niels Rud, and Arny E. Sveinbjornsdottir. “Change of Diet of the Greenland Vikings Determined from Stable Carbon Isotope Analysis and C14 Dating of Their Bones.” *Radiocarbon* 41, no. 2 (1999): 157–168.

Arneborg, Jette, Jan Heinemeier, Niels Lynnerup, Niels Rud, and Arny E. Sveinbjornsdottir. “C14 dateringer af mennesknogler med de grønlandske nordboer some eksempl.” *Hikuin* 27 (2000): 307–314.

Bigelow, Gerald F., ed. *The Norse of the North Atlantic*. Acta Archaeologica, no. 61. Copenhagen, Denmark: Munksgaard, 1991.

Buckland, Paul C. “The North Atlantic Environment.” In *Vikings: The North Atlantic Saga*. Edited by William W. Fitzhugh and Elisabeth Ward, pp. 227–268. Washington, D.C.: Smithsonian Institution Press, 2000.

Buckland, Paul C., et al. “Bioarchaeological and Climatological Evidence for the Fate of the Norse Farmers in Medieval Greenland.” *Antiquity* 70 (1996): 88–96.

Dugmore, Andrew J., and C. C. Erskine. “Local and Regional Patterns of Soil Erosion in Southern Iceland.” In *Environmental Change in Iceland*. Edited by Johann Stötter and Friedrich Wilhelm, pp. 63–78. Münchener Geographische Abhandlungen series B, vol. 12. Munich: Institute for Geography, University of Munich, 1994.

Fredskild, Bent. “Agriculture in a Marginal Area: South Greenland A.D. 985–1985.” In *The Cultural Landscape: Past, Present, and Future*. Edited by H. Birks, pp. 28–35. Mons, Belgium: Botanisk Institute, 1986.

Friðriksson, Adolf. *Sagas and Popular Antiquarianism in Icelandic Archaeology*. Aldershot, U.K.: Avebury, 1994.

Hreinsson, Viðar, ed. “Egil’s Saga.” In *The Complete Sagas of Icelanders: Including Forty-nine Tales*, vol. 1, p. 66. Reykjavik, Iceland: Leifur Eiriksson, 1997.

Jacobsen, B. H. “Soil Resources and Soil Erosion in South Greenland: An Attempt to Estimate Soil Resources in the Norse Period.” *Acta Borealia* 1 (1991): 56–68.

Jones, Gwyn. *The Norse Atlantic Saga: Being the Norse Voyages of Discovery and Settlement to Iceland, Greenland, and North America*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1986.

McGovern, Thomas H. “The Demise of Norse Greenland.” In *Vikings: The North Atlantic Saga*. Edited by William W. Fitzhugh and Elisabeth Ward, pp. 327–340. Washington, D.C.: Smithsonian Institution Press, 2000.

- . “The Archaeology of the Norse North Atlantic.” *Annual Review of Anthropology* 19 (1990): 331–351.
- McGovern, Thomas H., G. F. Bigelow, Thomas Amorosi, and D. Russell. “Northern Islands, Human Error, and Environmental Degradation: A Preliminary Model for Social and Ecological Change in the Medieval North Atlantic.” *Human Ecology* 16, no. 3 (1988): 45–105. (Reprinted in *Case Studies in Human Ecology*. Edited by Dan Bates and Susan Lees. New York: Plenum Press, 1996.)
- McGovern, Thomas H., and Sophia Perdikaris. “The Vikings’ Silent Saga: What Went Wrong with the Scandinavian Westward Expansion.” *Natural History* (October 2000): 50–56.
- McGovern, Thomas H., Sophia Perdikaris, and Clayton Tinsley. “Economy of Landnam: Evidence of Zooarchaeology.” In *Approaches to Vinland*. Edited by Andrew Wawn and Thórunn Sigurðardóttir, pp. 154–166. Reykjavik, Iceland: Nordahl Institute, 2001.
- Morris, Chris D., and D. James Rackham, eds. *Norse and Later Settlement and Subsistence in the North Atlantic*. Glasgow, Scotland: Glasgow University Press, 1992.
- Ogilvie, Astrid E. J., L. K. Barlow, and A. E. Jennings. “North Atlantic Climate c. A.D. 1000: Millennial Reflections on the Viking Discoveries of Iceland, Greenland, and North America.” *Weather* 55, no. 2 (2000): 34–45.
- Ogilvie, Astrid E. J., and Thomas H. McGovern. “Sagas and Science: Climate and Human Impacts in the North Atlantic.” In *Vikings: The North Atlantic Saga*. Edited by William W. Fitzhugh and Elisabeth Ward, pp. 385–393. Washington, D.C.: Smithsonian Institution Press, 2000.
- Olafsson, Guðmundur. “Eiriksstaðir: The Farm of Eirik the Red.” In *Approaches to Vinland*. Edited by Andrew Wawn and Thórunn Sigurðardóttir. Reykjavik, Iceland: Nordahl Institute, 2001.
- Simpson, Ian A., Andrew J. Dugmore, Amanda Thomson, and Orri Vésteinsson. “Crossing the Thresholds: Human Ecology and Historical Patterns of Landscape Degradation in Iceland.” *Catena* 42 (2001): 175–192.
- Simpson, Ian A., W. Paul Adderley, Garðar Guðmundsson, Margrét Hallsdóttir, Magnús A. Sigurgeirsson, and Mjöll Snæsdóttir. “Soil Limitations to Agrarian Land Production in Premodern Iceland.” *Human Ecology* 30, no. 4 (2002): 423–443.
- Vésteinsson, Orri. “A Divided Society: Peasants and Aristocracy in Medieval Iceland.” In *New Approaches to Medieval Iceland*. Edited by Árni Daniel, Daníel Júlíusson, and Orri Vésteinsson. Glasgow, Scotland: Glasgow University Press, 2002.
- . “The Archaeology of Landnám: The Shaping of a New Society in Iceland.” In *Vikings: The North Atlantic Saga*. Edited by William W. Fitzhugh and Elisabeth Ward, pp. 164–174. Washington, D.C.: Smithsonian Institution Press, 2000.
- . “Patterns of Settlement in Iceland: A Study in Pre-History.” *Saga-Book of the Viking Society for Northern Research* 25, no. 1 (1998): 1–29.
- Vésteinsson, Orri, Thomas H. McGovern, and Christian Keller. “Enduring Impacts: Social and Environmental Aspects of Viking Age Settlement in Iceland and Greenland.” *Archaeologia Islandica* 2 (2002).
- Wawn, Andrew, and Thórunn Sigurðardóttir, eds. *Approaches to Vinland*. Reykjavik, Iceland: Nordahl Institute, 2001.

THOMAS H. MCGOVERN

HOFSTAÐIR

The Viking Age site of Hofstaðir is located in northern Iceland, on the upper Laxá River near Lake Mývatn. The ruins first attracted attention during the late-nineteenth-century Romantic antiquarian revival as a potential pagan temple site. (The name can be translated as “temple farm.”) In 1908 the Danish archaeologist Daniel Bruun and the philologist Finnur Jónsson carried out one of the first professional excavations in Iceland on the site, revealing an exceptionally large long hall and a rich midden deposit filling a circular depression just to the south of the hall. Bruun and Jónsson concluded that this great hall was in fact a pagan temple, with a sacred chamber at the north end of a great gathering hall, and for years the site has been used to illustrate discussions of pre-Christian Nordic religion. The original conclusion was disputed by Olaf Olsen, who carried out small-scale re-excavations in the mid-1960s and argued that there were no specialized pagan temple sites but rather chiefly “temple farms” combining many functions.

New international, interdisciplinary investigations began at Hofstaðir in 1992 under the direction of Adolf Friðriksson and Orri Vésteinsson and continued into the twenty-first century. The Hofstaðir excavations have expanded into a regional scale investigation of early settlement and human environmental impact in the Mývatn area. They have also brought the insights of zooarchaeology, archaeobotany, human osteology, tephrochronology, geoarchaeology, and environ-

mental modeling to bear on the complex interactions of human politics, economy, and social organization with soils, vegetation, and a changing climate. Structural work at the Viking Age portion of Hofstaðir was completed in the summer of 2002, and analysis of structures, finds, and chronology continued.

The early-twenty-first-century excavations at Hofstaðir have confirmed Bruun's general conclusion that the main building was an impressively large hall, with four times the floor space of the average Viking Age dwelling. The systematic open-area excavation of Friðriksson and Vésteinsson's teams has added greatly to this picture, documenting a series of outbuildings—some freestanding and others connected to the main hall building. These buildings include an early timber-framed structure (whose sod walls clearly were added later for insulation and probably were not load bearing) with a beam-slot construction not used in later Icelandic structures. This structure changed in use: plant phytolith analysis and soil micromorphological work by Karen Milek (of Cambridge) indicates that what had been a dwelling floor was turned into a hay store. A few meters away a small outbuilding stood beside one of the hall entrances, with a refuse pile nearby. This outbuilding was solidly constructed with a stone-lined trench down the side and a superstructure supported by large posts.

Analysis of the pit fill suggests that this probably was one of the communal privies described in the later saga texts. This substantial and well-built structure certainly was not hidden and, in fact, may have been a mark of status in the Viking Age. Although the interior of the great hall had been damaged by the earlier excavations of Bruun, enough remained untouched to allow documentation and recovery of most of the floor layers and the many postholes penetrating into subsoil beneath. The entire surviving floor deposit has been sampled systematically for soil micromorphology and floated for botanical and insect remains by Garðar Guðmundsson and should provide new insight into the organization and use of the interior space. The many postholes and stake holes penetrating to subsoil indicate fairly extensive interior partitioning, and bones and small artifacts were deliberately placed at the bottom of several holes before the support was inserted. The great hall was certainly a complex construction that

consumed a great deal of wood as well as turf and stone, representing a major investment of wealth and prestige in this early community.

Just to the south of the end of the great hall was the circular depression (area G) investigated by Bruun and Olsen. Bruun noted the large amount of well-preserved animal bone and described the deposit as a midden similar to those he had encountered in his excavations of Norse sites in Greenland. Expansion of the original trenches into an open-area excavation revealed that the feature was an exceptionally large and deep pit house, an ancient Nordic/Germanic/Slavic building type often found at Early Settlement Age (A.D. 874–930) sites in Iceland. It was filled with stratified layers of well-preserved animal bone as well as bone, stone, and metal artifacts, smithing slag, charcoal, ash, and fire-cracked stones. These deposits are still under analysis, but it is clear from the refuse that Hofstaðir was a full-scale working farm, with bones from all the Norse domestic animals found in all stages of butchery and consumption and extensive evidence of iron smelting from local bog ore. Recovered animal bones will provide a detailed picture of the changing economy at this important site and can be compared with similar deposits (some also filling pit houses) at other nearby Settlement Age sites.

Although Hofstaðir was certainly a chieftain's farm at its height in the late tenth to early eleventh centuries, the artifacts recovered are not particularly rich. A few small fragments of silver jewelry, a classic bronze ring pin, several glass beads, some worn knife blades, and a few single-sided composite bone combs are the exceptional finds; rusted iron nails are by far the most common artifactual finds. Evidence of volcanic tephra found under walls and radiocarbon dates suggest that Hofstaðir was not one of the first farms settled in the area (soon after A.D. 871) and that the peak period of the great hall may date to c. A.D. 950–1000. Its rise to temporary prominence may reflect the dynamic and competitive nature of chiefly politics during the Settlement Age.

The great hall at Hofstaðir certainly marked a briefly substantial chieftain's farm, but it also seems to have had ritual associations. When the hall was abandoned c. A.D. 1000, two sheep were beheaded and the bodies thrown onto the floor, the heads landing nearby. At the same time, skulls of cattle, sheep, goat, and pigs that apparently had been dis-

played outside along the roof were thrown down into the wall collapse or dumped together in a pit in one of the side rooms of the hall. A sheep skull was placed in each of the doorways, and then the whole farm was moved 150 meters across the home field, where a medium-sized turf farm and a small Christian chapel survived through the medieval period. The Viking Age ruins with the enigmatic great hall were never reoccupied and were left undisturbed for a thousand years.

See also **Viking Settlements in Iceland and Greenland**
(vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Friðriksson, A., Orri Vésteinsson, and T. H. McGovern. "Recent Investigations at Hofstaðir, Northern Iceland." In *North Atlantic Environmental Archaeology*. Edited by R. Housely. Oxford: Oxbow Books, 2003.
- Vésteinsson, Orri. "Patterns of Settlement in Iceland. A Study in Pre-History." *Saga-Book of the Viking Society* 25 (1998): 1–29.
- Vésteinsson, Orri, T. H. McGovern, and Christian Keller. "Enduring Impacts: Social and Environmental Aspects of Viking Age Settlement in Iceland and Greenland." *Archaeologia islandica* 2 (2002): 98–136.

THOMAS H. MCGOVERN



VIKING SETTLEMENTS IN ORKNEY AND SHETLAND

The Orkney and Shetland archipelagos were among the smallest regions settled by Norwegians during the Viking Expansion that took place c. A.D. 800–1100. However, many years of multidisciplinary research have revealed that these northernmost British Isles played significant roles in the politics and economies of the Viking World of the North Atlantic and the North Sea. From their earliest settlements by Neolithic agriculturalists in the fourth millennium B.C., the “Northern Isles of Scotland,” as Orkney and Shetland are known collectively, served as the northwestern frontier of the Eurasian landmass, and any westward movements of people, ideas, and domestic plants and animals stopped there. When the islands were settled by the Norse in the early medieval period, their peripheral status was transformed as they became the first stepping stones in an epic transoceanic migration that ended in North America. At that point, Orkney and Shetland became the gateway to the North Atlantic and a crossroads between Britain and Scandinavia.

ENVIRONMENTAL CONTEXT

To better understand the first Viking contacts with Orkney and Shetland and the eventual Norse settlement of the islands, it is necessary to examine the larger geographical contexts of the archipelagos. First, Shetland is the part of Britain which is geographically closest to Norway; as such it was a logical first landfall for Norwegian Vikings who sailed south to British and Irish locations. Thus, Shetland and nearby Orkney were likely staging points for

Viking raids in the ninth and tenth centuries A.D., when these attacks were most frequent.

Second, although some archaeological evidence suggests that the islands were settled by people from northern Norway, broader sources point to the west coast of Norway as the home of most of the Viking colonists. The Northern Isles have a gentle landscape compared with much of Norway’s mountainous west coast, with relatively richer resources for raising crops and herding domestic animals. However, like the west of Norway, the coastlines of the islands are quite indented, providing residents easy access from the shore to the deep sea. From a Norwegian perspective, Orkney and Shetland would have been desirable lands for practicing the familiar mix of farming and maritime resource exploitation found in most Viking settlement regions.

Third, although Orkney and Shetland are often discussed together, reflecting their sometimes shared political unity as a Norwegian, and eventually Scottish, earldom at various periods, the two archipelagos are geographically quite dissimilar in many ways. Most of the ecological differences are founded, literally, on bedrock. Orkney is underlain largely by the Old Red Sandstone, which breaks down into well-drained, fertile soil capable of supporting productive and stable agriculture. In Shetland, however, the Old Red Sandstone occurs largely in southern Mainland, and much of the rest of the archipelago is blanketed with poorer soils that formed on igneous and metamorphic substrates. These soils have been improved in many places through 5,000 years of cultivation, but in general,



Fig. 1. Aerial view of the Jarlshof site, Dunrossness, Shetland. This long-settled site had an extensive Viking and later Norse settlement, marked by straight walls on the left side of the photograph. © CROWN COPYRIGHT. ROYAL COMMISSION ON THE ANCIENT AND HISTORICAL MONUMENTS OF SCOTLAND (RCAHMS). REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

Orkney has always been a better environment for raising crops, while the Shetland landscape has fostered more pastoral adaptations.

The archipelagos' marine environments also differ. Waters of the great North Atlantic current system, which give the British Isles unusually warm temperatures for their northern latitudes, mix with the cooler and less saline North Sea around both Orkney and Shetland. However, Shetland lies quite close to the edge of the European Continental Shelf, where the currents are strongest and where upwelling of nutrient-rich water is greatest, while Orkney is surrounded by relatively shallow waters. The sum of these differences is that Shetland has a more diverse and dynamic marine environment that

has always had the potential to compensate for the region's marginality for cereal agriculture.

HISTORICAL EVIDENCE

There is little straightforward textual evidence regarding the Norse settlement of Orkney and Shetland. Icelandic statesman and historian Snorri Sturluson's *Heimskringla* states that the islands were settled in the reign of the Norwegian king Harald I Haarfager (Finchair) by Vikings wishing to escape his growing political power, but the account was written centuries later by an Icelander with contemporary concerns about Norwegian royal influence. The *Orkneyinga Saga*, the only Icelandic saga that was centered on the Northern Isles, contains little information on the causes and processes of the early

Norse settlement, and largely focuses on the political history of the Orkney Earldom in the eleventh and twelfth centuries. A scattering of other sources touch on the islands' Viking history in discussing the activities of Orkney Earls outside the islands. One such account is found in *Njáls Saga*, which concerns Earl Sigurd the Stout's death in Ireland at the battle of Clontarf in 1014. Written records of life in the islands increased dramatically in number and descriptive content in the later medieval and early post-medieval centuries.

PLACE-NAMES

Place-names are a type of originally verbal evidence that may preserve many cultural continuities from the Viking Period. The place-names of Orkney and Shetland are overwhelmingly Scandinavian in origin, demonstrating that the earlier Pictish language was replaced, not blended, with Old Norse in the decades after the *landnám* (first land-taking). Early place-names may include those incorporating the words or elements "bu" (*bú*), "-bister" (*bolstaðr*), and "skaill" (*skáli*), whereas the names of farms ending with "-ster" (*seter*) and "-gard" or "-garth" (*garðr*) may mark secondary establishments. Although place-names are impossible to date precisely, in some cases they may record changing land use. For example, place-names incorporating the words "pund" and "quoy" refer to livestock pens of various types, pointing to grazing as an early land use. In a more general way, the high density of place-names testifies to a very intensive exploitation of the island landscapes: for example, it is estimated that Shetland has over 50,000 Norse place-names distributed over a total land area of only 1,425 square kilometers.

ARCHAEOLOGICAL EVIDENCE

When the Norse arrived both island groups were inhabited by a Celtic population usually referred to by archaeologists and historians as the Picts. Various forms of archaeological evidence demonstrate strong cultural ties between the Picts of Orkney and Shetland and those of mainland Scotland. (Those on the mainland were first referred to as "Picts" by the Romans in the third century A.D.) Much remains to be learned about the Northern Isles Picts, but archaeological research conducted since the 1970s has shown that there must have been a considerable population in the centuries just before the

Norse colonization. In this regard the Northern Isles of Scotland differed dramatically from the largely uninhabited places that the Vikings later colonized, including the Faroe Islands, Iceland, and Greenland.

However, with the exception of scattered pre-Norse place-names and perhaps some distinctive elements in landholding organization, there are few elements in the cultures of Norse Orkney and Shetland that seem to be holdovers from the Pictish past. The lack of pre-Norse cultural traces in the Viking period has led to speculation that the meeting of the two peoples must have been violent, resulting in the extermination of the Picts. Currently available archaeological evidence regarding this complex issue remains ambiguous, and the nature of Pictish-Norse interaction is still an enigma.

Indeed, the general scarcity of documents relating to local events in the Norse settlement period makes archaeological evidence critically important. Viking-period settlements and burials have been uncovered, either accidentally or through formal excavations since the 1800s, and much has been learned about Norse life in Orkney and Shetland. This brief discussion will outline only the largest and most significant sites and finds that have revealed important information.

The earliest excavated Norse settlements in Orkney include those at Buckquoy, the Brough of Birsay, Pool, Westness, Skail in Deerness, and Saevar Howe. In Shetland, the only excavated sites with extensive demonstrated Viking period remains are at Jarlshof and Old Scatness. At present, the only relatively well-preserved buildings in Shetland that were not reused Pictish constructions are at Jarlshof. Norse occupation levels at all of these sites were underlain by the remains of Pictish settlements. Yet only at Buckquoy, and possibly Pool, was there plausible evidence of continuities between the Pictish and Norse occupations; others revealed a possible hiatus in settlement before the Norse arrival. Dating evidence for all of the sites varies in quantity and quality. In general, these Viking settlements seem to have begun in the later ninth century, a considerable time after the onset of Viking raids in southern Britain would have brought Norwegians to the Northern Isles. Thus, on the one hand, the long-term assumption that settlement began with Viking raiding in the early ninth century

is not supported so far by the archaeological record. On the other hand, further field studies and analyses may change this picture: the settlement evidence for the Northern Isles A.D. 800–1100 is still relatively slight, especially in the Shetland Islands.

Burials also may provide much information about Viking cultures, but this type of evidence is much more common in Orkney than in Shetland. Major cemeteries existed at Pierowall on Westray and at Westness on Rousay. Apparently isolated graves have also been found at other locations in Orkney and in Shetland. Pagan Viking burial forms in the Northern Isles included inhumations in long and short rectangular, stone-lined trenches or cists, flexed burials in stone-lined, ovoid pits, and boat burials that incorporated small, inshore vessels. The variety of included grave goods matches those found in other areas of the Viking World, and typical artifacts include weapons of various sorts and equipment for making textiles. Shetland has far fewer pre-Christian Norse graves than does Orkney, and far fewer than have been found in Norway and Iceland. This is a striking pattern that is difficult to explain: the conditions of preservation and the likelihood of discovering such sites would seem to be the same on Shetland as in the other locations. The acceptance of Christianity by the Norse would have curtailed the equipping of burials with grave goods, but there is no evidence that suggests that the Shetland Norse were Christianized earlier than those of Orkney. Likewise, there is no evidence that Orkney was settled earlier and would thus have had a longer “pagan period,” with greater numbers of pagan interments.

REGIONAL ECONOMY

When the regional archaeological evidence is interpreted with the aid of historical records of the Northern Isles and Norway, and with ethnographic information from later centuries, a picture emerges of the ways in which the Norse settlers of Orkney and Shetland provided themselves with food and shelter. However, it is important to recognize that relatively few sites from the 800–1100 era have been thoroughly excavated with modern methods. Even fewer sites contain both well-preserved architecture and bioarchaeological evidence from associated middens, or refuse deposits. Both types of evidence are valuable for reconstructing human economies.

It is likely that current projects, such as the Old Scatness Broch investigations in Shetland and the Quooygrew excavations in Orkney, will produce this type of complementary evidence. (Such sites are more common in Iceland and Greenland, where entire Viking period settlements were quickly abandoned, leaving better-preserved remains.) It is currently impossible to define a typical Viking period settlement type for either Orkney or Shetland. Some excavated settlements apparently supported multiple households in separate but adjacent dwellings, while other sites seem to represent single-household farms. Over time, Orkney and Shetland developed a more concentrated settlement pattern, eventually forming loose clusters of farmsteads similar to what would later be termed townships, but it is difficult to specify the forms these settlement units took in the period between 800 and 1100. Place-name evidence and later settlement distributions suggest that one key requirement for establishing an early Norse farm was proximity to a shoreline where boats could be landed.

Bioarchaeological and artifact evidence from excavated sites indicates that the Viking-period Norse of the Northern Isles relied on diverse sources of food, including domestic livestock, cereals, and wild foods, including fish, seals, seabirds and mollusks. Cattle and sheep were the most important mammals, but some pig bones have been found on all sites. In contrast with Viking Norway and Greenland, there is little evidence that goats were ever important in Northern Isles’ economies.

Both the grains and the quern stones used to process them have been recovered from Viking period sites, and they demonstrate that cereals were a key resource in both Orkney and Shetland. *Bere* (two-rowed barley—*Hordeum vulgare*) was the most important crop, as in later centuries. Barley is well suited to cultivation in the archipelagos because it is salt-tolerant, and much sea spray is deposited on the islands, especially in Shetland.

The role of marine fish in Viking and later medieval Orkney and Shetland economies is currently under intensive investigation. Some types of bioarchaeological evidence suggest that fish may have played an important role in Northern Isles economies of the Viking period. But given the limitations of the available evidence it is difficult to sort out the dietary contributions of all of the various categories

of marine foods, which also included sea mammals, birds, and mollusks. Also, the environmental contrasts between Orkney and Shetland suggest that the relative importance of marine and terrestrial resources may have differed between the two island groups. Much more archaeological research will be required before this complex issue is resolved, and in the meantime it is probably unwise to generalize about Orkney and Shetland as a single settlement region. Certainly, by the end of the medieval period, fishing for food and for trade was much more important in Shetland than it was in Orkney. In general, it is likely that as more sites are investigated, especially early settlements, Viking Orkney and Shetland will emerge as areas with distinct cultural patterns. These traits were probably fostered by ecological diversity and the lack of later integrating forces such as the medieval church, strong kingdoms, and large, structured market systems.

See also *Picts* (vol. 2, part 7); *Viking Settlements in Iceland and Greenland* (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Ballantyne, John H., and Brian Smith, eds. *Shetland Documents, 1195–1579*. Lerwick, U.K.: Shetland Islands Council and Shetland Times, 1999.
- Barrett, James H., Rebecca A. Nicholson, and Ruby Cerrón-Carrasco. "Archaeo-ichthyological Evidence for Long-term Socioeconomic Trends in Northern Scotland: 3500 B.C. to A.D. 1500." *Journal of Archaeological Science* 26 (April 1999): 353–388.
- Batey, Colleen E., and John Sheehan. "Viking Expansion and Cultural Blending in Britain and Ireland." In *Vikings: The North Atlantic Saga*. Edited by William W. Fitzhugh and Elizabeth I. Ward, pp. 127–141. Washington, D.C.: Smithsonian Institution Press, 2000.
- Bigelow, Gerald F. "Issues and Prospects in Shetland Norse Archaeology." In *Norse and Later Settlement and Subsistence in the North Atlantic*. Edited by Christopher D. Morris and D. James Rackham, pp. 9–32. Glasgow, Scotland: University of Glasgow, 1992.
- . "Sandwick, Unst, and Late Norse Shetland Economy." In *Shetland Archaeology: New Work in Shetland in the 1970s*. Edited by Brian Smith, pp. 95–127. Lerwick, U.K.: Shetland Times, 1985.
- Bond, Julie M. "Beyond the Fringe? Recognising Change and Adaptation in Pictish and Norse Orkney." In *Life on the Edge: Human Settlement and Marginality*. Edited by C. M. Mills and G. Coles, pp. 81–90. Oxford: Oxbow Books, 1998.
- Buteux, Simon. *Settlements at Skaill, Deerness, Orkney: Excavations by Peter Gelling of the Prehistoric, Pictish, Viking, and Later Periods, 1963–1981*. Oxford: Archaeopress, 1997.
- Crawford, Barbara E. *Scandinavian Scotland*. Leicester, U.K.: Leicester University Press, 1987.
- Fenton, Alexander, and Hermann Pálsson, eds. *The Northern and Western Isles in the Viking World: Survival, Continuity, and Change*. Edinburgh: John Donald Publishers, 1984.
- Graham-Campbell, James, and Colleen E. Batey. *Vikings in Scotland: An Archaeological Survey*. Edinburgh: Edinburgh University Press, 1998.
- Hamilton, John R. C. *Excavations at Jarlshof, Shetland*. Edinburgh: Her Majesty's Stationery Office, 1956.
- Hunter, John R. *Rescue Excavations on the Brough of Birsay, 1974–82*. Edinburgh: Society of Antiquaries of Scotland, 1986.
- Hunter, John R., Julie M. Bond, and Andrea N. Smith. "Some Aspects of Early Viking Settlement in Orkney." In *The Viking Age in Caithness, Orkney, and the North Atlantic: Select Papers from the Proceedings of the Eleventh Viking Congress, Thurso and Kirkwall, 22 August–1 September 1989*. Edited by Colleen E. Batey, Judith Jesch, and Christopher D. Morris, pp. 272–284. Edinburgh: Edinburgh University Press, 1993.
- Kaland, Sigrid H. H. "The Settlement of Westness, Rousay." In *The Viking Age in Caithness, Orkney, and the North Atlantic: Select Papers from the Proceedings of the Eleventh Viking Congress, Thurso and Kirkwall, 22 August–1 September 1989*. Edited by Colleen E. Batey, Judith Jesch, and Christopher D. Morris, pp. 308–317. Edinburgh: Edinburgh University Press, 1993.
- Magnusson, Magnus, and Hermann Pálsson, trans. *Njáls Saga*. London: Penguin, 1981.
- Nicholson, Rebecca A., and Stephen J. Dockrill, eds. *Old Scatness Broch, Shetland: Retrospect and Prospect*. Bradford, U.K.: Department of Archaeological Sciences, University of Bradford, 1998.
- Nicolaisen, W. F. H. *Scottish Place Names: Their Study and Significance*. London: Batsford, 1976.
- Owen, Olwyn, and Magnar Dalland. *Scar: A Viking Boat Burial on Sanday, Orkney*. East Lothian, U.K.: Tuckwell Press, 1999.
- Pálsson, Hermann, and Paul Edwards, trans. *Orkneyinga Saga: The History of the Earls of Orkney*. London: Penguin, 1981.
- Ritchie, Anna. *Viking Scotland*. London: Batsford, 1993.
- Sturluson, Snorri. *Heimskringla: The Olaf Sagas*. Vols. 1 and 2. Translated by Samuel Laing. New York: Dutton, 1964.
- Waugh, Doreen. "Place-name Evidence for Scandinavian Settlement in Shetland." *ROSC: Review of Scottish Culture* 7 (1991): 15–24.

GERALD F. BIGELOW



EARLY CHRISTIAN IRELAND

FOLLOWED BY FEATURE ESSAY ON:

Clonmacnoise 456

Along with all other periods of Irish archaeology, the Early Christian period has been the focus of a great expansion in the level of research since the early 1980s. One of the main trends in contemporary studies has been the increasing secularization of the archaeology related to this period. Increasingly, the academic community is realizing that the monasteries and other religious settlements did not dominate the early medieval Irish landscape, although undoubtedly they were an important component of that landscape. The use of the term “Early Christian” to describe this period is now increasingly being seen as overemphasizing the role of the ecclesiastical sites at the expense of the many other settlement types of the era that had no religious connection. As a result, archaeologists now tend to use the terms “Early Historic” or, increasingly, “Early Medieval” to describe this period.

Generally speaking, the period is thought by most scholars to begin in the fifth century A.D., soon after the coming of Christianity to the island. It ends in the twelfth century with the arrival of the Continental religious orders that broadly overlapped with the coming of the Anglo-Normans in 1169 and 1170. Although Ireland was not part of the Roman Empire, it was intimately involved in the empire’s trading connections with Roman Britain and beyond. Thus, it is difficult to be sure when ex-

actly the influence of the Roman Iron Age declines and the Early Medieval period, as such, commences. For instance, archaeologist Nancy Edwards has posed fundamental questions about the origins of this period of Irish history that debate the extent to which the impact of Roman culture and the introduction of literacy and the Christian religion initiated the changes that took place.

CHURCH ARCHAEOLOGY

The church in this period was primarily monastic, and the monastic sites that still survive as ruins in many parts of the island can be seen as a significant reminder of this important phase of Ireland’s past. Very little survives archaeologically of the earliest monasteries because their buildings were of wood or wattle-and-mud construction. But it can be argued that some of the small monastic communities established in the western fringes of the country, where stone has always been the principal building material, can give us a good idea of the original appearance of the early monasteries built elsewhere. These include the impressively sited, beehive-shaped dry-stone cells on the island of Skellig Michael, situated in the Atlantic 13 kilometers west of the Iveragh Peninsula in County Kerry. Others are found on the island of Inishmurray in County Sligo. The most famous monastic sites, such as Clonmac-

noise in County Offaly and Glendalough in County Wicklow also have the remains of many stone buildings within their monastic enclosures, including churches and round towers. These sites are covered extensively in the later ecclesiastical texts that have survived to the present. Indeed, most of the examples of stone architecture surviving from this period are ecclesiastical in origin, including Cormac's Chapel, built by King Cormac Mac Carthaig on top of the Rock of Cashel in County Tipperary. Dating to the first half of the twelfth century, it is universally considered the most beautiful surviving example of Irish Romanesque architecture. It was in the monasteries that some of the greatest schools of religious manuscript production were located. They produced the masterpieces of illumination, including the Book of Durrow (c. A.D. 650) and the Book of Kells (c. A.D. 800), both on display in Trinity College, Dublin.

It is also important to recognize that there are many other smaller enclosures in the landscape, delineated by either an earthen or stone bank, that originally might have had some kind of monastic function but which have only been identified by aerial photography or field survey. In other words, they do not possess any documentary sources that can positively identify them as such. There are also sites with place names that contain ecclesiastical elements such as "kill" but which, on further archaeological examination, have produced no evidence of ecclesiastical activity. Therefore, it is wise to follow Ann Hamlin's guidance in this by not considering any site ecclesiastical unless it includes clear evidence of a church and burials.

The whole question of urban settlement in this period is also under continuing discussion, especially the extent and nature of indigenous forms of urbanism. Increasingly, it is becoming accepted that some of the larger and more influential monasteries such as Armagh, the ecclesiastical capital of Ireland, were by the tenth and eleventh centuries exhibiting many of the characteristics of urban settlement. Such attributes, including streets and districts with extensive craft production, were largely the norm for the rest of continental Europe. Heather King has located important archaeological evidence of an urban secular settlement alongside the religious core of the monastery of Clonmacnoise, as well as

evidence of an extensive *vallum* that separated the settlement's monastic and secular communities.

RURAL SETTLEMENT

The most ubiquitous settlements during the Early Medieval period were the ringforts. It has been estimated that at least fifty thousand examples survived to be mapped by the Ordnance Survey in the middle of the nineteenth century. These are circular settlements, the design of which varied depending on where they were located. Those in the eastern half of the country had an earthen bank and an external dry fosse (ditch), or rath. Those in the western fringes had a perimeter bank built of dry stone and are therefore known as cashels. These settlements have an average diameter of 30 meters, although there are examples that are much larger and many that possess several lines of defensive banks. While the majority of the ringforts functioned as single-family defended farmsteads of the free element in Irish society, which was largely tribal at the time, with many small kingdoms, the larger ones may also have served as centers for particular tribal groups. Although less than two hundred sites have been excavated, the majority of them appear to have been constructed in the second half of the first millennium. It is thought that few ringforts were built after A.D. 1000, but some were still being utilized after the Norman conquest of Ireland that began in 1169. In addition to the archaeological evidence of this late habitation, there is also contemporary written evidence about the destruction of a particular site in Leinster by the Anglo-Normans as late as the end of the thirteenth century.

Despite the fact that surviving ringforts are so numerous, many aspects of their function and chronology still remain very much an enigma. The remains of circular houses have been discovered in two excavations, and they contained important evidence of some of the occupations and crafts that were carried out in these settlements. At Lisleagh 1 in County Cork, several circular structures were located that measured 5 to 7 meters in diameter. In one example, the buildings were arranged as a conjoined pair in a figure-eight plan. Environmental and artifactual evidence indicates that sheep farming, wool production, and the manufacture of bone combs were among the more important aspects of the economy at the Lisleagh site from the end of the

sixth century to the end of the eighth century. The other site with circular houses is located at the northern end of Ireland, at Deer Park Farms in County Antrim. There, a “raised” ringfort with a height of 6 meters was caused by a prolonged occupation of the site from the sixth to the tenth centuries. Altogether, twenty circular wooden structures, all between 5 and 8 meters in diameter, were found throughout the occupation levels of this important site. Among the five that could be identified as houses was an impressive double-walled house some 7 meters in diameter (similar to the Lisleagh houses) with evidence of a bedding area and internal screens surviving within it. In the bedding area, a small brooch stylistically dated to A.D. 800 was located. Souterrains or underground passages were usually made with dry stone walls and a roof, then covered by the earth that had been excavated in order to construct the original trench dug to construct the passage. In many cases the souterrains are found located either close to or actually within ringforts. There is one dendrochronological date from the timbers of a fairly untypical wooden example at the ringfort of Coolcrans, County Fermanagh, which produced a date in the early ninth century. Broadly dated to the first millennium, their original function is not fully clear. They may have provided cold storage for food or acted as refuges when a settlement came under attack.

The other major type of defended enclosure of this period is the crannog, an occupation site on an island situated in a lake, which is either natural or built on artificial foundations. Recent archaeological research has estimated that around two thousand examples were constructed in Ireland, but most are found concentrated in the “Drumlin Belt” in the northern half of the island and especially in the Lakeland area of the northwest. These crannogs are being studied as part of a Lake Settlement research project carried out by the Discovery Programme, an archaeological research company entirely funded by the Heritage Council. The origin of the crannogs is found in the prehistoric period, but they were both constructed and occupied throughout the medieval period and afterward. As with the ringfort, only a small number have been scientifically excavated, but all the evidence to date indicates that in the Early Medieval period they were defended homesteads occupied by the wealthier elements of society. Some

of them, such as Lagore in County Meath, were sites of royal status. At Moynagh Lough, in the same county, compelling evidence indicates that this crannog was an important center for ornamental metalwork production and other skilled crafts, as well as being a traditional farming unit.

There are also other settlement sites of generally a prehistoric provenance that have evidence of sustained occupation during the Early Medieval period. In particular, the promontory forts of Dalkey Island in County Dublin, Dunbeg in County Kerry, and Larrybane in County Antrim were all reinhabited, even if only as temporary refuges in the many uncertain times of this era. Finally, there undoubtedly were settlements either without enclosures or with very flimsy and partial enclosures that have been difficult to identify archaeologically. With the help of aerial photography and increasingly sophisticated remote sensing techniques some of these have been tentatively identified on the landscape. Indeed, some of the Early Medieval law tracts mention the existence of rural nucleated settlements occupied by the unfree members of Irish society (those people who were both economically and legally dependent on a particular lord). These may have consisted of a small cluster of farmhouses with associated outbuildings arranged without any formal organization or layout. Such settlements in upland areas may only have been occupied at particular times of the year, as part of a transhumant system of agriculture.

Archaeologists are also attempting to understand the complexities of past landscapes by viewing them as a whole, thereby getting away from the focus on individual sites that drove much previous research. Utilizing aerial photography and other prospecting techniques, some attempt has been made to examine the layout of fields and other associated enclosures that are thought to date to this period. Two such research projects are in the valley of the River Barrow in the southeast of the country and in the foreshore area of Strangford Lough in County Down.

ARTIFACTUAL EVIDENCE

As regards archaeological evidence, the Early Medieval period in Ireland was largely devoid of ceramic artifacts, as was true for much of contemporary western and northern Britain. One of the few excep-

tions to this are the surviving sherds of A, B, D, and E ware that were luxury imports from France and the Mediterranean. These date from the fifth to the eighth centuries A.D. The only indigenous pottery type, which was originally called *souterrain* ware because of its association with these structures, is now better known as early native ware or early historic ware. It is a coarse handmade pottery that has been mainly found on both ecclesiastical and secular sites in the northeast of the country, especially in the two counties of Antrim and Down. There is also some limited evidence of other native, coarse, grass-tempered wares at ecclesiastical sites such as Reask in County Kerry. It would seem, therefore, that wood was used as an alternative to ceramics in this period, as shown from the number of such finds from crannog excavations.

There are also many small, inscribed stone monuments surviving from this period, which are best described as artifacts in their own right. The earliest stone markers generally bear an ogham inscription on them (the oldest form of writing script in Ireland). They mainly date from the fourth to the seventh centuries A.D., are found mainly in the southwest of the country, and are often associated with *souterrains*. There are also grave slabs, which are found in most monastic sites, usually in the form of flat stones bearing an inscription for a prayer for a particular person along with an inscribed cross. They are generally dated to the end of the Early Medieval period, from the ninth to the twelfth centuries. Undoubtedly the most famous of these decorated stone monuments are the freestanding stone high crosses, the great majority of which are found in monastic sites (fig. 1). They are often elaborately carved, with biblical scenes on their main faces and abstract designs on their sides. There is some evidence that they were originally painted in vivid colors. Most of them are dated from the ninth and tenth centuries. Some of the most impressive examples, possibly still surviving in their original location, are found at Monasterboice in County Louth.

It is in this period that, arguably, many of the finest metalwork artifacts ever produced in Ireland were made. These were fashioned out of bronze, to which precious metals were added. Many of them were manufactured in royal sites such as Tara in County Meath (fig. 2) or in the great monasteries such as Clonmacnoise in County Offaly, on the



Fig. 1. Ninth-century Celtic high cross. © KEVIN SCHAFER/CORBIS. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

shores of the river Shannon. Some were made in ringforts, such as the beautiful and unique seventh-century gold “wren” brooch found at Garryduff in County Cork. Others were created on crannogs such as Moynagh Lough in County Meath. Until the seventh century many of these metalwork artifacts were still being broadly influenced by the earlier Celtic *La Tène* style. But from the middle of the seventh century, the increasing influence of continental-European and Anglo-Saxon styles introduced many new motifs and techniques. These can be seen in the Derrynaflan paten of the eighth century and the Tara brooch that was made c. 700. The metalwork of the following four centuries was influenced by the Vikings, with an increased use of silver, as is shown by the large numbers of pennanular (nearly circular) and kite-shaped brooches. In the period leading up to the Anglo-Norman invasion

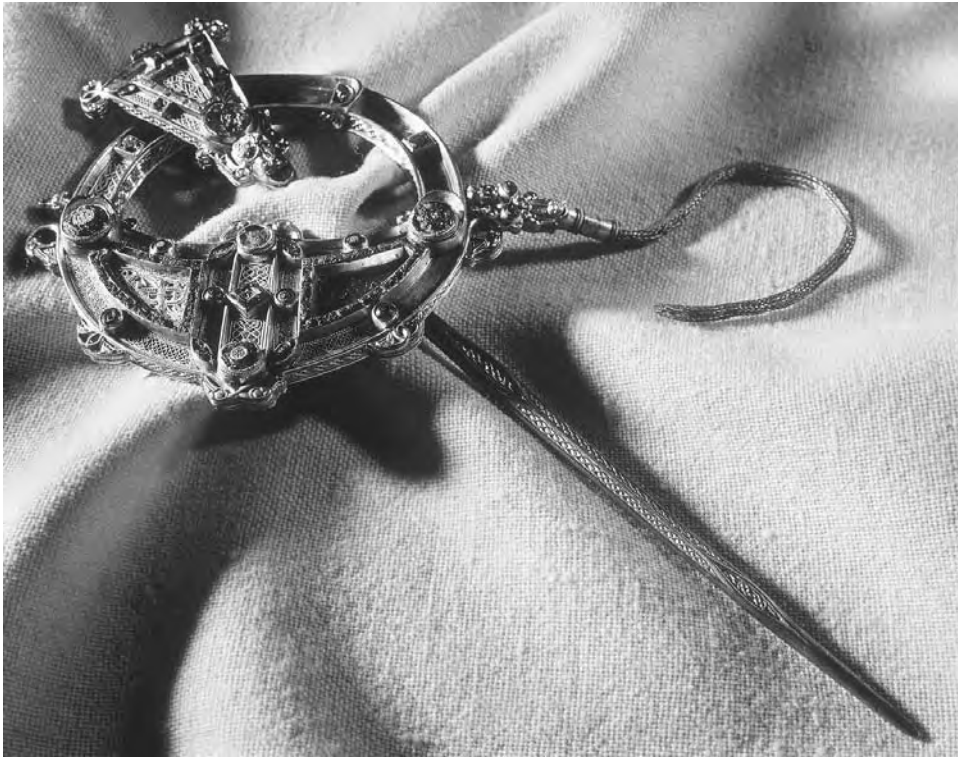


Fig. 2. The Tara brooch, which is said to come from the royal site of Tara, County Meath, Ireland, ninth century A.D. © ERICH LESSING/ART RESOURCE, NY. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

the construction and repair of many reliquaries took place, including the Cross of Cong.

The evidence for other industries of this period is less apparent, although considerable research has taken place on water-powered mills, both horizontally and vertically driven, and on their ponds and other associated features, which date from the seventh century onward. On the foreshore below Nendrum Monastery, on Mahee Island in Strangford Lough, County Down, there are the remains of three horizontal tidal mills. These were excavated in 1999 and 2000 and date to the seventh and eighth centuries. The mills are of great importance, being the earliest archaeologically dated examples of the use of tidal power in Europe. Other interesting research has targeted the woodworking expertise and woodland management of the time. The expertise of the Early Medieval Irish in wood construction is exemplified by the impressive wooden bridge excavated at Clonmacnoise. Once used to cross the River Shannon, the bridge measures 120 meters

long and 5 meters wide. Its structural oak timbers were dated by dendrochronology to A.D. 804.

THE VIKING AGE

The Early Medieval period underwent a profound change with the coming of the Vikings at the end of the eighth century. In the past their arrival has been used to explain the decay and decline of some aspects of the Irish church at that time. However, modern scholarship has tended to see some of these problems as being present within the church much before the advent of the Vikings. Although Viking raids undoubtedly harmed the more vulnerable monastic communities, attacks on monasteries were not solely confined to outsiders but were also carried out by the indigenous Irish. The other point to stress is that this phase lasted for less than fifty years, until the Vikings started spending winters in Ireland. This led to the construction of *longphorts*, or defended harbors, for their ships. Most of these defensive bases grew into Hiberno-Norse port towns,

which were mainly located on the east coast. Two such towns were Annagassan in County Louth, established in A.D. 841, and Dublin.

To the immediate west of Viking-Age Dublin, at present-day Islandbridge-Kilmainham, the largest Viking cemetery outside of Scandinavia was found in the 1840s, when railways were being constructed. The cemetery has been dated by surviving artifacts to the ninth century. Until recently this had caused scholars to debate whether the original *longphort*, built c. 841, was located closer to this cemetery and that the urban settlement of Dublin was established later, around 917, at its present location, farther east and closer to the mouth of the River Liffey. But more recent archaeological excavations have produced both radiocarbon dates and structures and artifacts that indicate a ninth-century settlement at Temple Bar, in the center of the existing city of Dublin. Excavations by Linzi Simpson have shown that Dublin was strongly influenced by Anglo-Saxon culture and society in Britain and was intimately involved in the sociopolitical developments of Danelaw, the northeastern region of England that was centered upon the Viking city of York.

The fusion of Irish and Viking cultures led to the development of an important Hiberno-Norse style that had an important influence on the art of the period, metalwork, in particular. The archaeological record of the Hiberno-Norse towns is very rich, especially as a result of sustained archaeological excavations in Dublin and Waterford. To a lesser extent, Limerick, the only example of a Hiberno-Norse town known on the west coast, has also yielded a rich array of artifacts. Both Dublin and Waterford in this period were laid out with streets lined by single-story mud-and-wattle rectangular houses. Each had a central hearth with fixed wooden benches on either side where the inhabitants slept. Larger dwelling houses were often accompanied by smaller storehouses constructed in the same manner. The many excavations have shown that these urban centers traded extensively with the rest of Viking-Age Europe, as evidenced by the remains of the workshops and their products.

In Dublin, archaeological evidence from the Wood Quay site on the southern quays of the city, excavated by Patrick Wallace in the late 1970s, shows that a stone wall was constructed around the

core of the nucleated settlement about 1100. This replaced a large earthen embankment with a wooden palisade on top, which encircled the town from the tenth century. Along the southern edge of the river, docking facilities and buildings were constructed as the river silted up, with nine successive waterfronts being identified archaeologically, dating from 900 to 1300. Subsequent changes in Dublin have been revealed by a large number of excavations both within and outside the medieval walls, many taking place as a result of the redevelopment of the historic core of the city.

Excavations within the stone walls of Waterford by Maurice Hurley have uncovered about 20 percent of the Viking and medieval occupation layers there and have been especially valuable in putting the finds from Hiberno-Norse Dublin into a much broader context. The range and quality of the Viking-Age finds from Dublin may arguably be more impressive than those of Waterford, but Waterford has the richer collection of architectural remains from the High Middle Ages. These include four sunken buildings from the late eleventh century and stone-lined entrance passages to two additional structures. This represents the greatest number of such finds so far located in any Irish urban center. Some limited archaeological evidence from Cork and Limerick has provided insight into the Hiberno-Norse histories of those cities. In Limerick, excavations on the southwestern portion of King's Island, at the lowest fording point across the River Shannon, have revealed occupation layers and signs of construction.

Although each of these Hiberno-Norse towns obviously had a rural hinterland supplying them with many of the commodities that were important to their trading functions, the archaeological evidence for Viking rural settlement is almost nonexistent in Ireland, as is also largely the case in Britain. There is, however, some place-name evidence both in the vicinity of Dublin and Waterford to suggest that the extent of Norse settlement inland from the ports has been largely understated. To reinforce this conclusion, evidence of rural settlement came to light in 2003 as a result of development-driven excavation in the "Dyflinarskí," the area of Hiberno-Norse rural settlement around Dublin.

CONCLUSION

In the twelfth century, ecclesiastical reform was sweeping medieval Europe, so it was hardly surprising that these changes also affected Ireland. The Irish church was finally organized into a hierarchical system of parishes, dioceses, and archdioceses. As a direct result of this reform, many of the monasteries that had been such a mainstay of the Irish church, and which had their origins in Irish society, gradually faded away. They were replaced by the houses of the great Continental orders, as well as by the great cathedrals and parish churches of the Anglo-Norman colony. Of course, this change did not happen immediately. Some Early Medieval monasteries survived the initial Anglo-Norman invasion only to decline as Anglo-Norman diocesan authority grew increasingly stronger in the thirteenth century. In the secular world, it is also important to realize that there were parts of Ireland, especially in the north and the west, that remained under the control of indigenous Gaelic Irish families such as the O'Conors and the O'Briens. In these areas the settlement pattern of the Early Medieval period probably survived and evolved for many years after the fateful year of A.D. 1169, when the Norman conquest of Ireland began.

See also *La Tène* (vol. 2, part 6); *Mills and Milling Technology* (vol. 2, part 7); *Clonmacnoise* (vol. 2, part 7); *Raths, Crannogs, and Cashels* (vol. 2, part 7); *Deer Park Farms* (vol. 2, part 7); *Viking Dublin* (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Aalen, F. H. A., Kevin Whelan, and Matthew Stout, eds. *Atlas of the Irish Rural Landscape*. Cork, Ireland: Cork University Press, 1997.
- Clinton, Mark. *The Souterrains of Ireland*. Bray, Ireland: Wordwell, 2001.
- Edwards, Nancy. *The Archaeology of Early Medieval Ireland*. London: Batsford, 1990.
- Fredengren, Christina. *Crannogs: A Study of People's Interaction with Lakes, with Particular Reference to Lough Gara in the North-west of Ireland*. Bray, Ireland: Wordwell, 2002.
- Harbison, Peter. *Irish High Crosses: With the Figure Sculptures Explained*. Illustrations by Hilary Gilmore. Drogheda, Ireland: Boyne Valley Honey Company, 1994.
- Hughes, Kathleen, and Hamlin, Ann. *The Modern Traveller to the Early Irish Church*. London: S. P. C. K., 1977.
- Hurley, Maurice. "Late Viking Age Settlement in Waterford City." In *Waterford History and Society*. Edited by William Nolan and Thomas P. Power, pp. 49–72. Dublin: Geography Publications, 1992.
- Kelly, Fergus. *Early Irish Farming: A Study Based Mainly on the Law-texts of the 7th and 8th Centuries A.D.* Early Irish Law Series, Vol. 4. Dublin: School of Celtic Studies, Dublin Institute for Advanced Studies, 1997.
- Monk, Michael A., and John Sheehan, eds. *Early Medieval Munster: Archaeology, History, and Society*. Cork, Ireland: Cork University Press, 1998.
- Ó Crónín, Dáibhí. *Early Medieval Ireland, 400–1200*. London: Longman, 1995.
- Ryan, Michael, ed. *Irish Archaeology Illustrated*. Dublin: Country House, 1994.
- Simpson, Linzi. "Forty Years A-digging: A Preliminary Synthesis of Archaeological Investigations in Medieval Dublin." In *Medieval Dublin I: Proceedings of the Friends of Medieval Dublin Symposium 1999*. Edited by Séan Duffy, pp. 11–68. Dublin: Four Courts Press, 2000.
- Stout, Matthew. *The Irish Ringfort*. Irish Settlement Studies No. 5. Dublin: Four Courts Press, 1997.
- Wallace, Patrick. "The Archaeological Identity of the Hiberno-Norse Town." *The Journal of the Royal Society of Antiquaries of Ireland* 122 (1992): 35–66.

TERRY BARRY

CLONMACNOISE

Saint Ciarán's monastery of Clonmacnoise (pronounced Klon-mack-noise), founded in the middle of the sixth century A.D., is situated on the east bank of the River Shannon at a point near the center of Ireland, where the Shannon meets the Slí Mhór (the great road) on the Eiscir Riada. The location of the monastery at this crossing point undoubtedly contributed to the fact that the monastery flourished over the following six centuries. It was, as Conleth Manning has described, not only a great monastic center but also a place of learning, trade, and craftsmanship. In the light of the accumulated results of excavations conducted since the late 1970s, one can now legitimately argue that Clonmacnoise was also an urban settlement.

Within the core of the monastic site, excavations took place on the sites of the three High Crosses, which were located to the north, south, and west of the cathedral. Evidence was found for



Fig. 1. Early medieval road at Clonmacnoise, Ireland. COURTESY OF HEATHER KING. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

occupation in this area prior to A.D. 700, followed by a change of use to burial in subsequent centuries. It would appear that on completion of a new cathedral in A.D. 909 King Flann Sinna Mac Maelsechnaill reordered the area to the west of the cathedral by removing older wooden monuments and replacing them with the carved stone crosses.

Two excavations were carried out to the southwest of the monastic site. The first was located about 150 meters from the modern enclosing wall of the old burial ground. It was conducted after the discovery of a hoard of Hiberno-Norse coins beneath the football field of the local national school. The second excavation occurred when the school was enlarged. Although both sites were thought to be within the medieval monastic enclosure, there was no evidence for prolonged activity. The reason for the lack of settlement evidence was explained in 1999, when the enclosing early medieval ditch was located within 100 meters of the monastic site and about 50 meters from the earlier excavations.

Excavations on the site of the new visitor center, immediately west of the monastic core, produced evidence for four phases of early medieval activity. Paths, circular structures, a kiln, and evidence of ironworking were uncovered. Subsequent monitoring of trenches dug for utilities in the adjacent area revealed a continuation of this settlement evidence. Recent excavation on the sloping ground above the Shannon to the north of the visitor center has shown that an extensive area was utilized exclusively for early medieval ironworking. Closer to the Shannon, further settlement features were located. This excavation confirmed the results of geophysical prospecting (the use of noninvasive techniques to identify features below the surface) carried out in the late 1990s.

Dive survey and excavation in the Shannon to the north of the Norman castle revealed substantial remains of a wooden bridge dating to c. A.D. 804, together with eleven dugout canoes and various metalwork finds. Excavations in the northwest corner of the New Graveyard revealed four main phases

of activity. The uppermost strata were of the late eleventh century and the twelfth century, characterized by flagged and cobbled areas, pits, well shafts and postholes, below which was the main occupation phase, dating to the ninth and tenth century. The main feature of this period is a metaled road or street more than 18.5 meters in length and about 3 meters in width (fig. 1) running southward from the low-lying callows adjacent to the Shannon toward the core of the monastic site. On either side of the road there was evidence for round houses about 7 meters in diameter, subrectangular structures, corn-drying kilns, hearths for cooking and metalworking, a possible boat slip, a quay, and a number of other features. There is also an earlier phase dating to the seventh and eighth century consisting mainly of stake holes, spreads of burnt soils and charcoal. Monitoring of new graves indicates that settlement extended throughout the area now occupied by the New Graveyard.

Over six thousand objects have been found, and evidence survives for the working of iron, bone, bronze, lignite, glass, silver, and gold. A knife handle with an ogham inscription suggests literacy among the bone workers. Coins dating to the Hiberno-Norse period, together with imported pottery, indicate trade. The quantity of animal bone retrieved from the site has indicated that Clonmacnoise was provisioned in a manner similar to urban centers in Britain and Ireland.

The criteria by which one identifies a town has been the subject of much discussion by archaeologists, but the suggestion put forward here is to use J. Bradley's definitions of a medieval town and a monastic town. In relation to the latter, Bradley noted that "the monastic town is an enclosed settlement, typified by having a major group of ecclesiastical buildings." Because *The Annals of Clonmacnoise* records that Ciaran was buried in the Eaglias Beag (the little church), one can deduce that within seven months of the foundation of the monastery there may have been two churches on the site. An enclosing boundary is recorded in the closing years of the sixth century. Pilgrimage began as early as the seventh century, and pilgrims and guests were lodged in a guesthouse. The Church of Saint Finghin, the Nun's Church, and the Round Tower are mentioned in the eleventh and twelfth centuries. As a center of commerce, Clonmacnoise hosted one

of the great fairs of Ireland. Paved roads were being constructed in the eleventh century, and the extent of the "town" of Clonmacnoise is evident in the twelfth and thirteenth centuries, when 47 houses were burned near the abbot's lodging and 105 houses burned in the "town."

While similar historical facts can be paralleled at some of the other great early Irish monasteries, such as Kells, Armagh, or Durrow, it is only at Clonmacnoise that fairly extensive archaeological excavation has provided the material evidence necessary to fulfill the remaining criteria for a town. This includes proof of settlement complexity, specialized areas for craft working, habitation and burial in defined areas, streets, trade, and enclosure. All of these features date from the A.D. 600s to the late twelfth century.

The documentary evidence for a town at Clonmacnoise is largely concentrated on the eleventh and twelfth centuries, but evidence from the excavations points to a much earlier urban settlement. This affirms an account possibly written in the eighth century that "a shining and saintly city grew up in that place in honour of Saint Ciaran, and the name of the city was Clonmacnois."

See also *Early Christian Ireland* (vol. 2, part 7); *Viking Dublin* (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Bennet, Isabel, ed. *Excavations 1998: Summary Accounts of Archaeological Excavations in Ireland*. Bray, Ireland: Wordwell, 2000.
- . *Excavations 1997: Summary Accounts of Archaeological Excavations in Ireland*. Bray, Ireland: Wordwell, 1998.
- . *Excavations 1996: Summary Accounts of Archaeological Excavations in Ireland*. Bray, Ireland: Wordwell, 1997.
- . *Excavations 1995: Summary Accounts of Archaeological Excavations in Ireland*. Bray, Ireland: Wordwell, 1996.
- . *Excavations 1994: Summary Accounts of Archaeological Excavations in Ireland*. Bray, Ireland: Wordwell, 1995.
- . *Excavations 1993: Summary Accounts of Archaeological Excavations in Ireland*. Bray, Ireland: Wordwell, 1994.
- . *Excavations 1992: Summary Accounts of Archaeological Excavations in Ireland*. Bray, Ireland: Wordwell, 1993.

- . *Excavations 1991: Summary Accounts of Archaeological Excavations in Ireland*. Bray, Ireland: Wordwell, 1992.
- . *Excavations 1990: Summary Accounts of Archaeological Excavations in Ireland*. Bray, Ireland: Wordwell, 1991.
- Bradley, J. “The Monastic Town of Clonmacnoise.” In *Clonmacnoise Studies*. Vol. 1, *Seminar Papers 1994*. Edited by Heather A. King, pp. 42–56. Dublin: Dúchas, Heritage Service, 1998.
- Kehnel, Annette. *Clonmacnois, the Church and Lands of St. Ciarán: Change and Continuity in an Irish Monastic Foundation (6th to 16th Century)*. Vita regularis. Ordnungen und Deutungen religiösen Lebens im Mittelalter. Band 8. Münster, Germany: LIT, 1997.
- King, Heather A., ed. *Clonmacnoise Studies*. Vol. 3, *Seminar Papers 1998*. Bray, Ireland: Wordwell, in press.
- , ed. *Clonmacnoise Studies*. Vol. 1, *Seminar Papers 1994*. Dublin: Dúchas, Heritage Service, 1998.
- Manning, Conleth. *Clonmacnoise*. Dublin: Stationery Office, 1994.
- Murphy, Denis, ed. *The Annals of Clonmacnoise: Being Annals of Ireland from the Earliest Period to A.D. 1408*. Translated by Conell Mageoghagan. Dublin: Royal Society of Antiquaries of Ireland, 1896.
- Soderburg, John. “Feeding Communities: Monasteries and Urban Development in Early Medieval Ireland.” In *Shaping Community: The Art and Archaeology of Monasticism. Papers from a Symposium Held at the Frederick R. Weisman Museum, University of Minnesota, March 10–12, 2000*. Edited by Sheila McNally, pp. 67–77. Oxford: Archaeopress, 2001.

HEATHER A. KING



RATHS, CRANNOGS, AND CASHELS

FOLLOWED BY FEATURE ESSAY ON:

Deer Park Farms 462

Raths, crannogs, and cashels are the primary settlement types during the early medieval period in Ireland (c. A.D. 400–800) and also occur in Irish-influenced areas of Scotland and Wales. Until the establishment of Viking cities in the ninth century A.D., Irish society was entirely rural in character with individual farmsteads as the predominant feature of the settlement pattern. The Irish economy was based on mixed farming with cattle as the basis of wealth. This set of circumstances encouraged a dispersed settlement pattern, with each farmstead separated by extensive fields and grazing lands. Although these settlements are considered the classic sites of the early medieval period, the construction of crannogs may have begun in the Late Bronze Age (c. 1200–700 B.C.), and these settlements certainly continued in use through the Viking and Hiberno-Norse periods (c. A.D. 800–1200) and in some areas as late as the sixteenth century.

Raths and cashels together are referred to as ringforts, and they are easily the most common type of early medieval archaeological site. Ringforts were most likely the homes of the majority of the population during the medieval period, and in excess of forty thousand ringforts have been identified in Ireland. Similar in form, both raths and cashels are circular areas surrounded by a bank of earth or stone. Raths are ringforts that have earthen banks and are

often surrounded by a shallow ditch. Cashels are stone-built ringforts and usually occur in areas with poorer soil and a natural abundance of stone. Some ringforts have a combination of earthen and stone walls, although these are uncommon.

Ringforts vary widely in size and may also have more than one set of encircling walls. While the largest may have a diameter in excess of 75 meters, the majority are about 25 to 30 meters in diameter. Cashels, however, are on average somewhat smaller. About 20 percent of ringforts are enclosed by multiple banks; these are referred to as multivallate ringforts and were most likely the farmsteads of wealthy or high-status individuals. Regardless of the number of embankments, multivallate ringforts have internal diameters that are not appreciably larger than most single-banked examples and served much the same role.

Ringforts generally functioned as the farmsteads of single families. Excavations have revealed that most contain only a small number of structures, typically a stone or wattle house with a handful of outbuildings. These would have served as the economic center of the farm, and excavations often highlight the self-sufficiency of ringforts as economic units. Raths and cashels would have comprised the home of the inhabitants, enclosures for the

farm's animals, a storage place for grain, and workshops for common crafts, such as ironworking. Excavations of higher-status ringforts often reveal a greater range of crafts produced, including the manufacture of objects made of bronze and precious metals. However, the essential function of high- and low-status ringforts varied little.

The actual defensive capabilities of ringforts is debated, with some archaeologists viewing the walls simply as a way to keep animals in the farmyard and having no defensive use, while others have argued for palisaded or hedge-lined embankments with some sort of defensive character. The most defensive element of ringforts, however, was perhaps not in their physical layout but in their distribution across the countryside. Studies have shown that ringforts regularly occur in semiclustered groups. Although quite separated in distance, each ringfort would have been within sight of another, and these clusters often have a larger and presumably more defensive multivallate ringfort within close proximity. This would have created an interlocking community that used the view across the landscape as a type of defense and that would have given the inhabitants time to flee to more defensive positions in the larger ringforts or in the surrounding mountains and bog lands.

Crannogs are artificial islands built in lakes and rivers that are located primarily in the northern and western parts of Ireland. While not as numerous as ringforts (about two thousand Irish crannogs have been identified), these sites are the second most common type of early medieval settlement and have played a central role in understanding the period. They are considered a predominantly early medieval class of settlement, although research in the 2000s has extended the chronology of crannog construction back into the Late Bronze Age and perhaps earlier. The nature of crannog use may have been much different prior to c. A.D. 400, with crannogs perhaps serving a predominantly ritual use in earlier periods or as seasonal dwellings only. Evidence for their use in the Iron Age (c. 700 B.C.–A.D. 400) is very scarce, and it is during the early medieval period that crannogs developed as settlements. Most crannogs are built up on lake and river beds with stones and debris until they emerge from the water, and some have stone causeways built connecting the crannog to the shore. These artificial islands were then sur-

rounded with wooden palisades, and houses and other outbuildings were located inside. Crannogs vary greatly in size and shape but are most commonly oval or round in plan and about 20 meters in diameter.

Unlike ringforts, crannogs were probably not directly related to the farming economy, as their location in the water would make access to fields and animals quite difficult. However, large amounts of animal bones are often found on excavated crannogs, and this is commonly interpreted as evidence of feasting by the occupants. This supports the belief that crannogs were the bases of powerful lords, and some crannogs have been identified by historical documents as royal centers. Excavations of these high-status and royal crannogs have revealed extensive evidence of metalworking, the large-scale manufacture of brooches and other high-status personal objects, and impressive collections of imported goods, such as Continental and Mediterranean pottery. Despite the large amounts of archaeological material commonly found on crannogs, most seem to have no more than one or two small houses and were probably inhabited by a family group. Excavations have traditionally focused on these higher-status sites, but research since the late 1990s has revealed that there are also less-wealthy crannogs. Their role in the early medieval settlement pattern is, however, less well understood.

See also Celts (vol. 2, part 6); Early Christian Ireland (vol. 2, part 7); Dark Age/Early Medieval Scotland (vol. 2, part 7); Early Medieval Wales (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Edwards, Nancy. *The Archaeology of Early Medieval Ireland*. London: Routledge, 1990.
- Fredengren, Christina. *Crannogs: A Study of People's Interaction with Lakes, with Particular Reference to Lough Gara in the North-west of Ireland*. Bray, Ireland: Wordwell, 2002.
- O'Sullivan, Aidan. *The Archaeology of Lake Settlement in Ireland*. Discovery Programme Monograph, no. 4. Dublin: Royal Irish Academy, 1998.
- Stout, Matthew. *The Irish Ringfort*. Dublin: Four Courts Press, 1997.

JAMES W. BOYLE

DEER PARK FARMS

Late in 1984 a rath mound in Deer Park Farms townland in Glenarm, County Antrim, was threatened with destruction in the course of farm improvements. It proved impossible to preserve the monument by negotiation, so four summer seasons of rescue excavations were carried out by the Department of the Environment (Northern Ireland). These revealed a remarkable sequence of well-preserved houses and associated finds. The rath stood at a height of 150 meters above sea level in a north-sloping field overlooking the Glenarm River. The monument was a large flat-topped mound, 26 meters in diameter across the summit and 4.5 meters high. The base of the mound was about 50 meters in diameter and was encircled by a ditch, very wide and deep on the uphill side. Occupation layers were visible at various heights in the mound's sides, showing that it had built up in stages over a period of time.

The surface on which the rath was built revealed several prehistoric features, probably dating from the Bronze Age or earlier. The first feature of the early Christian period was a circular ring ditch, with an overall diameter of 25 meters and an east-facing entrance gap. The ditch was about 2 meters wide and 1 meter deep. It was not accompanied by a bank and may have served to delimit and help drain the site chosen for settlement in the early Christian period, probably in the mid-seventh century. The ditch had silted up or had been deliberately filled in before the rath was built over it.

Before the end of the seventh century the first rath bank was constructed approximately over the site of the primary ring ditch. The external ditch that went with the bank was cut away by subsequent enlargement to obtain material for heightening the rath. Probably at the same time as the first rath bank was built, the first of a long sequence of woven hazel buildings was erected in the enclosure.

After a lengthy period of occupation, perhaps fifty years, the rath was converted into a flat-topped mound and a sloping access ramp of clay and gravel was built over the original east-facing entrance. The outer surface of the mound was encased in a heavy revetment wall of basalt boulders and the ditch was deepened. This main phase of mound heightening

was accomplished in several stages. The houses in the final stage of the rath were not abandoned and replaced all at once, as had been presumed on the basis of trial excavations at other rath mounds. Instead, each house was abandoned and its remains covered over only when it reached the end of its useful life. As a result, some new houses stood on isolated platforms overlooking other inhabited houses not yet replaced. Two souterrains were incorporated in a further heightening of the rath, probably by the end of the tenth century.

The hillside site sloped to the north, but the rath entrance faced east, with the result that there was persistent ponding of water against the inner face of the clay bank on the downslope, north side. This resulted in the preservation of an accumulation of organic midden material in this area up to 1.5 meters deep. The heightening of the rath caused a rise in the water table in the mound, which preserved the wickerwork remains of the buried houses in the final phase of the primary, unheightened rath. This well-preserved horizon, dating from the early eighth century, is characteristic of the occupation surfaces of the entire rath.

The most obvious feature of the rath in the early eighth century is, paradoxically, untypical. The entrance, instead of being a simple gap, was inturned. Two parallel banks of earth ran for 6.5 meters into the rath interior. They were stone-revetted on the inner faces and formed a long, stone-paved rectangular antechamber inside the gate some 11 meters by 3.8 meters. A further meter inward from the end of the antechamber was the doorway of the largest house, which stood at the center of the rath. This was of figure-eight plan and the larger component, the main house, was 7.4 meters in diameter. It had a central, stone-curbed, rectangular fireplace, also aligned on the easterly axis of the rath layout. The structure, like all the others found in the rath, was double-walled. The inner wall bore the main weight of the structure, whereas the outer wall, spaced 30 centimeters away, mainly served to retain insulating material—grass, straw, weeds and bracken—in place against the inner wall. The smaller “backhouse,” which could be entered only from within the main dwelling, was 5 meters in diameter. Its woven walls interlocked with those of the main house showing that the two elements of this figure-eight-shaped house had been built simultaneously. This figure-



Fig. 1. Wickerwork structures zeta (left) and X (right), early eighth century. The structures were woven together as a conjoined figure-of-eight unit with zeta as the backhouse, which could be entered only from X. The communicating gap was closed by a woven hurdle as zeta was abandoned before X. To the left, in zeta, is a collapsed section of its inner wall, almost reaching the central fireplace. At the bottom right are branches forming the base of a bedding area in the south side of structure X. This composite structure at the center of the rath was clearly the most important in this phase, with smaller dwellings set behind to north and south. © CROWN COPYRIGHT. COURTESY OF CHRIS LYNN, ENVIRONMENT AND HERITAGE SERVICE. REPRODUCED WITH THE PERMISSION OF THE CONTROLLER OF HER MAJESTY'S STATIONERY OFFICE.

eight plan was the normal layout for the main dwelling at the center of the rath in other phases.

The walls were woven using a basketry technique, giving an enormously strong structure. The horizontal component of the wall was woven in spiraling sets of 2-meter-long hazel rods twisted around short uprights, giving the courses of the wall a spiralling rope-like appearance. The surfaces of both inner and outer walls were smooth, because the cut ends of the hazel rods were hidden in the space between the walls. The uprights of the wall were composite: they did not run continuously through the full height of the structure. The first set of pointed uprights was driven into the ground about 25 centimeters apart and rose to a height of about 1 meter. When wall weaving reached this height, the next set of uprights was hammered into

the body of the woven wall alongside the primary uprights. These protruded up for a further meter, wall weaving continued to that height, a further set of uprights was hammered in, and so on. In one area a large panel of pushed-over walling was found, which would have stood to nearly 4 meters in height, showing that the roof was probably constructed in a similar technique to the walls and not as a separate cone of long rafters.

The central house had two bedding areas, one on the north and one on the south, formed of thin branches and twigs alternately laid radially and concentrically against the house walls. These were filled with finer chopped vegetable material. The ends of the bed on the north were protected by wicker screens fixed into drilled holes in oak beams on the floor, forming bed ends. Two stone-curbed paths

ran north and south on either side of the entrance to the main house and curved to the west to provide formal access to two other dwellings. The one on the south was a simple single circular house or hut with a central fireplace and a bedding area on the north. The structure on the north was another figure-eight, but smaller than the central one. The western component of this structure at first stood as an isolated single house, but after some time the larger, eastern component was woven onto the front of it. This may reflect a change in the social status of the occupant of the single home, for example maturity and marriage. The complete doorframe of the primary component of the figure-eight was preserved. This was the outside doorframe of the original single house, which then became the connecting door between the conjoined houses. The isolated house on the south may have been occupied by a single or widowed relative of the occupant of the main central house.

One of the most interesting aspects of the excavation is the close correlation between the archaeological evidence from the site and the details of houses, furniture, fittings, and personal equipment and tools given in the contemporary law tracts on status. These specify the equipment and buildings appropriate to hierarchial grades of free farmers who lived in raths. Hitherto, these legal inventories have been considered by archaeologists as somewhat idealized and not a true representation of reality. The occupants of the rath at this phase possessed many artifacts and craft-techniques listed in the law tracts as appropriate to what would now be termed upper-middle-class farmers. They used a coppicing method to grow hazel for their houses and fences, they wore composite leather shoes, they ate a variety of animal products (cow, sheep, pig), and they had access to a water mill for grinding cereals. The wooden hub and two paddles of a mill wheel were found in the waterlogged midden. The rath occupants wore woolen clothes; they plowed the land (as evidenced by two iron plough tips); they made their own stave-built wooden vessels, probably using light from iron candle and rush-light holders also found in the excavation. They had metal cooking pots and hooks for hanging meat, they cultivated woad for dyeing, and they decorated themselves from an extensive range of metal pins and colored glass beads. More personally, evidence suggests that

they and their settlement were occupied by more than sixty species of parasitic and decomposer insect species, in proportions normally regarded as typical of more densely occupied urban sites, such as Viking Age York. From the number of head-lice remains found immediately outside the main central structure, one can picture the family sitting on the end wall of the entranceway combing and grooming one another. Perhaps hair cutting went on at the same time as five locks of cut human hair were found in different levels of the midden nearby.

The deposits in the lower levels of the Deer Park Farms rath were uniquely well preserved, permitting close contact with the life of the people who lived there. In the context of this encyclopedia one is tempted to ask, were these people “barbarians”? What share of their material, cultural inheritance came from a prehistoric insular past and what had been adopted from the Roman world? The round wickerwork houses have not been found in earlier contexts in Ireland, but little is known about houses and settlement in Ireland in the preceding Iron Age. Bronze Age houses, although also of round form, seem to have been made of heavier materials such as stone, clay, and timber. Nevertheless, the round house was essentially a prehistoric form which, uniquely in Europe, survived in Ireland into the historic period. Circular earthworks are known from prehistory but these generally occur in ceremonial or funerary contexts. In turn, this suggests that if there is some continuity with prehistory, the rath enclosures may have had a sacred or legal significance, identifying the special importance of the home place. This could include its significance as the primary domain of women, where household and lighter agricultural crafts were carried out.

Some of the smaller items of equipment found in Deer Park Farms and other raths, such as brooches and iron tools, are of forms that can be paralleled earlier in Roman Britain. Similarly, small enclosed settlements were built in western Britain during the Iron Age and Roman period and some researchers interpret these as being ancestral to Irish raths. The clear view from Deer Park Farms of Slemish, 8 kilometers to the southwest, suggests that the occupants of the rath adhered to the Christian faith of the late Roman Empire, introduced to Ireland by St. Patrick and his contemporaries in the fifth century. Slemish is the prominent hill where St. Patrick

is said to have labored as a swineherd some 250 years before the Deer Park Farms rath was built. A small hone, found in the midden layer of the rath, had engraved on it an animal head in the style of the well-known Tara Brooch (from Bettystown, County Meath). Underneath the head is a scratched inscription of seven letters, the earliest archaeological evidence for an awareness of writing in a domestic site in Ireland.

See also **Early Christian Ireland** (*vol. 2, part 7*); **Raths, Crannogs, and Cashels** (*vol. 2, part 7*); **Viking York** (*vol. 2, part 7*).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Kelly, Fergus. *Early Irish Farming*. Early Irish Law Series, no. 4. Dublin: School of Celtic Studies, Dublin Institute for Advanced Studies, 1997.
- Lynn, Chris J., and Jacki A. McDowell. A monograph report by Lynn and McDowell on the Deer Park Farms excavation is at an advanced stage of preparation. Some draft chapters may be consulted on the Internet at <http://www.ehsni.gov.uk/built/monuments>.
- Mytum, Harold. *The Origins of Early Christian Ireland*. London: Routledge, 1992.
- Stout, Matthew. *The Irish Ringfort*. Dublin: Four Courts Press, 1997.

C. J. LYNN



VIKING DUBLIN

Forty years of archaeological excavation in Dublin, much of it under the aegis of the National Museum of Ireland, has shed considerable light on the character of this the largest of the Scandinavian-founded urban settlements in the west. Although unconcerted as elements of an overall program and begun in response to building development, in their sum these excavations add up to the most extensive of their time and type undertaken in Europe north of the Alps and west of the Oder. The scale of the total excavated areas together with the waterlogged airless conditions in which as much as 3 meters deep of organic cultural deposits survive means that there is excellent evidence for buildings, town layout, defenses, environment, diet, trade, commerce, and everyday life especially for the three centuries A.D. 850–1150. There are also well-preserved wooden dockside revetments and building and carpentry evidence from the thirteenth to the sixteenth centuries.

Ireland is blessed with rich historical sources including references to the establishment of Dublin in about 840, but it was not until the 1960s at sites like High Street, Winetavern Street, and especially Christchurch Place, all of which were excavated by A. B. ó Ríordáin, that the quality of Dublin's uniquely rich archaeological deposits became apparent. More extensive work by Patrick Wallace on the large Fishamble Street–Wood Quay site from 1962 to 1976 expanded on ó Ríordáin's work, particularly in regard to layout, the succession of town plots and their boundaries, building evidence, and the town's Viking Age port. Work by Clare Walsh at

Ross Road in 1993 gave additional information on the circuit of the earthen defenses that enclosed the early town; the Castle Street and Werburgh Street sites showed that while it was possible to generalize about buildings and town layout, there are variations within the town; and Parliament Street and especially Linzi Simpson's work at Essex Street showed that the earliest settlement in the ninth century must have been at the confluence of the tidal Liffey and its southern tributary, the Poddle. It also showed that the settlement probably expanded southward up the hill from the waterfront and, later, that the early medieval town expanded from east to west. Most significantly, work done from 1996 to 1998 indicates that the main building type, with its tripartite floor space arranged longitudinally between doors in the end walls, was established almost from the beginning and persisted throughout the period up to the twelfth century and possibly beyond (going by the evidence from the parallel Hiberno-Norse town of Wexford) and that the settlement was divided into plots or yards well before 900.

Although Ireland's great monastic "towns" flourished from before the arrival of the Vikings and, with other native settlements of this culturally extraordinary phase of Ireland's history, had some urban traits, it is likely that the *concept* of mainstream urbanism was introduced to Ireland possibly from ninth-century England, with the Scandinavians acting as the catalysts who transferred the idea. Excavations at the other Hiberno-Norse towns—Limerick, Waterford, and Wexford—show that they

share many physical traits with Dublin and that it is now possible to speak of the Hiberno-Norse town as a phenomenon in archaeology as well as in history. Revisits to the historical sources as well as excavations at Cork in 2002 and the great monastery at Clonmacnoise in the 1990s show that by the late eleventh–early twelfth century the concept of true urbanism was fully a part of the overall Irish experience.

In its developed form in the later tenth century, Dublin consisted of a number of streets from which radiated several lanes including an intramural variant. The settlement was located around high ground overlooking the tidal and estuarine Liffey near its confluence with the Poddle. In the early tenth century it was defended by a palisaded earthen embankment that encircled the settlement and accommodated ships along its main riverine side. The extent of the defenses on the West is at present unclear. Inside, the settlement was divided into plots of roughly rectangular shape by low lines of post-and-wattle fencing; each plot had its own pathway leading from a street or lane to the entrance of a main building that was located with an end toward the street. At the backs of these main buildings were lesser smaller buildings. It is presumed that plot owners controlled access to the plots, with access to the lesser buildings being difficult: in most cases visitors would have had to walk through the main buildings, which usually straddled the widths of their plots. Cattle were not kept in the plots; it appears that they were not kept in town at all but rather were driven to town in great numbers when it was time for slaughter, judging from the number of bones that have been recovered from the excavations.

Specialized crafts including those of nonferrous metalworking, antler (especially comb) working, woodcarving, and possibly merchandising appear to have been concentrated in different parts of the town. Commerce was regulated, to judge from the hundreds of lead weights (for weighing silver in a bullion economy) that have been recovered; these conform to multiples and fractions of what has been termed a Dublin ounce of 26.6 grams. Ships' timbers, unworked amber, lignite, soapstone, and even walrus ivory testify to the import of bulk commodities; silks (including head scarves), braids, worsteds, English brooches, and coins are among finished

products that were imported. Discoveries of runic inscriptions on discarded red-deer antlers and cattle bones show a persistence of close Scandinavian influence two centuries after the initial establishment of the town as a slaving emporium.

In its settled eleventh-century development, Dublin became very rich due to its location on the east of the Irish Sea, then a "Viking lake": it profited from provisioning ships, from the hire of its large mercenary fleet (most notably to the Saxons of the Godwinson dynasty), and from the export of woollens and of manufactured goods like kite brooches, ringed pins, strap ends, combs, and possibly ornaments carved in the local variety of the international Ringerike style, which was so distinctive and prolific that it is now called the "Dublin style."

See also Viking Ships (vol. 2, part 7); Early Christian Ireland (vol. 2, part 7); Early Medieval Wales (vol. 2, part 7); Viking York (vol. 2, part 1).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Clarke, Howard B. *Irish Historic Towns Atlas No. 11: Dublin, Part 1, to 1610*. Dublin: Royal Irish Academy, 2002.
- . "The Bloodied Eagle: The Vikings and the Development of Dublin, 841–1014." *Irish Sword* 18 (1991): 91–119.
- Fanning, Thomas. *Viking Age Ringed Pins from Dublin*. Medieval Dublin Excavations 1962–1981, series B, vol. 4. Dublin: Royal Irish Academy, 1994.
- Hurley, M. F., and S. J. McCutcheon. *Late Viking Age and Medieval Waterford Excavations 1986–1992*. Waterford, Ireland: Waterford Corporation, 1997.
- Lang, James T. *Viking Age Decorated Wood: A Study of Its Ornament and Style*. Medieval Dublin Excavations 1962–1981, series B, vol. 1. Dublin: Royal Irish Academy, 1988.
- McGrail, Seán. *Medieval Boat and Ship Timbers from Dublin*. Medieval Dublin Excavations 1962–1981, series B, vol. 1. Dublin: Royal Irish Academy, 1993.
- O'Rahilly, C. "Medieval Limerick: The Growth of Two Towns." In *Irish Cities*. Edited by Howard B. Clarke, pp. 163–176. Cork, Ireland: Mercier Press, 1995.
- Simpson, Linzi. *Director's Findings: Temple Bar West*. Dublin: Margaret Gowen, 2000.
- Wallace, Patrick F. "Garrda and Airbeada: The Plot Thickens in Viking Dublin." In *Seanchas: Essays in Early and Medieval Irish Archaeology, History, and Literature in Honour of F. J. Byrne*. Edited by Alfred P. Smyth. Dublin: Four Courts Press, 2000.

- . “The Archaeological Identity of the Hiberno-Norse Town.” *Journal of the Royal Society of Antiquaries of Ireland* 122 (1992): 35–66.
- . *The Viking Age Buildings of Dublin*. Medieval Dublin Excavations 1962–1981, series A, vol. 1, 2 parts. Dublin: National Museum of Ireland, 1992.
- . “The Economy and Commerce of Viking Age Dublin.” In *Untersuchungen zu Handel und Verkehr der vor- und frühgeschichtlichen Zeit in Mittel- und Nordeuropa*. Vol. 4, *Der Handel der Karolinger- und Wikingerzeit*. Edited by K. Düwel et al., pp. 200–245. Göttingen, Germany: Vandenhoeck and Ruprecht, 1987.
- . “The Archaeology of Anglo-Norman Dublin.” In *The Comparative History of Urban Origins in Non-Roman Europe*. Vol. 2. Edited by Howard B. Clarke and Anngret Simms, pp. 379–410. BAR International Series, no. 255. Oxford: British Archaeological Reports, 1985.
- . “The Archaeology of Viking Dublin.” In *The Comparative History of Urban Origins in Non-Roman Europe*. Vol. 1. Edited by Howard B. Clarke and Anngret Simms, pp. 103–145. BAR International Series, no. 255. Oxford: British Archaeological Reports, 1985.
- . “Carpentry in Ireland, A.D. 900–1300: The Wood Quay Evidence.” In *Woodworking Techniques before A.D. 1500*. Edited by Seán McGrail, pp. 263–299. BAR International Series, no. 129. Oxford: British Archaeological Reports, 1982.

PATRICK F. WALLACE



DARK AGE/EARLY MEDIEVAL SCOTLAND

FOLLOWED BY FEATURE ESSAY ON:

Tarbat 476

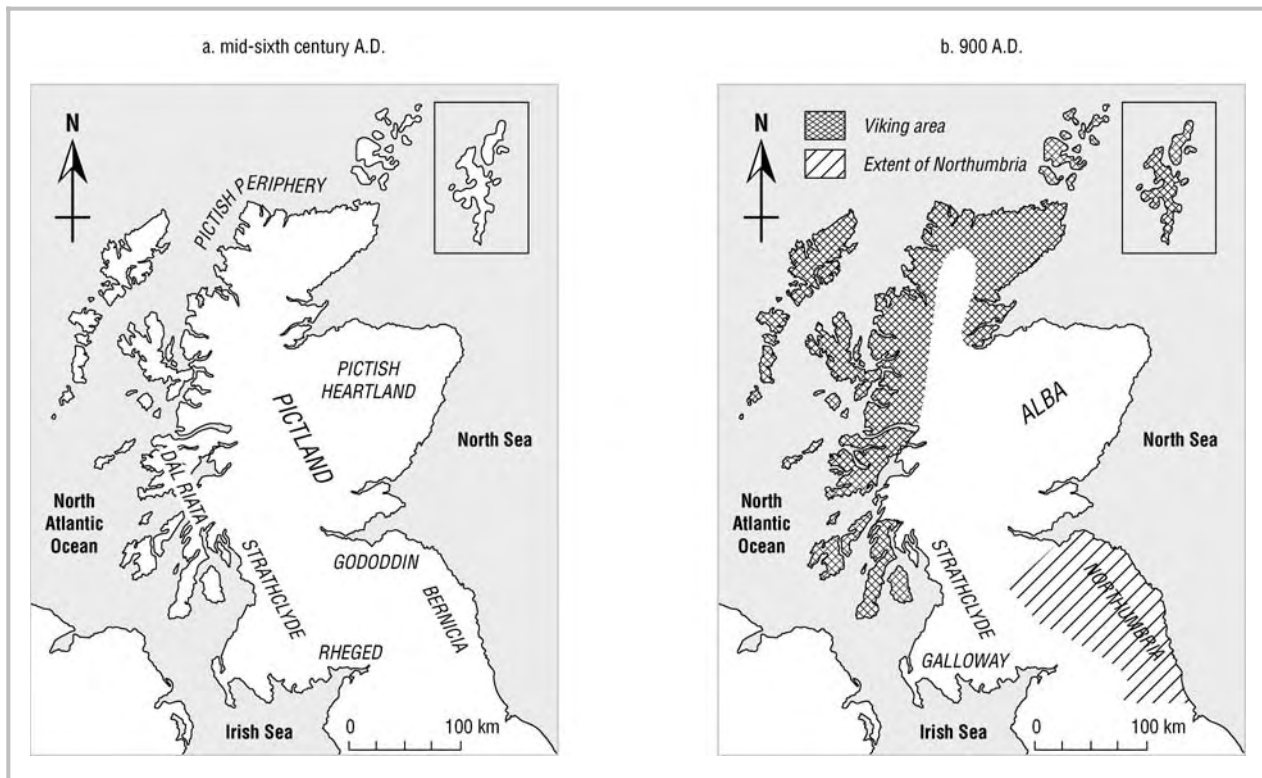
In the later first millennium A.D., Scotland was a complex and dynamic mosaic of political and cultural traditions, where natives and incomers (immigrants) competed for power and influence—a land of “four nations and five languages,” in the words of the contemporary Anglian historian the Venerable Bede. The evidence for the various groups contributing to the development of the kingdom of Scotland is uneven, however, both in terms of historical sources and archaeological research. It is therefore necessary to consider the broadest possible range of information to reconstruct the period: archaeology, history, linguistics and place-name studies, and art history provide the most significant evidence.

The early medieval period in Scotland can be divided into three major phases. Limited evidence remains for the post-Roman phase (c. fifth century A.D.), which appears to have been a time of transition, when significant cultural changes took place. The early historic or early Christian phase (c. sixth to eighth centuries A.D.) was a period of interaction and competition, at least among the elites, of four major political or ethnic groups and also saw the establishment of Christianity as the dominant religion. Then came the Viking phase (ninth century through mid–eleventh century A.D.), when a new set of pagans, mainly from western Norway, dis-

rupted earlier patterns, initially through raiding and later by settling in the north and west. Their attacks were surely an important catalyst for the unification of the Dalriadic and Pictish kingdoms into Alba, the kingdom of Scotland.

POST-ROMAN PERIOD

Unlike southern Britain, Scotland never was incorporated fully into the Roman Empire, although the southern lowlands were part of the militarized zone between the Antonine Wall, which ran between the River Forth and the River Clyde, and Hadrian’s Wall, now south of Scotland’s border. Unlike the situation with the Germanic territories beyond the Rhine frontier, little evidence suggests significant levels of trade across these walls, and so the withdrawal of Rome in the early fifth century was less obviously disruptive in Scotland than elsewhere. It is widely accepted, however, that the people between the walls were influenced significantly by the Roman military presence. In fact, with the recognition that the Picts and the Britons both spoke P-Celtic, or Brittonic languages, some scholars have suggested that cultural differences between the southern Britons and the northern Picts may have been emphasized, if not created, by the adoption of certain elements of late Roman culture, including Christianity, by the Britons.



Scotland in the mid-sixth century and c. A.D. 900. ADAPTED FROM FOSTER 1996.

Several small kingdoms are known among the post-Roman Britons. The people the Romans called the Votadini, for instance, appear in the sixth century in the southeast as the Gododdin. In the late Roman period they were based at the Iron Age hill-fort of Traprain Law, which has produced a spectacular hoard of Roman silver dated to sometime after A.D. 395; this cache is interpreted either as loot or, more likely, a diplomatic bribe or payment for military services. But Traprain Law was abandoned by the mid-fifth century, and it appears that their new seat of power was at Din Eidyn, modern Edinburgh; excavations in Edinburgh Castle have found evidence for occupation during this period.

Whithorn, in the southwest, was the site of the earliest recorded Christian church in Scotland, the episcopal seat of Saint Ninian, reportedly sent to minister to an already existing Christian community. Dating the activity of any post-Roman figure is extremely difficult, owing to a lack of contemporary documents, but scholarly opinion now places Ninian at Whithorn in the later fifth century. This dating is supported by the site's mid-fifth-century Latinus

stone, an inscribed cross slab with a Latin inscription, including the name "Latinus," and a six-armed Constantinian Chi-Rho Christian cross.

Little evidence exists for the Picts at this period: historically they were the enemies of the Romans, allied with the Scotti (or Irish). Archaeologically there is strong continuity with Late Iron Age culture, particularly in the Northern Isles and Western Isles, although there appear to have been significant changes in settlement types during the later Roman period. Understanding of the Picts, however, is patchy: F. T. Wainwright's pioneering book titled *The Problem of the Picts* was written in 1955, and it is only since the 1970s that excavations have made them less of an enigma.

EARLY HISTORIC OR EARLY CHRISTIAN PERIOD

The Scotti, or at least the Scots of Dál Riata, were one of two groups that first appeared in Scotland during the sixth century, complicating the political picture and contributing new elements to northern British culture. They controlled Argyll, the south-

ern part of the West Highland coast, and retained close ties with their Irish homeland. The other group was the Northumbrian Angles, based at Bamburgh on the northeastern coast of England by the mid-sixth century. The Angles expanded their control over the kingdom of Gododdin by the seventh century and over Rheged, in the southwest of Scotland, by the eighth century, leaving Strathclyde as the only remaining autonomous British kingdom.

The intrusiveness of these groups has long been emphasized by historical tradition, but archaeology warns against exaggerating the differences among the Brittonic Britons and Picts, the Gaelic Scots, and the Germanic Angles. Despite their linguistic differences, the economies and material cultures of these groups were very similar. All of them relied on mixed farming, where cattle were the most important livestock, followed by sheep and pigs; barley and oats were the principal crops; and along Scotland's convoluted coast, fish and sea mammals also were important resources. Most people would have lived on isolated farmsteads or in small, self-sufficient hamlets—there was nothing resembling an urban center in Scotland until the twelfth century. Pottery was uncommon in most of Scotland during this period, and most metal would have been recycled. But excavations at waterlogged sites have produced a wide range of wooden vessels and other organic artifacts.

The scarcity of well-preserved artifacts has left Scottish archaeologists precious little to work with and accounts for the lack of a well-defined chronology for much of later prehistory and the early medieval period until the advent of radiocarbon dating in the mid-twentieth century. The artifacts that are useful for dating, usually because of their wider cultural milieu, were high-status objects: fine metalwork, imported pottery, and sculpture—items associated with the elite rather than with ordinary members of society. Consequently much early medieval archaeology has concentrated on high-status sites, such as fortified settlements and religious centers, although rescue excavations in advance of development or coastal erosion are providing more evidence for the lower classes of early medieval society.

It is important to recognize this bias toward the upper classes not only because it is mirrored in the historical sources (written by and for elites) but also

because these were precisely the people most likely to be defining ethnicity in ways advantageous to their own position in the competition for power. Historical, art historical, and archaeological evidence illustrates the ease with which northern British elites mixed and mingled, in political marriage alliances and exile as much as on the battlefield, regardless of linguistic or religious differences. A well-documented example is when Æthelfrith, king of the Angles (r. c. A.D. 592–616), was killed. His sons took refuge in other kingdoms. Oswald (r. A.D. 634–641) went to Dál Riata, and Oswiu (r. A.D. 641–670) married into Irish and British royal houses as well as that of their Northumbrian rival. Eanfrith (r. A.D. 633) had a son who reigned as a king of the Picts. All three were converted to Christianity while in exile, although Eanfrith is reported to have reverted to paganism during his brief reign, and Oswald imported Columban Christianity into his kingdom from Dalriadic Iona with the foundation of Lindisfarne. It was within these dynamic cross-cultural contexts that the Insular art style developed, and it should serve as a warning against the use of simplistic ethnic labels for things as well as people during the early medieval period.

SETTLEMENTS

While the elites were participating in an increasingly shared and internationally connected culture, there are regional differences in the archaeological record, particularly in settlements. In the south, among the British and Angles, slightly different forms of rectangular post-in-ground timber halls have been excavated on such sites as Doon Hill in the east and Whithorn in the west, some defended by palisades; similar forms appear to have been used by the southern Picts. (This thinking is based largely on the evidence of crop marks and soil marks visible in aerial photographs, however, and excavation is needed to confirm the dates of these structures. One such hall, believed to be early medieval, turned out to be three thousand years too old.) In the west, among the Britons and the Scots, are crannogs—natural or modified islands, usually with round timber and wattle houses. These are considered defended settlements because of the water barrier, and examples such as Buiston and Loch Glashan were high-status sites. Along the West Highland coast and in the Northern Isles, duns and brochs, large round drystone structures built in the Late Iron

Age, were reoccupied, often with modifications, or cannibalized for the construction of more modest cellular or figure-of-eight houses. Figure-of-eight houses have been found from the Orkneys to County Antrim, Ireland, illustrating the wide spread of some elements of material culture. It is well to remember that the Picts and Scots were allies against the Romans, and both could assemble substantial fleets of ships, which would have been used to sail between the islands during peace as well as war.

The promontory fort at Burghead, in the northeast, is the largest fortified site of this period in Scotland, and it overlooks an excellent harbor. At least thirty stones carved with Pictish bull symbols were found there, and the wooden framework for its timber-laced ramparts was fastened with nails. The only other known example of nailed timber-laced ramparts is at Dundurn, another Pictish stronghold. Dundurn is a nuclear fort: it has a small citadel at the summit of a hill, with annexes built wherever the hill is relatively level. Britons and Scots as well as Picts used nuclear forts; the type site is Dunadd, the capital of Dál Riata. Fortified sites such as these forts and crannogs would have been the residences of royalty, and these sites have produced evidence for specialized craft working, particularly the production of fine metalwork, suggesting that smiths worked under the patronage or control of kings and other nobles.

ARTIFACTS

Fine metalwork constitutes one of the more distinctive classes of artifacts from early medieval Scotland, like the highly ornamented Hunterston brooch, a pseudo-penannular brooch, one that looks as if it has a gap in the ring, which would be a penannular brooch, but does not. While the Angles have more bow brooches (essentially highly elaborate safety pins), the Celtic groups favored hand pins (large straight pins) and penannular brooches (circular forms with a gap for the pin to pass through). These pins were made of silver or bronze, and some were decorated with gold, enamel, and semiprecious stones or glass. The brooches and pins themselves are rare survivals, and many were chance finds made before the twentieth century. This limits their value as archaeological evidence, but there is lively debate among art historians regarding the origins of different styles, the sources of various decorative ele-

ments, and the social functions of such rich objects. Increasingly these finds are supplemented by the recovery of the molds used to make such objects from sites like the Mote of Mark in the southwest (late sixth century to early seventh century) or Dunadd (seventh century). They can establish conclusively that a particular type was made at a specific place during a given time period.

A larger number of high-status sites have produced small quantities of imported pottery and glass vessel fragments. This material falls into two categories: imports from the Mediterranean dated from the later fifth century to the mid-sixth century and imports from western France dated from the sixth through the seventh centuries. The Mediterranean pottery includes African red slip tableware from Tunisia (A ware), which has been found at Whithorn and Iona, and several types of amphorae (B ware), the earlier forms from the eastern Mediterranean and the later ones from Tunisia. The amphorae would have been shipping containers for commodities like wine or olive oil, and the only other site in Scotland where they have been found is Dumbarton Rock, the capital of Strathclyde. While most of these Mediterranean imports have been found in Southwest Britain and the Scottish examples are best seen as outliers, that is not the case for the later French imports, known as D ware and E ware. D ware is a derivative form of late Roman tableware, dating to the earlier sixth century, and has been found at Dunadd, the Mote of Mark, and Whithorn. E ware is a hard, gritty ware that, like the earlier amphorae, probably was a container. It dates from the late sixth century and possibly into the early eighth century, but most examples in Scotland have been found in contexts dating to the first half of the seventh century. More of this ware has been found in Scotland than anywhere else in the British Isles; Dunadd has the largest collection and Whithorn the second largest, and it has been discovered on at least thirteen other sites, including a couple in the Pictish east.

SCULPTURE

The Picts are associated more commonly with a very distinctive art tradition found mainly on stone—the famous Pictish symbol stones. More than fifty different symbols are known: highly naturalistic figures of animals; recognizable objects, such as combs and mirrors; and abstract figures, the most common

symbols being the double disk and crescent, often overlain by linear symbols known as Z-rods and V-rods. The meanings of the symbols and the functions of the stones are a matter of perennial debate; a writing system, totems, marks of rank or occupation, territorial or alliance markers, or memorials for important events or the dead have all been suggested.

Class I stones, where the symbols usually are incised into undressed stone, are believed to date to the sixth and seventh centuries and perhaps earlier and are concentrated in Northeast Scotland. The stones with bulls from Burghead are Class I, and there is evidence that others were associated with burials. The only Pictish carving in Dalriadic territory is a Class I boar carved into the bedrock at Dunadd, which has fueled debate about who was overlord over whom and when. Class II stones, where the symbols typically are carved in relief and accompanied by Christian motifs and scenes of elite activities, such as hunting and war, date to the late seventh century and early eighth century and have been found primarily in southern Pictland. The Aberlemno Kirkyard (Churchyard) stone is a Class II stone: it has an interlace-decorated cross on the front, while the reverse shows an extraordinary battle scene with Pictish symbols in relief above (fig. 1). It has been suggested that this stone commemorates the battle of Nechtansmere (Dunnichen), which was fought nearby in A.D. 685, where the Picts defeated the Angles and killed their king, Oswiu's son Ecgfrith (r. A.D. 670–685), ending Anglian expansion to the north. Secular scenes from these stones have given the clearest images of the people of early medieval Scotland: men armed for war, riding after stags, and drinking from horns; a woman with a large penannular brooch riding side-saddle with a man on horseback barely visible behind her; and hooded clerics with crosiers.

In Dál Riata to the west there was a different sculptural tradition and a distinctive form of inscription used primarily on stone. The Scots were responsible for bringing the ogham script, where short slashes are incised across a baseline, from Ireland, and ogham subsequently was adopted by the Picts. Inscriptions in this style date from the sixth to tenth centuries, but they are difficult to transcribe and translate; few can be read, even by experts. More than 450 early medieval carved stones have



Fig. 1. Battle scene on the cross-slab at Aberlemno churchyard. © CROWN COPYRIGHT. REPRODUCED COURTESY OF HISTORIC SCOTLAND.

been recorded in Argyll, about a hundred from Iona, but many are very simple crosses and difficult to date with certainty. Most attention is given to the elaborately carved crosses that date to the second half of the eighth century, such as Saint Oran's, Saint John's, and Saint Martin's crosses at Iona and the Kildalton cross on Islay. This sculpture almost always is associated with religious sites, and there is little evidence comparable to the hunting scenes on the Pictish stones to suggest that it was an important way for secular elites to display their status. As with the Pictish stones, however, many of the decorative elements on these monuments are shared with the Insular art tradition as it appears on fine metalwork and in Gospel books, such as the Book of Durrow or the Book of Kells. It is now thought that the latter two were created at Iona, which illuminates the interaction between the secular and religious spheres as well as between the different ethnic groups during this time.

RELIGION

The expansion of Christianity across Scotland during this period also has been a topic of continuing scholarly interest. It was Christianity that promoted the literacy that produced the earliest indigenous inscriptions and documents, and even in the post-Roman period some Britons were Christian. The Scots were Christians by the time they were historically active in Argyll, and it was to Dál Riata that Saint Columba came in A.D. 563, founding the monastery of Iona shortly afterward. While Columba's *Life* shows him visiting the pagan king of the northern Picts, there is little evidence for explicitly missionary efforts. Nevertheless both the Angles and the Picts had adopted Columban Christianity before those groups switched to the Roman date for Easter, the Angles in the late seventh century and the Picts in the early eighth century.

Little structural evidence for churches in Scotland has survived, except for Whithorn. In many cases these sites remain in use, and later construction has obliterated the remains of the earliest foundations, although ongoing excavations at Portmahomack, which appears to have been a monastery during the eighth and ninth centuries, will provide better evidence for the Pictish northeast. At Iona part of the *vallum*—the bank and ditch that separated the religious community from the secular world—survives, but texts reveal that the buildings within were built of timber and wattle, which has left no clear trace. Building churches of wood apparently was part of the Irish Columban tradition, although hermits' refuges usually had small, round drystone cells; it was the Roman tradition that encouraged stone construction. In the absence of surviving structural remains, the presence of early churches typically is indicated by place-name evidence—*eccles-* names in British territory and *kil-* names in Dál Riata.

Burials have little to contribute to an understanding of the early historic phase. First of all, the acid soils of Scotland have destroyed most of the skeletal remains. Second, burial practices were quite similar among the different groups, both before and after the adoption of Christianity. Even in the Late Iron Age the most usual rite was extended inhumation in either a simple grave or a long cist, where stone slabs form a rough coffin, without grave goods. The only identifiable characteristic for Chris-

tian graves therefore is their east–west orientation. Some Picts did place such graves under low mounds with square stone kerbs (curbs) in the early medieval period. But most such monuments are known only from aerial photographs, and more excavation is needed to confirm the dates.

VIKING PERIOD

At this point a fifth group and sixth language entered Scotland: the Vikings. Unlike the evidence for the Angles and Scots, historical sources provide a definite date for their arrival, for one of the earliest references to these “gentiles” is of their raid on Iona in A.D. 795. By the mid-ninth century the Norse were moving in, rather than making hit-and-run raids, almost entirely in the Northern and Western Isles, which were conveniently placed on the island-hopping sea route from western Norway to Ireland. The intensity of Norse settlement is shown by place names, and in the Northern Isles and northern mainland the local language was replaced by Norn, a dialect of Norwegian. The Scandinavian place-names of Southwest Scotland, however, are not related to this land taking but instead are evidence for settlement during the twelfth century from northern England.

The most alien thing about these Galls, or “foreigners,” to the people of early medieval Scotland was their pagan religion—which is why they had no scruples about plundering churches and taking Christians as slaves. The archaeological record provides ample evidence of this in the form of furnished graves for both men and women: the men were buried with their weapons and sometimes with horses or merchants' scales and the women with characteristic oval “tortoiseshell” brooches and tools for making linen. In a few cases men and women have been found buried in small clinker-built boats. These graves provide the best evidence for a distinctly Norse material culture. This is important, because on many sites where rectangular Norse long-house forms replace earlier Pictish cellular structures are found a mix of Pictish and Norse artifact types and even bilingual runic inscriptions. These finds imply that local populations survived, whether as slaves, an underclass below Norse elites, or perhaps as allies and collaborators.

By the late ninth century the Northern Isles were the base of the powerful earls of Orkney, origi-

nally from western Norway; by the late tenth century, when they were officially converted to Christianity, their sphere of political control included Shetland, the northern mainland, and the Western Isles. Most of the Viking hoards found in Scotland, which include Arabic coins, ring money (small, irregular silver rings used as a form of currency by the Vikings), and hack silver (pieces of silver cut from larger objects used for the same purpose), date to this later period, from the mid-tenth century into the early eleventh century. Unlike hoards of religious and secular fine metalwork from the earlier period, such as the Saint Ninian's Isle treasure from Shetland, these pieces would have been associated more closely with trading than raiding.

It has been suggested that the hogback monuments found in southern Scotland and dating to the tenth and early eleventh centuries marked the graves of Scandinavian traders from northern England. Once they had become Christians and subscribed to broadly shared cultural values, Scandinavians were simply one more element in Scotland's multicultural mix. The Hunterston brooch mentioned above, a high-status object, has a runic inscription: "Melbrigda owns [this] brooch." The language is Norse, yet Melbrigda is a Celtic name.

CREATING "SCOT-LAND"

While past historians cast the early medieval period as a time of war between monolithic ethnic groups for control over what would become Scotland, with the Dalriadic Scots as the winners, archaeology has shown that the situation was much more complicated and has highlighted the ways in which the different groups contributed to the process of forging a common culture. If there is a large-scale notable trend throughout this period, it is increasing socio-political centralization. In the Roman period sources attest to a multiplicity of Pictish tribes; by the early historic phase there are probably three significant Pictish political groups. The hierarchical levels of kingship are evident in Dál Riata, with kings of kindreds, the most powerful of them the Dalriadic overking, and the overkings of the Scots, Angles, and Picts competing for the position of "high king" of northern Britain during the early historic phase. It was only in the Viking phase, as the Norse and their superior sea power annexed the island half of Argyll, that the bonding of these mainland

groups into a permanent and internally complex state occurred.

Despite historical uncertainty about the relative power of the Scots and Picts at this time, the Scots moved eastward, and from about A.D. 843 Cinead mac Ailpín (Kenneth mac Alpin) and his descendants ruled both Scots and Picts from Forteviot in southern Pictland. Later historical revision makes it difficult to determine to what extent this was a violent overthrow of Pictish power as opposed to assimilation. Nonetheless by c. A.D. 900 Dál Riata and Pictavia vanish from the sources, replaced by Alba: a nation called by a Gaelic name and using the Gaelic language but with much of its administrative structure apparently derived from the Picts.

See also Hillforts (vol. 2, part 6); Dál Riata (vol. 2, part 7); Picts (vol. 2, part 7); Viking Settlements in Orkney and Shetland (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Alcock, Leslie, and Elizabeth A. Alcock. "Reconnaissance Excavations on Early Historic Fortifications and Other Royal Sites in Scotland, 1974–84: 4, Excavations at Alt Clut, Clyde Rock, Strathclyde, 1974–75." *Proceedings of the Society of Antiquaries of Scotland* 120 (1990): 95–149.
- . "Reconnaissance Excavations on Early Historic Fortifications and Other Royal Sites in Scotland, 1974–84: 2, Excavations at Dunollie Castle, Oban, Argyll, 1978." *Proceedings of the Society of Antiquaries of Scotland* 117 (1987): 73–101.
- Alcock, Leslie, Elizabeth A. Alcock, and Stephen T. Driscoll. "Reconnaissance Excavations on Early Historic Fortifications and Other Royal Sites in Scotland, 1974–84: 3, Excavations at Dundurn, Strathearn, Perthshire, 1976–77." *Proceedings of the Society of Antiquaries of Scotland* 119 (1989): 189–226.
- Clancy, Thomas Owen, and Barbara E. Crawford. "The Formation of the Scottish Kingdom." In *The New Penguin History of Scotland: From the Earliest Times to the Present Day*. Edited by R. A. Houston and W. W. J. Knox, pp. 28–95. London: Allen Lane–Penguin Press, 2001.
- Crawford, Barbara E. *Scandinavian Scotland*. Leicester, U.K.: Leicester University Press, 1987.
- Driscoll, Stephen T. "The Archaeology of State Formation in Scotland." In *Scottish Archaeology: New Perceptions*. Edited by W. S. Hanson and E. A. Slater, pp. 81–111. Aberdeen, Scotland: Aberdeen University Press, 1991.
- Fisher, Ian. *Early Medieval Sculpture in the West Highlands and Islands*. Edinburgh: Royal Commission on the Ancient and Historical Monuments of Scotland–Society of Antiquaries of Scotland, 2001.

- Foster, Sally M. *Picts, Gaels, and Scots: Early Historic Scotland*. London: B. T. Batsford—Historic Scotland, 1996.
- Graham-Campbell, James, and Colleen E. Batey. *Vikings in Scotland: An Archaeological Survey*. Edinburgh: Edinburgh University Press, 1998.
- Henry, David, ed. *The Worm, the Germ, and the Thorn: Pictish and Related Studies Presented to Isabel Henderson*. Balgavies, U.K.: Pinkfoot Press, 1997.
- Hill, Peter. *Whithorn and St. Ninian: The Excavation of a Monastic Town 1984–91*. Stroud, U.K.: Alan Sutton Publishing—Whithorn Trust, 1997.
- Laing, Lloyd, and Jenny Laing. *The Picts and the Scots*. Stroud, U.K.: Alan Sutton Publishing, 1993.
- Lane, Alan, and Ewan Campbell. *Dunadd: An Early Dalriadic Capital*. Oxford: Oxbow Books, 2000.
- Ritchie, Anna. *Viking Scotland*. London: B. T. Batsford—Historic Scotland, 1993.
- Spearman, R. Michael, and John Higgitt, eds. *The Age of Migrating Ideas: Early Medieval Art in Northern Britain and Ireland*. Stroud, U.K.: Alan Sutton Publishing; Edinburgh: National Museums of Scotland, 1993.
- Wainwright, F. T. *The Problem of the Picts*. Edinburgh: Thomas Nelson and Sons, 1955.

ELIZABETH A. RAGAN

TARBAT

The Gaelic word *tarbat* refers to a dry crossing where boats were hauled across the neck of a peninsula. The Tarbat peninsula in northeastern Scotland juts into the Moray Firth and permitted such crossings between Cromarty and Dornoch Firths. This peninsula contains some of the finest sculpture of the European Early Middle Ages. It is now recognized as the site of the first and so far the only known early monastery in eastern Scotland, land of the lost nation of the Picts.

The sculpture at Tarbat survives in the form of monumental cross slabs, all carved and erected about A.D. 800. At Nigg, at the southern foot of the peninsula, the cross-slab features the biblical king David and the story of St. Paul and St. Anthony in the desert. At Shandwick, the large cross is accompanied by cherubim and seraphim and a mass of intricate Celtic spiral ornament. At Hilton of Cadboll, the cross side of the slab has been erased, but the reverse features a secular scene showing a woman rid-

ing to the hunt accompanied by servants and huntsmen. All of these cross slabs face the sea, and all carry symbols of the Pictish iconic language, symbols that probably represent the names of the persons commemorated.

Archaeological excavation since 1994 at the peninsula's main settlement of Portmahomack has given a context for these remarkable monuments (fig. 1). During the nineteenth century, pieces of carved stone were discovered by gravediggers in the churchyard and surroundings of Portmahomack's church of St. Colman. Among them was a stone carved in relief in insular majuscules recalling the Book of Kells (approximately A.D. 800). In 1984 a buried ditch around the church was discovered by aerial survey. The ditch's D-shaped plan recalled the enclosure that defines the monastery of St. Columba (Columcille) on Iona, an island off western Scotland. It was Columba (according to Adomnán of Iona, his biographer) who had attempted to convert the northern Picts around A.D. 565. Here were clues that Portmahomack might have been a settlement of the first Christians in Pictland.

In 1994 the University of York was invited by a local restoration group (Tarbat Historic Trust) to adopt the site as a research project. After an initial evaluation, the church itself was excavated and its fabric recorded, while outside the churchyard an area of 0.6 hectare was opened, with sensational results. In the church, excavators recorded a sequence of two hundred burials, beginning with sixty-seven graves that were wholly or partly lined with stone slabs (the distinctive "cist" burials of the Picts). These proved to contain the remains of primarily middle-aged or elderly men, the earliest of which has been radiocarbon dated to the sixth century A.D. The later burials, with a more normal distribution of men, women, and children, belong to the twelfth to fifteenth centuries A.D. Six principal phases of church building were distinguished. The earliest stone church is signaled by a single wall and probably dates to the eighth century A.D. It was replaced in the twelfth century by an east-west chapel with a square-ended chancel, which was lengthened and provided with a tower and crypt in the thirteenth century. In the sixteenth century (at the Reformation) the axis of worship was altered to run north-south and a northern "aisle," or quarter, reserved for the laird, was constructed. When the Church of



Fig. 1. Excavations at Portmahomack in 2000. In the background is the church of St. Colman; to the left workshops are under excavation; and in the foreground is the dam for the mill pond. © MARTIN CARVER AND THE UNIVERSITY OF YORK. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

Scotland split in two because of the Disruption of 1843, the axis returned to the east-west. The construction of the present church largely dates from a restoration undertaken in the mid-eighteenth century.

Numerous pieces of carved stone were found to have been reused in the foundations of the eleventh-century church, the majority carrying ornament of the eighth century. As of the early 2000s, more than 150 carved stones had been recovered from excavation in the church or outside it. Many of these are simple grave-markers carrying a cross and recalling examples known from Iona. One massive slab with a lion and a wild boar in relief belongs to a sarcophagus lid, or possibly an altar. Another with a picture of a family of cattle comes from a wall slab, perhaps a *cancellum* (fig. 2). Many other pieces derive from one or more monumental cross slabs that closely resemble those surviving at Nigg and Shandwick.

Excavations in the field next to the church revealed a large segment of an early Christian monastery in plan. Nearest to the church is a workshop area laid out on either side of a paved road. The workshops have produced evidence for the making of objects of silver (cupellation dishes), bronze (hearths, crucibles, molds, and whetstones), glass (molds), leather (a tanning pit, bone pegs for a stretcher frame, and pumice leather-smoothers), and wood (a chisel clad by ferriferous wood shavings). The objects that were made appear to have been ecclesiastical in nature, since the molds and studs recall reliquaries and liturgical vessels known from the early Celtic world. South of the workshops is a millpond with a dam to provide a head of water for driving a horizontal millwheel. Farther south, still against the enclosure boundary, lie a number of grain-drying pits and the foundations of a timber-framed structure bag-shaped in plan. This was probably a kiln-barn, although its hearth shows evidence



Fig. 2. A family of cattle carved on a slab found at Portmahomack, Easter Ross, eighth century A.D. After the monastery was destroyed by the Vikings, the slab was reused as a drain cover.
© MARTIN CARVER AND THE UNIVERSITY OF YORK. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

of use by a blacksmith. The boundary ditch itself was by no means defensive but appears to have been employed in collecting and bringing water to different areas of the monastery.

The male burials, the sculpture, the inscription, the enclosure, and the manufacture of ecclesiastical objects identify the Portmahomack settlement as an early monastery. The earliest burial took place in the sixth century, while the majority of the artifacts, including the sculpture, belong to the eighth century with a terminus around 800. Records indicate that Columba settled in Iona in 563 and took part in an expedition to the northern Picts in 565. He passed up the Great Glen by way of Loch Ness and met the Pictish king Bridei, son of Mailchu, somewhere near Inverness. Although the conversion of the Picts is not claimed in Adomnán's *Life of St. Columba*, he does say that monasteries were founded in Columba's time. Discoveries from the 1990s allow us to identify Portmahomack ("port of Colman"—or Columba) as one of these, established at the opposite end of the Great Glen to Iona, perhaps by Columba himself. By A.D. 800 the whole Tarbat peninsula had emerged as a major ecclesiastical center, its boundaries marked by monumental cross slabs carrying some of the most complex iconography seen

in early Christian art. The end of the monastery and its consignment to oblivion for more than one thousand years remain something of a mystery. Sometime between 800 and 1100, the workshop area was destroyed by fire, and at the same time the monumental cross slabs were broken up and dumped. It seems likely that this targeted attack was the work of the Vikings.

See also *Celts* (vol. 2, part 6); *Picts* (vol. 2, part 7); *Vikings* (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Adomnán of Iona. *Life of St Columba*. Translated by Richard Sharpe. Harmondsworth, U.K., and New York: Penguin, 1991.

Bulletins of the Tarbat Discovery Programme. 1995–. Available at www.york.ac.uk/depts/arch/staff/sites/tarbat.

Carver, Martin. *Surviving in Symbols: A Visit to the Pictish Nation*. Edinburgh: Canongate, 1999.

———. "Conversion and Politics on the Eastern Seaboard of Britain: Some Archaeological Indicators." In *Conversion and Christianity in the North Sea World*. Edited by Barbara E. Crawford, pp. 11–40. St. Andrews, U.K.: University of St. Andrews, 1998.

Foster, Sally. *Picts, Gaels, and Scots*. London: B. T. Batsford/
Historic Scotland, 1996.

MARTIN CARVER



EARLY MEDIEVAL WALES

The archaeology of early medieval Wales has been studied largely within a historical framework primarily derived from sources created late in the period under consideration, about A.D. 400 to 1000, with many of the written sources even later than this and their relevance to earlier periods inferred. Two major themes have emerged from research, that of elite settlements and ecclesiastical archaeology. Elite settlements were first defined at Dinas Powys, Glamorganshire, with the presence of imported vessels and craft production debris. Subsequent excavations have widened the range of such site types, but they have done little to reveal later high-status sites or much of the lower-level settlements of any part of the period. Ecclesiastical archaeology has relied heavily on sculpture and inscriptions but has been augmented by important excavated evidence of burial. Research has also increased the evidence for Viking settlement, and there is lively debate regarding the interpretation of the inscribed stones and sculpture.

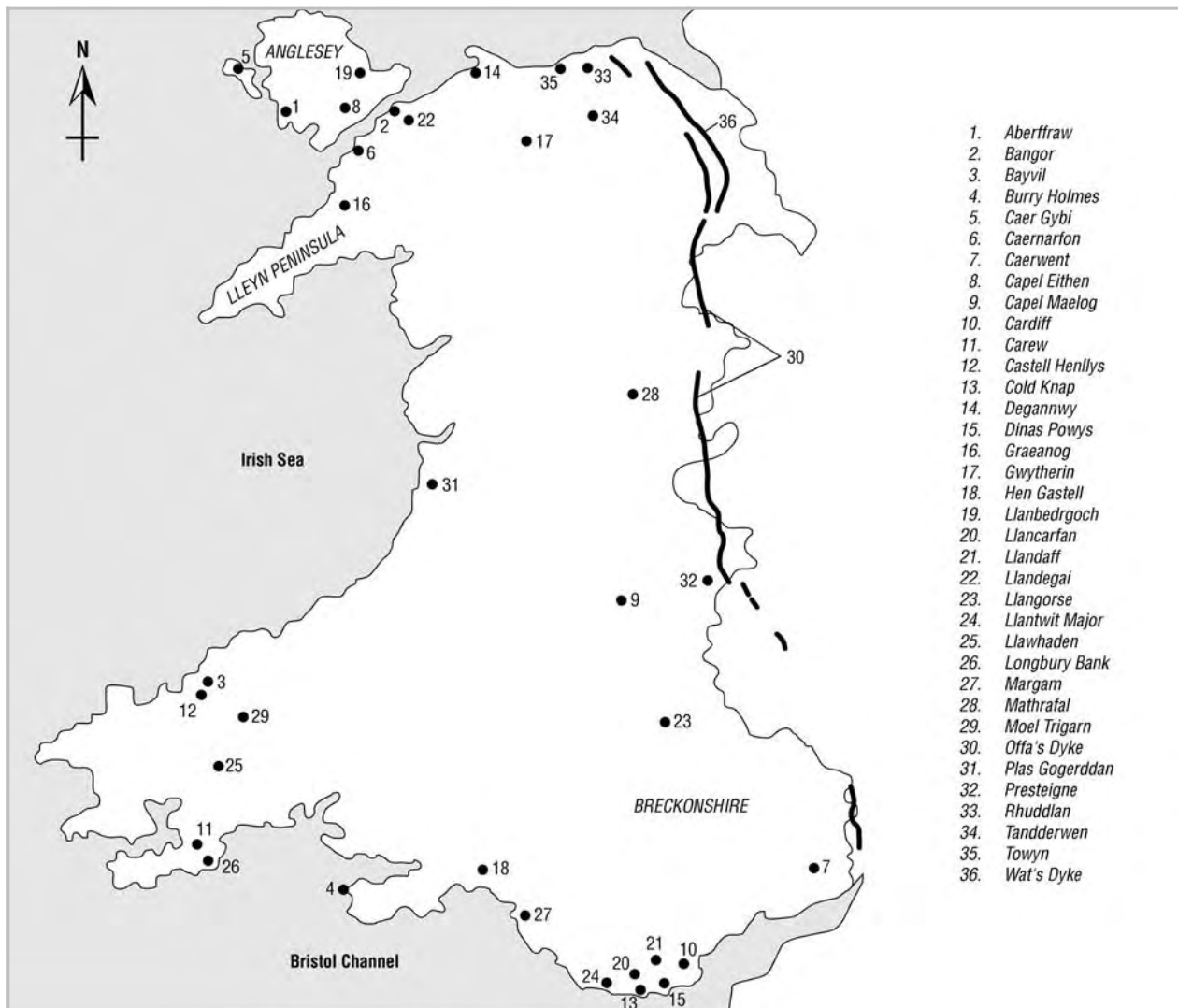
POST-ROMAN CONTINUITY

Some late Roman military activity is known at sites such as Cardiff, various locations on Anglesey, and at Caernarfon. These are thought to have been a reaction to Irish raids that led to Irish settlement in several parts of Wales. Even after the Roman military presence ceased around A.D. 410, aspects of Roman life continued into the fifth and sixth centuries, though settlement evidence for this is inconclusive and relies more on later inscriptions discussed below.

Several high-status Romanized sites in southeastern Wales show reuse. At villas such as Llantwit Major there may have been continuity of estates that later came within a monastic context. Other religious foundations were created at Roman sites such as Caer Gybi, Anglesey, in northwestern Wales and Caerwent, Gwent, in southeastern Wales, though in these cases there may have been a considerable hiatus between Roman abandonment and early medieval use. In some cases such as Cold Knap, Glamorganshire, the occupation seems secular, and was set in the ruins of the Roman structures. Here, again, a gap in occupation is suggested. Some continuity of settlement is demonstrated at a few burial locations discussed below, suggesting that estates and communities may have continued, even if the location and nature of settlement sites on those estates altered following the end of the Roman period.

Hillforts in Wales have produced evidence of late Roman occupation, and a few have activity from the early medieval period also, although continuity of settlement or repeated episodes of reuse are both possible. Several native settlements such as Graeanog, Gwynedd, and some of the enclosed farmsteads around Llawhaden, Pembrokeshire, suggest that such sites continued to attract habitation into the fifth and sixth centuries.

The most obvious archaeological evidence for continuity of Roman traditions and elements of culture comes from some of the inscribed stones. Though difficult to date, some from the fifth and



Selected sites in early medieval Wales.

others from the sixth century show clear affiliations with the Roman world. For some, the tradition of inscribed stones in Latin was introduced into Wales from southern Gaul in the fifth century. For others, they demonstrate a more complex pattern with continuity of Christianity and Romanitas within Wales, although with influence from the Continent. The use of Latin titles such as *magistratus* on memorials with crude but clearly Roman-style lettering might be taken to indicate an administrative structure, heavily adapted to more uncertain and less centralized times but which had aspirations to continue the traditions or at least the aura of Roman rule. Charles Thomas has argued that some inscriptions contain

complex messages hidden within them, though this has been challenged.

IRISH MIGRATIONS

Inscribed memorial stones form the main archaeological source of evidence for the movement of Irish population, possibly only an elite, from southern Ireland to northwestern and particularly southwestern Wales. Documentary sources also support this interpretation, as do place-name studies. The tribe that moved to southwestern Wales was the Déisi, and Thomas has suggested that the Iron Age hillfort of Moel Trigarn, Pembrokeshire, which was also

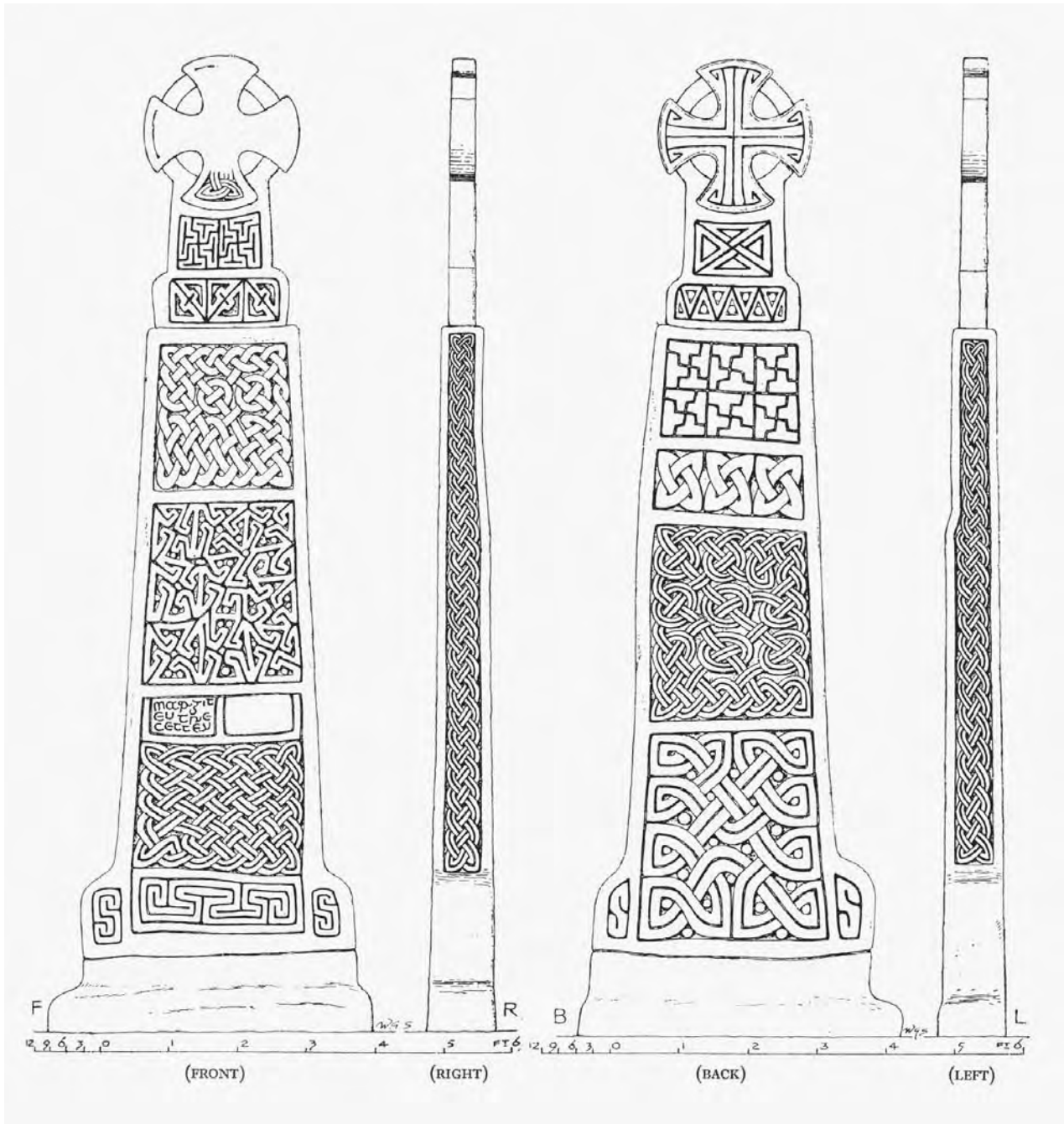


Fig. 1. Early Christian monuments, Wales. FROM NASH-WILLIAMS 1950. © UNIVERSITY OF WALES. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

used in the Roman period, was perhaps their early base. Excavation at the nearby settlement of Castell Henllys has identified a late Roman or immediately post-Roman refortification of an inland promontory fort. Settlement and control was initially over the northern part of Pembrokeshire, but subsequently

spread east and south. The date of initial settlement is uncertain, but it perhaps first began around A.D. 400.

The earliest inscribed stones are probably those only in ogham, a style of writing that was first devel-

oped in Ireland, and with Irish words and names. Later inscriptions, from the later fifth and the sixth centuries, occur bilingually in ogham and Latin, and it is during this phase that obvious Christian features also occur. Irish and British names can now be noted, and relationships between individuals (usually X son of Y) were often recorded.

Less substantial evidence for Irish settlement has also been found in the Llyn Peninsula of north-western Wales, and in Brecknockshire (present-day Breconshire) in central southern Wales. In Brecknockshire, a kingdom of Brycheiniog was carved out of territory along the river Usk, and the presence of a number of bilingual inscriptions containing ogham suggests that this was also linked to Irish settlement. This may have been a secondary movement from southwestern Wales. Another piece of evidence that suggests an elite link with Ireland, and one that was continued over generations, is the presence at Brecknockshire of the only known crannog, an early medieval lake settlement of characteristically Irish type, in Llangorse Lake. Excavations there have shown that little survives of the settlement itself, though dendrochronological dates from planking suggest dates of A.D. 890 and 893 for at least one phase of development. Some of the early medieval artifacts recovered from the silts around the crannog are probably earlier in date and suggest a long period of occupation. The finds include items with a clear Irish origin, such as a pseudo-penannular brooch fragment and a fragment of a portable reliquary shrine of the eighth century.

SECULAR SETTLEMENT

A number of sites have been located in Wales that are considered to be elite secular settlements. The first of these to be investigated, and the one that has conditioned interpretations and expectations since, was that of Dinas Powys. Extensive excavation within the interior of the small inland promontory fort located slight traces of two rectangular structures that have been tentatively interpreted as a hall and barn. Little survived within these buildings, but in contrast some middens were excavated that provided rich finds of many kinds.

The early medieval pottery from the site was all imported; it was identified as belonging to four major classes, namely A, B, D, and E, and classified on their form and fabric as defined at the site of Tin-

tagel, Cornwall, where they were first recognized. Class A pottery at Dinas Powys seems to be of early-sixth-century Phocaean Red Slip Ware, originally from the eastern Mediterranean. These fine tablewares comprised bowls and dishes, one of which had stamped designs on the interior base. The B ware sherds were from amphorae vessels, and these have been further subdivided by subsequent scholars into categories such as Bi and Bii as more research on the forms and fabrics in the Mediterranean has allowed distinctive types with particular origins to be identified in Britain and Ireland. Dinas Powys has produced Bi material from the Aegean, Bii sherds date to the middle or later sixth century having come from the eastern Mediterranean, and B Misc, which has not been closely provenanced. In contrast to these Mediterranean products, there were also forty-six sherds of D ware in tableware bowls and in mortaria, mixing bowls of a Roman tradition. These were probably made in France, perhaps the Bordeaux region, and were a rare import to Britain. Dinas Powys also produced Roman-style bowls, storage jars, and pitchers in E ware of the late sixth and seventh centuries. E ware may also have been produced in France.

International contacts are also attested through the presence of glass, which in the 1980s was the subject of reassessment. It can now be seen as material of Continental origin, but not all from the same sources that supplied Anglo-Saxon England, suggesting that some came along the same routes as the imported ceramics.

Leslie Alcock defined Dinas Powys as a *llys* site, the residence of a king or prince, based on evidence from the Welsh Laws, though these only survive in a later form. The *llys* formed the central point within the *maerdref*, land which supported the *llys*. These lands were set within the larger unit, the *commote*, and above that was the *cantref*. This administrative structure was in use by the end of the period under consideration here, though its applicability several centuries earlier is less certain.

The interpretation of Dinas Powys as a high-status site was based on the presence of exotic imported goods and from the way in which the elites in less complex stratified societies controlled production and distribution of craft products such as jewelry. The attribution to a *llys* was additionally based on the faunal assemblage that was thought to

match what would be expected if the site had been supplied by food renders as described in the Welsh Laws. Discoveries in the 1990s found B ware ceramics at the nearby monastery of Llandough, which might indicate a high-status ecclesiastical site under the patronage of the Dinas Powys elite. This pairing of major secular and ecclesiastical sites has been suggested as a typical pattern, though this has yet to be firmly demonstrated.

Following the identification of Dinas Powys as a defended elite site, many other forts were proposed as examples of this type. Few, however, have produced conclusive evidence, although some such evidence was recovered below late medieval activity at the hilltop site of Degannwy, Gwynedd. Excavations at Hen Gastell, Glamorganshire, in the early 1990s have located another such site, heavily damaged by quarrying but displaying a range of sixth- and seventh-century finds—Bi, and possibly Bii, amphorae; D and E ware, as well as Continental glass vessels—on a small hilltop location. Craft activity there was demonstrated by the presence of lumps of fused glass. Documentary evidence hints that the major political center in the area may have been at Margam, where a possible secular site and a definite major monastic site with inscribed monuments have been identified.

Another probable high-status settlement has been excavated at Longbury Bank, Pembrokeshire. Again dated to the sixth and seventh centuries by imported ceramics (Ai, Bi, Bii, Biv, D, and E wares) and glass, this was an undefended settlement on a low promontory. This suggests a wider range of types of high-status sites than previously had been considered. Structural evidence was limited: one small building was found, set in a rock-cut platform, but all other settlement evidence had been destroyed by later agriculture. Craft activity was demonstrated by scrap copper alloy and silver, and also crucibles, heating trays, and metal droplets. The early monastic site of Penally lay only 1 kilometer away, and the secular defended site of Castle Hill, Tenby, was only 2 kilometers distant. This suggests that there may have been quite a high density of these higher-status sites in a region, though they may have formed networks of functionally distinct sites used by the same elite group.

Other defended sites such as Carew, Pembrokeshire, indicate that more of the early elite sites may

often lie beneath later castles, and other site types undoubtedly await discovery. For example, sand dunes around the coast contain early medieval artifacts in some numbers, suggesting activity there, and these finds probably represent a category of settlement yet to be revealed through excavation.

Attempts to find later elite residences have not been successful, with documented high-status sites at both Mathrafal, Powys, and Aberffraw, Anglesey, remaining elusive, despite considerable investment in survey and excavation. Within the boundaries of the present Principality of Wales lies the Anglo-Saxon *burh* at Rhuddlan, with Late Saxon material culture and structures within an urban context of the ninth and tenth centuries, although there is no indication that the native population imitated this settlement form. Anglo-Saxon occupation spread across parts of northeastern Wales, and physical boundaries between the Welsh and the Anglo-Saxon were defined by the construction of linear earthworks. Known as Offa's and Wat's Dykes, they have been subject to much detailed survey and limited excavation beginning in the late 1960s. Although they are extremely difficult to date closely enough to link with specific historical events, they probably belong to the later ninth century.

BURIALS

Evidence for burial in Wales comes from a range of sources. Although the Irish inscribed stones were memorials, not all may have been set up at the burial sites themselves, and the overwhelming majority are now no longer in their original positions. Evidence has therefore mainly come through casual discoveries and archaeological excavations.

Open cemeteries, discovered because of their adjacency to prehistoric remains including barrows and standing stones, have been found at several sites scattered across Wales. The most notable are Capel Eithen on Anglesey, Llandegai in Gwynedd, Tandderwen in Clwyd, and Plas Gogerddan in Cardiganshire. Orientation was roughly east-west, though with a tendency toward a more northeast-southwest alignment. Bone survival was slight, and so sexing of the burials was not possible, but the size of the grave cuts shows that both adults and children were buried at some sites, though others were just for adults. Some of the interments had surviving wooden coffin stains. A few of the graves were surround-

ed by square structures, but these vary in form within and between sites. Some, such as those at Tandderwen, were clearly ditches that silted up naturally, and the central area may have been covered with a mound. In other cases, there were foundations for a building. At Plas Gogerddan a plank-built structure 4.5 by 3.2 meters could be identified, with a doorway to the east. At Capel Eithen, flooring survived within the wooden structure; this floor sealed the central grave. Graves with rectangular ditches or structures are also known from southern England, and some Anglo-Saxon graves have been noted as parallels. Some burial sites in Scotland also have square barrows, but these seem to be of a different tradition.

The dating of the cemeteries with the square enclosures has primarily been through radiocarbon dating. Coffin stains have been dated approximately to A.D. 430–690 and A.D. 770–1050 at Tandderwen, A.D. 265–640 at Plas Gogerddan, and a more problematic Roman or eighth- or ninth-century date from Capel Eithen. Clearly, most if not all such burials date to the early medieval period in Wales, but more precise chronology for these cemeteries is still uncertain and so their relationship with church burial sites cannot be interpreted.

Some other sites have produced evidence of simple earth-dug inhumation cemeteries, including ones such as that at the Atlantic Trading Estate, Barry. This continued from the second century up to perhaps the tenth century A.D., and may be the cemetery for an estate established in the Roman period with the same family members using it for generations.

A particular form of burial that has been identified for this period in Wales, and which has parallels in southwestern England, Scotland, and Ireland, is the long-cist burial, where stone slabs set on edge have been placed around the edge of the grave and, in some cases, across the top of the inhumation. Long-cist burials occur in cemeteries, with the graves aligned east-west. Many such sites have been recorded, particularly in southwestern Wales, but few have been scientifically examined. One at Bayvil, Pembrokeshire, was set within an Iron Age enclosure, and contained numerous long-cist graves, one dated by radiocarbon to A.D. 640–883. Later examples of long-cist graves have been found at church sites, dated up to the twelfth century, so this

method of burial had a long life and was used in cemeteries with and without churches.

Relatively few early burials have been found at church sites, and only at Capel Maelog, Powys, have extensive excavations allowed a full sequence of site development to be appreciated. Radiocarbon dates suggest that burial began there after the seventh century when a ditch silted up, but unfortunately only one interment was dated. A coffin stain provided a sample from the ninth or tenth century A.D., confirming the early medieval date for the burials. The cemetery was still in use when a church was built on the site in the late twelfth or early thirteenth century. The only other excavated site with a significant number of early medieval burials is that of Berlland Bach, Bangor, Gwynedd. A total of seventy-eight burials have been found; they varied slightly in orientation, and this may relate to their date.

THE CHURCH

Many churches that became part of the parochial system in the Norman period may have been built during the early medieval period. The only early standing fabric from Wales is at Presteigne, Powys, but as the surviving fragments of nave and chancel arch are in the Anglo-Saxon style, they provide no indication of native Welsh ecclesiastical architecture. Wooden churches were probably the normal construction, but only a tiny example at Burry Holmes, Glamorgan, has been excavated. This building was only about 3.4 meters by 3.1 meters and so would be very comparable with timber oratory churches excavated in Ireland and southwestern Scotland.

Inscribed stones from the sixth century onward indicate Christian features not only in the use of the Latin phrase *hic iacet*, “here lies,” which occurs elsewhere in Gaul in Christian contexts, but also by definite Christian symbolism. Notable examples include simple crosses with various terminals for the arms, ringed crosses, Chi-Rho symbols (Christograms), and some ringed crosses that resemble a *flabellum* or liturgical fan. Many of these designs can be paralleled in Ireland but that may reflect designs inspired from a common, shared Christian material culture and documentation in Britain, Ireland, and Gaul than on direct copying from one primary source. Historical sources indicate considerable

movement of religious personnel within and between these regions, and indeed to other parts of Europe. V. E. Nash-Williams attempted a classification and termed the simple designs associated with ogham and Latin as class 1. Later inscriptions were decorated with various forms of a cross, and some had inscriptions carved with half-uncial style lettering, derived from seventh-century and later manuscript writing; these are termed class 2. The inscriptions are in Latin, with the one exception at Towyn, Merionethshire, which is the earliest surviving example of the written Welsh language.

The latest group of stone sculpture, the class 3 memorials, was carved beginning in the ninth century and continuing until the eleventh century. These are mainly found in southern Wales, where a range of styles is found, with few examples in northern Wales. The class 3 monuments have more elaborate carving than the earlier stones and can be broadly divided into pillar crosses, slab crosses, and cross slabs. Figure representation is rare on the Welsh monuments, and occurs almost completely in the southeast. The main design features were interlace, fret, and key patterns. Though never matching the quality of design and execution of the fine high crosses of Ireland and Scotland, some were substantial monuments.

Many of the early inscribed stones discussed above are now found at ecclesiastical sites, and some may have been erected there. Others, however, have been moved into churches and churchyards in relatively recent times, and so the presence of stones alone does not necessarily indicate an early church site. The likely sites of early churches are suggested by several other features occurring together, such as the use of early saints' names, the presence of a holy spring or well, and a circular or oval churchyard. Some of the major sites can also be linked with documentary references. Aerial photography, particularly in southwestern Wales, has highlighted the presence of outer concentric enclosures around many subcircular churchyards, suggesting possible continuity of late prehistoric and Roman period secular settlements, perhaps given to the church in the early medieval period. These arrangements are also highly reminiscent of some of the concentric enclosures found on Irish monastic sites. As yet there has been insufficient excavation on Welsh sites of this

type to determine more regarding their detailed chronology and functions.

Unlike contemporary Ireland, Wales possessed no large monasteries endowed with impressive stone structures. Although there was some sculpture, even this was limited in quantity and quality. Welsh monasteries did contain some small stone buildings, and such institutions owned some relics and libraries, but little survives. A small fragment of a reliquary casket from Gwytherin, Denbighshire, is similar to those surviving in some numbers from Ireland. Fragments of another shrine have been excavated from Llangorse crannog, Brecknockshire, even though that is a secular site.

Welsh monasteries appear relatively impoverished compared with the equivalent contemporary establishments in Ireland and Scotland. This may relate to the relative wealth of such regions, but other factors may have played their part. Welsh cultural expectations were probably that surpluses should be devoted to feasting and almsgiving rather than used for heavy investment in material culture that could be displayed as part of social competition and so survive for archaeological study today. Of particular interest are sculptured crosses of class 3, which, although not numerous and of inferior quality compared with Irish and Scottish high crosses, nevertheless provide evidence for ecclesiastical workshops and patronage.

Written sources late in the early medieval period in Wales survive in some numbers for southeastern Wales, and have been the subject of much scholarship since the 1970s, particularly concerning the charters associated with Llandaff. These demonstrate how Llandaff, and by analogy other successful ecclesiastical sites, became substantial landowners with estates that provided manpower and agricultural produce. Llandaff gained most of its land in the eighth century, and Wendy Davies suggests that this may have been when estates, which had continued intact from the late Roman period, were finally broken up and royalty lost their control of donations to religious houses. At this writing, however, no evidence has come to light that would demonstrate a material shift in ecclesiastical investment in buildings or sculpture at that time.

Scholarship in archaeology and history since the 1990s has highlighted the fact that a Celtic church,

distinct from Continental and Anglo-Saxon traditions, never existed. Many administrative powers were held by bishops, though monasteries could be powerful entities. In Wales there could even be some federations of monasteries and dependent churches, as with those linked to Llanancarfan, Glamorganshire, but such features also occurred elsewhere in the Christian west. The idea of a Celtic church or a distinctive Celtic Christianity is therefore a modern invention.

VIKING INCURSIONS

Viking raids around the coast of Wales took place in the late tenth and the eleventh centuries and affected monastic establishments in the north, west, and south. A small number of Viking burials have been found, all close to the coast. There were, however, a few Viking settlements, and one was excavated at Llanbedrgoch, Anglesey, in the 1990s. Building 1 of the tenth century was a house 11 meters long and 5 meters wide, with a clear domestic area in the northern part of the structure, with a central hearth and bench or bed areas around the sides. A wide range of artifacts have been recovered from the site, including Hiberno-Norse style artifacts, probably from Viking Dublin, such as ringed pins and an arm-ring trial piece. The Vikings in Wales formed part of a complex network of trading and political links that were built around the two powerful centers of Dublin and York.

CONCLUSIONS

The pattern of adaptation following the collapse of Roman administration, and the movement of warrior elites to take advantage of any instability seen in Wales, can be paralleled elsewhere in post-Roman Britain. The development of a series of small kingdoms ruled from relatively small but sometimes defended settlements, and linked with ecclesiastical sites established out of patronage, can also be paralleled in Ireland and western Britain. There were, however, distinctive features of the Welsh experience in this period, even if these tended toward small-scale solutions that seem unimpressive in archaeological terms. Monasteries never became large centers, and the secular political structure did not become centralized. Expression through material culture never became a cultural strategy, giving the impression that Wales was poorer than it probably was. Only with the coming of the Anglo-Normans

did monumental construction—in castles, churches, monasteries, and planned towns—become an active strategy in Wales, with dramatic remains that now dominate the landscape.

See also Hillforts (vol. 2, part 6); Viking York (vol. 2, part 7); Rathes, Crannogs, and Cashels (vol. 2, part 7); Viking Dublin (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Alcock, Leslie. *Economy, Society and Warfare among the Britons and Saxons*. Cardiff: University of Wales Press, 1987. (Updated and expanded version of Alcock 1963.)
- . *Dinas Powys*. Cardiff: University of Wales Press, 1963.
- Brassil, K. D., W. G. Owen, and W. J. Britnell. "Prehistoric and Early Medieval Cemeteries at Tandderwen, near Denbigh, Clwyd." *Archaeological Journal* 148 (1991): 46–97.
- Britnell, W. "Capel Maelog, Llandrindod Wells, Powys: Excavations 1984–1987." *Medieval Archaeology* 34 (1990): 27–96.
- Campbell, Ewan, and Alan Lane. "Excavations at Longbury Bank, Dyfed, and Early Medieval Settlement in South Wales." *Medieval Archaeology* 37 (1993): 15–77.
- Davies, Wendy. *Wales in the Early Middle Ages*. Leicester, U.K.: Leicester University Press, 1982. (A comprehensive review by a historian who integrates archaeological evidence effectively.)
- Edwards, Nancy, and Alan Lane, eds. *The Early Church in Wales and the West*. Oxbow Monograph 16. Oxford: Oxbow, 1992. (A collection of papers by specialists on various aspects of history and archaeology.)
- Murphy, Ken. "Plas Gogerddan, Dyfed: A Multi-Period Burial and Ritual Site." *Archaeological Journal* 149 (1992): 1–38.
- Mytum, Harold. *The Origins of Early Christian Ireland*. London: Routledge, 1992. (One section of the book considers the migration of Irish to Wales and the impact of this contact on stimulating change in Ireland.)
- Nash-Williams, V. E. *The Early Christian Monuments of Wales*. Cardiff: University of Wales Press, 1950. (The classic work on the stone inscriptions and sculpture, with a detailed catalog and many line drawings; it is due to be replaced by a completely reworked study by Nancy Edwards.)
- Quinnell, H., M. Blockley, and P. Berridge. *Excavations at Rhuddlan, Clwyd: 1969–1973: Mesolithic to Medieval*. CBA Research Report, no. 95. London: Council for British Archaeology, 1994.
- Redknap, Mark. *Vikings in Wales. An Archaeological Quest*. Cardiff: National Museums and Galleries of Wales,

2000. (A popular account covering many aspects of Viking Age Wales with abundant color illustrations.)
- Royal Commission on Ancient and Historical Monuments in Wales. *An Inventory of the Ancient Monuments of Glamorgan*. Vol. 1, part 3, *The Early Christian Period*. London: Her Majesty's Stationery Office, 1976.
- Thomas, Charles. *Christian Celts: Messages and Images*. Stroud, U.K.: Tempus, 1998. (A controversial account of the inscriptions and their possible hidden meanings. For a substantial critique, see H. McKee and J. McKee, "Counter Arguments and Numerical Patterns in Early Celtic Inscriptions: A Re-examination of *Christian Celts: Messages and Images*," *Medieval Archaeology* 46 [2002]: 29–40.)
- . *And Shall These Stones Speak? Post-Roman Inscriptions in Western Britain*. Cardiff: University of Wales Press, 1994. (A detailed analysis of the inscriptions and their archaeological and historical implications.)
- . *Celtic Britain*. London: Thames and Hudson, 1986. (A popular, well-illustrated account covering Cornwall, southwestern England, and Scotland as well as Wales, and so sets Wales in context.)
- Wilkinson, P. F. "Excavations at Hen Gastell, Briton Ferry, West Glamorgan, 1991–1992." *Medieval Archaeology* 39 (1995): 1–50.
- Williams, George, and Harold Mytum. *Llawbaden, Dyfed: Excavations on a Group of Small Defended Enclosures, 1980–1984*. BAR British Series, no. 275. Oxford: British Archaeological Reports, 1998.

HAROLD MYTUM



ANGLO-SAXON ENGLAND

FOLLOWED BY FEATURE ESSAYS ON:

<i>Spong Hill</i>	496
<i>Sutton Hoo</i>	498
<i>West Stow</i>	500
<i>Winchester</i>	501

From an Anglo-Saxon monk, the Venerable Bede (A.D. 673–735), comes the traditional portrayal of the downfall of Roman Britain and the beginnings of early Anglo-Saxon England. Written in the first third of the eighth century, Bede's *Ecclesiastical History of the English People* (*Historia ecclesiastica gentis Anglorum*) was drawn in part from *On the Fall of Britain* (*De excidio Britanniae et conquestu*), a polemical sermon by the sixth-century British cleric, Gildas. Supplementary accounts of the arrival of the Anglo-Saxons come from a ninth-century revision accredited to the Welsh monk Nennius, the late-ninth-century *Anglo-Saxon Chronicle*, and brief references in continental documents.

These sources present a cataclysmic history of battle and bloodshed. According to their account, Roman military forces were withdrawn from the province in the early fifth century, leaving the Britons to defend themselves against barbarian attacks. The Picts and Scots soon after recommenced their raids and were so successful that the Britons called in vain upon the Roman commander in Gaul to aid the native defenses. Although abandoned, the British rallied and overthrew the enemy forces. After a period of peace, ominous rumors led the Britons to

hold council over enemy attacks. The head of the Britons' council, Vortigern, then invited the Saxons of northern Germany to protect them. Led by Hengist and Horsa, three ships bearing Saxons arrived on the English coast. The number of Saxons multiplied and, in time, a quarrel about compensation arose between the Saxon warriors and their British overlords. The Saxons rebelled and, during the ensuing destruction, the Britons fled to the safety of the western forests and mountains. The tide of Saxon conquest was halted by the British victory at Mons Badonicus. From the time of that battle to the writing of *De excidio Britanniae et conquestu*, relations between the two groups remained peaceful.

EARLIEST EVIDENCE

The traditional image of the transition from Roman Britain to early Anglo-Saxon England as a period of turmoil and warfare has been supplanted by a more complex and modulated conception of culture change. The eighth- and ninth-century written accounts of the fifth- and sixth-century preliterate Anglo-Saxon past are not always believable, as they incorporate fantastic characters and events and in-

vented chronologies. No longer is the Anglo-Saxon invasion viewed as a single event. Ceramics, belt fittings, and dress ornaments indicate that Germanic people were entering Britain prior to the fifth-century dates calculated from the documentary sources. The lands bordering the North Sea exhibit the earliest archaeological evidence for a Germanic presence in late Roman Britain. Germanic mercenaries in the Roman army were garrisoned at coastal forts and inland towns. The withdrawal of Roman military support from the province in the early fifth century was closely followed by the middle of the fifth century with the appearance of Germanic-style cemeteries. Continental parallels argue for the subsequent immigration into eastern England in the sixth century of people from southern Norway.

The size and character of Germanic populations engaged in this transition remains contested. Some archaeologists argue that a few warrior bands from northern Germany and southern Scandinavia seized control of regional British polities while others consider the discontinuities in material culture and language as evidence of large-scale migration. The lack of any clear continuity of urban life and the evidence for a breakdown in the rural villa system from the Roman to the Anglo-Saxon period indicates a dislocation of the economic structure. Likewise, the replacement of Celtic dialects with Old English speech and the renaming of the landscape with Old English place names indicate extensive Anglo-Saxon settlement. Although the extent and character of British continuity is contested, British kingdoms survived in the highland zone, Wales, and the southwest. Some of these kingdoms, such as Elmet, which lost its autonomy to the Anglo-Saxon king Edwin of Northumbria in 617, were subsumed in the process of political centralization. Recognition that in early medieval Europe ethnic identity was fluid and situational has called for a reassessment of the extent and character of native British survival and assimilation. Indeed, no single model adequately accommodates the regional variability now recognized during the settlement period.

CEMETERIES

Early Anglo-Saxon England remains best known archaeologically through more than one thousand cemeteries, many of which were unsystematically excavated during the eighteenth and nineteenth

centuries. Unfortunately, the relationship between cemeteries and the settlements that they served is poorly understood, as few excavations include both types of evidence. However, at Mucking (Essex) and West Heslerton (Yorkshire), the settlements display a structural uniformity that implies a social equality not apparent in the diverse burial assemblages of the adjacent cemeteries.

During the early Anglo-Saxon period (c. 450–c. 650), two main burial practices predominated: cremation and inhumation. Cremation required burning the dressed body of the deceased on a pyre. A selection of the burned bone, generally from the head and chest, was then buried either directly into the earth or enclosed in a ceramic urn, or more rarely, a metal, cloth, or leather container prior to interment. Miniature toilet implements, perhaps serving as symbolic substitutes for the full-scale items, were occasionally included with the cremated bone. Cremation pits, sometimes marked by stones, contained a single deposit or a cluster of vessels. Wooden post-built structures, perhaps housing the cremated remains of a family grouping, have been identified at Apple Down (Sussex) and Berinsfield (Oxfordshire).

Inhumation burials required the dressed but unburned body to be deposited into a rectangular, often wood- or stone-lined pit. Rarely, an elaborate wooden chamber, as at Spong Hill (Norfolk), or a boat, as at Snape (Suffolk) or at Sutton Hoo (Suffolk), was incorporated into the burial structure. At some sites, such as Spong Hill and Morningthorpe (Norfolk), ring ditches enclosed a number of graves. The dead were furnished with weaponry, drinking and eating paraphernalia, foodstuffs, and tools, and in some cases were covered with plant fronds, animal hide, or fabric.

During the course of the sixth century, burial in large cremation cemeteries, such as Elsham (Lincolnshire) and Newark (Nottinghamshire) was generally replaced by the use of numerous smaller predominantly inhumation graveyards, such as Welbeck Hill in Irby-on-Humber (Lincolnshire) and Fonaby (Lincolnshire). The trend toward smaller inhumation cemeteries may reflect a change in the sense of group cohesion from membership within a larger quasi-ethnic group to membership within a localized community or may reflect the waning of ancestral claims to community identity. However,

this general pattern should not obscure the fact that in most areas, cremation and inhumation rites were practiced simultaneously, often in the same cemetery, and that cremation continued into the seventh century.

From the end of the sixth century, a marked change occurred in burial practices. This transition is now believed to have connected with structural changes in the political system and in the religious and economic authorities as sources of power shifted from kinship to kingship. Many existing cemeteries were abandoned, and new burial grounds were established. Weapons occurred less frequently in male burials and, when found, were concentrated in well-furnished graves, suggesting that weapon burial shifted to an index of social, rather than “ethnic,” concerns. For women, the regional dress styles apparent during the sixth century were replaced during the seventh century with a neoclassical “national” costume influenced by the Frankish kingdom. Throughout the seventh century and into the early eighth century, the appearance of elite, generally isolated graves, interred under newly constructed barrows or inserted into prehistoric monuments and furnished with weapon assemblages, jewelry of gold, silver, and semiprecious stones, and feasting paraphernalia suggest the development of an increasingly ranked society with territorial interests. The symbolism expressed through burial rituals and furnishings at rich barrow cemeteries such as Taplow (Buckinghamshire) and Sutton Hoo may have asserted an independent pagan ideology. At the same time, unfurnished, west-east-oriented supine inhumations became increasingly prevalent. Although associated by past archaeologists with the dictates of Christian burial, these unfurnished graves may represent factors such as the cessation of competitive display as a result of the consolidation of political authority or the transfer of wealth from deposition in graves to the more worldly payments required by political or religious authorities.

The influence of Christian beliefs on cemetery location and burial ritual becomes apparent from the seventh to ninth centuries. While interment in rural cemeteries continued, the new construction of early minster or monastery churches accommodated burials. In the late Anglo-Saxon period (c. 850–c. 1066) the eternal blessings of Christianity were sought by interring the dead in proximity to the

church. While a range of burial types—including charcoal burials; interment in wooden chests or coffins, or sarcophaguses, or under grave covers; and graves with stone packing—have been encountered at some churches, other religious foundations, such as the cathedral cemetery at North Elmham (Norfolk), manifest uniformity in burial practice. In the countryside, the fragmentation of large estates from the late ninth century produced a new wave of cemeteries, often associated with churches or chapels, that was complementary to the established pattern of small burial plots within or adjacent to settlements.

Execution cemeteries that served as repositories for those prohibited from burial in consecrated ground appear in the late ninth century. At these sites, perhaps most notably Stockbridge Down (Suffolk), the bodies appear to have suffered violence before or immediately after death. At Banstead Common (Surrey) and Goblin Works, Leatherhead (Surrey), the reuse of early Anglo-Saxon cemeteries may have been an explicit statement in later times of the condemned’s exclusion from Christian churchyard burial.

AGRICULTURE

Although the Roman system of food production and distribution is assumed not to have survived the withdrawal of imperial authority, zooarchaeological evidence indicates that the Anglo-Saxon immigrants followed agricultural practices similar to those of Romano-British farmers. In general, the existing coaxial field systems continued in use, and it is postulated that some local Roman estates were transferred intact to their British or Anglo-Saxon successors. At West Stow (Suffolk), a rural settlement in use from the fifth to seventh centuries, Anglo-Saxon plant and animal husbandry evidence indicates a mixed agricultural economy. Plant cultivars included barley (naked and hulled), oats, wheat, rye, hemp, flax, woad, vines, and possibly beans. Although at West Stow sheep or goats numerically predominate, cattle provided the major meat source by weight. Pig and horse were also present.

The Middle Saxon period (c. 650–c. 850) introduced changes in agricultural practices, including new cereal crops, use of water mills and meadows, farming of open fields, production of animal sur-

pluses, and adoption of the moldboard plow, which enabled the increased production of agricultural yields.

SETTLEMENTS

Settlement evidence suggests a range of forms from clusters of small sunken-featured huts (*Gruben-häuser*) to communities of longhouses or halls to royal complexes with public buildings. Building types in early Anglo-Saxon England have been paralleled by those excavated at contemporary continental sites such as Feddersen Wierde, near Bremenhaven (Germany), Wijster (Netherlands), and Vorbasse (Denmark).

Evidence from the early Anglo-Saxon complex at Mucking suggests that rural communities were small, dispersed, and impermanent. At West Stow, roughly contemporary hall buildings, surrounded by sunken-featured huts, are interpreted as single family farmsteads. Finds of loom weights and evidence for animal stalling in the sunken-featured buildings suggest that the general domestic activities conducted in the halls were complemented in these outlying structures by specialized tasks such as textile production or livestock housing. Population estimates for the settlement at West Stow at any time range from twenty to forty individuals.

Bede's account of the villa of *ad Gefrin*, the royal residence of the Northumbrian king Edwin in the late 620s (*Ecclesiastical History of the English People* book 2, chap. 14), provides a context for the archaeological discoveries at Yeavinger (Northumberland). The earliest buildings at Yeavinger include posthole and plank-in-trench structures similar to those at West Stow and Mucking. Subsequent construction of timber halls, a livestock enclosure, and a curved grandstand indicate a change in site function and importance. Yeavinger appears to have served as a royal estate center, a type of settlement governed by a peripatetic ruler who received tribute, hosted feasts, and settled disputes during his residence. At Yeavinger, the investment of labor and resources in residential and ritual structures implies a belief, if not a reality borne out by the documentary record, that kingship was a permanent office.

Middle Saxon high-status estates also served as industrial and trading centers. Excavations at Flixborough (Humberside) and Brandon (Suffolk) have produced evidence for large-scale textile man-

ufacture, carpentry, bone working, leatherworking, and metalworking. Finds of nonlocal goods indicate that these types of settlements, strategically positioned to exploit local and interregional communications, controlled extractive and exchange networks. The ability of these sites to serve the joint interests of ecclesiastical and political powers may explain the ecclesiastical tenor of some Middle Saxon "productive" sites. In this context, the legitimization and sanctification of royal authority offered by the Christian church may have facilitated the control of trading networks and the consolidation of land and resources under ambitious rulers.

More important than estate centers were royal centers described as *civitas* or *urbs*. From the seventh century, former Roman towns such as York (Yorkshire) and Canterbury (Kent), functioned as royal centers. Evidence for a diversity of urban settlements appears as early as the late seventh and eighth centuries with the cathedral town of Canterbury, the minster town of Reading (Berkshire), the possibly fortified towns of Cambridge (Cambridgeshire) and Hereford, and trading centers (emporia) at London, Hamwic (Southampton, Hampshire), Ipswich (Suffolk), and York. The population of Hamwic is conservatively estimated to have numbered two thousand to three thousand.

In rural areas, charter evidence indicates the practice of open-field agriculture, with crop rotation and cultivation of narrow common fields, as early as the tenth century. The nucleated villages attributed to this time and earlier are implicit in the communal labor requirements of the open-field system and archaeologically attested by the increase in concentrations of late Saxon pottery. While this settlement shift may have been stimulated by soil exhaustion and population pressures, nucleation may also indicate the attempts of Anglo-Saxon lords to maximize production from their lands. Defended Late Saxon manor houses, such as those at Sulgrave (Northamptonshire) or Faccombe Netherton (Hampshire) anticipate the later fortified Norman manor houses and castles. The development into parish churches of village churches serving the spiritual needs of estate laborers accounts for the frequent corollary between later ecclesiastical parishes and tenth and eleventh century estate boundaries.

Although dispersed rural settlements continued to exist into the Late Saxon period (c. 850–c.

1066), urban settlements assumed increasing importance. While some urban sites developed from ecclesiastical or economic stimuli, a group of fortified towns (*burhs*) were founded in the late ninth century to protect the interests of the West Saxon king Alfred (r. 871–899) against Viking incursions. These planned towns, as listed in the *Burghal Hidage*, include reused Roman walled towns, such as Winchester (Hampshire), newly founded towns located on open sites, such as Oxford (Oxfordshire), and new towns sited on promontories, such as Lydford (Devon) and Lewes (East Sussex). Use of these fortified towns in the early tenth century enabled Edward the Elder (r. 899–924) to conquer the Danelaw lands to the north and to unify the kingdom of England. As well as providing security, these fortified towns structured trade through a network of regional market centers. Towns, such as London, developed a distinctive architecture of timber buildings fronting on graveled streets. The Domesday Book, an assessment roll enumerated under William the Conqueror, indicates that by the late eleventh century as much as one-tenth of the population lived in towns.

TRADE AND EXCHANGE

Anglo-Saxon England was incorporated into larger and overlapping cultural spheres centered in the Frankish kingdom and Scandinavia. The appearance from the late fifth century onward of Anglo-Saxon metalwork in Continental Frankish graves indicates the maintenance through intermarriage, immigration, and trade of close cross-Channel links. Competition for trade goods produced conflicts between local groups and facilitated the concentration of power in the hands of successful leaders. Rulers who could control access to and redistribute luxury imports, exploit relationships with Continental elites, and successfully manipulate the symbolism of new ideas were best placed to promote their own expansionist concerns.

The development of commercial trading centers (emporia) in the seventh and subsequent centuries was one consequence of the increasing sociopolitical elevation and territorial control of the fifth- and sixth-century leaders. Each major Anglo-Saxon kingdom controlled at least one emporium. The rise of the emporia presupposes an integrative process of extracting, processing, and distributing agricultural

products that would have been impossible in the fragmented political circumstances prior to the seventh century. The goods that passed through the emporia were linked to local markets or exchange sites at smaller, probably nonurban settlements. Archaeological finds demonstrate that the Continent supplied Anglo-Saxon England with prestige goods such as precious metals, gemstones, ceramics, jewelry, textiles, glassware, and weaponry, as well as more utilitarian lava quern stones and soapstone vessels. Documentary sources suggest that in exchange the English provided slaves, lead, honey, and textiles.

By the late seventh century, many members of the Anglo-Saxon elite had also adopted a Roman Christian ideology from the continent. A mutually beneficial patron-client relationship existed between the Anglo-Saxon kings and the Christian church. The church promoted the image of the English people in insular literary sources for the purposes of political and religious cohesion. In the late eighth century, the church formalized the sacral role of kingship through ritual anointing and synodic degree. West Saxon and Mercian kings, seeking support for their dynastic ambitions, gave gifts of land and other resources to the church.

Despite the uncertainty surrounding the scale of settlement and disruption effected by the Vikings from the second half of the ninth century, the raids realigned and even enhanced systems of exchange. York, captured by the Vikings in 866, developed into a prosperous market town during the Viking period that produced crafts and traded locally and internationally in raw materials and luxury goods. Documentary accounts identify Danish merchants in York, as well as visits to other late Anglo-Saxon towns by merchants from Ireland, northern France, and Germany.

Early Anglo-Saxon England lacked a coin economy, as Roman coinage did not enter in bulk after the early fifth century and, during the sixth and early seventh centuries, imported Continental coins were valued as ornaments or bullion. The striking of gold *thrymsas* in the southeast, most notably at London, in the seventh century was superseded in the late seventh century by the circulation of debased silver-rich pennies, or *sceattas*. From the late eighth century, particularly during the reign of Offa of Mercia (757–796), coins often served as potent propaganda by incorporating the name of the issuing king

and his people. Edgar's (r. 959–975) major coinage reform, marked by a uniform currency and periodic recoinage, established minting practices that lasted through the Norman Conquest. By c. 973, moneyers at over sixty mints produced a national coinage used for the payment of taxes, fines, and other transactions.

TERRITORIES AND BOUNDARIES

From the late fifth century, the political structure of early Anglo-Saxon England was characterized by groupings that were fluid both in extent and authority. By the late sixth or early seventh centuries, however, archaeological and textual sources indicate that these popular confederations had allied into larger units, presaging the formal kingdoms of the later Anglo-Saxon period. Philological evidence suggests the decline of regional dialects of Old English by 600 in favor of a more uniform English language. The development from popular to territorial concerns may be indicated by the construction of physical boundaries.

The reuse of ancient monuments as early Anglo-Saxon burial sites has been associated with the process of kingdom formation. Initial associations of ancient monuments with large fifth- and sixth-century cemeteries suggest that monument reuse was relevant to the construction of communal concepts of ancestry and identity. During the late sixth and seventh centuries, however, the increasing exclusivity of monument reuse suggests that elites appropriated existing attitudes about the past in order to identify themselves as heirs to a mythically established legacy, thus legitimizing their more worldly political strategies. During later Anglo-Saxon times, ancient monuments continued to be reused as boundary markers.

The modern notion of coherent political units circumscribed by static boundaries is anachronistic in early Anglo-Saxon England. Because, during the seventh and eighth centuries, political authority was vested in individual rulers, the extent of a "kingdom" waxed and waned with the king's career. Central to any consideration of Anglo-Saxon political geography is the putative tax register, the *Tribal Hidage*, believed to have been compiled for the ascendant Mercian overlords in the seventh century. Attempts to reconstruct the political geography of early Anglo-Saxon England generally employ top-

onymic, or place-name, evidence to assign the social units of the *Tribal Hidage* to specific locations. During the Middle Saxon period (c. 650–c. 850), the numerous polities cited in the *Tribal Hidage* had been subsumed by the dominant kingdoms of Mercia and Wessex.

From the eighth and ninth centuries, documentary and archaeological evidence indicates the development of political units whose integrity was not dependent upon personal authority and which outlived the death of their ruler. The obligation to provide men and material for military service and civic constructions appears in eighth-century Mercian charters. The massive linear earthwork known as Offa's Dyke, which runs along the modern English-Welsh border, exemplified the process of consolidation exercised by the Mercian king Offa (r. 757–796). At Offa's Dyke, the labors of individual work crews, identified through archaeological excavation, demonstrate the community discharge of obligations.

THE POLITICAL ORGANIZATION OF ANGLO-SAXON ENGLAND

Bede, writing in the second quarter of the eighth century, used Latin to describe the powerful men of Anglo-Saxon England. Only a few relevant documents, including some Mercian charters and the laws of the Kentish kings, appeared in the vernacular prior to the ninth century. Most Old English texts, such as the laws of Alfred (r. 871–899), the *Anglo-Saxon Chronicle*, and the translation of the *Ecclesiastical History of the English People*, originated in Mercian or West Saxon contexts during the late ninth century.

Three status levels may be inferred from Bede's account: overlord, *rex* (king), and *principes*. At the apex were the overlords, who ruled over many men, including *reges*, or kings. Bede (*Ecclesiastical History of the English People* book 2, chap. 5) enumerated seven overlords who, each in turn, had held sway over the English south of the Humber: Ælle of Sussex (probably late fifth century), Caewlin of Wessex (560–591/592), Æthelbert of Kent (560–616), Rædwald of East Anglia, Edwin of Northumbria (616–633), Oswald of Northumbria (634–642), and Oswy (642–670). This list of overlords reappears in the *Anglo-Saxon Chronicle*, where they are described with the problematic term, "rulers of

Britain” or “wide rulers” (*bretwaldas*, or possibly *brytenwaldas*). In Bede’s account, below the overlords were the *reges* of the major kingdoms of Northumbria, Mercia, Wessex, East Anglia, Sussex, and Kent. Bede most frequently described the lesser potentates, who formed the third rung on the ladder of authority, as *princeps*.

Recognizing that political organization was grounded in fluid patron-client relationships can diminish the confusion presented by kingship terminology. The same conditional relationships, in which a ruler’s power and prestige grew through his patronage of less-powerful client leaders, characterized relationships between the polities. The successful leaders of the larger extended families expanded their influence—through alliances, exchange, conquest, asylum, and intermarriage—over ever-wider areas. These polities eventually reached such size as to be characterized by contemporaneous writers, such as Bede, as “kingdoms” and “subkingdoms” and their leaders as higher- and lower-order kings.

Among the Anglo-Saxons of the sixth and seventh centuries, a king did not assume his kingdom borne on a well-oiled mechanism of succession. In order to be considered for the throne, contenders had to demonstrate legal title through real or fictitious descent. Gift exchange, motivated by social consumption and extolled in saga literature, structured early medieval society through systems of reward and loyalty. Historical records indicate that by the late eighth and ninth centuries, rulers such as the Mercian king Offa (r. 757–796) exploited genealogical connections and patronage to secure and legitimize their authority. By the tenth century, a monarchy descended from a single lineage and invested with sanctity, whose authority was supported by military force and taxation, heralded the Anglo-Saxon state.

See also **Emporia** (vol. 1, part 7); **Ipswich** (vol. 2, part 7); **Angles, Saxons, and Jutes** (vol. 2, part 7); **Spong Hill** (vol. 2, part 7); **Sutton Hoo** (vol. 2, part 7); **West Stow** (vol. 2, part 7); **Winchester** (vol. 2, part 7); **Viking York** (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Andrews, P., ed. *Excavations at Hamwic*. Vol. 2, *Excavations at Six Dials*. CBA Research Report 109. London: Council for British Archaeology, 1997.

Bassett, Steve, ed. *The Origins of Anglo-Saxon Kingdoms*. London and New York: Leicester University Press, 1989.

Bruce-Mitford, Rupert L. S. *The Sutton Hoo Ship-Burial*. Vols. 1–3. London: British Museum, 1975–1983.

Campbell, James. *The Anglo-Saxon State*. London and New York: Hambledon and London, 2000.

Carver, Martin O. H. *Sutton Hoo: Burial Ground of Kings?* Philadelphia: University of Pennsylvania Press, 1998.

———, ed. *The Age of Sutton Hoo: The Seventh Century in North-Western Europe*. Woodbridge, U.K.: Boydell Press, 1992.

Colgrave, Bertram, and R. A. B. Mynors, trans. and eds. *Bede’s Ecclesiastical History of the English People*. Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1969.

Dickinson, Tania, and David Griffiths, eds. *The Making of Kingdoms*. Anglo-Saxon Studies in Archaeology and History, no. 10. Oxford: Oxbow, 1999.

Driscoll, Stephen T., and Margaret R. Niece, eds. *Power and Politics in Early Medieval Britain and Ireland*. Edinburgh: Edinburgh University Press, 1988.

Graham-Campbell, James, et al. *Vikings and the Danelaw: Select Papers from the Proceedings of the Thirteenth Viking Congress, Nottingham and York, 21–30 August 1997*. Oxford: Oxbow, 2001.

Hamerow, Helena. *Excavations at Mucking*. Vol. 2, *The Anglo-Saxon Settlement*. English Heritage Archaeological Report, no. 21. London: English Heritage and the British Museum Press, 1993.

Higham, N. J. *The Convert Kings: Power and Religious Affiliation in Early Anglo-Saxon England*. Manchester, U.K.: Manchester University Press, 1997.

Hines, John, ed. *The Anglo-Saxons from the Migration Period to the Eighth Century: An Ethnographic Perspective*. Woodbridge, U.K.: Boydell Press, 1997.

Lucy, Sam. *The Anglo-Saxon Way of Death: Burial Rites in Early England*. Stroud, Gloucestershire, U.K.: Sutton, 2000.

Lucy, Sam, and Andrew Reynolds, eds. *Burial in Early Medieval England and Wales*. Society for Medieval Archaeology Monograph, no. 17. London: Society for Medieval Archaeology, 2002.

Morton, A. D., ed. *Excavations at Hamwic*. Vol. 1, *Excavations 1946–83, Excluding Six Dials and Melbourne Street*. CBA Research Report, no. 84. London: Council for British Archaeology, 1992.

Reynolds, Andrew. *Later Anglo-Saxon England: Life and Landscape*. Stroud, Gloucestershire, U.K., and Charleston, S.C.: Tempus, 1999.

Sawyer, Peter H., and Ian N. Wood, eds. *Early Medieval Kingship*. Leeds: The Editors, 1977.

Vince, Alan G. *Saxon London: An Archaeological Investigation*. London: Seaby, 1990.

Welch, Martin. *English Heritage Book of Anglo-Saxon England*. London: Batsford, 1992.

West, Stanley. *West Stow: The Anglo-Saxon Village*. 2 vols. East Anglian Archaeology, no. 24. Ipswich, U.K.: Suffolk County Planning Department, 1985.

Yorke, Barbara A. E. *Kings and Kingdoms of Early Anglo-Saxon England*. London: Seaby, 1990.

GENEVIEVE FISHER

SPONG HILL

Spong Hill lies on the southern edge of the parish of North Elmham in central Norfolk, East Anglia, England. It is the site of an early Anglo-Saxon cemetery, known since finds from the site were first recorded in 1711. Following small-scale investigations in the 1950s and in 1969, complete excavation of the cemetery site was carried out between 1972 and 1981 by the Norfolk Archaeological Unit, funded by English Heritage and its predecessors. The project was directed by Peter Wade-Martins, Robert Carr, and (from 1975) by Catherine Hills, with support from many people, including especially Kenneth Penn and Robert Rickett. A team from Warsaw University participated in the early seasons. The site is published in the series East Anglian Archaeology Reports, and the finds are the property of the Norfolk Museums Service.

In addition to the Anglo-Saxon burials, features of prehistoric, Roman, and medieval date were also excavated. Several contemporary buildings lay within the cemetery, and part of a settlement immediately to the west was excavated by Andrew Rogerson in 1984. It is likely that other scattered settlements in the region used this cemetery as their central focus. A prehistoric barrow in the same field may have influenced the choice of site.

The significance of the cemetery lies in its size and near-complete investigation. At the end of the twentieth century it was the largest such site in England to have been fully excavated and published. Although many burials were damaged or incomplete, the overall size, extent, and internal organization of the cemetery can be reconstructed. A minimum of 2,400 cremations, from an estimated

original total of more than 3,000, and 57 inhumations were excavated. The original population has been calculated as between 446 and 768 individuals at any one time. The cemetery was in use from the later fifth century and probably throughout the sixth century A.D. There was some chronological zoning, with some early groups of burials in the middle of the site surrounded by later burials in a partly radial development. For a limited period some of the dead, possibly an elite group, were distinguished by being inhumed, buried together on the northeastern edge of the cemetery.

The inhumations survived in the acid sand largely as dark stains with occasional bone fragments but with preserved grave goods, mostly weapons and jewelry. Two large ring ditches, probably originally around barrows, surrounded respectively a pair of inhumations and a single large burial within a timber and turf chamber containing a sword, shield, spear, and bucket. Several apparently female burials were set into the ring ditch.

The cremations were contained in handmade decorated pots, apart from a few deposited in boxes or bags or placed directly in a pit. Analysis of the bones by Jacqueline McKinley showed that many could be aged and sexed. McKinley also reconstructed the cremation and burial ritual. Women's bodies had been laid out for cremation as for inhumation, dressed and wearing jewelry. Men, however, were cremated without the weapons found in a proportion of inhumations. In some cases whole animals, often horses, had also been cremated; in other cases only parts of animals were included, perhaps as food offerings. A selection of the cremated bones had been collected from the pyre, together with the partly melted remains of jewelry and dress fastenings, bags, spindle whorls (large beads, made most often of bone or fired clay, put on the ends of spindles), and glass or metal vessels. Miniature razors, tweezers, and knives, mostly unburned, as well as combs and playing pieces were also included, often but not exclusively with male burials. Through careful sieving many identifiable fragments of objects were retrieved. These finds at Spong Hill, where grave goods were found in about 70 percent of burials, transformed ideas as to the prevalence of grave goods in cremations. Previous distribution maps of early Anglo-Saxon finds were

biased against East Anglia, where cremation was common.

Some cremations were buried singly, but many were in pairs or groups. Some pairs contained the shared remains of one individual, whereas in others more than one person, often an adult and a child, had been put into one pot. Some paired burials contained human bones in one pot and mainly animal bones in the second pot.

A majority of the pots were decorated with linear and plastic designs. These included distinctive stamped patterns; some stamps were in the form of animals or runic letters. Many of the stamped pots can be grouped into series related by identical stamp impressions and so identified as contemporary products of individuals or workshops. Some Spong Hill pots can be linked to pots from Lincolnshire and Yorkshire, confirming broad regional connections among East Anglia, the areas around the Wash, and Northumbria.

Analysis of the finds shows clear connections with the regions of northern Germany that the Venerable Bede, the Anglo-Saxon scholar, described as the homelands of the Anglo-Saxons, although the connections are not exclusively with the Angeln region (approximately modern Schleswig-Holstein) that is claimed as the home of the Angles, who are said to have migrated to East Anglia during the fifth century. Many of the brooch types do find their closest parallels in Angeln, but stamped decoration on pots, common at Spong Hill, is very rare north of the Elbe, whereas it does occur in Lower Saxony. Exact parallels for material from Spong Hill can be found around the whole of the North Sea zone, from the Netherlands to Denmark and beyond, from the fifth and sixth centuries A.D. Ivory at the site came ultimately from Africa, via the Mediterranean and probably southern Germany. These connections lasted for generations, suggesting ongoing contact rather than a simple transfer at any one point in time.

Relationships between material culture and ethnicity are complex and not easily unraveled. Peoples and pottery styles cannot be neatly defined and equated. Long-term trading and cultural contacts across the North Sea and the spread of religious beliefs and practices were more important as mechanisms for change than replacement of one popula-

tion by another. Successful immigrant leaders would have brought their immediate followers from home and would have encouraged others to join them, but they may then have imposed their culture on a population that was still substantially native—and most likely they adopted aspects of native culture themselves. It is probable that some, maybe many, of those buried at Spong Hill had Continental ancestors, whether “Angle,” “Saxon,” or “Jute,” but others—however “Anglo-Saxon” their jewelry seems—may in fact be descendants of Romano-Britons.

See also **Angles, Saxons, and Jutes** (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Hills, Catherine M. *Origins of the English*. London: Duckworth, 2003.
- . “From Isidore to Isotopes: Ivory Rings in Early Medieval Graves.” In *Image and Power in the Archaeology of Early Medieval Britain: Essays in Honour of Rosemary Cramp*. Edited by Helena Hamerow and Arthur MacGregor, pp. 131–146. Oxford: Oxbow Books, 2001.
- . *The Anglo-Saxon Cemetery at Spong Hill, North Elmham, Norfolk, Part I*. East Anglian Archaeology, report no. 6. Norfolk, U.K.: Gressenhall, 1977.
- Hills, Catherine M., and Kenneth J. Penn. *The Anglo-Saxon Cemetery at Spong Hill, North Elmham, Norfolk, Part II*. East Anglian Archaeology, report no. 11. Norfolk, U.K.: Gressenhall, 1981.
- Hills, Catherine M., Kenneth J. Penn, and Robert J. Rickett. *The Anglo-Saxon Cemetery at Spong Hill, North Elmham, Norfolk, Part V*. East Anglian Archaeology, report no. 67. Norfolk, U.K.: Gressenhall, 1994.
- . *The Anglo-Saxon Cemetery at Spong Hill, North Elmham, Norfolk, Part IV*. East Anglian Archaeology, report no. 34. Norfolk, U.K.: Gressenhall, 1987.
- . *The Anglo-Saxon Cemetery at Spong Hill, North Elmham, Norfolk, Part III*. East Anglian Archaeology, report no. 21. Norfolk, U.K.: Gressenhall, 1984.
- Lucy, Sam. *The Anglo-Saxon Way of Death: Burial Rites in Early England*. Stroud, U.K.: Sutton, 2000.
- McKinley, Jacqueline. *The Anglo-Saxon Cemetery at Spong Hill, North Elmham, Norfolk, Part VIII*. East Anglian Archaeology, report no. 69. Norfolk, U.K.: Gressenhall, 1994.
- Rickett, Robert. *The Anglo-Saxon Cemetery at Spong Hill, North Elmham, Norfolk, Part VII: The Iron Age, Roman, and Early Saxon Settlement*. East Anglian Archaeology, report no. 73. Norfolk, U.K.: Gressenhall, 1995.

CATHERINE HILLS

SUTTON HOO

Sutton Hoo is the name given to a small group of at least eighteen burial mounds located on a terrace 30 meters above the River Deben in Suffolk, south-eastern England. It is interpreted as a burial ground for the pagan leaders of the Anglo-Saxon kingdom of East Anglia, established in the early years of the seventh century A.D. as a reaction to the Christian missions to Kent.

Sutton Hoo was first investigated in 1938 at the behest of the landowner, Edith May Pretty, by a local archaeologist, Basil Brown, who trenched mounds 2, 3, and 4 discovering that each had been dug earlier and inferring their Anglo-Saxon date from scraps of metal. In 1939 Brown returned at Mrs. Pretty's invitation and dug a large trench through mound 1, where he defined a ship some 27 meters long with a collapsed burial chamber at its center. A team of experienced archaeologists led by Charles Phillips of Cambridge University was assembled hastily; this group recovered 267 parts of artifacts made of gold, silver, bronze, iron, wood, textile, and fur—together constituting the richest grave ever excavated in Britain.

The study of the find (between 1945 and 1975) by Rupert Bruce-Mitford of the British Museum included a second field campaign from 1965 to 1971, which completed the excavation of mound 1, confirmed the existence of mound 5, and endorsed the presence of an earlier prehistoric settlement, reported by Brown. In 1983 the Society of Antiquaries of London, in partnership with the British Museum, the British Broadcasting Corporation, and the Suffolk County Council, launched a third campaign. The field team led by Martin Carver of the University of York excavated one fourth of the 4-hectare cemetery, mapped 10 hectares of its surroundings, and surveyed 10 square kilometers of the River Deben. In 1998 the site and its surrounding estates were given into the hands of the National Trust to be cared for in perpetuity, and a visitor center was constructed and opened in 2002.

The third campaign offered a new account of the character, date, and purpose of the Sutton Hoo cemetery. Use of the site had begun in the Late Neolithic to Early Bronze Age (c. 2000 B.C.), when the land was divided into agricultural units. The

production of grain then alternated with stock-breeding—a pattern typical of agriculture of the Breckland region (an ancient heath), which continues to the present day. The Anglo-Saxons inherited a landscape of earthworks of Iron Age fields bounded by tracks leading inland from the river. The earliest Anglo-Saxon burials in the area are located near Tranmer House, the site of the visitor center; they date to the sixth century and include cremations, one of which is contained in a bronze bowl placed in the center of small ring ditches.

The Sutton Hoo cemetery itself was a new venture, which began around A.D. 600 about 500 meters farther south. The first burials were cremations in bronze bowls, accompanied by gaming pieces and cremated horses, sheep, cattle, and pigs, placed in pits beneath mounds about 10–15 meters in diameter, laid out in a line (mounds 5, 6, and 7). These burials had been much disturbed by later excavators, but they appear to be the memorials of young men, at least one of whom had blade injuries. The next burial is thought to be mound 17, where a young man was laid in a tree-trunk coffin in about A.D. 610, accompanied by a sword with a horn handle, two spears, a shield, a bucket, a cauldron, and a haversack containing lamb chops. At the head of the coffin was deposited a bridle, saddle, and body harness equipped with silver pendants and gilt bronze roundels, pendants, and strap ends. A stallion was buried in an adjacent pit and is assumed to have lain beneath the same mound.

Two ship burials were added to the cemetery in about A.D. 625. In mound 2 a ship about 20 meters long had been placed over the top of a chamber grave (2 × 6 × 2 meters deep). The person memorialized, probably a man, had lain in the chamber accompanied by a sword, shield, five knives, a cauldron, an ironbound tub, a blue glass jar, and drinking horns. Robbers and excavators had visited the grave at least three times, and the assemblage therefore had to be inferred from scraps and a chemical plot of the chamber floor.

In mound 1 the ship first found by Basil Brown had been positioned in a large trench, and a timber chamber 5.5 by 3 meters had been erected amidships. The dead man probably originally lay in a large tree-trunk coffin (although this theory remains the subject of controversy) with a pile of garments, shoes, and toilet items at his feet. Above him



Fig. 1. The barrow cemetery at Sutton Hoo as viewed from the east. © MARTIN CARVER AND THE UNIVERSITY OF YORK. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

(perhaps on the coffin lid) were items of personal regalia with drinking horns, maple-wood and burr-wood bottles, and a large Byzantine silver dish probably carrying food. The regalia included a sword, a decorated purse, and two shoulder clasps, all made of solid gold inlaid with garnets imported from western Asia, and an iron helmet with bronze zoomorphic decoration. Toward the western end were stacked spears and an iron stand interpreted as a standard or a weapon stand, along with a decorated whetstone, interpreted as imitating an imperial scepter. Three large cauldrons, one with an ornamental iron chain 3.45 meters long, dominated the eastern end.

After these ship burials, burial continued intermittently at the site during the later part of the seventh century. The chamber grave of a woman, subsequently pillaged, originally was furnished richly with silver adornments, including a chatelaine, the symbolic key of a woman of high rank (mound 14),

and two graves of adolescents were accompanied by a knife and a chatelaine, respectively.

In the late seventh or early eighth century the Sutton Hoo cemetery was adopted as a place of execution. Sixteen graves were found around mound 5 and another twenty-three on the eastern edge of the burial mounds, surrounding the site of a tree that was replaced by a post-construction probably representing a gallows. Some of the bodies of the execution victims had had their hands or feet tied, and others had been deposited face down, kneeling, or crouching. Radiocarbon dating suggests that capital punishment was practiced at Sutton Hoo from about A.D. 700 to A.D. 1000, at which point map evidence indicates that the gallows apparently was removed to the site of the new bridge across the Deben, constructed 2 kilometers north. The site then was abandoned, apart from sporadic attention from farmers and warreners, until the sixteenth century, when it was heavily plowed and the majority

of mounds robbed by means of a shaft driven from the top. Most mounds were again trenched in 1860; only mounds 1 and 17 were spared.

After the discoveries of 1939 the site was interpreted as the likely burial ground of the kings of East Anglia, the territory in which it lay. The occupant of mound 1 was held to be Redwald, who, according to the Venerable Bede, an English historian of the early eighth century, was a major figure in England up to his death in about A.D. 625. The most recent excavation campaign has broadened this interpretation, showing that Sutton Hoo was part of a general reaction to Christianization, in which pagan Scandinavian practices, such as cremation in bronze bowls and ship burial, were signaled. The making of the mound 1 ship burial itself has been reinterpreted by Carver as a multilayered “composition” in which allusions to contemporary politics are gathered with the aim of declaring ideological alliance with Scandinavia against the Christian Continent. In this sense, the great ship burial is a dramatic statement comparable to the Anglo-Saxon epic poem *Beowulf*, which describes the deeds and deaths of fifth- to seventh-century heroes, including burial in a ship. The pagan alliance failed around the end of the seventh century, at which point the burial ground of pagan kings became a place where the new Christian leaders disposed of dissidents.

See also **History and Archaeology** (vol. 2, part 7); **Jewelry** (vol. 2, part 7); **Anglo-Saxon England** (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Bruce-Mitford, Rupert. *The Sutton Hoo Ship-Burial*. 3 vols. London: British Museum Press, 1975–1983.
- Carver, Martin O. H. “Burial as Poetry: The Context of Treasure in Anglo-Saxon Graves.” In *Treasure in the Medieval West*. Edited by Elizabeth M. Tyler, pp. 25–48. York, U.K.: York Medieval Press, 2000.
- . *Sutton Hoo: Burial Ground of Kings?* Philadelphia: University of Pennsylvania Press, 1998.

MARTIN CARVER

WEST STOW

The excavation of the Early Anglo-Saxon village of West Stow in Suffolk, England, opened a new chap-

ter in the archaeological study of Anglo-Saxon England. Although many pagan Anglo-Saxon cemeteries and burials were excavated throughout the nineteenth and twentieth centuries, very few settlement sites were investigated archaeologically before the 1960s. The site of the West Stow village is on a sandy terrace overlooking the Lark River in Northwest Suffolk. Under the direction of Stanley West, almost the entire Early Anglo-Saxon village at West Stow was excavated during eight field seasons between 1965 and 1972. These excavations shed new light on settlement patterns and subsistence practices of the earliest Anglo-Saxon inhabitants of eastern England.

The West Stow area has long been recognized as an archaeologically important region. In the mid-nineteenth century, workers who were seeking ballast for barges discovered an Early Anglo-Saxon cemetery near the village site. Although the workers collected many Anglo-Saxon artifacts, the cemetery site was never excavated properly. As a result, archaeologists currently are unable to determine which items were buried together. The objects recovered from the cemetery include weapons, jewelry, and a stone coffin. In addition, Roman pottery kilns were found on the site in 1940. The late Roman site of Icklingham, still under excavation, is located about 4 kilometers (about 2 miles) west of the West Stow village. Icklingham is a large open site that may have served as a market center or possibly as the center of a large Roman estate.

A primary goal of the West Stow village excavations was to understand the plan of the Early Anglo-Saxon settlement. Excavations at the site revealed seven small rectangular timber halls surrounded by about seventy smaller buildings. The smaller structures are known as sunken-featured buildings (SFBs), because they were built over roughly rectangular pits that were about 0.5 meters deep. One to three postholes, which would have held upright posts, were sunk into the short ends of the pits. These posts would have supported the roofs of the SFBs. The halls probably were the main farmsteads, and the SFBs seem to have served as workshops and farm outbuildings. For example, large numbers of loom weights were recovered from SFB 15, suggesting that this building may have served as a weaving shed. Based on the number of halls, the West

Stow settlement included about seven individual farms.

Artifactual evidence indicates that the West Stow village was inhabited from the early fifth century to the mid-seventh century. Pottery and metalwork suggest that the village was first occupied in about A.D. 420. The presence of Ipswich ware, distinctive kiln-fired pottery that was produced on a slow wheel, indicates that the village must have been inhabited until about A.D. 650. Detailed chronological analyses indicate that no more than three or four farmsteads were occupied at any one time, so West Stow was probably more of a hamlet than a true village.

One of the main goals of the West Stow excavation was to study Early Anglo-Saxon farming and animal husbandry practices. The technique of flotation was developed in the 1960s to recover small seeds and other plant materials from archaeological soils. West Stow was one of the first sites in Britain where flotation techniques were used. Remains of wheat, rye, barley, and oats were recovered from several of the Anglo-Saxon features at West Stow. Some of the fifth-century features produced the remains of spelt wheat (*Triticum spelta*), a form of wheat that was grown commonly in Roman Britain. The presence of this variety of wheat may indicate some degree of continuity between Roman and Early Anglo-Saxon farming practices. By the seventh century, however, spelt wheat seems to have disappeared from Anglo-Saxon agriculture. It was replaced by other varieties of wheat and rye.

The West Stow site produced more than 180,000 animal bone fragments that could be used to study Anglo-Saxon animal husbandry and hunting practices. These faunal remains have shown that the denizens of West Stow kept herds of cattle, sheep, and pigs. The cattle probably were grazed on the rich pastures along the Lark River edge, while the sheep would have been herded on the drier upland areas behind the site. Pigs were most numerous in the early fifth century; most likely they were herded in the wooded areas along the river terraces. Herding was supplemented by the occasional hunting of red deer, roe deer, and waterfowl; poultry keeping; and fishing for pike and perch in the Lark River. The early Anglo-Saxons also kept a small number of horses. These animals, which were the size of large ponies, may have been used for riding

and traction, but they also were eaten on occasion. The large, straight-limbed Anglo-Saxon dogs were about the size of modern German shepherds. They may have been used as hunting, herding, and guard dogs.

One of the most difficult questions for archaeologists to answer is exactly who lived at the West Stow village. Based on traditional historical evidence, the early Anglo-Saxons were seen as migrants from continental Europe who entered Britain shortly after the withdrawal of Roman military power in about A.D. 410. Later scholarship has suggested that the Anglo-Saxons may have been a small military elite that took control of eastern England in the fifth century. In that case, the denizens of West Stow may have been native Britons who adopted Anglo-Saxon material culture, including pottery, metalwork, and building styles, from their Continental overlords. While it may never be known with certainty who lived in West Stow village, the archaeological evidence for spelt cultivation points to significant economic continuity between the Romans and the early Anglo-Saxons.

A program of experimental reconstruction of the West Stow farm buildings was begun in 1974. Several SFBs and a single hall have been reassembled using early medieval tools and techniques. These buildings currently are part of a county park that is open to the public.

See also **Ipswich** (vol. 2, part 7); **Animal Husbandry** (vol. 2, part 7); **Agriculture** (vol. 2, part 7); **Anglo-Saxon England** (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Crabtree, Pam J. *West Stow: Early Anglo-Saxon Animal Husbandry*. East Anglian Archaeology 47. Ipswich, U.K.: Suffolk County Department of Planning, 1989.
- West, Stanley. *West Stow: The Anglo-Saxon Village*. East Anglian Archaeology 24. Ipswich, U.K.: Suffolk County Department of Planning, 1985.

PAM J. CRABTREE

WINCHESTER

Winchester, Roman Venta Belgarum, the principal royal city of Anglo-Saxon England, is today the ad-

ministrative center for the county of Hampshire in southern England. To a great extent, the archaeology of Winchester was still terra incognita in 1961 when the first large-scale excavation took place. Nothing certain was known of its origins and almost nothing of the plan or development of the Roman town. As for Winchester after the Romans, it did not exist as an organized field of archaeological enquiry. The contrast between the written evidence for the importance of early medieval Winchester and the virtual absence of an archaeology of that period compelled attention. The aim of the work that the Winchester Excavations Committee began in 1961 was, according to “The Study of Winchester” (1990),

to undertake excavations, both in advance of building projects, and on sites not so threatened, aimed at studying the development of Winchester as a town from its earliest origins to the establishment of the modern city. The centre of interest is the city itself, not any one period of its past, nor any one part of its remains. But we can hope that this approach will in particular throw light upon the end of the Roman city and on the establishment and development of the Saxon town, problems as vital to our understanding of urban development in this country, as they are difficult to solve. Further it is essential to this approach that the study and interpretation of the documentary evidence should go hand in hand with archaeological research.

It was also realized from the start, as stated in the same publication, that this would have to be “a broadly based exploration of the fabric of the city, across the full range of variation in wealth, class, and occupation. This involved more than gross distinctions between castle, palace, and monastery on the one hand and the ‘ordinary’ inhabited areas of the city on the other.” This was the founding manifesto of urban archaeology, copied in both concept and execution in a multitude of towns and countries.

Eleven years of excavation followed, for ten or more weeks each summer, aided by two-hundred student volunteers from over twenty-five countries working on four major sites and many smaller ones across the city and suburbs. In 1968 the Winchester Research Unit was set up to prepare the results for publication in a series entitled *Winchester Studies*. In 1972, following the end of the major campaign of excavations, the post of City Rescue Archaeologist was set up to make observations of sites threatened

by development and to carry out excavations as needed. That work continues today on a permanent basis as part of the Winchester City Museums Service.

EARLIER PREHISTORIC CONTEXT AND THE IRON AGE

Situated where the River Itchen cuts through the chalk downs on its way to Southampton Water and the sea, the city is a natural focus of long-distance communication from east to west and north to south. The area may have been settled in the Late Neolithic period or perhaps earlier. From the third century B.C., during the Iron Age, people occupied St. Catharine’s Hill, on the east bank of the Itchen, south of the later city. The summit of the hill was later encircled by a line of bank and ditch dominating the river valley below, but these defenses were destroyed about the middle of the first century B.C. At that point, the focus of settlement shifted upstream and to the other side of the river, which became the site of the future city. There, a roughly rectangular area of about 20 hectares was enclosed by a ditch and bank with entrances on all four sides through which the major lines of communication had to pass. Now known as the Oram’s Arbour enclosure, this was a regionally and strategically important site, as fragments of Mediterranean wine jars (amphorae) show. Occupied for some fifty years, the enclosure was long abandoned when the Romans passed through in A.D. 43.

VENTA BELGARUM

There is no continuity between the Iron Age settlement and the beginning of the Roman city, except that Roman long-distance roads passed through the northern and western entrances of the deserted Oram’s Arbour enclosure. Timber buildings in the upper part of the town that date to the 50s of the first century A.D. are the earliest traces of Roman occupation. In the valley floor, a rectangular area of unknown size was defined by a substantial ditch. First identified as part of a small Roman fort, it may have been part of a religious enclosure, as the presence of a later Roman temple and a wooden statue of the goddess Epona suggest.

In the 70s of the first century A.D., a chess-board pattern of graveled streets at intervals of 400 Roman feet was laid out within earth and timber de-

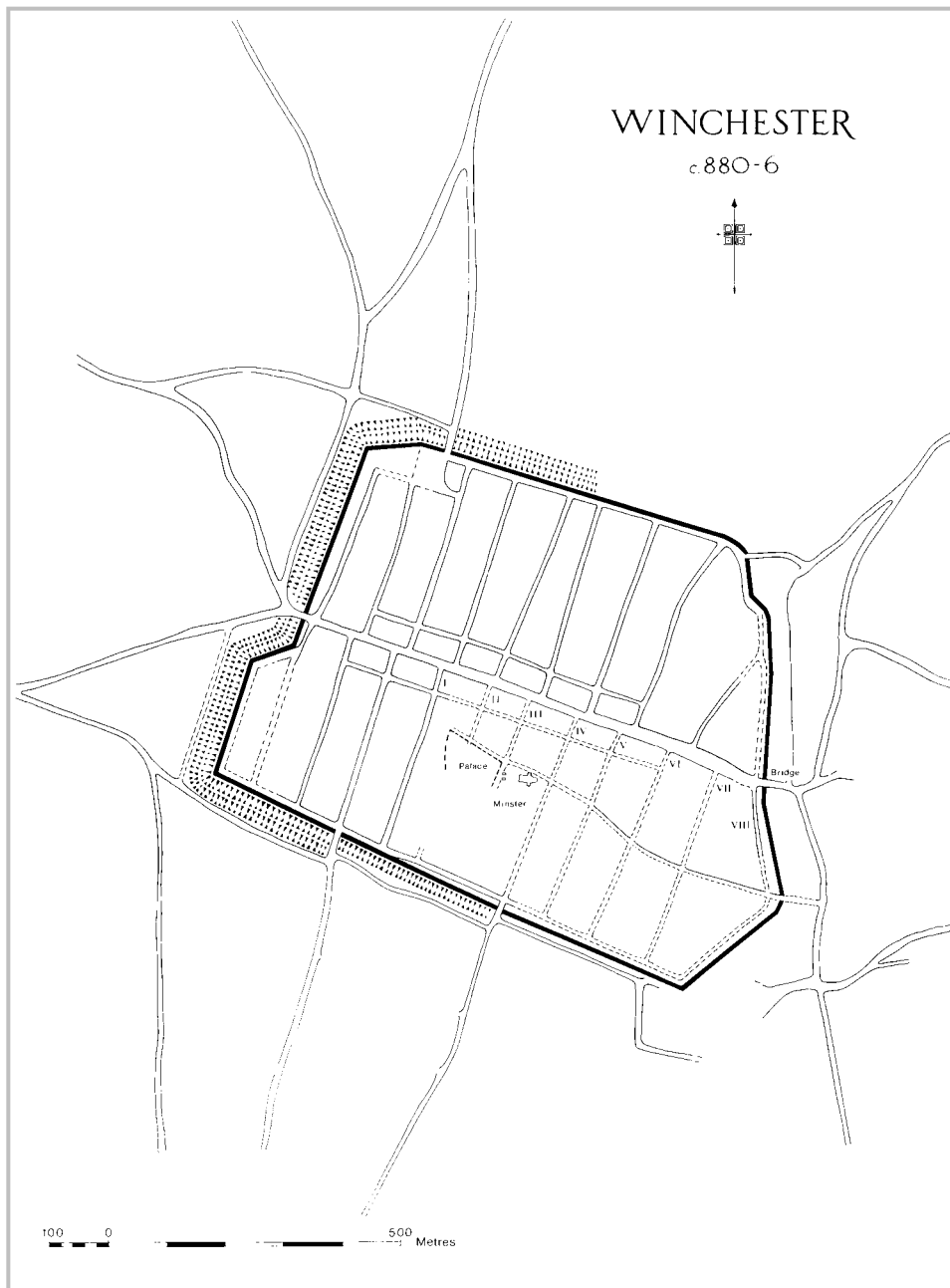


Fig. 1. Plan of the Anglo-Saxon town of Winchester, England, c. A.D. 880–886. COURTESY OF MARTIN BIDDLE. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

fenses. A forum, the settlement's administrative and commercial heart, was later built on a grand scale, filling the central block or *insula*, of the grid. Its construction illustrated that the town was now the capital of the *civitas* of the Belgae, as the name Venta Belgarum (venta, or market, of the Belgae) implies. Timber houses with tiled roofs, painted plaster walls, and mosaic floors were built along the

streets. In the 150s and 160s, some of these houses were rebuilt in stone, or on stone foundations, often on a substantial scale. By the end of the second century, water in iron-jointed wooden pipes was fed to parts of the town, implying the existence of an aqueduct, traces of which have been found running along the contours to the north of the city.

By A.D. 200, when the circuit of the defenses was completed, Venta Belgarum, with an area of 58.2 hectares, was the fifth largest city of Roman Britain. In the early third century, the defenses were rebuilt in stone. The streets were kept clean and regularly resurfaced, and houses were still being built and repaired into the first half of the fourth century. Shortly after 350, however, the city underwent a profound change. Major public buildings and the larger townhouses were partly or wholly demolished, and large areas inside the walls were apparently enclosed to form compounds possibly for cattle and sheep awaiting slaughter for hides or shearing for wool. The water supply was reorganized with new iron-jointed wooden pipes, and all parts of the walled area seem to have been more densely populated than before. Varied and intensive industrial activity took place, and the streets continued to be resurfaced. The city walls were strengthened by the addition of external bastions. The cemeteries outside the walls grew greatly in extent: of some 1,300 burials from the Roman era that had been excavated through 1986, more than 1,000 were from the fourth century. In the second half of the fourth century, Venta seems to have become a busier, cruder, more pressured place. A possible explanation is that the city was no longer a civil settlement but a defended administrative base and supply center, dealing with the tax in kind known as the *annona militaris* and engaged in the industrialized production of textiles in a *gynaecium*, a large-scale textile mill under imperial control.

POST-ROMAN VENTA

The Roman town collapsed in the fifth century. The decline is sharply reflected in the petering out of graves at the limit of the Lankhills cemetery, one of the most poignant images of the end of Roman Britain. Some rough street surfaces were put down during this period and the water supply relaid, but the wooden pipes used for the water supply no longer had iron collars. From this time onward, buildings began to be abandoned and some streets ceased to be used as thoroughfares and were instead taken over for domestic or other use. In the mid-later fifth century the south gate collapsed onto the street, but traffic continued across the uncleared rubble, and two further street surfaces were laid above it. At some date around 600, entry was blocked by cutting a ditch across the street, later re-

inforced by a rough stone wall. The north gate was probably blocked at the same time, so that in the end only one of the five east-west streets and one of the north-south streets of the Roman grid remained in use. The blocking of the gates shows that two centuries after the collapse of the Roman city there was still some authority controlling access to the walled area.

There is evidence from widely spread parts of the city for continuous activity of various sorts through the fifth and sixth centuries. Traces have been found wherever excavation has reached the relevant deposits over areas large enough to allow one to understand what survived and where the sequence was specific enough to provide some idea of the use of the area in spite of the destruction caused by the digging of cellars, wells, and cesspits during the medieval and later periods. The first signs of a barbarian Germanic presence can be dated to the early fifth century, when the Roman city was still at least partly functioning. Small amounts of Early (that is, pagan) Anglo-Saxon pottery have been found on widely distributed sites within the walls, suggesting that there may have been as many as six areas of Germanic occupation at that time. In addition, two later occupations have been indicated by place-name evidence.

Outside the walls, within a seven-kilometer radius of the city, there are seven recorded sixth- to seventh-century Anglo-Saxon cemeteries or isolated burials. Five of these date in whole or in greater part to the pre-Christian period. They form a cluster of a kind unique in Hampshire and rarely paralleled in central-southern England. This demonstrates the relative importance of the former Venta as a focal point in the pre-Christian Anglo-Saxon settlement of Hampshire. Since the early 1970s, discussion has focused on how the town's importance can be explained and what its significance may have been for the foundation of a minster church within the walls in the middle of the seventh century. Some argue that the church was founded only because the West Saxon clergy wished to establish the church within a former Roman town. Others maintain that it was founded to serve an existing center of Anglo-Saxon power and authority within the walled area. The "authority hypothesis" provides an explanation of the archaeological evidence as currently known.

WINTANCEASTER

The arrival of Christianity c. 650 is marked by the building of the church later known as Old Minster in the middle of the town's walled area. Its cross-shaped plan, set out on a modular geometry using the long Roman foot, appears to be derived from northern Italy. This suggests that it was built under the influence of St. Birinus (d. c. 650), the apostle of Wessex, who had been consecrated in Genoa about 630 by Bishop Asterius of Milan. The church was founded by the Anglo-Saxon King Cenwealh of Wessex (r. 643–672), who appears to have endowed it with a large territory around the city. The see of Wessex was moved to Winchester c. 660 and has remained there ever since. Excavation has revealed the long and complicated structural history of the church, but until shortly after 900 it stood almost unchanged. During the greater part of this period, Winchester was not an urban place but a royal and ecclesiastical center. It included a royal enclosure, the cathedral church and its community, a series of high-status private estates, and some service activity, including ironworking, along the east-west axis, now High Street. Only this street and one north-south street survived in use from the Roman period, with a post-Roman street wandering at an angle across the grain of the Roman plan from the south-east corner of the walled area towards the minster and palace in the center.

In 860 Winchester was attacked by the Vikings. There is no record that the church suffered, perhaps because Bishop Swithun (who held his post 852–863) had already put the defenses in order, building a bridge across the Itchen outside the east gate in 859. The bridge may have been part of a larger campaign of defense undertaken by King Æthelbald of Wessex (r. 855–860) that saw the walls and gates repaired.

FELIX URBS WINTHONIA

Modern Winchester has a regular pattern of streets, comprising four elements: High Street running from west to east; backstreets flanking High Street; a series of north-south streets running off to either side of High Street; and a street (now much interrupted) running inside the city walls. When the main outlines of the Roman street plan were worked out in the early 1960s, it became clear that Winchester's present streets were not, as had long been

thought, of Roman origin: Roman buildings lie beneath today's streets and Roman streets beneath standing buildings.

Archaeologists then sought to establish when the present street plan was laid out. Coins found in 1963 above and below the second of a series of surfaces of what is now called Trafalgar Street, one of the north-south streets, showed that it was laid in the early tenth century. Excavation below the earthworks of William the Conqueror's castle, built in 1067, showed that another of the north-south streets and part of the street running inside the wall had been resurfaced eight or nine times before being buried below the castle, and that the first surfaces dated to the early tenth century or before. Written evidence showed that some of the present streets were already there by the tenth century. The precinct of New Minster, founded in 901, is defined in terms of the streets on all four sides of its site. The street plan of Winchester is therefore Anglo-Saxon, laid down either by King Alfred (r. 871–899) in the 880s, or (as seems increasingly likely) in the reigns of one or other of his older brothers, possibly Æthelbald.

There can be no doubt that the streets were part of a single deliberate operation. The first surface is everywhere of the same kind, of small, deliberately broken flint cobbles, while a "four-pole" (roughly 1.2 × 5 meters [4 × 16.5 feet]) module of 20.1 meters (66 feet), or one "chain," seems to have controlled the spacing of the north-south streets. Plans of the Winchester type can be seen in a series of other fortified places that were in use by the early tenth century in southern England, some of them on new sites where the street design could not have been influenced by an existing street system of Roman date. Earlier models need not be sought. There is nothing in the regularity of street plans of the Winchester type that was not well known to the hundreds of nameless individuals who in the eighth and ninth centuries had covered England with the vast pattern of rectangular strip fields that were to survive for a thousand years. This is the first great moment of English town planning and one of the earliest schemes of its kind in the post-Roman West.

The streets provided the skeleton upon which a populous and vibrant city emerged during the last century and a half of the Anglo-Saxon state. In about 900, Alfred's wife, Ealhswith (d. 902), estab-

lished a nunnery, the Nunnaminster, on her property inside the east gate. In 901 her son King Edward the Elder (r. 899–924) founded the New Minster (so-called from the start to distinguish it from the ancient cathedral, henceforth Old Minster) immediately next to Old Minster in the center of the city. In 963 Bishop Æthelwold (who served 963–984) reformed the religious houses of the city, replacing clerks with Benedictine monks. In 971 he relocated his predecessor Swithun from his original grave to a specially made gold-and-jeweled shrine and began the reconstruction of Old Minster on a huge scale. With the dedication of the works of Æthelwold and his successor Ælfheah (served 984–1006) in 980 and 992–994, Old Minster became the greatest church of Anglo-Saxon England. It is also the only Anglo-Saxon cathedral that has been almost completely excavated, its long structural sequence elucidated, and its architectural design restored on paper. It is one of the great and most individual monuments of early medieval Europe.

By the year 1000 the whole southeastern part of the walled area was a royal and ecclesiastical quarter, containing the cathedral and two other minsters, all of royal foundation, the bishop's palace at Wolvesey (where the bishop still resides), and a royal palace to the west of the minsters where the king's treasure was kept for the first time in a permanent location. Winchester was now the principal royal city, the Westminster, of Anglo-Saxon England. It served as a center of learning, music, liturgy, book production and manuscript illumination, metalwork and sculpture, and of writing in Old English and Anglo-Latin. Outside the southeast quarter, the frontages of the streets were becoming fully built up with more than one thousand properties, many parish churches, and a wide range of craft production and industries, not least bullion exchange and minting. This was the golden age of the Old English state, and Winchester was its early capital.

The city was soon to attract the attention of outsiders. In 1006 the people of Winchester, safe behind their walls, watched the Danish Viking army pass on their way to the sea. In 1013 Svein Forkbeard, king of Denmark (r. c. 987–1014) took the city. In the years that followed, his son Cnut, king of England and Denmark (r. 1016–1035), made Winchester the principal center of his Anglo-Danish North Sea empire. He and his family were buried in

Old Minster. In November 1066, the principal citizens surrendered the city without a fight to William the Conqueror, heralding a century during which Winchester would remain second only to the burgeoning wealth of London.

See also *Anglo-Saxon England* (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Biddle, Martin. "The Study of Winchester: Archaeology and History in a British Town, 1961–1983." In *British Academy Papers on Anglo-Saxon England*. Edited by E. G. Stanley, pp. 299–341. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1990. (Reviews the excavations of 1961 through 1971. Also includes a bibliography of sources published through 1988.)
- . "Excavations at Winchester, 1971: Tenth and Final Interim Report." *The Antiquaries Journal* 55 (1975): 96–126 and 295–337.
- . "Excavations at Winchester, 1970: Ninth Interim Report." *The Antiquaries Journal* 52 (1972): 93–131.
- . "Excavations at Winchester, 1969: Eighth Interim Report." *The Antiquaries Journal* 50 (1970): 277–326.
- . "Excavations at Winchester, 1968: Seventh Interim Report." *The Antiquaries Journal* 49 (1969): 295–329.
- . "Excavations at Winchester, 1967: Sixth Interim Report." *The Antiquaries Journal* 48 (1968): 250–284.
- . "Excavations at Winchester, 1966: Fifth Interim Report." *The Antiquaries Journal* 47 (1967): 251–279.
- . "Excavations at Winchester, 1965: Fourth Interim Report." *The Antiquaries Journal* 46 (1966): 308–339.
- . "Excavations at Winchester, 1964: Third Interim Report." *The Antiquaries Journal* 45 (1965): 230–264.
- . "Excavations at Winchester Cathedral, 1962–63: Second Interim Report." *The Antiquaries Journal* 44 (1964): 188–219.
- Biddle, Martin, et al. *Object and Economy in Medieval Winchester*. Winchester Studies, vol. 7, pt. 2. Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1990.
- Biddle, Martin, ed. *Winchester in the Early Middle Ages: An Edition and Discussion of the Winton Domesday*. Winchester Studies, vol. 1. Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1977.
- Biddle, Martin, and R. N. Quirk. "Excavations near Winchester Cathedral, 1961." *The Archaeological Journal* 119 (1962): 150–194.
- Clarke, Giles, et al. *Pre-Roman and Roman Winchester: The Roman Cemetery at Lankhills*. Winchester Studies, vol. 3. Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1980.
- Collis, John. *Winchester Excavations 1949–60*, Vol. 3. N.p., n.d.
- Collis, John, and K. J. Barton. *Winchester Excavations*, Vol. 2, 1949–1960. *Excavations in the Suburbs and the West-*

- ern Part of the Town*. Winchester, U.K.: City of Winchester, 1978.
- Cunliffe, Barry. *Winchester Excavations 1949–1960*. Winchester, U.K.: Winchester City Council, Museums and Libraries Committee, 1964.
- Keene, Derek, and Alexander R. Rumble. *Survey of Medieval Winchester*. Winchester Studies, vol. 2. Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1985.
- Kjøbye-Biddle, Birthe. “Old Minster, St. Swithun’s Day 1093.” In *Winchester Cathedral: Nine Hundred Years, 1093–1993*. Edited by John Crook, pp. 13–20. Chichester, U.K.: Phillimore, 1993.
- . “Dispersal or Concentration: The Disposal of the Winchester Dead over 2000 Years.” In *Death in Towns: Urban Responses to the Dying and the Dead, 100–1600*. Edited by Steven Bassett, pp. 210–247. Leicester, U.K.: Leicester University Press, 1992.
- Lapidge, Michael. *The Cult of St Swithun*. Winchester Studies, vol. 4, pt. 2. Oxford: Clarendon Press, 2003.
- Rumble, Alexander R. *Property and Piety in Early Medieval Winchester: Documents Relating to the Topography of the Anglo-Saxon and Norman City and Its Minsters*. Winchester Studies, vol. 4, pt. 3. Oxford: Clarendon Press, 2002.
- Scobie, G. D., John M. Zant, and R. Whinney. *The Brooks, Winchester: A Preliminary Report on the Excavations, 1987–88*. Archaeology Report, vol. 1. Winchester, U.K.: Winchester Museums Service, 1991.
- Zant, John M. *The Brooks, Winchester, 1987–88: The Roman Structural Remains*. Archaeology Report, vol. 2. Winchester, U.K.: Winchester Museums Service, 1993.

MARTIN BIDDLE



VIKING YORK

York was already eight hundred years old when it was captured by the Scandinavian great army in A.D. 866 during the Vikings' attempted conquest of England. Thereafter known as Jorvik, the town remained under Scandinavian control for most of the next eighty-eight years, ruled either by English puppets or Danish or Norwegian kings. In these years it became one of the foremost towns in northern Europe and the central place for a large area of Scandinavian settlements in Northumbria, the northeast of England. After the expulsion of the last Viking king, Erik Bloodaxe, in A.D. 954, Northumbria was incorporated into the kingdom of England but continued to be ruled by earls based in York. The town retained a distinctive Anglo-Scandinavian culture and allegiance for more than a century.

The Roman Ninth legion that founded York had placed the fortress Eboracum where the navigable river Ouse cuts through moraines that give good routes across the broad low-lying Vale of York; the settlement was thus well positioned for good water and land communications. When captured by the Vikings, York was still very much a Roman place. The stone-built defenses, main gateways, and street layout of Eboracum and the nearby civil town Colonia Eboracensis, largely survived into the Viking era. Within the fortress an ecclesiastical enclave had grown up around the church of St. Peter, founded A.D. 627 and since A.D. 735 seat of the archbishop of York, probably with an establishment nearby for the kings of Northumbria. With other churches, domestic occupation, and riverside trading activity, York already had the aspects of a town,

one of very few in England at the time. The Scandinavians, with huge input of effort and materials, transformed this over the next two generations to provide political, military, administrative, religious, industrial, and commercial and trading functions for what was in effect a separate Viking kingdom dependent on Jorvik.

To provide for Jorvik's defense the Roman fortifications were put in order, in some places being heightened with palisaded ramparts over the Roman walls and in others being extended to incorporate and defend a larger area. The town within the defenses was radically replanned to accommodate dwellings for a growing population and for commercial and industrial expansion. The Roman bridge across the river Ouse was replaced by another crossing downstream on the site of the present Ouse Bridge. New streets with Scandinavian names ran down to the crossing: Micklegate ("the great street") from one side and Ousegate ("the Ouse street") and its extension Pavement from the other. Similarly Walmgate led up to a crossing of the tributary river Foss and continued into the town as Fossgate. This concentrated commercial activity along the riversides and on the spur of land between the two rivers. A network of other new streets was laid out in relation to them.

The area is low-lying and has a drainage-impeding clay substrate. Organic debris from the new settlement rapidly caused anoxic (oxygen deficient) ground conditions to develop that preserved archaeological remains very well, especially the normally perishable organic components. The resultant



Fig. 1. Coppergate, York. Excavating post-and-wattle buildings of c. A.D. 930. © YORK ARCHAEOLOGICAL TRUST. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

great depths of stratification therefore contain a uniquely detailed record of life in the commercial heart of a Viking town, although, being under modern York, they are difficult for archaeologists to access.

Excavations along some of the new streets during modern redevelopment have shown that the frontages were divided up into individual properties. Houses were set gable end to the street front on long narrow plots running back into the block. Four such properties were excavated at 16–22 Coppergate between 1976 and 1981. The street and the land divisions here, established by about A.D. 900, have maintained their positions until the present. By A.D. 930 the plots contained post-and-wattle buildings for domestic occupation and industrial scale manufacturing. These were replaced in the 960s and 970s by semisunken two-story plank and post-built oak structures and again in some cases in the eleventh century by further surface-level oak-built structures. Excavations and observations during

building developments show that similar Viking Age buildings and layouts exist in many other parts of central York.

People lived in the street-front buildings. Crafts and industries were carried out there and in buildings and open areas behind on the long narrow plots. Such activities at Coppergate included wood-working; production of iron objects; production of copper alloy, silver, and other nonferrous metal objects; craft working of amber and other jewelry, antler combs, and textiles (including spinning, weaving, dyeing, and the making up of garments); and leatherworking (including shoe manufacture). Die making for coin minting—or minting itself—may also have gone on, Jorvik having produced vast quantities of silver coinage in the tenth and eleventh centuries. The site also contained evidence for regional and international trade. Environmental archaeology has enabled researchers to deduce living conditions, diet, and disease, and cemetery excava-

tions in various parts of Anglo-Scandinavian York have helped determine contemporary demography.

Paganism rapidly gave way to Christianity in Viking York. The former Anglo-Scandinavian cathedral was probably situated north of the present York Minster, whose site was occupied by a high-status Anglo-Scandinavian cemetery. Lesser churches known from documentary and archaeological evidence include one surviving structure, St. Mary Bishophill Junior. Together they imply an Anglo-Scandinavian precursor of the medieval parish system.

Stone sculpture dating to the ninth to eleventh centuries from the Minster and other churches shows that wealthy patrons stimulated a flourishing metropolitan art tradition—also seen on leather, wood and metal objects—reflecting both Anglo-Saxon and Viking traditions and styles. This, along with excavated musical instruments and documented literary works demonstrate cultural aspirations in Jorvik as well as administrative and commercial success.

The Domesday Book drawn up on the orders of the Norman conqueror William I shows that by

1086 Jorvik had become a city of some 1,800 households and perhaps 10,000 people, vast for northern Europe at the time. Repeated attacks or planned attacks by Norwegian armies between 1066 and 1085 suggest continuing Scandinavian links. Jorvik—The Viking City, an underground display on the Coppergate excavation site, provides a full-scale evidence-based simulation of Coppergate in the 970s. Other artifacts from Viking York can be seen in the Yorkshire Museum, York.

See also Vikings (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Addyman, P. V., ed. *The Archaeology of York*. 20 vols. to date. Ongoing series issued in fascicles. York: Council for British Archaeology, 1976–.

Hall, Richard. *Viking Age York*. London: Batsford, 1994.

———. *The Viking Dig: The Excavations at York*. London: Bodley Head, 1984.

Additional information is available at the York Archaeological Trust's website at <http://www.yorkarchaeology.co.uk>, especially under "Secrets Beneath Your Feet" and "Jorvik: The Viking City."

P. V. ADDYMAN



MEROVINGIAN FRANCE

FOLLOWED BY FEATURE ESSAY ON:

Tomb of Childeric 519

At the end of the year A.D. 406 a confederation of Germanic peoples, including Vandals, Suevi, and Alans, crossed the frozen Rhine near Mainz and began plundering as far as Spain and North Africa. The Rhine frontier (*limes*) was never to be restored, and the Great Invasions, or Migrations, had reached Gaul. These movements were set off by the arrival from central Asia of the Huns in the 370s, thus provoking the panicked Visigoths to break into the Roman Empire; they were to bring numerous “barbarian” peoples into the western provinces to stay and found new polities. The decisive phase occurred between the 450s, when the collapse of Hunnic power and the accelerating fragmentation of Imperial Rome’s authority left the field free for new players, and the years around 600, when major population movements took a hiatus and enduring territorial identities began to emerge in the west.

By that time the most successful barbarian dynasty was clearly that of the Merovingian Franks, reunited under Clotaire II and his son Dagobert in the early seventh century. The lands between the Loire and the Rhine, which had been provinces of Roman Gaul, were becoming known as Francia, the heartland of this “Frankish” power, which extended south into more Romanized regions (Aquitania, Burgundy, and Provence) and eastward into Germanic territories (Thuringia, Alemannia, and Bavar-

ia). What were the roles of the “Franks” and the “Romans” in the development of this new power and of the cultural dynamism that was to carry the Franks to such heights in the oncoming Middle Ages? These questions have been at the heart of historical debates for centuries and have provided the framework for the evolution of Merovingian archaeology. They spring from the paradigm of the decline and fall of the Roman Empire, which first took form under Renaissance historians. When archaeology began to play a role, this paradigm was conceived in terms of identifying the historical actors, already known from the written sources, through studying their graves.

FUNERARY ARCHAEOLOGY

In 1653 during construction near the church of Saint-Brice in Tournai, Belgium, workers came upon a “treasure” of gold and silver coins, along with a profusion of iron and bronze objects—some clearly weapons—and bones, including two human skulls and a horse skull. Thanks to the prompt action of local authorities and the interest taken by Archduke Leopold William in asserting ownership, most of these finds were collected and given for study to the archduke’s personal physician, Jean-Jacques Chifflet, who was a noted historian. In 1655 Chifflet published a detailed account of the

find, as it could be reconstructed from witnesses and study of the artifacts, each one carefully illustrated.

Chifflet identified the find as the burial of the Frankish king Childeric, on the basis of a gold signet ring that depicted a long-haired warrior holding a spear and that was inscribed “CILDIRICI REGIS.” According to the major narrative source for Frankish history, written by Bishop Gregory of Tours (d. 593), Childeric, a ruler of the western Franks, had fought alongside Roman commanders in the later fifth century and had died in A.D. 481/482. His son, Clovis, then attacked and defeated the Roman general Syagrius (486), launching a fighting career during which he eliminated rival Frankish rulers and defeated other barbarian peoples to establish, by his death in 511, the first dynasty to rule France, the Merovingians. The archduke took the Childeric collection with him to Vienna; after his death it was offered to King Louis XIV as a diplomatic present and disappeared from sight until the nineteenth century.

Over the next two centuries, as graves with artifacts turned up in northwest Europe, “antiquaries” argued over their attribution to specific groups of ancient peoples known from written sources. After 1800, early industrialization (the construction of roads and railways) led to the discovery of thousands of graves; this discovery combined with the growth of scientific methodologies and the Romantic enthusiasm for a national past created a climate favorable to the emergence of “national archaeologies.” In 1848 Wilhelm and Ludwig Lindenschmidt argued convincingly that the twenty-one well-furnished graves that they had excavated at Selzen (Rheinhessen) must be Frankish because two of them included gold coins of the Byzantine emperor Justinian I (r. 527–565). They published a careful tomb-by-tomb description with sketches depicting all the objects in place.

Between 1855 and 1859 the abbé Cochet published three influential volumes based on his many excavations in Normandy. His approach was more general. He contrasted the indigenous (and pagan) Gallo-Romans, who typically placed offerings of food, tableware, and small coins with their cremated dead, with the invading Germanic warriors, who laid the unburned bodies in graves, along with weapons and, for women, ornaments such as brooches and hairpins. Cochet’s methods were crude. He usually did not publish tomb drawings or

site plans or grave assemblages, and he did not pay heed to the chronological dimension of artifacts. For example, his “typical Frankish warrior” was shown carrying weapons of different periods and even female ornaments. Although Cochet rescued Childeric’s grave from the obscurity into which it had fallen, he did not appreciate its potential value as a precisely dated closed-finds assemblage. Nonetheless, his enthusiasm for Merovingian archaeology stimulated interest in this new discipline in France and abroad.

In the half-century before World War I thousands of graves were opened, often as the by-product of construction. What may be called the “ethnic paradigm” remained dominant. In 1860 Henri Baudot published an account of graves at Charnay (near Dijon), which he thought must be those of Burgundians before their kingdom was conquered by the Franks in 534. In 1892 and 1901 Camille Barrière-Flavy published material from graves in southwestern France, labeling it “Visigothic” on the principal ground that the Visigoths had ruled this region until their defeat by Clovis in 507. Some researchers developed notions of field methodology and the critical problems posed by the material uncovered. The abbé Haigneré in 1866 published a study of four cemeteries in Boulogne with a list of artifact assemblages for each grave and, for one site, a plan with each grave numbered. In Picardy, Jules Pilloy proposed the first chronological study of Merovingian artifacts. He distinguished an early period that corresponded to the invasions; a second one marking the growth of Merovingian power in the sixth century; a later phase of transition, when weapons such as the throwing axe (*francisca*) disappeared from grave groups and a new type, a single-edged short sword (*scramasax*), appeared; and a final phase, characterized by such objects as iron plate buckles with silver and gold inlay (*damasquinure*), which he took to be Carolingian (fig. 1).

While such men as Pilloy and the abbé Haigneré were laying the foundations for sound research, other diggers were pillaging sites to sell the booty on the expanding antiquities market. The example of Frédéric Moreau illustrates another type of excavator of the day. He worked on a vast scale, opening thousands of graves. Although he was known to present artifacts to visitors, he kept a daily excava-



Fig. 1. Belt buckles and plate, Merovingian era, from Dangolsheim tomb. THE ART ARCHIVE/
ARCHAEOLOGICAL MUSEUM STRASBOURG/DAGLI ORTI. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

tion journal, maintained a restoration laboratory in his house, and privately printed summaries of his work in folio albums with splendid color lithographs. World War I led to a significant decline in Merovingian archaeological activity in France, lasting into the 1960s. Excavations were few and limited in scope; the most important general studies were by foreign scholars, such as the Swede Nils Åberg and the German Hans Zeiss. Édouard Salin kept the French tradition alive. A mining engineer from Lorraine, he began excavating rural cemeteries in that region in 1912 and continued to dig and publish through the 1950s. He gave impetus to technical studies by founding, with Albert France-Lanord, the first laboratory in France specializing in archaeological metallurgy, the Musée de l'Histoire du Fer in Nancy. He proposed an ambitious general interpretation of the Merovingian period founded on graves, written sources, and laboratory analysis. The technical studies of Merovingian metalwork were highly innovative, demonstrating the complex skills that went into making pattern-welded swords, iron belt buckles decorated with patterns of inlaid gold and silver wire, and gold-and-garnet and gold filigree brooches.

Salin's historical vision remained firmly within the boundaries of the "ethnic paradigm": He set out to distinguish Gallo-Roman from Germanic graves on the basis of typical artifacts and funerary customs and to identify the particular groups of "invaders"—Franks, Burgundians, Alemanni, and Visigoths. These groups were presumed to have come into contact with one another at the time of the "Great Invasions" of the fifth century, as distinct groups with fully formed funerary traditions. At a particular site, such as Vилей-Saint-Etienne in Lorraine, the archaeologist could discern how, over time, these traditions interacted, giving rise to a new funerary culture in later Merovingian times. Salin stressed that all aspects of this practice—grave construction and orientation, cemetery organization, such traces of ritual activity as fire, and body position—needed to be considered along with the artifact assemblages. Like the abbé Cochet, Salin was deeply interested in what could be learned about ideology and religion from these graves.

Salin's earlier notion of "progressive fusion" overlaps here with the idea of "Christianization." He assumed that the original funerary culture was pagan, the antithesis of the Christian funerary cul-

ture practiced by the Gallo-Romans, and that the latter gradually triumphed, leading to the abandonment of the old “row-grave cemeteries” and the disappearance of artifacts from graves during the later Merovingian period. At the end of his career, Salin engaged in the excavation of Merovingian sarcophagi in the crypt of the abbey church of Saint-Denis, associated with King Dagobert (r. 629–639).

During the 1970s and 1980s French archaeology became more professional, and Merovingian archaeology benefited for the first time from leadership based in research organizations. Excavations by the C.R.A.M. (Center for Medieval Archaeological Research) in the Caen region soon corrected the earlier impression that there had been little Merovingian activity in western Normandy; Frénouville was the first Merovingian cemetery in France to be totally excavated and published. In the Rhône-Alps region a group of archaeologists from Geneva, Lyon, and Grenoble excavated numerous early medieval churches and cemeteries in consultation with one another. One of them, Michel Colardelle, published a global study of funerary archaeology in this region from the late Roman to the medieval period.

The intellectual center of the Merovingian revival was the A.F.A.M. (Association Française d’Archéologie Mérovingienne; French Association of Merovingian Archaeology), founded in 1979 by Patrick Périn. Périn’s study of a rich early Merovingian cemetery in his hometown of Charleville-Mézières led him to focus on the refinement of chronological systems as the key to progress. He developed an artifact typology based on a series of cemeteries in the Champagne-Ardenne region, studied the frequency of object associations and their changes over time, and proposed a system of phases tied to absolute chronology by well-dated reference graves. Périn also stressed the fundamental importance of using these tools to study the internal dynamics of each cemetery, or its “topochronology.”

The decades of the late twentieth century were marked by higher standards of fieldwork, more post-excavation specialist studies, and a much more critical attitude toward the problems of interpreting fragmentary archaeological data in the light of selective written sources. The direct link assumed by Salin between religion and funerary practice has been criticized, for example. Correlations that were

drawn between funerary culture and ethnic identity now appear much more complex and ambiguous. The close and careful work of several archaeologists has supported the emergence of a “Germanic” funerary rite within and beyond the Roman frontiers during the late empire (c. A.D. 350–450), which provided the basis for the Frankish funerary rite that emerged and spread under Childeric and Clovis. A generation later, this cultural model was established in newly conquered regions, from Basel in Switzerland to Saintes in Aquitania.

Most researchers now agree that the Visigoths did not have an archaeologically distinct funerary culture while they occupied Aquitania, nor did the early Burgundians in eastern France, except, perhaps, for a few artificially deformed skulls. This is an unusual example of a plausible ethno-cultural conclusion drawn from skeletal data. Other studies have established that, while much can be learned from physical anthropology about ancient population structures, their health, and their relative homogeneity, these data do not lend themselves to ethnic profiling. Funerary practice could, on the other hand, reflect episodic assertions of group or regional identity, such as the belt buckles with Christian iconography that flourished briefly in part of Merovingian Burgundy. Researchers have pointed to the need to allow for the role of ceremony and display, usually archaeologically invisible, in understanding funerary practice. For the region around Metz, for example, the funerary domain might well have been a site of contest among local elite groups struggling for hegemony.

SETTLEMENT ARCHAEOLOGY

Settlement archaeology is a new and rapidly expanding field in France. As late as 1970 fewer than twenty sites were known, and none of them were explored more than partially. Not until 1972 was a Merovingian village—Brébieres, near Douai—excavated and the finds published in France. Between 1980 and 1993, 127 new sites became known, and the number has continued to rise.

This trend reflects the building boom in those years, coupled with legally mandated salvage archaeology, which is carried out with great methodological rigor at a pace and on a scale that dwarfs anything done in the past. For instance, in 1998 a team that included specialists of the prehistoric,

Iron Age, and Roman and Merovingian periods was charged with evaluating and excavating a 237-hectare area at Onnaing (near Valenciennes) before the construction of a Toyota plant. Initial analysis indicated the development of many small settlements in the Late Iron Age and the earlier Gallo-Roman period, with general abandonment of sites before A.D. 200 and reoccupation in one place by a Merovingian settlement with sunken-featured buildings (SFBs). From that time the fertile Onnaing plain was given over to intensive cultivation.

While this example of landscape archaeology that allows us to situate Merovingian settlement in a period of long duration is quite exceptional, it also serves to underline the tentative nature of any general conclusions one might draw today, so soon after the Brebières excavation. The full-scale publication of more recent sites is still awaited. The information now available is unequally distributed geographically. A great density of sites in northern France contrasts with scarcity in western and southern France.

Brebières offers an object lesson in the dangers of drawing hasty conclusions from available data. The excavation disclosed some thirty-one SFBs spread out along either side of a street several hundred meters long. These were small rectangular buildings, 3 to 6 meters long and 2 to 3.5 meters wide, with wattle-and-daub walls and thatch roofs supported by two, four, or six wooden posts set into the dugout floor. There were few fireplaces. Located near a marsh, which was drained by two ditches, this site suggested to some scholars a damp, cramped, and squalid lifestyle, an impression that re-enforced the theory of economic decline and cultural regression following the Great Invasions.

However, it is based on only a partial investigation of the site, for work was limited to a 50-meter-wide band whose surface had been scraped away before the archaeologists arrived. There may have been larger surface-level buildings whose traces had been destroyed, or that lay beyond the excavated area. The SFBs could have been only outbuildings used for storage or workshops, as the discovery of such artifacts as loom weights suggests. Brebières also has to be understood in relation to the nearby royal villa of Vitry-en-Artois (known from written sources), to which it probably belonged. In 1985 more SFBs were found in a rescue operation at

Vitry, as well as posthole alignments, which suggest a ground-level timber-frame house. At Juvincourt-et-Damary (Aisne) three such houses were excavated. The largest (15 by 5 meters) had an entrance porch leading to two rooms, one a living room equipped with a fireplace and the other used for sleeping.

By the mid-1990s many timber-frame buildings had been documented in the northern part of France. More information about the complexities of site evolution also has become available. It has been suggested that Juvincourt, for example, was a hamlet within a polynuclear village. When founded at the beginning of the Merovingian period, it consisted of several surface-level buildings with SFB outbuildings. In the later sixth century, settlement shifted to the north; by the mid-seventh century it had relocated even farther north, with several aligned buildings facing a rectangular enclosure. By the ninth century the settlement had been abandoned.

Excavation of the settlement at Mondeville, near Caen in Normandy, sheds new light on the dynamics of early medieval settlement and its role in the transition from antiquity to the Middle Ages, tying it to the evolution of funerary practice as well. Occupied in the Iron Age, Mondeville became a *vicus* (substantial rural settlement) with houses built on solid stone foundations. By about A.D. 300 these houses were replaced by SFBs: small timber-and-thatch buildings with floors dug into the bedrock. Timber architecture remained characteristic until about A.D. 700, when houses with stone foundations reappeared. This also may have been the time when a church with stone foundations was built within the settlement and burials were made around it, a sign that the traditional separation of the living and the dead was giving way to new Christian attitudes. There is more evidence of this shift at Saleux, in Picardy, a particularly interesting site since the entire settlement, in use from the seventh to the eleventh century, was excavated along with the necropolis of almost twelve hundred graves. At first the dwellings were placed close to the river and the dead buried on higher ground, a good distance to the west. The burial site focused around a special grave housed in a stone sarcophagus and protected by a wooden structure. During the eighth century this structure was transformed into a small timber

church, which was later rebuilt in stone; the cemetery was enclosed by a ditch. By then the village itself had advanced to adjoin the churchyard, providing a plausible early example of the typical medieval village, with the living and the dead knit into a seamless community around the parish church.

Was the Merovingian period fundamentally in rupture with antiquity, or should more stress be laid on elements of continuity? Did the basic patterns of medieval life have their roots deep in this period, or did they emerge essentially around the end of the first millennium, after centuries of instability and poverty? Lively debate on such critical questions has replaced the assumption that archaeology's role is merely to provide artifacts that illustrate a historical narrative (whose outline is firmly fixed by written sources) or, at most, to fill in the gaps. In the last decades of the twentieth century there was a fundamental change not only in the scale and precision of excavation but also in the scope of the larger archaeological enterprise, as it has been called upon to collaborate with other disciplines in confronting historical questions. Boundaries once thought secure now seem fluid, as is apparent in the interaction of those "Merovingian archaeologists" primarily concerned with rural settlements and cemeteries, with scholars working on the related problems of cities and Christianity during this period.

URBAN AND CHRISTIAN ARCHAEOLOGY

In 1830 concern for preserving the past, which had been growing since the destructions caused by the French Revolution, led France to create the Commission des Monuments historiques (Historical Monuments Commission), whose trained architects went to work restoring medieval churches. A parallel pursuit, whose origins go back to the Renaissance, was the study of early Christian remains, such as carved sarcophagi and inscriptions. The French presence in North Africa and the Near East also led to pioneering archaeological studies of early Christian buildings, many still standing in part, in the former provinces of the Roman Empire. Because few monuments from that time survived above ground in France itself, interest in the heritage there was slight before the mid-twentieth century. Change began when the fifth International Congress of Christian Archaeology was held at Aix-en-Provence in 1954.

Under the influence of the great historian Henri-Irénée Marrou, the critical centuries from A.D. 300 to 800 were seen less as a time of decadence and collapse (the "Dark Ages") than as a dynamic and creative period (late antiquity) driven by the novel forces released by Christianity. It was clear that any attempt to study this phenomenon archaeologically must involve excavating cities, for they were the heart of the early Christian world. How had the hundred *civitas* capitals of Gaul, the nodal points of the Roman administration that had become in the Christian empire the seats of bishops as well, fared with the barbarian onslaught? Much of the evidence was hidden; the great medieval cathedrals were built atop complex groups of early Christian buildings. A variety of literary sources, inscriptions, sarcophagi, coins, and vestiges of old buildings offered many avenues for research. Given the poverty of resources for excavation in France and the lack of trained excavators and of training programs, what could be done?

By 1986, when the International Congress of Christian Archaeology returned to France (Lyon), impressive progress had been made, thanks to creative and energetic scholarly enterprise and to the growth of publicly mandated salvage archaeology. Since the mid-1970s a group of scholars had been meeting regularly to pursue a critical and systematic study of all the sources, written and material, for each of the Gallo-Roman towns that had become episcopal seats in late antiquity. At the same time research-oriented archaeologists developed focused research programs in partnership with the Archaeological Service of the Ministry of Culture, local and regional authorities, and businesses and private enthusiasts. The most thoroughgoing long-term project has been under way in the city and canton of Geneva since the 1970s, until 1998 under the direction of Charles Bonnet. The archaeology of religious edifices has been a specialty of the Bonnet team. Their most spectacular accomplishment was the thorough excavation of the cathedral and its surroundings, showing how a complex Merovingian cathedral group (including a bishop's palace with a sixth-century mosaic pavement) developed out of late Roman administrative buildings (fig. 2).

While it would be imprudent to draw quick conclusions from the vast amounts of new data generated by this type of work, two general comments



Fig. 2. Mosaic from the sixth-century Bishop's palace. PHOTOGRAPH BY MONIQUE DELLEY. COURTESY SERVICE CANTONAL D'ARCHÉOLOGIE, GENEVA. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

can be made. First, it is clear that the urban component of Merovingian civilization was much more important and dynamic than once was thought and that Christianity was the primary force in the survival and redefinition of these towns. That the overwhelming majority of the Roman *civitas* capitals in Gaul did survive as urban settlements, apparently without any break in continuity, is a clear contrast with the discontinuity found in Britain.

The nature and scale of survival varied dramatically. It was most attenuated in Tours, once a planned Roman town of 80 hectares. By A.D. 500 there remained a 9-hectare walled citadel by the river, where the bishop in his cathedral and the count in his hall kept company. Two kilometers to the west stood a funerary church dedicated to Saint Martin, around which a new community, called by a contemporary the *vicus christianorum* (settlement of the Christians), was emerging. Most of the old

Roman town, between these points, had become fields. The western pole grew rapidly, stimulated by the popularity of Saint Martin's tomb as a goal of pilgrimage; it came to be enclosed within its own wall. In Geneva, around A.D. 500, the bishop's monumental new buildings were filling the walled hilltop citadel; other new churches were revitalizing the *suburbium* (the area around the core) below. Farther out in the countryside churches were going up as well.

This picture leads to the second general observation authorized by recent research: the Christian impact on the rural world. At Sezegnin, about 10 miles from Geneva, a rural cemetery of more than six hundred graves developed around three privileged burials in the center. They were not "elite" graves in the traditional social sense, for they included almost no artifacts, but they were set off by a wooden structure that can be interpreted as a *me-*

moria, a monument to commemorate the honored Christian dead. The fugitive traces of such a structure would have escaped attention in the past, but there is growing evidence in the core Frankish regions to the north that by the later sixth century elite burials were shifting to unmistakable Christian contexts.

A rural cemetery excavated at Hordain (near Douai) shows that an emphatically un-Christian burial style (cremation under tumulus) co-existed c. A.D. 550 with richly furnished (weapons and ornament) inhumation burials in a funerary chapel built in the midst of the cemetery. In Belgium a private funerary chapel at Arlon included an elite warrior grave and that of a young woman buried sometime around A.D. 600 with ornaments that included a Christian silver locket. One of the earliest well-dated examples of richly furnished elite burials in a Christian context (c. A.D. 530/540) comes from the old Roman town of Cologne, capital of the Rhenish Franks. In a chapel within the atrium of the cathedral a young boy was buried with weapons (including a helmet) and furniture (bed and chair); beside him a young woman lay with finery that rivals that of Aregonde in Saint-Denis a generation later. Thus both archaeological finds and written sources associate the Merovingian elites with the towns and stress the vitality of the Christian culture there. Even funerary practices were beginning a gradual shift toward what would emerge in the Carolingian period as a fully Christian organization of death.

See also **Merovingian Franks** (vol. 2, part 7); **Tomb of Childeric** (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Archéologie de la France: 30 ans de découverts*. Paris: Réunion des Musées Nationaux, 1989. (Catalogue of the highlights of recent archaeology in France, with useful introductory essays by topic.)
- Böhme, Hörst W. *Germanische Grabfunde des 4. bis 5. Jahrhunderts zwischen unterer Elbe und Loire*. 2 vols. Müncher Beiträge. Vor- und Frühgeschichte, no. 19. Munich: C. H. Beck, 1974. (Classic study of late Roman Germanic graves.)
- Böhner, Kurt. *Die fränkischen Altertümer des Trier Landes*. 2 vols. Berlin: Germanische Denkmäler der Völkerwanderungszeit, 1958. (First regional relative artifact chronology.)
- Bonnet, Charles. *Genève aux premiers temps chrétiens*. Geneva, Switzerland: Fondations des Clefs de Saint Pierre, 1986.

Catteddu, Isabelle. "Le site médiévale de Saleux 'Les Cou-tures': Habitat, nécropole, et églises du haut Moyen Age." In *Rural Settlements in Medieval Europe*. Edited by Guy De Boe and Frans Verhaeghe, pp. 143–148. Papers of the 1997 Medieval Europe Brugge Conference, vol. 6. Zellik, Belgium: Institute for the Archaeological Heritage, 1997.

Colardelle, Michel. *Sépulture et traditions funéraires du Ve au XIIIe siècle ap. J.C. dans les campagnes des Alpes françaises du Nord (Drôme, Isère, Savoie, Haute-Savoie)*. Grenoble, Switzerland: Société Alpine de Documentation et de Recherche en Archéologie, 1983. (Regional study, integrating artifacts and funerary practices for relative chronology.)

Effros, Bonnie. *Merovingian Mortuary Archaeology and the Making of the Early Middle Ages*. Berkeley: University of California Press, 2003.

Die Franken: Wegbereiter Europas. 2 vols. Mainz, Germany: Verlag Philipp Von Zabern, 1996. (Catalogue from the Reiss-Museum, Mannheim, of largest exhibition ever held of Frankish archaeology, with many fundamental articles by leading scholars.)

Galinié, Henri. "Tours from an Archaeological Standpoint." In *Spaces of the Living and the Dead: An Archaeological Dialogue*. Edited by Catherine Karkov, Kelley Wickham-Crowley, and Bailey Young, pp. 87–106. *American Early Medieval Studies*, no. 3. Oxford: Oxbow Books, 1999.

Geary, Patrick J. *Before France and Germany: The Creation and Transformation of the Merovingian World*. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1988.

Halsall, Guy. "Burial, Ritual, and Merovingian Society." In *The Community, the Family and the Saint: Patterns of Power in Early Medieval Europe*. Edited by Joyce Hill and Mary Swan, pp. 325–338. Turnhout, Belgium: Brepols, 1998.

———. *Settlement and Social Organization: The Merovingian Region of Metz*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1995.

James, Edward. *The Franks*. Oxford: Blackwell, 1988.

———. *The Merovingian Archaeology of South-west Gaul*. BAR Supplementary Series, no. 25. Oxford: British Archaeological Reports, 1977.

Lorren, Claude. "Le village de Saint-Martin de Traincourt à Mondeville (Calvados), de l'Antiquité au Haut Moyen Age." In *La Neustrie: Les pays au nord de la Loire de 650 à 850*. Vol. 2. Edited by Hartmut Atsma, pp. 439–466. Sigmaringen, Germany: Thorbecke, 1989.

Martin, Max. *Das fränkische Gräberfeld von Basel-Bernerring*. Basel, Switzerland: Basler Beiträge zur Ur- und Frühgeschichte, 1976.

- Mertens, Joseph. *Tombes mérovingiennes et églises chrétiennes (Arlon, Grobbendonk, Landen, Waha)*. Archaeologica Belgica, no. 187. Brussels, Belgium, 1976.
- Musset, Lucien. *The Germanic Invasions: The Making of Europe, A.D. 400–600*. Translated by Edward and Columba James. University Park: Pennsylvania State University Press, 1975. (A still pertinent overview of the period; excellent bibliography to 1975.)
- Naissance des arts chrétiens: Atlas des monuments paléochrétiens de la France*. Paris: Imprimerie Nationale, 1991. (Lavishly illustrated interpretative survey by leading scholars.)
- Périn, Patrick. “Settlements and Cemeteries in Merovingian Gaul.” In *The World of Gregory of Tours*. Edited by Kathleen Mitchell and Ian Wood, pp. 67–98. Leiden, The Netherlands: Brill, 2002.
- . “Les tombes de ‘chefs’ du début de l’époque mérovingienne: Datation et interprétation historique.” In *La noblesse romaine et les chefs barbares du IIIe au VIe siècle*. Edited by Françoise Vallet and Michel Kazanski, pp. 247–301. Association Française d’Archéologie Mérovingienne Mémoires, no. 9. Saint-Germain-en-Laye, France: Musée des Antiquités Nationales, 1995.
- . *La datation des tombes mérovingiennes: Historique, méthodes, applications*. Geneva, Switzerland: Droz, 1980. (Fundamental for the history and methodology of funerary archaeology.)
- Périn, Patrick, and Laure-Charlotte Feffer. *Les Francs, de leur origine jusqu’au 6ème siècle, et leur héritage*. 2 vols. Paris: Armand Colin, 1997. (Vol. 1, *A la conquête de la Gaule*; vol. 2, *L’origine de la France*. Well-illustrated, accessible overview with archaeological emphasis.)
- Peytremann, Edith. *Archéologie de l’habitat rural dans le nord de la Gaule du IVe au XIIIe siècle*. 2 vols. Association Française d’Archéologie Mérovingienne Mémoires, no. 13. Saint-Germain-en-Laye, France: Musée des Antiquités Nationales, 2002. (The first general study of the subject, with a complete site catalogue.)
- Pilet, Christian. *La nécropole de Frénoville: Étude d’une population de la fin du IIIe à la fin du VIIe siècle*. 2 vols. BAR International Series, no. 83. Oxford: British Archaeological Reports, 1983.
- Privati, Béatrice. *La nécropole de Sézegnin (Ive–VIIe siècle)*. Société d’Histoire et d’Archéologie de Genève, no. 10. Geneva, Switzerland: A. Jullien, 1983.
- Salin, Édouard. *La civilisation mérovingienne d’après les sépultures, les textes et le laboratoire*. 4 vols. Paris: A. and J. Picard, 1950–1959. (Vol. 1, *Les idées et les faits*; vol. 2, *Les sépultures*; vol. 3, *Les techniques*; vol. 4, *Les croyances*. Although dated and much criticized, still a fundamental work by the pioneer of twentieth-century Merovingian archaeology in France.)
- Sapin, Christian. “Architecture and Funerary Space in the Early Middle Ages.” In *Spaces of the Living and the Dead: An Archaeological Dialogue*. Edited by Catherine Karkov, Kelley Wickham-Crowley, and Bailey Young, pp. 39–60. American Early Medieval Studies, no. 3. Oxford: Oxbow Books, 1999.
- Young, Bailey K. “The Myth of the Pagan Cemetery.” In *Spaces of the Living and the Dead: An Archaeological Dialogue*. Edited by Catherine Karkov, Kelley Wickham-Crowley, and Bailey Young, pp. 61–85. American Early Medieval Studies, no. 3. Oxford: Oxbow Books, 1999.
- . “Les nécropoles (IIIe–VIIIe siècle).” In *Naissance des arts chrétiens: Atlas du monde paléochrétien*. Paris: Imprimerie Nationale, 1991. (Includes extensive site bibliography.)
- . “Paganisme, christianisation, et rites funéraires mérovingiens.” *Archéologie médiévale* 7 (1977): 5–83. (Includes site gazetteer.)

BAILEY K. YOUNG

TOMB OF CHILDERIC

On 27 May 1653 a deaf-mute mason named Adrien Quinquin, working on a construction project near the church of Saint-Brice in Tournai, Belgium, struck gold. As the abbé Cochet reconstructs the story in *Le tombeau de Childéric I*, he was down about 7 or 8 feet in dark earth when a chance blow of the pick suddenly revealed a gold buckle and at least a hundred gold coins. This surprise find caused him to throw down the tool and run about, waving his arms and trying to articulate sounds. The first witnesses who crowded around the trench saw some two hundred silver coins; human bones, including two skulls; a lot of rusted iron; a sword with a gold grip and a hilt ornamented in the gold-and-garnet cloisonné technique and sheathed in a cloisonné-decorated scabbard; and numerous other gold items, among them, brooches, buckles, rings, an ornament in the form of a bull’s head, and about three hundred gold cloisonné bees.

The authorities acted quickly to gather together this “treasure,” and news of it soon reached the archduke Leopold William, governor of the Austrian Netherlands, who had it sent to him in Brussels. He further ordered that a careful written account of the find be made and confided the collection for study to his personal physician, Jean-Jacques Chif-

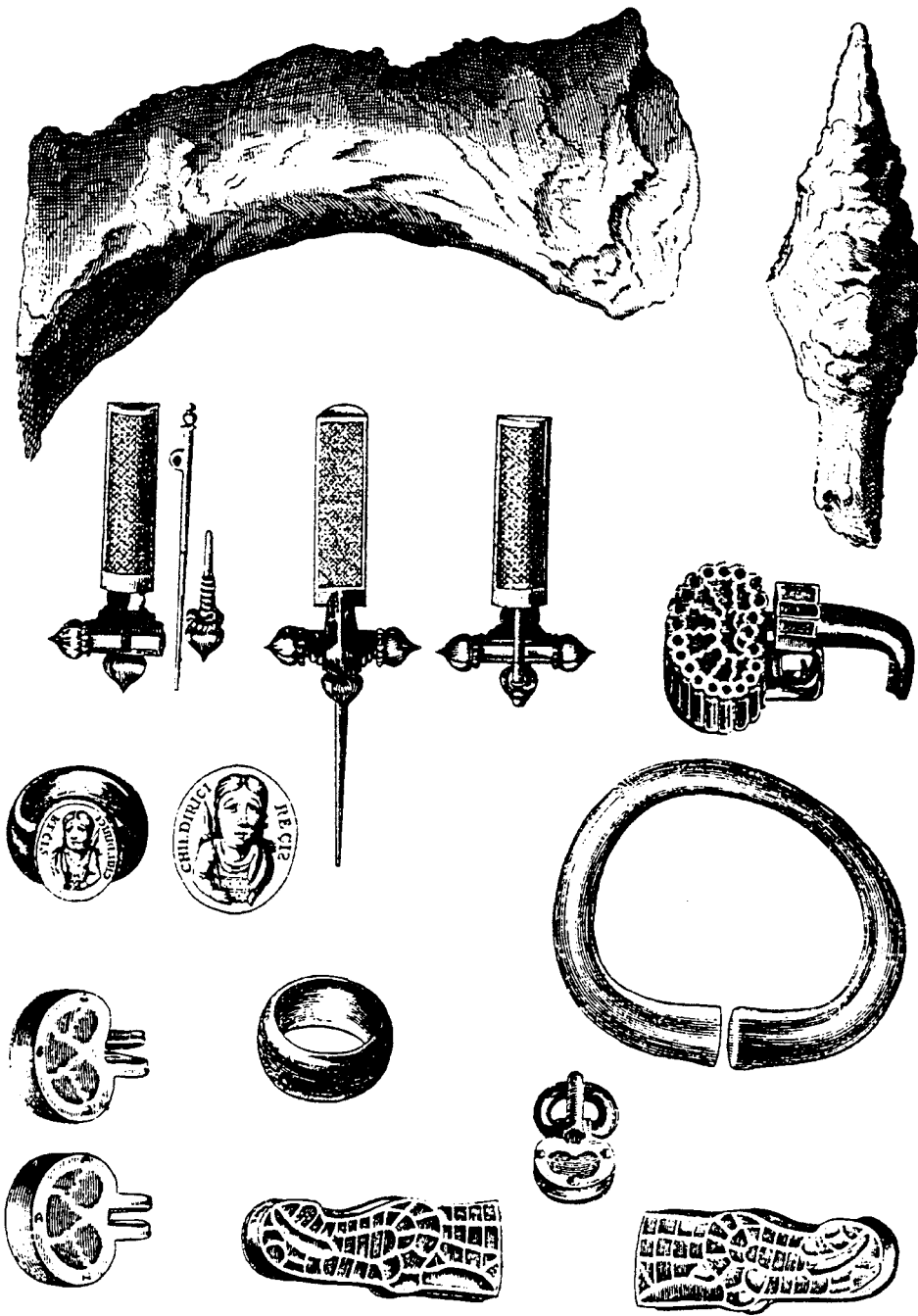


Fig. 1. Childeric's "treasure" from original 1655 plates: weapons. FROM VALLET AND KAZANSKI 1995. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

flet, who also was a historian. The outstanding find was a gold signet ring inscribed with the figure of an armed warrior and the name CHILIRICI REGIS. In 1655 Chifflet published a folio volume of 367 pages with 27 plates of engravings furnishing

an excellent visual record of all the artifacts and a careful discussion and interpretative essay identifying the subject as the father of Clovis I, the great ancestor of the French monarchy. This discovery is the starting point of Merovingian archaeology, and

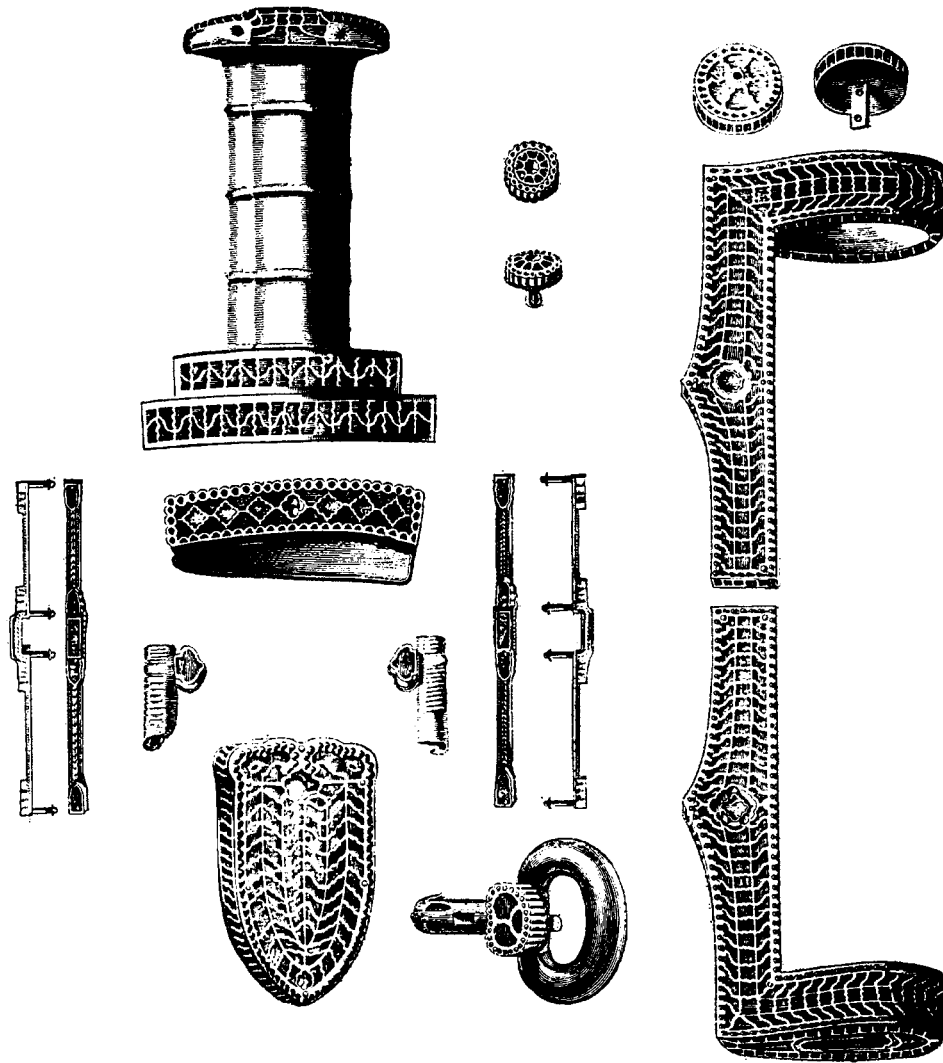


Fig. 2. Childeric's "treasure" from original 1655 plates: fibula, signet ring, cloisonnée ornament.
FROM VALLET AND KAZANSKI 1995. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

Chifflet's study deserves to be considered the first truly scientific archaeological publication.

This study has proved all the greater a boon because most of the original artifacts have disappeared. The archduke took them home to Vienna when he retired. Upon his death in 1662 they came into the possession of Leopold I, emperor of Austria, who, in 1665, sent them to France as a diplomatic present to young King Louis XIV. The collection survived the French Revolution intact, but one night in 1831

two thieves broke into the Bibliothèque Royal and stole the trove. By the time they were caught, most of the gold objects had been melted down, but a few artifacts, such as the gold cloisonné ornament of the sword, had been thrown into the Seine in leather sacks, and these were recovered.

What do we know of Childeric? The sixth-century ecclesiastic and historian Gregory of Tours tells us something of his life in *Historia Francorum* (The history of the Franks). Childeric may have

been the son of Merovech, and he was considered a king so debauched that his own subjects drove him into exile for eight years among the Thuringians, at the court of King Basinus and Queen Basina. During this time the Roman general Aegidius ruled the Franks in his place. Upon his departure from court, Queen Basina followed him. They eventually married, and she gave birth to a son, Clovis. Meanwhile Childeric fought a battle at Orléans against the Visigoths and another at Angers against the Goths and Saxons. When he died in about A.D. 481, his son Clovis replaced him. On the basis of this information and the way in which Gregory recounts Clovis's subsequent (A.D. 486) defeat of Syagrius, Aegidius's son and heir, Childeric often has been presented in history books as a minor Frankish warlord whose power was based on the rather minor and out-of-the-way northern town of Tournai. (This is assumed because of the place of his burial.) He is thought to have played a supporting role to the Roman commanders in northern Gaul, who were attempting to defend what was left of Roman power there from the A.D. 450s to the 480s.

Much can be learned from Childeric's grave. Michel Kazanski and Patrick Périn offer a reconstruction of the burial and comment on how it fits into the complex and changing world of the later fifth century. The polychrome gold-and-garnet ornament so prominent in the grave closely parallels the finds at another contemporary princely warrior grave at Pouan, in Northeast France. The style points particularly to the Danube region, where rich assemblages like those in Pannonia at Apahida (now in Hungary) and Blucina (now in the Czech Republic) define an international barbarian elite style associated with the Hunnic empire. This "barbarian" side of the Childeric assemblage also is reflected in such details as the gold bracelet, which Joachim Werner has shown was the symbol of German royalty, set permanently on the wrist when the king first mounted the throne. In the tradition of late imperial "chieftains' graves," Childeric had a panoply of weapons. No evidence has survived of an *angon*, a kind of harpoon, or a shield, which are typical complements to such an assemblage, but their vestiges could have looked like so much rusty iron to on-lookers in 1653.

There was a spear (the figure on the signet ring is shown grasping one, as a symbol of royal authori-

ty) and a throwing axe (*francisca*)—everyday weapons, balancing the parade-ground pomp of the gold-and-garnet double-edged long sword and the short, single-edged *scramasax*. The style of the very fine cloisonné ornament on these weapons recalls Byzantine-Sassanid techniques crafted in Byzantine workshops and often distributed as diplomatic gifts. Could Childeric have traveled east and received them, perhaps during his long Thuringian exile? Kazanski sees the Childeric material as reflecting motifs and techniques widespread in the Mediterranean world; he and Périn suggest that at least some of the work may have been done locally for Childeric, perhaps by craftspeople trained in the East. There is thus an international flavor to the barbarian side of the burial.

The Roman side is represented most strongly by a gold cruciform fibula with a finely decorated foot. Such brooches were worn by high-ranking Roman officials, affixing to the right shoulder the official purple cloak, or *paludamentum*. The gold signet ring, too, suggests both the authority of a Roman commander and the technology of writing: it is used to seal orders. The image engraved upon it deftly blends the two sides, Roman and barbarian: the king is depicted as a Roman general with cloak and body armor, but he has long hair. Long hair, a symbol of vitality, was the prerogative of the royal lineage with its claim to divine ancestry.

There were said to have been two human skulls in the grave, one smaller than the other, and this led to suggestions that Childeric had been buried with his wife, Basina. A sphere of rock crystal, always a feminine artifact, was found in the assemblage, but there are no other clearly feminine objects, so this theory seems unlikely. More plausible is the hypothesis that a horse was buried within or near the king's grave (a horse's skull was found). This is a custom with many parallels in the Germanic world, and some of the iron fragments could have derived from harness equipment. Indeed some think the enigmatic decorative objects, the bull's head and the golden bees—finds that remain unique—could have ornamented the royal harness rather than a royal robe, as was long thought.

In the 1980s understanding of Childeric's grave and its significance was revolutionized by a series of excavations led by Raymond Brulet. This research was part of a larger investigation of Tournai, origi-

nally a Roman town of secondary importance located at the border of two *civitates*, or states, whose status rose in the late empire until it became the seat of a bishopric. Why was a Frankish war leader like Childeric buried there? Nothing in the meager written sources suggests any specific connection, let alone a reason. What was the context of the grave? Was it isolated, as has often been suggested?

The site of the grave itself is precisely known, thanks to Chifflet, but inaccessible: a house with a deep cellar has replaced it. Brulet was able to excavate underneath the street in front of it, and he obtained permission from the homeowners to dig trenches in their backyards. It soon became clear that Childeric's grave was part of a cemetery where the northern Gallo-Frankish style of furnished burial was practiced: weapons common in men's graves and jewelry in women's graves, with a funerary deposit of late imperial tradition common to both. It is possible, even plausible, that Childeric's was the "founder's grave," the focal point around which the cemetery grew. The two most unexpected discoveries were the monumental conception of the entire tomb and evidence of lavish sacrifice no doubt associated with the funeral. The archaeological features upon which these deductions rest are three pits with several horse burials surrounding the royal grave like satellites and an undisturbed zone encompassing the royal grave itself. This is interpreted as evidence of a monumental tumulus, or grave mound, 20 meters or more in diameter.

Twenty-one horses were packed into the three pits. All of the skeletal material was studied carefully, and carbon-14 tests were run on bones from five animals. The results focus on the later fifth century as the most likely time of burial. The animals themselves were clearly a very selective, not a random, group. Most were geldings—warhorses—and many of the rest were stallions; only one probable mare could be identified. Four were colts, and seventeen were mounts, adults ranging from six to eighteen years old. This seems to have been the royal stable, sacrificed in a lavish gesture at Childeric's funeral.

The king was buried in a stoutly built timber funerary chamber over which the great tumulus was built. It would have been clearly visible from the Roman road, passing a little to the south on its way to the bridge over to the right bank of the Schelde (Escaut) River, where the main part of the town was

located. The royal tumulus thus would have become perhaps the most striking monumental feature of the landscape around the town. It fits well with the lavish nature of the grave goods and with the extravagant gesture of sacrificing the royal stable. Was the funerary symbolism meant to recall the mighty figure of Attila, the great war leader in the time of Childeric's youth, who also was buried under a great tumulus and whose funeral featured mounted Huns circling it, singing laments?

Guy Halsall, who has insisted on the need to understand the ceremonial and even theatrical aspects of funerary practice, calls the scale of Childeric's burial display staggering. He also asserts that it was not Childeric but rather his son, Clovis, who created the tomb to demonstrate his right to succession. There is no evidence to support this hypothesis; indeed if Childeric already controlled Gaul as far south as the Loire, as Halsall, following the revisionist thesis of Edward James, argues, the choice of a small town far to the north to make this demonstration seems curious.

Brulet suggests that Tournai may have been where Childeric's ancestors were buried; a contemporary Roman writer, Bishop Apollinaris Sidonius, relates that about A.D. 450 the Salian Franks under Clodio seized the nearby *civitas* of Arras. This is likely to have been Childeric's grandfather, who then occupied the lands as far south as the Somme. As Périn points out, funerary archaeology supports this limit for Frankish power in Childeric's day, and Tournai makes more sense as a central place within it. Childeric's burial always has seemed exceptional for the lavish display of grave goods; Brulet's reconstruction of the funerary environment makes it stand out all the more, accentuating the pagan and barbarian resonance of this cosmopolitan funerary monument.

As imperial authority was fragmenting throughout the western empire and new polities, mostly identified with barbarian leaders and peoples, were emerging to replace it, funerary ritual offered a potent means to claim power symbolically. There is no reason to assume that so successful and decisive a figure as Childeric in the complex and changing political and cultural environment of the day would not have decided so fundamental a matter as his own funeral. Indeed he appears to have fashioned from various traditions (most notably the Germanic

“chieftain’s burials” that his Frankish ancestors had known for generations) a bold new funerary model fit for a king. Within a few years the astounding success of Clovis, eliminating rival rulers and conquering most of Roman Gaul, changed all the fundamentals of the situation. Clovis centered his new power on Paris, in the Seine basin, far southwest of Tournai. Furthermore, by converting to Catholic Christianity, Clovis turned away from the too pagan funerary model of his father. His own death in Paris in A.D. 511 opens a new funerary chapter, that of royal *ad sanctos* burial (burial next to or near a martyr or a saint-confessor).

See also **Merovingian Franks** (vol. 2, part 7); **Sutton Hoo** (vol. 2, part 7); **Merovingian France** (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Brulet, Raymond. “La sépulture du roi Childéric à Tournai et le site funéraire.” In *La noblesse romaine et les chefs barbares du IIIe au VIIe siècle*. Edited by Françoise Vallet and Michel Kazanski, pp. 309–326. Association Française d’Archéologie Mérovingienne Mémoire 9. Saint-Germain-en-Laye, France: Musée des Antiquités Nationales, 1995.
- , ed. *Les fouilles du quartier Saint-Brice à Tournai*. Vol. 2, *L’environnement funéraire de la sépulture de Childéric*. Louvain-la-Neuve, France: L’Université Catholique de Louvain, 1990–1991. (Details the excavations of the 1980s, including the original specialist reports.)
- Carver, Martin. *Sutton Hoo: Burial Ground of Kings?* London: British Museum Press; Philadelphia: University of Pennsylvania Press, 1998. (See chap. 5.)
- Cochet, Abbé. *Le tombeau de Childéric I, roi des Francs, restitué à l’aide de l’archéologie*. Paris: Gerald Montfort, Brionne, 1859. (A nineteenth-century attempt to put the Childeric grave in context.)
- Dumas, Françoise. *Le tombeau de Childéric*. Paris: Bibliothèque Nationale, Département des Médailles et Antiques, 1976.
- Gregory of Tours. *The History of the Franks*. Translated and with an introduction by Lewis Thorpe. Harmondsworth, U.K.: Penguin Books, 1974. (See book 2, sections 9, 12, and 18 on Childeric and sections 27–43 on Clovis.)
- Halsall, Guy. “Childeric’s Grave, Clovis’ Succession, and the Origins of the Merovingian Kingdom.” In *Society and Culture in Late Antique Gaul: Revisiting the Sources*. Edited by Ralph W. Mathiesen and Danuta Shanzer, pp. 116–133. Aldershot, U.K.: Ashgate, 2001.
- James, Edward. *The Franks*. Oxford: Blackwell, 1988. (A revisionist view of Childeric.)
- Kazanski, Michel, and Patrick Périn. “Le mobilier de la tombe de Childéric I: État de la question et perspectives.” *Revue archéologique de Picardie* 3–4 (1988): 13–38.
- Müller-Wille, Michael. “Königtum und Adel im Spiegel der Grabkunde.” In his *Die Franken: Wegbereiter Europas*, 2 vols. Vol. 1, pp. 206–221. Mainz, Germany: Verlag Philipp von Zabern, 1996.
- Périn, Patrick. *La datation des tombes mérovingiennes: Historique, méthodes, applications*. With a contribution by René Legoux. Geneva, Switzerland: Librairie Droz, 1980.
- Périn, Patrick, and Laure-Charlotte Feffer. *Les Francs*. Vol. 1, *A la conquête de la Gaule*. Paris: Armand Colin, 1997.
- Werner, Joachim. “Neue Analyse des Childerichgrabes von Tournai.” *Rheinisches Vierteljahrsblätter* 35 (1971): 43ff.

BAILEY K. YOUNG



EARLY MEDIEVAL IBERIA

Although early medieval Spain and Portugal may seem to stretch the definition of the “barbarian world” considerably—from the point of view of contemporaries they were perhaps one of the most “civilized” parts of the Western world at the time—they provide an interesting view of the transformation of the classical tradition as it merged with other cultures and gradually developed into new traditions that we recognize in the modern world.

It is only since the last decades of the twentieth century that archaeology has begun to transform our understanding of early medieval Iberia. In the middle decades of the twentieth century, the archaeology of Spain and Portugal was for political reasons somewhat isolated from outside trends and restricted in its discourse. Since the 1980s, medieval archaeology in Spain has benefited tremendously from a great expansion in archaeological research and from active and energetic debate of the theoretical issues. Portuguese archaeology has developed less rapidly, but important new work began to appear in the 1990s. Well-documented salvage excavations in urban centers, more detailed study of the detritus of everyday life (such as utilitarian pottery, animal bones, and traces of irrigation systems), and regional surveys of surface evidence for settlements are among the new forms of evidence available; in part it is the freedom to discuss issues of social theory such as feudalization, structures of state power, and processes of ethnic distinction that has driven this expansion of archaeological research.

HISTORICAL OVERVIEW

A brief overview of the sequence of events known from written historical sources helps to provide a framework for understanding the effects of modern archaeology on our understanding of early medieval Iberia. The Early Middle Ages have rarely been treated as a unified topic by historians; a great divide has traditionally existed between historians who study sources written in Latin and those who study sources in Arabic. The Latin sources tend to be frustratingly sparse and brief, but they are the only evidence for the period before 711 and the principal evidence for northern Spain after that date as well. The Arabic sources are more informative but also more limited in their coverage, and less accessible to most Western scholars. Only the florescence of archaeological research beginning in the late twentieth century has made it possible to transcend this linguistic divide and see the continuities in the Early Middle Ages of Spain and Portugal.

In A.D. 400, Spain and Portugal had been part of the Roman Empire for hundreds of years. A complex provincial administration based in major cities, trade connections with the entire Mediterranean basin, and a cosmopolitan culture combining classical Latin learning with the new imperial religion of Christianity were all part of the legacy of Roman rule. A few years later, however, the defenses of the western Roman frontier collapsed, and the Suevians, Vandals, and Alans, tribes from what is now Germany, entered the Roman provinces. The Suevians, together with fragments of the other tribes,



Selected sites in early medieval Iberia.

took over what is now northern Portugal and northwestern Spain.

As the Western Roman Empire collapsed during the course of the fifth century, the Visigoths (a Germanic tribe from eastern Europe) formed a kingdom in southern France that eventually expanded into Spain. Over the course of the fifth century, the Visigoths extended their control over all of Roman Spain and Portugal except for the Suevian enclave in the northwest. Through a long series of wars with the Suevians, the native tribes of mountainous northern Spain, and eastern Roman armies that attempted to reestablish Roman rule in southern Spain, the Visigothic kings eventually united all of the Iberian Peninsula (together with a small portion of southern France) under their rule by the early seventh century. In doing so they created a tradition of central authority and ideological uniformity, all focused on their capital in Toledo, that gave them the most powerful government in western Europe at the time.

Between 711 and 720, an invasion by a small Arab and Berber army from North Africa overthrew the Visigothic kingdom, and all of Spain and Portugal became part of the Islamic Empire. Arab rule

seems to have been established quickly and with little disruption of society, but a series of civil wars among the conquerors over the next several decades may have been more destructive. The developing divisions within the Islamic world soon resulted in the establishment of an independent Arab emirate in al-Andalus, as the Arabs called their Iberian realm, ruled by the Umayyad dynasty. By the tenth century this evolved into an independent caliphate, centered on the city of Córdoba.

Unlike the Visigoths, the Arabs were unable or unwilling to maintain central control in the mountains of northern Spain. Perhaps as early as 718, some Visigothic nobles in the Asturias of northwestern Spain had set up an independent, Christian kingdom. This kingdom gradually extended its control over Galicia, León, and Castille. During the ninth century other small Christian realms were formed by the Franks in Catalonia and the Basques in Navarre. By A.D. 1000, although the Arab Caliphate of Córdoba controlled most of the Iberian Peninsula, the Kingdom of León, the Kingdom of Pamplona, and the County of Barcelona in the north represented the origins of what would, over the course of the later Middle Ages, evolve into the modern countries of Spain and Portugal.

The written sources provide little detail, though, to flesh out this narrative with a deeper understanding of how society worked and how people lived their lives—in other words, the social and cultural processes that guided the course of historical events. Archaeological research is providing new insights into subjects where the texts raise many questions but provide few clear answers, such as the definition and evolution of ethnic and religious identities, the processes of political and social control, and the demographic and economic basis of society.

ETHNIC AND RELIGIOUS IDENTITIES

Ethnic and religious differences such as the distinctions between Catholic Christians and Arian Christians, between Christians and Muslims, between Romans and Goths or Suevians, between Latins and Arabs, or between Arabs and Berbers were of paramount importance from the point of view of the writers of the historical sources, and the persistence of other unassimilated minorities such as Basques and Jews throughout this period added to the diverse mixture. What is not clear is the practical importance that these categories had in reality. They evolved over time, and distinctions that were important in one period became unimportant later on. By showing how these identities affected behavior, archaeology makes it possible to understand their evolution more fully.

Rome's Spanish provinces were among the most romanized parts of the empire, meaning that the native populations had widely adopted Roman culture and ethnicity. The modern Castilian (Spanish), Portuguese, and Catalan languages are all descended from the Latin brought by the Romans, and the Catholic religion of Spain and Portugal was a creation of the Roman Empire. It is not clear to what degree local ethnic identities survived romanization—certainly the Basques in the Pyrenees retained their language and identity, and other peoples in remote parts of the peninsula may have as well. Similarly, scattered pre-Christian religious practices are likely to have carried on for a long time in rural areas, long after the people who maintained them had become nominally Christian. But for the most part, as far as one can see in the available evidence, the Iberian Peninsula in A.D. 400 was inhab-

ited by people who were Roman in ethnicity and Catholic Christians by religion.

The Germanic invasions of the fifth century disrupted this seeming unity by introducing new ruling elites that identified themselves as ethnically Suevian or Visigothic. The Visigoths were also distinct religiously, because they adhered at first to a different theological tradition in Christianity known as Arianism, characterized by an interpretation of the Trinity emphasizing the separateness of its elements rather than their unity as manifestations of a single god. Although the distinction between Arians and Catholics was of great importance to theologians, it seems to have had little practical effect on daily life. There is no way, for example, to distinguish an Arian cathedral from a Catholic one from their archaeological traces, nor do people seem to have made an effort to use clothing, household behavior, or burial rituals to proclaim their identity with one or the other form of Christianity. If there was an effect, it was a negative one—that only after 589, when the Visigothic regime officially adopted Catholicism, was the powerful intellectual tradition of the Hispano-Roman Catholics turned to the active ideological support of the Gothic state.

This conflict, however rarified, may nonetheless have had an effect on the attitudes of the Spanish Church. Jerrilynn Dodds, in *Architecture and Ideology in Early Medieval Spain* (1990), has suggested that the defensive position of the Spanish church, subordinated first to the Arian Visigoths and later to Islam, manifested itself architecturally in a use of constricted, horseshoe-shaped arches and apses as well as screens or barriers separating choir from congregation to create secretive, enclosed spaces for the performance of the liturgy. It is difficult, however, to verify such interpretations of subtle, subconscious meanings.

The Visigoths and Suevians constituted only a small minority of the population. In the fifth century their ethnic identity must have been quite distinct from that of the native Hispano-Roman population, but this identity has left few obvious traces archaeologically. They seem to have adopted the culture of the Roman provinces very rapidly in almost all respects. What were traditionally identified as Visigothic cemeteries in northern Spain, for example, are now thought by many to be related to changes in Roman society, not to Visigothic traditions. A

few artifact types may have served specifically to signify this ethnic distinction, such as eagle-shaped brooches, but over time the sense of ethnic differentness between Hispano-Romans and the Germanic conquerors seems to have lost its importance to people. For the most part, the archaeological evidence suggests that the Visigoths and Suevians rapidly assimilated to Hispano-Roman culture. By the seventh century, the ethnic distinction between Hispano-Romans and the Germanic Visigoths or Suevians seems to have merged with and been superseded by concepts of social class and wealth. Like the distinction between Arianism and Catholicism, this ethnic divide does not seem to have had enough practical importance to sustain itself in the long run. In the eighth century and later, Latin Christians in Spain seem to have regarded their Visigothic and Roman pasts as parts of a single cultural heritage.

The social divisions brought about by the Arab conquest proved to be a different matter. Like the Visigoths and Suevians, the Arabs and Berbers were at first a small minority relative to the native population, and initially they brought few significant cultural differences, with the important exception of their religion. Unlike Arianism, Islam manifested its differentness not only in abstract theological concepts but also in many aspects of daily life, from what one could eat or drink, to the daily routine of prayer, to the appropriate placement of the dead in their graves. This religious distinction is not only more visible archaeologically, but it also would have given the boundary between Muslims and Christians more force in processes of cultural change. Cultural assimilation worked both ways in this instance—the Latin Christian population of al-Andalus gradually assimilated to the culture of their rulers, becoming Muslim Arabs, but the Islamic civilization that they adopted was itself heavily influenced by Hispano-Roman culture. The Great Mosque of Córdoba, for example, built in stages from the eighth to tenth centuries, combines elements of Hispano-Roman and Byzantine architectural styles into a building whose function was specifically Islamic (fig. 1).

The immediate effect of the Arab conquest on the archaeological record was probably small, due to the limited numbers of the invaders. It is debated, for example, whether Berber styles of pottery

were introduced to Spain in the eighth century. The process of Islamization of the native population, however, had a more prominent impact over time; it is likely that by A.D. 1000 a majority of the population had converted to Islam, and Arabic was probably becoming the most common language.

Food remains provide one way to observe this process. In Roman times, pork was an important source of meat in many parts of Spain, and this continued to some extent through the Visigothic period. After the Arab conquest, the frequency of pig bones in archaeological sites gradually declined, probably indicating conversion of the population to Islam, which prohibits the eating of pork. Pig bones usually continue to be present in small quantities, though, suggesting the presence of a Christian minority even in mainly Muslim communities. An exception that proves the rule is a site in southeastern Spain called the Rábita de Guardamar, a retreat where Muslim warriors could combine asceticism, religious contemplation, and defense of their faith. Not surprisingly, such a specifically Islamic site lacks pig bones.

POLITICAL COMPLEXITY AND THE ORGANIZATION OF SOCIETY

As the rulers changed from Romans to Visigoths to Arabs, the structures of political control and social dominance, unsurprisingly, changed as well. The scanty written documentation gives little insight into the processes of control, however, except to some degree in the caliphate toward the end of the Early Middle Ages.

The Roman government was not the massive bureaucratic system that modern governments are, but by ancient standards it was a powerful and ambitious state. A complex taxation system was administered by professional civil servants, and the proceeds were used to support a standing army, public works such as roads and bridges, and of course the administrative system itself. The government produced massive quantities of coinage as a medium for its taxes and expenditures, and it produced many facilities such as forts and government buildings.

As the Roman Empire disintegrated, its successors such as the Visigoths and the Suevians attempted to retain as much of the Roman administrative system as served their purposes. Invasion and war-



Fig. 1. Rows of columns inside the Mezquita mosque in Córdoba, Spain. © VITTORIANO RASTELLI/CORBIS. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

fare must have disrupted many governmental functions, though, and they had probably already been in decline in later Roman times. In the middle of the fifth century, for example, while the city of Tarragona was still under Roman administration (which lasted there until around 470), what had earlier been public buildings and spaces, such as the provincial forum, had clearly lost their political function and were used as quarries for old building stone and dumping grounds for garbage. In Valencia, the Roman forum was replaced in the fifth century by a church (probably the city's cathedral) and a cemetery, not only indicating the decline of the former civic administration but also symbolizing how the church hierarchy was replacing the old institutions of local authority.

The Suevians and Visigoths, who had no tradition of administrative government, relied on surviving Roman institutions to control and exploit their new territories, but probably at a more limited level of activity. They produced coinage derived from Roman types, but in limited quantities and mostly in gold, suitable for large payments within the rul-

ing class but not for everyday use in small transactions. Some public works and state construction projects continued under the Visigoths, but the evidence is much more scarce than for the Roman period; no facilities for a professional standing army are apparent, for example. The state seems also to have been less able to enforce even the policies it was interested in; for example, despite draconian legislation in the seventh century intended to suppress Judaism, Jewish tombstones inscribed in Hebrew were still made.

This decline of state control seems to have affected the entire population in another way. The Roman government had been able to maintain peace and enforce laws well enough for people to live dispersed throughout the country with reasonable security. As Roman rule broke down, however, people tended to live in more clustered settlements, often in defensible locations, in some cases reusing prehistoric hillforts. This change suggests that the people in the countryside were at increased risk from marauders, bandits, feuds, or other forms of small-scale violence.

In sociopolitical organization as in many other things, the Christian north and the Islamic center and south followed different trajectories after the Islamic conquest. This has been made most clear since the late 1970s through studies of the social role of castles.

In much of western Europe, particularly France, medieval castles first appeared as part of a social transformation in which a class of feudal lords emerged during the tenth and eleventh centuries and seized for themselves on a local basis the political powers formerly exercised by the kings as well as by communities of free peasants, who were then reduced to serfdom. Castles served as the focal points of feudal settlement, and thousands were built during the decades around the year 1000. As feudal lords obtained economic power over the peasants, previously dispersed rural settlement was restructured in the form of larger villages located near the castles, so that compulsory labor service was easily accessible to the lords.

This transition to feudalism is generally agreed to have occurred also in Catalonia, which had close ties to France at the time. It is more disputed to what degree these changes happened in other parts of Spain or in Portugal. In the Kingdom of León, castles were built and villages were established as in France, but they seem to have happened separately, not as part of a single, drastic transformation of society. The written sources likewise suggest that neither royal power nor the freedom of the peasantry was so completely usurped there.

In Islamic al-Andalus, as well, castles became abundant, in contrast to their absence in most other Islamic lands at the time. And in some ways these castles may have had functions similar to those of northern Spain, especially in areas where the Muslim elite was formed from converted Hispano-Gothic nobles. Because society was organized differently in al-Andalus, though, the seizure of power by local nobles that was the essence of feudalism did not happen there. Castles in al-Andalus served as defensive refuges and as local outposts of the central administration, so rather than causing a restructuring of rural settlement for the benefit of local lords, they were instead placed where people already were.

POPULATION, TRADE, AND THE ECONOMY

Traditionally, the end of the Roman Empire was imagined in apocalyptic terms of collapse and destruction. Modern research has modified this attitude in many important ways, emphasizing the continuities from Roman times to the Early Middle Ages as well as the creativity and vitality of late ancient and early medieval civilization. Nevertheless, many changes occurred in the material aspects of life. Although there are difficulties with the evidence, the overall pattern appears to be one of economic decline from the later part of the Roman period through the Visigothic period, with gradual recovery beginning in the ninth or tenth century. These trends appear in the evidence relating to rural population, urbanism, and trade.

Under Roman rule, the Iberian Peninsula was densely settled with an assortment of towns and villages, small farms, and large aristocratic villas, most often situated in the best agricultural land. Although many of these sites remained occupied into the fifth and sixth centuries, the number of sites declined, and those that remained were smaller; also, as noted above, new sites were often in defensive locations. By the seventh century, a very different pattern had taken shape: people lived mostly in small sites, which were much less abundant and which were commonly located in mountainous areas or inaccessible hilltops. This pattern, which suggests both a substantial decline in population and a concern with defense instead of maximization of production, continued through the Arab conquest into the ninth century. Only from the late ninth or tenth century does there seem in many regions to have been an expansion of settlement back into lower, more productive, but also more vulnerable areas.

Towns and cities followed a broadly parallel trend. By late Roman times, not only the public buildings but also many residential areas of the towns had fallen out of use, suggesting a diminished number of residents. Although written sources seem to indicate that towns and cities remained important centers of civil and religious administration throughout the Early Middle Ages, the archaeological evidence is sparse. In many urban excavations in Spain, a late Roman level is immediately followed by deposits of the tenth or eleventh century or later, suggesting relatively little occupation during the in-

tervening centuries. Some structures, especially churches, mosques, and fortifications, are known, but the paucity of associated habitation material seems to indicate that the towns remained centers of religious and political activity but were no longer centers of population or economic activity. The few locations where early medieval occupation levels have been found are often restricted in area and associated with defensive locations or religious facilities. In Mérida, one of the few towns where urban excavation has revealed early medieval habitations, they take the form of reuse of semi-ruined Roman buildings, subdivided into small apartments, eventually abandoned, and not replaced with new structures until the ninth century.

The decline in urban occupation is probably related to general changes in the economy during the Early Middle Ages. Under the Roman Empire, the countries around the Mediterranean were linked by active networks of long-distance trade, which can be observed archaeologically in the remains of nonperishable goods such as pottery. Even in the fifth and sixth centuries, pottery types made in what are now Tunisia, Turkey, and other places all around the Mediterranean were regularly available in the coastal cities of Spain and Portugal. After 550, however, these imports rapidly declined, and they ceased entirely by the latter half of the seventh century. Although exchange of goods and ideas did not cease entirely, long-distance trade on a scale large enough to be archaeologically significant did not resume until the tenth century and later.

The economic changes were not limited to overseas trade; the evidence for specialized production and local exchange within the Iberian Peninsula shows a similar pattern. In fact, for a long time this pattern obscured the archaeology of the Early Middle Ages. In previous generations, when medieval archaeology was closely connected with art history, the shortage of finely produced items in early medieval Spain and Portugal, compared to the Roman and late medieval periods, made it difficult to study the period. The Visigothic period was best known from metalwork such as brooches and belt buckles found in cemeteries and from stonework associated with churches. So skilled craftsmen continued to exist, but they seem to have been much less abundant than in the Roman period, since few such objects are found in ordinary sites.

Referring once again to the artifacts that are most abundant on archaeological sites, the finely made, decorated table pottery of the late Roman period disappeared after the fifth or sixth century, and then only plain, coarse pottery was made—often without the use of the potter's wheel, which is essential for producing in large quantities—until new styles of decorated tablewares based on eastern Islamic traditions appeared in the late ninth century.

These patterns of economic production are far from the religious and political concerns of the written historical sources, but by elucidating the context in which the recorded events took place, they may provide an essential part of improved explanations of how culture and society changed in Spain and Portugal during the early Middle Ages. Historical events are necessarily shaped by the economic and social context in which they occur, and this context is lacking in the very limited written history of early medieval Spain and Portugal. For example, the inability of the Visigoths to form an effective resistance after their king was defeated at the beginning of the Islamic conquest has been attributed by historians to moral decay or overcentralized rulership. But it may be just as significant that the population of the region was at the bottom of a long process of decline in the eighth century and that economic disintegration would have made coordination difficult. These same factors also raise some interesting questions about the effects of the demographic and economic growth that appeared in the ninth and tenth centuries, such as whether some regions grew earlier or faster and therefore had advantages in political competition. Future archaeological research has the potential to address such questions, which could not even have been asked until the late twentieth century.

See also Visigoths (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Ación Almansa, Manuel. "Poblamiento y fortificación en el sur de al-Andalus." In *Actas del III Congreso de Arqueología Medieval Española*. Vol. 1, pp. 135–150. Oviedo, Spain: Universidad de Oviedo, 1989.
- Alba Calzado, Miguel. "Ocupación diacrónica del área arqueológica de Morería (Mérida)." In *Mérida: Excavaciones arqueológicas, 1994–1995*. Edited by Pedro Mateos Cruz, Miguel Alba Calzado, and Juana Márquez Pérez, pp. 285–315. Mérida, Spain: Consorcio Ciudad Monumental Histórico-Artística y Arqueológica de Mérida, 1997.

- Barceló, Miquel. "Los *ḥuṣūn*, los *castra* y los fantasmas que aún los habitan." In *Castillos y territorio en al-Andalus*. Edited by Antonio Malpica. Granada: Athos-Pérgamos, 1998, pp. 10–41.
- Bazzana, André, Patrice Cressier, and Pierre Guichard. *Les châteaux ruraux d'al-Andalus*. Madrid: Casa de Velázquez, 1988.
- Benito Iborra, Miguel. "La evolución estructural de las sociedades históricas del sur de la Comunidad Valenciana." In *Actas del IV Congreso de Arqueología Medieval Española*. Vol. 1, pp. 151–168. Alicante, Spain: Diputación Provincial de Alicante, 1993.
- Collins, Roger. *Early Medieval Spain: Unity in Diversity, 400–1000*. 2d ed. New York: St. Martin's, 1995.
- Dodds, Jerrilynn D. *Architecture and Ideology in Early Medieval Spain*. University Park: Pennsylvania State University Press, 1990.
- Dodds, Jerrilynn D., Bernard F. Reilly, and John W. Williams. *The Art of Medieval Spain, A.D. 500–1200*. New York: Metropolitan Museum of Art, 1993.
- Fernandes, Isabel Cristina F., and A. Rafael Carvalho. "Cerâmicas muçulmanas do Castelo de Palmela." In *La céramique médiévale en Méditerranée, actes du VIe congrès de l'AIECM2*. Edited by G. Démians d'Archimbaud, pp. 327–335. Aix-en-Provence, France: Narration Éditions, 1997.
- Glick, Thomas F. *From Muslim Fortress to Christian Castle: Social and Cultural Change in Medieval Spain*. Manchester, U.K.: Manchester University Press, 1995.
- . *Islamic and Christian Spain in the Early Middle Ages*. Princeton, N.J.: Princeton University Press, 1979.
- Gómez Becerra, Antonio. "El litoral granadino en época altomedieval (siglos VII–XI): Poblamiento, navegación y defensa." *Arqueología y territorio medieval* 7 (2000): 7–21.
- Gutiérrez Lloret, Sonia. "De la *civitas* a la *madīna*: destrucción y formación de la ciudad en el sureste de Al-Andalus: el debate arqueológico." In *Actas del IV Congreso de Arqueología Medieval Española*. Vol. 1, pp. 13–35. Alicante, Spain: Diputación Provincial de Alicante, 1993.
- . "Production and Trade of Local and Regional Pottery in Early Medieval Spain (7th–9th Centuries): The Experience of the Southeast of the Iberian Peninsula." *Boletín de arqueología medieval* 6 (1992): 9–22.
- Keay, S. J. *Roman Spain*. London: British Museum Press, 1988. (See particularly chap. 9, "The End of Roman Spain.")
- Martí, Ramón, and Sergi Selma. "La huerta de la madīna de Šubrub (Segorbe, Castelló)." *Boletín de arqueología medieval* 9 (1995): 39–51.
- Olmo Enciso, Lauro. "Consideraciones sobre la ciudad en época visigoda." *Arqueología y territorio medieval* 5 (1998): 109–118.
- Ramallo Asensio, Sebastián F. "Arquitectura doméstica en ámbitos urbanos entre los siglos V y VIII." In *Visigodos y Omeyas: Un debate entre la antigüedad tardía y la alta edad media*. Edited by L. Caballero Zoreda and P. Mateos Cruz, pp. 367–384. Madrid: Consejo Superior de Investigaciones Científicas, 2000.
- Reynolds, Paul. *Settlement and Pottery in the Vinalopó Valley (Alicante, Spain), A.D. 400–700*. BAR International Series, no. 588. Oxford: Tempvs Reparatum, 1993.
- Ripoll López, Gisela. "The Arrival of the Visigoths in Hispania: Population Problems and the Process of Acculturation." In *Strategies of Distinction: The Construction of Ethnic Communities, 300–800*. Edited by Walter Pohl and Helmut Reimitz, pp. 153–187. Leiden, The Netherlands: Brill, 1998.
- Salvatierra Cuenca, Vicente. "The Origins of al-Andalus (Eighth and Ninth Centuries): Continuity and Change." In *The Archaeology of Iberia: The Dynamics of Change*. Edited by Margarita Díaz-Andreu and Simon Keay, pp. 265–278. New York: Routledge, 1996.
- Taller Escola d'Arqueologia. *Un abocador del segle V d.C. en el fòrum provincial de Tàrraco*. Memòries d'Excavació 2. Tarragona, Spain: Ajuntament de Tarragona, 1989.
- Wolf, Kenneth B. *Conquerors and Chroniclers of Early Medieval Spain*. 2d ed. Translated Texts for Historians 9. Liverpool, U.K.: Liverpool University Press, 1999.

DAVID YOON



PRE-VIKING AND VIKING AGE NORWAY

Norway is a long, narrow, mountainous strip of land on the northwestern edge of the European continent, facing the North Atlantic Ocean. The word means “the way to the north” and originally may have designated the sea-lane along the coast. This is in line with the connections and developments of Norway as a primarily maritime nation through history. Throughout the centuries an exchange of goods, people, and ideas traveled both southward and westward. About the year A.D. 1000 the Christian faith was introduced to Norway from England, but in the later Middle Ages relations with Rome were carried on with Germany as the intermediary. Danish and German influences were long paramount, until new connections with the west were formed in the seventeenth century.

The first evidence of people in Norway dates to 9000–8000 B.C. from the sites of Komsa in Finnmark and Fosna in the Møre area. We do not know who the first Norwegians were, because two different migration routes are possible, one from the north through the Kola Peninsula and one via Sweden and Denmark. The Stone Age in Norway dates from 5000 to 3000 B.C. and is characterized by hunters and gatherers that used coarse tools, especially axes, and had domesticated dogs. During the Late Stone Age (3000–1500 B.C.), domesticated cattle and the beginnings of agriculture made their appearance. This period also marked the first evidence of an artistic tradition. Rock carvings of fish and reindeer have been discovered. The one burial dating from this period, located east of the Oslo-

fjord, is a collective grave. In later time periods single graves came into use.

During the Bronze Age (1500–500 B.C.), there are more extensive settlements and finer tools and weapons. Bronze (a copper and tin alloy) is not indigenous to Norway, and it had to be imported. This metal probably indicates status when found at archaeological sites. From this time period, there are magnificent rock carvings depicting sundials, wheels, oxen and oxen-driven carts, ships, and fish and fishing. All the rock carvings are located on rock faces with water cascading down or in indentations that collect water. A series of large mounds of stone and gravel are preserved from this time period and contain the bodies of powerful chieftains. These mounds also are placed in key locations in the landscape visible by outsiders, possibly as a sign of power and claim on the land. Later in this time period, the tradition moved toward cremation burials, where the remains were buried in urns.

About 500 B.C. iron first came to Norway. The pre-Roman Iron Age, or Celtic Iron Age (500–1 B.C.), primarily is known through archaeological work in southern Norway. Archaeological research in connection with urban development has provided insights on settlement and settlement patterns. It was a challenging time for agriculture, owing to climatic deterioration. The end of this period brought the Scandinavian countries into close association with the Roman civilization. The Roman Iron Age (A.D. 1–400) was marked by trade items from the Roman Empire, and Scandinavians came into contact not just with a different culture but also

with Christianity, literacy, and a written alphabet. Both cremation and inhumation burials are found dating to this period. Many of the inhumation burials lie near megalithic monuments, often adorned with runic inscriptions. When the Roman Empire collapsed as the result of pressure from the Germanic migration (A.D. 400–600), a period of unrest also was felt in Norway by new invading tribes, marked by the ruins of local fortresses. This was termed the Migration period. The following period, the Merovingian (A.D. 600–800), saw powerful chieftains in the area, and close contact with the Germanic language-speaking peoples is witnessed in the rise of ornamental art, such as wood carvings, which flourished in the first historic period, the Viking Age.

The Viking Age was the result of linked economic intensification, military and technological advances, climate change, and, particularly, intense competition among chiefly elites and between elites and commoners. The era saw escalating Nordic impact upon northwestern Europe and a dramatic expansion of European settlement into the offshore islands of the North Atlantic. Early in this period, Norwegians settled in the Shetlands and Orkneys and Swedes on the coasts of Finland and Estonia. In these early expansionistic movements, the motive seems to have been more of peaceful integration rather than aggression and war.

The attack on the monastery of Lindisfarne off the coast of Northumberland in 793 marked the beginning of an era that has forever given the Vikings the reputation of raiders. The Viking expeditions were eastward and westward. Swedes who sailed the Baltic and founded the kingdom of Gardaríke, with Novgorod and Kiev as the main cities, primarily undertook the eastward expansion. Voyages on the Russian rivers brought them all the way to the Byzantine Empire and Constantinople (modern-day Istanbul), where many of these Vikings entered as soldiers in the Roman emperor's guard and were called Varangians. Some of the Varangians were Norwegians, the most noteworthy of them being the half-brother of Saint Olaf, Harald Sigurdson. He actually became chief of the Varangians and, upon his return to Norway, king. Rich finds of Arabian and Byzantine coins tell of the trade connections between the Orient and the Nordic countries at the time.

Three ship burials dating to the early part of the Viking Age have been unearthed: the Tune, Oseberg, and Gokstad ships. Ships typically were used for the burial of nobles. The fine craftsmanship and flexible frame, in conjunction with a shallow keel, made the Viking boat a formidable tool in surprise attacks. This construction also allowed ease in transport when the waters were too shallow or when a strip of land was blocking the river, as they could be lifted over narrow stretches of land so that the voyage could continue on the other side.

The economic basis of the Viking expansion has attracted a growing body of scholarship, increasingly based upon a rich archaeological record, illustrating that economic power, military power, religious authority, and competitive display were interlocking elements in elite strategies for aggrandizement. They also were key points of friction with the long-established leveling mechanisms of Iron Age Germanic society. Viking Age chiefly economics ultimately was not about money but about honor and power. Wealth generated from successful farming, intensified fishing, loot, trade, or protection selling was not an end in itself but a means to acquire the key elements of chieftainship. Among these prerogatives were well-armed retainers, loyal clients, fine clothing and weapons, exotic objects for display and award, and spectacular architectural settings for glorious feasts and impressive ritual moments. Evidence of ritualistic activity, such as feasting and horse fighting, is evident in materials from the Merovingian site of Åker, near Hamar in Norway.

In arctic Norway, mighty chieftainships grew up on the Lofoten and Vesterålen Islands during the Late Iron Age, creating a power center that was to contest primacy with the expanding petty kingdoms of western and southern Norway for a long time. Research on animal bone material from Iron Age sites (both pre-Viking and Viking) in northern Norway reveals great insight into the structure of political economy of these northern chiefly establishments. Huge boathouses, extensive farms, and at least one large feasting hall at Borg, equipped with imported gold and glass that must have rivaled any similar structure below the Arctic Circle, point to the formation of a political power center in the area. While the warm currents of the North Atlantic drift allowed some barley growing in these offshore arctic islands, most barley production probably was re-

served for beer rather than porridge. The majority of the diet was supplied by meat and milk of domestic stock, birds and bird eggs, sea mammals, and, especially, the abundant stocks of marine fish, whose spawning grounds surround Lofoten and Vesterålen.

The development of fishing, in particular, and the building of a monetary economy based on the exchange and trade of a storable product, such as dried fish (stockfish), in the twelfth century A.D. allowed a mercantile connection of these arctic lands with mainland Europe. Royal and church patronage had created a vast investment in the specialized exploitation of the abundant cod stocks accessible from the Lofoten and Vesterålen islands. Settlement pattern, scheduling of subsistence activities, division of labor, gender roles, and relations between Scandinavian and Saami populations all were affected by the profound economic and social transformation. During the Iron Age the Norse were not unfamiliar with the concepts of intensive fishing and the use of stockfish (beheaded air-dried codfish) as an integral part of this multifaceted political economy. Stockfish became the key product that connected this northern land with the mercantile economies of mainland Europe during the eleventh and twelfth centuries.

The difference between the Iron Age and medieval times lies in the focus and scope of the activity as well as the nature of the controlling elements. In both eras, elites were transforming fish into objects of abstract value. In the Iron Age fish was used for prestige by facilitating the purchase of barley for beer making, for getting furs that then were traded for luxury items in distant ports, and, of course, for feeding people both at home and during voyages. All these transactions garnered the ultimate products of “honor,” prestige, and lineage power. In medieval times the transformation was of a different nature. Fish no longer was used for acquisition of prestige but rather as money. Fish therefore, did not just change into an object of abstract value but was altered further to become an abstract commodity. Its value went beyond the local and regional level to achieving a truly international scale.

A frequently cited account by a North Norwegian chieftain Ottar (recorded in the court of King Alfred of Wessex in the ninth century) provides a description of chiefly economics, mentioning in-

come from “tribute” collected regularly from the Saami peoples for reindeer farming, and from both the Saami and the Norse for whaling and walrus hunting. According to N. Lund, a wandering Anglo-Saxon scribe noted that this North Norwegian chieftain owned far fewer cattle than any respectable thane of Wessex but was “accounted wealthy in his own country.” As King Alfred knew all too well, Nordic seafaring skills allowed for the acquisition of wealth from raiding, protection racketeering (*Danegeld* collection—payment to the Vikings in England and France for not being plundered and for the assurance of defense, if necessary), and large-scale slaving as well as fishing and maritime trade. In the three centuries between A.D. 800 and 1100, Iron Age Scandinavians became major players in the royal politics of northwestern Europe, and for a brief period in the early eleventh century a single Scandinavian dynasty controlled most of England, Denmark, and Norway. Several scholars have argued that the escalating raids and massive wealth generated by Viking activity contributed greatly to social changes that eventually promoted stable monarchies in Scandinavia and thus contributed to the demise of chiefly Viking Age politics in Denmark, Norway, and Sweden by A.D. 1100.

By the tenth and eleventh centuries Norway, as well as the rest of Scandinavia, became Christianized. The early kings used Christianity as an ideological reinforcement for their fledgling states. These kings promoted the development of ecclesiastical centers at foci of secular power, such as Hamar and Nidaros (present-day Trondheim), and the shift from the chieftain’s farm to the churchyard marks the beginning of the Middle Ages.

See also Viking Ships (vol. 2, part 7); Viking Settlements in Orkney and Shetland (vol. 2, part 7); Viking York (vol. 2, part 7); Pre-Viking and Viking Age Denmark (vol. 2, part 7); Pre-Viking and Viking Age Sweden (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Bigelow, Gerald F., ed. *The Norse of the North Atlantic*. Acta Archaeologica, no. 61. Copenhagen, Denmark: Munksgaard, 1991.
- Fitzhugh, William W., and Elisabeth I. Ward, eds. *Vikings: The North Atlantic Saga*. Washington, D.C.: Smithsonian Institution Press and National Museum of Natural History, 2000.

- Gelsinger, Bruce E. *Icelandic Enterprise: Commerce and Economy in the Middle Ages*. Columbia: University of South Carolina Press, 1981.
- Hansen, Jan Ingar, and Knut G. Bjerva, eds. *Fra Hammer til Kors: 1000 år med kristendom Brytningstid I Viken Chr* [From hammers to crosses: 1000 years from the transition to Christianity in Viken]. Oslo, Norway: Schibsteds Forlag A/S, 1994.
- Jones, Gwyn. *The Norse Atlantic Saga: Being the Norse Voyages of Discovery and Settlement to Iceland, Greenland, and North America*. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1986.
- . *A History of the Vikings*. 2d ed. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1984.
- Lund, N. *Two Voyagers, Othere, & Wulfstan at the Court of King Alfred*. York, U.K.: William Sessions, Ltd., 1984.
- Midgaard, John. *A Brief History of Norway*. Copenhagen, Denmark: Aschehoug Press, 1989.
- Perdikaris, Sophia. "From Chiefly Provisioning to Commercial Fishery: Long-Term Economic Change in Arctic Norway." *World Archaeology* 30, no. 3 (2000): 388–402.
- . "Status and Economy: A Zooarchaeological Perspective from the Iron Age Site of Åker, Norway." In *Debating Complexity*. Edited by D. A. Meyer, P. C. Dawson, and D. T. Hanna. Proceedings of the Twenty-sixth Annual Chacmool Conference. Calgary, Canada: Chacmool Archaeological Association, 1993.
- Sturluson, Snorri. *From the Sagas of the Norse Kings*. Translated by Erling Monsen with A. H. Smith. Oslo, Norway: Dreyers Forlag, 1988.
- Thurston, Tina. *Landscapes of Power, Landscapes of Conflict: State Formation in the South Scandinavian Iron Age*. Fundamental Issues in Archaeology. New York and London: Kluwer Academic/Plenum Publishing, 2001.
- Time-Life Books, eds. *Vikings: Raiders from the North*. Alexandria, Va.: Time-Life Books, 1993.
- Urbańczyk, Przemysław. *Medieval Arctic Norway*. Warsaw, Poland: Zakład Poligraficzny Press, 1992.

SOPHIA PERDIKARIS



PRE-VIKING AND VIKING AGE SWEDEN

Sweden is a long and rather narrow land stretching more than 1,500 kilometers from Denmark in the south to beyond the Arctic Circle in the north. To the west it borders on Norway along a mountainous ridge; to the east it faces the Baltic Sea. The climate and vegetation of the agriculturally rich area of Skåne (Scania) in the south is similar to that of Denmark—to which this province formerly belonged. The open plain of Skåne lies immediately across a narrow waterway from the Danish island of Sjælland (Zealand). The large lakes Vänern, Vättern, Hjälmaren, and Mälaren dominate the middle of Sweden, which is also dotted with thousands of small lakes. The land in the heartland of Sweden is still gradually rising in delayed response to the melt of the weighty ice cap of the Ice Age around 6000 B.C. In areas near the present-day capital Stockholm, the moraine landscape currently rises at a rate of about one-half meter per century, which greatly affects understanding shoreline locations in prehistory. The large islands of Öland and Gotland lie to the east in the Baltic Sea. Their nodal locations have made both islands important trading locations, with Gotland in particular playing an important independent role into the medieval period. Norrland occupies the northern two-thirds of Sweden and is covered by coniferous forests cut by large parallel rivers running from the mountains down to the Gulf of Bothnia. The archaeology of this region has been studied less than the southern parts.

CHRONOLOGY

The final phase of European prehistory is the Iron Age, which follows the Stone and Bronze Ages. The

Iron Age in Sweden, which begins around 400 B.C., includes the pre-Roman Iron Age (400 B.C.–A.D. 50), the Roman Iron Age (A.D. 50–400), the Migration period (A.D. 400–550), and the Vendel period (A.D. 550–800) and concludes with the Viking Age (A.D. 800–1050). The later Iron Age and thus the pre-Viking phase begins c. A.D. 400 with the Migration period, when it is possible to recognize evidence of a belief system and artistic traditions that continue through the Viking Age. The entire later Iron Age is in fact a transition from prehistory to the historic medieval Christian period, with the only contemporary writing in an indigenous runic script in which memorial stones and other objects are inscribed.

SUBSISTENCE AND BUILDING CUSTOMS

Fishing and hunting of wild animals, including moose, bear, and reindeer as well as small mammals and birds, remained important throughout the Late Iron Age—especially in Norrland—along with agriculture based on raising cattle, hogs, sheep, and goats and growing barley, rye, oats, and flax on arable land as the climate allowed. Skåne, parts of central Sweden, Öland, and Gotland were the most agriculturally rich areas. In the far north, the nomadic Saami reindeer herders moved into the region, though it is unclear whether their arrival was during the later Iron Age or the medieval period.

Characteristic house types were long rectangular houses like those known at Vallhagar near the west coast of Gotland, dating to the sixth century,



Fig. 1. Viking silver coins and jewelry found at Birka, Sweden. THE ART ARCHIVE/HISTORISKA MUSÉET STOCKHOLM/DAGLI ORTI. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

apparently similar to later Viking Age halls of indigenous longhouse type that are described in saga literature. A northern Swedish farming settlement from the Early Iron Age that has been particularly well studied is that of Gene on the Norrland coast. Iron Age hillforts dot the landscape of central Sweden, the west coast, Gotland, and Öland, and there are a few along the coast of Norrland. In coastal areas, they seem to provide refuge from sea attacks and protect waterways. Stone forts were built on the Baltic Islands, including Torsburgen on Gotland and Ismanstorp and Eketorp on Öland. Hoards of Roman solidi (gold coins) deposited on the Baltic Islands from the late fifth century through the mid-sixth century also reflect unrest in this period.

BURIALS

Burials include both inhumation and cremation during the Late Iron Age, with single mounds gradually replacing mound groups yet with great variation in grave types. At Gamla (Old) Uppsala near present-day Uppsala, two of three prominent, large burial mounds at the end of a chain of mounds excavated in the nineteenth-century were dated to about

A.D. 500 and the mid-sixth century by finds of ornamented gold and bronze fragments damaged by the cremation fire. The three mounds are believed to contain the remains of successive generations of Migration period kings. Several important groups of boat burials have been investigated. At Vendel church north of Uppsala, fourteen such burials contained swords, shields, spears, helmets, domestic animals, and horse harnesses all ornamented in the eponymous Vendel style. At Valsgårde in the same region, burials of both men and women, extending in date from the Vendel period through the Viking Age, were discovered; however, while the men were interred in boats, women were cremated. By contrast, at Tuna in Badelunda in Västmanland, located in the center of Sweden, women were buried in boats and men were cremated. At Anundshög, also in Västmanland, a 15-meter-high unexcavated mound lies alongside large ship-shaped arrangements of stones of a type known from the Bronze Age through the Viking Age. Late Viking Age runic memorial stones were also raised at the site. The construction of large burial mounds represents a concentration of power necessary to command large

forces of labor. In the pre-Viking Age, eastern and western Sweden formed separate regions that gradually were consolidated, with the eastern Mälaren region eventually gaining control.

CRAFT WORKING AND ARTISTIC TRADITIONS

Ornamental metalwork is often found in burials but also comes from hoards and bog finds. At the beginning of the Migration period, votive deposits were most often made in watery places—as at Skedemosse on Öland, where gold rings were discovered—whereas deposits of the later centuries were more often made on dry land. Metalwork preserves the characteristically Nordic style of animal ornamentation studied by the Swedish scholar Bernhard Salin, who described Scandinavian Styles I–III, with Style I current in the fifth century, Style II in the sixth and seventh centuries, and Style III from the eighth century into the Early Viking Age.

Migration period ornamentation is usually of gold, made from melted down late Roman *solidi*, which have been discovered in great numbers on the Baltic Islands. Besides the coins, the gold is found in the form of thin, disk-shaped pendants stamped on one side (known as bracteates), sword pommels, scabbard mounts, and large, extravagantly decorated collars with applied decoration. These spectacular objects, particularly from Norway and western Sweden, display the emergence of Nordic animal ornament called Salin's Style I. Style II is mainly an eastern phenomenon, found in particular on weapons and horse harnesses at sites such as Valsgärde and Vendel in Uppland, with the style often referred to as the Vendel style. Style III is a pan-Scandinavian style, manifested in wood from the Oseberg ship burial in Norway but also in gilt bronze harness mounts from Broa in Halla on Gotland as well as brooches from sites across all of Scandinavia. After the Migration period, the import of Roman gold *solidi* disappeared and was gradually replaced by silver from melted down Arabic dirhams reaching Scandinavia from an eastern route through Russia. The subsequent Viking styles of ornamentation have been named after the type-sites of Borre in Norway, Jelling and then Mammen in Denmark, and finally Ringerike and Urnes in Norway; however, examples of each of these formal styles are also found in Sweden.

Animal ornamentation dominates artistic production, but there are exceptional examples of figurative art. Large (as high as 2.5 meters), mushroom-shaped raised stones of the Early Viking Age on Gotland (known as picture stones) display narrative scenes of ships, battles, and heroic figures that seem to represent stories known from later saga literature and reflect Continental influence. Gold bracteate pendant amulets of the Migration period also display figures based on Roman emperor portraits that become transformed into images that may represent Nordic deities, and tiny stamped rectangles of gold called *guldgubber* (gold old men), such as from Uppåkra in Skåne, show male and female couples in greatly simplified form. On the whole, however, animal ornamentation decorates surfaces of metal brooches, buckles, and horse harnesses throughout the later Iron Age.

COMMERCE AND THE DEVELOPMENT OF TOWNS

Trading and craft-working sites developed during the later Iron Age, and by the Viking Age, some could actually be called towns. Early market and harbor sites include Åhus and Löddeköpinge in Skåne and Paviken and Fröjel on Gotland. (More sites are found along the coast every year.) Shipping technology was advanced, with the introduction of the sail before the Viking Age. Transportation along waterways of the coast and interior lakes and rivers became more important with increased long-distance trade and exploitation of resources, such as iron and furs, from the mountainous north. Luxury trade from continental Europe and from Asia is evident at some sites, particularly Helgö and Birka, both in Uppland.

Helgö is located on an island in Lake Mälaren west of Stockholm. Excavations of several groups of structures dating from the fifth through eleventh centuries were first directed by Wilhelm Holmqvist and carried out for almost thirty years after the discovery of the site in 1950. Objects of foreign origin include late Roman *solidi*, a Coptic bronze ladle, a western European Christian crosier, and most remarkably, a sixth-century Buddha statuette from northern India. Bronze-casting workshops in structures on terraces were revealed through the discovery of crucible fragments and ninety thousand mold fragments, particularly for Migration period jewelry

types. Debate still centers around the scale and size of the site. Some believe that it was a proto-urban site for trade and manufacture, while others think that it was an exceptional economic site attached to the royal estate of Hundhamra, located on the opposite side of a narrow waterway. The florescence of Helgö occurred before the Viking Age, although it continued as an agricultural site into the eleventh century.

Near Helgö, the site of Birka on the island of Björkö appears to have taken over some of the functions of Helgö in the Viking Age. Birka became a more extensive town and trading site and is associated with the royal manor of Adelsö across a narrow strait. Unlike the other sites discussed, Birka is attested to in a contemporary document, the *Vita Anskarii*, an account of the life of Ansgar, who became bishop of Hamburg and Bremen and whose biography was written by Rimbert, his successor, around A.D. 870. Ansgar was sent in A.D. 820 and again A.D. 851–852 to a place called Birka, which was identified by the seventeenth-century antiquarian Johan Hadorf with the island of Björkö, as known from medieval times. The important complex of finds at Birka has led to its designation as a World Heritage site by the United Nations Educational, Scientific, and Cultural Organization (UNESCO). The occupation layers at Birka are extremely thick and dark—the site has thus been dubbed the “Black Earth”—and the island is dotted with cemeteries including more than two thousand cremations under mounds and one thousand inhumations. Beginning in the 1870s, the island became the focus of numerous excavations, first by Hjalmar Stolpe, who dug in the settlement area and then in the cemeteries, excavating eleven hundred inhumation and cremation graves by standards that were modern for the time. His finds from the cemeteries were not published until a hundred years later and reveal an indigenous population of farmers as well as a number of foreigners, probably merchants and craft workers. Some graves include luxuries and articles of Eastern character. Glass from the Rhineland, Slavic ceramics, Byzantine or Chinese silk, and Arabic dirham coins reflect far-flung contacts. Excavations directed by Björn Ambrosiani in the settlement area during 1990s have led to reassessment of the dating of Birka and the beginning of the Viking Age. Finds of a jetty and workshop dating from

about A.D. 750 onward demonstrate that the Viking Age did not begin suddenly in the year A.D. 800. The workshop debris included thousands of mold fragments from bronze jewelry casting, antler scrap from comb making, and glass residue from bead making. These products apparently were made for local markets. Other evidence, namely bones of feet of furbearing animals from the north and iron debris worked from northern bog ore, points to the use of Birka as a center for redistribution of goods for long-range trade. Birka was a bustling trading center into the tenth century but gradually lost its importance as a harbor as the land rose and Lake Mälaren changed from an inlet of the Baltic Sea to an inland lake. The functions of Birka seem to have been taken over largely by the town of Sigtuna, located north of Birka on the Fyris River, during the Late Viking Age.

EXPANSION EASTWARD AND THE COMING OF CHRISTIANITY

Trade goods found in both Sweden and Russia reveal Swedish Viking contacts eastward across the Baltic to Russia and beyond. While western Vikings from Norway and Denmark were reviled for their raids in England and elsewhere, the eastern Vikings seem to have concentrated more on trade and colonization. In reality, most Scandinavians of the Viking Age were farmers who stayed at home. Swedish Vikings known as the Rus were instrumental in the formation of the Russian state and in the foundation of Novgorod and Kiev. They voyaged as far east as Constantinople (modern Istanbul), leaving Norse runic inscriptions as evidence of their travels. Late Viking Age rune stones with Christian crosses and prayers also reveal that many Vikings were becoming Christian during the eleventh century. Although Ansgar’s mission to Birka in the ninth century failed to convert the population, contacts with the rest of Christian Europe probably made conversion inevitable. Power shifts from royal manors to ecclesiastical centers of power, such as Uppsala, not far from Sigtuna, and Sweden, become solidly linked with Christian medieval Europe as merchants and clerics move within the European core.

See also **Pre-Roman Iron Age Scandinavia** (vol. 2, part 6); **Viking Harbors and Trading Sites** (vol. 2, part 7); **Rus** (vol. 2, part 7); **Saami** (vol. 2, part 7); **Pre-Viking and Viking Age Norway** (vol. 2, part 7);

Pre-Viking and Viking Age Denmark (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Ambrosiani, Björn, and Helen Clarke, eds. *Early Investigations and Future Plans: Investigations in the Black Earth*. Birka Studies 1. Stockholm, Sweden: Riksantikvarieämbetet and Statens Historiska Muséet, 1992.
- Baudou, Evert, et al. *Archaeological and Palaeoecological Studies in Medelpad, North Sweden*. Kungliga Vitterhets Historie och Antikvitets Akademien. Stockholm, Sweden: Almqvist and Wiksell, 1978.
- Calissendorff, Karin, et al. *Iron and Man in Prehistoric Sweden*. Translated and edited by Helen Clarke. Stockholm, Sweden: Jernkontoret, 1979.
- Callmer, Johan. "Recent Work at Åhus: Problems and Observations." *Offa* 41 (1984): 63–75.
- . "Production Site and Market Area." *Meddelanden från Lunds Universitets Historiska Museum 1981–1982* 7 (1983): 135–165.
- Clarke, Helen, and Björn Ambrosiani. *Towns in the Viking Age*. New York: St. Martin's, 1991.
- Dahlström, Carina. "The Viking Age Harbour and Trading Place at Fröjel, Gotland: A Summary of the Excavation during the Summer of 2001." *Viking Heritage* 4 (2001): 20–22.
- Edgren, Bengt, Gustaf Trotzig, and Erik Wegraeus. *Eketorp: The Fortified Village on Öland*. Stockholm, Sweden: Central Board of National Antiquities, 1985.
- Hagberg, Ulf Erik. *The Archaeology of Skedemosse*. 4 vols. Stockholm, Sweden: Almqvist and Wiksell International, 1967–1977.
- Hodges, Richard. *Dark Age Economics: The Origins of Towns and Trade, A.D. 600–1000*. 2d ed. London: Duckworth, 1989.
- Holmqvist, Wilhelm, et al., eds. *Excavations at Helgö*. Vols. 1–14. Stockholm, Sweden: Kungliga Vitterhets Historie och Antikvitets Akademien, 1961–2001.
- Jansson, Sven B. F. *Runes in Sweden*. Translated by Peter Foote. Stockholm, Sweden: Gidlunds, 1987.
- Jesch, Judith. *Women in the Viking Age*. Woodbridge, Suffolk, U.K.: Boydell Press, 1991.
- Larsson, Lars. "Uppåkra: A Centre in South Sweden in the 1st Millennium A.D." *Antiquity* 74 (2000): 645–648.
- Nylén, Erik, and Jan Peder Lamm. *Stones, Ships, and Symbols: The Picture Stones of Gotland from the Viking Age and Before*. Stockholm, Sweden: Gidlunds, 1988.
- Ohlsson, T. "The Löddeköpinge Investigation II: The Northern Part of the Village Area." *Meddelanden från Lunds Universitets Historiska Museum 1979–1980* 5 (1980): 68–111.
- . "The Löddeköpinge Investigation I: The Settlement at Vikshögsvägen." *Meddelanden från Lunds Universitets Historiska Museum 1975–1976* 1 (1976): 59–161.
- Ramqvist, Per H. *Gene: On the Origin, Function, and Development of Sedentary Iron Age Settlement in Northern Sweden*. Umeå, Sweden: University of Umeå Department of Archaeology, 1983.
- Roesdahl, Else. *The Vikings*. Translated by Susan M. Margeson and Kirsten Williams. New York: Penguin, 1992.
- Roesdahl, Else, and David M. Wilson, eds. *From Viking to Crusader: Scandinavia and Europe, 800–1200*. New York: Rizzoli, 1992.
- Sawyer, Birgit. *The Viking-Age Rune-Stones: Custom and Commemoration in Early Medieval Scandinavia*. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2000.
- Sawyer, Peter, ed. *The Oxford Illustrated History of the Vikings*. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1997.
- Stjernquist, Berta. "Uppåkra: A Central Place in Skåne during the Iron Age." *Lund Archaeological Review* 1995 (1996): 89–120.
- Widgren, Mats. *Settlement and Farming Systems in the Early Iron Age: A Study of Fossil Agrarian Landscapes in Östergötland, Sweden*. Stockholm, Sweden: Almqvist and Wiksell, 1983.
- Zachrisson, Inger. "A Review of Archaeological Research on Saami Prehistory in Sweden." *Current Swedish Archaeology* 1 (1993): 171–182.

NANCY L. WICKER



PRE-VIKING AND VIKING AGE DENMARK

Although Danish Vikings are famous in history, much of the Viking Age lacks indigenous documents; thus, “history” largely reflects the views of Denmark’s neighbors, leading to the popular connotation of a warrior culture bent on senseless or greedy destruction. In fact, in many ways Denmark was unremarkable during this era: all of the incipient post-Roman European states were equally engaged in mutual raiding, warfare, and conquest. Given the uneven historic record—literate European chroniclers versus largely prehistoric Danes, archaeology, along with careful reading of what documents there are, is the best way to understand circumstances surrounding the formation of Denmark.

Before the Viking era, A.D. 800–1050, economic and sociopolitical development in Germanic Europe, including Denmark, was profoundly influenced by interaction with the Roman Empire, whose borders lay along the Rhine; thus, the period from A.D. 1–400 is called the Roman Iron Age. Many traditions important in the state-building Viking Age are rooted here: the indigenous concept of the Danish provinces as loosely allied chiefly peer polities; the *thing*, a regularly scheduled civic meeting; a social code balancing “ordinary” people with the military hierarchy; and a tradition of long-distance trade. After Rome’s fall, a period of post-Roman economic and political reorganization is referred to as the Germanic Iron Age, A.D. 400–800.

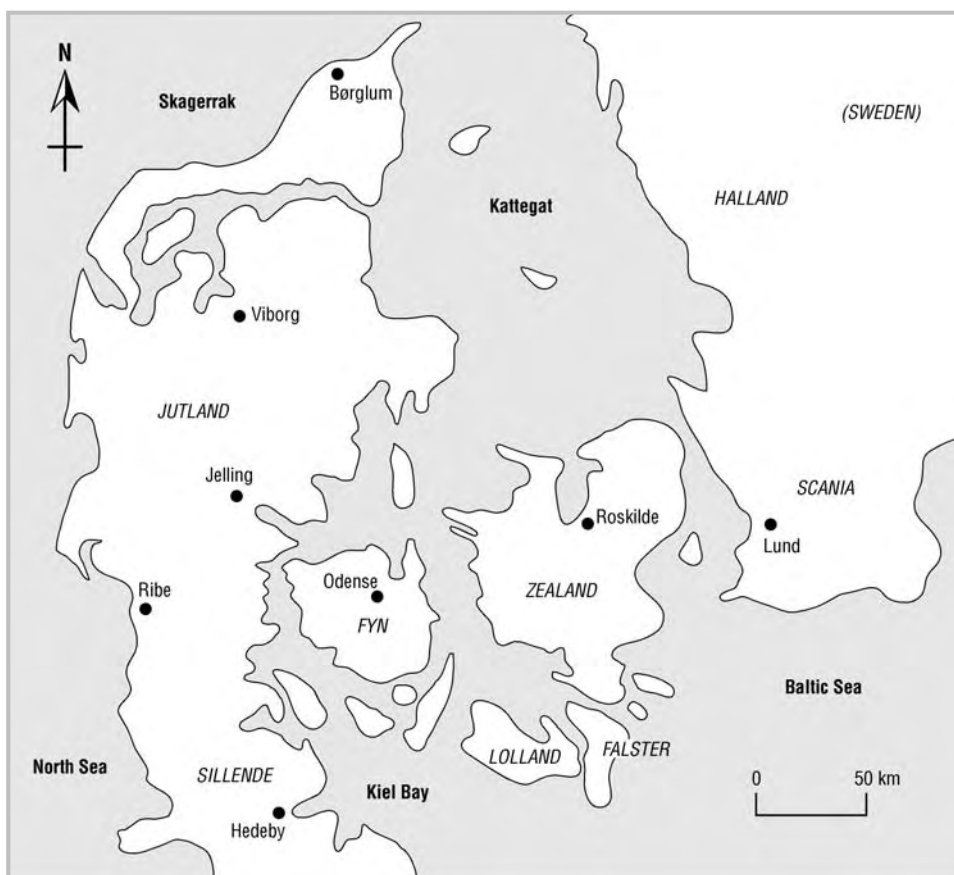
Denmark is a small, mostly archipelagic land mass, consisting of the Jutland peninsula, four large islands—Zealand, Fyn, Lolland, and Falster—and 470-odd small islands. Before 1654 Denmark in-

cluded Scania and Halland, now Sweden. This geography in part determined the location of Roman Iron Age chiefdoms.

DENMARK IN THE ROMAN AND GERMANIC IRON AGES

Roman documents shed some faint light on the region, but like all nonindigenous texts, reflect outside views. Roman-Germanic interaction led to the writing of *Germania* by the Roman politician-historian Tacitus, around A.D. 98, and his description is considered fairly reliable. Tacitus describes a social code wherein leaders did not have unlimited power and required the assent of an assembly in making decisions. Several small chiefdoms operating on these principles coexisted simultaneously in the Roman era, in continual competition, yet interacting via the exchange of Roman goods. In times of warfare with Rome or other “outsiders,” a single warlord was selected to lead them collectively for short periods, but the support of his peers was required. If an overly ambitious leader seized too much power, the social code actively encouraged his assassination. Other typical chiefly leveling mechanisms, such as extravagant feasting and the distribution of treasure to followers, kept a balance of power, a tradition that continued in later times.

Tacitus is amply validated through archaeological data. Competing polities and their chiefly centers can be identified by clusters of Roman imports, elite or warrior burials with Roman goods, and sacrificial deposits that were made into water—often the arms and armor of local foes, including Roman-



Selected pre-Viking and Viking Age sites in Denmark.

made swords. Some competing centers were located on the large, defensible, fertile islands. Similarly, bountiful Scania and Halland supported local rulers. Jutland was agriculturally poorer but ideal for cattle, and chiefly polities also rose there.

Chiefdoms were based upon what is commonly called a prestige-goods economy. Prestige goods are nonutilitarian objects that are indispensable for social and political relations—in this case, Roman imports of weapons, ornaments, and feasting and drinking equipment. In return, the Romans received leather, fur, meat, cloth, and probably slaves. In Denmark, personal reputation and power were intertwined with the ability and degree to which one could control and own Roman goods, a system that only worked if their flow was controlled by an elite minority. In return for sharing prestige goods with lower-level elites for their own legitimation, chiefs received staple tribute: livestock, grain, and other supplies. Lower-level elite in turn extracted tribute from farmers in return for their services in

defense, upholding law, and overseeing ritual activities. Grave goods reflect this hierarchy: a few have the full complement of prestige items, others less but still rich, while many have small quantities of less valuable Roman items. War chiefs had much power within society but were balanced by the *thing*, a regular meeting of freemen—and possibly some women, if we infer from some later sources—who could vote against the plans of chiefs. In addition, a chief's son was not automatically a chief; all contenders had to prove themselves, leading to a degree of upward mobility in society. One of the greatest changes during the Viking Age was the replacement of this system with a more powerful, centralized leadership and the ascribed inheritance of rulership.

In the Roman era, “Denmark” consisted of many peoples. A long-debated question has thus been “when did the Danes become the Danes?” By combining archaeology and documents, we find that the answer lies in understanding the social and

political changes between the Roman, Germanic, and Viking Ages. When Rome fell in the mid-fifth century, so did the prestige economy, but most of Denmark's small realms did not collapse: they reorganized and expanded. A few groups found themselves in disarray and sought new lands, leading to what is called the Migration period, when Langobards, Teutons, and others overran the Continent and staked a claim. Despite this, around A.D. 550, Gothic writings indicate that many small polities in Denmark were being consolidated into bigger political units during the Germanic Iron Age.

DENMARK IN THE VIKING AGE

While historians mark the beginning of the Viking Age in the 790s by the first Danish sea raids on England, archaeologists are less interested in events than in processes, and they track a gradual but significant transition in political and economic organization between the eighth and ninth centuries, and beyond.

In the 700s, Frankish and English records of political, military, and economic interactions with the north describe the Danes as one people ruled by a king, and Denmark as comprising Jutland, all the islands, and Scania. Conversely, other texts state that there were simultaneously two or even three Danish kings, and to further complicate the picture, later *indigenous* chronicles state that there were sometimes one, two, or five kings.

These conflicting representations reflect the fact that protracted conflicts with the Franks elevated the temporary overlord to a more permanent ruler, or king, while the ability to claim this new position still rested on the old traditions of successful warfare, personal reputation, and distribution of wealth to followers. Several early Danish rulers were assassinated by their own people, also after ancient custom. During the 800s, a rapid succession of leaders claimed the Danish crown, fought among each other, and were overthrown, all calling themselves kings in the process. During the ninth and tenth centuries, some failed claimants grabbed parts of Europe as small kingdoms, also perhaps calling themselves Danish kings. Later, when the Danes ruled England and Denmark, a father might make his son a "sub-king" in Denmark. Slowly, Danish kings became more permanent and powerful. Sons began to inherit, some as adolescents or children, a

clear sign of a shift from achieved to ascribed status. To legitimize themselves in a world with new rules, new forms of marking and holding power emerged. One of the most prominent is at Jelling in central Jutland.

Jelling has no habitation: it is a symbolic center consisting of royal monuments and runic inscriptions (fig. 1). Some archaeologists see it as a "nationalist" response to ever-threatening Franco-Germans, others as a king's attempt to firmly legitimize his rule with both monumental architecture and written texts proclaiming his own power. These intertwined purposes are probably both true.

At Jelling, around A.D. 950, King Gorm raised a rune stone to his wife, Thyra, calling her the adornment of Denmark—the first written reference to the kingdom. Olaf Tryggvason's Saga mentions that Gorm (who reigned from about 920 to 950) cleared all remaining "petty kings" from Denmark, conquered the Slavs, and persecuted proselytizing Christians. A second rune stone was raised by Gorm's son King Harald Blåtand, commemorating his parents, his rule of a unified kingdom (from about A.D. 950 to 980), and its Christianization.

Jelling also sports two monumental earthworks: a cenotaph 77 meters across and 11 meters high, and a burial mound 65 meters across and 8.5 meters high, the largest in Denmark. When excavated, no remains, only rich grave furnishings, were found, male and female. When Harald eventually became Christian at about A.D. 970, the mound was carefully opened and his parents' bones were apparently removed to the Jelling church. Traces of this wooden stave church were excavated in the 1980s, yielding the disarticulated bones of an elderly man, clearly in secondary context, perhaps those of Gorm.

Unification of the state can be seen archaeologically. At the transition between the reigns of Harald and his son, Svein Forkbeard, a system of fortified military and administrative centers was established all over the kingdom, dated dendrochronologically to A.D. 980. These so-called Trelleborg fortresses indicate the extent of royal authority at the turn of the first millennium (fig. 2). Likewise, rune stones in a centralized style called "after-Jelling" cover the same geographic range. Also established were so-called magnate sites, estates of high-level elites who oversaw the king's business. Central structures,



Fig. 1. Viking Age stones with runic inscriptions from Jelling, Denmark. COURTESY OF THE NATIONAL MUSEUM OF DENMARK. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

25–40 meters long with slightly curved walls, are called “Trelleborg” houses, since they are nearly identical to the large elite houses found at the Trelleborg administrative sites; so similar, in fact, that some suggest they were designed and built by a royal master-builder. Several have been excavated; in addition to large houses, there is evidence of attached crafts specialists, especially in metallurgy, and extensive barns and stables for many cattle and horses.

ECONOMY AND TRADE IN THE VIKING AGE

Although the Viking Age is traditionally associated with the sack of towns and monasteries in continental Europe and England, archaeologists studying Viking activities in global perspective conclude that they came not from innate hostility toward Christians or outsiders but rather were part of a much larger economic cycle. It is useful to divide Viking contacts with the rest of the world into phases. In early Viking Age expeditions, local chiefs sought wealth during a period of political change: at home,

new, centralized rulers were gaining power, so local leaders sought new means of legitimation, wealth, and fame. Over the course of the eighth to tenth centuries, raiding and trading were predicated mostly upon the economic booms and busts of the Arabian caliphates and the Byzantines, seen in the composition of coin hoards from different eras. During boom periods, chiefs gained wealth by trading to the east. When these sources failed, they gained wealth by both trading and raiding to the west. Kings, charged with ruling at home and defending the borders against the Franks—who were actively trying to conquer Denmark in the first quarter of the ninth century—had little or nothing to do with these opportunistic raids.

In the Middle Viking Age, exiled or defeated royal pretenders sought new territories to overtake and rule, eventually settling in Scandinavian enclaves in Normandy, Ireland, York, the Faeroes, and other northern islands, bringing both conflict and trade with them. Finally, in the Late Viking Age, legitimate Danish kings conquered whole nations,



Fig. 2. The fortress of Fyrkat in Denmark. COURTESY OF THE NATIONAL MUSEUM OF DENMARK. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

bringing them under Denmark's imperial sway. While collectively lumped together and called the Viking Age by historians, these phases represent very different strategies and circumstances motivating Viking activity.

The domestic economy consisted of mixed agriculture in the fertile islands, Scania and Halland, whereas husbandry predominated on Jutland. These products were important to the state, but one of the most important props for newly emerging rulers was their ability to control or administer trade. Even after Rome's fall, rulers maintained short-distance trade in luxuries to reinforce their rank in local society, and Jutland lay on sea-trade routes. Beginning around A.D. 700, proto-urban centers called "emporium," with permanent craftspeople and traders, arose to serve as both import and production sites. Precious metals and gems, ta-

bleware and glass, wine, textiles, and weapons came from all over western Europe, while local people worked iron, bone, glass, bronze, clay, and many other materials that are found archaeologically. Extensive workshop quarters have been excavated at sites such as Ribe and Hedeby. Cattle trade is seen in strata consisting primarily of dung from beasts penned for market. In these commercial centers, elites built fortifications, churches for Christian traders, and collected taxes and tolls; in return, merchants could expect protection from thieves, repair and maintenance of harbors and wharves, officials to witness agreements and transactions, and enforcement of the laws of fair trade. The taxes and revenues Danish rulers collected are explicitly referred to in Frankish texts: a series of massive earthworks, collectively called the *Danevirke*, were constructed by Danish rulers as a defense against the Franks over

the course of the eighth and ninth centuries, but these walls also aided taxation on trade by controlling movement across the border.

Between the mid- and late tenth century, many new towns were founded: Viborg, the national *thing* where kings were still “elected” by the people; Ålborg, guarding the inland waterways of the Limfjord; Lund, the Dane’s bishopric in Scania with its cathedral; Odense; Roskilde; and others. Just after the millennium, kings extended their power to collect taxes and conscript more military service, and they conferred more power on the growing church. Knut the Great ruled a large empire including England, Denmark, and parts of Norway. All was not quiet at home: several provinces rebelled, hoping to regain autonomy, but the state, forged from the conflicts and resolutions of the Viking Age, had become too powerful to resist. Knut’s empire saw the largest extent of Viking Age Denmark; his sons lost their grip on this realm, and by 1042, the last Viking king, whose reign spanned the transition to the Early Middle Ages, was Sven Estridsen, who ruled a Christianized, centralized, and mostly unified Denmark. Sven made a final and unsuccessful attempt to reconquer England in 1069–1070, but

with his passing in 1074, the Viking Age was truly at an end.

See also Emporia (vol. 2, part 7); Pre-Viking and Viking Age Norway (vol. 2, part 7); Pre-Viking and Viking Age Sweden (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Hedeager, Lotte. *Iron Age Societies: From Tribe to State in Northern Europe, 500 B.C. to A.D. 700*. Oxford: Blackwell, 1992.
- Jones, Gwyn. *A History of the Vikings*. 2d ed. London and New York: Oxford University Press, 2001.
- Randsborg, Klavs. *The First Millennium A.D. in Europe and the Mediterranean*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, 1991.
- . *The Viking Age in Denmark: The Formation of a State*. London: Duckworth, 1980.
- Roesdahl, Else. *Viking Age Denmark*. Translated by Susan Margeson and Kirsten Williams. London: British Museum Publications, 1982.
- Sawyer, Birgit, and Peter Sawyer. *Medieval Scandinavia: From Conversion to Reformation circa 800–1500*. Minneapolis: University of Minnesota Press, 1993.
- Thurston, Tina L. *Landscapes of Power, Landscapes of Conflict: State Formation in the South Scandinavian Iron Age*. *Fundamental Issues in Archaeology*. New York: Kluwer/Plenum, 2001.

TINA L. THURSTON



FINLAND

The Late Iron Age can be said to have begun in Finland around A.D. 400. This last prehistoric period continued as long as eight centuries in parts of eastern Finland. During this time, population expanded, settlements spread, and trade contacts broadened.

WAY OF LIFE

Most Finns continued to live as semisedentary farmers practicing the slash-and-burn technique of field use. This method of agriculture requires that an area of natural growth be burned and the ash used as a supporting nutrient for several seasons of crop growth. When the land no longer produces adequately, it is allowed to lie fallow until it fully regenerates. Traditional Finnish households might move every generation or so in search of fresh arable land.

Slash-and-burn cultivation, which did not require much digging, was an excellent adaptation to most of Finland's southern and central landscape. Large areas of forests were often so stony that permanent clearance and the use of a heavy plow to cut fields of straight furrows was all but impossible. Slash-and-burn cultivation, however, cannot be practiced intensively in just one area, so most of the Finnish population remained dispersed throughout vast wilderness tracts. This dispersal of settlement occurred not only for cultivation reasons but also to gain access to good forest pasturage, hunting lands, and fishing sources. Finnish men might travel great distances during certain times of the year to hunt or fish in wilderness territories. Historical sources suggest that specific areas may have been claimed for use by certain kin- or clan-based groups.

TRADE CONTACTS AND CULTURAL INFLUENCES

The increased raiding and trading activity of the Viking Age began in Scandinavia. Finland, too, was growing restless and making new contacts abroad. Swedish farmers immigrated in earnest beginning around A.D. 400 to the Åland Islands off the coast of Varsinais Suomi, greatly changing the character of the population. More than three hundred Late Iron Age sites are known in the archipelago.

As the first millennium A.D. drew to a close, the focal points of Finnish wealth and influence, based on long-distance trade, migrated eastward to Häme and Karelia. Before the medieval period of Swedish political domination throughout the country, Finland had no centralized towns or government such as were typical elsewhere in Europe. Nevertheless, Finns were still able to organize themselves and recognize leadership on a regional basis in order to maintain systems of defensive hillforts, the distribution of rights to various northern hunting and fishing grounds, and the protection and operation of long-distance trade routes spanning the breadth of the country and beyond. The details of this kind of organization are not known, but it is clear that it existed.

In Finland the commonly recognized archaeological periods are as follows: the Viking period covers the years from A.D. 750 to 1050, followed by the Crusade period from A.D. 1050 to 1150 in western Finland and from 1050 to as late as A.D. 1300 in Karelia. Although Finns were not Vikings in the same sense that the Scandinavians were, they did partici-

pate in the eastern trade of furs, silver, and slaves that was a large part of the Viking activity in these regions. The fur trade was already becoming important in Finland in the fifth century and is credited with the growth of settlement and apparent personal wealth in Ostrobothnia and southern Häme. Finnish cultural and trade connections extended from Sweden to northern Norway in the west and to central northern Russia and the eastern Baltic lands to the east. Finnish settlements and cemeteries have been found on the shores of Lake Ladoga in present-day Russian Karelia. Items of jewelry from the Perm region of central Russia have been found in Finnish graves.

Coin hoards from the Viking period, which occur in large numbers in Scandinavia and elsewhere, are much less common in Finland. Not surprisingly, a disproportionate number (nearly a quarter of the total) occur on the Swedish-settled Ålands. These are mostly ninth- and tenth-century hoards of Islamic dirhams, a silver coin minted in vast quantities. The mainland hoards are more recent, from the eleventh century, and contain more western coins. This pattern matches the general pattern for hoards in other northern countries and reflects changing trade relations and silver sources in Russia and the Islamic countries. The Finns did not use the coins as money but rather as either raw silver measured by weight or as ornament. A number of coins have been found in graves as pendants on women's necklaces (fig. 1).

Karelia's first brush with Christianity came from the eastern Orthodox Church of Russia, but the Russians were not intent upon converting the heathens. The Roman Church, on the other hand, reaching Finland via Sweden, was very interested in promoting conversion. Many scholars think that much of Sweden's interest in this endeavor had to do with acquiring control over Finnish territory with the intent to control trade in the eastern Baltic. By converting the Finns to Christianity, the Swedes could make Finland dependent on Swedish ecclesiastical authority. Some western parts of Finland are believed to have become Christian, at least officially, by the year A.D. 1050, at the end of the Viking period. This date is probably rather early, except for a small portion of the population. Over the next century, however, Christian influence—as seen from

the evidence of changing burial rites—clearly increased.

Central and eastern Finland became Christian, under the Roman Church, at progressively later dates. Swedish domination did not touch Karelia until c. A.D. 1300. The interim period in these regions is often referred to as the Crusade period, referring, specifically, to the crusades in Finland led by the Swedes. In Karelia, however, Orthodox influences had some impact when Russian Novgorod, realizing late in the thirteenth century that it was in danger of losing its access to the Baltic Sea because of Swedish encroachments, did finally press for conversion to Orthodoxy in order to gain stronger Karelian support. The Orthodox form of Christianity is still espoused by many Karelians.

HISTORICAL SOURCES

Late Iron Age people in Finland had far-reaching contacts and lived much like their Scandinavian neighbors. The major difference is that continental Europe rarely recorded much information about Finland, and since Finnish society did not develop its own written language until the sixteenth century, no contemporary native sources of value exist. There are a few tantalizing mentions of Finns in Norse sagas, recorded mostly in the thirteenth century, but because Norse terminology often confused the identity of the various cultural groups to the east, the term "Finn" in Norse texts might refer mistakenly to the Saami. At first, medieval Finnish documents were written in Latin or Swedish, for the literate members of the society were often Swedes who were not part of Finnish culture. By the sixteenth century, Finns and others began to write about their ancient culture, but not until the nineteenth century—when folklorists and ethnographers started traveling to the Finnish interior, particularly to Karelia—did many Finnish stories, myths, poems, songs, memories, and other cultural treasures become written texts at last. A central core collection of these poems was first published as the national epic for Finland in the mid-nineteenth century under the title it continues to bear today, the *Kalevala*.

Another group that is occasionally mentioned in saga texts are the Kainulaiset ("Kvenir," in Norse sources). These people are believed to have been certain Finns from the south who (like the northern



Fig. 1. Pendants made from silver coins, Finland, eleventh century. NATIONAL BOARD OF ANTIQUITIES FINLAND/E. LAAKSO 1950. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

Scandinavians) organized into large hunting and trading corporations in order to exploit the more northerly populations' ability to hunt animals producing valuable pelts. The people of Häme, in particular, competed with the Norse in what was referred to in the sagas as the taxation of the "Lapps," now known as the Saami. Finnish traders probably transported many valuable goods from the far north to Lake Ladoga where they met up with Scandinavian and Slavic traders. Another route led from the Ostrobothnian coast to Karelia via the many inland rivers and waterways. Traveling through the interior of Finland in this way was especially useful since difficult seas, lack of harbors, and the presence of pirates in the eastern Baltic made the movement of trade goods there a high-risk proposition.

ARCHAEOLOGICAL EVIDENCE

The archaeological remains of Finnish culture from the Late Iron Age primarily consist of burials and a growing list of settlement sites, most notably in the Åland Islands off the southwest coast, which have a more temperate climate than the rest of Finland (marked by a greater percentage of deciduous trees). Island society also prospered from the rich marine environment and an accessible yet protected position between Finland and Sweden. Although ships could carefully navigate the shallow approaches to the Åland harbors, no enemy could stage a swift attack without running aground. Most of the excavated settlement units on the islands are farmsteads resembling contemporary sites in Sweden. A sign of far-flung trade contacts is seen in the "clay paw"-shaped artifacts found in many graves. These have their closest parallel in the Volga area of central Russia. About half of the excavated Iron Age graves belong to the ninth and tenth centuries.

In Varsinais Suomi, similar geological and environmental conditions enabled farmers there to adopt the more intensive methods of plowed field cultivation than seen elsewhere in Finland. It was also possible to keep larger herds of cattle. With greater food production came the possibility of denser settlements and towns. The city of Turku (Åbo in Swedish) in this province was incorporated sometime between 1290 and 1313. Finland's first university arose there. Other early medieval towns were Porvoo, founded in 1347, and Pori, in 1348. Most towns were not founded until the fifteenth century or later. Urbanization came late to Finland.

In southern Häme, near modern Hämeenlinna, a large but historically undocumented occupation site, today called Varikkoniemi, has been excavated. Some believe that the structures found here are the physical remains of a trading station holding a significant level of control over the east-west trade route through Finland's interior. The site may date as early as the Viking period.

The southern Savo region was settled by farmers mostly in the Late Iron Age. A regional survey project conducted in the 1980s noted seven previously registered hillforts and approximately twenty new sites categorized as "ancient guarding posts." There are ninety-four so-called cup-marked stones concentrated in eastern Savo. Many more occur elsewhere in Finland. The cup-marked stones are



Fig. 2. Grave 56 from the Luistari cemetery. PHOTOGRAPH BY RAUNO HILANDER 1969. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

recognized as ritual offering places used by the pagan Finnish farmers. In the small depressions, or cup-marks, cut into large boulders, Finns would leave offerings of such things as first fruits from the harvest as a form of thanks to their guardian spirits and ancestors. Pollen studies from soil cores taken at Lake Saimaa show that slash-and-burn cultivation combined with cattle breeding began in southern Savo in the Late Iron Age. Permanent settlement of the area does not seem to have taken hold until the twelfth century. When choosing a dwelling site, Finns sought out fine soils and a close relation to bodies of water. It was more important that a site be suitable for cattle-breeding than for agriculture.

The cemeteries of the Late Iron Age present much interesting information about trade contacts, social organization, and religious beliefs including

the process of conversion to Christianity. Finns practiced both inhumation (burial of the intact body) and cremation (burning the body) rites. In a small circumscribed area of western Finland (corresponding to the traditional parishes of Eura, Köyliö, and Yläne), large inhumation cemeteries—the largest cemeteries of any kind in prehistoric Finland—have been found (fig. 2). Many of the dead were accompanied by rich grave goods, and many of these items originated from Scandinavia and western Europe. Males were often buried with impressive sets of weapons including swords and spears. Both sexes were often well ornamented with costly brooches, rings, beads, and other items. Some early-twentieth-century scholars felt that these people were too wealthy and foreign-looking in their dress to be actual Finns, but researchers are now certain that they were truly Finnish. The explanation seems

to be that the trade in furs and other valuable goods that had first stimulated settlement in Ostrobothnia was now moving into the interior along the Kokemäki River. These cemeteries represent the settlements of people who operated the gateway to that interior route, which perhaps already reached as far as the Lake Ladoga markets. Such control over valuable long-distance trade would indeed make communities in the area wealthy. Perhaps also, because these Finns dealt so much with foreign traders, they learned about, and chose to adopt, burial practices that are strikingly similar to those used nearby in western Europe. The large inhumation cemeteries found here remained in use until Christian times. Their final phases exhibit the effects of conversion. The latest burials, during the eleventh and twelfth centuries, are significantly lacking in grave goods and demonstrate the Christian teaching that the dead should not take their worldly possessions with them. When the parishes were finally organized, these old cemeteries dating from the pagan centuries were abandoned altogether, and new burials were placed in proper church graveyards.

Although spectacular in the finds they produced, the western inhumation cemeteries do not represent the common burial practice of Late Iron Age Finns. Cremation seems to have been most common, and cremations could be found both in mounds and in low-lying stratified, or layered, areas called field cemeteries. These are unusual in that the cremated remains are scattered about and intermixed with the remains of other cremated bodies. All individuality of burial identity is lost by this mixing. This behavior may reflect a prevailing belief in cyclical reincarnation from a defined ancestral kin group. Individuals who die lose their former earthly identity but are eventually transported into a new earthly form. Thus, the cremation field cemetery symbolizes the merging of kindred spirits in the afterlife.

Other burial types, particularly mound groups, flourish in different parts of the country. Finland is a fascinating place to study Iron Age ritual and religion, for more fragments, both in the ground and in the folklore, can still be uncovered there than in other lands with a longer and more deeply engrained history of Christianity.

See also *Iron Age Finland* (vol. 2, part 6); *Saami* (vol. 2, part 7); *Pre-Viking and Viking Age Sweden* (vol. 2, part 7); *Staraya Ladoga* (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Edgren, Torsten, ed. *Fenno-Ugri et Slavi 1988: Papers Presented by the Participants in the Finnish-Soviet Archaeological Symposium "Studies in the Material Culture of the Peoples of Eastern and Northern Europe."* Helsinki: National Board of Antiquities, 1990. *Iskos* 9. (Various papers of interest, including many Iron Age papers.)
- , ed. *Fenno-Ugri et Slavi 1983: Papers Presented by the Participants in the Soviet-Finnish Symposium "Trade, Exchange and Culture Relations of the Peoples of Fenno-scandia and Eastern Europe," 9–13 May 1983.* Helsinki: Suomen Muinaismuistoyhdistys, 1984. *Iskos* 4. (Various papers of interest, including many Iron Age papers.)
- Grönlund, E., H. Simola, and P. Uimonen-Simola. "Early Agriculture in the Eastern Finnish Lake District." *Norwegian Archaeological Review* 23 (1990): 79–85.
- Hirviluoto, Anna-Liisa. "Finland's Cultural Ties with the Kama Region in the Late Iron Age Especially in the Light of Pottery Finds." In *Traces of the Central Asian Culture in the North: Finnish-Soviet Joint Scientific Symposium Held in Hanasaari, Espoo, 14–21 January 1985.* Mémoires de la Société Finno-Ougrienne 194. Edited by Ildikó Lehtinen, pp. 71–80. Helsinki: Suomalais-Ugrilainen Seura, 1986.
- Huurte, Matti. *9000 Vuotta Suomen Esihistoriaa.* Helsinki: Otava, 1979. (In Finnish.)
- Kivikoski, Ella. *Die Eisenzeit Finnlands: Bildwerk und Text.* Helsinki: Finnische Altertumsgesellschaft, 1973.
- . *Finland.* Translated by Alan Binns. London: Thames and Hudson, 1967.
- Lehtosalo-Hilander, Pirkko-Liisa. "Finland." In *From Viking to Crusader: The Scandinavians and Europe 800–1200.* Edited by Else Roesdahl and David M. Wilson, pp. 62–71. New York: Rizzoli, 1992.
- . *Luistari.* 3 vols. Helsinki: Suomen Muinaismuistoyhdistys, 1982. (*Suomen Muinaismuistoyhdistyksen Aikakauskirja* 82, nos. 1–3). (A major inhumation cemetery excavation report in English; burial and artifact catalog in Finnish.)
- Meinander, Carl F. "The Finnish Society during the 8th–12th Centuries." In *Fenno-Ugri et Slavi 1978: Papers Presented by the Participants the Soviet-Finnish Symposium "The Cultural Relations between the Peoples and Countries of the Baltic Area during the Iron Age and the Early Middle Ages," 20–23 May 1978.* Edited by Carl F. Meinander, pp. 7–13. Helsinki: Helsinki University, 1980. (*Moniste* 22).
- Odner, Knut. "Saamis (Lapps), Finns and Scandinavians in History and Prehistory: Ethnic Origins and Ethnic Processes in Fenno-Scandinavia." *Norwegian Archaeologi-*

- cal Review* 18 (1985): 1–35. (Determining ethnicity is a controversial topic.)
- Orrman, Eljas. “Geographical Factors in the Spread of Permanent Settlement in Parts of Finland and Sweden from the End of the Iron Age to the Beginning of Modern Times.” *Fennoscandia Archaeologica* 8 (1991): 3–21.
- Saksa, A. I. “Results and Perspectives of Archaeological Studies on the Karelian Isthmus.” *Fennoscandia Archaeologica* 2 (1985): 37–49.
- Shepherd, Deborah J. *Funerary Ritual and Symbolism: An Interdisciplinary Interpretation of Burial Practices in Late Iron Age Finland*. BAR International Series, no. 808. Oxford: British Archaeological Reports, 1999.
- Talvio, Tuukka. “Finland’s Place in Viking-Age Relations between Sweden and the Eastern Baltic/Northern Russia: The Numismatic Evidence.” *Journal of Baltic Studies* 13, no. 3 (fall 1982): 245–255.
- Zachrisson, Inger. “Samisk kultur i Finland under järnåldern.” In *Suomen Varhaishistoria*. Edited by Kyösti Julku, pp. 652–670. Oulu, Finland: University of Oulu, 1992.

DEBORAH J. SHEPHERD



POLAND

During the Late Iron Age and Early Middle Ages, the area that makes up contemporary Poland belonged to the outskirts of “civilized” Europe dominated by the Roman Empire. This distant part of the so-called Barbaricum, however, maintained contacts with the lands at the forefront of cultural development. Thus, processes observed in the Romanized parts of the Continent had unavoidable effects in the area north of the Sudetic and Carpathian Mountains. Because written sources are scarce and difficult to interpret, one must rely mainly on archaeological data, with the support of historical anthropology, to piece together a history of Poland from the fifth to the tenth century.

In late antiquity the territories to the north of the Carpathian and Sudetic Mountains faced a serious socioeconomic crisis. In the fifth and sixth centuries this resulted in a retreat from hierarchical authority and a return to an egalitarian form of organization. This process was accompanied by a decrease in widespread exchange, a deterioration of crafts, a reduction in the assortment of metal products, the disappearance of adornments, and a declining quality of pottery production. In general, it was a phase characterized by visible poverty.

This shift might have stemmed from the disruption of long-distance trade connections. Imported Roman products played an important role in the regulation of the social order among the “barbarians” surrounding the Roman Empire. Thus, control over the nodes of the trade network had the weight of a political argument because circulation of prestige objects used for ostentation of status condi-

tioned the sustaining of power relations. Those relatively ranked societies required a steady stream of supplies from the outside; this made them quite sensitive to changes in contacts with the empire, which was the main source of status goods. Those contacts became unpredictable in the wake of the turbulent geopolitical situation in and around the Roman Empire in late antiquity. Historians usually blame this turmoil on the appearance of the Asiatic Huns, who arrived in the eastern European steppe zone in A.D. 375 and subsequently installed the center of their “empire” in the Carpathian Basin. A later breakdown of the transcontinental communication network might have caused barbarian elites to leave distant peripheries in search of closer contacts with still attractive Roman markets.

SUDDEN CAREER OF THE SLAVS

Such new circumstances resulted in radical changes in social organization as well as in the archaeologically observed material culture. The changes discernible from the sixth century onward cannot be reliably explained only by the migration of the Slavs, who settled lands emptied by departed Germanic populations, for example, the Vandals. It is difficult to accept the rather common vision of the whole region between the Vistula and Oder Rivers being suddenly completely depopulated and then resettled by the Slavic newcomers. These changes, however, should be viewed from a much broader perspective.

Archaeological data indicate that from the time of the sixth century, simple societies, based on a



Fig. 1. Example of a Slavic sunken house. COURTESY OF ZBIGNIEW KOBYLIŃSKI. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

nonspecialized, self-sufficient agricultural economy with an egalitarian power structure, became common over vast areas of the northern parts of central Europe. Their uncomplicated socioeconomic organization is indicated by the layout of their settlements, composed of small houses of a uniform type (square, sunken huts with stone ovens in one corner, see figs. 1 and 2) arranged in rows or dispersed irregularly, as well as by analyses of the cemeteries. This stage, commonly identified as early Slavonic culture, was characterized by its small, nondefensive settlements, poor cemeteries with cremation burials, lack of adornments, and technologically primitive pottery of a uniform shape—the so-called Prague type. In a rather short time this simple style of life was adopted by almost all sedentary societies occupying vast areas of central Europe.

The widespread success of the Slavonic culture, measured by its spatial expansion, may seem surprising in light of its poor material equipment and strict

egalitarianism. Nonetheless, decentralization of the power structure resulting from a return to the self-sufficient economy of local farming communities had the advantage of durability, stability, and predictability. It was a return to the relationships of solidarity based mainly on kin ties and not on subjugation (even voluntary) to the interests of military elites. Studies of spatial patterns of early Slavic settlements indicate a lack of any territorial organization, which may suggest that expansion of the Slavs and the durability of their decentralized ethnicity were based on the integrative potential of local rural communities and not on some regional power structures. During that silent revolution, in the course of about two centuries, Slavonic culture came to cover huge areas of the Continent—from Schleswig-Holstein in northern Germany to Thessaly in Greece, and from the Ukraine to Bavaria. This rapid expansion of Slavic culture did not result from military aggression or a demographic explo-

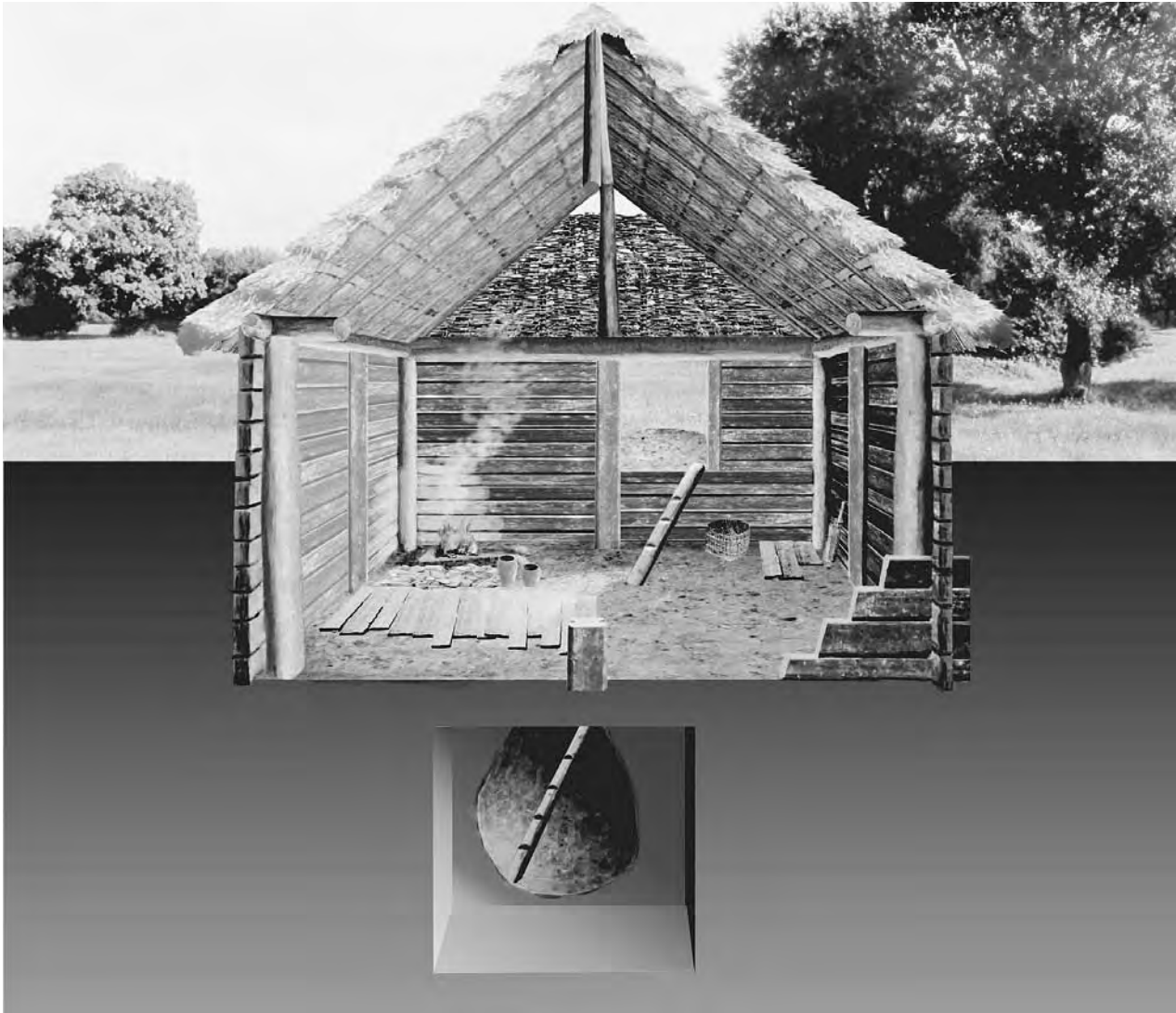


Fig. 2. A reconstruction of an early Slavic sunken-floored hut (Kraków-Wyciąże, Poland). FROM J. POLESKI.

sion but rather from acceptance of a new lifestyle that appeared attractive despite its apparent simplicity. It turned out to be economically effective in the long-term exploitation of various geographic environments.

The age-old controversy between supporters of the “autochthonous,” or indigenous, presence of Slavs in the vast lowlands between the Oder and Dnieper Rivers and those who claim that they came from a small “cradle” located between the Carpathians and Dnieper cannot be resolved conclusively. The first group of scholars, stressing continuation of some elements of “Germanic” material culture and

survival of archaic hydronymy is not sensitive enough to the dynamism of the period of great migrations. Their opponents, who concentrate on the breakdown of the ancient social structures of the Barbaricum, overestimate “demographic explosion.” Such an uncompromising opposition of “continuity” versus “colonization” is false because both hypotheses are based on radical simplification of the historical process. Sudden expansion of Slavdom cannot be disputed either in cultural terms or by using demographic categories only, and both aspects must be combined. Historical sources, archaeological evidence, and linguistic data suggest that

the spreading of Slavic cultural codes was much more extensive than the range of the physical migration of their carriers, who intensively interacted with locally bound populations. Both processes were closely interdependent, and it may be impossible to decide which one was decisive in a given area.

POLITICAL DEVELOPMENT OF THE SLAVS

The early Slavic self-sufficient agricultural economy could not supply much of a surplus, which determined a relatively flat power structure. Apart from economic constraints, there were also geopolitical reasons for political retardation of the Slavs. The most important was the extensive control exerted by the Avars—Asiatic nomadic warriors who settled in the Carpathian Basin in 568 and militarily dominated all of central Europe. It was only after their defeat by Charlemagne in 799 that dynamic changes began to be seen among the Slavs. The collapse of the Avar “empire” and contacts with the mighty Frankish state, which expanded its tributary zone toward the east, initiated a lively process of social hierarchization among the Slavs.

The Polish lowlands had no direct contact with their mighty eastern Frankish neighbor until the mid-tenth century. For this reason, the territory north of the Carpathians did not attract the attention of early medieval chroniclers. The oldest source, written c. 848 by the so-called Bavarian Geographer at the court of the emperor Louis the German, offers very vague information, which reflects little knowledge of the area lying far from the empire’s direct tributary zone. Notes on some mighty tribes suggest, however, that centralization of political power took place there as well. It can be assumed that experience of the long-lasting cooperation with the Avars, the establishment of long-distance commercial relations, and development of agrotechnology led, around the mid-ninth century, to the appearance of local chiefdom organizations based on redistribution economy. There are various archaeological indications of such a process.

Great mounds raised in the southeastern Polish highland in the eighth and ninth centuries (in Sandomierz, Kraków, and Przemyśl) are good indications of such a process. These monumental earthworks may be viewed as evidence of attempts to ease the tensions provoked by growing stratification.

None of these mounds contains a grave, which may imply that their main function was to materially manifest the ability to mobilize massive labor input. The aim was to “hide” the proliferating social differentiation behind the traditional symbolism of a burial mound. Such actions can be seen as a form of “propaganda” aimed at social integration despite the progressive stratification. Big mounds also display competition for power by men of status who used them to demonstrate their capacity to mobilize large groups to act collectively. Thus, they indicate periods when new elites symbolically marked their domination.

Arabic written sources address the development of trade relations with the Muslim world, as does the inflow of oriental coins that appeared north of the Carpathian Mountains in three waves during the course of the ninth and tenth centuries. Slaves were probably the main export in that period, although Arabian sources also mention honey, wax, furs, and amber. These commodities left northern central Europe either with Scandinavian merchants via the numerous Baltic trading emporia (e.g., Wolin and Truso), and later along the eastern European river system, or by the transcontinental route (from Spain to Verdun, Mainz, Regensburg, Prague, Kraków, Kiev, the middle Volga, and Khazaria at the Caspian Sea coast) served directly by Arab and Jewish merchants.

Apart from the erection of big mounds and the hiding of silver deposits, archaeological evidence of a new process of power centralization includes the building of earth-and-wood strongholds that began around the mid-ninth century (fig. 3). The strongholds indicate a reorganization of the social space because settlements were concentrated around fortified centers, breaking the older network of agricultural settlement into centralized “cells.” As physical and symbolic centers, they fulfilled an important role as nodes of social geography. The strongholds served military functions and were evidence of the wealth of the ruling elite and its capability to execute extensive labor expense. Their construction indicated the economic and demographic potential of the area and might have fulfilled the socially important function of uniting a population around a common goal.

The economic base of a ruling power was supported by attempts to institutionalize ideology,



Fig. 3. Aerial of a small stronghold in Tykocin, Poland. COURTESY OF ZBIGNIEW KOBYLŃSKI. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

which resulted in the organization of cult centers. Control over these centers was important in sustaining power, because it strengthened political domination by the sacral legitimization of authority. In this respect, large regional cult centers located on “holy” mountains (e.g., Ślęza in Silesia and Łysa Góra in Little Poland) should be viewed, first of all, in terms of political struggle.

“CONSTRUCTION” OF THE STATE

The first written evidence of political organization in Polish lands may be found in the legendary hagiography of St. Methodius, in which “a powerful prince of Vislech” is mentioned. He used to “harass” Christian Moravians and subsequently was defeated and converted to Christianity between 874 and 880. The traditional interpretation of this account as a proof of some “state of Vislane” finds no confirmation in the available data. That “prince” probably was just one of many regional leaders func-

tioning around the border of Great Moravia, which was the main target for looting expeditions.

Despite obvious signs of hierarchization, the Early Middle Ages were still a time when the process of power centralization could have been stopped or even reversed. “Democratic” political institutions avoided the transition to territorial organizations ruled by stable monopolistic centers. That “opposition” had to be broken by ambitious individuals. Seeking exclusive power, they counteracted egalitarian attitudes, while violation of “democratic” mechanisms often was camouflaged by manipulating the common tradition. A distant reminiscence of one such illegitimate takeover of supreme authority is recorded in the dynastic legend of the first ruling Polish dynasty—the Piasts, as cited by the so-called Gallus Anonymus in the twelfth-century *Cronica Polonorum* [Chronicle of the Poles]. The story relates the expulsion of the ninth-century

“prince” Popiel because he did not meet the basic requirements of acceptable leadership.

In the words of Gallus Anonymus, when “the Polish principality was not yet so large,” Gneзно was ruled by prince Popiel, who had “many noblemen and friends.” Once he was not able to “fulfill the needs of his guests,” meaning he was unable to give them enough beer and meat; this obligation of a successful leader was met instead by a simple farmer, Piast, whose son Siemowit, “after common approval,” was elected the prince of Poland. Popiel was expelled “together with his progeniture.” Siemowit “enlarged the borders of his principality” by military means, which was continued by his son Lestek and his grandson Siemomysl. Siemomysl often used to gather together his “earls and dukes” and organize sumptuous feasts, at which the prince asked advice of “the elderly and wise men.” He ruled unchallenged for many years, and his successor, Mieszko, also “energetically invaded the neighboring peoples.” “Finally, he demanded to marry one good Christian woman from Bohemia,” and, with her help, he “renounced the mistakes of paganism.”

This is a very good description of the process of stable territorial state formation, in which military expansion helped mobilize the whole population and furnished the economic means to sustain dynastic supremacy. The Piasts were raised to the throne by disillusioned people. The family managed to maintain their position thanks to military successes, which provided material gains and expanded their domain. The leaders continued to seek the counsel of the members of the social elite but were, in fact, beyond their effective control. Mieszko I ultimately reinforced his power in 966 by conversion to Christianity, which offered him ideological legitimacy for unquestioned paramount power.

FOUNDATIONS OF PRINCELY POWER

From such a perspective one must view not only the military but also the political and psychological importance of long wars that mobilized and unified whole societies around victorious chiefs. Wars also had economic importance because booty supported the system of redistribution and gift exchange. War mobilization (against an enemy or for booty) was the best way to maintain the social order. Most im-

portant, however, war gains (horses, cattle, weapons, slaves, precious metals, and so on) made it possible to maintain a retinue. Military leadership, even if temporary, offered very efficient, although short-term, possibilities of strengthening one’s status. It also helped limit access to paramount positions to one privileged family.

Apart from the strategy of reinforcing political power by military means, it was also necessary to increase the base of economic power by supplementing war income through trade and systematic coercive exploitation of one’s own territory. Thus, the hundreds of strongholds built by the western Slavs from the late ninth century onward did not simply serve military purposes but also were safe places for staple produce. Those staples came from agricultural surpluses collected from the inhabitants of the ruler’s own territory. Surpluses were made possible through the agricultural progress achieved in optimal climatic conditions. The growing role of agriculture caused the land to develop into a “commodity” and to become the most important element in determining the power structure. A class of people at first controlling and then possessing the land soon became the main supporters of the state.

Ideological power was strengthened by control over the ceremonial centers and the rituals celebrated there as well as by creating an ethnogenetic tradition. Such a largely legendary tradition was promoted by the privileged elites who, referring to the Indo-European stereotypes, equaled their genealogy with the origins of their peoples in order to legitimize their dominant position. This was aimed at increasing their power over the people and not over territory. In the beginning, those people could have been of many ethnic groups. For this reason, the monarch needed ideological reinforcement that would give his people a feeling of unity. Thus, “ethnic” identity resulted mainly from relationships with a specific leader and his family and not from the fact of living within the same territory or from some commonly experienced past.

THE ORIGINS OF POLAND

It seems that when a territorial authority and the control over the religious sphere are turned into a permanent political center with coercive capability (an “army”), it is only a step away from becoming a state. This breakthrough is difficult to discern

from early medieval evidence. For example, the Polish state of Mieszko I (922?–992) seemed to appear *ex nihilo*, because his home area in Great Poland (Wielkopolska) did not boast any particular concentration of strongholds, no dense settlement, and no rich cemeteries. In the early tenth century various areas (Little Poland, Silesia, Great Poland, Masovia, and Pomerania) showed similar development. Every one of these regions could have emerged as a small state. It seems that the main advantage of Great Poland was its geographical isolation, which limited military dangers. Thus, Silesia offered protection from the direct interventions of the mighty eastern Frankish empire, Little Poland protected from Rus aggression, Pomerania absorbed the activity of the Scandinavian Vikings, and Masovia stood against violent Prussians. Thus the final success of Great Poland was determined greatly by its location, which enabled the Piast dynasty to win the race for stable state formation.

Dendrochronological dates indicate a growing settlement network in Great Poland as late as the mid-tenth century, when Mieszko's state already had entered Continental geopolitics. His strategy was described in 965/66 by the Spanish Jewish merchant Ibrahim ibn Jaqub of Tortosa, who reported on his journey to Prague. He noticed the striking effectiveness of a military model based on the domination of a professional, heavily armed cavalry and the stabilizing effect of the stronghold network. Soon the Polish prince effected an ideological revolution by accepting Christianity as the new state religion in 966. All these measures allowed him to secure unquestionable political domination for himself and his descendants.

There must have been a centralized form of coercion applied, under which old kin-based relationships were replaced with new social hierarchy relationships of political obedience while “democratic” supervision by the common assembly was replaced by norms of the imposed royal law. Military power was applied, which in the core area of the early Piasts' state in the mid-tenth century manifested as the phase of destruction of the old strongholds, which were replaced by new ones. Those new nodes of power often were localized at the same site or nearby the earlier ones.

Mieszko's state was not yet “Poland.” It was the state of the Piasts who had executed their dynastic

goals with the support of a military aristocracy. To Ibrahim ibn Jaqub it was obvious in 965 that it was the monarch with his retinue who created and represented the state. Thus he called it “the state of Mieszko.” It was not until much later, after stable territorial foundations of dynastic power were laid down, that it was possible to identify the state not personally but geographically. It was recorded in the last quarter of the tenth century, that the name of the central town (Gniezno) was used for identifying the state ruled by the Piasts. In a document written c. 990 and called *Dagome index* (the meaning of which remains unknown), Mieszko I described his own domain as *civitas Schinesghe/Schignesne*, that is, “the state of Gniezno.” The first coin of his son Boleslav I (r. 992–1025) makes a similar reference, written as “Gnezdun civitas.” The general territorial name Polonia appeared as late as about A.D. 1000, when the relatively stable geopolitical structure of central Europe took shape. It was then that the need to attain geopolitical legitimacy forced Boleslav I to introduce a package of commonly accepted attributes of an independent state, that is, an archbishopric, coinage, a territorial name, and a royal crown.

THE REGIONAL POWER

It took three generations of the Piast dynasty to organize a large, stable, strong state, which came to dominate central Europe by the turn of the millennium. Dendrochronology indicates that it must have been Mieszko's father, Siemomysl, who laid the foundations of the dynastic domain in central Great Poland during the fourth and fifth decade of the tenth century. It was in that period when a network of strongholds was created with centers in Gniezno, Giecz, Poznań, Lednica, Moraczewo, and Grzybowo. They were surrounded by dense systems of rural settlements. As the first historical ruler, Mieszko I laid the territorial foundations of the state, which quickly expanded in all directions. Growing in power, he had to enter the geopolitical stage, where he showed skills of an experienced gambler.

Long unnoticed by the German empire, the Piast state emerged in the seventh decade of the tenth century as a military power able to challenge mighty Bohemian and Hungarian princes. Mieszko I started a complex game of alliances aimed at rein-

forcing his geopolitical position. To balance the expansive strategy of the German church, he asked his closest neighbor, the Bohemian prince Boleslav I, to send a Christianizing mission together with his daughter, Dobrava. The first bishop, Jordan, was responsible directly to the pope, which made the Polish church independent of German supervision. The interdynastic marriage of Mieszko and Dobrava in 965 obliged both courts to maintain political solidarity, which was reflected in their support for the anti-Ottonian opposition.

This alliance lasted as long as Dobrava lived. Mieszko took political advantage of her death in 977 to break the Polish-Bohemian partnership. In 979 he married Oda, daughter of the Saxon margrave Dietrich, and became a close ally of the Ottonian empire. His strategic goal was to challenge Bohemian domination in central Europe. Sometime in the ninth decade he invaded Silesia and Little Poland and included them as southern provinces of his state, despite diplomatic actions taken by the prince of Prague, Boleslav II, the son of the Bohemian prince Boleslav I and Mieszko's own former brother-in-law.

The Piasts' strategy of geopolitical isolation of Bohemia is well reflected in the sequence of quick marriages arranged for Mieszko's oldest son, also named Boleslav. In 984 this Boleslav married the daughter of the Meissen margrave Rikdag. The death of this mighty Saxon aristocrat made possible the annulment of that marriage, which opened the way to finding a new wife for the young prince in 986/87. This time it was a Hungarian princess, who was herself replaced in 988/89 by Emnilda, the daughter of a western Slavonic prince, Dobromir. This clever policy restricted potential partners of Bohemia to pagan Polabians and resulted in Bohemia's loss of its former dominant position.

After Mieszko's death in 992, his son, now Boleslav I, continued the strategy of further expanding and reinforcing his inherited state. Active in all directions, he ran a complex game of military and diplomatic actions. His sister was married first to the Swedish king Eric the Victorious and later to the Danish king Svein Forkbeard. His daughter was sent to Rus as the wife of the prince of Kiev, and his son, Mieszko II, married the German princess Richesa, the niece of the emperor Otto III.

Boleslav's real masterpiece, however, was a summit with emperor Otto III, who came to Gniezno in A.D. 1000. The official reason for this unprecedented visit was a pilgrimage to the grave of St. Adalbert of Prague (originally called Vojtech), who had been killed in 997 during a mission to the pagan Prussians. The emperor substantially reinforced Boleslav I, however, because he brought with him Archbishop Radim (Gaudentius), the half-brother of St. Adalbert, and established an independent church province with a metropolitan seat in Gniezno. Four new bishoprics (in Poznań, Kołobrzeg, Wrocław, and Kraków) formed an administrative network that covered all the lands between the Baltic Sea and the mountain belt. The Polish prince also was freed from the obligation of paying yearly tributes and was elevated to the position of a "brother of the empire," effectively a monarch equal to any other in Europe. Since that time the political name Polonia has been used for the state that has survived to the present.

A review of the origins of the other early states (Bohemia, Hungary, Rus) that constituted eastern central Europe during the tenth century shows a common strategy applied by their leaders, who all achieved stable territorial power. None of them had an overview of the geopolitical situation, and none could foresee the long-range results of their actions. Their ability to organize broad support, their determination in applying coercion, their capacity to muster the necessary means to sustain power, their intelligence in borrowing solutions from more developed neighbors, and simple good luck led to their supreme successes as first monarchs and creators of their states.

One may conclude that Poland emerged in the tenth century as a "private" venture of the Piasts, who managed to defeat local challengers, stop expansion of their neighbors, impose Christian ideology that legitimized monopolistic rules, organize effective exploitation of subjugated territory, and achieve geopolitical acceptance. That state was not an "emanation" of the political striving of a nation. It was just the opposite—the Polish nation was a much later "product" of a state that imposed cultural unification.

See also Iron Age Poland (vol. 2, part 6); Slavs and the Early Slav Culture (vol. 2, part 7); Russia/Ukraine

(vol. 2, part 7); **Hungary** (vol. 2, part 7); **Czech Lands/Slovakia** (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Barford, Paul M. *The Early Slavs: Culture and Society in Early Medieval Eastern Europe*. London: British Museum Press; Ithaca, N.Y.: Cornell University Press, 2001.
- Fried, Johannes. *Otto III und Boleslaw Chrobry: Das Widmungsbild des Aachener Evangeliars, der Akt von Gnesen und das frühe polnische und ungarische Königtum. Ein Bildanalyse und ihre historischen Folgen*. Stuttgart, Germany: Franz Steiner Verlag, 1989.
- Görich, Knut. *Otto III: Romanus, Saxonicus et Italicus. Keiserliche Rompolitik und sächsische Historiographie*. Sigmaringen, Germany: Thorbecke, 1993.
- Kara, Michał. "Anfänge der Bildung des Piastenstaats im Lichte neuer archäologischer Ermittlungen." *Questiones medii aevi novae* 5 (2000): 57–85.
- Kurnatowska, Zofia. *Początki Polski* [Beginnings of Poland]. Poznań, Poland: Poznańskie Towarzystwo Przyjaciół Nauk, 2002.
- Labuda, Gerard. *Mieszko I*. Wrocław, Poland: Ossolineum, 2002.
- Miśkiewicz, M., ed. *Słowianie w Europie wcześniejszego średniowiecza* [Slavs in early medieval Europe]. Warsaw, Poland: Państwowe Muzeum Archeologiczne, 1998.
- Samsonowicz, Henryk, ed. *Ziemie polskie w X wieku i ich znaczenie w kształtowaniu się nowej mapy Europy* [Polish lands in the tenth century and their role in the shaping of the new map of Europe]. Kraków, Poland: Universitas, 2000.
- Strzelczyk, Jerzy. *Mieszko I*. Poznań, Poland: Wydawnictwo Wojewódzkiej Biblioteki Publicznej, 1999.
- Urbańczyk, Przemysław. *Rok 1000: Milenijna podróż transkontynentalna* [The year 1000: Millennial transcontinental journey]. Warsaw, Poland: DiG, 2001.
- . *Władza i polityka we wczesnym średniowieczu* [Power and politics in the Early Middle Ages]. Warsaw, Poland: Funna, 2000.
- , ed. *Europe around the Year 1000*. Warsaw, Poland: Institute of Archaeology and Ethnology, 2001.
- , ed. *The Neighbours of Poland in the Tenth Century*. Warsaw, Poland: Institute of Archaeology and Ethnology, 2000.
- , ed. *Origins of Central Europe*. Warsaw, Poland: Institute of Archaeology and Ethnology, 1997.

PRZEMYSŁAW URBAŃCZYK



RUSSIA/UKRAINE

FOLLOWED BY FEATURE ESSAY ON:

Staraya Ladoga 568

The early Russian state emerged between A.D. 750 and 1000, the result of a complex development process. Among the most important factors in this process were the growth of an economy based on craft production and long-distance trade and the rise of urban centers to facilitate the specialized economy and the administration of the nascent state. These factors, in turn, were related closely to connections and interrelationships among peoples living in Russia, the Baltic Sea area, and the east during the eighth through tenth centuries.

Primary historical evidence regarding the origin of the Russian state is scarce, consisting mainly of a single record, the Russian Primary Chronicle. It is thought that the chronicle was compiled in the Monastery of the Caves near Kiev in about A.D. 1110. According to the chronicle account, in the early ninth century northern Russia was divided politically into diverse tribal principalities, all of which owed tribute to the Varangians (Scandinavians). In 859 these principalities rose together against the Varangians and drove them out of Russia. Without a central power, the Russian peoples began to fight among themselves and eventually resolved to invite the Varangians to return and rule over them. Three Varangian brothers accepted the invitation. They moved to northern Russia with their kin and founded cities from which to rule the area. The old-

est brother was Rurik, who located himself in Novgorod or Staraya Ladoga (depending on the particular codex consulted). The two younger brothers also each established a city but died within a few years, leaving Rurik the sole authority over northern Russia. In later years Rurik's successors expanded and consolidated Russian rule. In 882 Oleg, a descendant of Rurik, established himself in Kiev and declared that city the capital of Russia, which it remained until the eleventh century.

Although the Russian Primary Chronicle account has a legendary feel to it, clearly serving to legitimize the rule of the Kievan dynasty over early Russia, it does provide insight into how the early state was formed. The document identifies several key factors in the formation of the early Russian state: early towns, the diversity of peoples who inhabited them, and their economic interrelationships. Archaeological research on the formation of the early Russian state has investigated these key factors, providing a great deal of information about the development of early towns as economic and administrative centers and about the role of the Varangians and other early peoples in the area. Most archaeologists currently believe that the establishment of the early Russian state was a process, not an event, as the Russian Primary Chronicle presents it. The process of state formation, as revealed in the ar-



Early medieval towns in Russia, Scandinavia, and Byzantium.

archaeological record, included the growth of a specialized economy, urbanization, and increasing social stratification.

State development took place between A.D. 750 and 1000 in two primary phases. In the first phase, between about A.D. 750 and 900, appeared such early towns as Staraya Ladoga and Rurik Gorodishche, whose primary function was to facilitate a long-distance economy. The focus of these early towns was on trade and craft production. They had a multiethnic population, which only in later years was controlled by a central administration. In the second phase, from about A.D. 900 to 1000, rose such towns as Novgorod and Kiev, whose primary function was administration. These later towns showed evidence of urban planning, the presence of a ruling elite and a military, and a continuing interest in craft production and trade.

A.D. 750–900

The peoples who settled in northwest Russia before the period of state formation belonged to Baltic and Finno-Ugric ethnic groups. During the eighth century, Slavic peoples were expanding north and settling along the southern coast of the Baltic Sea, while at the same time Scandinavians were moving south into that area. Organized into small tribal principalities, these peoples coexisted in northern Russia. They lived in small villages scattered across the landscape. Their economy was primarily agrarian, with local exchange.

Between A.D. 750 and 900 the characteristic settlement pattern and economy of northern Russia changed rapidly. A number of towns appeared, including Staraya Ladoga, Rurik Gorodishche, and Gnezdovo. These early towns were located at strategic points for facilitating and controlling the growing trade across the Baltic and through Russia to the

Far East. The first towns in northern Russia were different from earlier settlements in two significant ways: their population was more concentrated, and they had a specialized economy focused on craft production rather than agriculture and on long-distance rather than local trade. They also were notable for having a multiethnic population, with individuals from several cultures living side by side and engaging in the same economic activities.

Staraya Ladoga. The earliest known town in northern Russia is Staraya Ladoga, located south of Lake Ladoga at the easternmost point of the Baltic Sea. Staraya Ladoga is important to historians, because it appears in some versions of the Russian Primary Chronicle as Rurik's original seat. To archaeologists it is significant because it is the only northwest Russian medieval town with an unambiguous eighth-century cultural layer and with excellent preservation of organic and metallic materials due to the waterlogged soil. Based on the findings from Staraya Ladoga, archaeologists have reconstructed a great deal of information related to the process of state formation in early Russia, including the development of a specialized economy, the appearance of social stratification, and the role of these factors in the process of urbanization and state formation in Russia.

Staraya Ladoga is situated in an ideal position to monitor access to the main communication routes through Russia, the Dnieper and Volga Rivers. In the mid-eighth century, the earliest settlement at the town developed along the southern bank of the Ladozhka, at the point where the tributary entered the Volkhov River. This location probably was chosen as the best spot for a harbor. The town grew rapidly. During the mid-ninth century, the north bank of the Ladozhka was settled, and by the tenth century the town had expanded to both sides of the Volkhov.

Early development of Staraya Ladoga was haphazard, but after the mid-ninth century there is evidence for town planning and public works, suggesting that a town administration had evolved. The center of Staraya Ladoga was fortified in the second half of the ninth century. In the tenth century, the town's streets were laid out on a grid, and a princely residence was built with provisions for military protection.

More than one hundred and fifty buildings have been excavated at Staraya Ladoga. Almost every excavated building turned up evidence of craft production, suggesting that manufacturing was an important part of the town's economy and that a majority of permanent residents were engaged in craft production. Other activities include agriculture, stock raising, and hunting and gathering, but these appear minor compared with craft production and trade. Staraya Ladoga's economy was organized around two main spheres: a local and regional exchange area and a long-distance exchange area. The local and regional economy centered on manufacturing and trading utilitarian objects and importing prestige goods and raw materials for the elite. The long-distance economy involved exporting furs and other materials, importing foreign prestige goods, and transferring foreign goods to other trading centers in Scandinavia, Russia, and the Near East.

There is no clear evidence to suggest that any particular ethnic group founded or administered the town, or participated significantly more than any other in its core activities of trade and manufacture. In the earliest layers of Staraya Ladoga there are Baltic, Finno-Ugric, Scandinavian, and Slavic materials, integrated throughout the settlement. Over time the material culture began to appear more homogenized, suggesting that the town's diverse ethnic groups were assimilating a new, local identity. Archaeological work carried out throughout the Lake Ladoga region indicates that ethnic integration existed outside the town as well.

There is also evidence of status differentiation among the people of Staraya Ladoga. The town must have had an emerging elite, whose position was communicated clearly and reinforced by their consumption of luxury goods and construction of showy burial mounds. The ordinary folk used utilitarian objects and buried their dead in more humble cremation graves. The elite probably did not organize or control the economy of the town early in its history, but their influence and authority over the town and its activities increased through time. Staraya Ladoga is best understood as a trade and manufacturing town, one link in the network that connected Scandinavia, the eastern Baltic, and the Far East. From its earliest days, the town had far-reaching trade contacts and an economy based

largely on commerce and the production of trade goods.

Staraya Ladoga developed around the same time that new peoples were moving into northern Russia, notably Scandinavians and Slavs. These newcomers, together with the existing population of Balts and Finns, played an important role in stimulating trade and the growth of towns and thus ultimately encouraging craft specialization and increasing class stratification. The participation of numerous ethnic groups in the same range of economic activities seems to have contributed to the development of a new local identity and the minimizing of previous ethnic differences.

Rurik Gorodishche. Rurik Gorodishche is located on an island north of Lake Ilmen, which is midway down the Volkhov. In the ninth century Rurik Gorodishche and Staraya Ladoga were the largest settlements in northwest Russia. While Staraya Ladoga served as gateway to Russia from the eastern Baltic, Rurik Gorodishche controlled access to the Russian river routes. Traders heading to the Bulgar state via the Volga or to Kiev and Byzantium via the Dnieper would pass through Lake Ilmen.

Rurik Gorodishche was a trade and craft production center in the ninth and tenth centuries, taking advantage of its location. Craft production seems to have been important to the town's economy, given the quantities of production debris and materials recovered during excavations. Scales and weights indicate that trade also took place in the town. Goods from the Mediterranean, the Baltic Sea, and Scandinavia have been found at the site. The population of Rurik Gorodishche, as at Staraya Ladoga, included many ethnic groups: Finns, Balts, Slavs, and Scandinavians. Evidence from burials, jewelry, and other sources suggests that these groups mutually influenced each other and gradually developed a composite local identity that blended elements from all of the cultures.

Evidence for fortifications and weapons suggest that Rurik Gorodishche ("Rurik's Fortress") was an administrative and military center early in its history. Staraya Ladoga was fortified at about the same time that Rurik Gorodishche was established as a fortified center, perhaps indicating that fortifications were a common precaution or a statement of power in the mid-ninth century.

Archaeological research shows that Staraya Ladoga and Rurik Gorodishche (as well as other early towns, such as Beloozero and Gnezdovo/Smolensk) share many common features in their development and character: an economy based on trade and craft production, a strategic location along developing trade routes, and a multiethnic population. Other Baltic trade towns manifest these same features, including Hedeby and Ribe in Jutland, Kaupang in Norway, Paviken on Gotland, Birka in central Sweden, and Wolin in Poland.

A.D. 900–1000

By A.D. 900, many towns existed in Russia, including Staraya Ladoga and Rurik Gorodishche. These early towns encouraged the development of a novel specialized economy based on crafts and trade, fostered the interaction of numerous ethnic groups, and depended upon a limited amount of urban administration. Between A.D. 900 and 1000, a new kind of town arose in Russia, which was associated closely with the development of an elite class and a central government. As ethnic differences became less pronounced in urban populations, social stratification became more prominent. Tenth-century towns, such as Novgorod, increasingly served as administrative and economic centers for their territories, encouraging interdependence among the urban and rural settlements. The rise of Kiev in the late tenth century unified Russian towns and their territories under one central administration and further increased the social, political, and settlement hierarchy of early Russia. By A.D. 1000 Kiev effectively served as capital of the early Russian state.

Novgorod. Novgorod was established in the mid-tenth century, two kilometers from Rurik Gorodishche in the Lake Ilmen area of northern Russia. In many ways, early Novgorod resembled its neighboring settlement. Novgorod was home to extensive craft production; about one hundred and fifty workshops have been found so far in the archaeological record. Connections with long-distance trade are indicated by imported objects from the north, south, east, and west. The material culture embraced elements from Slavic, Scandinavian, Baltic, and Finno-Ugric groups, which indicates that there were mutual cultural influences.

Despite the basic similarity between the two towns—a multiethnic population concerned with

craft and trade activities—Novgorod had a different character from that of nearby Rurik Gorodishche. Archaeologists have recovered copious evidence of a greater elite presence at Novgorod than at Rurik Gorodishche. In Lyudin End, where the earliest traces of settlement have been found in Novgorod, individual house lots generally fit into one of two types. The first type, a narrow rectangular lot about 15 by 30 meters, is thought to have belonged to regular urban residents. The second type of lot, up to three times as large as the first, has been identified as residences for elite class. The conspicuous consumption of luxury goods in Novgorod also suggests well-developed social differences among the town's population. The evidence for an elite presence is so striking that some scholars have suggested that Novgorod may have been founded as an elite settlement.

In the late tenth or early eleventh century, Novgorod appears to have taken over administrative functions for the Lake Ilmen area and perhaps for all of northern Russia. Novgorod probably also was the religious center of northern Russia, first for the pagan religion and then for Christianity. By about A.D. 1000 Rurik Gorodishche and Novgorod may have had complementary functions, together serving as the urban center of the Lake Ilmen region. Contemporary examples of similar paired settlements have been excavated in other areas of the eastern Baltic, including Hedeby and Schleswig in Jutland and Birka and Sigtuna in central Sweden. In these cases, as in Rurik Gorodishche and Novgorod, the earlier settlement was a craft and trade center particularly reliant on long-distance trade, flourishing from the eighth through the tenth centuries. The later settlement, beginning in the late tenth or early eleventh century, was an administrative and ecclesiastical center. In both Russia and Scandinavia the rise of these urban settlements appears to have been related to the greater sociopolitical and economic changes that played a part in early state development.

Kiev. Kiev is located on a promontory on the west bank of the Dnieper River, about 10 kilometers south of the confluence of the Dnieper and the Desna. From this position Kiev controlled the lower Dnieper. Archaeological evidence indicates that the character and extent of settlement on the Kiev promontory changed dramatically between the be-

ginning of the tenth century A.D. and the first half of the eleventh century. The settlement expanded tenfold, filling the hills of the promontory and stretching along the riverbanks of the Dnieper. Economic specialization increased as craft production, including bronze casting and iron production, flourished. Long-distance trade partners included the Muslim east, the Bulgar state, and the Byzantine Empire.

The town's dense population and specialized economy suggests that Kiev must have been dependent upon tribute or some other means of exacting agricultural and subsistence products from the surrounding countryside. According to the Russian Primary Chronicle, Prince Oleg established Kiev as preeminent over all Russian cities in A.D. 882 and gathered tribute from all the Russian lands. A fortified area was established on Starokievskia Hill c. A.D. 900, with large stone structures that may have been princely residences. By about A.D. 1000 this fortress probably served as an administrative center for the area, effectively unifying the scattered settlements in the Kiev area into one urban and tributary unit.

Burial and architectural evidence shows that Kiev was a multiethnic and socially stratified community. Slavic, Baltic, Finno-Ugric, Scandinavian, and Byzantine elements are present in the burial customs and building methods of Kiev during this period. After Kiev was established as the Russian capital, the population of Kiev appears to have become more ethnically homogeneous. This no doubt occurred through natural assimilation of the various groups living in Kiev as well as through the introduction of Christianity. In 988, the Russian Primary Chronicle reports, Prince Vladimir of Kiev introduced the Christian church to Russia. Social stratification, in contrast to ethnic diversity, increased through time.

Archaeological and historical sources indicate that the early Russian state had emerged by A.D. 1000, with centralized rulership at Kiev exercising political and economic control over an extensive area, from the shores of the Gulf of Finland and Lake Ladoga in the north down to the Black Sea in the south. Kievan Russia developed diplomatic and trade relations with its neighbors, including Scandinavia, Europe, the Islamic Caliphate, the Bulgar Khazarate, and the Byzantine Empire. The Russian state also had converted to Christianity, and the

lands and peoples under its control were beginning to evince social and cultural institutions considered to be characteristically “Russian.”

SUMMARY AND CONCLUSIONS

The development of the early Russian state took place between A.D. 750 and 1000. Several factors contributed to the formation of the state: the growth of early towns as trade and administrative centers, the elaboration of a specialized economy; and the development of social stratification. Between A.D. 750 and 900 the first towns arose in Russia, relying on and encouraging the development of an economy based on craft production and long-distance trade. Early Russian towns, such as Staraya Ladoga and Rurik Gorodishche, share many common features: an economy based on trade and craft production, a strategic location along developing trade routes, and a multiethnic population. As such, they were similar to other trade towns in Scandinavia and northern Europe. The eighth- and ninth-century trade towns created a basis for statehood in these regions, contributing to the expansion of a specialized economy, social stratification, and central administration.

Between A.D. 900 and 1000, a different kind of urban center became established in Russia, administrative and ecclesiastical centers that integrated the urban and rural economy. In Russia and Scandinavia the appearance of these administrative centers settlements resulted from and contributed to the sociopolitical and economic changes associated with the formation of a state. Novgorod served as one such political center, administering taxation and collecting tribute in northern Russia during the tenth century. Kiev in central Russia (now Ukraine) grew alongside Novgorod, eventually surpassing it and all other Russian cities in economic and political importance.

See also *Rus* (vol. 2, part 7); *Staraya Ladoga* (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Brisbane, Mark A., ed. *The Archaeology of Novgorod, Russia: Recent Results from the Town and Its Hinterland*. Translated by Katharine Judelson. Lincoln, U.K.: Society for Medieval Archaeology, 1992.
- Callmer, J. “The Archaeology of Kiev to the End of Its Earliest Urban Phase.” *Harvard Ukrainian Studies* 11, nos. 3, 4 (1987): 323–364.
- Clarke, Helen, and Björn Ambrosiani. “Towns in the Slavonic-Baltic Area.” In their *Towns in the Viking Age*, pp. 107–127. Rev. ed. Leicester, U.K.: Leicester University Press, 1995.
- Graham-Campbell, James, Colleen Batey, Helen Clarke et al., eds. “Russia and the East.” In their *Cultural Atlas of the Viking World*, pp. 184–198. New York: Facts on File, 1994.
- Jansson, Ingmar. “Communications between Scandinavia and Eastern Europe in the Viking Age: The Archaeological Evidence.” In *Untersuchungen zu Handel und Verkehr der vor- und frühgeschichtlichen Zeit in Mittel- und Nordeuropa*. Vol. 4, *Der Handel der Karolinger- und Wikingerzeit*. Göttingen, Germany: Vandenhoeck & Ruprecht, 1987. (Includes articles in English.)
- Ostman, Rae Ellen M. “Our Land Is Great and Rich, But There Is No Order in It: Reevaluating the Process of State Formation in Russia.” *Archaeological News* 21–22 (1996–1997): 73–91, 150–155.
- Rahbeck-Schmidt, K., ed. *Varangian Problems*. Scandoslavica Supplement 1. Copenhagen, Denmark: Munksgaard, 1970.
- Stalsberg, Anne. “Scandinavian Relations with Northern Russia during the Viking Age: The Archaeological Evidence.” *Journal of Baltic Studies* 13, no. 3 (1982): 267–295.
- Uino, Pirjo. “On the History of Staraja Ladoga.” *Acta Archaeologica* 59 (1988): 205–222.
- Vernadsky, George, ed. *A Sourcebook for Russian History from Early Times to 1917*. New Haven, Conn.: Yale University, 1972.
- Yanin, V.L. “Medieval Novgorod: Fifty Years’ Experience Digging Up the Past.” In *The Comparative History of Urban Origins in Non-Roman Europe: Ireland, Wales, Denmark, Germany, Poland and Russia from the Ninth to the Thirteenth Century*. Edited by H. B. Clarke and A. Simms. BAR International Series, no. 255. Oxford: British Archaeological Reports, 1985.

RAE OSTMAN

STARAYA LADOGA

Staraya Ladoga, in northwestern Russia, was one of the most important trade and craft production centers of the eastern Baltic during the early Middle Ages. Located at the eastern end of the Baltic, the town was a gateway between the Baltic Sea and Russian river routes to the Black Sea. Staraya Ladoga also is cited by some versions of Russia’s earliest historical document, the Russian Primary Chronicle, as the seat of Rurik, Russia’s first ruler.

SETTLEMENT

Early settlement at Staraya Ladoga has been thoroughly and systematically excavated, resulting in a detailed picture of life in an eastern Baltic trade town from A.D. 750 to 1200. A total of 3,600 square meters of medieval Staraya Ladoga have been excavated, of an estimated settlement area of 15 square kilometers. The waterlogged soil at the site has resulted in excellent preservation of finds, and dendrochronology has allowed the finds to be dated precisely.

As a result of the extensive excavation program, archaeologists can sketch a clear picture of the development and character of early Staraya Ladoga. The Earthworks Fortress quarter of the town was settled the earliest, beginning in about A.D. 760. This area probably was the most suitable place for a harbor. Settlement expanded into the Varangian Street quarter in about A.D. 842. Once established, these early settlement areas were occupied continuously throughout the Middle Ages. In the ninth and tenth centuries, the trade town began to appear more urban, with more clearly defined areas and functions. Staraya Ladoga was given wooden fortifications in the 860s and stone fortifications in 882. Dwellings and public buildings were concentrated within the town walls. Sacred places and cemeteries were located outside the walls. In the tenth century, a regular street grid was established. At this time the population of the town was slightly more than one thousand persons.

More than one hundred and fifty medieval houses have been excavated at Staraya Ladoga, dating from the eighth century through the eleventh century A.D. The medieval buildings are of two main kinds, a small and a large type. The small buildings are approximately 5 meters square and have a corner hearth. The large buildings measure approximately 13 by 10 meters and have a central hearth. Archaeologists have not found an explanation for the coexistence of the two building types. At one point scholars believed the larger buildings might have predated the smaller buildings, but this hypothesis has been rejected. Likewise, attempts to identify the building types with different ethnic groups living in Staraya Ladoga have been unsuccessful.

One well-preserved building in the Earthworks Fortress quarter is of exceptional size. Built in 894, it measured approximately 17 by 10 meters. A

hearth was located in a walled-off interior room measuring approximately 10.5 by 7.5 meters. More than two hundred glass beads and thirty pieces of amber were found associated with the building, suggesting that its occupants were involved in trade. Ibn Fadlan, an Arabic scholar, wrote in 921 or 922 that the Rus traders who sailed down the Volga River built large timber structures that could house ten to twelve people.

Burial mounds were erected along the Volkhov River, in locations where they would be visible from a distance. More than thirty burial mounds are still extant at Staraya Ladoga. It is thought that one of the largest mounds at Staraya Ladoga was built for Oleg (879–912), the ruler who united northern and southern Russia. The cemetery of Plakun is notable for the ten or so Scandinavian boat burials. Other cemeteries at Staraya Ladoga include Baltic, Finno-Ugric, and Slavic burials.

ECONOMY

From its earliest days, Staraya Ladoga's economy was based on trade and the production of trade goods. The town was an important node in the routes between the Baltic Sea and the river routes across Russia to the Far East. Staraya Ladoga controlled a substantial part of the route, from the Baltic to the lower reaches of the Volkhov River. From the lower Volkhov, traders would take either the Volga route to the Caspian Sea and the Islamic Caliphate or the Dnieper route to the Black Sea and the Byzantine Empire.

Silver and trade scales indicate that merchants exchanged goods in Staraya Ladoga. In addition to local trade goods, including crafts, timber, honey, and slaves, goods from other areas also traveled through Staraya Ladoga: furs from Viking Scandinavia, combs from Frisia, beads from the Mediterranean, swords from the Frankish kingdom, and amber from the Baltic. Traders exchanged these goods in the Far East for silver coins, carnelian and rock crystal beads, silk, and warrior-style clothing, ornaments, and accessories.

Local craft production at Staraya Ladoga is indicated by finds of raw materials, tools, various products found at different stages of completion, rejected (flawed) products, and manufacturing debris. Almost every house excavated in the town turned up evidence of such craft production. Glass beads



Fig. 1. Hoard of metalsmith's tools from Staraya Ladoga. THE STATE HERMITAGE MUSEUM, ST. PETERSBURG. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

may have been crafted in the glassworks found at Staraya Ladoga. A smithy dating to the 760s was equipped for bronze casting, with a smelting hearth, casting molds, and a collection of twenty-six metalworking tools (fig. 1). Amber was imported from the Baltic and worked at the site. Pottery was manufactured locally, first using hand-built construction and later the fast wheel. Bone and antler were fashioned into numerous objects, including knives and combs. Wooden objects were turned on lathes and carved manually. Textile tools (spindles, whorls, and flax-processing tools) were used to

create the finished cloth found in the town. Leather footwear also was produced in early medieval Staraya Ladoga.

Agriculture, stock raising, gathering, and hunting also occupied the early occupants of the town and its countryside. Agricultural tools, including plowshares, are preserved in the archaeological record. Botanical remains comprise cultivated cereals, such as millet, and locally gathered plants and berries. Animals were raised in cattle pens and sheds. Domesticates included cows, pigs, sheep,

goats, hens, horses, dogs, and cats. Hunting equipment and faunal remains of wild game indicate that beaver, fox, hare, moose, deer, wolf, lynx, seal, various birds, and numerous fish were hunted, some for food and some for their pelts.

SOCIETY AND CULTURE

Many ethnic groups lived in early medieval Staraya Ladoga, among them, Balts, Finns, Slavs, and Scandinavians. These groups are distinguished more easily in the early centuries of settlement. Over time, the material culture of Staraya Ladoga became more homogenized. Archaeological research on burials throughout the Lake Ladoga region suggests that ethnic integration existed inside and outside the

town. Although it is also known as Russia's first "capital," Staraya Ladoga is best characterized as a multi-ethnic trade town whose residents participated in the international Baltic Sea trade network.

See also **Rus** (vol. 2, part 7); **Russia/Ukraine** (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Clarke, Helen, and Björn Ambrosiani. "Towns in the Slavonic-Baltic Area." In their *Towns in the Viking Age*, pp. 107–127. Rev. ed. Leicester, U.K.: Leicester University Press, 1995.
- Uino, Pirjo. "On the History of Staraja Ladoga." *Acta Archaeologica* 59 (1988): 205–222.

RAE OSTMAN



HUNGARY

Hungary, the central third of the 300,000-kilometer Carpathian Basin, is divided by the Danube River. The western hilly region (100–600 meters above sea level) is called Transdanubia. The marshy grasslands of the Great Hungarian Plain occupy most of the eastern half. Located at a geopolitical fault line between central Europe and the Eurasian steppe, and marked by a major river as well as a topographic interface, the Carpathian Basin has been divided periodically since prehistory. The historic east-west difference may be detected even today.

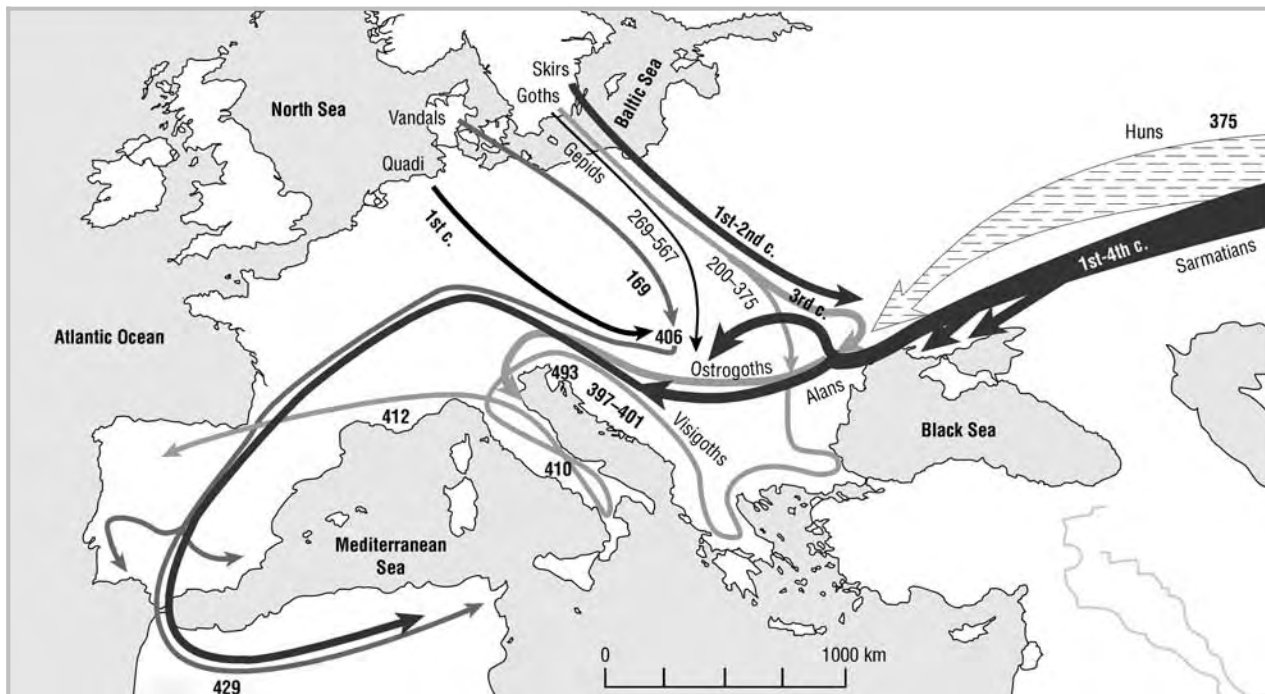
From the first century A.D., the paths of Germanic migrations from the north and of Asiatic peoples from the east crossed here in the Barbaricum and, later, over the ruins of the Roman province of Pannonia, leaving overlapping archaeological imprints that made the Migration period one of the least tangible archaeological ages in the region. These peoples are stereotypically described as mobile “nomads,” best known for their spectacular pieces of portable art. Germanic peoples for whom there is the best evidence in the Carpathian Basin between the first and mid-sixth centuries included Quadi, Vandals, Gepids, Skirs, Goths, and Langobards. Some arrived from the north, and others followed a detour through the eastern European steppe, from where Asiatic Sarmatians, Alans, and Huns also came. After the late sixth century, Avars, Bulgars, Hungarians, and Cumanians all moved in from Asia. By that time Slavic territory surrounded the Carpathian Basin. Details of this geopolitical picture developed in a subtle chronological se-

quence. Heterogeneous archaeological sources and emotionally charged historical stereotypes provide only a fuzzy picture of “barbarians,” often open to alternative interpretations.

SOURCES FOR THE MIGRATION PERIOD

Migrations left an archaeological record in Hungary that ranges from scarce settlement remains to spectacular hoards. Most field information, however, originates from burials. Most coeval documents chronicled historical events and the life of elites. Our image of barbarians is secondhand, influenced by the ethnocentrism of classical Greek, Roman, Byzantine, or Arabic authors. The word “barbarian” derives from the Greek *barbaros*, meaning “strange” or “foreign.”

Interpretations have varied as research has evolved. In conventional terms, the Migration period in Hungary lasted from A.D. 271, when Romans ceded the province of Dacia, to 895, the date of the Hungarian conquest. Archaeologically, however, its beginnings and consequences span well over a millennium. While the historical chronology of barbarian groups is relatively clear, landmark events in the written record do not necessarily mean sudden invasion or complete disappearance of peoples. Mobility depended on the motivations and composition of migrants. Because the length of time that groups stayed also varied, their material cultures are difficult to compare. It is the historical model, therefore, that usually is refined based on stylistic differences between archaeological artifacts.



Early Migration period population movements. The migration routes of northern and eastern Germanic tribes as well as Asiatic peoples crossed in the Carpathian Basin. DRAWN BY LÁSZLÓ BARTOSIEWICZ.

Fine-grained absolute chronologies would be fundamental in the archaeology of this hectic period. Poor wood preservation in Hungary limits the use of dendrochronology. Radiocarbon dating, on the other hand, is somewhat inaccurate for later periods. “Typochronology,” that is, the interpretation of culture change and ethnic relations using the relative chronology of artifact styles, thus has become the ruling paradigm in Migration period research. Weaknesses in this method are inherent to the finds: various groups are represented by different types of assemblages ill suited to direct comparison. Settlement remains tend to be few and far between, and the comprehensive analysis of cemeteries sometimes is difficult in the absence of proper physical anthropological information. Moreover, high-status grave goods may have remained in use for generations and were circulated over long distances. Antiquarians dug up spectacular hoards during the late eighteenth and nineteenth centuries, before the importance of stratigraphic information was recognized. No researcher can afford to ignore these unique assemblages, but interpretations often are difficult to fit into a systematic picture.

ROMAN PERIOD BARBARICUM

Even before the first-century establishment of the Roman province of Pannonia, inhabited at the time by “native” Celtic tribes, Transdanubia was linked closely to central Europe. The Danube served as a natural boundary for the Roman Empire. During the second and third centuries, the Barbaricum in the Great Hungarian Plain and areas to its north were wedged between Pannonia and the mountainous Roman province of Dacia. Having defeated the Scythians in southern Russia, Sarmatian tribes reached the Barbaricum during the first century as mercenaries for the Quadi, the first northern Germanic group to set foot in the Carpathian Basin. The Sarmatian light cavalry, covered head to toe by fish-scale-like armor, is depicted on Trajan’s Column from A.D. 110–113.

Owing to their large population and prolonged presence, Sarmatians are well known from settlement excavations, beyond burials or documented movements. Rural settlements in the Barbaricum show that within a few generations they became sedentary and adopted local technical skills. Thereafter, traditional artifacts from the east indicate an-

other Sarmatian wave. At the turn of the second century, after the Roman occupation of Dacia, Sarmatians spread across the Great Hungarian Plain. Ubiquitous Sarmatian pits dot an entire archaeological time horizon there.

Meanwhile, the Quadi moved south from their first-century territory and remained allied with Sarmatians facing the Romans across the Danube. Hectic relations between Romans and barbarians culminated in two decades of Marcomannic/Sarmatian wars, starting in the A.D. 170s. Finally, the Romans pacified the barbarians and created the province of Sarmatia. Finds show that trade contacts intensified: Roman goods of all sorts, including stamped pottery and a variety of jewelry, commonly occur at Sarmatian sites in the central Great Hungarian Plain. Large, barrel-shaped chalcedony beads may be found in Sarmatian women's graves, and enameled brooches show Celtic influence. Sarmatian pastoralists possibly bartered livestock and foodstuffs for such luxury goods. Weapons as well as settlement features reflect the advanced Sarmatian ironworking.

Vandals were the next northern Germanic group to come after the Marcomannic wars. They occupied northeastern Hungary and raided Roman provinces in the third to fourth centuries. Allied with Iranian-speaking Alans, they moved on to devastate Gaul (406–409), Iberia (409), North Africa (429), and Rome itself (455). Archaeologically, this group is known from burials in the Carpathian Basin. Celtic and Roman decorative art influenced the northern stylistic tradition of their grave goods. Artifacts from “royal” graves of the third to fourth centuries in Ostrovany (Slovakia), found in 1790 and 1865, respectively, have been linked with this group.

The consolidation of China during the third century, along with the hypothesized deterioration of steppe environments, drove Asiatic Huns westward. They crossed the Volga River during the early 370s, forcing eastern Germanic peoples (Goths and Skirs from Scandinavia, who had reached the steppe across the Baltic during the first century A.D.) into the Carpathian Basin. During their westward movement, the Goths, the strongest and most adventurous of the Germans, raided many parts of the Roman Empire throughout the third to fifth centuries. Their eastern confederacy, Ostrogoths, spent

twenty years in Pannonia before forming a kingdom in Italy (493). Western Visigoths were driven into the Balkans in the late fourth century, from where they sacked Rome in 410 and established a kingdom in present-day Spain and southern France.

Skirs surfaced for only a short time in the Carpathian Basin, in alliance with the Huns. The burials of two high-ranking ladies and another woman found in Bakodpuszta were associated with this eastern Germanic tribe. Gold and silver jewelry from these graves postdates Hun rule in the area. (Skirs rose to historical fame when their king Odoaker delivered a coup de grâce to the western Roman Empire by occupying Rome in 476.)

Sarmatians fought bitterly with Germans along their eastern borders during the fourth century and even built a 1260-kilometer-long system of ditches and earthworks, possibly with Roman help, along the northeastern edge of the Great Hungarian Plain. In Pannonia stylistic evidence from potsherds suggests that starting in the 370s, Romans enlisted Hun, Alan, and Germanic *foederati* (mercenaries who retained their tribal organization but acknowledged Roman supremacy) in the defense of the ailing province.

EARLY MIGRATION PERIOD

In 271, the year the Romans ceded Dacia to the Goths, Gepids occupied the upper reaches of the Tisza River. Following the uneasy coexistence of German tribes and Asiatic Sarmatians, as well as Alans neighboring the Roman Empire in the Carpathian Basin, a new Hun invasion reached Hungary in the first third of the fifth century. Renewed incursions by Ostrogoths, Visigoths, Vandals, and Alans (to name but a few) into the Carpathian Basin and the Roman Empire itself were, in part, a consequence of Hunnic expansion. Between 400 and 402 Huns invaded southern Poland, forcing out Germanic tribes and thereby opening up space for subsequent Slavic settlement. During the 410s, their power center moved into the Great Hungarian Plain through the Lower Danube region. Negotiations with the Romans also provided Hun *foederati* access to Pannonia. By this time, haphazardly rebuilt fortifications and intramural burials bear witness to the disintegration of Roman power along the Pannonian *limes*.

Huns organized a tribal confederation in the Carpathian Basin, uniting peoples on the basis of Roman *foederati* rights, filling a geopolitical vacuum between the competing western and eastern Roman Empires. Between 441 and 452 Huns conducted military campaigns in both directions, short of invading Rome itself. After the death of their king, Attila (in 453), however, allies rose and defeated the Huns under the leadership of the Gepids in 454, ending Hun rule in the Carpathian Basin.

The Hun empire that existed for only a single generation yielded numerous artifacts, many of which are commonly associated with oriental, war-like equestrian peoples but came to light as stray finds. Grave goods include metal fittings from high saddles as well as ears of powerful reflex bows (the extreme ends serving for chord attachment, made from antler or bone), double-edged swords, and long combat knives. Gold decoration on these and numerous utilitarian objects, as well as precious metal jewelry acquired as war booty or by punitive taxing, reflect the heyday of the Hun empire. Identifying “Hun” artifacts is difficult because this empire united numerous ethnic groups whose material cultures were similar at the outset. Artifacts were mixed further by diffusion and exchange. After the collapse of the Hun empire, many former vassals formed small “kingdoms.” Huns fled toward the Pontic region, from where Ostrogoths came into the Carpathian Basin following a treaty with Byzantium. Archaeologically, this development is shown by jewelry displaying the classic stylistic features of Pontic metal workshops. One technique employed violet-red almandine or garnet in combination with enamel inlay. The Ostrogoths first moved eastward from southern Pannonia in 473 and then left for Italy in 489.

Eastern Germanic Gepids left Scandinavia and regrouped with the Goths in the area of present-day Poland during the Roman period. Pliny, who first mentioned the Goths, placed them in northern Germany. The historian Jordanes in his *Origin and Deeds of the Goths*, however, named their homeland as Scandinavia. Linguistic evidence may support this, although the Scandinavian origin of the Goths is still impossible to prove. Archaeological evidence points to the Goths having slowly migrated from the Oder-Vistula region to the Ukraine and Scythia.

In the Carpathian Basin they established rural settlements north of Dacia in 269.

Gepids contributed a major contingent to the Hun army during the mid-fifth century, led the usurpation of power that followed Attila’s death, and expanded toward the south and east: Sirmium (Mitrovica, Serbia), a Roman imperial town, became the Gepid capital. Important finds of Gepid aristocracy in Transylvania include the royal graves of Apahida and the Szilágysomlyó (Șimleul Silvaniei, Romania) hoards, discovered in 1797 and 1889, respectively, and consisting of Roman memorial gold medallions as well as gold and gilded silver brooches. Gepid cemeteries from the late fifth and sixth centuries contain hundreds of graves. Because many have been robbed, however, they are of limited help in reconstructing socioeconomic differences. High-ranking warriors were buried with long and short swords as well as lances and shields. Commoners were interred with silver and bronze brooches and other clothing accessories. Eagle-headed buckles seem to have been a favorite fashion item. It is possible that Christianity also reached this population through Gothic missionaries during the fourth century. This hypothesis is supported by crucifix motifs in their decorative art. Certain settlement excavations have revealed Gepid houses and adjoining sheds and workshops, containing artifacts related to both household and craft activities. Wheel-thrown, evenly fired, fine Gepid pottery with stamped decoration represents the Celtic-Sarmatian tradition.

After a second-century incursion, the Langobards entered the Carpathian Basin from the north in about 510 and took over urbanized northern Pannonia from other Germanic peoples in 526. At the beginning, they coexisted peacefully with Gepids, who at that time controlled the Great Hungarian Plain and Transylvania. In 535, however, Langobards forged an alliance with Byzantium that allowed them access to southern Pannonia, where they faced Gepids expanding westward. Decades of military skirmishes followed. After 565 Byzantine contacts with the Gepids improved, so that Langobards turned for help to the central Asian Avars, who had just started exploring the possibilities of westward expansion into the Carpathian Basin. From 562 onward, the supreme leader (*khagan*) of the Avars was Bayan Khan, comparable to Attila the

Hun in political stature. The Langobard-Avar alliance defeated the Gepids in 567. Part of the agreement seems to have been that Langobards had to leave Pannonia for Italy the following year.

Langobards were the last Germanic group to rule in the Carpathian Basin. Their material culture in Pannonia is known exclusively from burials. Given the history of Langobard occupation in Transdanubia, the ethnic composition of these cemeteries is complex. Men's burials contained large, double-edged swords, lances, and shields. Women were accompanied by gilded silver jewelry, including brooches decorated with northern as well as eastern stylistic elements.

THE LATE MIGRATION PERIOD

The appearance of Avars in the Carpathian Basin in the last third of the sixth century heralded a new era of centralized rule that united the Carpathian Basin for almost a quarter of a millennium. This is not to say, however, that Avars were an ethnically homogeneous population. The core groups of inner and central Asian extraction were first allied with Byzantium, whose protection they sought against Turkic groups that had forced them westward. As Langobards left for Italy in 568, the consolidation of Avar power began. Large cemeteries from the early Avar period in Transdanubia (Budakalász, Kölked A-B, Környe, and Zamárdi) suggest that the center of the emerging empire was in Pannonia. Aside from Avar finds, such as belt sets, globular earrings, and bead necklaces, grave goods reflect Germanic contacts.

The first sixty years of the Avar empire saw conflicts with Byzantium over Dalmatia and Thrace. Avars occupied the former Gepid capital of Sirmium in 582 and Singidunum (present-day Belgrade) in 584. Avars encouraged the settlement of northern Slavic allies around their empire, to buffer outside attacks. Merovingian contacts are evident from the early seventh century, with other Germanic connections. Amid confrontations and peace treaties, Avars extorted money and gold from Byzantium, whose military priority was securing its eastern border against the Persians. Although some gold *solidus* coins found in Hungary were trimmed around the edges, an estimated 20 metric tons of Byzantine gold may have reached the Avar empire. In 626 Avar troops laid siege to Constantinople (modern-day Istanbul) in alliance with the Persian navy, al-

though the two forces failed to unite. At that point, the Byzantine emperor Heraclius had had his fill of Avar intimidation and crushed the land offensive. Thereafter, as far as Byzantium was concerned, Avars ceased to exist as a political entity. Trying to compensate for lost revenue, Avars plundered Forum Iulii (Cividale, Lombardy) in 628, straining relations with their western, Germanic allies. Thereafter, they were confined to the Carpathian Basin. Their Slavic and Bulgar vassals also rebelled, weakening the empire from the inside.

Finds from both intact and looted high-status burials in the Great Hungarian Plain (Bócsa, Tépe, Kunágota, and Kunbáony) show that the Avar power center shifted from the right bank of the Danube toward the east during the first half of the seventh century. While the exact social status of the deceased is difficult to establish, there is little doubt that these burials represent the top of the Avar social hierarchy (fig. 1). All graves stood alone, with no permanent markers, such as burial mounds or tombstones. Accompanying burials of complete warhorses was not merely a privilege accorded to leaders; horse skeletons also occur in common warriors' graves. Thanks to the prolonged presence of Avars in the Carpathian Basin, in addition to fifty thousand known burials, there have been discoveries of several of their rural settlements, such as the 150 semi-subterranean houses identified at Kölked.

Early Avar weaponry, horse harness elements, and utilitarian objects tend to reflect oriental traditions, whereas jewelry and other high-status items in treasures (golden bowls and jugs and glassware, for example) represent a variety of artistic elements dominated by late antique and especially Byzantine influences. In comparison with early Avar cemeteries in Transdanubia, however, grave goods in large cemeteries of the Great Hungarian Plain (e.g., Tiszafüred–Majoros) show the declining impact of Mediterranean material culture. This duality in artifact styles confirms written accounts of early Avar history in the Carpathian Basin.

By the late seventh century the initial absence of jewelry and gold objects in graves may be explained by severed Byzantine contacts. In addition to a shift in the orientation of burials, grave goods also changed. These phenomena coincided with the reappearance of Byzantine stylistic features in the grave furniture. Such burials seem to mark the arriv-

al of the Onogur-Bulgarians, a group of Turkic pastoral peoples. They had inhabited the northern Pontic region after 463, until the Khazars destroyed their empire around 670. Some fled to the Lower Danube region, and others reached the Avar empire but maintained intensive contacts with Byzantium.

Large Avar cemeteries from this time, together with evidence for sedentism in settlement materials, suggest that ethnic changes took place peacefully, presumably with the consent of the *khagan*. Historical sources reveal no major military events in the increasingly isolated Avar empire until the end of the eighth century. Burials suggest that equestrian lifestyles were maintained only by the ruling elites, and agriculture seems to have become a dominant occupation among commoners of mixed ethnicity. The integrity of burial rites appears to have declined, and some grave assemblages display signs of impoverishment. A marked change in grave goods is that the pressed metal fittings in men's belt sets were replaced by molded, usually bronze equivalents. Their acanthus motifs gave way to the so-called "griffin and meander" motif. This style was developed to perfection within the Carpathian Basin from evidently Eurasian/Byzantine roots. Floral elements replaced the initial animal fight motifs toward the late eighth century.

Gold objects in the so-called Nagyszentmiklós hoard (Sinnicolaur Mare, Romania), discovered in 1799, display an unusual richness of stylistic elements, dating from the seventh to eighth centuries on a typological basis. Interpretations of this twenty-three-piece "table set" have varied considerably. Researchers largely have accepted that its details reveal the complexity of Avar period mythology, religion, and possibly writing. Its details reflect Byzantine and Sassanian influences, illustrating the rich universe of what is considered late Avar culture today.

After the conquest of Lombardy (774) and the military campaign on Saxony (772–785) by the Frankish king Charlemagne, Frankish expansion from the west first hit the Avar empire in 788. Military campaigns in 791 and 795, together with vicious infighting, weakened the Avars to such an extent that an additional military thrust by Bulgar forces from the south in 804 destroyed their empire. Following these defeats, Charlemagne assigned the territory "Avaria" in 805, between Savaria (Szom-



Fig. 1. Avar Period "fake" golden buckle from a robbed grave in Tèpe, Hungary, mid-seventh century. High-status grave goods have been instrumental in the attempted reconstruction of Avar history. PHOTOGRAPH BY ANDRÁS DABASI. HUNGARIAN NATIONAL MUSEUM. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

bathely) and Carnuntum (Deutsch-Altenburg). Of the Avar *khagans* Theodor was baptized in 803 and Abraham in 805. The Carpathian Basin again became divided: Bulgars took over the eastern section and raided southeastern Pannonia (826–829), dispersing the remaining Avar population. The rest of Pannonia fell into the Carolingian sphere of interest. Avar peoples in western Hungary are last mentioned in 871, as the taxpayers of the Frankish king.

During the 840s the Franks settled the Slavic chieftain Pribina in Mosaburg (Zalavár) in Pannonia. Although his position as head of a "Slavic state" there needs to be confirmed, he undoubtedly ruled an area whose Slavic population had increased in the wake of the Avar period. Pribina and his heir, Kocel, along with Bavarian settlers, may have represented Carolingian rule in the area. Archaeological finds display both Moravian and Carolingian stylistic in-

fluences. It appears that Pannonia was largely under Frankish rule between the fall of the Avar empire and the Hungarian conquest.

THE HUNGARIAN CONQUEST

In written sources Hungarians figure as yet another pastoral group from the steppe, often mistaken for Scythians, Turks, or Onugrians. The Magyars did not use the latter name, applied to both Bulgarians and Magyars (i.e., Hungarians), in reference to themselves. During the mid-sixth century eastern Turkic peoples triggered another wave of migrations that brought new peoples to the border between central Asia and Europe. Groups inhabiting the parkland steppe to the north, including the Finno-Ugric-speaking Magyars, also left their homelands for the steppe, which was economically more developed than the Ural region. There are similarities between burials of the sixth to eighth centuries in the Volga and Ural River interfluvium and the tenth-century Magyar graves in Hungary. Subsequently, Magyars moved west of the Khazar Khanate north of the Caucasus, where they developed ties with Onogur-Bulgars. Around 850 the Magyars moved farther west, into the Etelköz section of the Dnieper River, seeking independence from the Khazar Khanate. It was there that artifact styles known from burials and settlements of the conquering Magyars in the Carpathian Basin seem to have consolidated.

In 862 Magyars scouted the Carpathian Basin, attacking the eastern Frankish empire. In 881 they returned to join the Moravians against the Franks and then led incursions into Transdanubia (894). Finally, with Turkic Bulgars and Pechenegs on their heels, the entire Magyar tribal alliance, led by the grand duke Árpád, crossed the Carpathians into the Great Hungarian Plain in 895. The occupation of Pannonia in 900 reunited the Carpathian Basin. The first equestrian burial from the Magyar conquest period was found at Ladánybene–Benepusztá in 1834. The next such burial was discovered at Vereb in 1853, and others soon followed. At the time, however, tenth-century cemeteries of commoners were thought to represent slaves or local Slavs.

Magyar material culture cannot be regarded as a straight continuation of the Avar heritage, although the skull and feet of horses sometimes were

included in the graves, possibly as part of the hide. Goldsmithing is well represented by gilded purse covers (e.g., Tiszabezde), some of which may have been made in Etelköz. The style, however, flourished in Hungary. A floral pattern, the so-called palmetta motif, became widespread during the conquest period. Burials also contain objects reflecting ancient beliefs. Bone stick handles carved in the shape of owls' heads were found at Hajdúdorog and Szeghalom.

The mass of precious metal acquired through vicious military campaigns, starting with Italy in 899, gave goldsmithing impetus. The next three fourths of the tenth century became known as the “period of raids.” Magyar horsemen destroyed Great Moravia (902) and then turned on the rest of Europe, especially the German provinces, reaching Burgundy in 913 and Bremen in 915. In 924 Magyars simultaneously plundered Italy in the south and Saxony in the north and reached the Atlantic coast as well. It was only the desert that halted their westernmost raid toward the Caliphate of Córdoba (942), and they repeatedly threatened Byzantium (934, 943, 958, 963, and 970) in the east. Military success was related to the mobility of their cavalry compared with the ponderous armies they faced. Aside from brutality, logistical support for such far-reaching campaigns would have been impossible without shrewd diplomacy: not even the most formidable cavalry could have covered such distances crossing purely enemy territory. Raids contributed to the wealth of chieftains and their military entourage. Precious metal artifacts of foreign origin, however, hardly ever occur in Magyar graves. One possibility is that they were melted down.

A devastating defeat by Germans near Augsburg ended westward aggression in 955. Magyars attacked Byzantium until their ultimate conquest in 972. By that time a network of agricultural settlements had developed in Hungary, as the elite warriors of the old order began losing prestige and economic power. These hardships started transforming a mobile Asiatic horde into an established European kingdom.

Hungary was caught between east and west even in peacetime. After 940, a group of Magyar leaders led by Bultsu was baptized in Constantinople. Constantine Porphyrogenitus (Constantine VII, 913–959) stood as godfather. The Byzantine

influence among the Magyars was concentrated east of the Tisza River.

In 974, however, the grand duke Géza turned to the Holy Roman Empire and converted to western Christianity, thereby steering the development of his people into the European Middle Ages. After his death, his son István I was crowned in 1000 as the first Christian king of Hungary. The adoption of western Christianity changed material culture. The colorful eastern style disappeared, and ancient beliefs were suppressed. In return for pacification and ideological changes, Magyars survived as a political entity in the Carpathian Basin.

Hungary, however, still faced barbarian threats on the fringes of Europe for centuries. Incursions by Pechenegs and other, smaller groups continued, and “pagan” Magyars also rebelled from within against the new order. Consolidation took several generations. During the 1222–1223 campaign of the Mongol leader Genghis Khan, Turkic-speaking Cumanians moved west from the Pontic steppe, adopted Christianity in 1227, and became Hungarian subjects. Mongols attacked again in 1238, and the rest of the Cumanians fled westward from the Donic-Dnieper interfluvium. In 1239 they crossed the Carpathians. According to the 1243–1244 *Carmen miserabile* by the Italian chronicler Rogerius (later archbishop of Split, Croatia), “because of their great multitude, and because their people were hard and crude and knew no subordination . . . [King Béla IV of Hungary] nominated one of his own leaders to guide them into the center of his country.” Cumanians were granted freedom but had to submit to the king and convert to Christianity.

When Mongols reached Hungary in 1241, Magyars thought they spotted Cumanians among the attackers and killed the khan of the new settlers. Cumanians fled southeast, raping and pillaging on their way. Around 1246 the king invited Cumanians back into Hungary. A 1279 decree defined a contiguous Cumanian homeland in the central portion of the Great Hungarian Plain. It prescribed that Cumanians take up a “Christian, sedentary” way of life.

Cumanian cavalry, however, remained instrumental in the royal army until the mid-fourteenth century. Assimilation was accomplished only by the sixteenth century, when permanent settlements became common and Cumanians erected their own churches.

See also Animal Husbandry; Goths between the Baltic and Black Seas; Huns; Langobards; Ostrogoths; Scythians; Visigoths (all vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Bóna, István. “Die AWARENFELDZÜGE UND DER UNTERGANG DER BYZANTINISCHEN PROVINZEN UND DER UNTEREN DONAU.” In *Kontakte zwischen Iran, Byzanz und der Steppe in 6.–7. Jh.* Edited by Csanád Bálint, pp. 163–183. Budapest, Hungary: Varia Archaeologica Hungariae, 2000.
- . “The Hungarians and Europe in the Tenth Century.” In *A Cultural History of Hungary: From the Beginning to the Eighteenth Century*. Edited by L. Kósa, pp. 42–59. Budapest, Hungary: Corvina-Osiris Press, 1999.
- . *The Dawn of the Dark Ages: The Gepids and the Lombards in the Carpathian Basin*. Budapest, Hungary: Corvina Press, Hereditas Series, 1976.
- Bóna, István, and Margit Nagy. *Gepidische Gräberfelder am Theissgebiet I*. Budapest, Hungary: Magyar Nemzeti Múzeum, 2002.
- Christie, Neil. *The Lombards*. Oxford: Blackwell Press, 1995.
- Daim, Falko, ed. *Reitervölker aus dem Osten: Hunnen + Awaren*. Schloss Halbturn, Austria: Burgenländische Landesausstellung, 1996.
- Kovács, Tibor, and Éva Garam, eds. *A Magyar Nemzeti Múzeum régészeti kiállításának vezetője (Kr. e. 400,000–Kr. u. 804)* [Guide to the archaeological exhibit of the Hungarian National Museum]. Budapest, Hungary: Magyar Nemzeti Múzeum, 2002.
- Laszlovszky, József, ed. *Tender Meat under the Saddle: Customs of Eating, Drinking, and Hospitality among Conquering Hungarians and Nomadic Peoples*. Krems, Austria: Medium Aevum Quotidianum, 1998.
- Lengyel, Alfonz, and G. T. B. Radan, eds. *The Archaeology of Roman Pannonia*. Budapest, Hungary, and Lexington: University Press of Kentucky/Akadémiai Kiadó, 1980.
- Pálóczi Horváth, András. *Pechenegs, Cumans, Iasians: Steppe Peoples in Medieval Hungary*. Budapest, Hungary: Corvina Press, Hereditas Series, 1989.

LÁSZLÓ BARTOSIEWICZ



CZECH LANDS/SLOVAKIA

The Slavs may have entered the historical scene late, but they did so in an impressive way. Sometime in the fifth century A.D., the expansion of the nomadic Huns in central Asia led to massive ethnic migrations. The Slavs, too, began to move away from their original domiciles in the east of Europe, soon becoming acquainted with the advanced cultural world of the eastern Roman Empire. From A.D. 531 onward, Slavic warriors plundered the territory of the Balkans, leaving terror in their wake. The Slavic expansion to central Europe took a quieter course. There the colonists met only remnants of the original Germanic population in an almost depopulated landscape. At about the beginning of the sixth century, the first wave of immigration arrived in the territories of Bohemia and Moravia. The chronicler Kosmas, who lived and worked during the late eleventh century and early twelfth century, describes the time of the arrival of the Slavs (who were led by their mythical ancestor Čech, or “Czech”) and their settlement as idyllic and their life as quiet and peaceful. The results of archaeological excavations suggest that this was the case.

The first Slavic settlements followed the fertile basins of major rivers, and their appearance is remarkably uniform: a group of several countersunk dwellings in plots 3.65 by 3.65 meters in size, all equipped with oven and bed plus storage pits for grain. Traces of internal social differentiation are unclear. Unfortified settlements are laid out in a more or less regular pattern at a distance of about 1.6 kilometers from one another, which gave the individual communities space for fields and pastures.

Only occasionally, a grouping of some ten houses appears at a strategic and important site.

THE EMPIRE OF SAMO

The peaceful times did not last long. Apart from the influences of states west and south of Czech territory, social changes in the Slavic world stemmed from a new wave of attacks, this time by the Avars from the steppes of Asia. In A.D. 558 a new series of conflicts with the Roman Empire began. The Germanic Langobards started to leave Pannonia, and the territory was occupied by the Avar ruler. Thus the Czech Slavs gained an unwelcome neighbor in the southeast. The pressure from the incursions of these nomadic horsemen brought about a new wave of Slavic colonists, who arrived in Bohemia and Moravia at the end of the sixth century.

The degree of the Slavs’ dependence on the Avars varied. Some Slavic troops even fought in the Avar armies, but at the beginning of the seventh century relations became strained. Led by the merchant Samo, perhaps an emissary of the western Roman Empire, the Slavs rose up and prevailed against the Avars. In A.D. 623 Samo was elected king of a newly established “state,” which included modern-day Bohemia and Moravia plus parts of Slovakia and Carinthia (now a part of Austria). Samo’s domain probably had its center in the lowlands of southern Moravia.

The independence of this new empire soon became a thorn in the side of its neighbor in the west, the Merovingian western Roman Empire. In A.D. 631 King Dagobert of that empire sent expedition-

ary troops of Langobards, Alemanni, and Austrians, with the aim of forcing Samo to submit fully to Merovingian domination. Despite the limited victories by the first two military corps, the expedition was not ultimately successful: the third and main corps of forces was stopped on the border of Samo's empire, at the castle Wogastiburg. The location of the castle is the subject of controversy, but it probably was situated in northwestern Bohemia. Still this is the first time that literary documents mention the existence of fortified seats (that is, castles) in the Slavic world of central Europe.

Samo's empire did not survive its ruler, however, and for the following two centuries accounts of Slavs in Bohemia and Moravia are vague. The reason is clear: after A.D. 680 the newly arrived nomadic Bulgars were wedged between the Byzantine Empire and the Avar territory in the southeast. They cut off the Avars from their rich sources of booty and thus indirectly forced these nomads in the lowlands of Pannonia to adapt to a settled life. Meanwhile the neighboring territories to the west were beset by internal fighting among the Merovingians. Eventually their majordomos emerged as the winners, and Charlemagne began a new era as emperor of the western Roman Empire. Charlemagne did not neglect his eastern neighbors in his policy of expansion. Having defeated the Saxons and the settled Avars, his armies once again set out to the Czech territory in three parts, only to fail again in A.D. 805 at a castle known as Canburg somewhere in the northern half of Bohemia. This time, though, the success of the Slavs did not persist. The Frankish army resorted to the usual strategy of destroying crops, and the following year another expedition forced the Czech Slavs formally to acknowledge their dependence on Charlemagne's empire and to pay taxes.

Still the Dark Ages (the seventh and eighth centuries), from which there are no written accounts, represent a period of lively social changes in the Slavic world. The Canburg castle was just one of numerous castles built—as archaeologists' findings have proved—with growing intensity in these two centuries. The system of forts, which for the most part were situated at the ingresses into and at the peripheries of populated areas, is itself a sign of the social changes taking place that were necessary for the building of such large fortification systems. This

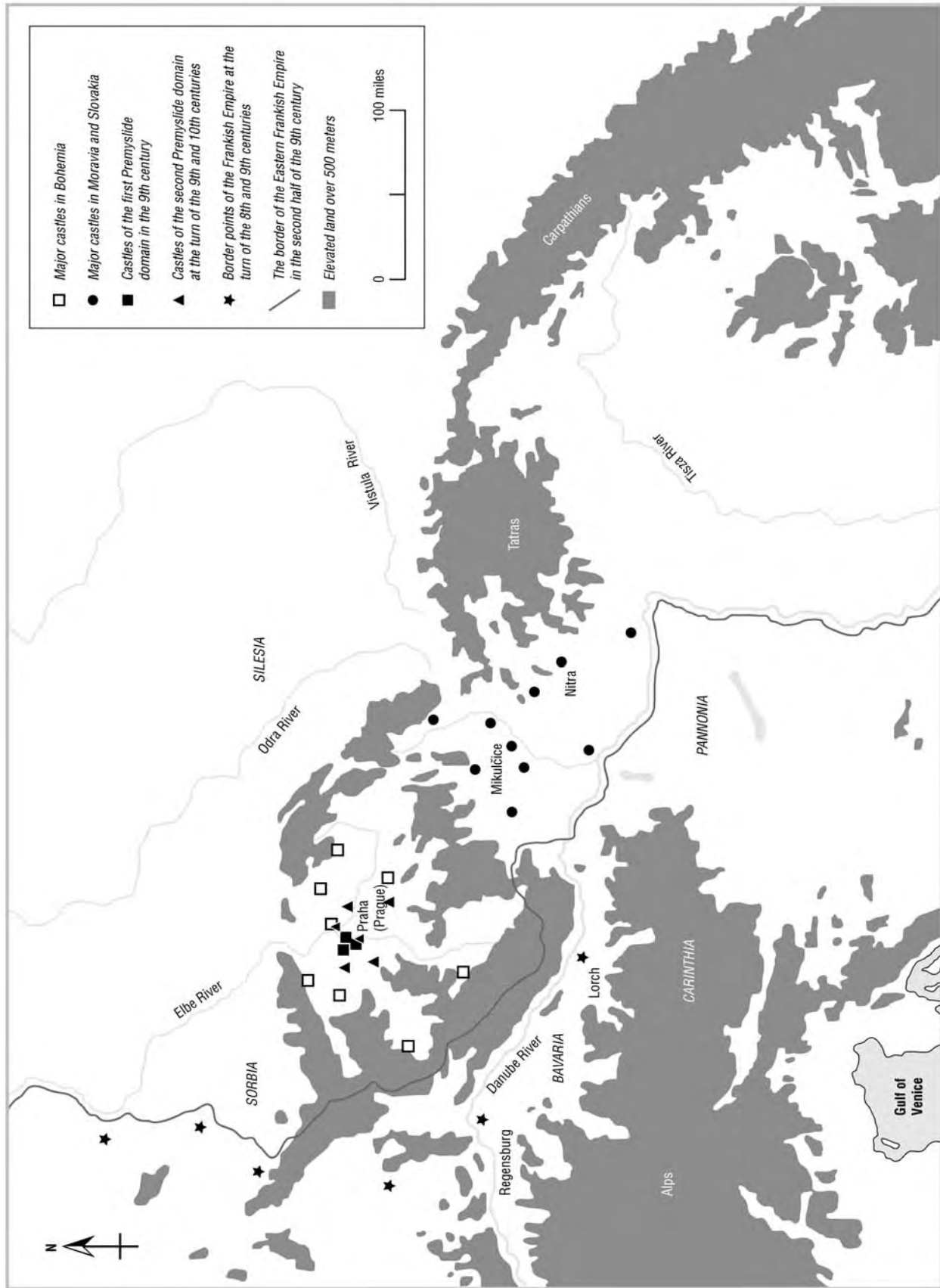
building work was probably organized by the emerging local military nobility, as is evident in the finds of both western spurs and eastern jewels and ornaments from the Avar culture. This cultural synthesis gave rise to the first more or less stable state.

GREAT MORAVIA

In A.D. 791 Charlemagne instigated wars with the Pannonian Avars that went on for decades, and it was—among other things—quarrels inside the Avar kingdom that contributed to the definitive victory of the Frankish empire. Charlemagne probably had no idea that in this way he was untying the hands of the Avars' Slavic neighbors in Moravia and western Slovakia. It is no accident that the last appearance of the Avars on the political stage in A.D. 822 is at the same time as the first appearance of the Slavs known as Moravians. That year the Moravians appeared with the Slavs dependent on the empire before the Bavarian king Ludwig the German.

The Moravians, however, had their own idea of dependence on the Frankish empire. Relatively soon they used both the fall of the Avar kingdom and the internal crisis in the Frankish empire to strengthen their hegemony. Mojmir I, the first of the princes (dukes) of the emerging dynasty, appeared in the A.D. 830s; at about the same time, Western Christianity was accepted in Moravia. Apart from the assumption of certain ideological and spiritual values, the acceptance of Christianity in early medieval central Europe meant both juridical protection (though not completely reliable) from the eagerness of the Frankish empire to convert pagans to Christianity and a new sociopolitical system that would strengthen the increasing stratification in Moravian society. But the new state would soon be tested. In A.D. 843 the Frankish empire fell apart, and three years later Ludwig the German, by then ruler of the newly established eastern Frankish empire, attacked Moravia, dethroned Mojmir, and replaced him with Prince Rostislav.

Rostislav's vassalage was fabricated, however. This clever politician formed a coalition with neighboring Slavs and persistently strengthened his position in Moravia. At his behest, a mission of Eastern Christianity came to Moravia from the Byzantine Empire in A.D. 863. This mission did not bring the longed-for independent bishopric to Moravia right away, but it did bring a newly created script based



The Czech lands from the arrival of the Slavs to the beginnings of the Czech Premyslide state. DRAWN BY PETR MEDUNA.

on the phonetic transcription of the “universal” Slavic language. In his attempt to gain control over Moravia in the years A.D. 864–874, Ludwig the German made another wrong choice when installing a new ruler. This ruler, Svatopluk, a nephew of Rostislav, managed to occupy and defend Moravian territory with his own forces, and he proved to be a provident politician when he acknowledged his dependence on the eastern Frankish empire, thus showing his loyalty. This ensured him peace, and he could begin to develop further the state concept of his predecessor: formal annexation of neighboring territories, which ensured him revenues to run the state apparatus and allowed him to keep a large professional military retinue.

The social hierarchy in Moravia was a complicated system. At the top of the social pyramid was the ruler, the “chief of chiefs.” At the lower levels were magnates and princes from the original tribal nobility and the nongoverning members of the Mojmir dynasty on the one hand and the clergy on the other. Then there was a special group: the military retinue, that is, the state army. The lowest stratum among the free consisted of the rural population. The base of this imaginary pyramid (but not the economic basis) was formed by the unfree domestics, or slaves—that is, those who were not sold to the Mediterranean as a frequent and welcome source of income.

The image of Great Moravia’s fame has been made more complete thanks to archaeological excavations in the centers. At the top of an imaginary hierarchy one can put Mikulčice, probably Rostislav’s seat of power, referred to by contemporaries as “an unspeakable fort, unlike all ancient forts.” Originally an old castle, Mikulčice had almost become a town. Walls several kilometers long of complex tree-and-earth construction and the branches of the Morava River surrounded residences where the highest echelon of the Great Moravian nobility was concentrated. From the windows of his one-story palace, the ruler could enjoy a view of the magnates’ estates, filled with light shining off the white walls of churches and reflecting from their varied architecture. The undisturbed peace of this view was enhanced further by the independent housing of the military retinue—uniform barracks-like log cabins, the homes of his well-fed and well-armed mounted warriors situated within sight of the ruler’s palace.

Only the smoke from the numerous artisans’ workshops might have disturbed the view of the Moravian plains.

The artisans produced a whole range of material goods, instruments, tools, and weapons. The repeated Frankish bans on weapons export to the Slavs and the growing numbers of the warriors soon led to domestic production of high-quality swords for mounted warriors and also of Moravian war axes. These were the main weapons of foot soldiers, that is, free farmers, and they are found among the grave goods at most rural burial places from that time. The craftspeople developed their own style, which borrowed from cultural influences of both the Carolingian world to the west and the Avar and then Byzantine realms in the southeast. In particular, jewelry of exceptional artistic quality and technical achievement defined the development of art handicrafts in central Europe. Products that could not be produced at home came to the central Moravian market mainly with trading caravans. Commodities were imported from places ranging from the Rhineland to central Asia and from Scandinavia to the Mediterranean.

In light of the glory of Great Moravia, one could easily overlook the instability of its whole political system. Territorial expansion brought rulers income in the form of booty from the territories of today’s Bohemia, Slovakia, Poland, and Hungary. This made it possible for them to sustain their military retinue. At the same time, it brought about the interior instability of a conglomerate of dependent territories where allies could easily become enemies. The military retinue created its own vicious circle: more expansion led to a larger retinue, which meant further expansion, and so on. In the end, only the most powerful neighbors were left, in the shape of the reconsolidated eastern Frankish empire.

The social structure itself also was a cause of instability. Among the nobility were members of the original tribal aristocracy from the regional dynasties, and the population consisted to a considerable extent of free farmers who worked on their own, not state-owned, land, which provided no tax revenues for the state treasury. A test of Great Moravia’s strength came in the A.D. 860s, when nomadic horsemen—this time the Hungarians—once again arrived from the eastern steppes. In the following decades they were both feared raiders and wel-

come allies of warring European rulers. In A.D. 892 Prince Svatopluk successfully opposed Bavarian-Hungarian aggression, but he died two years later, and the empire, held together only by the power of his personality, slowly began to collapse. His sons, Mojmir II and Svatopluk II, along with the Bavarians and the Hungarians, began to play an intricate political game, with mutual alliances and hostilities. In A.D. 906 this intrigue resulted in a devastating defeat of the allied Moravian-Bavarian army by the Hungarians in the territory of today's Slovakia. Thus under the hooves of Hungarian horses, Great Moravia disappeared from the map of Europe. Soon a close neighbor, Bohemia, found inspiration in its example.

THE BEGINNINGS OF THE CZECH STATE

At the very beginning of the ninth century, Bohemia was in a period of extensive structural changes, among them the planning of castle building. No longer did castles line the perimeters of populated areas; instead, they were built in the centers. The asynchronous development of the individual parts of Bohemia betrayed the slowly emerging regional nobility. A certain emancipation in the material culture was another sign of change: gradually the proportions of men's and women's luxury objects in archaeological finds equalized, which may have been a result of the emergence of regional princely dynasties. There were also transformations in the spiritual sphere, evident in the changeover from cremation to inhumation. In this an effort to sustain and preserve the continuity of family can be anticipated. Gradually impulses from the Christian rite probably became a part of this effort.

In A.D. 845 a group of fourteen Czech princes traveled to Ludwig the German's domain in Bavaria to be converted to Christianity. Like the Moravians, their aim most likely was to avoid giving the Bavarian king an excuse for an attack against pagans. One year later, however, Ludwig the German attacked Christian Moravia, and the Czechs became radical allies of the Moravians. This more or less short-lived period of temporary Christianity in Bohemia gives an important piece of information about the number of magnates ruling in the individual regions of Bohemia. Similar to Moravia, Bohemia was a loosely structured grouping of states, appearing as a unit-

ed whole from the outside though territorially divided within.

The present state of archaeological information makes it possible, with varying degrees of detail, to define as many as ten small territorial formations in Bohemia at the time, each dominated by a castle situated in the center of the settlement. It was only a matter of time before one of the regional dynasties tried to seize power in the whole of Bohemia. It did not take long for a suitable candidate to appear. Prince Bořivoj was the first historically documented member of what was to be the Premyslide dynasty of central Bohemia, named after its legendary ancestor Přemysl. Relatively soon this ambitious magnate appeared at Svatopluk's court in Great Moravia, where he was converted to Christianity around the year A.D. 883. This conversion gave him access to the political elite in Moravia, but in Bohemia his baptism brought about a furious reaction and led to civil war. The war made it possible for Svatopluk to launch a military intervention for the benefit of his pretender and temporarily annex Bohemia as a part of the Great Moravian empire. In Bohemia it is possible to trace the close relations with Great Moravia and their varying intensity in this period, mostly in central Bohemia, where Great Moravian jewels and weapons had a strong presence.

Thanks to his firm political position, Bořivoj was able to exercise both his faith and his power. Having built his first church, Saint Clement's, at the Levý Hradec castle in central Bohemia, he immediately built another church consecrated to the Holy Virgin. This church is located in the very heart of the country, at the newly built castle of Prague. From this seat of power Bořivoj's sons, Spytihněv and then Vratislav, began building up the country. The situation abroad was favorable: the eastern Frankish empire to the west was in crisis, and the Great Moravian empire in the southeast was coming to an end.

It was probably the first of the two brothers who used the two peaceful decades of his reign in the years A.D. 895–915 to carry out the fortification of central Bohemia. North of Prague Spytihněv rebuilt the castle of Mělník, originally the center of an independent region. Four more castles were built, each about 12.5 kilometers (about 20 miles) from Prague; thus the Prague basin was surrounded at strategic points by a pentagon of forts. At the same

time the building of churches inside the forts also declared the Premyslides' new concept of state. They still were not the sovereign rulers of the whole of Bohemia, however.

Václav, the eldest of Vratislav's sons, was content—just like his predecessors—with formal dependence of the surrounding principalities. His brother, Boleslav, was not so content. In A.D. 935 Boleslav murdered his brother and thus cleared the way to the throne for himself. One year later he launched an attack on one of the neighboring rulers and started both the systematic occupation of Czech territory and a fourteen-year-long conflict with the German emperor Otto I. Throughout Bohemia's territory, the castle network was restructured according to a unified concept. Older castles were abandoned or demolished, and new ones were built close by. They reflected a more or less unified type of fortification, and most of them also had churches. Large settlement groupings began to arise near the newly built castles. In the tenth century the Premyslides deprived the regional nobility of

their power, deployed their own military retinue, built up a new bureaucratic apparatus, imposed taxes on the population, and introduced their own coins, thus laying the foundation of the Czech state.

See also Slavs and the Early Slav Culture (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Bubeník, J., I. Pleinerová, and N. Profantová. "Od počátků hradišť k počátkům přemyslovského státu. Von den Anfängen der Burwälle zu den Anfängen des Přemyslidenstaates." *Památky archeologické* 89, no. 1 (1998): 104–145.
- Sláma, J. *Střední Čechy v raném středověku*. Vol. 3, *Archeologie o počátcích přemyslovského státu* [Central Bohemia in the Early Middle Ages. Vol. 3, Archaeology and the beginnings of the Přemysl-Dynasty State]. *Prachistorica* 14. Prague, Czech Republic: Universita Karlova, 1988.
- Třeštlík, D. *Vznik Velké Moravy: Moravané, Čechové a střední Evropa v letech*. Prague, Czech Republic: Nakladatelství Lidové noviny, 2002.
- . *Počátky Přemyslovců: Vstup Čechů do dějin*. Prague, Czech Republic: Nakladatelství Lidové noviny, 1997.

PETR MEDUNA



GERMANY AND THE LOW COUNTRIES

According to the standard terminology, the Roman period in the Low Countries and Germany south and west of the Rhine River began with Julius Caesar's conquest of Gaul, completed in 51 B.C. For the next five centuries those regions were under the political control of Rome. Shortly after Caesar's conquest, Rome became embroiled in civil war lasting from 49 B.C., when Caesar led his army across the Rubicon River into Italy, until 30 B.C., with the rise of Octavian, or Augustus, to supreme power in Rome. During this period there is little evidence for major change in the way of life of the peoples of this region.

Roman written sources indicate that, from the time of the Roman conquest, the newly acquired territories were plagued by incursions by groups of Germans from east of the Rhine. The Roman emperor Augustus spent the years 16–13 B.C. in the Rhineland and Gaul, overseeing the creation of military bases on the west bank of the river to protect Gaul. Since the nineteenth century extensive archaeological research has revealed much about the progress of the Roman defensive buildup. Major bases for Roman legions (between five thousand and six thousand men) were established at Vechten and Nijmegen in the Netherlands and at Xanten, Moers-Asberg, Neuss, Cologne, and Mainz in Germany. Beginning in 12 B.C. Roman armies launched a series of campaigns across the Rhine as far east as the Elbe River. Between 12 and 7 B.C. Rome established a series of bases east of the Rhine on the Lippe River to aid in conquests eastward. The base at Haltern, built around 10 B.C. and abandoned in

A.D. 9, is the most extensively excavated early Roman period legionary camp, and its structure provides a detailed view into the character of these complex military institutions that served as towns for the soldiers stationed at them.

Rome's attempts to extend its military conquests beyond the Lower Rhine were brought to an end by an attack on three Roman legions in a place known as the Teutoburg Forest in northern Germany. According to writings by Roman and Greek historians, a Germanic leader called Arminius led the slaughter of three legions of Roman soldiers, together with auxiliary forces—some twenty thousand men. In 1987 the site of this great battle was discovered at Kalkriese near the small city of Bramsche. Excavations begun in 1989 have yielded some of the best information about a Roman battlefield.

As a result of this disaster for the Roman forces in September A.D. 9, Rome gave up its attempts to conquer eastward beyond the Lower Rhine and consolidated its positions along the west bank of that river. The bases that Augustus had established between 16 and 13 B.C. were expanded and strengthened, and new bases were established. The Lower Rhine remained the Roman Empire's frontier for the next four centuries.

DEVELOPMENT OF THE ROMAN PROVINCES

The Roman bases in the Rhineland had been established in a prosperous region inhabited by peoples commonly referred to as Gauls and Germans. The new communities of soldiers created enormous de-

mand for foodstuffs and raw materials from the countryside. This demand resulted in the beginning of a cash economy in the region and rapid growth in wealth for many local communities. Bases contracted with native communities to supply foodstuffs and critical materials, such as iron and leather. Natives established settlements known as *vici* (singular *vicus*) near the military bases, to provide the soldiers with things they might wish to buy with the money they earned, such as ornaments for their uniforms, trinkets, wine and beer, and other treats. These commercial communities often grew to substantial sizes and produced goods for both military and civilian clientele.

Substantial towns and cities sprang up near many of the bases, as at Nijmegen around the middle of the first century A.D. The largest Roman city in this region was Colonia Claudia Ara Agrippinensium, modern-day Cologne. A military base was established on the site before the birth of Christ, and a civilian settlement grew close by. The Roman Rhine fleet was stationed at Cologne, just south of the city. In the middle of the first century A.D. Roman Cologne was designated a colonial city, and in about A.D. 85 it became the capital of the province Germania Inferior. In the following centuries it had a population of about fifteen thousand—large for a Roman city north of the Alps. Several thousand more lived just beyond the city walls. The inhabitants of Cologne and other Roman cities were mostly local natives who moved into the new urban centers, attracted by economic opportunities. Except for governmental officials, few persons moved from Italy to take up residence in the new provinces. When scholars refer to the people in Cologne, for example, as Romans, they mean mainly locals who adopted aspects of the Roman way of life, not people who came from Rome.

In the countryside of northern Gaul, Rome introduced the villa system of agricultural production. The villa was an estate, organized around the residence of the owner and his or her family. Residences could be large and ornate if wealthy people owned them, but they also could be very modest. Around the villa were fields, orchards, kitchen gardens, and workshops, usually including a smithy for making iron tools and a pottery for producing the vessels needed. Wealthy owners had tenants who did the agricultural and craft work of the villas. Ideally villas

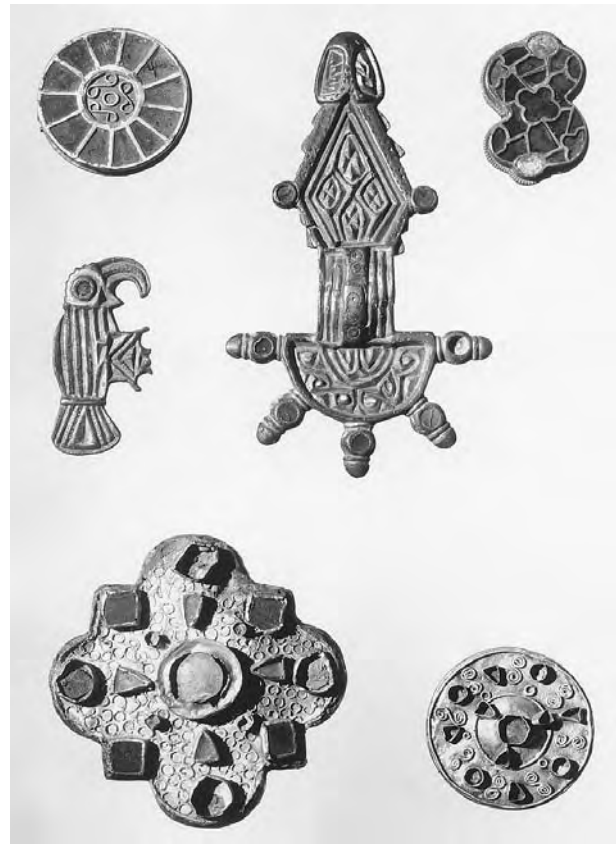


Fig. 1. Frankish jewelry of the sixth and seventh centuries showing the animal-style ornament and gold-and-garnet inlay. RÖMISCH-GERMANISCHES ZENTRALMUSEUM, MAINZ, GERMANY. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

were economically independent units that produced most of what the residents needed, but they also generated surpluses for trade to the cities to exchange for goods manufactured in the urban centers or imported from other regions. In many instances what had been typical houses of the indigenous Late Iron Age populations were transformed over time into versions of the Roman villa, as, for example, at Mayen in the middle Rhineland.

In other aspects of life the archaeological evidence also shows a persistence of indigenous cultural traditions and only a gradual integration of new Roman ideas and practices. Excavations at the large cemetery of Wederath near the Moselle River show that, even in the second and third centuries A.D., elements of traditional funerary ritual were maintained in the arrangement of burials and in the choice of objects to include as grave goods. Places where gods were worshiped also show the complex



Fig. 2. Frankish jewelry of the sixth and seventh centuries. RÖMISCH-GERMANISCHES ZENTRALMUSEUM, MAINZ, GERMANY. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

interplay of new Roman themes and traditional local ones. At Empel in the Netherlands archaeologists found a ritual site at which metal brooches, coins, and other objects were deposited during the prehistoric Iron Age. In the Roman period a typical Gallo-Roman rectangular temple was constructed on the site, and people continued to deposit the same categories of ritual offerings. The deities worshiped also show a melding of local and Roman. At Empel the god to whom the offerings were made was called *Hercules Magusenus*—a god with both Roman and native names. Well into the Roman period the traditional Rhineland mother goddesses were accorded a special place in the provincial pantheon. At the mouth of the Rhine the Celtic goddess *Nehalennia* remained the object of devotion for Roman period merchants setting sail into the North Sea.

The first and second centuries A.D. were times of great prosperity in the Roman Rhineland and northeastern Gaul. Natural resources were abundant in the region, and the Rhine offered easy transport of goods. By the middle of the third century

A.D. the period of greatest peace and prosperity had passed. The Roman Rhineland was plagued by incursions by warrior bands from the east, known to the Roman writers as Franks.

ACROSS THE RHINE FRONTIER

From the time of Caesar's campaigns in Gaul (58–51 B.C.), in the lands east of the Rhine, the practice of burying many men with sets of weapons became common. The complete weapon set consisted of a long iron sword, two lances, and a shield. More often a grave contained just one or two lances, sometimes with a shield. Large cemeteries have been excavated at Grossromstedt and Schkopau, both in the former East Germany. Many of the richer weapon graves also contain spurs and Roman bronze vessels. The new role of weapons in burial ritual signals a new importance attributed to military affairs. Perhaps it was a reaction to Caesar's campaigns in Gaul and to his forays across the Rhine in 55 and 53 B.C., but the graves that contain spurs and Roman vessels suggest another reason. In his reports about his conquests in Gaul, Caesar mentioned that he hired German troops to fight with the Roman army, in particular as cavalry, because they were regarded as expert horsemen. Perhaps some of the graves with weapons, spurs, and Roman vessels represent men who served with the Roman army and returned to their homes, ultimately to be buried with signs of their status and of their successful mercenary service to Rome.

This practice of burying sets of weapons, Roman vessels, and sometimes horse-riding paraphernalia with some men continued in fashion throughout the Roman and early medieval periods. In the first century A.D. large cemeteries around the lower Elbe River, such as those at Harsefeld and Putensen near Hamburg, include many examples of this practice. Some graves contain not only weapons and Roman vessels but also elaborate gold and silver ornaments, both local and Roman in origin. These unusually wealthy graves are known as the Lübsow group. Such burials occur across a broad landscape east of the Rhine, from Norway in the north to the Czech Republic in the south to Poland in the east. Their presence shows that significant status differences existed among the peoples east of the Rhine. The similarities in burial structure and in grave goods further indicates that elites in different parts

of northern Europe shared common symbols and values that they represented in their burial practices.

Settlements north of the Rhine in the Netherlands and east of the Rhine in Germany remained small throughout the Roman period, most of them farmsteads or very small villages. Many show evidence of interaction with the Roman world across the Rhine. Excavations at Rijswijk in the Netherlands show that between A.D. 30 and 120 the successive generations that inhabited a farm gradually adopted Roman architectural ideas as well as Roman pottery and metal objects. At Wijster in the Netherlands and at Feddersen Wierde on the North Sea coast of Germany, quantities of Roman pottery, coins, brooches, glass beads and vessels, and grindstones from Mayen attest to interactions across the frontier.

The first indigenous form of writing east of the Rhine was created sometime during the first or second century A.D. The earliest runes are short inscriptions incised onto metal objects, especially women's jewelry and men's weapons. Runes were created by people who were familiar with the Latin alphabet of Rome and with the way that the alphabet represented spoken words. The locations of the earliest runes known, such as those on a bronze fibula from Meldorf in Schleswig-Holstein, suggest that this development took place in northern Germany and Denmark.

MEROVINGIAN PERIOD (A.D. 482–751)

The Merovingian period is a historical designation for the Early Middle Ages, named for the founder of the first Frankish dynasty. By the start of this period Roman effective power had disintegrated, though Rome continued to play an important role in the minds of many local leaders. In the Rhineland and the Low Countries the dominant group is known as Franks, whereas east of the Rhineland, in northern Germany, were groups identified as Saxons. Many of the old Roman urban centers, such as Cologne and Mainz, remained significant centers of population, industry, and commerce, though they had declined in population from the early Roman period.

The complex interplay of influences of the Roman world and the new Germanic societies is well illustrated in the grave of the Frankish king Childeric, discovered at Tournai in Belgium. Late

Roman written sources reveal that Childeric was a local Frankish king who commanded Germanic troops in the service of the late Roman army, helping to protect the Rhineland from Saxon invasions. He died in A.D. 481 or 482. His grave shows his complex role with respect to Rome and to his Germanic origins. A gold signet ring with his portrait and his name in Latin and a gold fibula of a type traditionally presented by Roman emperors to leaders who provide service to Rome demonstrate his link to the Roman world. His style of burial, however, with a full set of weapons, including a sword in a scabbard ornamented with gold and garnet and a gold bracelet, show that his funeral included the traditional rituals of native practice. Other excavations in Tournai reveal that, as part of his funerary ritual, at least twenty-one horses were sacrificed and buried in three pits around his grave—a practice foreign to the Roman world but common in Germanic societies.

During the latter part of the Roman period a new style of ornament developed that was known as Germanic art. This style became important as a marker of identity among peoples who wanted to distinguish themselves from Roman traditions, and it flourished in the fifth and sixth centuries. Its origins were diverse and reflect the varied influences that formed the societies of the early medieval period. The ornamental technique known as chip carving—removing chips of metal from a surface with a burin—was adopted from Roman techniques used to decorate fittings on soldiers' belts. The characteristic animal ornament derived from earlier artistic traditions in central and northern Europe. In elite contexts, as in Childeric's grave, gold inlaid with garnet was an important new style adapted from traditions associated with the people known as Goths north of the Black Sea. This new style was applied to a variety of objects, especially personal ornaments and weapons.

By the start of the fourth century Christian communities were active in many of the Roman cities in the Rhineland. The archaeological evidence for the adoption of the new set of beliefs and practices is complex. Early churches, objects bearing signs of the cross, and changes in burial practice all provide material evidence for the adoption of the new religion. Just as with Roman religious ritual, however, and its integration with traditional prac-

tices (as seen at Empel), the adoption of Christianity resulted in complex patterns of integration of traditions rather than replacement of pre-Christian practices by Christian ones.

For example, excavations at Bonn beneath the modern cathedral have shown that many pre-Christian sculptures, including those of mother goddesses, had been built into the foundation of a fourth-century church. The construction workers may have treated them simply as convenient stone, but more likely they were incorporated, both figuratively and literally, into the new religious structure and its meaning. Early Christian burials often are difficult to distinguish from non-Christian ones. In the course of investigations underneath Cologne Cathedral, archaeologists discovered a woman's grave dating to around A.D. 520 in a chamber within a small church. The woman was outfitted with grave goods characteristic of pre-Christian traditions, including a headband containing gold thread, a box of amulets, a belt with ornate metal fittings, a crystal ball, and vessels made of pottery, glass, and bronze. Although the burial assemblage was not Christian, the location of the grave was. Such ambiguity in burial character is common during this period. While Christianity was being adopted in late Roman cities of the Rhineland, very different traditions were practiced in other parts of northern Europe. For example, at Thorsberg in Schleswig-Holstein large quantities of weapons and ornaments were being offered to native deities in a pond, continuing a practice of great antiquity in the region.

The complexity of the interactions between different groups of peoples and of changing patterns of belief and ritual practice in the Rhineland is illustrated by the cemetery at Krefeld-Gellep, where more than five thousand graves have been excavated. In the third century the cemetery was used by the inhabitants of a small Roman military post and an associated civilian settlement. Burial practice was the standard Roman one of the time, inhumation with no weapons and no unusual wealth in the graves, just a few ceramic or glass vessels and a piece of jewelry or two. During the fourth century the predominant orientation changed from north-south to east-west, and the numbers of grave goods decreased, shifts associated with the acceptance of Christianity. Early in the fifth century, however, a new burial practice appeared in the cemetery, with

weapons in many men's graves and sets of Germanic jewelry in women's. This change is interpreted as the result of the arrival of new peoples from east of the Rhine with different practices.

An exceptionally richly outfitted burial dated to about A.D. 525 is representative of a series of sixth-century wealthy men's graves in the Rhineland. Grave 1728 contained objects of a character similar to those in earlier wealthy burials east of the Rhine. Weapons, including many ornamented with gold and garnet; horse-riding equipment decorated with gold and silver; and elaborate bronze and glass vessels from late Roman workshops were present, as were a series of gold and silver personal ornaments. The majority of graves at Krefeld-Gellep during the sixth century were equipped much more modestly, but in contrast to earlier practices, men's graves often contained weapons, and women's often had substantial assemblages of personal ornaments. During the sixth and seventh centuries large cemeteries known as *Reihengräberfelder* (row-grave cemeteries) were common. These often extensive burial grounds, as at Krefeld-Gellep, are made up of thousands of graves, many well outfitted with grave goods, arranged in rows. They are common in the Rhineland and the Low Countries, in regions that had been parts of the Roman Empire, but are rare east of the Rhine.

In the post-Roman period, A.D. 450–800, settlement in the Low Countries and northern Germany was mostly in small villages and trading centers of a regional scale. In a few places, such as Cologne and Trier, urban populations survived, but they declined from their peaks during the first few centuries A.D. In the countryside villas went out of fashion, and architecture returned to traditional building techniques based on wooden posts sunk into the ground, supporting wattle-and-daub walls. At Warendorf near Münster a settlement occupied between A.D. 650 and 800 consisted of four farmsteads at a time. Large, sturdily built post buildings provided for both human habitation and livestock, and smaller structures served as sheds and workshops. Most of the pottery the people used was locally made coarse ceramic, but some finer wares were brought in from the Rhineland. Ironworking is evident, as is weaving. The community produced surplus farm products and traded for glass beads and

vessels and for grindstones made of basalt from the quarries near Mayen.

CAROLINGIAN PERIOD (A.D. 751-911)

During the Carolingian period in the Low Countries and in the German Rhineland, major changes are apparent in political organization, religion, and commerce. The Frankish kings of the Merovingian period gradually created larger kingdoms, and Charlemagne was crowned emperor of the region in the year A.D. 800 by Pope Leo III in Rome. This event symbolized the accumulated power of the Frankish kings, the importance of Christianity to the Frankish world, the recognition in Rome of the significance of Frankish power, and Charlemagne's concern with linking his political and cultural aspirations with those of ancient Rome. He made these connections plain in his capital at Aachen, where his royal chapel was designed on the plan of the church of San Vitale at Ravenna. He even had marble columns transported from Italy to Aachen to emphasize the links between his plans and past Roman greatness. Charlemagne's royal hall, where he exer-

cised his political power, was connected directly to the chapel, providing material expression of the unification of worldly power and religious authority.

Ever larger churches were built as Christianity became an increasingly important feature of life. The tradition of the *Reihengräberfelder* faded into disuse because Christian funerary practices discouraged the placing of objects, especially food and drink, in graves. Cemeteries were established next to churches, and high-status burials for clergy and elite citizens were placed underneath church foundations, with the choicest positions being in front of the altar, a practice known as *ad sanctos*.

During the late Merovingian and Carolingian periods commerce grew. In the Rhineland major pottery industries focusing on export trade grew up on the west bank south of Cologne at Badorf and later at Pingsdorf. Products of these workshops appear throughout the Rhineland and farther afield, in northern Germany, Scandinavia, and Britain. Throughout northern Europe new trade towns developed from the late seventh century.

Dorestad, on a branch of the Rhine in the Netherlands, became the principal port for Charlemagne's kingdom, bringing in goods from all along the North Sea and Baltic coasts and exporting pottery, basalt grindstones, and other products of the Rhineland. Besides being a major transit port, Dorestad also was home to a wide range of industries typical of the trading towns that emerged throughout northern Europe during the ninth and tenth centuries. Craft workers at Dorestad processed metals, carved amber and bone, and wove textiles. Near the southern end of the Jutland Peninsula in Schleswig-Holstein, the port of Haithabu (Hedeby) became a thriving cosmopolitan center, transshipping goods between the North Sea and Rhineland ports and those of Scandinavia and the Baltic lands (fig. 3). Similar developments are apparent at Quentovic in northern France and at Hamburg on the lower Elbe River and Ralswiek on the Baltic coast, both in northern Germany.

Although Aachen was Charlemagne's royal capital, there were still no major urban centers in northern Germany or the Low Countries during this period. The old Roman centers at such places as Cologne and Mainz continued as manufacturing and trading towns but on a much reduced scale from the Roman period. Thriving agricultural villages, such as that excavated at Warendorf, showed a prosperous economy, with active involvement in the commercial systems of the time but no trace of town life, which remained restricted to the coasts and the major river systems. In eastern regions of northern Germany status differences are well represented in settlement systems. At Tornow, for example, a fortress situated above the village included not only substantial defensive works but also sizable storage structures and workshops, all apparently managed by the local elite groups.

By the end of the Carolingian period in the tenth century communities throughout the Low Countries and northern Germany were thoroughly tied into the expanding economy represented at trading towns such as Dorestad, Haithabu, and Ralswiek. In regions west of the Rhine memories of Rome as well as physical remains of the empire had significant influence on thinking about political power as well as on architecture, religion, and art

and ornament. In lands to the east, with no direct experience of Roman rule, ideas about the past and its connections to the present were different. The Rhineland was to remain a significant cultural divide between west and east for another millennium.

See also **Germans** (vol. 2, part 6); **Merovingian Franks** (vol. 2, part 7); **Goths between the Baltic and Black Seas** (vol. 2, part 7); **Tomb of Childeric** (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Erdrich, Michael. *Rom und die Barbaren: Das Verhältnis zwischen dem Imperium Romanum und den germanischen Stämmen vor seiner Nordwestgrenze von der späten römischen Republik bis zum gallischen Sonderreich*. Mainz, Germany: Verlag Philipp von Zabern, 2001.
- Fehring, Günter. *The Archaeology of Medieval Germany*. Translated by Ross Samson. New York: Routledge, 1991.
- Geary, Patrick J. *Before France and Germany: The Creation and Transformation of the Merovingian World*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1988.
- Halsall, Guy. *Settlement and Social Organization: The Merovingian Region of Metz*. New York: Cambridge University Press, 1995.
- Hodges, Richard. *Dark Age Economics: The Origins of Towns and Trade A.D. 500–1000*. 2d ed. London: Duckworth; New York: St. Martin's, 1989.
- James, Edward. *The Franks*. New York: Blackwell, 1988.
- Randsborg, Klavs. *The First Millennium: A.D. in Europe and the Mediterranean: An Archaeological Essay*. New York: Cambridge University Press, 1991.
- Roymans, Nico, ed. *From the Sword to the Plough: Three Studies on the Earliest Romanisation of Northern Gaul*. Amsterdam: Amsterdam University Press, 1996.
- Theuvs, Frans, and Janet L. Nelson, eds. *Rituals of Power: From Late Antiquity to the Early Middle Ages*. Leiden, Netherlands: Brill, 2000.
- Wamser, Ludwig, Christof Flügel, and Bernward Ziegeus, eds. *Die Römer zwischen Alpen und Nordmeer*. Mainz, Germany: Verlag Philipp von Zabern, 2000.
- Wells, Peter S. *The Barbarians Speak: How the Conquered Peoples Shaped Roman Europe*. Princeton, N.J.: Princeton University Press, 1999.
- Wieczorek, Alfried. *Die Franken: Wegbereiter Europas: 5. bis 8. Jahrhundert n. Chr.* Mainz, Germany: Verlag Philipp von Zabern, 1996.

PETER S. WELLS



SOUTHERN GERMANY

Modern southern Germany includes the states of Bavaria, Baden-Württemberg, and the southern part of the state of Hessen. In the south it is bounded by the Alps, Lake Constance, and the east-west section of the upper Rhine River that extends to Basel. In the east it is bounded by the Fichtelgebirge, the Bavarian Forest, and the forest of the Upper Palatinate. The northern margin is formed by the low mountain ranges of the Taunus, the Vogelsberg, the Rhön, and the Franconian Forest. The upper Rhine Plain east of the Vosges Mountains marks the border to the west.

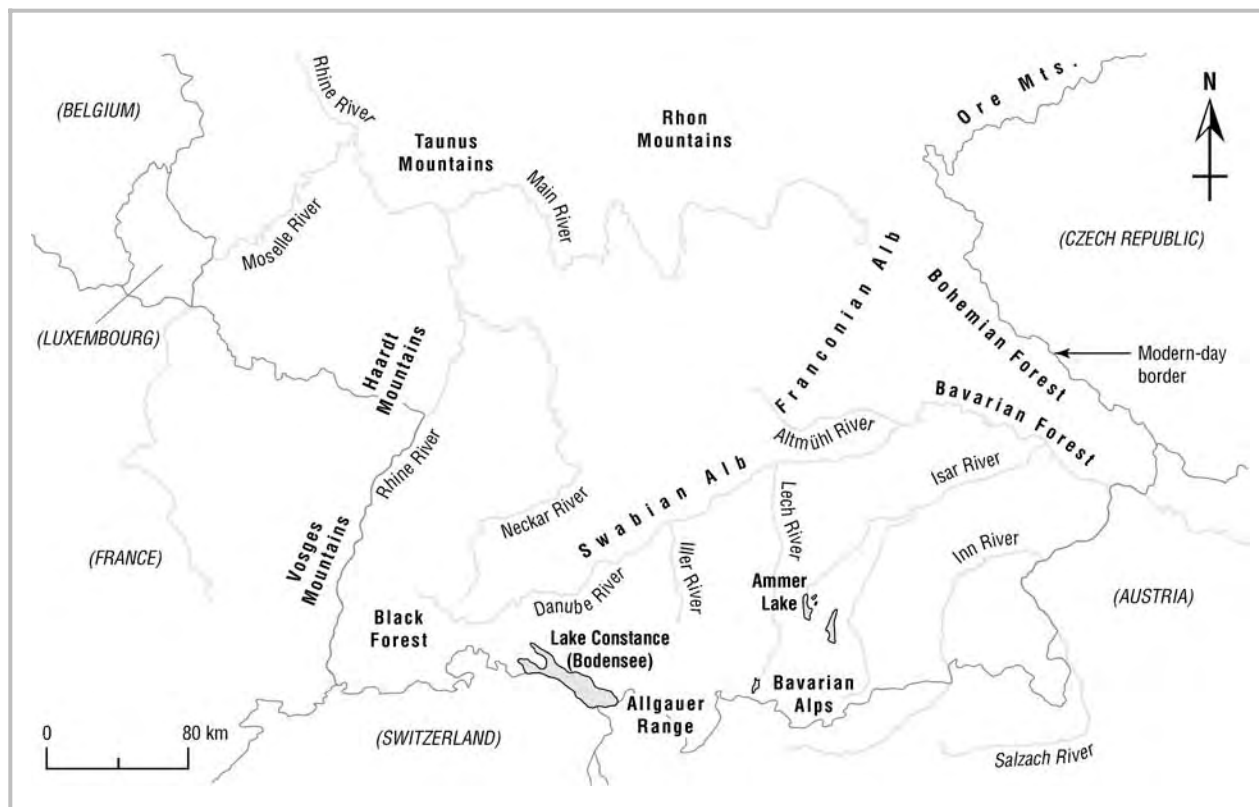
The more important low mountain ranges are the Odenwald, the Spessart, the Steigerwald, the Black Forest, the Swabian Jura, and the Franconian Jura. Fertile agricultural regions are the Wetterau, the Main Valley, the upper Rhine Plain, the central Neckar region, the Nördlinger Ries, and the eastern Danube Valley, called the Gäuboden. Southern Germany shares two of central Europe's largest rivers. The upper course of the Rhine and the western shore of Lake Constance form a vital transport axis in the west. The Danube, the most important natural east-west connection in central Europe, arises in southern Germany. Other significant rivers that also form transport axes are the Main and the Neckar.

HISTORICAL DEVELOPMENT

In late antiquity, the region was clearly divided into two parts. The late Roman Danube-Iller-Rhine *limes* (frontier borderlands) stretched through the provinces of Germania I, Maxima Sequanorum, and Raetia I and II west of the Rhine, south of Lake

Constance, and a line extending from Bregenz-Kempten east of the Iller, then along the Iller south of the Danube, and east of the mouth of the Iller. The Germanic tribes of the Alemanni, the Burgundians, and the Juthungi settled to the east and north of this region until the western Roman Empire fell in A.D. 476. From the middle of the fifth century the territory of the Alemanni expanded into the former Roman territory on the left bank of the Rhine and in the south of the Danube. The Lech then formed the boundary of the new tribe of the Baiuvarii, which was under the sovereignty of the Ostrogoths from A.D. 493 to 536 and thereafter was affiliated loosely with the Merovingian kingdom.

As early as A.D. 500, Alemannic sovereignty ceased with the establishment of the Frankish Duchy of Swabia. Toward the end of the sixth century, Frankish expansion also encompassed southern Hessen and northern Bavaria to the Main. Descendants of the Juthungi as well as parts of the Thuringian population then were incorporated into the empire of the Franks or the Frankish duchy. As Frankish colonization continued, Slavic tribes in the eastern part of northern Bavaria also fell under the rule of the Franks by the eighth century. The largely independent Stem Duchy of the Agilolfings in Bavaria was occupied by Charlemagne in A.D. 788 and converted into a duchy dominated by the Franks. What is now southern Germany was occupied at that time by the duchies of Franconia, Swabia, and Bavaria. After the Treaty of Verdun in A.D. 843, southern Germany belonged to the kingdom of East Francia under the Carolingian king Louis the



General features of southern Germany.

German. During the tenth century, under Henry I, the Saxon king of the German empire, southern Germany suffered heavily during the plundering raids of the Magyars. These invasions ended in A.D. 955 with the Battle of Lechfeld at Augsburg, under Otto the Great.

ALEMANNI

The tribe of the Alemanni formed in the third century A.D. as a union of several Germanic groups from the Elbe region. After A.D. 233 this new tribe participated decisively in the plundering raids into the *limes* region, the provinces beyond, and Italy. After the fall of the *limes* in A.D. 259–260, the archaeological evidence reveals a lack of continuity of a provincial Roman population. Roman encampments and settlements, including the *villae rusticae* (farms), were abandoned and destroyed. The *limes* region was not resettled until the fourth century, when the Alemanni conquered and occupied it.

Several centers of early Alemannic colonization are ascertainable. These centers include the upper and central Neckar region, the region of Heilbronn,

the area around the mouth of the Neckar, the Brenz Valley and the Ostalb, the Breisgau, and the Tauber Valley, which lies outside the former *limes* region. Especially striking in the Alemannic region are many fortified hilltop settlements. Based on early-twenty-first-century knowledge, the building of the hilltop settlements in the Germanic-Alemannic region of southern Germany on the far side of the late Roman Danube-Iller-Rhine *limes* cannot be linked to older local Germanic traditions. Yet models certainly do exist in the military and civilian hilltop sites that were founded by the late third century in the region of the late Roman Danube-Iller-Rhine *limes*.

The evidence indicates that Alemannic hilltop settlements were not founded until the fourth century and stopped being occupied by the end of the fifth century. Most of these sites were abandoned around A.D. 500, which can be explained by the defeat of the Alemanni by the Franks. There is no evidence of continuity between the Alemannic hilltop settlements and the late Merovingian-Carolingian castles that occasionally followed. The Runder Berg near Urach is the best researched of these sites.

In the former *limes* region, Roman villas continued to be occupied. This practice and the use of land cleared by the Romans indicate that there must have been only a short period of time between abandonment and reuse. In southwestern Germany, too, most evidence of Alemannic settlement can be drawn from the form of graves and single, random, or accidental finds. Some larger settlements have been excavated methodically as well. In the settlement of Sontheim, which dates to the first half of the fourth century, excavators identified relatively large post dwellings; smaller economic buildings of post construction, including a round storage building with 7 post holes; and a rectangular area with internal construction (the largest measuring 70 meters) separated from the rest of the settlement by a massive palisade. This is believed to have been the fortified residence of a group having a higher social status. Great quantities of iron slag suggest that ironworking was one of the economic bases for Sontheim.

In the Breisgau, too, large excavations indicate increasing early Alemannic settlement by the fourth century. After the middle of the fifth century, the Alemannic settlement region expanded rapidly. By then it included the Alsace, northern Switzerland, the Swiss Midland, Upper Swabia, the region of Bavarian Swabia up to the Lech, and the Algäu. The Alemanni who carried out this colonization until the seventh century had long been under Frankish rule.

The Alemanni did not enjoy political independence for long. The end of the fifth century was characterized by conflict and defeat of the Alemanni in battle against the Franks. After the defeat of A.D. 496–497 and the suppression of their uprising in A.D. 506, the Alemanni lost their kingdom and their independence. Alemannia became the Duchy of Swabia, a region at times more or less loosely connected to the Frankish empire. Archaeologically this fundamental change is evident in the disappearance of the hilltop settlements of the Alemannic nobility and the end of its cemeteries. At the same time, strategically situated settlements of Frankish warriors and their entourage emerged in the sixth and seventh centuries. Many of their cemeteries are well known. These Frankish officials in Alemannia also included warrior groups of Thuringian origin that

became Frankish subjects after the defeat of Thuringia by the Franks in A.D. 531.

JUTHUNGI

The Juthungi generally are believed to have been the eastern subtribe of the Alemanni. Archaeological evidence indicates that they settled in northern Bavaria in the fourth and fifth centuries. This Germanic tribe from the Elbe region is cited for the first and, as far as is known, the last time in the victory monument of Augsburg of A.D. 260, which at the same time reports that the group also was called the Semnones. No written sources on the fate of this tribe exist. The last remaining members of the Juthungi presumably were integrated into the Frankish population in the course of the Frankish development of northern Bavaria in the sixth century.

FRANKS

Starting in the sixth century, colonists from the Frankish heartland along the Rhine settled in northern Bavaria, that is, the Main region around Würzburg and eastward, the Rednitz–Regnitz basin, and the northern foothills of the Franconian Jura in the area of the upper Altmühl. This region was incorporated into the East Frankish kingdom. The same fate befell the present-day Hessen region of southern Germany. These events are not confirmed so much by written sources as by cemetery finds with very distinct Rhenish-Frankish elements.

The Thuringian and Juthungian parts of the population that had previously lived in northern Bavaria apparently were incorporated into Frankish territory without major difficulties. The only evidence of this process is in the archaeological record, primarily in the form of cemeteries and grave goods. These archaeological sources disappeared toward the end of the seventh century as the use of grave goods began to wane. Only in the upper Main area, where the Franks began to colonize the region occupied by Slavic peoples, did the custom of placing burial offerings continue in the Carolingian-Ottonian period. The name “Francia” for this region north and south of the Main—bounded by the Saxons in the north, the Alemanni in the southwest, the Bavarians in the south (the left bank of the Middle Rhine), and the Slavs in the east—does not appear until the eighth or ninth century. It has sur-

vived in the names of the Bavarian government districts of Upper, Middle, and Lower Franconia.

BAIUVARII

The Baiuvarii represent the most recent Germanic tribe of the Migration period that was of importance in the development of present-day Germany. The name is preserved in the “Free State of Bavaria.” The first historical record dates back to the early sixth century A.D. (alluded to by the historian Jordanes in A.D. 551 or perhaps as early as A.D. 520 by the Roman statesman Cassiodorus and, later, by the Latin poet Venantius Fortunatus in A.D. 565). Their settlement area included parts of the old Roman provinces of Raetia and Noricum. The name Baiuvarii means “men from the land of Baia,” or Bohemia—the old Boiohaemum of the ancient geographers.

If one attempts to draw interim conclusions from the meager historical sources and the insights offered by archaeological research, the following model emerges for the Bavarian tribal genesis. When Roman rule came to an end on the Danube around the middle of the fifth century, a polyethnic tribe made up of Romanic and immigrant Germanic groups (including Alemanni, Ostrogoths, Langobards, and Thuringians) formed at the turn of the sixth century A.D. around Germanic allies that had migrated into the area from Bohemia (the “Baiuvarii”). Particularly important is the fact that the massive and therefore practically indestructible fortress of Regensburg remained in the possession of the allies of Bohemian origin. Based on written records starting in the Early Middle Ages this was the royal capital of the early medieval Stem Duchy of the Agilolfings.

Baiuvarian ethnogenesis goes back to the intervention of the Ostrogoths. Under their king Theoderic, the Ostrogoths had conquered Italy from the eastern Roman Empire in A.D. 493. This region included Raetia up to the Danube, which formed part of the diocese of Italy. Ostrogoth rule over the region between the Alps and the Danube ended only in A.D. 536. In that year the Ostrogothic king Witigis, who was forced to defend Italy against the troops of the east Roman emperor Justinian, ceded the region north of the Alps to the Franks under their king Theudebert from the Merovingian dynasty. The tribe of the Baiuvarii between the Lech, the

Danube, the Enns, and the Alps continued to enjoy substantial independence under the rule of the Agilolfingian dukes, who had many connections with the Lombard dynasty. In the sixth and seventh centuries settlement expanded rapidly and, in northern Bavaria, eventually spread across the Danube toward the north. Under Charlemagne a split occurred with the last Agilolfingian, Tassilo III, who was deposed in A.D. 788. After that, Frankish officeholders ruled the Duchy of Bavaria.

SLAVS

In northeastern Bavaria, in the present-day government districts of the Upper Palatinate and Upper Franconia north of the Danube, archaeological finds beginning around A.D. 700 indicate a Slavic population that had migrated into the region from Bohemia. By the eighth century, there are also historical sources that confirm the presence of a Slavic population east of the Steigerwald. These Slavic groups were integrated into the Frankish empire and were under the administration of the church. Frankish colonists migrated into their settlement region from the west. In northern Bavaria, Slavs are mentioned as late as the eleventh century. Many place names in northern Bavaria still have Slavic origins.

THE MAGYAR INVASIONS OF THE TENTH CENTURY

Beginning in the late ninth century, the nomadic Magyars (Hungary), horsemen from the Volga-Kama region and originally from central Asia, settled in the central Danube region. They soon began to terrorize southern, central, and western Europe with their highly effective and devastating raids. Especially after the defeat of Bavaria in the Battle of Pressburg in A.D. 907, southern Germany became the focus of the Magyar assaults. In A.D. 926 the German king Henry I paid tribute to purchase a ten-year truce. He used this period to reorganize the German army and build castles. The crushing defeat of Hungary at Lechfeld near Augsburg in A.D. 955 put an end to the Hungarian invasions. The archaeological traces of the Hungarian raids and the German countermeasures have been well summarized in the literature.

CASTLE BUILDING

After A.D. 926, the building of castles in southern Germany was intensified to ward off the Hungarian threat. While castle building in the Early Middle Ages started on the initiative of the king, bishops and monasteries soon added their own fortifications. In the ninth and tenth centuries, the nobility began to erect castles, one of the most important bases of territorial power in the later Middle Ages.

See also **Baiuvarii** (vol. 2, part 7); **Merovingian Franks** (vol. 2, part 7); **Slavs and the Early Slav Culture** (vol. 2, part 7); **Hungary** (vol. 2, part 7).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Archäologisches Landesmuseum Baden-Württemberg, ed. *Die Alamannen*. Stuttgart, Germany: Konrad Theiss Verlag, 1997.
- Burns, Thomas S. *Barbarians within the Gates of Rome: A Study of Roman Military Policy and Barbarians, ca. 375–425 A.D.* Bloomington: Indiana University Press, 1995.
- Christlein, Rainer. *Die Alamannen: Archäologie eines lebendigen Volkes*. Stuttgart, Germany: Konrad Theiss Verlag, 1991.
- Czysz, Wolfgang, Karlheinz Dietz, Thomas Fischer, and Hans-Jörg Kellner. *Die Römer in Bayern*. Stuttgart, Germany: Konrad Theiss Verlag, 1995.
- Dannheimer, Hermann, and Heinz Dopsch, eds. *Die Bajuwaren: Von Severin bis Tassilo 488–788*. Munich: Amt der Salzburger Landesregierung, 1988.
- Ettel, P. “Der Befestigungsbau im 10. Jahrhundert in Süddeutschland und die Rolle Ottos des Grossen am Beispiel der Burg von Rosstal.” In *Europa im 10. Jahrhundert: Archäologie einer Aufbruchzeit*. Edited by Joachim Henning, pp. 365–380. Mainz, Germany: Phillip von Zabern, 2002.
- Gradmann, R. *Süddeutschland*. Stuttgart, Germany: Engelhorn, 1931.
- Menghin, Wilfried. *Frühgeschichte Bayerns: Römer und Germanen, Baiern und Schwaben, Franken und Slawen*. Stuttgart, Germany: Konrad Theiss Verlag, 1990.
- Roth, Helmut, and Egon Wamers, eds. *Hessen im Frühmittelalter: Archäologie und Kunst*. Sigmaringen, Germany: Thorbecke, 1984.
- Schlesinger, Walter, ed. *Althessen im Frankenreich*. Nationes, no. 2. Sigmaringen, Germany: Thorbecke, 1975.
- Schulze-Dörrlamm, Mechthild. “Die Ungarneinfälle des 10. Jahrhunderts im Spiegel archäologischer Funde.” In *Europa im 10. Jahrhundert: Archäologie einer Aufbruchzeit*. Edited by Joachim Henning, pp. 109–122. Mainz, Germany: Phillip von Zabern, 2002.
- Teichner, F. *Kabl am Main: Siedlung und Gräberfeld der Völkerwanderungszeit*. Materialhefte zur Bayerischen Vorgeschichte, series A, no 80. Kallmünz, Germany: Verlag Michael Lassleben, 1999.
- Wieczorek, Alfried, Patrick Périn, Karin von Welck, and Wilfried Menghin, eds. *Die Franken: Wegbereiter Europas*. Mainz, Germany: Verlag Philip von Zabern, 1996.
- Zeune, Joachim. “Salierzeitliche Burgen im Herzogtum Bayern.” In *Burgen der Salierzeit*. Vol. 2, *In den südlichen Landschaften des Reiches*. Edited by Horst Wolfgang Böhme, pp. 177–234. Monographien Römisch Germanisches Zentralmuseum, no. 25. Sigmaringen, Germany: Thorbecke, 1991.

THOMAS FISCHER

(TRANSLATED BY GINA BRODERICK)



GLOSSARY

absolute dating: Dating using a chemical, physical, or biological technique or by reference to dated historical events that produces an age (or range of ages) in years for archaeological remains rather than simply a position relative to other finds. One example of absolute dating is the carbon-14 method. Also known as “chronometric dating.”

Aceramic Neolithic: A period in which people relied on domesticated species and lived in permanent settlements but did not extensively use or manufacture pottery. Generally used to specify a portion of the Neolithic in the Near East between approximately 8500 B.C. and 7000 B.C. but also used for similar periods in Greece, Crete, and Cyprus. Also known as the “Pre-Pottery Neolithic.”

achieved status: Prestige and social rank acquired through personal deeds. Antonym of “ascribed status.”

acropolis: An elevated area of a city containing temples and courtyards. Some have origins as hill-top fortifications.

ad sanctos burial: Positioning of burials around a holy or otherwise revered grave or monument.

adze: A cutting tool with a broad and flat blade that—in contrast to an axe—is hafted with the blade perpendicular to the line of the handle. Commonly used for trimming timbers.

affinal: Of or concerning a relationship formed by marriage.

agora: A forum; an open area for a market and other assemblies.

alignment: Positioning objects, such as standing stones, in a line, often to mark a celestial event or topographical feature.

allée couverte: See gallery grave.

alloy: A combination of two or more metals that creates a new metal, as in the mixing of tin and copper to make bronze.

alluvium/alluvial plain: Sediment deposited by flowing water in a riverbed or across a floodplain. The resulting landscape is referred to as an alluvial plain.

amber: Fossilized tree resin. A valued trade item often carved and polished into jewelry, ornaments, and other objects. Most European amber comes from the Baltic region.

amphora (pl. amphorae): A pottery vessel with a narrow neck, two handles, and either a pointed or a rounded base. Used for storage and transportation of goods such as wine, oil, fruit, and salted meat.

AMS radiocarbon dating: A radiometric dating technique that counts individual carbon isotopes. It is faster and requires smaller amounts of carbon than traditional methods of carbon-14 dating (AMS = accelerator mass spectrometry).

androcentric: Male centered.

Annales school: An intellectual perspective emphasizing that different processes operate at differ-

- ent chronological and geographical scales. This school of thought also stresses the need for adopting a multidisciplinary approach to studying the past. Associated with the French historians Marc Bloch, Fernand Braudel, and others known as *Annalistes*.
- anoxic:** Possessing extremely low levels of oxygen.
- anthropogenic:** Created by humans. Often used with reference to soils and vegetation.
- anthropomorphic:** In the shape of or possessing characteristics of a human.
- antiquarianism:** The study of ancient monuments before the development of modern archaeological techniques. Often associated with a lack of rigorous methods for data collection and hypothesis testing. Antiquarians interpreted prehistoric remains in terms of the historic record, so, for example, they attributed Stonehenge to the Romans or the ancient Druids.
- apse:** A projecting portion of a building that is semi-circular in plan and has a vaulted roof, like the recess extending from the choir of a church.
- archaeobotany:** The study of plant remains from archaeological sites, including seeds, plant fibers, pollen, and phytoliths.
- archaeological culture:** A term used to designate a recurring assemblage of material goods associated with a particular time and space. Archaeological cultures are defined by archaeologists and may have little connection to groups or identities recognized by the people using the material goods.
- archaeozoology:** *See* zooarchaeology.
- ard:** An early type of plow that cuts into soil without turning it over. Also known as a “scratch-plow.”
- armature:** 1. A stone tool made for hafting. Often used in reference to microliths. 2. A framework, usually one used to support an object during construction.
- artifact:** An object created or otherwise altered by humans.
- ascribed status:** Prestige and social rank conferred through heredity. Antonym of “achieved status.”
- ashlar masonry:** A drystone masonry made using squared stones to produce tightly fitting joints and a smooth wall face.
- assemblage:** A group of artifacts derived from an archaeological feature or set of features.
- astragalus:** A bone located in the foot that articulates with the tibia (shinbone). One of a group of bones known as “tarsals.” Generally called a “talus” in humans.
- Atlantic climatic period:** A subdivision of the Holocene epoch in northern Europe. Extends from c. 6000 B.C. to 3800 B.C. Relative to modern conditions, a warm and wet (or “oceanic”) climate characterized the period. *See also* Preboreal, Boreal, Subboreal, and Subatlantic climatic periods.
- auger:** A drilling tool used in extracting soil samples. Unlike coring tools, augers disturb the structure and stratigraphy of samples retrieved.
- aurochs:** The common name for *Bos primigenius*, the wild ancestor of domestic cattle (*Bos taurus*).
- Austrasia:** The eastern portion of the Frankish empire (the areas under the control of Merovingian and Carolingian rulers).
- autochthonous:** Term applied to archaeological developments within a particular region as opposed to those introduced from outside that region.
- B.P.:** A dating convention indicating years before the present, with “present” defined as A.D. 1950.
- balk:** The unexcavated edge of an archaeological trench or unexcavated areas between trenches. Used to preserve and analyze stratigraphy. Also spelled “baulk.”
- ballista balls:** Objects, generally of stone, propelled from a military engine designed much like a crossbow.
- barbotine:** A pottery decoration technique in which thick slip is applied to the surface of pottery, often in designs. The result is a roughened surface.
- barrow:** A round or elongated mound constructed from earth and/or stone, often containing a burial.

- basal:** Lowest, as in the bottom stratum of an excavation, or earliest, as in the basal phase of construction.
- beaker:** A decorated pottery vessel, generally in the shape of an inverted bell. Beaker vessels are characteristic of an archaeological culture associated with the spread of copper metallurgy across western Europe.
- berdache:** A term for groups categorized as neither male nor female, but rather as a third gender or as transgendered. Also known as “two-spirit.”
- biconical:** Double-coned. Possessing a shape that is widest in the middle and tapers toward both ends, as in pottery, or, alternatively, widest at both ends and narrow at the middle, as in some copper objects.
- bifacial:** Retouching done on both sides (faces) of a stone tool.
- biome:** A large-scale ecological zone, such as savanna or tundra.
- biritual cemetery:** A cemetery in which both inhumation and cremation burials are found.
- blade:** A long, parallel-sided stone tool, conventionally one that is more than twice as long as it is wide and struck from a prepared core, often by indirect percussion.
- Boreal climatic period:** A subdivision of the Holocene epoch in northern Europe. Extends from c. 8500 B.C. to 6000 B.C. Although the period is part of the trend of increasing temperatures following the end of the last glaciation, relative to conditions in the Atlantic period, a cold and dry (“continental”) climate characterized the period. *See also* Preboreal, Atlantic, Subboreal, and Subatlantic climatic periods.
- boreal forest:** Vegetation that is typical of subarctic areas without permafrost but which have severe winters and a short growing season. Predominant tree species include conifers.
- bracteate:** A disk-shaped pendant, usually made of gold and decorated with repoussé designs. Also a type of coin.
- Breckland:** 1. A region in eastern England occupying a portion of Norfolk and Suffolk. 2. (not capitalized) A tract of heathland with thickets of shrubby vegetation, especially heather.
- broch:** A circular drystone tower with a central courtyard. The wall is generally less than fifty feet tall. Habitation occurred both inside and outside the enclosure. The walls are generally hollow, containing chambers and/or stairways that access a roof walk. Associated with Iron Age Scotland.
- bucranium (pl. bucrania):** A carved cattle skull used as a decoration on a building.
- burin:** A chisel-shaped stone tool with a sharp but stout edge. Used for a variety of purposes but conventionally associated with engraving bone, antler, and other materials.
- burnished:** Polished. Used with reference to the surface of pottery and metal artifacts.
- bush fallow cultivation:** *See* shifting cultivation.
- cairn:** A pile of stones. Often used as a term for a barrow made from stone but also used for smaller mounds, such as those produced when clearing a field of stones.
- calcine:** To heat to drive off impurities or volatile matter. Often used to describe methods for creating lime or refining precious metal.
- caprine:** A term used to refer to both sheep and goats.
- capstone:** A stone slab placed horizontally across the tops of orthostats to form the ceiling of a megalithic tomb.
- carbon-14 dating:** Also known as “radiocarbon age determination.” *See* radiocarbon dating.
- carburization:** A method of heating iron in contact with carbon to produce a steel-like metal.
- Cardium:** A genus of shellfish commonly known as cockles. Use of their shells for decorating pottery is characteristic of Cardial ware, a Neolithic pottery type in the Mediterranean region.
- carinated:** A term used in describing the profile of a vessel. A carination is a sharp break in a curve that forms a ridge (an arris), as in the joint between the neck and body of a vessel.
- case hardening:** A term for various thermochemical methods of hardening the surface of metal. Carburizing is one type.
- causewayed enclosure:** A monument possessing a series of concentric ditches filled at points to

- create passages into a central area. Although evidence of permanent structures inside the enclosure is rare, refuse deposited in ditches is abundant. Also known as “causewayed camps.”
- celt:** A polished axe head of either ground stone or metal.
- cenotaph:** A tomb or similar memorial built for a person whose remains are elsewhere.
- chain mail:** A protective garment made from loops of metal woven together.
- chambered tomb:** A tomb with a vault for burials. Often built from megaliths, these tombs can take a variety of forms, including passage graves, dolmens, and gallery graves.
- chasing:** An ornamental indentation or groove hammered or punched into metal.
- chatelaine:** An attachment for a purse, set of keys, or other item hung from a belt, particularly a woman’s belt.
- cheekpiece:** 1. An attachment connecting a horse bit to the reins. 2. An attachment to the rim of a helmet that protects the side of the face.
- chernozem:** A deep, rich, humic soil of dark color, like those associated with prairies and grasslands.
- chert:** Various types of rock composed of microcrystalline quartz that occur as nodules or masses in a sedimentary environment. Many varieties of chert are prized raw materials for stone tool making. Variation in usage of this term does occur. Technically, flint is one variety of chert, but frequently chert is defined as similar to flint but more coarse grained and less desirable for stone-tool production. Flint and chert are often also used synonymously.
- chiefdom:** A social organization with a defined leadership organizing the distribution of resources. Generally, surpluses of food and other goods are paid to the chief, who redistributes them to subordinates. Often, chiefdoms have ceremonial centers acting as focal points for group members. Chiefdoms usually are distinguished from states by being smaller in scale and possessing a less complex administrative apparatus.
- chronology:** An ordering of events into a temporal sequence, as in a timeline.
- chronometric:** *See* absolute dating.
- chronozone:** A small stratigraphic unit corresponding to deposits laid down during a chron (the smallest interval of geological time in the hierarchy of the Chronomeric Standard terms).
- Cisalpine:** Located to the south of the Alps.
- cist:** A subterranean boxlike structure with sides and a cover built from stone slabs. Used for burial.
- city-state:** An autonomous political entity composed of an urban center and its hinterland.
- civitas (pl. civitates):** Originally, a self-governing territory in the Roman Empire and the primary urban center in that area. By the early medieval period, the term was used for important ceremonial centers, urban or otherwise.
- client king:** A ruler subordinate to an overlord. Also known as a “petty king.”
- clinker technique:** A boat-building technique in which the sides of the boat are made of overlapping planks, in the same manner as clapboards on the side of a house. Such boats are also known as “clinker-built.”
- cloisonné:** An inlay technique using gems, glass, or enamel set into a metal framework. *Cloisons* are individual cells in the framework.
- coiling:** A method of making pottery in which coils of clay are laid on top of each other to create a desired shape. The joints between coils are then smoothed over.
- collagen:** A protein molecule forming nearly all of the organic content of bone. Collagen gives bones a degree of flexibility and elasticity.
- colonia (pl. coloniae):** A settlement for veterans of the Roman military.
- comitatus:** Latin for “retinue” or “escort.” A group that has sworn allegiance and service to a king, particularly for military duty.
- consanguine:** Of the same blood; possessing a common ancestor.
- context:** The find location of an artifact, including its matrix (surrounding soil), its provenance, and its associations with other artifacts.
- coppice/coppicing:** 1. A forest or grove consisting mainly of slender shoots and small trees. 2. A

method of forest management involving cutting trees low to the ground so that they produce small shoots.

corbeled vault/corbel-vaulted: A drystone masonry vault made by setting stones in rings of gradually decreasing diameter until the vault is closed. Also known as a “false arch.”

core-reduction technique: A generic term for the various processes of removing flakes and otherwise modifying a core in the process of making stone tools. A core is the nodule of flint or other stone from which flakes are removed as tools are made. *See also* flake and blade.

coring (at a site): The process of retrieving cylindrical samples, generally of wood or soil. In contrast to augers, coring tools tend to remove materials with their structure and stratigraphy undisturbed.

cover sand: A continuous layer of sand, usually deposited by wind. Often causes the rapid burial of archaeological sites and landscapes.

crannog: An artificial island in a lake, usually built as the foundation for a dwelling. Common in the British Isles during the Iron Age and the medieval period. *See also* lake dwelling.

cremation: Incineration of a body.

crucible: A vessel in which compounds, particularly precious metals, are heated or calcined.

cruciform: In the form of a cross.

CT scan: An image produced through computed tomography (CT), which gives a cross-sectional “slice” through an object. CT images are sensitive to materials of various densities so that, for example, when a scanner is used on a body, the image clearly shows both soft tissue and bone. Individual “slices” also can be combined to produce three-dimensional representations. Also known as a “computerized axial tomography (CAT) scan.”

cuirasse: A protective garment, usually of leather, covering the torso from waist to neck.

cultigen: A domesticated species for which the wild ancestor is unknown, although the term is sometimes used to refer to cultivated plant species more generally.

cultivar: A horticulturally or agriculturally derived plant species, as distinguished from its wild counterpart.

Danegeld: Payments by Anglo-Saxons in an effort to stop raids by Scandinavians in the late tenth century A.D. Anglo-Saxon coins found in Scandinavia often are associated with these payments.

delayed-return foragers: A group with a hunting-and-gathering system in which return on labor invested in collecting or managing resources is not immediate.

debitage: Waste material created in the process of making and retouching stone tools.

demic diffusion: A wave-of-advance model postulating that a rising population and random migration of small groups drove the spread of Neolithic culture across Europe. Demes are small populations of closely related individuals.

denarius (pl. denarii): A type of coin, usually struck from silver but also from gold. Originally a Roman type of coin, denarii also were minted in the medieval period.

dendrochronology: Tree-ring dating. A dating technique that matches variation in tree-ring width from a wood sample to a master pattern reconstructed from sequences extending from the present backward into antiquity.

denticulate: Serrated or possessing numerous toothlike projections. Used to describe the results of a particular process of retouching the edge of a stone tool.

diffusion: The spread of traits and behaviors through contact between people. Often associated with the belief that traits and behaviors have a single point of origin and appear elsewhere only through imitation.

direct dating: Direct dating applies a technique of absolute dating (such as carbon-14 dating) to an artifact (or organic material) or an ecofact to establish its age rather than relying on the dating of associated material such as charcoal from the same context.

dirham: An Arabic silver coin of the medieval period and later. Also spelled “dirhem.”

- disarticulated:** Disconnected or disjointed. Used particularly in reference to bones moved out of their original relationship with one another.
- dolmen:** A megalithic monument constructed from upright stone slabs supporting a capstone slab. Also used as a generic term for “megalithic chambered tombs.”
- downland:** An elevated landscape in southern England with rolling hills and a thin layer of soil derived from underlying chalk beds. Owing to extensive grazing, downlands are now associated with low, grassy vegetation; however, before the advent of grazing, downlands were wooded.
- droveway:** A pathway along which animals are driven or herded, usually defined by earthen banks.
- drystone (walling):** Stone masonry constructed without the use of mortar.
- dugout boat:** A boat made from a hollowed-out tree or log.
- dump rampart:** A defensive earthwork consisting of a wide, flat-bottomed ditch outside a steep bank. Also known as a “*Fécamp* rampart.”
- dyke:** A linear earthwork built as a fortification to protect a large region. Also spelled “dike.”
- ear spool:** An object, usually disk shaped, inserted into a perforation in the earlobe. Perforations can reach several inches in diameter through insertion of increasingly larger spools.
- earthwork:** A monument constructed from earth and other material piled into a bank or a mound.
- ecofact:** An item that is neither made nor modified by humans but can provide information on past environments and/or the ways these environments were used by past peoples.
- ecotone:** An area of transition between ecological habitats or communities.
- einkorn:** The common name for an early domestic species of wheat (*Triticum monococcum*) and its wild relatives. One of two early types of wheat domesticated in the Near East. *See also* emmer.
- electrum:** An alloy of silver and gold.
- elm decline:** A reduction in the prevalence of elms occurring c. 3800 B.C., near the time of the first appearance of agriculture in northern Europe. There has been much debate about whether the change is anthropogenic or due to other factors, such as disease.
- emmer:** The common name for an early domesticated species of wheat (*Triticum dicoccum*) and its wild relatives. One of two early types of wheat domesticated in the Near East. *See also* einkorn.
- emporium (pl. emporia):** A trade and manufacturing settlement connected to a long-distance exchange network, often founded and administered through royal control. These settlements were centers of urbanization in medieval Europe, although the status of individual settlements as truly urban is debated.
- enamel hypoplasia:** A horizontal indentation running across tooth enamel and resulting from a period of malnutrition.
- Epipalaeolithic:** In Europe this term refers to Palaeolithic cultures existing after the end of the last glaciation. Often used to create a distinction with Mesolithic cultures, but occasionally the terms are used as synonyms. In the eastern Mediterranean the term is used to refer to terminal Pleistocene hunter-gatherers.
- epistemology:** Study of the basis for and nature of human knowledge, with emphasis on its limitations.
- ethnogenesis:** A process that results in the creation or redefinition of ethnic identities.
- eustasy/eustatic:** A rise in sea level.
- excarnation:** A burial custom involving removal of soft tissue through exposure or other means before deposition of skeletal remains.
- extended burial:** Deposition of a body in a grave with legs straightened.
- faience:** A glassy substance made from baked clay and shaped into ornaments, beads, and other jewelry. Also used as a slip on pottery.
- faunal analysis:** *See* zooarchaeology.
- faunal spectrum:** The range of animals identified in a zooarchaeological assemblage.
- feature:** A nonportable component of an archaeological site. Common types include burials, walls, and pits.

Fécamp rampart: See dump rampart.

fen: A low-lying marshy area at least partly covered by water, usually with basic or neutral pH (in contrast to a bog, which has acidic pH).

fibula (pl. fibulae): 1. A Latin term for a metal pin with a clasp, used to fasten garments and similar in design to a safety pin. Often highly ornamented with forms specific to a particular time and place. 2. The lateral and smaller of the two bones in the lower leg. Articulates with the tibia (shinbone).

field system: A set of agricultural fields that articulate with one another.

filigree: A decorative design made from fine wire affixed to the surface of an object. Also, other ornamental work intended to resemble such wirework.

fire dog: Iron stands for logs burning in a hearth. Also known as “andirons.”

flagon: A metal or ceramic vessel with a handle, a spout, and usually a hinged lid.

flake: A thin piece of stone removed from a core in the process of making stone tools. Refers to both pieces used as tools and waste products.

flat grave: A burial executed without a mound or other prominent aboveground structure.

flexed burial: Deposition of a body with the legs pulled up to the torso. The body also is often placed on its side. Also known as a “contracted burial.”

flotation: A process for retrieving minute plant remains difficult to recover through hand collection. Sediments are poured into moving water, and the light material is held in suspension so that it can be collected in a fine mesh sieve.

foederatus (pl. foederati): Roman irregular troops, drawn from outside the empire and often given land grants in return for service.

foragers: Groups acquiring food and other resources primarily through hunting and gathering.

Free Germany: The area associated with Germanic peoples living beyond the formal boundary of the Roman Empire.

frontlet: A band worn across the forehead.

Fürstengrab (pl. Fürstengräber): A German term for a burial possessing unusually rich assemblages of burial goods, commonly associated with the Iron Age. From the German words *Fürst*, meaning “prince,” and *Grab*, meaning “grave.”

Fürstensitz (pl. Fürstensitze): A German term for a defended hilltop settlement possessing a permanent population and associated with unusually rich material culture, commonly of the Iron Age. From the German words *Fürst*, meaning “prince,” and *Sitz*, meaning “seat.”

gallery grave: A form of chambered tomb with no distinction between the entrance passage and the burial chamber, giving the interior a hall-like shape. Also known as “*allée couverte*.”

geoarchaeology: Archaeological research using the methods and theories of geology and other earth sciences, usually with an emphasis on soil formation processes and postdepositional changes in archaeological deposits.

geochemical: Relating to the chemical properties of geological features or compounds.

Geographic Information Systems (GIS): A database program for mapping and analyzing spatial data. Used, for example, to generate maps illustrating the relationship between the availability of water and the distribution of artifacts in a landscape.

geomorphology: The study of processes creating and reshaping landscapes.

geophysical: Relating to the form and composition of geological features. Often used as a generic term for various noninvasive survey techniques that utilize differences in the physical properties of buried features and surrounding soils, such as resistivity and magnetometry studies.

glacis: A gentle incline, especially the slope below a fortification.

Global Positioning System (GPS): A satellite-based system for determining longitude, latitude, and sometimes elevation.

gold foil: Gold hammered into an extremely thin sheet. Used to gild objects.

grindstone: Stone used for milling grain. See also quern.

- groove-and-splinter technique:** A means of creating elongated plaques of bone, antler, and other materials that can be worked into tools. Parallel grooves are cut into the surface of the material. Beginning at one end of the grooves, the plaque is pried up until it is “splintered” off at the other end of the grooves.
- ground-penetrating radar:** A noninvasive method of identifying subterranean features in which radar waves are directed into the ground. The reflected energy is measured and analyzed to produce horizontal and vertical maps of subsurface features.
- groundstone (tool):** A type of stone tool, often an axe, with an edge created by grinding against an abrasive material.
- hafting:** Placing a point or other tool into another material to create a shaft or handle, as in an axe head affixed to a wooden shaft.
- halberd:** An axe-like weapon with a pointed blade mounted at a right angle to the shaft. Common in the Bronze Age.
- hand axe:** A type of stone tool that is bifacially modified, with an edge running around the circumference of the tool. Often teardrop shaped. Also called a biface.
- henge:** A circular enclosure defined by a bank and ditch, often with the ditch placed inside the bank (the opposite of the arrangement used for defensive purposes). Common internal features include pits, burials, structures, and stone circles. Usually dating to the Neolithic or Bronze Age.
- hillfort:** An enclosed settlement located on high ground. The enclosure can be defensive and/or ceremonial. Some hillforts appear to have had large numbers of inhabitants. Others have little evidence of habitation.
- historiography:** The study of how history is written. Particularly, theories about how history should be constructed from the limited knowledge available.
- Holocene:** A geological epoch extending from the end of the last glaciation, c. 9500 B.C., up to the present. The Holocene in Europe is conventionally divided into the following periods: Preboreal, Boreal, Atlantic, Subboreal, and Subatlantic.
- horizontal excavation:** An excavation technique that involves removing individual layers by following their horizontal extent before moving on to lower layers.
- hunebed:** Megalithic tombs of Germany and the Netherlands. Derived from the Old German word *hune*, meaning “big” or “huge.”
- hypocaust:** A gravity-based central heating system developed by the Romans, in which hot air is drawn from a furnace into spaces under a floor.
- indirect percussion:** A stone-tool production technique. Instead of striking a core directly with a hammer stone, force is directed more precisely by placing an antler point or other material on the core and striking it with a hammer stone. Associated with the production of blades.
- inhumation:** A burial practice in which bodies are not extensively modified before deposition.
- interfluve:** The land between two waterways flowing in the same direction.
- interglacial:** A climatic period with relatively warm temperatures and retreating glaciers that occurs between colder periods when glaciers are advancing.
- intramural burial:** Deposition of a body within a settlement.
- isostasy/isostatic:** The rising land levels that occur after glaciers retreat and the Earth’s crust returns to its equilibrium position after being pressed down by the weight of ice.
- isotopic analysis:** Analysis of the combination of isotopes (varieties of an element) within an object. Used to reconstruct diet and provenance.
- jet:** A type of fossil wood that is dense, hard, and black. Often polished and worked into jewelry.
- karst:** A landscape with underground streams, caverns, and sinkholes resulting from the erosion of limestone bedrock.
- keratinous:** Of or relating to the fibrous tissue that characterizes horns, hooves, and fingernails.
- kin group:** A population of closely related individuals, usually larger than a family group of parents and children. The boundaries of such groups vary from culture to culture.

- knapp:** To remove flakes of stone in the process of making stone tools. An individual who knaps flint is known as a “flintknapper.”
- krater (pl. kraterae):** A vessel with a rounded body and wide mouth, used for mixing and serving wine.
- kyrgan:** A burial mound or barrow, especially in Eastern Europe and Siberia. *Kurgans* gave their name to an archaeological culture in this area that is also characterized by wheeled vehicles and copperworking.
- kylix:** A drinking vessel usually made of ceramic or metal and with two horizontal handles.
- ladder of inferences:** A term for the theory that archaeologists confront an ascending scale of difficulty in studying different components of a society. Technological and ecological components are thought to be the least difficult to study. Economic and political organization are thought to be more difficult and ideology or religious beliefs the most difficult. Accordingly, archaeologists must be increasingly circumspect about their interpretations as they ascend these different “rungs.” Critics of this theory argue that the perception of increasing difficulty results from archaeologists’ approach and is not an inherent property of archaeological data. This theory is also known as Hawkes’s ladder, after Christopher Hawkes, who elaborated the theory in a 1954 article.
- laetus (pl. laeti):** A Latin term for a prisoner of war or other non-taxpayer, often from groups outside the Roman empire, recruited into the Roman military. *Laeti* were given grants of land in return for their service.
- lake dwelling:** A settlement built along the shoreline of a lake, especially in Alpine areas during the Neolithic and Bronze Age. *See also* crannog.
- lead isotope analysis:** A type of isotope analysis that assesses the prevalence of different lead isotopes in an object made from lead or in other materials containing traces of lead. Used to establish provenance. *See also* isotope analysis.
- leister:** A fishing spear with several barbed prongs, thrust down over the back of the fish to grip it.
- lime:** 1. Calcium oxide, at times with other materials added. Used in making mortar. 2. European name for trees of the genus *Tilia*, which flourish in temperate climates. Also known as “linden” in North America.
- limes:** The fortified Roman imperial frontier, used specifically with reference to the Rhine-Danube frontier in central Europe but often applied to other Roman imperial borders as well.
- Linearbandkeramik:** An early Neolithic archaeological culture in central Europe characterized by the presence of pottery decorated with incised linear motifs. Also known as the “Linear Pottery culture.”
- lintel:** Wood, stone, or other material placed across the top of an opening in a wall as reinforcement. Also used to describe a megalith resting in a horizontal position across other upright megaliths.
- lithic:** Made of or relating to stone.
- littoral zone:** 1. The lands surrounding a body of water. 2. The shoreline between the high and low waterlines.
- loess:** A dense, pale yellow type of soil consisting largely of glacial debris deposited by wind.
- longhouse:** A rectangular structure, often constructed using wooden posts, that is relatively long compared to its width. A common dwelling type in both the Neolithic and the Iron Age.
- loom weight:** An object, usually of stone or clay, tied to the warp strings of a loom to maintain tension during weaving.
- lost-wax technique:** A method of metal casting in which an object is modeled in wax. Then a mold of clay, sand, or other material is formed around the wax object. When molten metal is poured into the mold, the wax is “lost” and replaced by a metal copy of the original shape.
- lur (pl. lurer):** A long, curved horn made of metal, often cast in sections. Produced in Scandinavia during the Bronze Age.
- mace-head:** A heavy, blunt weapon similar to a sledgehammer with a rounded head. Often decorated and carried as a symbol of authority.
- magnetometry:** A noninvasive survey technique that collects data about small-scale changes in the electromagnetic properties of an area to identify subsurface features.

- mandible:** The lower jawbone.
- matriliny:** The practice of tracing descent through the maternal line.
- matrilocal:** A residence pattern in which a married couple lives with or near the wife's family.
- megalith:** A large, flat stone used architecturally to construct a monument or portion of a monument, such as a tomb, henge, or alignment. Usually not modified by further working.
- menhir:** A single upright megalith.
- meseta:** Spanish term for a tableland or mesa. A flat and elevated area that has an abrupt rise from the surrounding landscape. The term is used for areas larger than a butte.
- metapodials:** Elongated bones located between the wrist and fingers or between the ankle and toes. Known as "metacarpals" in the hand and "metatarsals" in the foot. The number and shape of these bones vary significantly between species.
- microburin technique:** A technique for producing microliths. A notch is removed from a blade. The blade is then snapped, creating a microlith and a by-product with a burin form (a microburin).
- microlith:** A small stone tool created by snapping a blade into a series of smaller pieces or removing a blade from a very small core. Usually hafted into wood or other material.
- midden:** A trash dump. More specifically, an accumulation of debris, usually food and other occupation refuse, deposited in a defined area, such as a hole in the ground or a portion of a settlement.
- mitochondrial DNA:** A type of DNA existing outside the cell nucleus, where most DNA is located. In sperm, mitochondrial DNA (mtDNA) is located in the region that does not enter the egg. Consequently, mtDNA is inherited matrilineally and is not recombined with each new generation. Since mtDNA has a constant rate of mutation, the difference between the mtDNA of two individuals is a function of the time elapsed since they shared a female ancestor. Best known for its use in identifying a last common ancestor for all modern humans, the so-called mitochondrial Eve.
- moraine/morainic:** A term used for a variety of landscapes resulting from the accumulation of soil and other material moved and deposited through glacial activity, frequently in the form of linear ridges.
- mordant:** A substance that combines with dye to create an insoluble compound that fixes to cloth.
- moldboard plow:** A plow fitted with a blade that turns over the soil as it cuts a furrow. Also known as a "heavy plow" because it is used to farm soils too heavy for an ard.
- multivallate/multivallation:** Possessing more than one enclosing bank and/or ditch.
- murus Gallicus:** Julius Caesar's term for ramparts surrounding Gallic towns. They had external faces of timber and stone. They were also reinforced with timbers buried perpendicular to the external face and extending backward into the earthen backing.
- necropolis:** Greek for "city of the dead." A cemetery, generally one associated with a settlement but located outside its limits.
- Neustria:** The western portion of the Frankish empire (the area under the control of Merovingian and Carolingian rulers).
- New Archaeology:** A set of approaches to archaeological interpretation emphasizing the value of hypothesis testing and other scientific methods, the need for incorporating ecology into explanations of social change, and a view of society as composed of interacting subsystems with discrete relationships to one another. Also known as "processual archaeology."
- nuraghe (pl. nuraghi):** Circular stone towers, often with corbeled chambers inside. Associated with the Bronze Age in Sardinia.
- obsidian:** Volcanic glass, a valued material for stone toolmaking.
- ochre:** A naturally occurring substance consisting largely of iron oxide. The color of ochre depends on the variety of iron oxide. The most common colors are red and yellow. Used as a pigment and a decoration. Also spelled "ocher."
- ogham:** A type of script with approximately twenty letters consisting of lines arranged along or

across a baseline. Known most commonly from inscriptions along the edge of a stone pillar. Probably originating in the fourth century A.D., ogham is found around the Irish Sea littoral, particularly in Ireland. Also spelled “ogam.”

open-cast (mining): A mining technique in which the overburden is removed to uncover the desired material, as opposed to deep mining, which involves tunneling underground.

oppidum (pl. oppida): A Latin term for a large fortified settlement of the Iron Age, often located on hilltops and other elevated locations. They acted as centers for habitation, trade, and manufacturing. Julius Caesar used the term to describe settlements in Gaul.

orthostat: An upright stone slab in a megalithic monument.

outworks: A secondary defensive structure, usually an earthwork, constructed beyond or as an extension of primary defenses.

oxhide ingots: An ingot is a mass of metal cast into a convenient and/or standardized shape for storage and transport. Oxhide ingots are cast in a shape reminiscent of the stretched hide of an ox.

oxygen isotope analysis: A technique for reconstructing past climatic conditions. Ocean water and rainwater have different ratios of two oxygen isotopes. In cold periods, when rainwater is locked in glaciers, ocean water has a different ratio than it does during warm periods, when glaciers are smaller and more rainwater returns to the ocean. Changes in the ratio are recorded in the remains of foraminifera, organisms that absorb oxygen isotopes during their life. These organisms fall to the ocean floor at death and are retrieved by coring the ocean floor.

P-Celtic: One of two branches of the Celtic family of languages. Also known as Brittonic, this group includes Welsh, Breton, and Cornish. The other branch is known as Q-Celtic, or Goidelic, and includes Irish, Manx, and Scottish Gaelic. The division is based on phonological differences between the two groups that appear to extend into extinct Celtic languages.

palaeoanthropology: The study of early human and hominid evolution and history, particularly

during periods associated with species ancestral to *Homo sapiens*. Palaeoanthropologists often study both human fossils and the archaeological remains associated with them.

palaeoethnobotany: The study of plant utilization and beliefs about plants in ancient societies.

palaeosol: A buried land surface or soil horizon. Indicative of past environmental conditions. Also spelled “paleosol.”

palisade: A fence of stakes, usually creating a defensive enclosure.

palmette: A decorative motif in the form of a palm frond.

palstave: A type of axe head with flanges that facilitate hafting.

palynology: *See* pollen analysis.

paramount chiefdom: A disproportionately strong chiefdom, usually with authority over subordinate chiefdoms.

passage grave: A type of chambered tomb with a narrow passageway leading to a central chamber.

pastoralism: A social organization based on managing livestock.

patriliney: The practice of tracing descent through the paternal line.

patron-client system: The practice of loaning goods to subordinates. The terms of the loan usually require the return of the original grant plus additional goods and/or services.

penannular brooches: A type of brooch with a circular ring interrupted at one point. The two terminal ends of the ring are often enlarged and highly ornamented.

petroglyph: A drawing carved into rock. Usually reserved for works on large boulders or immobile outcroppings of stone.

phenomenology: The study of the experience and awareness of being human in a material and social world. Also the study of acts of perception and self-awareness and their cognitive implications. In archaeology this perspective has fostered attempts to understand monuments based on the experience of being in a particular landscape and of moving through and around monuments.

- phosphate analysis/mapping:** Phosphates are abundant in animal waste, fat, and other organic materials. Geochemical analysis identifies concentrations of phosphates in archaeological sites as a method of reconstructing how an area was utilized.
- phytolith:** A silica structure formed between plant cells. Phytoliths are useful to archaeobotanists because they often have species-specific forms and remain when other portions of plants decay.
- piling:** A timber driven into the ground to serve as the foundation of a building. Also known as a “pile.”
- pit house:** A structure with its floor dug below ground level, often with timber walls and a gabled roof supported by posts. Also known as a “Grubenhäuser” or a “sunken-featured building” (SFB).
- pithos* (pl. *pithoi*):** A ceramic vessel used for the storage of oil, grain, and other materials. Also used as a container for bodies in certain inhumation practices.
- Pleistocene:** The geological epoch beginning approximately 1.8 million years ago and ending about ten thousand years ago with the beginning of the Holocene. This period is characterized by alternating periods during which glaciers expanded and contracted. *See also* interglacial.
- pollen analysis:** The study of pollen with the aim of reconstructing changes in vegetation through time. Also known as “palynology.”
- polymetallic ores:** Ores with more than one predominant metal.
- pommel mount:** An attachment creating a knob or similar protuberance at the end of the hilt of a sword. Often highly decorated.
- postdepositional:** Of or relating to occurrences after an object has been buried.
- post-processual archaeology:** A disparate set of approaches to archaeological interpretation that developed in reaction to perceived limitations in processual archaeology and the scientific method in general. Post-processualists emphasize the influence of assumptions and biases that investigators bring to research and the impossibility of escaping their influence. Instead of attempting to escape those biases, post-processualists advocate use of a defined ideological perspective. This perspective also tends to view artifacts as lacking intrinsic or absolute meaning. They are best understood as evocative of meanings from the contexts in which they were used.
- posthole:** A pit dug for the insertion of a timber, stone pillar, or other similar upright object. Such pits are then backfilled to pack material around the post. Usage of this term varies. At times its meaning is restricted to only the space occupied by the post itself. That space is often preserved as a darker soil than the fill of the entire pit. Such features are also known as “post pipes” or “post molds.” With this usage, the entire hole is generally called a “post pit.”
- potin:** A bronze alloy with a high proportion of tin.
- PPNA:** An abbreviation of Pre-Pottery Neolithic A, a subdivision of the Aceramic Neolithic in the Near East dated between 8500 B.C. and 7600 B.C.
- PPNB:** An abbreviation of Pre-Pottery Neolithic B, a subdivision of the Aceramic Neolithic in the Near East dated between 7600 B.C. and 6000 B.C.
- Preboreal climatic period:** A subdivision of the Holocene epoch in northern Europe. Extends from c. 9500 B.C. to 8500 B.C. During this first period of the Holocene, forests colonized northern Europe. *See also* Boreal, Atlantic, Subboreal, and Subatlantic climatic periods.
- preceramic:** A term used for an aceramic period of the Neolithic period in Greece, Crete, and Cyprus. *See* Aceramic Neolithic.
- pressure flaking:** A method for retouching stone flakes by pressing down with a sharpened piece of antler or other similar object, rather than striking the flake with a hammer. The application of pressure detaches a small, flat flake.
- processual archaeology:** *See* New Archaeology.
- provenance:** The location where an object was found. In archaeology the find spot of an artifact is usually expressed as a point in the three-dimensional space of an archaeological excavation. Also spelled “provenience.”

- quern:** A grinding stone, usually operated by hand.
- rachis:** In plant anatomy, the term for the structure that connects a seed casing to the stalk of a plant. This structure is more robust in domestic varieties of wheat than in their wild progenitors.
- radiocarbon dating:** A radiometric dating technique based on the decay of carbon 14. The amount of carbon 14 in an organism begins to decrease at death because the organism is no longer taking up the isotope from its environment. By measuring the amount of carbon 14, it is possible to estimate the time elapsed since the death of an organism. The primary limitations of the technique are that atmospheric carbon-14 levels vary over time (complicating calculation of how much carbon 14 was in an organism at death) and that it is generally not useful for objects more than fifty thousand years old (owing to the short half-life of carbon 14).
- radiolarite:** A type of chert formed predominantly from the siliceous remains of a marine zooplankton called radiolaria. Used in making stone tools. *See also* chert.
- radiometric dating:** An absolute dating technique utilizing the radioactive decay of atoms. Since radioactive isotopes have predictable rates of decay, the amount of an isotope in an object is linked to the age of the object.
- ranked society:** A society in which access to resources is unevenly distributed. A stratified or hierarchical society.
- rath:** *See* ringfort.
- red ochre:** *See* ochre.
- redistribution:** The collection of goods and subsequent allotment of those goods to group members. Often associated with the development and maintenance of centralized authority in a ranked society. *See* chiefdom.
- relative dating:** Dating methods that rely on stratigraphy and artifact typology to establish the chronological position of finds in relation to one another but without the assignment of an age in years. Used primarily prior to the development of absolute dating methods such as carbon-14 dating.
- repoussé:** A decorative technique in which ornamentation is pressed or hammered into the back of sheet metal.
- resistivity survey:** A noninvasive technique for investigating subsurface features that is based on variation in the resistance to electric current offered by different materials. Resistivity is measured by passing current between two probes.
- revetment/torevet:** A facing, usually of stone, used to reinforce an embankment.
- retouch:** Secondary working of a flake or other stone tool to modify its shape or edge quality. Retouching generally involves removing smaller flakes through indirect percussion or pressure flaking.
- ringfort:** A type of enclosure common in early medieval Ireland, usually 30–40 meters in diameter. Enclosures are defined by banks, ditches, and stone walls. Ringforts were often used as lightly defended farmsteads, although some have yielded little evidence of occupation. Also known as “raths.”
- roundhouse:** A structure with a circular perimeter. A common type of dwelling across northwestern Europe, particularly in the British Isles.
- rune/runic:** A letter in one of several alphabets used by Germanic groups in the early medieval period. Often found as inscriptions on stones (rune stones).
- sarsen:** A type of sandstone used in building megalithic monuments.
- satrap:** Originally a provincial governor in Persia. Used as a generic term for a local potentate.
- sceatta:** An Anglo-Saxon or Frisian silver coin.
- scramasax:** A short, single-edged stabbing sword.
- scriptorium:** An area of a monastery devoted to copying manuscripts.
- Secondary Products Revolution:** The theory that after an initial period of domestication, when humans used animals for primary products, such as meat and hides, a change occurred in animal exploitation as humans began to use animals as sources of milk, wool, traction, and other “secondary” products. Some argue that no such radical change occurred and that the apparent revolution is only an intensification of previous practices.

- semiflexed burial:** Deposition of a body with the legs pulled only partially toward the torso. The body also is often placed on its side.
- seriation:** A chronological ordering of artifacts according to changes in frequency, form, and decoration.
- settlement pattern:** A characterization of the way in which habitations and other structures are arranged across a landscape, including such variables as form, size, distribution, and density.
- shell midden:** An accumulation of refuse from the collection and consumption of shellfish. Burials, tools, and other types of refuse are often included.
- sherd:** A fragment of pottery or worked clay. Also known as “shard” or “potsherd.”
- shield boss:** An attachment to the center of a shield, often dome shaped or pointed.
- shifting cultivation:** An agricultural system in which areas are cleared of native vegetation, cultivated, and then left unused for a period of time to replenish the soil with nutrients. *See also* bush fallow cultivation and swidden.
- ship setting:** A Viking period Scandinavian burial monument characterized by an oval arrangement of stones in the outline of a boat, usually with taller stones representing stern and bow posts.
- site:** Any location where artifacts, ecofacts, or archaeological features are found. Types of sites range from a scatter of a few flints to an entire city.
- situla (pl. *situlae*):** A bucket-shaped vessel, usually of pottery or bronze.
- slag:** Refuse from smelting metal. Usually a glassy, porous, and fused material.
- sling stone:** A rock collected for use as a missile and thrown with a sling. Often found as caches on the perimeter of defended settlements.
- slip:** Viscous material applied to the surface of pottery before firing. Composed of clay, water, and often colorants or other additives.
- smelting/smelted:** The process of refining ore in a furnace.
- solidus:** A Roman gold coin.
- sounding:** A test pit dug through the layers of a site to allow for preliminary investigation of a site’s stratigraphy and underlying features.
- souterrains:** A subterranean chamber constructed from stone. Common in Ireland, western Britain, and Scotland.
- spectrographic analysis:** A technique for identifying the combination of elements in an object. Often an object possesses a unique combination of trace elements that allows archaeologists to define its origin. The presence of trace elements is identified by measuring the wavelengths of radiation emitted from samples.
- spindle whorls:** An implement used in spinning thread and yarn to maintain the momentum of a rotating spindle. Usually made from stone or clay in the form of a disk or sphere with a hole in the middle.
- stable carbon isotopes:** Forms of carbon that do not naturally undergo radioactive decay. Commonly used in studies of provenance and diet.
- stater:** A Greek coin of gold or silver.
- steatite:** A relatively soft type of stone, well suited to carving and working into vessels. Also known as “soapstone.”
- stela (pl. *stelae*):** A stone pillar, usually with carving and/or inscriptions.
- stratigraphy:** The layering of sediments into successive strata or the analysis of the results of this process. A cornerstone of archaeological interpretation is that, barring evidence of subsequent disturbance, lower strata were formed in an earlier period than higher strata.
- strontium isotopes:** Forms of a mineral component of bone that are absorbed from the environment through diet and other means. Used to reconstruct diet.
- Subatlantic climatic period:** A subdivision of the Holocene epoch in northern Europe that begins c. 800 B.C. and extends to the present. As with the Subboreal, cooler temperatures than are found in the Atlantic characterize the Subatlantic period. *See also* Preboreal, Boreal, Atlantic, and Subboreal climatic periods.
- Subboreal climatic period:** A subdivision of the Holocene epoch in northern Europe that began

c. 3800 B.C. and ended c. 800 B.C. Cooler temperatures than are found in the Atlantic characterize the period. *See also* Preboreal, Boreal, Atlantic, and Subatlantic climatic periods.

sub-Roman: A term for groups or territories without an Anglo-Saxon material culture in the period following Roman rule in Britain. Used in preference to the term “post-Roman” because many characteristics of Roman culture endured into the medieval period. Also used in preference to “British” or “Celtic” because “sub-Roman” is less ethnically specific and charged by historical debate.

successor states: Political units that emerge after the collapse of an empire or other expansive and centralized organization.

supine: Lying face up with limbs extended.

survey: The process of investigating and recording the archaeological assets of an area, usually without extensive excavation.

swidden: An agricultural field created by cutting, burning, or otherwise removing wild vegetation. Usually part of a shifting cultivation system.

taiga: *See* boreal forest.

taphonomy/taphonomic: The study of the processes affecting the remains of organisms, particularly bones, between death and final embedding in the ground. Relevant processes include gnawing by scavengers and dispersal by flowing water.

tell: A mound in the Near East or southeastern Europe created by building successive settlements, usually from mud bricks, on the same location. Synonymous terms include “tepe” and “hüyük.”

temper/tempered: 1. Material, such as coarse sand or ground shell, added to clay in the process of making pottery. The additive makes clay more workable and reduces cracking during firing. 2. The process of hardening metal, particularly iron, by repeated cooling and heating.

tephra/tephrochronology: Particulate material ejected during volcanic eruptions. When it becomes incorporated into sediment in a landscape, tephra can be used to date the formation

of that sediment. For relative dating, in areas where the sequence of eruptions is known, it is possible to correlate the stratigraphy of samples from different areas that possess layers of tephra. Tephra is also useful for absolute dating because the unique form of tephra from some individual eruptions is known.

terp (pl. *terpen*): A mound on the coastal plain of the Netherlands and Germany created to raise a settlement above wet ground.

terra sigillata: A type of fine mass-produced Mediterranean tableware pottery. Made with a glossy red slip applied to its surface. Produced and exported across Europe from the first century B.C. through the second century A.D.

terremare: An Italian term for a mound created during the Bronze Age by successive settlements built on the same location.

tholos: A stone chamber capped by a corbeled vault.

Three Age System: The chronology running from the Stone Age to the Bronze Age to the Iron Age. Developed early in the nineteenth century on the basis of the sequence of change in prehistoric tool technology. The defining characteristics of each age have been refined and elaborated considerably since then. For example, the Neolithic is now defined primarily by the use of domestic animals and plants.

toponym: Place name.

torc: A neck ring, often of gold or bronze. Also spelled “torque.”

transgression: The flooding of land, usually due to a rise in sea level.

transhumance: The movement of livestock seasonally between upland and lowland pasture.

trapeze: A microlith shaped into the form of a trapezoid (two parallel sides and two convergent sides).

trefoil: A decorative motif in the shape of a trifoliate leaf, such as a clover.

tremissis: A Merovingian gold coin.

trepanation: Medical procedure involving the removal of a piece of a living human’s skull. Some skulls bear traces of the survival of multiple trepanations.

trilithon: A megalithic monument composed of two upright stone slabs supporting a capstone slab, most famously at Stonehenge.

tufa: Rock formed of calcium carbonate deposited from ground or surface water, as in the material from which a stalagmite is formed. Used as an architectural material. Archaeologists also analyze samples for data about past climates. Also known as “travertine.”

tuff: A geological layer formed of volcanic ash and other material. Also rock composed of compacted or fused volcanic material.

tumulus: A mound constructed from earth or stone, generally circular and containing a burial. Also known as a “barrow” or “*kurgan*.”

tuyere: A nozzle used to direct air from a bellows into a metalworking furnace. Often the only surviving evidence of metalworking.

type site: A find spot that gives its name to, or is used as an exemplar of, a type of settlement, an artifact, or an archaeological culture, usually because it is the location of the first discovery or is the most representative example.

typology: An ordering of objects into categories, usually based on form and decoration.

urbanism: Characteristic of an urban center and the associated ways of life.

urnfield: A cemetery of cremations placed in urns and buried in pits. A burial rite associated with the Late Bronze Age.

Viereckschanze (pl. *Viereckschanzen*): A rectilinear enclosure defined by a bank and ditch. The fre-

quent presence within the enclosure of pits and wells containing votive deposits fosters interpretation of these monuments as ritual enclosures, although some argue that they were habitations as well.

viticulture: The cultivation of grapes.

vitricified fort: A hillfort with an exterior wall face that is smoothed and fused together by heat and wind.

wattle and daub: A technique for constructing walls. Wattles are thin rods or tree shoots woven between stakes planted in the ground. Daub is mud, dung, or another type of plaster spread over the wattling.

wave-of-advance model: A theory that postulates a steady rate of spread, usually of cultural traits, across a landscape over time. Principally associated with the demic diffusion model for agriculture in Europe.

weir: A barrier set in water to channel fish or other quarry into a trap or a fence in tidal areas over which fish can swim in at high tide but cannot swim out at low tide and thus are trapped on the tidal flat.

withe: A slender branch or shoot.

wurt (pl. *wurten*): See *terp*.

zooarchaeology: The study of animal remains from archaeological sites.

zoomorphic: In the shape of or possessing characteristics of an animal.

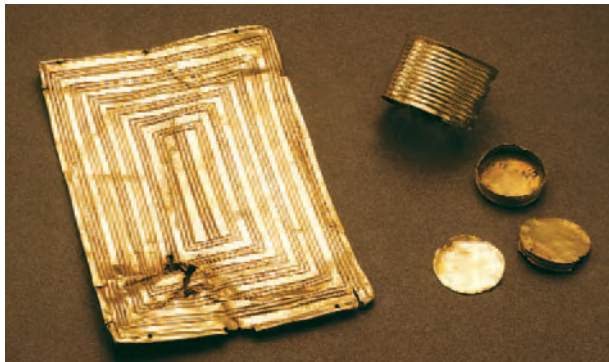


Stonehenge The ritual monument of Stonehenge as it appears today. First built during the Neolithic period, Stonehenge experienced several construction phases before being abandoned in the middle of the second millennium B.C. © BOB KRIST/CORBIS. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.



RIGHT: Bronze Age Cyprus A funnel-shaped faience “Rhyton” (ceremonial vessel) of the thirteenth century B.C., from the excavations at Kition, Cyprus. The surface of the vessel is covered with a layer of blue enamel and is divided into three horizontal bands, with the design elements painted in black, yellow, and green, and inlaid with red enamel. © GIANNI DAGLI ORTI/CORBIS. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

LEFT: Bronze Age Britain and Ireland Goldwork and amber necklace from the grave group at Little Cressingham, Norfolk, c. 1800–1500 B.C. These goods were acquired by exchange and indicate the wealth of the deceased. © THE TRUSTEES OF THE NATIONAL MUSEUMS OF SCOTLAND. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.





TOP LEFT: Celts Celtic helmet surmounted by vulture, fourth century B.C. THE ART ARCHIVE/NATIONAL MUSEUM BUCHAREST/DAGLI ORTI. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

BELOW: Bronze Age Scandinavia The “sun chariot” of bronze found in a bog at Trundholm in northwestern Zealand, Denmark, dates to c. 1500 B.C. The horse and the spiral-decorated sun disk are situated on a wagon, probably together forming a cult device. © ARCHIVO ICONOGRAFICO, S.A./CORBIS. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.





TOP RIGHT: The Heuneburg Model of the Heuneburg, Heuneburg Museum. This Early Iron Age hillfort housed thousands of people, c. 600–450 B.C. ROSE HAJDU, FOTOGRAFIE, STUTT GART. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.





TOP LEFT: Coinage of the Early Middle Ages Visigothic pseudo-imperial gold tremissis, c. seventh century A.D. THE AMERICAN NUMISMATIC SOCIETY, NEW YORK. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

BELOW LEFT: Migration Period Peoples: Picts Pictish silver hoard from St. Ninian's Isle, Shetland. This hoard of monastic silver is from c. A.D. 800. © THE TRUSTEES OF THE NATIONAL MUSEUMS OF SCOTLAND. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

BELOW RIGHT: Migration Period Peoples: Ostrogoths Ivory of Amalasantha, queen of the Ostrogoths, c. A.D. 530. Amalasantha's short reign ended with her murder in A.D. 535. KUNSTHISTORISCHES MUSEUM, WIEN. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.





TOP LEFT: Dark Age/Early Medieval Scotland The Hunterston brooch, c. A.D. 700, was found in the early nineteenth century in Ayrshire, Scotland, and named after the estate on which it was found. It is one of the finest examples of Celtic goldsmiths' art. © THE TRUSTEES OF THE NATIONAL MUSEUM OF SCOTLAND. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

BELOW: Jewelry Pair of Ostrogothic eagle-shaped fibulae: gilt bronze with cloisonné inlay of garnets, green stones or glass, blue glass, crystal, amethyst, and meerschaum, early sixth century A.D. THE WALTERS ART MUSEUM, BALTIMORE. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

OPPOSITE PAGE, TOP LEFT: Sutton Hoo Anglo-Saxon clasp from Sutton Hoo, England: cloisonné garnet, millefiori, and blue glass inlay in gold with filigree, early seventh century A.D. © THE BRITISH MUSEUM. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

OPPOSITE PAGE: Clothing and Textiles Male and female costume during the Viking Age. ANDROMEDA OXFORD LTD. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.



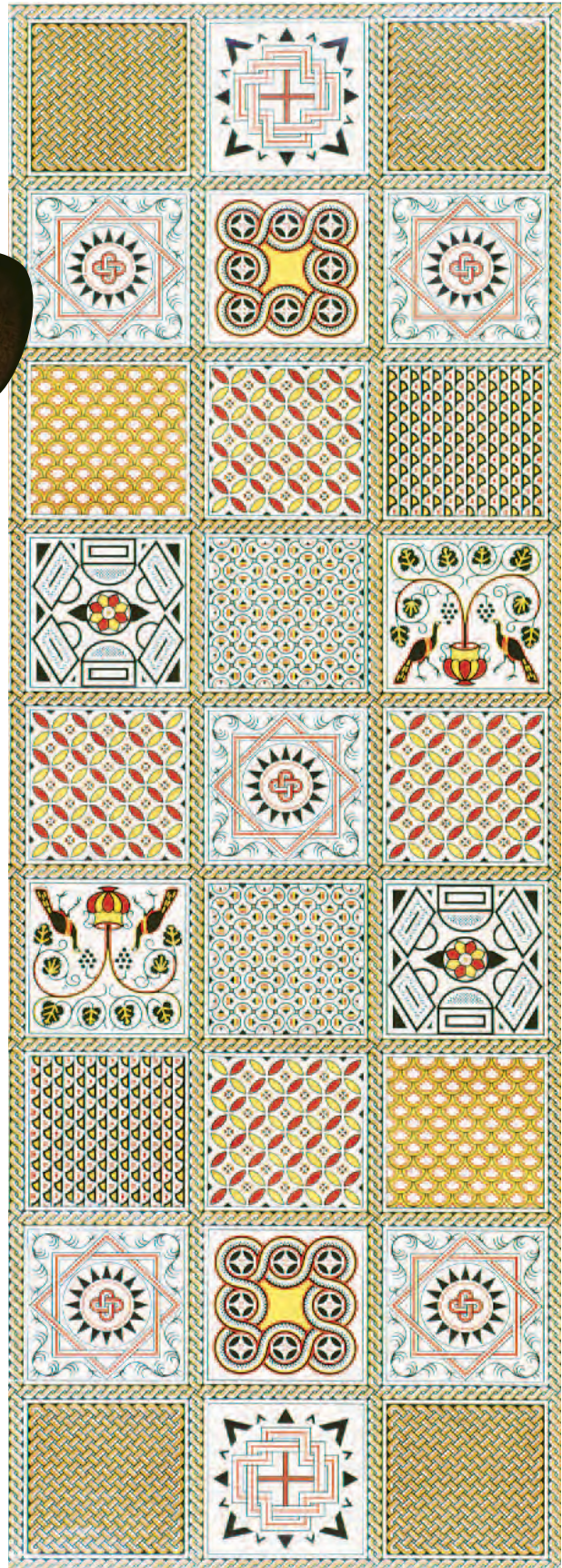




ABOVE: Tomb of Childeric Reconstruction of the gold signet ring of Childeric's tomb, fifth century A.D. ASHMOLEAN MUSEUM, UNIVERSITY OF OXFORD. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

RIGHT: Merovingian France Reproduction of the mosaic from the sixth-century bishop's palace, part of a complex Merovingian cathedral group. COURTESY SERVICE CANTONAL D'ARCHAEOLOGIE, GENEVA. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.

BELOW LEFT: Hungary The "victorious sovereign" golden jug from the Nagyszentmiklós hoard, Romania, seventh–eighth century A.D. The iconography of an Avar period goldsmith offers a multitude of historical interpretations. KUNSTHISTORISCHES MUSEUM, WIEN. REPRODUCED BY PERMISSION.





INDEX

Volume numbers precede the colon. Page numbers in boldface refer to extended discussions of a topic. Page numbers in italics refer to maps, figures, and tables.

A

- Aachen site, 2:591, 592
Abbeville site, 1:17
Åberg, Nils, 2:513
Aberlemno site, 2:473
Abora site, 1:186, 187, 188
L'Abri du Pape site, 1:146
Abu Hureyra site, 1:205, 205, 207, 208, 223
Accelerator mass spectrometry (AMS), 1:43, 159
Achilleion site, 1:226–229
Acquarossa site, 2:264
La Adam site, 1:366
Adomnán, *Life of St. Columba*, 2:478
Adriatic coast region, 1:172
Aegina site, 1:116
Aeppli, Johannes, 1:386
Afghanistan, 2:99
Ageröd site, 1:135
Aggersund site, 1:295
Agricola (Tacitus), 2:192
Agriculture. *See also* Animal husbandry; Crops; Farming; *specific sites*
about data sources for evidence of, 2:371–372
about dates for, 2:372
about mills and milling technology, 2:376–379, 377, 378, 454, 477
Anglo-Saxon culture, 2:491–492
Iron Age, 2:415
Middle Ages, 1:10; 2:371–379, 559, 587
Agris site, 1:117
Ain Ghazal site, 1:207
Ais Yiorkis site, 1:232
Aizpea site, 1:163
Ajvide site, 1:432, **435–438**
Åker site, 2:440
Åkerlund, Agneta, 1:134
Åkonge site, 1:297
Akrotiri Aetokremnos site, 1:229, 230
Åland Islands site, 2:278
Albania, 1:172
Ålborg site, 2:547
Alcock, Leslie, 2:483
Alemanni people, 2:591–592, 594–595
Alexander the Great, 2:310
Alfred of Wessex, 2:493, 535
Alleshave site, 1:38
Almagro, Martín, 1:464
Almizaraque site, 1:459
Alpine/pre-Alpine regions
Mesolithic period, 1:168–170, 202
Neolithic period, 1:385–397
animal husbandry, 1:390, 397
aquatic resources, 1:390, 397
bone industry, 1:396
burials, 1:391, **446–450**, 447
crops, 1:390, 397
dates for, 1:386, 395
environments, 1:385, **388**, 390, 395, 396
excavations, 1:387–388
fauna, 1:390–391, 396
flora, 1:390, 397
health and disease issues, 1:390
monumental structures, 1:446–450, 447
political systems, 1:389
pottery industry, 1:389, 395–396
research history, 1:386–387
ritual and ideology, 1:391
settlement patterns, 1:386–387, **389**, 395
settlement structures, 1:385, 387, **388**, 395, 396
social systems, 1:391
subsistence resources, 1:389–390, 397
tool industries, 1:386, 387, **389**, 396
trade and exchange, 1:391
watercraft, 1:391
wheeled vehicles, 1:388
Alsónémedi site, 1:340
Althusser, Louis, 1:91
Alträsket site, 1:139
Ambrosiani, Björn, 2:540
Amfreville site, 1:117; 2:187
Ammerman, A. J., 1:250, 441
Ammianus Marcellinus, 2:180, 391
Analytical methods for artifacts, 1:67–68
Anatolia, 1:69, 106, 116, 205, 214–215, 223, 318. *See also* Turkey; *specific sites*
Ancient Europe from the Beginnings of Agriculture to Classical

- Antiquity: A Survey* (Piggott), 2:3
- Andronovo culture, 2:99
- Angantyr, 2:325
- Angle culture, 2:381–384
- Anglo-Saxon Chronicle*, 2:494
- Anglo-Saxon culture, 2:489–509
- agriculture, 2:491–492
- animal husbandry, 2:491–492
- burials, 2:490–491, 494, 498–500, 499
- Christianity, 2:491
- crops, 2:491
- economic systems, 2:492
- fortifications, 2:492, 493
- Germanic culture, 2:490
- languages, 2:490
- political systems, 2:494–495
- population statistics, 2:492
- pottery industry, 2:492
- ritual and ideology, 2:491, 499
- settlement patterns, 2:493
- settlement structures, 2:492–493
- trade and exchange, 2:493–494
- urbanization, 2:493
- Anglo-Saxon period, 1:24, 46; 2:181, 489–509
- Angular de Anguita site, 2:257
- Animal husbandry. *See also* Animal pulling power/traction; Steppe herders; *specific countries; specific cultures and people; specific regions*
- about Childe on, 1:201
- about herding, 1:215–216
- about nomadic traditions, 2:368–369
- about pastoralism, 1:161, 362; 2:368–369
- about types of
- cattle, 1:212, 214, 215, 314, 326, 328, 329, 364
- goats, 1:212, 213–214
- pigs, 1:212, 214–215
- sheep, 1:212, 213–214, 314, 326, 327–328, 330
- Bronze Age, 1:215, 434; 2:14–15, 25, 59, 112
- Iron Age, 2:223, 256, 257, 258
- Mesolithic period, 1:278–280
- Middle Ages, 2:366–370, 367, 369, 370, 439–440, 491–492, 501, 570–571
- Neolithic period
- Europe, central, 1:246–247, 330
- Europe, eastern, 1:326, 328–329, 336–337, 356–357, 361, 362
- Europe, northern, 1:279, 279, 289, 295, 296–297
- Europe, northwestern, 1:273–290, 279
- Europe, southeastern, 1:330, 336, 337
- Europe, upland central and southern, 1:390
- Europe, western, 1:163
- Iberia, 1:163
- Mediterranean region, 1:204, 213–215, 231–231, 253–258, 274–276, 279, 443; 2:121
- Near East, 1:211–217, 327
- Animal pulling power/traction, 1:314, 327–329, 331–332; 2:14, 15, 26, 46. *See also specific countries*
- Annagassan site, 2:454
- Annales* school, 2:343
- The Annals of Clonmacnoise*, 2:458
- Anta Grande do Zambujeiro site, 1:460
- Antiquary Society, 1:387
- Antiquity of Man* (Lyell), 1:17
- Antrea site, 1:184
- Anundshög site, 2:535, 538
- Anza site, 1:320, 337
- Aðalstræði site, 2:437
- Apel, Jan, 1:92
- Apennine chain, northern, 1:170
- Apple Down site, 2:490
- Apulian site, 1:443
- Aquatic resources
- Holocene era, 1:152
- Iron Age, 2:276
- Mesolithic period
- Europe, eastern, 1:184, 186
- Europe, northwestern, 1:146–147, 273, 274, 288, 289, 436
- Europe, upland central and southern, 1:171, 176, 179–180
- Europe, western, 1:162
- Iberia, 1:158, 159, 160, 162, 164
- Neolithic period
- Europe, northern, 1:288, 432
- Europe, northwestern, 1:288
- Europe, upland central and southern, 1:178, 390, 397
- Mediterranean region, 1:257
- Arupgard site, 1:403
- Arbon-Bleiche 3 site, 1:387, 391, 395–397
- Arbor Low site, 2:66
- Archaeobotany, 1:387
- Archaeological Institute of the Slovakian Academy of Science, 2:31
- Archaeology. *See also* Dating methods and chronology; History, field of; Prehistory, origins of; *specific sites*
- artifacts and, 1:22–23, 31–32, 67–68, 91–92, 94, 99–100
- of Barbarian Europe, 1:5–6
- church archaeology, 2:516–518
- data and, 1:22–28, 68, 68–69, 107–108
- ecofacts, 1:24
- environments and, 1:47–54
- features, 1:23–24
- fieldwork, 1:14–21, 29–39, 35, 387–388
- funerary archaeology, 2:511–514
- gender, and evidence in, 1:81–89
- history, and role of, 2:341–345
- and Indo-European language, origins of, 1:107–108
- interpretation of, 1:25–26
- landscape use and, 1:55–64
- language and, 1:101–109
- origins and growth of, 1:14–21, 15, 72–73
- processual, 1:20
- settlement patterns and, 1:55–64; 2:514–516
- sites, 1:25
- social systems and, 1:72–80
- and state societies, study of, 2:347
- trade and exchange, 1:65–71
- underwater, 1:142
- urban archaeology, 2:514, 516–518, 517
- Archaeozoology, 1:387
- Architecture. *See also specific sites*
- about types of
- church architecture, 2:476–477, 479, 485–487
- nuraghi*, 2:50–53, 52
- palace architecture, 2:118–125
- temple architecture, 2:265
- towers, 2:50–53, 52
- Bronze Age, 2:50–53, 52, 118–125
- Megalithic period, 1:410–411
- Middle Ages, 2:476–477, 479, 485–487
- Neolithic period, 1:452
- Archiv für Anthropologie*, 1:18
- Ardcloyne site, 2:377
- Arene Candid site, 1:202, 249, 249, 253–255, 442, 443
- El Argar culture, 2:5, 45–48
- Argissa site, 1:205, 206, 209
- Arnesano site, 1:446
- Arnold, Bettina, 1:87; 2:251
- Arribas, Antonio, 1:464
- Artashat site, 2:310
- Artawazd II, 2:310–311

- Artaxias (Artashes), 2:310
- Artifacts
analytical methods for evaluation of, 1:67–68
archaeology and, 1:22–23, 31–32
bog deposits, 1:298, 305, 315; 2:270, 397
burials and, 1:22–23
deposits of, 1:76, 315; 2:26
and provenance studies, principles of, 1:67
- Artisans. *See also* Artworks; *specific countries*
about jewelry, 2:426–429, 427
Iron Age, 2:196
Europe, central, 2:210, 300
Europe, eastern, 2:293
Europe, northern, 2:539
Europe, northwestern, 2:225
Iberia, 2:256
Mediterranean region, 2:263, 266
- Middle Ages
Europe, central, 2:573–574, 575, 576–577, 578, 580, 587, 590
Europe, northern, 2:327–329, 426–429, 427
Europe, northwestern, 2:381–383, 405, 472, 477, 478
- Viking Age, 2:539, 550
- Artworks. *See also* Artisans; Figurines; Stone carvings; *specific countries; specific sites*
about types of
beads, 1:181, 318, 361
jewelry, 2:426–429, 427
neck rings, 2:269
rock art, 1:18, 85, 188–189, 193, 446, 459; 2:5
Situla art, 1:72
Turoe stone, 2:234, 235
- Bronze Age, 1:85, 86; 2:5
- Iron Age
Europe, central, 1:117–118; 2:186–187, 245, 248, 249, 297, 297–298, 301
Europe, eastern, 2:305
Europe, northern, 2:269, 270, 278, 539
Europe, northwestern, 2:188, 188–190; 2:189, 234–235, 235
Europe, western, 2:184, 185, 185, 186, 187; 2:215, 216
Mediterranean region, 1:117–118; 2:312, 313, 316–317
- Mesolithic period, 1:124
Europe, central, 1:176–177, 179
Europe, northwestern, 1:149
Europe, upland central and southern, 1:179, 181
- Iberia, 1:159, 162
- Middle Ages, 2:426–429, 427
Europe, central, 2:412, 421, 578, 586, 589
Europe, eastern, 2:412
Europe, northern, 2:417, 418
Europe, northwestern, 1:46; 2:388, 453, 453–454, 454, 464–465
Europe, western, 2:520, 520–521, 521, 586, 589
- Neolithic period, 1:361, 445–446, 458–459
- Ashgrove site, 2:180
- Asikli site, 1:205, 206, 223
- Assendelver Polders site, 2:372
- Association Française d'Archéologie Mérovingienne (A.F.A.M.; French Association of Merovingian Archaeology), 2:514
- Aston, Michael, 1:60
- Asturuan culture, 1:159–160
- Aszód site, 1:377
- Atalayeula site, 1:460
- Ateas, 2:413
- Æthelbald of Wessex, 2:505
- Æthelwold, 2:506
- Atlantic Trading Estate site, 2:485
- Attila the Hun, 2:392, 575
- Aubrey, John, 1:14
- Augustus, 2:247
- Aunjetitz site. *See* Únětice culture
- Aurochs, 1:214. *See also* cattle
- Austria. *See also specific sites*
about prehistory, origins of, 1:17
Bronze Age, 2:9, 21, 22, 23
Iron Age
artworks, 1:118; 2:186–187, 297
burials, 1:72, 74; 2:242
salt industry, 1:74
social systems, 1:75
warfare and conquest, 1:118
weapons and armor, 2:242
Neolithic period, 1:111, 202, 372, 374, 376–377
- Autours site, 1:149
- Avar people, 2:574, 576–578, 577, 582
- Avebury site, 1:128, 315, 405, 406–408, 407; 2:66
- Avelines Hole site, 1:149
- Avesta*, 1:102; 2:99–100
- Azilian culture, 1:168
- Azzolini site, 1:444
- Azzura site, 1:171
-
- ## B
- Bad Dürkheim site, 2:186
- Bad Schussenreid site, 2:90, 90
- Baden culture, 1:114, 372, 375, 378
- Bailey, Douglass W., 1:321, 345
- Baillie, Michael, 1:42, 43, 44, 49
- Baiuvarii people, 2:384–386, 593, 596
- Balbridie site, 1:277, 398
- Bâle-Bernerring site, 2:400
- Balkan region. *See also specific countries; specific sites*
Bronze Age, 2:17
Copper Age, 1:339
Iron Age, 2:170
Mesolithic period, 1:234–237, 244
Neolithic period
animal husbandry, 1:241, 246, 247, 337
burials, 1:239, 242, 246
copper industry, 1:241, 247, 318
crops, 1:205, 208, 235, 241, 246
farming, 1:202, 234–235, 242–247
foraging populations, 1:234–235
obsidian artifacts, 1:241
pottery industry, 1:235–237, 242, 244, 246
settlement patterns, 1:239, 241, 314, 335–336
settlement structures, 1:239, 242, 314
social systems, 1:246
trade and exchange, 1:239, 241, 246, 247
- Balloys site, 1:274, 306
- Balma Abeurador/Hérault site, 1:207, 208
- La Balma de la Margineda site, 1:163
- Baltic region. *See also specific countries; specific sites*
Mesolithic period, 1:185, 189, 196
Middle Ages, 2:349
Neolithic period, 1:202
Viking culture, 2:334, 334–336, 335
- Barbarian Europe, 1:3–6, 12
- Barca do Xarês site, 1:160
- Barkar site, 1:306, 308, 423
- Barker, Graeme, 2:36
- Barker, Philip, 1:33
- Barnenez site, 1:408–413, 409, 410
- Barnhouse site, 1:91, 283, 398
- Barrett, John, 1:91
- Barrière-Flavy, Camille, 2:512
- Basatanya site, 1:92
- Basketry industry, 1:145; 2:225
- Bateson, J. Donal, 2:236

- Battle-Axe culture, 1:373, 471, 471.
 Baudot, Henri, 2:512
 Bavaria, 1:383; 2:242. *See also*
 Germany
 Bayvil site, 2:485
 Becker, Bernd, 1:42
 Becker, C. J., 1:467
 Bedburg-Königshoven site, 1:156
 Bede, Venerable
 on Anglo-Saxons, 2:499
 *Ecclesiastical History of the English
 People*, 2:327, 340, 344, 381,
 489, 492, 494, 495
 on Redwald, 2:499
 Beer production, 2:374, 375
 Beg-an-Dorchenn site, 1:275
 Beidha site, 1:205
 Belgium. *See also specific sites*
 about prehistory, origins of, 1:17
 Iron Age, 2:137
 Mesolithic period, 1:146, 148
 Middle Ages, 2:327, 519–524
 Neolithic period, 1:113–114
 Bell Beaker culture, 1:476–485
 archery set, 1:479–480
 burials, 1:446, 478
 Carpathian culture, and interaction
 with, 1:482–483
 Corded Ware culture, and effects on,
 1:482–483
 dates for, 1:477, 482
 Dutch Model, 1:477
 effects of, 1:482–483
 Europe, eastern, 1:481
 Europe, northern, 1:481–482
 Europe, southeastern, 1:480–481
 Megalithic period and, 1:482–483
 metallurgy industries, 1:482
 monumental structures, 1:446
 political systems, 1:480
 pottery industry, 1:479–480
 Reflux Model, 1:478
 settlement patterns, 1:375, 480–482
 social systems, 1:483–484
 Spanish Model, 1:476
 western Europe, 1:481
 Belle-Église site, 2:377
De bello Gallico (Julius Caesar), 1:128;
 2:154, 191
De bello Gothico, 2:414
 Belorussia, 1:184, 186–187
 Belsk site, 2:293
 Benac, Alojz, 1:241
Beowulf, 1:12; 2:342, 344, 499
 Bercy site, 1:275
 Bergschenhoek site, 1: 288, 288, 290
 Berinsfield site, 2:490
 Berlland Bach site, 2:485
 Bernabò Brea, Luigi, 1:254
 Besov Nos site, 1:196
 Bible, 1:14, 17
Bibliotheca historica (Diodorus
 Siculus), 2:180
 Bibracte. *See* Mont Beuvray
 Biel, Jörg, 1:76
 Bierzo site, 1:170
 Bietti, Amilcare, 1:167
 Binford, Lewis, 1:147
 Birka site, 1:23; 2:325–326, 329,
 434, 539, 540
 Biskupin site, 1:114; 2:282, 286,
 286–288
 Bize cave site, 1:17
 Bjørnsholm site, 1:136, 295, 299, 423
 Black Patch site, 2:58
 Black Sea region, 1:73; 2:208–210,
 209. *See also specific countries;
 specific sites*
 Blytt, Axel, 1:49
 Boat-Axe culture, *See* Battle-Axe
 culture
 Boats and boatbuilding, 1:417–418;
 2:55–56, 270, 430–432. *See also*
 Ships
 Bog deposits, 1:298, 305, 315;
 2:270, 397
 Bog of Cullen site, 2:70–71
 Bøgebakken site, 1:141, 189, 295,
 296, 420
 Bogucki, Peter, *Origins of Human
 Society*, 2:14
 Bohemia. *See also* Czech Republic;
 specific sites
 Bronze Age, 2:22, 29
 Iron Age, 2:242
 artworks, 2:301
 burials, 1:74; 2:299
 enclosure complexes, 2:301
 hillforts, 2:297
 hoards, 2:302
 oppida, 2:300
 ritual and ideology, 2:299
 settlement patterns, 2:299
 social systems, 1:73
 Middle Ages, 2:584–585
 Neolithic period, 1:263, 269–272,
 270, 382, 383, 384, 470–471
 Böhme, Hörst-Wolfgang, 2:399
 Boleslav I, 2:560, 561
 Bone industry, 1:389, 396; 2:329
 Bonnet, Charles, 2:516
Book of Durrow, 2:451
Book of Kells, 2:451
 Borg-in-Nadur site, 1:451
 Borgarfjörður site, 2:440
 Boritov site, 2:301
 Bořivoj (prince), 2:584
 Bornholm site, 1:423, 427
 Borremose site, 1:27
 Borum Eshøj site, 1:18; 2:75, 76, 80,
 81
 Bosch-Gimpera, Pedro, 1:476
 Bosnia, 1:241–243, 335–336, 337.
 See also Yugoslavia; *specific sites*
 Bosporan kingdom, 2:292–293
 Botai site, 1:366–367
 Boucher de Crèvecœur de Perthes,
 Jacques, *Celtic and Antediluvian
 Antiquities*, 1:17
 Bougon site, 1:401
 Bourges site, 2:216
 Boyne Valley sites, 1:402, 413–415,
 414
 Bradley, J., 2:458
 Bradley, Richard, 1:92, 95; 2:60
 Braeroddach Loch site, 1:129
 Braidwood, Robert, 1:201
 Bray site, 2:236
 Brea, Luigi Bernabò, 2:40
 Breasted, James Henry, 1:223
 Brebières site, 2:515
 Brecknockshire site, 2:483
 Bredarör site, 2:84
 Breg site, 1:171
 Breuil, Henri, 1:18, 165
Britannia (Camden), 1:14
 British Broadcasting Corporation,
 2:498
 Brochtorff Circle site, 1:450, 452,
 454
 Brødrene Gram site, 2:77, 78
 Bronocice site, 1:374
 Bronze Age. *See also* Secondary
 Products Revolution; Viking Age;
 *specific countries; specific cultures
 and people; specific sites*
 about barrow burials, 2:4, 23, 57–
 58, 65
 about coffin burials, 2:5, 75, 80–82
 about regions and
 Europe, central, 2:20–33
 Europe, northern, 2:72–85, 533
 Europe, northwestern, 2:54–71
 Iberia, 2:45–50
 Mediterranean region, 2:34–44,
 45–53, 108–115, 109
 about *tholos* burials, 2:125, 316
 animal husbandry, 1:330
 Europe, central, 2:25
 Europe, northern, 1:434; 2:59
 Europe, northwestern, 2:59
 Europe, southeastern, 1:215; 2:14–
 15
 Mediterranean region, 2:112
 animal pulling power/traction, 2:14,
 15, 26, 46

- architecture, 2:50–53, 52, 118
Mediterranean region, 2:50–53, 52
- bronze industry, 1:118–120; 2:4, 10–11, 74
- burials, 1:93–94
Europe, central, 2:22–23
Europe, eastern, 2:105
Europe, northern, 2:74–76, 80–91, 87–88
Europe, northwestern, 2:4, 56–58, 65–66
Europe, southeastern, 1:18; 2:17
Europe, upland central and southern, 2:22
Europe, western, 2:5, 214–215
Iberia, 2:47, 47
Mediterranean region, 2:4, 35, 37, 47, 125
- causeways, 2:67–68, 68, 69
- clothing, 2:75–76, 81
- copper industry, 1:319, 320–321; 2:7, 9, 112
- crops, 1:208; 2:14, 25, 46, 59
- dairy industry, 2:14, 26
- dates for, 1:85
Europe, central, 2:6, 20, 86–87
Europe, northern, 1:434; 2:6, 73
Europe, southeastern, 2:12
Mediterranean region, 2:34, 122
- deposits, 2:5, 26
- economic systems, 2:117, 123, 214, 231
- enclosure complexes, 2:65, 214
- environments
Europe, central, 2:20
Europe, eastern, 2:106
Europe, northern, 1:49
Europe, northwestern, 1:50
Europe, southeastern, 2:13–14
Iberia, 2:45
Mediterranean region, 2:42–44, 45, 111
- farming
Europe, central, 2:14, 25–26
Europe, northern, 1:434
Europe, southeastern, 2:14
- field systems, 2:59–60, 67–69, 214
- figurines, 1:84; 2:120, 123
- fortifications, 1:114–115, 118–120; 2:31–33, 32, 37, 38, 58, 112
- gender roles and relationships, 1:81, 84, 85–86, 86; 2:75–76
- gold industry, 2:25, 69–71, 70
- hillforts, 2:214, 229–231, 230
- hoards, 2:25, 26–27, 33, 35, 40, 60, 70, 71, 214
- horses, domestication of, 2:93, 106
- landscape use, 1:3, 25, 97, 128, 129, 315; 2:214
- lead industry, 2:8, 9
- metallurgy industries
Europe, central, 2:23–25, 89–90, 90, 96
Europe, eastern, 2:103–104
Europe, northern, 2:73–74
Europe, northwestern, 2:54–55
Mediterranean region, 2:35, 36, 40, 47
- midden sites, 2:58
- monumental structures, 1:95, 96, 315; 2:61–67
- political systems
Europe, central, 2:15–16, 18
Europe, eastern, 2:18, 104
Europe, northwestern, 2:59–61
Europe, southeastern, 2:15–16, 18
Iberia, 2:47–49
Mediterranean region, 2:5, 40, 47–49, 109, 111, 112, 113, 124
- population statistics, 2:36, 111, 124
- pottery industry
Europe, central, 2:21
Europe, eastern, 2:96, 104–105
Europe, southeastern, 2:16–18
Iberia, 2:46
Mediterranean region, 2:37–38, 40–41
- resource use, 1:53–54
- ritual and ideology
Europe, central, 1:95; 2:26–27, 33
Europe, eastern, 2:26, 99
Europe, northern, 1:93–94, 97; 2:77–78
Europe, northwestern, 2:57–58, 62, 68–69
Europe, upland central and southern, 1:450
Iberia, 2:48, 49
Mediterranean region, 2:35, 37, 40, 48, 49, 119–120, 123, 124
- rock art, 1:85, 86; 2:5
- settlement patterns
Europe, central, 2:15, 21–22, 87, 88–89
Europe, eastern, 2:15, 93, 93–94, 95–96, 103, 104
Europe, northern, 2:72–73, 76–77
Europe, northwestern, 1:129; 2:58–59
Europe, southeastern, 2:17–18
Europe, western, 2:214
Iberia, 2:45–46, 48
Mediterranean region, 2:35–40, 42–46, 48, 111, 113
- settlement structures
Europe, central, 1:95; 2:21–22, 88–89, 89
- Europe, eastern, 2:103, 104
Europe, northern, 2:77, 78, 79
Europe, northwestern, 2:57–58, 59, 231
Europe, southeastern, 2:18
Europe, upland central and southern, 2:22
Europe, western, 2:214
- silver industry, 2:25
- social systems, 1:62–63
Europe, central, 2:5, 29–30, 32, 90–91
Europe, northern, 1:85–86; 2:5, 73–74, 75–76, 84
Europe, northwestern, 1:46; 2:5, 57–58, 60–61, 231
Europe, western, 2:5
Iberia, 2:48–49
Mediterranean region, 2:10–11, 36, 40, 48–49, 113, 123–124
- steppe herders, 2:92–100
- subsistence resources, 2:89, 99, 112
- tin industry, 2:8
- tool industries, 2:14
- trade and exchange
Europe, central, 2:27–29, 28, 32
Europe, eastern, 1:69; 2:111–113
Europe, northern, 2:78–79
Europe, northwestern, 1:418; 2:55–56
Europe, western, 1:418; 2:214
Mediterranean region, 1:69–70; 2:109–110, 111–113, 122
- urnfields, 2:38, 87–88, 214
- warfare and conquest, 2:120
- watercraft, 2:55–56, 56
- waterways, 2:42–44
- weapons and armor, 1:116; 2:8, 10
- wheeled vehicles, 2:55, 94–95, 98, 106
- wool industry, 2:14, 26, 46, 59, 94, 124
- writing, 2:112
- The Bronze Age* (Childe), 2:10
- The Bronze Age in Europe* (Coles and Harding), 2:12
- Bronze industry, 2:224, 225
about, 2:4, 6, 8
analysis and provenance issues, 2:9
and artifacts, production of, 2:24–25
and bronzeworkers, status of, 2:10–11
hoards, 2:25
and resources, procurement of, 2:24
social systems, and effects of, 2:9–10
warfare and conquest, and effects of, 1:112, 114–115
- Brown, Basil, 2:498

- Bruce-Mitford, Rupert, 2:498
 Bruchenbrücken site, 1:266–269, 267, 268
 Brück, Joanna, 1:91
 Brugh na Bóinne, 1: 413–415
 De Bruin site, 1:147
 Brulet, Raymond, 2:522, 523
 Bruun, Daniel, 2:442, 443
 Brześć Kujawski site, 1:298, 306, 374, 378–382
 Bučany site, 1:382
 Buckland, William, 1:16–17
 Buckquoy site, 2:404
 Budakalász site, 1:340
 Buddelin site, 1:295
 Buddinge site, 2:75
 Bug-Dniester culture, 1:244–245
 Buiston site, 2:471
 Bujna, Jozef, 1:75
 Bulgaria
 Bronze Age, 1:96; 2:15, 17
 Copper Age
 burials, 1:341–343
 copper industry, 1:69, 320
 copper tools, 1:342
 dates for, 1:334
 gender roles and relationships, 1:343
 gold artifacts, 1:321, 342
 settlement patterns, 1:320
 settlement structures, 1:320, 349–350
 social systems, 1:343–344, 349–350
 tool industries, 1:318
 trade and exchange, 1:69
 Neolithic period
 animal husbandry, 1:326, 328, 329
 animal pulling power/traction, 1:328
 burials, 1:345–346
 dates for, 1:334
 farming, 1:235–247
 settlement structures, 1:221, 344–345
 social systems, 1:345–346
 Burgess, Colin, 1:478–479
Burghal Hidage, 2:493
 Burghead site, 2:472
Burial and Ancient Society (Morris), 2:314
 Burials. *See also specific countries; specific finds; specific sites*
 about types of
 barrow burials. *See specific periods and ages*
 bog deposits, 2:270
 cairns, 2:57–58, 82–84
 cists, 2:105
 coffin, 2:5, 75, 80–82
 dolmen, 1:445
 execution sites, 2:499
Fürstengrab, 1:73, 78; 2:249
kurgan burials, 1:340, 361, 362; 2:94–97, 102, 291, 304–306
Reihengräberfelder, 2:587, 588, 590, 591
 ship burials, 2:498–500, 534
tarand, 2:279
tholos, 1:125; 2:118, 316
 tumuli mounds, 2:82–84, 83, 291
 urnfields, 1:24; 2:38, 87–88, 214, 282, 393
 Bronze Age
 barrow burials, 2:4, 23, 57–58, 65
 Europe, central, 1:22–23
 Europe, eastern, 2:17, 93–97, 94, 105, 106
 Europe, northern, 2:5, 74–76, 80–91
 Europe, northwestern, 2:4, 56–58, 65–66
 Europe, southeastern, 1:18; 2:17
 Europe, upland central and southern, 2:22
 Europe, western, 2:5, 214–215
 Iberia, 2:47, 47
 Mediterranean region, 2:4, 35, 37, 47, 47, 125, 316
 Copper Age, 1:339–340, 341–343, 348, 458
 Iron Age
 Europe, central, 1:73–76; 2:281, 282, 299. *See also specific countries; specific sites*
 Europe, eastern, 2:304–306
 Europe, northern, 2:269–270, 279, 282, 551, 551
 Europe, northwestern, 2:225–227, 236, 237
 Europe, western, 1:75–76, 87, 414–415; 2:205–207, 214–218, 242
 Iberia, 2:255–256, 256–257
 Mediterranean region, 1:76, 87; 2:255–256, 314
 Megalithic period, 1:399–402
 Europe, northern, 1:401–402, 423–424, 425–426
 Europe, western, 1:408–415, 409, 410, 414
 Iberia, 1:401
 Mediterranean region, 1:399–400, 445, 450–455
 Mesolithic period
 Europe, central, 1:83, 187, 188, 189, 196
 Europe, eastern, 1:124, 190, 196
 Europe, northern, 1:124, 138, 140–141, 148–150, 190, 196, 296, 309
 Europe, northwestern, 1:148–150
 Europe, upland central and southern, 1:170
 Iberia, 1:159, 161, 162, 163, 165, 165
 Mediterranean region, 1:159, 170
 Middle Ages, 2:362–364
 Europe, central, 2:384–385, 393, 400–401, 573–577, 587–591, 592, 595
 Europe, eastern, 2:566, 569
 Europe, northern, 2:404–405, 410, 534, 589
 Europe, northwestern, 2:333, 382, 474, 476, 484–485, 490–491, 498–500, 499
 Europe, western, 2:514–515, 515–516, 517–518, 519–524, 520, 521
 Neolithic period
 barrow burials, 1:306, 381, 402, 423, 473
 Europe, central, 1:267, 360–363, 365–366, 378–382, 381
 Europe, eastern, 1:297, 305–310, 307, 360–363, 365–366, 378–382
 Europe, northern, 1:298, 302–304, 305–310, 433, 436, 437
 Europe, northwestern, 1:274, 276, 283, 287, 288, 289, 403–404, 418
 Europe, southeastern, 1:338, 345–346
 Europe, upland central and southern, 1:178, 181, 391, 446–450, 447, 454
 Europe, western, 1:403–404, 465
 Iberia, 1:458, 460, 461, 463, 465
 Mediterranean region, 1:223, 256–257, 274, 408–413, 409, 444–445; 2:121
 Palaeolithic period, 1:254
 Viking Age, 2:534, 538–539
 Burovaya site, 1:364
 Burry Holmes site, 2:485
 Bush Barrow site, 2:4, 65, 66
 Butmir culture, 1:241
 Butser Ancient Farm site, 2:224
 Buttler, Werner, 1:260
 Býčí skála site, 2:298
 Bygholm Nørremark site, 1:298, 308, 402
 Bylany site, 1:263, 269–272, 270, 382, 383, 384

C

- Cabeço da Amoreira site, 1:164–165, 166
- Cabeço da Arruda site, 1:164–165, 166
- Caer Gybi site, 2:478
- Caerloggas site, 2:6
- Caerwent site, 2:478
- Cafer Hüyük site, 1:205, 205, 206
- Caka site, 1:116
- Caldeirão site, 1:161, 249, 249, 250, 255–257, 256
- Callanish site, 1:405
- Cambridge University, 2:498
- Camden, William, 1:14, 24
- Can Hasan III site, 1:207, 223
- Canburg site, 2:582
- Los Canes site, 1:159
- Cantabrian coast, 1:159–160
- Las Canteras site, 1:459
- Cape Gelidonya site, 1:69, 70
- Capel Eithen site, 2:482, 484, 485
- Capel Maelog site, 2:485
- Cardial culture, 1:112
- Cardini, Luigi, 1:254
- Carew site, 2:482, 484
- Carmen miserabile* (Rogerius), 2:579
- Carolingian culture, 2:512, 513, 577–578
- The Carolingian Economy* (Verhulst), 2:330
- Carolingian period, 2:588–589, 591–592
- Carr, Robert, 2:496
- Carrowkeel site, 2:66
- Carrowmore site, 1:400; 2:66
- Carsac site, 2:214, 215
- Carthage site, 2:255, 258
- Carver, Martin, 2:498
- Casas de Baixo site, 1:459
- Castell Henllys site, 2:481
- Castelnovian culture, 1:167, 168, 169, 170, 171, 172, 173
- Castle Mall site, 2:374
- Çatal Hüyük site, 1:214, 223, 318, 364
- Catignano site, 1:442
- Cattle, 1:212, 214, 215, 314, 326, 328, 329, 364
- Caucasia, 1:18; 2:303–311. *See also* Transcaucasia
- Cavalli-Sforza, Luigi, 1:250
- Cayla de Mailhac site, 2:214, 215, 216
- Çayönü site, 1:205, 208, 214, 223, 318
- Cèramique Rubanée*, 1:259
- Celtic and Antediluvian Antiquities* (Boucher de Perthes), 1:17
- Celtic culture, 2:140–143, 217
- animal husbandry, 2:366–367, 367
- artworks, 1:118; 2:184–190, 367
- burials, and evidence of, 1:112
- coinage, 2:142
- effects of, 2:247
- farming, 2:142
- feasting, 2:179–183, 192
- fortifications, 1:115; 2:142, 152, 154–159
- historic depictions of, 2:141
- iron industry, 2:142
- Julius Caesar on, 2:140
- landscape use, 1:128–129, 130
- languages and, 2:141, 143
- oppida*, 2:152, 154–159
- political systems, 2:141–142, 142
- ritual and ideology, 2:141, 143, 257
- Roman conquest and, 2:142–143
- settlement patterns, 2:140–141, 142, 149–150
- social systems, 2:141–142
- state societies, 2:348
- trade and exchange, 2:142
- warfare and conquest, 1:112, 118; 2:247
- weapons and armor, 1:117
- writing and, 2:141, 142
- Center for Medieval Archaeological Research (C.R.A.M.), 2:514
- Centre de Recherches d'Archéologie Médiévale of the University of Caen, 2:400
- Cenwealh of Wessex, 2:505
- Los Cercados site, 1:459
- Cernon-sur-Coole site, 2:187
- Cerro de la Encantada site, 2:49
- Cerro de la Virgen site, 2:46
- Certosa site, 1:118
- Chalcolithic period. *See* Copper Age
- Chania site, 2:117, 119
- Chapman, Robert, 1:85, 345; 2:47
- Charlemagne, 2:326–327, 358, 574, 577, 582, 588, 592
- Charnay site, 2:512
- Chateaneuf-les-Martiques site, 1:150, 249, 249
- Châtelliers-de-Vieil-Auzay site, 1:404
- La Chaussé-Tirancourt site, 1:401
- Chaves site, 1:163
- Cheddar Man, 1:149
- Chernykh, E. N., 1:322, 323; 2:97
- Chevdar site, 1:238, 240
- Chifflet, Jean-Jacques, 2:511–512, 519–521
- Childe, V. Gordon
- on animal husbandry and crops, 1:201
- archaeology excavations and, 1:19
- on barrow burials, 1:306
- on Bronze Age, 2:9
- The Bronze Age*, 2:10
- Danubian pottery sequence and, 1:259
- The Dawn of European Civilization*, 2:9
- on Neolithic Revolution, 1:330
- on settlement structures and settlement patterns, 1:270
- Skara Brae site and, 1:282
- on state attributes, 2:346
- Childeric, tomb of, 2:519–524
- treasure, 520, 521
- Chlum site, 2:298
- Chojnice-Pieńki culture, 1:133, 185
- Christianity
- Europe, central, 2:579, 582, 584, 586–587, 588, 589–590, 591
- Europe, eastern, 2:567
- Europe, northern, 2:535, 540, 549
- Europe, northwestern, 2:450–459, 453, 469, 473–474, 491, 505, 510
- Europe, western, 2:516–518
- Christy, Henry, 1:18
- Cimmerian culture, 2:289–290
- Cinead mac Ailpín (Kenneth mac Alpin), 2:475
- Ciumești site, 2:187
- Civdale site, 2:394
- Clapton site, 2:431, 431, 432
- Clark, Grahame, 1:4, 19, 47, 50, 154
- Clarke, David L., 1:478
- Clickhimin site, 1:115
- Cloghers site, 1:280
- Clonmacnoise site, 2:456–459, 457
- Clothing, 1:393; 2:75–76, 81, 383–384, 433–435, 434
- Cnut, 2:506. *See also* Knut
- Cocherel site, 1:14
- Cochet (abbé), 2:512, 513, 519
- Cocina site, 1:163
- Las Cogotas site, 2:256
- Coinage
- about gold, 2:170–171, 373
- about silver, 2:170, 171, 358, 358–359, 359
- Celtic culture, 2:142
- Iron Age, 2:159, 169, 171, 171–172, 172, 216, 300, 373
- Middle Ages, 2:357–358, 358–359
- Viking Age, 2:549, 550
- Colardelle, Michel, 2:514
- Colchis site, 2:309–310

- Cold Knap site, 2:478
 Coles, Bryony, 1:416
 Coles, John, 1:416; 2:12
 El Collado site, 1:162
 Collins, Pat, 1:151
 Cologne site, 2:587
 Columba, 2:478
 Commission des Monuments
 Historiques (Historical
 Monuments Commission), 2:516
 Coneybury Henge, 2:65
 La Conquette site, 1:443
 Coolcrans site, 2:452
 Cooney, Gabriel, 1:280, 315
 Copper Age. *See also* Secondary
 Products Revolution; Viking Age;
 *specific countries; specific cultures
 and people; specific sites*
 about, 1:313, 334
 animal husbandry, 1:357, 358, 361,
 362
 artifacts, 1:23, 69, 70, 315, **341–
 343**, 389, **392–395**
 artworks, 1:335
 bead artifacts, 1:318, 335, 361
 burials, 1:85
 Europe, eastern, 1:**341–343**, 358,
 360–361, 362–363, 365–366;
 2:94–97, 102
 Europe, southeastern, 1:339–340,
 341–343, 348
 Iberia, 1:**458**
 Mediterranean region, 1:445
 copper industry, 1:315, 317–322,
 339
 crops, 1:357, 358, 361
 dates for, 1:334, **456–459**
 enclosure complexes, 1:348
 environments, 1:**319**, **356**, 359,
 457–458
 fauna, 1:358, 361, 362
 figurines, 1:84, 348–349, 351–352,
 359
 fishing populations, 1:358
 flora, 1:358, 361
 foraging populations, 1:364, 365
 gender roles and relationships, 1:85,
 343
 gold artifacts, 1:**321**, 341–342, 342
 health and disease issues, 1:394
 horses, domestication of, 1:361
 human remains, and evidence of
 warfare, 1:112
 metallurgy industries, 1:67
 political systems, 1:460
 population statistics, 1:359
 pottery industry, 1:358, 359, 361,
 362
 ritual and ideology, 1:92, 93, 95,
 360, 361, 363, 365–366
 settlement patterns, 1:320, 338–
 339, 358–359, 362, **458**
 settlement structures, 1:320, 349–
 350, 351, 351, 358, 359, 360–
 361, 362
 social systems, 1:**343–344**, **349–
 350**, 362
 stone tool industries, 1:361
 subsistence resources, 1:358, 361,
 365, 394
 tool industries, 1:315, 318, 339,
 341–342, 393, 441
 trade and exchange, 1:69, 70, **334–
 346**, 339, 352, 354–355, 358
 warfare and conquest, 1:**460**, 462,
 464–466
 Copper industry
 arsenical copper industry alloy and,
 2:6–7
 artifacts, 1:315, **318**, **320–321**, 334
 Bronze Age and, 1:**319**, **320–321**;
 2:7, 9, 112
 Copper Age and, 1:315, 317–322,
 339
 environments for, 1:**319**
 mines and, 1:320
 oxhide ingot findspots, 2:352
 production and, 1:**318–320**, 323
 Renfrew on, 1:318
 sources for copper and, 2:352
 tools and, 1:315, 318
 Middle Ages and, 2:328
 Neolithic period and, 1:315, 318,
 320, 379–380, 389, 441, 459
 Coppicing industry, 1:52–53, 53
 Corded Ware culture, 1:**467–475**. *See
 also* Single Grave culture; *specific
 countries; specific sites*
 animal husbandry, 1:473
 burials, 1:375, 378, 426–427, 470,
 472–473
 dates for, 1:**468–469**
 differentiation and, 1:**469–472**
 Fatianovo culture, 1:**472**
 gender roles and relationships, 1:473
 Indo-European influences on, 1:**474**
 Małopolska Corded Ware, 1:**471**
 origins of, 1:473–474
 political systems, 1:426–427, 470
 pottery industry, 1:389
 ritual and ideology, 1:378, 473
 settlement patterns, 1:373, 375,
 468–469, 472
 settlement structures, 1:375, 470–
 471, 472, 473
 social systems, 1:426–427, 473
 subsistence resources, 1:375, 473
 tool industries, 1:470
 warfare and conquest, 1:**376–377**
 Córdoba site, 2:528, 528, 529
 Corlea-1 site, 1:417
 Corno-Ripudio site, 1:171
 Correia, António Augusto Mendes,
 1:165
 Corsica, 1:69, 440
Cosmograph of Ravenna, 2:416
 Cosmology. *See* Ritual and ideology
 Cotswold-Severn site, 1:402
 County Cork site, 2:60
 Cova de la Pastora site, 1:463
 Cova de l'Or site, 1:249, 249, 250,
 257
 Crabtree, Pam, 2:238
 C.R.A.M. (Center for Medieval
 Archaeological Research), 2:514
 Crete, 1:215; 2:5, **116–125**, 117
 Criado Boado, Felipe, 1:96
 Crickley Hill site, 1:404
 Criş culture
 animal husbandry, 1:243, 245
 burials, 1:239
 cereal crops, 1:243, 245
 farming, 1:237, **243–244**
 horses for subsistence, 1:365
 Indo-European language and, 1:107
 pottery industry, 1:**238–239**, 243,
 245
 settlement patterns, 1:243
 subsistence resources, 1:243, 245,
 365
 Croatia, 1:320, 335–336, 339; 2:242
Cronica Polonorum (Gallus
 Anonymus), 2:554, 558
 Crops. *See also specific cultures and
 people*
 about Childe on, 1:201
 about fiber and oil, 2:372–373
 about Levant and, 1:205
 about processing, 2:372, 374, 375
 about trade and exchange, 2:373
 about types of
 barley, 1:206, **206–207**
 bitter vetch, 1:208
 cereal, 1:**204–209**; 2:372, 373
 chickpeas, 1:208; 2:372
 einkorn wheat, 1:**205**, 206; 2:372
 emmer wheat, 1:**205–206**, 206;
 2:372
 flax, 1:**208**; 2:372
 legumes, 1:**207–209**
 lentils, 1:207; 2:372
 millet, 2:372
 naked wheat, 1:206
 oats, 2:372
 orchard, 2:372
 poppy, 1:**208**; 2:375

- pulses, 2:372
 rye, 1:207; 2:372
 vetches, 1:208; 2:372
 wheat, 1:205–206, 206; 2:372
 Copper Age, 1:358, 361
 Bronze Age, 1:208; 2:14, 25, 46, 59
 Iron Age, 2:223, 248, 257
 Mesolithic period, 1:207, 208
 Middle Ages, 2:373, 374, 375, 448, 491, 500
 Neolithic period
 Europe, central, 1:337, 380
 Europe, eastern, 1:205, 208, 235, 241, 246, 336–337, 356–357, 361
 Europe, northern, 1:296, 433
 Europe, northwestern, 1:274–275, 276, 277, 279, 283, 289, 290
 Europe, southeastern, 1:336, 337
 Europe, upland central and southern, 1:390, 397
 Europe, western, 1:257
 Mediterranean region, 1:204–209, 249, 254, 276, 443, 459; 2:121
 Near East, 1:205, 1:205–207, 208
 Palaeolithic era, 1:208
 Crvena Stijena site, 1:172
 Cucuteni culture, 1:92, 93, 94, 354, 355, 355, 358
 Cucuteni-Tripolye culture, 1:245, 357–359, 358–359
 Cuiry-les-Chaudardes site, 1:274
 Cummins, Vicki, 1:96
 Curraghmore-16 site, 1:417
 Cyprus
 Bronze Age, 2:108–115, 109
 Copper Age, 1:347–353
 burials, 1:348
 copper artifacts, 1:69, 70
 enclosure complexes, 1:348
 figurines, 1:348–349, 351–352
 settlement structures, 1:349–350, 351, 351
 social systems, 1:349–350
 trade and exchange, 1:69–70, 352
 Neolithic period, 1:231–232
 Czech Republic. *See also* Moravia
 Bronze Age, 2:6, 8, 21
 Iron Age, 2:171
 Middle Ages, 2:155, 155
 Neolithic period, 1:112, 372, 374, 376–377
- Dál Riata culture, 2:386–388, 387, 469, 471, 475
 Dalkey Island site, 2:324
 Dalmatia, 1:172
 Danebury site, 2:162, 227, 229–231, 230
 Danish National Museum for History, 1:15
 Darion site, 1:113, 114
 Darius I, 2:291
 Dark, Petra, 1:154
 Dark Age, 2:312–318, 338
Dark Age Economics (Hodges), 2:324, 327, 330
 Dartmoor site, 1:129
 Darwin, Charles, *On the Origin of Species by Means of Natural Selection*, 1:17, 40, 102
 Dating methods and chronology, 1:40–46
 calibration issues, 1:43–44, 45
 dendrochronology, 1:42–43, 43
 metallurgy industries, 1:66
 obsidian used for, 1:45, 68–69
 optical stimulation luminescence (OSL), 1:45–46
 petrographic analysis of artifacts, 1:68
 pollen used for, 1:127, 130, 186
 pottery used for, 1:66
 radiocarbon dating, 1:41–42, 43, 159
 stone tools used for, 1:66
 thermoluminescence (TL), 1:45–46
 Davies, Wendy, 2:486
The Dawn of European Civilization (Childe), 2:9
 Deer Island site. *See* Oleneostrovskii Mogilnik (Olenii Ostrov) site
 Deer Park Farms site, 2:452, 462–465, 463
 Déisi culture, 2:481
 Dendra site, 1:116
 Denmark. *See also specific cultures and people; specific sites*
 about prehistory, origins of, 1:15–16, 19, 25
 Bronze Age
 burials, 2:75–76, 80–82, 81
 clothing, 2:75–76, 81
 coffin burials, 2:5, 80–82
 hoards, 2:27
 ritual and ideology, 2:77, 78
 settlement patterns, 2:76, 77
 settlement structures, 2:77, 78, 79
 social structures, 2:75–76
 social systems, 2:5, 75–76
 weapons and armor, 2:10
- Iron Age, 2:542–547, 546
 artworks, 1:118
 feasting, 2:182, 182
 human remains, 1:26–28, 47; 2:270
 political systems, 2:542–547
 ritual and ideology, 1:99–100
 settlement patterns, 1:77
 social systems, 1:77
 warfare and conquest, 1:118
 Megalithic period, 1:401
 Mesolithic period, 1:23, 52, 124, 138, 189, 196
 Middle Ages, 2:324, 374
 Neolithic period, 1:52, 298, 301–304, 306, 402, 403, 404
 Viking Age, 2:542–547
 Department of the Environment (Northern Ireland), 2:462
 Deposits of artifacts, 1:76, 315; 2:5, 26. *See also* Bog deposits
 Dereivka site, 1:359, 360–361
 Derevenski, Joanna Sofaer, 1:92
 Díaz-Andreu, Margarita, *Excavating Women: A History of Women in European Archaeology*, 1:81
 Dijon site, 2:376
 Dimini site, 1:336, 337
 Dinas Powys site, 2:483–484
 Diodorus Siculus, 1:113, 118; 2:180
 Dionysius of Halicarnassus, 2:150
 Discovery Programme, 2:452
 Disease and health issues, 1:377, 394, 454
 Divostin site, 1:337
 Dja'de site, 1:205
 Dnieper-Donets culture, 1:245–247, 356–357
 Domesday Book, 2:493, 510
 Domesticated animals. *See* Animal husbandry
The Domestication of Europe: Structure and Contingency in Neolithic Societies (Hodder), 1:84
 Doon Hill site, 2:471
 Dordogne site, 1:17–18
 Dorestad site, 2:324, 325, 328, 329, 330, 357, 592
 Dorsey site, 2:235
 Douglass, A. E., 1:42
 Dowris site, 2:60
 Dowth site, 1:414
 La Draga site, 1:163, 249, 249, 250
 Dragsholm site, 1:298, 426
 Dreuil-lès-Amiens site, 1:274
 Dublin site, 2:454, 455, 466–468
 Duchcov site, 2:299
 Dún Ailinne site, 1:25
 Dun Troddan site, 1:115

D

Dąbki site, 1:135–136

Dunadd site, 2:472
 Dundurn site, 2:472
 Duonkalis site, 1:189
 Durkheim, Émile, 1:90
 Durrington Walls site, 1:405; 2:65
 Dürrnberg site, 1:74
 Duvensee site, 1:156
 Dye production, 2:375
Dying for the Gods (Green), 1:27
 Dzhangar site, 1:364

E

- Early Celtic Art* (Jacobsthal), 2:185
 East Anglian Archaeology Reports, 2:496
 East Yorkshire site, 2:226
 Ebro Basin, 1:163
Ecclesiastical History of the English People (Bede), 2:327, 340, 344, 381, 489, 492, 494, 495
 Economic systems
 Bronze Age, 2:117, 123, 214, 231
 Iron Age
 Europe, central, 2:242–243, 248–249, 250, 281–282, 283–284, 296–297, 300
 Europe, northern, 2:278–279
 Iberia, 2:253–258
 Mediterranean region, 2:255, 257, 258
 Middle Ages
 Europe, central, 2:412, 557, 587–588, 590–591
 Europe, eastern, 2:412, 563–567, 569–571
 Europe, northern, 2:438, 534–535, 592
 Europe, northwestern, 2:330–333, 448–449, 455–456, 458, 492, 500, 509
 Iberia, 2:530–532
 Neolithic period, 1:375
 Viking Age, 2:539–540, 542–547
 Edward the Elder, 2:493, 506
Egil's Saga, 1:11; 2:440
 Egtved Girl, 2:75, 80, 81, 81
 Emporia, 2:324–336
 Enclosure complexes, 1:337–338, 348, 380–381, 382–384, 383; 2:214
 England. *See also specific cultures and people; specific sites*
 Anglo-Saxon period, 1:24, 46; 2:181
 Bronze Age, 2:54–69
 animal husbandry, 2:59
 burials, 2:4, 56–58, 65–66
 causeways, 2:67–68, 68, 69
 copper industry, 2:9
 crops, 2:59
 dates for, 2:6
 economic systems, 2:231
 enclosure complexes, 2:65
 environments, 1:50
 field systems, 2:67–69
 fortifications, 1:114; 2:58
 gold industry, 2:25
 hillforts, 2:229–231, 230
 hoards, 2:60
 landscape use, 1:3, 25
 lead industry, 2:9
 metallurgy industries, 2:54–55
 middens sites, 2:58
 monumental structures, 2:61–67
 political systems, 2:59–61
 resource use, 1:53–54
 ritual and ideology, 2:58, 62, 68–69
 settlement patterns, 1:129; 2:58–59
 settlement structures, 2:57, 58–59, 231
 social systems, 2:5, 57–58, 60–61, 231
 tin industry, 2:8
 trade and exchange, 1:418; 2:55–56
 warfare and conquest, 1:114
 watercraft, 1:417–418, 418; 2:55–56, 56
 weapons and armor, 1:116
 wheeled vehicles, 2:55
 wool industry, 2:59
 Iron Age, 2:222–231
 animal husbandry, 2:223
 artisans, 2:225
 artworks, 2:188–190, 189, 190
 basketry industry, 2:225
 beer production, 2:375
 bronze industry, 2:224, 225
 burials, 2:225–227
 coinage, 2:170, 373
 crops, 2:223
 dates for, 2:222
 environments, 2:222
 farming, 2:222–223
 feasting, 2:180
 field systems, 2:222
 flint industry, 2:224
 fortifications, 2:157
 hillforts, 2:160–163, 223–224
 ironworking, 2:166, 224–225
 landscape use, 2:222, 498
 leather industry, 2:225
 oppida, 2:157, 224, 228
 pottery industry, 2:225
 ritual and ideology, 2:225–227
 salt industry, 2:223
 settlement patterns, 1:77; 2:501–502
 settlement structures, 2:223–224, 224
 social systems, 2:227–228
 stone industry, 2:225
 subsistence resources, 2:222–223
 technologies, 2:224–225
 textile industry, 2:225
 trade and exchange, 2:228
 warfare and conquest, 2:227–228
 Megalithic period, 2:4
 Mesolithic period, 1:52
 Middle Ages
 agriculture, 2:491–492, 500
 animal husbandry, 2:491–492, 500
 artisans, 2:381–382
 burials, 2:333, 381, 383, 490–491, 494, 496–497, 498–500
 Christianity, 2:491, 505, 510
 clothing, 2:383–384
 crops, 2:374, 375, 491, 500
 economic systems, 2:333, 492, 500, 509
 emporia, 2:324–334
 environments, 2:509, 509
 fortifications, 2:492, 493
 languages, 2:490
 mills and milling technology, 2:378
 political systems, 2:494–495
 population statistics, 2:492
 pottery industry, 2:332, 333, 381, 492, 496–497
 ritual and ideology, 2:491, 499
 settlement patterns, 2:332, 333, 493, 500, 501–506
 settlement structures, 2:492–493, 500–501, 509, 509
 state societies, 2:349
 stone carvings, 2:510
 textile industry, 2:434
 trade and exchange, 2:333–334, 493–494
 urbanization, 2:493, 501–507, 503
 Neolithic period, 2:55, 160, 498
 post-Roman period, 2:504–505
 Roman period, 2:501–504
 Viking Age, 2:508–510
 Entremont site, 1:113
 Environments
 about archaeology and, 1:47–54
 about ecofacts, 1:24
 about human impacts on, 1:10–12, 50–52, 53, 127–128

- about population statistics and, 1:9
 about resources, use of, 1:52–53
 about types of
 coastal, 1:126–127
 fauna, 1:127, 152, 181
 fires, use of, 1:10–11, 50–51, 52, 154–155
 flora, 1:7, 8, 9, 10, 123, 127, 145–146
 ocean levels, 1:8, 9, 48, 124, 146, 171–172, 180
- Bronze Age
 Europe, central, 2:20
 Europe, eastern, 2:106
 Europe, northern, 1:49
 Europe, northwestern, 1:50
 Europe, southeastern, 2:13–14
 Iberia, 2:45
 Mediterranean region, 2:42–44, 2:45
- Copper Age, 1:319, 357, 359, 457–458
- Holocene era, 1:8–9, 48, 49, 126–131, 152–153, 168
- Iron Age, 2:222, 272–273
- Mesolithic period
 Europe, eastern, 1:132–133, 183–184
 Europe, northern, 1:52
 Europe, northwestern, 1:50, 145–146, 154–155
 Iberia, 1:157–158, 160, 162
- Middle Ages, 2:413, 439, 445–446, 509
- Neolithic period
 Europe, eastern, 1:244–245, 356, 357, 359
 Europe, northern, 1:286–287, 294, 435–436
 Europe, northwestern, 1:281, 283–284, 286–287
 Europe, upland central and southern, 1:385, 388, 390, 395, 396, 451
 Europe, western, 1:283–284
 Iberia, 1:457–458
 Mediterranean region, 1:248, 439; 2:121
- Pleistocene era, 1:183–184
 postglacial period, 1:7–8, 118–120, 126–131, 130, 183
- Eoforwic site, 2:326, 329
- Epigravettian culture, 1:172
- Epipalaeolithic culture, 1:172, 205, 207, 208
- Eriksson, Gunilla, 1:433
- Erimi site, 1:349
- Ertebølle culture. *See also specific sites*
 about, 1:133, 136–139, 294, 294–296, 420
 aquatic resources, 1:294, 299
 artifacts, 1:137, 137–138
 burials, 1:138–139, 294, 296, 420
 fishing populations, 1:136–137, 420
 foraging populations, 1:420–421
 midden sites, 1:135, 136, 294
 pottery industry, 1:136, 137, 185, 295
 settlement patterns, 1:136–138, 295–296
 settlement structures, 1:295
 subsistence resources, 1:299, 420
 tool industries, 1:185, 294–295, 420
 trade and exchange, 1:420–421
- Escolives site, 1:306, 306, 308
- Estonia, 1:183–184, 185, 186–187.
See also specific sites
- Estridsen, Sven, 2:547
- Ethnic identities, 2:563–567, 571
- Etruscan culture, 2:242–243, 261–268
 Orientalizing period, 2:261–264
 Archaic and Classic periods, 2:264–266
 Classical and Hellenistic periods, 2:266–267
 architecture, temple, 2:265
 artworks, 2:245, 265, 266, 267
 burials, 2:261, 263, 265, 267
 dates for, 2:260, 261–263, 262
 economic systems, 2:261, 263–264, 266
 language, 2:261
 pottery industry, 2:242–243
 ritual and ideology, 2:261, 263, 265, 267
 settlement patterns, 2:260, 264, 267
 settlement structures, 2:260, 262
 social systems, 2:261, 266
 trade and exchange, 2:242–245
- Etton site, 1:403
- Eugippius, *Vita Sancti Severini*, 2:384
- Eumenius, 2:403
- Europe, central. *See also Linearbandkeramik* (LBK) (Linear Pottery culture); *specific countries; specific cultures and people; specific sites*
 about Indo-European language, origins of, 1:106–107
 about prehistory, origins of, 1:20
 Bronze Age, 2:20–33
 animal husbandry, 2:25
 animal pulling power/traction, 2:15, 26
 burials. *See under specific ages and regions*
 copper industry, 2:9
 crops, 2:14, 25
 dairy industry, 2:26
 dates for, 2:6, 20, 86–87
 deposits, 2:26
 deposits of artifacts, 2:26
 environments, 2:20
 farming, 2:14, 25–26
 fortifications, 1:114; 2:31–33, 32
 gender roles and relationships, 1:84
 gold industry, 2:25
 hoards, 2:26–27, 27, 33
 metallurgy industries, 2:23–25, 89–90, 90, 96
 monumental structures, 1:95, 96
 political systems, 2:15–16, 18
 pottery industry, 2:21
 ritual and ideology, 1:95, 96; 2:26–27, 33
 settlement patterns, 2:15, 21–22, 87, 88–89
 settlement structures, 2:21–22, 88–89, 89
 silver industry, 2:25
 social systems, 2:5, 29–30, 32, 90–91
 subsistence resources, 2:89
 tin industry, 2:8
 trade and exchange, 2:27–29, 28, 32
 warfare and conquest, 1:114
 weapons and armor, 1:116
 wheeled vehicles, 2:98, 106
 wool industry, 2:26, 94
- Carolingian period, 2:588–589, 591–592
- Copper Age
 copper industry, 1:23, 315, 317–322, 339, 389, 392–395, 393
 enclosure complexes, 1:382–384
 foraging populations, 1:365
 health and disease issues, 1:394
 population statistics, 1:359
 ritual and ideology, 1:92
 subsistence resources, 1:365, 394
 tool industries, 1:315, 318, 339, 393, 441
 tools, 1:441
 warfare and conquest, 1:112
- Iron Age, 2:241–252, 281–288
 about, 2:296
 artisans, 2:300
 artworks, 2:186–187, 245, 248, 249, 297, 297–298, 301

- Europe, central (*continued*)
- burials, 1:73–76; 2:281, 282, **299**.
See also specific countries; specific sites
 - coinage, 2:159, 169, 170–171, 171, 300
 - crops, 2:248, 375
 - deposits of artifacts, 1:76
 - economic systems, 2:**242–243**, 248–249, 250, 281–282, 283–284, 296–297, 300
 - enclosure complexes, 2:**174–178**, 175, 246, 301
 - farming, 2:210, 283
 - feasting, 2:180, 282
 - figurines, 2:297
 - fortifications, 2:**154–159**, 241, 246–247, **249–252**, 282, 301
 - Fürstensitze*, 2:215–216, 243–244, 250, 251
 - gender roles and relationships, 2:**245**, 283
 - hillforts, 2:243, 243–244, **249–252**, 251
 - hoards, 2:301–302
 - ironworking, 2:166, 248, 283, 284–285, 297, 300
 - life expectancy, 2:299
 - metallurgy industries, 2:210
 - migration patterns, 2:208
 - oppida*, 2:**154–159**, 246, **247–249**, 300
 - political systems, 2:156, 159, 246, 250, 300
 - population statistics, 2:249, 250
 - pottery industry, 2:200–203, 283, 300
 - ritual and ideology, 2:250, 282, **298**, **299**, **301–302**
 - settlement patterns, 1:77; 2:208–209, **299**, 300–301
 - settlement structures, 1:87; 2:209–210
 - social systems, 1:**79–80**; 2:156, 159, 181, 241–242, 246, 250, 282
 - state societies, 2:348
 - technologies, 2:248
 - textile industry, 2:248
 - trade and exchange, 2:138, 159, 210, 242–245, 248–249, 250, 283–284
 - urbanization, 2:287
 - urnfields, 2:282
 - Viereckschanzen*, 2:**174–178**, 175, 177, 246, 247, 301
 - warfare and conquest, 1:**112–113**, 117–118; 2:246, 247, 282, 300
 - weapons and armor, 2:241, 242, 302
 - writing, 2:**302**
- Merovingian period, 2:**586–588**, **589–591**
- Mesolithic period, 1:133–134, 138, 175, 176–177, 185, 186, 189
- Middle Ages
- agriculture, 2:415, 559, 587
 - animal husbandry, 2:370
 - archaeological evidence, 2:**406–407**
 - artisans, 2:573–574, 575, 576–577, 578, 580, 587, 590
 - artworks, 2:412, 421, 578, 586, 589
 - boats and boatbuilding, 2:**430–432**
 - bog deposits, 2:397
 - burials, 2:384–385, 393, 400–401, 573–577, 587–591, 592, 595
 - Christianity, 2:579, 582, 584, 586–587, 588, 589–590, 591
 - coinage, 2:**357–358**
 - economic systems, 2:**412**, 557, 587–588, 590–591
 - emporia, 2:327
 - environments, 2:413
 - fortifications, 2:384, 385, 580, 582, 584–585, 588, **593–594**, **597**
 - Germany, 2:**586–597**, 587, 588, 591, 594
 - historical evidence, 2:**406–408**, **590–591**, **593–594**
 - hoards, 2:573
 - Hungary, 2:**572–579**, 573, 574, 577
 - ironworking, 2:397, 416
 - khagan*, 2:574, 577
 - landscape use, 2:557
 - linguistic evidence, 2:**406–408**
 - mills and milling technology, 2:378
 - political systems, 2:385, 398–403, **556–561**, 575–576, 582–585, 592–594, 595–597
 - Reihengräberfelder*, 2:587, 588, 590, 591
 - ritual and ideology, 2:401, 554, 587–588
 - settlement patterns, 2:384–385, **554–556**, 560, 586, 587, 589, 591–592, 594–595
 - settlement structures, 2:397, 415, 552, 552, 556, 587, 590
 - social systems, 2:398, 576, 584, 587–588, 592
 - state societies, 2:350
 - textile industry, 2:397
 - trade and exchange, 2:406–408, 407, 419–420, 557–558, 588, 591
 - urbanization, 2:587, 590
 - warfare and conquest, 2:391–393, 399–400, 414–417, 419–421, 554–555, 559, 574–576, **578–579**
 - weapons and armor, 2:588
 - writing, 2:586, 589
- Migration period, 2:**572–573**, 573
- Neolithic period, 2:**180–182**
- animal husbandry, 1:241, **246–247**, 330, 337
 - animal pulling power/traction, 1:328, 329
 - burials, 1:267, 360–363, 365–366, 378–382, 381, **408–413**
 - chronology of, 1:**372–373**
 - copper artifacts, evidence of, 1:23, 315, 389, **392–395**, 393
 - copper industry, 1:318, 320, 373
 - crops, 1:337, 380
 - economic systems, 1:**375**
 - enclosure complexes, 1:337–338, 380–381, **382–384**, 383
 - farming, 1:185, **234–248**, **259–272**, 378–382
 - fauna, 1:337, 380
 - figurines, 1:369
 - fishing populations, 1:202
 - foraging populations, 1:202, 365
 - gender roles and relationships, 1:84–85, 376, 379, 381
 - health and disease issues, 1:377, 394
 - herding, 1:**215–216**
 - horses, and effects on warfare and conquest, 1:367–368
 - metallurgy industries, 1:319, 320, **322–324**
 - obsidian artifacts, 1:241
 - pottery industry, 1:185, 202, 238–240, 268, 369–370, 373, 374
 - resource use, 1:84–85
 - ritual and ideology, 1:92, **377–378**, 378–382
 - Secondary Products Revolution, 1:327, 328
 - settlement patterns, 1:335–336, **374–375**
 - settlement structures, 1:369, 369, 374
 - social systems, 1:241–243, 263, 337
 - steppe region, 1:246–247
 - subsistence resources, 1:365, 394
 - tool industries, 1:393

- tools, 1:441
 trade and exchange, 1:376
 warfare and conquest, 1:111–112, 367–368
 post-Roman period, 2:587–588, 590–591
 Roman period, 2:573–574, 586–590
 Viking Age, 2:349
 Europe, eastern. *See also specific countries; specific cultures and people; specific sites*
 about prehistory, origins of, 1:18, 20
 Bronze Age
 burials, 2:17, 93–97, 105
 copper industry, 2:9
 crops, 1:208
 environments, 2:106
 farming, 1:434
 fortifications, 1:114–115; 2:31–33, 32
 horses, domestication of, 2:93, 106
 metallurgy industries, 2:103–104
 political systems, 2:18, 104
 pottery industry, 2:96, 104–105
 ritual and ideology, 2:26, 32, 99
 settlement patterns, 2:15, 93, 93–94, 95–96, 103, 104
 settlement structures, 2:103, 104
 social systems, 2:93
 steppe herders, 2:92–100
 subsistence resources, 2:99
 tin industry, 2:8
 trade and exchange, 2:111–113
 Transcaucasia, 2:101–107, 102
 warfare and conquest, 1:114
 wheeled vehicles, 2:94–95
 Copper Age
 animal husbandry, 1:358
 burials, 1:341–343, 358
 copper artifacts, evidence of, 1:315
 copper industry, 1:317–322, 339
 crops, 1:358, 361
 environments, 1:357, 359
 fauna, 1:358
 fishing populations, 1:358
 flora, 1:358, 361
 foraging populations, 1:365
 gender roles and relationships, 1:343
 gold artifacts, 1:321, 341–342, 342
 horses, domestication of, 1:361
kurgan burials, 1:340, 361, 362; 2:94–97
 population statistics, 1:359
 pottery industry, 1:358, 359, 361, 362
 ritual and ideology, 1:360, 361, 363, 365–366
 settlement patterns, 1:320, 338–339, 358–359, 362
 settlement structures, 1:358
 stone tool industries, 1:361
 subsistence resources, 1:358, 361, 365
 tool industries, 1:315, 318, 339, 341–342
 trade and exchange, 1:69, 70, 339, 352, 358
 warfare and conquest, 1:112
 Iron Age
 artisans, 2:293
 artworks, 2:305
 coinage, 2:170
 dates for, 2:289–295, 303
kurgan burials, 2:291, 304–306
 political systems, 2:285, 292–293, 305–307, 309–310
 pottery industry, 2:292, 305–306
 settlement patterns, 2:291–292, 293–294, 304–306, 307
 settlement structures, 2:292
 warfare and conquest, 2:290, 294–295, 310–311
 weapons and armor, 2:242, 302
 Mesolithic period, 1:183–198
 aquatic resources, 1:184, 186
 burials, 1:83, 124, 187, 188, 189, 190, 196
 environments, 1:132–133, 183–184
 farming, 1:186
 fishing populations, 1:186
 flora, 1:186, 187
 foraging populations, 1:184–185, 186–187, 364
 horses for subsistence, 1:364
 landscape use, 1:185–187
 pastoralism, 1:362
 pottery industry, 1:184–185
 ritual and ideology, 1:187, 188–190, 196
 settlement patterns, 1:184–185, 187
 settlement structures, 1:187
 stone tool industries, 1:184–185, 186
 subsistence resources, 1:124, 184, 186, 187
 trade and exchange, 1:187
 Middle Ages, 2:563–571, 564
 animal husbandry, 2:570–571
 archaeological evidence, 2:406–407, 563–564
 artworks, 2:412
 burials, 2:566, 569
 dates for, 2:407
 economic systems, 2:412, 563–567, 569–571
 environments, 2:413
 ethnic identities, 2:563, 564, 565, 566, 571
 foraging populations, 2:570–571
 fortifications, 2:566, 580
 historical evidence, 2:406–408, 563
 linguistic evidence, 2:406–408
 metalworking, 2:570, 570
 nomadic tradition, 2:368–369
 pastoralism, 2:368–369
 political systems, 2:556–561, 564, 566
 Russia, 2:564
 settlement patterns, 2:564–565, 569
 social systems, 2:564, 566
 trade and exchange, 2:565–566
 urbanization, 2:563, 565
 Neolithic period
 animal husbandry, 1:326, 328–329, 336–337, 356–357, 361, 362
 artworks, 1:361
 bog deposits, 1:298
 burials, 1:297, 305–310, 307, 360–363, 365–366, 372, 378–382
 chronology of, 1:372–373
 copper industry, 1:315, 318, 379–380
 crops, 1:205, 208, 235, 241, 246, 336–337, 356–357, 361
 environments, 1:244–245, 356, 357, 359
 farming, 1:185, 223–225, 243–248, 378–382
 fauna, 1:358, 361, 362
 figurines, 1:369
 fishing populations, 1:202
 flint industry, 1:376
 flora, 1:357, 361
 foraging populations, 1:234–235, 364, 365
 horses, role of, 1:364, 366, 367–368
kurgan burials, 1:361, 362
 landscape use, 1:129
 monumental structures, 1:305–310
 pottery industry, 1:185, 235–237, 238–240, 243, 245, 247, 369–370, 373
 ritual and ideology, 1:94, 378–382
 salt industry, 1:376
 settlement patterns, 1:239, 241, 314, 335–336, 337, 368, 374–375

- Europe, eastern (*continued*)
 settlement structures, 1:369, 369, 374, 379, 380
 stone tool industries, 1:369
 subsistence resources, 1:336–337, 365
 trade and exchange, 1:239, 247, 376
 warfare and conquest, 1:112, 367–368, 376–377
 Pleistocene era, 1:183–184
 Europe, northern. *See also* Baltic region; *specific countries; specific cultures and people; specific sites*
 Bronze Age, 2:72–85, 533
 animal husbandry, 1:434; 2:59
 bronze industry, 2:74
 burials, 2:74–76, 80–91, 87–88
 clothing, 2:75–76, 81
 coffin burials, 2:5, 75, 80–82
 copper industry, 2:7, 9
 dates for, 2:6, 73
 environments, 1:49
 farming, 1:434
 gender roles and relationships, 1:81, 85–86, 86; 2:75–76
 metallurgy industries, 2:73–74
 resource use, 1:53–54
 ritual and ideology, 2:77–78
 settlement patterns, 2:72–73, 76–77
 settlement structures, 2:77, 78, 79
 social structures, 2:75–76
 social systems, 1:85–86; 2:84
 trade and exchange, 2:78–79
 weapons and armor, 2:10
 Copper Age, 1:92, 93, 359
 Holocene era, 1:49
 Iron Age
 agriculture, 2:548
 animal husbandry, 2:223
 aquatic resources, 2:276
 archaeological evidence, 2:550–551
 artisans, 2:539
 artworks, 2:269, 270, 278, 539
 burials, 2:269–270, 279, 282, 551, 551
 cairn fields, 2:273–274
 dates for, 2:276–278, 537
 economic systems, 2:278–279
 environments, 2:272–273
 farming, 2:273–274, 276, 548
 feasting, 2:181, 182, 182
 fishing populations, 2:276, 535
 foraging populations, 2:276
 fortifications, 2:138–139
 gender roles and relationships, 1:86–87; 2:279
 hillforts, 2:550
 historical evidence, 2:549–550
 hoards, 2:270
 human remains, 1:26–28, 47; 2:270
 human sacrifices, 2:270
 iron industry, 2:269
 landscape use, 1:61; 2:270–272
 monumental structures and, 1:96
 political systems, 2:534, 542–547
 population statistics, 2:270–271
 resource use, 1:53–54
 ritual and ideology, 1:93, 99–100; 2:181–183, 270, 551
 settlement patterns, 1:77; 2:270–273, 278–279, 548
 settlement structures, 2:273, 534–535, 537–538
 social systems, 2:279–280, 535, 548
 subsistence resources, 2:534–535, 537–538
 trade and exchange, 2:278–279
 transportation routes, 2:276
 urbanization, 2:550
 warfare and conquest, 1:118; 2:269–270
 watercraft, 2:270
 weapons and armor, 2:270
 wheeled vehicles, 2:270
 Megalithic period, 1:297, 302, 304–310, 307, 399, 401, 423–424, 425–426
 Mesolithic period, 1:132–143, 185
 burials, 1:124, 138, 140–141, 148–150, 190, 196, 296, 309
 environments, 1:52
 fishing populations, 1:137–138, 138
 flora, 1:186
 foraging populations, 1:184, 185
 gender roles and relationships, 1:83
 landscape use, 1:129
 pottery industry, 1:185
 resource use, 1:52
 settlement patterns, 1:147–148
 stone tool industries, 1:144, 145, 185
 textile industry, 1:143
 trade and exchange, 1:187
 Middle Ages
 animal husbandry, 2:439–440, 491–492, 499
 artisans, 2:426–429, 427
 artworks, 2:417, 418
 boats and boatbuilding, 2:430–432
 burials, 2:404–405, 410, 589
 Christianity, 2:535, 540, 549
 clothing, 2:433–435, 434
 coinage, 2:358–359
 crops, 2:374
 documentary sources, 2:437
 economic systems, 2:438, 534–535, 592
 emporia, 2:324, 325–326, 326, 329
 environments, 2:439
 farming, 2:439–440
 foraging populations, 2:409–410
 hoards, 2:334, 334, 404
 jewelry, 2:426–429, 427
 political systems, 2:418–419, 437–438, 443, 589
 ritual and ideology, 2:410, 438, 442, 444, 588
 settlement patterns, 2:418, 438–439, 440–441, 589
 settlement structures, 2:418, 443–444
 ship burials, 2:534
 social systems, 2:419
 state societies, 2:348–349
 subsistence resources, 2:418, 440–441
 textile industry, 2:433–435, 434
 trade and exchange, 2:326, 353–354, 418, 433, 589
 warfare and conquest, 2:417, 534, 586
 writing, 2:419
 Migration period, 2:270
 Neolithic period, 1:402, 414, 431–438, 470–471
 animal husbandry, 1:279, 279, 296–297
 aquatic resources, 1:288, 289, 432
 bog deposits, 1:298, 315
 burials, 1:298, 302–304, 305–310, 413–415, 433, 436, 437
 copper industry, 1:315
 crops, 1:296, 433
 dates for, 1:398, 433
 enclosure complexes, 1:298, 301–304, 302, 403
 environments, 1:286–287, 294, 435–436
 farming, 1:202, 293–310, 421–422, 431–432, 436; 2:371
 fauna, 1:433
 fishing populations, 1:202
 flint industry, 1:424–425
 foraging populations, 1:202, 426–427, 431–432, 433, 434, 436
 landscape use, 1:60, 61, 62, 289–291
 political systems, 1:432–433

- pottery industry, 1:185, 202, 289, 290, 296–298, 432, 434, 436
 resource use, 1:52, 53
 ritual and ideology, 1:296, 298, 301, **425–426**, 432, 433, 437
 settlement patterns, 1:289, 314, 372, *421*, 432, 436
 settlement structures, 1:314, 436–437
 social systems, 1:436
 stone tool industries, 1:290, 426, 432
 subsistence resources, 1:289, 313, **432–433**, 436
 tool industries, 1:432
 trade and exchange, 1:434
 wool industry, 1:426
 Pleistocene era, 1:183–184
 postglacial period, 1:142, 143, 299
 Roman period, 1:62
 Stone Age, 1:433
 Viking Age, 2:**417–419**, **436–444**, 534–535, **537–547**, 550
 artisans, 2:**539**, 550
 burials, 2:534, **538–539**
 Christianity, 2:**540**, 549
 coinage, 2:549, 550
 dates for, 2:548
 economic systems, 2:**539–540**, **542–547**
 fortifications, 2:544, 546, 546–547
 hoards, 2:535, 535, 538, 538, 549
 monumental structures, 2:542, 544, 545
 political systems, 2:541–542, 544–545, 546
 settlement structures, 2:**534–535**, **537–538**
 stone carvings, 2:542, 544, 545
 subsistence resources, 2:**534–535**, **537–538**
 trade and exchange, 2:**542–547**
 urbanization, 2:**539–540**
 Europe, northwestern. *See also specific countries; specific cultures and people; specific sites*
 Bronze Age, 2:**54–71**
 animal husbandry, 2:59
 bronze industry, 1:118–120
 burials, 2:4, **56–58**, 65–66
 causeways, 2:67–68, 68, 69
 copper industry, 2:9
 crops, 2:59
 economic systems, 2:231
 enclosure complexes, 2:65
 environments, 1:50
 field systems, 2:**67–69**
 fortifications, 1:118–120; 2:58
 gold industry, 2:25, **69–71**, 70
 hillforts, 2:**229–231**, 230
 hoards, 2:60, 70, 71
 landscape use, 1:3, 25, 128, 315
 metallurgy industries, 2:**54–55**
 midden sites, 2:58
 monumental structures, 1:315; 2:61–67
 political systems, 2:**59–61**
 ritual and ideology, 2:57–58, 62, 68–69
 settlement patterns, 1:129; 2:**58–59**
 settlement structures, 2:57–58, 59, 231
 social systems, 1:46; 2:5, 57–58, **60–61**, 231
 trade and exchange, 1:418; 2:**55–56**
 warfare and conquest, 1:118–120
 watercraft, 1:**417–418**, *418*; 2:55–56, 56
 wheeled vehicles, 2:55
 wool industry, 2:59
 Holocene era, 1:48, 152
 Iron Age
 animal husbandry, 2:223
 artisans, 2:225
 artworks, 2:*188*, 188–190, *189*, 234–235, 235
 basketry industry, 2:225
 beer production, 2:375
 bronze industry, 1:118–120; 2:224, 225
 burials, 2:**225–227**, 236, 237
 coinage, 2:169, 170, 373
 crops, 2:223
 dates for, 2:222, **232–233**
 enclosure complexes, 2:234, **239–240**
 environments, 2:222
 farming, 2:372
 feasting, 2:180
 field systems, 2:222
 flint industry, 2:224
 fortifications, 1:115, 118–120; 2:**157**, **160–163**, 451–452
 hillforts, 2:**160–163**, 223–224, 235
 ironworking, 2:166, 224–225
 landscape use, 1:*130*; 2:498
 leather industry, 2:225
oppida, 2:**157**, 224, 228
 pottery industry, 2:225
 ringforts, 2:235, 236–237
 ritual and ideology, 2:**225–227**, 237–238
 royal sites, 2:**239–240**
 salt industry, 2:223
 settlement patterns, 1:77; 2:501–502
 settlement structures, 2:**223–224**, 224
 social systems, 2:181, **227–228**
 stone industry, 2:225
 stone tool industries, 2:225
 subsistence resources, 2:**222–223**
 technologies, 2:**224–225**
 textile industry, 2:225
 trade and exchange, 2:228, 237
 warfare and conquest, 1:118–120; 2:227–228
 writing, 2:237
 Megalithic period, 1:97
 Mesolithic period
 animal husbandry, 1:**278–280**
 aquatic resources, 1:146–147, 273, 274, 288, 289, 436
 artworks, 1:149
 burials, 1:124, 138, 140–141, 148–150, 196, **296**, 309
 dates for, 1:83
 environments, 1:50, 145–146, 154–155
 farming, 1:150–151, 202
 fauna, 1:145–146, 153, 278–279, 436
 fires, and impacts of use by humans on, 1:154–155
 flora, 1:145–146, 277
 foraging populations, 1:123–125, **133–140**, 148, 153
 population statistics, 1:148
 pottery industry, 1:279, 279
 resource use, 1:52
 ritual and ideology, 1:12, **149–151**
 settlement patterns, 1:**148**, 153–156, 275
 settlement structures, 1:**148**, 152, 153
 settlements, 1:**135–138**
 stone tool industries, 1:**144–145**, 145, 151, 153, *155*, **294–295**
 subsistence resources, 1:50, 52, **145–147**, 277–288, 436
 watercraft, 1:202, **417–418**, *418*
 Middle Ages
 agriculture, 2:**491–492**, 500
 animal husbandry, 2:491–492, 500
 archaeological evidence, 2:**447–448**, **450–451**
 architecture, 2:481
 architecture, church, 2:476–477, 480, **485–487**
 artisans, 2:381–383, **405**, 472, 477, 480

- Europe, northwestern (*continued*)
 artworks, 1:46; 2:388, **405**, 453, 453–454, 454, 464–465
 boats and boatbuilding, 2:431, 432
 bone industry, 2:329
 bronze industry, 2:328
 burials, 2:333, 382, 474, 476, **484–485**, **490–491**, **498–500**, 499
 Christianity, 2:**450–459**, 453, 469, **473–474**, 491, 505, 510
 clothing, 2:383–384
 copper industry, 2:328
 crannogs, 2:452, **461**, 471, 483
 crops, 2:374, 448, 491, 500
 economic systems, 2:330–333, **448–449**, 455–456, 458, 492, 500, 509
 emporia, 2:591, 594
 environments, 2:**445–446**, 509
 execution sites, 2:499, 500
 farming, 2:329, 448
 feasting, 2:181
 fortifications, 2:452, **460–461**, 471–472, 480, 483–484, 492–493
 gender roles and relationships, 2:464
 gold industry, 2:328
 hillforts, 2:480
 historical evidence, 2:**446–447**
 inscribed stones, 2:480–481, 485–486
 ironworking, 2:328
 languages, 2:386, 490
 linguistic evidence, 2:**447**
 metalwork, 2:453–454, 454, 472
 mills and milling technology, 2:377, 377, 378, 378, 454, 477
 political systems, 2:388, **494–495**
 population statistics, 2:492
 pottery industry, 2:328, 332, 333, 381, 452–453, 472, 492, 496–497
 raths and cashels, 2:**460–465**, 463
 ringforts, 2:451–452, **460–465**, 463
 ritual and ideology, 2:448, **450–451**, **455–459**, **473–474**, 476, 480, 486–487, 491
 settlement patterns, 2:232, 333, **451–452**, **471–472**, 493, 500, 501–506
 settlement structures, 2:381, **404**, 462–465, 463, **483–484**, **492–493**, 500–501, 509, 509
 silver industry, 2:328
 slavery, 2:474
 social systems, 2:329–330, 386, 471, 483–484
 state societies, 2:349
 stone carvings, 2:**405**, 453, 453, **472–473**, 473, **476–478**, 480, 480, 510
 subsistence resources, 2:448
 textile industry, 2:329, 434
 trade and exchange, 2:333–334, **493–494**
 transportation routes, 2:387
 urbanization, 2:455, **456–459**, 457, 466–468, 493, **501–507**, 503, **516–518**
 warfare and conquest, 2:330, 387–388
 woodworking, 2:454
 writing, 2:**405**
 Neolithic period, 1:273–291
 animal husbandry, 1:273–290, 279
 aquatic resources, 1:288, 289
 burials, 1:274, 276, 283, 287, 288, 289, 403–404, 418
 crops, 1:274–275, 276, 277, 279, 283, 289, 290
 dates for, 1:398
 enclosure complexes, 1:284–286, 285
 England, 1:276–277, 283–286, 285
 environments, 1:281, 283–284, 286–287
 farming, 1:150, **273–291**; 2:498
 fauna, 1:288
 foraging populations, 1:151
 fortifications, 2:160
 herding, 1:**215–216**
 landscape use, 1:60, 60, 61–64, 62, 288, 315
 monumental structures, 1:276, 315
 pottery industry, 1:185, 273–277, 279, 280, 287, 289, 290
 ritual and ideology, 1:274, 284–285
 settlement patterns, 1:226–227, 275, 289, **314–315**, 398
 settlement structures, 1:273, 274, 279, 281–282, 282, 283, 398, 399
 stone tool industries, 1:150, 274, 287, 289, 290
 subsistence resources, 1:276, 283, 285, 289, 398
 trackways, 1:416–417; 2:55
 warfare and conquest, 1:112, 285
 post-Roman period, 2:**469–470**, **480–481**, **504–505**
 postglacial period, 1:154, 155
 Roman period, 2:501–504
 Stone Age, 2:533
 Viking Age, 2:**445–449**, 446, **454–456**, **466–468**, 469, **474–475**, **508–510**
 Europe, southeastern. *See also* Europe, upland central and southern; Mediterranean region; *specific countries*; *specific sites*
 Bronze Age
 animal husbandry, 1:215; 2:14–15
 animal pulling power/traction, 2:14, 15
 burials, 1:18; 2:17
 copper industry, 1:**319**, **320–321**
 crops, 2:14
 dairy industry, 2:14
 environments, 2:**13–14**
 farming, 2:14
 political systems, 2:15–16, 18
 pottery industry, 2:16–18
 settlement patterns, 2:17–18
 settlement structures, 2:18
 tool industries, 2:14
 wool industry, 2:14
 Copper Age, 1:**334–346**
 burials, 1:339–340, 348
 enclosure complexes, 1:348
 environments, 1:**319**
 figurines, 1:348–349, 351–352
 gender roles and relationships, 1:343
 gold artifacts, 1:**321**, 342
 settlement patterns, 1:320, 338–339
 settlement structures, 1:320, 349–350, 351, 351
 social systems, 1:**343–344**, **349–350**, 362
 tool industries, 1:315, 318, 339
 trade and exchange, 1:69, 70, 339, 352
 Neolithic period, 1:**334–346**
 animal husbandry, 1:330, 336, 337
 animal pulling power/traction, 1:328, 329
 burials, 1:338, 345–346
 copper industry, 1:318, 320
 crops, 1:336, 337
 enclosure complexes, 1:337–338
 fauna, 1:337
 flora, 1:337
 horses for subsistence, 1:364
 social systems, 1:337
 Europe, upland central and southern. *See also* Alpine/pre-Alpine regions; Europe, central; Europe, southeastern; Mediterranean

region; *specific countries; specific cultures and people; specific sites*
 Bronze Age, 1:450; 2:5, 7, 22, 25
 Holocene era, 1:167–182
 Iron Age, 1:115
 Mesolithic period, 1:167–182
 aquatic resources, 1:111, 171, 175, 176, 178, 179–180, 181, 202
 artworks, 1:179
 burials, 1:170
 farming, 1:177
 fauna, 1:171, 176, 179
 fishing populations, 1:177
 flora, 1:176, 179
 pottery industry, 1:177, 178
 ritual and ideology, 1:177
 subsistence resources, 1:176
 trade and exchange, 1:176, 177, 179
 Neolithic period
 animal husbandry, 1:390
 aquatic resources, 1:178, 390, 397
 architecture, 1:452
 bone industry, 1:389, 396
 burials, 1:178, 181, 391, 446–450, 447, 454
 copper industry, 1:389
 crops, 1:390, 397
 dates for, 1:451
 environments, 1:385, 388, 390, 395, 396, 451
 farming, 1:150, 177–179, 180, 181
 fauna, 1:388, 390–391, 396
 figurines, 1:452, 454
 flint industry, 1:389
 flora, 1:388, 390, 397
 gender roles and relationships, 1:84–85
 health and disease issues, 1:454
 monumental structures, 1:446, 450–455, 453
 political systems, 1:389, 448–450, 449, 451
 population statistics, 1:453–454
 pottery industry, 1:171, 172, 180, 389, 395–396, 452
 ritual and ideology, 1:391
 settlement patterns, 1:314–315, 335–336, 386–387, 389, 395
 settlement structures, 1:178, 180, 314
 stone tool industries, 1:171, 172, 441, 452
 subsistence resources, 1:178, 180, 202, 389–390, 397, 454
 tool industries, 1:386, 387, 389, 396
 trade and exchange, 1:391

wheeled vehicles, 1:388
 Europe, western. *See also* Iberia; Mediterranean region; *specific countries; specific cultures and people; specific sites*
 Bronze Age
 burials, 2:5, 214–215
 copper industry, 2:9
 silver industry, 2:25
 tin industry, 2:8
 trade and exchange, 1:418
 weapons and armor, 2:8
 Copper Age, 1:314, 315
 Iron Age, 2:198–207
 artworks, 2:184, 185, 185, 186, 187, 215, 216
 burials, 1:75–76, 87, 414–415; 2:205, 205–207, 214–218, 242
 coinage, 2:169, 170, 171–172, 172, 216
 dates for, 2:137
 feasting, 2:218
 fortifications, 2:154–157, 155, 212
 hillforts, 2:212, 215, 216
 ironworking, 2:166, 215
 metallurgy industries, 2:216, 217
oppida, 2:154–157, 212, 218, 219–221
 political systems, 2:213, 217, 218
 pottery industry, 2:199–200
 settlement patterns, 2:212–213, 213, 215, 217–218
 settlement structures, 1:75, 76, 87; 2:216, 218–219
 social systems, 2:214, 216, 217
 state societies, 2:348
 trade and exchange, 2:202–204, 215, 216
 warfare and conquest, 2:217
 weapons and armor, 1:116–117; 2:214
 Megalithic period, 1:306, 408–415, 409, 410, 414
 Mesolithic period, 1:124, 147, 157–158, 159, 162, 279
 Middle Ages
 archaeological history, 2:511–514, 513
 artworks, 2:520, 520–521, 521
 burials, 2:514–515, 515–516, 517–518, 519–524, 520, 521
 Christianity, 2:516–518
 emporia, 2:324
 settlement patterns, 2:514–516
 settlement structures, 2:515
 trade and exchange, 2:530–532
 urbanization, 2:514, 516–518, 517
 weapons and armor, 2:522

Neolithic period, 1:160, 249, 249, 283–286, 285
 animal husbandry, 1:163
 Brittany region, 1:275–276, 279
 burials, 1:403–404, 465
 copper industry, 1:315
 enclosure complexes, 1:284–286, 285, 403–404
 environments, 1:283–284
 farming, 1:163, 243–248, 273
 fauna, 1:443
 fortifications, 1:113–114
 herding, 1:215–216
 landscape use, 1:128, 315, 405, 406–408, 407
 pottery industry, 1:257, 391
 ritual and ideology, 1:284–285
 settlement patterns, 1:257, 314
 settlement structures, 1:314
 steppes, southern, 1:243–248
 subsistence resources, 1:285, 394
 tool industries, 1:386, 387, 393
 warfare and conquest, 1:113–114
 postglacial period, 1:142
Europe's First Farmers (Jochim), 1:168
 Evans, Arthur, 1:18, 125; 2:121
 Evans, John, 1:452–453
Excavating Women: A History of Women in European Archaeology (Díaz-Andreu), 1:81

F

La Falguera site, 1:162
 Falkenstein site, 1:374, 376
 Fargo Plantation site, 2:65
 Farming. *See also* Agriculture; Animal husbandry; Crops; *specific countries; specific cultures and people; specific sites*
 about animal pulling power/traction and, 1:314, 327–329, 331–332
 about consequences of, 1:313–316
 about DNA evidence for, 1:237
 about environments and, 1:208–210, 313
 about food crisis model, 1:299
 about landscape use, 1:118–120
 about origins of, 1:223–224
 about plow artifacts and, 1:329, 330, 330–331, 373
 about spread of, 1:201–203, 218, 219
 Bronze Age, 1:434; 2:14, 25–26
 Holocene era, 1:8–9, 127–128, 130, 130

- Farming (*continued*)
- Iron Age
- Europe, central, 2:283
 - Europe, eastern, 2:210
 - Europe, northern, 2:273–274, 276, 548
 - Europe, northwestern, 2:372
 - Iberia, 2:255
 - Mediterranean region, 2:255, 263, 372, 375
 - Mesolithic period, 1:150–151, 161, 177, 186, 202
 - Middle Ages, 1:325–327; 2:329, 439–440, 448
 - Neolithic period
 - Europe, central, 1:259–272, 378–382
 - Europe, eastern, 1:185, 202, 223–225, 234–248
 - Europe, northern, 1:293–310, 421–422, 431–432, 436; 2:371
 - Europe, northwestern, 1:150, 273–291; 2:498
 - Europe, upland central and southern, 1:150, 177–179, 180, 181
 - Europe, western, 1:163, 243–248, 273
 - Iberia, 1:163, 459
 - Mediterranean region, 1:163, 201, 248–257
 - Stone Age, 1:433
- Fauna. *See also* Animal husbandry; *specific countries; specific sites*
- Holocene era, 1:152
- Mesolithic period, 1:145–146, 153, 164, 171, 176, 179, 278–279, 436
- Neolithic period
- Europe, central, 1:337, 380
 - Europe, eastern, 1:358, 361, 362
 - Europe, northern, 1:433
 - Europe, northwestern, 1:288
 - Europe, southeastern, 1:337
 - Europe, upland central and southern, 1:388, 390–391, 396
 - Europe, western, 1:443
 - Iberia, 1:229, 443, 459
- Feasting, 2:179–183, 182, 194, 218
- Feddersen Wierde site, 2:381, 383
- Feerwore site, 2:236
- Feldhofer Grotto, 1:17
- Fenland Research Committee, 1:47
- Fenland site, 1:47
- Fère-en-Tardenois site, 1:145
- Ferembach, Denise, 1:166
- Ferguson, Charles, 1:42
- Fernández-Miranda, Manuel, 2:49
- Fernández-Posse, María Dolores, 2:49
- Ferreira, Octávio da Veiga, 1:165
- Ferreira do Alentejo site, 1:458
- Ferriby site, 1:417, 418
- Ferriter's Cove site, 1:279
- Feudvar site, 2:18
- Field systems, 2:59–60, 214, 222
- Figurines. *See also* Artworks; Pottery industry; *specific countries; specific sites*
- about making and breaking, 1:92, 94
 - Bronze Age, 2:120, 123
 - Copper Age, 1:348–349, 351–352
 - Iron Age, 2:256, 297
 - Neolithic period, 1:84–85, 223, 369, 452, 454
- Filador site, 1:163
- Filiestru Cave site, 1:69
- Finland
- Bronze Age, 1:434
 - Iron Age, 2:276–280, 277, 278, 548, 549–551, 551
 - Mesolithic period, 1:184, 185, 186, 187, 190
 - Pleistocene era, 1:183–184
 - Viking Age, 2:548–549, 550
- Fishing populations
- basketwork fish traps, 1:145
 - Copper Age, 1:358
 - Ertebølle culture, 1:136–137
 - Iron Age, 2:276, 535
 - Mesolithic period, 1:124, 137–138, 138, 177, 186
 - Neolithic period, 1:202
 - postglacial period, 1:8, 138, 184
- Flag Fen, 2:67–69, 68, 226–227
- Flint industry, 1:376, 389, 424–425, 441, 444; 2:224
- Flora. *See also* Crops; *specific countries; specific sites*
- Copper Age, 1:358, 361
 - Holocene era, 1:127
 - Mesolithic period, 1:123, 142, 145–146, 176, 179, 186, 187, 277
 - Neolithic period, 1:262, 268, 337, 357, 361, 388, 390, 397
 - postglacial period, 1:7, 123, 127
- Fokkens, Harry, 1:60
- Fonaby site, 2:490
- Foraging populations. *See also specific countries; specific cultures and people; specific sites*
- about sedentary, 1:135–139
 - Copper Age, 1:364, 365
 - Holocene era, 1:9, 10, 127, 130, 167–182
 - Iron Age, 2:276
- Mesolithic period, 1:133–135, 145–147
- Europe, central, 1:133–134, 175, 185
 - Europe, eastern, 1:184–185, 186–187, 364
 - Europe, northern, 1:184, 185
 - Europe, northwestern, 1:123–125, 133–140, 148, 153
 - Iberia, 1:159
 - Mediterranean region, 1:159
- Middle Ages, 2:409–410, 570–571
- Neolithic period
- Europe, central, 1:202, 365
 - Europe, eastern, 1:234–235, 364, 365
 - Europe, northern, 1:202, 426–427, 431–432, 433, 434, 436
 - Europe, northwestern, 1:151
 - Mediterranean region, 1:229, 249, 255, 459
- Palaeolithic era, 1:8
- Forenbaher, Stašo, 1:320, 459
- Fortifications. *See also* Enclosure complexes; *Oppida; specific countries; specific sites*
- about types of
 - Fürstensitze*, 2:215–216, 243–244, 250, 251
 - Galician *castra*, 2:258
 - Herrenhöfe*, 2:246–247
 - hillforts, 2:160–163, 249–252, 251
 - raths and cashels, 2:460–461
 - ringforts, 2:235, 236–237, 451–452
- Bronze Age
- Europe, central, 1:114; 2:31–33, 32
 - Europe, eastern, 1:114–115; 2:31–33, 32
 - Europe, northwestern, 1:118–120; 2:58
 - Mediterranean region, 1:114, 115; 2:37, 38, 112
- Iron Age
- Europe, central, 2:154–159, 241, 246–247, 249–252, 251, 282, 301
 - Europe, northern, 2:138–139
 - Europe, northwestern, 1:115, 118–120; 2:157, 160–163, 451–452
 - Europe, upland central and southern, 1:115
 - Europe, western, 2:154–157, 155, 212
- Middle Ages
- Anglo-Saxon culture, 2:492, 493

- crannogs, 2:452, **460–461**, 471, 483
 Europe, central, 2:384, 385, 580, 582, 584–585, 588, **593–594**, **597**
 Europe, eastern, 2:566, 580
 Europe, northwestern, 2:452, **460–461**, 471–472, 480, 481–482, 492–493
 Neolithic period, 1:113–114, 465; 2:160
 Viking Age, 2:544, 546, 546–547
 Fosna site, 2:533
 France. *See also specific cultures and people; specific sites*
 Bronze Age, 2:8, 8–9, 25, 27, 214
 Iron Age, 2:212–221
 artworks, 1:118; 2:186, 187, 215, 216
 burials, 1:75–76, 87, 414–415; 2:205–207, 214–218, 242
 coinage, 2:170, 171–172, 172, 216
 dates for, 2:137
 feasting, 2:218
 fortifications, 2:154–157, 155, 212
 hillforts, 2:212, 215, 216
 ironworking, 2:166, 215
 metallurgy industries, 2:216, 217
oppida, 2:154–157, 155, 212, 218, **219–221**
 political systems, 2:213, 217, 218
 pottery industry, 2:199–200
 settlement patterns, 2:212–213, 213, 215, 217–218
 settlement structures, 1:75, 76, 87; 2:216, 218–219
 social systems, 2:214, 216, 217
 trade and exchange, 2:215, 216
 warfare and conquest, 1:118; 2:217
 weapons and armor, 2:214
 Middle Ages, 2:511–518
 Neolithic period, 1:249, 249, **439–455**
 animal husbandry, 1:443
 burials, 1:408–413
 copper industry, 1:441
 crops, 1:443
 farming, 1:273
 fauna, 1:443
 foraging populations, 1:443
 pottery industry, 1:440–441
 stone tool industries, 1:441
 France-Lanord, Albert, 2:513
 Franchthi Cave site, 1:91, **179–182**, 180, 201, 204, 207, 208, 218
 Frank people, 2:396–401, 397, **592–594**, **595–597**
 Frankenstein, Susan, 1:78
 Franzhausen site, 2:22, 23
 French Association of Merovingian Archaeology (Association Française d'Archéologie Mérovingienne (A.F.A.M.)), 2:514
 Frénouville site, 2:400, 514
 Frere, John, 1:16
 Fréret, 2:396
 Friebritz site, 1:374
 Friesack site, 1:133–134, 156
 Friðriksson, Adolf, 2:437, 442, 443
From Attila to Charlemagne (Roth), 2:426
 Fuente Álamo site, 2:47, 47
 Fuente Olmedo site, 1:461
 Funnel Beaker culture
 about, 1:294, **422–427**, 431
 animal husbandry, 1:298, 436
 barrow burials, 1:381
 bog deposits, 1:298
 burials, 1:298, 302, 303, **304–310**, 372
 crops, 1:298, 436
 economic systems, 1:375
 enclosure complexes, 1:301–304, 302
 flint industry, 1:376
 pottery industry, 1:37–38, 38, 423
 ritual and ideology, 1:298
 settlement patterns, 1:297–298, 372, 374, 436
 subsistence resources, 1:298, 375, 436
 trade and exchange, 1:376
 wheeled vehicles, 1:373, 374
Fürstengrab, 1:73, 78; 2:249
 Fussell's Lodge site, 1:402
 Fyrkat site, 2:546
-
- G**
 Gadir site, 2:253, 255
 Gale, Noël H., 1:323
 Galician *castra* (fortifications), 2:258
 Gallis, Kostas, 1:229
 Gallus Anonymus, *Cronica Polonorum*, 2:554, 558
 Gammellung site, 1:298
 Gánovce site, 2:26
 El Gárcel site, 1:458
 Gaudo site, 1:445
 Gaul people, 2:140
 Gaul region, 2:154–157
 Gavrinis site, 1:400–401
 Gazzaro site, 1:170
 Geary, Patrick, 2:398
 Geiselhöring site, 1:77
 Gemeinlebarn site, 2:22
Gender and Archaeology: Contesting the Past (Gilchrist), 1:81
Gender Archaeology (Sørensen), 1:81
 Gender roles and relationships, 1:81–89. *See also specific countries; specific sites*
 Bronze Age, 1:81, 84, 85–86, 86; 2:75–76
 Copper Age, 1:85, 343
 Corded Ware culture, 1:473
 Iron Age, 1:86–87; 2:195, **245**, 279, 283
 Megalithic period, 1:402
 Mesolithic period, 1:83, 194
 Middle Ages, 2:361–365
 Neolithic period, 1:84–85, 376, 378, 381
 Viking culture and, 1:87
Geographica (Ptolemy), 2:388
 Gepid people, 2:574, 575
 Gergovia site, 2:219–221
Germania (Procopius), 2:381
Germania (Tacitus), 2:151, 279, 388, 542, 545
 Germanic culture
 animal husbandry, 2:366–367
 coinage, 2:357–358
 feasting, 2:179–183
 Julius Caesar, references by, 2:151
 languages, 2:152
 Middle Ages, 2:381, 490, 497, 514
 migrations and invasions, 2:381, 384, 490
 origins of, 2:151–153
 Germany. *See also specific cultures and people; specific sites*
 about prehistory, origins of, 1:20
 Bronze Age
 burials, 2:4, 22
 dates for, 2:6
 fortifications, 1:114
 gold industry, 2:25
 hoards, 2:27
 political systems, 2:18
 pottery industry, 2:21
 settlement patterns, 2:22
 settlement structures, 2:21
 social systems, 2:29
 tin industry, 2:8
 warfare and conquest, 1:114
 fishing populations, 1:138
 foraging populations, 1:133–134
 Iron Age, 2:241–252, 242
 artworks, 1:118; 2:186, 245, 248, 249
 burials, 1:73–76, 87; 2:216, 241, 242, 244, 250

- Germany (*continued*)
 crops, 2:248
 deposits of artifacts, 1:76
 economic systems, 2:242–243, 248–249, 250
 enclosure complexes, 2:174–178, 175, 246
 fortifications, 2:155, 155, 158, 158–159, 160, 161, 241
Fürstensitze, 2:215–216, 243–244, 250, 251
 gender roles and relationships, 2:245
 hillforts, 2:160, 161, 243, 243–244, 249–252, 251
 ironworking, 2:166, 248
oppida, 2:155, 155, 156, 158, 158–159, 246, 247–249
 political systems, 2:246, 250
 population statistics, 2:249, 250
 ritual and ideology, 2:250
 settlement patterns, 1:77
 settlement structures, 1:87
 settlements as indicators of status and wealth, 1:77
 social systems, 1:73–77, 79–80; 2:241, 242, 243, 246, 250
 technologies, 2:248
 textile industry, 2:248
 trade and exchange, 2:138, 242–245, 248–249, 250
Viereckschanzen, 2:174–178, 175
 warfare and conquest, 1:118; 2:246, 247
 weapons and armor, 2:241, 242
 Megalithic period, 1:96
 Merovingian period, 2:586–588, 589–591
 Middle Ages, 2:583–597
 agriculture, 2:587
 artisans, 2:587, 587, 588, 590
 artworks, 2:586, 589
 burials, 2:384, 385, 587–591, 592, 595
 Carolingian period, 2:588–589, 591–592
 Christianity, 2:586–587, 588, 589–590, 591
 economic systems, 2:587–588, 590–591
 fortifications, 2:384, 385, 588, 592, 593–594, 597
 historical evidence, 2:590–591, 593–594
 mills and milling technology, 2:378
 political systems, 2:385, 592–594, 595–597
Reihengrüberfelder, 2:587, 588, 590, 591
 ritual and ideology, 2:587–588
 settlement patterns, 2:384–385, 586, 587, 589, 591–592, 594–595
 settlement structures, 2:587, 590
 social systems, 2:587, 588, 592
 trade and exchange, 2:419–420, 588, 591
 urbanization, 2:587, 590
 warfare and conquest, 2:419–421
 weapons and armor, 2:588
 writing, 2:586, 589
 Neolithic period, 1:96
 burials, 1:267, 378
 chronological sequence, 1:373
 enclosure complexes, 1:383
 flint industry, 1:376
 landscape use, 1:129
 pottery industry, 1:185
 ritual and ideology, 1:378
 salt industry, 1:376
 settlement structures, 1:202, 374
 trade and exchange, 1:376
 warfare and conquest, 1:111–112
 post-Roman period, 2:587–588, 590–591
 Roman period, 2:586–590
 Gero, Joan, 1:83
 Gerrard, Christopher, 1:60
 Gersbach, Egon, 2:250
Getica (Jordanes), 2:388, 391
 Ggantija site, 1:450, 453, 454
 Ghoraifé site, 1:205
 Gilchrist, Roberta, 1:81, 87
 Gildas, *On the Fall of Britain*, 2:489
 Gilman, Antonio, 2:49
 Gimbutas, Marija, 1:84, 226, 227, 241, 340; 2:94
 Giot, Pierre-Roland, 1:410
 Girzhevo site, 1:364, 365
 Glasbergen, Willem, 1:470, 476–477
 Glauberg site, 1:75, 76, 76
 Gleninsheen site, 2:70
 Glob, P. V., 1:306, 467
 Globular Amphora culture, 1:372, 376, 378
 Goats, 1:212, 213–214
 Göhlitzsh site, 1:470
 Gokstad site, 2:423, 424
 Gold industry, 1:321, 341–342; 2:25, 69–71, 170–171, 328, 373. *See also specific countries; specific sites*
 Golden site, 2:236
 Göltepe site, 2:8
 Gonçalves, Victor dos Santos, 1:463
 Gorce, M.-M., 2:220
 Gorodishche site, 2:564
 Gorodtsov, Vasily A., 2:93
 Goth culture, 2:388–391, 389
 Gotland site, 2:334, 334–335, 539
 Goughs Cave site, 1:149
 Gournia site, 2:117, 119, 120
 Le Gournier site, 1:445
 Graeanog site, 2:480
 Grand Bassin site, 2:214
 Le Grand Menhir Brisé site, 1:401
 Gräslund, Bo, 1:93
 Grauballe Man, 1:27, 47; 2:270
 Gravas site, 1:443
 Gravettian culture, 1:172
 Great Britain. *See* England; Scotland; Wales
 Greece. *See also* Greek culture; *specific sites*
 Bronze Age, 1:114, 116, 126–133
 Copper Age, 1:320, 339, 340
 Dark Age, 2:312–318
 Iron Age, 2:198–207
 about, 2:312–313
 artworks, 2:312, 313, 316–317
 burials, 2:314
 political systems, 2:314, 315–318
 settlement patterns, 2:314–315, 317–318
 settlement structures, 2:316
 social systems, 2:314
 warfare and conquest, 2:317–318
 Mesolithic period, 1:172, 180
 Middle Ages, 2:347–348
 Neolithic period, 1:180–182, 226–229
 animal husbandry, 1:204, 215
 crops, 1:204–209
 farming, 1:201, 218
 ritual and ideology, 1:91
 settlement structures, 1:220, 221
 Greek culture, 2:198–207, 208–210, 212, 242, 250, 255–256, 291–294, 309–310. *See also* Greece; *specific countries; specific sites*
 Green, Miranda, *Dying for the Gods*, 1:27
 Greenland, 1:48, 49; 2:436–444
 Gregory of Tours, 2:340, 376, 396, 512, 521
 Greyhound Yard site, 1:405
 Grimaldi child, 1:111
 Gritille site, 1:205
 Grødbygård site, 1:423
 Grøntoft site, 2:273
 Grønvang site, 1:38
 Grotta del Santuario Della Madonna site, 1:442
 Grotta della Serratura site, 1:172
 Grotta delle Mura site, 1:172
 Grotta dell’Edera site, 1:171

Grotta dell'Uzzo site, 1:442
 Grotta di Porto Badisco site, 1:446
 Grotta Funeraria site, 1:444
 Grotta Latronico site, 1:172, 445
 Grotta Lattaia site, 1:445
 Grotta Marisa site, 1:172
 Grotta Pacelli site, 1:446
 Grotta Romanelli site, 1:172
 Grotta Scaloria, 1:444
 La Grotte Gazel site, 1:249, 249
 Guldhøj Man burial, 2:76, 80
 Gumelnitsa culture, 1:207
 Gundestrup cauldron, 2:182, 182, 270
 Gündlingen site, 1:74–75
 Guðmundsson, Garðar, 2:443
 Gussage All Saints site, 1:78
 Gyges, 2:290

H

Haberey, Waldemar, 1:260
 Hacilar site, 1:223
 Hadorf, Johan, 2:540
 Haervay-Heerweg route, 1:426
 Hagar Qim site, 1:452, 453, 454, 454
 Hagia Triadha site, 2:117, 119, 120
 Haignerè (abbè), 2:512
 Haithabu site. *See* Hedeby site
 Hal Saflieni Hypogeum site, 1:452, 454
 Hallgren, Fredrik, 1:433
 Hallstatt culture, 2:144–146, 214–216, 241–245, 281–283. *See also* Urnfield culture
 about, 2:140, 144, 192, 241
 artworks, 1:117–118; 2:184–185, 185, 215
 burials, 1:74; 2:141, 144, 145, 214–215, 216, 242, 244
 dates for, 2:138, 144, 146
 farming, 2:142
 fortifications, 1:114; 2:142
 hillforts, 2:215, 216, 243–244, 249–252, 251
 iron industry, 2:216
 ironworking, 2:215
 political systems, 2:142
 salt industry, 1:74
 settlement patterns, 2:142, 215
 settlement structures, 2:146
 social systems, 2:214, 242
 state societies, 2:348
 trade and exchange, 2:146, 215, 216, 242–243
 warfare and conquest, 1:114, 117–118; 2:144

weapons and armor, 1:117; 2:214, 242
 Halsall, Guy, 2:363
 Halstead, Paul, 1:326
 Halula site, 1:205
 Hambledon Hill site, 1:112, 283–286, 285, 403–404, 160
 Hammer site, 1:295
 Hamwic site, 2:324–325, 326, 328, 329, 330
 Handsman, Russell, 1:83
 Hannibal, 2:258
 Hanson, Julianne, 1:56
 Hanstedgård site, 1:298
 Haraldskjaer Woman, 1:27
 Harding, Anthony, 2:12, 15
 Hardinxveld-Giessendam site, 1:147
 Håga site, 2:75, 78
 Harris, Edward, *Principles of Archaeological Stratigraphy*, 1:33
 Harrison, Richard, 1:459
 Hartikka site, 1:190
 Hartz, Sönke, 1:296
 Hasdrubal, 2:258
 Haughey's Fort site, 2:59, 162
 Haughton, Christine, 2:363
 Le Haut-Mée site, 1:398
 Havnelev site, 1:423
 Hawkes, Christopher, 1:91
 Hayling Island site, 2:227
 Hazendonk site, 1:288
 Hazleton site, 1:276
 Health and disease issues, 1:377, 394, 454
 Hecataeus of Miletus, 2:141
 Hedeby site, 2:358, 424, 424, 546, 591, 594
 Heer, Oswald, 1:387
 Helgö site, 2:278, 325, 326, 536–537, 539–540
 Helmsdorf site, 2:23, 25
 Henauhof site, 1:173
 Henninge Boställe site, 1:156
 Herder, Johann Gottfried, 1:101
 Herding, 1:215–216. *See also* Nomadic traditions; Pastoralism; Steppe herders
 Heritage Council, 2:452
 Hernádkak site, 1:112
 Herodotus, 2:203, 254, 290, 293, 309, 391, 411
 Herriko Barra site, 1:160
 Herxheim site, 1:111, 264
 Herzegovina, 1:337
 Hesselø site, 1:423
 Heuneburg site, 1:74; 2:161, 200–204, 215, 249–252, 251
 High Island site, 2:378

Hillforts, 2:212, 214, 215, 216. *See also* Fortifications
 Hillier, Bill, 1:56
 Hills, Catherine, 2:496
 Hipogeo de Longar site, 1:460
 Hirschboeck, Katherine, 1:43
Histoire de Jules César (Napoleon III), 2:220
Historia Francorum (Gregory of Tours), 2:521
Historia naturalis (Pliny the Elder), 2:180
Historia Norvegia, 2:403
The Histories (Herodotus), 2:290, 293, 309, 411
Histories (Polybius), 2:211
 History, field of, 2:340–345. *See also* Prehistory, origins of
The History of Rome (Livy), 2:192
History of the Franks (Gregory of Tours), 2:340
 Hjortspring site, 1:99–100; 2:270
 Hluboké Mašůvky site, 1:376
 Hoards
 Bronze Age, 2:26–27, 27, 33, 60, 70, 71, 214
 Iron Age, 2:270, 301–302
 Middle Ages, 2:334, 334, 404, 535, 535, 538, 538, 573
 Hochdorf site, 1:76, 79–80, 96, 118; 2:181, 201, 204
 Hodde site, 1:77; 2:272
 Hodder, Ian, 1:84, 94, 298
 Hodges, Richard, 2:324, 327, 330
 Hódmezvászárhely-Gorzsa site, 1:338
 Hoëdic site, 1:147, 148, 149, 274, 275, 309, 400
 Hofstaðir site, 2:437, 442–444
 Hohmichele site, 2:250–251
 Hohøj site, 2:75
 Holland. *See* Netherlands, The
 Hollufgard site, 2:79
 Holmqvist, Wilhelm, 2:539
 Holocene era
 aquatic resources, 1:11, 152
 Atlantic period, 1:167, 183, 184
 coastal region, 1:126–127
 environments, 1:8–9, 11, 48, 49, 126–131, 152–153, 168
 farming, 1:8–9, 127–128, 130, 130
 fauna, 1:127, 152, 181
 foraging populations, 1:9, 10, 127, 130, 167–182
 landscape use, 1:118–120, 170
 ocean levels during, 1:8, 9, 48, 171–172
 population statistics, 1:9
 Preboreal/Boreal periods, 1:167, 168, 173, 183, 234

- Holocene era (*continued*)
 resource use, 1:170
 tool industries, 1:167
 Holzhausen site, 2:177, 246
 Homer, 2:10, 289, 315, 316
 Horses
 domestication of, 1:247, 314, 361, **363–368**, 366; 2:93, **194**
 and effects on warfare and conquest, 1:367–368
 subsistence resources, and use of, 1:364
 transportation, and use of, 1:330, **366–368**
 White Horse artifact, 1:46
 Hoskin, Michael, 1:463
 Houat Island site, 1:276
 La Hougue Bie site, 1:96
 Hoxne site, 1:16
 Hradisko site, 1:114
 Huldremose Woman, 1:27
 Human remains. *See* Burials; *specific finds*
 Hun culture, 2:**391–393**, 392, 574–575
 Hungary. *See also specific countries; specific cultures*
 Bronze Age, 1:116; 2:**13–14**, 15–16, 17, 21, 22, 87, 96
 Copper Age, 1:315, 339
 Iron Age, 2:187, 242, 375
 Mesolithic period, 1:173
 Middle Ages, 2:**572–579**, 574
 artisans, 2:573–574, 575, 576–577, 578
 artworks, 2:578
 burials, 2:573–574, 574, 575, 576–577, 577
 Christianity, 2:579
 hoards, 2:573
khagan, 2:574, 577
 Migration period, 2:**572–573**, 573, **574–578**
 political systems, 2:575–576
 Roman period, 2:**573–574**
 social systems, 2:574, 576, 577
 warfare and conquest, 2:574–576, **578–579**
 Neolithic period
 animal husbandry, 1:330
 burials, 1:377, 378
 burials, and evidence of warfare, 1:112
 chronological sequence, 1:372
 copper artifacts, evidence of, 1:315
 enclosure structures, 1:337–338
 gender roles and relationships, 1:84–85
 health and disease issues, 1:377
 pottery industry, 1:238–239
 resource use, 1:84–85
 ritual and ideology, 1:92
 settlement patterns, 1:374
 settlement structures, 1:374
 warfare and conquest, 1:112
 Hunter-gather populations. *See* Foraging populations
 Huxtable, J., 1:46
 Hvass, Steen, 1:77
-
- I**
- Iberia. *See also specific countries; specific sites*
 Bronze Age, 2:**45–50**
 animal pulling power/traction, 2:46
 burials, 2:47, 47
 crops, 2:46
 dairy industry, 2:46
 environments, 2:45
 political systems, 2:**47–49**
 pottery industry, 2:46
 ritual and ideology, 2:**48**, 49
 settlement patterns, 2:**45–46**, **48**
 social systems, 2:**48–49**
 tin industry, 2:8
 wool industry, 2:46
 Copper Age, 1:**456–466**, **460**, **462**
 Iron Age, 2:**253–259**
 animal husbandry, 2:256, 257, 258
 artisans, 2:256
 burials, 2:255–256, 256–257
 crops, 2:257
 economic systems, 2:253–258
 farming, 2:255
 figurines, 2:256
 fortifications, 2:258
 ironworking, 2:257
 lead industry, 2:253–254
 mining industry, 2:258
oppida, 2:256–257
 political systems, 2:255, 257
 population statistics, 2:256
 ritual and ideology, 2:254–258, 256, 257
 settlement patterns, 2:255, 256–257, 258
 settlement structures, 2:257, 258
 social systems, 1:73; 2:255, 256, 257, 258
 trade and exchange, 2:256
 warfare and conquest, 2:256, 258–259
 weapons and armor, 2:257
 Megalithic period, 1:401
 Mesolithic period
 aquatic resources, 1:158, 159, 160, 162, 164
 artworks, 1:159, 162
 burials, 1:159, 161, 162, 163, 165
 environments, 1:157–158, 160, 162
 farming, 1:161
 fauna, 1:164
 foraging populations, 1:159
 midden sites, 1:161, **164–166**
 population statistics, 1:158, 160, 161, 165, 166
 pottery industry, 1:159, 162
 ritual and ideology, 1:159, 165
 settlement patterns, 1:157–158, 159, 160, 161, 162
 settlement structures, 1:160, 165–166
 stone tool industries, 1:160, 161–162, 163, 165, 167, 168
 subsistence resources, 1:159, 160, 161, 162, 163
 Middle Ages, 2:**530–532**
 Neolithic period, 1:161, **456–466**
 animal husbandry, 1:163
 artworks, 1:**458–459**
 burials, 1:**458**, 460, 461, 463, 465
 copper industry, 1:315, 459
 crops, 1:257, 459
 dates for, 1:**456–459**
 environments, 1:457–458
 farming, 1:163, 459
 fauna, 1:459
 foraging populations, 1:459
 fortifications, 1:465
 monumental structures, 1:459, 460, 463
 pastoralism, 1:161
 political systems, 1:**460–462**
 pottery industry, 1:163, 459
 ritual and ideology, 1:460, **463**
 rock art, 1:459
 settlement patterns, 1:458
 settlement structures, 1:163, 465
 social systems, 1:**460**, 461, **464–466**
 stone tool industries, 1:459
 subsistence resources, 1:**459–460**
 trade and exchange, 1:459–460
 warfare and conquest, 1:**460**, 462, **464–466**
 Iceland, 1:49, 50; 2:**436–444**. *See also specific sites*
 Iceman, 1:23, 112, 315, 389, **392–395**, 393, 441
 Icklingham site, 2:500
 ICP mass spectrometry (ICP-MS), 1:68

- Iliad* (Homer), 2:10, 316
 Inden I site, 1:374
 Indo-European language, 1:101, 102, **104–108**
 Inductively coupled plasma spectroscopy (ICP-S), 1:68
 Ine of Wessex, 2:325
Inquiries (Herodotus), 2:254
 Institute of Anthropology of the University of Oporto, 1:165
 International Congress of Christian Archaeology, 2:516
 Iona site, 2:388
 Ipogei Manfredi site, 1:443
 Ipswich, 2:326, 328, **331–334**, 333, 375
 Iran, 1:206, 213, 326
 Iraq, 1:213
 Ire site, 1:432
 Ireland. *See also specific cultures and people; specific sites*
 Bronze Age, 2:54–60, 69–71
 animal husbandry, 2:59
 burials, 2:56–58
 copper industry, 2:9
 crops, 2:59
 field systems, 2:59–60
 fortifications, 2:58
 gold industry, 2:69–71, 70
 hoards, 2:60, 70, 71
 metallurgy industries, 2:54–55
 midden sites, 2:58
 monumental structures, 2:61–67
 political systems, 2:59–61
 ritual and ideology, 2:57–58, 62
 settlement patterns, 2:58–59
 settlement structures, 2:57–58, 59
 social systems, 2:5, 57–58, **60–61**
 trade and exchange, 2:55–56
 wheeled vehicles, 2:55
 wool industry, 2:59
 Holocene era, 1:152
 Iron Age, 2:232–240
 artworks, 2:188–190, 234–235, 235
 burials, 2:236, 237
 dates for, 2:137–138
 enclosure complexes, 2:234, **239–240**
 feasting, 2:181
 fortifications, 1:115; 2:162
 hillforts, 2:235
 ringforts, 2:235, 236–237
 ritual and ideology, 2:235, 237–238
 royal sites, 2:239–240
 settlement structures, 1:25
 trade and exchange, 2:237
 warfare and conquest, 1:115
 writing, 2:237
 Megalithic period, 1:97, 398, 400, 402, 403
 Mesolithic period, 1:23, 147, 151–153, 152, 202, **278–280**, 279
 Middle Ages
 archaeological evidence, 2:450–451
 artworks, 2:453, 453–454, 454, 464–465
 burials, 2:455
 Christianity, 2:450–459, 453
 crannogs, 2:452, **460–461**, 471
 economic systems, 2:455, 456, 458
 emporia, 2:324
 gender roles and relationships, 2:464
 metalwork, 2:453–454, 454
 mills and milling technology, 2:377, 377, 378, 454
 pottery industry, 2:452–453
 raths and cashels, 2:460–465, 463
 ringforts, 2:451–452, **460–465**, 463
 ritual and ideology, 2:450–451, 453, **455–459**, 457
 settlement patterns, 2:451–452, 454–455, 466–468
 settlement structures, 2:462–465, 463
 social systems, 2:464
 stone carvings, 2:453, 453, 454
 urbanization, 2:455, **456–459**, 457, 466–468
 woodworking, 2:454
 Neolithic period
 animal husbandry, 1:279, 279
 burials, 1:280, 414
 crops, 1:279
 dates for, 1:398
 Europe, northern, 1:402, **413–415**, 414
 farming, 1:273
 monumental structures, 1:280
 pottery industry, 1:279
 settlement structures, 1:279, 398, 399
togbers, 1:416–417
 trackways, 2:55
 Irish Archaeological Wetland Unit, 1:416
 Iron Age. *See also Iron industry; specific countries; specific cultures and people; specific sites*
 agriculture, 2:548
 animal husbandry, 2:223, 256, 257, 258
 aquatic resources, 2:276
 archaeological evidence, 2:550–551
 artisans, 2:196
 Europe, central, 2:300
 Europe, eastern, 2:210, 293
 Europe, northern, 2:539
 Europe, northwestern, 2:225
 Iberia, 2:256
 Mediterranean region, 2:263, 266
 artworks, 2:184–190, 185
 Europe, central, 1:117–118; 2:186–187, 245, 248, 249, 285, 297, **297–298**, 301
 Europe, eastern, 2:305
 Europe, northern, 1:118; 2:269, 270, 278, **539**
 Europe, northwestern, 2:188, 188–190, 189, 189, 190, 234–235, 235
 Europe, western, 2:184, 185, 185, 186, 187, 215, 216
 Mediterranean region, 1:117–118; 2:312, 313, 316–317
 basketry industry, 2:225
 beer production, 2:375
 bronze industry, 1:118–120; 2:224, 225
 burials. *See also specific types under burials*
 Europe, central. *See specific countries; specific sites*
 Europe, eastern, 2:304–306
 Europe, northern, 1:93; 2:269–270, 279, 282, 551, 551
 Europe, northwestern, 2:225–227, 236, 237
 Europe, western, 1:75–76, 87, 414–415; 2:205–207, 214–218, 242
 Iberia, 2:255–256, 256–257
 Mediterranean region, 1:76, 87; 2:255–256, 314
 cairn fields, 2:273–274
 coinage, 2:159, **169–173**, 171, 172, 216, 300, 373
 crops, 2:223, 248, 257, 375
 dates for, 2:137–138, 222
 Europe, central, 2:296
 Europe, eastern, 2:289–295, 303
 Europe, northern, 2:269, 276–278, 537
 Europe, northwestern, 2:222, **232–233**
 deposits of artifacts, 1:76, 77
 economic systems
 Europe, central, 2:242–243, 248–249, 250, 281–282, 283–284, 296–297, 300
 Europe, northern, 2:278–279
 Iberia, 2:253–258, 256

- Iron Age (*continued*)
- Mediterranean region, 2:255, 257, 258
 - enclosure complexes, 2:174–178, 175, 234, **239–240**, 246, 301
 - environments, 1:418; 2:222, **272–273**
 - farming
 - Europe, central, 2:283
 - Europe, eastern, 2:210
 - Europe, northern, 2:273–274, 276, 372, 548
 - Europe, northwestern, 2:222–223, 372
 - Iberia, 2:255
 - Mediterranean region, 2:255, 263, 372
 - feasting, 2:179–183, 182, **194**, 218
 - field systems, 2:222
 - figurines, 2:256, 297
 - fishing populations, 2:276, 535
 - flint industry, 2:224
 - foraging populations, 2:276
 - fortifications
 - Europe, central, 2:154–159, 241, 246–247, **249–252**, 251, 282, 286, **286–288**, 301
 - Europe, northern, 1:115; 2:138–139
 - Europe, northwestern, 1:115, 118–120; 2:157, **160–163**, 451–452
 - Europe, upland central and southern, 1:115
 - Europe, western, 2:154–157, 155, 212
 - Fürstensitze*, 2:215–216, 243–244, 250, 251
 - gender roles and relationships, 1:86–87; 2:195, **245**, 279, 283
 - hillforts
 - Europe, central, 2:243, 243–244, **249–252**, 251, **298**
 - Europe, northern, 2:550
 - Europe, northwestern, 2:160–163, 223–224, 235
 - Europe, western, 2:212, 215, 216
 - historical evidence, 2:549–550
 - hoards, 2:270, 301–302
 - horses, domestication of, 2:194
 - human remains, 1:26–28, 47; 2:270
 - human sacrifices, 2:270
 - iron industry
 - Europe, central, 2:166, 248, 283, 284–285, 297, 300, 416
 - Europe, eastern, 2:166
 - Europe, northern, 2:269
 - Europe, northwestern, 2:166, 224–225
 - Europe, western, 2:166, 215
 - Iberia, 2:257
 - landscape use, 1:24, 61, 97, 128, 130; 2:222, **270–272**, 498
 - lead industry, 2:253–254
 - leather industry, 2:225
 - life expectancy, 2:299
 - metallurgy industries, 2:210, 216, 217, 263, 266
 - migration patterns, 2:208
 - mining industry, 2:258
 - monumental structures, 1:96
 - oppida*
 - Europe, central, 2:154–159, 158, 246, **247–249**, 300
 - Europe, northwestern, 2:157, 224, 228
 - Europe, western, 2:154–157, 155, 218, **219–221**
 - Iberia, 2:256–257
 - political systems, 2:138–139, 194–195
 - Europe, central, 2:156, 159, 246, 250, 285, 300
 - Europe, eastern, 2:285, 292–293, 305, 306–307, 309–310
 - Europe, northern, 2:534, 542–547
 - Europe, western, 2:217, 218
 - Iberia, 2:255, 257
 - Mediterranean region, 2:255, 314, 315–318
 - population statistics, 2:249, 250, 256, **270–271**
 - pottery industry
 - Europe, central, 2:200–203, 283, 300
 - Europe, eastern, 2:292, 305–306
 - Europe, northwestern, 2:225
 - Europe, western, 2:199–200
 - Mediterranean region, 2:199–200, 266
 - resource use, 1:53–54
 - ringforts, 2:235, 236–237
 - ritual and ideology
 - Europe, central, 2:250, 282, **298**, **301–302**
 - Europe, northern, 1:93, 94, 96, 99–100; 2:181–183, **270**, 551
 - Europe, northwestern, 2:225–227, 235, 237–238
 - Iberia, 2:254–258
 - royal sites, 2:239–240
 - salt industry, 2:223
 - settlement patterns, 1:58; 2:138–139, **149–150**
 - Europe, central, 1:77; 2:299, 300–301
 - Europe, eastern, 2:208–209, 291–292, 293–294, 304–306, 307
 - Europe, northern, 1:77; 2:270–273, **278–279**, 548
 - Europe, northwestern, 1:77; 2:501–502
 - Europe, western, 2:212–213, 213, 215, 217–218
 - Iberia, 2:256–257
 - Mediterranean region, 2:255, 258, 314–315, 317–318
 - settlement structures
 - Europe, central, 1:87
 - Europe, eastern, 2:209–210, 292
 - Europe, northern, 1:95; 2:273, **534–535**, **537–538**
 - Europe, northwestern, 2:223–224, 224
 - Europe, western, 1:75, 76, 87; 2:216, 218–219
 - Mediterranean region, 2:257, 258, 316
 - slavery, 2:196–197
 - social systems, 1:62; 2:138–139, **191–197**
 - Europe, central, 1:79–80; 2:156, 159, 181, 241–242, 246, 250, 282
 - Europe, eastern, 2:304–305, 306
 - Europe, northern, 2:269, **279–280**, 535, 548
 - Europe, northwestern, 2:181, **227–228**
 - Europe, western, 2:214, 216, 217
 - Mediterranean region, 1:75, 76, 87; 2:255–258, 266, 314
 - state societies, 2:348
 - stone industry, 2:225
 - stone tool industries, 2:225
 - subsistence resources, 2:222–223, **534–535**, **537–538**
 - technologies, 2:224–225, 248
 - textile industry, 2:225, 248
 - tool industries, 1:66–67
 - trade and exchange
 - Europe, central, 2:159, 242–245, 248–249, 250, 283–284
 - Europe, eastern, 2:210
 - Europe, northern, 2:138, 278–279
 - Europe, northwestern, 2:228, 237
 - Europe, western, 2:202–204, 215, 216
 - Iberia, 2:256
 - transportation routes, 2:276
 - urbanization, 2:138–139, 287, 550
 - urnfields, 2:282
 - Viereckschanzen*, 2:174–178, 175, 246, 247, 301
 - warfare and conquest
 - Europe, central, 1:112–113, 118; 2:246, 247, 282, 300

- Europe, eastern, 2:290, 294–295, 310–311
- Europe, northern, 1:118; 2:269–270
- Europe, northwestern, 1:118–120; 2:227–228
- Europe, western, 2:217
- Iberia, 2:256
- Mediterranean region, 1:117–118; 2:258–259, 266–267, 317–318
- warriors and armor, 2:196
- watercraft, 1:418; 2:270
- weapons and armor, 1:116–117; 2:214, 241, 242, 257, 270, 302
- wheeled vehicles, 2:270
- writing, 2:237, 302
- The Iron Gates Mesolithic* (Radovanovič), 1:176
- Iron Gates region, 1:124, 172, 175–179, 202
- Iron industry. *See also* Iron Age
- about origins of, 2:164–167, 165, 166
- ironworking, 2:167–168
- Europe, central, 2:166, 248, 283, 284–285, 297, 300, 416
- Europe, eastern, 2:166
- Europe, northwestern, 2:166, 224–225
- Europe, western, 2:166, 215
- Iberia, 2:257
- Islandbridge-Kilmainham site, 2:454–455
- Israel, 1:42, 206, 207, 208, 223
- Istai IV site, 1:364
- Italy. *See also specific cultures and people; specific sites*
- Bronze Age, 2:34–44
- burials, 2:35, 37, 40
- copper industry, 2:9
- dates for, 2:34
- environments, 2:42–44
- fortifications, 1:115; 2:37
- hoards, 2:35, 40
- metallurgy industries, 2:35, 36, 40
- population statistics, 2:36
- pottery industry, 2:37–38, 40–41
- ritual and ideology, 2:35, 37, 40
- settlement patterns, 2:35, 36–37, 38–40, 42–44, 44
- social systems, 2:10–11, 36, 40
- warfare and conquest, 1:115
- Iron Age, 1:118; 2:185, 263–264, 266–267
- Mesolithic period, 1:167–172
- Middle Ages, 2:347–348
- Neolithic period, 1:249, 249, 250, 254–256, 439–455
- animal husbandry, 1:326, 443
- copper industry, 1:441
- crops, 1:443
- environments, 1:439
- farming, 1:202, 439
- fauna, 1:443
- foraging populations, 1:443
- monumental structures, 1:439–440
- pottery industry, 1:439, 440–441
- settlement patterns, 1:35, 439
- settlement structures, 1:202, 250
- stone tool industries, 1:441
- trade and exchange, 1:69
- obsidian artifacts, 1:69
- Ivanov, Ivan, 1:341
- Ivanovskaya site, 1:365
- Iversen, Johannes, 1:128, 423
-
- J**
- Jackson, Kenneth, *Oldest Irish Tradition: A Window on the Iron Age*, 2:237
- Jacobsen, Thomas W., 1:179
- Jacobsthal, Paul, 2:185, 186
- Janisławice site, 1:185
- Jarlshof site, 2:446
- Jarmo site, 1:223
- Jażdżewski, Konrad, 1:378
- Je-Kalgan site, 1:364
- Jelling site, 2:542, 544, 545
- Jelšovce site, 1:374
- Jennbert, Kristina, 1:422
- Jericho site, 1:42, 205, 207, 208, 223
- Jettbole site, 1:432
- Jewelry, 2:426–429, 427, 549, 550
- Jochim, Michael, *Europe's First Farmers*, 1:168
- Johansson, Per, 1:431
- Johnston, Jan, 1:14
- Jones, Andrew, 1:91
- Jones, Martin, 2:374
- Jones, William, 1:101
- Jónsson, Finnur, 2:442
- Jordan, 1:207
- Jordanes, 2:384, 388, 389, 390, 391, 414, 575
- Jouannet, François de, 1:16
- Jovanovič, B., 1:323
- Julius Caesar
- De bello Gallico*, 1:128; 2:154, 191, 220
- on Celtic culture, 2:140
- England, and writings by and role of, 2:222
- France, and writings by and role of, 1:3, 128; 2:154, 191, 219–220
- Germanic culture, and references by, 2:151, 396
- Jungfernhöhle site, 1:264
- Justinian I, 2:403, 512
- Jute culture, 2:381–384
- Juthungi people, 2:592, 595
-
- K**
- Kair-Shak III site, 1:364
- Kaiser, Timothy, 1:320
- Kalavassos site, 1:348
- Kalevala*, 2:549
- Kalicz, Nándor, *The Late Neolithic of the Tisza Region*, 1:335
- Kalokairinos, Minos, 2:121
- Kamenica cave site, 1:172
- Kamenskoe site, 2:294
- Kanalit site, 1:172
- Karanovo site, 1:237, 238, 239, 323, 336, 337
- Karashamb site, 2:305
- Karelia site, 1:189; 2:279
- Karum Kanesh II, 1:105
- Kavanagh Charter Horn, 2:180
- Kazakhstan, 1:366–367; 2:99
- Kazanski, Michel, 2:522
- Kelheim site, 2:247–249, 249, 348
- Keller, Ferdinand, 1:386, 387
- Kennedy, Mary C., 1:83
- Kent's Cavern site, 1:17
- Kestel site, 2:8
- Khirokitia culture, 1:231
- Khvalynsk site, 1:365–366
- Kierikki site, 1:434
- Kiev site, 2:564, 566
- Kilcummer site, 1:153
- Kimmig, Wolfgang, 2:250
- King, Heather, 2:451
- King Barrow Ridge site, 2:65
- Kings and Vikings* (Sawyer), 2:417
- Kissonerga site, 1:231, 348–349, 349–350, 351, 351
- Kition site, 2:110, 112, 113
- Kivik site, 2:78
- Kleinklein site, 1:75
- Klishchev yar site, 1:358
- Klopfleisch, Friedrich, 1:259, 467
- Klosterlund site, 1:156
- Knap of Howar site, 1:278, 281
- Knockaulin site, 2:238, 239–240
- Knossos site, 1:206; 2:117, 117, 118, 119–120, 121–125, 122
- Knowth site, 1:402, 414–415; 2:62
- Knut, 2:547. *See also* Cnut
- Kolín site, 2:302
- Köln-Lindenthal site, 1:260, 268

- Kolomischiina site, 1:358, 359, **368–370**, 369
 Kommos site, 2:117, 120
 Komornica culture, 1:133, 184
 Komornice site, 1:185
 Komsa site, 2:533
 Kongemose culture, 1:133, 135, 185
 Konispol Cave site, 1:172
 Konnu site, 1:186
 Kopu site, 1:186
 Körös culture, 1:237, **238–239**
 Kossinna, Gustaf, 1:102
 Kostrzewski, Józef, 2:286
 Kotle site, 1:171
 Kozhai I site, 1:367
 Krämer, Werner, 2:159
 Krefeld-Gellep site, 2:587, 590
 Kremikovci site, 1:237, 238–239
 Krpy site, 1:382
 Ksamili site, 1:172
 Kudlaevka site, 1:184
 Kujavia site, 1:377
 Kunda site, 1:184, 185
 Künzing-Unternberg site, 1:382
 Kurz, Siegfried, 2:251
-
- L**
- Ladby site, 2:424
 Lagazzi del Vhó site, 2:36
 Laghetti del Crestoso site, 1:170
 Lago delle Buse site, 1:170
 Lagore site, 2:452
 Lama Lite site, 1:170
 LaMarche, Valmore, 1:43
 Lambay Island site, 2:236
 Landscape use. *See also specific countries; specific sites*
 about archaeology and, 1:55–64
 about farming and, 1:118–120
 about settlement patterns and, 1:55–64
 Bronze Age, 1:3, 25, 128–129, 130, 315; 2:214
 Holocene era, 1:118–120, 170
 Iron Age, 1:61, 61–64, 130; 2:270–272, 498
 Megalithic period, 1:128, 315, **406–408**, 407
 Mesolithic period, 1:129, **185–187**
 Middle Ages, 2:557
 Neolithic period
 Europe, eastern, 1:129
 Europe, northern, 1:60, 61, 62, 289–291
 Europe, northwestern, 1:60, 60, 61–64, 62, 288, 315
 Europe, western, 1:128, 315, 405, **406–408**, 407
 Mediterranean region, 1:97, 128–129
 postglacial period, 1:**118–120**, **128–129**, 130, 130
 Roman period, 1:62
Landscapes of Neolithic Ireland (Cooney), 1:280
 Langdale site, 1:404
 Langdon Bay site, 2:56
 Langobard culture, 2:**393–396**, 394, 575
 Languages
 Anglo-Saxon culture, 2:490
 archaeology, and evidence of, 1:**101–109**
 artifacts and, 1:**102–103**
 Germanic culture, 2:152
 Indo-European language, 1:101, 102, **104–108**
 Indo-Iranian languages, 2:99–100
 Proto-Indo-European language, 1:107
 reconstruction of, 1:**103–104**
 and vocabulary, reconstructed, 1:**104**
 Lapeyrère, Isaac, 1:15
 Larsson, Lars, 1:138
 Lartet, Edouard, 1:18
 Lascaux cave site, 1:19
The Late Neolithic of the Tisza Region (Kalicz and Raczky), 1:335
 Laterza site, 1:445
 Latvia, 1:141, 183–184, 434
 Mesolithic period, 1:186, 187, 188, 196
 Laws (Plato), 2:180
 le Prévôt, Robert, 1:14
 Lead industry, 2:**8–9**, 253–254
 Leeds, E. T., 2:343
 Lefkandi site, 2:314, 316
 Legård site, 2:77, 78
 Legge, Anthony, 1:154
 Leisner, Georg, 1:458
 Leisner, Vera, 1:458
 Lek Ribe site, 2:324
 La Lémance site, 1:145
 Lengyel culture, 1:338, 371, 372, 374–378
 Lepenski Vir site
 artworks, 1:176–177, 179
 burials, 1:83
 copper artifacts, 1:318
 dates for, 1:178
 farming, 1:175, 202
 pottery industry, 1:235–237
 ritual and ideology, 1:94
 settlement structures, 1:178
 social systems, 1:175
 subsistence resources, 1:124
 Leśniczówka site, 1:306
 Leskernick site, 1:17, 95
 Lesure, Richard, 1:228
 Leubingen site, 2:4, 23, 25
 Leucate-Corrège site, 1:249, 249, 250, 252
 Levant, 1:205, 213, 214, 215; 2:7.
See also Near East; *specific countries; specific sites*
 Levý Hradec site, 2:584
Lex Alamannorum, 2:376
Lex Baiuvariorum, 2:376
 Libby, Willard, 1:20, 40, 41
 Libenice site, 2:299
 Liège caves sites, 1:17
Life of St. Columba (Adomnán), 2:480
 Lilla Köpinge site, 2:271
 Limensgård site, 1:298, 423
 Lindebjerg site, 1:38, 423
 Lindenschmidt, Ludwig, 2:512
 Lindenschmidt, Wilhelm, 2:512
 Lindow Man, 1:27
Linearbandkeramik (LBK) (Linear Pottery culture), 1:**259–266**, 273–276, 287–289, 293–294
 animal husbandry, 1:262
 artifacts, 1:**261–262**
 burials, 1:111–112, 261, 265
 crops, 1:262, 268
 environments, 1:262, 269
 farming, 1:150–151
 fauna, 1:262
 flora, 1:262, 268
 pottery industry, 1:261, 262, 265, 266, 268
 research history, 1:**260–261**
 ritual and ideology, 1:264
 settlement patterns, 1:202, 260, 261, 262–263, **264–265**
 settlement structures, 1:202, 266–267, 270–272
 social systems, 1:**263**
 subsistence resources, 1:202, **262–263**
 tool industries, 1:261
 warfare and conquest, 1:111–112, **263–264**
Linearbandkeramik (LBK) (Linear Pottery culture), 1:**259–266**
 Links of Noltland site, 1:278, 283
 Lislackagh site, 2:236
 Lisleagh site, 2:451–452
 Lithic industry, 1:441
 Lithuania, 1:186–187, 189
 Little Optimum Epoch, 1:9–10
 Livestock. *See* Animal husbandry

Livy, 2:192, 217
 Llanbegrnoch site, 2:487
 Llandaff site, 2:486
 Llandegai site, 2:482, 484
 Llantwit Major site, 2:480
 Llawhaden site, 2:480
 Llyn Cerrig Bach site, 1:77
 Loch Glashan site, 2:471
 Loches site, 2:376
 Locmariaquer site, 1:275
 Löddesborg site, 1:299
 Loiret site, 1:308
 Lollikhuse site, 1:298
 Longbury Bank site, 2:482, 484
 Longhna shade site, 2:235
 Loona site, 1:186
 Lorsh site, 2:376
 Lough Boora site, 1:153
 Lough Lene site, 2:236
 Louviers site, 1:275
 Lubbock, John, *Prehistoric Times*, 1:18
 Lucretius, 1:15
 Ludwig the German, 2:580, 584
 Luernios, 2:212
 Luigi Cardini site, 1:172
 Luistari site, 2:551
 Lundenwic site, 2:324, 326, 329, 330
 Lyell, Charles, 1:17

M

Maaseik site, 2:327
 MacEneary, John, 1:16–17
 Maes Howe site, 1:94, 283, 402; 2:62
 Maeshow site, 1:46
 Magdalenenberg site, 1:76
 Magdalenian culture, 1:168
 Magdalenska gora site, 2:297
 Maggi, Roberto, 1:254
 Maglemosian culture, 1:133, 145, 145, 156, 185
 Magyar people, 2:370, 578–579, **593**, **596**
 Maiden Castle site, 1:24, 97, 113, 117, **118–120**; 2:160
 Maikop culture, 2:94–95
 Majdanetskoe site, 1:358, 368
 Makriyalos site, 1:337, 338
 Makrotřasy site, 1:376
 Malesherbes site, 1:308
 Mallory, James P., 1:362; 2:238
 Małopolska Corded Ware, 1:471
 Malta, 1:**450–455**, 454
 Maltese culture, 1:67, 97
Man (Lyell), 1:17

Manching site, 2:155, 156, 158, **158–159**
 Mandalo site, 1:320, 338
 Maozalia site, 1:205
 Marc Antony, 2:311
 Marcomanni, 2:284
 Marcus Aurelius, 2:284
 Margaux Cave site, 1:149
 Mariupol site, 1:**356–357**
 Marizulo cave site, 1:160
 Marroquies Bajos site, 1:458
 Marrou, Henri-Irénée, 2:516
 Martín, Concepción, 2:49
 Marzabotto site, 2:264
 Mas d'Is site, 1:162
 Massalia site, 2:**198–199**, 242, 243, 244
Matériaux pour l'histoire positive et philosophique de l'homme, 1:18
 Matveev site, 1:364, 365
 Mayen site, 2:587
 McCormick, Finbar, 2:238
 Medieval period. *See* Middle Ages
 Medieval Warm Epoch (MWE), 1:9–10
 Mediterranean region. *See also* Europe, southeastern; Europe, upland central and southern; *specific countries; specific cultures and people; specific sites*
 about prehistory, origins of, 1:15, 16, 17–18
 Bronze Age, 2:**108–115**, 109
 animal husbandry, 2:112
 animal pulling power/traction, 2:46
 architecture, 2:**50–53**, 52, **118–125**
 bronze industry, 2:**10–11**
 burials, 2:4, 35, 37, 40, 47, 125, 316
 copper industry, 2:9
 crops, 2:46
 dairy industry, 2:46
 dates for, 2:34
 economic systems, 2:117, 123
 environments, 2:**42–44**, 45
 figurines, 2:120, 123
 fortifications, 1:114, 115; 2:37, 38, 112
 hoards, 2:35, 40
 landscape use, 1:128
 metallurgy industries, 2:35, 36, 40, 47
 political systems, 2:5, **47–49**, 109, 113
 population statistics, 2:36, 111, 124
 pottery industry, 2:37–38, 40–41

ritual and ideology, 2:35, 37, 40, **48**, 49, 119–120, 123, 124
 Secondary Products Revolution, 2:109
 settlement patterns, 2:35–40, **42–46**, **48**, 111, 113
 social systems, 2:10–11, 36, 40, **48–49**, 113, 123–124
 subsistence resources, 2:112
tholos burials, 2:316
 tin industry, 2:8
 trade and exchange, 1:69–70; 2:109–110, 111–113, 122
 warfare and conquest, 2:120
 waterways, 2:**42–44**
 weapons and armor, 1:116
 wool industry, 2:46
 writing, 2:112
 Copper Age, 1:**347–353**
 burials, 1:339–340, 340, **458**
 copper artifacts, 1:69, 70
 copper industry, 1:320
 copper tools, 1:341–342
 figurines, 1:351–352
 gold artifacts, 1:341–342
 monumental structures, 1:95
 political systems, 1:460
 ritual and ideology, 1:95
 settlement patterns, 1:338–339, **458**
 settlement structures, 1:349–350, 351, 351
 silver industry, 1:441
 social systems, 1:**349–350**
 tool industries, 1:339
 trade and exchange, 1:69, 70, 339, 352
 warfare and conquest, 1:460, **464–466**
 Iron Age, 2:**198–207**, **260–268**, **312–318**
 animal husbandry, 2:258
 artisans, 2:263, 266
 artworks, 1:117–118; 2:312, 313, 316–317
 burials, 1:76, 87; 2:255–256, 314
 deposits of artifacts, 1:76
 economic systems, 2:255, 257, 258
 farming, 2:255, 263, 372
 fortifications, 2:258
 metallurgy industries, 2:263, 266
 mining industry, 2:258
 political systems, 2:255, 314, 315–318
 pottery industry, 2:199–200, 266
 settlement patterns, 2:255, 258, 314–315, 317–318
 settlement structures, 2:257, 258, 316

- Mediterranean region (*continued*)
 social systems, 1:75, 76, 87; 2:258, 266, 314
 warfare and conquest, 1:117–118; 2:258–259, 266–267, 317–318
 weapons and armor, 1:117; 2:257
 Megalithic period, 1:95, 306, 402, 404, 439–440, 445, **450–455**, 453
 Mesolithic period, 1:124, 144, 145, 150, 159, 170, 196, 278
 Middle Ages, 2:347–348, **530–532**
 Neolithic period, 1:**180–182**, 249, **439–455**
 animal husbandry, 1:204, 213–215, 231–231, 253–258, 274–276, 336–337, 443; 2:121
 aquatic resources, 1:257
 artworks, 1:**445–446**, **458–459**
 burials, 1:223, 256–257, 274, 338, **408–413**, 409, **444–445**, **458**; 2:121
 copper artifacts, 1:69–70
 copper industry, 1:315, 459
 crops, 1:204–209, 274–276, 336, 337, 443, 459; 2:121
 dates for, 1:398
 environments, 1:248, 439; 2:121
 farming, 1:163, 201, 202, 223, **231–232**, **248–257**, 439
 fauna, 1:229, 337, 443, 459
 figurines, 1:223
 flora, 1:337
 foraging populations, 1:229, 249, 255, 459
 health and disease issues, 1:454
 herding, 1:**215–216**
 Indo-European language
 inscriptions, 1:105
 jewelry artifacts, 1:249
 landscape use, 1:97, 128–129
 monumental structures, 1:459
 obsidian artifacts, 1:68–69
 political systems, 1:451, **460–462**
 pottery industry, 1:163, 249, 255–256, 257, 439, **440–441**, 452, 459; 2:121
 ritual and ideology, 1:97, 232, 274, 460, **463**; 2:121
 settlement patterns, 1:35, 252–253, 275, 335–336, 439, **458**
 settlement structures, 1:202, 220, 232, 250, 257, 398; 2:121
 social systems, 1:337
 stone tool industries, 1:249, 274, 275, **441**, 452, 459; 2:121
 subsistence resources, 1:336–337, 454, **459–460**
 trade and exchange, 1:69–70, 252, 254, 459–460
 warfare and conquest, 1:111, 112, **460**, **464–466**
 watercraft, 1:249
 Palaeolithic period, 1:254
 Megalithic period. *See also* monumental structures; *specific countries; specific sites*
 architecture, 1:**410–411**
 burials, 1:**399–402**, 404, **408–415**, 423–424, 425–426, 445, **450–455**
 dates for, 1:398, **412**
 enclosure complexes, 1:**402–404**
 gender roles and relationships, 1:402
 ritual and ideology, 1:95, **411–412**
 settlement structures, 1:398, 399
 tool industries, 1:404–405
 trackways, 1:**415–417**
 trade and exchange, 1:**404–405**
 watercraft, 1:**417–418**, 418
 Mělník site, 2:584
 Merovingian Franks, 2:**396–401**, 397.
See also Childeric, tomb of
 bog deposits, 2:397
 burials, 2:363, 400–401, 515–516, 586, 589
 Christianity and, 2:**516–518**
 ironworking, 2:397
 political systems, 2:397, 398–399, 399–400, 511
 ritual and ideology, 2:401
 settlement patterns, 2:**514–516**
 settlement structures, 2:397, 515
 social systems, 2:386, 398
 textile industry, 2:397
 urbanization and, 2:514, **516–518**, 517
 warfare and conquest, 2:399–400
 Merovingian period, 2:**586–588**, **589–591**
 Mesguer, José Sánchez, 2:49
 Meskell, Lynn, 1:84
 Mesolithic period. *See also* Stone Age; *specific countries; specific cultures and people; specific sites*
 animal husbandry, 1:**278–280**
 aquatic resources
 Europe, eastern, 1:184, 186
 Europe, northern, 1:288, 289, 436
 Europe, northwestern, 1:146–147, 273, 274
 Europe, upland central and southern, 1:171, 176, 179–180
 Europe, western, 1:159, 162
 Iberia, 1:158, 159, 160, 162, 164
 artifacts, 1:137, 142
 artworks, 1:124, 149, 159, 162, 176–177, 179, 181
 basketwork fish traps, 1:145
 burials
 Europe, central, 1:83, 187, 188, 189, 196
 Europe, eastern, 1:124, 190, 196
 Europe, northern, 1:124, 138, 140–141, 148–150, 190, 196, **296**, 309
 Europe, northwestern, 1:148–150
 Europe, upland central and southern, 1:170
 Iberia, 1:161–163, 165, 165
 Mediterranean region, 1:159, 170
 crops, 1:207, 208
 diet, 1:124
 environments
 Europe, eastern, 1:**132–133**, 183–184
 Europe, northern, 1:52
 Europe, northwestern, 1:25, 47–48, 50, 145–146, 154–155
 Iberia, 1:157–158, 160, 162
 farming
 Europe, central, 1:175, 202
 Europe, northern, 1:202
 Europe, northwestern, 1:151, 202
 Europe, upland central and southern, 1:177
 Iberia, 1:161
 fauna, 1:145–146, 153, 164, 171, 176, 179, 278–279
 fires, and impacts of use by humans on environments, 1:154–155
 fishing populations, 1:124, 133, 137–138, 138, 177, 186
 flora, 1:142, 145–146, 147, 176, 179, 186, 277
 foraging populations
 Europe, central, 1:133–134, 185
 Europe, eastern, 1:184–185, 186–187, 364
 Europe, northern, 1:184, 185, 420–421
 Europe, northwestern, 1:123–125, **133–140**, 148, 153
 Europe, upland central and southern, 1:**167–182**
 Iberia, 1:159
 Mediterranean region, 1:159
 gender roles and relationships, 1:83, 194
 horses for subsistence, 1:364
 landscape use, 1:129, **185–187**
 midden sites, 1:141, 164, **164–166**
 pastoralism, 1:362
 population statistics, 1:148, 154, 158, 160, 161, 165, 166

- pottery industry
 Europe, central, 1:185
 Europe, eastern, 1:184–185, 185
 Europe, northern, 1:185
 Europe, northwestern, 1:278, 279
 Europe, upland central and southern, 1:177, 178
 Europe, western, 1:278
 Iberia, 1:159, 162
 Mediterranean region, 1:159, 278
 resource use, 1:52, 142, 154
 ritual and ideology, 1:12, 149
 Europe, central, 1:189
 Europe, eastern, 1:187, **188–190**, 196
 Europe, northwestern, 1:12, **149–151**
 Europe, upland central and southern, 1:170, 177
 Iberia, 1:159, 165
 Mediterranean region, 1:159, 170
 rock art, 1:188–189
 settlement patterns
 Europe, northern, 1:147–148
 Europe, northwestern, 1:**148**, 153–156
 Europe, upland central and southern, 1:202
 Europe, western, 1:157–158
 Iberia, 1:157–158, 159, 160, 161, 162
 Mediterranean region, 1:124
 settlement structures
 Europe, central, 1:178
 Europe, northern, 1:**148**, 152, 152
 Europe, northwestern, 1:**148**, 153
 Europe, upland central and southern, 1:175, 176, 178, 179, 202
 Iberia, 1:160, 165–166
 shamanism, 1:189, 194–195
 social systems, 1:62–63, 124, 148, 175, **187–188**, 194, 196
 stone tool industries
 Europe, eastern, 1:184–185, 186
 Europe, northern, 1:144, 145, 185
 Europe, northwestern, 1:**144–145**, 145, 151, 153, 155, **294–295**
 Iberia, 1:144, 158–163, 160, 161–162, 163, 165, 167, 168
 subsistence resources, 1:**145–147**
 Europe, eastern, 1:124, 184, **185–187**
 Europe, northwestern, 1:50, 52, **145–147**, 277–288
 Europe, upland central and southern, 1:176
 Europe, western, 1:147
 Iberia, 1:159, 160, 161, 162, 163
 Mediterranean region, 1:159
 textile industry, 1:143
 trade and exchange, 1:176, 177, 179, 187
 warfare and conflict, 1:111, 176
 watercraft, 1:124, 138, 145, 180, **417–418**, 418
 Metallurgy industries. *See also specific countries; specific industries; specific sites*
 about dating methods and chronology, 1:66
 Bell Beaker culture, 1:**482**
 Bronze Age
 Europe, central, 2:**23–25**, **89–90**, 90
 Europe, eastern, 2:103–104
 Europe, northern, 2:73–74
 Europe, northwestern, 2:**54–55**
 Mediterranean region, 2:35, 36, 40, 47
 Copper Age, 1:67
 Middle Ages, 2:570, 570
 Neolithic period, 1:319, 320, **322–324**
 Midas, 2:290
 Midden sites, 1:135, 141, 161, **164–166**, 248, 249, 295; 2:58. *See also specific countries; specific sites*
 Middle Ages. *See also Migration period; post-Roman period; Roman period; Viking Age; specific countries; specific cultures and people*
 agriculture, 2:**371–379**, 415, **491–492**, 500, 559, 587
 animal husbandry, 2:370, **439–440**, 491–492, 500, 570–571
 aquatic resources, 2:448–449
 archaeological evidence, 2:**406–407**, **437–438**, **447–448**, **450–451**, **511–514**, 513, 563–564
 architecture, 2:476–477, 480, 481, **485–487**
 artisans, 2:**327–329**
 Europe, central, 2:573–574, 575, 576–577, 578, 580, 587, 590
 Europe, northern, 2:**426–429**, 427
 Europe, northwestern, 2:381–383, 472, 477, 480
 artworks
 Europe, central, 2:421, 578, 586, 589
 Europe, eastern, 2:412
 Europe, northern, 2:417, 418
 Europe, northwestern, 1:46; 2:388, **405**, 453, 453–454, 454, 464–465
 Europe, western, 2:520, 520–521, 521
 barrow burials, 2:491
 boats and boatbuilding, 2:**430–432**, 431, 432
 bog deposits, 2:397
 bone industry, 2:329
 bronze industry, 2:328
 burials
 Europe, central, 2:384–385, 393, 400–401, 573–577, 587–591, 592, 595
 Europe, eastern, 2:566, 569
 Europe, northern, 2:**404–405**, 410, 589
 Europe, northwestern, 2:333, 382, 474, 476, **484–485**, **490–491**, **498–500**, 499
 Europe, western, 2:514–515, 515–516, 517–518, **519–524**, 520, 521
 Carolingian period, 2:**588–589**, **591–592**
 Christianity
 Europe, central, 2:579, 582, 584, 586–587, 588, 589–590, 591
 Europe, eastern, 2:535
 Europe, northern, 2:535, **540**, 549
 Europe, northwestern, 2:**450–459**, 453, 469, **473–474**, 491, 505, 510
 Europe, western, 2:**516–518**
 clothing, 2:383–384, **433–435**, 434
 coinage, 2:**357–358**
 copper industry, 2:328
 crannogs, 2:452, **460–461**, 471, 483
 crops, 2:374, 374, 375, 448, 491, 500
 dates for, 2:**322**, 337, 338, 407
 documentary sources, 2:**437**
 economic systems
 Europe, central, 2:557, 587–588, 590–591
 Europe, eastern, 2:**412**, 563–567, **569–571**
 Europe, northern, 2:438, 534–535, 592
 Europe, northwestern, 2:330–333, **448–449**, 455–456, 458, 492, 500, 509
 emporia, 2:**324–336**, **325–328**, **327–329**
 environments, 1:9–10; 2:413, 439, **445–446**, 509
 ethnic identities, 2:563, 564, 565, 566, 571
 excavations, 1:30

Middle Ages (*continued*)

- farming, 2:329, 439–440, 448
foraging populations, 2:409–410, 570–571
fortifications
 Europe, central, 2:384, 385, 580, 582, 584–585, 588, **593–594**, 597
 Europe, eastern, 2:566, 580
 Europe, northwestern, 2:452, **460–461**, 471–472, 480, 481–482, 492–493
gender roles and relationships, **2:361–365**
gold industry, 2:328
hillforts, 2:480
historical evidence, **2:406–408**, 563, **590–591**, **593–594**
hoards, 2:334, 404, 535, 535, 538, 538, 573
inscribed stones, 2:480–481, 485–486
ironworking, 2:328, 397, 416
jewelry, **2:426–429**, 427
landscape use, 2:557
languages, 2:386, 490
linguistic evidence, **2:406–408**, **447**
literacy, role of, **2:340–341**
metalworking, 2:453–454, 454, 472, 570, 570
mills and milling technology, **2:376–379**, 377, 378, 454, 477
nomadic tradition, **2:368–369**
pastoralism, **2:368–369**, 369
political systems
 Europe, central, 2:327, 385, 398–403, **556–561**, 574, 582–585, 592–594, 595–597
 Europe, eastern, 2:412–413, **556–561**, 564, 566, 576
 Europe, northern, 2:418–419, 437–438, 443, 589
 Europe, northwestern, 2:388, **494–495**
population statistics, 2:492, **530–532**
pottery industry, 2:328, 332, 333, 381, 452–453, 472, 492, 496–497
raths and cashels, **2:460–465**, 463
ringforts, 2:451–452, **460–465**, 463
ritual and ideology, 2:401, 410, 554, 587–588, 588
 Europe, northern, 2:438, 442, 444
 Europe, northwestern, 2:448, **450–451**, **455–459**, **473–474**, 476, 480, 486–487, 491
settlement patterns
 Europe, central, 2:384–385, **554–556**, 560, 586, 587, 589, 591–592, 594–595
 Europe, eastern, 2:564–565, **569**
 Europe, northern, 2:418, 437–438, **438–439**, 440–441, 589
 Europe, northwestern, 2:332, 333, **451–452**, **471–472**, **481–482**, 493, 500, 501–506
 Europe, western, 2:**514–516**
settlement structures
 Europe, central, 2:397, 415, 552, 552, 556, 587, 590
 Europe, northern, 2:**404**, 418, 443–444
 Europe, northwestern, 2:381, 462–465, 463, **492–493**, 500–501, 509, 509
 Europe, western, 2:515
ship burials, 2:534
silver industry, 2:328
slavery, 2:474
social systems
 Europe, central, 2:398, 576, 584, 587–588, 592
 Europe, eastern, 2:564, 566
 Europe, northern, 2:418, 419
 Europe, northwestern, 2:329–330, 386, 464, 471, 481–482
state societies, 2:347–349, 350
stone carvings, **2:405**, 453, **472–473**, **476–478**, 480, 510
subsistence resources, 2:**418**, 440–441, 448
textile industry, 2:329, 397, 433, **433–435**, 434
trade and exchange, 2:322–323, **324–336**, **352–355**, 433
 Europe, central, 2:406–408, 407, 419–420, 557–558, 588, 591
 Europe, eastern, 2:563, 565–566
 Europe, northern, 2:326, 418, 433, 589
 Europe, northwestern, 2:333–334, **493–494**
Iberia, **2:530–532**
Near East, 2:433
transportation routes, 2:387
urbanization
 Europe, central, 2:587, 590
 Europe, eastern, 2:563, 564, 565
 Europe, northwestern, 2:455, **456–459**, 457, 466–468, 493, **501–507**, 503, **516–518**
 Europe, western, 2:**514**, **516–518**, 517
warfare and conquest
 Europe, central, 2:391–393, 399–400, 414–417, 419–421, 554–555, 559, 574–576, **578–579**
 Europe, northern, 2:**417**, 534, 586
 Europe, northwestern, 2:330, 387–388, 388
 weapons and armor, 2:522, 588
 woodworking industry, 2:454
 writing, **2:405**, 419, 586, 589
Middle Dnieper culture, **1:472**
Mieszko I, 2:554–555, 559, 560, 561
Migration patterns, **1:224–225**; **2:208**. *See also* Settlement patterns
Migration period, **2:270**, **338–339**, **380–422**, **572–579**
Mikhailovka site, 1:361
Miklaszewska-Balcer, Ha D. Róza, 2:287
Mikulčice site, 2:580
Milazzese site, 2:38, 39
Milek, Karen, 2:443
Los Millares site, 1:458, 459, **464–466**
Mills and milling technology, **2:376–379**, 377, 378, 454, 477
Mining industry, 2:258
Minoan culture, 2:5, **116–125**, 117
Mittleberg site, 2:27
Mnajdra site, 1:454
Modderman, P. J. R., 1:287
Moel Trigarn site, 2:481
Moita do Sebastião site, 1:164–166, 165
Mojmír I, 2:582
Mokrin site, 1:86
Moldavia, 1:92, 94
Moldova, 1:340
Molène Island site, 1:276
Molin Nuovo site, 1:171
Molina, Fernando, 1:464
Molino de Gasparín site, 1:159
Molise site, 2:374
Møllegabet site, 1:37, 138
Mölln site, 1:295
Mondeville site, 2:515
Mont Bego site, 1:95, 446
Mont Beuvray, 2:154–155, 156
Montelius, Oscar, 1:19, 425; 2:72
Montenegro, 1:172
Monteval de Sora (San Vito di Cadore) site, 1:170
Monumental structures
 Bell Beaker culture, 1:446
 Bronze Age, 1:95, 96, 315; 2:61–67
 Copper Age, 1:95
 Iron Age, 1:96

- Megalithic period, 1:95, 298, 302, 304–310, 439–440, 445
 Neolithic period, 1:276, 305–310, 315, 446, **450–455**, 459, 460, 463
 Viking Age, 2:542, 544, 545
 Moravia. *See also* Czech Republic;
specific sites
 artisans, 2:580
 burials, 2:88
 Christianity, 2:582
 Corded Ware culture, 1:470
 enclosure complexes, 1:382, 383, 384
 fortifications, 2:580
 Middle Ages, 2:**582–584**
 political systems, 2:582–583, 584
 ritual and ideology, 2:298
 settlement patterns, 1:374; 2:22, 300–301
 social systems, 2:580
 Urnfield culture, 2:88
 weapons and armor, 1:116
 Moreau, Frédéric, 2:512–513
 Morella la Villa-Cueva del Roure, 1:117
 Morken, burial of, 2:398
 Morningthorpe site, 2:490
 Morris, Ian, 2:314
 Mortillet, Gabriel de, 1:18
 Morton site, 1:277
 Mosegården site, 1:298, 423
 Most na Soči site, 2:297
 Les Moulins à Saint-Paul-Trois-Châteaux site, 1:445
 Mount Ararat, 1:207
 Mount Knocknarea site, 2:236
 Mount Lassois, 2:202, 216
 Mount Sandel site, 1:146, 147, 149, **151–153**, 152
 Mountrivers site, 2:60
 Mousa site, 1:115
 Mout Lassois, 2:200–201
 Movius, Hallam, 1:151
 Moynagh Lough site, 2:452
 Mšecké Žehrovice site, 2:176, 301, 301
 Msec site, 2:299
 Mucking site, 2:490
 Muge shell middens, 1:248, 249
 Mulbjerg Man, 2:75, 80
 Mulbjerg site, 1:298
 Müller-Karpe, Hermann, 2:146
 Müller-Wille, Michael, 2:401
 Mureybet site, 1:205
 Musée de L'Hisoire du Fer, 2:513
 Muzzana del Turgnano site, 1:170
 Mycenae site, 1:114; 2:40–41
 Mylouthkia site, 1:231, 348–349
 Myres, J. N. L., 2:343
 Myrtos site, 2:117, 118
-
- N**
- Naakamäe site, 1:186
 Naglier-Zanier, Cordula, 1:77
 Nahal Hemar site, 1:205
 Namforsen site, 1:189
 Napoleon III, *Histoire de Jules César*, 2:220
 Narva-Riigiküla site, 1:186
 Narva site, 1:184, 185, 189
 Nash-Williams, V. E., 2:486
 National Center for Scientific Research, University of Rennes, 1:410
 National Museum of Sarajevo, 1:241
 Navan site, 2:234, 239, 240
 Nea Nikomedeia site, 1:220, 221, 222
 Neander Valley sites, 1:17
 Neanderthal remains, 1:17, 111
 Near East, 1:42, 205–207, 208, **211–217**, 223, 327, 367–368; 2:433
 Nebel Mose site, 1:27
 Nekselø site, 1:38
 Neman site, 1:185
 Neolithic period. *See also*
Linearbandkeramik (LBK)
 (Linear Pottery culture);
 Secondary Products Revolution;
 Stone Age; *specific countries*;
specific sites
 about Pre-Pottery Neolithic period, 1:207, 208, 231
 about regions and
 Europe, central, 1:96, **180–182**, **226–229**, 241–243, **269–272**
 Europe, northern, 1:402, 414, **431–438**
 Europe, northwestern, 1:273–291
 Europe, southeastern, 1:**334–346**
 Europe, western, 1:112, 160, 249, 249, 285
 animal husbandry
 Europe, central, 1:**246–247**, 330, 380
 Europe, eastern, 1:241, 247, 326, 328–329, 336–337, 362
 Europe, northern, 1:277–278, 289, 290, 295, 296–297
 Europe, northwestern, 1:279
 Europe, southeastern, 1:330, 336, 337
 Europe, upland central and southern, 1:390
 Europe, western, 1:163
 Mediterranean region, 1:204, 213–215, 231–231, 253–258, 274–276, 279, 443; 2:121
 Near East, 1:**211–217**, 327
 animal pulling power/traction, 1:328, 329
 aquatic resources, 1:178, 257, 288, 289, 390, 397, 432
 architecture, 1:452
 artisans, 1:227
 artworks, 1:361, **445–446**, **458–459**
 barrow burials, 1:306, 381, 402, 423, 473
 bog deposits, 1:**298**, 315
 bone industry, 1:389, 396
 burials
 Europe, central, 1:267, 360–363, 365–366, 378–382, 381, **408–413**
 Europe, eastern, 1:112, 298, 305–310, 307, 360–363, 365–366, 378–382
 Europe, northern, 1:**298**, 302–304, **304–310**, 433, 436, 437
 Europe, northwestern, 1:274, 276, 283, 287, 288, 289, 403–404, 418
 Europe, southeastern, 1:338, 345–346
 Europe, upland central and southern, 1:178, 181, 391, **446–450**, 447, 454
 Europe, western, 1:403–404, 465
 European, northern, 1:**413–415**
 Iberia, 1:**458**, 460, 461, 463, 465
 chronological sequence and, 1:**372–373**, 373
 copper artifacts, 1:23, 315, 318, 389, **392–395**, 393
 copper industry, 1:315, 318, 320, 373–374, 379–380, 389, 441, 459
 crops, 1:204, 207, 208, 276, 433
 Europe, central, 1:337, 380
 Europe, eastern, 1:205, 208, 235, 241, 246, 336–337, 356–357, 361
 Europe, northern, 1:289, 290, 295, 433
 Europe, northwestern, 1:274–275, 276, 277, 279, 283, 289, 290
 Europe, southeastern, 1:336, 337
 Europe, upland central and southern, 1:**390**, 397
 Mediterranean region, 1:204–209, 249, 254, 257, 274–276, 443, 459; 2:121
 Near East, 1:205, 205–207, 208

- Neolithic period (*continued*)
 dairy industry, 1:373, 443
 dates for
 Europe, central, 1:178
 Europe, northern, 1:398, 433
 Europe, northwestern, 1:398
 Europe, southeastern, 1:334
 Europe, upland central and southern, 1:451
 Iberia, 1:456–459
 Mediterranean region, 1:398, **442**
 economic systems, 1:375
 enclosure complexes
 Europe, central, 1:337–338, 380–381, **382–384**, 383
 Europe, northern, 1:298, 301–304, 302, 403
 Europe, northwestern, 1:284–286, 285
 Europe, southeastern, 1:337–338, 344–345
 Europe, western, 1:284–286, 285, 403–404
 environments
 Europe, eastern, 1:244–245, **356**, 357, 359
 Europe, northern, 1:286–287, 294, 435–436
 Europe, northwestern, 1:281, 283–284, 286–287
 Europe, upland central and southern, 1:385, **389**, 390, 395, 396, 451
 Europe, western, 1:283–284
 human impacts on, 1:51, 52, **127–128**, 389
 Iberia, 1:457–458
 Mediterranean region, 1:439; 2:121
 farming
 about spread of, 1:218–232, 219
 crops, 1:204
 dates for early, 1:204
 Europe, central, 1:259–272, 378–382
 Europe, eastern, 1:185, 202, **223–225**, **234–248**, **378–382**
 Europe, northern, 1:51, 202, **421–422**, 431–432, 436
 Europe, northwestern, 1:150, **273–291**; 2:498
 Europe, upland central and southern, 1:150, 177–179, 178, 180, 181, 243–248
 Europe, western, 1:163, 243–248, 273
 Iberia, 1:163, 459
 Mediterranean region, 1:201–202, 213, 218, 223, **231–232**, **248–257**, 293, 439, 459
 fauna
 Europe, central, 1:337, 380
 Europe, eastern, 1:358, 361, 362
 Europe, northern, 1:433
 Europe, northwestern, 1:288
 Europe, southeastern, 1:337
 Europe, upland central and southern, 1:389, **390–391**, 396
 Europe, western, 1:443
 Iberia, 1:459
 Mediterranean region, 1:229, 443, 459
 figurines, 1:85, 227, 228, 446
 Europe, central, 1:377–378
 Europe, eastern, 1:359, 369
 Europe, upland central and southern, 1:84–85, 452, 454, 454
 Mediterranean region, 1:223
 fires, use of, 1:10–11, 50–51, 52, 154–155
 fishing populations, 1:202, 358, 443
 flint industry, 1:376, 389, **424–425**, 441, 444
 flora, 1:337, 357, 361, 389, 390, 397
 foraging populations
 Europe, central, 1:202, 365
 Europe, eastern, 1:202, 234–235, 364, 365
 Europe, northern, 1:202, 426–427, 431–432, 433, 434, 436
 Europe, northwestern, 1:151
 Iberia, 1:459
 Mediterranean region, 1:229, 443, 459
 fortifications
 Europe, northwestern, 2:160
 Europe, western, 1:113–114, 465–466
 Iberia, 1:465
 Mediterranean region, 1:465
 gender roles and relationships, 1:84–85, 85, 376, 379, 381
 gold industries, 1:441
 health and disease issues, 1:377, 394, 454
 herding, 1:215–216
 horses, role of, 1:361, 364, 366, 367–368, 373
 human remains, and evidence of warfare, 1:112
 landscape use, 1:118–120
 Europe, eastern, 1:129
 Europe, northern, 1:60, 61, 62, 289–291
 Europe, northwestern, 1:60, 60, 61–64, 62, 288, 315
 Europe, western, 1:128, 315, 405, **406–408**, 407
 Mediterranean region, 1:97, 128–129
 lithic industry, 1:441
 metallurgy industries, 1:319, 320, **322–324**
 migration patterns, 1:224–225
 monumental structures
 Europe, eastern, 1:305–310
 Europe, northern, 1:298, 302, 304–310, 307, 315–316
 Europe, northwestern, 1:276, 315
 Europe, upland central and southern, 1:446, **450–455**, 453
 Europe, western, 1:128, 306, 315, **406–408**, 407
 Iberia, 1:459
 Mediterranean region, 1:439–440, 460
 obsidian artifacts, 1:241
 pastoralism, 1:161
 political systems, 1:389, **432–433**, 441–442, **448–450**, 449, 451, **460–462**
 pottery industry
 Europe, central, 1:185, 202, 238–240, 268, 369–370, 373, 374
 Europe, eastern, 1:185, **235–237**, 238–240, 243, 245, 247, 369–370, 373
 Europe, northern, 1:185, 202, 289, 290, 296–298, 432, 434, 436
 Europe, northwestern, 1:185, 273–277, 279, 280, 287, 289, 290
 Europe, upland central and southern, 1:171, 172, 180, **389**, 395–396, 452
 Europe, western, 1:257, 391
 Iberia, 1:163, 459
 Mediterranean region, 1:163, 249, 255–256, 257, 439, 452, 459; 2:121
 resource use, 1:52, 53, 84–85
 ritual and ideology
 Europe, central, 1:92, **377–378**, 378–382
 Europe, eastern, 1:94, 378–382
 Europe, northern, 1:296, 298, 301, **425–426**, 432, 433, 437
 Europe, northwestern, 1:274, 284–285
 Europe, upland central and southern, 1:391
 Europe, western, 1:284–285
 Iberia, 1:460, **463**

- Mediterranean region, 1:97, 232, 274; 2:121
- rock art, 1:459
- salt industry, 1:376
- settlement patterns
- Europe, central, 1:335–336
 - Europe, eastern, 1:239, 241, 314, 335–336, 337, 368, 374–375
 - Europe, northern, 1:289, 372, 421, 432, 436
 - Europe, upland central and southern, 1:386–387, 389, 395
 - Iberia, 1:458
 - Mediterranean region, 1:35, 439, 458
- settlement structures
- Europe, eastern, 1:369, 369, 374, 379, 380
 - Europe, northwestern, 1:273, 274, 279, 281–282, 282, 283, 398, 399
 - Europe, upland central and southern, 1:178, 180, 314
 - Iberia, 1:163, 465
 - Mediterranean region, 1:220; 2:121
- social systems, 1:241–243, 263, 337, 460
- steppe region, 1:243–248
- stone tool industries
- Europe, eastern, 1:369
 - Europe, northern, 1:287, 290, 426, 432
 - Europe, northwestern, 1:150, 274, 287, 289, 290
 - Europe, upland central and southern, 1:171, 172, 441, 452
 - Iberia, 1:459
 - Mediterranean region, 1:249, 274, 275, 452, 459; 2:121
- subsistence resources
- Europe, central, 1:365, 394
 - Europe, eastern, 1:336–337, 365
 - Europe, northern, 1:289, 313, 431–432, 432–433, 436
 - Europe, northwestern, 1:276, 283, 285, 289, 398
 - Europe, upland central and southern, 1:178, 180, 202, 389–390, 397, 454
 - Europe, western, 1:285, 394
 - Mediterranean region, 1:454, 459–460
- tool industries, 1:386, 387, 389, 393, 396, 432
- trackways, 1:416–417; 2:55
- trade and exchange, 1:69–70, 239, 241, 253, 255, 376, 391, 459–460
- warfare and conquest, 1:111–112, 113–114, 367–368, 376–377, 460
- wheeled vehicles, 1:388
- wool industry, 1:314, 327–328, 330, 390, 426
- Nerja cave site, 1:162
- Netherlands, The. *See also specific cultures and people; specific sites*
- Bronze Age, 1:49; 2:4, 88
 - Iron Age, 1:61; 2:372
 - Megalithic period, 1:401
 - Mesolithic period, 1:144, 147, 149–150
- Middle Ages
- burials, 2:589
 - economic systems, 2:592
 - emporia, 2:324, 325, 328, 329, 330
 - landscape use, 1:62
 - political systems, 2:589
 - ritual and ideology, 2:588
 - settlement patterns, 2:589
 - trade and exchange, 2:589
 - warfare and conquest, 2:586
- Neolithic period
- animal husbandry, 1:288–289, 290
 - aquatic resources, 1:288, 289
 - barrow burials, 1:402
 - burials, 1:287, 288, 289
 - crops, 1:289, 290
 - environments, 1:286–287
 - fauna, 1:288
 - landscape use, 1:60, 62, 288
 - pottery industry, 1:185, 289, 290
 - settlement patterns, 1:289
 - stone tool industries, 1:287, 289, 290
 - subsistence resources, 1:289
- Neutron activation analysis (NAA), 1:68
- Nevali Cari site, 1:205
- Newark site, 2:490
- Newgrange site, 1:46, 402, 414, 414–415; 2:62
- Newton, Isaac, 1:40
- Niederzier site, 1:76
- Nikolskoye site, 1:358
- Nilsson, Sven, 1:306, 426
- Ninth International Congress of Anthropology and Prehistoric Archeology, 1:164
- Njál's Saga*, 2:447
- Noah's Flood* (Ryan and Pitman), 1:126
- Nomadic traditions, 2:368–369. *See also* Herding; Pastoralism; Steppe herders
- Norfolk Museums Service, 2:496
- Normanton Down site, 2:65
- Norsminde site, 1:295, 423
- North Mains site, 2:180
- Northey site, 2:67–69
- Northumbrian culture, 2:471
- Norway, 1:471; 2:533. *See also specific cultures and people; specific sites*
- burials, 1:87
 - Christianity, 2:535
 - environments, human impacts on, 1:51
 - farming, 2:371
 - fires, use of, 1:10–11
 - fishng populations, 2:535
 - gender roles and relationships, 1:87
 - Mesolithic period, 1:139
 - political systems, 2:534
 - settlement patterns, 1:372
 - social systems, 2:535
 - textile industry, 2:434
 - trade and exchange, 2:326
 - Viking Age, 2:534–535
 - warfare and conquest, 2:534
- Nové Košariská site, 2:297
- Novgorod site, 2:564, 566–567
- Novye Rusešty site, 1:370
- Nowa Huta site, 1:374
- Noyen-sur-Seine site, 1:274, 275
- Nunnaminster, 2:506
- Nuragic culture, 2:50–53, 52
-
- O**
- Obalki site, 1:306
- Ober-Hörgern site, 1:264
- Obermeilen site, 1:387
- Obre site, 1:240–242, 337
- O'Brien, William, 1:97
- Obsidian industry, 1:45, 68–69, 179, 223, 228–229, 241, 441, 444
- Ocean levels, and effects on environments, 1:8, 9, 48, 124, 146, 171–172, 180
- Öcsöd-Kováshalom site, 1:338
- Odmut site, 1:172
- Odyssey* (Homer), 2:10, 289, 316
- Offa, king of Mercia, 2:326–327
- Ofnet Cave site, 1:111
- Ohalo II site, 1:205, 205–206
- Ølby Lyng site, 1:295
- Oldest Irish Tradition: A Window on the Iron Age* (Jackson), 2:237
- Oleg (prince), 2:563, 569
- Oleneostrovskii Mogilnik (Olenii Ostrov) site, 1:141, 187, 188, 189, 192–198, 193, 194
- Oleslyst site, 1:53

- Oliveira, Paul e, 1:165
 Olsen, Olaf, 2:442, 443
On the Fall of Britain (Gildas), 2:489
On the Origin of Species by Means of Natural Selection (Darwin), 1:17, 40, 102
 Opovo site, 1:95
Oppida
 Celtic culture, 2:152, **154–159**
 Europe, central, 2:**154–159**, 158, 246, **247–249**, 300
 Europe, northwestern, 2:157, 224, 228
 Europe, western, 2:**154–157**, 212, 218, **219–221**
 Iberia, 2:256–257
 La Tène culture, 2:142, 148, 158, **158–159**
 Or site, 1:162
 Orientius, 2:376
Origin and Deeds of the Goths (Jordanes), 2:575
Origins of Human Society (Bogucki), 2:14
 Orkney Islands sites, 1:92, 94, 278, **281–283**, 282; 2:404, **445–449**
Orkneyinga Saga, 2:446
 Ornehus site, 1:298
 Oronsay sites, 1:52, 148, 149, 277
 Oseberg site, 2:423, 434
 Osłonki site, 1:315, 374
 Oss site, 1:60, 61, 62, 63
 Östenberg, Carl Eric, 2:36
 Østerbølle site, 2:374
 Ostrogoth culture, 2:402, **402–403**, 593, 596
 Otto III, 2:561
 Otzaki Magoula site, 1:206, 208
 Ötzi. *See* Iceman
 Ovcharovo site, 1:338, **344–346**, 345
 Ozero site, 1:358
-
- P**
Pactus Alamannorum, 2:376
 Padina site, 1:124, 175, 178
 El Pajarillo de Huelma site, 2:255
 Palaeolithic period, 1:8, 111, 144, 145, 179, 208, 254
 Palheirões do Alegria site, 1:160
 Parekklisha Shillourokambos site, 1:231
 Paris Basin, 1:273–275, 279, 306
 Parow site, 1:295
 Pas de Julié site, 1:445
 Passek, T. S., 1:370
 Passo della Comunella site, 1:170
 Passo di Cova site, 1:249, 250, 446
 Passy-sur-Yonne site, 1:274, 306, 307, 401
 Pastoralism, 1:161, 362; **2:368–369**.
See also Herding; Nomadic traditions; Steppe herders
 Pauli, Ludwig, 1:74
 Paulus, Eduard, 2:249, 250
 Pavlů, Ivan, 1:269, 270
 Pavúk, J., 1:383
 Peacock, David, 2:327
 Pearson, Gordon, 1:42
 Pefkakia site, 1:338
 Peiro Signada site, 1:249, 250
 Penedo Comprido site, 1:463
 Pengelly, William, 1:18
 Penn, Kenneth, 2:496
 Perdigões site, 1:458
 Périn, Patrick, 2:396, 399, 514, 522
 Perlès, Catherine, 1:229
 Peroni, Renato, 2:37
 Petters Sports Field site, 2:60
 Philip II of Macedon, 2:170, 413
 Phillips, Charles, 2:498
 Phoenician culture, 2:253–255
 Phylakopi site, 1:90
 Piana di Curinga site, 1:249, 250
 Pianaccio di Tortoreto site, 1:442
 Piast culture, 2:554–555, 558–559, 560–561
 Piazzana site, 1:170
 Pico Ramos site, 1:159
 Pict culture, 2:**403–405**, 404, 447, 472–473, 475, 478
 Piette, Edouard, 1:18
 Piggott, Stuart, 2:3, 65
 Pigs, 1:212, **214–215**
 La Pijotilla site, 1:458
 Pilloy, Jules, 2:512
 Pirenne, Henri, 2:352
 Pispá site, 1:190
 Pit-Comb pottery culture, 1:357
 Pit-Grave (Yamnaya) culture, 1:**361–363**
 Pitman, Walter, 1:126, 244
 Pitt-Rivers, Augustus Henry, 1:4, 18
 Pitted Ware culture, 1:**431–438**
 about, 1:426
 burials, 1:433
 crops, 1:433
 dates for, 1:433
 foraging populations, 1:433, 434
 political systems, 1:**432–433**
 pottery industry, 1:432, 434
 ritual and ideology, 1:432, **433**
 settlement patterns, 1:432
 subsistence resources, 1:**432–433**
 tool industries, 1:432
 trade and exchange, 1:434
 Plains region, 1:**170–171**
 Plas Gogerddan site, 2:485
 Platia Magoula Zarkou site, 1:340
 Plato, *Laws*, 2:180
 Plattling-Pankofen site, 2:176
 Pléchéâtel site, 1:399
 Pleistocene era, 1:167, 183–184
 Pliny the Elder, 2:180, 396, 575
 Plow artifacts, 1:329, 330, 330–331, 373
 Plussulien, 1:404
 Pod Crmukljo site, 1:171
 Poggio Civitate site, 2:262
 Poggiomarino site, 2:**42–44**, 44
 Poland. *See also specific cultures and people; specific sites*
 Bronze Age, 1:114; 2:21, 29, 87
 Iron Age, 2:**281–288**
 artworks, 2:285
 burials, 2:281, 282, 283, 284
 economic systems, 2:281–282, 283–284
 farming, 2:283
 fortifications, 2:282, 286, **286–288**
 gender roles and relationships, 2:283
 ironworking, 2:166, 283, 284–285
 political systems, 2:285
 pottery industry, 2:283
 ritual and ideology, 2:282
 trade and exchange, 2:283–284
 urbanization, 2:287
 urnfields, 2:282
 warfare and conquest, 2:282
 Mesolithic period, 1:133, 135, 136, 184, 185, 186–187
 Middle Ages
 agricultural surpluses, 2:559
 economic systems, 2:557
 landscape use, 2:557
 political systems, 2:**556–561**, 558
 ritual and ideology, 2:554
 settlement patterns, 2:**554–556**, 560
 settlement structures, 2:552, 552, 556
 trade and exchange, 2:557–558
 warfare and conquest, 2:554, 555, 556, 556, 557, 559
 Neolithic period
 barrow burials, 1:402
 bog deposits, 1:**298**
 burials, 1:112, 298, **304–310**, 306, 379
 chronological sequence, 1:373
 copper industry, 1:315, 379–380
 farming, 1:378–382
 flint industry, 1:**376**

- gender roles and relationships, 1:379
- landscape use, 1:129
- monumental structures, 1:304–310, 307
- ritual and ideology, 1:378–382
- salt industry, 1:376
- settlement patterns, 1:374
- settlement structures, 1:374, 379, 380
- trade and exchange, 1:376
- warfare and conquest, 1:112
- Polderweg site, 1:147, 149
- Polgár-Csszhalom site, 1:337–338
- Polignac, François de, 2:255
- Political systems. *See also specific countries; specific sites*
- about state societies, 2:346–350
- about *khagan*, 2:574, 577
- Bronze Age
- Europe, central, 2:15–16, 18
- Europe, eastern, 2:18, 104
- Europe, northwestern, 2:59–61
- Europe, southeastern, 2:15–16, 18
- Iberia, 2:47–49
- Mediterranean region, 2:5, 47–49, 109, 113
- Copper Age
- Iberia, 1:460
- Mediterranean region, 1:460
- Iron Age
- Europe, central, 2:156, 159, 246, 250, 300
- Europe, eastern, 2:285, 292–293, 305–307, 309–310
- Europe, northern, 2:534, 542–547
- Europe, western, 2:213, 217, 218
- Iberia, 2:255, 257
- Mediterranean region, 2:255, 314
- Middle Ages, 2:327
- Europe, central, 2:385, 398–403, 556–561, 575–576, 582–585, 592–594, 595–597
- Europe, eastern, 2:556–561, 564, 566
- Europe, northern, 2:418–419, 437–438, 443, 589
- Europe, northwestern, 2:388, 494–495
- Mediterranean region, 2:347–348
- Neolithic period, 1:389, 432–433, 448–450, 449, 451, 460–462
- Polyanitsa site, 1:96, 338
- Polybius, 2:211, 217
- Pontic-Caspian region, 1:108
- Popiel, 2:554, 559
- Population statistics. *See also specific countries; specific sites*
- Bronze Age, 2:36, 111, 124
- Copper Age, 1:359
- Iron Age, 2:249, 250, 256, 270–271
- Mesolithic period, 1:148, 158, 160, 161, 165, 166
- Middle Ages, 2:492, 530–532
- Porcuna site, 2:255
- Pori site, 2:550
- Portmahomack site, 2:476–477, 478
- Porto Badisco site, 1:95
- Porto Perone site, 2:37, 38
- Portugal. *See also specific sites*
- Copper Age, 1:458, 460
- Mesolithic period
- aquatic resources, 1:164
- fauna, 1:164
- fishing populations, 1:124
- midden sites, 1:164–166
- population statistics, 1:158, 165
- settlement patterns, 1:124, 157–158
- social systems, 1:196
- stone tool industries, 1:165
- subsistence resources, 1:160–161
- Neolithic period
- artworks, 1:458–459
- burials, 1:458, 460, 463
- dates for, 1:398
- farming, 1:202
- monumental structures, 1:463
- pastoralism, 1:161
- political systems, 1:460–462
- pottery industry, 1:459
- settlement patterns, 1:458
- social systems, 1:460
- stone tool industries, 1:160
- subsistence resources, 1:160, 249, 249
- warfare and conquest, 1:460, 462
- Porvoo site, 2:550
- Posidonius, 2:151
- Post, Lennart von, 1:19
- Post-Roman culture, 2:348–349, 353, 369–370
- Post-Roman period, 2:469–470, 480–481, 504–505, 587–588, 590–591
- Postglacial period
- ecofacts, 1:24
- environments, 1:7–8, 118–120, 126–131, 130, 130, 183
- fishing populations, 1:8, 124, 138, 184
- landscape use, 1:118–120, 130, 130
- ocean levels during, 1:124
- resource use, 1:142, 154
- subsistence resources, 1:142, 143
- tool industries, 1:142, 154, 155
- Postoloptry site, 1:374
- Potterne site, 2:59
- Pottery industry. *See also Figurines; specific countries; specific cultures and people; specific sites*
- about dating methods and chronology, 1:66
- Bronze Age, 2:16–18, 21, 37–38, 40–41, 46, 96, 104–105
- Copper Age, 1:358, 359, 361, 362
- Iron Age, 2:199–200, 200–203, 225, 266, 283, 292, 300, 305–306
- Mesolithic period, 1:159, 162, 177, 178, 184–185, 278, 279
- Middle Ages, 2:328, 332, 333, 381, 452–453, 472, 492, 496–497
- Neolithic period
- Europe, central, 1:185, 202, 238–240, 268, 369–370, 373, 374
- Europe, eastern, 1:185, 235–237, 238–240, 243, 245, 247, 369–370, 373
- Europe, northern, 1:185, 202, 289, 290, 296–298, 432, 434, 436
- Europe, northwestern, 1:185, 273–277, 279, 280, 287, 289, 290
- Europe, upland central and southern, 1:171, 172, 180, 389, 395–396, 452
- Europe, western, 1:257, 391
- Iberia, 1:163, 459
- Mediterranean region, 1:249, 255–256, 257, 439, 440–441, 452; 2:121
- Pouech, Abbé, 1:18
- Poundbury site, 1:114
- Powlesland, Dominic, 2:363
- Poznań University, 2:286
- Pradestel site, 1:168
- Prehistory, origins of, 1:3, 14–21, 34. *See also* Archaeology; History, field of
- Pre-Pottery Neolithic period, 1:207, 208, 231
- Predmost site, 1:111
- Prehistoric Times* (Lubbock), 1:18
- Presteigne site, 2:485
- Pretty, Edith May, 2:498
- Primitive Social Organization* (Service), 2:15
- Principles of Archaeological Stratigraphy* (Harris), 1:33
- Principles of Geology* (Lyell), 1:17
- Prítluky site, 1:114
- The Problem of the Picts* (Wainwright), 2:404
- Procopius, 2:381, 394, 414, 415

Proton-induced x-ray and gamma-ray emission, 1:67–68
 Protruding Foot Beaker culture, 1:470
 Ptolemy, 2:381
 Ptolemy, *Geographica*, 2:388
 Publius Quintilius Varus, 2:247
 Puglisi, Salvatore M., 2:36
 Pupicina site, 1:171
 Pylos site, 1:114
 Pyramids of Egypt, 1:40, 44

Q

Quadi people, 2:573–574
 Quanerness site, 1:283
 Quentovic site, 2:324

R

Raczky, Pál, *The Late Neolithic of the Tisza Region*, 1:335
 Radovanović, Ivana, *The Iron Gates Mesolithic*, 1:176
 Radovesice site, 2:299
 Raevskoe site, 2:294
 Rainsborough site, 1:115
 Rajewski, Zdzisław, 2:286
 Ramad site, 1:208
 Ramsauer, Johann Georg, 1:17; 2:144
 Randsborg, Klavs, 1:100
 Rassokhovatka site, 1:370
 Rath of the Synods site, 2:237
 Rathlin Island site, 1:404
 Rathtinaun site, 2:234
 Redwald, 2:499
 Rega, Elizabeth, 1:86
 Regensburg site, 2:385, 593, 596
 Reim, Hartmann, 2:251
 Reinecke, Paul, 2:86, 147
 Remedello site, 1:445
 Remigius, 2:376
 Rendswühren Man, 1:27
 Renfrew, Colin
 “The Autonomy of the South-East European Copper Age,” 1:318
 on calibration and dating methods, 1:45
 on copper industry, 1:318, 319
 on Indo-European influences, 1:340
 on megalithic tombs, 1:400
 on populations based on hypogea, 1:454
 on radiocarbon dating, 1:41
 on ritual, evidence of, 1:91

and study of shrines, 1:90
Rerum gestarum libri (Ammianus Marcellinus), 2:180
 Resource use. *See also specific countries; specific sites*
 about environments and, 1:52–53
 Bronze Age, 1:53–54
 Holocene era, 1:170
 Iron Age, 1:53–54
 Mesolithic period, 1:52, 142, 154
 Neolithic period, 1:52, 53, 84–85
 postglacial period, 1:142, 154
 Rhetor Priscus, 2:391
 Rhine and Meuse Valleys, 1:286–291
 Ribe site, 2:325, 328, 358, 546
 Ribeiro, Carlos, 1:164
 Rickett, Robert, 2:496
 Riek, Gustav, 2:250
Rig Veda, 1:101, 102; 2:99–100
 Rijckholt site, 1:404
 Rijswijk site, 2:589
 Ring of Brodgar site, 1:283
 Ringkloster site, 1:135, 295
 Rinyo site, 1:283
 Ríordáin, A. B. ó, 2:467
 Riparo Gabon site, 1:168
 Ripiceni-Izvor site, 1:172
 Ripoli site, 1:442, 444
 Risch, Roberto, 2:47
 Ritual and ideology, 1:170. *See also specific countries; specific cultures and people; specific sites*
 about artifacts, and evidence of, 1:91–92
 about human sacrifices, 2:270
 about Renfrew on evidence of, 1:91
 Bronze Age
 Europe, central, 1:95, 96; 2:26–27, 33
 Europe, eastern, 2:26, 32, 99
 Europe, northern, 2:77–78
 Europe, northwestern, 2:57–58, 62, 68–69
 Europe, upland central and southern, 1:450
 Iberia, 2:48, 49
 Mediterranean region, 2:35, 37, 40, 119–120, 123, 124
 Copper Age, 1:92, 93, 95, 360, 361, 363, 365–366
 Iron Age
 Europe, central, 2:250, 282, 298, 299, 301–302
 Europe, northern, 1:93, 99–100; 2:181–183, 270, 551
 Europe, northwestern, 2:225–227, 237–238
 Iberia, 2:254–258, 256, 257

Megalithic period, 1:95, 97, 411–412
 Mesolithic period
 Europe, central, 1:189
 Europe, eastern, 1:187, 188–190, 196
 Europe, northwestern, 1:12, 149–151
 Europe, upland central and southern, 1:170, 177
 Iberia, 1:159, 165
 Mediterranean region, 1:170
 Middle Ages
 Europe, central, 2:401, 554, 587–588
 Europe, northern, 2:410, 588
 Europe, northwestern, 2:448, 450–451, 453, 456–459, 473–474, 478, 486–487, 491
 Migration period, 2:270
 Neolithic period
 Europe, central, 1:92, 377–378
 Europe, eastern, 1:94, 378–382
 Europe, northern, 1:296, 298, 301, 425–426, 432, 433, 437
 Europe, northwestern, 1:274, 284–285
 Europe, upland central and southern, 1:391
 Europe, western, 1:284–285
 Iberia, 1:460, 463
 Mediterranean region, 1:97, 232, 274, 460, 463; 2:121
 Rive d’Arcano site, 1:171
 Roaix site, 1:112
 Robb, John, 1:97
 Roberts, Howell, 2:437
 Robin Hood’s Ball site, 2:65
 Rocca di Rivoli site, 1:442
 Roche, Jean, 1:165
 Rock art, 1:18, 85, 188–189, 193, 446, 459; 2:5. *See also stone carvings; specific countries; specific sites*
 Rogerius, *Carmen miserabile*, 2:579
 Rogerson, Andrew, 2:496
 Romagnano site, 1:168
 Roman culture, 2:142–143, 228–229, 236–237, 247, 257, 294–295
 Roman period
 about, 1:3, 12, 15, 47, 87
 Europe, central, 2:573–574, 586–590
 Europe, northern, 1:62
 Europe, northwestern, 2:501–504, 508–510
 Romanellian culture, 1:172

- Romania. *See also specific sites*
 Bronze Age, 2:15, 17, 18, 21, 22
 Copper Age, 1:92, 94, 339, 364
 Iron Age, 1:115; 2:187, 375
 Mesolithic period, 1:124, 172, 175, 177
 Neolithic period, 1:238–239, 245, 335–336, 366
 Rondeneto site, 1:170
 Rosenhof site, 1:295, 296
 Rössen culture, 1:287–290, 371–375, 377
 Rossmore Park site, 2:69
 Roth, Helmut, *From Attila to Charlemagne*, 2:426
 Roum Girl, 1:27
 Rowlands, Michael, 1:78; 2:10
 Rowley-Conwy, Peter, 1:154; 2:372
 Royal sites, 2:239–240
 Rudbeck, Olof, 1:14
 Runes, 2:589
 Runnymede Bridge site, 2:180
 Runnymede site, 1:276; 2:61
 Rurik Gorodishche site, 2:564, 566
 Rurik site, 2:563, 564
 Rus culture, 2:406–408, 407
 Russia. *See also Soviet Union; specific cultures and people; specific sites*
 Bronze Age
 burials, 2:93–97
 copper industry, 2:9
 dates for, 2:92–93
 horses, domestication of, 2:93
 Indo-Iranian languages, 2:99–100
 Indo-Iranian languages, influences of, 2:99–100
 metallurgy industries, 2:94, 96–97
 pottery industry, 2:96, 99
 ritual and ideology, 2:99
 settlement patterns, 2:93, 93–94, 95–96
 settlement structures, 2:98
 social systems, 2:93
 steppe herders, 2:92–100
 wheeled vehicles, 2:94–95
 Copper Age, 2:94–97, 102
 Iron Age, 2:166, 289–295
 Middle Ages, 2:563–571, 564
 animal husbandry, 2:570–571
 archaeological evidence, 2:563–564
 burials, 2:566, 569
 economic systems, 2:563–567, 569–571
 ethnic identities, 2:563, 564, 565, 566, 571
 foraging populations, 2:570–571
 fortifications, 2:566
 historical evidence, 2:563
 metalworking, 2:570, 570
 political systems, 2:564, 566
 settlement patterns, 2:564–565, 569
 social systems, 2:564, 566
 trade and exchange, 2:563, 565–566
 urbanization, 2:563, 564, 565
 Russian Primary Chronicle, 2:563, 565
 Rüttimeyer, Ludwig, 1:387
 Ryan, William B. F., 1:126, 244
 Rzucewo culture, 1:471–472
-
- S**
- Saami culture, 2:279, 408–410, 535
 Sachsenwald site, 1:307
 Sahlins, Marshall, 1:337
 Saint-Germain-des-Prés site, 2:376
 Saint Michel du Touch site, 1:443, 445
 Saint Patrick, 2:181, 464–465
 St. Methodius, 2:554, 558
 St. Ninian's Isle site, 2:404
 Sakarovka I site, 1:243
 Saleux site, 2:515
 Salin, Bernhard, 2:539
 Salin, Édouard, 2:400, 513–514
 Salt industry, 1:74, 376; 2:223
 Saltbæk Vig site, 1:36–39
 Saltmade site, 1:37
 Samo, 2:582
 San Giorgio de Nogaro site, 1:170
 San Juan ante Portam Latinam site, 1:460
 San Vincenzo al Volturno site, 2:395
 Sandagergård site, 2:78
 Sandarna site, 1:185
 Sangmeister, Edward, 1:478
 Sant Gregori de Falset site, 1:163
 Santa Maria site, 1:442
 Santimamiñe cave site, 1:160
 Santorini eruption, 1:43–44
 Sardinia, 1:68–69, 70, 114, 440, 454; 2:50–53, 52. *See also specific sites*
 Sarmatian people, 2:573–574
 Sarnate site, 1:434
 Sarnowo site, 1:297, 305–310, 307
 Sarre site, 1:445
 Sarup on Fyn site, 1:301–304, 303, 403
 Sautuola, Marcelino Sanz de, 1:18
 Sauvterrian culture, 1:145, 145, 167–170, 169, 173
 Sauvterrian-la-Lémance site, 1:167
 Sawyer, Peter, *Kings and Vikings*, 2:417
- Saxo-Thuringia site, 2:23
 Saxon culture, 2:381–384
 Scandinavia. *See also specific countries; specific sites*
 about prehistory, origins of, 1:18
 Bronze Age, 2:72–85, 84
 bronze industry, 2:74
 burials, 2:5, 74–76, 76, 80–91, 81
 clothing, 2:75–76, 81
 coffin burials, 2:5, 75, 80–82
 dates for, 2:73
 gender roles and relationships, 1:81, 85–86, 86; 2:75–76
 hoards, 2:27
 metallurgy industries, 2:73–74
 ritual and ideology, 2:77–78
 rock art, 2:5
 settlement patterns, 2:72–73, 76–77
 settlement structures, 2:77, 78, 79
 social structures, 2:75–76
 social systems, 2:73–74, 75–76
 trade and exchange, 2:78–79
 Copper Age, 1:92, 93, 422–427
 Holocene era, 1:49
 Iron Age, 1:75, 117
 artworks, 2:269, 270
 burials, 2:269–270, 279
 cairn fields, 2:273–274
 environments, 2:272–273
 farming, 2:273–274
 fortifications, 2:138
 hoards, 2:270
 human sacrifices, 2:270
 iron industry, 2:269
 landscape use, 2:270–272
 population statistics, 2:270–271
 ritual and ideology, 2:270
 Saami culture, 2:279, 409
 settlement patterns, 2:270–273
 settlement structures, 2:273
 warfare and conquest, 2:269–270
 watercraft, 2:270
 weapons and armor, 2:270
 wheeled vehicles, 2:270
 Megalithic period, 1:399, 402, 403
 Mesolithic period
 burials, 1:149, 196
 environments, 1:183
 farming, 1:202
 foraging populations, 1:184, 185
 gender roles and relationships, 1:83
 pottery industry, 1:185
 stone tool industries, 1:144, 145
 Middle Ages
 artworks, 2:417, 418
 Christianity, 2:535
 clothing, 2:433–435, 434

- Scandinavia (*continued*)
 coinage, 2:358
 political systems, 2:418–419
 Saami culture, 2:408–410
 settlement patterns, 2:418
 settlement structures, 2:418
 social systems, 2:418, 419
 state societies, 2:348–349
 subsistence resources, 2:418
 textile industry, 2:433–435, 434
 trade and exchange, 2:418
 warfare and conquest, 2:417
 writing, 2:419
 Migration period, 2:270
 Neolithic period, 1:431–438
 aquatic resources, 1:432
 barrow burials, 1:402, 423
 burials, 1:433
 crops, 1:433
 dates for, 1:398, 433
 farming, 1:421–422
 foraging populations, 1:433, 434
 landscape use, 1:129
 political systems, 1:432–433
 pottery industry, 1:185, 432, 434
 ritual and ideology, 1:432, 433
 settlement patterns, 1:421, 432
 stone tool industries, 1:432
 subsistence resources, 1:432–433
 trade and exchange, 1:434
 Pleistocene era, 1:183–184
 postglacial period, 1:24
 Stone Age, 1:433
 Viking Age, 2:417, 417–419, 423–425, 425, 549
 Scania. *See* Scandinavia; Sweden
 Schadla-Hall, Tim, 1:155
 Schela Cladovei site, 1:175, 176, 177, 177, 178
 Schlammersdorf site, 1:295
 Schletz-Asparn site, 1:111, 264
 Schliemann, Heinrich, 1:18; 2:249
 Schmerling, Philippe-Charles, 1:17
 Schmidt, Robert, 1:83
Schnabelkannen, 2:245
 Schutz, Herbert, *Tools, Weapons, and Ornaments*, 2:426
 Schwab, Friedrich, 2:147
 Schwarz, Klaus, 2:177
 Scoglio del Tonno site, 1:444
 Scotland. *See also specific cultures and people; specific sites*
 about prehistory, origins of, 1:17
 Iron Age, 1:115; 2:180, 223
 Megalithic period, 1:398, 403
 Mesolithic period, 1:50, 52, 148, 149–150, 277, 277–278
 Middle Ages
 artisans, 2:472, 477, 478
 artworks, 2:388
 burials, 2:474, 476, 478
 Christianity, spread of, 2:469, 473–474
 church architecture, 2:476–477
 fortifications, 2:472
 hoards, 2:404
 metalwork, 2:472
 mills and milling technology, 2:477
 political systems, 2:388
 post-Roman period, 2:469–470
 pottery industry, 2:472
 ritual and ideology, 2:448, 473–474, 476, 478
 settlement patterns, 2:471–472
 slavery, 2:474
 social systems, 2:386, 471
 stone carvings, 2:472–473, 473, 476–478
 transportation routes, 2:387
 warfare and conquest, 2:387–388, 388
 Neolithic period, 1:129, 277–278, 398
 Viking Age, 2:445–449, 446, 469, 473–474
 Scythian culture, 2:282, 290–291, 294–295, 368, 369, 411–414
 Šebn Abri site, 1:171
 Secondary Products Revolution. *See also specific countries; specific sites*
 about effects of, 1:339; 2:109
 animal pulling power/traction, 1:314, 327–329; 2:14, 15, 26, 46
 artifacts associated with, 1:328
 artifacts for, 1:327
 dairy industry, 1:314, 325–327, 373, 425; 2:14, 26, 46
 wool industry, 1:314, 327–328, 330, 390, 425; 2:14, 26, 46
 Selevac site, 1:320
 Selzen site, 2:512
 Semibratnoe site, 2:294
 Semnones people, 2:592, 595
 Sennacherib, 2:290
 Serbia
 about prehistory, origins of, 1:18
 Bronze Age, 1:95; 2:9, 17, 18, 22
 Copper Age, 1:320, 339
 Iron Age, 2:301
 Mesolithic period, 1:124, 175, 176–177, 178, 179, 202
 Neolithic period, 1:94, 178, 235–237, 238–239, 318, 335–336, 337
 Sered site, 1:173
 Sernander, R., 1:49
 Serra d'Alto site, 1:444
 Service, Elman, 1:78
 Service, Elman, *Primitive Social Organization*, 2:15
 Sesklo site, 1:208, 209, 220, 337
 Sestieri, Anna Maria Bietti, 2:38
 Settlement patterns. *See also*
 Fortifications; Migration patterns; *specific countries; specific cultures and people; specific sites*
 about archaeology and, 1:55–64
 about emporia, 2:324–336
 about field systems, 2:59–60, 214, 222
 Bronze Age
 Europe, central, 2:15, 21–22, 87, 88–89
 Europe, eastern, 2:15, 72–73, 76–77, 93, 93–94, 95–96, 103, 104
 Europe, northwestern, 1:129; 2:58–59
 Europe, southeastern, 2:17–18
 Europe, western, 2:214
 Iberia, 2:45–46, 48
 Mediterranean region, 2:35–40, 42–44, 45–46, 48, 111, 113
 Copper Age, 1:320, 338–339, 358–359, 362, 458
 Iron Age
 Europe, central, 1:77; 2:208–209, 299, 300–301
 Europe, eastern, 2:291–292, 293–294, 304–306, 307
 Europe, northern, 1:77; 2:270–273, 278–279, 548
 Europe, northwestern, 1:77; 2:501–502
 Europe, western, 2:212–213, 213, 215, 217–218
 Iberia, 2:255, 256–257, 258
 Mediterranean region, 2:255, 258, 314–315, 317–318
 Mesolithic period
 Europe, eastern, 1:184–185, 187
 Europe, northern, 1:147–148
 Europe, northwestern, 1:148, 153–156
 Europe, upland central and southern, 1:202
 Europe, western, 1:157–158
 Iberia, 1:157–158, 159, 160, 161, 162
 Mediterranean region, 1:124
 Middle Ages
 Europe, central, 2:384–385, 554–556, 560, 586, 587, 589, 591–592, 594–595
 Europe, eastern, 2:564–565, 569

- Europe, northern, 2:418, **438–439**, 440–441, 589
- Europe, northwestern, 2:332, 333, **451–452**, **471–472**, **481–482**, **483–484**, **492–493**, 500, 501–506
- Europe, western, 2:514–516
- Neolithic period
- Europe, central, 1:335–336, **374–375**
- Europe, eastern, 1:239, 241, 314, 335–336, 337, 368, **374–375**
- Europe, northern, 1:289, 314, 372, **421**, 432, 436
- Europe, northwestern, 1:226–227, 275, 289, **314–315**, 398
- Europe, upland central and southern, 1:**314–315**, 335–336, **386–387**, **389**, 395
- Europe, western, 1:257, 314
- Iberia, 1:458
- Mediterranean region, 1:35, 253–254, 275, 439, **458**
- post-Roman period, 2:**504–505**
- Roman period, 2:501–504
- Settlement structures. *See also specific countries; specific sites*
- Bronze Age
- Europe, central, 2:21–22, **88–89**, 89
- Europe, eastern, 2:103, 104
- Europe, northern, 2:77, 78, 79
- Europe, northwestern, 2:57–58, 59, 231
- Europe, southeastern, 2:18
- Europe, upland central and southern, 2:22
- Europe, western, 2:214
- Copper Age, 1:320, 349–350, 351, 351
- Iron Age
- Europe, central, 1:87; 2:209–210
- Europe, eastern, 2:292
- Europe, northern, 2:273, **534–535**, **537–538**
- Europe, northwestern, 2:**223–224**, 224
- Europe, western, 1:75, 76, 87; 2:216, 218–219
- Iberia, 2:257, 258
- Mediterranean region, 2:316
- Megalithic period, 1:399
- Mesolithic period
- Europe, eastern, 1:187
- Europe, northwestern, 1:**148–149**, 152, 153
- Europe, upland central and southern, 1:175, 176, 178, 179
- Iberia, 1:160, 165–166
- Middle Ages
- Europe, central, 2:397, 415, 552, 552, 556, 587, 590
- Europe, northern, 2:418, 443–444
- Europe, northwestern, 2:381, **404**, 462–465, 463, **492–493**, 500–501, 509, 509
- Europe, western, 2:515
- Neolithic period, 1:222
- Europe, central, 1:369, 369, 374
- Europe, eastern, 1:369, 369, 374, 379, 380
- Europe, northern, 1:314, 436–437
- Europe, northwestern, 1:273, 274, 281–282, 282, 283, 398, 399
- Europe, upland central and southern, 1:178, 180, 314
- Europe, western, 1:314
- Iberia, 1:163, 465
- Mediterranean region, 1:202, 220, 232, 250, 257, 398; 2:121
- Viking Age, 2:**534–535**, **537–538**
- Seuss, H. E., 1:42
- Sezegnin site, 2:514, 517
- Shapwick site, 1:60, 60
- Sheep, 1:212, **213–214**, 314, 326, **327–328**, 330
- Sherman, Stephen, 2:10
- Sherratt, Andrew, 1:330, 331, 332, 479; 2:14
- Shetland sites, 2:**445–449**, 446
- Ships, 2:**423–425**, 425, 498–500, 534. *See also* Boats and boatbuilding
- Shramko, Boris Andreevich, 2:293
- Siberia, 1:189
- Sicily, 1:114. *See also specific sites*
- Sigersdal Mose site, 1:298, 404
- Siggeneben-Süd site, 1:295, 297
- Silbury Hill site, 1:128, 405
- Silkeborg site, 2:270
- Silver industry, 1:441; 2:**25**, **170**, 171, 328, 358, **358–359**, 359. *See also specific countries; specific sites*
- Simeoni, Gabriele, 2:220
- Similaun Man. *See* Iceman
- Simpson, Linzi, 2:466
- Single Grave culture, 1:373, 427, **469–470**
- Sintashta-Arkaim culture, 2:**97–98**
- Sion-Petit Chasseur site, 1:391, **446–450**, 447
- Siret, Henri, 2:45
- Siret, Louis, 1:464; 2:45
- Sitagroi site, 1:320, 338
- Skallagrim, 2:440
- Skara Brae site, 1:282, **282–284**, 398
- Skateholm site, 1:138, **140–141**, 196, 295, 296, 309, 420
- Skir people, 2:574
- Skoteini site, 1:207
- Skræppegård site, 1:298
- Skrydstrup site, 2:76
- Skrydstrup Woman burial, 2:75, 80
- Skuldelev site, 2:424
- Slatino site, 1:320
- Slavery, 2:**196–197**, 473
- Slavonic culture, 2:**414–417**, 415, 552, **554–556**, 556, **593**, 596
- Slettnes site, 1:139
- A Slice through Time* (Baillie), 1:43
- Slovakia. *See also specific sites*
- Bronze Age
- burials, 2:22, 32
- copper industry, 2:9
- deposits, 2:26
- fortifications, 1:114–115; 2:**31–33**, 32
- hoards, 2:33
- pottery industry, 2:21
- ritual and ideology, 2:26, 33
- settlement structures, 2:21, 22
- social systems, 2:32
- trade and exchange, 2:32
- warfare and conquest, 1:114–115
- weapons and armor, 1:116
- Iron Age, 1:75; 2:301
- Mesolithic period, 1:173
- Middle Ages, 2:580, 582, 582
- Neolithic period, 1:372, 374, 376, 377, 382, 383, 384
- Slovenia, 1:171, 202; 2:242, 297–298, 302
- Smakkerup Huse site, 1:37, 38, 295, 299
- Snaeburn site, 1:428
- Snaesdóttir, Mjoll, 2:437
- Snape site, 2:490
- Snettisham site, 1:77, 77; 2:226
- Snodgrass, Anthony, 2:312, 313
- Social systems. *See also specific countries; specific sites*
- about archaeology, and evidence for, 1:**72–80**
- Bronze Age, 1:62–63
- Europe, central, 2:5, 32
- Europe, eastern, 2:93
- Europe, northern, 1:**85–86**; 2:75–76
- Europe, northwestern, 1:46; 2:5, 57–58, **60–61**, 231
- Europe, western, 2:5
- Iberia, 2:**48–49**
- Mediterranean region, 2:**10–11**, 36, 40, **48–49**, 113, 123–124

- Social systems (*continued*)
- Copper Age, 1:343–344, 349–350, 362
 - Iron Age, 1:62
 - Europe, central, 1:79–80; 2:156, 159, 181, 241–242, 246, 250, 282
 - Europe, eastern, 2:304–305, 306
 - Europe, northern, 2:535, 548
 - Europe, northwestern, 2:181, 227–228
 - Europe, western, 2:214, 216, 217
 - Iberia, 2:255–258, 256, 257, 258
 - Mediterranean region, 1:73, 75, 76, 87; 2:266, 314
 - Mesolithic period, 1:62–63, 196
 - Middle Ages
 - Europe, central, 2:398, 576, 584, 587–588, 588, 592
 - Europe, eastern, 2:564, 566
 - Europe, northern, 2:419
 - Europe, northwestern, 2:329–330, 386, 471, 481–482, 483–484
 - Neolithic period, 1:241–243, 337, 436, 460, 461, 464–466
 - Society of Antiquaries of London, 2:498
 - Sølager site, 1:423
 - Soman site, 1:168
 - Somerset Levels site, 1:31
 - Son Matge site, 1:459
 - Sopra Fienile Rossino site, 1:170
 - Sopron site, 2:297
 - Sørensen, Marie Louise Stig, 1:81, 85, 94
 - Soroki II site, 1:244, 358
 - Sotira culture, 1:231, 347
 - Soudský, Bohumil, 1:269, 270
 - Soufli Magoula, 1:205
 - Soviet Union, origins of prehistory and, 1:20. *See also specific countries; specific sites*
 - Spain. *See also specific sites*
 - about prehistory, origins of, 1:17–18
 - Bronze Age, 2:5
 - Copper Age, 1:458, 460, 464–466
 - Iron Age, 1:117; 2:199–200
 - Mesolithic period, 1:124, 159, 161–162
 - Neolithic period
 - artworks, 1:458–459
 - burials, 1:458, 465
 - crops, 1:208
 - dates for, 1:398
 - farming, 1:202
 - political systems, 1:460–462
 - pottery industry, 1:257, 459
 - settlement structures, 1:465
 - social systems, 1:464–466
 - subsistence resources, 1:249, 249
 - Spišský Štvrtok site, 2:31–33, 32
 - Spong Hill site, 2:383, 490, 496–497
 - Srendny Stog culture, 1:359–361
 - Srubnaya culture, 2:99
 - Staigue Fort site, 1:115
 - Stanton Drew site, 2:66
 - Staosnaig site, 1:50, 277
 - Star Carr site, 1:153–156
 - artifacts, 1:155
 - environments and, 1:19, 25, 47–48, 50
 - fires, and impacts of use by humans on, 1:154–155
 - foraging populations, 1:154
 - population statistics, 1:154
 - resource use, 1:154
 - ritual and ideology, 1:12
 - ritual behaviors, 1:149
 - settlement patterns, 1:147–148, 154, 155–156
 - subsistence resources, 1:147
 - tool industries, 1:154, 155
 - Staraya Ladoga site, 2:564, 564, 565–566, 568–571, 570
 - Starčevo culture, 1:177–178, 237, 238–239
 - Staré Hradisko site, 2:300–301
 - Stålmosegård site, 1:298
 - Stary Kolín site, 2:302
 - State societies, 2:346–350. *See also Political systems*
 - Stefermark site, 1:118
 - Stelae artifacts, 1:448–450, 449
 - Stentinello site, 1:35
 - Steppe herders, 2:92–100. *See also Herding; Nomadic traditions; Pastoralism*
 - burials, 2:93, 94, 95–96, 97
 - dates for, 2:92–93
 - horses, domestication of, 2:93
 - Indo-Iranian languages and, 2:99–100
 - kurgan* burials, 2:94–97
 - metallurgy industries, 2:94, 96–97
 - pottery industry, 2:96, 99
 - ritual and ideology, 2:99
 - settlement patterns, 2:93, 93–94, 95–96
 - settlement structures, 2:98
 - social systems, 2:93
 - wheeled vehicles, 2:94–95, 98
 - wool industry, 2:94
 - Stična site, 2:297
 - Stockbridge Down site, 2:491
 - Stoffel, Eugène, 2:220
 - Stokes, Paul, 2:372
 - Stolpe, Hjalmar, 2:540
 - Stone Age, 1:433; 2:533. *See also Mesolithic period; Neolithic period*
 - Stone carvings. *See also specific countries; specific sites*
 - about rock art, 1:18, 85, 188–189, 193, 446, 459; 2:5
 - Europe, northern, 2:542, 544, 545
 - Europe, northwestern, 2:405, 453, 472–473, 476–478, 480, 510
 - Stone industry, 2:225. *See also Stone carvings; specific countries; specific sites*
 - Stone tool industries
 - about lithic industry, 1:441
 - Copper Age, 1:361
 - Iron Age, 2:225
 - Mesolithic period
 - Europe, eastern, 1:184–185, 186
 - Europe, northern, 1:144, 145, 185
 - Europe, northwestern, 1:144–145, 145, 151, 153, 155, 294–295
 - Iberia, 1:158–163, 165, 167, 168
 - Mediterranean region, 1:144, 145
 - Neolithic period
 - Europe, eastern, 1:369
 - Europe, northern, 1:289, 290, 432
 - Europe, northwestern, 1:150, 274, 287, 289, 290
 - Europe, upland central and southern, 1:171, 172, 441, 452
 - Iberia, 1:459
 - Mediterranean region, 1:249, 274, 275, 441, 452; 2:121
 - Palaeolithic era, 1:144, 145, 179
 - Stonehenge site, 2:61–67, 63
 - burials, 2:62
 - construction sequence, 2:62–64, 63
 - dates for, 2:62–64
 - environments, 2:65
 - landscape use, 1:3, 25, 128, 315; 2:65
 - monumental structures, 1:315, 405
 - ritual and ideology, 2:62, 65
 - social systems, 1:46
 - stone materials for, 2:64
 - Stones of Stenness site, 1:283
 - Stöng site, 1:49
 - Stonyford site, 2:236
 - Stora Förvar site, 1:134–135, 436
 - Stora Köpinge site, 2:271
 - Store Åmose site, 1:422, 425
 - Storebält site, 1:52
 - Strabo, 2:220, 290, 294, 374
 - Strachotín site, 2:301
 - Stradonice site, 2:300
 - Strandtved site, 2:75, 76
 - Struve, K. W., 1:467
 - Šturms, Eduard, 2:390

- Stuver, Minze, 1:42
 Stukeley, William, 1:14
 Stumble site, 1:276
 Stuttgart-Bad Cannstatt site, 1:268, 269
 Subsistence resources. *See also specific countries; specific cultures and people; specific sites*
 Bronze Age, 2:89, 99, 112
 Copper Age, 1:356, 358, 361, 365
 Europe, central, 1:394
 Iron Age, 2:222–223
 Mesolithic period
 Europe, eastern, 1:124, 184, 186, 187
 Europe, northwestern, 1:50, 52, 145–147, 277–288, 436
 Europe, upland central and southern, 1:176
 Europe, western, 1:147
 Iberia, 1:159, 160, 161, 162, 163
 Middle Ages, 2:418, 440–441, 448
 Neolithic period
 Europe, central, 1:365, 394
 Europe, eastern, 1:336–337, 365
 Europe, northern, 1:289, 313, 432–433, 436
 Europe, northwestern, 1:276, 283, 285, 289, 398
 Europe, upland central and southern, 1:178, 180, 202, 388–389, 397, 454
 Europe, western, 1:285, 394
 Iberia, 1:459–460
 Mediterranean region, 1:454
 Suffolk County Council, 2:498
 Suomusjärvi site, 1:184, 185
 Surrey site, 1:276
 Sutton Hoo site, 1:24; 2:181, 342, 344, 490, 491, 498–500, 499
 Svobodnoe site, 2:94
 Svodín site, 1:374, 376, 377, 383
 Sweden. *See also specific cultures and people; specific sites*
 about prehistory, origins of, 1:19
 Bronze Age, 2:75, 76, 78, 84
 Iron Age, 2:534–535, 537, 537–538, 539
 Megalithic period, 1:401–402
 Mesolithic period, 1:124, 132–141, 156
 burials, 1:124, 140–141, 196
 foraging populations, 1:185
 gender roles and relationships, 1:83
 landscape use, 1:129
 and prehistory, origins of, 1:14
 rock art, 1:189
 stone tool industries, 1:185
 Middle Ages, 1:23; 2:325–326, 326, 427, 434
 Neolithic period, 1:435–438, 471
 animal husbandry, 1:436
 burials, 1:428
 crops, 1:436
 environments, 1:435–436
 foraging populations, 1:432
 settlement patterns, 1:372, 436
 stone tool industries, 1:426
 subsistence resources, 1:313, 436
 trade and exchange, 1:432
 Viking Age, 2:537–541
 artisans, 2:539
 burials, 2:538–539
 Christianity, 2:540
 economic systems, 2:539–540
 hoards, 2:535, 535, 538, 538
 settlement structures, 2:534–535, 537–538
 subsistence resources, 2:534–535, 537–538
 trade and exchange, 2:540
 urbanization, 2:539–540
 Sweet, Ray, 1:416
 Swein Forkbeard, 2:506
 Swiderian culture, 1:184
 Swifterbant site, 1:288
 Swithun (bishop), 2:505
 Switzerland. *See also specific sites*
 about prehistory, origins of, 1:17
 Bronze Age, 1:115; 2:21, 22, 25
 Iron Age, 2:186, 187, 242
 Neolithic period, 1:395–397
 burials, 1:391
 copper artifacts, evidence of, 1:315, 389, 392, 392–395, 393
 environments, 1:47, 51, 52
 health and disease issues, 1:394
 pottery industry, 1:391
 settlement structures, 1:202
 stone tool industries, 1:441
 subsistence resources, 1:394
 tool industries, 1:386, 387, 393
 trade and exchange, 1:391
 S'yezzhe site, 1:366
 Syria, 1:206, 208, 223
 Szazhalombatta site, 2:18
 Szigetszentmárton site, 1:331
 Szwajcer (Schweitzer), Walenty, 2:286
-
- T**
 Tacitus, 2:151, 192, 279, 388, 396, 398, 542, 545
Táin Bó Cúailnge, 2:237
 Talheim site, 1:111, 264
 Tandderwen site, 2:485
 Tankardstown site, 1:280
 Taplow site, 2:491
 Tara site, 2:69, 239, 240, 454, 454
 Tågerup site, 1:135, 136
 Tarbat Historic Trust, 2:476
 Tarbat sites, 2:476–478
 Tardenoisian culture, 1:145, 145, 168
 Tarquinia, 2:260
 Tartaruga site, 1:171
 Tarxien site, 1:451, 452, 453, 454
 Taurus Mountains, 1:206, 207; 2:8
 Tayac site, 1:76
 Technologies, 2:224–225, 248. *See also specific industries*
 Teishebai URU site, 2:307, 308
 Tell Aswad site, 1:205, 206, 207
 La Tène culture, 2:146–148, 245–247
 about, 2:140, 144, 192
 artworks, 2:184–190, 216, 234, 235, 298
 burials, 2:147–148, 216–217, 245
 coinage, 2:216
 dates for, 2:138, 144, 147, 148
 farming, 2:142
 feasting, 2:181
 fortifications, 2:141–142, 158, 158–159
 metallurgy industries, 2:216
 oppida, 2:142, 148, 158, 158–159
 political systems, 2:142, 217
 pottery industry, 2:216
 settlement patterns, 2:142, 147, 212, 217–218, 245
 settlement structures, 2:216
 social systems, 2:216
 state societies, 2:348
 trade and exchange, 2:216
 Viereckschanzen, 2:177
 warfare and conquest, 1:117, 118; 2:217, 246
 Tèpe site, 2:574, 577
 Těšetice-Kyjovice site, 1:374, 382, 383
 Téviec site, 1:141, 147, 148, 274–275, 309, 400
 Textile industry, 1:143; 2:225, 248, 329, 375, 397, 433–435, 434.
 See also specific countries; specific sites
 Thapsos site, 2:36–37
 Theocharis, Dimitrios, 1:229
 Theodoric, 2:402–403
 Theopetra site, 1:173, 204
 Thermal ionization mass spectrometry (TIMS), 1:68
 Thomas, Charles, 2:481

- Thomsen, Christian Jürgensen, 1:15, 25, 137; 2:3, 72
- Thule Inuit people, 2:438
- Tigranakert site, 2:310
- Tigran II, 2:310
- Tilley, Christopher, 1:97
- Timmendorf-Nordmole site, 1:138
- Tin industry, 2:7–8
- Tinë, Santo, 1:254
- Tiryns site, 1:114
- Tischler, Otto, 2:86
- Tiszapolgár site, 1:92, 315, 330, 374, 377, 378
- Titterstone Clee site, 1:115
- Toftum site, 1:403
- Tollund Man, 1:19, 26–27, 47; 2:270
- Tomb of the Chariots site, 2:263
- Tomb of the Five Chairs site, 2:263
- Le tombeau de Childéric I* (Cochet), 2:519
- Tool industries. *See also specific countries; specific industries; specific sites*
- Bronze Age, 2:14
- Copper Age, 1:315, 318, 339, 393, 441–442
- Holocene era, 1:167
- Megalithic period, 1:404–405
- Neolithic period, 1:386, 387, 389, 393, 396, 432
- postglacial period, 1:142, 154, 155
- Tools, Weapons, and Ornaments* (Schutz), 2:426
- Toppo Daguzzo site, 2:36
- Tornow site, 2:588, 592
- Torre Spaccata site, 1:442
- Toumba Balomenou site, 1:209
- Tournal, Paul, 1:17
- Towyn site, 2:486
- Trackways, 1:415–417
- Trade and exchange. *See also specific countries; specific sites*
- about archaeological evidence for, 1:65–71
- about emporia, 2:324–336, 325
- about luxury and non-luxury artifacts, 2:354–355
- about origins of, 2:351–352
- about theories on, 2:352–353
- Bronze Age
- Europe, central, 2:27–29, 28, 32
- Europe, eastern, 2:111–113
- Europe, northern, 2:78–79
- Europe, northwestern, 2:55–56
- Europe, western, 1:418; 2:214
- Mediterranean region, 1:69–70; 2:109–110, 111–113, 122
- Copper Age, 1:69, 70, 339, 352
- Iron Age
- Europe, central, 2:138, 159, 210, 242–245, 248–249, 250, 283–284
- Europe, northern, 2:278–279
- Europe, northwestern, 2:228, 237
- Europe, western, 2:202–204, 215, 216
- Iberia, 2:256
- Mesolithic period, 1:176, 177, 179, 187
- Middle Ages, 2:351–355
- Europe, central, 2:406–408, 419–420, 557–558, 588, 591
- Europe, eastern, 2:563, 565–566
- Europe, northern, 2:326, 353–354, 418, 433, 589
- Europe, northwestern, 2:333–334, 353–354, 493–494
- Iberia, 2:530–532
- Neolithic period
- Europe, eastern, 1:239, 247, 376
- Europe, northern, 1:434
- Europe, upland central and southern, 1:391
- Iberia, 1:459–460
- Mediterranean region, 1:69–70, 253, 255, 459–460
- post-Roman culture, 2:353
- Viking Age, 2:540, 542–547
- Transcaucasia, 2:101–107, 102. *See also* Caucasia
- Transdanubia site, 2:576
- Transportation. *See also* Transportation routes
- boats and boatbuilding, 2:430–432, 431, 432
- horses, use of, 1:330
- ships, 2:423–425, 425
- watercraft, 1:124, 202, 417–418, 418
- wheeled vehicles, 1:329, 331, 362, 373, 374; 2:15, 106
- Transportation routes, 1:415–417, 426; 2:42–44, 67–68, 68, 69, 476. *See also* Transportation
- Transylvania, 1:116
- la Trecha, 1:159
- Trelleborg site, 2:544
- Trethellan Farm site, 2:57
- Tribal Hidage*, 2:494
- Trichterbecher (TRB) culture. *See* Funnel Beaker culture
- Trieste karst region, 1:171–172
- Trindhøj site, 2:76, 80
- Trinity College, 2:451
- Tripolye culture, 1:354, 355, 357–359, 358, 368–370
- Trødelag site, 2:270
- Trofastbacken site, 2:278
- Trump, David, 1:453
- Trundholm Mose site, 2:77
- Tudozero site, 1:190
- Tuna site, 2:535, 538
- Tuppo dei Sassi site, 1:172
- Turkey, 1:69–70, 105, 205–208, 223; 2:8, 111, 112. *See also* Anatolia
- Turkmenistan, 2:99
- Turku site, 2:550
- Turoe stone, 2:234, 235
- Tusa, Sebastiano, 2:37
- Tybrind Vig site, 1:23, 37, 137–138, 141–143, 142, 299
-
- ## U
- Ukraine. *See also specific sites*
- about Proto-Indo-European language, archaeological data and origins of, 1:107–108
- Bronze Age, 2:95–96, 99
- Copper Age, 1:354–370
- animal husbandry, 1:358, 361, 362
- burials, 1:358, 360–361, 362–363
- crops, 1:358, 361
- environments, 1:356, 359
- fauna, 1:358, 361, 362
- figurines, 1:359
- fishing populations, 1:358
- flora, 1:358, 361
- horses, domestication of, 1:361
- kurgan* burials, 1:340, 361, 362
- population statistics, 1:359
- pottery industry, 1:358, 359, 361, 362
- ritual and ideology, 1:360, 361, 363
- settlement patterns, 1:358–359, 362
- settlement structures, 1:358, 359, 360–361, 362
- stone tool industries, 1:361
- subsistence resources, 1:358, 361
- trade and exchange, 1:358
- Iron Age, 1:76; 2:289–295
- Mesolithic period, 1:184, 185, 364
- Neolithic period, 1:245, 354–370
- Ulriksen, Jens, 2:335
- Uluburun site, 1:69–70; 2:8, 111, 112
- UNESCO (United Nations Educational, Scientific, and Cultural Organization), 2:540
- Únětice culture, 2:5, 6, 8, 22

United Nations Educational, Scientific, and Cultural Organization (UNESCO), 2:540
 University of California at Los Angeles, 1:241
 University of Frankfurt, 1:261
 University of Rennes, 1:410
 University of York, 2:476, 498
 Uppåkra site, 2:539
 Uppsala University, 1:363
 Upton Lovell site, 2:66
 Ural Mountain cultures, 1:107, 108, 184
 Urbanization. *See also* *Oppida*; *specific countries*; *specific sites*
 Anglo-Saxon culture, 2:493
 Iron Age, 2:138–139, 287, 550
 Middle Ages, 2:565
 Europe, central, 2:587, 590
 Europe, eastern, 2:563, 564, 565
 Europe, northwestern, 2:455, 456–459, 457, 466–468, 493, 501–507, 503, 516–518
 Europe, western, 2:514, 516–518, 517
 Viking Age, 2:539–540
 Urfirnis ware, 1:181
 Urnfield culture, 1:24, 114, 116; 2:86–91, 90, 241. *See also* Hallstatt culture
 Urnfields, 1:24; 2:4, 38, 87–88, 214, 282, 393. *See also* Burials
 Ursus, 2:376
 Ussher, James, 1:14

V

Václav, 2:585
 Vadastra site, 1:320
 Vače site, 2:297
 Vaiale site, 1:168, 170
 Vaihingen site, 1:112
 Val Camonica site, 1:446
 Vale of Pickering Research Trust, 1:155
 Valencina de la Concepción site, 1:458
 Valsgärde site, 2:535, 538
 Vandal people, 2:574
 Vænget Nord site, 1:37
 Varikkoniemi site, 2:550
 Varna site, 1:321, 340, 341–344, 342
 Varsinais Suomi site, 2:278, 278
 Vasić, Miloje, 1:18
 Vasiliev, Igor, 1:365
 Västerbjers, 1:432, 433
 Västmanland site, 2:535, 538
 Västra Hoby site, 1:401–402
 Vatte di Zambana site, 1:168
 Vázquez, Victoria Villoch, 1:96
 Vedas, 1:101, 102
 Vedbæk site, 1:138, 309, 420
 La Vela site, 1:442, 445
 Velatice site, 1:112
 Velim site, 1:112
 Venantius Fortunatus, 2:384
 Veretye site, 1:184
 Verhulst, Adriaan, *The Carolingian Economy*, 2:330
 Veselovskii, Nikolai, 1:18
 Vesely Kut site, 1:358
 Vésteinsson, Orri, 2:437, 442, 443
 Vészt-Mágor site, 1:339
 Viborg site, 2:506
 Viereckschanzen, 2:174–178, 175, 177, 246, 247, 301
 Vignely site, 1:274
 Viking Age
 about regions and
 Europe, northern, 2:436–444, 533–541, 544–547, 550
 Europe, northwestern, 2:445–449, 446, 454–456, 466–468, 469, 474–475
 artisans, 2:539, 550
 burials, 2:534, 538–539
 Christianity, 2:540, 549
 coinage, 2:549, 550
 dates for, 2:548
 economic systems, 2:539–540, 542–547
 fortifications, 2:544, 546, 546–547
 hoards, 2:535, 535, 538, 538, 549
 inscribed stones, 2:542, 544, 545
 monumental structures, 2:542, 544, 545
 political systems, 2:541–542, 544–545, 546
 settlement structures, 2:534–535, 537–538
 state societies, 2:349
 stone carvings, 2:542, 544, 545
 subsistence resources, 2:534–535, 537–538
 trade and exchange, 2:540, 542–549
 urbanization, 2:539–540
 Viking culture
 about Wales and, 2:487
 emporia, 2:334–336, 335
 gender roles and relationships, 1:87
 harbors, 2:334–336, 335
 hoards, 2:334, 334, 359
 jewelry, 2:427
 settlement patterns, 1:53–54
 settlement structures, 1:53–54

ships, 2:423–425, 425
 state societies, 2:350
 trade and exchange, 2:334–336, 335
 warfare and conquest, 2:331
 Vikletice site, 1:470
 Ville-neuve-Tolosane site, 1:443, 445
 Villeneuve-la-Guyard site, 1:274, 445
 Villey-Saint-Etienne site, 2:513
 Vinča culture, 1:85, 320, 323
 Vinča site, 1:18, 336, 339
 Visborg site, 1:422
 Visigoth culture, 2:419–422, 420, 421, 514
Vita Sancti Severini (Eugippius), 2:384
 Vitelli, Karen D., 1:91
 Vix site, 1:75, 76, 87; 2:201, 205, 205–207, 216
 Vladar, J., 2:31
 Vladimirovka site, 1:368
 Vlasac site, 1:124, 175–176, 176, 177
 Volterra site, 2:262, 262, 264, 267
 Von Sacken, Baron, 2:144
 Voytek, Barbara, 1:320
 Vučedol site, 1:320, 339
 Vukovar site, 1:320
 Vulci site, 2:266
 Vykhatintsy site, 1:358

W

Waals, Johannes D. van der, 1:470, 476
 Wade-Martins, Peter, 2:496
 Wagons, 2:55, 98, 106, 270
 Wainwright, Frederick T., *The Problem of the Picts*, 2:404
 Wales, 2:480, 480–484, 481
 Wallace, Patrick, 2:455, 466
 Walsh, Clare, 2:466
 Wangels site, 1:295, 296
 Waremme-Longchamps site, 1:113
 Warendorf site, 2:587, 588, 590, 592
 Warfare and conquest, 1:110–120.
See also *specific countries*; *specific sites*
 Bronze Age, 1:114; 2:120
 Copper Age, 1:112, 460, 462, 464–466
 Iron Age, 2:196
 Europe, central, 1:112–113, 117–118; 2:246, 247, 282, 300
 Europe, eastern, 2:290, 294–295, 310–311
 Europe, northern, 1:118; 2:269–270

- Warfare and conquest (*continued*)
 Europe, northwestern, 1:118–120;
 2:227–228
 Europe, western, 2:217
 horses and effects on, 1:367–368
 Iberia, 2:256, 258–259
 Mediterranean region, 1:117–118;
 2:258–259, 266–267, 317–318
 Mesolithic period, 1:111, 176
 Middle Ages
 Europe, central, 2:391–393, 399–
 400, 414–417, 419–421, 554–
 555, 559, 574–576, 578–579
 Europe, northern, 2:417, 534,
 586
 Europe, northwestern, 2:331, 387–
 388
 Neolithic period
 Europe, central, 1:111–112, 367–
 368
 Europe, eastern, 1:112, 367–368,
 376–377
 Europe, northwestern, 1:112, 285
 Europe, western, 1:113–114
 Iberia, 1:460, 462, 464–466
 Mediterranean region, 1:111, 112,
 460, 462
 Merovingian Franks, 2:399–400
 Palaeolithic era, 1:111
 Wassenaar site, 2:4
 Watercraft
 boats and boatbuilding, 1:417–418;
 2:55–56, 270, 430–432
 ships, Viking, 2:423–425, 425
 Waterford site, 2:455
 Waterways, 2:42–44
 Watson, Patty Jo, 1:83
 Weapons and armor, 1:115–117;
 2:196, 214, 242, 270, 522, 588.
*See also specific countries; specific
 sites*
 Weier site, 1:51
 Welbeck Hill site, 2:490
 Welinder, Stig, 1:432
 Welwyn site, 1:75
 Wessex site, 2:5, 66
 West Heselton site, 2:490
 West Stow site, 1:24; 2:491, 500–
 501
 Western facade region, 1:160–162
 Wetzleindorf, 1:376
 Wheeled vehicles, 1:373, 374, 388;
 2:55, 94–95, 98, 106, 270
 Wheeler, Mortimer, 1:19, 33, 118
 White Horse artifact, 1:46
 Whitehouse, Ruth, 2:40
 Whithorn site, 2:471
 Whittle, Alasdair, 1:321
 Wicnica site, 1:112
 Wieland, Günther, 2:177
 Wielbark culture, 2:388, 389, 390
 Wietrzychowice site, 1:306
 Wihtried of Kent, 2:362
 Willemstad site, 1:149
 William, Leopold, 2:511, 519
 William the Conqueror, 2:493, 505,
 510
 Winchester Excavations Committee,
 2:502
 Winchester site, 2:501–507, 503
 Windeby Girl, 1:27
 Wine production, 2:374
 Winterbourne Stoke site, 2:65
Women in Prehistory (Ehrenberg),
 1:81
 Wood Quay site, 2:455
 Woodhenge site, 2:65
 Woodman, Peter, 1:151
 Wool industry, 1:426; 2:14, 26, 46,
 59, 94, 124
 Worsaae, Jens Jacob Asmussen, 1:25
 Wright, Edward V., 1:417
 Writing
 about ogham script, 2:142, 405,
 482, 483
 about runes, 2:586, 589
 Bronze Age, 2:112, 119
 Iron Age, 2:141, 142, 237, 302
 Middle Ages, 2:405, 419, 586, 589
 Württemberg culture, 1:114
-
- X**
 X-ray fluorescence spectroscopy
 (XRF), 1:67
-
- Y**
 Yamnaya culture, 1:361–363; 2:95–
 96
 Yeavinger site, 2:492
 Yi-Fu Tuan, 1:94
 York site, 1:30, 53–54; 2:434, 508–
 510, 509
 Yugoslavia. *See also specific sites*
 Bronze Age, 1:86
 Copper Age, 1:320, 339
 Iron Age, 1:73
 Mesolithic period, 1:83, 124
 Neolithic period, 1:320, 335–336,
 337
 Yurrita, Alberto del Castillo, 1:476
-
- Z**
 Zagros Mountains, 1:206, 207, 213
 Zambujal site, 1:459, 460, 462
 Zammit, Themistocles, 1:452
 Závist site, 2:297, 298, 300
 Zawi Chemi Shanidar site, 1:213
 Zdanovich, Gennady, 2:98
 Zealand sites, 1:136
 Zeiss, Hans, 2:513
 Zemplin site, 2:301
 Zengövarkony site, 1:374
 Zenjak site, 2:302
 Židovar site, 2:301
 Zilhão, João, 1:250, 252, 253
 Zimmerman, D. W., 1:46
 Žlkovce site, 1:374, 376
 Złota culture, 1:470
 Zvejnieki site, 1:141, 187–188, 189–
 190, 196
 Zvelebil, Marek, 1:252, 254